



MARTIAL GOD ASURA

BOOK 05

Kindhearted Bee

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Martial God Asura

(Xiuluo Wushen)

(修罗武神)

by

Kindhearted Bee

(Shan Liang de Mi Feng)

(善良的蜜蜂)

Synopsis

One night a mysterious and unexplained phenomenon occurs in the nine provinces. Five years later Chu Feng, a regular outer disciple of the Azure Dragon school, awakens one of the mysterious nine lightning beasts. And discovers an egg sealed inside him. From there we follow Chu Feng as he crosses the continent, beating up strongest senior brothers, raiding tombs, destroying sects and of course as he conquers beauties.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Flowerbridgetoo, Yang Wen Li @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1559 – Golden Beach

The disappearance of the Boundary Energy brought panic to the Holy Land of Martialism. All of the people who received the news of the Boundary Energy's disappearance, regardless of whether they were from major powers or small powers, or even those who didn't belong to any power, all felt that this was a bad omen.

However, the disappearance of the Boundary Energy also brought forth a very realistic piece of good news. That was that practically all of the Holy Land of Martialism's Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations were interconnected now.

Before, the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations had been unable to encompass the entire Holy Land of Martialism because of the Boundary Energy.

Now, without the separation from the Boundary Energy, people could enter the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations and hasten the speed of their journey by a lot. Transportation became a lot more convenient.

Most importantly, without the Boundary Energy's interference, the speed of the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations had also increased enormously.

By taking the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue arrived at the Overlord Domain from the Cyanwood Domain. While this journey was one that required them to go through many domains, it had only taken them several days to reach the Overlord Domain. If it was before, this was something that would have been impossible to accomplish, something that no one would dare believe to be possible.

After walking out from the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation, the land that Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue set foot in was the most vast and flourishing domain in the Holy Land of Martialism, the Overlord Domain.

The Overlord Domain was filled with strong and large powers. Without mentioning the Three Palaces, the Four Clans and the Elf Kingdom, there were also hidden powers and some low-profile powers that possessed strength on par with the Nine Powers.

Although the Holy Land of Martialism did not possess a lot of Martial Emperor-level experts, there were quite a few in the Overlord Domain.

As for the reason this place was called the Overlord Domain, it was because this was the place where all of the experts in the Holy Land of Martialism gathered. It was also the only place where one could become an overlord.

However, it had been ten thousand years now since the Five Overlords, Emperor Chi, the Beast Emperor, Emperor Huang, Emperor Gong, and Emperor Qing, had moved about unhindered through the Overlord Domain and ruled an era.

Even though many Martial Emperor-level experts had appeared in the last ten thousand years, and many of them were even extremely famous and possessed heaven-defying power, there had yet to be anyone that dared to declare himself or herself to be an overlord.

Even though there was no overlord-level expert that controlled this place with an unrivalled attitude, it remained that the Overlord Domain was the Overlord Domain. The feeling one would have upon setting foot in the Overlord Domain was completely different from elsewhere.

The oppressive sensation one would feel here was clearly not found elsewhere.

“This is truly lively.”

When Chu Feng and the others walked out from the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation, they discovered that they were on a vast beach. This beach was very beautiful. The sand of the beach

was golden-bright and dazzling. Truly, this place was a golden beach.

Unfortunately, even though the golden beach was very beautiful, they were unable to enjoy its beauty. That was because a vast crowd was gathered on top of the beach. They were all martial cultivators. Furthermore, their overall cultivations were not low. Even the weakest among them were Martial Kings. Not to mention the Heaven Realm, even Martial Lords were nowhere to be found.

Furthermore, from that vast crowd, Chu Feng was able to faintly sense a couple auras on par with Hong Qiang's. They were peak Half Martial Emperors.

Furthermore, at this moment, in a steady flow, more and more people were coming out from that enormous Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation. More and more people were arriving at this golden beach.

"Overlord Domain, it is truly not named in vain," At this moment, even Tantai Xue, who was habitually silent, was unable to contain herself and gasped.

At this moment, Tantai Xue was wearing her white gauze conical bamboo hat. Even though it blocked her beautiful appearance, her beautiful figure could still be seen.

"I have come here before. However, due to the fact that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would generally not take visitors, this place was very spacious and empty."

"For there to be this many people gathered here today, it is most definitely because of the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly. It would seem that the news of the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly is likely to be real."

Hong Qiang also gasped with admiration. That was because the main topic of discussion among the surrounding crowd was the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly.

“To have this many people come for the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, will the Weaponry Refinement Immortal really be able to forge that many weapons?” Tantai Xue asked.

“Rest assured, you don’t have to think about that. The amount of people who will actually be able to pass through the trial will not be a lot.”

“Furthermore, I firmly believe that not all of these people have come for the sake of weapons. There must be a lot of them that have come because of the reputation of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, and wish to use this opportunity to meet him in person,” Hong Qiang said.

“Why are all these people on the beach? It is already this crowded, yet no one has bothered to fly into the sky?” Tantai Xue asked.

“They are showing respect to the strong. This is also a universally accepted rule of the Overlord Domain.”

“Actually, there is a story regarding this. Back in Emperor Qing’s era, there was another grand Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist who received the reverence of countless people. However, he suddenly disappeared, and left behind all sorts of legends.”

“Suddenly, that world spiritist reappeared. He held an assembly in the place where he had entered seclusion, much like the one being held by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal here today.”

“Reportedly, an unprecedented amount of powerful experts arrived because of his reputation. Due to the fact that there were too many people and the people in the crowd were feeling very crowded, people began to fly into the sky and stand in the sky.”

“When that world spiritist appeared, he ended up massacring all of the people who were in the sky. As for the reason why he did so, it was very simple. He said that those people who were standing in the sky were being disrespectful toward him,” Hong Qiang

narrated.

“To massacre people for such a small matter, isn’t that a bit too excessive and arrogant?” Tantai Xue asked.

“Indeed, it is. However, he possessed the qualifications to be excessive and arrogant.”

“Ever since that day, this universally accepted rule came about in the Overlord Domain. Whenever one is in a hidden expert’s territory, they must not fly into the sky. Else, not only would that be disrespectful, one would also be challenging the honor of that hidden expert.”

“Thus, even though the golden beach is already overcrowded, no one is willing to soar into the sky. After all, the master of this place is the Weaponry Refinement Immortal,” Hong Qiang explained.

“Senior Hong Qiang, do you know exactly how powerful that Weaponry Refinement Immortal is?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“I do not know what level of cultivation that Weaponry Refinement Immortal possesses. However, what I am certain of, is that he is many times more powerful than the Yan Clan’s Ancestor. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal is truly a grand and famous character in the Holy Land of Martialism, a peak expert.”

“I’ll give you an example. I have heard that this golden beach is separated from the Immortal Island by boundless water for ninety thousand miles.”

“If the Weaponry Refinement Immortal wished to kill, he would not have to leave the Immortal Island at all. While sitting in the Immortal Island, he is capable of killing everyone gathered here,” Hong Qiang said.

“He’s that powerful? That’s a bit too powerful, no?” Hearing what Hong Qiang said, neither Chu Feng nor Tantai Xue were able to remain calm.

For powerful experts, it was not difficult for them to kill others

from far away. However, to kill people from a distance of ninety thousand miles away, and kill this many people with peak Half Martial Emperors like Hong Qiang included, was truly frightening.

“Martial Emperors are extremely powerful beings to begin with. Those with higher levels of cultivation are even more frightening.”

“Actually, upon thinking about it, the Yan Clan’s Ancestor was capable of killing all living things in a thousand mile range throughout his battle; if he had the intention to kill, it wouldn’t be difficult for him to massacre everyone in a range of ten thousand miles.”

“Thus, upon comparing them, for someone like the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to kill others from ninety thousand miles away would not be surprising at all,” Hong Qiang said.

“That is true,” After hearing what Hong Qiang said, Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were able to accept it more.

When he heard how powerful Martial Emperors were, Chu Feng began to yearn for the Martial Emperor realm even more. He was impatient to become more powerful.

“Quickly, look. It’s here, it’s here. Sure enough, it came out.”

Right at this moment, shouts began to be heard from the direction of the crowd closer to the shore.

Then, the vast crowd began to rush toward the shore. It was as if something major were about to happen.

Chapter 1560 – Demon Level Genius

“That’s a storm.”

Even though Chu Feng and the others did not pass through the crowd, Chu Feng was able to see through the crowd with his Heaven’s Eyes.

Thus, he was able to clearly see that there was a storm on the surface of the boundless sea. The storm had covered the sky and was surging toward the shore.

Inside the black hurricane were red bolts of lightning. As they rumbled, they appeared to be extremely terrifying.

The black hurricane and the red bolts of lightning did not appear without cause.

They were attacking people. They were attacking the people who had entered the sea and wanted to hurry to the Immortal Island.

Furthermore, at this moment, there were many who were unable to withstand the violent storm’s might and began to flee in fear.

Those without sufficient strength who tried to pass through the storm by force were injured on the spot. There were even people who let out miserable screams and were killed. They died before the vast crowd. Their bodies were torn and their bones were crushed. They were met with very horrible deaths.

“That storm is created by a spirit formation. It is something man-made. Furthermore, its attack is not something to look down upon. Ordinary Half Martial Emperors would find it extremely difficult to pass through. Those below Half Martial Emperor practically have no way to pass through that storm alive.”

“This sort of method could be said to be very powerful. Could it be something that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal did?” Tantai Xue asked.

“No wonder so many people have gathered on the golden beach without daring to enter the sea. So they were actually afraid of the storm,” Chu Feng said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when everyone’s gazes were fixed on that violent storm and began to display expressions of fear, quite a few people suddenly charged into the ocean.

Those people were all Half Martial Emperors. There were even three old men who were peak Half Martial Emperors. It was likely that they had not come from the same power. Yet, at this moment, they had the same intention. They accompanied a group of members of the younger generation with insufficient strength and began to cross through that storm and charge their way into the Immortal Island.

However, even though they had entered the sea, they still did not dare to travel in the sky. Instead, they stepped onto the water and began to walk on top of the water against the incoming waves. Without even bothering to look back, they charged into that frightening storm.

At this moment, that scene gave off the impression of being a magnificent sight of men going against nature.

“Chu Feng, let’s go too,” Right at this moment, Hong Qiang spoke. He was showing a rare excitement.

“Okay, let’s go.”

When even Hong Qiang had become this excited, Chu Feng was naturally even more excited. With this many experts trying to charge through that storm together, just thinking about it made him excited.

After they made their decision, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue passed through the vast crowd using their ingenious movement martial skills and began to approach the sea.

After some effort, Chu Feng and the others finally reached the sea. However, right after they set foot onto the water, Chu Feng's eyes shrunk. A change of expression appeared in his eyes.

This sea possessed an enormous pressure. To walk on the water was simply an extremely difficult task. One would have to exhaust a great amount of strength for every single step one took.

Normally, with Chu Feng's current ability, he could travel several miles in a flash. A distance of a thousand miles would only take him a short amount of time to travel. Even though this sea was ninety thousand miles long, it would not take him a long time to travel to the Immortal Island.

However, the pressure from the sea made it so that Chu Feng and the others would not be able to reveal their actual strength. With the current situation, based on Chu Feng's strength, it would take him at the very minimum more than two days and two nights to travel the distance of ninety thousand miles. Furthermore, that was assuming that he would not meet any other difficulties.

From this, it could be seen how frightening the pressure of this sea was.

Suddenly, Hong Qiang said, "Chu Feng, Miss Tantai, allow me to lead you two,"

"We will have to trouble you senior," Chu Feng and Tantai Xue nodded. In this sort of pressure, it would require a lot of strength and time if Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were to rely only on themselves. However, with Hong Qiang, a peak Half Martial Emperor, with them, it would save them a lot of time and effort.

Being led by Hong Qiang, the overall speed of the three of them was increased greatly. Soon, they entered the storm.

"Rumble~~~~"

At this moment, Chu Feng's surroundings were filled by the black hurricane and the red bolts of lightning. The whistling of the

hurricane and the rolls of thunder that came with the lightning were sounding all around Chu Feng in a nonstop manner.

Fortunately, Hong Qiang was present. If not, it would have been difficult for Chu Feng to travel this effortlessly in this violent storm. He would have to be extremely careful.

“Chu Feng, look,” Suddenly, Tantai Xue looked back and sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng followed the direction indicated by Tantai Xue, his eyes shone. He discovered that a large group of people had arrived behind them.

Not only was that group of people wearing the same sort of outfit, there was also a special symbol on their clothes. Nangong Imperial Clan. They were from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan had arrived. There was a total of a hundred and ninety three people in that group. Compared to the other powers, the Nangong Imperial Clan could be said to have arrived with a great display.

As for the reason why they were said to have come with a great display, it was not because of the number of people. Rather, it was because of their strength.

The younger generation in the group were practically all Half Martial Emperors. They numbered a total of eighty.

The older generation actually numbered more than the younger generation. There were a total of a hundred and thirteen individuals. Among them, there were twenty who were peak Half Martial Emperors like Hong Qiang.

Furthermore, there was a black-and-white-haired woman whose actual age was unknown, but who looked like a middle aged woman; she was a Martial Emperor.

“Even a Martial Emperor came. As expected from the Nangong Imperial Clan. It could be said that they’ve opened my eyes,” Chu

Feng smiled lightly.

Why was the Overlord Domain said to be very powerful? At this moment, not long after Chu Feng had arrived, he had experienced for himself why that was the case. That was because the people here were sufficiently powerful.

“Chu Feng, look at that little girl. She’s very powerful,” Tantai Xue indicated to Chu Feng with her gaze.

After hearing her words, Chu Feng noticed that there was indeed a little girl in the crowd. That little girl appeared to only be twelve years old. She had large, sparkling, translucent eyes and white and rosy cheeks. She was clearly a small child, yet she possessed an outstanding appearance.

However, this was not the important aspect. The important aspect was that this little girl was a rank six Martial King.

To be a rank six Martial King at her young age, it could be said to be unimaginable. Not to mention Chu Feng, even Tantai Xue appeared to be inferior when compared to her.

Genius. A true genius. This little girl was a true genius cultivator.

To be exact, this little girl could not be described with the word genius. Instead, she should be considered to be a demon level character, a demon level genius.

What does it mean to broaden one’s horizons? This was what it meant by that. Chu Feng had come to the Holy Land of Martialism for so long, yet this was the first time he saw someone possessing this cultivation at this age.

At this moment, Chu Feng also discovered that the Martial Emperor-level middle-aged woman was following that little girl closely. It was evident that she was there to protect the little girl.

Under the leadership of that Martial Emperor, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s people were extremely fast. Soon, they reached Chu Feng and the others.

“Big brother, big sister, you are all lying. Who said only Half Martial Emperors are able to pass through this storm? Look, isn’t that big brother over there not a Half Martial Emperor, and a rank eight Martial King instead?”

Right at this moment, that little girl pointed at Chu Feng and spoke with a provocative tone toward a man and a woman beside her.

Chapter 1561 – Bad Example

The ages of that man and woman were about the same as Chu Feng and Tantai Xue, being only in their early twenties. Other than that little girl, they could be considered the youngest among the people of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As for the other so-called members of the younger generation, they were either approaching thirty or already in their thirties. There were even some who were in their forties.

However, this could not be helped. In a place like the Holy Land of Martialism, one could easily live for several hundred, or even several thousand, years. Strictly speaking, anyone younger than fifty years old would be considered to be of the younger generation.

Both the man and the woman had outstanding appearances. They were charming, elegant, had a lot of class, and possessed very high charisma.

While cultivators were capable of changing their appearances, they were unable to change the impression of their innate aura. Thus, sometimes, one's aura, one's charisma, would be more important than one's appearance.

Furthermore, this man and woman were both very powerful. Especially that man, he was actually even stronger than Tantai Xue and was a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

To have this sort of cultivation at his age, he was simply comparable to that genius from the Dongfang Imperial Clan, Dongfang Zexuan. Likely, this man was also a genius who possessed a high status in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As for that woman, her cultivation was relatively weaker, she was only a rank one Half Martial Emperor. However, it was only when compared with that man that she appeared to be weak.

Otherwise, her cultivation could also be seen to be extremely frightening; she could be considered to be a rare genius, a genius who would never be found in the Nine Powers.

To have this many geniuses appear all of a sudden, this made Chu Feng's cultivation of a rank eight Martial King appear extremely insignificant and unworthy of comparison.

However, Chu Feng did not feel the slightest bit inferior. In fact, he did not even feel any threat from them. Chu Feng knew very well that although his current cultivation was inferior to theirs, that did not mean that it would forever be inferior to theirs.

Who were they? They were the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. As long as they were able to reveal a bit of talent as a child, they would be able to obtain boundless cultivation resources. It would instead be strange if their cultivation didn't become strong.

However, what about Chu Feng? Even though he possessed exceptional talent, he had only managed to obtain his current standing by going through challenge after challenge on his own. He was someone who came from a place with extremely weak martial cultivation talent and extremely few cultivation resources, the Nine Provinces Continent.

Thus, even if they possessed stronger cultivations than Chu Feng, he had most definitely endured a greater amount of trials than them. Their comprehension for martial cultivation would definitely be inferior to Chu Feng's. In the future, it would be impossible for their progress to surpass Chu Feng's.

To the current Chu Feng, he hardly ever encountered any bottlenecks. The only thing that he lacked was cultivation resources. If he possessed sufficient cultivation resources, his cultivation would be able to instantly reach a frightening level.

In truth, Chu Feng's progress was already extremely frightening. From the time he arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism, entered

the Southern Cyanwood Forest and then the Cyanwood Mountain, experienced a series of things in the Cyanwood Mountain and then left to wander about, while all of that appeared to be extremely time intensive, he had actually used less than two years.

Yet, in this period of less than two years, Chu Feng's cultivation had gone from rank eight Martial Lord to rank eight Martial King. This sort of speed was truly frightening.

Even for the so-called geniuses of the Nangong Imperial Clan, it would also be impossible for them to accomplish at such a frightening speed. Furthermore, Chu Feng had relied on himself and managed to attain progress while encountering all sorts of dangers.

Chu Feng was fully confident that he would be able to surpass these people in a short period of time. When facing a bunch of people that he was going to surpass soon, why would Chu Feng feel inferior?

“Big brother, big sister, c'mon, look over there. That big brother is really only a rank eight Martial King,” Seeing that her big brother and big sister had ignored her, that little girl began to shout even louder. At this moment, practically everyone heard her shout.

The man was quite courteous. When he discovered that Chu Feng was looking at them, he actually nodded at Chu Feng with a smile on his face. He did not have the arrogance of a genius or someone from an Imperial Clan at all. His attitude was very amiable.

“Humph~~~” However, compared to the man, the woman's attitude was much worse. Not only did she take a disdainful gaze at Chu Feng, she even coldly snorted with contempt.

Furthermore, she grabbed the little girl, pointed at Chu Feng and said, “Lil sis, remember. That guy over there is a bad example.”

“Is this place a place that anyone can come as they wish? Those

who are below Half Martial Emperor are simply overestimating their capabilities by coming here.”

“Did he really think that he would be able to safely set foot onto the Immortal Island because there’s a peak Half Martial Emperor protecting him? He’s indulging in fantasy. He will soon know that he was mistaken. In this place, a peak Half Martial Emperor will not be able to protect him. He must rely on himself.”

“You must learn from his example and properly train on the path of martial cultivation. You must not think that you are talented and start to slack. Or else, you might not even be able to become a Half Martial Emperor even at his age. In fact, you might even become inferior to him.”

After hearing what that woman said, Chu Feng felt as if he were about to vomit blood. What sort of situation was this?! He was deemed to be an exceptional genius in the Nine Powers. Yet, how did he become a bad example in her eyes?

“Fuck! The hell is that bitch talking about? The hell’s with not being able to become a Half Martial Emperor at my age? What, must one become a Half Martial Emperor after reaching my age?”

“If people my age must become Half Martial Emperors, then why is it that that bunch of uncle-aged fellows beside her are still only rank one Half Martial Emperors?”

“Don’t tell me that one must become a Half Martial Emperor in one’s early twenties, only to remain a rank one Half Martial Emperor in one’s thirties and one’s forties? Isn’t that sort of talent a bit too weird?” Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng began to complain to Tantai Xue through voice transmission.

“Puuu~~~”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the habitually cold and detached Tantai Xue was actually unable to contain herself and burst out laughing.

Chu Feng's Heaven Eyes were very powerful now. Thus, he was able to see through Tantai Xue's veil and see her appearance.

At this moment, Tantai Xue was laughing. Her smile was exceptionally beautiful. It was as if a snow lotus flower was blooming in a desolate desert. That sort of beauty was so pleasurable to enjoy that it could lift one's spirit and mood.

Tantai Xue seemed to notice that her smile was seen by Chu Feng. Furthermore, Chu Feng's eyes were fixed on her. Thus, she became embarrassed and hurriedly turned around.

"Lil sis, you understand what I said right? You must work hard so as to not become someone like that bad example, got it?" Right at this moment, that woman's voice sounded again. She was actually still using Chu Feng as a bad example to frighten that little girl without caring about Chu Feng's feelings at all.

"Oh, [Moli](#) understands." The little girl nodded her head obediently. However, at the moment she nodded her head, she winked at Chu Feng. It was as if she were telling him not to be angered by the words spoken by her big sister. She was truly adorable.

At this moment, Chu Feng also smiled at the little girl. He was smiling not only because that little girl was adorable. Rather, because he was not really angry to begin with.

Having journeyed so far, Chu Feng had experienced countless trials and challenges, seen countless arrogant and willful young misses and young masters. Those people, they were all extremely arrogant and viewed everyone to be beneath them. If Chu Feng were to be angered by every one of them saying those sorts of words about him, he would've died of anger long ago.

Thus, Chu Feng had already mastered the ability to not get angry. Naturally, he would not be angered by the words spoken by the young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As for the words Chu Feng had said to Tantai Xue earlier, he had actually done that deliberately. He was deliberately trying to make Tantai Xue laugh so that he could seize the opportunity to see whether her smile was beautiful or not and compare it with Bai Ruochen's smile.

Chu Feng felt that Tantai Xue and Bai Ruochen were the same sort of girl. Merely, Tantai Xue seemed to be a bit colder than Bai Ruochen.

From the smile Tantai Xue revealed earlier, Chu Feng had gotten his answer. Even though Bai Ruochen's smile was very beautiful, Tantai Xue's smile was even more beautiful. Her smile was not the sweet-to-the-heart kind. Rather, it was the warm-to-the-heart kind.

Moli → Jasmine

Chapter 1562 – Frightening Hurricane

“Chu Feng, Miss Tantai, follow me closely.”

Right at this moment, Hong Qiang’s expression suddenly became serious. He extended his hand and grabbed Chu Feng and Tantai Xue’s arms, bringing them to his side.

“All of you, follow closely. Whether or not I’ll be able to bring you all in will be dependent on this,” At the same time, that Nangong Imperial Clan’s Martial Emperor also spoke out.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that the little girl had jumped into the bosom of that Martial Emperor. Even that woman who had declared him to be a bad example had an expression of unease in her eyes.

Furthermore, that Martial Emperor had used her power to create an enormous defensive barrier that surrounded everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chu Feng had also managed to sense that a frightening danger was approaching them. As he looked toward the direction of that approaching danger, even though he was already prepared, he was still unable to help his heart from beating rapidly in the face of danger.

Unable to contain himself, he blurted out, “Damn, isn’t this a bit too excessive?”

The incoming hurricane was no ordinary hurricane at all. Instead, it was filled with black sickles that seemed to be able to slice through everything. Countless rays of such sickles were interweaved into one location to create the omnipresent wall of wind that came toward them from the storm in the manner of a hurricane.

Chu Feng was able to clearly see with his eyes that the people ahead would all utter sounds of screaming upon entering the

hurricane. There were as many screams as the amount of people who entered that place.

“It seems that the exciting part is coming,” Chu Feng gasped. At this moment, the hurricane came before them. The frightening attractive power from the hurricane was sucking them into it. Even if they wished to run away now, they would not be able to escape.

“Rumble~~~~~”

Finally, carrying with it were waves of rumbles, that frightening wind wall swept past Chu Feng and the others, sucking them all into it.

Right after entering into it, Chu Feng immediately sensed an indescribable attractive power. That sort of sensation was like he was being grabbed by a large invisible hand that wanted to pull him away from Hong Qiang.

“Damn it, what sort of power is this? I’m actually unable to resist it.”

Before this attractive power, Hong Qiang’s hands that were tightly grabbing onto Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were helplessly released. It was not that he wanted to release his hands. Rather, there was an invisible power that forcibly pulled his hands open. That power was so strong that he was simply unable to resist it at all.

In the end, Hong Qiang could only watch helplessly as Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were carried away by the hurricane.

“Everyone, remain calm. This hurricane will only separate us and not harm us.”

“Protect Miss Moli. Protect Miss Moli.”

“Damn it, I can’t grab onto her.”

At the moment when Chu Feng was being carried away by the

hurricane, he heard shouts from the people of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Upon closer inspection, Chu Feng discovered that, like them, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were also all being scattered everywhere and carried away by the hurricane. They were like countless kites with their strings cut as they rolled about in the hurricane, drifting blindly and helplessly.

It turned out that it was not only Hong Qiang who was unable to protect him and Tantai Xue in the hurricane, even that grand Martial Emperor was unable to protect the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. From this... it could be seen how frightening that hurricane was.

“It would seem that this hurricane has only separated us, and is not actually planning to harm us.”

Chu Feng had already discovered how frightening this hurricane was. However, he was not overly worried. That was because, if this hurricane wished to harm them, then, with its power, they would all have been killed by now. Even that Nangong Imperial Clan’s Martial Emperor would be no exception.

However, they were all fine. This meant that the hurricane did not plan to hurt them at all. Perhaps, it was as the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan said, this hurricane merely planned to separate them.

After Chu Feng became aware of this, he no longer tried to struggle and instead allowed himself to be carried away by the hurricane. The only thing that he was curious about was where this hurricane was planning to take him.

Gradually, the screams from the crowd grew softer and softer. Then, they disappeared. They had disappeared for a long while. Other than the sound of the wind, Chu Feng was unable to hear any other sound. Chu Feng knew that he was growing further and further away from the rest of the people. They must have been

separated by miles.

Finally, the ear-splitting rumbles began to gradually grow softer and softer. At the same time, the attractive power also gradually became weaker.

Everything had ended. Chu Feng had broken free from that storm and reached the surface of the sea.

As he saw the storm that was growing further and further away, as he saw that there was nothing in his surroundings other than sea waves, Chu Feng heaved a long sigh of relief.

“It would seem that reaching the Immortal Island is no easy task.”

“I wonder, are Ling’er and Lil Rou here? Did they manage to successfully reach the Immortal Island? They wouldn’t have encountered dangers, right?”

Chu Feng knew that he was still on the sea, and must not have managed to travel far. However, he began to grow worried about Zi Ling and Su Rou. Even though he knew that the two of them now possessed powerful cultivations, he had discovered that everything here had surpassed his expectations.

He knew that the storm was the first trial. Following that storm, there would likely be more trials awaiting them. Even Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether he would be able to pass the upcoming trials.

In short, Chu Feng was able to become certain of one thing. The ninety thousand miles of water would not be as easy to travel as they might appear to be.

That was because Chu Feng discovered that the pressure on the surface of the sea was even greater. It was many times greater here than the pressure near the shore. Under this sort of pressure, even if there were nothing blocking him, it would still take him at least two days and two nights in order to reach the Immortal Island.

Most importantly, Chu Feng's spirit power had also received an enormous restriction in this place. Even when using his Heaven's Eyes, he was unable to see very far.

On this sea, all of his abilities had been restricted. However, this was still not the most frightening aspect. The most frightening aspect was that there were many powerful existences that could cause even Martial Emperors to feel powerless on this sea.

Dangers, they were absolutely everywhere. On this sea, if one did not possess sufficient courage, one would definitely feel extremely frightened.

“Gurgle, gurgle~~~”

Right at this moment, a series of strange gurgling noises sounded from below Chu Feng. It was the sound of water surging. Even though that sound was very soft and had been covered by the overflowing waves on the surface of the water, Chu Feng, being alert, had managed to detect it.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's footsteps moved. He used his Mortal Taboo: Illusion Light Technique. He instantly turned into a ray of light and traveled backwards several meters.

“Splash~~~”

Right at this moment, a sudden wave surged forth toward where Chu Feng had previously stood. At the same time, an enormous sea monster appeared before Chu Feng.

It was a giant black crab. However, it was different from ordinary crabs. It was enormous. Its height was over a dozen meters tall, and it possessed four strong pincers. Furthermore, it possessed the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Emperor.

Fortunately, although its cultivation was strong, its battle power was only ordinary. It did not possess any heaven-defying battle power. Thus, to Chu Feng, it was no issue at all.

“Sure enough, this sea is not without dangers. That’s fine too, what should come will eventually come.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his Incomplete Imperial Armament, the Infinity Edge. Being on a sea like this, Chu Feng did not dare to hold back his strength. He must be extremely cautious and go all out.

Only by doing that would he be able to keep himself safe. Only by doing that would he be able to travel far by himself.

Chapter 1563 – Lending A Helping Hand

“Roar~~~~”

Suddenly, that crab sea monster’s crimson eyes began to emit intense killing intent. It opened its large mouth and snarled at Chu Feng. Then, it moved its four enormous strong pincers and began to unleash attacks at Chu Feng.

Even though that crab was enormous, it was, nevertheless, a rank one Half Martial Emperor. Thus, its attack speed was extremely fast. In practically a flash, its attacks arrived at Chu Feng.

Furthermore, those strong pincers were no small matter. They contained enormous power. If one were to be struck by them, no matter how strong one’s body might be, they would likely be crushed into two by the pincers like tofu.

“Woosh~~~~”

Suddenly, a crescent shaped blade of light flashed through the body of that crab sea monster. Then, that crab sea monster fell into two halves; it was actually split into two.

It was Chu Feng. Although Chu Feng was merely a rank eight Martial King, his true battle power was comparable to rank two Half Martial Emperors. Furthermore, he was holding the Infinity Edge in his hand, which further increased his battle power. Thus, a mere rank one Half Martial Emperor-level sea monster was naturally incapable of contending against him.

“Buzz~~~~”

Right after Chu Feng killed that crab sea monster, that sea monster’s body actually turned into a strand of golden light and disappeared into the air.

“This is...”

At this moment, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Then, he said, “It was

actually created by a spirit formation?”

Chu Feng was incomparably shocked. This crab sea monster was so vivid and lifelike. He had actually thought that this crab sea monster was real.

It was only now that he discovered that this crab sea monster had been created by a spirit formation and was not a real living thing.

“The methods of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist are powerful indeed,” Chu Feng praised. He was practically certain that everything here had been created by that Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

That was because it was impossible for anyone else other than that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist to be capable of using spirit formations to such a degree where even Chu Feng failed to detect it.

At this moment, Chu Feng wanted to see that Weaponry Refinement Immortal even more. Merely, even he himself did not know whether he would have that opportunity or not. That was because he knew that the journey to the Immortal Island would be as difficult as reaching the heavens.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng would still not cower. Thus, he decided to continue onward.

“Big sister, save me~~~ That thing is so frightening!”

“Lil sis, don’t run all over the place. You’re too far away, I can’t reach you.”

“I can’t not run. It’s chasing me. Ahhh~~~~~”

However, not long after Chu Feng continued onward, he suddenly heard screams. The voices were deliberately using martial power to send forth their sound. Thus, the voices could be heard from very far away. They were calling for help.

Chu Feng was also able to tell that the voices were the voice from

that Nangong Imperial Clan's genius little girl as well, as that woman who had declared him to be a bad example.

“To come across them so quickly, it is truly fate.”

“Seems like they encountered some trouble.”

After hearing those voices, Chu Feng did not choose to ignore them. Instead, he began to rapidly proceed toward the direction of the voices.

If it were only that woman, then perhaps Chu Feng would choose to ignore her screams for help. However, since that little girl was also present, Chu Feng would absolutely not choose to disregard her.

What Chu Feng could not bear to see the most were those that were children or elderly being bullied or encountering dangers. At this moment, the shouts for help from this little girl contained terror. It was evident that they had encountered danger.

After approaching them, it was as Chu Feng had expected. There was a rank one Half Martial Emperor-level octopus sea monster that was chasing after that little girl while unleashing fatal attacks at her. Furthermore, it was spraying out ink toward her nonstop. This ink was extremely poisonous; upon contact, even the seawater evaporated on the spot. If the little girl were to be hit by the ink, she would be melted away instantly.

As for that little girl, even though she was a rank six Martial King and possessed heaven defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, she was still unable to contend against a rank one Half Martial Emperor-level sea monster.

At this moment, the only thing she could do was to flee with her life on the line. Fortunately, she had grasped a pretty decent Earthen Taboo Movement Martial Skill. Running on the water, she was as fast as flying. Her movements were very sharp, and her perception was also very strong. Thus, she was able to predict the

attacks of that octopus sea monster and evade them beforehand.

Unfortunately, it remained that she was a Martial King. Without the battle power of a Half Martial Emperor, it was simply impossible for a Martial King to contend against a Half Martial Emperor. Even if she could flee, it would only be something temporary. Sooner or later, she would be caught. At this moment, this little girl was on the verge of being caught.

At this moment, Chu Feng was able to hear the shouts from that Nangong Imperial Clan's woman. However, he was unable to see her. Without even thinking, Chu Feng was able to tell that she had been tangled by another sea monster, and was unable to help the little girl because of that.

"Big brother, run away. That big octopus is not planning to eat people, it's planning to kill people."

Right at this moment, that little girl discovered Chu Feng. However, after she discovered Chu Feng, she did not run toward him. Rather, she decided to brace herself against the danger and suddenly turned her body around to run toward another direction.

"This little girl..."

When Chu Feng saw this scene, he felt a warmth in his heart. He knew why this little girl did that. She feared that the sea monster would harm Chu Feng, and decided to deliberately lure the sea monster away from him.

Even though she was so young, she had such a philanthropic heart. A little girl like this deserved to be saved, had to be saved.

"Woosh~~~ Woosh~~~ Woosh~~~"

When he thought of that, Chu Feng used his Earthen Taboo: Illusion Light Technique in succession. At this moment, Chu Feng was like a flash of white light that leapt on the sea as it surged forward. Soon, Chu Feng arrived before that sea monster.

"Bang~~~"

He leapt again. The power behind Chu Feng's leap was so strong that even the sea water exploded upwards, splattering everywhere. In an instant, a torrential rain covered this region.

Like a god of war that had just leaped out from the water, Chu Feng arrived on top of that sea monster. With the Infinity Edge in his hand, he waved it ruthlessly. "Woosh~" Without even being able to let out a cry of pain, that sea monster was sliced in two by Chu Feng.

"Wow! Big brother, you're amazing!"

That little girl's perception was very sharp. She had noticed when Chu Feng began to approach her and had turned her gaze around. Therefore, she saw with her own eyes how Chu Feng had killed that sea monster using a simple yet extremely powerful slash.

At this moment, the little girl ran over to Chu Feng. Her large clear eyes were filled with adoration. In fact, they were shining like the starry galaxy.

"Little girl, is your name Nangong Moli?" Chu Feng asked.

"Eh, big brother, how did you know my name?" The little girl had an expression of shock.

"Earlier, you said 'oh, Moli's got it.' Therefore, I assumed that your name was Moli," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Wow! Not only is big brother powerful, you're also very smart!" The adoration the little girl had for Chu Feng grew even deeper.

"Moli! Moli!!!"

Right at this moment, shouts began to be heard. Soon, that Nangong Imperial Clan's woman appeared in the distant water. She was running over on top of the water and was holding a curved blade that sparkled with silvery light.

Her curved blade was actually also an Incomplete Imperial

Armament. Even though it was also a copy like Chu Feng's weapon, it remained that it was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. From merely looking at that, Chu Feng understood how much wealth the Nangong Imperial Clan possessed.

“You saved my lil sis?” That woman was no fool. After she appeared, she took a glance at the surrounding situation and managed to guess that Chu Feng had saved the little girl. However, there was no gratefulness in her gaze. Furthermore, it was also not well-natured.

Chapter 1564 – [Nangong Baihe](#)

“Since you already know, why bother asking?” Chu Feng said with a light smile. The way he saw it, the woman’s question was redundant.

“Big sister, this big brother is amazing. He killed that big sea monster using only a single slash,” Nangong Moli began to praise Chu Feng with an expression of adoration.

“Lil sis, that is merely a rank one Half Martial Emperor-level sea monster. Furthermore, it was created by a spirit formation, and was not real. That’s why it’s not hard to take care of it.”

“Right now, you’re a rank six Martial King. As long as your martial cultivation increases by another level to rank seven Martial King, you will also be able to easily take care of sea monsters like that one. Got it?”

Seeing how Nangong Moli praised Chu Feng, that woman was actually a bit annoyed, and began to indirectly tell Nangong Moli that what Chu Feng had done was nothing special.

“Oh?” Nangong Moli was skeptical. However, she did not refute her sister.

“What’s your name? Which sect or school are you from? You actually possess an Incomplete Imperial Armament? Even though it’s only a copy, it’s still something that is extremely valuable, something that one cannot purchase even if one possesses the money.”

The woman walked over to Chu Feng and began to question him. Her opinion of Chu Feng had changed slightly. However, this slight change was not because Chu Feng had saved her younger sister. Rather, it was because of the Infinity Edge in Chu Feng’s hand.

“I do not wish to say, may I not answer your questions?” Chu

Feng did not answer. That was because he was in the Overlord Domain, a place with an enormous amount of powers.

If he were to say that he was disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain and show proof of it in other domains, then he might receive the people's respect and even reverence.

However, in the Overlord Domain, that would not necessarily be the case. Furthermore, this would be especially true before this Nangong Imperial Clan's arrogant young miss. If Chu Feng were to mention that he was from the Cyanwood Mountain, she would not have a whole new level of respect for him.

As for the main reason why Chu Feng did not wish to mention the Cyanwood Mountain, it was because he did not wish to implicate the Cyanwood Mountain.

Even though Chu Feng was not a person who was fond of creating trouble, it remained that he was in a place with a lot of arrogant individuals. Thus, there would definitely be a lot of people who would end up provoking him.

Chu Feng would tolerate it when possible. However, when it was not possible, he would disregard who they might be and would teach them a lesson.

In this place, there were a lot of people from prestigious families, schools and sects. It was inevitable that Chu Feng would get into conflict with them in the future. At that time, while Chu Feng would be able to escape, the Cyanwood Mountain would not.

Based on the way those sorts of people did things, if they could not find Chu Feng, they would definitely go and create trouble for the Cyanwood Mountain.

Chu Feng did not wish to make the Cyanwood Mountain the target of disaster aimed toward him. Thus, he had already come to a decision long ago. Even though he was still a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain, he had decided to renounce that status and

not tell anyone that he was a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain.

“To not even dare to say your name, it would appear that you’re not from any upright school. It might even be that that Incomplete Imperial Armament is something of vile origin,” that woman said provocatively. She was trying to incite Chu Feng into declaring his identity.

“Heh...” However, facing that woman’s provocation, Chu Feng laughed disdainfully. He had decided to ignore her.

“You...” Seeing Chu Feng’s smile, the woman’s expression instantly changed. A trace of anger appeared in her gaze.

That was because Chu Feng’s smile was filled with contempt. That sort of contempt was as if he was saying, ‘Amatuer. Playing with me, you’re still too inexperienced.’

To that Nangong Imperial Clan’s woman, Chu Feng’s action was equivalent to ridiculing her, utter and naked ridicule. If it was before, she would’ve already attacked him to teach him a lesson. However, upon thinking about how he had, after all, saved her younger sister, she decided to endure his ridicule.

“No matter what, you saved my little sis. Thus, take this as your reward. From this point on, do not associate yourself with our Nangong Clan again,” As the woman spoke, she took out a Cosmos Sack and threw it at Chu Feng.

There were a lot of Martial Beads in that Cosmos Sack. Furthermore, there were ten top quality Royal Armaments. The quality of each and every one of them was on par with Chu Feng’s Demon Sealing Sword.

Apart from them, there were several enormous pearls, gorgeous gems, precious medicinal herbs and all kinds of other rare treasures. Thus, the value of the items in this Cosmos Sack was truly significant.

Likely, this woman had prepared this sort of Cosmos Sack for the

sake of hussing away people like Chu Feng. She did not wish to owe anyone any favors and be tangled with them nonstop.

Chu Feng was very blunt. He received the Cosmos Sack and then directly placed it into his own Cosmos Sack. As the saying goes, if one doesn't accept a free gift, it would be a waste, much less a gift from someone like this Nangong Imperial Clanswoman.

Seeing that Chu Feng had accepted the Cosmos Sack, a mocking smile appeared on that woman's face. It was as if she was saying 'Sure enough, you only saved my lil sis for money and greed.'

"To give these bits of items, are you trying to huss away a beggar?" However, to her surprise, Chu Feng suddenly said those words.

"What? These bits of items? Those items in the Cosmos Sack, which one of them is not a precious treasure? You actually think that they're not enough?" The smile on that woman's face instantly changed to an expression of anger.

"Did you think that your younger sister's life was only worth these few items?" Chu Feng asked.

"Fine. I'll give you more, do you dare to accept?" The woman was unable to win the argument against Chu Feng. Thus, she handed the curved blade in her hand to Chu Feng.

"My thanks," Chu Feng was extremely blunt. He extended his hand and grabbed onto the curved blade.

This scene came as an enormous shock to the woman. She did not expect for Chu Feng to be so daring to actually receive this Incomplete Imperial Armament. Even though it was only a copy, it was still a highly valuable treasure.

"Humph," A bright idea came into that woman's mind, and she snorted coldly. She secretly increased the resistance power of that Incomplete Imperial Armament.

Even though this power was not enough to cause Chu Feng harm,

it should be enough to make it so that Chu Feng was unable to hold on to the Incomplete Imperial Armament. That was because at this moment, the resistance of this Incomplete Imperial Armament was a lot more intense than before it had recognized a master.

However, Chu Feng still grabbed that curved blade effortlessly. Even though that curved blade was giving its all to resist his grasp, and was trembling extremely intensely, Chu Feng had still managed to grab onto it. Not only did he grab the curved blade, he even directly snatched it from that woman's hand.

"You, you, you give that back," At this moment, the woman's expression took a huge change. She was frightened. She never would've expected that her own Incomplete Imperial Armament was actually snatched away by this wretched beggar she despised.

"Ordinary quality, inferior to my Infinity Edge," Chu Feng sneered, and then threw the curved blade back to the woman. He had never planned to really receive this Incomplete Imperial Armament. Not to mention that the woman would not truly hand it to him, even if she did, he would not accept it.

After the curved blade returned to her hand, that woman's worried heart finally managed to calm down. She had thought that Chu Feng was really planning to snatch her curved blade from her.

However, when she looked back to Chu Feng again, her gaze became complicated. At this time, she had a whole new level of respect toward Chu Feng.

"You said earlier that your weapon is called the Infinity Edge? Isn't that the Sword Crafting Villa's Venerated Lord Sword Crafter's weapon?" The woman suddenly asked. Her tone was no longer forceful. Instead, it had become mild. It was as if she was trying to alleviate her relationship with Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was extremely cold toward her. With an ice-cold tone, he said, "That does not concern you."

“I’ll tell you this. My name is Nangong Baihe. I am the Nangong Clan’s sixth young miss. There has yet to be anyone who has dared to speak to me in the manner you have,” The woman was enraged. She announced her own name, as well as her status. She was planning to suppress Chu Feng with her status.

However, Chu Feng was not at all scared. He lightly smiled and said, “That’s because you haven’t met me before.”

“You...” Nangong Baihe began to gnash her teeth in anger. However, she did not know how to refute Chu Feng. She then grabbed onto Nangong Moli’s hand and prepared to leave. She truly did not wish to speak with Chu Feng anymore. Else, she felt that she would be angered to death by him.

Baihe → Lily

Chapter 1565 – Young Hero, Help Me

Nangong Baihe wanted to bring Moli away. Chu Feng did not stop them. That was because he knew that he could not stop them.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Only a short moment after Nangong Baihe began to bring Moli away, an ear-piercing rumble suddenly sounded from the distant waters. The rumbling sounded like the cries of ten thousand bears or a dragon trampling on the sea.

Turning toward the direction of the voice, Chu Feng saw an enormous wave that reached a thousand meters tall surging toward them.

That wave was enormous. Before it, ordinary waves were like little shrimps encountering a gigantic whale. They were simply incomparable.

Not only was that wave enormous and overbearing, but contained within the wave were countless enormous sea monsters. The weakest among them were rank one Half Martial Emperors. As for the strongest, they were rank five Half Martial Emperors.

They were densely packed, and there were too many to be counted. From a guess, it appeared that there were at least several thousand or even over ten thousand such enormous and ferocious sea monsters. Each and every one of them had murderous appearances, as if they were searching for people to kill.

As for the most frightening matter, being pounded by the waves, those sea monsters were extremely fast. It was likely that the wave would soon swallow up Chu Feng and the others completely. Even if they wanted to escape, it would be extremely difficult for them to do so.

“Damn it, where did all these sea monsters come from? Is that giant wave still formed by a spirit formation? It possesses such

enormous might! It is only to reach a single Immortal Island, was there a need to make things so difficult?”

At this moment, Nangong Baihe's expression turned gloomy. However, she was not scared witless. Instead, she started to complain. Then, she suddenly grabbed onto Nangong Moli, threw her to Chu Feng and said, “I'll trouble you with this. Bring my younger sister and escape. Get away from this sea and return to the golden beach. At that time, my Nangong Imperial Clan will definitely provide you with ample rewards.”

After she finished saying those words, Nangong Baihe grabbed tightly onto her curved blade. She unleashed her boundless Half Martial Emperor's aura and began to walk toward the incoming wave.

“Why, are you planning to face it with your life on the line?” Chu Feng said with a light smile. At this moment, Chu Feng had a trace of a favorable impression toward this arrogant Nangong Baihe.

The reason for that was because she had chosen not to flee during this moment of life and death and instead, for the sake of her younger sister, had chosen to face the incoming disaster and sacrifice her own life in order to fight for an opportunity to let her younger sister live.

“Quickly, scram. I will only be able to stop them for a moment. If you do not escape right now, you'll all die here. While your death might not matter, do not cause my lil sis to die too.”

Nangong Baihe turned her head around and angrily shouted at Chu Feng. Then, she turned her head forward again and spoke no more.

At this moment, the power she released became stronger and stronger. A golden-bright and dazzling ‘emperor’ character appeared on her forehead. She had activated her Imperial Bloodline. Thus, her aura began to become even more powerful. At this moment, she was infinitely close to a rank two Half Martial

Emperor. However, it was only approaching and not having actually reached the level of rank two Half Martial Emperor. That said, this should be the limit to Nangong Baihe's strength.

"I can do it. They're merely sea monsters formed by spirit formations. They're not real. I am the grand sixth young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan. How can I possibly not be able to handle them?"

"No, it won't do. I know that I'm no match for them, yet I'm still trying to show off. I'll die."

"But, why fear death? As long as lil sis can continue to live, there will be hope. Mother will not have died in vain."

Nangong Baihe was conflicting with herself. The reason for that was because she did not wish to die. Even though she knew that what she was going to do would undoubtedly kill her, she was still choosing to do it. The reason for that was because she had her own conviction. Her younger sister was her conviction, her hope.

"Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash!!!"

Right at the moment when Nangong Baihe decided to face death with equanimity, a voice suddenly sounded from behind her. Following that, an extremely ferocious aura surged forth from behind her.

"That guy!!!"

When Nangong Baihe turned her head around, her expression immediately changed. Her mouth was wide open. Her eyes were wide open. She was deeply shocked.

That was because, at this moment, Chu Feng's long hair was drifting, and his clothes were fluttering. Holding onto the Infinity Edge, he was walking on the sea and toward her one step at a time.

Furthermore, at this moment, layer upon layer of crimson gaseous flames were revolving around him. Those gaseous flames were extremely strange. Like snakes, they were letting out strange

and extremely frightening hissing sounds. However, these gaseous flames caused Chu Feng to appear exceptionally powerful.

Facing Chu Feng's aura, even Nangong Baihe felt an enormous sense of oppression. Chu Feng's aura was no longer that of rank eight Martial King. Instead, he had become a rank one Half Martial Emperor.

At this moment, Chu Feng had arrived before Nangong Baihe. As for that enormous wave that contained countless sea monsters, it was also growing closer and closer.

“Eight successive slashes.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng began to brandish his Infinity Edge. In an instant, eight crimson slashes flew out from the Infinity Edge Chu Feng held in his hand. They landed onto that sea wave like a storm.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, ear-piercing explosions began to sound nonstop. The violent energy ripples continued to form. Wave upon wave of violent wind began to surge toward Chu Feng's direction. Not only did they cause the waves underneath their feet to surge violently, they also caused Nangong Moli and Nangong Baihe's footing to become unstable.

However, Chu Feng, although he was standing at the forefront of the incoming violent wind, even though he was being met with the crushing wind and surging waves, he was not moved in the slightest. In fact, not even a single drop of water landed on him.

At this moment, Nangong Baihe's eyes were shining even brighter, and her shock grew even stronger. She actually began to feel as if the person standing before her was not someone from the younger generation like herself, but was instead an exceptional expert, a peak martial cultivator.

“How could this be? This guy's aura, how could it be this

powerful? Exactly what are his origins?”

Nangong Baihe was truly shocked. As she was the Nangong Clan’s young miss, she knew of many things. Thus, she knew that the aura that Chu Feng was emitting right now was the most remarkable aura for cultivators.

This sort of aura could be innate or acquired. However, the more powerful the aura was, the more one had to pay to attain it, and the harder it would be to attain.

At this moment, the aura that Chu Feng was emitting was something that no one in all of the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation possessed.

This caused Nangong Baihe to feel that it was inconceivable, and become skeptical as to whether she was seeing an illusion. She did not dare to believe that Chu Feng could possess this sort of aura.

Finally, everything came to an end.

The violent winds stopped blowing. The ocean waves stopped surging. This region of water had become extremely calm. There was not the slightest trace of movement. The surrounding area was so frighteningly tranquil.

All of this was affected by Chu Feng’s aura.

“Wow! Big sister, look, didn’t I say that big brother was amazing? He only used a couple slashes, and actually killed all of those sea monsters. He’s even more amazing than you, big sister,” At this moment, Nangong Moli began to praise Chu Feng without the slightest hesitation.

“Never would I have expected that you were this powerful. I underestimated you,” Nangong Baihe walked over to Chu Feng. The gaze with which she looked at Chu Feng had completely changed. Even though she was still on guard, she had become much more gentle toward him.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly. He put his Infinity Edge away

and did not bother to answer Nangong Baihe.

“Seeing that you’re quite powerful, I’ll give you an opportunity. Protect my lil sis and me until we encounter the people from my Nangong Clan or reach the Immortal Island,” Nangong Baihe continued.

“I’d suggest you return. A place like this is truly not suited for a young miss like yourself,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around to leave.

“You really do not plan to help us?” Nangong Baihe asked.

Chu Feng ignored her and continued onward.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Nangong Baihe took a step and leapt toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng abruptly turned around. His gaze became fierce. If Nangong Baihe were to attack him, he would definitely not be polite toward her.

However, right after Nangong Baihe reached him, she actually fell down before Chu Feng, extended her arms widely and tightly grabbed onto Chu Feng’s thigh. With her head raised, a pitiful expression and wide open eyes, she looked to Chu Feng and said, “Young Hero, please, please be kind-hearted. Please help us sisters. We have no one to rely on. In this sea, we will be all alone and impoverished. If you refuse to help us, even if we do not get eaten by the sea monsters, we will be smashed to death by the waves.”

At this moment, Chu Feng was stunned. Unable to help himself, his expression took a huge change. Nangong Baihe’s current action was a complete change compared to her actions before. The change was so great that Chu Feng was unable to accept it.

Chapter 1566 – Change In Attitude

“What are you doing? Let go of me.” Chu Feng tried to struggle free.

“Young Hero, if you refuse to help us, then I’m not letting go.”

“Do you really have no heart to protect those of the fairer sex, do you really have the heart to see me and my lil sis die on this vast ocean?” Nangong Baihe grabbed onto Chu Feng’s thigh even tighter. It was as if she was planning to be dragged around by him.

“The hell, you’re a grand young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan, how could you not have moral principles?”

At this moment, Chu Feng finally believed that what was happening in front of him was not an illusion. Instead, the sixth young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan was really kneeling before him, grabbing onto his thigh and shamelessly begging him to help them.

“I’m only going to ask you whether you’re going to help us or not. If you refuse to help us, I’ll kill myself right now. After all, in this dangerous place, it is impossible for me and my lil sis to survive with the abilities that we possess. Rather than being eaten by those sea monsters, I’d rather kill myself.”

“However, rest assured, before I die, I will leave a signal behind for my clan to tell them that it was you who killed me and my lil sis. My Nangong Imperial Clan will not let you get away,” Nangong Baihe said.

“You’re actually threatening me with your death?” Chu Feng felt even more speechless. This Nangong Baihe had completely toppled the way Chu Feng had thought of her through her actions.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that the Nangong Baihe in his impression was completely mistaken. Instead, it appeared that this was the actual Nangong Baihe. She had no shame, no moral

principles, and would even use every means at her disposal to attain her goals.

“Big brother, please, just help us. I really wish to go to the Immortal Island. I want to meet that Weaponry Refinement Immortal,” Nangong Moli also walked over.

“Enough, enough. I’ll bring the two of you with me. However, I must tell you two this in advance. The path ahead is filled with unknown dangers. I cannot guarantee that we will be able to reach the Immortal Island. Thus, do not be too hopeful,” Chu Feng said.

“Rest assured. As long as we can run into our Nangong Imperial Clan’s people, we will immediately leave you. Before we separate, we will also reward you appropriately. I, Nangong Baihe, am one who will always honor my word.”

“Well then, it’s decided. Come, let’s go.”

Nangong Baihe suddenly stood up and began to tidy up her clothing with a beaming smile on her face. Then, bringing Nangong Moli with her, she proceeded to walk ahead.

Her appearance was as if nothing had happened earlier. She was as natural as she could appear to be.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt admiration for this Nangong Baihe from the bottom of his heart. At this time, he had encountered what was meant by ‘[can bow and submit or can stand tall](#).’

However, one thing was undeniable. That was, after Chu Feng fully displayed his capabilities, Nangong Baihe’s attitude toward him had completely transformed.

As for Chu Feng, he was someone amenable to coaxing but not coercion. After Nangong Baihe’s attitude toward him became very friendly, Chu Feng was also no longer as harsh and cold toward her.

When she asked for his name again, Chu Feng ended up telling her his name. Merely, he still did not mention that he was a

disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain.

Actually, there was another reason why Chu Feng ended up telling Nangong Baihe his true name. That was because he was unable to bear Nangong Baihe addressing him as 'Young Hero.'

However, a thing worthy of being mentioned was that after getting to know her, Chu Feng discovered that Nangong Baihe's character was pretty good. At least, after knowing her, she no longer had that sort of arrogant attitude. After her arrogance was gone, it seemed that Nangong Baihe revealed her true character: a young girl who loved to speak, loved to laugh and loved to joke around. Journeying together with her was quite joyous.

"Someone's coming," Suddenly, Chu Feng's gaze was fixed ahead. His gaze became serious. Nangong Baihe hurriedly pushed Nangong Moli behind her. She even took out her curved blade.

In this sort of place, even if one were to encounter others, it did not necessarily mean that one would encounter good people. Anything and anyone could become their enemy.

Sure enough, not long after Chu Feng said those words, a group of people appeared before their line of sight.

It was a group of aged old men. There were a total of twenty three people. They were all wearing the same apparel. Thus, they should be from the same power. Their cultivations were all not weak. The weakest among them were rank one Half Martial Emperors. As for the strongest person among them, he was a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

However, their current situation was not very good. While that rank three Half Martial Emperor appeared fine, the rank two Half Martial Emperors appeared to be in poor health. Their auras were also weak. As for the rank one Half Martial Emperors, they appeared as if they had received serious injuries and were extremely weak. They were all being supported by the rank two Half Martial Emperors.

“Seniors, have you all encountered some trouble?” Chu Feng walked toward them and inquired. He felt that this group of old men were not a threat to them.

The leader of the group, that rank three Half Martial Emperor, asked. “Little friends, you all must have just set foot onto this sea from the golden beach, right?”

“Yes, that’s right,” Chu Feng answered.

“Little friends, heed my advice and return. As you all have not entered too deep, you are still able to return now,” The old man urged.

“Old man, what do you mean by that? We have traveled long and far, and only managed to get here after crashing our way through the storm with great difficulty. Yet, you want us to return?” Nangong Baihe was angered. Her young miss’ arrogant attitude was activated again.

The old man frowned upon hearing her words. However, he evidently knew that Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Thus, he did not refute her and decided to ignore her.

He continued to say to Chu Feng, “Young man, we are elders from the Sea King Sect. We entered this sea five days ago. When we came, we had a total of a hundred and thirty-eight people. However, right now, only twenty-three remain.”

“We are unable to set foot onto the Immortal Island. In fact, it is impossible for us to set foot onto the Immortal Island. This sea has only been open for the last ten days. However, in that period of time, countless people have died.”

“The sea area that you’re all in right now can be said to be relatively safe. Other than encountering occasional sea monsters formed by spirit formations, you will not encounter many dangers.”

“However, if you are to continue forward, the weather will begin to change. At that place, each step will be extremely difficult. Even if you don’t encounter sea monsters, just walking will exhaust all of your physical strength.”

“Truth be told, it will be extremely difficult for you all to continue onward with your cultivations,” The old man advised kindly.

“Old man, do not look down on others. While he might appear to be a rank eight Martial King, he is actually a rank one Half Martial Emperor, and might even be many times more powerful than you.”

Nangong Baihe said while pointing at Chu Feng. When Chu Feng killed that group of sea monsters, he had used his lightnings’ power. Thus, Nangong Baihe knew how powerful he really was.

“It would seem that little friend is a concealed expert and has hidden his cultivation.”

“However, even with that being the case, it will still be extremely difficult to reach the Immortal Island. If you all really plan to go, I can give you all some advice.”

That old man pointed ahead and said, “If you continue onward following this direction, there will be an isle. The weather on the isle does not change. Furthermore, there are goods and replenishments there. Furthermore, there is a map on the isle. That map will give guidance as to how to get to the Immortal Island.”

“Thank you, senior, for your advice,” Chu Feng expressed his thanks. If the words spoken by this old man were true, then they would indeed be very helpful to them.

“However, I must still advise you all that it is best to give up. There is no need to play around with your life, all for the sake of meeting Weaponry Refinement Immortal and obtaining a weapon from him. That’s because, even if you were to arrive at that

peaceful isle that I mentioned, it will only be the beginning. The path further down will be even harder,” The old man continued to urge against it.

“Rest assured, old man. The heavens help the worthy. It might be possible that we will be able to get through. Not only will we reach that isle, we might even reach the Immortal Island,” Nangong Baihe said with an expression of confidence.

“In that case, good luck.”

After the old man said those words, he spoke no more and began to lead his subordinates toward the direction of the golden beach.

Very flexible person.

Chapter 1567 – Qunguang Brothers

Chu Feng, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli continued onward. They encountered many sea monsters on their journey. However, it seemed that none of the sea monsters underneath rank five Half Martial Emperor were able to trouble Chu Feng.

However, it was as that old man had said. After they continued onward, the most difficult aspect was not the sea monsters. Instead, it was the weather.

The violent wind blocked their line of sight. The torrential rain was so heavy that it looked like solid pillars. Most importantly, contained within the violent storm of wind and rain were very strong powers capable of attacking one's body.

How could this even be said to be wind and rain? It was simply a slaughtering formation. Those below Half Martial Emperor would simply not be able to resist the wind and rain. Even for Half Martial Emperor-level experts, they would not be able to resist it for an extended period of time. For someone like Nangong Moli, there was even less of a need to mention how difficult it was.

Fortunately, Chu Feng possessed very powerful world spirit techniques. Using the absolute defense of his world spirit formation, Chu Feng had allowed Nangong Moli and Nangong Baihe to not feel any pressure.

However, this came with a very great price to Chu Feng. To use spirit formations in such a place for an extended period of time was a very strenuous thing to do. Fortunately, Chu Feng possessed extraordinary world spirit techniques. Else, he would truly not be able to withstand the storm.

At this moment, the storm of wind and rain was still as violent as before. The sound of the sea waves and the roaring wind was like the howls of countless ferocious beasts. Hearing them, one would feel frightened to the bone.

Chu Feng and the others were walking on top of such a sea. A golden spirit formation barrier covered them. This spirit formation barrier allowed the three of them to not be rained on or blown by the wind. However, that pressure still caused Chu Feng to feel great difficulty in taking every step.

“Big brother, should we rest a bit? It would be fine for us to continue onward after resting for a bit,” Even though Nangong Moli was feeling very relaxed at the moment, she was also feeling very pained to see Chu Feng’s strenuous appearance.

“Chu Feng, what my lil sis said is correct. Let’s take a rest,” Even Nangong Baihe was moved. On their journey here, if it hadn’t been for Chu Feng, even if she and her younger sister hadn’t been eaten by the sea monsters, they would still have been killed by this sort of weather.

The reason why they were able to feel so at ease and safe was because Chu Feng had decided to shoulder all of the difficulties, all of the calamities, by himself.

Thus, regardless of how cold-hearted Nangong Baihe might be, she would still be very emotionally moved by Chu Feng. Regardless, she was not inherently a cold-hearted person.

“It’s alright. That isle is ahead. Let’s properly rest after we reach the isle,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Really? Why can’t I see it?” Nangong Baihe’s eyes shone with radiance. She had used a special technique, and yet, even though she was a gold-cloak world spiritist, she was unable to see anything. In such vile weather, the range of her line of sight was only several tens of meters.

“Trust me, it’s right ahead,” Chu Feng said confidently.

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had said. After they traveled another thousand meters, an isle really appeared.

After they set foot onto the isle, not only did the howling wind

and torrential rain stop, even the sky became clear. With a blue sky and white clouds, it was truly a beautiful scene. In fact, one could even hear the sounds of birds and smell the fragrant flowers on the isle.

However, when they looked backwards, torrential rain covered the entire sea. It could be said that other than the small region contained within the isle, the rest of the sea was still filled with extremely frightening and vile weather.

“Wow, this is so magical!” Even though Nangong Moli was already twelve years old, she had the temperament of a child. After finally getting away from that vile weather, she immediately started to let loose her joy. Her appearance was truly adorable.

At this moment, it was Nangong Baihe who was more considerate. With a nervous expression, she looked to Chu Feng and asked, “Chu Feng, are you alright?”

“Rest assured, I’m fine,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. He was not lying. Even though he was covered with sweat, his spirit power was much stronger than an ordinary person’s. Thus, he was truly not hindered too much. Merely, he appeared to be a bit weak in health.

“Really? You must not try to persist if you cannot. Else, if something were to happen to you, this lady here and my lil sis would be out of luck.” Seeing that Chu Feng really did appear to be fine, Nangong Baihe immediately displayed her arrogant young miss behavior.

“Never would we have expected that even the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan would arrive. Welcome, welcome.” Right at this moment, voices sounded from the center of the isle. Turning their heads toward the voice, Chu Feng and the others discovered that there were actually people on the island.

They were three men, two women and an old man. The cultivations of the three men and two women were truly not very

powerful. They were all Martial Kings. The strongest among them was only on par with Chu Feng, a rank eight Martial King. The weakest was even weaker than Nangong Moli, a rank five Martial King.

It was likely only because of that old man that they had been able to reach this place. That old man had the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, judging by their outfits, they should all have been from the same power.

It was only afterward that Chu Feng came to know that, as expected, they were from the same power. Fortunately, they did not separate in the storm. That was why they had all managed to arrive here. They could be considered to be extremely lucky.

After reaching the isle, Chu Feng asked curiously, "Excuse me, are you all the only people on this isle?"

"No, a lot of people have come in succession. However, the majority of them have left. Other than us master and disciples, there are only two other people on this island."

"However, those two people are very ferocious. It's best that you all do not provoke them. They are not fond of strangers, and we have been driven out by them," That old man said as he pointed to a palace on the isle.

"Driven out? What do you mean?" Nangong Baihe asked.

"There is a map in the palace. Furthermore, it contains a place for one to rest, as well as a lot of delicacies. However, those two men forcibly seized that place for themselves, and refused us entry," That old man said.

"How absurd! I wish to see who it is who dares to act this arrogant," Nangong Baihe stood up and began to walk toward the palace. Chu Feng and Nangong Moli also followed behind her.

After they arrived at the palace hall and opened the entrance, a delicious smell immediately hit them in the face. It was the smell

of barbecue. There were two meter-long lamb legs that were being roasted on top of a fire spirit formation in the middle of the palace hall.

Sitting on the two sides of the fire formation were two middle-aged men. One was a robust burly man with an ominous gaze. The other was a thin and weak-looking white-haired man with a nefarious gaze. The aura emitted by these two men were both those of rank three Half Martial Emperors.

Even though one of them was big and the other was thin, they resembled each other. Likely, the two of them were brothers. However, both of their faces and bodies were covered with scars. From a glance, they appeared to be extremely ferocious, and didn't look like good people.

"Big sister, those two people look so scary," Nangong Moli was frightened by their appearances and immediately hugged Nangong Baihe.

"Yoh, it's actually the two young misses of the Nangong Clan. Truly excuse us for not coming out to greet you two," When they saw Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli, the two middle-aged men appeared to be somewhat surprised. They carefully inspected their surroundings, and only stood up after they discovered that it was only Chu Feng, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli who had come. Then, with polite smiles on their faces, they walked over.

"I am Lei Buqun..."

"I am Lei Buguang..."

"Everyone addresses us brothers as Qunguang Brothers. May we know how we should address the two young misses?"

"You do not have to know our names. I merely wish to ask you two whether it was the two of you who drove those people out," said Nangong Baihe as she pointed at the people outside.

"My, how could there be such a thing? Do not listen to their

nonsense. We are not that sort of people,” These two middle-aged men seemed to fear the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. They did not admit to their malicious deed. However, when they responded to Nangong Baihe, they appeared to have a bit of a guilty conscience.

Chu Feng noticed that both of them had their hand on their Cosmos Sacks. It was the motion of someone trying to take out their weapon.

Chapter 1568 – People One Should Not Talk About

“That’s good then,” Nangong Baihe did not bother to investigate the matter. However, even though she did not investigate it, she also did not try to have the old man and his disciples outside come in. Instead, she grabbed onto Nangong Moli’s hand and walked into the palace.

Likely, she also knew that these two men were actually very hard to deal with. Even though they were acting very humble right now, it was not because they feared her. Rather, it was because they feared her clan.

There was no reason for her to have unnecessary conflict with these two men because of the people outside. Speaking of it, this Nangong Baihe was a very realistic and bright person.

“Young misses, your journey here must have been difficult. You must be hungry, right?” Seeing that Nangong Baihe did not plan to do anything to them, those two men immediately followed them back into the palace hall and politely handed the two lamb legs that they had finished roasting to Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli.

Chu Feng took a glance at the lamb legs and discovered that nothing had been done to them. Thus, he did not bother to do anything regarding the men’s action. Instead, he directly walked further into the palace hall. The reason for that was because there was an enormous map there. It was the map to the Immortal Island.

Chu Feng discovered that this sea region was enormous. There were a total of ten isles like the one that they were on. As for the map, it indicated that each island led to another relatively larger one. However, that island was not the Immortal Island. That was because there was a very large island ahead of that island. Two

words were written on top of that farther island: Immortal Island.

Thus, Chu Feng came to an understanding of the map. This sea region was most likely separated into ten regions. They were currently on one such region. Furthermore, the endpoint of this region was the current isle that they were presently located on. Right now, what they would have to do would be to gather together on another island.

If there wasn't anything unexpected, a lot of people should have gathered on that island.

That was because that island was the location where all the people from the ten regions must gather. As long as they reached that island, there would only be a single path left, the path directly toward the Immortal Island. However, merely by looking at the map, Chu Feng was able to tell that the last path would not be easy to travel. In fact, it might be the hardest path to travel.

However, what Chu Feng cared about was not that. What he cared about was whether Zi Ling and Su Rou might have come here, and whether or not they were safe.

He was also worried about which region Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue might be in, as well as their safety. After all, Chu Feng had realized how powerful this sea was. It was truly a very dangerous place.

"Chu Feng, try out this meat, they've roasted it pretty well," Right at this moment, Nangong Baihe walked over to Chu Feng with a lamb leg in hand. It was emitting a delicious smell. She had yet to eat it.

"I'm not hungry, you all can eat," Chu Feng said.

"Come on, give it a try. We've relied on you this entire journey, and you have been put to a lot of trouble. If you refuse to eat, I'll find it very difficult to eat too," Nangong Baihe said.

"That's right. Big brother, eat first. If you don't eat, Moli won't

eat either,” Nangong Moli held the other lamb leg and walked over with a pouting expression. These two sisters were actually determined to make Chu Feng eat.

“Okay then. In that case, let’s eat together,” Chu Feng received the lamb leg from Nangong Baihe and took a bite off of it. Speaking of taste, this meat was indeed roasted pretty decently.

Seeing that Chu Feng had begun to eat, Nangong Moli and Nangong Baihe began to eat the other lamb leg with smiles on their faces.

Actually, having reached their level, even if they did not eat or drink for months, they would not die from hunger. However, it remained that they were people. The journey had left them very weary. If they were to be able to eat delicious foods, it would also help comfort their mental state enormously. Thus, the three of them enjoyed the lamb legs.

“Who is that boy? He actually managed to become associated with the Nangong Imperial Clan’s two young misses?”

“No clue. Perhaps he’s only a pretty boy who managed to obtain enormous luck to receive the good graces from those two young misses.” The two brothers, Lei Buqun and Lei Buguang, began to mutter in low voices. When they spoke, a deep sense of jealousy could be heard in their words.

Even though they were muttering with low voices, someone at Chu Feng’s level of cultivation would be able to clearly hear what they were talking about. Evidently, the two of them also knew that Chu Feng would be able to hear them. That was why they had deliberately muttered with low voices. Sure enough, these two fellows were not good-natured people.

“Chu Feng, they’re speaking ill of you. Are you not planning to teach them a lesson?!” Nangong Baihe said. Even though she knew that she was no match for the two of them, she firmly believed that Chu Feng would definitely be able to defeat them. That was

because she had experienced how powerful Chu Feng was during the journey. Ordinary rank three Half Martial Emperors would definitely be no match for Chu Feng.

“Forget about it. Why lower oneself to the level of people like them?” Chu Feng refused. He acted as if he did not hear anything.

“So he’s actually a coward. Hahaha...” Seeing that Chu Feng did not react, those two men began to directly insult him and laugh loudly.

“You two, pay attention to the way you speak. The troops of my Nangong Imperial Clan following behind us will soon arrive. If you do not behave properly, you’ll have to bear the consequences later,” Nangong Baihe was unable to sit tight anymore. However, she could not win against these two men in a fight. Thus, she could only bring up her Nangong Imperial Clan suppress them.

After hearing the words of Nangong Baihe, the expressions of those two men changed. Sure enough, they did not dare to insult Chu Feng anymore. However, their mouths did not stop. Instead, they began to continue on, discussing other things.

“Big bro, I wonder what happened to those two chicks who left this place several days ago. Do you think they’ll be able to reach the Immortal Island?” Lei Buguang asked curiously.

“If it’s the two of them, I think they’ll be able to. After all, they’re so powerful. Even though they’re young, they are much more powerful than us brothers. They are not ordinary members of the younger generation. They are true geniuses.” When mentioning this matter, a faint lingering fear appeared in Lei Buqun’s eyes.

“That’s right. That chick wearing the blue long skirt was truly too powerful. The coldness she emitted was terrifyingly cold. It was simply enough to take one’s life. Even I was unable to endure that coldness. Even though she is a rank one Half Martial Emperor, I am definitely no match for her,” Lei Buguang also had an

expression of lingering fear.

“While that blue skirted chick was very powerful, I feel that purple skirted chick was even more powerful. Even though she did not reveal her strength, I keep thinking that she’s a very frightening existence,” Lei Buqun said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart immediately throbbed. It was evident that those two men were talking about Su Rou and Zi Ling.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt immense joy in his heart. It would seem that not only were Su Rou and Zi Ling here, they had also coincidentally been sent to the same region as he was. Based on what those two men said, Su Rou and Zi Ling should be very powerful right now. Furthermore, it seemed that Su Rou was now more skillful in using the Ice Pearl in her body. To Chu Feng, this was good news.

However, soon, Chu Feng’s expression changed. That was because those two men began to speak about things that they shouldn’t have.

“That’s right. That’s actually what I felt too. However, I also felt that that purple skirted chick was truly too beautiful. She was even more beautiful than the blue skirted chick. Her fair skinned face was simply perfect. If I could hug her and caresses her body, oh how nice that would be. If I could sleep with a chick like her, even if I were to die, I wouldn’t regret anything,” As that Lei Buguang spoke, he actually began to fondle the air as if imagining something. He had a very lewd and shameless smile on his face.

“Look at your shameless appearance. However, I actually thought of the same thing as you. Hahaha,” Lei Buqun also began to smile the same sort of lewd smile.

“Two shameless scoundrels,” Hearing their conversation, Nangong Baihe started to frown. However, she did not say anything. After all, the two of them were discussing their own

topics. Thus, she had no right to interfere.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly stood up and began to walk toward those two brothers.

“You two, how do you wish to die?” Chu Feng asked.

“What did you say? You dare speak to us Qunguang Brothers like this? Have you grown tired of living?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, those two men were immediately enraged. Not only did they stand up, they even took out their respective Royal Armaments from their Cosmos Sacks. They had the appearance of wanting to teach Chu Feng a lesson.

“Zzzzzzzzz~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s body started to flicker with lighting. Then, he suddenly attacked. ‘Woosh, woosh, woosh.’ Several crimson rays flew past, and then the Qunguang Brothers fell to the ground. They began to roll around while howling in pain. Blood soon began to spread and completely filled the ground below them.

Not only had their cultivations been crippled, their tongues had also been sliced off. Even their family jewels had been sliced off. With their dantians destroyed and their consciousnesses shattered, they had extremely tragic appearances.

“I shall have you two bleed to death,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he returned to Nangong Baihe, picked up the lamb leg on the ground, and began to continue eating it nonchalantly, as if nothing had happened.

“What happened with you? Earlier, when they insulted you, you completely ignored them. Why did you suddenly attack them now and even take their lives?” Nangong Baihe asked with both shock and fear. That was because Chu Feng’s actions were too ruthless. Furthermore, he acted so nonchalantly after doing those things. It

was as if he did not think killing them was anything serious.

“That’s because they were speaking about people whom they should not have,” Chu Feng said.

Chapter 1569 – Reinforcements

“The two people that they spoke of, you know them?” Nangong Baihe was very smart. She understood what Chu Feng meant.

Chu Feng smiled lightly, and did not answer her question. However, his smile told Nangong Baihe the answer.

“In that case, they really do deserve to die,” Nangong Baihe smiled. She understood that Chu Feng’s inability to tolerate the Qunguang Brothers meant that the two people that the Qunguang Brothers mentioned should be of considerable importance to Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Oh, that’s right. I have a question that I wish to ask you. I wonder if you might be able to answer me,”

“What is the question? Go ahead and ask. If it’s something that I can tell you, I will definitely answer you,” Nangong Baihe said.

“What sort of person is senior Nangong Longjian?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng did not know Nangong Longjian. The reason he asked about Nangong Longjian was because of Bai Ruochen.

Based on what he knew, Bai Ruochen’s father was Nangong Longjian. However, Bai Ruochen and her mother were like a mystery. Right now, he had managed to coincidentally come across people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Thus, Chu Feng wished to know what sort of person Nangong Longjian was.

“You’re asking about Lord Longjian? Actually, I am also not very familiar with Lord Longjian. I have never met him in my entire life. All I know about are Lord Longjian’s various achievements.”

“Lord Longjian is very powerful. Even though I have not met him before, Lord Longjian is the strongest expert among all of Nangong Imperial Clan’s living experts. Likely, even our Lord Clan Chief

would not be a match for Lord Longjian,” Nangong Baihe said.

“That’s right, that’s right. Lord Longjian is my idol,” When mentioning Nangong Longjian, Nangong Moli also had an excited expression.

“Senior Nangong Longjian is really that powerful?” Chu Feng had heard that Nangong Longjian was very powerful. However, he had never expected Nangong Baihe to say that Nangong Longjian was even stronger than their Nangong Imperial Clan’s clan chief.

One must know that the Nangong Imperial Clan’s clan chief was an existence stronger than all of the Nine Power’s Assembly Masters. His power was not limited to only strength, it was also in status. It was something that was publicly accepted in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

“That’s right. He’s extremely powerful. Lord Longjian is someone who has subdued an Imperial Armament. It is a real Imperial Armament, not an Incomplete ones or a copy. It is the incomparably mighty Imperial Armament,” Nangong Baihe said with a serious expression.

“Imperial Armament, was it?” When mentioning the Imperial Armament, Chu Feng started to recall the remnant left behind by Qing Xuantian in the Nine Provinces Continent. That was because there was an Imperial Armament in that place. Chu Feng had experienced that Imperial Armament, and knew how frightening it was.

Upon thinking about how Nangong Longjian was able to subdue such a powerful item, Chu Feng determined that he would appear to really be very powerful.

“Might senior Nangong Longjian possess a daughter?” Chu Feng asked.

Bai Ruochen was Nangong Longjian’s daughter. However, her name was not Nangong Ruochen. Instead, she used her mother’s

surname. Chu Feng knew that there was definitely a secret to this. Thus, he wished to understand what was going on.

“Daughter? Of course not. Lord Longjian has wholeheartedly focused on martial cultivation, and has traveled to the various dangerous places in the Holy Land of Martialism. He would temper himself with dangers in order to reach a breakthrough to a higher level of cultivation.”

“He has not even had a wife. Thus, how could he have a daughter?” Nangong Baihe flat-out denied the possibility of Nangong Longjian having a daughter. Then, her little lips lifted upward, her eyes narrowed, and a mischievous smile appeared on her face. She asked, “Hey hey hey, you couldn’t possibly have some sort of idea, right? You must have thought that if Lord Longjian possessed a daughter, you’d go and tangle with her, isn’t that right?”

“I merely asked out of curiosity,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. However, in his heart, he came to a certain conclusion that the relationship between Bai Ruochen and Nangong Longjian was, as expected, extraordinary. However, Chu Feng firmly believed that Bai Ruochen was Nangong Longjian’s daughter.

Merely, he did not understand why this matter was being hidden from the public. Was she unable to attain acknowledgement, or could she have concealed her identity on purpose? Likely, even Bai Ruochen herself did not know why, and only Bai Ruochen’s mother and Nangong Longjian would know why.

“Someone’s coming,” Suddenly, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the outside of the palace hall. The inside of the isle did not have any sort of obstruction. Thus, Chu Feng’s perception was capable of covering the entire isle. Thus, when people appeared on the isle, he was able to notice it immediately.

Sure enough, soon, a group of people entered the palace hall. There were a total of eleven people. They were all wearing gray

gowns. On their waists were the same sort of title plates. It was evident that these people were all from the same power.

Furthermore, all of them possessed quite decent cultivations. The weakest among them were rank two Half Martial Emperors, and the strongest was a rank five Half Martial Emperor.

However, even though they possessed high levels of cultivation, their battle power was not high at all; they all possessed ordinary battle power. This meant that they did not manage to obtain their current cultivation with absolute talent and a short period of time. Instead, they relied on the accumulation of time, their own effort, decent talent and certain chance opportunities to obtain their current levels of cultivation.

Thus, these eleven people, regardless of what sort of age they appeared to be, their actual ages were at least five hundred years old.

“Miss Baihe, Miss Moli, we’ve finally found you. Why is it only the two of you?” When the leader of the group saw Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli, he had an expression of joy. He immediately walked over and half kneeled to greet them.

“Why have you all only arrived now? I had thought that you all wouldn’t be coming,” Nangong Baihe snorted coldly. It was clear that they knew each other.

“Miss Baihe, we encountered some troubles on the road. That’s why we ended up being late. I am truly sorry about that.”

“Are there only the two of you here? It would seem that you all have been separated by that storm too. For the sake of protecting young misses and young masters, our Three Thousand Monastery had dispatched a total of nine hundred and eighty-one people. However, including myself, we only managed to find eleven people,” The old man leading the group explained.

After hearing their following conversation, Chu Feng came to an

understanding that this group of people were from a power by the name of the Three Thousand Monastery. This Three Thousand Monastery was made up of three thousand Half Martial Emperor-level experts. It was a subsidiary power under the Nangong Imperial Clan.

This time around, they had dispatched nine hundred and eighty-one people to journey to the Immortal Island to protect the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

However, due to the fact that they had encountered some troubles on the road here, they had arrived late. To be able to come across one another here could be said to be a coincidence.

“I truly would never have expected that little friend Chu Feng was a hidden expert. Fortunately, you were there to protect the two young misses. I am truly grateful.”

“However, since we’ve managed to arrive, you can hand the rest of the journey to us. There is no need for you to exhaust any more strength or effort. We will definitely make sure to help you and the two young misses reach the Immortal Island,” After the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head came to know about what happened with Chu Feng and Nangong Baihe, he began to express his thanks nonstop.

However, even though he was expressing his thanks, Chu Feng was able to tell that he was very skeptical of Chu Feng’s strength, and even looked down on him.

He didn’t seem to believe what Nangong Baihe had said. Perhaps, to him, Chu Feng was nothing more than a swindler who had used some special method to deceive Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli’s trust.

“In that case, I will have to trouble seniors. If we can, what do you all think about continuing with the journey right away?” Chu Feng did not care about what they thought of him. When he knew that Su Rou and Zi Ling had arrived in this place, he became

impatient to chase after them.

“This... the path here was a bit difficult. I think it would be better to rest for a bit. Furthermore, we still have to carefully study this map, no?” The elders of the Three Thousand Monastery were reluctant to do so. They had managed to travel past the storm with great difficulty, and had now arrived in such a beautiful place with birdsong, fragrant flowers, food and drink. Naturally, they would wish to rest and reorganize here before proceeding onward.

“It’s just a lousy map, what’s there to study about? Listen to Chu Feng, let’s leave now,” However, Nangong Baihe spoke out against it. Her attitude was very decisive.

“Okay then, let’s do as Miss Baihe says,” With Nangong Baihe speaking for it, they did not dare to refuse. Thus, they had no choice but to take the lead onward.

However, Chu Feng noticed that when the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head turned around, the glance that he looked to Chu Feng with contained a trace of displeasure.

As for Chu Feng, he decided to ignore it. Even though that monastery head was a rank five Half Martial Emperor, he was only an ordinary rank five Half Martial Emperor. If Chu Feng were to go all out, the monastery head would not necessarily be a match for him. Thus, Chu Feng did not fear them playing any tricks on him.

Chapter 1570 – No Way Back

Before they left, Chu Feng personally went to ask the old man and the five young people on the isle whether they would want to go with them.

The response he received from them was that they planned to continue to stay on this isle, and they would not take any more risks.

They would wait until the trials were over, when the sea returned to normal, and then return to the golden beach.

Seeing that they had decided, Chu Feng did not try to urge them to join him and the others. Instead, he directly set off.

The journey ahead was being led by the people from the Three Thousand Monastery. They were all very proficient in world spirit techniques. Furthermore, three among them were even royal-cloak world spiritists. Thus, Chu Feng was able to feel a lot more at ease.

However, good things never last forever. Following the path on the map from the isle, a forked path soon appeared before them.

Not only was this forked path not recorded on the map, there were also passages formed by two storms. In other words, if Chu Feng and the others wanted to continue onward, they could only choose between the two paths, as the rest of the sea was occupied by frightening storms and was simply impossible to travel through.

These two storm passages were also quite interesting. The passage on the left possessed howling winds, torrential rain and flashing lightnings. From a glance, one could tell that it was very dangerous.

However, the passage on the right was the exact opposite. Even though it was also surrounded by violent storms, the storms did not have any attack power. Thus, it could be said that the path was

very smooth and easy to travel. From merely a single glance, one could tell that the passage on the right was safer.

“We’re going left. Even though the left seems to be dangerous, it’s actually just a trick. Even though the right passage seems to be simple, I fear that it will only lead to a disaster,” That Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head looked to the two passages and analyzed.

“Monastery Head, I think you’ve been deceived,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say? How am I deceived?” The Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head asked with a displeased expression. It seemed he deeply disliked Chu Feng questioning his decision.

“The left passage seems to be dangerous, and the right passage seems to be safe. Anyone with any bit of intelligence will know that they should take the seemingly dangerous passage. For example, Monastery Head, you’ve thought of that too. However, I can tell you with certainty that these two passages are there to deceive people like yourself,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you mean by that? Are you implying that I am thinking myself to be clever, only to have myself become the victim of my own ingenuity?” The Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head became even more displeased. A trace of anger could be heard in his tone.

Actually, he had looked down upon Chu Feng from the very start. Thus, how could he allow someone who he looked down upon to criticize him?

“That is not what I meant. I merely wish to tell you that world spiritists should look at this sort of spirit formation with their minds, and not only with their eyes.”

“Only by using one’s eyes to look and one’s mind to analyze will one be able to attain the correct judgement,” Chu Feng said.

“Yoh, are you implying that your world spirit techniques are

stronger than mine? That the decision that you've come to after analyzing the two passages is to take the one on the right, that seemingly safe road?"

"If you wish to take that path, then go ahead. Just remember, when you die there, don't blame me for not warning you, brainless moron," The Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head's words were filled with anger. He actually even began to insult Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng only smiled lightly at the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head's insult and decided to ignore it. He was disinclined to bother arguing with this sort of person.

"Pay attention to the way you speak. Chu Feng is not someone who you can insult. If it weren't for him, my lil sis and I might have already died." Right at this moment, Nangong Baihe was unable to continue watching this.

"Miss Baihe, it is this old man that doesn't know how to speak. I should not have insulted your friend. Merely, please trust me. We must take the left passage. If we are to take the right passage, we will only be courting death." The Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head did not dare to be disrespectful toward Nangong Baihe.

Even though Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were not the daughters of the Nangong Imperial Clan's clan chief, it remained that their father possessed quite a high standing in the Nangong Imperial Clan. Else, the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head would not have known their names.

"Chu Feng, let's take the left passage. I also feel that even though the right passage appears to be safe, it should actually be filled with hidden dangers. As for the left passage, it's the complete opposite," Nangong Baihe urged Chu Feng.

"When even you can tell that the left passage appears to be dangerous but should be safer, how could the person who set up

this formation not have thought of that?”

“Who was it that set up this spirit formation? It is that Weaponry Refinement Immortal. When he set up this spirit formation, did you think that he would have made it so simple that we can see through his spirit formation with a single glance?”

“Nangong Baihe, I can tell you with certainty that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal did this deliberately to have you all feel that the more dangerous path is the safer path. He has done so to deceive you all.”

“In truth, not only does the left passage appear to be dangerous, it is actually very dangerous. Not only does the right passage appear to be safe, it is also actually safe.”

“This is actually a simple-looking yet very difficult multiple choice question. It is there precisely to test our intelligence,” Chu Feng’s gaze and tone became serious. He did not wish for Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli to take the wrong path.

“Little fellow, no matter how powerful the Weaponry Refinement Immortal is, he is still a mortal and not a god. Other than having stronger strength than us, his intelligence is not necessarily much higher than ours. Thus, it’s best that you do not think of him as a legend,” The Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head mocked and ridiculed.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly and decided to ignore the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head again. He looked to Nangong Baihe and said, “Are you determined that you’re going to follow them?”

“Chu Feng, I think that what the Monastery Head says is not without justification,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Got it, I wish you luck,” As Chu Feng spoke, he turned around resolutely and proceeded to walk into the right passage.

“Big sister, how about we go with big brother Chu Feng?”

Nangong Moli grabbed Nangong Baihe's hand and swung it back and forth nonstop.

"Lil sis, I also do not want Chu Feng to throw his life away. However, I must take responsibility for you. Else, I will have let down our late mother."

Even though Nangong Baihe also had an expression of hesitation as she looked to Chu Feng's back that was gradually disappearing from her line of sight, she did not choose to follow him.

"That young man dared to say that I'm thinking myself to be clever, only to have myself become the victim of my own ingenuity? In fact, the one that's thinking himself to be clever is him. Truly young and inexperienced. His death is his own fault," The Three Thousand Monastery's head mocked.

"I'm telling you again. Chu Feng is my friend. He is not someone who you can insult. If I hear you speaking ill of him again, I'll have you pay the price," Suddenly, Nangong Baihe pointed at the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head and berated him with an extremely serious tone.

At this moment, chilliness flashed through his eyes.

"This old man is slow-witted, this old man is slow-witted," At this moment, that Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head was deeply frightened. He did not dare to say anything else. Thus, he walked forward and proceeded to lead the way for Nangong Baihe and the others.

The path that they chose was naturally the left passage, the stormy passage that seemed to be extremely dangerous.

However, after they entered it, they discovered that they were mistaken. Not only did this passage look very dangerous, it was actually extremely dangerous. After entering it, they were immediately met with enormous pressure.

Furthermore, sea monsters would frequently appear from within

the storm to attack them.

At the beginning, with the people of the Three Thousand Monastery present, they were able to continue onward. Ordinary sea monsters were unable to do anything to them. However, unwittingly, they walked into a spirit formation. Not only did that spirit formation trap them within it, a rank six Half Martial Emperor-level sea monster even appeared in that spirit formation.

That sea monster was a blue sea dragon. Even though it was also formed by a spirit formation, it possessed soaring killing intent. Trapped in the spirit formation, Nangong Baihe and the others had no way to escape. They were akin to fish on the chopping block. All thirteen of them were waiting for their deaths.

They had been wrong. Their choice had been incorrect. It was not only Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli that realized that they were mistaken, even the people from the Three Thousand Monastery realized that they were mistaken. However, at this time, they had no way back.

Chapter 1571 – Rescue At The Risk Of One's Life

“Block it, go and block it immediately. Even if you all have to die, you must still fight for time for me. This is our mission! We must protect the two young misses. Even if we are to die, we must help them gain time to escape.”

At this moment, the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head and the two other royal-cloak world spiritists began to put forth all of their efforts into breaking the spirit formation. At the same time, he loudly shouted to his subordinates to have them use their lives to buy time for them.

However, other than the three of them, the remaining people from the Three Thousand Monastery were simply too weak. How could they possibly be a match for that sea monster? Regardless of whether that sea monster might be formed by a spirit formation or not, it remained that it was a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

Seeing that his subordinates were about to all die in an instant, the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head grabbed onto one of the two royal-cloak world spiritist's beside him and threw him towards that sea monster. Then, he shouted, “Stop it!”

“You, join him!” Afterward, the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head looked to the other royal-cloak world spiritist.

“Mon, Monastery Head, even if I am to go there, I wouldn't be a match for that sea monster. Rather than dying in vain, it's better that I help you open this spirit formation quicker,” That other royal-cloak world spiritist started to panic. That was because everyone who had gone to stop the sea monster before had died. Furthermore, they had died very miserably. He did not wish to die, and definitely did not wish to die that miserably.

“The hell do you know?! This is an order! Protecting the two

young misses is our mission! It is even more important than our lives!” As the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head spoke, he grabbed that royal-cloak world spiritist and threw him towards that sea monster like he had done with the other royal-cloak world spiritist.

Landing beside that sea monster, they no longer had the chance to escape. Other than giving their all to fight it, they had no other option.

“Quickly! They are about to be unable to persist! If you don’t act faster, they will really all end up dying!” Nangong Baihe grabbed onto Nangong Moli as she stood beside the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head, urging him nonstop.

At this moment, she was filled with regret. She was regretting how she did not listen to Chu Feng, and instead decided to come here with the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head.

In the end, they entered a trap with no way out, and had to look on helplessly as the people from the Three Thousand Monastery lost their lives because of them. As she watched them die, her heart became filled with guilt.

“What are you shouting about?!” At this moment, an ominous glint appeared in the eyes of that Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head. He grabbed onto Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli.

At the moment he grabbed them, a spirit formation that contained martial power covered their bodies, entered their bodies and sealed off their dantians. They became unable to move at all. It was as if they had been tied up.

“What are you planning to do? You dare to use a spirit formation to bind us?!” At this moment, Nangong Baihe was enraged.

“Damned girl, did you really think that I, your daddy, am really doing all this to protect you all? Your lives are not as valuable as

mine.”

“Get over there. Use your lives to stall for some time for your daddy. If your daddy can escape, then your deaths will not have been in vain,” The Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head sneered.

“You bastard! You dare treat us like this!? I will definitely not let you get away!” Nangong Baihe roared in anger. She tried with her all to struggle free. Unfortunately, the spirit formation was too powerful. With her strength, it was simply impossible for her to struggle free.

“You’re the one with the loud mouth, you go and drop dead first!” As the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head spoke, he threw Nangong Baihe toward the sea monster.

When Nangong Baihe landed, she discovered that she was quite some distance away from that sea monster, and not within range of its attacks. However, she was unable to even move, much less escape.

She could only watch helplessly as the people from the Three Thousand Monastery died to that sea monster’s sharp fangs. At this time, that sea monster’s eyes were emitting an ominous glint. With soaring killing intent, it began to slowly move toward Nangong Baihe.

Tears began to roll down Nangong Baihe’s cheeks. She was unreconciled. It was not only because she knew that she was going to die here, it was also because she knew that her lil’ sis would also end up dying here.

“Lil’ sis, I’m sorry, I didn’t manage to protect you.”

“Mother, I’m sorry, I did not manage to accomplish the task I promised you,” Nangong Baihe closed her eyes tightly. She made the preparations to accept death.

“Rumble~~~~~”

“Wuuaaoo~~~~~”

Right at this moment, a loud sound was suddenly heard. Then, that sea monster actually uttered a roar of anger.

Following that, loud explosions could be heard in succession. Energy ripples began to wreak havoc. These energy ripples blew Nangong Baihe back repeatedly.

This sort of change came as an enormous shock to Nangong Baihe. She hurriedly opened her closed eyes. Only then did she discover that the sea monster was actually fighting with someone. Furthermore, the person that it was fighting was not the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head. Instead, it was Chu Feng.

At this moment, Chu Feng was wearing his Thunder Armor. On his back were his Thunder Wings. In his hand was his Incomplete Imperial Armament. He was using his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash and unleashing continuous attacks toward that sea monster.

Fourth slash. Fifth slash. Sixth slash. Before Chu Feng's nonstop slashes, even though that sea monster was very ferocious, it had still been knocked back repeatedly without even the ability to fight back.

“Young Hero, you're truly ferocious. This old man has misjudged you. Stop it, help me stall for time. I'll take my leave now.”

At this moment, the Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head was stunned by Chu Feng's ability. He did not expect that this young man was this powerful. However, he also knew that, regardless of whether Chu Feng won or the sea monster won, he would definitely not be able to escape his death.

Thus, seeing that Chu Feng was still fighting with the sea monster, he hurriedly escaped from that...exit created by Chu Feng.

Even though she knew that the despicable Three Thousand Monastery's monastery head had escaped, Nangong Baihe did not

have the intention to pay attention to him. That was because, at this moment, her eyes were firmly fixed on Chu Feng.

As she saw Chu Feng, who was fighting bravely to protect her lil' sis and herself, Nangong Baihe felt extremely complicated.

She had not believed in Chu Feng. That was why she had ended up walking into this path that lead to disaster.

Yet, at this time, not only had Chu Feng disregarded her actions, he had even charged into this road that he knew would only lead to disaster to save them.

Nangong Baihe was truly touched. If she wasn't seeing it with her own eyes, she would truly not believe that there would be people other than her family members in this world who would do this sort of thing for her.

“Firmament Ninth Slash!!!”

Chu Feng finally unleashed his Firmament Slash's ninth slash. When the ninth slash appeared, the sky instantly darkened. Crimson light surged forth. It was as if the entire world and everything within it had disappeared, leaving behind only that crimson slash.

“Boom~~~~~”

An extremely loud explosion. The Firmament Ninth Slash landed on that sea monster's body. However, that sea monster was truly too powerful. Even though it was struck by the ninth slash, even though it was seriously injured, it did not die.

After all, a rank six Half Martial Emperor was a rank six Half Martial Emperor. Even though it was formed by a spirit formation, its strength was still not something to be looked down upon.

Even though Chu Feng had increased his cultivation to that of a rank one Half Martial Emperor through the power of his lightnings, there was actually still an enormous gap between him and the sea monster.

If he had not increased his battle power through the use of his Incomplete Imperial Armament, if it wasn't for the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash's heaven-defying attack power, if it wasn't for the fact that the sea monster was slow-witted and didn't know how to dodge his attacks, it was impossible for him to be able to fight with this sea monster for so long.

Right now, he had finished using his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash. Even though he had seriously injured the sea monster, the sea monster still possessed absolute fighting strength.

Most importantly, Chu Feng's attack had enraged the sea monster. Right now, the sea monster was even more furious. Its killing intent had become even more frightening.

At this moment, the danger was even greater than before.

Chapter 1572 – One Shot Lightning

“Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash!!!”

At this time, Chu Feng brandished the Infinity Edge in his hand once again and actually unleashed his strongest attack, Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash, again.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, nine more slashes were shot forth. Energy ripples began to wreak havoc throughout the region again. Furthermore, due to the fact that, the sea monster was slow-witted, the nine slashes of the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash all landed on it again.

However, that sea monster was truly too powerful. Even though it was riddled with scars, it still possessed enormous might. It was simply unable to feel pain at all. The only thing it felt was surging anger and killing intent.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly brandished the Infinity Edge in his hand and launched a slash towards Nangong Baihe. However, after this slash landed, Nangong Baihe was undamaged. The power that had bound her was neutralized by Chu Feng. She had managed to regain her freedom.

At the same time, Nangong Moli’s binding was also neutralized by Chu Feng.

After removing Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli’s bindings, Chu Feng brandished his Infinity Edge and shouted, “Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash!!!” He had actually unleashed his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash for the third time.

“Chu Feng, you...”

At this moment, Nangong Baihe was stunned. She was able to tell

that Chu Feng's Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash was an extremely powerful technique. Yet, she was also able to tell that this sort of technique required one to pay an enormous price to unleash.

To use it once would be fine for Chu Feng. However, he was actually using it three times in succession. This, to Chu Feng, would be an enormous burden. For the sake of saving them, Chu Feng was really giving his all and putting his life on the line.

If it were in the past, Nangong Baihe would definitely grab onto Nangong Moli and escape this place as quickly as possible.

However, she was unable to do so now. It was truly impossible for her to do that. She could not abandon Chu Feng and escape with her lil' sis.

That was because she knew very well that if it hadn't been for Chu Feng, she and her lil' sis would have already died. They would have been eaten alive or torn to shreds by that sea monster.

Even though she, Nangong Baihe, feared death, she was unable to kick her benefactor in the teeth and escape.

"Lil' sis, run away," Thus, Nangong Baihe was determined to stay. She urged her lil sis to escape.

"No, if you're not escaping, I'm not escaping either," Nangong Moli firmly grabbed onto Nangong Baihe's hand. She was determined to not let go.

"Wuuuaaooo~~~~"

Right at this moment, another ear-piercing roar sounded from that sea monster. The entire spirit formation started to tremble violently. Numerous energy ripples pounded against Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli, nearly knocking them away. They were unable to even stand steadily anymore.

It turned out that Chu Feng had finished using his third successive Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash. Even though that sea

monster was badly mutilated beyond recognition after going through three Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slashes, it was still standing strong. It wasn't dead. Furthermore, at this moment, its mouth was wide open as it charged towards Chu Feng to tear him apart.

“It would seem that I can only use this.”

The corners of Chu Feng's lips suddenly raised into a light smile. Even though he was feeling incomparably weak, he had not given up. Instead, a flash of determination shone through his eyes.

“Aooouuu~~~”

Finally, the sea monster reached Chu Feng. It was less than a meter away from Chu Feng. At this moment, the lightning in Chu Feng's eyes became exceptionally fierce. It was as if a long-dormant god had finally woken up.

Before this ruler, who dares to challenge?

“ZZZZZZZZZZ~”

Chu Feng's body suddenly started to spin rapidly. At the same time, countless bolts of lightning shot out from his body explosively like sharp swords.

That scene appeared like a torrential rain, a blossom, of countless lightnings, the dance of a group of demons.

“This power, exactly what's going on?!!!”

Nangong Baihe's eyes were fixed onto Chu Feng the entire time. When those colored lightnings shot out from Chu Feng's body, her eyes shone, and her expression changed.

At that time, she felt a feeling she had never felt before. It was the feeling of oppression, an extremely frightening oppression. However, she was uncertain as to whether that feeling was actually a feeling of oppression.

However, she was certain of one thing. That was, that the bolts

of lightning being released from Chu Feng's body were extremely powerful. It was a power that she had never seen before, a power that she could not describe.

Most importantly, at the moment when the bolts of lightning appeared, the Imperial Bloodline in her body actually began to have a strange change. It was as if it had been affected by them.

This was a sensation she had never felt before. Thus, she found it extremely unfathomable.

The lightning continued to flash for quite some time before gradually dissipating. When it disappeared completely, that sea monster was also gone. Evidently, it was dead. It had been killed by Chu Feng's lightning attack.

Merely, Chu Feng had also lost an arm and blood had already dyed his clothes.

"It's still a bit lacking. I am still not proficient enough." As if he were not feeling any pain at all, Chu Feng was reflecting on the attack he had used earlier.

The attack earlier was an attack created by releasing the power of his bloodline. This was not the first time that Chu Feng had used it. When he defeated Qin Wentian, Chu Feng had also used this attack.

Merely, at that time, Chu Feng had used this attack effortlessly. However, it was different this time around. Chu Feng had only used it at the moment of imminent peril, the moment of this life and death crisis. Chu Feng knew that the power of his lightning would only be stronger the closer the sea monster was to him. In turn, this would give him a higher chance of killing that sea monster.

However, he had still been a bit too slow. That was why his left arm had ended up being bitten off by the sea monster.

However, this result caused Chu Feng immense joy. He had seen

that rank six Martial Emperor-level sea monster being destroyed by his lightning with his own eyes, without even a speck remaining.

This signified how powerful Chu Feng's bloodline was. Even though Chu Feng had only managed to grasp the tip of the iceberg, this mere portion of his bloodline's power still surpassed his strongest martial skill.

This was something worthy of being happy over. This was because it meant that Chu Feng possessed the power to kill rank six Half Martial Emperors.

What did it mean by heaven-defying? This was what it meant by heaven-defying.

Suddenly, Chu Feng felt that it was time to give a name to his certain killing technique using his bloodline's power.

One Shot Lightning, this was the name Chu Feng decided on.

One Shot Lightning required it to be used within a very close distance in order to reveal its strongest might. Furthermore, Chu Feng would be enormously exhausted after using it. This was an attack that Chu Feng would only use when fighting against true experts.

As implied by its name, One Shot Lightning was a do-or-die technique. However, it was also the strongest attack that Chu Feng was currently able to grasp.

"Chu Feng, how are you feeling? Are you alright?" Right at this time, Nangong Baihe had run over. Her eyes were fixed onto Chu Feng nervously. She was extremely worried about him.

"Big brother, your arm." Soon, Nangong Moli also ran over. When she saw that Chu Feng was missing an arm, her eyes immediately started to redden.

"Foolish girl, this is nothing. Look, isn't my arm completely fine?" With a thought, Chu Feng regenerated his lost limb through

the use of a spirit formation. It was completely undamaged and appeared exactly the same as his lost arm.

With Chu Feng's current world spirit techniques, as long as his consciousness and dantian remained undamaged, he would be akin to having an undying body. For something like losing an arm, other than feeling a certain amount of pain, it was actually nothing more than a superficial wound.

“Wow, big brother is amazing!” Seeing that Chu Feng's arm was restored, Nangong Moli started to smile happily.

“Chu Feng, I'm sorry. I should have trusted you,” Nangong Baihe had an apologetic expression all over her face. She knew that while Chu Feng's arm was fine, his body was not. To use the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash three times in succession would be an enormous burden on his body regardless of how tough his body might be. Even though Chu Feng appeared to be fine, he was actually in very weak health.

“It's all in the past. All that matters is that you two are fine,” Chu Feng smiled. He had only appeared to deliberately leave back then, and had not really left. That was because he had already considered Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli as his friends. Thus, he would not watch as his friends threw their lives away.

“Why did you return? Is it really worth doing so for us?” Nangong Baihe suddenly asked.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng replied with a light smile.

However, this simple word stunned Nangong Baihe. At this moment, she felt warmth in her heart. It was as if all of the unpleasant things in her heart had been melted away by Chu Feng's single word.

Chapter 1573 – Must Be Kept Confidential

“Buzz~~~~”

Right at this moment, the spirit formation disappeared. It would seem that the sea monster was the core of this spirit formation.

Even though the spirit formation and the sea monster had both disappeared, there were still a lot of unknown dangers ahead. They had not yet reached the exit.

Chu Feng predicted that there would be even more frightening things ahead. Thus, he firmly decided to bring Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli back. They returned to the forked path and walked into that safe-looking passage.

Not only did this passage appear to be safe, it was actually safe. Not only had this verified Chu Feng’s speculation to be accurate, it had also revealed how slow-witted and incompetent Nangong Baihe was.

“Chu Feng, you are truly powerful. Among all the people of our generation, you are the most powerful person I’ve ever seen,” Nangong Baihe commended Chu Feng from the bottom of her heart.

“I merely saved your life, there is no need for all this flattering and fawning. This does not appear to be something that you, a young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan, should do,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“What I have said is true,” Nangong Baihe seemed to fear that Chu Feng would not trust her words and thus added, “Indeed, there are a lot of people from our generation with higher levels of cultivation in our Nangong Imperial Clan. Even my big brother Nangong Ya who has journeyed here together with us, possesses a stronger cultivation than you.”

“However, I dare to guarantee that all of the geniuses in our

Nangong Imperial Clan, if they all had the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Emperor, none of them would have been able to defeat that sea monster you defeated back there.”

“That sea monster was formed by a spirit formation. It was greatly inferior to real rank six Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, it only knew how to charge toward you straight-on and did not even know how to dodge. Killing it was nothing special,” Chu Feng wished to cover up his strength, especially the power of his lightning. That was because it was indeed extremely unconventional, extremely unreasonable for a rank one Half Martial Emperor to be able to kill a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

“In the end, you’re extremely powerful. However, if you do not wish for others to know that you’re powerful, I will definitely not mention this to others,” Nangong Baihe was very smart. She knew that luck had played a role in Chu Feng being able to kill that sea monster. As for this so-called luck, it was actually the fact that that sea monster was formed by a spirit formation, and thus lacked intelligence.

However, if Chu Feng did not have the strength to kill rank six Half Martial Emperors, it would simply have been impossible for him to be able to kill that sea monster. In fact, his killing of that sea monster could be said to have been done thoroughly.

Thus, she firmly believed that Chu Feng had grasped a very remarkable ability. At the very least, that ability was something that none of the people in her Nangong Imperial Clan possessed. With the way Chu Feng was acting, how he was belittling his accomplishment, she immediately realized that Chu Feng did not wish for others to know of his true strength.

Suddenly, Nangong Baihe asked, “Oh, that’s right. The lightning you used to kill that sea monster seemed to not be an ordinary martial skill. Might you be able to tell me the name of that move?” She was truly curious.

“That’s right, Moli also wishes to know.” Nangong Moli started to blink her large eyes. She stared at Chu Feng with a curious expression.

“One Shot Lightning,” Chu Feng thought of it for a moment and then decided to tell this pair of sisters.

“One Shot Lightning, great name. Sure enough, it kills with one shot. Neat and nimble, even rank six Half Martial Emperors would not be able to escape death,” Nangong Baihe muttered. She would never forget that name. She then said, “Chu Feng, unless you have no other choice, it’s best that you do not use One Shot Lightning before the people of the Four Great Imperial Clans.”

“Why is that?” Chu Feng knew that his One Shot Lightning was very powerful, and that it might lead to people wanting to kill him. However, he knew that there must be a reason why Nangong Baihe said those words.

“At the time when you used One Shot Lightning, my Inherited Bloodline started to change. That sort of change was something that I have never felt before for the first time in my entire life. If I had to describe it, then I believe that my Inherited Bloodline was scared,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Right, right, right. That really seemed to be the case. Even Moli felt that. Moli was baffled by why her Inherited Bloodline would suddenly change like that. However, after hearing what big sister said, it seemed like my Inherited Bloodline was really scared,” Nangong Moli nodded her head repeatedly.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled. His heart started to flutter. He never would have thought that his One Shot Lightning would cause a special reaction in those who possessed Imperial Bloodlines. Furthermore, it was the reaction of fear.

However, upon thinking about it, it was reasonable. Since an Imperial Bloodline was capable of causing pressure against those who possess Royal Bloodlines, then with how powerful his own

Inherited Bloodline was, being able to cause pressure to those that possessed Imperial Bloodlines was also normal.

“In the entire Holy Land of Martialism, there has never been anything that could bring fear to Imperial Bloodlines. If the Four Great Imperial Clans were to find out about this, they would definitely consider you a threat. Not to mention the other three Imperial Clans, I fear that even our Nangong Imperial Clan would not let you get away,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Thank you for your warning.” Chu Feng was very grateful. That was because Nangong Baihe’s warning was very valuable and could help him avoid needless troubles in the future.

“There’s no need to be so courteous towards us sisters. After all, we’re friends,” Nangong Baihe said with a beaming smile.

“That’s right. Big brother Chu Feng, rest assured, Moli will keep this a secret. I guarantee that I will not mention big brother Chu Feng’s One Shot Lightning to anyone,” Even though Nangong Moli was very young, she was very intelligent. She was a daring child of doing great mischief and was very clever. Thus, she knew that this matter must be kept confidential.

After this, Chu Feng knew that he must pay attention in the future. Regrettably, even though his One Shot Lightning was very powerful, he had to conceal it like his secret skills. Unless he had no other choice, Chu Feng would not dare to use them.

After what had happened, the relationship between the three of them had also grown closer. Even though they had only known each other for a short period of several days, they had already become close friends who could tell each other everything.

Chu Feng came to know that Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were actual blood sisters. Other than the two of them being actual blood sisters, although the other people from the Nangong Imperial Clan all possessed the same bloodline, they could not be considered to be absolutely intimate with one another. Thus, the

two of them had a real deep relationship with one another.

As for their father, he was someone who possessed status in the Nangong Imperial Clan. However, his status was still inferior to that of their Nangong Imperial Clan's clan chief's. This was why, although Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were people from the Nangong Imperial Clan, they did not possess absolute status. Even in the Nangong Imperial Clan, they would be pushed around by others.

Back then, their mother, for the sake of allowing their father's status in the Nangong Imperial Clan to rise, had used a forbidden technique on Nangong Moli, who had still been inside her stomach. Fortunately, her forbidden technique succeeded and Nangong Moli ended up having exceptional talent and a very strong Imperial Bloodline. However, it was also because of that forbidden technique that their mother died.

The time of Nangong Moli's birth was the time of their mother's death. At that time, Nangong Baihe could be said to only be a little girl. However, she would not forget the words that her mother said to her.

Nangong Moli was their hope. As her older sister, she had to protect her younger sister.

Fortunately, right now, Nangong Moli was greatly valued by their Nangong Imperial Clan. They would emphasize her cultivation. Else, it would be impossible for there to have been a Martial Emperor-level expert protecting her when she was away from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Unfortunately, many other factions in the Nangong Imperial Clan felt that Nangong Moli was a threat. Thus, many people wanted to secretly kill her. This was the cruel reality, the most realistic sort of thing.

To a lot of people, one's personal interest was much more important than family love.

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally passed through the storm covered passage. What appeared before them was an enormous island. This island was much larger than the island they had been to before.

There were a lot of people gathered on this island. However, Chu Feng's eyes were attracted by a silhouette immediately.

There was a person standing on the island. At this time, that person was surveying their surroundings as if they were trying to find something. She was wearing a white skirt, and appeared to be extremely beautiful as she looked down from a high point. As for this person... she was Tantai Xue.

Chapter 1574 – King Monstrous Dragon Beast

“Tantai Xue,” Upon seeing Tantai Xue, Chu Feng immediately started waving to her. He knew that she was searching for him.

Sure enough, after Tantai Xue saw Chu Feng, she immediately got down from the platform she was standing on and rapidly arrived before Chu Feng.

However, another group of people came along with Tantai Xue. That group of people were from the Nangong Imperial Clan. As for the person who led them, he was someone Chu Feng had seen before, that rank three Half Martial Emperor-level young man, the person who Nangong Baihe called Nangong Ya.

Chu Feng knew that this Nangong Ya could be said to be someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation who possessed a very good relationship with Nangong Baihe and her sister. He had shown great consideration for them. Thus, Chu Feng’s impression of this Nangong Ya was very good.

“This is truly fate. Never would I have expected that you all would be together. Furthermore, it seems that you’ve been getting along real well,” Nangong Ya’s perception was quite sharp. With a single glance, he determined that Chu Feng had been getting along well with Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli.

“That’s to be expected. In our journey here, Chu Feng saved us twice. He is the savior, the great benefactor, of us sisters,” Nangong Baihe said with a beaming smile. When mentioning Chu Feng, she had an expression of gratefulness.

To her, the current Chu Feng was not a bad example at all. Instead, he was an absolutely great example.

“That’s truly a coincidence. If it hadn’t been for Miss Tantai Xue here, we too would have been unable to arrive here without a

hitch. Speaking of it, you all are truly benefactors to our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Brother Chu Feng, please receive my Nangong Ya’s respect,” As Nangong Ya spoke, he bowed to Chu Feng to express his thanks.

“Thank you, Brother Chu Feng, for your immense assistance,” Following that, the other members of the Nangong Imperial Clan also bowed to Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that, other than Nangong Ya, none of them did so with sincerity.

“Brother Nangong, you are truly too courteous. What I have done is only something that I should do. If you’re my friend, then you shouldn’t regard me as an outsider and do something this courteous.” Chu Feng had gone to help Nangong Ya up.

“Yoh, two misses, you are all finally here. To see that you’re fine, we are truly relieved,” Right at this moment, a group of people suddenly appeared. After seeing this group of people, Nangong Baihe was immediately enraged. She started to gnash her teeth in anger. The reason for that was because they were people from the Three Thousand Monastery.

Nangong Baihe had held a stomach-full of anger. At this moment, she finally had the chance to let it out. She immediately walked over to them, extended her arms and began to ‘pow, pow, pow,’ give ruthless slaps to the faces of the people from the Three Thousand Monastery.

The slaps were not enough. After slapping them, she began to punch and kick them. As for the people from the Three Thousand Monastery, not only did they not dare to fight back, they did not even dare to dodge Nangong Baihe’s beatings. Thus, they were beaten extremely miserably.

“Lil’ sis Baihe, what are you doing? Exactly what happened?” Nangong Ya was unable to continue watching Nangong Baihe beat those people anymore. Thus, he grabbed her and stopped her.

“What happened? That Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head, for the sake of escaping with his life, bound me and my lil’ sis and then threw us toward the sea monster. He tried to use our lives to stall for time for him to escape. If it weren’t for Chu Feng’s timely arrival, my lil’ sis and I would have already died,” Nangong Baihe said with immense anger.

“What?” Hearing those words, the people from the Three Thousand Monastery were all stunned. One by one, their complexions turned ash gray, and their expressions became dejected. They all felt that a great catastrophe was going to befall them. No matter what, they never would have expected that their monastery head would do such a thing. Wasn’t this equivalent to having them become his scapegoats?

“What about that Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head? Where is he?” Hearing what Nangong Baihe said, Nangong Ya also had an angry expression.

“Escaped,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Lil’ sis Baihe, lil’ sis Moli, I have let you two suffer. However, please rest assured, I will definitely not let that Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head escape. Even if I have to turn the entire Holy Land of Martialism over, I will still find him and make him pay the price.”

“However, it remains that one should not involve third parties when settling disputes. What happened was caused by the Three Thousand Monastery’s monastery head and does not have much of a direct relationship with the members of the Three Thousand Monastery. Thus, there is no need to make things difficult for them,” Nangong Ya urged.

“Humph~~~” Nangong Baihe was not someone who was completely unreasonable. Naturally, she understood that too. Merely, her bellyful of anger was something that could only be released on the people from the Three Thousand Monastery. Now

that she had already beaten them up, she would naturally not continue to make things difficult for them.

At this time when Nangong Baihe was making a ruckus, Chu Feng asked Tantai Xue, “Miss Tantai, where is senior Hong Qiang? Has he not arrived yet? Or will he not be able to get here?”

That was because he had managed to sense that even though a lot of people had gathered on this island, there were no Martial Emperor-level experts or peak Half Martial Emperor-level experts among them. In fact, there was barely anyone with the cultivation of a rank five Half Martial Emperor, much less above.

However, in reality, there were countless experts who traveled through this place. Yet, none of those experts were present. Chu Feng felt that this was definitely not a coincidence.

“Your guess is correct. Senior Hong Qiang and the others have been separated from us by that storm. They simply do not have the chance to come to this place.”

“I think the reason why the Weaponry Refinement Immortal has done that is because he wanted to prevent senior Hong Qiang and the others from protecting us,” Tantai Xue said.

“As long as he’s fine, everything’s good,” Chu Feng said.

“He should be fine. The numerous trials set up by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal are there to test us. His intention was not to deliberately kill us.”

“Oh, that’s right. I managed to attain some news that should be of interest to you,” Tantai Xue said.

“What news?” Chu Feng asked.

“As far as I know, there have been a lot of members of the younger generation from all around the Holy Land of Martialism that have come here. However, among them, the ones with actual strength are the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan.”

“None of the younger generation from the Dongfang Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan have come to participate in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly. According to Nangong Ya, the Dongfang Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan recently got along real well with a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist called Compass Immortal. It seems that the two Imperial Clans both wished to invite that Compass Immortal to become their nominal elder and world spiritist adviser.”

“Furthermore, it happens that this Compass Immortal had past conflicts with Weaponry Refinement Immortal. That is why neither of those two Imperial Clans came to participate in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly.”

“Other than those two Imperial Clans, there are members of the younger generation from another power who have come here. Even though they are not humans, their strength is also nothing to look down upon. You must pay attention to them. It would be best that we do not enter conflict with them,” Tantai Xue said.

“Not humans? Are they the Ancient Era’s Elves or Monstrous Beasts?” Chu Feng asked.

The Holy Land of Martialism had a lot of powers. Other than humans, there were Ancient Era’s Elves and Monstrous Beasts.

There were a lot of different races of Monstrous Beasts. Many of the powerful Monstrous Beast races were stronger than the Nine Powers. The strongest among them were even on par with the Four Great Imperial Clans.

In short, the Monstrous Beasts were existences that one could not ignore in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, regardless of how powerful the Monstrous Beast races might be, they would likely be weaker than the mysterious race that came from the Ancient Era, the Ancient Era’s Elves. The Elf Kingdom was a supreme existence in the Holy Land of Martialism. Likely, even the strongest human powers, the Three Palaces,

would not be willing to provoke them.

“It’s not the Ancient Era’s Elves. They’re Monstrous Beasts, King Monstrous Dragon Beasts,” Tantai Xue said.

“They’re actually the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts? This is too coincidental. Never would I have expected to be able to see them this quickly,” If it were other Monstrous Beasts, Chu Feng would not be that interested. However, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were a race of Monstrous Beasts that Chu Feng was very interested in.

Back then, in the Cyanwood Domain, there had been Monstrous Dragon Beasts causing chaos and devastation in a region. The Cyanwood Mountain had dispatched disciples to wipe them out. At that time, Chu Feng had fought against the Monstrous Dragon Beasts and killed them.

However, it remained that Monstrous Dragon Beasts were only Monstrous Dragon Beasts. They were different from the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts could be said to be the strongest dragon beast race in the entire Holy Land of Martialism. Reportedly, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts possessed bloodlines from actual dragons.

What were dragons? They were the legendary mythological beasts; a myth that no longer existed.

Thus, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts that possessed the bloodlines of dragons were a very powerful Monstrous Beast race. Even if they were inferior to the human race’s Four Great Imperial Clans, they would likely not be much weaker. Essentially, their strength was greater than even the Nine Powers.

They were one of the most powerful Monstrous Beast races in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chu Feng had always wanted to have a look at what the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were like. Never would he have expected

that the opportunity to do so would present itself so quickly.

Chapter 1575 – Dreadful Heart For Self Interest

“You have some sort of conflict with the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Tantai Xue revealed a gaze of worry.

“I don’t. Merely, I have come across Monstrous Dragon Beasts before, and felt that they were very powerful. However, I’ve heard that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts are even stronger. That is why I wish to see them for myself,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s good as long as there’s no conflict between you and them. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts are not beings that one can provoke as one wishes. It’s best that you don’t provoke them either,” Tantai Xue felt relieved.

“Rest assured, I would not go and provoke them for no reason, I am not so bored to do such a thing,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Oh, that’s right. There’s another piece of important news. Su Rou and Zi Ling were here. However, I did not see them. But, those who came here before me said that they had seen two extremely beautiful women. Based on their appearances, I think they are Su Rou and Zi Ling,” Tantai Xue said.

“I got it. In that case, it would seem that they left for the Immortal Island before us?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn, they have already left. Merely, I do not know whether their journey is going smoothly or not. Other than that, the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan have joined together and formed an advance party. That party has already left to survey the path ahead. I believe they will be returning here soon,” Tantai Xue said.

“It would seem that it is truly difficult to reach the Immortal

Island,” Chu Feng laughed bitterly. Even though he already knew that he would have to undergo trials by participating in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, the trials here were even more difficult than he’d imagined them to be.

“Miss Tantai, is there any other information that you managed to obtain?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes. There is a stone platform on this island. However, that stone platform appears to be a very unnecessary construction. I don’t know whether it might have any special implication. How about you go and have a look at it?” Tantai Xue said.

“Okay, lead me there,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, there’s another thing,” Tantai Xue suddenly said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s better that you call me by my name directly,” Tantai Xue said.

“Call you by your name directly? Okay, is it fine for me to address you as Lil’ Xue?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Tantai Xue’s beautiful eyebrows creased. She seemed to be displeased. However, she did not say anything.

“You don’t like it? In that case, what about Xue’er?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Do whatever you wish. It’ll be fine as long as you do not keep calling me Miss Tantai. We are of the same generation. For you to address me as such makes me feel extremely weird.” After Tantai Xue finished saying those words, she took the lead and left.

Following Tantai Xue, Chu Feng soon ran into a group of people. It was a group of young people. There were both men and women. They all had very decent appearances. However, they were, to be exact, not humans. That was because they all had a sharp horn

growing out of their foreheads. The horns looked like rhinoceros horns. However, those horns were much sharper than rhinoceros horns and they contained a very strong power. In fact, even their auras were different. They were emitting monstrous auras.

It was clear that they were the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. Sure enough, these King Monstrous Dragon Beasts weren't weak. Each and every one of them were Half Martial Emperors. The strongest among them was actually a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts seemed to dislike talking. When they saw Chu Feng and Tantai Xue walk past them, they merely took a cold glance at them. They were neither friendly nor hostile. It was as if they were using their gazes to say 'regardless of where you all are from, it's best to not provoke us, because we are not to be trifled with.'

Chu Feng felt that these King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were quite interesting. The reason why he felt that they were interesting was not because of their temperament. Rather, it was the fact that even though they were monstrous beasts, they had transformed themselves into the appearance of humans. Furthermore, each and every one, regardless of whether they were male or female, had all taken very beautiful appearances. It was as if they wanted to become handsome men and beautiful women among humans.

"It's here," Tantai Xue finally stopped her footsteps and pointed toward a stone platform.

This stone platform was rectangular in shape and constructed on top of a piece of lawn. It was ten meters long, five meters wide and less than three meters tall.

The material of the stone platform was a bit special. It was not formed with ordinary stones. Instead, it was formed with a kind of diamond, a kind of black diamond. This sort of diamond could be

said to be the toughest kind of diamond.

“I am very confused as to why there is a stone platform here. Exactly what is the implication of this stone platform?” Tantai Xue asked with confusion.

“Someone has altered this stone platform,” Chu Feng managed to detect that right away.

“Really?” Tantai Xue was a bit surprised. Even though she was skeptical that there was something going on with this stone platform, she was unable to determine any traces of this stone platform being altered. Yet, Chu Feng was able to notice that with a single glance. This was truly unexpected for her.

“I can guarantee that this stone platform is incomplete. There should be a stele on top of the stone platform. Merely, someone has taken away that stele. Even though they have concealed their tracks perfectly, they are unable to escape my eyes,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, what would be written on that stele? Furthermore, who would it be that took away the stele?” Tantai Xue asked.

“I think that it is very likely that the stele should have offered some hints on how to get to the Immortal Island. The person who took away the stele did so because he did not wish for the people that came later to see the stele. If my guess is correct, the person that took the stele away was the first person who arrived on this island. Furthermore, he is someone very proficient with world spirit techniques, a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Otherwise, it would be impossible for even you to not be able to tell that the stele had been taken,” Chu Feng said.

“Exactly who was it that would do such a thing that harms others without benefiting himself?” Tantai Xue’s long, shapely eyebrows narrowed. A trace of anger appeared in her ice-cold eyes.

With how unsafe this sea was, people should be helping one

another. However, someone had actually done something that was the complete opposite of that. This caused her to be extremely displeased.

“That’s not necessarily the case. It’s very likely that he decided to harm others for his personal benefit,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re implying that the stele likely contained things that benefitted him? In that case, exactly what do you think was written on the stele?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tantai Xue became curious.

“As that stele is gone, I can only make wild guesses. I think that it might contain information to some sort of treasure nearby, or what the path ahead would be like, or some other sort of hint. In short, everything is possible, but there was definitely some sort of beneficial information.”

“In any case, Lil Xue, we must be extra careful later on. We must be on guard toward everyone,” Chu Feng said.

Even though there was not much of a change to Chu Feng on the surface, he had become extremely alert and on guard. The people who had come to participate in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly and had been able to make it to this island, could all be said to be extraordinary. However, the heart for self interest was dreadful. At this time, other than a specific few people, Chu Feng did not trust anyone else.

Even though these people appeared to be harmonious with one another on this island, if something beneficial were to appear in the following path, it was very likely that they would fight each other for their own benefits. As such, they had to be careful.

“I understand. Oh, that’s right... there’s a matter that I wish to speak with you about,” Tantai Xue said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Don’t call me Lil’ Xue. It’s a very weird feeling. Just call me

Tantai Xue directly,” Tantai Xue said.

“But I’m already accustomed to calling you Lil’ Xue,” Chu Feng made a reluctant expression.

“Then do as you wish,” Tantai Xue said in a helpless manner.

“Yoh, Lil’ Xue, that must be your companion Chu Feng right?” Right at this moment, a man’s voice sounded, and a group of people walked over. They were people from the Beitang Imperial Clan.

As for the person leading them, regardless of whether it was his age or his strength, he was very similar to Nangong Ya. Although he was quite young, he was already a rank three Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

However, the attitude of this man, when compared to Nangong Ya’s good-natured and amiable attitude, was worlds apart. He currently had an extremely unrestrained ill-intended smile on his face. Furthermore, he was sizing up Chu Feng with a gaze filled with contempt.

“Brother Chu Feng, allow me to introduce myself. I am Beitang Zimo. I am the Fourth Prince of the Beitang Imperial Clan,” After sizing up Chu Feng, Beitang Zimo extended his hand toward Chu Feng. He was trying to display his might.

That was because he had declared that he was the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Prince, not a young master. This meant that his father was the Beitang Imperial Clan’s clan chief. Furthermore, the hand he extended toward Chu Feng contained hidden strength.

“My pleasure to meet you.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. He did not bother too much with him. He was able to detect that this man had not come with good intentions. Thus, there was no need for him to bother with such a person. That was because, even if he were to greet him with a

smiling face, this sort of man would still come and create trouble for him when the time to do so arrived.

“What’s wrong? You do not even have the courage to shake my hand? Are you still a man?” Sure enough, Beitang Zimo spoke again. This time around, his tone was filled with provocation.

Chapter 1576 – Eggy's Awakening

At this moment, Chu Feng was frowning slightly. A trace of annoyance flashed past his eyes. What he disliked the most was people provoking him, regardless of who they might be.

“Brother Zimo, it’s merely a handshake. I’ll shake your hand, is that fine with you?”

Right at this moment, a powerful hand was suddenly extended forward and grabbed tightly onto Beitang Zimo’s hand. It was Nangong Ya.

Nangong Ya had been the first to arrive. Nangong Baihe and the others were still rushing over. Evidently, they had come to help Chu Feng.

“Nangong Ya, do not be so anxious. After this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly is over, we’ll determine who among us is stronger. However, right now, I still wish to conserve my strength.”

Beitang Zimo smiled lightly and retrieved his extended hand. Then, he looked to Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli who were rushing over.

With an evil smile, he said, “Those two sisters of yours are pretty good-looking. Seems like they’re a pair of beautiful sisters. Not bad, I like them. In two more years, I’ll go to your Nangong Clan and propose marriage. I’ll take both of them.”

“Pah! Who’s going to marry you?” Nangong Baihe snorted coldly and spit a mouthful of spit onto the floor. She had an expression of displeasure and contempt.

“Yoh, little girl, quite a hot temper you have there. However, that’s just the sort of temper that I like. Oh, that’s right. I can tell you all this. If I plan to marry you sisters, you would really not be able to stop me. After all, there’s such an enormous gap between

our statuses. Me marrying you sisters would be a blessing to you two. Hahaha..." Beitang Zimo left as he laughed loudly.

"That Beitang Zimo is truly a scoundrel. Big brother, why must we cooperate with this sort of person? Is our Nangong Imperial Clan unable to reach the Immortal Island by ourselves?" Nangong Baihe was so enraged by Beitang Zimo that her little face had turned red with fuming anger as she gnashed her teeth.

"It is true that Beitang Zimo is quite a scoundrel. However, the Beitang Clan's strength is quite strong. This sea is not safe at all. We experienced it ourselves on our way here. As for the path onward, it is filled with unknowns. To cooperate with the Beitang Clan is our best choice," Nangong Ya explained.

"In any case, I'm not going to marry him," Suddenly, Nangong Moli said while pouting her mouth.

"Haha, rest assured, I will definitely not let you marry that guy," Nangong Ya laughed out loud.

"Brother Chu Feng, that Beitang Zimo is such a character. Once he sees beauties, he will be fascinated by them. With how beautiful Miss Tantai is, he naturally began to yearn for her. That is why he views you as an enemy."

"However, rest assured. With me here, I will definitely not let him do anything to you," Nangong Ya guaranteed to Chu Feng.

"Got it," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said to Nangong Ya, "Brother Nangong, I've discovered some things that might be of some assistance to the journey onward."

Chu Feng felt that Nangong Ya was a pretty decent person. Thus, he decided not to conceal the matter regarding the stele from him. Instead, he told Nangong Ya about the stele.

"Brother Chu Feng, are you really certain that there was a stele here?" Nangong Ya was also a world spiritist. However, he was only a gold-cloak world spiritist. After hearing what Chu Feng told

him, he immediately began to inspect the stone platform. However, he was unable to discover anything wrong with it.

“Big brother, you shouldn’t bother doubting Chu Feng. Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques are extremely powerful. Especially his pair of eyes, he is able to see things extremely precisely. I believe what he said is the truth,” Before Chu Feng could answer, Nangong Baihe spoke without any doubt.

“Oh you girl, I never said that I didn’t believe Brother Chu Feng,” Nangong Ya smiled bitterly. Then, he said to the other Nangong Imperial Clansmen, “Do not mention this matter to others for now. It might be helpful to us.”

“Yes,” The people from the Nangong Clan replied in unison without the slightest hesitation.

Among the younger generation of the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Ya was someone with quite a lot of prestige. Regardless of whether it was his strength or character, he was someone who was widely acknowledged. Thus, among all of the members of the younger generation who had come here for the Immortal Island, he could be said to be their leader.

After a short while, the joint advance party sent forth by the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan had returned and brought back with them a very important piece of intelligence.

Two passages appeared on the path toward the Immortal Island.

Like before, one was filled with dangers while the second one appeared to be safe. The people from the advance party had decided to enter into the passages to test them. In the end, three people from the Nangong Imperial Clan had been injured, two from the Beitang Imperial Clan were injured and one had died.

“It’s another multiple choice question. Can’t that Weaponry Refinement Immortal do something else?” After receiving the

intelligence that had been gathered, Nangong Baihe was very displeased.

“Even though we know this is still a multiple choice question, we already know that we do not have to hesitate this time around. We’re going to pick the safe passage again. That dangerous passage is too dangerous. It is only a road that will lead to disaster,” said one of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen that had gone to survey the path ahead.

He had entered the dangerous path before. Thus, he would never forget how dangerous that path was. He had only been able to escape from there due to luck.

“Most of the people from our Nangong Imperial Clan and Beitang Imperial Clan have gathered here. It’s time for us to set off,” After coming to a decision, Nangong Ya firmly gave the order to set off. He wished to quickly reach the Immortal Island.

However, due to the fact that not everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan was here, Nangong Ya decided to leave two of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen behind to guide the way for anyone else from the Nangong Imperial Clan who might end up coming here by telling them which passage to take.

After making their decision, they immediately set off. The joint forces of the Nangong Imperial and the Beitang Imperial Clan truly did appear to be very powerful at first glance.

Thus, the people from the other powers, regardless of whether they were powerful experts from the younger generation or characters from the older generation, they all decided to follow the two Imperial Clans to proceed onward together with them.

A thing worthy of mentioning was that even the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts all followed them over. It could be said Chu Feng and the others had truly set off with a vast and powerful momentum. To see this many Half Martial Emperor-level experts, Nangong Baihe and the others also felt a lot safer.

However, Chu Feng did not feel that having more people meant that it would be safer. Instead, he felt that the more people there were, the less safe it would be. Especially those people from the Beitang Imperial Clan, Chu Feng did not trust them in the slightest.

“Yoh, young man, it seems that you do not feel safe at all.”

Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded in Chu Feng’s ears. It was sweet-sounding, pleasant to listen to and charming. Upon hearing this voice, Chu Feng immediately became spirited.

“Eggy, you’ve woken up?” Chu Feng was overjoyed. That was because he knew that the long-asleep Her Lady Queen had finally awoken. At this moment, Chu Feng’s joy could not be described with words. Thus, he completely ignored traveling and immediately cast his consciousness into his world spirit space.

Sure enough, Eggy was standing in his world spirit space.

She was wearing a black feathered miniskirt; she had a head of long black hair, a pair of large eyes, an exceptionally beautiful face and a charming yet adorable smile as she looked to Chu Feng.

Eggy was as beautiful as ever. Her Lady Queen was as enchanting as ever. Her every frown and every smile was something that no one could compare with. To say that she was the number one beauty in the entire world would not be an exaggeration.

“Woosh~~~”

Upon seeing Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng’s body moved, and he directly arrived before her. Then, he extended his arms and gave Eggy a tight hug, firmly embracing Eggy’s body in his bosom.

The separation of many days felt like decades to Chu Feng. That sensation of missing someone was something that only Chu Feng would understand. Thus, at this moment, the joy that he felt was also something that only Chu Feng would understand.

Chapter 1577 – Choosing The Dangerous Passage

“Hey hey hey, aren’t you taking advantage of me too obviously? Was there a need for you to hug me this tightly?”

Her Lady Queen mocked with a smile on her face. Even though she was saying that Chu Feng was taking advantage of her, she did not make any motion of resistance toward him hugging her at all.

“It’s all because I was worried about you,” Chu Feng let go of Eggy. With his eyes narrowed and a smile on his face, he began to carefully inspect Eggy. His appearance was like a wolf that had seen a lamb.

“Yoh, rank nine Martial King. You managed to overtake me. It seems that the benefits you’ve received from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram are no less than what I’ve received.” After discovering Eggy’s current cultivation, Chu Feng became even happier.

Her Lady Queen’s battle power was so heaven-defying that it was frightening. Back when she was only a rank five Martial King, she was capable of completely trampling upon a rank one Half Martial Emperor-level world spirit. Furthermore, that world spirit’s true battle power had been akin to that of a rank two Half Martial Emperor. However, even with that being the case, it had been unable to contend against Eggy.

Even though Chu Feng’s current battle power was also very heaven-defying, he would not be able to compare with Eggy’s current battle power at all.

Now that Eggy’s cultivation had increased to that of a rank nine Martial King, Chu Feng deduced that, based on her previous performance with her battle power, even rank six Half Martial Emperors would not be a match for Eggy.

“Why else would I have been sleeping so long?”

“This Queen might as well tell you the truth. Right now, if I am able to absorb the source energy of a Martial Emperor, it would not be an issue for my cultivation to increase to that of a rank one Half Martial Emperor. What do you think, do you feel safe and secure now?” Eggy patted her chest and spoke with a complacent expression.

“That’s to be expected. With you here, I am feeling a lot more spirited.” Chu Feng was speaking the truth. To him, Eggy was truly too important. Perhaps he might not have noticed it in the past. However, in the days when Eggy was asleep, he had felt extremely lonely. It was as if he had lost half of his soul. It was a feeling that was extremely unpleasant to bear.

However, Eggy had returned. That other half of his soul had also returned with her. Chu Feng’s soul was now complete again.

“We’re soon to meet your two fiancées again. Thus, of course you’re spirited. However, what does you being spirited have to do with me?” Eggy pouted her little mouth and gave Chu Feng a side eye.

“You also know about Zi Ling and Lil Rou being here?” Chu Feng was a bit surprised.

“I was merely refining the energy I had received, not really sleeping. I know practically everything that you’ve experienced in this period of time,” Eggy said.

“”Chu Feng, what’s wrong?” Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s name was being called nonstop. It was the voices of Tantai Xue and Nangong Baihe.

“It’s time for you to return. Else, they might think that something has happened to you,” Eggy said with a beaming smile. To be able to finally speak again after being dormant for so long, she also appeared to be very happy and excited.

Chu Feng immediately cast his consciousness back into his body. That was because, when his consciousness was in his world spirit space, his body would not be under his control, and he would stand there motionlessly.

Tantai Xue and the others had come to ask Chu Feng whether he was alright because they had discovered that he had suddenly stood there motionlessly.

Seeing that Chu Feng's eyes were finally lively again, Tantai Xue asked, "What happened to you? Why did you suddenly stand there motionlessly?"

"It's nothing, let's continue walking." Chu Feng smiled. His smile was exceptionally brilliant. After smiling, he did not say anything else. Instead, feeling very joyous, he caught up to the crowd.

"What happened to him? How come after he went absent-minded, he became this joyous?" Nangong Baihe was startled and asked Tantai Xue. That was because this was the first time since she had known Chu Feng that Chu Feng had been this happy.

"Not sure." Tantai Xue shook her head. As she was an unflustered person, she did not ask Chu Feng about his change in behavior. Instead, she felt relief after seeing that Chu Feng was fine. Afterward, she went after Chu Feng.

Chu Feng and the others continued onward. Finally, they reached the forked path. Sure enough, this forked path was exactly the same as the one before. This time around, the passage on the left appeared to be very dangerous, whereas the passage on the right appeared to be very safe.

These two passages were simply exactly the same as the ones they had experienced before.

"Let's go," After arriving, Nangong Ya and the others did not hesitate. Leading everyone, they proceeded toward the direction of the safe-looking passage.

However, right at this time, Chu Feng suddenly shouted, “Wait a moment,” Then, he said, “I think we should take the left passage, the seemingly dangerous passage.”

“What did you say? Take the dangerous passage? Are you trying to kill us?” Once Chu Feng said those words, the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan were immediately angered.

This was especially true for Beitang Zimo. He even pointed at Chu Feng’s nose and said, “Are you crazy or what? My men have already personally probed out that passage. That passage cannot be taken. There was someone from my Beitang Imperial Clan who died in there. Could it be that you feel that not enough of us have died, and you want all of us to die in there?”

“That’s right. What sort of mentality is that? You are simply crazy.”

After Beitang Zimo said those words, not only did the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan begin to insult Chu Feng, even the people from the other powers began to insult Chu Feng.

They all firmly believed that the seemingly safe passage was actually safe, and that the seemingly dangerous passage would only lead to their doom.

“The two passages are there. As for the legs, they are on your bodies.”

Chu Feng was not angered by their insults. Instead, he calmly said with great demeanor, “I merely spoke my own viewpoint. Consider it a suggestion of goodwill. However, in the end, it is you all who get to decide which passage to take.”

“What a bunch of bullshit. Let’s go,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, some of the people began to enter the safe-looking passage. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts also entered the safe looking passage after them.

In the end, only the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan, the

people from the Nangong Imperial Clan, Chu Feng and Tantai Xue remained at the fork.

“Hey, Nangong Ya, are you planning to take your Nangong Clan’s people to their deaths by following that fool?”

“If you are planning to throw your lives away, I’m not going to accompany you. Our alliance shall end at this moment.” After Beitang Zimo finished saying those words, he waved his sleeve and then led the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan into the safe-looking passage.

“That man is truly courting death. Chu Feng, do you want this queen to eliminate him for you right now?” Eggy said with a cold voice. She had disliked Beitang Zimo to begin with.

Other than her, Eggy would not allow anyone else to use this sort of tone to speak to Chu Feng. Furthermore, this Beitang Zimo had publicly insulted Chu Feng multiple times. As Chu Feng’s Lady Queen, Eggy was naturally unable to tolerate that.

“Don’t be anxious. For a clown like him, we will have more than enough opportunities to take care of him in the future. Let’s have him live a bit longer. There will be a day when he’ll cry for his mistakes.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. With how Beitang Zimo had provoked Chu Feng repeatedly, how could Chu Feng possibly not be angered? Merely, Chu Feng was enduring his anger.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that he would have a lot of opportunities to take care of someone like him in the future. As for right now, it was not yet the optimal time.

After all, there were a lot of people present. If Chu Feng’s killing of Beitang Zimo were to be spread out by others, Chu Feng would have brought about great misfortune upon himself.

After all, Chu Feng could not kill everyone present just to take care of Beitang Zimo. That was extremely unrealistic.

Thus, no matter what, he could not kill Beitang Zimo right now. In fact, even fighting him would be irrational behavior.

“Never would I have expected that you would consider your issues this thoroughly now. You’ve surely matured a lot. This Queen has not nurtured you in vain. Not bad, not bad.” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Eggy started to nod her head complacently.

“Brother Chu Feng, did you notice anything?”

“Is that seemingly safe passage on the right a path that contains hidden dangers?” Nangong Ya was very smart. It was only when everyone left that he asked Chu Feng that question.

“The passage on the right is indeed safe. It should be able to lead us directly to the Immortal Island,” Chu Feng said.

“What?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, not to mention Nangong Ya, even Nangong Baihe and the others were startled. They were confused by Chu Feng’s actions.

If the passage on the right was safe, why would Chu Feng choose the passage on the left? They did not understand what it was that Chu Feng was thinking.

Chapter 1578 – The Reveal

“Do you still remember the stele that I mentioned? I think what is written on that stele is very likely related to the seemingly dangerous passage on the left.”

“While the passage on the right is indeed very safe, they will not be able to gain anything by going through that passage. However, if we are to choose the left passage, we will definitely be able to gain rewards.”

“That is because the passage on the left is also a passage that leads to the Immortal Island. The danger that it is revealing right now is only there as a diversionary tactic.”

“This is not just my guess. Instead, it is the conclusion I have come to after careful observation,” Chu Feng said.

“No, we’ve already been in there. The danger of that passage is definitely not there as a diversionary tactic. There are really spirit formations capable of killing people there. They are extremely frightening. The passage on the left is most definitely not something that just appears to be dangerous. Instead, it is actually very dangerous.” The Nangong Imperial Clan’s people who had gone to probe that passage immediately rejected Chu Feng’s theory.

“If one wishes to obtain profits, one must brave dangers. After all, the sky doesn’t rain meat pies.”

“Thus, what I’m going to say to you all is the same. I am only giving you all a suggestion of goodwill. In the end, it will be you all who get to decide which passage to take. Regardless, I am going to be entering this passage.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he said no more and entered the dangerous-looking passage on the left.

Tantai Xue did not hesitate and followed Chu Feng into it.

“Big brother, I’m going to follow Chu Feng. I wish to see exactly what sort of thing might be contained in there,” Nangong Baihe also ran in. This time around, even though she knew that the left passage was dangerous, she still decided to follow Chu Feng’s decision.

“I’m going too, I’m going too,” Nangong Moli also insisted on going. No persuasion was capable of stopping her.

Feeling helpless, Nangong Ya followed them into the left passage. However, he could not have the rest of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan follow them into danger. Thus, he ordered the rest of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen to enter the right passage.

In fact, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan also did not wish to follow them into that sort of danger. Thus, they would naturally not disobey Nangong Ya’s command to have them take the safe passage.

.....

Originally, Nangong Ya wanted to lead the way, because he felt that he had the highest level of cultivation. However, Chu Feng firmly decided to take the lead.

Chu Feng had discovered that the dangerous appearance of this passageway was indeed all fake. This place was in itself a diversion.

Furthermore, Chu Feng deduced that not only would this path be safe now, it would continue to be safe later. Specifically, there would not be any dangerous beings here.

Even if there were actually dangers in this passage, Chu Feng felt that they had definitely not been created by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Instead, they were the doings of other people, the doings of those that had come to participate in the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly like Chu Feng’s group.

If Chu Feng’s guess was correct, then the person who had used

spirit formations to injure and kill the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and Beitang Imperial Clan's joint advance party was most likely the person who had taken the stele.

"Chu Feng, there's a spirit formation trap ahead. It's very difficult to get past, and hard to break apart. Likely, someone meticulously set it there," Suddenly, Tantai Xue warned with a very serious tone.

She had discovered that before Chu Feng was a spirit formation trap. Furthermore, it should be something that had required quite a lot of time to set up and was very difficult to unravel. Even she did not have the certainty in being able to get past that spirit formation safely.

"I know. You all, follow me. I guarantee that there won't be an issue."

When even Tantai Xue had discovered this trap, Chu Feng had naturally discovered it long ago. This trap had been set meticulously. However, it was greatly inferior to the techniques of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

Furthermore, this spirit formation trap had not been set up for a long time. Compared to everything else in this passage, the world spirit formation trap was simply not from the same time period.

Thus, Chu Feng was even more certain that someone had arrived here before them and set up that trap. The reason why he had done so was so that he could prevent others from entering deep into this passage.

Chu Feng became more and more excited. He truly wished to see who it was that would do something this despicable.

Following Chu Feng's lead, Tantai Xue and the others really managed to pass through that spirit formation trap safely.

After this, Nangong Ya also had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. That was because Chu Feng's world spirit techniques

were extremely profound. At the very least, Nangong Ya knew that he, as a gold-cloak world spiritist, would not have been able to pass through such a powerful world spirit trap so effortlessly.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Brother Nangong, protect Baihe and Moli. It might be a little problematic later on.”

“Understood,” Nangong Ya was no fool. As matters stood, he had already realized that something fishy was going on here. In fact, he had even guessed that someone must have done something here, and that there would be an unavoidable battle coming up.

Thus, before Chu Feng had even said those words to him, he was already following closely behind Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli and kept them within a meter’s distance from himself so that he could offer them absolute protection.

After Chu Feng’s warning, the group continued onward. However, the sky and earth suddenly started shaking. The path ahead and the path behind were both sealed off by golden world spirit formations. In the end, they had still fallen into a trap.

At this moment, both Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were very nervous. That was because when the sealing formation appeared, the two of them realized that their opponent was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, someone that would be extremely difficult to take care of.

However, compared to the two of them, Chu Feng was very calm and collected. That was because Chu Feng had entered the trap deliberately. His purpose was to lure the perpetrator out.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk ~~~”

“Truly, there’s a road to heaven that you all refuse to take. Hell has no doors, yet you all charged in,” Sure enough, a strange voice sounded from outside that spirit formation.

“Hell? Merely a spirit formation that you set up can be considered hell? You are truly overrating yourself, no?” Chu Feng

sneered. His tone contained some mockery.

“Brat, I know that you have some skills. However, did you really think that someone like you will be able to break through my spirit formation?” A voice filled with contempt was heard.

“Break through your spirit formation? That’s truly not hard,” Right at this moment, Nangong Ya spoke.

At this moment, a golden-bright and dazzling ‘emperor’ character was flashing on Nangong Ya’s forehead. It was his Imperial Bloodline. After Nangong Ya unleashed his Imperial Bloodline, his aura instantly rose from rank three Half Martial Emperor to rank four Half Martial Emperor.

After his aura became that of a rank four Half Martial Emperor, he took out a weapon. It was a blue spear. That spear emitted emperor’s might. It was an Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Mortal Taboo: Violent Dragon Thrust.”

Suddenly, Nangong Ya attacked. The spear in his hand trembled and turned into a blue violent dragon. That dragon contained peerless might. Following a loud explosion, it pierced through that spirit formation.

At this moment, not to mention others, even Chu Feng’s eyes shone. This Nangong Ya’s true battle strength was comparable to that of a rank seven Martial Emperor. He was truly a genius of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Indeed, he was extremely powerful. At the very least, he was more powerful than the current Chu Feng. Unless Chu Feng had Eggy come out and fight, otherwise the current him would be no match for Nangong Ya.

“Tsk tsk, Nangong Ya, you progress at quite the lightning speed indeed. You’ve surpassed my imagination. However, you are still too inexperienced to fight against me.”

After that spirit formation was broken through, a figure appeared floating in the air. It was an old man. He was wearing a

crimson gown. However, most importantly, that old man had an appearance akin to a ghost. He was truly frightening.

“It’s actually you?” Upon seeing this person, even Nangong Ya’s expression changed. A deep sense of shock appeared in his eyes.

“Tsk tsk, my dear disciple, shouldn’t you be kneeling upon seeing your master?” The man said with a sneer.

Chapter 1579 – Search For Fortune Among Risks

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled. He turned to Nangong Ya and asked, “Master? That man is your master?”

This old man’s strength was pretty decent. He was a rank six Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he possessed heaven-defying battle power. Although it was only capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, it remained that his true strength was on par with rank seven Half Martial Emperors.

However, this sort of strength was evidently not worthy of being Nangong Ya’s master, no? Yet, not only did this old man declare himself to be Nangong Ya’s master, even Nangong Ya seemed to be agreeing with his declaration through his expression. This made Chu Feng extremely puzzled.

“He... is not worthy of being my master. He... is an animal inferior to dogs and pigs.”

“Old Daoist Ghost Face, today, I shall avenge my older sister! I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!”

Suddenly, Nangong Ya let out an extremely intense killing intent explosively. As he spoke those words, his body had already moved. Holding that Incomplete Imperial Armament spear, he unleashed frantic attacks that contained peerless might toward that old man with the ghost-like appearance.

Each and every attack was fatal. It was like an extremely frightening and continuous torrential rain filled with killing intent.

At this moment, Nangong Ya was truly filled with killing intent. It seemed that he had a great grievance and hatred against that old man.

“Unfilial disciple of mine, as they say, a master for one day, a

father for life. At the very least, I taught you world spirit techniques. Yet you dare to attack me like this. Seeing that I'm your master, I shall properly teach you how to behave yourself today."

Facing Nangong Ya's overflowing killing intent, the old man sneered repeatedly. He unleashed many world spirit formations to meet Nangong Ya's incoming attacks.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that this old man's world spirit techniques were extremely powerful. Not only was he a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, his world spirit techniques also contained extremely valiant battle power. Not only was his martial cultivation's battle power that of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, even his world spirit techniques' battle power was at the rank seven Half Martial Emperor level.

His abilities brought even Chu Feng amazement. One must know that this was not something that all world spiritist could accomplish. Yet, that old man had managed to do so. This meant one thing: his world spirit techniques were extremely profound and surpassed those ordinary world spiritists. In fact, his world spirit techniques were even stronger than those of the Sealing Ancient Village's Old Village Chief Ma.

"Baihe, exactly what's going on here?" Chu Feng was puzzled. Thus, he asked Nangong Baihe for an explanation.

"That old man is called Old Daoist Ghost Face. Even though his martial cultivation is not very strong, his attainments in world spirit techniques are extremely high. He could be said to possess some fame in the Holy Land of Martialism."

"Back then, big brother Nangong Ya's father wanted big brother Nangong Ya to make headway in world spiritist techniques at the same time as he learned martial cultivation. Thus, sparing no effort, he paid high prices and gathered a lot of powerful world spirit techniques, and even invited this Old Daoist Ghost Face to

teach big brother Nangong Ya world spirit techniques.”

“However, who would’ve thought that after that Old Daoist Ghost Face saw all those world spirit techniques, he was corrupted with selfish desire. Not only did he seize the opportunity to steal all of the world spirit techniques that big brother Nangong Ya’s father had spent great wealth to purchase, he even killed the people of our Nangong Clan while doing so.”

“The most despicable thing is that before this Old Daoist Ghost Face left, he even raped big brother Nangong Ya’s blood older sister. Unable to bear the humiliation, big brother Nangong Ya’s older sister killed herself. At that time, big brother Nangong Ya saw all of that with his own eyes.”

“Merely, because he was only a child, he could do nothing but watch helplessly when those things happened. This was an enormous blow to big brother Nangong Ya. It is his life’s greatest pain.”

“Our Nangong Clan has been searching for that Old Daoist Ghost Face ever since. However, he had hidden himself extremely well and managed to escape our search all this time. I never would have expected that we would actually be able to encounter him here.” When mentioning this matter, Nangong Baihe also had an angry expression on her face.

“So that’s what happened. I never would have expected that Brother Nangong would have such a tragic history.” Chu Feng finally understood why Nangong Ya would be this furious. His blood sister had been defiled and then died at the hands of that Old Daoist Ghost Face. Furthermore, he saw everything unfold with his own eyes. If it were anyone else, they would also be enraged. If it was Chu Feng, he might be even more enraged than Nangong Ya.

“Since there’s such an enormous hatred between them, let’s have Brother Nangong settle this himself.”

Chu Feng was able to tell that Nangong Ya was very powerful.

Even though that Old Daoist Ghost Face was also very strong, it was clear that his talent was inferior to Nangong Ya's. Thus, Chu Feng felt that Nangong Ya should be able to defeat the Old Daoist Ghost Face.

“Baihe, Moli, follow me. I wish to see exactly what this old animal decided to block us from coming in here for,” As Chu Feng spoke, he prepared to bring Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli further into the passage. He wanted to see exactly what was hidden inside.

However, Nangong Baihe refused to leave. “I wish to stay behind and see how this old animal will meet his doom.”

“Moli will also stay,” Nangong Moli also demanded to stay.

“Buzz~~~~~”

Seeing that, Chu Feng began to form hand seals. Then, a layer of golden world spirit power surged forth. It turned into a very strong world spirit formation that covered Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli within it.

Furthermore, Chu Feng handed Nangong Baihe a communication talisman. He said, “Notify me immediately if the situation turns bad.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng proceeded onward. Not long after he continued onward, Chu Feng discovered a stele. That stele's size was the same as the size of the stele that had been lost from the island's stone platform.

Upon getting closer to the stele, sure enough, there were words written on it. However, only five simple yet large words were written on it: ‘Search For Fortune Among Risks’

“This hint is obvious enough. No wonder that Old Daoist Ghost Face decided to steal this stele away. Merely, why didn't he destroy it?” Chu Feng was a bit confused.

“He is, after all, a world spiritist. Furthermore, he's a very

experienced, shrewd and ruthless world spiritist. Perhaps he thinks that there are treasures contained here, and the stele might be the key to open those treasures?” Eggy explained.

“Makes sense,” Chu Feng nodded. That was because what Eggy said was indeed reasonable. However, at this moment, Chu Feng did not care about this. Instead, he began to survey the surroundings with his Heaven’s Eyes. He felt that if something were really hidden in here, then it should be around them.

“Found it,” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze was fixed onto one place, and his lips lifted into a light smile.

The place he was looking at was completely empty. However, after Chu Feng got closer to it, he waved his sleeve, and golden light began to shine all over. It was a whole bunch of Snake Mark-level royal spirit energy.

It turned out that there was a concealment formation placed onto this place. It was an extremely hidden concealment formation. If one did not carefully survey their surroundings, it would be extremely difficult to discover the concealment formation. Unfortunately, it was still discovered by Chu Feng.

Even though this spirit formation had been set up by a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it was set up in a very hurried fashion. Thus, it would not be hard for Chu Feng to undo it. In fact, it could even be said to be extremely easy.

Chu Feng immediately set up a spirit formation to undo the concealment formation. Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated. This concealment formation was soon undone by him.

“Brat, don’t you touch my things. If you dare to touch them, I’ll definitely kill you.”

Immediately after that concealment spirit formation was undone by him, Chu Feng immediately heard a voice filled with threatening intent. It was that Old Daoist Ghost Face. Evidently,

he knew that Chu Feng had undone his concealment formation and grew very angered.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored that Old Daoist Ghost Face's threatening words. Instead, he smiled lightly and loudly replied, "Since you don't want me to touch them, I insist on touching them."

Chapter 1580 – Ancient Era’s Scroll

“Little bastard, I’m going to exterminate you!!!”

Once Chu Feng said those words, he was immediately met with overflowing killing intent from Old Daoist Ghost Face.

“Heh...”

Chu Feng had a smile on his face, and completely ignored Old Daoist Ghost Face’s threat. He waved his sleeve again, and the concealment formation disappeared completely.

Merely, after that concealment formation disappeared, another golden-bright and dazzling spirit formation appeared before Chu Feng’s sight.

Merely, compared to the concealment formation earlier, this spirit formation was a lot stronger. Even Chu Feng’s eyes shone upon seeing it.

That was because this spirit formation was an unsealing formation, an extremely powerful unsealing formation. It was not only powerful because it had been set up by a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Rather, this spirit formation itself was already extremely powerful. It was simply impossible for ordinary world spiritists to be able to grasp this spirit formation. Even if they did, it would be extremely hard for them to set it up.

Merely through seeing this world spirit formation, Chu Feng realized how extraordinary that Old Daoist Ghost Face was. He could be said to be an elite existence among all the world spiritists present in the Holy Land of Martialism. If given sufficient time, it would not be impossible for him to become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist in the future.

The reason why this unsealing formation was here was because it was currently unraveling a protection formation. Inside that protection formation was an item. It was an ancient scroll.

The ancient aura being emitted by the scroll was very extraordinary. From a glance, Chu Feng could immediately tell that this scroll was likely something from the Ancient Era. It was most likely placed here by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal as a reward to the crowd.

However, it was clear that this reward was not that easily attainable. That was because there was a very powerful spirit formation protecting the scroll.

Everything that Old Daoist Ghost Face had done was for the sake of breaking that protection formation and obtaining the scroll. Furthermore, at this moment, he had managed to make some headway.

“That Old Daoist Ghost Face’s spirit formation is very powerful. However, it will still take some time for it to break open the protective formation. Allow me to lend you a helping hand.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his arms began to move about. Layer upon layer of spirit power turned into numerous runes and symbols as they entered the Old Daoist Ghost Face’s unsealing formation.

Chu Feng was planning to take over Old Daoist Ghost Face’s spirit formation, and then use it to rapidly open the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s protective formation.

“Little bastard, you’re actually planning to take over my spirit formation for your own usage? You’re truly shameless to the extreme!”

That Old Daoist Ghost Face’s reaction was very sharp. He was immediately aware that Chu Feng was trying to take over his spirit formation. He flew into a violent rage and began shouting angrily at Chu Feng.

“Shameless? I couldn’t possibly compare with you in that,” Chu Feng sneered and then continued on with trying to take over that

unsealing formation.

“Ji, ji, ji, ji ~~~~”

Suddenly, snarls sounded from the spirit formation. Then, snake-like substances shot out explosively from it. Their speed was so fast that they landed on Chu Feng’s body in an instant, and wrapped themselves around him completely. Furthermore, they also began to bite Chu Feng. Their strength was extremely strong. They were simply planning to tear Chu Feng to shreds.

The spirit formation set up by that Old Daoist Ghost Face actually contained this sort of function, a trap to prevent others from taking over.

“Hahaha, little bastard, did you really think that this old man’s spirit formation was something that you could touch? This is what you get for doing that,” That Old Daoist Ghost Face ridiculed.

It turned out that he had deliberately been pretending to be nervous earlier. His intention had been for Chu Feng to lower his guard so that he would fall for his trap.

“Heh... insignificant talent.”

However, Chu Feng merely sneered. Then, without even moving, countless blades formed by spirit formations shot out from his body.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The blades shone, and looked like flower blossoms. The trap of snakes was sliced apart by the golden blades. One by one, they fell from Chu Feng’s body.

Chu Feng increased the strength of the spirit power that he was instilling into Old Daoist Ghost Face’s spirit formation. Soon, he had completely severed it from Old Daoist Ghost Face’s control. Then, he replaced the severed control with his own spirit power, and took over the spirit formation completely.

“How could this be? Your world spirit techniques have actually reached this high of a level?”

At this moment, Old Daoist Ghost Face was in utter disbelief. Never did he expect that Chu Feng, someone with only the cultivation of rank eight Martial King, would possess such a powerful level of battle power with world spirit techniques. Chu Feng’s battle power with world spirit techniques was a lot more frightening than his own.

This was an extremely difficult thing to accept for Old Daoist Ghost Face, someone who had considered himself to be a genius world spiritist. In an instant, a sound of disbelief began to resonate from his mouth.

However, Chu Feng ignored him completely. He began to use the Old Daoist Ghost Face’s spirit formation, as well as his own techniques, to wholeheartedly break that protective formation. He wished to obtain that Ancient Era’s Scroll as quickly as possible.

“It’s useless. You will not be able to break that spirit formation. This old man has used many days to break it apart, but has still not managed to do so. You are merely an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it is definitely impossible for you to break it apart.”

“Just you wait. After this old man finishes taking care of this unfilial disciple, I’ll go and take care of you, little bastard. In the meantime, I might as well conveniently enjoy those three girls. Hahaha. Those three little beauties are all more beautiful than Nangong Yue. This old man is truly fortunate today,” Old Daoist Ghost Face uttered a shameless laugh.

“Old animal, I’ll dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!!” Right at this moment, Nangong Ya’s voice that contained overflowing killing intent sounded once again. That was because the Nangong Yue that Old Daoist Ghost Face had spoken of was precisely his late older sister.

“Unfilial disciple, did you really think that you would be able to dismember my body into ten thousand pieces? The person who’s going to die today is you.” Old Daoist Ghost Face was not to be outdone. Facing Nangong Ya’s fierce attacks, not only did he not dodge, he instead unleashed fierce attacks toward him himself.

“I’ve truly underestimated that Old Daoist Ghost Face. If this is to continue, Nangong Ya might not necessarily be a match for him.”

Even though Chu Feng wasn’t in the range of the battle, he was not far away from it. Since the Old Daoist Ghost Face was able to detect Chu Feng’s every movement, Chu Feng was naturally also able to detect Old Daoist Ghost Face’s every movement.

Chu Feng discovered that that Old Daoist Ghost Face was very hard to deal with. He was able to block Nangong Ya’s attacks using only world spirit techniques, and was unleashing counterattacks at Nangong Ya nonstop. Even though Nangong Ya’s killing intent was soaring, he was unable to do anything to that Old Daoist Ghost Face, and had actually entered a disadvantaged state.

“Chu Feng, should I go and help him?” Right at this moment, a voice transmission sounded in Chu Feng’s ears. It was Tantai Xue.

Tantai Xue had been watching the battle between the two people the entire time. Seeing that Nangong Ya was unable to take care of Old Daoist Ghost Face, Tantai Xue also wished to help. After all, as Nangong Ya was still not defeated, it would be much more beneficial to attack that Old Daoist Ghost Face together.

“Go ahead. However, you must be careful. Do not try too hard,” Chu Feng replied.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Right after Chu Feng’s voice sounded, explosions began to be heard nonstop. Tantai Xue had unleashed her attacks. Tantai Xue’s attacks were truly no small matter. She had directly used her

Divine Power. Her cultivation of rank two Half Martial Emperor was directly increased to rank three Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, she took out a bamboo flute. That flute was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Furthermore, it was not a copy, but rather an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament. It was the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute she had obtained from the Cursed Soil Sect.

With that Incomplete Imperial Armament in hand, Tantai Xue had reduced the gap in strength between her, Nangong Ya and that Old Daoist Ghost Face.

“That Tantai Xue is actually this powerful?!”

At this moment, Nangong Baihe was still standing beside the battle. She had a stunned expression on her face as she looked at the snowflakes that covered the entire sky, as well as the bamboo flute in Tantai Xue’s hand that was sending out explosive talismans the entire time.

She discovered that not only did Chu Feng possess heaven-defying strength, Chu Feng’s companion Tantai Xue also possessed heaven-defying strength. She had truly been blind before to underestimate them so much.

Chapter 1581 – Unendurable Craving

Energy ripples were wreaking havoc through the passage. Rumbling and explosions were springing up everywhere. Waves of frightening oppressive might surged forth like the wind as they collided with the passage, causing it to tremble repeatedly.

If it weren't for the fact that the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up was powerful, Nangong Baihe would have already escaped this place with Nangong Moli. They would not have stayed here like they were now. That was because the battle between the three was growing more and more intense.

Holding the spear in his hand, Nangong Ya was unleashing golden rays all over the place. He was using the techniques of the Nangong Imperial Clan with absolute mastery.

True to her name, Tantai Xue was creating chilliness akin to ice-cold snow. The snowflakes created by her Divine Power were even more frightening than blades.

However, at this moment, Tantai Xue's strongest attack was coming from her flute, that actual Incomplete Imperial Armament, the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute!!!

The Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute was a treasure of the Cursed Soil Sect. However, not only had it been obtained by Tantai Xue, it had also been subdued by her. As it had recognized Tantai Xue as its master, Tantai Xue was capable of using the power of the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute at will.

Using talismans to attack had merely been the first phase. Right now, Tantai Xue was unleashing attacks from the second phase. Talismans were changed into human-shaped death warriors. Several tens of ten-foot-tall death warriors were holding hatchets and unleashing very dense killing intent as they repeatedly launched ferocious fatal attacks at Old Daoist Ghost Face.

Logically, the combined attacks from Tantai Xue and Nangong Ya should have been extremely powerful. They should have been able to kill ordinary rank seven Half Martial Emperors. However, their opponent just so happened to be a remarkable existence.

Although Old Daoist Ghost Face's martial cultivation was not very high, his world spirit techniques were very powerful. That was why he had been invited to the Nangong Imperial Clan to teach Nangong Ya world spirit techniques. He was an expert world spiritist.

His world spirit techniques' battle power was even stronger than his martial cultivation's battle power. Thus, even though Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue had joined hands, he was still able to handle the two of them without falling into a disadvantageous position.

"Impossible! This is impossible! You're merely an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, how could you possibly undo that formation this quickly?!!!!"

Suddenly, the expression on Old Daoist Ghost Face's face changed enormously, and he began to shout hysterically. It turned out that Chu Feng had broken apart the spirit formation around the Ancient Era's Scroll and grabbed onto it.

"Woosh~~~"

Detecting that the situation was bad, Old Daoist Ghost Face became anxious and started to panic. He wanted to rush toward Chu Feng's direction and snatch the Ancient Era's Scroll from Chu Feng's hand.

"Trying to leave?"

However, how could Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue possibly give him the opportunity to do so? The two of them attacked him simultaneously, and tangled themselves with him without allowing him to get away. As such, Old Daoist Ghost Face did not have the chance to disengage from the two of them.

“The two of you are anxious to die. Very well, this old man shall help you accomplish your aim.”

Old Daoist Ghost Face was truly anxious. His body began to emit a crimson gaseous substance. At the same time, his Royal-level spirit power actually turned from a golden color to a crimson color. It was extremely strange.

“Nangong Ya, be careful. He has used a forbidden world spirit technique. The effect is similar to martial cultivators taking forbidden drugs. The only difference is that he has not increased his martial power, but rather his spirit power.”

Tantai Xue immediately discovered that the situation was bad, and warned Nangong Ya, who was fighting alongside her.

“So what if you’ve discovered what I did? You’ll end up dying regardless.”

Old Daoist Ghost Face attacked. Sure enough, his attack this time was much different from before. Crimson spirit power surged forth with earth-shattering might. The spirit power turned into countless crimson skulls with open mouths that charged to bite Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue. That powerful might immediately gave Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue enormous pressure.

.....

As for Chu Feng, not only did he obtain the Ancient Era’s Scroll, he had even opened it. After he saw the contents of the Ancient Era’s Scroll, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

“What a coincidence. This is actually the Evil Spirit Binding Formation that I have yearned for day and night.”

Chu Feng was truly overjoyed. That was because what was recorded on the Ancient Era’s Scroll was not only a world spirit formation, it was a Taboo Formation Technique, the Evil Spirit Binding Formation.

As the name implied, the Evil Spirit Binding Formation was

capable of being used to control Evil Spirits and have them work for you.

Other than the Evil Spirit Binding Formation, Chu Feng had also obtained another Taboo Formation Technique from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram. That Taboo Formation Technique was the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation.

The World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation was capable of undoing the contract between the world spirits and the world spiritist, forcibly stripping the world spirits from the world spiritist's world spirit space and turning them into evil spirits.

These two spirit formations both possessed extremely frightening usages. Both of them could be said to be absolute taboos for world spiritists.

However, the most frightening aspect would be when the Evil Spirit Binding Formation and the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation, these two Taboo Formation Techniques, were gathered together. At that time, they would be capable of doing something even more frightening.

That thing was also what Chu Feng had wanted to do the entire time. He had wanted to strip the other powerful and berserk world spirit from his body, turning it into an evil spirit. Then, he wanted to bind it and have it be used by him.

His other world spirit possessed overflowing killing intent. It had been sealed in Chu Feng's world spirit space for many years, and had wanted to kill Chu Feng the entire time.

Chu Feng did not dare to release it at all. That was because, if it were released, not only would it kill Chu Feng, it would also bring about devastation to the entire world, and willfully massacre the innocent.

His other world spirit was different from Eggy. It was truly filled with evil, and was a token of massacre, a true slaughtering Asura.

However, with the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation, Chu Feng was now capable of controlling that dreadful time bomb, and make it so that it could be used by him, becoming part of his strength.

“Truly, we have traveled far and wide looking for it, only to find it this easily. Never would I have expected that not only did the Holy Land of Martialism really contain the Evil Spirit Binding Formation, it was even found by you.” At this moment, Eggy was also feeling immense joy. Not only was she in joy, she even began to provoke the gate that sealed the other Asura world spirit in Chu Feng’s world spirit space, “Just you wait. You’ll be taken care of soon.”

“Boom~~~~”

“Boom~~~~”

“Boom~~~~”

After Eggy’s words left her mouth, that gate began to violently tremble. Wave upon wave of berserk energy began to wreak havoc within the gate.

“Eggy, what’s going on?” Chu Feng noticed that something was wrong when he felt wave upon wave of frightening aura filling up his world spirit space. This sort of feeling was very uncomfortable for him.

“It’s nothing. Merely, that weak little guy got angry because it knew that it was going to be out of luck soon,” Eggy smiled nonchalantly. Furthermore, as she spoke, she even hopped over to the gate and knocked on it. She said, “Don’t make a ruckus anymore. If it weren’t for this Queen’s strength being sealed, how could someone like you dare to act this arrogant toward this Queen?”

“Aooouu~~~~”

“Boom~~~~~”

Once Eggy said those words, the shout and snarls from within the gate became more and more ferocious.

“Sigh~~~”

At this moment, Chu Feng sighed. He finally understood why that frightening world spirit was acting this violently. It was all because of the provocations from Her Lady Queen, Eggy.

“Chu Feng, quickly, run away.”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly received Tantai Xue’s voice transmission.

At this moment, Chu Feng’s expression became serious. That was because he had managed to detect that even Tantai Xue and Nangong Ya combined were no match for that Old Daoist Ghost Face. Furthermore, they were in a disadvantageous position, and were on the verge of being defeated.

“Milady Queen, it would seem that I will have to trouble you again,” As Chu Feng spoke, he had already opened his world spirit gate.

The peerless beauty Eggy walked gracefully out from that world spirit gate. A faint light of viciousness shone in her pair of beautiful eyes. Her charming and adorable lips were slightly raised. She extended her sexy little tongue and licked the corner of her mouth. With a very vicious tone, she said, “This Queen had been feeling unendurable cravings for some time now.”

Chapter 1582 – Merely One Strike

The crimson skulls were emitting an overflowing demonic aura. Being controlled by the Old Daoist Ghost Face, the skulls' mouths were wide open as they ferociously attacked Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue nonstop.

Being attacked in this manner, Nangong Ya and Tantai Xue's complexions were both pale. The two of them were both covered with cold sweat. Furthermore, Nangong Ya's left leg was bleeding nonstop. A large chunk of flesh on his leg had been bitten off by the crimson skulls and his white bones could be seen. It was not a light injury.

Their current state was beyond their ability. After all, the technique that Old Daoist Ghost Face had used was truly too nefarious. It simply could not be considered to be a world spirit technique. Rather, it was more like an incomparably vicious demonic technique.

“Damn it, my enemy is before my eyes, how could I not be able to avenge my older sister?”

Nangong Ya was feeling extremely unreconciled. He had trained so hard, all for the sake of beheading this old animal. Yet, now that this old animal was before him, he was actually no match for him. This made him feel extremely unreconciled.

As for Tantai Xue, she was not thinking about as many things as Nangong Ya. She merely wished for Chu Feng to be able to escape. As for everything else, she did not care. She did not even care about her own life and death.

“Fight with me? You all are simply asking for trouble. However, since you all have overestimated your own capabilities this much, I shall help you all accomplish your aim. I'll kill you all thoroughly.”

After obtaining absolute dominance over Nangong Ya and Tantai

Xue, Old Daoist Ghost Face became more and more confident. As he spoke, more and more crimson spirit power was released from his body. The amount of crimson skulls began to increase in numbers nonstop. Furthermore, their strength had also become stronger.

“Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~”

However, right at this time, violent tremblings were suddenly heard from deep within the passage. Furthermore, an indescribable sense of oppression swept forth from within the passage.

“What the hell is that?”

Turning their heads to look, not to mention Nangong Ya and the others, even Old Daoist Ghost Face was deeply frightened.

Dark black gaseous flames were surging forth in layer upon layer like enormous dark black waves.

They seemed to be from the underworld. They were emitting incomparably strong killing intent. Their killing intent was capable of penetrating one's bones and one's soul, and make one feel fear from the bottom of their soul. It was as if there was nothing else in the world more frightening than those dark black gaseous flames.

Even Old Daoist Ghost Face's vicious crimson skulls appeared to be unable to compare to the dark black gaseous flames. Evil? Maliciousness? Before these dark black gaseous flames, those crimson skulls were simply unbecoming of being considered. After all, these gaseous flames were from the Asura Spirit World.

“Wuuuaoooo~~~”

In an instant, the dark black gaseous flames from the Asura Spirit World engulfed Old Daoist Ghost Face.

Old Daoist Ghost Face started to panic, and immediately unleashed his crimson skulls to block the incoming gaseous flames.

The crimson skulls were not to be outdone. One by one, they opened their frightening crimson mouths and began to bite down upon the dark black gaseous flames.

“Waaaouuu~~~”

However, when the crimson skulls approached the black gaseous flames, an enormous black mouth filled with fierce teeth appeared from within the gaseous flames. With merely a single bite, it devoured countless crimson skulls. Then, it actually began to ruthlessly chew them.

In an instant, snapping and cracking sounds began to sound from the dark black gaseous flames. Furthermore, crimson gaseous substances were being emitted from the dark black gaseous flames. Those crimson skulls were being crushed to pieces.

“What are you? Exactly what are you?”

At this moment, Old Daoist Ghost Face started to panic. That was because he felt a kind of sensation as he stood before the dark black gaseous flames — the sensation of powerlessness. He was completely powerless. This was simply a battle that he could not win.

“What are you shouting about? If you’re scared, then go ahead and say it.”

Suddenly, the dark black gaseous flames that came from deep within the passage started to disperse. At the same time, a beautiful woman appeared. It was Eggy.

Wearing her black feathered miniskirt, Eggy moved her pair of fair and jade-like long legs as she calmly and gracefully walked over in the air. Her appearance did not look like someone who was going to battle. Rather, she looked like someone taking a stroll. However, she was actually battling.

“Rank nine Martial King. This is impossible! You’re merely a rank nine Martial King, how could you possess the strength to

suppress me?”

After Old Daoist Ghost Face carefully inspected Eggy's cultivation, he snarled with sound of being unreconciled. He was unable to accept the fact that he had been suppressed by a rank nine Martial King. He felt as if he had lost all face.

“You're unreconciled, is it? You're feeling that this is very unimaginable, no? You won't be able to accept the truth no matter what, no?”

“Actually... I can understand what you're feeling. At this moment, you're like an ant that is striving its hardest to cross the river by riding a leaf. You've followed the flow of the river for a very long time now, and finally, you're about to reach the other end of the river through luck.”

“However, right at this time, you've suddenly seen an enormous elephant. That elephant only took a simple step, and crossed that river that you've been unable to cross for so long.”

“You're feeling bewildered. You're feeling disbelief. You're feeling an incomparable amount of astonishment. In fact, you're unable to even understand how there could be an existence this much more powerful than you. This is simply not natural, is it?”

“However, I can tell you this. This is the truth. The gap between us is akin to that of an elephant and an ant. There's nothing unimaginable about it. Even if you're feeling that it's unimaginable, it only means that your vision was too narrow and shallow in the past, and you have not seen a real powerful existence before.”

“However, there's also no need for you to feel inferior. That's because this is a natural difference. This Queen is innately countless times more powerful than you. In your eyes, my battle power is heaven-defying. However, in the eyes of those that are stronger than me, my battle power is nothing worthy of being mentioned.”

“Oh, it seems like I spoke a bit too much. With how profound my words are, I doubt you’ll understand. Forget about it. It’s time to send you, scum, on your way.”

After finishing those words, killing intent soared in Eggy’s eyes. The dark black gaseous flames became even more intense as they soared toward Old Daoist Ghost Face. They turned into countless dark black claws that began to rip and tear at Old Daoist Ghost Face.

“Enough of your bullshit! This old man will not believe in your nonsense!!!”

Sure enough, that Old Daoist Ghost Face did not take Eggy’s words to heart. After an angry snarl, crimson spirit power began to surge from his body nonstop, like an erupting volcano or a surging river. He had decided to go all-out in this final battle.

With him going all-out, the crimson skulls were like an enormous wave. Carrying a frightening aura along with them, they surged toward Eggy.

Finally, the two attacks collided. However, regardless of how vicious and ferocious the crimson skulls were, they were unable to contend against Eggy’s dark black gaseous flames.

The battle between two armies ended with the stronger one being the victor.

The result of this battle was already determined.

“Crash~~~”

In an instant, Old Daoist Ghost Face’s army of crimson skulls was defeated. Furthermore, the dark black claws ruthlessly penetrated into Old Daoist Ghost Face’s body. They pierced through his dantian and destroyed his consciousness.

The outcome of the battle was determined with merely one strike.

“Hahaha, wahahaha...”

“Luck, this is my luck, wahahaha...”

However, not only did that Old Daoist Ghost Face not wail with pain after being fatally injured, he even started to laugh wildly.

This scene came as an enormous shock to Nangong Ya and the others. Nangong Baihe even thought that Old Daoist Ghost Face was unable to accept the shock, and had gone insane.

Chapter 1583 – Must Take Revenge

“You’re an Asura World Spirit, you’re an Asura World Spirit?!!!”

“I’ve heard that Asura World Spirits are incomparably frightening. Never would I have expected that I would meet one today. Indeed, it is as the legends stated.”

“The legends are real. Everything is real. The Asura World Spirits are the strongest among the seven spirit worlds. The Asura World Spiritists are also the fully deserving rulers among world spiritists.”

“To be able to meet an Asura World Spiritist, and meet such a powerful Asura World Spirit, in my life, I, Old Daoist Ghost Face, have no regrets. My life has not been lived in vain. I have died with my desires fulfilled. Come, kill me. To die at the hands of an Asura World Spiritist, at the hands of an Asura World Spirit, what regret would I possibly have?”

Old Daoist Ghost Face started to shout frantically. At this moment, he was facing death with equanimity. He was not afraid in the slightest. Instead, he felt his death to be an honor.

At this moment, Nangong Ya and the others finally realized why Old Daoist Ghost Face would be acting this abnormally. It turned out that he had accepted his death, that he had been subdued by this powerful world spirit.

Indeed, a world spirit from the Asura Spirit World was a very dreadful existence. They were beings that existed only in the legends. Never would anyone expect that one would actually appear.

At this moment, not to mention Old Daoist Ghost Face, even Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and the others were extremely shocked.

That was because Eggy was too powerful. She was so powerful

that she was already beyond reasonable limits. She had surpassed the range of their comprehension.

“Unfortunately, you are not qualified to die at this Queen’s hands,” Eggy’s cold voice sounded. After that, with a thought, she directly cast Old Daoist Ghost Face to Nangong Ya.

“Many thanks.” Nangong Ya was no fool. He knew that Eggy wanted him to personally take care of Old Daoist Ghost Face and avenge his older sister. Eggy was helping him attain his goal.

In truth, Nangong Ya also wished to be able to kill Old Daoist Ghost Face personally, so as to avenge his older sister.

Seeing that Nangong Ya was about to kill him, Old Daoist Ghost Face’s expression immediately changed enormously. Filled with unreconciled feelings, he began to shout, “No, don’t! Don’t have this unfilial disciple of mine kill me! I beg of you! Milady Asura, please kill me! Only by dying at your hands will I be able to die without regrets!”

“Puutt~~~”

Nangong Ya acted. The spear in his hand turned into a golden light and ruthlessly pierced into Old Daoist Ghost Face’s body. Then, the spear began to tremble, and a burst of emperor’s might swept forth. It completely crushed all of Old Daoist Ghost Face’s internal organs.

In fact, it was not only his internal organs. Even the remaining bits of his dantian and consciousness were crushed by this emperor’s might.

Nangong Ya did not try to torment Old Daoist Ghost Face. With merely a single strike, he killed him. It could be said that his killing of Old Daoist Ghost Face was very clean and efficient.

After that strike, the boulder that had crushed his heart was finally lifted. Nangong Ya immediately felt a lot more at ease.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a frantic suction power suddenly appeared. It was Eggy. Eggy was using her power to devour Old Daoist Ghost Face's source energy. Even though she had not killed Old Daoist Ghost Face personally, she would not let his source energy get away.

"This source energy is truly lacking. It's not filling at all." After absorbing the source energy, Eggy curled her lips with great dissatisfaction. No matter what Her Lady Queen did, she still appeared extremely beautiful. Her each and every action was incomparably adorable. Even when killing people, she was still incomparably beautiful.

"Thank you for helping me attain my revenge," Right at this moment, Nangong Ya actually kneeled before Eggy and bowed to her to display his thanks.

"Thank you for helping big brother Nangong Ya attain his revenge," Following him, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli also kneeled onto the ground.

That was because the two of them both knew very well how important killing Old Daoist Ghost Face was to Nangong Ya.

Furthermore, even if Eggy did not have Nangong Ya personally kill Old Daoist Ghost Face, she still helped them enormously.

If it weren't for Eggy, they would all have met their deaths at the hands of Old Daoist Ghost Face. Especially Tantai Xue, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli, these three women, they might even have been disgraced before being killed.

It was only because of Eggy that they had managed to narrowly escape that dreadful fate. Not only had Eggy helped them, she had even saved their lives and guarded their dignities.

"Don't bother thanking me. If you want to thank someone, go thank him," However, Eggy was very cold toward the display of thanks from Nangong Ya and the others. She did not bother to pay

much attention to them. Instead, with her hands behind her back, she began to take graceful steps back into the depths of the passage.

It was only at this moment that the crowd discovered that Chu Feng had already walked over. Furthermore, after Eggy approached him, Chu Feng opened a world spirit gate with a thought. Without even bothering to turn her head around, Eggy entered that world spirit gate.

If Nangong Ya and the others had still been guessing exactly whose world spirit Eggy was, then, at this moment, they no longer needed to guess anymore. Eggy, this unimaginably powerful world spirit, was Chu Feng's world spirit.

Chu Feng was a legendary Asura World Spiritist.

At this moment, both Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe did not say anything. However, their thoughts were surging like a violent tide. For a very long time, they were unable to calm themselves.

He possessed heaven-defying battle power. Furthermore, he was an Asura World Spiritist. This Chu Feng was simply a bit too powerful, no? He was so powerful that he surpassed their imaginations.

The current Chu Feng's true cultivation was only that of rank eight Martial King. However, even an expert like Old Daoist Ghost Face had been killed by him. If Chu Feng were to become a Half Martial Emperor in the future, how much more frightening would he become? If he were to become a Martial Emperor, how much more frightening would he become then?

Would there possibly be anyone at the same level of cultivation as him that could possibly match him?

At this moment, regardless of whether it was Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli or even Nangong Ya, they all had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. That was because they had managed to

realize exactly how powerful this man by the name of Chu Feng was.

“Everyone, are you all uninjured?” Chu Feng surveyed everyone with a beaming smile on his face. Earlier, he had been preoccupied with putting that Ancient Era’s Scroll away, and had not been able to hurry back in time. If Nangong Ya and the others were to have been injured because of that, Chu Feng would feel very apologetic.

“Brother Chu Feng, thank you,” Nangong Ya walked over to Chu Feng, and wanted to kneel and bow to Chu Feng.

“My, Brother Nangong, what are you doing?” Chu Feng was not Eggy. How could he possibly allow Nangong Ya to display such a grand courtesy of kneeling and bowing to him? Thus, before Nangong Ya could kneel onto the ground, Chu Feng immediately walked over to him and supported him with his arms, stopping him from kneeling.

“Brother Chu Feng, you do not understand. Killing Old Daoist Ghost Face personally was extremely important to me. Even in my dreams I would dream about killing him. To be able to attain the desire that I have hoped to accomplish for a very long time, it is all thanks to you.”

“Brother Chu Feng, today, you have truly helped me enormously. You are my great benefactor.” When Nangong Ya said those words, his eyes were actually brimming with tears of excitement. He was on the verge of crying.

At this moment, Chu Feng’s heart was also moved. As they say, real men do not cry easily. The reason for that was because their sore spots were not touched.

However, Nangong Ya’s tears were not tears of sadness. Instead, they were tears of having his cherished desire accomplished. These were tears of ease, tears of breaking free from his worries, tears of having attained revenge.

Chapter 1584 – A Series Of Mockeries

“Brother Nangong, there’s no need to say anymore. I understand your frame of mind. Merely, if you take me, Chu Feng, as a brother, then please do not view me as your benefactor. That’s because, as brothers, I only did what I should have done,” Chu Feng said as he patted Nangong Ya’s shoulders.

“Brother Chu Feng, based on those words of yours, and based on your character, I am definitely taking you as a brother,” Nangong Ya was also a frank and straightforward person. With Chu Feng saying things this bluntly, he could not find a reason to continue to insist otherwise. Thus, Nangong Ya decided to keep his thanks in his heart.

To see Nangong Ya and Chu Feng calling each other brothers, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were also very happy.

The Nangong Imperial Clan possessed an innumerable amount of siblings. However, there were not many people who actually possessed a close relationship with them. Nangong Ya was one of the few people who actually possessed a real close relationship with them.

As for Chu Feng, he was someone who had saved their lives many times before. Even though they had only known Chu Feng for several days, Nangong Baihe and her sister Nangong Moli both felt Chu Feng to be a very important friend.

The fact that Chu Feng and Nangong Ya’s relationship had become this close was something that they wanted to see, wished to see.

Afterward, Nangong Ya placed the corpse of Old Daoist Ghost Face into a special Cosmos Sack. His intention was naturally not to bury Old Daoist Ghost Face. Rather, he was going to bring Old Daoist Ghost Face’s corpse back to the Nangong Imperial Clan so that he could present it to his older sister’s grave to show her that

this Old Daoist Ghost Face had died, and that he had managed to avenge her.

After the matter with Old Daoist Ghost Face's corpse was taken care of, Chu Feng and the others continued onward. Even though the passage onward felt more and more dangerous, to the point that it even made Nangong Moli turn pale and shiver with fright, all the dangers were actually fake. As long as one was courageous enough to continue onward, one would not experience any danger.

Nangong Ya and the others did not ask Chu Feng what had happened deep within the passage. That was because, to them, killing Old Daoist Ghost Face was the most important matter. Regardless of what Chu Feng might have found, none of them were interested.

However, Chu Feng did not try to conceal what had happened. Instead, he took out the Ancient Era's Scroll and showed it to them.

Merely, this Ancient Era's Scroll that contained the Evil Spirit Binding Formation was not something that just anyone could comprehend. Unless one possessed extraordinary world spirit techniques, it would be nearly impossible to comprehend its contents.

Thus, other than Tantai Xue, Chu Feng was certain that even Nangong Ya was unable to comprehend exactly what was written on this Ancient Era's Scroll. The most Nangong Ya was able to get from the scroll was that it was a treasure which recorded something extraordinary.

"That is indeed a treasure. Brother Chu Feng, it was discovered by you. You should keep it." After Nangong Ya saw the Ancient Era's Scroll, he handed it back to Chu Feng.

"That's right. Chu Feng, you should keep it. Your world spirit techniques are the best among us. This scroll might be of use to you," Nangong Baihe added.

“In that case, I shall accept it,” Seeing that they wanted him to keep it, Chu Feng decided to accept it. After all, this Evil Spirit Binding Formation was extremely important to him.

After continuing onward with their journey, Chu Feng and the others finally exited the passage. When they exited the passageway, what appeared before their eyes was the actual Immortal Island.

Immortal Island was an extremely large island. Rather than calling it an island, it was more suitable to call it a continent, a continent many times larger than the Nine Provinces Continent.

There were many heaven-reaching trees, fantastic flowers and plants on Immortal Island. In fact, some of those fantastic flowers and plants were ones that Chu Feng had never seen before.

For example, there were some flowers that flew gracefully in the air like butterflies. There were some flowers that would hop around the flowerbed like fairies. Furthermore, when they felt danger from people approaching them, they would immediately enter the soil to hide themselves. It was a very adorable scene.

In fact, even the clouds here were different. They were all different shapes, and looked like drawings. Some looked like animals, and some looked like buildings. As they drifted in the sky, they looked like a city in the sky.

This place gave off an overflowing sensation of being a place where immortals lived. The name ‘Immortal Island’ was very befitting of this place.

There was an enormous plaza nearby. At this moment, a lot of people were gathered on this plaza. Many of them were familiar faces.

For example, among them were the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and the other people Chu Feng and the others had met earlier. In fact, even

everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan was gathered on the plaza.

When they saw that Chu Feng and the others had actually managed to walk out from that dangerous passage, they all displayed traces of surprise in their eyes.

However, other than the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan, the rest of the people seemed to be feeling unhappy for Chu Feng and the others' appearance. This was especially true for the Beitang Imperial Clan. They seemed to have wanted Chu Feng and the others to die in the passage.

At this moment, only the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan ran over to greet Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and the others.

“Yoh, I truly never expected that you all would actually manage to escape from there.” At this moment, Beitang Zimo walked over. However, not only was his tone very eccentric, it also contained ridicule.

“It seems like you wish we had died in there?” Nangong Ya did not respond to Beitang Zimo with kindness. After all, as the relationship of an alliance was no longer present, there was no reason for Nangong Ya to act amiably toward Beitang Zimo anymore.

“My, my, my, Brother Nangong, watch the way you say things. After all, our Beitang Clan and your Nangong Clan have long been friends. How could I possibly have wanted you dead? To see that you're fine, I'm extremely happy.”

“Merely, because of our good relationship, I came over to inform you something. I've heard that the weapons one can obtain in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly are restricted. The people who arrive at the Immortal Island faster will be able to obtain better weapons.”

“The countdown began the moment we set foot on this sea. It

would seem that our Beitang Clan was faster than your Nangong Clan. We set foot on this sea after you all. Yet, we have arrived at the Immortal Island before you.”

“Thus, based on the rules of this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, I’m afraid that the weapons that we will obtain would be better than yours. Truth be told, I am feeling very apologetic regarding that.”

“However, this cannot be blamed on me. After all, I urged you to not take that passage before. Yet, you all refused to listen to me, and instead decided to listen to that stinky brat’s words. Look, aren’t you regretting it now? I can only say that you’ve all brought it upon yourselves,” Beitang Zimo said with an expression of complacency. He had come to deliberately attack Nangong Ya and the others.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Nangong Ya suddenly took out his spear. With a flash of light, that sharp spear of his was pointed at Beitang Zimo’s throat. It was merely a hair’s length from Beitang Zimo’s throat.

At this moment, not to mention Beitang Zimo, the rest of the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan were all frightened. One by one, they immediately took out their weapons and pointed them at Nangong Ya.

At the same time, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan also took out their weapons and began to stand in confrontation against the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan.

This scene greatly frightened a lot of the people present. Many of the people nearby immediately began to keep their distance out of fear of being implicated by the battle between these two grand Imperial Clans.

Chapter 1585 – The Strongest of the Younger Generation

“You, listen carefully. Brother Chu Feng is my brother. If you dare to say another disrespectful remark about him, do not blame me, Nangong Ya, for being impolite,” After Nangong Ya finished saying those words, Nangong Ya retrieved his spear.

“You... you... good... Nangong Ya, what courage you have. As this place is the Immortal Island, I will show my respect toward Weaponry Refinement Immortal, and not lower myself to argue with you. However, after we leave Immortal Island, I will definitely teach you a lesson.”

To have his throat pointed at and nearly pierced into by Nangong Ya’s spear before this many people caused Beitang Zimo to feel extremely humiliated. He was so angry that he started to gnash his teeth. Beitang Zimo was a person who held grudges. This hatred was deeply remembered by him.

“Everyone, I’ve made you all wait.”

Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded. Soon, a group of white clothed people wearing conical bamboo hats arrived from the other end of the plaza.

There were a total of twenty people, with ten on either side. Their appearances could not be determined. However, their cultivations could be felt. All twenty of them were peak Half Martial Emperors, existences at the same level as the Nine Powers’ headmasters.

However, these extraordinary existences were standing to either side like a group of guards. It was as if they were waiting for someone.

Sure enough, a young man soon walked over following the twenty experts. He then stood at their forefront.

Then, those twenty experts began to follow behind that young man like a group of guards.

This young man was also wearing white clothes. His age was on par with Nangong Ya and Beitang Zimo's. However, his cultivation was actually even stronger than theirs. Even though they were all from the younger generation, this young man's cultivation was actually rank five Half Martial Emperor.

It was not only that. His battle power was also extremely strong. Like Chu Feng and Tantai Xue, he possessed heaven-defying battle power that could surmount three levels of cultivation. In other words, this young man's actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank eight Half Martial Emperors.

Someone of the younger generation who could contend against rank eight Half Martial Emperors, this young man was the strongest member of the younger generation Chu Feng had ever seen since his arrival in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that this white-clothed young man, other than possessing an extremely powerful cultivation, also emitted a special sort of aura. He was emitting a faint golden light.

While that golden light was something that ordinary people would not be able to see, Chu Feng was capable of seeing it. It was world spirit power, the spirit power of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. This white-clothed young man was not only a martial cultivation genius, he was also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

This sort of talent was truly frightening.

"Who is that man? He's so powerful," At this moment, even Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and began to inquire. That was because this young man's talent in all aspects could not be looked down upon. It could be said that he was the strongest of the younger generation. At the very least, he was the strongest among all of the others of the younger generation that Chu Feng had

encountered.

“I’ve also never seen that man before. However, if my guess is correct, he should be Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s personal disciple, [Baili Xinghe](#),” Nangong Ya said.

“Baili Xinghe?” Chu Feng remembered this name. This Baili Xinghe was qualified for Chu Feng to remember his name.

“Mn, Baili Xinghe is a Divine Body. Reportedly, he controls a Divine Power like the galaxy. Among all Divine Powers, he is one of the strongest. There are even people who say that he has the strongest Divine Body in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Look carefully at Baili Xinghe’s eyes. His eyes seem like they contain the galaxy. They’re extremely extraordinary,” Nangong Ya said as he pointed at Baili Xinghe.

“Indeed. Not only do his eyes seem to contain the galaxy, his entire aura is extremely extraordinary. From merely a glance, one can tell that he’s a dragon among men. The Overlord Domain is truly a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers.”

Rarely had Chu Feng ever given this sort of evaluation of someone of his same generation. However, this Baili Xinghe was really extremely outstanding. Chu Feng couldn’t help but give him such a high evaluation. If he didn’t, it would only seem like he was being miserly. As for Chu Feng, he was never a miserly individual.

“Is that Baili Xinghe the strongest of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism right now?” Tantai Xue asked curiously. It was evident that she was also astonished by Baili Xinghe’s powerful strength.

“While Baili Xinghe is very powerful, he shouldn’t be the most powerful. At the very least, the Four Great Imperial Clans all possess members of the younger generation as powerful as him.”

“I presume that the Mortal King Palace, the Underworld palace and the Heavenly Law Palace would likely also possess members of

the younger generation as powerful as him.”

“As for the Elf Kingdom, there’s no need to mention them. I suspect they have more than just one member of the younger generation as powerful as him.”

“However, regardless, Baili Xinghe could represent the tallest stepping stone among our current Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation,” Nangong Ya replied.

“He’s still not the strongest? In that case, how powerful is the strongest member of the younger generation? What sort of cultivation does he or she have now?” Tantai Xue began to guess curiously.

“Strongest? That’s very hard to define. While we’re all members of the younger generation, our ages are different, and the people nurturing us are also different. Thus, it is truly extremely hard to determine who is the strongest. After all, being the strongest now does not mean that they will remain the strongest later on.”

“If I had to determine who was the strongest among our younger generation, then I would have to base it on talent. If I am to be the judge, then, among all the people I’ve encountered, I think that Brother Chu Feng is the strongest,” Nangong Ya said as he looked to Chu Feng.

“Me? I’m merely a rank eight Martial King. You don’t have to joke around with me,” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

“Brother Chu Feng, there is no need for you to be this modest. I have personally seen your strength. I dare guarantee that, with your talent, you will, sooner or later, surpass even that Baili Xinghe,” Nangong Ya said.

“However, other than you, Brother Chu Feng, I feel that there’s another individual capable of competing against you. Her talent is truly too frightening,” Nangong Ya added.

“Who is it?” Tantai Xue asked curiously.

“I’ve heard that there’s a little princess from the Elf Kingdom who is a super genius rarely seen even in ten thousand years. She was already a Martial King when she was born. When she was ten years old, she became a Half Martial Emperor. As for her current age, she should only be a bit older than Moli. However, I reckon that her cultivation would not be any weaker than Baili Xinghe’s.”

“She is a true genius. Not only does she possess exceptional talent, she was also born to an enormous family. I truly cannot assess how powerful she will become in the future,” Nangong Ya said.

“There’s actually a person that powerful?” After hearing what Nangong Ya said, Chu Feng was startled.

To be born a Martial King and become a Half Martial Emperor at the age of ten was truly a bit too powerful. One must know that Chu Feng had only started on the path of martial cultivation when he was ten years old. At that time, not to mention Martial Kings, even Heaven Realm-level experts were like legends to him.

“Actually, that is normal too. Not to mention that the Elf Kingdom’s princess is a rare genius rarely seen in ten thousand years, the methods at the Elf Kingdom’s disposal to nurture their younger generation are also things that we cannot compare against.”

“After all, they have existed for so long, and they have remained the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism this entire time. As such, how could the geniuses that they nurture possibly be ordinary?”

“Other than the several Overlord’s eras, the Ancient Era’s Elves have always been the true rulers of the Holy Land of Martialism. Neither we humans nor the monstrous beasts dare to provoke the Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“Thus, after Emperor Qing’s time, the Ancient Era’s Elves have been the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Naturally, the strongest member of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism should also be from them,” Nangong Ya said.

Baili Xinghe → Surname Baili (hundred miles, actual surname) and given name Xinghe → star river → galaxy.

Chapter 1586 – Announcing The Result

“Even though the Ancient Era’s Elves are extremely powerful, it is still unimaginable for such a genius to appear. Is what you said the truth? How accurate is your information?” Tantai Xue did not believe the story.

“It is absolutely true. My father has personally seen how powerful that Elf Kingdom’s princess was. At that time, she should only have been ten years old. However, she was already a rank one Half Martial Emperor.”

“Furthermore, her battle power was extremely strong. Even rank five Half Martial Emperors were no match for her. My father personally saw that little princess easily defeat a rank five Half Martial Emperor with her cultivation of rank one Half Martial Emperor,” Nangong Ya said.

“That’s the truth. My father was also present at that time. He also saw it,” Nangong Baihe added.

“Defeating a rank five Half Martial Emperor with the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Emperor, doesn’t that mean that that Elf Kingdom’s little princess possesses heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?” At this moment, Chu Feng was also enormously shocked. To be able to surmount four levels of cultivation was something that surpassed even his heaven-defying battle power.

“Indeed, she was capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Furthermore, that was several years ago. That Elf Kingdom’s little princess has never been seen after that. Thus, no one knows exactly what level of cultivation she currently possesses. However, one thing is certain. That is, she would be more powerful now,” Nangong Ya said.

“I truly never would’ve expected there to be this many powerful geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism. This place is truly worthy

of being known as the Overlord Domain. It sure gives one quite a sense of pressure.”

“If possible, I truly wish to be able to see exactly how powerful that Elf Kingdom’s little princess is,” Suddenly, a smile emerged on Chu Feng’s face. It was a smile of excitement.

Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline was extremely powerful. This had led to him thinking that there would not be anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism capable of contending against him.

However, it would appear now that he had been mistaken. Nangong Ya, Beitang Zimo and Dongfang Zexuan were all more powerful than Chu Feng.

As for that Baili Xinghe, the current Chu Feng was absolutely no match for him. As for that Elf Kingdom’s little princess, she was an extraordinary existence, a true demon-level character.

Chu Feng felt pressured. This pressure was from the people of the same generation as him. However, this pressure made Chu Feng very excited. He was so excited that his blood was boiling.

“Seems like you all are excited too,” Chu Feng smiled in his heart. That was because he was able to feel that the Divine Lightnings in his blood were restless. It was as if his Inherited Bloodline had also grown excited like him.

“It is said that when the Boundary Energy disappears, it will bring forth a very grand era where heroes and talents will assemble to contend for hegemony. It will be the era in which an Overlord will be born.”

“Right now, the Boundary Energy has disappeared. Furthermore, there are a lot of demon-level characters emerging from our era’s younger generation. It would appear that this rumor is likely true.”

“To be born into this era, I truly do not know whether it is fortune or misfortune, luck or calamity.” Nangong Ya suddenly

smiled. His smile was somewhat complicated.

Even though he was a genius, and an incomparable genius if placed in the Nine Powers, Nangong Ya actually did not have a very strong sense of superiority over others.

The reason for that was because he had grown up in the Nangong Imperial Clan. The Nangong Imperial Clan was a place with countless geniuses. Even though he possessed outstanding talent, even though he had put forth great effort in his martial cultivation, he had never been the strongest genius in the Nangong Imperial Clan. Never had he felt the sensation of being peerless in this world, nor had he felt the sensation of being viewed as a god by others.

Thus, even though he was seen to be extremely high and above them in the eyes of the outside crowds, even though he was a young master of the Nangong Imperial Clan, even though he was a peak genius in the Holy Land of Martialism...

...Nangong Ya actually felt inferior in his heart. He felt that even though he could be considered a genius, and was more powerful than a lot of people, he would never become the strongest genius.

In the past, he wasn't. Currently, he wasn't. And in the future, he would not be one either. Sooner or later, he would be forgotten by the people of the world. That was because the people would only remember the name of the strongest person in an era.

It just so happened that the era that he had been born in was the era with the most geniuses, the most demon-level characters, in the past ten thousand years. Nangong Ya felt a bit of sorrow for himself.

In this sort of era, there was simply no way for him to stick out.

“Pa~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng's hand suddenly landed on Nangong Ya's shoulder. With a smile, he looked to Nangong Ya

and said, “I think that if this era is truly going to be the era in which an Overlord will be born, an era where outstanding heroes will contend for hegemony, then it would be one’s great fortune to have been born in this era.”

“Regardless of how much we will be able to attain in the future, at the very least, we will be able to witness the things that are going to happen in this era. That is our fortune. I think that in the future, there will be countless people who will be envious of us for having been able to be born into this era.”

“It is much like how we are envious of the people from the same era as Emperor Qing. To be able to witness Emperor Qing’s incomparable might is a kind of fortune.”

“This...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Ya was startled. At the beginning, he was a bit perplexed. However, he soon displayed a relieved smile. His smile was one of immense joy.

Then, he patted Chu Feng’s shoulder and said, “That’s right. Brother Chu Feng, what you said is truly right. Truly, your words have enlightened me.”

“Regardless of what the future holds, it is our fortune to be able to be born into this era. This is a good thing.”

“We should enjoy everything that is to occur in this era.”

“You two, stop chatting. Baili Xinghe is about to announce exactly who among all the people that arrived here managed to pass through the trials. He will announce who will be able to obtain Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s personally refined weapons,” Right at this moment, Nangong Baihe called for Chu Feng and Nangong Ya’s attention.

Only at this moment did Chu Feng notice that Baili Xinghe had already said a lot of welcoming words during the moment when he had been chatting with Nangong Ya. Finally, Baili Xinghe was about to speak on the main topic: exactly who among all the people

here had managed to pass through the trial, and would be able to obtain the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's tailor-made weapons.

At this moment, everyone began to hold their breath in anticipation. They were unable to take their eyes off Baili Xinghe. In fact, many people were so worried that their complexions even changed. They all wished that they had successfully passed the test. Else, wouldn't they have come in vain? Wouldn't they have experienced all those dangers in vain?

However, at the moment when the majority of people were worried, there were some people who felt very good. For example, Beitang Zimo was one of them.

He felt that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was testing their individual performances. As for his performance, it could be said to be extremely outstanding. Thus, he was certain that he had managed to pass the trial. Even if everyone else failed, he was certain that he had passed.

"Everyone, thank you all for coming here. However, only five people managed to pass through this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly," Baili Xinghe said.

"What? Only five people?" Hearing those words, the crowd was startled. Immediately, the plaza burst into an uproar.

There were numerous people present. A low estimate would be several hundred people. Yet, only five people had managed to pass the trial? Wasn't this a bit too cruel?

"These five individuals will not only be able to meet my master, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, they will also be able to obtain tailor-made weapons from my master," Baili Xinghe ignored what the crowd was feeling and continued to speak.

At this moment, everyone shut their mouths. Once again, they were unable to take their eyes off Baili Xinghe.

Even though they knew that the chance of them being the ones who were able to pass the trials was extremely low, they still wished to know who the five people that had passed the trials were. They wanted to know exactly what was so special about these five individuals for them to have been able to distinguish themselves from amongst all these people here.

“Congratulations to these five individuals,” Right at this moment, Baili Xinghe pointed his finger toward Beitang Zimo.

“Yeah! I knew that it was me!” Hearing those words, Beitang Zimo jumped in happiness. He clenched both fists and displayed a pose of victory. He was truly overjoyed. That was because he had passed the trials as he had anticipated.

Baili Xinghe pointed at Beitang Zimo and said grudgingly, “You from the Beitang Imperial Clan can step aside. I am talking about the five people behind you.”

“What?!” Hearing those words, Beitang Zimo’s expression immediately changed. He stood there as if he had been petrified. Immediately afterward, his complexion grew greener and greener. His appearance was that of someone who had eaten a dead rat. It was as ugly as it could be.

The five people behind him, weren’t they Chu Feng, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli?

However, how could this be? He clearly heard that this was a test of speed. In terms of speed, he had been faster than Chu Feng and those with him.

In fact, it was not only Beitang Zimo who was shocked at this moment. Many of the people present were all shocked. They truly did not understand why only Chu Feng’s group had managed to pass the trials.

Chapter 1587 – Don't Behave Atrociously

“You’re definitely mistaken. How could the five of them possibly have passed the trials?” Beitung Zimo said with an extremely unconvinced tone.

“Are you questioning my master’s judgement?” Hearing what Beitung Zimo said, Baili Xinghe’s gaze immediately turned ice-cold. It seemed that he would not tolerate anyone doubting the judgement of his master.

“I would not dare to question Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s judgement. Merely, why did the five of them pass? Give me a reason why they passed,” Beitung Zimo asked in an extremely unconvinced manner.

“Actually, it was not only the five of them that had the ability to pass the trials. A lot of the people among you all present here would have been able to pass the trials.”

“However, you all did not listen to Chu Feng’s advice, and decided to take the right passage. That is why you all have missed this chance.”

“If you wish to ask me why Chu Feng and the others have passed the trials, it is actually extremely simple. It is all because they chose to take the left passage,” Baili Xinghe said.

“What? How could it be?! It’s actually that?!!!” Hearing those words, the crowd were all stunned. They all had expressions akin to being struck by lightning. Their mindsets were all extremely chaotic.

Baili Xinghe had told them the reason why they had failed. However, this reason was extremely difficult for them to accept. That was because Chu Feng had indeed advised them to take the left passage.

Yet, not only did they not listen to him, they even mocked and

insulted Chu Feng, and declared that he was telling them to die.

At this moment, they realized that they were [like dogs that had bitten Lu Dongbin](#). Even if they failed to pass the trials, it was only brought upon by themselves.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly amazing. Trusting you was indeed the correct choice. We five actually ended up being the only people to pass the trials,” At this moment, Nangong Baihe’s smile was extremely brilliant.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you’re amazing. Big brother Chu Feng, you’re amazing. Oh yeah!!!” As for Nangong Moli, she began to jump around while shouting. Her appearance was truly adorable.

It was uncertain whether Nangong Moli was doing it deliberately or not, however, she was running around Beitang Zimo as well, and would even make faces at him while she ran. With a loud voice, she shouted, “I passed. I passed. I’m amazing, more amazing than you.”

This made Beitang Zimo extremely angry. He was so angered that his complexion turned green. It was as if he had eaten a large plateful of dead flies. His veins were bulging violently. It was as if his heart were about to burst with rage.

In fact, it was not only Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli who were happy right now. Nangong Ya was also very happy. In fact, even the habitually silent and cold Tantai Xue had a rare light smile on her ice-cold face. This smile was very beautiful on her.

“No, something’s amiss. Is it going to end like this? Are the trials going to end like this?”

“Doesn’t that mean that everyone that has set foot onto the Immortal Island is gathered here?” Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s expression changed. He discovered that something was amiss.

“Of course. What else was on your mind?” Nangong Baihe took a

glance at Chu Feng. She did not understand why someone as smart as Chu Feng would ask such an idiotic question.

“This.....” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression became even more unsightly. That was because he had carefully inspected the plaza already, and discovered that neither Zi Ling nor Su Rou were present among the crowd.

If everyone that had reached the Immortal Island was gathered here, and the trials had also ended, didn’t that mean that Zi Ling and Su Rou did not manage to reach the Immortal Island, and that they might have encountered dangers?

“You’re overthinking. Zi Ling and Su Rou would be fine.” Sensing the change in Chu Feng’s state of mind, Eggy spoke to console him.

“But... all kinds of intelligence that we gathered already made it clear that the two of them had proceeded for the Immortal Island before us. Yet, they are not present on the Immortal Island right now. Why would that be the case? Unless... the two of them had already, damn it! Could it be that Old Daoist Ghost Face? Damn it!” Thinking till this point, Chu Feng tightly clenched his hands into fists.

“You’re acting stupid and thinking too much. Do not forget that Zi Ling and Su Mei’s master is not an ordinary person. While the two of them had said that they had come to participate in the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, it is not certain that they have really come to do so.”

“If my guess is correct, the two of them have not come here to participate in the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly. Rather, they have come to find the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.”

“Thus, the two of them should be fine. Do not make wild guesses anymore. When you meet the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, just ask him directly.”

“After all, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s spirit formations cover the entire island and the surrounding sea. Everything that you all have experienced was seen by him. Else, he would not have known what had happened earlier.”

“Thus, regardless of what Zi Ling and Su Rou’s current situations might be, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal most definitely knows the answer. It would be much better to ask him than to make wild guesses like the way you’re doing now,” Eggy said.

“Mn, you’re right,” After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng voiced his agreement. However, he was still unable to completely calm himself. For some things, Chu Feng was unable to achieve a state of using only reason and remaining cool-headed. Zi Ling and Su Rou’s safety was one such thing. That was because the two of them were truly too important to Chu Feng.

At this moment, Beitang Zimo began to loudly shout in an extremely unconvinced manner. “I am unconvinced, I am unconvinced! Why? Why would they be able to pass the trials just because they selected the seemingly dangerous left passage?”

“There were people from my Beitang Imperial Clan who entered the left passage too. However, not only did they not pass the trials, one even died in there. That passage was simply a road to disaster. Could your trials exist to push us to our deaths?”

“These trials are simply bullshit! The Weaponry Bestowment Assembly is simply bullshit! This is simply a slaughtering assembly! You might as well directly call it a slaughtering assembly!”

He was unwilling to accept the truth. He was unwilling to admit that he, a grand prince from the Beitang Imperial Clan, was actually inferior to Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~~”

Right at this moment, Baili Xinghe’s eyes flashed. The sky

immediately darkened, and an extremely frightening oppressive might came crushing down from the sky. It landed onto Beitang Zimo's body.

“Wuuwaa~~~”

Beitang Zimo was caught off guard, and was crushed to the ground by the overwhelming oppressive might. Like a dying dog, he lay on the ground. The soil on the ground began to fly about. Beitang Zimo was crushed into the soil and unable to move in the slightest.

“Young master Zimo!!!”

Seeing that, the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan immediately ran over. They wanted to rescue Beitang Zimo.

However, anyone that approached Beitang Zimo ended up being crushed into the ground by that frightening pressure from the oppressive might. They were unable to move in the slightest.

“Buzz~~~~”

Right at this moment, stars suddenly filled the sky, then turned into a ray of light and descended from the sky.

At this moment, even Chu Feng's expression changed. That was because, not only was that ray of light emitting frightening power, it was also emitting a very strong killing intent. Furthermore, it was aimed at Beitang Zimo and the others from the Beitang Imperial Clan.

Could it be that this Baili Xinghe was this arrogant, that he would publicly kill the people of the Beitang Imperial Clan before all these people?

Suddenly, that ray of light stopped. It stopped at a range less than a meter away from Beitang Zimo and the others.

In the end, Baili Xinghe did not kill Beitang Zimo. He was merely scaring the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan. Furthermore,

he had succeeded.

That was because when Beitang Zimo was faced with that enormous power and absolute killing intent, even though he tried his best to conceal it, his body started to shiver. He was scared.

“Remember, our Immortal Island is not a place where you can behave atrociously.”

After he finished saying those words, Baili Xinghe's eyes shone. Then that ray of light, the stars and everything else disappeared instantly. Due to the fact that they disappeared so quickly, people even felt disbelief. They were uncertain as to whether the things earlier had really happened at all.

However, when they saw Beitang Zimo and the others who were trapped in the soil, the crowd realized that all those things from before had actually happened. This Baili Xinghe was truly worthy of being the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. He was extremely strong.

Dog biting Lu Dongbin → Someone who cannot recognize another's good intentions and instead repays kindness with vice. Lu Dongbin is the leader of the 'Eight Immortals' in Chinese mythology.

Chapter 1588 – Meeting The Immortal

“As the saying goes, those who have come are guests. Since everyone has managed to reach the Immortal Island, it means that fate has brought all of us together.”

“Thus, even if everyone is unable to obtain the tailor-made weapons from my master, you all may still stay on our Immortal Island as guests for several days,” After taking care of Beitang Zimo, Baili Xinghe spoke to the crowd.

Suddenly, someone asked, “Would we be able to meet Weaponry Refinement Immortal if we stay as guests?”

“I’m afraid not. My master is someone who is not fond of entertaining guests. This time, only the five people that have managed to pass the trials are able to meet my master,” Baili Xinghe said.

After hearing those words, many people began to sigh. Actually, many of them had braved dangers to come here with the goal of meeting Weaponry Refinement Immortal, and not to obtain tailor-made weapons from him. They merely wished to meet this Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, they were told that they would not be able to meet him. This caused them to be filled with regret.

“Even though my master is not planning to see guests, he has also mentioned that it has not been easy for everyone to come here from so far away. To be able to pass through my master’s spirit formations and reach the Immortal Island is even more difficult. Thus, my master has prepared a gift for everyone,” Baili Xinghe continued.

“Gift? May we know what gift it might be?” Hearing those words, the depressed emotions of the crowd were immediately alleviated. After all, a gift from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was most definitely not something ordinary.

“Immortal Cultivation Lake,” Baili Xinghe said.

“Immortal Cultivation Lake? What is that?” The crowd became even more excited upon hearing this name. That was because the name was enough to tell them that the so-called Immortal Cultivation Lake must be a very remarkable place. However, they still wished to know exactly what the Immortal Cultivation Lake was.

“My master has gathered countless natural oddities, rare treasures and peerless medicinal herbs. Then, he refined them through the use of spirit formations and imbued them with his Dragon Mark Royal-level spirit power. He spent a total of nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine days to finally refine a medicinal lake.”

“Not only does this medicinal lake contain very strong martial energy, it also contains spirit energy. Furthermore, none of the energies contained in the lake are berserk. Thus, cultivators of any cultivation will be able to enter it safely and absorb those energies. Upon entering, one will definitely be able to obtain quite a significant harvest.”

“Due to the fact that the energies contained in the lake are enormous, and the lake was refined by my master through meticulous labor, my master ended up naming it the ‘Immortal Cultivation Lake,’” Baili Xinghe said.

After hearing what Baili Xinghe said, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar. Practically everyone decided that they would be staying. After all, all the people present here were martial cultivators. Why would they want to miss such a rare opportunity?

In fact, even Beitang Zimo, who had been humiliated by Baili Xinghe earlier, did not leave. Instead, he decided to shamelessly stay.

After all, in the entire Holy Land of Martialism, there were only several Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Furthermore,

they were all extraordinary beings who could not be sought after.

And now, the opportunity to experience the Immortal Cultivation Lake that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had spent nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine days and countless treasures to refine was presented to him. Naturally, Beitang Zimo would also not want to miss it.

Thus, all the people that managed to reach the Immortal Island decided to stay and wait for the opportunity to enter the Immortal Cultivation Lake.

At the moment when the crowd was overjoyed by the fact that they could enter that Immortal Cultivation Lake, Baili Xinghe suddenly spoke. "Since everyone has decided to stay, then please follow the rules of our Immortal Island. You all can move about freely in places where we have allowed you all to go. However, for places where we do not allow you all to go to, it would be best for you to not set foot into them."

"If you do not listen to this warning of mine, I'm afraid that you will not be able to leave our Immortal Island again."

After he finished saying those words, he turned around and left without bothering with the reaction from the crowd.

Arrogance. This Baili Xinghe was also extremely arrogant. However, his arrogance was different from other people's arrogance. For example, those with great strength would generally look down upon those weaker than them by relying on their stronger cultivation or strength.

However, Baili Xinghe was different. His arrogance was fundamental to his character. He was someone who did not place anyone in his eyes.

"That Baili Xinghe is truly arrogant. His words and actions are all extremely relentless," Nangong Baihe did not like Baili Xinghe's character. She also did not like the way he handled things.

“Indeed, he’s a bit arrogant. However, it remains that he is the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s personal disciple, and a first-rate genius. Very few people possess the talent to compare with him.”

“For someone like him, it would instead be strange if he were not arrogant,” Nangong Ya said.

“Based on those words of yours, doesn’t that mean that both Chu Feng and you are very strange then? Logically, the two of you possess the qualifications to be arrogant, no?” Nangong Baihe asked.

“Oh, if it’s me, you can forget about it. I do not think that I have the qualifications to be arrogant. As for Brother Chu Feng, he’s not strange. Merely, he’s too humble,” Nangong Ya said.

“It’s good to be humble. I’m more fond of humble people,” As Nangong Baihe spoke, she took a glance at Chu Feng and smiled a sweet and touching smile.

“Yoh, Brother Chu Feng, you are truly someone who girls are fond of. You must know that this is the first time that this lil sis of mine has praised a man like that,” Nangong Ya said to Chu Feng with a mischievous smile on his face.

At this moment, Chu Feng was a bit speechless. This pair of siblings had ended up turning the subject of their talk to him.

Actually, with Chu Feng’s character, he might have teased Nangong Baihe. However, the current Chu Feng was worried about Zi Ling and Su Rou’s safety. Thus, he was truly not in the mood to tease anyone.

After Baili Xinghe left, many more people appeared from the Immortal Island. They were all wearing white clothes and conical bamboo hats. They had the appearance of extraordinary experts. Furthermore, their cultivations were all very extraordinary too. This Immortal Island was truly a place with experts like clouds.

The people on the Immortal Island all gave off airs of arrogance. Thus, they were not fond of speaking, and were not enthusiastic. However... it could still be said that they were doing their best to arrange a living situation for their guests.

Chu Feng, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were all arranged into different residences. Chu Feng's residence was a wooden house. From a glance, it appeared to be very simple and crude. However, the scenery around it was very good. It was located at the peak of a cliff. Below it was a sea of clouds, with the occasional crane flying past. The sound of the cranes would truly let one feel carefree and relaxed. Even Chu Feng's worried state of mind was noticeably lifted.

However, before Chu Feng could enjoy the beautiful scenery of this place, he was called out by a person from the Immortal Island.

Following that person, he arrived at a vast forest deep in the Immortal Island. Trees that reached the sky covered his line of sight. Although the trees shaded the ground, rays of sunlight still passed through them, illuminating the ground below. Occasionally, hares would hop by. Walking within this vast forest was a very sensational experience.

In the center of the vast forest was an open land. It was not very large. However, there was a simple and crude thatched hut and a little courtyard there.

At this moment, smoke was rising in spirals out of that thatched hut's chimney.

"Please," After they arrived at the courtyard, the person who had guided Chu Feng here stopped and indicated to Chu Feng that he should enter the courtyard.

Chu Feng entered the courtyard, pushed the door to the thatched hut open, and walked in.

The thing that caught Chu Feng's eyes immediately was a stove.

That was because the smoke coming out from the chimney was being emitted by that stove.

There were several sweet potatoes on the stove. They were already cooked. Their delicious smell immediately assailed Chu Feng's nostrils.

There was an old man sitting beside the stove. The old man had a head of white hair. His hair appeared to be a bit unkempt. His beard was also a bit unkempt. At a glance, his appearance appeared to be somewhat messy.

However, his clothes were not unkempt at all. His clothes were as white as snow, and not a speck of dust could be found on them.

Chu Feng was unable to determine this old man's cultivation. At a glance, he looked like an ordinary person. However, this old man possessed an incomparable aura. From a glance, one could tell that he was not an ordinary person. To be exact, he simply did not appear like a person, a mortal. Rather, he appeared like an Immortal.

Chu Feng had seen many people who had named themselves to be 'Immortal.' Among all of them, this person before him looked the most like an immortal. Likely, this person before him was the owner of the Immortal Island, the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist famous throughout the entire Holy Land of Martialism, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

Chapter 1589 – From Hell To Heaven

“Junior Chu Feng pays his respects to Weaponry Refinement Immortal,” Chu Feng did not dare to act disrespectful toward the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Immediately, he greeted him courteously.

At this moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal slowly raised his head and inspected Chu Feng carefully. Contained within his gaze was neither the sharpness of an expert nor the arrogance of an extraordinary person. Rather, his gaze was very amiable and gentle. In fact, there was even a trace of appreciation and admiration. From that gaze alone, Chu Feng was able to tell that he seemed to have obtained the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s good impression. It seemed that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was a bit fond of him.

“Pat, pat~~”

Suddenly, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal patted the ground beside the stove that was covered with hay. He said, “Come, sit.”

Chu Feng did not hesitate. He walked over and sat down. After getting closer to the stove, not only was the fragrance of the sweet potatoes even stronger, Chu Feng also felt warmth.

“It’s a bit hot. However, it’s very tasty. Have a try,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal picked up a cooked sweet potato and handed it to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng accepted the sweet potato and began to bite down on it. Then, he said from the bottom of his heart, “This sweet potato is truly good.” Then, Chu Feng continued to eat the sweet potato with large bites. Even though he was before the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng did not feel restricted at all.

“Haha... it’s good that you like it. Young people like you all have

grown accustomed to exotic delicacies. There are not many things that you all are fond of eating nowadays,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled lightly. He seemed to be very pleased with Chu Feng’s performance.

Then, he said, “The sea is filled with detection spirit formations set up by me. I was able to clearly see all that happened in the sea. Your performance was very good. You possess accurate judgement that is rarely seen.”

“Senior, you’re flattering me. Actually, for this junior to be able to choose the correct passages, luck was also a factor,” Chu Feng said modestly.

“There’s no need for you to be modest. All of your decisions were made after careful deliberation. You did not blindly choose anything. Thus, how could luck possibly be a factor?”

“Furthermore, your performance was not only limited to your accurate judgement. There was also your character. You were insulted by that Nangong Clan’s girl. Yet, you did not hold a grudge, and even disregarded former hatred to save them when those two sisters were in a crisis. That sort of behavior is very rarely found in youngsters nowadays.”

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled again. Then, he sized up Chu Feng again and said, “You are a dragon among men. It is inevitable that you’ll be envied. Likely, in the future, even if you do not provoke others, others will come and provoke you. That is the tribulation of your life.”

“Senior, is there a way for this junior to neutralize that tribulation?” Chu Feng asked. Chu Feng had encountered a lot of people. It was true that many of them had wanted to kill him due to being envious of his talent. Chu Feng wanted to know how to avoid this from happening again.

“There’s nothing that can be done. In a place like the Holy Land of Martialism, if you are too low-profile and do not reveal your

abilities, you will instead become the target of people's humiliations."

"If you want to be respected by others, you must reveal your abilities. However, if you reveal your talent and strength, it is inevitable that those lowly vile people will become jealous of you."

"There's nothing that can be done about that. The world of cultivators is a cruel world like this. However, since you've passed my trials, I am able to make you a tailor-made weapon. That should be able to provide you with a bit of assistance," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng expressed his thanks.

"There's no need for you to be this courteous. This is only what you deserve," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled lightly.

"Senior, there is a matter that this junior wishes to ask for your guidance on in," Chu Feng said.

"What is it?" The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked.

"This junior has two friends who also entered the trials of the Immortal Island. However, I do not know where they are right now. As senior is able to see everything that has happened here, I presume that senior already knows who my friends are. Thus, junior wishes to ask senior whether they are currently safe," Chu Feng asked.

"Chu Feng, I cannot answer that question," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal shook his head.

"Senior, this is something that is extremely important to this junior. Please, please tell junior," Chu Feng continued to ask. To him, the safety of Su Rou and Zi Ling was truly too important. At this moment, only the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was capable of giving him an answer. Chu Feng did not wish to miss this opportunity. Even if he might end up angering the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, he still had to continue to ask.

“This is the Immortal Island’s rule. I cannot reveal anything regarding others to you. You can return.”

“I will allow you all to enter the Immortal Cultivation Lake to train tonight. The time limit is a single night. You should be able to obtain some harvest from there. Return and take a rest. Adjust your state of mind. Only when you are at your best state will you be able to obtain the best harvest from the Immortal Cultivation Lake.”

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal was not angered by Chu Feng’s insistence. Merely, he still refused to provide Chu Feng with an answer.

“In that case, junior shall take his leave. Thank you for your hospitality, senior.” Feeling helpless, Chu Feng had no choice but to leave.

After Chu Feng left, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal suddenly closed his eyes and sighed. “Such a rare sapling. Unfortunately, I cannot take him as a disciple. This is truly unfortunate.” He sighed again.

Chu Feng did not know about the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s sighing. After he returned to his residence, Chu Feng became even more worried. It could be said that his heart was extremely distracted, and his thoughts were in utter turmoil.

Chu Feng had actually journeyed all the way here not for the sake of the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, nor to meet a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

His true purpose was to find Zi Ling and Su Rou. Yet, at this time, not only did he not manage to find them, he could not even obtain any news regarding them. It was very possible that the two of them might have met with accidents. As such, how could Chu Feng be at ease?

Obtaining tailor-made weapons from the Weaponry Refinement

Immortal or entering the Cultivation Immortal Lake to train were all meaningless to Chu Feng. To him, the only thing he cared about was being able to hear news of Su Rou's and Zi Ling's safety.

“Knock, knock, knock~~~”

Right at this moment, a knock came at the door of Chu Feng's residence. Chu Feng was very dispirited, and appeared to be lost in thought. Subconsciously, he walked over and opened the door.

“Woosh~~~”

After his door was opened, two figures threw themselves into Chu Feng's bosom and hugged him tightly. Following that, two familiar auras reached Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was startled at first. However, immediately afterward, he was overjoyed. His spirit immediately came back. With his eyes wide open, he looked carefully at the two people who were tightly hugging him. When he saw them, Chu Feng started to beam with happiness. From a state of being extremely dejected, Chu Feng immediately became overjoyed with incomparable excitement.

Hugging him were two women. One was wearing a long blue skirt, and the other was wearing a long purple skirt. One had a very mature charm to her, and the other appeared to be very pure and pleasant. They were none other than Chu Feng's two lovers who he had been yearning for day and night, Su Rou and Zi Ling.

“Zi Ling, Su Rou, it's really the two of you?” The sudden appearance of the two women came as an enormous shock to Chu Feng. In fact, he even doubted that this was true. That was because everything had happened too unexpectedly.

“Big brother Chu Feng, it is us. We finally managed to find you, finally managed to see you,” Zi Ling hugged Chu Feng tightly. She actually began to cry. It was clear that she was too overjoyed, too emotional.

As for Su Rou, she was more mature. Thus, her reaction was a bit

calmer. However, her beautiful pair of eyes had also reddened. At this moment, even if the two of them did not declare how much they missed Chu Feng, Chu Feng was still able to realize it.

“You two girls have truly worried me to death,” Suddenly, Chu Feng extended his arms and tightly hugged the two exceptional beauties in his bosom. He now believed everything before him to be true. Thus, the worries in his heart were finally lifted.

At this moment, even though Chu Feng had a calm reaction, he was feeling immense joy in his heart. In this short period of time, he felt as if he had gone from a journey from hell to heaven. That sort of sensation was something that only he understood.

Chapter 1590 – Remarkable Abilities

“Big brother Chu Feng, we’re sorry. It’s actually all our fault.”

“The two of us are going to be training on the Immortal Island. However, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal does not wish for others to know that the two of us are going to stay here to train. Thus, he originally did not want to have us meet with you.”

“We were originally worried that we would really miss the opportunity to see you. However, never would we have thought that he would come and find us earlier, suddenly change his decision and allow us to come and find you. That’s why big sis Su Rou and I immediately rushed over,” Zi Ling explained.

“Likely, you must have done something to make the Weaponry Refinement Immortal change his mind. Else, he would definitely not have allowed us to meet you. That’s because we begged him to allow us to see you before. However, he decisively told us no.” When mentioning this matter, Su Rou had a displeased expression. It was evident that they had been feeling very wronged at the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s place earlier.

“Based on that, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal also knows about our relationship? Furthermore, the two of you are going to be staying here to train; is he going to accept you two as disciples?” Chu Feng asked.

He finally knew the reason why Su Rou and Zi Ling had come here. It turned out that Eggy had guessed correctly. Su Rou and Zi Ling had not come here for the sake of the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly at all. Rather, they had come to find the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

“While it is true that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal knew of our relationship and that we would be staying here to train, he is not going to accept us as disciples. He is merely going to teach us some skills,” Zi Ling explained.

“The Weaponry Refinement Immortal is going to teach you two skills without accepting you two as disciples? Could it be... it’s because of that senior?” After hearing those words, Chu Feng was extremely shocked. Who was this Weaponry Refinement Immortal? The trials of the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly were very difficult. There were so many people that wished to see him, yet were not allowed to. From merely this, one could tell what sort of person the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was.

Yet, not only were Zi Ling and Su Rou allowed to stay on the Immortal Island to train, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was also going to personally teach them skills. This was truly too shocking.

It was impossible for such a thing to occur for no reason or cause. With Su Rou and Zi Ling’s status, it was even more impossible for them to obtain this sort of treatment.

Thus, Chu Feng guessed that there was only a single possibility as to why the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had decided to do that. It had to be because of Zi Ling and Su Rou’s master, that mysterious expert from the Eastern Sea Region.

“It is indeed because of Master. Master is a close friend of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Thus, Master merely told us to hand a letter to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. The letter told the Weaponry Refinement Immortal everything regarding us. Furthermore, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal agreed to help us immediately,” Zi Ling said.

“Huuf~~~” Even though Chu Feng had already guessed that might be the case, he still sucked in a mouthful of cold air after hearing what Zi Ling said. Then, he gasped, “That blind senior is truly someone who possesses remarkable abilities.”

“Master is indeed extremely powerful. His strength is unfathomable. Furthermore, his status in the Holy Land of Martialism seems to be extremely extraordinary. Yet, it also seems

to be extremely mysterious.”

“However, master actually has his reasons as to why he refused to let us meet you. He said that big brother Chu Feng’s talent greatly surpassed our own. If we wish to help you, we must wholeheartedly train. Else, not only will we not be able to help you, we will instead become your burden.”

“In fact, that is exactly the case. We have only managed to obtain our current level of achievement through having cultivation instilled in us by master. However, big brother Chu Feng has managed to attain your current achievements through your own powers,” As Zi Ling spoke of this, she became a bit ashamed.

When she had first met Chu Feng, it had been back in the Nine Provinces Continent’s White Tiger Villa. The Zi Ling back then had been stronger than Chu Feng. If it hadn’t been for Eggy helping Chu Feng out, he would not have been a match for Zi Ling.

However, ever since she had been surpassed by Chu Feng, she had never had the chance to chase after him, and was instead left behind further and further.

She felt extremely frustrated. Her frustration was not because her cultivation was inferior to Chu Feng’s. Rather, it was because she was too weak and Chu Feng had to protect her in all aspects. In fact, she had even become the hostage of Chu Feng’s enemies, and was used to threaten him.

The reason for her frustration was the fact that she had utterly become Chu Feng’s burden.

Zi Ling had wanted to become stronger and stop being Chu Feng’s burden. She wished to help Chu Feng, because she knew that Chu Feng carried a very heavy responsibility.

And now, she had finally succeeded. At the very least, she surpassed Chu Feng in terms of cultivation. However... she felt ashamed. After all, she had not managed to obtain her current

cultivation by relying on herself. Rather, she had relied on her master, that blind old man who possessed remarkable abilities.

“Zi Ling, do not joke around with me anymore. I am merely a rank eight Martial King. As for you, you’re a rank two Half Martial Emperor. Su Rou is also a rank one Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, the two of you both possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. The two of you are clearly stronger than me,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. Chu Feng was actually very happy from the bottom of his heart to know that Su Rou and Zi Ling’s cultivations had become stronger. He was feeling joy for the two of them.

“The person joking here is you, okay? Not to mention the power that you have grasped, merely that world spirit of yours, Eggy, is sufficient to make us feel far inferior.”

“What master said is very true. It is extremely hard for us to surpass you.”

“However, you must not be careless either. Lil sis Zi Ling and I will train wholeheartedly. While we know that it will be very difficult to surpass you, we’ll do our best to not become your burden again. If possible, we hope that there will be a day that we will be able to help you.” Even though Su Rou said those words with a smile, Chu Feng was able to sense how serious she was.

What she wanted to do was the same as what Zi Ling wanted to do. She did not want to surpass Chu Feng. Rather, she only wanted to be able to help him.

Chu Feng was no fool. How could he possibly not know why Su Rou, Su Mei and Zi Ling risked their lives to allow their bodies to be imbued with cultivation and come to the Holy Land of Martialism?

They had done all of that for him. In fact, it was not only Su Rou, Su Mei and Zi Ling; even his two brothers Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi had also done so.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Oh, that’s right. Do you two know where lil bro Wushang and senior brother Zhang Tianyi are right now?” He was truly concerned for his two brothers.

“Master has personally arranged things for all five of us. Other than Lil Mei, who has gone to the World Spiritist Alliance, we really do not know where lil bro Wushang and senior brother Zhang Tianyi have gone to,” Su Rou shook her head.

“In that case, when the two of you were sent away, how were their cultivations?” Chu Feng asked.

“The two of them are very strong. Like lil sis Zi Ling, they’re both rank two Half Martial Emperors. However, lil sis Zi Ling is about to reach a breakthrough soon. Thus, among the five of us, lil sis Zi Ling is likely to be the strongest,” Su Rou said with a smile as she looked to Zi Ling.

“My Zi Ling is truly worthy of being a Divine Body. You’re amazing indeed,” Chu Feng said with a prideful expression on his face. Actually, with how strong his perceptive ability was, how could he not be able to detect Zi Ling’s current cultivation? Without even Su Rou saying anything, Chu Feng already knew that Zi Ling was at the peak of rank two Half Martial Emperor, and was only a bit away from reaching rank three Half Martial Emperor.

In fact, it was not only Zi Ling who was about to reach a breakthrough. Su Rou was also about to reach a breakthrough. Chu Feng believed that in less than half a month, both Zi Ling and Su Rou would have their breakthroughs.

Chu Feng’s certainty was not without assurance. His assurance was the aura emitted by Su Rou and Zi Ling.

Their current auras were completely different from before. Right now, Zi Ling, Su Rou and even Su Mei could be considered to be top geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism. They possessed extremely powerful talent in all aspects.

Afterward, Chu Feng chatted with Zi Ling and Su Rou. Furthermore, taking this opportunity, he taught Zi Ling and Su Rou the spirit formation to alleviate the pain of the backlash.

Zi Ling and Su Rou were very intelligent. Even though they did not manage to completely grasp the technique, they understood the details, as well as the method to cultivate it. After seeing Chu Feng's spirit formation, their eyes shone with brightness. Even though they had tried many methods, and even grasped healing formations, there was no method more effective than the spirit formation that Chu Feng just taught them.

Even though their master was already that powerful, it was still Chu Feng's spirit formation that was the most effective in alleviating the pain of the backlash.

This caused them to believe even more firmly that their big brother Chu Feng was extremely powerful. Talent was indeed not something that could be made up for through effort alone.

However, it was precisely because of this that the two of them would have to put forth even more effort. With their talents being inferior to Chu Feng's, if they did not put forth effort, then they would really have no hope of catching up to him. At that time, they would truly become Chu Feng's burden for the rest of their lives.

Due to the fact that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had limited the time in which Su Rou and Zi Ling could meet with Chu Feng, the two of them hurriedly left when the time limit of one hour arrived.

The two girls were very reluctant to part with Chu Feng. While leaving, Zi Ling began to shed tears again. Even the relatively stronger Su Rou had eyes glistening with teardrops.

Compared to the two of them, Chu Feng was a lot more composed. Even though he was also reluctant to part, he still saw them off with a smile on his face.

Even though Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang all received side effects in the form of backlash pain due to having cultivation instilled in them, they had all managed to obtain very decent cultivations and had extraordinary talent.

Furthermore, Su Mei had the protection of the Left Reverend in the World Spiritist Alliance, and Su Rou and Zi Ling had the protection of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal on the Immortal Island.

Even though Chu Feng did not know the whereabouts of Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, he firmly believed that, with the ability of their master, the two of them would definitely be given a very extraordinary place to stay and learn extraordinary abilities.

Even though Chu Feng was feeling joy from the bottom of his heart to know that their cultivations had increased, that was not what he cared about the most. What Chu Feng cared about the most was whether they would be able to obtain shelter in such a chaotic place as the Holy Land of Martialism. To know that they would have the protection of experts brought Chu Feng a great amount of reassurance.

Chapter 1591 – Attempting To Communicate

“Eggy, it’s as you said. Zi Ling and Su Rou have not come to the Immortal Island for the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly. Instead, their goal was even more dreadful. They are going to be training on the Immortal Island under the personal guidance of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.”

At this moment, Chu Feng gasped with admiration. Her Lady Queen was Her Lady Queen after all. No matter how much he might think about something, he would still fall short of Her Lady Queen.

“Actually, based on the way that blind old man has handled things in the past, this was not hard to guess. Even though Zi Ling and the others’ original intention was to help you, it remained that they ended up complying with the arrangements set up by that blind old man after coming to the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Practically every single thing that they did possessed a purpose. As for those things, they were not things that they had thought of doing themselves. After all, what they wanted to do was to be by your side. If they were allowed to do what they wanted, they would have come to find you already. How could they possibly run around all over the place and have you follow their tracks to find them?”

“The reason why you were not able to guess this earlier was not because you did not think of it. Rather, you were too worried about their safety that you did not dare to be certain of your guess,” Eggy explained.

“Truly, nothing can be hidden from you,” Chu Feng smiled. As he spoke, he projected his consciousness into his world spirit space.

“You are someone who this queen has watched grow up. Thus, how could there be anything that you could possibly hide from

me?” After Eggy saw Chu Feng, she raised her face upward with pride.

“You’ve watched me grow up? How come, now that I’m already a man and no longer a youngster, you still have the appearance of a young girl?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile. As he spoke, he walked over to Eggy’s side and boldly lifted Eggy’s chin.

When he first saw Eggy, she had been as beautiful then as she was now. She possessed an incomparably youthful and pretty face. Yet, she gave off a very mature charm. Practically all of the demands that men could have of a woman could be found in Her Lady Queen. Her Lady Queen was truly a perfect woman.

However, as time passed, Chu Feng was no longer that youngster. Instead, he was now a young man. He had grown older.

However, Eggy still had the appearance of a young girl. Her outfit was still the same as before. Even the way she spoke was exactly the same as back then. It was as if the passage of time did not exist for her.

“That’s to be expected. This Queen’s divine power is unrivalled. I am able to be youthful forever,” Eggy raised her little face upward and moved away from Chu Feng’s hand. However, she did not display any antipathy toward Chu Feng’s words and actions. Rather, she was smiling a very adorable smile.

Chu Feng knew Eggy’s temperament extremely well. Even though she was someone that thought things through very meticulously, and was vicious and merciless in the way she handled things, she would only be a mischievous little girl in normal times. At this moment, what she was revealing was precisely her mischievous side.

At this moment, Chu Feng walked over to the sealed gate. He cupped his fist and said, “I know that you possess intelligence too. In all these years, other than howling, roaring and emitting overflowing killing intent, you have never once spoken with me.”

“I know that you hate me, and hate my mother, who sealed you within me, even more.”

“However, if you are to help me, I will definitely not treat you unfairly. I believe that you also know that I already have both the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation ready. They are there for the sake of controlling you and making you be used by me.”

“In fact, I am able to not tell you all of this. However, you are, after all, my world spirit. Even though you have never obeyed me, nor have you ever helped me, I still do not wish to turn you into an Evil Spirit, and then turn you into my puppet, if I have the choice.”

“Thus, I wish to discuss with you. As long as you’re willing to help me, I am able to not use the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and Evil Spirit Binding Formation, I can...”

“Aoouuu~~~~~”

Before Chu Feng could finish saying his words, a snarl with overflowing anger suddenly sounded. Following that, a burst of boundless killing intent began to spread. Chu Feng was able to sense how frightening the power that was surging on the other side of the gate was. If it wasn’t for the gate blocking it, merely the aura of the person sealed within the gate would be capable of tearing Chu Feng’s body apart, crushing his bones and completely exterminating both his body and his soul.

Right at this moment, Her Lady Queen walked over and earnestly advised Chu Feng. “Chu Feng, you’re thinking too much. Our Asura Spirit World is not all filled with kind-hearted people like myself.”

“The Asura Spirit World is the same as your world. It possesses kind hearted people and extremely evil people. I also know that he most definitely knows how to speak. However, he is refusing to even speak with you. All it has in its mind is killing you. This is enough to show that he is not the kind-hearted type.”

“Thus, trying to communicate with him is just wasting your time. There is truly no need for you to do so. As the saying goes, if one does not act ruthlessly, one will not be able to stand one’s ground. You must not have virtuous intentions toward a world spirit that wants to kill you. You must be ruthless.”

“Sigh, it seems that what you say is correct. It is impossible for me to have the same sort of relationship with him as I do with you. We will not be able to coexist peacefully.” Chu Feng sighed out of helplessness. As he spoke, he took a look toward that gate again. His eyes were flickering with complicated emotions.

In truth, Chu Feng did not wish to do that. After all, no matter how much killing intent this sealed Asura World Spirit had toward him, it had not harmed him at all. Furthermore, it was also his world spirit.

Merely, Chu Feng really did need its power right now. Furthermore, it seemed like it was truly impossible to communicate with it. If left in his body, it would only act as a time bomb. Thus, Chu Feng had no choice but to use the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation to control it.

“Eggy, let’s talk about this outside,” After making his decision, Chu Feng shifted his consciousness back into his body, and then opened his World Spirit Gate. After that, Eggy walked out from the World Spirit Gate.

After Eggy came out, Chu Feng directly took out the Ancient Era’s Scroll that contained the Evil Spirit Binding Formation. Due to the fact that the contents of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram had all been grasped by Chu Feng, it meant that even the most powerful World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation had been grasped by him.

Thus, what Chu Feng needed to do right now was to grasp this Evil Spirit Binding Formation. Only after completely grasping the

Evil Spirit Binding Formation would Chu Feng be able to release the vicious world spirit within his body and control it.

“How is it? Is it hard to learn?” Eggy asked Chu Feng. Eggy was only a world spirit, and not a world spiritist. As such, Chu Feng would have to rely on himself in the end. The most she could do for him would be to offer some suggestions.

“It’s not hard to learn. Merely, it’s very hard to use. That’s because that world spirit in my body is too powerful. Even if it is as you said, and is only an ordinary Martial Emperor, it remains that it is a Martial Emperor, a Martial Emperor from the Asura Spirit World. Thus, I fear that it will be very difficult to handle it.”

“The way I see it, if I wish to use this spirit formation to control it, then the minimum requirement for me... would be that I need to become a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, I must be helped with external power in order for this to succeed.”

“The Sealing Glacier that I obtained from the Sealing Ancient Village would be of some help. However, I keep feeling that even the spirit energy of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist would not be sufficient,” Chu Feng was worried.

“That’s easy to solve. If a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist’s spirit energy is insufficient, then use a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist’s spirit energy,” Eggy said.

Chapter 1592 – Training Begin

“Eggy, could it be that you want me to ask the Weaponry Refinement Immortal for help? How could he possibly help me? You’ve also seen how even the Left Reverend would not help me. Thus, it’s even more impossible for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to help me.”

“That blind senior has his own intentions. He wants me to grow on my own. Thus, he is not going to use his relations to help me. Otherwise, he would have already helped me by now,” Chu Feng shook his head while smiling.

“You’re being foolish. Who said that you must search for help from others? Who said that you can’t do it yourself? Could it be that you’ve forgotten that Old Daoist Ghost Face’s Cosmos Sack contains two World Spirit Stones that contain Dragon Mark Royal-level spirit energy?” Eggy reminded.

“That’s true!” After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. He immediately took out two stones from his Cosmos Sack.

These two stones were very small. They were only about half a palm in size. Other than being flat, they looked like ordinary stones. However, the two stones were emitting a faint golden light, and contained within them was Royal-level spirit energy. Most importantly, these two stones actually possessed dragon-like marks all over them.

“These here are Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. I had thought that your world would not possess something like these. However, it would appear that it does.”

“These stones are very precious, and also very hard to use. Only Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists are capable of using them. However, your current spirit power is very strong, and your world spirit techniques also surpass those of ordinary Insect Mark

Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Thus, you might be able to use them,” Eggy said.

After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng attempted to use the stones. After spending some time and putting forth effort, he actually managed to extract some spirit energy from them. The spirit energy fused with his own spirit energy, and ended up being able to be used by him.

“I am indeed able to use them. However, the energy contained within these two stones is truly too little. They’re simply not enough to activate the Evil Spirit Binding Formation,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s simple. When even someone like the Old Daoist Ghost Face is capable of finding these two Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, how could you not be able to find some more?”

“Think about it. As long as you manage to find a sufficient amount of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, you would be able to control that Martial Emperor-level Asura World Spirit. At that time, who would dare to become your enemy in this Holy Land of Martialism?”

“From then on, you would be able to bring it with you to challenge the various dangerous locations or forbidden areas. You would be able to search for Natural Oddities without any restraint. Then, after you refined those Natural Oddities, your cultivation would rapidly increase. It is very worthwhile. Truly worthwhile,” Eggy began to clap her hands and applaud. It was as if she was seeing the day where Chu Feng controlled that Martial Emperor-level Asura World Spirit as he traveled through the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Although it’s difficult, it is indeed feasible,” After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng nodded.

Chu Feng did not wish to rely on the strength of others in his own road of cultivation. However, if he were to control the world

spirit within his body, it would be completely different from relying on someone else.

That was because relying on his world spirit would not be considered to be relying on someone else. Rather, it would be equivalent to his own strength. After all, that world spirit belonged to him to begin with. It was something that should be used by him to begin with.

Furthermore, if everything were to go smoothly, Chu Feng would have subdued his world spirit with his own strength. This would be akin to an experience, an accomplishment, an extremely dazzling success.

“In that case, it’s decided. Now, you should first learn that spirit formation,” Eggy said.

“I actually learned it already,” Chu Feng patted his chest and said with confidence.

“You learned it this quickly?” Eggy was shocked.

“This Evil Spirit Binding Formation is actually virtually the same as the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation. If I had not grasped the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation, it would definitely have been extremely difficult to learn the Evil Spirit Binding Formation.”

“However, I have not only learned the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation, I have even grasped it completely. Thus, learning the Evil Spirit Binding Formation was extremely easy,” Chu Feng explained with a smile.

“So that’s the case. In that case, it seems that you only lack Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Even though speaking of it is easy, I doubt that they’ll be easy to find. In this period of time, you must frequently study that spirit formation in the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram that can increase your spirit power, so that you can become a Snake Mark Royal-level World Spiritist sooner.”

“If you are able to become a Snake Mark Royal-level World Spiritist at the time when you obtain sufficient Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, you’ll be able to save a lot of time,” Eggy said.

“As expected of Milady Queen, we’ve thought of the same thing again,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Someone’s coming. It’s someone from the Immortal Island. This Queen is not interested in greeting those old fellows. So, I’ll return first.” As Eggy spoke, she gracefully stepped into the world spirit gate.

Sure enough, not long after Eggy entered the world spirit space, a white-clothed old man from the Immortal Island knocked on Chu Feng’s door.

“Senior, is there something that you might need?” Chu Feng asked courteously.

Even though this old man only possessed a status akin to that of a guard in the Immortal Island, it remained that he had a peak Half Martial Emperor cultivation, and strength on par with the Nine Powers’ headmasters. Logically, Chu Feng should show respect toward him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it’s time for dinner,” After the old man entered the house, he waved his sleeve toward the table. As light flickered, many plates of aromatic delicacies filled the table. Even though they were all vegetable dishes, they still appeared to be extremely delicious.

“Senior, thank you for your trouble,” Chu Feng expressed his thanks. After that, he took a seat, held a bowl, and picked up the chopsticks to begin eating. However, he suddenly noticed that the old man was still standing there, and didn’t seem to have any intention of leaving. Thus, Chu Feng stood up with a smile and said, “Senior, have you eaten yet? Would you like to join me?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, this old man has already eaten. Please eat

your meal quickly so that I can take you to the Immortal Cultivation Lake afterward.”

“Countless treasures are gathered in that Immortal Cultivation Lake. It was created with meticulous care and effort from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. The effect it has toward helping one’s cultivation surpasses even the Ancient Era’s Immortal Ponds,” The old man said.

“Wasn’t it said that we would be going there at night? The sky is still bright right now. Are we going there to make preparations to enter?” Chu Feng looked outside and saw that even though the sun was beginning to set, the sky was still very bright, and it was not yet the time to enter the Immortal Cultivation Lake.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is something that you’re misunderstanding. Even though the Immortal Cultivation Lake possesses even greater amounts of energy than the Ancient Era’s Immortal Ponds, there is a difference between them.”

“The Ancient Era’s Immortal Ponds have existed since the Ancient Era. The energies contained within them were capable of existing forever. However, the Immortal Cultivation Lake is not. The energies contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake were obtained through refining rare treasures. Thus, it possesses limited energies. Its energies will decrease as cultivators refine and absorb the energies contained within it.”

“In normal times, the Immortal Cultivation Lake is sealed. Other than the several times when Young Island Master occasionally enters, practically no one else has entered it. Thus, the energy contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake is very abundant.”

“However, today will be different. The number of people who have come here is not a small amount. Furthermore, many among them are geniuses among the younger generation. Likely, in less than ten days, all of the energies contained within the Immortal

Cultivation Lake will be consumed.”

“In this sort of situation, if one is able to enter it sooner, one would be able to train and absorb its energies for longer.”

“That is why I wish to take little friend Chu Feng over sooner. When the seal of the Immortal Cultivation Lake is lifted, you can be the first one to enter, and obtain the greatest amount of possible benefit.” The old man spoke with a dull tone. Even though he was wearing a conical bamboo hat that covered his appearance, Chu Feng was able to sense that he had an amiable smile on his face.

Chapter 1593 – Heavenly Law Auction

“Thank you, senior, for your kind intentions. This junior understands.” Chu Feng did not try to be modest. After he sat back down, he immediately began to eat with large mouthfuls.

While all of the people on the Immortal Island were all very proud, this old man in charge of receiving him was somewhat different. Not only was this old man very kind toward him, he even gave thoughts for his sake.

Chu Feng ate very fast. In merely a short moment, he had finished eating his dinner. Furthermore, Chu Feng had quite a stomach; he actually managed to eat all of the dishes on the table.

Actually, it wasn't that Chu Feng was a savage when it came to eating food, it was merely that he did not wish for this kind-hearted senior to stand there and wait on him the entire time.

After Chu Feng finished his dinner, he followed that kind-hearted senior and walked around many places in the Immortal Island before finally reaching the Immortal Cultivation Lake.

The Immortal Cultivation Lake was actually not very large. It was different from the other lakes in the Holy Land of Martialism. Although those were known to be lakes, they covered such an enormous area that they were simply akin to the sea, the ocean. Those lakes would have overflowing waves, unfathomable depths, and many hidden beasts.

As for this Immortal Cultivation Lake, it was about as large as the lakes in the Nine Provinces Continent. While it appeared very vast, one could see the edge of the lake on the other side.

Unfortunately, other than the size of the lake, Chu Feng was unable to see anything else. That was because there was a layer of white mist lingering on top of the lake. That white mist had completely covered up the true appearance of the Immortal

Cultivation Lake.

Not to mention that one would not be able to see anything using one's naked eyes, one would not even be able to sense anything with spirit power. That was because this was no ordinary mist. Rather, it was a spirit formation, a spirit formation set up by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. This was something that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had created.

The kind-hearted senior called Chu Feng's attention to the mist. "Little friend Chu Feng, when the time arrives, that seal will automatically undo itself. At that time, you will be able to enter the lake and begin training."

"Thank you, senior, for all your troubles," Chu Feng expressed his thanks.

"You don't have to be this courteous, I am merely doing as Lord Weaponry Refinement Immortal ordered. He told me to properly receive little friend Chu Feng. Thus, I will naturally not dare to be negligent in my hospitality," After that senior finished saying these words, he turned and left.

At this moment, Chu Feng finally realized why this senior who was completely unrelated to him would provide him with such special treatment. It turned out that it was actually the Weaponry Refinement Immortal that was looking after him.

After that senior left, Chu Feng sat down. He was the first person to arrive. Thus, after that senior left, there was no one else here other than Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng casually sat on the grass, he was unable to hear any bit of noise. The only thing that he could hear from his surroundings was the sound of the cool breeze brushing by the grasses. It was a sensation of nature. This caused Chu Feng to feel very relaxed.

"Chu Feng," Suddenly, a sweet-sounding voice sounded. Chu

Feng had not heard any footsteps. However, someone had already arrived.

Turning his head around, Chu Feng discovered that it was Tantai Xue. Tantai Xue was walking toward Chu Feng. She had not come here alone. Merely, the senior who had led her here had already left after bringing her here.

“Have a seat,” Chu Feng patted the grass beside him and indicated to Tantai Xue to sit.

Tantai Xue, however, did not sit next to him. Instead, she stood beside him and asked, “You met the Weaponry Refinement Immortal? Did he mention what sort of weapon he was going to refine for you?”

“I have met him. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said that he will refine a weapon that is especially made for me. However, he did not mention what sort of weapon it would be. What about you?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’ve also met him. The result was about the same as you. Even though he said that he’ll make a tailor-made weapon for me, he did not mention what sort of weapon it would be, or what the weapon’s abilities would be,” Tantai Xue said.

“Say, with the abilities of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, would he be able to refine an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament for us?” Chu Feng asked.

“If it were other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, I doubt they would be able to create Incomplete Imperial Armaments for the five of us. However, it should be possible for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. After all, he is publicly recognized to be the number one individual in weaponry refinement techniques in the Holy Land of Martialism,” Tantai Xue said.

“What sort of weapon do you want?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m not sure. However, I don’t really have much of a desire for offensive weapon. After all, I already have the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute. I think it would be better if I could obtain a weapon with defensive abilities,” Tantai Xue said.

“So, you want a defensive artifact?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

Tantai Xue gave Chu Feng a side eye. It was as if she were feeling displeased to have Chu Feng see through her. However, in the end, she did not say anything. She nodded and lightly uttered, “Mn.”

Suddenly, Tantai Xue asked, “Oh, that’s right, did the Weaponry Refinement Immortal tell you about the whereabouts of Zi Ling and Su Rou?” She was very intelligent, and had managed to guess that Chu Feng must’ve asked the Weaponry Refinement Immortal about Zi Ling and Su Rou.

“This is a secret. While I can tell you about it, you must not tell others...” Chu Feng did not hide it from Tantai Xue, and told her about the true purpose behind Zi Ling and Su Rou coming to the Immortal Island through voice transmission.

“Rest assured, my lips are sealed. Furthermore, this is something regarding you. Thus, I will definitely keep it a secret,” Tantai Xue said.

“Why must you maintain secrecy even more tightly because it’s something regarding me?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“Because you’re my friend,” Tantai Xue said with a serious expression.

“Friend, indeed.” Thinking about it, Chu Feng smiled. To be able to be considered a friend by a girl like Tantai Xue was something to be happy about.

Suddenly, Nangong Ya’s voice was heard. “Brother Chu Feng, Miss Tantai Xue, never would I have thought that you all would come so early too.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, big sister Xue, Moli is here.”

“Moli, how many times must your big sister tell you that you must not fly in the air in the Immortal Island. Doing that is being disrespectful toward the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Quickly, get down and walk on the ground.”

“Aiyo, Moli understands. Big sister, don’t grab me.”

Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli had also rushed over. Likely, the three siblings lived very close to one another.

Chu Feng also managed to guess that they most likely had come here because of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s arrangement. Likely, it was because the five of them had passed the trials.

Even though this was only Chu Feng’s speculation, he was able to be certain of one thing. That was, after Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli arrived, this quiet lakeside would no longer be quiet.

“Brother Nangong, do you know where one could obtain Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones in the Overlord Domain?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones? Those are extremely precious. They are treasures that one cannot obtain even if one possessed the wealth. Brother Chu Feng, why might you need Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?” Nangong Ya asked.

“I need Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones in order to set up a spirit formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Roughly how many do you need? If it’s not a lot, I can try to help you obtain them,” Nangong Ya said.

“I need roughly a hundred Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones of this size,” Chu Feng extended his hand. What he meant was that he still needed a hundred palm-sized Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“This...” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Ya started

to frown. Evidently, this was not a small number. Even he was shocked to find out how many Chu Feng wanted. However, he did not refuse Chu Feng. Instead, he said, “No problem. I can help you think of ways to obtain them.”

“There’s really a way to obtain them?” Chu Feng asked.

“There is. In the Overlord Domain, there’s the Heavenly Law Auction.”

“The Heavenly Law Auction is controlled by the Heavenly Law Palace. It could be said to be the largest and most famous auction in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.”

“All kinds of rare treasures are present there. That is the most optimal place for people in the Holy Land of Martialism to purchase and sell things.”

“Furthermore, I’ve heard that Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones will frequently appear in that auction. However, Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are endlessly in demand by world spiritists. If you need a hundred of them, I think it would be hard to obtain.”

“However, Brother Chu Feng, if you really need them, you would have no choice but to go there and try your luck,” Nangong Ya said.

Chapter 1594 – Frantic Refinement

“Thank you, Brother Nangong, for your advice. Even if I cannot find Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, it would still be pretty good if I am able to broaden my horizons by going to the Heavenly Law Auction that you mentioned,” Chu Feng had decided that he would go visit that Heavenly Law Auction. It was as Chu Feng said, even if he could not find Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, it would still be decent if he were able to broaden his horizons. After all, that auction was a place controlled by the Heavenly Law Palace. What sort of place was the Heavenly Law Palace? It was the strongest representation of human power. It was an existence even more powerful than the Four Clans, an existence that the Nine Powers could not compare with.

Furthermore, there would definitely be a lot of people who would sell goods there. Not only would Chu Feng be able to meet a lot of powerful existences, there would also be a lot of rare treasures. It might be possible that Chu Feng could find some interesting treasures there. For example, it might be possible for him to find cultivation resources there.

If he were truly able to obtain treasures that could rapidly increase his cultivation, then that Heavenly Law Auction was definitely a place that he must go.

After deciding where to go afterward, Chu Feng’s mood became extremely good. As he chatted with Nangong Ya and the others, time passed extremely quick. Soon, the sun had set completely and the sky had turned dark.

“Fuu, fuu, fuu~~~”

Suddenly, a gale began to blow from the center of that Immortal Cultivation Lake. The white mist that had covered the entire Immortal Cultivation Lake was being blown away by the gale. At this moment, the eyes of Chu Feng and the others started to shine.

As the white mist was blown away, starting from the center of the Immortal Cultivation Lake, dazzling multi-colored radiance could be seen. As it was nighttime, the radiance appeared even more dazzling.

That was the Immortal Cultivation Lake. This radiance was not only limited to the center of the lake. Instead, the entire lake was emitting this sort of radiance. It was as if what was before them wasn't lake water at all. Instead, it looked as if it was formed of countless crystals and gems. Not only did the lake water possess many different colors, it also shone with brightness.

Actually, that was indeed no ordinary lake water. Everything in the Immortal Cultivation Lake was formed of precious treasures. That was because Chu Feng was already able to sense the dense natural energies contained within the lake before he had even set foot into it.

"Extraordinary indeed," Even Chu Feng was startled. That was because this Immortal Cultivation Lake contained a remarkable amount of energy.

"What are you all hesitating for? While others have not come yet, let's enter and seize the key moment," Nangong Baihe was the first to jump into the Immortal Cultivation Lake. Furthermore, she quickly swam toward the center of the lake. Everyone knew that in a place like this, the center would contain more abundant amounts of energy.

In response, Chu Feng and the others also jumped into the lake in succession. After entering the lake, Chu Feng was overjoyed. The energies contained within this Immortal Cultivation Lake was truly too powerful. Likely, a lot of Natural Oddities were contained within this lake. Else, it would have been impossible for it to possess natural energies this strong.

In fact, it was not only limited to natural energy and martial energy. Chu Feng also felt very strong spirit energy from the lake.

It was Dragon Mark royal-level spirit energy. Furthermore, all of these could be absorbed by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was certain that he would be able to reach a breakthrough here. Not only would he reach a breakthrough in his cultivation, he might even be able to reach a breakthrough in his world spirit techniques.

Perhaps, if Chu Feng was lucky, he could become a Snake Mark Royal-level World Spiritist here. If he could really achieve that goal, then he would have truly killed two birds with one stone. This would have been an enormous opportunity. This journey to the Immortal Island would truly not have been in vain.

At this moment, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Moli and Nangong Baihe all began to train.

As for Chu Feng, he was naturally no exception. He tightly closed his eyes. His lower body was in the water and his upper body was above the water. He began to form hand seals with his hands and operate mysterious techniques. At the same time, he began to activate the powerful refining power from his Inherited Bloodline contained within his dantain. He had begun to refine the natural energies and spirit energies contained within the lake.

Once Chu Feng began to refine the energies, he immediately felt a boundless amount of energy gathering toward him. In fact, at the moment when Chu Feng began to refine the energy, the water in the surrounding hundred meters around him started to dim.

Even though it had only dimmed for a moment, it remained that it had dimmed. This was a phenomenon caused by Chu Feng. That was because, other than Chu Feng, Tantai Xue and the others did not cause their surrounding water to dim at all.

Merely, even though the energies contained within this lake were extremely abundant, Chu Feng did not dare to be too excessive in his refinement of the energy. He feared that he would expose his Inherited Bloodline. Thus, he chose a very obscure and low-key

method to refine the energy.

Using this sort of method, it naturally caused Chu Feng's refinement speed to become much slower.

However, even with this being the case, the speed at which Chu Feng absorbed the energy contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake was something that Tantai Xue and the others could not compare with.

Even with Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli added together, the speed at which they absorbed the energy contained within the lake would still be far inferior to Chu Feng alone.

"They are truly unfortunate to be training together with you. The Divine Lightnings in your body are simply akin to ferocious beasts that can never be full. Their appetites are truly too enormous."

At this moment, even Eggy was unable to contain herself and spoke. She truly felt that with Chu Feng here, the benefits Tantai Xue and the others would be able to obtain from this Immortal Cultivation Lake would be lessened enormously.

However, Eggy was very happy. After all, she wished for Chu Feng to become stronger from the bottom of her heart. Furthermore, she wanted him to become stronger as quickly as possible.

"It seems that the Immortal Cultivation Lake has already opened. We've come too late. Quickly, we have to enter it."

"Damn it, how come the five of them are here this early? Judging by their appearances, they should have trained for quite some time in the lake already. Isn't this a bit too unfair?"

"Enough. The five of them are people that managed to pass through the trials. Even if they managed to come here to train before us, it is something that we can only accept."

Not long after they began to train, the lakeside became noisy again. A large group of people had arrived. Furthermore, once they arrived, they all jumped into the lake. Everyone had come. The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan, the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and the people from the other powers had all come.

At this moment, there were many people who were discontent. They felt that it was unfair that Chu Feng and the others had arrived first. They were cursing and complaining nonstop.

However, there were also people that felt this to only be natural. However, regardless of what they felt, all of the people here were able to sense the opportunities contained within this Immortal Cultivation Lake. This Immortal Cultivation Lake had not failed to live up to its name. It was indeed a sacred place for cultivators to train in. Furthermore, this was not only limited to martial cultivators. It was also enormously helpful to world spiritists.

Thus, as time passed, the crowd became immersed in training, and stopped saying anything anymore. All of them had begun to wholeheartedly absorb the energies contained in the lake water. None of them wanted to miss any second of time.

At that moment, the lake became peaceful again...

The night grew deeper and deeper. Six whole hours passed. At this time, it was already very late into the night. However, the crowd was still immersed in training in the Immortal Cultivation Lake. However, practically everyone was able to sense that the energies contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake were decreasing at a nonstop pace.

At this moment, there were people who became curious as to what was happening, and would open their eyes to look. Only after opening their eyes did they notice that the extremely beautiful Immortal Cultivation Lake that emitted multi-colored radiance had dimmed by over ten times.

“What’s going on? Even though the energies in this Immortal Cultivation Lake are not inexhaustible, they shouldn’t be disappearing this fast.”

At this moment, there were many people from the Immortal Island who were standing on the lakeside watching what was happening. When they saw the current Immortal Cultivation Lake, they were all shocked.

Suddenly, someone asked, “What do we do? Should we report this to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal?”

“It’s better that we report it to him.” After deciding to report this matter to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, two old men left together. They had gone to report this matter. That was because what was going on was truly too strange. They did not dare to neglect a report to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal about this.

Chapter 1595 – Testing Talent

“Exactly what is going on? Have we overestimated the Immortal Cultivation Lake or underestimated this bunch of youngsters?” The people from the Immortal Island who remained on the lakeside looked at the Immortal Cultivation Lake with frowns on their faces, gazes of uncertainty and hearts filled with doubt.

The reason why they were questioning what was happening was because they did not know why the energy contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake would disappear this quickly.

In fact, it was not only them who did not know why that was happening. Even the people inside the Immortal Cultivation Lake who were currently training were confused as to why the energy was disappearing this quickly.

There was only a single person that knew the reason why. As for that person, it was Chu Feng. The speed at which he refined the energies was truly too quick. He, by himself, was able to refine the energies in the lake many times faster than all of the people in the Immortal Cultivation Lake combined.

The reason why the energy in the Immortal Cultivation Lake was rapidly decreasing was because the majority of it had been absorbed by Chu Feng. At this moment, Chu Feng had already reached a breakthrough to rank nine Martial King from rank eight Martial King.

It was not only his cultivation that had reached a breakthrough, Chu Feng’s spirit power had also strengthened. Training in the Immortal Cultivation Lake, in the lake water that contained gentle Dragon Mark royal-level spirit energy, had strengthened Chu Feng’s spirit power. Right now, what he could use was no longer Insect Mark royal-level spirit power. Instead, it had become Snake Mark royal-level spirit power. To be exact, the current Chu Feng was already a Snake Mark Royal-level World Spiritist.

In merely six hours, such an enormous change had happened. Chu Feng had truly advanced by leaps and bounds.

“Sigh, unfortunate, truly unfortunate. They are truly unfortunate to be training together with you.”

Eggy spoke ironically. She was very happy. Even though she was saying those words with her mouth, in her heart, she wished for Chu Feng to be able to absorb all of the energy in the Immortal Cultivation Lake and leave none for those people.

Soon, the two old men who had gone to report to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had returned. Merely, they were unable to bring the Weaponry Refinement Immortal with them. Instead, they had brought back with them the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, his only disciple, Baili Xinghe.

“How can this be?!”

When Baili Xinghe arrived, he was immediately shocked to see what was happening with the Immortal Cultivation Lake. At this moment, shock appeared in his calm eyes.

He was the only one who had trained in the Immortal Cultivation Lake several times since the Immortal Cultivation Lake had been refined. Even though he did not train there for long, he would be in there for nearly two hours every time.

However, even with his talent, he was still unable to reduce the energies contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake by much. Thus, he knew extremely well how dense and strong the energies contained in the Immortal Cultivation Lake were.

Yet, at this moment, it had only been a short six hours since Chu Feng and the others had entered the Immortal Cultivation Lake. However, over eighty percent of the energy contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake was gone. Furthermore, the energy was still disappearing. It was on the verge of drying up. This truly came as a shock to Baili Xinghe.

Could it be that there was someone with even stronger talent than him among the crowd in the lake?

Suddenly, someone asked, “Young Island Master, what exactly is going on?” Even though they all possessed higher levels of cultivation than Baili Xinghe, due to the fact that Baili Xinghe was the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and also the Young Island Master of the Immortal Island, he knew a lot more about the things in the Immortal Island. Thus, they had to ask Baili Xinghe about a lot of things.

On the Immortal Island, Baili Xinghe was an existence beneath only a single person and above everyone else.

“It might be that some sort of problem happened to the energies contained in the Immortal Cultivation Lake, and that caused it to rapidly decrease,” Baili Xinghe said.

He denied the possibility of there being a genius more powerful than him who was rapidly absorbing the energies contained within the Immortal Cultivation Lake. That was because he did not believe that there was someone with better talent than him among the crowd.

Suddenly, an old man asked, “But, the Immortal Cultivation Lake is something that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had personally refined. It shouldn’t be possible for it to have a problem all of a sudden. Could it be because of something else? Could there be someone with exceptional talent among that bunch of people there?”

“Are you questioning me?” Hearing those words, Baili Xinghe’s expression instantly became one of displeasure. In fact, his expression had even turned gloomy and cold.

“This subordinate would not dare,” That old man with a cultivation much superior to Baili Xinghe’s acted like a servant who did not dare to be disobedient toward him.

“If you all do not believe me, I can prove it to you all. Master taught me a method to determine one’s own talent in the Immortal Cultivation Lake,” After Baili Xinghe finished saying those words, he looked to the Immortal Cultivation Lake.

Suddenly, Baili Xinghe spoke loudly to the crowd. “Everyone, has your training in the Immortal Cultivation Lake been going well?”

“So it’s the Young Island Master. Very good! This Immortal Cultivation Lake is truly a sacred place to train in. As expected of a formation personally refined by Lord Weaponry Refinement Immortal. It is so good that there is simply nothing that could compare to it.”

“Young Island Master, please inform Weaponry Crafting Immortal that we are extremely thankful to him. If it weren’t for him, we would likely not be able to find such a sacred place to train in throughout our entire lives.”

Once Baili Xinghe asked the crowd how they were doing, the crowd were all woken up by his words and began to flatter him nonstop.

“Everyone. Actually, other than being able to be used for training, this Immortal Cultivation Lake has another function. Using a special method, it is able to detect how powerful your talent is. Everyone, might you all be interested in giving it a try?” Baili Xinghe asked.

“There’s actually such a thing? Young Island Master, what might the method be? I wish to give it a try.”

“I also wish to give it a try. Young Island Master, please tell us the method so that we can test our talents.” After hearing that Baili Xinghe said, the crowd were all excited. Having reached their level of cultivation, it was actually extremely difficult for them to determine how talented they were. To find out that there was actually a method to determine their talent here, the crowd was naturally overjoyed.

Furthermore, many of the people present were the elites of the young generation.

Thus, they all wanted to indirectly compete with one another to see whose talent was better.

“The method is actually very simple. I will teach everyone a hand seal. By using the hand seal and simultaneously refining the energies of the Immortal Cultivation Lake, a motion will occur in the water around your body. If the motion is strong, it will turn into a ring of light.”

“The more rings of light one has around one’s body, the faster one is refining the energies in the Cultivation Immortal Lake, and the greater one’s talent is.”

“Everyone, watch carefully. This is the hand seal,” As Baili Xinghe spoke, he began to move his hands about. With a very slow speed, he demonstrated the special hand seal to the crowd.

This hand seal was very easy to learn. Everyone present was able to learn it instantly after watching it once. Soon, there were people who began to continue training while using the hand seal.

All those who started to train while using the hand seals would cause the water around them to move about and slowly give off light. Furthermore, it was as Baili Xinghe said, the lights began to form rings of light.

“So miraculous. It’s actually real.”

At this moment, everyone began to use the method taught to them by Baili Xinghe. The only exception was Chu Feng. That was because if he were to do it, he would be exposing his talent, and the abnormal speed at which he was absorbing the energies.

He was very certain that the hand seal was real and effective. If he were to make the hand seal, the rings of light that surrounded him would far surpass those of the others. This could cause a grand commotion, as well as unnecessary troubles.

Chapter 1596 – Cursing Without Obscenity

The crowd did not know what Chu Feng was thinking. At this moment, they were focused on who possessed more rings of light. After all, the more rings of light a person had, the better that person's talent for martial cultivation would be.

After observing the rings of light, the crowd soon came to a conclusion.

The people here were all elites among the current Holy Land of Martialism's younger generation. Thus, practically everyone was capable of creating rings of light as per the method taught to them by Baili Xinghe.

Among them, the weakest would trigger a single ring of light, while the majority of the crowd would trigger two rings of light. There was also a small portion of people that triggered three rings of light. As for those capable of creating four rings of light, they were extremely few. These sorts of people were capable of being considered to be true geniuses.

A thing worthy of being mentioned was that Nangong Baihe, the young miss of the Nangong Imperial Clan, triggered five rings of light.

As for Nangong Ya and Beitang Zimo, they both triggered six rings of light.

There was another person that triggered six rings of light like Nangong Ya and Beitang Zimo. It was a woman. She possessed an alluring body, a lovely face and a sexy appearance.

In the water, her silhouette appeared even sexier as she was illuminated by the rings of light.

However, many of the men present did not dare to have delusions about this woman. That was because this woman was not human. She had a sharp horn on her forehead. She was a

monstrous beast. She was the strongest genius of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's younger generation present.

Other than these three, the super genius of the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Moli, caught even more attention. That was because she was actually able to trigger seven rings of light. It was an amount that surpassed those of Nangong Ya and Beitang Zimo.

However, at this moment, the focus of the crowd was not on Nangong Moli. Rather, it was Tantai Xue, someone that they never would have expected.

Tantai Xue had actually managed to trigger more rings of light than Nangong Moli. She had triggered a total of eight rings of light.

Furthermore, the people who were attentive had noticed that Tantai Xue's current cultivation had changed. She was no longer a rank two Half Martial Emperor, but had become a rank three Half Martial Emperor. She had actually reached a breakthrough while training in the Immortal Cultivation Lake.

"Amazing! Never would I have imagined that the person with the best talent for cultivation among us would be that young lady."

"What's that young lady's name? Which power did she come from? How could her talent for martial cultivation be this high?"

"This lady's appearance is extremely beautiful, akin to that of a celestial fairy. I already knew that she would not be someone ordinary. However, never would I have expected her to be this powerful."

"It would be one thing if she were more talented than Nangong Ya and Beitang Zimo. However, her talent actually surpasses that of the Nangong Imperial Clan's super genius, Nangong Moli." At this moment, the crowd had burst into an uproar. They were all stunned by Tantai Xue's performance.

"She actually triggered eight rings of light? Never would I have

imagined that this lady by the name of Tantai Xue would be this powerful. Young Island Master, how many rings of light are you able to trigger in the Immortal Cultivation Lake?” someone from the Immortal Island asked curiously.

“Same as her, eight rings of light.”

“That person by the name of Tantai Xue is truly extraordinary. She actually possesses talent on par with my own. However, one’s talent in martial cultivation will not always remain the same. While her talent is very good right now, that does not mean that her talent will remain this good in the future.”

“Furthermore, talent is not the only thing that determines whether or not one will become powerful. While one must absolutely put forth effort; the most important thing still remains that one must encounter opportunities to change. If one cannot encounter any opportunity, no matter how talented one might be, it will all be a waste.”

When Baili Xinghe said these words, he was actually indirectly mocking Tantai Xue. He was mocking how Tantai Xue possessed very good talent, but not a good life. He was mocking how she had not obtained the opportunities that he had. In other words, he was stating that Tantai Xue was inferior to him.

After all, Baili Xinghe had managed to encounter the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, and had ended up being accepted as a personal disciple by him. This was a chance opportunity. In the Holy Land of Martialism, this was an enormously grand opportunity that only he had received, something that countless people yearned for in their dreams without being able to obtain.

However, Baili Xinghe was actually a bit lacking in confidence when he spoke those words. That was because only he himself knew that the number of rings of light he could actually trigger was not eight. Rather, like Nangong Moli, it was seven.

If this method to determine one’s talent was absolutely accurate,

then Baili Xinghe's talent was actually inferior to Tantai Xue's.

“To have a talent on par with Young Island Master, she would be an exceptional genius. However, other than that young lady called Tantai Xue, the three people from the Nangong Imperial Clan, the several from the Beitang Imperial Clan, as well as the several King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, there doesn't seem to be anyone else with outstanding talent.”

“Indeed, it would appear that what Young Island Master said is correct. The reason why the energies in the Immortal Cultivation Lake are rapidly decreasing is not because there is a genius with excessively heaven-defying talent within it. Rather, there must have been a problem with the Immortal Cultivation Lake itself.”

At this moment, many people began to trust what Baili Xinghe said. After all, the truth was before their eyes. Even though Tantai Xue possessed extremely astonishing talent that was on par with Baili Xinghe's, it remained that she was only on par with him. Her talent was not capable of absorbing this much energy from the Immortal Cultivation Pond in a period of six hours, to the point of nearly drying it up.

“Hey, hey, hey. What's that brat by the name of Chu Feng doing? Could it be that he does not even have the courage to use the method to test his talent?”

Suddenly, a sharp and unkind voice sounded from the crowd. It was Beitang Zimo. He had been paying attention to Chu Feng the entire time. Thus, he discovered that Chu Feng had not trained with the hand seals.

Thus, he thought that Chu Feng's talent should be extremely bad. Perhaps he might not even be able to trigger a single ring of light. He determined that the reason why he did not dare to use the hand seal was most definitely because Chu Feng feared humiliation.

As Beitang Zimo was someone who hated Chu Feng enormously,

he would naturally not just watch as Chu Feng dodged his humiliation. Thus, he publicly exposed Chu Feng for the sake of making him suffer humiliation before everyone.

“That’s true. Brother, why aren’t you using the method taught to us by Young Island Master to test your talent?” After Beitang Zimo mentioned this matter, many people took note of Chu Feng. Like Beitang Zimo, many people began to suspect Chu Feng.

“Talent is something that cannot be changed. What meaning is there in revealing it or not?” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“Yoh, what arrogant words you say,” Beitang Zimo sneered.

“Arrogant? I merely do not wish to know about my own talent. How is that arrogant?” Chu Feng calmly replied.

“How isn’t that arrogant? It’s not that you do not wish to know about your own talent, but rather, that you feel that your talent surpasses ours enormously, isn’t that right?” Beitang Zimo asked.

“I’ve never thought that,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Never thought that? Enough of your nonsense! You think that you’re better than us just because you passed the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s trials and decided to not place any of us in your eyes. That is definitely what you’re thinking of, isn’t that right?” Beitang Zimo spoke loudly.

“I, Chu Feng, have never had such a thought. Brother Beitang, why are you attacking me, Chu Feng, like this? However, I’ve heard that people will generally think others to be the same sort of people as themselves.”

“For example, a broad-minded individual will think others to be the same as him, as people that do not bother about trifles.”

“However, a selfish and narrow-minded individual will think others to be as vile as him.”

“Brother Beitang, for you to think of me, Chu Feng, as such a vile

individual, it would seem that you are the latter of the two,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. He was cursing at Beitang Zimo without using any obscenity.

Chapter 1597 – Betting With One's Reputation

“Chu Feng, who did you think you are for you to dare to actually insult me, Beitang Zimo, in such a manner. I see you're courting death.”

After hearing Chu Feng's mockery and ridicule, Beitang Zimo was immediately enraged. As he spoke, he released his own aura. He was planning to attack Chu Feng. Immediately after that, everyone else from the Beitang Imperial Clan released their auras and planned to attack Chu Feng too.

“I shall see who dares to do anything to Brother Chu Feng,” Seeing that, Nangong Ya snorted coldly, revealed his rank three Half Martial Emperor's aura and stood between Chu Feng and Beitang Zimo. Following him, Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and the rest of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan all entered a state of being prepared for battle.

A battle between two grand Imperial Clans could happen at any moment now.

Right at this moment, Baili Xinghe who was standing on the lakeside suddenly spoke. “Everyone, give me, Baili Xinghe, some face, and do not fight here, okay?”

After Baili Xinghe spoke, neither Nangong Ya nor Beitang Zimo dared to not give him face. Therefore both of them retrieved their released auras.

“Trash is trash. All you can do is act like a turtle and hide behind the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“The way I see it, there's another reason why you do not dare to use the method to test your talent. As for that reason, it is also the most realistic reason.”

“That is, you know that you're too weak, and that you will not be

able to trigger a single ring of light after using the hand seals. You are afraid of humiliation.”

“You only managed to choose the right path and pass through the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s trials not because you have skills. Rather, it is all because of your luck.”

“You did nothing more than pick your path blindly. You only managed to choose the right passage by luck. Other than being lucky, you have absolutely no skill at all.”

“A mere rank eight Martial King, what could you possibly use to compare yourself to us? What makes you think you can step all over us?”

Beitang Zimo was unwilling to let this matter slide. It could be seen that his resentment toward Chu Feng was enormous. As for the reason why, it was none other than because Chu Feng was standing in the limelight, and had become the most important character in this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly.

However, Beitang Zimo did not discover that Chu Feng’s cultivation was already no longer that of a rank eight Martial King, and had instead become a rank nine Martial King. Chu Feng had already reached a breakthrough in his cultivation. However, he was concealing it. With Chu Feng’s ability to conceal his cultivation, someone like Beitang Zimo would naturally not be able to discover his true cultivation.

“Beitang Zimo, you are being too excessive, no? What Chu Feng passed is the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s trials. It is the Weaponry Refinement Immortal who has chosen him.”

“You continuously call Chu Feng’s ability into question, could you possibly be trying to question the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s acknowledgement of him?” Nangong Baihe was unable to continue watching anymore and lashed out at Beitang Zimo.

“I am naturally not questioning the Weaponry Refinement

Immortal. However, I am questioning this Chu Feng. I feel that he is nothing more than trash, that he only managed to pass the trials because of luck.”

“Else, why would he not even have the courage to test his own talent?”

“I dare to guarantee that this Chu Feng’s true talent will not be able to even trigger a single ring of light,” Beitang Zimo spoke with an expression of certainty.

“Beitang Zimo, I’d advise you to leave yourself a life-line. If Brother Chu Feng is truly able to accomplish it, then you’ll have slapped yourself in the face,” Nangong Ya was unable to watch anymore too.

“Slap my face? Hahaha... He must have the ability to do so first.”

“How about this...? A battle with words has no meaning. We will know the result if we have Chu Feng test his talent with the hand seals.”

“If this Chu Feng is really capable of creating a single ring of light, it would mean that what I, Beitang Zimo, said is incorrect. I, Beitang Zimo, am not someone who will speak ill of others for no reason. Thus, I will publicly present Chu Feng with some treasures to compensate him for my mistake.”

“Everyone, do you all find this proposal of mine suitable?” Beitang Zimo spoke with a loud voice.

“Yeah! If you have the courage, then give it a try. If you refuse to try, then you’re lacking in confidence!” The people from the Beitang Imperial Clan shouted loudly.

When the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan began to attack Chu Feng nonstop, many of the surrounding bystanders also joined their camp and began to urge Chu Feng to take the test of his talent.

That was because after hearing what Beitang Zimo said, they too

felt what he said to be reasonable. They all began to doubt whether Chu Feng had passed the trials with his ability or with luck.

If Chu Feng had only passed because of luck, they would not be able to accept it at all.

“Brother Chu Feng, since they’ve all said it like that, you should use the hand seal to prove yourself and let them know exactly how powerful your talent for martial cultivation is.”

“You should shut them up with your strength,” Nangong Ya urged. While Nangong Ya was not an aggressive individual, he was truly unable to continue watching Beitang Zimo provoke Chu Feng like this.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, if you do not teach someone like him a lesson, he will never respect you, will only have a low opinion of you, and will insult you nonstop,” Nangong Baihe also urged.

“Heh...” At this moment, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he said, “I am not interested in your compensation. Let’s change it to something different.”

“Didn’t you say that I, Chu Feng, would not be able to trigger a single ring of light? In that case, let’s do it like this. I will not want any of your compensation. However, if I, Chu Feng, am able to trigger a single ring of light, then you shall slap yourself before the crowd once.”

“If I am able to trigger two rings of light, then you shall slap yourself twice. If I am able to trigger five rings of light, then you shall slap yourself five times. Essentially, you shall slap yourself as many times as the number of rings of light I can trigger. Do you dare to accept?” Chu Feng spoke with a loud voice.

“What, you...” After hearing those words, that Beitang Zimo’s complexion instantly turned green.

If he were to compensate Chu Feng, it would be easy for him to do. After all, his Beitang Imperial Clan was not lacking in wealth.

However, if he were to slap himself before the crowd, it would be an extremely shameful thing to do.

If Chu Feng failed to trigger any rings of light, then he would be fine, as it would only verify all that he had said before. However, what if Chu Feng managed to trigger a ring of light? Before all these people, there would be no way for Beitang Zimo to act shamelessly and refuse to slap himself. Thus, he would have no choice but to publicly slap himself. If that were to happen, how could Beitang Zimo possibly have the face to face anyone again in the future? His reputation would be instantly ruined.

Hesitation. At this moment, Beitang Zimo started to hesitate.

He was not only hesitating, he was also regretting. He regretted that he had decided to force Chu Feng to test his talent without any reason at all. And now, not only did he not manage to make things difficult for Chu Feng, he had instead been forced into such a state by him as well.

“What’s wrong? Are you afraid? You don’t dare to accept? What happened to your earlier aggressive attitude and nonstop provocations? Didn’t you firmly believe that I was trash that could not even trigger a single ring of light?”

“After all this time, it turns out that the true trash is you, Beitang Zimo. You are such trash that while you dare to provoke another, you don’t even have the courage to accept a request from the person who you provoked.”

“Beitang Zimo, you are truly trash. Real trash,” Seeing that Beitang Zimo was hesitating, Chu Feng ruthlessly pointed at him and started to rain curses on him. He was utterly humiliating Beitang Zimo.

“Never would I have thought that Chu Feng would be this eloquent. Once he started speaking, he immediately made Beitang Zimo scared to even utter a single word. Haha. Chu Feng, you’re amazing,” Nangong Baihe was very overjoyed by this. That was

because Chu Feng's cursing of Beitang Zimo was extremely satisfying to her.

“Chu Feng, don't you think that you can scare me. I, Beitang Zimo, accept your demand. I will slap myself as many times as the number of rings of light that you can trigger. However, if you cannot trigger even a single ring of light, then you must publicly kneel, kowtow to me, slap yourself a hundred times and then say before everyone that you, Chu Feng, are a huge piece of trash who only managed to pass the trials because of luck.”

Beitang Zimo snarled in anger. Being forced by Chu Feng, he was extremely enraged, and lost all of his ability to reason. He was determined to humiliate Chu Feng, and was even willing to put up his own reputation as the gambling stake to do so.

Chapter 1598 – Revealing One’s Talent

“Very well. I shall let you see exactly what my talent is.”

Seeing that Beitang Zimo had accepted his demand, Chu Feng no longer hesitated. He began to train according to the hand seal method demonstrated by Baili Xinghe.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng started training, a ring of light began to flicker around him.

“How could this be...?” Seeing this scene, Beitang Zimo’s expression immediately changed. His body wavered as he took several steps backward.

The reason for that was because the thing that he was worried about the most had occurred. Chu Feng was not as weak as he had imagined him to be. Chu Feng was actually capable of triggering a ring of light. Wouldn’t this mean that he would have to slap himself before the crowd?

However, the matter that caused him to feel speechless was that after the first ring of light appeared around Chu Feng, the appearance of the rings of light did not stop.

After the first ring of light came a second one, a third one, a fourth one, a fifth one, a sixth one and a seventh one.

In merely a blink of an eye, seven rings of light had been triggered by Chu Feng. The speed at which this happened was so quick that the crowd were all speechless.

However, the most shocking thing was that Chu Feng’s rings of light did not stop. Soon, an eighth ring of light appeared. Chu Feng’s talent had reached the same level as Tantai Xue now.

At this moment, the crowd was in an uproar. It was not only limited to the people in the Immortal Cultivation Lake, even the

people from the Immortal Island standing on the lakeside were extremely shocked.

They had truly never expected there to be another person other than Tantai Xue who possessed talent on par with Baili Xinghe.

At this moment, Baili Xinghe was feeling extremely unwell. That was because he himself knew that the actual number of rings of light that he had managed to trigger was seven instead of eight.

If there were only a single Tantai Xue with greater talent than him, then he would be able to accept it reluctantly. However, suddenly, a Chu Feng had popped out. Furthermore, Chu Feng possessed talent superior to his own too. This became extremely difficult for him to accept.

How come this many geniuses suddenly appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism? Merely from the people who had come to participate in the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, there were two people with talent superior to Baili Xinghe's.

This caused Baili Xinghe, who was extremely arrogant and thought everyone to be beneath him, to feel an enormous shock. He was feeling extremely unwell in his heart.

“Heavens, quickly, look, Chu Feng has triggered another ring of light. Nine rings of light! Chu Feng has triggered nine rings of light!”

Suddenly, someone cried out in alarm. Their voice was filled with disbelief. That was because that person discovered that after Chu Feng triggered the eighth ring of light, he had actually triggered another ring of light. Chu Feng had triggered a total of nine rings of light.

“Damn it, I’m unable to stop it.”

At this moment when the crowd were all crying out in alarm, Chu Feng was feeling bitter. He was originally only planning to use Baili Xinghe's method to trigger as many rings of light as Tantai

Xue did and to stop right after.

However, to his surprise, after he used the method, rings of light began to appear nonstop. Furthermore, the hand seal had broken free from his control. It was as if he would not be able to stop the method from creating more rings of light unless he finished the test of talent.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng had no other choice but to resign himself to fate. Thus, he decided that he might as well reveal his true talent to the crowd.

Therefore, when the ninth ring of light appeared, the tenth ring of light also appeared right after. In the end, Chu Feng triggered a total of ten rings of light.

At this moment, Chu Feng finally regained control over the testing method. As he saw the ten rings of light that surrounded him, Chu Feng felt extremely good. As he had only triggered two more rings of light than Tantai Xue, he figured that it would not cause too large of a commotion.

However, the reality was different from what he had expected. Tantai Xue's eight rings of light had already been enough to shock everyone. As for Chu Feng's ten rings of light, they were simply so shocking that many were unable to stand firmly anymore.

Genius, a true genius. A genius among geniuses who surpassed Tantai Xue and Baili Xinghe.

At this moment, not to mention those people who did not know Chu Feng, even those who knew him were extremely shocked.

Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and even Tantai Xue all had expressions of shock on their faces.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng possessed enormous talent for martial cultivation, they did not expect Chu Feng's talent to be this strong.

"Impossible! This is definitely impossible! You must have

cheated! How could you possibly trigger ten rings of light? I, Beitang Zimo, am someone with exceptional talent. Yet, I only managed to trigger six rings of light. Yet you... mere trash whom I've never heard of, a mere rank eight Martial King, how could you possibly have triggered ten rings of light, how?"

"You cheated. You most definitely cheated!" Beitang Zimo was unable to accept the truth. This was no longer an issue of him slapping himself anymore. Instead, he was unwilling to accept the fact that the person who he thought to be trash actually possessed talent that greatly surpassed his own.

"Cheated? So it turns out that one can cheat on this? Very well, tell me, how does one cheat?" Chu Feng asked with a sneer.

"I don't care. You cheated, that's all that matters. You most definitely cheated," Beitang Zimo insisted that Chu Feng had cheated.

"Turns out that you are truly unable to accept defeat with grace. Well, that's fine too. I, Chu Feng, shall allow you to see, shall allow everyone present to see, whether I, Chu Feng, am cheating or not."

As Chu Feng spoke, a trace of fierceness suddenly flashed in his eyes. Since he had revealed his talent, there was no need for Chu Feng to hold back anymore. Thus, he decided it might as well be time for him to properly show Beitang Zimo the gap between them, and have him know what the truth was.

"Boom~~~"

When Chu Feng continued training while using the hand seals, not only did he create ten rings of light, he even created a loud explosion. After the loud explosion was heard, the surrounding hundred meters of water began to surge. The water actually formed an enormous whirlpool.

The whirlpool began to spin. Following that, energies that could be seen with the naked eye swept toward Chu Feng. These energies

were all absorbed and refined by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had held back the entire time before. However, at this time, he held nothing back. He wanted to show everyone how powerful he, Chu Feng, was. He was determined to prove to them that his talent was real, and not something he had obtained by cheating.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng no longer tried to conceal his cultivation. When Chu Feng's rank nine Martial King cultivation was released, the crowd all thought that he had managed to break through on the spot.

At this moment, the crowd present all had wide-open eyes, tied tongues and expressions of dumbfoundedness all over their faces. That was because, with Chu Feng frantically training, they were able to see with their naked eyes how the energies in the Cultivation Immortal Lake disappeared.

At this moment, all of the mysteries were revealed. It turned out that it wasn't that there was an issue with the Immortal Cultivation Lake. Rather, it had been because of Chu Feng.

Chu Feng, by himself, had increased the speed at which the energies in the Lake were consumed. Chu Feng had, by himself, nearly dried up the entire Immortal Cultivation Lake in six hours' time.

In fact, the Immortal Cultivation Lake was completely dried up now. With Chu Feng going all-out in absorbing the energies, the Immortal Cultivation Lake had been dried up by him.

Finally, Chu Feng stopped. He had completely absorbed all of the energies contained in the Immortal Cultivation Lake. It could be said that he had not left a single bit of energy behind. Unfortunately, even though he had obtained an enormous amount of energy after breaking through to rank nine Martial King, he was still unable to break through to the Half Martial Emperor realm.

“You’ve seen it with your own eyes. Now, you should know whether I, Chu Feng, have cheated, right?” Chu Feng asked Beitung Zimo.

At this moment, Beitung Zimo was standing there motionlessly, as if he had been petrified. He had a very sluggish expression. It was as if he was scared witless and unable to utter a single word.

He had received an enormous shock.

Chapter 1599 – Weaponry Refinement Completed

“What’s wrong? Are you speechless now? Are you finding it difficult to say anything, or is it that you do not dare to say anything?”

“Beitang Zimo, are you pretending to be stupid? Didn’t you say that I, Chu Feng, am trash? Didn’t you say that I only managed to pass the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s trials because of luck?”

“Trash, who is the actual trash? You, Beitang Zimo, are the actual trash. Not only are you trash, you’re also a spineless coward. You are a coward who dared to accept a gamble, yet didn’t dare to hold up to it after losing,” Nangong Baihe added.

“That’s right. Trash, you are truly shameless!”

“Pah, you are a waste as a prince of the Beitang Imperial Clan. It turns out that you’re nothing more than trash. You have truly shamed the entire Beitang Imperial Clan,” Following Nangong Baihe, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan also started to loudly mock and insult Beitang Zimo.

“Truly shameful. He insulted another so ruthlessly earlier. Yet now, it turns out that he will have to slap himself. Haha... Beitang Imperial Clan? It’s only to this level. They are nowhere as grand as the rumors say.”

“That’s right, it’s as the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan said, this Beitang Zimo is simply trash.”

Most surprisingly, it was not only the Nangong Imperial Clan that started to insult Beitang Zimo. Even the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts began to mock and insult Beitang Zimo.

Other than the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, no one else dared to say anything about Beitang Zimo. However, this was not because they did not want to say

anything. It was not because that they felt that Beitang Zimo was not wrong. Rather, they felt the complete opposite.

At this moment, everyone felt that Beitang Zimo had brought this upon himself, that he was reaping what he had sown. Actually, a lot of people wanted to mock and insult Beitang Zimo too. Merely, due to the strength of the Beitang Imperial Clan, they did not dare to say anything. Thus, they could only restrain themselves and keep their insults and mockeries in their hearts.

Suddenly, Beitang Zimo shouted angrily. “All of you, shut up!!!!”

His angry shout caused the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts to be even more enraged. They felt that he was being extremely arrogant to dare to shout in this sort of manner at this sort of state.

However, before the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts could say anything back at Beitang Zimo, Beitang Zimo suddenly raised his arms and began to slap himself in the face. “Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow~~~” A total of ten consecutive slaps ruthlessly landed on his face.

After slapping himself ten times, bloody palm marks appeared on Beitang Zimo’s cheeks. It could be seen that his ten slaps had been extremely ruthless.

“Let’s go,” After the ten slaps, Beitang Zimo turned around, leapt out of the lake and began to leave. The other people from the Beitang Imperial Clan immediately followed after him and hurriedly left the area.

His decision to leave was correct. That was because he already had no face to remain in this place anymore. Today, he had been utterly disgraced.

Actually, this could not be blamed on him. He had been arrogant all his life, and had provoked a lot of people. Furthermore, he

should have succeeded earlier too. However, he had failed. The reason for his failure was because he had encountered... someone who he should not have provoked.

At this moment, everyone had turned their gazes to Chu Feng. They wished to see what sort of expression Chu Feng would have on his face. They wanted to know whether he was in great delight or would act extremely prideful?

“Eh? Where’s Chu Feng?”

However, it was only at this moment that the crowd discovered that Chu Feng had disappeared.

The crowd had been focused on Beitang Zimo’s reaction, and had actually overlooked Chu Feng. It would appear that Chu Feng had left for quite some time now. Likely, he had left before Beitang Zimo had started slapping himself.

Even though Chu Feng had left, the crowd’s hearts were unable to calm down. They finally knew that Chu Feng had not passed through the trials by chance. Even though it was very difficult to believe, the talent that Chu Feng had revealed was truly astonishing.

Likely, in the near future, another grand person would appear in the Overlord Domain. As for that person, his name would be Chu Feng.

“Young Island Master, it would appear that it is not that the Cultivation Immortal Pond had a problem, but rather that, that young man by the name of Chu Feng is a demon-level character. He had managed to suck the Cultivation Immortal Lake dry in merely six hours,” The people from the Immortal Island said to Baili Xinghe.

“It would appear to be the case,” Baili Xinghe nodded his head calmly.

Even though he had a calm appearance, his hands within his

sleeves were tightly clenched. They were clenched so tightly that his veins were bulging and appeared to be about to burst. A violent storm was raging in his heart.

At this moment, Chu Feng had returned to his residence.

The reason why Chu Feng had returned so quickly was because he knew that he had created an enormous commotion. Likely, there would be a lot of people who would try to worm their way into being friends with him.

Chu Feng did not wish to befriend opportunists. Thus, he had secretly left and returned to his residence.

His residence had been arranged by the people from the Immortal Island. Thus, other than the people from the Immortal Island, no one knew where he lived. As such, Chu Feng did not fear others coming to disturb him.

“What a great feeling. That’s what you should’ve done. Why try to be so secretive? To reveal yourself like this, isn’t it much better?”

“In the world of martial cultivators, the strong are the rulers. If you do not reveal your strength, how can others possibly respect you? Only by revealing your strength will you be able to gain the respect of others.” At this moment, Eggy was exceptionally excited. She was clapping her hands and cheering for Chu Feng nonstop.

“While it is true that I will be able to easily obtain others’ respect by revealing my strength, I will also be envied by others and bring about people who want to kill me,” Chu Feng said.

Actually, if it hadn’t been for Beitang Zimo provoking Chu Feng and attacking him nonstop, Chu Feng would not have revealed his talent and caused such a commotion.

“If anyone dares to try to kill you, you shall kill them. The world of martial cultivators is like this. If you do not bully others, then you will be bullied by others,” Eggy said with an indifferent

expression. She wished for Chu Feng to be strong-headed the entire time.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly and didn’t say anything. If possible, he also did not wish to be too low-key. That was because if he was too low-key, he would appear to be a weakling. If he were to appear to be weak, then it would be hard to blame others for wanting to bully him.

In the following days, Chu Feng stayed in his residence beside the cliff the entire time. He was waiting for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to finish refining his weapon.

Even though Chu Feng did not leave the Immortal Island the entire time, he had still managed to hear about a lot of news. Beitang Zimo and his Beitang Imperial Clan had left. Many other people had also left.

The reason why had they left so quickly was all because of Chu Feng. Chu Feng had completely sucked the entire Cultivation Immortal Lake dry. Thus, it was meaningless for them to stay. Therefore, they all decided to leave.

Right now, the only people that remained on the Immortal Island were Chu Feng, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and a small number of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. One thing worthy of being mentioned was that, for some unknown reason, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts had all stayed as well.

On the seventh day since Chu Feng’s arrival on the Immortal Island, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal called for him again.

It was the same forest and the same thatched hut. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal was still sitting beside the stove.

Merely, this time around, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was not roasting sweet potatoes. Rather, he was roasting potatoes.

He had the same sort of faint smile on his face as he looked to

Chu Feng. This time around, unconcealed appreciation and admiration filled his smiling gaze.

Chapter 1600 – Incomplete Imperial Armament

“Chu Feng, I heard that you, by yourself, managed to completely absorb all of the energies in the Immortal Cultivation Lake in a matter of several hours?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

“Senior, such a thing did happen. However, I did not accomplish that by myself. That day, there were many people training in the Immortal Cultivation Lake. Everyone managed to obtain benefits from it,” Chu Feng replied.

“Even with that many people, it would be impossible for them to completely absorb all of the energies in my Immortal Cultivation Lake in such a short period of time. That Immortal Cultivation Lake is something that I personally refined. Thus, I know best what it is capable of.”

“Boy, you truly make one have a whole new level of respect for you. It is no wonder that those two girls, Zi Ling and Su Rou, are so hell-bent on you. Boy, like Xinghe, you also possess the potential to become an overlord,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Senior, you are flattering me,” Chu Feng said. Then, he asked, “Senior, may I know how long Zi Ling and Su Rou are going to stay here to train?”

“You do not have to worry about that. The two of them will be absolutely safe here. No one will be able to harm them. Furthermore, even if they are to leave here, I will let them leave with my name. How many people in the entire Holy Land of Martialism would possibly dare to touch my, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s, people?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Thank you, senior, for your troubles,” Chu Feng was grateful

from the bottom of his heart.

“Boy, you shouldn’t be thinking about others right now. Instead, you should be thinking about yourself. This here is the armament that I’ve refined for you. See if it’s fitting.” As the Weaponry Refinement Immortal spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack from his waist and threw it to Chu Feng.

After opening the Cosmos Sack, Chu Feng discovered that contained within the Cosmos Sack was actually a pair of boots. It was a pair of very ordinary-looking boots. They were more or less the same as the ones that Chu Feng was wearing on his feet right now.

The boots were not very elegant or beautiful, nor were they decorated gorgeously. In fact, they could even be said to be plain and simple. However, when Chu Feng held the pair of boots in his hands, he immediately knew that they were an extraordinary treasure.

Incomplete Imperial Armament. This pair of boots was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Unlike Chu Feng’s Infinity Edge, this pair of boots was not a copy. Rather, it was a real Incomplete Imperial Armament.

However, this Incomplete Imperial Armament was not one that needed to recognize its master. Rather, it had been tailor-made for Chu Feng. In other words, other than Chu Feng, no other person could use this pair of boots.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng expressed his thanks by cupping his fist respectfully. He was extremely happy. That was because it was only at this moment that he knew what was meant by a tailor-made item.

“Do not be so anxious to thank me. Try them on first.” As the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said those words, he stood up, pushed the door to the thatched hut open, and walked out. Then, he said, “The house is too small, there’s not enough space to test

them out. Come, test the boots outside.”

“Mn.” Chu Feng arrived outside of the house. He removed the boots that he was wearing and then put on the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s tailor-made boots.

“Senior, there’s no need to test. This pair of boots is a treasure indeed. They are capable of increasing my speed by an entire tier.”

“With junior’s real strength, rank five Half Martial Emperors would not be able to contend against me at all. Even against rank six Half Martial Emperors, I could fight one with difficulty. However, I will definitely be no match for rank seven Half Martial Emperors.”

“However, with this pair of boots, even if I cannot win against rank seven Half Martial Emperors, I will be able to win against rank seven Half Martial Emperors in terms of speed. Even though this pair of boots would not be able to help me with anything else other than speed, it would be able to help me when my life is in danger, and I need to escape. It is an outstanding artifact for escaping,” Chu Feng said.

“Not bad. You have skills. You actually managed to determine the value of this pair of boots using only perception.”

“However, Chu Feng, that is not all this pair of boots is capable of. I have also refined ten talismans for you. As long as you use the talismans on the boots, your speed will be able to increase once again. At that time, no one underneath the Martial Emperor realm will be able to catch up to you,” As the Weaponry Refinement Immortal spoke, he took out ten talismans and handed them to Chu Feng.

Without even receiving the talismans, Chu Feng was able to tell how powerful they were using merely his eyes. Those talismans must have cost the Weaponry Refinement Immortal a long time to refine. That was because those talismans were too powerful, they were simply priceless treasures.

“Senior, your enormous grace and kindness toward Chu Feng is something that Chu Feng cannot repay. However, if there ever comes a day that Chu Feng can repay you, this junior will definitely repay you,” Chu Feng said while clasping his fist.

“My, what sorts of words are those? I held this Weaponry Bestowment Assembly for the purpose of finding outstanding members of the younger generation like yourself, so that I could bestow weapons to them.”

“You have passed my trials. Thus, it is only natural that I bestow you a weapon. This is something that you deserve. There is no need for you to be this courteous.”

“However, that said, Chu Feng, you must be on guard against others. To travel by yourself, you must be extra careful.”

“Even though we have not known each other for long, I can tell that you are a talent. Thus, I do not wish for your life to be lost at the hands of vile individuals,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Thank you, senior, for your warning. This junior will definitely pay attention,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, you can return. You’ll be leaving tomorrow. Return early and rest yourself,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“In that case, junior shall take his leave,” After Chu Feng bid his farewell, he returned directly to his residence. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal had spoken his intentions clearly. Furthermore, he had also bestowed Chu Feng and the others their promised weapons. Thus, Chu Feng and the others would not be able to continue staying on the Immortal Island. The Weaponry Bestowment Assembly was going to end. Tomorrow, regardless of whether one wished to leave or not, they were all required to leave.

Upon thinking of the fact that he would be leaving, Chu Feng was

feeling a bit reluctant to leave. The reason for that was because of his two lovers, Zi Ling and Su Rou.

However, before Chu Feng even arrived at his residence, he was suddenly overjoyed. His footsteps also accelerated. Upon reaching his residence, he immediately pushed open the door.

“Zi Ling, Su Rou, the two of you are really here!”

As Chu Feng saw the two beauties, one wearing a purple skirt and the other wearing a blue skirt, one pure and sweet and the other mature and charming, he became overjoyed.

At this moment, he finally realized why the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had told him to return early. It was evident that the appearance of Zi Ling and Su Rou was not a coincidence. Likely, they had come here because the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had arranged it.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you’re truly amazing. You actually managed to make the Weaponry Refinement Immortal appreciate you like this. He even especially told the two of us to accompany you before you leave,” Zi Ling and Su Rou spoke together. The two of them had smiles across their faces. It was clear that they were extremely happy to see Chu Feng.

“Accompany me? The two of you aren’t leaving tonight?” Chu Feng grabbed the two girls and spoke with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Zi Ling and Su Rou blushed. However, in the end, the two of them nodded silently.

“Haha, this is truly great!” At this moment, Chu Feng was in immense joy. His impression of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had changed, he now had a much more favorable impression of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

That was because he had discovered that this Weaponry Refinement Immortal was a person who was extremely good at understanding others.

“Eh, strange, the two of you managed to break through? You two actually reached a breakthrough this quickly? Amazing.” Suddenly, Chu Feng discovered that Zi Ling’s cultivation was now rank three Half Martial Emperor, and Su Rou’s cultivation was now rank two Half Martial Emperor. The two of them had both reached a breakthrough. Furthermore, it didn’t seem like they had only broken through today. Likely, they had reached their breakthroughs several days ago. This speed was even faster than he had predicted it would be.

“How could we compare to you? Not only did you break through, you even completely absorbed all of the energies in the Immortal Cultivation Lake,” Su Rou said with a smile.

“You knew?” Chu Feng found it a bit embarrassing.

“Of course. Not only do we know that you dried up the entire Immortal Cultivation Lake, we also know that you made Beitang Zimo suffer enormously, making him slap himself ten times on the spot. He truly and utterly disgraced himself.”

“When we first heard this news, both big sis Su Rou and I were overjoyed. For him to provoke you, this is the consequence of his action. Serves him right!” Zi Ling said with a pleased tone.

“It’s only you who’s overjoyed, no? I’ve already gotten used to this. Ever since Chu Feng obtained a small reputation for himself in the Azure Dragon School, there has never been anyone who could bully him. It has always been him bullying others,” Su Rou said.

“My two darlings, please stop making cutting remarks about me. To not see you two for so many days, do you two know how much I missed you?” As Chu Feng spoke, he suddenly waved his sleeve and set up a spirit formation that sealed off this house. Then, he carried both Zi Ling and Su Rou onto the bed.

This day, Zi Ling and Su Rou did not leave Chu Feng’s residence. Even when night came, they were still there. This night, Chu Feng

slept extremely well. He was able to spend the night accompanied by his two lovers. To the current Chu Feng, this was truly a dream come true.

Chapter 1601 – This Separation

When Chu Feng woke up, he discovered that Su Rou and Zi Ling had already gotten out of bed. The two of them had finished dressing. Not only that, they had even personally used world spirit formation techniques to prepare a very luxurious banquet for Chu Feng.

“Delicious!” Even though all of the utensils other than the food were made out of spirit formations, Chu Feng deeply enjoyed the food. Furthermore, he found it to be delicious from the bottom of his heart. After all, this was food that his loved ones had prepared for him. Contained within the food was the taste of love.

“If it’s good, then eat some more,” Zi Ling and Su Rou did not eat alongside Chu Feng. They had their hands underneath their chins and were looking at Chu Feng with beaming smiles as he ate the food.

“You two, why aren’t you eating?” Chu Feng asked.

“We’re not hungry. You should eat some more. Make sure to eat it all,” Su Rou and Zi Ling said together.

“Rest assured, I will definitely eat all of it. But, you two must accompany me. Come, open your mouths,” Chu Feng picked up some food with his chopsticks and placed it near Zi Ling’s mouth.

Faced with Chu Feng’s action, Zi Ling seemed to be unable to resist. Involuntarily, she opened her little mouth and allowed the food to enter her mouth. Happily, she began to chew on the food.

“Come, my Rou’er,” Then, Chu Feng picked up some more food with his chopsticks and brought it toward Su Rou’s mouth. He was truly impartial to the two ladies.

“Unscrupulous,” Su Rou cast a side eye at Chu Feng while smiling. However, like Zi Ling, she opened her little mouth and ate the food Chu Feng had picked up for her.

Then, Chu Feng, Su Rou and Zi Ling began to eat the food one small mouthful at a time. In the end, they actually managed to eat all the food on the table.

Even though this place was not their home, the atmosphere of warmth had filled the house. With this sort of atmosphere present, this place was their home right now.

At this moment, Chu Feng, Su Rou and Zi Ling all felt the same thing. They all did not wish to part. They wished to be able to be with each other every day.

Even if they did not do any world-shaking things and only spent the rest of their lives peacefully like this, it would be sufficient.

Unfortunately, they were unable to choose that path... especially Chu Feng, he was even more incapable of choosing that path. There were too many things that he had to do.

“Someone’s here,” Suddenly, Zi Ling and Su Rou’s gazes turned cautious. Even though the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had allowed the two of them to accompany Chu Feng, he did not wish for others to know about the relationship they had with Chu Feng.

“It’s alright, it’s a senior from the Immortal Island. You two wait for me in the house,” Chu Feng walked out. Sure enough, the Immortal Island’s old man that had received him before soon walked over.

“Little friend Chu Feng, the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly has ended. Even though this old man does not want to say these words to you, I must still inform you that it is time to part,” that old man said.

“Chu Feng understands. I’ll arrange my stuff and leave immediately after,” Chu Feng said.

Suddenly, that old man said, “Oh, that’s right, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ princess wishes to see you before you leave the Immortal Island. She has been insisting on this for many

days now, and has said that she will not leave if she doesn't get to see you."

"The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' princess? She wants to see me?" Chu Feng was surprised to hear those words. He naturally knew who the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' princess was. She was most definitely the person with the greatest strength and talent among the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present.

She must be that person with a cultivation on par with Nangong Ya, Beitang Zimo and the current Tantai Xue, that rank three Half Martial Emperor.

While taking the test to determine one's talent in the Cultivation Immortal Lake, she was that extraordinary woman who triggered the same amount of rings of light as Beitang Zimo and Nangong Ya.

However, these were not the reasons why Chu Feng had an impression of her. Rather, it was because when Beitang Zimo had been making things difficult for Chu Feng that day, that princess had also led her group of King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and helped Chu Feng attack Beitang Zimo.

However, it was after Chu Feng had revealed his talent that she spoke on his behalf. In other words, she had only decided to help Chu Feng, only decided to try to befriend Chu Feng, after finding out that he possessed exceptional talent.

"Our Immortal Island has a rule that states that we cannot expose the whereabouts of a guest to another guest. However, even with that being the case, she still insisted on wanting to see you."

"After careful consideration, we decided to mention this matter to you. However, in the end, you are the one who gets to decide whether you will see her or not. If you wish to see her, I will go and bring her over. If you do not wish to see her, you can pretend that I never mentioned this matter to you," the old man continued.

"Even though I do not know why she wants to find me, the fact

that we came to this place together only means it was fated. Since she wishes to see me, then senior, please bring me to her. I'll go and see her," Chu Feng felt that it would be better to have another friend than to have another enemy. Furthermore, the opposing party was the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' princess.

Since the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' princess insisted on seeing him, it would be unsuitable for him to refuse her too.

"If you wish to see her, then I'll go and bring her over. There is no need for you to come with me. Just wait here," As the old man spoke, he left.

"Lil' sis Zi Ling, quickly, look. Our Chu Feng is as charming as ever. Regardless of where he goes, he will obtain a favorable impression of girls regardless of their status and position. Never would I expect that even a King Monstrous Dragon Beast would be interested in him."

"That's right, my big brother Chu Feng's charm is getting more and more enormous." Su Rou and Zi Ling walked out from the house. Even though the two of them were teasing Chu Feng and making fun of him, there was a faint trace of jealousy in their tones.

"My darlings, please don't say it like this. I am not interested in monstrous beasts," Chu Feng had a bitter smile on his face.

"Who knows if you are interested or not? It is unsuitable for lil' sis Zi Ling and I to see you off. We'll leave first," As Su Rou spoke, she pulled Zi Ling and prepared to leave.

"Don't! Why leave so quickly?" Chu Feng was reluctant to part.

"What do we do if we don't? Even if we don't leave, you're going to be leaving the Immortal Island very soon."

"Furthermore, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' princess will be coming soon. She has waited this many days in order to see you. After finally being able to see you, you couldn't possibly meet her

outside of the house, right?” Su Rou said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng could say nothing. That was because what Su Rou said made a lot of sense. Even though he was extremely reluctant, he still had to part with Su Rou and Zi Ling here “Big brother Chu Feng, you must be careful when you’re traveling the Holy Land of Martialism by yourself. Wait for us. When big sis Rou and I finish our cultivation, we will come and find you,” On the verge of separation, Zi Ling was feeling very reluctant to part too.

“You two do not have to worry about me. Take proper care of yourselves. Make sure to not make things difficult for yourselves for my sake again,” Chu Feng was afraid that Su Rou and Zi Ling would harm their own bodies again in order to attain a higher cultivation.

“If you want the two of us to not be worried about you, then take care of yourself properly. Stop trying to be the hero. There are a lot of people in this place who you can’t afford to provoke,” Su Rou had a sharp tongue but a soft heart. In the end, she spoke her gentle feelings.

“Yes, I will follow the commands of my two great wives.” As Chu Feng spoke, he clasped his fist toward Su Rou and Zi Ling in an extremely respectful appearance.

“Oh you...” Facing with Chu Feng acting like this, Su Rou and Zi Ling, whose eyes were already red, started to smile.

In the end, Zi Ling and Su Rou left. As they were leaving, they repeatedly turned around. The two strong girls’ eyes had turned red once again, and tears began to roll down from them.

This Zi Ling and Su Rou were unlike the ones in Chu Feng’s impression. However, this signified how deep their feelings for Chu Feng were.

With women like them loving him, Chu Feng felt extremely

blessed...

However, Chu Feng was not overly sad. That was because he knew that they would meet again after this parting.

Chapter 1602 – Arrival Of Malice

Not long after Su Rou and Zi Ling left, the old man returned with the King Monstrous Dragon Beast princess. Chu Feng had guessed correctly. This King Monstrous Dragon Beast princess was indeed the strongest among the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's younger generation. She was that very sexy woman. At the very least, that was the appearance that she had.

In the past, the impression she gave Chu Feng was of someone who was very cold and detached toward others. However, at this moment, she had a smile on her face. Her pair of eyes underneath her long eyelashes were narrowed into two crescents. Her rosy lips were smiling a very enchanting smile. Compared from before... she appeared like a completely different person.

However, her smile gave Chu Feng a pretty good sensation. Perhaps it might be because she was a monstrous beast. Even though she took the form of a human, she was not an expert in disguising her mood.

Thus, regardless of whether it was the coldness that she had displayed before or the enthusiastic smile she had on her face now, Chu Feng knew that they were all emotions that she had from the bottom of her heart, and were not fake. This meant that she truly wanted to see Chu Feng. Else, it would be impossible for her to be this happy. That was the reason why Chu Feng had a good impression of her. At the very least, his current impression of this King Monstrous Dragon Beast princess was pretty good.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, we have met before. However, I presume that you do not know my name. My name is [Yaojiao Tingyu](#). I am the King Monstrous Dragon Race's youngest princess.” The King Monstrous Dragon Beast princess arrived before Chu Feng and introduced herself with a smile.

“Princess Tingyu, there's no need for you to be this courteous.

You can just address me as Chu Feng. Princess Tingyu, may I know the reason why you have sought this Chu Feng out?” Chu Feng got right to the point.

“Young Hero Chu Feng is truly an impatient individual. Since you’ve asked, I will also not try to be secretive. Actually, Tingyu has come to find Young Hero Chu Feng because she wishes to befriend Young Hero Chu Feng. At the same time, I also wish to invite Young Hero Chu Feng to our King Monstrous Dragon Race’s place as a guest.”

Yaojiao Tingyu did not address her race as the King Monstrous Dragon Beast. Rather, she addressed her race as the King Monstrous Dragon Race. From this, it could be seen that even though they were monstrous beasts, they seemed to not be fond of being seen as beasts by others. At the very least, they must think themselves to be a noble race.

“It is Chu Feng’s fortune to be able to befriend Princess Tingyu. As for being a guest, if possible, this Chu Feng truly does wish to have a look at your King Monstrous Dragon Race’s place. Merely, Chu Feng currently has some things he must do. Thus, I’m afraid I might have to pass on Princess Tingyu’s kind intentions for now,” Chu Feng kindly refused with a smile.

“Chu Feng, that is no issue. I did not mean to have you be a guest of our race right away. My intention is for you to come visit our King Monstrous Dragon Race when you have the time. To me, you are an important guest. Regardless of when, as long as you are able to, I will wish that you can come.”

“In the upcoming year, I will be entering closed-door training in our race. Thus, you can come and pay a visit at any time within the year. As long as I am there, you will definitely be met with hospitality,” As Yaojiao Tingyu spoke, she took out a title plate and handed it to Chu Feng, “If you are to come to our race with this, there will not be anyone who would dare to block your path.”

Chu Feng looked at the title plate. Right away, his eyes started to shine. That was because this title plate was very special. Even though it was only the size of his palm, Chu Feng was able to tell right away that it had been made from a scale. Furthermore, that title plate contained an aura identical to Yaojiao Tingyu's. Likely, this title plate was made out of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's scale.

"Princess Tingyu, this title plate, could it be...?" Chu Feng looked to Yaojiao Tingyu with a shocked expression.

"Young hero Chu Feng is truly intelligent. You have guessed correctly. This title plate was formed with my scale. However, please do not fear. This is a special rule of our King Monstrous Dragon Race. To invite a friend with a title plate formed from one's scale is our King Monstrous Dragon Race's most honorable invitation. It signifies how important the person being invited is," Yaojiao Tingyu explained with a smile.

"So that's the case," Chu Feng accepted the title plate. From merely this title plate, Chu Feng could tell how sincere Yaojiao Tingyu was. Thus, he guaranteed, "Princess Tingyu, please rest assured. When Chu Feng is finished with what he must do, he will definitely go to the King Monstrous Dragon Race and pay princess a visit."

"In that case, Tingyu shall wait for Young Hero Chu Feng's arrival in the King Monstrous Dragon Race," After hearing what Chu Feng said, Yaojiao Tingyu smiled a very happy smile. It was very enchanting. She was feeling happy from the bottom of her heart at being able to successfully invite Chu Feng. It would seem that she really wanted to befriend Chu Feng.

Afterward, Yaojiao Tingyu left. After she left, Chu Feng also left the Immortal Island.

There was a teleportation formation in the Immortal Island, that teleportation formation was capable of teleporting Chu Feng and

the others back to the safe sea.

When Chu Feng's sight returned to normal, he discovered that there were people all around the sea. It was an extremely vast crowd. It was clear that many people had not managed to successfully reach the Immortal Island. In fact, many of them did not even have the courage to try to reach the Immortal Island. However, they had not left. Instead, they had all stayed here.

"Chu Feng, you've finally come out. I even thought that something might have happened to you," Right after Chu Feng got back to the sea, a silhouette walked out from the crowd. It was Hong Qiang.

At this moment, Hong Qiang had a rosy complexion and an excited expression all over his face. It was as Chu Feng and the others had guessed. Even though Hong Qiang and the others had been unable to enter the Immortal Island, the storm had not injured them, and had only separated them.

At this moment, following behind Hong Qiang was Tantai Xue. She was just as calm as before. However, she was also as beautiful as before. She was like a flower blooming in the winter snow, and attracted the attention of countless people.

It was evident that not only had Tantai Xue returned before Chu Feng, she had also mentioned to Hong Qiang all that had happened to Chu Feng on the Immortal Island.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed with a single glance that even though Tantai Xue was still wearing a skirt that was pure white, whiter than winter snow, and appeared to be very similar to the one she had worn before, it was not the same skirt as before.

The skirt she was wearing was extremely incredible. Even though it was very well hidden, Chu Feng could tell that her skirt was giving off the same sort of aura as his boots.

It was the mark of something created by the Weaponry

Refinement Immortal. Likely, Tantai Xue's skirt was the Incomplete Imperial Armament tailor-made for her by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

Likely, her skirt was different from Chu Feng's boots. It shouldn't be used to increase her speed. Rather, it was there to protect her. Furthermore, it possessed a damage reflection ability, the same sort of effect as Chu Feng's Invisible Damage Reflection Formation. However, the strength of the damage reflection on Tantai Xue's skirt was even stronger than Chu Feng's Invisible Damage Reflection Formation.

Chu Feng knew that this skirt, this sort of defensive weapon, was precisely what Tantai Xue wanted. He had truly never expected for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to understand what they wanted so well, and be able to refine such well-fitting weapons for them.

"Chu Feng, based on what Miss Tantai said, you've shown your impressiveness on the Immortal Island, no?" At this moment, Hong Qiang approached Chu Feng. As he looked to Chu Feng, he had an expression of appreciation and gratification. He was extremely happy.

"Chu Feng? Could he be that Chu Feng?" After hearing what Hong Qiang said, the surrounding crowd immediately burst into an uproar. One by one, their eyes began to shine, and they began to size Chu Feng up nonstop. Their appearances were as if they wanted to eat Chu Feng alive with their gazes.

At this moment, Chu Feng heard the screams of many women, as well as the excited cheering of many men. Many kinds of passionate sounds were being heard from the crowd. There was admiration, adoration, excitement, and surprise.

Evidently, it was not only Hong Qiang who had heard of Chu Feng's deeds on the Immortal Island. Even the people here knew about it. It turned out that these people had all gathered here for

Chu Feng. They all wanted to see exactly what the genius whose name had spread through the entire Immortal Island was like.

“Chu Feng, I had thought that you would not dare to come out,” Right at this moment, a voice filled with malice sounded from the crowd. Following that, a very strong air of resentment arrived.

Her name literally reads, Monstrous Dragon, Listen Rain

Chapter 1603 – Not A Pushover

Once this voice was heard, a region of the crowd immediately became chaotic. A gale surged forth. Like rice straws, the people were being scattered all over the place. A road was forcibly created from amidst the crowd.

On the other side of the road, a group of people were walking over aggressively with large strides.

They were the people from the Beitung Imperial Clan. They were still being led by Beitung Zimo. However, there were a lot more people from the Beitung Imperial Clan here when compared to the ones he had met on the Immortal Island.

At this moment, the Beitung Imperial Clan was not only limited to experts of the younger generation. There were also experts from the older generation among their ranks. There were over twenty people with peak Half Martial Emperor-level cultivations like Hong Qiang. Furthermore, there was a Martial Emperor among them too.

That Martial Emperor was a man, a black-haired middle-aged man. However, Chu Feng knew that his middle-aged appearance was most definitely not the true age of this man. Most importantly, this Martial Emperor was also looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with malice.

At this moment, Chu Feng started frowning. He had known the situation was bad the moment he heard Beitung Zimo's voice.

This Beitung Zimo was a stereotypical vile, little man. Furthermore, he was the shameless type. He had been publicly humiliated by Chu Feng on the Immortal Island. For him to guard this place and wait for Chu Feng, it was clear that he had done so with the intention of taking revenge on Chu Feng.

“What are you all planning to do?” Seeing that the situation was

bad, Hong Qiang hurriedly stepped forth and blocked Chu Feng.

“This does not concern you,” Right at this moment, that Martial Emperor from the Beitang Imperial Clan suddenly attacked. With a wave of his sleeve, his boundless power surged forth and directly blew Hong Qiang to the side.

Even though Hong Qiang was powerful, it remained that he was only a peak Half Martial Emperor. Before Martial Emperors, he would also collapse at the first blow without the ability to resist at all.

“Beitang Zhiqiang, you are truly impressive. To bully a Half Martial Emperor when you’re a Martial Emperor, do you not feel shame?”

Right at this moment, a gentle yet powerful aura suddenly appeared and surrounded Hong Qiang, preventing him from being injured and allowing him to safely land with his feet on the water’s surface.

At the same time, another group appeared. It was the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were all present. Most importantly, that Martial Emperor-level woman was also present. It was her who had helped Hong Qiang earlier.

“[Nangong Lian](#), are you planning to meddle in other people’s business?” Seeing that the Nangong Imperial Clan had interfered, that Beitang Imperial Clan’s Martial Emperor, Beitang Zhiqiang, started to frown. A trace of displeasure flashed through his eyes.

“Meddle in other people’s business? You are gravely mistaken in that assumption. Little friend Chu Feng is someone who has helped my clan’s young master and young misses. Right now, there is someone who is trying to create trouble for him. It’s only natural for me to help him. As such, how could it possibly be considered to be meddling in another’s business?” Nangong Lian said with a beaming smile.

“Heh, I had already anticipated that you people from the Nangong Imperial Clan would interfere. However, I might as well tell you this. Today, I insist on teaching this Chu Feng a lesson. Even if your Nangong Imperial Clan interferes, I will still show no mercy.”

Beitang Zhiqiang narrowed his sharp sword brows and spoke with arrogance. It seemed that he was already prepared for the Nangong Imperial Clan stepping in to help Chu Feng. Today, he was insistent on taking care of Chu Feng and sticking up for Beitang Zimo.

“What if our King Monstrous Beast Race were to join too?” However, right at this moment, an extremely coarse and loud voice exploded from the crowd. Another group of people appeared. It was the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. Yaojiao Tingyu was also present. However, the most important matter was that beside Yaojiao Tingyu was a burly, dark skinned man.

This burly man was four meters tall. He looked like a giant standing in the crowd. Explosive power was being emitted from all over his body. It was martial power, Emperor-level martial power. There was no need to doubt that this person was also a Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he was a monstrous beast on top of that.

“King Monstrous Dragon Beasts? You all are planning to interfere too?” While Beitang Zhiqiang would not be afraid if it were only a single Nangong Imperial Clan, the arrival of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts caused him to hesitate.

To fight against two on his own would mean that he would not be a match for them in any aspect. To him, this turn of events was far from good.

However, he was skeptical, and confused as to why the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts that disliked being involved with humans would help that Chu Feng. This was simply abnormal.

In fact, it was not only Beitang Zhiqiang who was thinking this

way. The lot of people present were also thinking that way. The crowd was already discussing it spiritedly. They were guessing as to whether the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were casually saying those words, or were really planning to help Chu Feng.

If the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts really planned to help Chu Feng, then this would be an enormous commotion. At the very least, this would mean that Chu Feng's charisma would be unimaginably grand.

“Chu Feng is my friend. If you dare to touch him, you will be going against our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Yaojiao Tingyu spoke with a loud voice. She had answered the question the crowd had. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were truly planning to help Chu Feng.

“.....” Hearing those words, not only did Beitang Zhiqiang start to frown and grow silent, even Beitang Zimo, and the rest of the Beitang Imperial Clan grew silent as well.

The thing that they didn't wish to happen the most had happened. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts really planned to face their Beitang Imperial Clan as enemies for a single Chu Feng.

In truth, if they were to fight against the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts one on one, the Beitang Imperial Clan would naturally not be afraid of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. However, at this moment, there was also the Nangong Imperial Clan. If the two of them were to join hands, their Beitang Imperial Clan would be no match for them at all.

“Heh, no wonder Chu Feng is this composed. It seems that he had already enticed relationships and found helpers.”

“Very well, we shall wait and see. While they can protect you once, I shall see if they can protect you forever.”

Beitang Zimo spoke. He knew that there was no way for him to do anything to Chu Feng in the current situation. Thus, he could

only give up. After saying those words, Beitang Zimo waved his sleeve, turned confidently around, and proceeded to lead his Beitang Imperial Clan away.

“Wait.” However right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke.

Chu Feng was not a pushover. With how the Beitang Imperial Clan had tried to make things difficult on him before such an enormous crowd, nearly injuring Hong Qiang in the process, how could Chu Feng possibly leave the matter at that? Even if his opponent was the Beitang Imperial Clan, Chu Feng would still not let them get away with it.

“What? Could it be that you want to make me stay? Do you have the ability to do so?” Seeing that Chu Feng had called for him to stop, Beitang Zimo showed no fear. That was because he knew that if they did not attack Chu Feng, the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would definitely not take the initiative to attack them first.

If Chu Feng did not have the protection of the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, how could he possibly fear a mere Chu Feng?

“Beitang Zimo, I wish to know why you keep provoking me again and again. I seemed to recall that I have not wronged you in any manner,” Chu Feng asked with a feigned confusion.

“That’s right. Why does the Beitang Imperial Clan insist on creating trouble for Chu Feng?”

After Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, the surrounding crowd also began to spiritedly discuss this matter. The crowd were focused on watching the show, and had not thought about when or why the conflict between the Beitang Imperial Clan and Chu Feng had been formed. After hearing what Chu Feng said, they became extremely curious.

They were curious as to why Beitang Zimo insisted on creating

trouble for Chu Feng.

At this moment, Beitang Zimo started to frown. He did not know how to respond to Chu Feng's question. After all, he couldn't possibly say before all these people that he was envious of Chu Feng.

Nangong Lian → Nangong Lotus... seems like the Nangong Imperial Clan's women are all named after flowers? Maybe not Bai Ruochen...

Chapter 1604 – Humiliation Once Again

“Isn’t it all because I made you slap yourself ten times on the Immortal Island?” Seeing that Beitang Zimo had become speechless, Chu Feng smiled lightly and continued.

“What? Slap himself ten times? It’s Beitang Zimo! Beitang Zimo slapped himself ten times? Exactly what is going on?” Once Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar. While they had heard about Chu Feng’s outstanding accomplishments, they had not heard about this matter. To them, this was most definitely shocking news.

At this moment, Beitang Zimo’s face instantly turned green. This matter was something that even the bystanders present on the Immortal Island did not dare to spread. Never had he ever imagined that this Chu Feng would actually dare to let this matter be known, letting him be humiliated before all these people.

“However, that is merely what you agreed to do when you lost the bet. Yet, the way you’re acting now...could it be that you’re acting like a sore loser?” Chu Feng continued.

Beitang Zimo was unable to tolerate the humiliation anymore. He pointed at Chu Feng and angrily shouted, “Chu Feng, don’t you continue to blabber nonsense!” He was planning to refuse to acknowledge what had happened.

“Blabber nonsense? My, are you planning to pretend that it never happened?”

“However, that’s alright. If you want to pretend that it never happened before, there would be nothing that I could do. After all, it was not some sort of glorious thing that you’ve done. If you think it to be shameful, I, Chu Feng, can also pretend that it never happened.”

“However, there were so many people present on the Immortal

Island that day. Would they be able to pretend that nothing had happened like me?” Chu Feng spread open his hands and shrugged his shoulders. Even though he had an expression of indifference, he took a glance toward Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe.

“Brother Zimo, I was also present back then. You shouldn’t refuse to acknowledge what happened. After all, it would be extremely disgraceful to do so,” Nangong Ya realized Chu Feng’s intention. Thus, he immediately spoke to verify what Beitang Zimo had done that day. He was indirectly telling the crowd that Chu Feng spoke the truth.

“That’s right. Beitang Zimo, could it be that you’ve forgotten how resounding your slaps were? Those pow, pow, pow sounds were much louder than firecrackers. Oh, that’s right, you slapped yourself so hard that your cheeks started bleeding. Oh, that was truly miserable,” Nangong Baihe added.

This girl was extremely ruthless. Not only did she speak to verify what Beitang Zimo did that day, she even described Beitang Zimo to be extremely pitiful. Her descriptions were so detailed that the crowd was able to imagine the scene of Beitang Zimo slapping himself that day.

At this moment, the crowd was in a complete uproar. In fact, there were even some people that were trying their hardest to contain their laughter.

While Chu Feng’s words alone might be skeptical, Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe had spoken to verify his claims. Furthermore, Beitang Zimo had an extremely unnatural reaction right now. From the way it looked, Beitang Zimo slapping himself was most likely real.

When thinking about how Beitang Zimo did such a humiliating thing and even tried to deny it happening, the crowd all came to have a bad impression of Beitang Zimo’s character.

Furthermore, when the crowd thought about how Beitang Zimo

had decided to stop Chu Feng and rely on his clan's strength to take revenge on Chu Feng all because Chu Feng had won a bet against him, the crowd all came to have an even worse impression of Beitang Zimo's character.

That was because Beitang Zimo's conduct and deeds were truly devastating to his moral quality. From this, the crowd determined that Beitang Zimo was not a person of character.

“Enough!”

At this moment, Beitang Zimo exploded. He had wanted to take care of Chu Feng. However, to his surprise, he had been humiliated by Chu Feng again.

“Chu Feng, what makes you qualified to trigger ten rings of light? What ability do you even possess? You're merely a rank nine Martial King!”

“Let me tell you, I, Beitang Zimo, am unconvinced by you! Regardless of whether you cheated or not, I am still unconvinced by you!” Beitang Zimo pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily. These were words coming from the bottom of his heart.

“Oh, so it's because of that. So that's why you harbored hard feelings for me,” At this moment, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “I, Chu Feng, am not someone who cares enormously about talent. Back then, it was you who insisted on me testing out my talent. That is the only reason I decided to take the test.”

“After the result of my talent was revealed, you started to declare that I'd cheated. If I had really cheated, then why would you slap yourself?”

“There were many people present that day, how could they not tell whether or not I'd cheated? Do you think they're blind?” Chu Feng questioned intensely. Each and every word that he spoke was reasonable. Even the bystanders not present on the Immortal Island started to nod their heads repeatedly. They all felt what Chu

Feng said to be correct.

“Enough of your bullshit! Who knows if you colluded with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Perhaps he was secretly helping you.” Beitang Zimo was naturally not going to admit that Chu Feng had managed to trigger ten rings of light with his own ability.

“Sigh...” At this moment, Chu Feng shook his head while sighing. Then, he said, “In the past, I did not know what was meant by having the [heart of a wolf and lungs of a dog](#). But, now I do.”

“It is one thing for you to dishonor me, Chu Feng. However, you actually decided to dishonor even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Have you forgotten the benefits you obtained in the Immortal Cultivation Lake that day? That Immortal Cultivation Lake was something that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal spent meticulous effort to refine!” Chu Feng sighed as he questioned Beitang Zimo. This made it appear as if Beitang Zimo was a very ungrateful person.

“Don’t you dare to shift the topic! I am certain that you possess fake talent. Else, how could you only be a mere rank nine Martial King and not even have reached the Half Martial Emperor realm after cultivating for so long?” Beitang Zimo targeted Chu Feng’s cultivation. Indeed, this was Chu Feng’s weak point.

After Beitang Zimo’s attack at Chu Feng’s cultivation, many of the people present also started to doubt. Even though Chu Feng’s talent had clearly been revealed on the Immortal Island, it remained that many of the crowd had not been present there, and had only heard about it.

Yet, Chu Feng’s cultivation of rank nine Martial King was present before their faces. While rank nine Martial Kings could not be considered to be weak among the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation, it was truly lacking when compared to Beitang Zimo and the others.

Could Chu Feng, this rank nine Martial King, really be more

powerful than Beitang Zimo, Nangong Ya and the others? Many people became suspicious of this.

“Beitang Zimo, while I can allow you to speak ill of me, I cannot allow you to speak ill of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Didn’t you think that my talent was weak? Didn’t you look down upon my cultivation of rank nine Martial King?”

“Very well. Today, I, Chu Feng, shall allow you to see exactly who I am.”

“Your Beitang Imperial Clan can send forth as many of its people under the Half Martial Emperor-level cultivation to attack me as it pleases. If I, Chu Feng, am forced to move half a step by them, then it will be my loss,” Chu Feng said. He was extremely confident.

However, the crowd present did not know about Chu Feng’s ability. Thus, when Chu Feng said those words, they felt that he was acting too arrogantly. Any amount of people underneath Half Martial Emperor-level cultivation was allowed? The only requirement was to force him to move half a step to make him lose? This was simply too arrogant. After all, his opponents were no ordinary characters. Rather, it was the Beitang Imperial Clan, where all the members possessed Imperial Bloodlines.

Which person from the Beitang Imperial Clan was not a genius? Could Chu Feng really be able to take them on?

Heart of a wolf and lungs of a dog = cruel and unscrupulous person.

Chapter 1605 – Truly Shameless

“What arrogance! We don’t need many people, I, Beitang Yuanliu, am enough to take care of you,” A young man stood out from the Beitang Imperial Clan. His age was similar to Chu Feng’s. However, his cultivation was a level below Chu Feng’s; he was a rank eight Martial King. Yet he did not place Chu Feng in his eyes.

“Heeeh~~~~” Suddenly, that young man shouted. His King-level martial power was emitted outward. His entire person started to shine with golden light. He was planning to attack Chu Feng.

“Putt~~~”

However, suddenly, his foot slipped. Then, like a dying dog, he fell into the water before the crowd.

No, he didn’t fall. Rather, he was knocked down. Many of the people present had managed to feel an invisible power that landed on that Beitang Yuanliu’s body. It was that power that smashed him down.

At the moment when the crowd were all shocked, Chu Feng calmly said, “Next.”

“Chu Feng, he’s the one who did that!!!” The crowd were all shocked to hear Chu Feng say that. Immediately, they all managed to react. They had all noticed that the power earlier had indeed originated from Chu Feng. Chu Feng had been the one who defeated Beitang Yuanliu. He actually defeated Beitang Yuanliu with one strike without even moving.

“Trash! Get the hell back!” At this moment, Beitang Zimo was extremely enraged, and he started to gnash his teeth in anger. He walked forward and kicked Beitang Yuanliu into the crowd. He had thought that the time to teach Chu Feng a lesson had arrived. Yet, to his surprise, this Beitang Yuanliu had ended up being so useless. Thus, how could Beitang Zimo not be angered?

“All those with rank nine Martial King cultivation, get him. I don’t believe that our Beitang Imperial Clan will fear a single Chu Feng!” Beitang Zimo shouted loudly.

Once he said those words, three rank nine Martial Kings walked out from the Beitang Imperial Clan’s group of people. They were two men and a woman. Each of them possessed an extraordinary aura. The two men all possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Only that woman was slightly weaker, and possessed a battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

However, at this moment, the three Beitang Imperial Clansmen’s foreheads all shined brightly with the character ‘Imperial’. They had unleashed their Imperial Bloodlines. Their battle power was now extremely strong. On top of that, they were all holding Royal Armaments. Thus, they appeared to be very imposing.

It would appear that they had learned from the mistake of their predecessor and did not dare to underestimate Chu Feng. Upon their arrival, they immediately revealed all their strength so that they could ruthlessly teach Chu Feng a lesson.

“Earthen Taboo: Beitang Joint Spearhead Slash!!!!”

Suddenly, the three Beitang Imperial Clansmen brandished the Royal Armaments in their hands simultaneously. In an instant, heaven and earth started to tremble. Winds began to rise, scudding the clouds away. Not only had the three of them all unleashed an Earthen Taboo martial skill, they had all used a fusion martial skill. With the three of them using it simultaneously, the might of the Earthen Taboo martial skill was increased enormously.

At this moment, many of the bystanders stepped aside. After all, even though there were a lot of people present, most of them were not even Half Martial Emperors. They deeply feared that the aftermath of this fusion martial skill would injure them.

Chu Feng was less than a hundred meters away from the three of

them. Yet, he stood there without moving. He appeared extremely confident.

“Slash!!!” Suddenly, the three Beitang Imperial Clansmen shouted in unison. They had unleashed their attack at Chu Feng. Three slashes that could be seen with the naked eye had fused into one. In an instant, this fused slash arrived before Chu Feng with the intention to hack him in two. They were actually planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at the moment when the slash was about to land on Chu Feng, it suddenly started to shine. It was unable to injure Chu Feng and dissipated like a gentle breeze.

At the same time, the two men’s footing slipped like Beitang Yuanliu before them, and they fell into the water with large splashes.

At that moment, only that woman was still standing there. It was not that Chu Feng could not take care of her. Rather, it was that Chu Feng had decided to act leniently toward her because she was a woman.

“I’ll kill you!”

However, this woman clearly did not recognize her situation. Even though Chu Feng had been lenient toward her, not only was she ungrateful, her beautiful figure instantly appeared before Chu Feng. Then, brandishing her short Royal Armament blade in her hand, she sliced it toward Chu Feng’s neck with enormous killing intent. She was planning to slice Chu Feng’s head apart.

“Clank~~”

While her strike appeared to be very powerful, Chu Feng managed to catch it with a lift of his hand.

Chu Feng grabbed that woman’s short blade with his hand. After he grabbed it, he clenched his fist, and ‘bang,’ that woman’s short

blade shattered into countless fragments.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

“Putt~~~”

That woman was frightened by Chu Feng's strength. Even though Chu Feng did not attack her, she still moved backwards several steps. In the end, in her panic, she lost control of her ability to remain on the water and fell into the water.

“Trash! You're all trash! All of you, get the hell out of here!” At this moment, Beitang Zimo was so enraged that his heart and lungs were about to explode.

It would be one thing if the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan were to lose after fighting Chu Feng. However, they actually lost instantly without even being able to so much as make him move. This was truly too shameful. His face, the Beitang Imperial Clan's face, had all been lost.

At this moment, he truly felt that he should go ahead and take care of Chu Feng personally. Unfortunately, he could not do so. After all, his cultivation was a lot stronger than Chu Feng's. Even if he were to defeat Chu Feng, others would still declare it to be unfair.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what you've done is unfair. You have used world spirit techniques, whereas they have used martial power. Your world spirit techniques are extremely profound. It is only natural that they would not be a match for you. After all, you're a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“How about this. I will use world spirit techniques to swap pointers with you, what do you think?”

“If you can defeat me, it would mean that you really do possess outstanding talent.”

Right at this moment, another man walked out from the Beitang Imperial Clan's group of people. When this man walked out, not to

mention Nangong Ya and the others, even the bystanders found it a bit difficult to continue watching.

This man was at the very least over eighty years old. Strictly speaking, he could be considered to be someone from the younger generation. However, he was, after all, several decades older than Chu Feng. Furthermore, his cultivation was not below Half Martial Emperor. Rather, it was rank three Half Martial Emperor. No matter how one looked at it, this would appear to be bullying. Furthermore, it would be the extremely bullying sort of bullying.

“It would seem that the Beitang Clan is unable to take defeat with grace, to actually even dispatch an old fellow who’s almost a hundred years old. You’ve trained in martial cultivation for several decades more than Chu Feng has. Even if you were to defeat him, would it be glorious?” Nangong Ya was truly unable to continue watching anymore, and actually spoke to insult the man.

“My, you shouldn’t say it like that. While it is true that my cultivation is stronger than Chu Feng’s, I am not yet a hundred years old. According to the life expectancy of the people in the Holy Land of Martialism, I can also be considered to be from the younger generation. Thus, in terms of seniority, I am not bullying Chu Feng.”

“To fight against Chu Feng as another person from the young generation, exactly how is that inappropriate? His cultivation being inferior to mine is his issue. Moreover, I am not going to use martial power to fight against him. Rather, I will be using the world spirit techniques that he is so proficient in.”

“Furthermore, I can sense that his world spirit techniques have reached the Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist level. As for me, I am only an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, me fighting against him would not be me bullying him. Rather, it would be him bullying me,” the man said in a righteous manner.

“You are truly shameless,” Seeing that man speaking of such

sophistry, Nangong Baihe was so enraged that her little face turned red. She truly wished to teach that man a lesson.

Chapter 1606 – Absolute Suppression

“You are truly shameless. You are simply twisting words and forcing logic with your sophistry. It is clearly you who is bullying another!”

“That’s right. This is precisely the behavior of a sore loser. It would seem that the Beitang Imperial Clan is only this much.”

In fact, it was not only Nangong Baihe who could not watch this anymore, a lot of the people present all had the same feelings as her. They all felt that this Beitang Imperial Clansman was being too shameless.

After all, the crowd were no fools. They were all able to tell exactly who would be disadvantaged if that Beitang Imperial Clansman was to fight against Chu Feng. Furthermore, even if Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were superior to his own, it would only mean that Chu Feng was more talented. Chu Feng had only trained for a dozen or so years, and yet he managed to reach the Snake Mark Royal-cloak level in world spirit techniques. This was most definitely a sign of being a genius among geniuses.

However, this man from the Beitang Imperial Clan was about to be a hundred years old. Yet, he was still only an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Strictly speaking, even though he could also be considered a genius world spiritist, he was extremely lacking when compared to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was stronger than him because his talent was simply inferior to Chu Feng’s. Yet, he spoke of it as Chu Feng taking advantage of him. This was truly a bit too shameless.

“It’s fine. Since he wishes to swap pointers with me, I shall give him the chance to do so.”

However, Chu Feng was very indifferent to this challenge and accepted it. While others might not know about his skills, he

himself knew his own skills very well. With his current world spirit techniques, not to mention his opponent being a rank three Half Martial Emperor, even if his opponent were to possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation on top of being a rank three Half Martial Emperor, Chu Feng would still have no fear.

Back when Chu Feng was only an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng's world spirit techniques had been capable of contending against rank four Half Martial Emperors. Now that he had become a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he would not even be afraid of rank six Half Martial Emperors. Strictly speaking, Chu Feng's current world spirit techniques' battle power would only be stronger than his martial cultivation's battle power, not weaker.

“Enough superfluous words, watch my attack.”

Right after Chu Feng accepted the challenge, the man immediately unleashed an attack at him. He was planning to catch Chu Feng off guard by launching a surprise attack. Sure enough, this man was extremely shameless. He had manifested the behavior of a despicable person all around.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, golden world spirit techniques turned into tens of thousands of arrows. With rapid speed, they shot toward Chu Feng.

This man was truly worthy of being an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Even though his world spirit techniques were inferior to his martial power, they still possessed an extraordinary amount of destructive power.

Unfortunately, his attack was simply unable to injure Chu Feng in the slightest. With merely a thought, Chu Feng formed a world spirit wall before him.

This world spirit wall was very powerful and impregnable. Regardless of how powerful the world spirit arrows being shot toward it were, they were still unable to break through the world spirit wall.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

However, it was clear that the man from the Beitang Imperial Clan was not someone to be trifled with either. With a thought, he began to control the direction of the arrows. Suddenly, all of the arrows started to turn around and bypassed Chu Feng’s world spirit wall to attack him from behind.

“Insignificant talent.” How could such a trick possibly baffle Chu Feng? Chu Feng still stood where he was without moving. Then, five more world spirit walls appeared. They covered the region above his head, underneath his feet, his left side, his right side and his back. Together, the six world spirit walls formed a box around Chu Feng, covering him completely.

After this world spirit fort was created, Chu Feng sat inside in a cross-legged position. He actually felt too lazy to even bother standing. Just like that, he sat in the world spirit wall like an outsider enjoying the show as he watched the attacks from that Beitang Imperial Clansman bombard his world spirit fort.

“Little bastard, you dare underestimate this old man? Watch as I teach you a lesson.”

Being looked down on by Chu Feng in this manner, that Beitang Imperial Clansman was extremely infuriated. His hands began to form hand seals nonstop. Then, a boundless amount of world spirit power soared toward the sky. Runes and symbols began to revolve all over as the world spirit power began to form a world spirit formation. Then, an enormous bow and arrow appeared in the sky.

The bowstring was pulled all the way back. Then, the enormous arrow carried enormous power along with it as it was shot toward Chu Feng. What he had used was a spirit formation. Furthermore,

it was a very powerful slaughtering formation. It would appear that this Beitang Imperial Clan's shameless man was planning to attack Chu Feng seriously now.

“Receive my attack.”

“Boom~~~~”

Once the arrow appeared, waves immediately began to appear on the surface of the previously calm sea. Many people were unable to stand steadily anymore. It was not because those people possessed insufficient strength. Rather, it was because the attack unleashed by that Beitang Imperial Clan's shameless man was truly too powerful, too frightening.

“Bang~~~~”

Finally, the arrow landed on Chu Feng's world spirit wall. Immediately, gold light began to flash and energy ripples wreaked havoc. The violent energy ripples turned into golden hurricanes that swept forth in all directions. If it wasn't for the fact that some of the bystanders neutralized the energy ripples, those energy ripples would have been able to create an extremely violent storm on the sea.

However, after the energy ripples subsided, not only was Chu Feng undamaged, even his world spirit walls were completely undamaged. That ferociously mighty slaughtering technique was actually incapable of shaking Chu Feng's world spirit wall.

“I refuse to believe!”

That Beitang Imperial Clansman grew more and more angry. He then began to unceasingly unleash more and more attacks at Chu Feng. His spirit formations could each be said to be stronger and more ferocious than the last. A couple of them were so mighty that many of the bystanders started to have cold sweat and fear for Chu Feng's life upon seeing them.

However, the final result still came as a great surprise to the

crowd. Regardless of what sort of spirit formation that Beitang Imperial Clansman unleashed, he was still unable to break through Chu Feng's world spirit walls.

In the end, the Beitang Imperial Clansman ended up exhausting his spirit power. The spirit formations he set up ended up becoming weaker and weaker. There was no longer any hope for him in being able to break through Chu Feng's world spirit wall. At this moment, it had been an entire hour since the two of them had begun this battle.

After the first hour passed, Chu Feng had lowered his head. He did not even bother to look at that Beitang Imperial Clansman at all. Those with sharp ears actually managed to hear light snoring sounds coming out of Chu Feng's mouth. It turned out that Chu Feng had fallen asleep.

This scene had not only shocked all the bystanders, it also made the faces of all the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan turn green. They felt utterly humiliated by Chu Feng.

However, there was nothing they could do. The world spirit walls that Chu Feng had set up were simply too powerful, too tough. Many of the people present could sense that Chu Feng possessed the battle power of a rank six Half Martial Emperor. That was because that world spirit wall was simply incapable of being broken through unless one possessed the battle power of a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

Regardless of whether they were willing to admit it or not, they had all become aware of the fact that Chu Feng was extremely powerful. They had all underestimated Chu Feng.

“Haaaahhh~~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng yawned. Then, he extended his arms and began to stretch his back. Only then did he stand back up. He said, “Hey, I’ve let you attack me for an entire hour now. It should be my turn now, right?”

“What?” Once Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, not to mention that Beitang Imperial Clansman, the bystanders were all shocked too. What did those words mean? Chu Feng was going to counterattack?

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Sure enough, Chu Feng unleashed his counterattack. That world spirit wall of his separated and turned into golden spirit power. Without any special form, the world spirit power surged forth with unimaginable might like a dragon on the sea. It dazzled with golden light and raised overflowing waves as it charged toward that Beitang Imperial Clansman.

“Come! Did you think I would fear you?”

That Beitang Imperial Clansman was not to be outdone. His body shifted, and he soared into the sky. Following that, he created layer upon layer of world spirit walls. He wanted to use world spirit walls to block Chu Feng’s attack much like how Chu Feng had used world spirit walls to block his attacks.

Unfortunately, the disparity between the two men’s strength was truly too enormous. Before Chu Feng’s world spirit power, that man’s world spirit walls were like tofu. They shattered upon the first attack. The several world spirit walls were all shattered instantly.

“Damn it, I am a grand rank three Half Martial Emperor! How could I possibly lose to you?!”

Seeing that Chu Feng’s spirit power was about to reach him, and how his world spirit techniques were unable to stop it at all, the man shouted angrily. Then, he actually took out a large axe that shone with golden light and held it in his hand.

That was a Royal Armament. Not only had he used his Royal Armament, a golden-bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character had also appeared on his forehead. He had unleashed his Imperial

Bloodline.

The combination of a top quality Royal Armament and his Imperial Bloodline had instantly increased his battle power enormously. Even though he was only an ordinary rank three Half Martial Emperor, his current battle power was on par with rank four Half Martial Emperors.

A sore loser. He was truly a sore loser. They had agreed beforehand that they would be competing with world spirit techniques. Yet, in the end, he had still utilized his martial power. A rank three Half Martial Emperor against a rank nine Martial King, if this was not bullying, what else could it be?

At this moment, many people were unable to continue watching this. They were itching to join hands to condemn that shameless man. However, at the moment when the man began to unleash an attack with his Royal Armament at Chu Feng with absolute certainty of victory, the crowd discovered that their worries were unnecessary.

“Aiiyahn~~~”

A miserable scream sounded. The Royal Armament in that man’s hand had left his hand. Not only that, he was tightly wrapped around by Chu Feng’s world spirit power.

In merely a single bout, this rank three Half Martial Emperor who had unleashed his martial power was defeated. Even though he had used his martial power, he was still no match for Chu Feng. He was still tightly tied up by Chu Feng’s world spirit power.

Chapter 1607 – Forming A Blood Feud

“Ahhh~~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were all shocked, another scream sounded from above the sky. The light of world spirit power radiated all around. Then, a dragon formed with spirit power ruthlessly smashed that Beitang Imperial Clan’s shameless man into the sea.

“Bang~~~~”

Water splattered everywhere like dragons soaring out from the sea. At the moment when that shameless man floated back to the surface of the water, his appearance was so battered that he had become like a dog that had fallen into water.

At this moment, the crowd was in absolute silence. The bystanders were all stunned by this scene. Chu Feng’s talent was simply much stronger than they ever imagined it to be. He, a rank nine Martial King, had relied on world spirit power to defeat a rank three Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, this rank three Half Martial Emperor was from the Beitang Imperial Clan. What sort of strength was this? How powerful must his world spirit techniques be?

Chu Feng did not fail to live up to the name of being a genius. A lot of people present now had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

However, what shocked them the most was how ruthless Chu Feng was. His methods had completely and utterly humiliated the Beitang Imperial Clan, causing them to lose all face.

“Beitang Zimo, is this result to your satisfaction?” Chu Feng looked to Beitang Zimo and asked while smiling beamingly.

At this moment, Beitang Zimo had a twisted expression on his face. It was as if he had eaten dog shit. Unreconciliation, anger and

humiliation had nearly driven this Beitang Imperial Clan's prince mad.

“Chu Feng, we shall wait and see,” In the end, Beitang Zimo left those threatening words before turning around to leave.

Following him, the rest of the Beitang Imperial Clan also left. Chu Feng noticed that all of them looked at him with expressions of extreme ill-intent as they left. Especially that Martial Emperor by the name of Beitang Zhiqiang. The gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with was filled with anger.

The dignity of the Beitang Imperial Clan was not something that they would allow others to trample on. Yet, the things that Chu Feng had done today had not only trampled upon their dignity, they had also been a naked humiliation.

To the Beitang Imperial Clan, this was something that they could not forgive. A blood feud between Chu Feng and the Beitang Imperial Clan had been set. To be honest, this was not what Chu Feng desired. After all, the current Chu Feng was still very weak and did not possess the strength to contend against a colossus like the Beitang Imperial Clan.

However, there was nothing that he could do about it. The blood feud today had not been formed by Chu Feng's earlier actions. Rather, it was formed the moment Chu Feng had met Beitang Zimo for the first time.

What sort of person was Beitang Zimo? He was an extremely conceited individual. Not only did he not place others in his eyes, he did not even place others' lives in his eyes.

He had harbored a grudge against Chu Feng the very moment he had seen him. The thought to eliminate Chu Feng had immediately entered his mind. As for the reason why that was the case, it was because Chu Feng was close to Tantai Xue and Tantai Xue was someone whom he had taken a fancy to.

Since that Beitang Zimo was not planning to let Chu Feng live, then Chu Feng would also not let him have an easy time either.

Thus, after Beitang Zimo's continued provocations, Chu Feng had finally erupted. Today, taking advantage of the fact that the Nangong Imperial Clan and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were behind his back, Chu Feng had counterattacked and utterly humiliated the Beitang Imperial Clan.

Today, not only had Chu Feng trampled upon the Beitang Imperial Clan's honor and displayed his talent, he would also raise his own achievements and reputation by stepping on the Beitang Imperial Clan.

There was no small number of people present here today. Likely, Chu Feng's name would soon spread throughout the Overlord Domain.

He was a genius who had not only obtained the best records in the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, he had also revealed his mighty powers after being provoked by the Beitang Imperial Clan. Using his rank nine Martial King cultivation, he had defeated a Beitang Imperial Clan's rank three Half Martial Emperor. His battle power was overflowing and simply incomparable.

"Chu Feng, you've truly made me have a whole new level of respect for you. Never would I have imagined that your world spirit techniques would be this powerful," Yaojiao Tingyu walked over to Chu Feng. Evidently, she had not expected Chu Feng to be a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

One must know that it was extremely rare for someone of Chu Feng's age to become a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. As for those who were able to become Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists like him, it was likely that there was no one in the entire Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, even if Chu Feng's battle power were disregarded, merely his world spirit techniques would place him on the level of a true genius. As long as there were no accidents, he

would definitely become an extremely powerful individual in the future. Perhaps, within a thousand years, Chu Feng's name would be among the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists of the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Thank you, Princess Tingyu, for your help,” Chu Feng expressed his thanks while smiling. If Chu Feng had already felt Yaojiao Tingyu's sincerity in wanting to befriend him from the scale title plate, then her actions today had made her sincerity known even more clearly. Chu Feng's impression of her became even more favorable.

“Chu Feng, if you consider me, Yaojiao Tingyu, as a friend, then do not act this courteously.”

“However, Chu Feng, after what happened today, I believe the Beitang Imperial Clan will not let matters go. If they are to truly come to create trouble for you and you are unable to handle them, you can come to our King Monstrous Dragon Race. Even though our King Monstrous Dragon Race does not dare to declare ourselves to be the strongest in the Holy Land of Martialism, we have never placed the Beitang Imperial Clan in our eyes. If you come to our domain, I can guarantee your safety,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

After hearing those words, not to mention Chu Feng being surprised, even the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the bystanders were all shocked.

None of them had ever thought that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would fancy Chu Feng to this degree. They were simply willing to become enemies with the Beitang Imperial Clan for the sake of befriending Chu Feng.

However, regardless of how talented Chu Feng might be, he was still only a rank nine Martial King. Compared to the Beitang Imperial Clan, Chu Feng was simply unable to withstand a single blow. For the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts to make such a

decision, they simply had not thought matters through. It seemed to be extremely unwise.

“Chu Feng has remembered Princess Tingyu’s kindness in his heart,” Truth be told, Chu Feng could not be certain as to whether the words spoken by Yaojiao Tingyu were true or not. However, the fact that she could say those sorts of words before all these people made Chu Feng’s heart feel warmth.

“Chu Feng, in that case, we shall go our separate ways. If you have the time in the future, you must definitely come and visit our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng clasped his fist respectfully. After that, under Yaojiao Tingyu’s lead, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts left this seaside.

Even though the strongest individual among the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts on this journey was that Martial Emperor-level expert, it was clear that Yaojiao Tingyu was the person with the most noble status.

“Chu Feng, allow me to introduce you. This is Aunt Lian,” Nangong Ya walked over. Nangong Baihe and the others had walked over with him. Furthermore, that Martial Emperor from the Nangong Imperial Clan had also walked over with them.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we met at an earlier time,” that Martial Emperor by the name of Nangong Lian said with a beaming smile.

Indeed, she had met Chu Feng already. It had been on that day when they had entered the storm in the sea. Even though they had not greeted each other, they had indeed met one another.

Compared to that day, the attitude Nangong Lian had toward Chu Feng today was completely different. However, this was something that Chu Feng expected. After all, she had come to know what Chu Feng had done on the Immortal Island.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to senior,” Regardless of what

intentions she had in helping him, it remained that she had helped him. Thus, Chu Feng could not neglect his courtesies.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you do not have to be this courteous. You can just address me as Aunt Lian like Young Master Ya and Miss Baihe,” Nangong Lian said with a smile.

“Aunt Lian,” Chu Feng immediately addressed her in that manner. Hearing those words, Nangong Lian’s smile became even more brilliant.

Due to the fact that there were a lot of people still present, for the sake of chatting in peace, Nangong Lian brought Chu Feng and the others to a relatively quiet location. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts have always treated people with indifference. Furthermore, their nature is very cunning and the way they handle matters is very ruthless.”

“Their treatment toward you this time could be said to be especially polite and respectful. I believe that they have an ulterior motive. You must be careful. It’s best that you do not go and visit their race as a guest.”

Chapter 1608 – Reaching The Auction

“Thank you, Aunt Lian, for your advice. While Chu Feng is not very familiar with the nature of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, Chu Feng feels that Yaojiao Tingyu does not seem to be a treacherous and cunning sort. Furthermore, I had promised her that I would go. Thus, if I can, I will have to pay the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts a visit,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing Chu Feng’s reply, Nangong Lian started to frown slightly. However, she did not say anything about it. Instead, she immediately shifted the topic and said, “Chu Feng, I’ve heard from Young Master Ya that you need Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?”

“Mn, this junior is planning to set up a spirit formation. However, my own strength is insufficient. Thus, I will need Dragon Mark Spirit Stones to aid me,” Chu Feng replied.

“Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are extremely rare. If you wish to find them, the fastest method would be to go to the Heavenly Law Auction.”

“Chu Feng, you could be said to have saved our clan’s Young Master Ya, Miss Baihe and Miss Moli. Thus, our Nangong Clan owes you a favor.”

“Therefore, we will assist you in this matter as best we can. How about this? You and Young Master Ya and the others could return to our Nangong Clan first. I will dispatch people to go to the Heavenly Law Auction to help you make inquiries about whether they possess Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones or not.”

“If they do, we will definitely do our best to help you obtain them. Even if they do not have any, we will wait until they do and obtain them for you when they do.”

“Aunt Lian, there is no need to trouble yourself. Brother

Nangong, Miss Baihe, Miss Moli and I are friends.”

“To help friends is something that is only natural. It cannot be considered to be owing favors. Thus, I think it’s better that I take care of this matter myself. Let alone, I have just arrived at the Overlord Domain. Thus, there are a lot of places that I would like to see. As for that Heavenly Law Auction, it is one such place. Thus, I wish to go to the Heavenly Law Auction personally,” Chu Feng said.

“So that’s the case. In that case, let’s go together. We can set off today. Little friend Chu Feng, what do you think?” Nangong Lian said.

“That’s right. Brother Chu Feng, let’s go together.”

“Speaking of it, neither Baihe, Moli or I have been to the Heavenly Law Auction before. We also wish to experience it. Let’s go together,” As Nangong Ya spoke, he took a glance at Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli.

“That’s right, Moli and I have never been to the Heavenly Law Auction before. We also wish to experience it,” Nangong Baihe hurriedly nodded. Even the little girl Nangong Moli nodded like her sister.

Chu Feng understood what Nangong Ya and the others were thinking. Chu Feng had offended the Beitang Imperial Clan. If the Beitang Imperial Clan were to find an opportunity to take care of him, they would definitely not let him go. At that time, they would likely not do something as casual as teaching Chu Feng a lesson. Rather, they would take his life.

Thus, Nangong Ya wanted to protect Chu Feng. After all, Aunt Lian was a Martial Emperor. With her present, Chu Feng would be a lot safer. As for Chu Feng, he also understood this. Thus, he did not refuse Nangong Ya and the others. Instead, he smiled and said, “If we can travel together, it would naturally be great.”

After this, Aunt Lian had the rest of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan return to the Nangong Imperial Clan first.

Then, Aunt Lian led Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue toward the Heavenly Law Auction.

On their way there, Aunt Lian inquired about Chu Feng's identity. Chu Feng answered all of her questions cleverly and did not expose too much about himself.

Aunt Lian was a tactful person. When she saw that Chu Feng was intentionally hiding some things, she no longer tried to ask him about them. Instead, she began to tell Chu Feng and the others about the Overlord Domain and the many secret stories that had happened here.

As they were traveling with many people, the journey was rather interesting. A thing worthy of being mentioned was that during the time when they went through an Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation, Aunt Lian used her Emperor-level martial power to create a war chariot and placed Chu Feng and the others into the war chariot.

With this war chariot, not only were Chu Feng and the others able to continue to chat while undergoing the teleportation, the speed of the teleportation also increased.

Aunt Lian said that this was a special skill of Martial Emperors. She said that her cultivation was still only at the rank one Martial Emperor. If a Martial Emperor with a higher cultivation were to create a war chariot, the speed of the war chariot would be even faster.

Hearing those things Chu Feng felt admiration for a Martial Emperor's strength. Martial Emperors were truly worthy of being Martial Emperors. All their abilities had surpassed the limits of humans. It would not be excessive to say that they had surpassed humans and possessed divine powers.

With Aunt Lian's war chariot formed by martial power, the speed of the journey became a lot faster. When they walked out from the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation, they reached another extraordinary location.

As they looked toward the direction with people, they saw a vast city was located several miles ahead of them. Three enormous characters the size of mountains were floating atop the city. They read, Heavenly Law Auction.

Those three characters were formed by spirit formations. Thus, not only were they extremely enormous, they were also shining brightly. As they floated in the sky, they looked extremely dazzling.

That enormous city gate was separated into many smaller city gates. Each and every one of those smaller city gates was guarded by two individuals wearing white gowns and white cloaks. They were people from one of the Three Palaces, the Heavenly Law Palace.

The Heavenly Law Palace was also known to be the strongest representative among the human powers. Before it, the Four Great Imperial Clans were incapable of comparison.

The people from the Heavenly Law Palace considered themselves to be the people that inherited the heavenly law. Yet, they would rarely do things that were beneficial to society, things following the heavenly law. Rather, their conduct could be described with one word, pride.

However, while they were proud, they possessed the qualifications to be proud. At the very least, all of the people from the Heavenly Law Palace that appeared before Chu Feng right now were not weak. They were all Half Martial Emperors.

Likely, it wasn't that there weren't any people from the Heavenly Law Palace who were not at the Half Martial Emperor level. Rather, they were all training in the Heavenly Law Palace. Chu

Feng knew that because he had heard things about the Heavenly Law Palace from Aunt Lian.

The Heavenly Law Palace was a power that cared greatly about their face and reputation. Thus, in order to manifest their strength, the Heavenly Law Palace had a special rule. That was, anyone underneath Half Martial Emperor level of cultivation would not be allowed to exit the Heavenly Law Palace. Even if they were to exit the Heavenly Law Palace, they would not be allowed to wear the attire of the Heavenly Law Palace, nor were they allowed to say that they were from the Heavenly Law Palace.

Thus, practically all of the people who wore the attire of the Heavenly Law Palace were Half Martial Emperor or above level experts.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that even though there were a lot of people traveling about the area outside of the Heavenly Law Auction, the number of people who actually entered it were not many.

Furthermore, all of the people that entered the Heavenly Law Auction adopted the same trait. That was, they all covered their faces.

Nangong Baihe had also noticed this. Curiously, she asked Aunt Lian, “Why are all of the people that enter there so secretive?”

“The people that enter the Heavenly Law Auction are most definitely not there to stroll around. They are either selling or buying things; they are people that want to do business.”

“Although the Heavenly Law Palace will ensure your safety in there, no one will care about your life or death once you exit that place.”

“Stories of people being killed after selling or buying things in the auction are numerous. In order to prevent this sort of thing from happening, people will disguise themselves before entering

the Heavenly Law Auction,” Aunt Lian explained.

“In that case, will we need to disguise ourselves?” Nangong Baihe’s words had a special meaning. They were, after all, people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, they had Aunt Lian, a Martial Emperor, with them. Thus, she felt that even if they did not disguise themselves, no one would dare to touch them.

Chapter 1609 – Buying World Spirit Stones

“One must always be on guard against others. Rest assured, I have already prepared. Follow me,” Nangong Lian brought Chu Feng and the others to a remote location. Then she took out several cloaks. Those cloaks were all black in color. At a glance, they appeared to be very ordinary. However, with a single glance, Chu Feng was able to tell that they were no ordinary items. Rather, they were things created by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“These cloaks were made by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Although they appear to be very ordinary, even Martial Emperors will not be able to see your actual appearance and strength when you wear them. These are precious treasures that our Lord Clan Chief has spent a great amount of wealth to purchase,” Nangong Lian explained. Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had guessed.

“Wow, never would I have imagined that Aunt Lian would have this sort of treasure. Why didn’t you take them out sooner?” Nangong Baihe and the others began to wear the black cloaks with great excitement.

They discovered that the cloaks were originally of the same size and suitable for the build of an ordinary adult. However, when Nangong Moli put the cloak on, it changed to the same size as her petite figure. It was extremely miraculous.

Most importantly, these cloaks were truly capable of completely concealing them. The cloaks were extremely amazing.

“It has been a very long time since I’ve last been to this Heavenly Law Auction myself. It is only after I saw the disguised appearances of those people that I remembered about these cloaks,” Aunt Lian said with a smile.

Suddenly, Nangong Baihe spoke in shock. “Eh, Chu Feng, how

come the color of your cloak turned blue?” Sure enough, after hearing what Nangong Baihe said, the crowd noticed that Chu Feng’s cloak had really turned a faint blue in color. Furthermore, there were many beautiful veined patterns on the cloak. Compared to their black cloaks, Chu Feng’s blue cloak was much better looking.

“Although this cloak is something that a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist made, slight alterations are things that I can accomplish,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Wow! Big brother Chu Feng is amazing! Moli also wants her cloak to be changed. Moli wants her cloak to be light pink,” Nangong Moli grabbed onto Chu Feng excitedly and demanded for him to change the color of her cloak to pink.

Chu Feng placed his hand onto Nangong Moli’s cloak and, sure enough, the cloak actually changed color. Chu Feng really managed to accomplish it.

After this, Nangong Baihe and even Nangong Ya requested Chu Feng to change the color of their cloaks. Even though Tantai Xue did not request that Chu Feng change the color of her cloak, Chu Feng took the initiative and changed it to white. That was because Chu Feng knew that Tantai Xue loved the color white the most.

As Aunt Lian saw Chu Feng doing all this, her expression became complicated. These cloaks were things that even her, a Martial Emperor, was incapable of altering. Yet Chu Feng, a rank nine Martial King, had altered them. Chu Feng’s potential caused her to ponder deeply.

Afterward, Chu Feng and the others put the cloaks on, covered their appearances and aura and entered the Heavenly Law Auction.

The Heavenly Law Auction was not a place that just anyone could enter. One had to pay a certain fee in order to enter. Furthermore, the Heavenly Law Auction was separated into many different auction tiers. The higher the tier, the more precious the items

being auctioned would be.

As for Chu Feng and the others, they naturally selected the highest tier auction. Furthermore, Aunt Lian even purchased seats in the honored guests section. It could be said that she was being extremely extravagant in spending her money.

Originally, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue wanted to pay for themselves. However, Aunt Lian refused to give them the opportunity to do so. When Chu Feng tried to fight for the payment with her, she immediately started to have an attitude. Feeling helpless, Chu Feng and the others had no choice but to drop the subject and let her pay.

After entering the Heavenly Law Auction, Aunt Lian did not directly bring Chu Feng and the others to the honored guest seats. Instead, she first brought Chu Feng and the others to a forbidden area in the Heavenly Law Auction.

“This is a forbidden area. You may not take another step forward.”

There were many peak Half Martial Emperors present in this place. Before Chu Feng and the others could approach the forbidden area, they had already been issued warnings. At that moment, Chu Feng felt ferocious killing intent. Those killing intents were as cold as ice and froze even the air.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng and the others immediately stopped. If they were to continue onward, those Heavenly Law Palace’s people would really attack them.

“Step~~~~”

However, under this sort of situation, Aunt Lian actually continued to walk forward. Not only did she continue onward, she even unleashed a gentle power that completely neutralized the killing intents unleashed by those peak Half Martial Emperors. In an instant, the ice-cold region became warm.

“Although we do not know who your distinguished self might be, this is indeed our Heavenly Law Palace’s forbidden area. I hope that your distinguished self might be willing to not continue onward. Else, if your distinguished self were to alarm our palace’s elders, I fear that, even with your distinguished self’s ability, your distinguished self will still not necessarily be able to leave safely.”

The people from the Heavenly Law Palace all managed to detect how powerful Aunt Lian was. They immediately withdrew their own auras and used a rather respectful tone to warn Aunt Lian.

However, Aunt Lian did not stop her footsteps. Instead, she walked up to the several peak Half Martial Emperors and took out a title plate.

“This is...” Those Heavenly Law Palace’s people were startled to see the title plate. However, immediately afterward, they no longer tried to make things difficult for Aunt Lian and instead directly opened the dark gate behind them. They had opened up a path for Aunt Lian and the others. Likely, that title plate was no ordinary title plate. Rather, it was most likely some sort of passage title plate.

Chu Feng and the others followed Aunt Lian in. At this moment, there were two women with dignified appearances guarding the gates’ two sides. When they saw Chu Feng and the others, they immediately displayed welcoming smiles and began to guide the way for Chu Feng and the others with him.

It would appear that this place was not a true forbidden area. Instead, it was a place that only people with passage title plates could enter.

In other words, this was a place that only people with a certain amount of status could enter.

Following the guidance of the two women, Chu Feng and the others arrived at a room. This room was not very large. However, it was extremely dazzling and delightful to the eyes. Everything

within it were treasures. Not a single item was ordinary.

Furthermore, sitting in that room was an old man. This old man's aura was not at all weaker than Aunt Lian's. Likely, he was also a Martial Emperor-level expert.

"This old man is the Heavenly Law Palace's Tian Fangcheng. I am in charge of the Heavenly Law Auction. You all can address me as Manager Tian. Friends, what might have brought you all here?" The old man asked with a beaming smile.

"Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones," Aunt Lian did not bother with superfluous words and immediately spoke of their purpose.

"You all have truly come at the perfect time. Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are best-sellers. It would already be pretty sufficient if the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were to appear several times in our month's worth of auctions. However, you all have come at the perfect time. It just so happens that we possess some Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Friends, how many are you seeking?" Manager Tian asked.

"A hundred," Aunt Lian replied.

"That many?" Hearing those words, even Manager Tian's expression changed slightly. Then, he said, "We only possess thirty-eight."

"That's all you have?" Aunt Lian asked.

"For the time being, yes," Manager Tian replied.

"I'll take all of them," Aunt Lian said.

"I'm afraid that won't do. These thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are not from the same sellers. Some requested that they must be sold in the auction," Manager Tian said.

"What is the highest selling price for the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones this year? I'll purchase these thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones with that highest price. Please go and

contact the sellers and ask them whether they will be willing to accept my offer,” Aunt Lian said.

“Heh, the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are not cheap to begin with. Even their lowest selling price was extremely high. If you are to purchase these thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones with the highest selling price, it would be an extremely considerable price. Are you certain of it?” Manager Tian sized up Aunt Lian. There was a trace of suspicion in his eyes.

Chapter 1610 – Extremely Expensive Exchange

“Are you doubting my ability to pay?” Aunt Lian frowned slightly. She had managed to tell what Manager Tian was thinking.

“Of course not. I would never be doubtful of a customer’s ability to pay. Merely, I wish to verify it.” Manager Tian said with a polite smile on his face.

“Woosh~~~”

Aunt Lian did not bother with superfluous words. She directly took out her Cosmos Sack and threw it to Manager Tian. She asked, “Regardless of what the highest selling price of the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones might be, if you are to sell all of the things here, not to mention thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, they will be sufficient to purchase even a hundred Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

Manager Tian caught the Cosmos Sack and sensed the things contained within it. Then, he started grinning from ear to ear. He said, “So your distinguished self is someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan. It is no wonder that you’re this rich and imposing.”

“It is as you said. The treasures in your Cosmos Sack are extremely valuable. Unfortunately, you have still underestimated the highest price of the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. I am not boasting about this. Merely, the total of the items contained in your Cosmos Sack is indeed capable of exchanging for thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones without an issue. However, they would truly not be able to exchange for a hundred Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones is the most that they could exchange for.”

“What did you say? The items in my Cosmos Sack are only capable of exchanging for thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit

Stones at most?" Hearing those words, Aunt Lian was extremely shocked.

"I am not lying to you. If you do not believe me, you do not have to exchange them with me," Manager Tian said.

"Forget about it. Contact the sellers and ask them whether they are willing. If they are willing, I will exchange them," Aunt Lian did not hesitate.

"There's no need. If your distinguished self really wishes to purchase them at this price, I am able to make the decision," Manager Tian displayed the smile of an unscrupulous businessman.

"Do it," Aunt Lian said those two words. Even though she said them very bluntly, one could hear some complaint in her tone. In this sort of situation, everyone knew that Aunt Lian had been scammed. However, she willingly allowed herself to be scammed.

Even though she would be spending a lot more money to purchase these Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones at the highest price, she knew very well that it would be difficult to determine who it would be that would actually be able to purchase the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones should they end up on the auction. Even if she were to lose out on purchasing a single one, it would be a loss. Aunt Lian did not wish to take that risk.

"In that case, your distinguished self, please wait a moment," Seeing that, Manager Tian put the Cosmos Sack away and turned to leave.

"Aunt Lian, that man is a scammer. I refuse to believe that those Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones would be that expensive," After Manager Tian left, Nangong Baihe spoke in an extremely unreconciled manner. She should know roughly how many treasures were contained in Aunt Lian's Cosmos Sack.

"It doesn't matter. To be able to help little friend Chu Feng

obtain these Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, this bit of money is nothing,” Aunt Lian smiled lightly. Then, she took out three more Cosmos Sacks and said, “I still have more. Later on, if you all are to see anything that you want, just tell Aunt Lian. As long as it’s within my ability, Aunt Lian will help you all purchase them.”

“Haha, Aunt Lian is amazing,” After seeing that Aunt Lian still had more money, Nangong Baihe laughed happily.

As for Chu Feng, he also knew that Aunt Lian had been scammed. However, on their journey here, Aunt Lian had discussed about the matter of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones deeply with him. She declared that, regardless of the price, she would be able to obtain the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones for Chu Feng. That was the reason why Chu Feng did not say anything about Aunt Lian’s actions right now.

Not long afterward, that Manager Tian returned. He handed a Cosmos Sack to Aunt Lian. After receiving the Cosmos Sack, Aunt Lian lightly smiled, then handed it to Chu Feng.

When Chu Feng received the Cosmos Sack, he also displayed a brilliant smile. Even though this Cosmos Sack did not contain anything else, it did contain the thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Adding on the two Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones that Chu Feng already possessed, he now possessed forty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“It would seem that your distinguished self needs Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones badly. Although I do not have any with me, I believe that our Heavenly Law Auction’s guests will likely have them.”

“If your distinguished self really needs Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, I have a method that might be able to help you all obtain a bit more,” Manager Tian said with a smile.

“What method?” Aunt Lian asked.

“You all could try to auction some items with the condition of exchanging them only for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Perhaps there might be guests who possess Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones who would encounter items that attract their interest. At that time, they would want to purchase those items with the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Manager Tian said as he looked to Aunt Lian with an eager smile. Evidently, he knew that Aunt Lian possessed more treasures.

“Very well, go and auction all of the most precious items contained here with the condition of only exchanging them for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” After hearing those words, Aunt Lian did not hesitate, and took out the three Cosmos Sacks from earlier.

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke to stop Aunt Lian. “Aunt Lian, you must not do that. You’ve already spent a great amount of money to help me purchase these thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. You’ve treated me extremely well. I cannot have you spend more of your wealth on me.”

“Chu Feng, do you still remember what I said before? This is nothing. Wealth and money are merely worldly possessions. The most important matter is the friendship between you and the Young Master and Misses,” Aunt Lian smiled lightly. Then, she handed the three Cosmos Sacks to Manager Tian.

Manager Tian was very blunt. He immediately began to inspect the contents of the three Cosmos Sacks. After he finished inspecting them, he shook his head and said, “If you still require sixty-two Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, I’m afraid that the items contained in these will not be enough.”

“What? They’re still not enough?” Hearing those words, Aunt Lian immediately frowned.

Even though the items contained in her three Cosmos Sacks could not be considered to be priceless, they were all extremely

valuable treasures. With all these treasures, she was still unable to exchange them for a hundred Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones; exactly how precious were the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?

“I am not lying to you. It is true that the items in your Cosmos Sacks are extremely valuable. However, it is generally only world spiritists who will keep Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones without selling them. What are the things that world spiritists require? They require items that are related to either world spirit techniques or world spirits. Only by encountering those items will they be willing to use their Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones in exchange.”

“While your Cosmos Sacks contain a lot of treasures, they do not contain a lot of treasures related to world spirit techniques or world spirits,” As Manager Tian spoke, he took out five items from the three Cosmos Sacks. Each and every one of them were treasures that contained special power. Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that these five items were very precious, and possessed miraculous effects for world spirit techniques.

“In your Cosmos Sacks, only these five items can be auctioned. If I were to help you price them for auction, and if someone were willing to purchase them, then they should be able to be exchanged for twenty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. However, of course, it might be possible that there might be many people who are fond of these items and who will end up fighting with one another. If that were to happen, the selling price would be higher.”

“However, if there is no one that needs them, you would not be able to exchange them for a single Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone. Are you certain that you want to auction them?”

“If you are willing to auction them, I will not charge you any commission,” Manager Tian’s words this time were rather sincere. Likely, he had indeed managed to earn a whole lot from the exchange of the items from Aunt Lian’s previous Cosmos Sack for thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“Do it,” When Aunt Lian was willing to part with all three Cosmos Sacks, how could she not be willing to part with these mere five items?

“Actually, the cloaks on your bodies are the true treasures. Might you all be interested in selling those? If you are, they would definitely be able to fetch a very high price,” Manager Tian took a glance at the cloaks that Chu Feng and the others were wearing and said with a beaming smile.

Chapter 1611 – This Favor

“Sorry, we are not selling these cloaks,” Chu Feng refused right away. As a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he knew very well how precious these cloaks were. They were extremely valuable treasures. Even if he needed Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones very badly, he still could not have Aunt Lian exchange for them with these cloaks, these extremely valuable treasures.

At this moment, Aunt Lian did not say anything. Evidently, she also did not wish to exchange the cloaks for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Else, she would’ve said something already.

“Oh, it’s alright. If you all possess anything else related to world spirit techniques, you can take them all out. Perhaps they might be able to be exchanged for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Manager Tian said.

“How many Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones do you think this could be exchanged for?” Chu Feng took out a portion of the Sealing Glacier and a Red Deep Sea Pearl from his Cosmos Sack.

The Red Deep Sea Pearls were items that Hong Qiang had given Chu Feng. As for this Sealing Glacier, it had been a present from the Sealing Ancient Village’s Old Village Chief Ma. Chu Feng knew that the Sealing Glacier was extremely valuable to the Sealing Ancient Village. Furthermore, he himself would also need a certain amount in order to set up a Taboo Formation Technique. Thus, even though Chu Feng possessed a large chunk of Sealing Glacier, he had only taken out a third of it.

“While this is a treasure, it is far less precious than the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. I’m afraid that it would not be able to be exchanged for any,” Manager Tian directly returned the Red Deep Sea Pearl to Chu Feng.

As he saw that Red Deep Sea Pearl being returned to him right away, Chu Feng finally realized how precious the Dragon Mark

World Spirit Stones were. It was true, they were extremely expensive. The Red Deep Sea Pearl was actually unable to be exchanged for a single Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone.

“As for this, if I am not mistaken, it should be the Sealing Glacier, the treasure of the Alliance Domain’s Sealing Ancient Village. It is indeed extremely useful to world spiritists. If you were to exchange it for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, then... with this size, you should be able to exchange it for ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Manager Tian gave a price for the Sealing Glacier.

At this moment, Chu Feng truly felt a deep amount of heartache. That Sealing Glacier he took out was a third of the Sealing Glacier he possessed. Yet, such a large chunk of Sealing Glacier was only capable of being exchanged for ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. This truly surpassed Chu Feng’s imagination.

Seeing that Chu Feng was hesitating, Manager Tian added, “Remember, this is merely the starting bid value. If there are many people who require this treasure, they will start to compete with one another. At that time, the bids will definitely increase in value.”

“Do you wish to auction it? If you do, I will also not charge you any commission.” His words were extremely clear. It didn’t look like he was scamming Chu Feng. After all, if this Sealing Glacier were to be auctioned, Chu Feng would also be able to see the auction process.

“Yes, auction it,” Chu Feng nodded. Compared to the Sealing Glacier, Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were even more important to the current Chu Feng.

“Is there anything else?” Manager Tian asked.

“Yes,” In response, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe, and even Nangong Moli and Tantai Xue all took out items related to world spirit techniques. They all wished to help Chu Feng obtain more Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

Even though, in the end, only Tantai Xue's one item was capable of being auctioned with a starting bid of two Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, whereas Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli's items were all returned, Chu Feng was still very moved by their actions.

The reason for that was because when their items were returned, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baoli and Nangong Moli even insisted on auctioning the Incomplete Imperial Armaments that they had obtained from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

When the Incomplete Imperial Armaments appeared, even Manager Tian's eyes shone. After all, those were items created by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Furthermore, this Manager Tian was an expert with goods. Thus, he naturally knew how precious those three items were.

However, how could Chu Feng possibly allow them to use those items to help him obtain Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones? Not to mention how valuable those three items were, if this matter were to reach the ears the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, his impression of Nangong Ya and the others would be very bad.

"This Raging Flames Metal of mine, how many Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones do you think it can be exchanged for?" Right at this moment, Hong Qiang took out a piece of Raging Flames Metal.

"Yoh, that's a treasure you have there, a treasure capable of being used to create Imperial Armaments. It should have been obtained from the Raging Flames Metallic Lotus Flower. That thing is extremely dangerous and very difficult to find. Thus, that Raging Flames Metal is even harder to come by than Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Are you sure you want to auction it?" When Manager Tian saw the Raging Flames Metal, his eyes shone again. He was truly an expert with goods.

At this moment, the gaze that Aunt Lian looked to Hong Qiang

with had also changed slightly. Evidently, she had never anticipated that Hong Qiang would be able to take out such a precious item, an item capable of being used to forge an Imperial Armament, a true treasure.

“If this were auctioned, how many Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones could it be auctioned for?” Hong Qiang asked.

“The starting bid would be twenty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. It shouldn’t be a lot.” Manager Tian said.

“Auction it,” Hong Qiang said without hesitation.

“Senior Hong Qiang, this...” At this moment, Chu Feng was somewhat unwilling. He knew exactly how important that Raging Flames Metal was to Hong Qiang, as well as how much Hong Qiang had invested for that Raging Flames Metal. Thus, he did not wish for Hong Qiang to sacrifice it for him.

“Chu Feng, this is something that you deserve. If it wasn’t for you, I would not have been able to obtain the Raging Flames Metal either.”

“Back then, I had said that we would share it equally. Yet, you refused. However, today, regardless of whether you refuse or not, you must still accept it. That is my regard for you. This is also the only thing that I can help you with. You absolutely must not refuse it,” Hong Qiang said with a smile.

At this moment, Chu Feng was emotionally moved. He had nothing more to say. In the end, he accepted it. His heart was filled with emotions.

As the saying went, in trials and tribulations, the truth would be revealed. Today, Hong Qiang and the others, for the sake of helping Chu Feng, had all taken out their most valuable treasures. This was the truth, and this truth was enough to move Chu Feng emotionally.

Even though the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were

extremely important to Chu Feng, it remained that those items were also extremely important to Hong Qiang and the others.

Especially Hong Qiang, for that Raging Flames Metal, he had guarded the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest for many years and nearly even lost his life to it.

“Well then, I will help you all arrange the auction immediately. Your treasures will be able to enter the auction today. However, even though your treasures are all extremely valuable treasures, it will still be dependent on the will of the heavens as to whether or not they will be able to fetch any Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

“As I have said before. Regardless of how valuable your treasures might be, regardless of how rare they might be, it is only when there are people that need those treasures that they will use Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to exchange for them.”

“That’s because, to them, the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are precious treasures. Else, they would have already auctioned those Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones here and not saved them,” Manager Tian said while smiling.

What Manager Tian said were all things that Chu Feng knew. However, at this moment, Chu Feng subconsciously grabbed onto the Cosmos Sack that contained the thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones and looked to Aunt Lian again.

When the starting bid was already this precious, exactly how many treasures, exactly what price, had Aunt Lian paid to purchase these thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones with the highest bid? This was something that Chu Feng could easily imagine. In order to help him, Aunt Lian had exhausted a great amount of wealth.

This favor was something that Chu Feng would not forget.

Chapter 1612 – Evildoer Tie

After the matter regarding the auction was decided, Chu Feng and the others decided to go to the place that they should have been going to: the Most Precious Treasures Auction.

As its name implied, only extremely precious treasures would be auctioned in this place. Naturally, this was also the Heavenly Law Auction's highest tier auction.

The Most Precious Treasures Auction was extremely vast. Even though it was indoors, it was capable of accommodating several tens of thousands of people. Furthermore, there was a certain amount of distance between each seat. Thus, each and every seat was very spacious and cozy. Furthermore, cups of tea were prepared beside the seats.

At this moment, a lot of people were already seated in the Most Precious Treasures Auction. The majority of them had their appearances and auras hidden. However, there was also a small portion of people who, whether it might be because they didn't understand the rules or because they were extremely confident, did not conceal their appearances, and sat openly in the auction house as they waited for the upcoming auction.

After entering this place, the first thing that Chu Feng noticed was an old man on the auction floor.

This old man was someone from the Heavenly Law Palace. The reason Chu Feng knew that was because he was wearing the attire of the Heavenly Law Palace. His aura was extraordinary. He had lived for countless years. Judging from his appearance, he should be at least three thousand years old.

He had a head full of white, snow-like hair that hung down his back like a white waterfall. Merely his appearance made him stand out from the crowd. It was as if he were an Immortal who had managed to achieve the Dao.

At this moment, he was seated on the auction stage. His eyes were closed, and he appeared as if he were asleep. However, his aura made Chu Feng's eyes shine.

He possessed an aura stronger than even Aunt Lian. It was more than several times stronger. Even though that old man was also a Martial Emperor, he was clearly not a rank one Martial Emperor. At the very minimum, he should be a rank two Martial Emperor.

Expert, an absolute expert. With him overseeing this auction, there would likely not be anyone who would dare to behave atrociously in this place.

Chu Feng had only been in this Heavenly Law Auction for a short while. Yet, he had already encountered two Martial Emperors. Furthermore, one of them was at least a rank two Martial Emperor. This caused Chu Feng to have a whole new level of respect for the Heavenly Law Palace.

The Heavenly Law Palace was truly worthy of being known as one of the Three Palaces, and the human powers' strongest power. Their strength was truly something that the Cyanwood Mountain was greatly inferior to. The Heavenly Law Palace was a true colossus.

After observing the auction house, Chu Feng and the others arrived at the distinguished guest seats.

The ordinary seats were located below, whereas the distinguished guest seats were located above. Not only did this offer a better field of view, the seats themselves were also much better in quality. Not only were there refreshments and fruits located on both sides of the seat, there was also a beautiful woman serving tea and waiting for orders behind every seat. It was extremely comfortable. To be seated here, one would truly be able to experience the treatment of a distinguished guest.

After sitting, Nangong Baihe and the others were very excited. It could be seen that they were greatly looking forward to the

upcoming auction.

As for Aunt Lian, she was very calm and at ease. She had not placed the fact that she had used a great amount of wealth to purchase Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones for Chu Feng earlier in her heart. Truly, she was someone from a very rich and powerful family.

In fact, Chu Feng was also a person who did not place wealth in his eyes. However, today was different. He needed Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones very badly.

Currently, he had already created a feud between him and the Beitang Imperial Clan. He was also well aware that the Nangong Imperial Clan would not be able to protect him forever.

Being in this situation, if Chu Feng were to have Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue travel alongside him, he would, sooner or later, bring harm to them.

However, it would be very unrealistic for him to be able to become very powerful very quickly, so powerful that he could contend against the Beitang Imperial Clan.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng had placed all of his hopes onto that world spirit in his body. If he were to be able to control that world spirit, Chu Feng would no longer be weak. In fact, he would even be able to contend against the Beitang Imperial Clan.

Thus, Chu Feng deeply hoped that the items that they had placed on auction would be able to be auctioned off, and auctioned off at a good price on top of that. He truly wished to be able to obtain more Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“This feeling,” Suddenly, Chu Feng grew tense. He sensed a killing intent. Even though it was very vague, he had still managed to sense it. The reason for that was because that killing intent had originated very close to him; it was actually from Aunt Lian.

When Chu Feng looked to Aunt Lian, he discovered that her gaze

was fixed on something in the distance; it was fixed on a distinguished guest seat.

On that distinguished guest seat sat an old man. That old man had not hidden his identity. Thus, not only had he revealed his appearance, he had also revealed his cultivation.

That old man had a very wretched appearance. His smile was extremely vulgar. He was actually teasing the Heavenly Law Palace's female disciple that was attending him without the slightest bit of fear for the consequences. He had caused that female disciple's face to redden with embarrassment.

Even though that old man was extremely wretched, his cultivation was not weak at all. Like Aunt Lian, he was also a Martial Emperor.

"Aunt Lian, do you have hatred with that man?" Chu Feng knew that Aunt Lian's killing intent was definitely not baseless. Thus, he secretly sent a voice transmission to ask her.

"That man calls himself Evildoer Tie. Raping and looting, he is someone that has committed all imaginable crimes. There are several tens of millions of people who have died at his hands. Their corpses are capable of piling up to the size of a mountain, and their blood is capable of forming a sea."

"Countless clans have been massacred by him. As for the reason why he would eliminate their entire clan, it might be only because he took fancy to a woman from their clan, or perhaps it might be a treasure that he took a fancy to. In fact, he would even massacre them if he took a fancy to one of their dogs or one of their chickens."

"However, regardless of whether he would be able to obtain what he wanted, he would still massacre everyone in his path without leaving a single person alive. Wherever he goes, he will leave behind a river of blood."

“Thus, Evildoer Tie is one of the Overlord Domain’s most infamous Five Great Evildoers.”

“My husband and daughter have both died at his hand.”

“As for the reason he gave when he killed them, it was actually because the two of them were too intimate. He disliked the way they looked, and thus attacked and killed them.”

“After he killed my husband and daughter, he even left behind the reason he killed them. He publicly provoked our Nangong Imperial Clan,” When Aunt Lian spoke those words, her killing intent grew even denser. However, her voice started to choke with emotions.

“Such a thing actually happened?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart had been moved too. He finally came to know why Aunt Lian was this angry.

Even though Aunt Lian was someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan, she possessed neither children nor a husband. Now, Chu Feng finally understood why she had chosen to follow a solitary path in life. It turned out that it was all caused by that Evildoer Tie.

“Evildoer Tie, I’ll kill you!” Suddenly, an angry shout sounded from the distant crowd. It was a peak Half Martial Emperor who shouted. It was unknown which sect or school this peak Half Martial Emperor was from. However, he was currently holding onto a Royal Armament and had unleashed an attack at Evildoer Tie.

“Woosh~~~”

A blade ray flashed past. The entire auction house started to tremble. Not only was that man’s attack filled with killing intent, he had also unleashed a Taboo Martial Skill. The might of his attack was extremely dreadful.

At this moment, the expressions of many of the people present

changed. Especially those with relatively weak levels of cultivation, they were so frightened that they started to sweat cold bullets. Even though the Most Precious Treasure Auction was very vast, the area it contained was, nevertheless, limited. If a peak Half Martial Emperor were to attack with the intention to kill and no regard for the crowd, a lot of people would likely lose their lives here.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, right after that peak Half Martial Emperor’s slash was sent forth, a surge of energy suddenly appeared. Once that energy appeared, the strike vanished instantly. Following that, the man who had unleashed the attack crashed to the ground and began to shiver nonstop. Not only had he lost his battle power, he did not even possess the strength to stand back up.

It was the old man who was sitting on the auction stage. He had interfered. Even though he had interfered, he did not even move at all. With merely a single thought, he had relied on his Emperor-level martial power to destroy that peak Half Martial Emperor’s attack and then restrain his freedom.

“You dare to behave atrociously in our Heavenly Law Auction. Throw him out. This man is not allowed to take half a step into our Heavenly Law Auction for the rest of his life,” That old man did not even open his eyes when he said those words.

Then, Heavenly Law Auction’s guards appeared. They grabbed the man who had attacked earlier and brought him out. Likely, he would really not be able to set foot in this place again.

At this moment, even though no one attacked that Evildoer Tie again, Chu Feng was still able to hear curses, insults, the sounds of teeth gnashing and the sound of fists clenching from the crowd.

It would appear that this Evildoer Tie had truly committed a lot of bloody atrocities. Else, it would be impossible for there to be this many people present in the crowd who wanted to kill him.

Chapter 1613 – Auction Begins

“Everyone, even though you all wish to kill me, you must pick the correct location first. This is the Heavenly Law Auction, it is not a place where you all can behave atrociously. Wahahaha...” Evildoer Tie looked around and then laughed frantically. His laughter was one of someone feeling extremely pleased with himself.

His actions and words naturally caused those people that hated him to become even angrier.

In fact, there were some people who got so angry that they actually left the Most Precious Treasures Auction. They did not wish to continue to stay and purchase things in this place which offered protection to Evildoer Tie.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng seemed to understand why Evildoer Tie dared to show his true appearance even though he had committed countless evil crimes and possessed countless enemies. Evidently, he had done so on purpose in order to anger those who possessed hatred towards him.

Not only was Evildoer Tie someone who had committed countless evil crimes, he was also extremely depraved and shameless.

“Aunt Lian, could it be that this Evildoer Tie has never done anything to the Heavenly Law Palace?” Nangong Baihe asked with a low voice.

“Evildoer Tie is extremely intelligent. If he had done things that were detrimental to the Heavenly Law Palace, how could he possibly dare to appear here?”

“Forget about it. Drop this matter and stop mentioning it. Just pretend that we have never seen that man,” Aunt Lian turned around and pretended to have never seen Evildoer Tie. She no

longer bothered to turn her gaze to him. However, Chu Feng was able to sense that Aunt Lian's killing intent had not decreased. Instead, it had increased.

She was controlling herself. That was because she knew that even if she wished to attack him, she would not be able to do anything to him.

Six hours after the matter regarding Evildoer Tie happened, the sky had already darkened. At this time, the Most Precious Treasures Auction was filled to capacity, with no empty seats remaining.

Not long afterward, a beautiful and alluring woman stepped onto the auction stage. This woman had a very sexy and alluring appearance. Her every action was captivating. Furthermore, her cultivation was not weak either. She was a peak Half Martial Emperor.

Without mentioning this woman's actual age, her popularity was extremely high. Right after she got on stage, cheers began to sound from the crowd.

The reason for that was because she was the head auctioneer of the Heavenly Law Auction. Her each and every action was capable of harmonizing the atmosphere. Even if it was something that was not very valuable, she would still make it a lot more valuable. This was also a kind of skill.

The auction officially began. The first treasure to be auctioned gathered the interest of the crowd.

It was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Even though it was only a copy, its quality was very decent. This sort of weapon was extremely popular. In the end, it was auctioned off for a very decent price.

After the first item, three consecutive Incomplete Imperial Armament copies were auctioned off. Even though the prices that

they were auctioned for were all less than that of the first Incomplete Imperial Armament copy, they were still auctioned off at very decent prices.

The reason why Incomplete Imperial Armaments were this popular was not without reason. The reason for that was because many people had come to the Heavenly Law Auction precisely for the sake of purchasing Incomplete Imperial Armaments due to the fact that even if they were copies, they were still weapons that no Royal Armament could compare with.

In fact, many Half Martial Emperors did not possess Incomplete Imperial Armaments, and not even copies on top of that. From how that peak Half Martial Emperor that attacked Evildoer Tie had used a Royal Armament, one could tell that even Incomplete Imperial Armament copies were treasured items where the supply could not keep up with its demand.

After the four Incomplete Imperial Armament copies were auctioned, medicines began to enter the auction. These were all medicines concocted by world spiritists. There were all kinds of different medicines with different effects. Among them, the highest quality medicines were ones that could raise one's battle power for a short period of time without any backlash. While these sorts of medicine were not Forbidden Medicines, they were a lot more expensive than Forbidden Medicines.

Furthermore, these sorts of medicine were extremely popular. Even though their prices were inferior to those of Incomplete Imperial Armaments, they were also treasures that were unable to meet up to their demand. Thus, the crowd began to compete with one another intensely for those medicines.

“Those medicines are actually this valuable? They're all medicines that I can concoct.”

As Chu Feng saw the medicines that were being fought for intensely with high prices by the crowd, Chu Feng's eyes shone,

and a thought came to his mind.

Chu Feng had grasped all of the spirit formations in the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram. The Nine Spirits Divine Diagram contained all kinds of spirit formations. Naturally, it possessed spirit formations for concocting medicines and refining weapons. Even though the requirements for refining weapons were extremely high and the current Chu Feng would not be able to refine extremely good weapons, medicine concocting was a lot easier. With Chu Feng's current strength, as long as he possessed sufficient materials, he would be able to concoct those medicines.

Ever since they had made the exchanges for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, Chu Feng had deeply realized that he was extremely poor, simply too poor.

If it wasn't for the fact that Aunt Lian had insisted on joining them and had thrown away money recklessly in order to help Chu Feng purchase Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, the number of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones Chu Feng would have been able to obtain today might really have been a lot less.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng discovered a method to become rich. That was concocting medicines that were useful in battle but would not cause any backlash.

Furthermore, even though Chu Feng currently had nothing precious on him, other than the Firmament Adamantine Metals, he possessed a lot of medicinal herbs and other ingredients. With the amount of ingredients he possessed, it would definitely be sufficient for him to concoct simpler medicines.

In other words, Chu Feng would not have to spend a lot of money to purchase materials to concoct his medicines. This was simply too wonderful for him.

Thinking about this, Chu Feng felt a lot happier. As the saying went, a penny would baffle a hero. Today, Chu Feng had managed to experience that phrase completely. However, after today, Chu

Feng would do his best to prevent himself from entering this sort of predicament again.

“Everyone, the next item is a collector’s item. Even though it is not very practical, its value as a collectable item is extremely high. If there are any friends that take pleasure in collecting things, you must not miss out on this by any means.”

After the medicines were all auctioned off, a new auction cart appeared on the stage. On that cart was an item the size of a watermelon. At this moment, it was covered by a golden cloth.

That golden cloth was no ordinary cloth. It was capable of sealing the item’s aura. At the same time, it could also prevent others from sensing it. In turn, it would give the item being auctioned a flavor of mysteriousness.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was not at all interested in any collector’s item. However, when the auctioneer lifted the golden cloth, Chu Feng’s eyes shone, and even his heartbeat began to accelerate.

That was a Natural Oddity. Even though it had been engraved into a jade bracelet and become a very beautiful accessory, Chu Feng was still able to tell with a single glance that it was a Natural Oddity. Furthermore, it still contained a very berserk natural energy within it.

Even though the natural energy had been sealed, and the seal on the natural energy was very powerful, so powerful that ordinary people would not be able to sense the natural energy at all, Chu Feng was still able to tell that it was a Natural Oddity with a single glance.

If he were to be able to obtain that Natural Oddity and then break the seal, he would be able to refine it. As long as he refined it, even if Chu Feng did not break through to the Half Martial Emperor level, he would still surely accumulate a lot of energy.

“That thing’s pretty good. Even though it has no practical value, it is indeed a rare collector’s item. How are you going to auction it?” After the item appeared, many people became interested in it. After all, that was a Natural Oddity. Furthermore, the bracelet it had been formed into could be said to be perfect. Thus, it was indeed an extremely rare collector’s item.

“This item’s auction condition is that it will only be sold for good materials to refine weapons with. There are no starting bids. Everyone, please feel free to bid as you wish. The one that offers the best quality and the most valuable materials shall win it,” The auctioneer said with a beaming smile. At the same time, she cast her charming gaze to the crowd. As she saw how enthusiastic the crowd was, she knew right away that this would be an intense bidding match.

Chapter 1614 – Intense Competition

“Ten pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

“Twenty pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

“Thirty pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

.....

“One hundred pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

In an instant, the bids increased again and again. The competition grew more and more intense. As for the Weaponry Refinement Metal that the crowd spoke of, they were pieces of the most popular metal used for weaponry refinement. It was a material capable of being used to refine Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Thus, the Weaponry Refinement Metal could be said to be a pretty valuable item. However, it was something that could be obtained easily in large quantities. Therefore, it could not be said to be a treasure.

Furthermore, the Weaponry Refinement Metals were separated into nine ranks. The rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal that the crowd spoke of could be said to be a peak quality Weaponry Refinement Metal. However, there was actually another Weaponry Refinement Metal of higher quality than that, which was the Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal. However, compared to the rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal, the Absolute Weaponry Refinement metal was a lot rarer. Thus, its value was also a lot higher.

It could be said this way. The value of a single piece of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal surpassed that of a hundred pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.

Thus, at this moment, the crowd were all bidding with rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metals and competing with one another with different amounts. No one was willing to use Absolute

Weaponry Refinement Metal to purchase the Natural Oddity.

Coincidentally, Chu Feng also possessed rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal. Furthermore, he possessed quite a bit of it. He had a total of three hundred and eighty pieces. As he saw that the bids were growing higher and higher, Chu Feng decided to bid with his all. He loudly shouted, “Three hundred and eighty pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

“He actually increased the bid to three hundred and eighty pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal?”

Chu Feng’s words shocked the crowd. Everyone turned to look at him with gazes filled with surprise.

After all, Chu Feng had directly increased the bid from a hundred pieces to three hundred and eighty pieces of rank nine Weaponry Refinement Metal. This could be said to be a qualitative leap.

Furthermore, Chu Feng appeared to be very calm even after he declared his bid. It was as if he was telling everyone that his bid was only a very ordinary amount that he had made without any regard. If anyone dared to increase the bid, he would declare an even more astonishing bid.

Thus, at this moment, many of the bidders started to hesitate. They did not want to continue on bidding. Regardless of how beautiful this Natural Oddity might be, to them, it would still be nothing more than a collector’s item, an ornament without any practical use. To use such a high price to purchase a collector’s item would be an enormous waste.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was very confident. Thus, the other bidders were afraid. They knew that even if they continued bidding against him, they would still lose. Thus, they decided to not compete and lose face.

As the other bidders began to hesitate, no new bid was heard again. Chu Feng started to snicker in his heart. After all, the

purpose Chu Feng had for purchasing this Natural Oddity was different from that of other people. To others, it would only be a collector's item. Yet, to Chu Feng, he could use it to cultivate.

Compared to the others, this Natural Oddity was extremely important to Chu Feng. If possible, regardless of how much he would have to spend, Chu Feng would still be determined to win this Natural Oddity. He refused to give others the opportunity to obtain it.

Right at the moment when Chu Feng thought that he was going to win the bid, a shout was suddenly heard.

“A hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

When this voice was heard, not to mention Chu Feng, practically everyone present was shocked.

There was actually someone that had decided to bid with Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal for the sake of a collector's item. Furthermore, that person had made his bid with a hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal. This bid was truly ruthless. That person simply wanted to win the bid instantly by completely beating down all other bidders.

Moreover, this bid was a bit too rich and imposing. No matter how one saw it, that collector's item could not be worth a hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.

As the crowd looked to the source of the voice, they were shocked once again. In fact, many people revealed angry expressions. The reason for that was because the bidder was none other than that infamous Evildoer Tie.

“Damn it, such a good collector's item is actually going to end up in the hands of that animal! This is truly a waste of a good thing!”

Curses began to be heard from the crowd nonstop. However, no one was willing to continue bidding. After all, a hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal was not something that an

average person could take out.

“That old bastard actually dares to compete with you. It’s merely Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal. Did he truly think that he was extremely rich? Chu Feng, bid with your Firmament Adamantine Metal. A single piece would definitely guarantee that he would not be able to bid anymore.” Seeing that Evildoer Tie daring to compete with Chu Feng, Eggy was extremely displeased.

No matter how valuable the Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal was, it was absolutely no match for Firmament Adamantine Metal. After all, the Firmament Adamantine Metal was a most precious treasure that could be used to refine Imperial Armaments. In terms of quality, Chu Feng’s Firmament Adamantine Metal would be even more valuable than Hong Qiang’s Raging Flames Metal.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng found himself to be stuck in a very difficult place. The reason for that was because when he had obtained the Firmament Adamantine Metal, he had promised Bai Ruochen that he would only use it to refine Imperial Armaments, and would never sell it off.

Even though Chu Feng needed that Natural Oddity extremely badly, he could not break his promise with Bai Ruochen because of this.

“No, I will not bid with the Firmament Adamantine Metal,” Chu Feng rejected Eggy’s proposal.

“Idiot, how could you be this inflexible? The benefit before you is enormous. Do you not know how badly you need Natural Oddities to increase your cultivation? You are already a rank nine Martial King. You are only a fine line away from becoming a Half Martial Emperor. Even if that Natural Oddity does not contain a lot of Natural Energy and cannot help you reach a breakthrough, you should still not give up on it. After all, it is very useful to you right now. As for that Firmament Adamantine Metal, even if you are to

keep it, you will have no use for it.”

“You should use the Firmament Adamantine Metal to exchange for something useful. When you become more powerful in the future, you can obtain more Firmament Adamantine Metal, no?” Eggy advised.

“Eggy, I understand all of that. Merely, I made a promise to Bai Ruochen. I will definitely keep my promise. Although it is true that that Natural Oddity is very beneficial and important to me, I believe that one’s sincerity is even more important,” Chu Feng explained while smiling.

Eggy sighed. “Do as you wish. The meat that’s by your mouth is going to fly away,” Even though Eggy felt helpless, she was not angered by Chu Feng’s decision. The reason for that was because she understood Chu Feng’s character. He was someone who would use every means necessary to take care of his enemies. Yet he held his friends in such high esteem that he would even sacrifice himself for their sake.

Actually, Eggy liked Chu Feng’s personality very much. Naturally, she would not be angered by Chu Feng’s refusal. Merely, she felt this to be a great pity.

Right at this moment, Aunt Lian suddenly spoke to bid. “Two hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.” Her bid was actually double the previous bid.

“Chu Feng, since you want that Natural Oddity, I’ll help you obtain it,” Aunt Lian said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

At this moment, Chu Feng’s heart moved. He truly never expected that Aunt Lian would bid for this Natural Oddity for his sake.

However, upon close thinking, it was very understandable. Earlier, Chu Feng had bid a very high price. Everyone knew that Chu Feng wanted that Natural Oddity.

Aunt Lian was willing to part with all of the goods in her Cosmos Sack for the sake of helping Chu Feng purchase Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Thus, she was naturally willing to part with mere Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal for this Natural Oddity.

“Aunt Lian, thank you,” Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng expressed his thanks. The reason for that was because he truly wanted that Natural Oddity.

“Three hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.” However, right at this moment, that Evildoer Tie increased his bid once again. Furthermore, he had increased it by a hundred pieces right away. He was not willing to step down, and was determined to compete with Aunt Lian.

Chapter 1615 – Bidding Requires Strength

“Five hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal,” Aunt Lian was even more ruthless. She actually directly increased the bid by two hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal. It was as if she were equating the Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal to muck. She had an attitude of being determined to win that Natural Oddity.

In fact, after Aunt Lian’s words left her mouth, the crowd present all sucked in a mouthful of cold air. As matters stood, they all realized that Aunt Lian was most definitely a very rich and imposing person. Likely, she possessed a powerful origin. Else, it would be impossible for her to throw away money this recklessly.

“Madam, it would appear that you are determined to oppose this old man. Do you really think you possess the strength to compete against me?” Evildoer Tie did not continue to bid. Instead, he actually spoke provocative words at Aunt Lian.

“Heh...” Aunt Lian completely ignored Evildoer Tie’s provocation and uttered a laugh filled with contempt.

Seeing that, Evildoer Tie frowned and shouted, “Six hundred pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

Right after Evildoer Tie’s bid left his mouth, Aunt Lian immediately bid again. Without even blinking her eyes, in an extremely decisive manner, Aunt Lian said, “A thousand pieces of Absolute Weaponry Refinement Metal.”

Once those words left her mouth, not to mention the other people, even that alluring auctioneer’s expression turned to one of shock and amazement.

That was because Aunt Lian’s bid was extremely high. It had greatly surpassed the value of this Natural Oddity. If Aunt Lian were to really purchase this Natural Oddity at this amount, it

would simply be equivalent to spending the amount of money capable of purchasing a treasured sword to purchase a piece of rusty metal.

“Good, you got me. I’m not going to compete with you for it anymore,” Evildoer Tie gave up.

However, he was not going to leave matters at that. Instead, with a provocative tone, he said to Aunt Lian, “Might your distinguished self be willing to show your true appearance and announce your distinguished name so that this old man can admire who it was that possessed more money than sense, who it was that spent this much money to purchase such trash?”

“It’s useless to say anymore. If you have the ability, then continue bidding against me. If you don’t, then shut up,” Aunt Lian replied.

“Humph, this old man naturally possesses the ability. Merely, this old man is not as spendthrift and foolish as you. I will not use such a high price to purchase a piece of trash like that,” Evildoer Tier said.

“Auctioneer, could what he said be considered to be a personal attack?” Aunt Lian asked the auctioneer.

“Evildoer Tie, please watch your words. If you dare to speak words like that personal attack again, I will disqualify you from this auction,” Hearing what Aunt Lian asked, that auctioneer warned Evildoer Tie strictly.

The reason for that was because not only had Evildoer Tie threatened Aunt Lian, he had also insulted the item that she was bidding on. To declare that the item being auctioned was trash was something that no auctioneer would tolerate.

“Okay, okay, okay, I will say no more,” Evildoer Tie said no more. However, he stared fiercely at Aunt Lian. His gaze was filled with killing intent. It would appear that Evildoer Tie had been

enraged by Aunt Lian.

However, not only did Aunt Lian not get angry, Chu Feng was also able to sense that she was in a cheerful mood. As Aunt Lian could not attack Evildoer Tie in this Heavenly Law Auction, being able to anger him had allowed her to feel a lot more comfortable.

“Everyone, the following items being auctioned could be said to be a pleasant surprise to world spiritists.”

After that auctioneer said those words, several auction carts were pushed onto the auction stage. When the golden cloaks that covered the items were lifted by the auctioneer one by one, the Sealing Glacier, Raging Flames Metal and the other items all appeared before the crowd.

It turned out that the so-called pleasant surprise was actually the items that Chu Feng and the others were auctioning.

“That glacier, it’s so special. It contains a very powerful sealing energy. That’s a rare treasure!”

“That pearl is also very powerful. If placed on top of a world spirit formation, it will be able to increase the power of the formation greatly. That is also a rare treasure.”

“The rarest treasure would have to be that Raging Flames Metal. That is the housing of the Raging Flames Metallic Lotus Flower, a treasure that can be used to refine Imperial Armaments.”

Sure enough, after those treasures appeared in succession, many people began to speak highly of them. In fact, some people’s eyes even started to shine. They were so excited that they were about to start drooling. The crowd began to ask how those treasures would be auctioned.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt secretly delighted. He never expected that the items they were putting up for auction would be this popular. This increased his confidence in being able to obtain Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“I believe everyone is able to tell that all of these items being auctioned are rare, and most precious treasures. I also know that everyone wants them.”

“However, the owner of these treasures is only willing to sell them for a single item. That is, Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” That auctioneer explained.

“What? Only selling them for Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?” Hearing those words, many people were disappointed. The reason for that was because Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were also rare treasures. It was something that many people did not possess.

“Are Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones the only thing accepted? Is nothing else considered? I am able to offer an even higher price,” asked someone that was unwilling to miss out on these treasures.

“I’m sorry, the seller only wants Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” The auctioneer shook her head while smiling.

“Sigh, that’s truly a shame. That Raging Flames Metal is something that I have searched for for a long time.”

There was someone who started sighing. It was a person with a very high level of cultivation. Likely, he was also someone with an extraordinary origin and strength. Unfortunately, because he did not possess Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, he had missed this opportunity. As such, he was feeling extremely unreconciled.

Suddenly, an old man who was sitting in a distinguished guest seat asked, “I wish to know what the starting bid for that Sealing Glacier is.” His appearance was covered, and his cultivation could not be determined either. However, he gave off a very imposing air. Likely, he was someone who possessed Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“Senior, you possess great eyesight to actually know that this is

the Sealing Glacier. Presumably, you also know that it is very valuable. The starting bid of this Sealing Glacier is ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” That auctioneer said.

“Ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?” Hearing those words, the old man started to hesitate.

Then, with a loud voice, he said, “I possess six Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Is there any other brother that possesses any more Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones? If someone else wants this Sealing Glacier, feel free to take out your Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

“We can combine our Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to purchase this Sealing Glacier together. Then, we shall divide this Sealing Glacier according to the amount of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones we used.”

“Everyone, I believe you all know that this Sealing Glacier is the village protection treasure of the Sealing Ancient Village. It is an extremely rare item. Everyone, you must not miss this opportunity.” That old man did not possess enough Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. However, he had thought of this method to gather enough Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.

“I have two Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

“I have one.”

“I also have one.”

“Hey, I said it first. Let me take part. Those after me, do not fight with me.”

Unexpectedly, that method proposed by the old man actually worked. Furthermore, it worked extremely well. There were a lot of people willing to partner with him to purchase the Sealing Glacier. In fact, there were even people who started fighting over who would partner with him.

Right at this moment, that Evildoer Tie mocked, “Humph, a

bunch of beggars. People like you all actually dare to come to an auction?”

“Old animal, we are bidding on an item that we want. What does that have to do with you?” Those people that were joining together to bid on the Sealing Glacier were enraged by Evildoer Tie’s words.

“So what? Bidding requires strength. You bunch have absolutely no strength. You are not qualified to bid,” Evildoer Tie coldly laughed. Then, with a loud voice, he shouted, “Fifteen Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. This old man is taking that Sealing Glacier.”

“What? He directly increased the price to fifteen Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?!”

Hearing those words, not to mention those people who were joining together to bid, even Chu Feng was shocked. Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were extremely rare. Yet, this Evildoer Tie was actually able to take out fifteen Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones at once. It would appear that he truly possessed some wealth.

After Evildoer Tie made his bid, the other bidders all became speechless. That was because they really did not possess any qualifications to continue bidding against Evildoer Tie.

Chapter 1616 – Scamming Evildoer Tie

“Evildoer Tie is bidding fifteen Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones on the Sealing Glacier. Is there anyone else willing to bid higher?” The auctioneer asked.

She was deliberately stalling for time to provide an opportunity for other bidders.

As for Evildoer Tie, he cast a disdainful sneer at the crowd. It was as if he were saying that there would not be even one person capable of contending against him.

Evildoer Tie’s arrogance caused many people to feel displeased. However, in the end, no one said anything, no one decided to bid higher.

Chu Feng noticed this. His perception was very strong. Furthermore, this Evildoer Tie was a person who expressed all his emotions on his face. Thus, Chu Feng felt that this Evildoer Tie wanted the Sealing Glacier very much. Furthermore, he possessed the ability to continue bidding.

Thus, an idea came to Chu Feng’s mind. It was a risky idea. However, it was also an opportunity to help him obtain more benefits.

Chu Feng was planning to bid...

Chu Feng was one who would do what he thought. Thus, he immediately made his own bid. “Twenty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

“.....”

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?”

Chu Feng’s bidding startled Aunt Lian and the others. They did not understand why Chu Feng had decided to bid. Aunt Lian even asked Chu Feng what he was doing through voice transmission.

Chu Feng did not answer Aunt Lian and the others. Instead, he secretly displayed a gesture to them to indicate to them that everything was under control.

“It’s you all again?” At this moment, that Evildoer Tie started to frown. He knew from Chu Feng’s outfit that he was with Aunt Lian. He was already extremely angered by Aunt Lian bidding against him earlier. Yet, at this moment, Chu Feng actually bid against him. It was obvious that Chu Feng was trying to start a fight with him. Naturally, Evildoer Tie would be extremely unhappy.

“What? Is that yours? Only you can buy it and I can’t? It’s as you said, bidding requires strength. If you have no strength, then get the hell out of here instead of being a disgrace,” Chu Feng mocked and ridiculed.

“You damned bastard. Are you looking down on this old man?” Evildoer Tie asked.

“Oh, you’re correct. I am indeed looking down on you,” Chu Feng sneered.

“In that case, I’ll show you my strength,” Evildoer Tie sneered. Then, he loudly shouted, “Thirty-five Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.”

“Forty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Chu Feng did not hesitate and immediately increased his bid.

“Fifty-five Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Evildoer Tie continued to bid.

“Sixty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Chu Feng smiled lightly and continued to bid.

The bidding competition between Chu Feng and Evildoer Tie was extremely calm. However, the bystanders were unable to remain calm at all. In an instant, the current bid was already six times that of the starting bid. Furthermore, the bid was still Dragon Mark

World Spirit Stones. These two bidders, they were a bit too rich in Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, no?

In fact, after Chu Feng continued to bid, that Evildoer Tie started to hesitate. He was hesitating in regards to whether he should continue bidding. That was because it was already not worth it to spend sixty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to purchase that chunk of Sealing Glacier.

“Chu Feng, it’s over. That guy’s hesitating. If he doesn’t continue to bid, not only will you not be able to sell your Sealing Glacier, you will also have violated the rules of the auction. Even if the item being auctioned is yours, you will likely still be punished,” Eggy said worriedly.

When even Eggy knew that the situation was bad, how could Chu Feng not know? He also knew that the current bid was at the limit of Evildoer Tie’s ability to accept. If he were to continue bidding, Evildoer Tie would definitely stop bidding.

However, if Evildoer Tie were to stop bidding, it would be as Eggy said. The person who would meet with calamity would be Chu Feng. Even though the Sealing Glacier being auctioned was his, Chu Feng would still have to suffer the punishment for violating the rules of the Heavenly Law Auction.

“Evildoer Tie, your reputation as one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Five Great Evildoers is truly in vain. You spoke of having strength. Yet, after all this, you’re nothing more than someone with an underserved reputation.”

“Sigh, I truly feel sorry for the other Four Great Evildoers. The name of the Five Great Evildoers is truly being dragged through the mud by you,” In the crucial moment, Chu Feng began to mock and ridicule Evildoer Tie. His words were extremely offensive. Furthermore, he even acted upon his words and started to shake his head as he said them. His actions were definitely enough to anger someone.

“Damned bastard, you dare look down upon this old man?! This old man will let you see how unworthy you are to compete against him!” Sure enough, Chu Feng’s words deeply angered Evildoer Tie. Then, he loudly shouted, “Ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones!!!”

“What? Ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones?!” Once Evildoer Tie’s words left his mouth, Chu Feng was overjoyed, and the surrounding crowd were all incomparably shocked.

Even though the Sealing Glacier was very valuable, it should only be worth around twenty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones at most.

Yet, this Evildoer Tie was actually willing to spend ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. That was truly a ferocious amount. It was evident that Evildoer Tie was angered. Today, he was determined to win the bid against Chu Feng, to show that he possessed a greater might than Chu Feng.

“It would seem that this Evildoer Tie has gone all out. Ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, I think that should be all the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones he possesses.”

“Haha, Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you were this amazing. With merely several words, you have increased the price of the Sealing Glacier by this many times. Not to mention whether or not the other treasures will be able to be auctioned off, merely this Sealing Glacier has managed to bring you an enormous profit,” At this moment, Eggy was jumping around happily. Her appearance was truly beautiful.

“Come, continue, didn’t you wish to compete against me? If you have the ability, then offer a bid higher than this old man’s. I shall see if you can win against this old man!” Suddenly, Evildoer Tie started to provoke Chu Feng.

Furthermore, his expression was extremely unnatural. Seeing that unnatural expression, Chu Feng knew right away that Evildoer Tie was regretting his bid. It was clear that he also

regretted wanting to purchase a mere Sealing Glacier for such a high bid.

After feeling regret, Evildoer Tie began to provoke Chu Feng. He wanted to have Chu Feng bid even higher so that he could give up on bidding. At that time, the person who would be out of luck would be Chu Feng.

However, how could Chu Feng possibly allow him this opportunity? Thus, as the crowd's anticipatory gazes were focused onto Chu Feng, especially that hopeful gaze from Evildoer Tie, Chu Feng slowly said three words, "I... give... up."

"What? Give up?!!!" Hearing those words, Evildoer Tie's complexion immediately turned ashen. However, he was not willing to let the matter go. He pointed his finger at Chu Feng and began to insult him. "What? You give up? How could you give up? Wasn't it you who wanted to compete?"

"With merely your bit of strength, you actually dared to hoot at me? You are nothing more than trash, nothing more than a pile of dog shit."

However, Chu Feng was not at all enraged by Evildoer Tie's insults. Instead, he casually said, "If you dare call me trash again, I'll complain to the auction that you're attacking me. At that time, you will be blacklisted by the Heavenly Law Auction, and will never be able to set foot in the Heavenly Law Auction again."

"Oh, that's right. Even if you are to be blacklisted and driven away, you will still have to purchase that Sealing Glacier before you leave. After all, to spend ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to purchase a single Sealing Glacier, there is no one more spendthrift and foolish than you."

"It turns out that the legendary Evildoer Tie is actually this foolish. You are simply no different from an idiot. Hahaha...." After Chu Feng finished saying those words, Chu Feng started to laugh mockingly. His laughter was extremely happy, extremely

shameless.

“You...” Hearing those words, that Evildoer Tie was so enraged that he nearly vomited blood. Regardless of how foolish he was, he had still managed to realize what had happened now. Evidently, he had been scammed by an unknown brat.

Thinking about that, Evildoer Tie was so enraged that he was nearly driven mad with anger. He pointed at Chu Feng and angrily cursed, “You damned animal, you’re deliberately scamming me!”

Chapter 1617 – An Imprint

Evildoer Tie pointed at Chu Feng and angrily shouted, “Damned bastard, you simply competed with my bidding out of malice. You are despicable and shameless!”

“Auctioneer, I would like to file a complaint. This Evildoer Tie is attacking me personally,” Chu Feng would naturally not admit that he had competed with Evildoer Tie out of malice. Not only did he not admit to it, he even accused Evildoer Tie of attacking his character.

“Evildoer Tie, I already warned you earlier, yet you still refuse to change your behavior. Do you really think that we will not dare to drive you out?” That beautiful auctioneer narrowed her long, shapely eyebrows and spoke with a cold voice.

If the auctioneer had displayed a very graceful bearing on the auction stage before, then, at this moment, what she was displaying was the domineering aura of an expert.

However, regardless of how domineering that auctioneer might be, she was still only a peak Half Martial Emperor. As a Martial Emperor, how could Evildoer Tie possibly place her in his eyes? In anger, Evildoer Tie coldly snorted, stood up, pointed at that auctioneer and was planning to refute her.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, the white-haired old man on the auction stage, who had had his eyes closed the entire time, suddenly opened his eyes.

Once his eyes opened, two rays of light flashed out from his eyes. Those rays of light landed on Evildoer Tie, causing his body to tremble instantly. “Putt,” Evildoer Tie fell back onto his seat.

In merely an instant, Evildoer Tie’s complexion turned extremely pale, and he started to sweat enormously. In fact, even his body

was trembling.

All of this was completely evident to all of the people present. When the crowd looked back to that white-haired old man, they all felt deep veneration for him. Sure enough, that old man was frighteningly powerful. Even one of the Five Great Evildoers, Evildoer Tie, was unable to withstand a single blow from him.

That white-haired old man did not say anything. After he frightened Evildoer Tie with his gaze, he once again closed his eyes.

“Forget about it, I am not someone to fuss over minor matters. Just give him another chance,” Right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke with a beaming smile.

“Since the person filing the complaint was willing to give you another chance, I’ll also give you another chance. However, remember, this cannot be repeated,” The auctioneer warned.

“You all...” Hearing those words, Evildoer Tie was so enraged that he nearly died from anger. It was clearly him who had been scammed. Yet, he still had to receive this sort of treatment. He was so angry that his heart and lungs were on the verge of exploding.

However, the helpless thing was, regardless of how unreconciled he might be, there was still nothing he could do. This was not a place where he could behave atrociously.

“Humph, there’s no need for you to drive me out, this old man will leave by himself.” In the end, Evildoer Tie snorted coldly, waved his sleeve, and actually planned to leave.

“While leaving is fine, you must first pay the bill,” The auctioneer said.

“There’s no need for you to remind me of that. This old man already knows.” Furiously, Evildoer Tie walked out from the auction house. At the same time as he walked out, several people from the Heavenly Law Auction followed him out after being

directed by the auctioneer.

At this moment, many people realized that Chu Feng had actually deliberately dug a pit for Evildoer Tie to jump into. Furthermore, he had succeeded.

When the crowd thought of how Chu Feng had managed to deceive the notorious Evildoer Tie like that and make him lose out this enormously, many people felt a great deal of joy. Secretly, they began to extend their thumbs toward Chu Feng.”

“Amazing. Brother, you are amazing.”

Especially those who possessed enormous hatred for Evildoer Tie. At this moment, they actually disregarded the occasion and began to cheer for Chu Feng. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s action was truly satisfying to them.

In fact, not to mention the others, even the Heavenly Law Auction’s auctioneer nodded her head at Chu Feng while smiling. It would seem that even she disliked that Evildoer Tie.

“Chu Feng, you are too amazing. To think of such a method to scam Evildoer Tie, haha, this is truly satisfying!”

Naturally, Aunt Lian and the others also felt enormous joy. They actually began to secretly send voice transmissions to Chu Feng to praise his wit.

Especially Aunt Lian, who was feeling enormously happy. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s actions had caused Evildoer Tie to lose out enormously. Not only had Chu Feng humiliated Evildoer Tie, he had also made him suffer enormously in terms of wealth. Chu Feng’s method was much more brilliant than her own.

However, regardless, as long as Evildoer Tie suffered, Aunt Lian would feel happy. After all, there was a blood feud between them.

Unfortunately, after Evildoer Tie left, none of the items Chu Feng and the others had placed on auction managed to be bid on. It

was not that no one wanted them. Rather, it was that no one was able to afford the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to bid on them. In the end, only Chu Feng's Sealing Glacier managed to be auctioned off.

However, Chu Feng was not disappointed because of this. Instead, he felt very happy. As he would not have to sell others' things, Chu Feng would have to owe fewer favors. This was especially true for Hong Qiang's Raging Flames Metal. Chu Feng did not wish to sell that. After all, that was something that Hong Qiang had spent meticulous efforts to obtain.

Furthermore, Chu Feng already possessed forty Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. On top of that, his Sealing Glacier had been auctioned to Evildoer Tie for ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Altogether, Chu Feng possessed a hundred and thirty-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. This was more than Chu Feng had anticipated.

As the auction continued, Aunt Lian helped Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and even Tantai Xue to win some treasures.

She won a defensive treasure for Nangong Ya. As for Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and Tantai Xue, she won them some ornaments that the girls were fond of.

Aunt Lian had wanted to help Chu Feng win some things from the auction. However, Chu Feng resolutely refused. That was because Aunt Lian had already spent a great amount of wealth to help him purchase Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones. Thus, Chu Feng really did not wish for her to spend any more wealth on him.

Just like this, the auction ended. From the backstage of the auction, Chu Feng obtained the ninety-eight Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones smoothly.

Merely, after he received the ninety-nine Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, Chu Feng started to frown. He had discovered that

something was amiss.

“Aunt Lian, Senior Hong Qiang, something’s wrong,” Sensing that something was wrong, Chu Feng immediately called Aunt Lian and the others to the side.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong? Could it be that these Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are fake? That shouldn’t be the case, no? If they are fake, they shouldn’t be able to escape the eyes of the Heavenly Law Auction.” When Aunt Lian saw that Chu Feng’s expression changed when he inspected the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, she thought that the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones were fake.

Chu Feng took out a Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone and said, “These Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones are real. Merely, one among them has been altered. Even though it’s very hidden, I am certain that there’s an imprint left behind within it.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Hong Qiang and Aunt Lian carefully inspected the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone. However, even though the two of them were also both Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they were unable to find anything wrong with the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone. Thus, they asked together, “Chu Feng, are you certain that there’s an imprint on this Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone?”

“I am certain that there’s an imprint on it. Furthermore, if my guess is correct, it should have been Evildoer Tie who placed it there.” What Chu Feng had said was the truth. After becoming a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes had become even more powerful. He was able to see what other Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists could not.

Chapter 1618 – The Day Of Revenge

“Even though they are only rumors, I have heard that Evildoer Tie’s world spirit techniques are extremely powerful. Even though he is not a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he is only a fine line away from becoming a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. If he truly wanted to do something to the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone, he would likely be able to do so,” Aunt Lian said.

“This Evildoer Tie is truly a sinister and vicious individual. After winning an auction, he actually left an imprint in his payment. He was simply planning to track the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones down, and then murder the person who possessed them in order to steal them back,” Nangong Ya said.

“His title of Evildoer is not in vain. It would seem that this is not the first time that he has done something this despicable,” Nangong Baihe said. They had all managed to guess what Evildoer Tie’s intention was.

“Aunt Lian, if you were to fight with Evildoer Tie, what would your odds of winning be? If the odds are not high, I can remove the imprint. However, if your odds are high, this would be a great opportunity for you to obtain revenge,” Chu Feng said.

“No, don’t remove the imprint. Chu Feng, give me that Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone. I must take care of this Evildoer Tie this time around,” Aunt Lian snatched the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone from Chu Feng. She was planning to take this opportunity to fight Evildoer Tie.

“Hong Qiang, I’ll leave Chu Feng and the others with you. Please see them to our Nangong Imperial Clan,” Aunt Lian said. She was planning to fight Evildoer Tie alone.

“Aunt Lian, I’m afraid that won’t do. If we are going, then we must go together. If we’re not going, then we will all not go,” Chu

Feng said with a light smile.

Chu Feng's words contained hidden implications. He knew that Aunt Lian hated Evildoer Tie enormously. If there was an opportunity to take revenge, Aunt Lian would definitely not let it slip by. However, to go on the path of vengeance blindly would instead only cause her to lose her life. At that time, the gains simply would not make up for the losses.

If Chu Feng and the others were to all follow Aunt Lian, Aunt Lian would definitely have worries. While she would not care about losing her own life, she would not wish for Chu Feng and the others to lose their lives because of her.

Thus, if Aunt Lian did not possess absolute certainty in being able to defeat Evildoer Tie, she would not go and battle him.

"Chu Feng, if you all are to follow me to battle Evildoer Tie, you will only distract me," Sure enough, Aunt Lian did not wish for Chu Feng and the others to follow her.

"Aunt Lian, you can rest assured regarding that, while we will not be able to join the battle, we will definitely not become a burden to you either. Once your battle starts, we will hide ourselves far away. After all, there's senior Hong Qiang with us," Chu Feng said.

"Aunt Lian, just allow us to go with you. We guarantee that we will not be your burden."

"That's right. Aunt Lian, what Chu Feng said is correct. We either go together or not go at all," Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli pleaded earnestly.

"Even though I am unable to get involved in a battle between Martial Emperors, protecting them is something that I am capable of doing. Just hand them to me. As for Evildoer Tie, he will be yours to take care of," Hong Qiang said.

"Very well," Seeing that Chu Feng and the others insisted on

following her, Aunt Lian nodded her head. The reason for that was because she really did not wish to miss this opportunity to avenge her husband and daughter.

Just like that, Chu Feng and the others did not remove the imprint from the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stone. Furthermore, in order to make sure that Evildoer Tie would follow them, they did not use the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation either. Instead, they chose to travel by foot.

Although Chu Feng and the others did not appear to be abnormal on their journey, they were feeling extremely nervous. After all, their opponent was one of the Holy Land of Martialism's Five Great Evildoers, Evildoer Tie.

This Evildoer Tie was someone who had committed all kinds of crimes and murdered countless people. He was an extremely dangerous individual.

At this moment, Chu Feng and the others were out in the open, and putting themselves in danger to lure that Evildoer Tie out from the shadows. It must be said that it was extremely dangerous this time around.

However, what Evildoer Tie had done to Aunt Lian was something that would anger anyone. Furthermore, Evildoer Tie was a very sly and cunning man. Thus, it was extremely difficult to catch him. Otherwise, it would not have been possible for him to be safe and sound even after having made so many enemies.

This time around, an extremely rare opportunity had presented itself. It was not only Aunt Lian who did not wish to miss out on this opportunity, even Chu Feng and the others did not wish to miss out on this opportunity.

“Hahaha...”

Right after Chu Feng and the others left the range of the Heavenly Law Auction and into a place without any sign of human

activity, frantic laughter began to sound nonstop. Sure enough, Evildoer Tie had followed them.

“Hahaha, the heavens have helped me, truly the heavens have helped me. Who would’ve thought that it would be you all. You little animals, I’ve dreamed about choking all of you to death,” Evildoer Tie had revealed himself. At this moment, he was still laughing wildly. His eyes were shining as he looked to Chu Feng and the others. A very strong killing intent was fully present in his gaze.

At the Heavenly Law Auction, Chu Feng and the others had humiliated Evildoer Tie and caused him to lose out enormously. As such, Evildoer Tie hated Chu Feng and the others to his bones. For him to be able to run into them at such a time, he would naturally be extremely overjoyed. This was a great opportunity for him to kill Chu Feng and the others to appease his hatred. That was why he would say that the heavens had helped him.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right after Evildoer Tie appeared, Hong Qiang quickly escaped with Chu Feng and the others. He did not even bother to look back.

After all, Evildoer Tie was a Martial Emperor. Even if he didn’t attack Chu Feng and the others directly, merely the energy ripples from the aftermath of his battle against Aunt Lian would be extremely frightening. Even if they were to just view the battle, they would have to do so from far away.

“Evildoer Tie, do you remember me?!”

Right after Chu Feng and the others left, Aunt Lian removed her cloak and revealed her true appearance. Compared to Evildoer Tie, Aunt Lian was currently emitting an even stronger killing intent.

Evildoer Tie was shocked to find that Chu Feng and the others were not afraid at to his appearance, and were instead prepared for battle. However, after he carefully inspected Aunt Lian, he had no

impression of her. Thus, he asked, “Who are you?”

“I am from the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Lian.”

“Back then, my husband and daughter both died by your hands,” Aunt Lian said those words one word at a time while gnashing her teeth.

“Oh, so it’s you. Speaking of which, I’ve killed quite a few people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. For many people, after I kill them, I completely forget about them. After all, there are so many people who I’ve killed. Thus, how could I possibly remember all of them?”

“However, my impression of that father and daughter is quite deep. The reason for my deep impression is because that little girl was extremely adorable. Merely, she was too weak. With merely a single palm strike, I swatted her to death. After she died at my hand, the appearance her father had, it’s something that I would never forget.”

“He hated me. He hated me enormously. He was enraged. He wanted to dismember my body.”

“Unfortunately, he was too useless. He was a true piece of trash. Not only was he unable to protect his daughter, he ended up dying at my hand too. Hahaha...” Evildoer Tie burst into loud laughter. There was not the slightest trace of guilt for his crime. Instead, he felt it to be very amusing.

“You damned animal! I’ll kill you!” Hearing up to this point, Aunt Lian’s anger exploded. Overflowing killing intent caused the sky to instantly darken. Not only were there black clouds surging about, her boundless martial power was also wreaking havoc as it spread about through the sky. It caused the weather to change, violent winds to appear, and clouds to scuttle.

Numerous violent hurricanes and ferocious bolts of lightning began to appear in the sky and on the ground. This region had

been made complete chaotic by this martial power. It was as if this region had been rocked by a major disaster and turned into purgatory.

However, Evildoer Tie was standing in that region without even his hair being affected. Furthermore, he had a smile on his face. He said, “It would seem that you’re that little girl’s mother, that trash’s wife. Perfect timing, I’ll reunite your family of three in the netherworld.”

Suddenly, Evildoer Tie’s expression turned sinister. Then he flipped his palm, and Emperor-level martial power surged forth. He actually took the initiative to attack Aunt Lian first.

Chapter 1619 – Killing Intent All Over One's Face

Being protected by Hong Qiang, Chu Feng and the others had distanced themselves far away from the battle. However, even at their far distance, their surroundings were still trembling violently. Wave upon wave of hurricanes were sweeping toward them. If it weren't for Hong Qiang stopping them, Chu Feng and the others would not have been able to withstand them.

At the location where Aunt Lian and Evildoer Tie were fighting, their martial power was wreaking havoc through the sky. As far as the eye could see, rising winds, scudding clouds and bolts of lightning were occurring at the same time. The winds were no ordinary winds. The bolts of lightning were no ordinary bolts of lightning. As the winds blew the clouds away, as the lightning struck down from the sky, that region appeared to have been hit by a major disaster.

That place was already not a place where ordinary people could enter. Not to mention Martial Kings like Chu Feng, even peak Half Martial Emperors like Hong Qiang would not be able to withstand the martial powers wreaking havoc in that region, and would undoubtedly die.

“What an intense battle. We simply cannot see anything. I can't even tell how the battle is unfolding. Is Aunt Lian currently teaching that old animal Evildoer Tie a lesson?”

At this moment, Nangong Baihe's eyes shone with light as she carefully watched the battle. She had used a special observation method. Unfortunately, even with her special observation method, she was unable to see anything other than the energy ripples; she was simply unable to see even the silhouettes of Aunt Lian and Evildoer Tie.

“Let me try,” Chu Feng activated his Heaven's Eyes. After using

the Heaven's Eyes, even though Chu Feng was able to see the silhouettes of Aunt Lian and Evildoer Tie, he was only able to see them occasionally. Furthermore, even when he did see them, they would only last for a split second before rapidly disappearing from his line of sight. The reason for that was because the two fighters' speed was simply too fast.

“Boom~~~~”

Suddenly, a dazzling golden light appeared in that chaotic region. It was like a golden dragon surging in the dark.

Following that, a very powerful might swept past. This might was too powerful. Chu Feng and the others were able to deeply sense how frightening that might was.

“It's the Imperial Bloodline! Aunt Lian has used her Imperial Bloodline! It would seem that she has gotten serious. Never would I have expected this Evildoer Tie to be this powerful, to actually be capable of forcing Aunt Lian to use her Imperial Bloodline,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Boom~~~~”

However, following that golden light, another boundlessly powerful might swept past from the battlefield. Following that, an enormous eagle head appeared following lightning flashes and thunder rolls. Even though it only lasted a split second before disappearing, Chu Feng and the others were all able to see how malevolent that enormous eagle was. Furthermore, as if it had been forged from steel, that eagle had emitted an extremely dangerous aura.

“Chu Feng, what's going on? What was that giant eagle earlier?” Nangong Baihe did not manage to see what had happened clearly. Thus, she could only turn to ask Chu Feng.

“That was an eagle formed by Divine Power. That Evildoer Tie is actually a Divine Body. He possesses Divine Power!” Chu Feng said.

“Evildoer Tie is actually a Divine Body?! That’s a power that’s no weaker than our Imperial Bloodline at all!” Hearing those words, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and even Nangong Moli all became nervous.

This battle was a lot more intense than they had imagined it would be. Even though Aunt Lian possessed her Imperial Bloodline, she was currently unable to obtain the upper hand in the battle at all. The two fighters were equally matched as they became locked in battle.

“Boom~~~~”

Right at this moment, another loud explosion sounded. Following that, a very violent energy ripple swept forth while hiding the sky and covering the earth. After the energy ripple swept past them, even though Chu Feng and the others were standing in the sky, they were still shaken left and right. If it weren’t for Hong Qiang protecting them, that energy ripple would likely have injured, if not killed, Chu Feng and the others.

Too frightening. A battle of that level was truly not something that Chu Feng and the others could interfere with. Even watching the battle, they would have to be extremely cautious and distance themselves far away.

“What’s going on? Why does it seem like Aunt Lian’s Imperial Bloodline has weakened?” At this moment, Nangong Ya and the others were greatly alarmed. They discovered that the golden dazzling light that had appeared like a golden dragon on the battlefield before was currently growing weaker.

“Chu Feng, what happened?” Extremely nervous, Nangong Baihe turned to ask Chu Feng.

“Aunt Lian is injured. That Evildoer Tie is holding an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament. In terms of weapons, Aunt Lian is at a disadvantage,” Chu Feng said.

“What? That Evildoer Tie actually possesses an Incomplete Imperial Armament?!” Hearing those words, the expressions of Nangong Ya and the others turned even more unsightly.

“You all, quickly, get out of here!!!” Right at this moment, a voice transmission entered into Chu Feng and the others’ ears. It was Aunt Lian.

“Damn it! Even though they’re both rank one Martial Emperors, could Aunt Lian really not be a match for that Evildoer Tie?”

“What should we do? I cannot look on helplessly as Aunt Lian is killed by that animal!” After hearing Aunt Lian’s voice transmission, both Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe became extremely worried. All of a sudden, they did not know what to do. However, neither of them had the intention to escape.

“You all, leave here first,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what did you say?” Nangong Ya was astonished by Chu Feng’s words. With a shocked expression, he looked to Chu Feng. He didn’t understand Chu Feng’s intentions.

“I said, you all leave first. I’ll stay behind to help Aunt Lian,” Chu Feng said again.

“You help Aunt Lian? I haven’t misheard, right? How are you going to help Aunt Lian? That is a battle between Martial Emperors. Even senior Hong Qiang is unable to intervene, how are you able to help Aunt Lian?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Baihe opened her mouth wide in shock. She simply did not believe in Chu Feng’s words.

“Do you all know why I needed the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones? I needed them in order to set up two Taboo Formation Techniques.”

“If I am able to set those Taboo Formation Techniques up successfully, we will be able to escape from danger today,” Chu Feng said as he took out all of the Dragon Mark World Spirit

Stones.

The Taboo Formation Techniques Chu Feng spoke of were naturally the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation. In this moment of crisis, Chu Feng did not wish to resign himself to fate. Thus, the only thing he could do was set up those two Taboo Formation Techniques and release the other world spirit in his body.

“Are you serious? Exactly what sort of spirit formation will be able to take care of a Martial Emperor?” Nangong Baihe was still very skeptical. That was because she had never heard of such powerful spirit formations before. Even if they were Taboo Formation Techniques, she had still never heard of ones capable of taking care of Martial Emperors. Thus, she still did not believe in Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, what degree of certainty do you have in successfully setting up the spirit formations?” Nangong Ya asked.

“Around fifty percent,” Chu Feng replied. What he said was the truth. At this moment, it could be said that he was not prepared at all. If he were to try to set up the two Taboo Formation Techniques, he would really only have fifty percent certainty for success.

“What will happen if you are to fail?” Nangong Ya asked.

“If I am to fail, the consequences will be unthinkable,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.”

“Since that’s the case, we will stay to accompany you.”

“You do not need to urge us to leave. Even if you do, we will not leave. There’s no need to mention Baihe and Moli. As for Miss Tantai and Senior Hong, I believe that the two of them will insist on staying too,” Nangong Ya said.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, you cannot be this selfish. Today, we will live or die together. Don’t you try to be the hero yourself,”

Nangong Baihe said.

“That’s right. Big brother Chu Feng, Moli will also stay with you,” Even Nangong Moli said she’d stay. A determined expression was present on her innocent little face.

“As the senior, perhaps what I am about to say is not suitable. However, I feel that what the two little friends from the Nangong Imperial Clan said is reasonable,” Hong Qiang said with a smile.

“Chu Feng, whatever abilities that you possess, just use them fully,” Tantai Xue said with a smile. Rarely did Tantai Xue smile. Thus, when she did, her smile was exceptionally beautiful.

“Since that’s the case, then we shall stake our all on this together,” Faced with this bunch of stubborn people, Chu Feng smiled calmly. Then, he placed all of the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones before him and began to prepare to set up the two Taboo Formation Techniques.

“Found you all,” Suddenly, a voice sounded from beside Chu Feng and the others. Turning their head around to look, Chu Feng and the others were all greatly alarmed. It was actually Evildoer Tie. Evildoer Tie had appeared behind Chu Feng and the others.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Evildoer Tie attacked. He grabbed Chu Feng’s neck and lifted him up.

Seeing that, Hong Qiang wanted to attack. However, without even moving, Evildoer Tie merely swept his aura forth and Hong Qiang was knocked several tens of thousands of meters away. Hong Qiang ended up vomiting blood. He was seriously injured.

“Brat, you are the one who scammed me at the auction, right?” Evildoer Tie looked at Chu Feng with an expression filled with killing intent.

Chapter 1620 – Mysterious Expert

“Release him!”

After Evildoer Tie captured Chu Feng, Aunt Lian appeared. Merely, at this moment, Aunt Lian’s body was covered with bloodstains and her aura was incomparably weak. It could be seen that she had been seriously injured.

“Release him? Why must I release him because you demand it? Who do you think you are? You are nothing more than trash, powerless to defend yourself. Today, all of you will die here. Don’t think any of you can escape here alive,” Evildoer Tie snorted coldly.

“Animal!” As Aunt Lian spoke, she was about to attack.

“Puu~~~”

However, right after Aunt Lian started to move, Evildoer Tie’s palm penetrated into Chu Feng’s neck like a sharp blade. Even though he had only sliced through half of Chu Feng’s neck, he still caused an enormous amount of blood to splatter out from Chu Feng’s neck.

Furthermore, a very ferocious Emperor-level martial power entered Chu Feng’s body. Instantly, Chu Feng’s complexion turned red. It was as if he were about to explode and die.

“Come! If you dare to approach, I’ll kill him immediately,” Evildoer Tie warned.

“Don’t!” Seeing that Evildoer Tie really had the intention to kill Chu Feng, Aunt Lian immediately stopped her movement. An expression of fright covered her face.

When even Aunt Lian did not dare to move, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya, Nangong Moli and Nangong Baihe naturally also stood there motionlessly. They all had expressions of fright on their faces. Faced with death, they were all a bit scared.

They were not scared because they feared death. Rather, they were unwilling to accept death, unwilling to accept dying at the hands of someone like Evildoer Tie.

However, the situation before them was something that they could do nothing about. Not to mention Evildoer Tie using Chu Feng to threaten them, even if he didn't use Chu Feng to threaten them, they would still not be able to escape death. The reason for that was because even Aunt Lian, the only person capable of fighting against Evildoer Tie, was no match for him.

“Hahaha, fight against me? You should determine whether you have the strength to do so first,” Seeing that Aunt Lian was powerless, Evildoer Tie started to laugh even more savagely.

“You dare to touch Chu Feng? Do you really think you have the strength to do so?” However, right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded from the horizon. When that voice sounded, heaven and earth started to shake and tremble. At this moment, everyone present was startled.

That voice was not Aunt Lian's voice, not Hong Qiang's voice, not Tantai Xue's voice, not Nangong Ya's voice, not Nangong Baihe's voice, not Nangong Moli's voice, and not Chu Feng's voice.

Another person had appeared.

“So you actually have a helper. Get out here to receive death!” Evildoer Tie smiled coldly. He did not place the person that spoke those words in his eyes at all.

“Rumble~~~~”

Right after Evildoer Tie's words left his mouth, a boundless oppressive might suddenly came crashing down from the sky. That oppressive might was so powerful that even Aunt Lian's eyes shone with fear.

Fortunately, that oppressive might was aimed at only one person, Evildoer Tie. Even though Chu Feng, Aunt Lian and the others

were all very close to Evildoer Tie, they were not affected by that oppressive might in the slightest.

“Ahhh~~~~”

At this moment, Evildoer Tie wanted to release his own oppressive might to withstand the incoming oppressive might. However, before he could do anything, that oppressive might had smashed onto him, crushing him down from the sky and deep into the earth.

The powerful might from the crash created an enormous crater with a diameter of several tens of thousands of meters.

“This...”

Seeing this scene, even Aunt Lian was stunned. That was because Evildoer Tie’s hand was still on Chu Feng’s neck. Yet, his body had been smashed into that enormous crater.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?” At this moment, Nangong Ya and the others hurriedly arrived at Chu Feng’s side and removed Evildoer Tie’s severed hand from Chu Feng’s neck.

“I am fine,” Chu Feng was really fine. Even though Evildoer Tie had poured his martial power into Chu Feng’s body, he had not tried to injure Chu Feng for real. Instead, he had merely restricted Chu Feng’s movements and used him to threaten Aunt Lian.

At this moment, Evildoer Tie’s arm was severed and his body was smashed into that crater; the martial power that was poured into Chu Feng’s body was easily removed by Chu Feng.

As for those superficial wounds, with Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques, he was able to cure them instantly.

“Where’s senior Hong Qiang? Is he alright?” Thus, at this moment, the person Chu Feng worried the most about was not himself. Rather, it was Hong Qiang.

“Cough, cough... rest assured, I am not dead yet,” Hong Qiang

returned. Aunt Lian was supporting him. Even though Hong Qiang had received a serious injury, there was no danger to his life.

Furthermore, at this moment, Aunt Lian had already made Hong Qiang swallow a very precious healing medicine. Adding on that the two of them were both Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, the two of them were able to both heal their own injuries.

“Spare me! Milord, please spare me! I have eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai! I have eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai! Please give me a chance to live!”

Right at this moment, Evildoer Tie crawled out from the crater. He had crawled out from the crater one step at a time. The reason for that was because he did not dare to walk on his feet. At this moment, all of his muscles and bones had been broken apart. He was supporting himself with only his martial power.

He was no match for that mysterious expert. He was absolutely no match for that mysterious expert. At this moment, he had received a serious injury.

“Remember, there are some people who you cannot touch just because you wish to,” That voice sounded again. It still had that deemphasizing tone. However, this allowed everyone to know how extraordinary the person who spoke those words were. He was simply someone who possessed absolute might, might that was capable of causing others to cower without being used.

“I was wrong! I was deeply wrong!” Evildoer Tie began to kowtow repeatedly.

That mysterious expert only said one word. “Scram.”

Evildoer Tie did not dare to hesitate. He immediately got up and escaped without even turning his head around. Soon, he disappeared into the distant horizon.

However, from the beginning till the end, that mysterious expert

had never revealed himself.

At this moment, Aunt Lian, Hong Qiang and the others all turned their gazes to Chu Feng. That was because the words spoken by that mysterious expert made it extremely clear that he had acted for the sake of protecting Chu Feng.

However, they, including even Chu Feng, did not know who it was who had helped him. At the very least, judging from the voice, Chu Feng did not know who it was that had helped him.

However, even Evildoer Tie was defeated with a single strike. This meant that the person that had helped him possessed exceptionally powerful strength. At the very least, he was not a rank one Martial Emperor. This caused Chu Feng to think of a possibility.

The person that had helped him today, could he be that mysterious expert who had also helped them at the Cursed Soil Sect without revealing himself?

At this moment, Chu Feng wanted to clasp his fist to express his thanks. Regardless of who that mysterious expert might be, he had still helped him. Thus, it was only natural for him to express his thanks.

However, before he could do so, a voice transmission entered his ears.

“Chu Feng, I will only help you this once. There will not be a next time. This is my advice to you: do not take on unnecessary risks again.”

After hearing this voice, Chu Feng came to a realization. That was because this voice transmission was very different from the voice he had heard before. Chu Feng recognized this voice. It was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s voice.

It turned out that the person who had helped him was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

This came as an enormous shock to Chu Feng. He had truly never expected that it would be the Weaponry Refinement Immortal who had helped him.

In that case, this shouldn't be a coincidence. Instead... ever since Chu Feng left the Immortal Island, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had been following him for the sake of protecting him.

“Thank you, senior, for saving my life,” Even though Chu Feng already knew who it was, Chu Feng still clasped his fist to express his thanks. However, Chu Feng did not receive any response from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Likely, he had already left.

Chapter 1621 – Staying As Guests

“Chu Feng, who exactly helped us earlier?” Nangong Ya and the others asked together. They all knew that mysterious expert had left. However, that expert’s divine might still lingered in their hearts.

“That is a senior who I know. However, he did not wish to reveal his identity to others. Thus, I’m afraid that I cannot tell everyone who he is. Please forgive me,” Chu Feng explained while smiling. He knew very well that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal did not reveal himself, as he had instead secretly sent a voice transmission to him.

“We understand this. Experts are all like this. Haha...” Nangong Ya laughed tactfully.

“Regardless of who he is, he is extremely powerful. Before him, Evildoer Tie was unable to withstand a single blow. At the very least, he should be a rank two Martial Emperor, right?” Nangong Baihe said.

“I’m afraid that wouldn’t be the case. The way I see it, he should be at least a rank three Martial Emperor,” Nangong Ya said.

“Rank three Martial Emperor? Wouldn’t that mean that he’s as powerful as Lord Clan Chief?” Hearing what Nangong Ya said, Nangong Baihe opened her mouth wide, and incomparable shock shone through her beautiful eyes.

“I have seen Lord Clan Chief’s attacks before. Thus, I know how powerful he is. The aura revealed by that expert earlier was not at all weaker than Lord Clan Chief’s. Thus, his cultivation is most definitely not inferior to Lord Clan Chief’s,” Nangong Ya said.

“Not inferior to Lord Clan Chief? He’s actually that powerful?” Hearing those words, the gaze with which Nangong Baihe looked to Chu Feng changed again. It changed to a very complicated gaze.

She had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

The grand Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief could be said to be one of the most famous grand characters in the Holy Land of Martialism. Not only was he very renowned, he was also extremely powerful.

Thus, Nangong Baihe had not expected that mysterious expert who had helped Chu Feng to be this powerful. Moreover, she had never expected Chu Feng to possess such a powerful backer.

Before, she had only thought that Chu Feng was a rare genius who possessed exceptional talent. However, she had now discovered that not only did Chu Feng possess strength himself, he also possessed an enormously powerful backer. His background was simply unfathomable.

Chu Feng was like a mystery, a frightening mystery.

"But... why didn't that senior kill Evildoer Tie?" The innocent Nangong Moli blinked her large eyes and asked in a confused manner. She had asked the key question.

That Evildoer Tie was someone who had committed countless evil crimes. He was someone who could not be forgiven. Since he had been captured, it was only logical to kill him and not release him.

When even Nangong Moli understood this, how could Chu Feng and the others not understand this?

"Regardless of why he did that, it remains that he has saved our lives today," Aunt Lian smiled. After her battle to the death, she seemed to feel a lot more relieved.

She looked to Chu Feng and said, "The reason why he acted to save us is all because of you, Chu Feng. Thus, in the end, Chu Feng, you have saved us today."

"Chu Feng, in order to express my thanks, you must stay as a guest at our Nangong Imperial Clan. I must entertain you properly

there.”

“That’s right. Chu Feng, you must come to our Nangong Imperial Clan,” In response, Nangong Baihe also echoed.

“Very well. I’ll go,” Chu Feng nodded while smiling. Currently, Chu Feng had offended the Beitang Imperial Clan. Thus, it was not suitable for him to travel alone. If he could stay at the Nangong Imperial Clan temporarily, it would be a pretty good option for the time being.

“Miss Tantai, Senior Hong, the two of you should come too,” Nangong Ya invited them.

“Very well, this old man has never been to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, my injuries will require some time to heal,” Hong Qiang immediately accepted. He also wished to experience the Nangong Imperial Clan. As for Tantai Xue, she did not say anything. However, she nodded her head.

Just like that, Chu Feng and the others did not stop to rest, and instead proceeded directly toward the Nangong Imperial Clan.

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the Nangong Imperial Clan.

What appeared before them was an enormous mountain range. The peaks of the mountains reached the clouds. The mountains continued toward both sides and appeared to be borderless.

This mountain range was not a place where anyone could enter. There was a spirit formation set up by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist around the mountain range. This spirit formation was different from the one around the Yan Clan. It was extremely powerful. Likely, even ordinary rank one Martial Emperors would not be able to break through it.

Following Aunt Lian and the others, Chu Feng entered the mountain range. Right after he entered it, many Nangong Imperial Clansman wearing armor appeared. It was clear that this mountain

range was heavily guarded by many guards.

However, when they saw Aunt Lian and the others, they immediately bowed their heads to greet them. None of them dared to stop Aunt Lian and the others and they even began to open up a path for them to pass through.

While walking through the mountain range, Chu Feng discovered that this mountain range possessed many traps. Furthermore, both the sky and the ground possessed defensive barriers. The defense of this mountain range was many times stronger than that of the Cyanwood Mountain or the World Spiritist Alliance. It was truly worthy of the Nangong Imperial Clan's reputation.

However, with Aunt Lian with them, Chu Feng and the others would naturally not be hindered in the slightest. They walked past that vast mountain range. After passing through it, what appeared before Chu Feng was a vast land filled with beautiful scenery.

The world before Chu Feng was a world surrounded by a mountain range. Enormous red-crowned cranes and giant birds were flying and spiraling through the skies while hooting.

If these birds were to be placed on the Nine Provinces Continent, they would definitely become beast kings that would rule over a region. However, in this place, they were only ordinary little birds, nothing more than birds that people looked at with pleasure.

In the center of this place was a vast city. Not only was that city very large, it was also golden-bright and dazzling. That city was built with gold. All of the bricks and roof tiles were gold. From this, one could imagine how gorgeous that city was.

Evidently, that city was the place where the Nangong Imperial Clansmen lived.

After approaching the city, Chu Feng discovered that there was a spirit formation around it. Furthermore, that spirit formation was

no ordinary defensive formation. Instead, it was an enormously powerful slaughtering formation. This spirit formation did not require world spiritists to activate it. Ordinary martial cultivators were capable of activating it. This spirit formation was many times stronger than the spirit formation around the mountain range.

At this moment, what Chu Feng and the others felt the most of was pressure. This Nangong Imperial Clan gave off an enormous amount of oppression. This sort of oppression was not only because of the Nangong Imperial Clan's powerful spirit formations, the rigid defense that guarded this place or the vast and gorgeous buildings. Mainly, it was because of the people.

Each and every one of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan was emitting an air of arrogance. In this place, their airs of arrogance were magnified by an unbounded amount. After all, this was their territory.

Perhaps the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were unable to sense this sort of air of arrogance. After all, they had all grown up here and had all no doubt gotten used to it.

However, outsiders were able to deeply sense that air of arrogance from this place. They knew right away that this was not a place where ordinary people could approach.

At this moment, both Hong Qiang and Tantai Xue were frowning. Evidently, they were not used to the atmosphere of this place.

Fortunately, Aunt Lian and the others were extremely hospitable to Chu Feng and the others. They treated them as honored guests. This caused the oppressive sensation that they felt to be lessened enormously.

However, even with this being the case, after Hong Qiang managed to improve his health, he immediately went to find Chu Feng and said that he had to leave. This was actually only a single day after they arrived at the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Senior Hong Qiang, you really want to leave? Where do you plan to go?” Chu Feng was reluctant to part when he heard that Hong Qiang wanted to leave.

In the Overlord Domain, there were not a lot of people who he knew. Hong Qiang had protected him on this entire journey. Thus, Chu Feng already had very deep feelings for him. To Chu Feng, Hong Qiang was akin to being his relative. Now that his relative wanted to leave, he would naturally be reluctant to part.

Chapter 1622 – Coldsnow Dagger

“Even though I am not someone with extraordinary talent, I still regard myself as quite a talented individual. I have been a rank nine Half Martial Emperor for many years. However, I have still not yet managed to sense the opportunity to break through to Martial Emperor. This has inevitably caused me to feel somewhat discouraged.”

“However, in these recent days, I have managed to faintly feel the opportunity to break through. Thus, I wish to find a place to enter closed-door training and attempt to break through.”

“As for exactly where I plan to go, I still do not know yet,” Hong Qiang said.

“That is a matter of happiness. Senior, congratulations!” Chu Feng immediately congratulated Hong Qiang.

Martial Emperor, this was not a realm that just anyone could reach.

Even though Martial Emperor and Half Martial Emperor differed in only a single word, the two of them were completely different realms.

In the Holy Land of Martialism, there were a lot of people who managed to reach the Half Martial Emperor realm. However, for many of them, even after training for thousands of years, even when they died, they still would not be able to sense the opportunity to breakthrough into the Martial Emperor realm.

It could be said like this. While peak Half Martial Emperor was merely a step away from Martial Emperor, this step would allow a person to become an immortal should they be able to cross it. However, if one could not cross it, one would remain a mortal.

For Hong Qiang to be able to sense this opportunity to break through, it was an extremely remarkable feat. Not only was this an

opportunity bestowed by the heavens, it was, most importantly, due to Hong Qiang's outstanding talent.

“Don't congratulate me so quickly. It's still hard to say whether or not I'll be able to break through,” Hong Qiang smiled. However, it could be seen that he was very happy. After all, Martial Emperor was a realm that countless people yearned for.

Just like that, Hong Qiang left. Chu Feng, Tantai Xue, Aunt Lian and the others all came to see him off. Before Hong Qiang left, he sent a secret voice transmission to Chu Feng.

“The Nangong Imperial Clan is not a place free from worries. If possible, you shouldn't stay here too long either.”

Chu Feng naturally knew the meaning behind Hong Qiang's words. Regardless of how friendly Aunt Lian, Nangong Ya and the others were toward Chu Feng and Tantai Xue, regardless of how hospitable they were toward them, the young masters and young misses from all the powers and even the guards disliked them. All of them possessed a sort of disdain and even hostility toward outsiders.

Chu Feng would not stay here for long. Merely, it was still not yet time for him to leave. Chu Feng needed a place where he could meticulously study how to use the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation more perfectly, so that there would be a higher chance of success.

However, what Chu Feng needed to do first was to unseal the Natural Oddity that Aunt Lian had outbid Evildoer Tie over and won for him in the Heavenly Law Auction.

That Natural Oddity was sealed by a world spirit formation. However, with Chu Feng's current abilities, it would not be difficult for him to undo the seal.

Chu Feng had already set up a spirit formation and then placed it onto that Natural Oddity. Afterward, he'd put the Natural Oddity

back into his Cosmos Sack and had not bothered with it any further.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was confident that he would be able to undo the seal on the Natural Oddity within a day's time.

In other words, after a day, Chu Feng would be able to take that Natural Oddity out of his Cosmos Sack and refine it directly.

"Lil Xue, what brings you here?" Suddenly, Chu Feng opened the door to his room and cast his gaze outward. At this moment, Tantai Xue had arrived at his residence. Furthermore, she was walking toward him.

"I have come to bid my farewell to you," Tantai Xue said.

"Bid your farewell, are you also going to leave?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart moved slightly as he guessed her intentions.

They had just seen Hong Qiang off together not long ago. If Tantai Xue were to leave now, she could've left with Hong Qiang earlier. Thus, why would she suddenly declare that she wanted to leave after just seeing Hong Qiang off? Could it be that something had happened?

"Mn," Tantai Xue nodded. After she walked into Chu Feng's room, she first closed the door to his room and then set up a spirit formation around it. Only then did she say to him, "I have come here firstly to bid my farewell to you. Secondly, I have a matter that I need your help with."

"What is it?" Chu Feng asked.

"Can you open this for me?" Tantai Xue took out a dagger from her Cosmos Sack. This dagger was the dagger that her adoptive father had left for her, the treasure of the Tantai Family, the Coldsnow Dagger that contained the Ancient Era's aura.

"This Coldsnow Dagger contains a major secret, a secret that no

one knows. It is the long cherished desire of the Tantai Family to open this dagger. It is also the cherished desire of my adoptive father. And now, it is also my cherished desire.”

“Unfortunately, my ability is limited. I am unable to open it. I am not able to open it now and will likely be incapable of opening it in the future. The reason for that is because what this Coldsnow Dagger demands is not one’s cultivation. Rather it’s one talent,” As Tantai Xue spoke, she handed the Coldsnow Dagger to Chu Feng.

“This... I’ll give it a try,” Chu Feng naturally would not refuse her. He accepted the Coldsnow Dagger from Tantai Xue.

Right after the Coldsnow Dagger entered his hand, Chu Feng sensed chilliness, as well as a boundless aura. Chu Feng had already realized that this Coldsnow Dagger was no ordinary treasure. Likely, it should be a weapon. However, it was a weapon that not even Tantai Xue could open. Thus, it would likely not be an ordinary weapon.

Chu Feng firmly held the dagger and it’s sheath and slowly put forth strength to pull them apart. “Clank~~~” That Coldsnow Dagger was pulled partway out of its sheath. At the moment the Coldsnow Dagger was pulled out, a burst of chilliness swept forth. That chilliness was bone-chillingly cold.

At this moment, Chu Feng was able to feel an enormous attractive force from the Coldsnow Dagger. It was trying to merge together with the sheath again. It was resisting Chu Feng’s pull. However, Chu Feng was still able to continue pulling. Even though his speed was extremely slow, he was still pulling the dagger out.

At this moment, half of the Coldsnow Dagger had been pulled out by Chu Feng. Furthermore, Chu Feng was still pulling it out. Soon, he had surpassed the point where Tantai Xue had managed to pull it out previously.

When Tantai Xue saw this scene, her eyes immediately shone. Her gaze that seemed to contain the galaxy was no longer at ease. It

was as if countless stars were rushing forth in her eyes.

Tantai Xue was excited, a rare occasion for her. The reason for her current state of mind was because that Coldsnow Dagger was truly too important to her. If Chu Feng opened it, not only would he be able to accomplish her cherished desire, he would also be able to accomplish her adoptive father's cherished desire. At this moment, all of her hopes were placed onto Chu Feng.

"This Coldsnow Dagger is indeed a treasure," At this moment, Chu Feng started to laugh. The reason why he said that was because he felt the aura of life. This aura was not from Tantai Xue or himself. Rather, it originated from that Coldsnow Dagger.

This Coldsnow Dagger was a living thing. However, it was clearly a weapon, so how could it be living? The only explanation for that would be that it was not an ordinary weapon. Instead, it was a weapon with life.

"Clank, clank, clank~~~"

Finally, Chu Feng managed to pull the Coldsnow Dagger out completely. After the Coldsnow Dagger was pulled out, a ball of light shot out from it. Then, like a sharp sword, it shot toward Chu Feng's forehead. It was planning to enter Chu Feng's brain.

"Woosh~~~"

Faced with that surging ball of light, Chu Feng's footsteps shifted. He quickly turned into a flash of light and arrived behind Tantai Xue.

Chu Feng was not afraid of that ball of light. Instead, he knew that that ball of light possessed extraordinary significance. Likely, it was the secret contained within the Coldsnow Dagger. Merely, this secret belonged to Tantai Xue. Thus, Chu Feng did not wish to know about it. He wanted to have Tantai Xue receive this ball of light.

Tantai Xue also realized Chu Feng's intentions. She did not refuse

him. When that ball of light approached her, she suddenly extended both of her arms forward and grabbed onto it.

“Ying, ying, ying, ying~~~~”

The ball of light was emitting a strange sound and started to struggle. It was trying to get away from Tantai Xue’s control. It was so powerful that Tantai Xue found it difficult to control it too.

“Zzzzz~”

Seeing that the ball of light was about to escape from Tantai Xue’s grasp, Chu Feng immediately released his Divine Lightning and increased his cultivation by two levels to rank two Half Martial Emperor. Then, he stepped forward and began to help Tantai Xue control that ball of light.

Under the combined efforts of the two of them, they finally managed to control the ball of light for the time being. However, they were unable to force it into Tantai Xue’s body. Like that, they became deadlocked with that ball of light.

“Buzz~”

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng opened his World Spirit Gate and said to Her Lady Queen, “Eggy, come out and help us.”

“Help you with what?” Eggy asked lazily. She seemed to be very absent-minded.

“Help get this ball of light into Lil Xue’s body,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you certain?” Eggy asked again.

“What do you mean?” Chu Feng asked in a confused manner.

Chapter 1623 – Chu Feng Attending A Banquet

“Firstly, this weapon is not an ordinary weapon. Before you pulled it open, I did not dare to be certain about that. However, I am now certain that it should be an Imperial Armament. Even though it is not entirely complete, it is still an Imperial Armament. Else, its aura would not be that many times more powerful than that of an Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

“As for that ball of light, it likely contains a treasure. While I am not certain whether or not the treasure is really present, I think that what is contained in the ball of light is the secret to recovering this Imperial Armament.”

“If you were able to recover this Imperial Armament and use it, you would likely become unstoppable. Among all of the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation, there has yet to be anyone with an Imperial Armament, no?”

“Most importantly, this Coldsnow Dagger has chosen you. It is trying to have you become its master. Are you really planning to oppose its decision?” Eggy asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart moved slightly. He had actually also guessed that this Coldsnow Dagger might be an Imperial Armament that was not complete. After hearing what Eggy said, he was even more certain that was the case.

Imperial Armament, what sort of treasure was that? In the Holy Land of Martialism, even Incomplete Imperial Armament copies were rare items that everyone wanted. As for actual Incomplete Imperial Armaments, they were extraordinarily rare items. As for Imperial Armaments, there was no need to mention them. They were truly priceless treasures capable of causing a rain of blood as people fought over them.

However, even when faced with the treasure before him and that unknown secret, even though Chu Feng's heart was moved, he still did not have the slightest bit of selfishness. That was because he knew that this belonged to Tantai Xue, that it was something that belonged to his friend. As such, he could not take it.

Thus, Chu Feng said to Eggy again, "Eggy, just help me."

"Sigh, you are truly an idiot. I don't know what to do with you," Eggy sighed and then walked out from that world spirit gate. Then, she used her enormously powerful strength and stepped forward to help Chu Feng and Tantai Xue. In the end, Eggy still decided to help them.

Once Eggy started helping them, the spirit formation that Tantai Xue had set up started to tremble. Sure enough, Eggy was extremely powerful. Even though her current cultivation was inferior to Chu Feng's and much inferior to Tantai Xue's, her actual strength surpassed both of theirs.

With Eggy's help, that ball of light began to move toward Tantai Xue's forehead. Even though the ball of light was struggling ferociously, it did not possess any offensive functions. As long as it managed to touch Tantai Xue's forehead, it, along with the secret contained within it, would enter Tantai Xue's brain.

"You ungrateful wretch! I've chosen you, yet you actually want me to submit myself to another!?"

Suddenly, a reprimanding voice sounded from that ball of light. Even though this voice did not contain any power, it was very vigorous, and capable of making one's soul tremble. Sure enough, this Coldsnow Dagger possessed life.

"Look, it even talked. It said that it has chosen you. You should stop opposing it," Eggy said with a beaming smile. She was saying those words jokingly. However, Chu Feng knew that she was serious.

“Senior, I’m sorry. You do not belong to me. Your true master is her,” Chu Feng felt very apologetic. That was because, at this moment, he was truly being very ungrateful.

“Humph! You will regret renouncing me!” That ball of light said. Then, with an enormous force, it surged towards Tantai Xue. That ball of light directly entered Tantai Xue’s brain.

After that ball of light entered her brain, Tantai Xue’s body started to emit light. Especially her forehead, which was shining the brightest.

“Are you satisfied now? Tsk~~~” Eggy cast a side eye at Chu Feng, then returned to the world spirit space.

After seeing that the light being emitted by Tantai Xue was declining, Chu Feng smiled a relieved smile.

After a while, the light completely disappeared. Tantai Xue opened her eyes again. After she opened her eyes, the first words she said to Chu Feng was, “Thank you.”

“There’s no need to be this courteous to me. How was it? Is that ball of light useful?” Chu Feng asked while smiling.

“Useful, extremely useful,” Tantai Xue said.

“That’s good then. Here, take this back. I believe the secret contained in that ball of light is related to it,” Chu Feng closed the Coldsnow Dagger and handed it to Tantai Xue.

At this moment, the Coldsnow Dagger no longer possessed that miraculous power. Anyone could pull it out now. However, this Coldsnow Dagger also did not possess any power. The reason for that was because it was incomplete.

Tantai Xue received the Coldsnow Dagger and cautiously put it away. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, I am going to go to the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain.”

“Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain? What sort of place is that?”

Chu Feng asked.

“It’s located in the Overlord Domain. It could be said to be a very famous Forbidden Area in the Holy Land of Martialism. Even though it’s not as famous as the Ancient Era’s Cemetery, the Moonlight Maze or the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, it’s still a Forbidden Area that brings about fear to others.”

“You’re going to such a dangerous place? Could it be that it’s related to the Coldsnow Dagger?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn,” Tantai Xue nodded. Then, she said, “The reason why the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain is considered a Forbidden Area is because there’s a mysterious monstrous beast there by the name of Icesnow Phoenix. The Icesnow Phoenix is extremely mysterious. There are very few records about it even in history. The reason for that is because practically everyone who has seen it, was killed by it.”

“I am going there precisely to find the Icesnow Phoenix. However, you don’t have to worry about me. It will not harm me, as I possess the Coldsnow Dagger,” Tantai Xue said.

“I understand. However, there are always accidents. You must be extra careful,” Chu Feng said.

Suddenly, Tantai Xue said, “Chu Feng, how about you go there with me? After all, if the two of us are to travel together, we’ll be able to look after one another.”

“You have your mission, and I have my own mission too,” Chu Feng refused. The reason he did that was actually for Tantai Xue’s sake. Chu Feng had offended the Beitang Imperial Clan. If he were to travel with Tantai Xue, it would be very dangerous for her. He could not allow himself to harm Tantai Xue.

“Okay then,” Tantai Xue did not say anything else.

Just like this, in one day, Chu Feng had not only seen Hong Qiang off, he had also seen Tantai Xue off. The three people who had

entered into the Overlord Domain together parted with each other just like this.

Worried that Chu Feng might be depressed, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli started to keep close to Chu Feng. Not only did they eat with him, they actually even wanted to sleep with him.

When night came, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli refused to leave. In the end, Nangong Ya used the justification that it was immoral for unmarried men and women to be together to persuade them to leave.

The second day was the same as the first. Before the sky was even bright, they had come to find Chu Feng. However, when afternoon came, they were called away by others. It seemed that something had happened.

After they left, Chu Feng finally managed to have time to himself. He immediately took out the Natural Oddity in his Cosmos Sack. When he saw that the seal on the Natural Oddity had been completely removed, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

Chu Feng assessed the Natural Oddity for a bit. While he would not be able to reach a breakthrough after refining this Natural Oddity, it would provide him a sufficient amount of power. After some time, he might even be able to break through only by training and absorbing the natural energies of the world through the use of a mysterious technique.

Upon thinking about how he would soon be able to become a Half Martial Emperor, Chu Feng became extremely impatient to refine that Natural Oddity. Unfortunately, right at this moment, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli had returned.

They had returned to invite Chu Feng to participate in a gathering, a gathering of the Nangong Imperial Clan's younger generation.

“You said that the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princes and princesses are gathering together? Furthermore, they want to invite me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn, your impressive feat on the Immortal Island has already spread to here. They all wish to meet you,” Nangong Ya said with a smile on his face.

However, at this time, Nangong Baihe spoke against it. “It’s best that you don’t go. They’re not good people. Likely, they have invited you with ulterior motives.”

“You should go. It’s a rare invitation from them. If you are to not go, things might instead be taken poorly,” Nangong Ya said.

“But, if Chu Feng is to go, they will likely make things difficult for him,” Nangong Baihe said.

“There’s no harm, I’ll go have a look,” Right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke calmly with a smile on his face. He did not wish to make things difficult for Nangong Ya. Thus, even though he knew that it might be a Hongmen Banquet, Chu Feng must still attend [said banquet](#).

Hongmen Banquet = Feast at Hong Gate, a banquet set up by Xiang Yu to attempt to murder Liu Bang. In other words, an ill intended banquet with the aim of murdering its guest. {If you’re a Game of Thrones fan, think Red Wedding}

Chapter 1624 – It Really Was A [Hongmen Banquet](#)

“I believe that with my relationship with them, they will not do such a thing. If they are to make things difficult for Chu Feng, we will leave right away. Furthermore, I, Nangong Ya, will have no dealings with them in the future,” Nangong Ya said.

“It’s all good. Come, let’s go,” Chu Feng smiled calmly. He was not concerned.

Afterward, under Nangong Ya’s guidance, Chu Feng and the others arrived at a very flourishing territory. This was the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Eldest Prince, Nangong Tianlong’s, territory.

At this moment, Nangong Ya appeared to be very excited. Evidently, he hoped that Chu Feng would be able to befriend the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princes and princesses.

However, Nangong Baihe had an expression of worry all over her face. Unlike Nangong Ya, she was not fond of the princes and princesses. Thus, to her, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princes and princesses were excessively arrogant and bad people.

After entering the territory, Nangong Ya began to lead them with great familiarity. He directly led Chu Feng into a large palace. At this moment, the entrance of the palace was wide open. Without even entering the palace, Chu Feng was able to tell that there were a lot of people gathered inside.

They were all members of the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation. A thing worthy of mentioning, however, was that the weakest among them had a cultivation of rank one Half Martial Emperor. As for the strongest, his cultivation was that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor.

It could be said that even though they were all members of the

Nangong Imperial Clan's younger generation, they were the outstanding elites among them.

Sure enough, the Nangong Imperial Clan was very powerful. With this many of their younger generation being Half Martial Emperors, they were truly not a power that the Nine Powers could compare with.

After Chu Feng and the others entered the palace hall, that rank five Half Martial Emperor asked with a beaming smile, "Lil' brother Ya, that must be Chu Feng, right?"

That man was sitting on the main seat in the palace hall. Without even being introduced, Chu Feng was able to guess who he was. Likely, he should be the Nangong Imperial Clan's Eldest Prince, Nangong Tianlong.

This Nangong Tianlong possessed a very powerful cultivation. Like Baili Xinghe, he was also a rank five Half Martial Emperor. However, he was inferior to Baili Xinghe. The reason why Chu Feng felt that he was inferior to Baili Xinghe was because of his face. Even though he was not very old and was not even forty years old, and was only in his thirties, his age was still much older than Baili Xinghe's.

Thus, in terms of talent, this Nangong Tianlong was inferior to Baili Xinghe. Likely, his future accomplishment would be inferior to Baili Xinghe's too.

After all, Baili Xinghe was not only a rank five Half Martial Emperor, he was also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

"Big brother Tianlong, this is the Chu Feng who saved me, Baihe and Moli on the Immortal Island," Nangong Ya addressed the Eldest Prince by name in a very intimate manner. Chu Feng had guessed correctly. Sure enough, the person who had spoken was the Nangong Imperial Clan's Eldest Prince, Nangong Tianlong.

"Chu Feng, [let me make introductions for you](#). This is Eldest

Prince Nangong Tianlong. This is Second Prince Nangong Tianhu. This is Third Prince Nangong Tianshi. This is Fourth Princess Nangong Tianfeng.”

Afterwards, Nangong Ya began to introduce the people in the hall to Chu Feng one by one.

Second Prince Nangong Tianhu’s age was about the same as Baili Xinghe’s. However, his cultivation was weaker than Baili Xinghe’s. He was a rank four Half Martial Emperor.

Third Prince Nangong Tianshi was a rank three Half Martial Emperor like Nangong Ya. In fact, there were only three people in the entire palace hall who possessed a cultivation of rank three Half Martial Emperor. This signified that Nangong Ya, although not a prince, was still an outstanding genius in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As for the Fourth Princess, Nangong Tianfeng, her cultivation was inferior to Nangong Ya’s. Her age was about the same as Nangong Baihe’s. She possessed the cultivation of a rank two Half Martial Emperor.

However, the thing that gave Chu Feng the deepest impression was not their cultivation. Rather, it was their attitude. Including that Nangong Tianfeng, the four siblings possessed a very vile attitude toward Chu Feng. Not only did they not greet Chu Feng, they were even sneering with contempt. The gazes they looked to Chu Feng with were like the gazes of someone looking at a clown. They simply did not consider Chu Feng as a guest.

If Chu Feng had only been suspecting it might be the case, then right now, he was certain that this invitation was for a Hongmen Banquet.

“Saved your lives? To be saved by trash like him, you all have truly disgraced our Nangong Imperial Clan’s reputation,” Third Prince Nangong Tianshi sneered.

“Tianshi, what are you saying? How could you call Brother Chu Feng that?”

Hearing those words, Nangong Ya's complexion immediately turned green. He had thought that his relationship with them was ordinarily very good. Thus, he never expected that they would really make things difficult for Chu Feng like this.

“Humph, I knew that they possessed malicious intentions. Chu Feng, there's no need to bother speaking with this ignorant mob anymore. Let's go,” Nangong Baihe pulled Nangong Moli with one hand and, with her other hand, grabbed onto Chu Feng's sleeve. She was planning to leave with them.

The Nangong Imperial Clan's Fourth Princess Nangong Tianfeng smacked the table beside her and stood up. She pointed at Nangong Baihe and bellowed angrily, “Impudent! Nangong Baihe, where do you think this is? Who do you think we are? Are we people who you can insult this way?”

It could be seen that Nangong Tianfeng disliked Nangong Baihe enormously. In other words, she, as the princess, looked down on Nangong Baihe.

“What makes a woman who changes her appearance using world spirit techniques qualified to speak to me like that?” Nangong Baihe sneered. She actually did not fear Nangong Tianfeng in the slightest.

“Bullshit! This princess is a natural beauty. Why would I need to change my appearance with world spirit techniques?” After hearing what Nangong Baihe said, Nangong Tianfeng was so angry that she started gnashing her teeth.

“Fourth Princess, there's no need for you to deny it. Although your appearance is very beautiful, it is most definitely not natural. As for why I said that, I believe you also understand in your heart,” Chu Feng said.

With Chu Feng's eyesight, he was able to see with a single glance that Nangong Tianfeng's appearance had been modified by an expert world spiritist. While she might be able to deceive others, she would not be able to deceive him.

"Look, didn't I say that? Big brother Ya, I told you before, yet you still didn't believe me."

"I said that Nangong Tianfeng left the Nangong Imperial Clan and suddenly returned a lot more beautiful. She most definitely had a world spiritist change her appearance. Now that even Chu Feng has said it, you believe me now, no?" Seeing that Chu Feng had spoken on her behalf, Nangong Baihe became extremely complacent.

"Baihe, stop saying anymore," At this moment, Nangong Ya was frowning deeply. To challenge the princes and princesses was not a wise action. After all, this was Nangong Tianlong's territory.

"All of you, shut up," Nangong Tianlong suddenly shouted angrily. He caused the entire palace hall to tremble. Immediately, everyone grew quiet. It could be seen that the Eldest Prince Nangong Tianlong possessed quite the prestige.

"Big brother Tianlong, if there's nothing else, I shall take my leave," Seeing that the situation was bad, Nangong Ya wanted to bring Chu Feng and the others away.

"Lil' brother Ya, don't be in such a rush to leave. I have things that I need to ask Chu Feng about," Nangong Tianlong said.

However, Nangong Ya did not turn around. He grabbed Chu Feng and Nangong Baihe and began to rapidly walk toward the exit.

"Woosh, woosh~~~"

Suddenly, two figures shifted forward. Then, they landed before Nangong Ya and the others, blocking their path. It was the Second Prince Nangong Tianhu and the Third Prince Nangong Tianshi.

Hongmen banquet = Feast at Hong Gate, a banquet set up by

Xiang Yu to attempt to murder Liu Bang. In other words, an ill intended banquet with the aim of murdering/harming its guest.

Tianlong → Heavenly Dragon, Tianhu → Heavenly Tiger, Tianshi → Heavenly Lion, Tianfeng → Heavenly Phoenix. Great naming sense Bee. Xima: Better lion than turtle, there's at least a change in the 4

Chapter 1625 – Must Apologize

“Nangong Ya, you are truly daring. My big brother is speaking with you, are you deaf or what?” Nangong Tianhu asked with a cold voice.

“Lil’ brother Ya is one of us. Speak to him more courteously,” Nangong Tianlong sighed, then laughed lightly.

“Big brother Tianlong, Chu Feng is my friend. Furthermore, he really did save Baihe’s, Moli’s and my life. Big brother Tianlong, I hope you will not make things difficult for Chu Feng,” Seeing that they could not leave, Nangong Ya hurriedly turned around and began to plead for Chu Feng.

“Lil’ brother Ya, what sort of words are those? Chu Feng is a guest, how could I possibly make things difficult for him? I merely have something that I wish to ask him about,” Nangong Tianlong said as he looked at Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you should know how important one’s appearance is to a woman. However, you still humiliated my fourth sister and insulted her appearance. What was the intention behind your action?”

“I was not insulting or humiliating her. Rather, I merely spoke the truth,” Chu Feng replied.

“Spoke the truth? Based on what are you qualified to determine that my fourth sister has altered her appearance?” Nangong Tianlong asked.

“Based on the fact that I am a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said.

“Someone like you is a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” Nangong Tianfeng sneered. She clearly did not believe him.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng did not bother with superfluous words. With a thought, boundless world spirit power spread forth from him. The golden world spirit power began to hover around Chu Feng. It was incomparably gorgeous. Furthermore, snake-like veined patterns were moving about through them.

“Hiss~~~”

Seeing this scene, many of the people present sucked in a mouthful of cold air. They had heard that Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, as it was only something that they heard, they did not believe it to be true. Today, after having seen Chu Feng for themselves, they still hadn't believed that he was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng had shown them with his actions that they had guessed wrong. Chu Feng being very powerful was definitely not a rumor. Rather, it was a fact.

At the very least, Chu Feng being a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist was a fact.

“Yoh, you have some skills. However, what makes you think that a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist like you is able to determine whether or not the Fourth Princess has altered her appearance?” Right at this moment, a young man suddenly stood up from his seat and walked over.

This man was very young. He possessed a rank two Half Martial Emperor cultivation and possessed quite a decent appearance. It was the sort of appearance that women were fond of. However, there was a trace of sinister intent between his eyebrows.

Most importantly, that young man was wearing a royal world spiritist cloak. Furthermore, there were also snake-like veined patterns on that royal world spiritist cloak. Evidently, his world spirit techniques were much more eye-catching than his cultivation. He was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Who are you? What makes you qualified to question Chu Feng? Chu Feng is someone who was recognized by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal on the Immortal Island. What makes you think you’re qualified to question him?” Nangong Baihe asked. She was able to tell with a single glance that this man was not from their Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Nangong Baihe, you are quite incorrect. This man is indeed qualified to question Chu Feng. What? You said Chu Feng is extraordinary because he has been recognized by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal? No matter how extraordinary he is, will he be as extraordinary as the personal disciple of the White-browed Immortal, who is equally as famous as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal?” asked the Fourth Princess Nangong Tianfeng.

“The White-browed Immortal’s personal disciple?” Hearing those words, Nangong Baihe started to frown, and her gaze began to flicker.

There were a total of Ten Immortals in the Holy Land of Martialism. These Ten Immortals were all Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Furthermore, they were also the only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

The White-browed Immortal was one of them. Thus, he was indeed as equally famous as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

If this young man before them was truly the White-browed Immortal’s personal disciple, then he would not be someone to look down on.

Personal disciple, as the name implies, were disciples who grew up beside the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, people who were personally taught by the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Naturally, their world spirit techniques would be extremely powerful.

“I am Meng Xiaoyan, my master is the White-browed Immortal,”

Right at this moment, that Meng Xiaoyan clasp his hand, introduced himself and greeted Nangong Baihe with a hypocritical smile on his face.

Hearing those words, not to mention Nangong Baihe, even Nangong Ya started to frown. Their opponent was the White-browed Immortal's personal disciple. Evidently, this person had not come with good intentions. At this moment, Nangong Ya seemed to realize why Nangong Tianlong would want to invite Chu Feng over. It was clear that they had planned this beforehand.

However, Chu Feng was as calm as always. He asked, "What you are implying earlier is that Nangong Tianfeng's appearance has not been altered?"

"Her Highness the Fourth Princess is a natural beauty. Naturally, she would not have altered her appearance," Meng Xiaoyan ascertained.

"That Nangong Tianfeng's appearance has clearly been altered. Yet, you insist on saying that it hasn't. Is it truly proper for you to flatter her like this? Will this not be a disgrace toward your master's reputation?" Chu Feng asked.

"Hahaha..." Meng Xiaoyan laughed coldly. Then, he said, "What makes you think you're qualified to question me? Could it be that you want to compete with me in terms of world spirit techniques?"

"Brother, give me, Nangong Ya, some face and not make things difficult for Chu Feng, okay?"

Right at this moment, Nangong Ya suddenly spoke. As he spoke, he actually bent his knee and, with a 'putt,' knelt onto the ground. He said, "All the wrongs were caused by me. Whatever it is that you all wish to do, aim them all at me, Nangong Ya."

"Brother Nangong, what are you doing? Stand up and act like a man. Don't make me, Chu Feng, look down on you," Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately walked to Nangong Ya and lent him an arm

to help him up.

However, Nangong Ya refused to stand back up. Instead, with a smile on his face, he said to Chu Feng, “Brother Chu Feng, it is all my fault. I should have listened to lil’ sister Baihe. I shouldn’t have brought you here. It was me who was too confident in myself. I should be the one to bear all of this.”

“Lil brother Ya, what are you doing? None of us said we’re going to make things difficult for Chu Feng,” Nangong Tianlong laughed lightly.

“While we did not plan to make things difficult for Chu Feng, this Chu Feng instead did not recognize our good intentions, and immediately insulted our fourth sister right after coming here.”

“However, since lil’ brother Ya is pleading for him like this, we’ll give him a chance. We will not make things difficult for him.”

“However, since he dared to insult our fourth sister, we cannot allow him to just leave. While leaving is fine, he must apologize first,” Third Prince Nangong Tianshi said.

“How do you want him to apologize?” Nangong Ya asked.

“Apologize while kowtowing,” Third Prince Nangong Tianshi said.

“You...” Hearing those words, Nangong Ya was so enraged that his expression changed enormously.

“Sigh, there’s no need to kowtow. After all, not only did Chu Feng save lil’ brother Ya’s life, he was also invited here by Aunt Lian. Even if we do not give lil’ brother Ya face today, we must give Aunt Lian face.”

“Chu Feng, it would do if you were to serve each of us a cup of tea. Then, you can leave,” As Nangong Tianlong spoke, he took a glance at Meng Xiaoyan.

Meng Xiaoyan smiled sinisterly. Then, with a light wave of his

sleeve, the teapot and cups all floated into the air. Then, with a shake of his palm, 'bang,' all of the teapot and cups were shattered. The tea water splattered everywhere.

However, those tea water were merely floating in midair and had not landed on the ground.

Chapter 1626 – Chu Feng Serving Tea

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, boundless Snake Mark spirit power began to emit from Meng Xiaoyan’s body like a golden tide. It enveloped the shattered teapot and tea cups, as well as the floating tea water.

Then, he clasped his palms together, and easily fused the shattered tea cups and pots. Then, as light flickered, not only did the tea cups and pots return to their normal state, even the tea water had returned to the teapot.

“Chu Feng, as a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, I believe that you can tell that I have altered the teapot and cups.”

“I am not exaggerating. If you are to touch the spirit formation on them, even if you do not die, you will be crippled. Don’t think that you’ll be able to break through the spirit formation just because you’re a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Actually, you can choose to not serve tea. However, you have spoken rudely towards Her Majesty Fourth Princess. Your action is equivalent to having insulted His Highness. The way I see it, if you wish to save your life, it would be better to kneel and admit your mistake,” Meng Xiaoyan said with a beaming smile. He had spoken the truth. This was an open provocation. He was publicly humiliating Chu Feng.

“If you want someone to apologize, have me, Nangong Ya, apologize on Chu Feng’s behalf,” As Nangong Ya spoke, he was about to kowtow and apologize for Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

However, before Nangong Ya could kowtow, Chu Feng grabbed him and said with an earnest expression, “Brother Nangong, if you continue to act like this, we cannot be brothers anymore.”

“I...” Hearing those words, Nangong Ya was stunned. He did not

know what to do.

“As a man, one should have courage. Such a trivial matter cannot pose a problem for me yet. I, Chu Feng, will take care of it myself,” As Chu Feng spoke, he walked forward. Then, he said, “The tea that I, Chu Feng, serve is not tea that just anyone can drink.”

“Yoh, what arrogance. The only thing I fear is that you will not be able to serve the tea even if you wanted to,” Meng Xiaoyan sneered.

As for Chu Feng, he smiled lightly. Then, he walked forward and looked at the teapot and tea cups that contained slaughtering formations over them. He smiled and said, “The White-browed Immortal’s personal disciple is most definitely someone who has received the personal teachings of the White-browed Immortal. I also wish to see exactly how extraordinary the White-browed Immortal’s techniques are.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and grabbed onto a teapot.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng grabbed onto the teapot, a frantic power surged toward him. Then, following his hand, it entered into his body. It was planning to crush Chu Feng’s body from the inside.

However, how could Chu Feng possibly be crushed this easily? He was already prepared and had set up a defensive formation within his body.

Instantly, Chu Feng’s spirit power surged forth and collided with Meng Xiaoyan’s spirit power. The two streams of spirit power were like two armies as they fought within Chu Feng’s body.

The spirit formation that Meng Xiaoyan had used caused his world spirit technique to become extremely frantic. Even Chu Feng had to admit that the spirit formation Meng Xiaoyan had used was very extraordinary.

Unfortunately, Meng Xiaoyan had yet to master that spirit formation completely. Even though that spirit formation was very powerful, Meng Xiaoyan was unable to fully utilize it. Yet, for the spirit formation that Chu Feng used, not only was it not weaker than Meng Xiaoyan's spirit formation, he had also grasped it completely. He was able to use it with absolute perfection.

This led to Chu Feng's spirit power gaining the upper hand very quickly. Not only did Chu Feng's spirit power completely crush Meng Xiaoyan's spirit power with an unstoppable might, his spirit power also forced Meng Xiaoyan's spirit power out of his body and back into the teapot, shattering the spirit formation on it.

Seeing that his spirit formation had been defeated by Chu Feng, Meng Xiaoyan started to frown. Evidently, he hadn't thought that Chu Feng would possess a strength this powerful. Chu Feng was many times more powerful than he had anticipated.

It must be known that the spirit formation that Chu Feng had defeated was a spirit formation that Meng Xiaoyan had set up himself.

However, what Meng Xiaoyan didn't know was that it was not only him, but even other Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be a match for Chu Feng.

Likely, in the entire Holy Land of Martialism, there would be extremely few Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists who could surpass Chu Feng in terms of world spirit techniques.

After Chu Feng broke Meng Xiaoyan's spirit formation, Chu Feng picked up the teapot and filled several tea cups full of tea.

Then, with a wave of his sleeve, those tea cups landed on Nangong Tianlong, Nangong Tianhu, Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianfeng's tables.

There was even a tea cup that flew toward Meng Xiaoyan.

Merely, the teacup that flew toward Meng Xiaoyan contained a

hidden attack.

“Insignificant talent,” Meng Xiaoyan did not cower before Chu Feng’s attack. He extended his hand and grabbed that tea cup. Easily, he dissolved Chu Feng’s hidden attack.

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong signaled with his eye. Then, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi who had been blocking the path, stepped aside and returned to their respective seats.

“Brother Nangong, let’s go,” Chu Feng pulled the kneeling Nangong Ya up and began to walk toward the exit. Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli followed closely after them.

“Brother Chu Feng, feel free to come again, hahahaha...” At the moment when the four of them were leaving, wave upon wave of ridiculing laughter sounded from behind them.

As the ridiculing laughter sounded from behind them, Chu Feng and the others walked out of Nangong Tianlong’s territory. Only after they left Nangong Tianlong’s territory did Nangong Baihe and Nangong Ya heave a sigh of relief.

“Brother Chu Feng, this is all my fault. I overestimated my relationship with them. I never would have expected that they would actually end up making things difficult for you. It is still lil’ sister Baihe who possesses better eyesight,” At this moment, the expression of shame and guilt on Nangong Ya’s face grew even denser.

“Brother Nangong, don’t say it like this. If what has happened today allowed you to see what sort of people they are, isn’t that even better?”

“There are some words that might be improper for me to say. However, as your brother, I must still say them. That Nangong Tianlong is also not a good fellow either. It’s best that you do not associate yourself with them. Else, I fear that they will one day harm you,” Chu Feng advised.

“I understand. I was muddle-headed before, and actually considered them to be my own brothers. Sigh...” Nangong Ya forced a smile onto his face. At this moment, he was dejected.

Nangong Ya had really considered Nangong Tianlong and the others to be his brothers before. Yet, he now discovered that he had been deceived, deceived by those he considered to be his brothers. That sort of heartache and feeling of distress was something that only he could understand.

“But, I cannot understand why they would target you like this. There is neither hatred nor grievance between you all. It is clearly the first time that you have met them. Why did they do so?” Nangong Ya was extremely confused.

“Why? It’s very simple. It’s because I helped you all. On the Immortal Island, I was in the limelight. That limelight not only overshadowed the Beitang Imperial Clan, it has also overshadowed you all.”

“They did what they did for the purpose of letting me know that I, Chu Feng, am still not the strongest. They want me to know that, when compared to them, I am still very small and weak.”

“They never planned to befriend me by inviting me over today. Their purpose was to establish their might. Establishing one’s might does not require one to possess hatred or grievance toward another. All they’re doing is making people that they feel to be a threat to them bow before them in fear,” Chu Feng said.

“They are too excessive! As princes and princesses, how could they treat a guest this rudely?”

“I’m going to find Aunt Lian. I’ll have her uphold justice for us. After my father returns, I am also going to speak to him of this matter.”

“Big brother Ya, you must also tell your father about this so that he can uphold justice for us. We absolutely cannot let what has

happened today slide,” Nangong Baihe said angrily.

“Forget about it,” However, right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke indifferently.

Chapter 1627 – Face Covered With Tea

“Forget about it? Chu Feng, how could we just forget about it like this? You are our Nangong Imperial Clan’s honored guest. You should not have received such a humiliation,” Nangong Baihe said.

“Baihe. I, Chu Feng, am not a member of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Even if they don’t like me, what can they possibly do to me? After a couple of days, I’ll be leaving.”

“However, you all are different. You all will still have to live in the Nangong Imperial Clan. It’d be best for you to not go against them too badly. Even if you don’t care about yourself, you should still think for your little sister’s sake,” Chu Feng looked to Nangong Moli.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Baihe became silent. It was true. To her, Nangong Moli’s future outlook was many times more important than her own.

“But, you’ve offended them today. I fear that with their temperament, they will not let you go,” Nangong Ya said.

“So what? There are a lot of people who want to kill me. I don’t mind having a couple more. However, those who chase after me to kill me will, sooner or later, pay the price,” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

Then, he said, “Come, let’s go. Let’s return and go eat something. Seeing all that delicious food on their tables has made me a bit hungry.”

As Chu Feng spoke of this, Chu Feng began to walk toward his residence. His mood was extremely good. He had not been affected by what had happened earlier at all.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe looked to one another. The guilt and shame that they felt in their hearts lessened a lot. They never expected that Chu Feng would be

such an upstanding person. Even encountering this sort of thing, he was still able to not take it to heart.

At the same time, in the Eldest Prince Nangong Tianlong's territory. Everyone was still present.

“Brother Meng, it seems that your spirit formations are not as powerful as you anticipated them to be. How come it didn't manage to injure Chu Feng at all?” Nangong Tianlong asked. At this moment, there was a trace of displeasure on his face.

“Eldest Prince, please rest assured. How could Chu Feng possibly be able to receive my spirit formation without consequences? I dare to guarantee that Chu Feng has already been injured. After he returns, he will be suffering from pain. He will not be able to recover from it for a short period of time. Likely, even his cultivation will be damaged,” Meng Xiaoyan said.

“That would be for the best,” Nangong Tianlong nodded, satisfied. Then, he looked to the teacup on the table, and a smile emerged on his face. He picked up the teacup and said, “Let's drink. How could we waste the tea that Chu Feng served us to apologize?”

“What big brother said is correct. Drink!” In response, Nangong Tianhu, Nangong Tianshi, Nangong Tianfeng and Meng Xiaoyan also picked up their teacups that had been served to them by Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

However, right at this moment, the tea water in the teacups suddenly rushed out from the teacups and exploded like a waterfall, splattering all over Nangong Tianlong and the others' faces.

Due to the fact that the tea water in the teacup had been tampered with, the water that had splattered out was not simply a cup of water. Rather, there was as much as a barrel of water.

Furthermore, Nangong Tianlong and the others were caught off guard. Thus, without a drop remaining, all of the tea water splattered onto their faces and bodies.

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong, his three siblings and Meng Xiaoyan were all drenched with water. Their faces, their bodies and their hair were all covered with tea leaves. They had an extremely sorry appearance. It was extremely humiliating.

“This...” At this moment, everyone present were stunned as they saw the appearances of Nangong Tianlong and the others. Exactly what had happened? How come they had turned into such a state when they were trying to drink their cups of tea?

“Bang~~~~”

Suddenly, Nangong Tianlong crushed the teacup in his hand. He looked to Meng Xiaoyan and shouted with enormous anger, “Meng Xiaoyan, what is the meaning of this?”

It was not only Nangong Tianlong that was enraged. Nangong Tianhu, Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianfeng were also enraged.

Who were they? They were all Half Martial Emperors. How could ordinary water possibly be able to splatter onto their bodies?

It was evident that the water had been altered by a spirit formation. Meng Xiaoyan was the only person capable of doing such a thing. After all, he was the only person who had altered the teapot and teacups.

“You’re... you’re wrongly accusing me. It’s not me. If I were the one who did that, why would I put myself in such a state?” Meng Xiaoyan extended his hands and wiped away the tea water and tea leaves that covered his body. He had an expression of being wrongly accused.

“If it’s not you, who else could it be? You were the only one who touched the teacups,” Nangong Tianfeng was so enraged that her

little face turned very red. As the princess, what she cared about the most was her image. Yet, at this moment, her image was completely ruined.

“But, there’s no reason for me to harm you all,” At this moment, Meng Xiaoyan was trying his best to excuse himself.

“No, it’s not only Meng Xiaoyan who touched the teacups, Chu Feng also touched them,” Nangong Tianshi said.

“Chu Feng shouldn’t have touched them. He merely poured tea into the teacups, and did not use his hands to touch them,” Nangong Tianfeng said.

“That’s right. The teacups are completely fine. What changed was the tea water in the teacups. It’s most definitely that Chu Feng. He is definitely the one behind this,” Nangong Tianhu said.

“He merely touched the teapot, yet was able to secretly tamper with the tea water within the teapot. Furthermore, not only did we not discover it, even Brother Meng, disciple of White-browed Immortal, did not discover it.”

“No wonder Chu Feng declared earlier that the tea that he served was not something that just anyone could drink. Turns out that he had actually already plotted against us,” Nangong Tianlong said.

“Right, he said those words before. Damn it, an unknown brat actually dared to behave this atrociously in our Nangong Imperial Clan. He is truly courting death!” Hearing what Nangong Tianlong said, Nangong Tianfeng and the others all firmly believed that it was Chu Feng’s doing.

In fact, it was not only them that believed that it was Chu Feng’s doing. Even Meng Xiaoyan believed it to be Chu Feng’s doing. However, at this moment, he had a very ugly expression on his face. The reason for that was because this would mean that he had been the loser in the competition of world spirit techniques between him and Chu Feng.

“Hahahaha...” Right at this moment when everyone was gnashing their teeth in anger, Nangong Tianlong suddenly laughed. Then, he said, “Chu Feng, is it? Interesting.”

“Big brother, I’ll go and bring him back right away. You can handle the punishment,” Suddenly, Nangong Tianhu stood up.

“Let it be. After all, he is a guest invited by Aunt Lian. I’m afraid it is out of question to do anything to him in the clan,” Nangong Tianlong shook his head.

“So what if it’s Aunt Lian? She’s nothing more than a widow who has lost her husband and daughter. What makes her qualified to meddle in our business?” Nangong Tianfeng said.

“There are some things you don’t understand. Aunt Lian is not frightening. However, the person behind her is,” Nangong Tianlong said.

After hearing what Nangong Tianlong said, Nangong Tianfeng grew quiet. It was not only her, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi also went silent.

The person behind Aunt Lian was indeed a person who they could not afford to provoke. Not to mention them, even their father wouldn’t be willing to provoke that person either.

“What do we do then? Are we going to let him get away just like this?” Nangong Tianshi asked with a tone of unwillingness.

“Let him get away? Heh... how could we possibly allow that?”

“He is nothing more than a brat who doesn’t know the immensity of heaven and earth. We can take our time to slowly toy with him.”

“Thus, there’s no need to be so anxious to take care of him. Sooner or later, I’ll let him know the consequences of opposing us.” As Nangong Tianlong said those words, a sinister light flashed through his eyes.

Chapter 1628 – Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet

Inside the Nangong Imperial Clan, on a mountain peak that penetrated through the clouds, stood a very magnificent building. Standing on top of that building, one could overlook the entire Nangong Imperial Clan and have a panoramic view of the vast building complex.

At this moment, a middle-aged man was standing on top of this building. He was wearing the apparel of the Nangong Imperial Clan, and he emitted the extraordinary aura of a monarch.

This person was the Nangong Imperial Clan's current Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou. He was a rank three Martial Emperor.

At this moment, there were two men standing behind him. The two of them were both people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, they were both Martial Emperors. Merely, when compared to Nangong Beidou, the two of them appeared to be a lot weaker. After all, they only possessed cultivations of rank one Martial Emperors.

Perhaps they could be considered as top level experts in the Holy Land of Martialism, existences akin to gods. However, when standing beside Nangong Beidou, they appeared to be extremely tiny.

These two men were, respectively, Nangong Huayi and Nangong Rongsheng. They were Nangong Beidou's two trusted aides.

Presently, there were sixty-one old men standing opposite Nangong Beidou. These sixty-one old men were all wearing royal world spiritist cloaks.

Sixty among them had snake-like veined patterns moving through their royal world spiritist cloaks. As for the leader of the group, his royal world spiritist cloak actually possessed dragon-like veined patterns.

This old man was not only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he also possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Emperor.

Furthermore, he had a very distinguished appearance. Even though he had a head full of black hair, he had a pair of white eyebrows. Furthermore, his eyebrows were very eye-catching; they were extremely long. As his eyebrows dangled downward, they actually reached his heels.

Evidently, this person was one of the Holy Land of Martialism's famous Ten Immortals, White-browed Immortal.

"Congratulations Brother White-browed, on finally breaking through," Nangong Beidou congratulated him as he smiled.

"This old man was only able to break through to rank two Martial Emperor with the thanks of Clan Chief Nangong's help," White-browed Immortal said with a smile.

"We are already family now. If you still act this courteously toward me, you will truly be regarding me as an outsider," Nangong Beidou said.

"Clan Chief Nangong, you don't have to worry about this. Even though my bunch of friends and I are merely nominal elders here, we will definitely do our utmost for the Nangong Imperial Clan," White-browed Immortal promised.

"It is the fortune of our Nangong Imperial Clan to obtain the assistance of White-browed Immortal and the various world spiritists. Please rest assured, I will definitely obtain the thing that you all need as soon as possible," Nangong Beidou said.

Suddenly, a peak Half Martial Emperor level Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist asked, "Lord Clan Chief, I have heard of rumors of one thing. I wonder if that rumor is true or not."

"There's no harm in asking," Nangong Beidou said.

"I have heard that when the people from the Nangong Imperial

Clan who possess the densest Imperial Bloodline reach a breakthrough, they will cause an abnormal sign of a golden dragon to break through the skies. This abnormal sign will be so spectacular that it will be much more magnificent than the abnormal signs caused by Divine Bodies. Lord Clan Chief, is that true or not?" The man asked.

"Divine Bodies are inferior to us Imperial Bloodlines to begin with. Thus, that rumor is naturally true," Nangong Beidou replied complacently.

"In that case, Lord Clan Chief, might there be anyone in the Nangong Imperial Clan who has managed to create such an abnormal sign?" The man continued to ask.

"Heh, not to mention people of our generation, even the younger generation, my sons and daughter, are also capable of that," Nangong Beidou replied.

"That would be truly great. I have seen the abnormal sign caused by Divine Bodies several times, and I have wanted to see the abnormal sign caused by Imperial Bloodlines for a long time now. Finally, the opportunity to do so has presented itself," Hearing what Nangong Beidou said, the man became extremely excited.

"Speaking of it, this old man has never seen the Imperial Bloodline's abnormal sign either. Now that I've heard you all talking about it, I too wish to experience it," White-browed Immortal said with a smile.

"If Immortal wishes to see the abnormal sign caused by those who possess Imperial Bloodlines, it would not be too hard either. As far as I know, His Highness the Third Prince is about to break through. I believe that he will be able to break through in the coming days," One of the rank one Martial Emperors behind Nangong Beidou, Nangong Huayi, said.

Not only was Nangong Huayi one of Nangong Beidou's trusted aides, he was also in charge of protecting the Third Prince,

Nangong Tianshi. It could be said that whenever the Third Prince left the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Huayi would always follow him.

Thus, Nangong Huayi knew the state of the Third Prince even better than his father Nangong Beidou.

“Huayi, Tianshi is really about to breakthrough?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Reporting to Lord Clan Chief, His Highness the Third Prince is about to break through. He will definitely break through within a month’s time,” Nangong Huayi replied.

“Since White-browed Immortal wishes to see, there’s no need for us to wait. Have Tianshi break through today,” As Nangong Beidou spoke, he took out a golden medicinal pellet.

Right after that golden medicinal pellet appeared, a very strong natural energy immediately spread out from it. Upon closer inspection, one could see that there was a golden dragon galloping within that golden medicinal pellet.

That was the Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet. It did not possess any trace of berserk energy. However, it contained a very dense and strong natural energy. The Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet was a treasure. Especially to those who possessed Inherited Bloodlines, the Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet was a godly cultivation medicine.

As Nangong Huayi saw the Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet, his eyes shone. He felt joy for the Third Prince. Immediately afterward, he hurriedly received it from Nangong Beidou. Then, with a movement of his body, he left the building and directly arrived at the Eldest Prince Nangong Tianlong’s territory.

“Uncle Huayi, what brings you here?”

At that moment, everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan, including that Meng Xiaoyan, were still there. They were all surprised to see Nangong Huayi’s arrival.

“Eldest Prince, White-browed Immortal has said that he wishes to see the abnormal sign caused when someone from our Nangong Imperial Clan manages to break through.”

“Lord Clan Chief had heard that His Highness Third Prince is about to break through. Thus, he has bestowed a Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet for His Highness Third Prince to use to train with so that he can break through today, and the White-browed Immortal and the other world spiritists could have a feast for their eyes,” As Nangong Huayi spoke, he took out the Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet.

“Third brother, you are truly fortunate. You actually managed to have Lord Father personally bestow you a Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet. You must know that I have begged him for a Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet for a very long time, yet Lord Father refuses to give me one regardless.” Seeing that Coiling Dragon Golden Pellet, Fourth Princess Nangong Tianfeng was extremely jealous.

When even she had become jealous, the other people from the Nangong Imperial Clan present were naturally incomparably jealous. They were all on the verge of drooling.

Golden Coiling Dragon Pellets were treasures that not even princes and princesses could use as they wished. Thus, for the rest of them, they would simply have no chance to obtain a Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet.

“So that’s the case. Tianshi, take this along with the pellet,” After learning of what was happening, Nangong Tianlong took out a golden medicinal pellet and handed it to Nangong Tianshi.

“Thank you big brother. Big brother, you are truly good to me. Hehe...” When Nangong Tianshi saw the medicinal pellet handed to him by Nangong Tianlong, he started to grin from ear to ear. The value of the medicinal pellet his big brother had handed him could be said to be on par with the Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet. It was also a treasure of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Upon taking that medicinal pellet, the abnormal sign one would cause when obtaining a breakthrough would be exceptionally magnificent and powerful. When that abnormal sign returned into one's body, one's Inherited Bloodline would also strengthen. That medicinal pellet was a treasure that countless people in the Nangong Imperial Clan longed for.

“We are blood brothers. There's no need for you to regard me as an outsider. Go, train properly so that you can reach a breakthrough tonight. You also know that the soaring golden dragon is most spectacular at night.”

Nangong Tianlong patted Nangong Tianshi's shoulder. Even though he was extremely harsh toward outsiders, he was extremely loving toward his blood younger brother.

Chapter 1629 – Chu Feng Breakthrough

“Big brother, please rest assured. I will definitely not let our Nangong Imperial Clan lose face. It’s time for them to experience how powerful our Nangong Imperial Clan is,” Nangong Tianshi had a very happy expression on his face. He was very quick-witted. Thus, he knew that this was a rare opportunity.

If his performance was good, then not only would he allow the White-browed Immortal to enjoy a feast with his eyes, he would also be able to obtain the good graces of his father. If he were to obtain the good graces of his father, he would be able to obtain even more cultivation resources, more than even his siblings. Thus, Nangong Tianshi knew that this was the opportunity to display himself that he must seize properly.

Just like that, Nangong Tianshi received the two precious medicinal pellets and returned to his own residence. He was preparing to refine the two medicinal pellets and attempt to breakthrough to rank four Half Martial Emperor.

Furthermore, he planned to successfully break through after the sky had darkened and before dawn arrived so that the abnormal sign caused by his breakthrough would be able to broaden White-browed Immortal and the others’ horizons.

It was as Nangong Tianlong had said. The abnormal sign was most spectacular at night. Thus, Nangong Tianshi felt that he would only be able to prove himself and make his father think more highly of him by breaking through at night.

However, it was unknown who it was that possessed such a loudmouth, but this matter was soon spread around instantly.

All of a sudden, many people from the Nangong Imperial Clan stopped what they were doing. They found places to sit, and some even prepared food, drinks, fruits, refreshments and such as they began to wait for Nangong Tianshi’s breakthrough. It was as if

they were watching a show. They all wished to admire the magnificent sight of a golden dragon soaring into the sky.

After all, the abnormal sign of a golden dragon soaring into the sky was not something that everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan could trigger. Thus, to them, this was also a feast for their eyes.

Time passed very quickly. In merely the blink of an eye, the sky had darkened. When night fell, the crowd became even more excited and possessed even more anticipation.

However, no one at Chu Feng's residence knew about this matter. Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe both felt guilty and ashamed for what had happened today. Thus, they had been accompanying Chu Feng the entire time, drinking wine and chatting with him so that they could make up to him.

They only left Chu Feng's residence when night fell. After Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli left his place, Chu Feng took out that Natural Oddity.

As he looked at the Natural Oddity, the corners of Chu Feng's mouth lifted into a smile. He first closed the doors to his room and then set up three layers of spirit formations around the room.

The first spirit formation layer was to prevent others from intruding.

The second spirit formation layer was a concealing formation. Even if someone were to break through the first spirit formation layer, they would not be able to see Chu Feng from the outside. Thus, they would naturally not be able to disturb Chu Feng.

As for the third spirit formation layer, it was set up by Chu Feng for the sake of guarding against the unexpected.

As for the use of this spirit formation, it was to prevent the abnormal sign that would be created by his breakthrough from rushing out of this place and into the sky.

Chu Feng felt that he should not be able to breakthrough by only refining this Natural Oddity. However, just in case, he still set up the spirit formation.

The reason for that was because he knew that if he were to accidentally break through, he would definitely trigger an abnormal sign. As for this place, what sort of place was it? This was the Nangong Imperial Clan.

If the abnormal sign he triggered was to be discovered by the Nangong Imperial Clan, it would be fine if evil was not born in their hearts. However, if evil was to be born into their hearts, then Chu Feng would likely not be able to leave this place.

That was the reason why Chu Feng set up the third spirit formation. As long as he possessed this spirit formation, even if Chu Feng were to cause an abnormal sign, the abnormal sign would be sealed within his house. As long as outsiders didn't see it, it would not matter.

After finishing his preparations, Chu Feng sat cross-legged on the floor and began to refine the Natural Oddity.

The Natural Oddity did not contain a lot of natural energy. However, if an ordinary person were to attempt to refine it, they would simply not be able to do so. After all, Natural Oddities were different from that Nangong Tianshi's Coiling Dragon Golden Pellet. The energies contained within the Coiling Dragon Golden Pellet were pure and very gentle. Refining the energy within it would only be beneficial to one's body and would not cause any harm.

However, the energy contained within Natural Oddities was extremely berserk. Not to mention ordinary people, even Martial Emperors would not dare to refine them. However, Chu Feng dared to do so. Furthermore, not only did he dare to do so, the speed at which he refined the energy was also extremely fast.

In the blink of an eye, practically all of the natural energy

contained within the Natural Oddity had been refined by Chu Feng. It was as Chu Feng had anticipated; after he refined the energy, his dantian felt a lot more full. Yet, he was still unable to reach a breakthrough.

“Sigh, you gluttonous fellows, can’t you all eat a bit less?”

Chu Feng opened his eyes and then sighed helplessly. Back then, Chu Feng had experienced the thrill of having his cultivation increase with rapid speed when his Divine Lightnings woke, but what he was experiencing now was the depression of the incomparable difficulty of increasing his cultivation by a single level.

“This sensation,” However, right at this moment, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Immediately afterward, he closed his eyes and began to train.

Chu Feng had felt a trace of opportunity. It was actually the opportunity to break through. This was completely different from the way he had cultivated before. In the past, Chu Feng would be able to reach a breakthrough just by refining sufficient amounts of natural energy and sufficiently feeding the Divine Lightnings within his dantian. There was simply no need for anything like feeling for opportunities to break through.

However, it was different this time around. Chu Feng had managed to feel an opportunity to break through. Most importantly, if Chu Feng were able to capture this opportunity, he would be able to reach a breakthrough immediately. Even though the natural energy he refined had not yet reached the degree that would allow him to break through, Chu Feng would still be able to break through.

Coming quickly and going quickly. Ordinary people were simply unable to grasp this opportunity to break through, much less comprehend it.

However, with Chu Feng’s comprehension ability, he was able to

easily capture this opportunity to break through. Furthermore, he managed to comprehend it in a flash, allowing himself to break through instantly.

“Wuuuaooouuu~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, a bellow suddenly sounded. After that, Chu Feng’s gown started to flutter. Then, an orange bolt of lightning flew out from within him and tried to soar into the sky.

However, right after it left Chu Feng’s body, it was stopped by the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up beforehand, and it was knocked back. Then, like a trapped beast, it began to fly all over the place as it tried to open the spirit formation to leave Chu Feng’s residence.

Following that, five more consecutive bolts of lightning flew out from Chu Feng’s body. However, like the orange bolt of lightning before them, they were all stopped by Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

Chu Feng knew that the orange, purple, red, black, blue and gold lightnings were all not ordinary lightnings. Instead, they were six enormous lightning beasts.

Merely, due to the fact that they were trapped in such a small place, they were unable to reveal their true appearances. Even though they were unable to reveal their true appearances, Chu Feng was still able to sense their destructive power and imposing aura that disregarded all living things.

“Fortunately, this spirit formation worked, else... if you all were to escape outside, it would be extremely bad.”

Chu Feng laughed mischievously. He exclaimed in admiration for himself. If it wasn’t for the fact that he had decided to set up that spirit formation earlier in order to guard against the unexpected, he would likely have caused an enormous disaster now.

After all, if these six enormous lightning beasts were to escape

outside and gallop in the sky above the Nangong Imperial Clan, they would definitely cause unrest in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chu Feng knew very well that what he possessed was also an Inherited Bloodline. Furthermore, it was an Inherited Bloodline which could suppress Imperial Bloodlines.

Thus, if these six enormous lightning beasts of his were to escape, it would not only be a visual shock to the Nangong Imperial Clan, but they would bring about oppression to the depths of the souls of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen.

Likely, the Nangong Imperial Clan would view Chu Feng as a threat. At that time, it would no longer be a dispute between members of the younger generation. Rather, Chu Feng would really be facing an imminent catastrophe.

Chapter 1630 – Soaring Golden Dragon

“Sigh, speaking of it, this sort of sensation is extremely good.”

As Chu Feng watched the six enormous lightning beasts struggle in his spirit formation without being able to do anything to it, Chu Feng felt a sense of satisfaction at being able to control them.

This sort of sense of satisfaction made Chu Feng feel extremely comfortable. Furthermore, he was also looking forward to the time when these six enormous lightning beasts would return to his body and fuse with his blood.

At that time, not only would Chu Feng’s cultivation officially step into that of a Half Martial Emperor, becoming a rank one Half Martial Emperor and gaining control of Emperor-level martial power...

Chu Feng was also looking forward to whether or not he would be able to obtain a new ability on par with the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings.

If he were able to obtain a new ability, would his cultivation be able to increase by another level?

Would he be able to instantly increase his cultivation to rank four Half Martial Emperor from rank one Half Martial Emperor with the assistance from the Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and that potential new ability?

When thinking about this, the expression of anticipation on Chu Feng’s face grew more and more intense. If everything were to happen as he wished, then it would mean that Chu Feng would become even stronger.

Afterward, Chu Feng suddenly laid down on the ground and placed his hands behind his head like a pillow. He began to admire the six different colored bolts of lightning that were surging all over the place with the desire to rush out of his spirit formation.

Chu Feng's current appearance was truly one of leisure.

Right at this moment, Eggy's voice sounded. "Let this Queen out. This Queen also wants to see."

After hearing Eggy's voice, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a thought, he opened his world spirit gate. Differently from how Her Lady Queen usually walked out gracefully from the world spirit gate, this time around, she actually hopped out. From this, it could be seen how excited she was.

"Wow, I finally get to see your Inherited Bloodline at a close distance. This is quite extraordinary."

After Eggy came out, her beautiful pair of eyes were blinking non-stop... they were on the verge of shining. When she saw Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline, she was even more excited than Chu Feng. Like a mischievous little girl, Eggy actually began to run around the limited space. She was actually trying to catch the six enormous lightning beasts.

While the might displayed by the six enormous lightning beasts was extremely frightening, they did not possess any actual power. Otherwise, how could Chu Feng's spirit formation possibly contain them? After all, their actual powers were capable of destroying the world.

In other words, while they were Divine Lightnings, they were not the real Divine Lightnings. Rather, they were empty facades. Thus, they were naturally unable to cause harm to Her Lady Queen.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen asked, "Chu Feng, can you open the spirit formation?"

"Why?" Chu Feng asked.

"I want to have them go out so that I can see the appearance of the crowd from the Nangong Imperial Clan after they see your Inherited Bloodline," As Eggy said these words, she closed her eyes. Her trembling eyelashes seemed to be telling Chu Feng that

she was imagining the appearances of the crowd from the Nangong Imperial Clan when that happened.

“Milady Queen, do you wish to kill me?” Chu Feng asked helplessly.

“Haha, I was merely joking. Look at how scared you’ve become, scaredy cat.” Her Lady Queen suddenly opened her eyes and arrived before Chu Feng while jumping and hopping. She actually extended her lily-white hand and ruthlessly flicked Chu Feng’s forehead.

Faced with such a mischievous Queen, instead of feeling fed up, Chu Feng felt very fond of her. He patted the ground beside him and said, “Come, let’s lie down and watch them together.”

“No can do. This Queen is such a noble person, how could I lie on the filthy ground like you?” Not only did Her Lady Queen lift her little head up proudly, she even placed her hands around her waist mischievously.

Chu Feng waved his palm. Then, a layer of golden spirit power formed a golden world spirit blanket. As if it were an actual blanket, that world spirit blanket covered the ground beside Chu Feng.

“Milady Queen, please,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s more like it,” Seeing that, Eggy smiled, satisfied. Then, she lay down beside Chu Feng and took the same posture as him, with her hands behind her head as she watched the six Divine Lightnings. In fact, her posture was even more exaggerated than Chu Feng’s. She actually lifted her legs and crossed them one over the other. Her appearance was truly unrestrained.

“Eggy, which color of these six different Divine Lightnings do you like the most?” Chu Feng asked.

“The black one,” Eggy said without the slightest hesitation.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng was confused. Generally, girls would be

fond of bright colors. The black color was definitely not a bright color at all. His Lady Queen was truly different from the masses.

“That’s because black is vicious. It resembles this Queen,” Eggy smiled sweetly. Then, she asked, “What about you? Which color do you like the most?”

“Me? I also like black the most,” Chu Feng said.

“Why’s that?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng did not answer her and suddenly got up. He caught up to the black bolt of lightning and gently caressed it. His appearance simply did not look like that of someone caressing a bolt of lightning. Rather, it was more like the appearance of someone caressing a beautiful woman. He caressed it with many strokes and only stopped when the black lightning galloped faster. Then, with a mischievous smile, he turned around and said, “Because black is vicious and resembles you.”

“Damn you, you’ve truly grown courageous to actually dare to take advantage of this Queen,” Her Lady Queen managed to react. With a thought, boundless Asura Power surged forth from her body.

“Milady Queen, I was wrong,” Chu Feng’s voice begging for forgiveness immediately sounded in the spirit formation.

.....

While Chu Feng had sealed himself in his room, he did not know what was happening outside. At this moment, Nangong Tianshi had reached a breakthrough. Furthermore, at the moment when he broke through, a golden dragon had also soared into the sky and reached the horizon from the location where he was training.

Once that golden dragon appeared, the entire night sky was illuminated by it. Golden light illuminated everything. It was as if the sun had appeared in the sky. It was extremely dazzling.

Not only was this golden dragon enormous, it also emitted a very powerful might. As it traveled through the horizon, it gave off the imposing might of looking down on all living things. One would feel reverence for it just by looking at it.

“It appeared. It finally appeared. Our Nangong Imperial Clan’s Imperial Bloodline, the Soaring Golden Dragon appeared.”

At this moment, the entire Nangong Imperial Clan was filled with matchless excitement. As they saw that dazzling golden dragon, their blood began to boil.

After all, that dragon was the sign of their pride, their Imperial Bloodline that they considered to be even more powerful than Divine Bodies.

“Nangong!”

“Nangong!”

“Nangong!”

“Nangong!”

“Nangong.....”

It was unknown who started to shout the clan name of the Nangong Imperial Clan. However, after that first person shouted ‘Nangong’, more and more Nangong Imperial Clansmen began to shout it too. In an instant, cries of ‘Nangong!’ began to resonate through the entire Nangong Imperial Clan.

At the moment when the crowd from the Nangong Imperial Clan were all cheering excitedly for the abnormal sign of the soaring golden dragon, Chu Feng was starting to feel distressed.

“Eggy, something’s wrong,” Chu Feng stared at the six surging bolts of lightning and frowned deeply.

Chapter 1631 – The Appearance Of The Divine Lightnings

“What’s wrong? You’re talking about that that bunch of Nangong Imperial Clan’s dogs who are barking outside nonstop? Did something happen?” Eggy had also managed to hear the sound of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen outside. She asked him because she thought that what Chu Feng meant by something wrong might be that.

“No, it’s the six Divine Lightnings which are acting weird.”

“Even if they must leave my body in order to create an abnormal sign, they shouldn’t have left my body for this long. Logically, they should have returned to my body already.”

“However, I feel that not only do they not have the intention to return my body, their desire to rush out of this spirit formation has become even stronger,” Chu Feng said.

“Now that you speak of it, that’s true. Earlier, they seemed to have gradually calmed down. However, ever since those people from the Nangong Imperial Clan started to shout inconsiderately, they became even more excited and even frantic at that. Could it be that the shouting from the Nangong Imperial Clan has angered them?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Eggy also discovered that something was wrong.

After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng used his Heaven’s Eyes to look outside. When he saw the golden dragon that was spiraling through the skies, his expression immediately changed. He said, “Oh no!”

“What’s wrong?” Eggy was not in Chu Feng’s body. Thus, she could not see what Chu Feng had seen.

“There’s a golden dragon outside that is emitting Imperial Bloodline energy. Likely, someone from the Nangong Imperial

Clan has reached a breakthrough and triggered an abnormal sign in the form of that golden dragon.”

“As for my Inherited Bloodline, it is more powerful than that golden dragon. Likely, my bloodline is unable to stand an existence weaker than them strutting around outside while they are trapped here. That’s why they have gotten angry.”

“If my guess is correct, they want to go out and take care of that golden dragon,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you kidding? If that’s the case, the situation is extremely bad. What do we do? Is there a way to have your Divine Lightnings return to your body?” Eggy asked.

“Wuuuaouu~~~”

Right at this moment, the six Divine Lightnings roared simultaneously. Then, they released enormously powerful auras and began to pound against Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

Being pounded against by those six Divine Lightnings in such a frantic manner, Chu Feng’s spirit formation that had been able to completely contain them before actually started to sway left and right. It had the appearance of breaking at any moment.

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng immediately placed his hands onto the spirit formation and started to pour his spirit power into his spirit formation to increase its strength.

However, as his spirit formation became stronger, the power of the six Divine Lightnings also became stronger and stronger. Furthermore, they had started to pound against Chu Feng’s spirit formation more frantically.

Seeing that his spirit formation was about to crumble, Chu Feng’s complexion turned deathly pale. Knowing that the situation was extremely bad, he blurted out, “Damn it!”

.....

The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan did not know what was happening at Chu Feng's residence. Above the building constructed at the peak of the Nangong Imperial Clan's mountain range, the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the White-browed Immortal and the others were all standing there.

From where they were standing, they were able to watch that dazzling golden dragon shuttling through the clouds at an extremely close range.

They had finally managed to see the abnormal sign that they wished to see, the soaring golden dragon. White-browed Immortal and the other world spiritists all had their brows raised in delight and eyes laughing as they beamed in joy.

"What a magnificent sight. It is truly stunning. This abnormal sign is simply the most spectacular of all abnormal signs I've seen in my life," At this moment, many of the world spiritists were praising it nonstop.

"The intensity of the abnormal sign is generally a sign signaling the intensity of one's strength. This abnormal sign is simply the most valiant of all abnormal signs I've seen in my lifetime."

"The Nangong Imperial Clan's Imperial Bloodline is truly exceptional. In my opinion, it is as Clan Chief Nangong had said, regardless of how powerful Divine Bodies might be, even if they receive the favor of the heavens, they will still not be able to compare with the Imperial Bloodline of the Nangong Imperial Clan."

"For the Nangong Imperial Clan to possess this sort of Inherited Bloodline, it is truly unreasonable for them to not become the strongest among humans," Even White-browed Immortal started to praise it.

"Haha... no rush, no rush. With Brother White-brow helping me, how could our Nangong Imperial Clan possibly not rise in power?" After hearing what White-browed Immortal said, that Nangong

Beidou started to grin from ear to ear.

From his words, one could tell that he was not willing to be inferior to the Three Palaces and be on equal footing to the other Three Imperial Clans. He possessed ambition. As for that ambition, it was to become the strongest among humans.

“Wuuaouu~~~”

Right at this moment, a roar sounded from below. When that roar was heard, the entire world started to tremble violently. That roar was a lot more frightening than the roar from the golden dragon earlier.

At this moment, everyone’s expressions changed. They turned their gazes to Nangong Beidou and asked, “What’s going on? Could it be that someone else has reached a breakthrough today?”

However, at this moment, Nangong Beidou was frowning deeply. He knew the most about the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Inherited Bloodline. Even though that roar sounded very similar to the golden dragon’s roar, he knew that it was definitely not their Nangong Imperial Clan’s abnormal sign, the golden dragon. Likely, someone else had mixed in.

“Wuuaouu~~~”

Right at this moment, that roar sounded once again. This time around, it was not only a single roar. Rather, six roars sounded together.

At the same time the six roars sounded, six enormous beasts with lightning covering their entire bodies soared into the sky and arrived above the clouds.

“Heavens, what are those?!”

After seeing those six enormous lightning beasts, White-browed Immortal and the others started to panic. Those six enormous lightning beats were simply too immense. It could be said that each of them was many times larger than that golden dragon. Even

though they possessed indefinite appearances, they were still extremely frightening monsters.

If they were only enormous and possessed frightening appearances, they would not be that scary.

However, most importantly, those six enormous lightning beasts were emitting auras that caused even White-browed Immortal to feel extremely uneasy.

Before those six enormous lightning beasts, White-browed Immortal felt a single sensation. That sensation could be described with two words: weak and small.

Before those six enormous lightning beasts, he felt extremely weak and small. Even though he was a Martial Emperor, even though he was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he still knew that those enormous lightning beasts were a lot more frightening than him. In his entire life, he had never seen existences that frightening.

When even White-browed Immortal, an outsider, felt this way, there was no need to mention what the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan felt.

In the instant those six enormous lightning beasts appeared, their souls immediately started to tremble. Especially their Inherited Bloodlines in their dantians, they were shivering with fear.

In fact, for many who possessed weak cultivations, they actually started to tremble violently. As for the young children, they even started to wail. They were deeply frightened.

This caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to feel extremely uneasy. That was because this sort of sensation was something that they had never felt before. However, they were all certain that this sensation that they were feeling was caused by those six enormous lightning beasts.

“Our golden dragon, why is it not moving?”

At this moment, someone noticed that the golden dragon that had been roaring repeatedly and shuttling through the clouds to manifest its might had actually hidden itself beneath the clouds motionlessly. It was displaying an appearance of cowardice.

In fact, if one were to look closely, one would see that golden dragon was actually shivering. It was as if it were deeply afraid.

“Aoouuu~~~”

Suddenly, the black enormous lightning beast roared at that golden dragon.

After hearing that roar, the shivering golden dragon acted like a mouse that had encountered a cat. It immediately turned around and, with an extremely fast speed, rushed into Nangong Tianshi's palace and back into Nangong Tianshi's body.

“This...”

This scene caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to become speechless. What sort of situation was this? The golden dragon that they took pride in actually fled out of fear from that enormous lightning beast's roar!!!

Chapter 1632 – Ruthlessness

“Lord Clan Chief, I saw everything that happened earlier. However, might that be a misunderstanding? Could it be a misperception? You must know that Chu Feng is merely a rank nine Martial King. It is simply impossible for him to become a threat to our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Furthermore, Chu Feng braved dangers for the sake of helping us. Moreover, he has come to our Nangong Imperial Clan to stay as a guest. Even if he possesses heaven-defying potential, it would only be a benefit to our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“After all, even if he becomes extremely powerful in the future, with his relationship with Nangong Ya, Baihe and Moli, he will definitely stand on the side of our Nangong Imperial Clan,” Seeing that what she had said earlier had proven to be effective, Aunt Lian hurriedly added some soft words into the mix. She was thinking up every possible method to have Nangong Beidou let Chu Feng off.

“Are you certain that Chu Feng possesses upright behavior, and will not attack our Nangong Imperial Clan if he is to become powerful in the future?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Even though I have not known him for long, I have experienced a lot with him. During the moment of life and death crisis, Chu Feng was willing to give his life for righteousness. For his friends, he was willing to sacrifice himself.”

“I believe that he is someone that can be trusted. I am certain that if Chu Feng is to become powerful in the future, he will definitely not become our Nangong Imperial Clan’s enemy. Instead, he will help our Nangong Imperial Clan,” Aunt Lian vowed.

“Since sis Lian vouches for him to this extent, I will look no further into this matter. You can return,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Yes,” Aunt Lian prepared to leave.

Suddenly, Nangong Beidou added, “Oh, that’s right. Those who have come are guests. Have Chu Feng stay for some more days and not rush to leave.”

Hearing those words, Aunt Lian started to frown. However, she didn’t say anything and left.

After Aunt Lian left, that Nangong Huayi and Nangong Rongsheng immediately said, “Lord Clan Chief, that child absolutely cannot be left alive.”

“Why do you two say that?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Today, that child had disagreements with the four Princes and the Princess. I fear that he already holds a grudge against them.”

“If he is to be left alive, I fear that he will definitely oppose our Nangong Imperial Clan in the future. We cannot release a tiger back into the mountain,” Nangong Huayi said.

“Such a thing actually happened?” Nangong Beidou did not expect for this many things to have happened in a single day.

“This is absolutely true. This subordinate would not dare to deceive Lord Clan Chief,” Nangong Huayi said.

“Brother White-brow, what do you think about this matter?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“That child’s Divine Body is truly extraordinary. We cannot even be certain as to whether his power is actually that of a Divine Power or not. Essentially, he is extremely special.”

“However, this does not mean that he will really possess outstanding strength. It might also be false bravado. I think we should have a test,” White-browed Immortal said.

“Test? How do we test?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Clan Chief Nangong, didn’t you just receive one of five long-lost Secret Skills, the Water Immortal Profound Technique?”

“After all, you planned to teach the princes and princess the Water Immortal Profound Technique. Why not teach them today?”

“At the time when you begin to teach them the Water Immortal Profound Technique, call that Chu Feng over too,” White-browed Immortal said.

“You’re saying we should use the Water Immortal Profound Technique to test Chu Feng’s potential?” Nangong Beidou realized White-browed Immortal’s intention.

“That’s right. The Water Immortal Profound Technique is one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s five strongest Secret Skills. Naturally, it will choose the strongest individual as its master. After all, in all of history, all of its masters were extraordinary existences.”

“Tomorrow, have Chu Feng, the three Princes and the Princess meet the Water Immortal Profound Technique together. If the Water Immortal Profound Technique chooses any of the Princes or the Princess, it will mean that Chu Feng is not someone to be feared, that all he has revealed is nothing more than false bravado. At that time, there will be no harm in sparing his life.”

“However, if the Water Immortal Profound Technique chooses Chu Feng, it will mean that that child possesses extremely powerful potential. No matter what, you cannot let him leave. You must eliminate him regardless of the price,” White-browed Immortal said.

“That is indeed a brilliant method,” Nangong Beidou started to nod after hearing what White-browed Immortal suggested.

“However, Immortal, if that Water Immortal Profound Technique were to choose Chu Feng, wouldn’t we have wasted such an amazing Secret Skill in vain? After all, Lord Clan Chief has spent an enormous effort and paid considerably in order to obtain that Secret Skill,” Nangong Huayi was hesitant.

“Haha, you are overthinking it. If the Water Immortal Profound Technique were to truly choose Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s death would be inevitable. As long as Chu Feng is killed, the Water Immortal Profound Technique will regain its freedom. As such, how could it be a waste?” White-browed Immortal laughed out loud. A trace of ruthlessness appeared between his eyebrows.

“Very well, it’s decided. Huayi, Rongsheng, you two go and make the arrangements.”

“However, this matter must not be limited to Chu Feng and my children. Tomorrow, bring your children, as well as all of our Nangong Imperial Clan’s excellent younger generation over. We can take this opportunity to have the Water Immortal Profound Technique test whether there is anyone in our Nangong Imperial Clan with even stronger talent than my children. If there is, we must definitely nurture them.”

“After all, if our Nangong Imperial Clan is to become more powerful, I cannot only nurture my own children. Instead, I must consider the bigger picture,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Clan Chief Nangong is truly highly principled,” White-browed Immortal and the others began to flatter Nangong Beidou.

.....

Chu Feng did not know about the discussion between Nangong Beidou and the others. At this moment, the six enormous lightning beasts had returned to his body.

Chu Feng’s aura had become that of a rank one Half Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng was unable to feel happiness. That was because he knew that he had caused an enormous disaster for himself. Even though he was within his room, he had seen all that had happened outside with his Heaven’s Eyes.

The overbearing enormous black lightning beast, although it had

not attacked the golden dragon directly,had caused the Nangong Imperial Clan's golden dragon to flee in fear with a single roar.

If that were all there were to it, it would still have been tolerable. However, most importantly, Chu Feng had seen the facial appearances of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen when all this was happening. They were all deeply frightened. Evidently, once they knew that it was Chu Feng who had done all this, they would definitely consider him a threat.

“Chu Feng, should we escape now?” Eggy asked.

“We will not be able to escape,” Chu Feng said.

“Let's go find that Nangong Lian. She brought you here, she should be able to bring you out,” Eggy said.

“At this time, Aunt Lian should have been called over and received questioning,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Even though he did not see that happening, he was able to guess what had happened.

“Then what do we do? Must you sit and wait for death here?” Eggy asked.

“It will all depend on whether the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief is a wise and sensible individual or not. If he possesses a broad mind, he will definitely not make things difficult for me, a mere member of the younger generation.”

“However, if he is a narrow-minded individual, he will definitely make me suffer a calamity. However, that is also good. This will be an opportunity for me to see what sort of person the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief is.”

“However, they likely do not know that even though I, Chu Feng, am a member of the younger generation, I am not a pushover. I am not someone that they can pinch as they wish,” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“It seems like you're planning to release that guy in this Nangong

Imperial Clan? If you are to release it, it will be fine if you are able to successfully control it. However, if you fail to do so, the Nangong Imperial Clan will suffer a major calamity,” Eggy said.

“If they are heartless, I, Chu Feng, will be heartless too,” As Chu Feng said these words, a flash of ruthlessness shone through his eyes.

Bee mislabeled the chapter number.

Chapter 1633 – Battle Power That Surmounts Four Levels Of Cultivation

“Since you’ve decided, let’s do it like this.”

“Oh, that’s right. How do you feel right now? Did you manage to obtain a new power from the Divine Lightnings?” Eggy asked curiously.

Chu Feng extended his hands and spun around in a circle. Then, he asked with a smile on his face, “What sort of change do you see?”

“There’s no change. Other than becoming a rank one Half Martial Emperor from rank nine Martial King, there’s no change whatsoever,” Eggy said after she carefully inspected Chu Feng.

“Then, try receiving a fist of mine,” Chu Feng said.

“Come, this Queen doesn’t fear you,” Eggy said with confidence.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng attacked. His fist strike was faster than lightning, heavier than a mountain. It was extremely powerful.

However, this sort of fist strike was unable to reach Eggy at all. Before it could touch her, a layer of black gaseous flames stopped it.

“Milady Queen, it is truly fortunate that you are not my enemy. Your power is too frightening.”

Chu Feng retrieved his fist while smiling. This was the first time he had exchanged blows with Eggy. It was also the first time he had felt the power of Asura. This power was extremely frightening. Even though Chu Feng had become a Half Martial Emperor and obtained new strength, he still felt extremely inferior when facing Eggy.

“You’re pretty good yourself. A battle power that surmounts four levels of cultivation. Likely, in the Holy Land of Martialism, other than that so-called little princess from the Elf Kingdom, only you are capable of accomplishing this,” Eggy said with a beaming smile.

She had already known what sort of new strength Chu Feng had obtained. Even though what Chu Feng had obtained was not the same sort of thing as the Thunder Armor or the Thunder Wings, two abilities similar to martial skills that could instantly increase his cultivation by one level, he had obtained heaven-defying battle power.

In the past, Chu Feng had possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. As a rank one Half Martial Emperor, he was able to contend against ordinary rank four Half Martial Emperors.

However, now that Chu Feng had obtained a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, it meant that the current Chu Feng was capable of contending against ordinary rank five Half Martial Emperors with his cultivation of rank one Half Martial Emperor.

In the Holy Land of Martialism, all of the first-rate geniuses possessed heaven-defying battle power. This sort of heaven-defying battle power ranged from being capable of surmounting one level of cultivation to being capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

However, even the peak geniuses would only possess battle prowess capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. For example, Tantai Xue, Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe all possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

In fact, even the current Su Mei, Su Rou and Zi Ling possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

However, the current Chu Feng possessed battle power capable of

surmounting four levels of cultivation. In other words, even if he were to face the Holy Land of Martialism's peak geniuses, as long as they were at the same level of cultivation as him, Chu Feng would be able to easily crush his opponents.

Furthermore, reportedly, other than the Elf Kingdom's little princess, there was no one in the current Holy Land of Martialism who possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

However, this was not the important matter. Most importantly, heaven-defying battle power was something that could generally be determined easily. Oftentimes, one could tell what sort of battle power another possessed with a single glance.

However, Chu Feng was different. On the surface, he still only gave off the appearance of someone with heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Only when one really fought him, and only when he was willing to reveal his heaven-defying battle power that was capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation would others be able to discover his actual battle power.

This was also the reason why Eggy was only able to tell that Chu Feng possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation after receiving a fist strike from him.

"Other than this heaven-defying battle power, did you manage to gain anything else?" Eggy asked.

"I came to have a bit better of an understanding of the Divine Lightnings in my body. If I were to use One Shot Lightning again, it would likely not be as strenuous as before. The burden on my body will be lessened," Chu Feng said.

"That's pretty good. If we calculate it according to this, then when you become a Martial Emperor, wouldn't you be able to possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five

levels of cultivation? At that time, Martial Emperors at the same level of cultivation as you will be no match for you. Haha..." Eggy laughed very happily. There was actually a reason why she was laughing this happily.

Peak geniuses all possessed heaven-defying battle power. As Chu Feng came in contact with more experts, it was not hard to discover that, at this moment, the only people of his generation capable of contending against him were people who possessed heaven-defying battle power.

In fact, of all those who were able to become Martial Emperors, who among them did not possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation? If one did not even possess that bit of talent, how could one become a Martial Emperor?

In other words, once one reached the Martial Emperor realm, heaven-defying battle power would become meaningless. The reason for that was because everyone would possess the same heaven-defying battle power.

However, Chu Feng was different. Chu Feng had now obtained a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. When facing geniuses of the same level of cultivation as him, he would be able to gain dominance over them with his additional heaven-defying battle power. In the future, when he became a Martial Emperor, Chu Feng would still be able to gain dominance over others.

Furthermore, after Chu Feng became a Martial Emperor, the dominance he possessed might be even greater. After all, with the way things seemed now, Chu Feng would be able to obtain even stronger heaven-defying battle power after becoming a Martial Emperor. Like Eggy had said, Chu Feng might obtain a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation after becoming a Martial Emperor.

Even though all Martial Emperors possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation and could cancel out Chu Feng's battle power with theirs, Chu Feng would still be able to gain dominance over them with the additional two levels of cultivation that he could surmount with his battle power.

Just thinking about how Chu Feng would be able to contend against rank three Martial Emperors when he became a rank one Martial Emperor would definitely stun a lot of people.

This enormously powerful strength was something bestowed to Chu Feng by his Divine Lightnings. In the end, it was still his bloodline, Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline that was too powerful.

This had predestined it from the very beginning that Chu Feng would continue on growing. Sooner or later, he would leave the people from the Holy Land of Martialism far far behind. Only the people from the Outer World would be able to keep pace with Chu Feng.

“Creak~~~”

Right at this moment, the door to Chu Feng's room was pushed open. It was Aunt Lian.

Even though it was Aunt Lian, Eggy still hurriedly returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

“Is Chu Feng here?”

Aunt Lian was a world spiritist. She was able to tell with a single glance that there was a spirit formation around Chu Feng's room. Thus, she did not force her way in, and instead asked about Chu Feng's presence.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng waved his sleeve, removed his spirit formation and revealed himself.

“Sure enough, you’ve managed a breakthrough. Congratulations!” Aunt Lian spoke with a beaming smile when she saw Chu Feng.

“Aunt Lian, I believe I’ve stirred up trouble, no?” Chu Feng asked.

“Stirred up trouble? What do you mean by that?” Aunt Lian pretended that nothing had happened.

“The abnormal sign I caused from my breakthrough should have had some effect on the Nangong Imperial Clan. Could it be that no one felt me to be a threat?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course there are. However, it is not a major issue,” Aunt Lian said.

“Is it really not a major issue? In that case, if I wish to leave here right now, will I be allowed to?” Chu Feng asked.

“This...” At this moment, Aunt Lian started to hesitate. Then, she removed her smile and said, “Really, I cannot hide anything from you.”

“Chu Feng, the current situation is special. However, please do not blame them. After all, as the upper echelons of the Nangong Imperial Clan, they must consider the greater good, they must take responsibility for the future of the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“However, if you do as I say, I guarantee you that you’ll be safe and sound, and that no one in the entire Nangong Imperial Clan will harm you,” Aunt Lian said.

Chapter 1634 – Setting Up Spirit Formations

“Aunt Lian, what do you want me to do? Chu Feng would like to hear the details,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s like this...” Aunt Lian mentioned the matter regarding them planning to teach Chu Feng and the others the secret skill. However, she deliberately told Chu Feng to try his best to hide in the corner of the crowd and to conceal his aura so that the secret skill would not choose him.

“I understand. The secret skill will naturally choose the person with the strongest talent, the person with the best potential.”

“They are planning to use the secret technique to test my talent. If the secret technique doesn’t choose me, I will be able to escape this calamity. However, if it does, I will likely be hunted down,” Chu Feng smiled. He had managed to guess what the Nangong Imperial Clan planned to do.

“Chu Feng, don’t think of it like that. It might not be as bad as you imagine it to be,” Aunt Lian said.

“Aunt Lian, you don’t have to speak for them. If they are highly principled people, they would definitely not stop me from leaving should I want to leave today. However, not only did they stop me, they’re also going to test me. How could you not understand what sort of people they are?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Aunt Lian grew silent. At this moment, a deep sense of guilt appeared on her face. She deeply regretted her decision to invite Chu Feng to the Nangong Imperial Clan. She felt that she was the one who had pulled Chu Feng into this pit of fire.

Chu Feng had merely reached a breakthrough in his cultivation. What wrong had he done? The person that was at fault was her. She shouldn’t have brought Chu Feng here.

“Chu Feng, it’s all my fault,” Aunt Lian said with a very apologetic expression.

“Aunt Lian, don’t say it like that. Even though the current situation is not very hopeful, I will definitely not blame you for it.”

“I’ll say it like this. Even if I am to become the Nangong Imperial Clan’s enemy in the future, you will still be my Aunt Lian. Nangong Ya, Baihe and Moli will still be my friends,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng’s calm appearance shocked Aunt Lian.

At this moment, Aunt Lian discovered that Chu Feng was more mature than any of the people his age that she had met. Even when facing death, he possessed no fear, and his mind was extremely clear.

“Chu Feng, that wisdom of yours will definitely let you become a very capable person in the future.”

“Also, rest assured. Since I have brought you here, I will also be able to bring you out. If they really plan to kill you, they must first step past the corpse of me, Nangong Lian.”

“It is not that I, Nangong Lian, am arrogant. Rather, in the Nangong Imperial Clan, if there is anyone that wishes to kill me, Nangong Lian, it will also depend on whether they have the courage to do so,” Aunt Lian said those words very loudly. Likely, she was deliberately trying to have someone hear her.

After she finished saying that, Aunt Lian walked out of Chu Feng’s room. However, she did not really leave the area. Instead, after she walked out of Chu Feng’s residence, she waved her sleeve and set up a golden-bright and dazzling spirit formation that covered Chu Feng’s residence. Afterward, Aunt Lian sat down cross-legged and closed her eyes.

When Chu Feng saw this scene, his heart was moved. He knew that Aunt Lian was planning to protect him, that she was planning

to follow Chu Feng closely to protect him starting from today.

As someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan, the fact that Aunt Lian was willing to do all this for Chu Feng was sufficient to show him what sort of person she was. She was definitely a person who was very loyal to her friends.

“Chu Feng, they will be using the secret skill to test your potential tomorrow. What do you plan to do? Are you really going to hide in the corner of the crowd, conceal your own potential and watch as the secret skill is obtained by another? You must know that this is a secret skill we’re talking about here,” Eggy said.

“Heh... although it will be letting down Aunt Lian, I, Chu Feng, am not someone who will let the fatty meat beside my mouth slip by me,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile.

“Haha, that’s more like it. That’s the Chu Feng I know. It’s merely a Nangong Imperial Clan, who do they think themselves to be?”

“If they wish to play, we shall play with them. With this queen and you acting together, we’ll play them to death,” After hearing Chu Feng’s response, Eggy was very happy. Sometimes, Her Lady Queen was like a mischievous child. She did not fear provoking others. The only thing she feared was being bored.

Chu Feng did not sleep that night. He instead used the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to set up three spirit formations.

The first was the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation.

The second was the Evil Spirit Binding Formation.

As for the third, it was the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation.

There was no need to mention what the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation were. They were critical to releasing and controlling the other Asura World Spirit in Chu Feng’s body.

As for that World Spirit Energy Storing Formation, it was used to store Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Energy. After all, when the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation were activated, they would require an enormous amount of world spirit energy. Furthermore, ordinary world spirit energy would likely not do. Only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Energy would be of use.

At that time, it would be too strenuous for Chu Feng to refine the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones while activating the spirit formations.

That was the reason why Chu Feng set up the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation. Chu Feng was going to transfer all of the energy from the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones into the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation.

Then, he was going to transfer the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation into his body. With the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation as the vessel, he was going to store the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Energy in his body.

When Chu Feng needed the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Energy, he would be able to release the boundless Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Energy from the World Spirit Energy Storing Formation with a single thought.

However, if Chu Feng were only setting up these three spirit formations, he would not have to spend an entire night doing so. After all, setting up spirit formations was a very fast thing to do.

The reason why Chu Feng had spent so much time setting up these formations was because he had cautiously placed the two extremely dangerous Taboo Formation Techniques, the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation, onto his left and right hands. Furthermore, Chu Feng had set up a mechanism whereby the two spirit formations would be activated simultaneously the moment he placed his hands

together.

Like this, Chu Feng would be able to immediately activate the World Spirit Seal Breaking Formation and the Evil Spirit Binding Formation to release the berserk Asura World Spirit in his body at the moment of crisis.

“If possible, I really hope that I will not have to use you two in the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

Chu Feng looked to his ordinary-looking hands and smiled lightly. Only he knew how dangerous his pair of ordinary-looking hands actually were.

The reason why Chu Feng had spent an entire night doing all this was because Chu Feng did not trust the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Even though Chu Feng was not certain whether or not he'd be able to successfully control the other Asura World Spirit with all the preparations he had made, Chu Feng was certain that he would be able to successfully release that other Asura World Spirit and turn it into an Evil Spirit the moment he clasped his hands together.

At that time, everything would be fine if Chu Feng could successfully control it. However, if he could not successfully control it, then, with its killing nature, it would definitely unleash a slaughter in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

At that time, whether the Nangong Imperial Clan would be able to escape this calamity would all depend on their strength, as well as their luck...

At this time, the sky had brightened. Chu Feng used his Heaven's Eyes to look outside, and discovered that the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan had grown restless. Many people had gathered outside of his residence.

Even Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and Nangong Ya had come.

However, due to the fact that Aunt Lian was guarding this place,

no one was able to step into Chu Feng's residence. All they could do was silently watch from outside.

Their gazes contained hostility, curiosity and even fear.

However, one thing was without doubt. That was, after what had happened yesterday, Chu Feng had become the focus of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chapter 1635 – Water Immortal Profound Technique

At the time when the splendid sun illuminated the earth, a Martial Emperor-level expert had also arrived at Chu Feng's residence. It was a man, a person Chu Feng had seen before.

Last night, when Chu Feng first caused that abnormal sign, that man had come to his residence. Even though he did not enter, and left after a single glance at Chu Feng's residence, he had still left a very deep impression on Chu Feng. The reason for that was because when he glanced at Chu Feng's residence, his gaze was filled with killing intent.

At this moment, that man was talking with Aunt Lian. From the dialogue between the two, Chu Feng came to know that man's name was Nangong Huayi.

As for the content of their conversation, he wanted Chu Feng to go and participate in the Secret Skill Inheritance Assembly.

"Chu Feng, let's go," Aunt Lian entered to find Chu Feng.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded. He also wished to see exactly what sort of secret skill that so-called Water Immortal Profound Technique was. He wanted to know whether it, or the Four Great Secret Skills that he possessed, were stronger.

Being guided by Aunt Lian, Chu Feng arrived at a very vast underground palace. It was not only Chu Feng and Aunt Lian who had arrived; Nangong Baihe, Nangong Moli and Nangong Ya had also come.

When they reached the depths of the underground palace, Chu Feng discovered that there were a lot of people gathered there, over a thousand people at the very minimum. The older ones were close to a hundred years old, whereas the younger ones were not even ten years old.

However, regardless what the cultivations of those people were currently, they all possessed very decent talent. Otherwise, they would not have been brought to this place and given this chance to obtain a secret skill.

Most importantly, the Nangong Imperial Clan's three Princes and one Princess were also present. It was not only them, that disciple of the White-browed Immortal called Meng Xiaoyan was also present.

“That guy, why is he here?”

After Chu Feng appeared, the Eldest Prince Nangong Tianlong and the others all started to frown. Evidently, they had not expected that Chu Feng would appear in this place.

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong and the others had very hostile gazes as they looked to Chu Feng. This was especially true for Nangong Tianshi. He simply had the appearance of wanting to hack Chu Feng into eight pieces.

After all, he had been properly displaying his soaring golden dragon last night. He had thought that he would be able to obtain his father's good graces.

However, unexpectedly, Chu Feng also revealed his abnormal sign. Not only had he revealed his abnormal sign, his abnormal sign had even scared away the golden dragon. This caused Nangong Tianshi to be utterly humiliated. Thus, he bitterly hated Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, why are you here? Get the hell out of here!” In anger, Nangong Tianshi cursed loudly.

“Impudent! Is Chu Feng someone who you can drive out?!” Aunt Lian stared fiercely at Nangong Tianshi.

“Aunt Lian, he is an outsider. What makes him qualified to participate in our Nangong Imperial Clan's Secret Skill Inheritance Assembly?” Nangong Tianshi asked.

“Outsider? It seems to me that Chu Feng is not the only outsider here, no?” Nangong Ya asked. As he spoke, he took a glance at Meng Xiaoyan, who was standing beside Nangong Tianlong.

“My master has already joined the Nangong Imperial Clan. Precisely speaking, I am not an outsider,” Meng Xiaoyan said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng has come here under the personal permission from Lord Clan Chief. If you all possess any objections, you can go and question the Lord Clan Chief yourselves.”

Aunt Lian had lost her patience. As she spoke, she waved her sleeve and caused a strong breeze to sweep forth. The strong breeze pushed all of the bystanders away. Even Nangong Tianlong and the others, although they were princes and princess, were no exception.

Afterward, Aunt Lian brought Chu Feng with her and walked further in. They walked all the way into the deepest region of the underground palace.

“Damn it! She dared to attack us! I am going to find Imperial Father to complain!” Seeing this scene, Nangong Tianshi was so enraged that he started to gnash his teeth in anger. He turned around and planned to go find his Imperial Father.

“Third brother, let it pass. Since Nangong Lian said it like this, I believe it should be true,” Nangong Tianlong said.

“What? True? Why would Imperial Father have that guy participate in our competition?” Nangong Tianshi was extremely confused.

“Imperial Father most definitely possesses his own reasonings,” Nangong Tianlong said.

“Forget about it, since he is already here, we’ll let him stay. He’s merely a rank one Half Martial Emperor. In this place, he cannot be considered to be anything. How could the secret skill possibly

choose him?” Nangong Tianhu said. Even though he disliked Chu Feng enormously, he did not consider Chu Feng to be a rival. Instead, he looked down on Chu Feng from the bottom of his heart.

Chu Feng completely ignored the comments from the others. After he reached the deepest area, he began to carefully inspect his surroundings.

There was a world spirit formation in the deepest region. This world spirit formation was very powerful. It was the doing of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, that world spirit technique was not there to guard against foreign attacks. Rather, it was there to guard against internal attacks. In other words, it was not a defensive barrier, but rather a cage used to hold something in captivity.

Using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see through the world spirit formation. He discovered that there was a blue stele located in the center of that world spirit formation. That stele contained a special power. Likely, sealed within that stele was the secret skill, the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

“Little friends, I’ve made you all wait,” Right at this moment, White-browed Immortal appeared.

“That person’s a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Could he be the White-browed Immortal? The White-browed Immortal has really joined our Nangong Imperial Clan?”

Many people were excited to see the White-browed Immortal. In the past couple days, they had all heard rumors of the White-browed Immortal joining their Nangong Imperial Clan as a nominal elder. Upon seeing him today, it would appear that those rumors were true.

Their Nangong Imperial Clan was a clan with overflowing battle power. However, their world spirit techniques could not be

considered top quality at all. Yet, if the White-browed Immortal were to provide them with guidance, their world spirit techniques would likely be able to advance by leaps and bounds.

Most importantly, there were only ten Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the entire Holy Land of Martialism. And now, their Nangong Imperial Clan possessed a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Just thinking about it caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to feel pride.

“Little friends, this old man and his disciple have indeed joined the Nangong Imperial Clan. As of yesterday, I have become a nominal elder of the Nangong Imperial Clan,” White-browed Immortal spoke with a smile.

He was rather courteous toward these members of the younger generation. After all, he knew that the people here were all of the most excellent members of the younger generation from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Many years later, they would be the ones to support the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Haha, Immortal has really joined our Nangong Imperial Clan. This is truly great!” Seeing that the White-browed Immortal had really joined their Nangong Imperial Clan, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation were endlessly excited.

“Little friends, you are all the Nangong Imperial Clan’s outstanding talents. In the future, the Nangong Imperial Clan must be propped up by you all.”

“Today, we have gathered you all here for a good deed.”

“I believe, little friends, that you all have heard about secret skills before, that there are a total of five of the most powerful secret skills in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“[The five of them](#) are, respectively, the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique, the Water Immortal Profound Technique, the Fire Immortal Profound

Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.”

“These five secret skills have existed since the Ancient Era. They were created by an enormously powerful expert who traveled about the Ancient Era unhindered. All of them possess extremely dreadful might.”

“Furthermore, legend has it that as long as one is able to obtain all five secret skills, one will be able to obtain a secret to open a treasure deposit.”

“Unfortunately, it has been several tens of thousands of years since the Ancient Era. Even though the five secret skills have been in circulation the entire time, there has never been anyone capable of obtaining all five of them.”

“Even now, the Gold Immortal Profound Technique is in the hands of the Mortal King Palace, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique is in the hands of the Heavenly Law Palace, and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique is in the hands of the [Underworld Palace](#).”

“As for the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, they had been lost for many years, and were on the verge of extinction.”

“However, I have a piece of good news today. The long-lost Water Immortal Profound Technique has come to our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Not only was our Nangong Imperial Clan able to obtain the Water Immortal Profound Technique, Lord Clan Chief is also going to impart the Water Immortal Profound Technique to the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation.”

“Little friends, all of you possess the chance to obtain the legendary strongest secret skill, the Water Immortal Profound Technique,” White-browed Immortal said.

“Woooahhh~~~~”

Hearing those words, the crowd became extremely excited, and actually began to cheer in unison. After all, they had all heard about the legend of the Water Immortal Profound Technique. To actually possess the opportunity to obtain the legendary secret skill, they would naturally be filled with incomparable excitement.

Named after the five elements; gold/metal, wood, water, fire and earth

Don't know if I mentioned this before, the three palaces are respectively named after man, heaven and earth. 'Underworld' in chinese is literally 'earth prison'.

Chapter 1636 – Flatter

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, White-browed Immortal waved his sleeve. Then, many entrances appeared on that world spirit formation.

“Little friends, the legendary Water Immortal Profound Technique is located within. Go on in,” White-browed Immortal said.

After that, Chu Feng and the others all began to walk toward the spirit formation. Aunt Lian also followed Chu Feng toward the spirit formation.

“Nangong Lian, this is a matter concerning the young generation, you do not have to join them,” However, before Aunt Lian could enter the spirit formation, Nangong Huayi spoke to stop her.

“Aunt Lian, it’s alright. I can take care of this myself,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

After a moment of hesitation, Aunt Lian ended up stopping her footsteps. She did not follow the others in, and instead stood outside of the world spirit formation to guard the place.

After Chu Feng and the others entered the spirit formation, they were all able to see the blue stele located in the center of the spirit formation. Furthermore, they all knew that blue stele should be the item that sealed the secret skill, and that the closer they were to the stele, the higher the chance of them obtaining the secret skill.

Thus, at this moment, everyone rushed toward the stele. They all wanted to be closer to it. At this moment, it was naturally Nangong Tianlong and the others who were at the forefront of the crowd. The reason for that was because no one dared to fight against the princes and princess. One thing worthy of being mentioned was that Meng Xiaoyan was also standing at the frontmost place

alongside Nangong Tianlong and the others.

A fascinating thing was that many people could tell that Nangong Tianlong and the other princes deeply disliked Chu Feng. They actually blocked Chu Feng's path and refused to allow him to continue forward. Just like that, they forced Chu Feng to a corner of the crowd.

Chu Feng merely smiled at their actions and ignored them. The reason for that was because he had never planned to fight for the closest place to begin with.

As Chu Feng possessed four secret skills, he knew the characteristics of secret skills very well. In a space this size, regardless of which corner he hid in, the secret skill would still be able to sense him. Thus, trying to be the closest to the secret skill was simply meaningless.

At this moment, as Chu Feng watched the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan pushing one another to get closer to the blue stele, as he watched the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan on the verge of fighting one another to get a closer place, Chu Feng felt as if he were watching a group of clowns.

"Chu Feng, what you did last night was extremely spectacular. How did you accomplish that? Could you be a Divine Body? However, the power of your lightnings seemed to be different from other Divine Bodies. Exactly what is the skill that you grasp?" Suddenly, a familiar voice sounded by Chu Feng's ears. As Chu Feng looked over, he saw that Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli were walking toward him. Furthermore, Nangong Ya was following closely behind them.

"The secret skill is about to appear. It's not beneficial for you all to stand here," Chu Feng said jokingly.

"We never planned to obtain the secret skill to begin with. Furthermore, even if we wished to fight for it, we wouldn't be able to obtain it. Isn't it the secret skill that possesses the right to

choose its master and not the other way around?”

“One can only force a secret skill into submission if one possesses absolute strength. Evidently, none of us possess the strength to force a secret skill into submission. Furthermore, it’s clear that the secret skill will not choose me. Thus, I decided to give up on it,” Nangong Baihe said with a smile.

“Lil sis Baihe, you should stop pretending. The way I see it, you knew that the secret skill would choose Chu Feng. That’s why you’ve come here so that you could admire the appearance of the secret skill at a close distance,” Nangong Ya said with a smile.

Nangong Baihe cast a side eye at Nangong Ya. Then, she said with a sweet smile, “You’re so smart, you’ve got it all right.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, the six lightnings in the sky last night, were they really caused by you? You’re so amazing!” Nangong Moli looked to Chu Feng with her eyes wide open. She had an expression of adoration on her face.

“Am I really amazing? You must know that your big brother Chu Feng is on the verge of losing his life here,” Chu Feng stroked Nangong Moli’s head while smiling.

Chu Feng had clearly said those words jokingly. However, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Ya’s expressions changed upon hearing those words. They began to feel upset in their hearts.

In fact, the two of them were forcing themselves to smile. They knew that a great catastrophe was likely going to befall Chu Feng. Yet, at such a time, there was nothing they could do. They felt extremely ashamed to be unable to help Chu Feng at all.

“Buzz~~~~”

Right at this moment, the sealed spirit formation suddenly turned transparent like glass. At this moment, not only were the people inside the spirit formation capable of seeing the people outside, the people outside the spirit formation were also capable

of seeing inside.

The reason for that was evidently so that the outsiders could see what was happening inside the spirit formation.

“Everyone, prepare yourselves. I am going to let the secret skill out,” White-browed Immortal shouted lightly. Then, he began to form hand seals nonstop. He was so fast that people were simply unable to see his actions. All they could see were the blurs of his hands.

“Rumble~~~~”

At the same time, that blue stele began to sway left and right and give out trembling noises. As it started to tremble, the entire underground palace trembled alongside it.

Furthermore, a dazzling golden rune began to flicker nonstop on that blue stele. It was extremely beautiful.

At this moment, the mindset of the crowd all started to change. One by one, they became extremely nervous. Regardless of whether it was the people outside or the people inside, they all became very nervous.

None of them knew who the secret technique would choose. However, they all wished that it would be them who the secret technique chose.

However, there was a single exception. That was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was so calm and collected that it was strange. It was as if he was a bystander watching a show.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded. The blue stele shattered. Following that, a blue body of light suddenly appeared.

It was a substance similar to a consciousness. It had an appearance similar to a person. However, water was flowing through its entire body. That’s right. It was a person formed of

water.

It was several tens of meters tall. Standing there, it appeared extremely imposing. However, it had a very amiable appearance, and it was using a leisurely gaze to size up the crowd before it.

The Water Immortal Profound Technique was as its name implied. This secret skill was an existence akin to an Immortal. Even though it was very powerful, it looked extremely graceful.

However, there was one thing that no one could doubt. That was, the aura that it was emitting right now was extremely powerful and simply incomparable. It was an aura from the Ancient Era.

“We pay our respect to Lord Water Immortal.”

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong and the others tidied up their clothing and courteously bowed to the Water Immortal Profound Technique with smiles across their faces.

After them, many of the rest of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen began to imitate what they did and started to flatter the Water Immortal Profound Technique. The reason why they did this was naturally because they wanted to obtain the good graces of the Water Immortal Profound Technique so that it would choose them.

“Not bad, you are all quite courteous,” With a smile across its face, the Water Immortal Profound Technique nodded at Nangong Tianlong and the others.

Seeing that the Water Immortal Profound Technique was smiling, Nangong Tianlong and the others were overjoyed. They felt that they were extremely smart and had grasped the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s attention.

“Lord Water Immortal, I have heard of your great name before. I have heard that you are capable of seeing through the strength of our talents, and the intensity of our future accomplishments. Might Lord Water Immortal be willing to rate my talent?”

“If we can obtain the ratings of our talents from Lord Water Immortal, it would truly be a blessing of three lifetimes to us,” Nangong Tianlong said with a humble appearance.

His current attitude was extremely respectful, extremely servile. It was as if he had already forgotten that he was a prince. At this moment, he no longer possessed the noble pride he used to possess. Instead, he had become someone who bowed before another.

In order to obtain the Water Immortal Profound Technique, he had truly lowered himself.

Chapter 1637 – Secret Skill Inheritance

“You all possess quite decent talents. You are the ones with the comparably more outstanding talent among the crowd,” The Water Immortal Profound Technique said with a smile.

“In that case, Lord Water Immortal, could you possibly tell us which among us possesses the best talent?” Nangong Tianshi asked.

“Among you all, the person with the best talent would be him,” the Water Immortal Profound Technique pointed at Nangong Tianhu and asked, “What is your name?”

Hearing those words, the expressions of Nangong Tianlong, Nangong Tianshi, Nangong Tianfeng and even Meng Xiaoyan changed.

Even though their relationship was extremely good, none of them were willing to have inferior talent to another. Even if it was their own blood brother, they were still not willing to accept it.

However, Nangong Tianhu was overjoyed. He hurriedly said, “Lord Water Immortal, in that case, would you be willing to choose me? I dare to guarantee to you that if you are to choose me, I will definitely not disappoint you. I will definitely bring fame to your power.”

“Hahaha...” After hearing what Nangong Tianhu said, the Water Immortal Profound Technique actually burst into a loud laugh.

Its laughter caused everyone to be stunned. They did not understand what the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s laughter meant.

“While it is true that there are a lot of geniuses here, there is only one among you who is capable of making this Immortal serve him,” After saying all this, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s body suddenly shifted. Then, he arrived before Chu

Feng and said while looking at him, “It is this child.”

“It’s actually him?” Seeing this, the expressions of everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan changed enormously. This was especially true for Nangong Tianlong, Nangong Tianhu and the others. Their expressions and reactions were simply as if their wives had slept with a beggar.

They truly never expected that the Water Immortal Profound Technique would choose Chu Feng. One must know that, in their minds, they felt that regardless of how powerful Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques might be, his talent for martial cultivation was simply incomparable with theirs.

Why did the Water Immortal Profound Technique choose Chu Feng and not them? This was simply unreasonable!

“How could this be?! Why would it be him?! Which part of him is stronger than us?! He is nothing more than a mere rank one Half Martial Emperor!”

“Why did you choose him? You cannot choose him! You belong to our Nangong Imperial Clan! You must choose someone from our Nangong Imperial Clan!” Unwilling to accept the fact, Nangong Tianhu and the others started to shout.

“Bang~~~”

However, right at this moment, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s body trembled. Then, water splashed all over, and a boundlessly powerful oppressive might came crushing down. At the same time, a gale also swept forth. Nangong Tianhu and the others who had questioned its decision were all blown away. They all crashed ferociously into the wall of the spirit formation.

“Since when has this Immortal’s decision been something that you all could question?” The Water Immortal Profound Technique lost the amiable appearance it used to have. Anger was evident within its tone.

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong and the others were frowning deeply. Right now, the Water Immortal Profound Technique possessed freedom. Its strength was extremely strong. They were simply no match for it.

Thus, feeling helpless, Nangong Tianlong and the others turned their gazes to White-browed Immortal and Nangong Huayi. They wanted them to help. After all, they couldn't watch as the Water Immortal Profound Technique became Chu Feng's possession before their eyes.

However, to their surprise, White-browed Immortal and Nangong Huayi both stood there motionlessly. It was as if they could not see the signaling gazes that they were sending them.

“Woosh~~~:

Right at this moment, the Water Immortal Profound Technique suddenly moved. It turned into a small bead of water. Then, as light flickered, it shot directly into Chu Feng's forehead.

After the Water Immortal Profound Technique entered his body, Chu Feng immediately felt a surge of boundless power fusing with him. At the same time, a voice sounded in his mind.

“Child, what is your name?” This was the Water Immortal Profound Technique's voice.

“Senior, I am called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng replied respectfully.

“Chu Feng, I will not bother with superfluous words. This Immortal was created by the Five Elements Old Ancestor. Now, I will serve you. When fighting against others, you can summon me to fight alongside you. Furthermore, unless you die, I will possess an indestructible body.”

“Furthermore, my strength will all depend on your strength. Regardless of what cultivation you have, my cultivation will be one level above yours. That is my ability.”

“Furthermore, there is a very important matter that you must

remember. Back then, when the Five Elements Old Ancestor created me, he also created four other secret skills. If you are able to make the other four secret skills serve you, you will come to know of a secret and obtain a treasure deposit,” After the Water Immortal Profound Technique told Chu Feng these things, its voice disappeared completely.

When its voice no longer sounded, Chu Feng knew that the Water Immortal Profound Technique had completely fused with him.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that Nangong Tianlong and the others were looking at him with gazes filled with killing intent, it was as if they wanted to eat him alive. Evidently, they were extremely angered by Chu Feng obtaining the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

Right at this moment, the White-browed Immortal spoke. “Little friend Chu Feng, you’re truly extraordinary. You actually managed to obtain the good graces of the Water Immortal Profound Technique.” However, even though he seemed to be praising Chu Feng on the surface, his words contained hidden implications.

“Senior, this should be the first time that we have met. How did you know my name?” Chu Feng asked with a smile. His words contained hidden implications too.

No one noticed that Chu Feng’s hands were placed behind his back. Furthermore, his two palms were facing one another. Even though he had not clasped them together, they were only a small distance away from being clasped together.

Even though Chu Feng had a very relaxed appearance, he had actually adjusted his mental state to the peak. If there was any movement, if anyone were to attack him, he would immediately clasp his hands to activate the Taboo Formation Techniques and release the other Asura World Spirit in his body.

“Heh...” The White-browed Immortal laughed lightly. However,

he did not say anything.

“Since the Water Immortal Profound Technique has chosen its master, the Inheritance Assembly today shall end at this point,” the White-browed Immortal said.

“End like this?! How could we allow our Nangong Imperial Clan’s secret skill to end up in the hands of another?!” At this moment, Nangong Tianlong and the others were unwilling to accept this.

However, immediately afterward, they shut their mouths. Not only did they stop talking, the angry expressions on their faces also instantly lessened, and were replaced by cold smiles. Evidently, someone had said something to them through a voice transmission.

Just like this, Chu Feng returned to his own residence. Aunt Lian also returned to his residence with him.

At this moment, Aunt Lian’s expression was very ugly. Evidently, she knew how dire the current situation was.

The reason for that was because she had been paying attention to the expressions on White-browed Immortal and Nangong Huayi’s faces the entire time. When the Water Immortal Profound Technique chose Chu Feng, even though they did not say anything and did not try to stop it from happening, killing intent had flashed through their eyes. This killing intent was most evident in Nangong Huayi’s eyes.

Thus, Aunt Lian knew that murderous intentions were present in Nangong Huayi’s heart. Chu Feng would likely be met with an imminent catastrophe.

Suddenly, Aunt Lian said, “Chu Feng, let’s go. I’ll take you to see a person.”

“See who?” Chu Feng asked.

“A person capable of taking you away from here,” As Aunt Lian spoke, she grabbed Chu Feng and prepared to leave.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, two figures suddenly appeared and blocked Aunt Lian’s path. These two people were precisely Nangong Beidou’s trusted aides, Nangong Huayi and Nangong Rongsheng.

“Nangong Lian, where are you planning to go?” Nangong Huayi asked.

“Where I plan to go does not concern you,” Aunt Lian snorted coldly. Then, she tried to leave.

“While where you plan to go does not concern me, where Chu Feng goes does concern me,” As Nangong Huayi spoke, he released his boundless oppressive might and sealed this region. He had completely blocked Nangong Lian’s path out.

Furthermore, it was not only Nangong Huayi who unleashed an attack, Nangong Rongsheng had also unleashed an attack.

Chapter 1638 – Paying The Price

“What is the meaning of this? Chu Feng is a guest invited here by me. Since when did his personal liberty become something that you all can decide on?” Aunt Lian asked coldly.

“Nangong Lian, rest assured, I will not do anything to Chu Feng. While it is fine for you to take him away with you, the Water Immortal Profound Technique is the possession of our Nangong Imperial Clan. That he cannot take away with him,” Nangong Huayi said.

“What did you say? Cannot take away the Water Immortal Profound Technique? Are you implying that you want to kill Chu Feng?!” At this moment, Aunt Lian was completely enraged. Even though she already knew that Nangong Huayi and the others had the intention to kill Chu Feng, she did not anticipate that they would come this quickly.

It was as Chu Feng had declared before. This Secret Skill Inheritance Assembly was simply a test. As long as he was capable of obtaining the Water Immortal Profound Technique, what awaited him would only be a path to death.

Even though Nangong Lian had anticipated this too, when all of this actually happened, she was truly unable to accept her own clan acting this shamelessly.

“Nangong Lian, what are you thinking? Who said that one must kill another to deprive them of the secret skill? Do not forget that the White-browed Immortal is currently a nominal elder of our Nangong Imperial Clan. With his old self present, it is totally possible to strip Chu Feng of the secret skill without killing him,” Nangong Huayi said.

“What makes you think that we will believe you?” Aunt Lian had an expression of disbelief.

“If you do not believe me, you can come with us,” Nangong Huayi said.

Suddenly, Chu Feng spoke. “Let’s go.”

“Chu Feng, you...” Hearing those words, Aunt Lian was startled.

“Aunt Lian, I believe that they will not harm me. After all, this is the Nangong Imperial Clan. I believe they will not do something like bullying the weak,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Look, even Chu Feng is speaking like this. Are you still going to stop us?” Nangong Huayi asked with a smile.

“Very well, I’ll go with you all,” Aunt Lian said.

“No problem,” Nangong Huayi smiled lightly. Then, his body started to move as he began to lead the way.

As for Nangong Rongsheng, he did not leave with Nangong Huayi right away. Instead, he continued to stand beside Chu Feng and Aunt Lian. It was only when Chu Feng and Aunt Lian began to follow Nangong Huayi that Nangong Rongsheng started to follow too.

Even though the Nangong Imperial Clan was located within a city wall, it was actually extremely vast. Not only were there gorgeous buildings built with gold, there were also boundless lakes, extremely long and continuous rivers and unbroken mountain ranges.

Nangong Huayi brought Chu Feng and Aunt Lian to a mountain range. Then, he stopped.

After Chu Feng landed on the mountain range, he began to inspect his surroundings. He discovered that this was a very good location to silence someone. Thus, he started to laugh grimly in his heart.

Aunt Lian’s gaze turned sharp as she asked cautiously, “Where is the spirit formation that you all spoke of? Where is White-browed

Immortal?”

“Haha... something like this does not require Immortal to act personally,” Nangong Huayi said.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke with a cold voice. “Enough of your rubbish. If you wish to kill me, go right ahead.” As he spoke, he secretly placed his two hands in one location. There was only a slight distance between his palms.

“Chu Feng, what do you mean by that? Why is it that I am confused?” Nangong Huayi asked in a manner feigning puzzlement.

“A bunch of untrustworthy people, yet you still pretend to be confused? You don’t understand what I meant? That’s no issue, I’ll tell you all what I meant.”

“Firstly, it is not I, Chu Feng, who wanted to participate in the Secret Skill Inheritance Assembly. It is you all who invited me there.”

“What was the intention behind your invitation? Wasn’t it just so that you could give me a chance to obtain the secret skill? And now, after the secret skill has chosen me, you all decided to refuse to acknowledge that fact, and want to strip me of the secret skill.”

“It would be one thing if you were to really to strip the secret skill from my body. However, is there a need for you to find such a hidden location to do so? It is simply clear that you all consider me to be a thorn and want to eliminate me,” Chu Feng said.

“Do it,” After Chu Feng said those words, Nangong Huayi’s expression turned cold. He waved his sleeve, and a dazzling golden-bright whip appeared in his hand. Then, he aimed at Aunt Lian and explosively lashed his whip at her.

“Damn it!” Seeing this scene, Aunt Lian wanted to dodge. However, Nangong Rongsheng was grabbing onto her unwaveringly. In the end, she watched as the golden-bright and

dazzling whip wrapped itself around her, binding her tightly.

“Nangong Huayi, Nangong Rongsheng, what are you two doing?! Release me immediately! Else, I’ll have you two suffer the consequences of your actions!”

Aunt Lian was struggling with her all. However, all of her struggles were useless. That whip possessed the power to bind her. Furthermore, Nangong Rongsheng was sending Emperor-level martial power to that whip nonstop. Thus, Aunt Lian was simply unable to break free.

At this moment, Aunt Lian was filled with regret. She felt that she had been foolish. She clearly knew that Nangong Rongsheng and Nangong Huayi could not be trusted. Yet, she had still brought Chu Feng to this place. In the end, she had ended up harming Chu Feng.

Nangong Huayi completely ignored Aunt Lian’s curses. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and laughed, “Chu Feng, you are very smart indeed. You actually managed to guess that we will not let you get away.”

“However, I’m confused. Since you already knew that an imminent catastrophe was about to befall you, why would you still cooperate with us and come to this place? Could it be that you really do not fear death?”

“Who wouldn’t fear death? Merely, I do not fear you all,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance! Even when facing a great catastrophe, you actually dare to talk back.”

“Chu Feng, I know that you possess an extraordinary origin, and that you are a guest invited to our Nangong Imperial Clan by Nangong Lian.”

“How about this? If you are to voluntarily renounce the Water Immortal Profound Technique and remove it from your body, I

will leave you with an intact corpse,” Nangong Huayi said.

“Voluntarily renounce it? Why would I renounce it? The Water Immortal Profound Technique has chosen me. That means that it has acknowledged me. How could I possibly betray its kind intentions?”

“Moreover, when the Water Immortal Profound Technique chose me today, your Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation was also present. Yet, the Water Immortal Profound Technique still chose me. Why is that?”

“The way I see it, it isn’t that my talent is too outstanding. Rather, it is that your Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation is too useless.”

“Especially those three princes and that princess who has altered her appearance. Not only do they lack talent, their moral quality is extremely lacking too. If the Water Immortal Profound Technique were to follow them, wouldn’t it be wronging the great secret technique?” Chu Feng mocked and ridiculed.

“Chu Feng, I know that you only dare to spout falseness because you know that you will not be able to live. However, I’m telling you this, those who dare to insult our Nangong Imperial Clan will have to pay the price.”

“I will not let you die peacefully. I will make you endure suffering, make you beg me to kill you. That is the price that you must pay for insulting our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Hahaha...” Suddenly, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter. His laughter was extremely loud, so loud that he scared all of the birds in a thousand miles radius into the sky.

“What are you laughing about?” Nangong Huayi asked coldly. He was truly unable to understand the young man before him. This Chu Feng simply had the appearance of fearlessness. However, the more Chu Feng acted this way, the more Nangong Huayi felt that

he could not be left alive. The reason for that was because this child was emitting an aura from head to toe, the aura of danger.

“Price, what a price.”

“I possess neither grievance nor hatred with your Nangong Imperial Clan. Yet, you all want to kill me. You all are simply people who cannot be reasoned with, people who totally disregard the lives of others.”

“However, let me tell you this. I, Chu Feng, am not someone who is easily bullied. You wish to kill me, Chu Feng? I will also make your Nangong Imperial Clan pay the price.” At this moment, an expression of anger and ruthlessness flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes.

Chapter 1639 – Birth Of Asura

“Haha, what a joke. A mere brat actually dares to boast like this to me?”

“Very well, do tell exactly what sort of price you can make our Nangong Imperial Clan pay.” Nangong Huayi asked with a cold tone.

“You wish to know? I’ll let you know right away,” As Chu Feng spoke, his arms suddenly moved. His two palms firmly clasped together.

“Buzz~~~~:

When his palms clasped together, a ray of light immediately started to shine. It was as if the brilliant sun was blossoming between Chu Feng’s palms. It was extremely dazzling.

“Wuuaaouuu~~~~”

Immediately afterward, an angry roar actually sounded from Chu Feng’s palms. Following that, boundless dark black gaseous flames began to violently bubble out from Chu Feng’s palms.

In the blink of an eye, the dark black gaseous flames covered the dazzling golden shine.

Most importantly, when the dark black gaseous flames began to bubble forth, the angry roar became more and more ear-piercing.

“What is that?!”

“Exactly what are you?!”

Upon seeing this scene, both Nangong Huayi and Nangong Rongsheng were frightened. They were frightened because they felt a fatal danger the moment Chu Feng’s palms were clasped together.

Furthermore, they discovered that, at this moment, Chu Feng’s eyes had turned jet-black. They simply did not resemble eyes at all.

Not only were there black gaseous flames bubbling out from his palms nonstop, Chu Feng's chest was also flickering with golden brightness. There was a steady flow of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit energy that was flowing into his palms.

At this moment, neither Nangong Huayi nor Nangong Rongsheng were able to accept what was going on. Firstly, they did not understand why there would be such a boundless amount of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit energy. Secondly, they felt those dark black gaseous flames to be something that Chu Feng should not possess.

Those dark black gaseous flames were simply too frightening, indescribably frightening. At the moment the dark black gaseous flames appeared, both Nangong Huayi and Nangong Rongsheng felt their hairs stand on end, and chills run run down their spines. Their bodies started to tremble uncontrollably.

In fact, it was not only the two of them who were stunned. Even Aunt Lian was stunned. At this moment, as she looked to the current Chu Feng, she had an expression of seeing him for the first time.

The current Chu Feng was extremely dangerous, extremely frightening. He was simply not a human. Rather, he was a demon.

“Regardless of what sort of monster you are, I will still kill you today!”

Suddenly, Nangong Huayi attacked. With a thought, golden Emperor-level martial power turned into three golden-bright and dazzling blades that flew toward Chu Feng.

Two of the three blades were aimed toward Chu Feng's arms with the intention to hack them off. As for the final blade, it was aimed at Chu Feng's chest.

“Clank~~~~”

However, before the blades could approach Chu Feng, the dark

black gaseous flames turned into a black colored whip and directly whipped the three blades away.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After blocking Nangong Huayi’s attack, the dark black gaseous flames became sharp and pierced toward Nangong Huayi’s dantian.

Seeing this scene, Nangong Huayi tried to subconsciously dodge. However, the dark black gaseous flames suddenly accelerated and became unimaginably fast. With a ‘puu,’ the dark black gaseous flames not only pierced through Nangong Huayi’s body, but also pierced through Nangong Huayi’s dantian.

“This... this cannot be,” Nangong Huayi looked to his blood that was flowing out from the hole in his lower abdomen with an expression of utter shock. He did not dare to believe that all this was real.

“Didn’t you ask me earlier what sort of price you would have to pay to try to kill me, Chu Feng? I’ll tell you right now.”

“You will have to pay a price of blood,” Chu Feng said coldly.

“Putt~~~”

After Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, the dark black gaseous flames flipped upward like a dragon’s tail. As for Nangong Huayi, his body was hacked in two by the flip of the dark black gaseous flames. His blood scattered in the air and sprinkled down like rain.

“Wuuaouuu~~~”

The dark black gaseous flames that were surging forth were actually changing. They turned into an enormous skeleton. The skeleton opened its enormous mouth and unleashed an extremely ear-piercing roar.

Most importantly, at this moment, it was emitting a very strong killing intent. Even though Aunt Lian and Nangong Rongsheng

were both Martial Emperors, had lived for a very long time and encountered a lot of evil things, they had still never encountered such a frightening existence before.

It was as if a ferocious beast that had been hibernating for a very long time was finally awakened. The first thing that it had to do was find food, to kill all living things.

“Rumble~~~”

In this sort of situation, the sky was densely covered with black clouds with surging bolts of lightning flickering within them. It seemed as if doomsday had arrived in this region of space. Furthermore, this doomsday was rapidly spreading outward, covering more and more land.

“Damn it!” Nangong Rongsheng discovered that the situation was bad and knew that he could not be concerned with Aunt Lian anymore. He immediately released the golden whip and turned around to flee.

“Aooouuu~~~”

After Nangong Rongsheng started to flee, the dark black gaseous flames actually turned into a sharp blade and shot toward Aunt Lian. They were actually planning to kill Aunt Lian.

Most frighteningly, faced with the incoming blade, even though Aunt Lian was a Martial Emperor and the binding on her had been released, she was unable to escape the blade.

That blade simply did not look like a blade at all. Rather, it was more like the sickle of the reaper. As long as it was aimed toward someone, that person would be destined to die.

“Damn it, this guy, he’s actually refusing my control!” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to frown. Immediately, he began to use all of his strength to increase the strength of his spirit formations. Only then did he manage to control the sharp blade that was shooting toward Aunt Lian, allowing her to escape death.

“Aunt Lian, quickly, get away, I am unable to control it,” Chu Feng said with great difficulty.

Aunt Lian did not escape. Instead, she asked worriedly, “Chu Feng, what has happened to you? Exactly what is this?”

“It’s a world spirit, a Martial Emperor-level Asura World Spirit. However, because I’ve used a Taboo Formation Technique, it is no longer a World Spirit, and is now an Evil Spirit.”

“I had thought that I would be able to control it. However, I have still underestimated it. I will soon be unable to control it. Quickly, get away,” Chu Feng shouted with a hoarse voice. He was telling the truth.

Originally, Chu Feng had thought that he he possessed a seventy percent certainty of success in being able to control the Evil Spirit after the preparations he had made.

However, he now discovered that he was mistaken. This Evil Spirit’s power was too strong. He was simply unable to control it. Right now, the only thing he could do was resist it with his all. However, he knew that the Evil Spirit would soon be completely released. When the Evil Spirit was released, Chu Feng was destined to die. It would definitely not let Chu Feng live.

Right at this moment, Eggy’s voice sounded. “Chu Feng, give up on it. In this sort of situation, we can only escape.”

“Escape? How?” Chu Feng asked.

“As another Asura World Spirit, I possess a method to make it unable to detect your existence for a short period of time. I will use this method to cover you right now. Have that Aunt Lian come over too. Stay together, I’ll conceal both of you together,” Eggy said.

Chu Feng did not dare to hesitate. He immediately said to Aunt Lian, “Aunt Lian, come over here, get beside me.”

Aunt Lian did not hesitate either. She immediately arrived beside

Chu Feng.

“Lend me your body,” Eggy spoke again.

After Eggy said those words, Chu Feng gave up authority over his body. In a flash, Eggy occupied Chu Feng’s body and began to control it.

“Go, wreak havoc, have the Nangong Imperial Clan know the strength of our Asura Spirit World,” Eggy shouted loudly. Then, she released Chu Feng’s palms.

When Chu Feng’s palms opened, the surging dark black world spirit power became even more violent. In the blink of an eye, it covered the entire sky and earth. Above the horizon was a dark black hole. At this moment, it turned into an enormous humanoid monster that reached the peak of the clouds.

“Aouuu~~~”

A roar of anger. When this roar of anger sounded, the sky collapsed and the earth caved in. Even space started to disintegrate. This region of space had become utterly dark.

However, there was an enormous pair of crimson eyes that flickered in this darkness like two suns. This pair of crimson eyes possessed boundless killing intent. It was as if their owner possessed the desire to kill all living things.

This Asura World Spirit that had been sealed within Chu Feng for many years was finally released.

Precisely speaking, it was currently no longer an Asura World Spirit. Rather, it was an Asura Evil Spirit.

The birth of Asura, who could possibly stop it?

Chapter 1640 – Doomsday Arrival

As the sky and earth darkened, a hurricane began to sweep forth.

That hurricane contained winds as sharp as sickles. It hacked into the sky and cut into the ground. This region didn't only look like doomsday had come. Rather... doomsday had actually come.

It was only when that Asura Evil Spirit cast its red gaze toward the deeper regions of the Nangong Imperial Clan, and flew toward those deeper regions that the doomsday, the darkened sky, began to gradually become sunny and cloudless.

However, when the beautiful sunshine illuminated the mountain range again, the mountain range had already turned into the aftermath of a disaster.

All of the trees had been cut off. Even the trees that were not cut off had been uprooted by the hurricane. A large amount of the continuous mountain range had collapsed. The destruction had left the place in complete shambles.

Chu Feng and Aunt Lian suddenly appeared in a corner. As he saw that the darkness, the Asura Evil Spirit, was approaching the Nangong Imperial Clan's vast palaces, Chu Feng started to frown. His feelings were extremely complicated.

"I spent all this effort to release this Evil Spirit. However, never would I have expected that all of it would have been in vain," Chu Feng sighed in his heart.

"It's not all in vain. At the very least, by releasing it, you've ended up not dying. However, the Nangong Imperial Clan that wholeheartedly wanted to kill you will be facing an imminent catastrophe," Eggy said while smiling.

"But, not only are Brother Ya, Baihe and Moli there, a lot of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen are innocent," Chu Feng sighed.

"Even if they are innocent, this cannot be blamed upon you. It is

their clansmen that forced this upon you,” Eggy said.

“Eggy, your voice, why is it this weak?” Chu Feng sensed that something was wrong. He discovered that Eggy’s voice was very weak. Furthermore, it was growing weaker and weaker. After Chu Feng cast his consciousness into his world spirit space, his expression changed greatly and he became filled with worries.

At this moment, Eggy was deathly pale. She was sitting down on the ground without the strength to even stand up. She was in incomparably weak health.

“Eggy, what’s wrong?” Chu Feng hurriedly walked over to Eggy and lent her an arm to support her.

“Don’t worry, I’m not going to die,” Eggy smiled a weak smile. Then, she said, “Earlier, I exhausted nearly all of my stamina in order to use that technique. I’m afraid I will not be able to protect you. I will have to sleep for some time.”

“Sleep? How long are you going to sleep for? No, this cannot do. Eggy, what must I do in order to help you?” After hearing what Eggy said, Chu Feng became extremely frightened.

“Idiot, don’t worry. I’m going to be here. Really, I’m only going to sleep for a while. This Queen will not die,” After Eggy finished saying these words, she slowly closed her eyes. She had fallen asleep. However, there was still a sweet smile on her face.

“I’m truly sorry. For the sake of protecting me, I’ve made you harm yourself again. I truly hope for the day where I will no longer need you to protect me, and will be able to protect you instead,” Seeing the sleeping Eggy, Chu Feng felt a deep amount of pain.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?” Right at this moment, Aunt Lian’s voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ears.

Chu Feng cast his consciousness back into his body. Only then did he discover that Aunt Lian was looking at him with a very worried expression.

“Aunt Lian, I am fine,” Chu Feng said with a forced smile.

“That’s good then,” Aunt Lian heaved a sigh of relief. Then, she looked to the southeast and said, “He is, after all, someone from our Nangong Imperial Clan. I cannot do it, you should go and finish him.”

Looking toward the direction of Aunt Lian’s gaze, Chu Feng discovered that there was an injured consciousness in the distance. That consciousness was extremely weak. It was lying on the ground motionlessly.

As for that consciousness, it was Nangong Huayi’s consciousness. It turned out that Nangong Huayi was still alive. However, he was seriously injured. Even though his consciousness had managed to escape from his body, his cultivation was no longer that of a Martial Emperor. Rather, he had become a Martial King. Furthermore, his aura was still rapidly declining.

If this were to continue, there would simply be no need for Chu Feng to do anything; this Nangong Huayi would die naturally. He would not be able to even continue living for two more hours.

However, Chu Feng still decided to finish him personally.

“You, aren’t you the one that wanted to kill me? Why have you been reduced to such a state?” Chu Feng walked toward Nangong Huayi and spoke with a cold smile.

When Nangong Huayi saw Chu Feng, he became extremely frightened. He did not try to escape. Instead, with a trembling voice, he asked, “You... you... exactly who are you?”

“I am the person who will kill you,” Chu Feng said with a cold smile. Then, he shot forth his palm. “Bang,” Nangong Huayi was completely shattered in the explosion. He was utterly dead.

“Wuuaouuu~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, a roar and waves of ear-piercing explosions sounded from the direction of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Looking toward the direction of the voice, energy ripples could be seen to be springing up everywhere. A total of twelve enormous golden-bright dazzling dragons were fighting against those dark black gaseous flames.

Evidently, the Nangong Imperial Clan had discovered the Asura Evil Spirit. Before the Asura Evil Spirit could reach the residential region of the Nangong Imperial Clan, they had already dispatched experts to set up a powerful formation to stop it.

“Aunt Lian, are you not going to help?” Chu Feng asked. No matter how powerful the Nangong Imperial Clan might be, they still only possessed a limited number of Martial Emperor-level experts. At such a time, the Nangong Imperial Clan required Martial Emperors like Aunt Lian to help them.

“This calamity was caused by them. They shall be the ones to take care of this mess. I will protect you and think of a way to take you away from here,” Aunt Lian said.

“In this sort of situation, the Nangong Imperial Clan is already in utter chaos. I believe that they will gather the younger generations and have them escape this place. Indeed, it is a good opportunity for me to leave this place,” Chu Feng said.

As Chu Feng spoke, his appearance began to change. Soon, he had turned into another person. Even his clothes had changed to those of the Nangong Imperial Clan. His cultivation also changed from rank one Half Martial Emperor to rank nine Martial King. Then, he said, “If I disguise myself like this, the escape should be easier.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s impeccable disguise, Aunt Lian nodded, satisfied. She began to admire Chu Feng more and more. Although he was very young, he was frighteningly mature. He had clearly just experienced a crisis of life and death. Yet, he was still able to

analyze the situation with such calmness. This was indeed not something that ordinary people could accomplish.

Afterward, Aunt Lian began to bring Chu Feng toward the direction of an exit.

At the moment when Chu Feng was about to escape the Nangong Imperial Clan, that Asura Evil Spirit he had released was still fighting against the Nangong Imperial Clansmen.

At this moment, a total of twelve Martial Emperors and several thousand Half Martial Emperors had joined hands to set up a Golden Dragon Grand Formation. They controlled twelve golden dragons to fight against that Asura Evil Spirit.

However, even with this being the case, they were still unable to stop it. The Asura Evil Spirit continued onward toward the Nangong Imperial Clan's buildings as it killed everything in its path.

The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan started dying one another another. Even though all those who had fallen thus far were only Half Martial Emperors, they were still the Nangong Imperial Clan's fighting force.

At this moment, the Nangong Imperial Clan was in an utter mess. The members of the younger generation were all fleeing for their lives. They were either escaping to the underground palaces or directly fleeing the city.

Wailing and sounds of grief were being sounded from everywhere. Many people were deeply frightened by that Asura Evil Spirit. Especially the children, who were unable to contain themselves and began to wail and bawl.

The Nangong Imperial Clan, which had been extremely prideful in times of peace, had now been thrown into complete chaos. Fear, cowardice, and unease lingered around their hearts, filling the entire Nangong Imperial Clan.

For them, doomsday had arrived...

Chapter 1641 – Bunch Of Mobs

The buildings of the Nangong Imperial Clan were all bestowed with special spirit formations. Thus, not only were they made out of dazzling gold, they were also indestructibly strong.

However, it was precisely these buildings that were completely shattered by a single footstep from the Asura Evil Spirit. Not even bits of the buildings remained standing.

“Exactly what is going on?! What is that? Provide me with an explanation right now!” The Nangong Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief Nangong Beidou was standing on the surveying platform. He looked to Nangong Rongsheng, who was kneeling before him, and questioned him with a cold voice.

“It’s Chu Feng, that monster is Chu Feng transformed. Chu Feng is simply not a human at all. He is a monster. Nangong Huayi was killed by him with a single strike,” At this moment, Nangong Rongsheng’s body was shivering. His shivering was even more intense than before.

He had seen with his own eyes the birth of the Asura Evil Spirit, and how it had killed Nangong Huayi with a single strike. He was truly frightened by it.

“That brat actually possessed this sort of ability?!”

Hearing those words, Nangong Beidou’s complexion turned green. As he looked to the dark black gaseous flames that formed the enormous humanoid monster that stood with legs on the ground and head reaching the clouds that the twelve Martial Emperors and thousands of Half Martial Emperors were unable to stop, Nangong Beidou began to feel regret.

He regretted his decision to remove Chu Feng so hastily. In the end, he had brought forth a great calamity. Today, the Nangong Imperial Clan would likely suffer a great disaster. It would be

fortunate if they could survive the disaster. However, if they failed to live past it, then the foundation of the Nangong Imperial Clan that had been continued for several tens of thousands of years would likely be destroyed.

“Lord Clan Chief, what should we do? What can we do right now?” Even though he was a Martial Emperor, Nangong Rongsheng was actually so scared that he started shedding tears. It could be seen how deeply shocked he was.

“What a disgrace! What else can we do? We will naturally have to kill him!”

“Look at your appearance, it seems like you are unable to battle. Do not wail before me. Go and protect the princes and princess so that they can safely escape the city,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Yes,” Nangong Rongsheng did not hesitate. His body moved, and he immediately left the surveying tower. To him, not having to fight the Asura Evil Spirit was an enormous blessing.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, an abnormally ear-piercing explosion sounded. The Golden Dragon Grand Formation, which had been set up through the joint efforts of twelve Martial Emperors and several thousand Half Martial Emperors, was actually broken through by the Asura Evil Spirit.

Not only did the twelve golden dragons instantly crumble, there were also several hundred Half Martial Emperors who turned into nothing more than splashes of blood. Furthermore, two rank one Martial Emperors were grabbed by that Asura Evil Spirit and crushed to death in its hands.

Just like this, two Martial Emperors that possessed exceptionally powerful might were killed on the spot.

“Run away!”

In an instant, regardless of whether they were Martial Emperors

or Half Martial Emperors, they all began to flee. The reason for that was because they knew very well that, without the protection of the formation, they were simply no match for that Asura Evil Spirit. If they were to stay here, the only thing waiting for them would be a slaughter.

Seeing this scene, killing intent emerged in Nangong Beidou's eyes. He flipped his palms and took out a large fiery red blade and a blue spear.

They were two Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Even though they were Incomplete Imperial Armaments, they were no ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments. When the two of them were used simultaneously, their might would become even stronger.

“Woosh~~~”

Afterward, Nangong Beidou's body moved. He disappeared from where he had previously been standing. When he reappeared, he was right in front of that Asura Evil Spirit. He had blocked the Asura Evil Spirit's path.

While Nangong Beidou's size was small, and he looked like a speck of dust when compared to the Asura Evil Spirit that was capable of supporting both heaven and earth, he possessed an exceptionally powerful aura. Judging from that, he did not appear to be weaker than the Asura Evil Spirit.

“Chu Feng? I don't think you're him. However, regardless of exactly what you are, you will not be able to take another step forward today,” Nangong Beidou said with a cold voice.

“Clan Chief Nangong, we have come to help you,” Right at this moment, White-browed Immortal arrived with his group of Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists.

“Brother White-brow, quickly withdraw yourselves. This monster is not something that you all can handle,” Nangong Beidou urged.

“Clan Chief Nangong, please rest assured. I have inspected it carefully. This guy here is an Evil Spirit. If I am not mistaken, it should be an Asura Spirit World’s Evil Spirit. Otherwise, it would be impossible for it to possess such powerful fighting strength,” White-browed Immortal said.

“Asura Spirit World’s Evil Spirit?” Hearing those words, Nangong Beidou started to frown. He was even more shocked.

He clearly did not expect that the monster before him possessed such a great origin. After all, the legend of the Asura Spirit World was something that everyone had heard of. Right now, a living Asura World Spirit had actually appeared. Furthermore, it was an Evil Spirit on top of that. How could anyone not be shocked to hear this?

“It is indeed an Asura Spirit World’s Evil Spirit. Otherwise, it would be impossible for it to be this powerful. However, do not worry. What Evil Spirits fear the most is the Evil Suppression Talisman. As you fight it, I will use Evil Suppression Talismans to handle it as well. With that, you will definitely be able to prevail over it,” White-browed Immortal said.

“Very well, let’s do it,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After Nangong Beidou said those words, White-browed Immortal and the others began to release Evil Suppression Talismans. Like ropes, the Evil Suppression Talismans joined together and began to twist themselves around that Asura Evil Spirit.

As for the Asura Evil Spirit, it stood there motionlessly. Not only did it not dodge, it did not fight back either. It was as if it were waiting for them to attack it.

Like this, the Evil Suppression Talismans began to twist around the Asura Evil Spirit’s body. Layer upon layer, the Evil Suppression Talismans covered it completely.

“Earthen Taboo: Fire Dragon King.”

“Earthen Taboo: Water Dragon King.”

At the same time, Nangong Beidou also unleashed his attacks. Regardless of whether it was the might or the domineering feeling of his attacks, they were both stronger than those of the White-browed Immortal and the other world spiritists.

The blade in one of his hands turned into a fire dragon. The spear in his other hand turned into a water dragon. The two dragons were both enormous, both capable of hiding the sky and covering the earth. In terms of size, neither dragon was inferior to the Asura Evil Spirit.

On top of that, there were the Evil Suppression Talismans. They had completely wrapped themselves around the Asura Evil Spirit. As such, the fire dragon and the water dragon opened their ferocious beast mouths and tore at the Asura Evil Spirit.

A bite, another bite and another bite.

With each bite, they would create an enormous gap in the body of the Asura Evil Spirit. A large amount of black gaseous flames would be bitten off from its body.

In this sort of situation, the fire dragon and the water dragon became even more ferocious in their bites. They had the appearance of devouring the Asura Evil Spirit alive.

“Quickly, look, that monster is being taken care of!”

“It’s Lord Clan Chief. Lord Clan Chief has come!”

“This is great! That damned monster actually dared to kill our clansmen and destroy our home. It really should be killed!”

“Lord Clan Chief, hooray! Kill that monster for us!”

Even though the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were fleeing in disarray, they were still paying attention to the situation with the Asura Evil Spirit. As they saw the Asura Evil Spirit being

bound and bitten by the two enormous dragons, as they saw its enormous body becoming badly damaged, the Nangong Imperial Clansmen were all overjoyed.

“Wuuuaouuu~~~”

However, right at this moment, an ear-piercing roar suddenly sounded. That was the Asura Evil Spirit’s voice.

After that roar sounded, the exceptionally mighty fire dragon and water dragon uttered miserable shrieks. Then, the two dragons fell from the sky and landed onto the ground, causing a giant dust storm.

“Bang~~~~”

Following that, another loud sound was heard. The Evil Suppression Talismans that were wrapped around the Asura Evil Spirit were actually all shattered.

Following that, the fire dragon and the water dragon that were lying on the ground emitted more blood-curdling screeches. Then their bodies exploded, and they were turned into violent energy ripples that swept forth everywhere, destroying all the buildings in their path.

When their bodies exploded, two enormous dark black gaseous flames reappeared. They soared into the sky and fused with the Asura Evil Spirit’s body.

At this moment, not only was the Asura Evil Spirit’s enormous body recovered, its red eyes possessed even stronger killing intent.

At this moment, a killing intent even more frightening than before was unleashed from it. This killing intent completely covered the entire Nangong Imperial Clan.

At this moment, not to mention the Nangong Imperial Clan’s young generation, even the powerful individuals like White-browed Immortal started to shiver in fear.

At the moment when everyone was stunned, that Asura Evil Spirit actually slowly opened its mouth and spoke in a somewhat indistinct yet exceptionally dark and cold manner.

“A... bunch... of... mobs.”

Chapter 1642 – Surpassing One's Imagination

At the moment when the Nangong Imperial Clan was suffering from the devastation brought about by the Asura Evil Spirit, Chu Feng was being protected by Aunt Lian and taking advantage of the chaos to escape.

“Chu Feng, take these.”

Aunt Lian took out a cloak and two Cosmos Sacks and handed them to Chu Feng. The cloak was the same cloak that they had worn in the Heavenly Law Auction. It was capable of completely concealing one's aura and preventing others from seeing through one's appearance and cultivation.

As for those two Cosmos Sacks, they were filled with extremely valuable treasures.

Chu Feng did not refuse Aunt Lian's gifts. During this moment of crisis, he needed money to travel as well as treasures to protect himself.

After Chu Feng accepted Aunt Lian's gifts, he asked, “Aunt Lian, are you going to return?”

“I am a member of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Naturally, I will have to return,” Aunt Lian said.

“But you've brought me out. If they are to find out, they will not necessarily let you get away with it,” Chu Feng said worriedly.

Even though Chu Feng had left the Nangong Imperial Clan with a disguise, the Nangong Imperial Clan was not filled with fools. If they were to truly investigate this matter, they would still be able to obtain clues and suspect that Nangong Lian had brought him out.

“You do not have to worry about that. No matter what, they will

not do anything to me,” Aunt Lian said.

“Chu Feng, get going. The further you go, the better off you’ll be,” After Aunt Lian finished saying these words, she turned around and began to return to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Evidently, regardless of how much in the wrong the Nangong Imperial Clan was, she, as a member of the Nangong Imperial Clan, was still extremely worried about them.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Aunt Lian, can the Nangong Imperial Clan still persist?” Not only was there an expression of worry on his face, there was also shame and guilt.

“It will. Regardless of how powerful that Evil Spirit you released is, it will still not be able to destroy our Nangong Imperial Clan,” Aunt Lian was filled with confidence when she said this.

“Really?” Chu Feng was skeptical.

“Really. There is one thing about the Nangong Imperial Clan that the other Three Imperial Clans cannot compare with. That is my older brother.”

“Although my older brother does not concern himself with matters of the clan, he will definitely act during this moment of life and death crisis,” Aunt Lian said.

“Who is your older brother?” Chu Feng asked.

“Nangong Longjian,” After Aunt Lian left these words, she leapt forward and disappeared from Chu Feng’s line of sight.

“Nangong Longjian is actually Aunt Lian’s older brother?” Chu Feng was shocked to hear this. He had wanted to ask more about Nangong Longjian. However, Aunt Lian had already completely disappeared.

After seeing that Aunt Lian had left, Chu Feng changed his appearance again. He had changed himself to look like a very unremarkable-looking middle-aged man. He did not leave right away because he was worried about the Nangong Imperial Clan

too.

Even though Chu Feng wished to kill those from the Nangong Imperial Clan that wanted to kill him, he did not wish for the destruction of the entire Nangong Imperial Clan.

After all, there were also good people in the Nangong Imperial Clan. For example, there were Aunt Lian, Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli.

Chu Feng firmly believed that the good people in the Nangong Imperial Clan were definitely not limited to only them. There were definitely even more good people.

As for those people, they did not possess malicious intentions against Chu Feng. If they were to be killed by the Asura Evil Spirit, they would be innocents.

Chu Feng did not wish to cause the deaths of innocents. However, there was nothing he could do.

Even though he had released the Asura Evil Spirit from within his body, he had simply been unable to control it. At the very least, the current him was unable to control the Asura Evil Spirit.

If possible, Chu Feng truly hoped that the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan would be able to stop the Asura Evil Spirit.

After all, if even the Nangong Imperial Clan could not stop that Asura Evil Spirit, then it would likely not only be the Nangong Imperial Clan that would suffer a calamity. The entire Holy Land of Martialism would end up suffering a calamity. With the murderous nature of that Asura Evil Spirit, it would definitely not stop at this, and would kill even more people.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to do anything, he did not want to leave like this. The reason for that was because he would be left feeling restless should he leave like this.

He had to wait for news, news of the Nangong Imperial Clan defeating the Asura Evil Spirit. This was the news that Chu Feng

wanted to hear.

.....

At this moment, within the Nangong Imperial Clan, the Asura Evil Spirit's gaseous flames were as overflowing as ever. This precious Nangong Imperial Clan had become a paradise of destruction.

White-browed Immortal and the others had already escaped. When even the Evil Suppression Talismans were unable to take care of the Asura Evil Spirit, they no longer had any means to take care of it.

At this moment, there was only a single person stopping the Asura Evil Spirit. As for this person, he was the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou.

At this moment, a dazzling bright 'Imperial' character was flashing on Nangong Beidou's forehead, and his entire body was shining with golden light. Even though he appeared to be extremely imposing, he was actually gasping for breath.

He had already unleashed all of his most powerful abilities. Yet, he was still unable to stop the Asura Evil Spirit. The Asura Evil Spirit had already flattened a fifth of all of their Nangong Imperial Clan's land.

As for the people who had died at the Asura Evil Spirit's hands, they were too many to count. There were even Martial Emperors, a total of three, who had died at its hands. As for Half Martial Emperors, their death count numbered at over a thousand. As for those below Half Martial Emperor, the number of casualties was simply incapable of being estimated.

This made Nangong Beidou feel extremely helpless and worried. He felt that he was a sinner, a sinner who was soon going to ruin the foundation of the Nangong Imperial Clan that had continued on for several tens of thousands of years.

“Huuaouuu~~~”

Right at this moment, a roar sounded from outside the city. When that roar sounded, the entire Nangong Imperial Clan started to tremble. It was not the roar of a normal beast. Rather, it was a dragon’s roar.

This dragon roar was completely different from the dragon roars from before. If all dragon roars were capable of intimidation, then this roar was the most intimidating.

“Huuaaouuu~~~”

The dragon roar sounded once again. Following that, a dazzling golden dragon surged forth from the distant mountain. It actually broke through the Nangong Imperial Clan’s spirit formation and charged into the vast city toward the direction of Nangong Beidou.

Everyone who saw this golden dragon was overjoyed. Even Nangong Beidou revealed an expression of relief.

That golden dragon was no ordinary golden dragon. It was extremely vivid and lifelike. It was as if that golden dragon was an actual dragon.

Not only did it look like an actual dragon, its aura also resembled that of an actual dragon. It was immensely powerful. Its aura had already surpassed the grand Clan Chief of the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Beidou.

“Wuuaouuu~~~”

When that dragon appeared, the Asura Evil Spirit also unleashed a roar. Afterward, from an enormous skull that reached the clouds, it turned into dark black gaseous flames again. As the black gaseous flames hovered, they instantly formed an enormous black dragon. The black dragon collided with the golden dragon.

“Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~”

In an instant, space began to rip apart. The sky and the earth

were being turned upside down. The battle between the two was extremely frightening. Even Nangong Beidou hurriedly escaped from the range of their battle.

After distancing himself, Nangong Beidou arrived at a location that had yet to be destroyed, and began to use his strength to stop the energy ripples resulting from their battle to prevent the deaths of even more people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

The battle between the two lasted for an entire hour. After the one hour mark, the two dragon claws from the enormous black dragon ruthlessly pierced into the body of the golden dragon like a pair of sharp blades.

Afterward, it opened its ferocious mouth and bit down on the golden dragon's head.

The golden dragon began to scream and struggle nonstop. However, it was simply unable to break away from the black dragon. The black dragon became more and more vicious, and actually began to tear at the golden dragon's body.

Whenever a piece of the golden dragon's body was torn out, it would turn into a stream of golden gaseous flames that drifted into the skies.

Finally, the golden dragon was unable to resist anymore. After a final miserable shriek, it fell to the ground with a loud crash.

Seeing this scene, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan all had ashen complexions and dejected expressions.

The strength of the Asura Evil Spirit had already surpassed their imaginations.

Chapter 1643 – Nangong Longjian

Right after that golden dragon fell to the ground, a total of three old men suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

These three old men all possessed snow white hair. Their hair was longer than even their bodies. As they stood in the air, their hair reached down below their ankles.

These three old men appeared to have lived for a long time. It was not only several thousand years. Likely, they had lived for several tens of thousands of years. The reason for that was because even though their hair was very silky, their bodies were extremely aged, extremely thin and weak. It was as if the three of them could be blown away by a light breeze.

However, the three of them were emitting exceptionally powerful auras that shook even the space around them.

Each and every one of them possessed stronger auras than Nangong Beidou. Evidently, the three of them were all stronger than Nangong Beidou. They were three rank four Martial Emperors.

“It’s the Utmost Exalted Elders. The Utmost Exalted Elders have come. Our Nangong Imperial Clan will be saved!”

“Are they the Utmost Exalted Elders? They’re actually still alive? The Utmost Exalted Elders are actually still alive! This is truly great!”

Upon seeing these three old men, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan burst into an uproar once again. However, as they became excited and overjoyed, they also started to kneel onto the ground and respectfully bow to the three old men in the sky.

In fact, when bowing to those three old men, many of the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were so emotional that they actually started crying.

This could not be blamed on them. After all, the origins of these three old men were truly enormously grand. They were the Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders.

Even though the three of them were all born in different eras, all three of them possessed a much higher seniority than Nangong Beidou. It could be said that the three of them were the people in the Nangong Imperial Clan who possessed the greatest authority. They were the true rulers of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

However, the three of them had all been in closed-door training for over five hundred years now. In this period of over five hundred years, the three of them had not even revealed themselves once.

This was the reason why there were many people from the Nangong Imperial Clan who had never met them before since their births. In fact, there were even many people who thought that the three of them might have already died.

After all, even though Martial Emperors were capable of living for a very long time, it was very difficult for them to live for over ten thousand years.

Thus, in the Holy Land of Martialism, ten thousand years signaled a cycle for the end of an era and the start of a new era.

After ten thousand years, no matter how powerful one might be, they would still end up dying. Replacing them were the people from the new era.

As for these three old men, they had all surpassed the life expectancy of Martial Emperors since long ago. If they hadn't relied on miracle medicines to continue their lives, they would likely have already died.

In fact, there were many experts from the older generation who would end up dying of old age in closed-door training. Not to mention others, their Nangong Imperial Clan had also had many

such experts.

However, it was evident today that the three Utmost Exalted Elders were still alive. Furthermore, not only were they still alive, they also still possessed overflowing battle power. This could be seen from the golden dragon that the three of them had jointly created.

“I pay my respects to the three Utmost Exalted Elders.”

After the three Utmost Exalted Elders appeared, Nangong Beidou immediately flew over to them and bent his back to bow to them respectfully.

“Beidou, exactly what has happened here? Why would such a fierce Evil Spirit suddenly appear in our Nangong Imperial Clan?” One of the three Utmost Exalted Elders asked.

“Reporting to the Utmost Exalted Elder, this is a very long story. Beidou also feels very helpless about this,” Nangong Beidou did not know how to explain the situation to them.

“Where’s Nangong Longjian? Is he not in the clan?” Another Utmost Exalted Elder asked.

“Lil brother Longjian, he...” Nangong Beidou sighed, “He is in the clan. However, you all also know of his nature. All he cares about is martial cultivation. He simply does not place the safety of our clan in his heart. He does not care about our lives,” Nangong Beidou said while sighing helplessly.

“It’s been a total of five hundred years now. Yet, Nangong Longjian is still this insensible. We really must lecture him properly,” The last Utmost Exalted Elder said with an expression of anger.

“Enough with the superfluous words. Attack together. Take care of that Evil Spirit first.”

The three Utmost Exalted Elders attacked once again. The golden-bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character appeared on their

foreheads. They clasped their palms together and began to emit dazzling golden light. Then, the light they emitted began to fuse with one another in the sky, forming another vivid and lifelike golden dragon. The golden dragon immediately charged towards the Asura Evil Spirit to attack it.

Most importantly, this golden dragon was even more powerful than the last golden dragon.

“That must be our Nangong Imperial Clan’s Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation, right?”

“Amazing! As expected of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Its might is simply too frightening. I truly wonder if I’ll be able to successfully learn it in my lifetime.”

“Stop daydreaming. This Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation is something that even Lord Clan Chief was unable to learn. Even for the three Utmost Exalted Elders, they have to act together in order to use it. Yet you think that you can learn it? You should stop with your delusions. There’s no hope for you to learn it in your lifetime.”

As the golden dragon appeared in the sky, some people from the Nangong Imperial Clan came to know what technique that was. That was not a spirit formation. Rather, it was a martial skill, a legendary Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

Even though Heaven Taboo Martial Skills were akin to legends, the Nangong Imperial Clan, having existed for so long, did indeed possess a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. As for this Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, it was the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation.

No one knew who created the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation. However, only those who possessed Imperial Bloodlines were capable of learning it. It was the clan protection treasure of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

However, even with this being the case, there were very few people in the history of the Nangong Imperial Clan who actually managed to learn the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation. For many of the Nangong Imperial Clansmen, they had only heard about the divine might of this Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation from textual records.

And now, they were finally able to see it for themselves. Naturally, they would be extremely excited and emotional. After all, this was the strongest ability that the Nangong Imperial Clan possessed.

“But, will that Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation be able to prevail against that monster?” However, even though the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation possessed unrivalled divine power, there were still people who questioned it.

“Wuuaouuu~~~”

It turned out that their questionings hit right at the mark. The reason for that was because that Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation was once again being ruthlessly bitten by that black dragon transformed from the Asura Evil Spirit. Furthermore, this time around, it was even more ruthless than before. The black dragon had actually torn the golden dragon to bits right in the middle of the sky.

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

At the moment when the golden dragon was being torn to bits, the three Utmost Exalted Elders all vomited mouthfuls of blood. Then, they stepped back several steps in midair. If it wasn't for Nangong Beidou immediately supporting them with his martial power, they would likely have fallen from the sky.

At this moment, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan

were terrified. Even with the three Utmost Exalted Elders coming out and using their Nangong Imperial Clan's clan protection martial skill, the Heaven Taboo: Golden Dragon Transformation, they were still unable to defeat this Asura Evil Spirit. With all this, who could possibly be able to stop it? Could it be that the Nangong Imperial Clan would truly perish today?

At this moment, one of the Utmost Exalted Elders loudly shouted, "Nangong Longjian, how much longer are you going to watch with folded arms? Are you really going to watch as our Nangong Imperial Clan is destroyed?"

His voice resonated through the sky and echoed through an area of over ten thousand miles.

"Boom~~~"

Right at this moment, a sudden explosion was heard. An enormous golden sword suddenly dropped from the sky. The sword was aimed at that Asura Evil Spirit.

When that enormous golden sword appeared, an incomparably powerful might descended from the sky and covered everyone.

It was as if that aura was the strongest existence in all of heaven and earth.

Chapter 1644 – Both Sides Suffer

That enormous sword was extremely large. In terms of size, it was not at all smaller than the Asura Evil Spirit. It was capable of hiding the sky and covering the earth. Its length was continuous for several miles, and it left an enormous shadow behind on the ground.

Furthermore, this golden sword was emitting a very intense amount of Emperor's Might. Not only was there a giant dragon carved on the sword, the sword also produced dragon roars when it was used to attack.

One could faintly see a giant dragon's shadow moving about alongside the enormous golden dragon sword. Furthermore, this giant dragon's shadow was even larger than the golden dragon from before. In fact, it was even larger than the Asura Evil Spirit.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the enormous golden dragon sword suddenly sped up. It turned into a golden blur and hacked downward. It actually managed to directly hack the black dragon formed by the Asura Evil Spirit in two.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After that, the enormous golden dragon sword let out multiple slashes in succession. It sliced the black dragon formed by the Asura Evil Spirit into multiple pieces, turning it into many dark black gaseous flames that began to flee into the distance.

The dark black gaseous flames first broke through the city's spirit formation barrier. Then, they entered the mountains. Following that, a loud explosion was heard. It was evident that they had charged through the spirit formation barrier outside of the mountain.

The Asura Evil Spirit was actually defeated. Not only was it

defeated, it was even fleeing.

Seeing this scene, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were all stunned. At this moment, they were at a loss as to what had happened. They were completely shocked.

Originally, they had all thought they would be facing a calamity today. However, at the moment when they were about to give in to despair, an enormous golden dragon sword actually appeared out of nowhere. With absolute power, it had defeated the undefeatable Asura Evil Spirit.

“It’s Lord Longjian! That’s Lord Longjian’s Imperial Armament, the Heavenly Dragon Golden Sword!”

“It is definitely Lord Longjian who came to save us!”

“That’s right, it’s definitely Lord Longjian. Only he possesses the ability to defeat that monster!”

Suddenly, some people started to cry out in alarm. Following that, cries of alarm began to arise from the Nangong Imperial Clansmen repeatedly. They had all managed to react. In the Nangong Imperial Clan, the strongest individual was not the Clan Chief, nor was it the three Utmost Exalted Elders. Rather, it was Nangong Longjian.

At this moment, even though the Nangong Imperial Clan had suffered devastation to their city and countless deaths, excited cheers began to sound from the city. The crowd was overjoyed and filled with excitement.

The reason why they were in such joy was because they felt that they had obtained a new lease on life. Before that frightening monster, they had managed to survive.

However, right at the moment when the Nangong Imperial Clansmen were cheering, that enormous Heavenly Dragon Golden Sword suddenly shone with light, then disappeared.

Deep in the mountains, far away from the vast city of the

Nangong Imperial Clan, the Imperial Armament, the Heavenly Dragon Golden Sword, reappeared. Merely, when it reappeared, it was no longer the enormous sword that could hide the sky and cover the earth. Rather, it had turned into a nine-foot-long golden sword.

This golden sword flew into the deep forest and arrived at a place with very beautiful scenery.

There were mountain peaks and a waterfall at this place. Before the waterfall stood a man. That golden sword arrived firmly in that man's hand.

That man had a head of black hair. His hair reached his waist, and was black like ink. As his hair fluttered in the wind, he gave off a very extraordinary air.

This man had a very handsome appearance. While his actual age was unknown, his current appearance was that of a middle-aged man with exceptional charisma.

Even though this man possessed an exceptional appearance and gave off a very imposing air, there was no trace of emotion in his eyes. It was as if he were an emotionless person who was unaffected by anything in this world.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when the Imperial Armament entered his hand, four figures landed in succession. These four people were the Nangong Imperial Clan's three Utmost Exalted Elders and the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou.

After Nangong Beidou landed, he immediately pointed at Nangong Longjian and began to scold him. “Nangong Longjian, I

truly do not know how to lecture you. How could you act in such a manner when you carry on the name of our Nangong Clan?”

“You clearly could have stopped that Asura Evil Spirit long ago. Yet, why did you not act sooner? Why did you only act when our Nangong Imperial Clan suffered enormous casualties? Why did you only act after the three Utmost Exalted Elders were injured?”

“Fortunately, the three Utmost Exalted Elders possess strong powers. Else, if something were to happen to them, you would not be able to shoulder the responsibility.”

“Are you blaming me? Back then, Imperial Father passed on the status of the Clan Chief to you, so that you could protect our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Yet now, not only have you failed to protect our Nangong Imperial Clan, you have instead come to blame me for it?” Nangong Longjian cast a cold side glance at Nangong Beidou. Both his gaze and expression were extremely cold.

“You are simply twisting words and forcing logic. As a member of the Nangong Imperial Clan, do you not also have the duty to protect our Nangong Imperial Clan? Are you implying that you can watch with folded arms?” Nangong Beidou refuted.

“I was in closed-door training. If it wasn’t for the fact that the noise had disturbed my training, I would likely not have awoken.”

“Furthermore, the barrier around the mountain is undamaged. That means that Asura Evil Spirit appeared from within our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Only you know exactly what you have done. Thus, in terms of responsibility for that Asura Evil Spirit, it all lies with you.”

Nangong Longjian’s tone was extremely calm. He did not appear to be arguing with Nangong Beidou. However, his tone was also not that of someone speaking to one’s elder brother. Instead, his tone appeared to be the tone of one who was reasoning with a

stranger. This attitude from Nangong Longjian caused Nangong Beidou to feel even more enraged.

“Very well. Even if this is my responsibility, why did you release that Evil Spirit when you clearly could have killed it? Do you not fear that it will come back to retaliate against our Nangong Imperial Clan? Do you not fear that it will wantonly kill the younger generation of our Nangong Imperial Clan in the Overlord Domain?”

“Your compassion and leniency have left behind a concealed danger for your Nangong Imperial Clan,” Nangong Beidou continued.

“You are not me... how do you know that I can kill it?” Nangong Longjian asked in return.

“You...”

“Enough, Beidou, stop talking. If it wasn’t for Longjian, we would all be unable to escape a calamity today,” Right at this moment, one of the three Utmost Exalted Elder spoke.

“That’s right. Longjian, it has been five hundred years since we last met. Your cultivation has increased again. Never would I have thought that you would have become a rank five Martial Emperor. You have surpassed us three old men. It has been a very long time since a genius like you last appeared in our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Longjian, whether our Nangong Imperial Clan will be able to surpass the Three Palaces in the future will all depend on you,” The other two Utmost Exalted Elders also spoke with beaming smiles.

Seeing this, Nangong Beidou’s complexion turned green. Earlier, the three Utmost Exalted Elders had spoken of lecturing Nangong Longjian.

Yet, after they saw Nangong Longjian, they actually had a

hundred and eighty degree shift in attitude. This left Nangong Beidou extremely speechless.

“Three elders, I was in closed-door training. This time, I was forced to come out of my closed-door training, and have injured my vitality. I must quickly return to closed-door training,” Nangong Longjian said coldly. Even when facing the three Utmost Exalted Elders, he still had an expressionless face, as if he were facing some strangers.

“Good, good, good, it’s more important to wholeheartedly train,” The three Utmost Exalted Elders nodded with smiles on their faces.

Nangong Longjian did not say anything. He directly turned around and entered the waterfall.

“Beidou, exactly how did that Evil Spirit come to be here?” After Nangong Longjian left, the three Utmost Exalted Elders suddenly removed their smiles and began to question Nangong Beidou with serious expressions.

“Three Utmost Exalted Elders, this matter is a very long story. Let’s return to the city first. I can slowly tell you all that happened afterward,” Nangong Beidou had a very petty expression on his face as he said those words.

“Very well, this is not a suitable place to speak. We might disturb Longjian’s training. Let’s go, tell us what happened after we return to the city,” The three Utmost Exalted Elders began to fly toward the city.

At this moment, Nangong Beidou had a very ugly expression on his face. No matter what, he was still the Clan Chief. Yet, the attitude these three Utmost Exalted Elders had toward him and Nangong Longjian were simply too different.

However, even though he was feeling very displeased, there was nothing he could do. He cast a fierce glance at the place where Nangong Longjian was undergoing closed-door training and then

turned to leave.

“Puu~~~”

Right after Nangong Beidou left, Nangong Longjian, who had just entered the waterfall, became deathly pale and vomited a mouthful of blood. Then, his knees grew weak, and he half knelt on the ground.

Chapter 1645 – Sealing The News

“Longjian, what happened to you?”

After Nangong Longjian revealed his injuries, a woman immediately walked out from the depths of the cave within the waterfall.

This woman was very gorgeous. She was actually Bai Ruochen’s mother, Bai Suyan.

Even though Bai Suyan was already a mother, she still wore very revealing multicolored outfits.

However, at this moment, when beside Nangong Longjian, she was wearing a very simple and unadorned clothing. Not only that, she revealed a very worried expression when she saw that Nangong Longjian was injured.

“I do not know where that Asura Evil Spirit came from. Even though it was clearly a rank one Martial Emperor, it was able to contend against me. If it wasn’t for the fact that I possess an Imperial Armament, I would likely have been unable to defeat it.”

“Even though I defeated it, I have exhausted too much of my power. My body was unable to endure it,” Nangong Longjian said. His voice had changed. It had changed to a voice that was extremely weak. It turned out that Nangong Longjian had actually been bracing himself and acting tough in front of Nangong Beidou and the others.

“Asura Evil Spirit? You’re saying that the thing causing chaos and destruction in the city was an Evil Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?” Hearing those words, Bai Suyan’s expression changed. She seemed to have thought of something.

Seeing the change in Bai Suyan’s expression, Nangong Longjian asked, “What’s wrong?”

“The Asura World Spirits are legends. It has been a very long

time since there has been an Asura World Spiritist who appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Without reason, why would an Asura Evil Spirit suddenly appear?” Bai Suyan asked.

“The disappearance of the Boundary Energy signifies the birth of an era’s overlord. Right now, we are living in troubled times. In troubled times, heroes will emerge in large numbers.”

“There have already been a lot of geniuses with outstanding talents appearing in this era. That Elf Kingdom’s little princess was one of them. It is not strange for an Asura World Spiritist to appear now,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Indeed, it’s not strange. I am only surprised because I know of an Asura World Spiritist,” Bai Suyan said.

“You know of an Asura World Spiritist? Who is that person? Which power does that person belong to?” Hearing those words, Nangong Longjian’s eyes shone with curiosity.

“Indeed, I know of an Asura World Spiritist. When Rouchen and I were in the Cyanwood Domain searching for the Imperial Dragon Tree Roots, we became acquaintances with that Asura World Spiritist.”

“He is a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain. His age is about the same as Ruochen’s and he possesses an exceptionally high talent for martial cultivation.”

“However, I do not think that it should be him. After all, regardless of how talented he might be, it is impossible for him to grow to such a degree where he’d be able to release a Martial Emperor-level Asura Evil Spirit in such a short period of time,” Bai Suyan shook her head.

The person she was thinking about was naturally Chu Feng. However, she immediately rejected her own hypothesis. After all, when they separated from Chu Feng back then, Chu Feng was still

only a Martial King. Furthermore, it had not been a long time since they had parted with one another.

Thus, Bai Suyan was certain that Chu Feng would not be able to obtain a Martial Emperor-level world spirit in such a short period of time, much less release it.

“I do not care about exactly who it is that caused this chaos. What I care the most about right now is Ruochen,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Ruochen is doing very well. Come, let’s go see her,” Bai Suyan said.

“Very well,” Nangong Longjian nodded. Even though he was very emotionless toward his own relatives, there was a fondness in his actions and tone when he was with Bai Suyan.

The two of them continued deeper into the mountain cave. After they passed through a concealment formation, another spirit formation appeared before them. There was a pond at the center of this spirit formation.

Golden water filled the pond. The surface of the water was boiling over. Golden tree roots were placed within the water. Those tree roots were sparkling with a golden shine. Those tree roots contained special power, and were emitting a sensation of invulnerability.

There was a beautiful young woman in the pond. This woman was completely naked as she sat within the pond, and only her head was above the water.

This woman was truly beautiful. Her little face was simply that of a standard ice-cold beauty. As for this woman, she was none other than the woman who had experienced crisis after crisis with Chu Feng in the Cyanwood Mountain, Bai Ruochen.

At this moment, Bai Ruochen was asleep. However, her appearance did not appear to be that of someone who had just

fallen asleep. Likely, she had been sleeping for a very long time.

Even though she had been sleeping for a very long time, she was glowing with radiance. The air that she gave off was much stronger than when she was awake.

Furthermore, while Bai Ruochen was not wearing anything, her body was wrapped around by the golden tree roots. Wave upon wave of power was entering her body, cleansing her blood, her meridians, her dantian and her soul.

“How much longer till Ruochen wakes up?” Nangong Longjian asked.

“I don’t know,” Bai Suyan shook her head.

“Hopefully everything will still be on time.”

“Cough, cough, cough...” Right at this moment, Nangong Longjian started to cough violently. Seeing that, Bai Suyan immediately stepped forward and lent an arm to support him.

However, suddenly, Bai Suyan’s expression became extremely ugly. There was a large amount of black blood on her arm. This blood had been coughed out by Nangong Longjian.

“Longjian, your injuries have gotten more serious again?” Bai Suyan felt extremely pained.

“It doesn’t matter. After all, sooner or later, I’ll die,” Nangong Longjian smiled lightly. It was as if he had already seen through life and death. Merely, there was still a trace of reluctance in his eyes. The reason for that was because there were people that he still yearned to be with. It was not only Bai Suyan, there was also Bai Ruochen.

.....

The Asura Evil Spirit had escaped. It had escaped without any trace at all. The reason for that was because there had been no news of the Asura Evil Spirit willfully slaughtering the innocent

after escaping from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As for the Nangong Imperial Clan, they had also blocked the news of the appearance of the Asura Evil Spirit and the destruction it had caused from spreading. After all, this was not a good piece of news. If this news were to spread, it would only cause them to be ridiculed by others.

However, the Nangong Imperial Clan did not plan to let Chu Feng escape. After careful consideration, they felt that Chu Feng was still alive. Even though they had already experienced how frightening that Asura Evil Spirit was, and already knew that Chu Feng was definitely not someone ordinary and could not be treated as a member of the younger generation, this only made them even more determined that they must eliminate Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had been waiting outside of the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory the entire time. He was waiting for a piece of news.

However, after several days had passed, he had not managed to obtain any news at all. The Nangong Imperial Clan was extremely quiet; it was as if nothing had happened to the Nangong Imperial Clan.

It was only when several groups of people from the Nangong Imperial Clan left their city and began to post wanted posters in the nearby cities that Chu Feng realized that the Nangong Imperial Clan had not been destroyed. Instead, they were very well off.

Else, they would not have the leisure to put out wanted posters. As for the person on their wanted posters, it was actually him.

“Chu Feng? This Chu Feng, could he be the Chu Feng who defeated the Beitang Imperial Clan with his world spirit techniques at the Immortal Island?”

“How could this be? Doesn't Chu Feng possess a very good relationship with the Nangong Imperial Clan? I heard that several days ago there were people who saw Chu Feng appearing from the

teleportation formation with the Nangong Imperial Clan's young master and misses. Furthermore, he entered the Nangong Imperial Clan with them. On their way there, they were even chatting and laughing. It was as if he were going there to be a guest."

"How did he suddenly turn into the wanted criminal of the Nangong Imperial Clan? Could it be that he has done something that he shouldn't have in the Nangong Imperial Clan?"

While other things in the Holy Land of Martialism did not spread fast, news spread extremely quickly. What Chu Feng had managed to accomplish in the past had been known by many people already.

When the wanted posters were posted, without Chu Feng himself being shocked, those people who knew of him were all shocked.

Chapter 1646 – Scouting For Information

In fact, Chu Feng was feeling very depressed too. He had only been in the Overlord Domain for a short while. Yet, not only did he offend the Beitang Imperial Clan, he had now also offended the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Furthermore, Chu Feng knew very well that, when compared to the Beitang Imperial Clan, the Nangong Imperial Clan hated him even more. Firstly, the secret skill that they had meticulously obtained was taken by him.

Next, there was that Asura Evil Spirit. Chu Feng had seen for himself how powerful that Asura Evil Spirit was. Even if the Nangong Imperial Clan managed to successfully defeat the Asura Evil Spirit, they would likely have suffered enormously in the process. At the very least, the death of Nangong Huayi, a Martial Emperor, was already a major loss for the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Likely, the Nangong Imperial Clan wished to be able to pull Chu Feng's tendons out, drink his blood, and tear and eat his flesh.

However, Chu Feng did not know that, other than Nangong Huayi, there were two other Martial Emperors who died at the hands of that Asura Evil Spirit. The hatred that the Nangong Imperial Clan had toward him was greater than he could have imagined.

However, regardless of the losses the Nangong Imperial Clan had sustained, it had not been destroyed. As such, Chu Feng felt relieved. At the very least, this meant that not all of the innocents had been killed because of him.

Even though Chu Feng felt a lot more at ease, Chu Feng did not leave right away. Instead, he began to follow a group of people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

No matter what, that Asura Evil Spirit was his. Chu Feng could

not be unconcerned with its death because he had failed to control it.

Thus, Chu Feng wanted to capture a person from the Nangong Imperial Clan so that he could investigate what exactly had happened in the Nangong Imperial Clan that day.

At this moment, Chu Feng had targeted a person from the Nangong Imperial Clan. He was a middle-aged man, and his cultivation was not weak. However, he could not be considered to be a very powerful expert either. He was a normal rank six Martial King with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation.

At this moment, this middle-aged man was walking freely in the city and posting Chu Feng's wanted posters.

He was very aggressive. He would push and shove people aside and wantonly curse people out.

Taking advantage of the fact that he was someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan, this middle-aged man was extremely arrogant. In fact, there was no one in this city who dared to provoke him.

"Old bastard, get the hell away. Your daddy needs to post the wanted poster here. Your damned stall is in your daddy's way!"

Suddenly, this Nangong Imperial Clansman kicked an uncle's stall to pieces. Seeing that, the uncle and the surrounding people all immediately ran away. In a blink of an eye, only this Nangong Imperial Clansman remained on the street.

"A bunch of bumpkins. Look at their useless appearances," As he looked at those people that were scared witless and fleeing from him, this Nangong Imperial Clansman wiped his nose with his thumb and revealed a vulgar and complacent smile.

"Paa~~~"

Suddenly, a piece of rock came flying from behind. It accurately

smashed onto that man's head.

“Ouch!” This rock was thrown with a lot of strength. It directly knocked the man over. As the Nangong Imperial Clansman rubbed the back of his head, he discovered that his head was not only dripping with blood, the back of his head had also been knocked inward, and the stone was actually stuck within his head.

This caused the man to immediately fly into a violent rage and begin to shout loudly. As someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan, people from the city would generally not dare to even look at him. Yet, at this time, someone had actually dared to attack him. How could he possibly endure this?

Thus, he turned around and began to loudly curse, “Motherfucker! Who the fuck hit your daddy? Are you tired of living? Do you know who I am? I am the Nangong Imperial Clan's Nangong Dahao!”

“The fuck! The hell is going on?!”

However, he was stunned after he turned around. There was not a single person behind him. Even when he carefully sensed his surroundings, he was unable to sense anyone with a cultivation higher than his in the surrounding area. If their cultivation was weaker than his own, then it would have been impossible for them to hit him to such a state.

“Ouch!”

Right at this moment, the man screamed again. Immediately afterward, he fell to the ground and lost consciousness.

At this moment, a man stood behind him. It was a middle-aged burly man. This man was actually Chu Feng's disguise.

Chu Feng used a special burlap sack and placed this man inside it. Then, he left the city and arrived at a remote and uninhabited location.

Furthermore, in order to protect himself against the unexpected,

he set up a concealment formation and a soundproofing formation. It was only then that he released the man.

“Who dares to hit your daddy here? Have you grown tired of living? Do you know who your daddy is? Your daddy is...” Right after this man woke up, before he even opened his eyes, he had begun to curse loudly.

Chu Feng ignored him completely. “Pow,” a slap landed on his face, knocking him to the ground.

“I ask, you answer. If you dare to speak any superfluous words, I will cripple your cultivation,” Chu Feng said with a cold voice.

“Wuu~~~” This Nangong Imperial Clansman was no fool. When he discovered that Chu Feng possessed the cultivation of a rank nine Martial King and that he was deep in the forest without anyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan nearby, he knew right away that he had been kidnapped. Thus, he immediately shut his mouth and did not dare to curse and threaten anymore.

This man was quite amusing. Even though he did not dare to say anything, he was nodding his head repeatedly. It was as if he were telling Chu Feng ‘I will answer anything you ask so please don’t cripple my cultivation.’

“The Nangong Imperial Clan has been attacked by an Evil Spirit, no?” Chu Feng asked.

“Who are you? How did you know about this?” Hearing Chu Feng’s question, that man was immediately shocked.

“Pow~~~”

Chu Feng did not bother to say anything and immediately slapped him, knocking him to the ground again. Then, he said, “I am the only one asking the questions here. You are only to answer my questions. Do you not understand?”

“I do, I do, I do. Please don’t cripple my cultivation!” The man crawled back up and began to nod repeatedly.

“Then why are you not answering?” Chu Feng asked.

“We were indeed attacked by an Evil Spirit. I was also present back then. Thus, I saw everything.”

“Speaking of it, this is a long story. I heard that we were holding some sort of Secret Skill Inheritance Assembly. At that time, I was extremely excited. Later on, I ended up finding out that I was not part of it because my talent is too weak.”

“This caused me to be extremely depressed. So depressed, I began to drink. After I finished drinking, I went to sleep. I was sleeping very soundly when heaven and earth started to suddenly tremble, and roars began to be heard repeatedly. This scared the hell out of me. I thought that heaven was going to collapse. Immediately, I got out from my bed and walked outside to see what was happening.”

“Once I saw what was going on, I was so scared that I pissed my pants on the spot. What did you think happened? This was not something as simple as the heavens collapsing. This was much more frightening than the heavens collapsing. A monster capable of hiding the sky and covering the earth appeared in our Nangong Imperial Clan. At that moment, it was destroying everything in its path.”

“That monster was too frightening. Three of our Nangong Imperial Clan’s Lord Martial Emperors died at its hands. As for the casualties of those with cultivations below Martial Emperor, their numbers were too many to count.”

“Even our Lord Clan Chief was no match for it. Afterward, our three Utmost Exalted Elders who had been in closed-door training for five hundred years all came out. Yet, they were still no match for that monster.”

“In the end, it was Lord Nangong Longjian who beat that monster away. I only came to find out after asking about it later that it was actually an Evil Spirit. Furthermore, it seemed to be an

Evil Spirit from the Asura Spirit World.”

“Heavens! It was truly too frightening. I truly do not know where that monster came from, but it nearly destroyed our entire Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Oh, that’s right, you must definitely not tell others of this matter. Even if you are to tell others, you must not tell them that I told you this. Else, they will definitely cripple me.”

“Yoh, that’s strange. Brother, how did you know about this? You don’t seem to be someone from our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

This man was like a string of firecrackers once he opened his mouth. He was unable to stop at all. He was truly a blabbermouth.

From his mouth, Chu Feng came to know what had happened that day. The Asura Evil Spirit had been driven away by Nangong Longjian. It should have been injured. However, it managed to successfully escape the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Even though it had escaped the Nangong Imperial Clan, there had not been any news of an Evil Spirit injuring and killing people. This meant that the Asura Evil Spirit was not as irrational as Chu Feng had imagined it to be. At the very least, it did not go around willfully slaughtering the innocent.

The Nangong Imperial Clan had not been destroyed.

The Asura Evil Spirit also did not go around willfully slaughtering the innocent.

This ending surpassed Chu Feng’s imagination. However, it made Chu Feng extremely happy. After all, this was the ending that he wished to see the most.

Afterward, Chu Feng asked about Aunt Lian, Nangong Ya and the others. After all, it was them who Chu Feng cared the most for in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“What did you say? Say it again.”

After hearing what this man said, Chu Feng immediately started frowning. His expression took a huge change. The reason for that was because the news he had obtained was not something that he wanted to hear.

Chapter 1647 – Tailing In Secret

This Nangong Imperial Clansman simply did not know about the relationship between the Asura Evil Spirit and Chu Feng at all. To them, the Asura Evil Spirit was an Asura Evil Spirit, whereas Chu Feng was Chu Feng.

The appearance of the Asura Evil Spirit was a mystery that only the upper echelons of the Nangong Imperial Clan knew the truth about. However, Chu Feng was someone who everyone in the Nangong Imperial Clan knew about.

The Nangong Imperial Clan had given the same reason to both the outsiders and their own clansmen about why they wanted to capture Chu Feng.

They stated that they had treated Chu Feng extremely well. Yet, Chu Feng had used despicable methods to swindle their Nangong Imperial Clan's secret skill, the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

That was the reason why the Nangong Imperial Clan wanted to capture Chu Feng dead or alive. If someone was able to kill Chu Feng for the Nangong Imperial Clan, they would not look into the Water Immortal Profound Technique, and would instead present it to the person who killed Chu Feng. Furthermore, they would also bestow rewards upon the person who killed Chu Feng.

This was not the important matter. Most importantly, after this event, Nangong Lian, Nangong Ya and Nangong Baihe, who possessed good relationships with Chu Feng, were all imprisoned by the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, whether they were alive or dead was unknown.

In the end, they were still implicated by Chu Feng.

This caused Chu Feng to feel extremely guilty. He worried deeply about their safety.

However, the current Chu Feng was powerless to do anything.

In the end, Chu Feng decided that he could not just leave like this. He must brave danger and return to the Nangong Imperial Clan and think of a way to save Aunt Lian and the others.

As for this man by the name of Nangong Dahao, Chu Feng did not kill him. Instead, Chu Feng used a Taboo Formation Technique to erase his memory and make him forget about being captured by him.

At this moment, Chu Feng had concealed his aura and quietly proceed toward the direction of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Chu Feng had already entered the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory.

"It's them?" To Chu Feng's surprise, even though he was taking a remote path, he actually ran into three familiar people. The appearance of these three people caused both shock and joy in Chu Feng's heart.

They were actually... the Nangong Imperial Clan's Second Prince, Nangong Tianhu, and the Nangong Imperial Clan's Third Prince, Nangong Tianshi.

If it were only the two of them, Chu Feng would not be this happy. Most importantly, between the two of them was another person.

This person was wearing a cloak that concealed her appearance. However, Chu Feng was still able to tell with a single glance that this person was Nangong Baihe's younger sister, Nangong Moli.

"Why did the two of them bring Moli out here?" Chu Feng felt that this was fishy. Thus, he began to secretly tail them. He wished to find out the actual intentions of Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.

After he tailed them for some time, Chu Feng became extremely angered. It turned out that Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi were trying to capture Chu Feng. The reason why they had

brought Nangong Moli with them was because they wanted to use Nangong Moli as a bargaining chip to force Chu Feng out.

“Second brother, will bringing this girl really make Chu Feng reveal himself?”

“Is that Chu Feng really that loyal of a person? Would he really reveal himself for the sake of this girl?” Nangong Tianshi looked to Nangong Moli with a gaze of doubt.

“It is this girl who said that Chu Feng is a loyal person. If Chu Feng refuses to reveal himself, it will also let this girl know exactly what sort of person Chu Feng is, and will instead let her stop having delusions.”

“Right now, the situation in the clan is very chaotic. Thus, there is no one to bother with us. Even if we cannot capture Chu Feng, we will still be able to enjoy ourselves. Isn’t this wonderful?” Nangong Tianhu said with a beaming smile.

“Humph. I’d suggest that the two of you release me right now. Else, if we are to truly run into big brother Chu Feng, the two of you will end up suffering a great calamity,” At this moment, Nangong Moli’s hands were bound by special chains. However, she was not afraid. Instead, she pouted and warned the two princes.

“Little girl, you are thinking too highly of that Chu Feng, no? Even if he had managed to break through and became a rank one Half Martial Emperor, did you really think that he could contend against the two of us? What could he possibly do?” Nangong Tianshi sneered.

“Can cultivation really illustrate everything? Big brother Chu Feng’s strength surpasses your imagination. Have you forgotten the day when you broke through, where the golden dragon that you triggered was frightened away by big brother Chu Feng’s divine lightning? Have you forgotten how it did not dare to stay in the sky anymore?” Nangong Moli mocked while pouting her mouth.

“Little girl, you’re looking for a beating,” Nangong Tianshi was extremely enraged. Then, a ‘pow’ was heard. He had slapped Nangong Moli.

Nangong Tianshi possessed the cultivation of a rank four Half Martial Emperor. How could Nangong Moli possibly withstand a slap from him? The slap directly knocked Nangong Moli to the ground. The power behind his slap was so strong that it had actually created a crater in the ground.

“Humph,” Nangong Moli crawled back up from the crater stubbornly. She did not yield to him and did not curse him. Instead, she only snorted coldly.

However, at this moment, her little face was extremely swollen. Not only that, there was also a large bloody handprint on her swollen cheek. Many streams of scarlet blood were rolling down Nangong Moli’s cheek.

“Animal!” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng was so enraged that his veins popped out. However, he could not attack them yet. After all, they were still in the Nangong Imperial Clan’s territory. If he were to attack them now, he would only be exposing himself. Thus, regardless of how enraged he was, Chu Feng still had to endure it.

“Third brother, this isn’t too good, no? After all, Moli is still only a child,” Nangong Tianhu urged against it.

“She’s only a small child without a mother. When Nangong Lian was here, no one wanted to deal with her. It was all because Nangong Lian was very troublesome. It’s not because they feared her or her father.”

“Right now, that Nangong Lian has been imprisoned by Imperial Father. There’s no one to protect her now. Yet, she actually still dares to talk back to us. If I do not teach her a lesson now, how could she possibly put us in her eyes in the future?”

“Moreover, no matter what, we are still her older brothers. It is

natural for us to teach her about how to conduct herself,” Nangong Tianshi said righteously.

“Sigh, third brother, you’ve misunderstood me. What I meant is that even if you are to hit her, you must still treat her injuries afterward. Else, if others see it, they will think that we are bullying the young. It will not be good.”

As Nangong Tianhu spoke, he used world spirit techniques and began to heal Nangong Moli’s injured cheek. Even though he was not very proficient with world spirit techniques, it was still very effortless for him to heal such a small injury. In the blink of an eye, Nangong Moli’s little face returned to normal, it was as if she was never injured before.

“It’s still second brother who is wise. Haha,” Nangong Tianshi burst into loud laughter.

“That’s to be expected,” Nangong Tianhu was immensely proud of himself. Afterward, the two of them continued to laugh as they proceeded forward with Nangong Moli.

All of this was seen by Chu Feng. Chu Feng had already disliked Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi before.

And now, it could be said that Chu Feng deeply hated them.

Not only were the two of them narrow-minded, they were also despicable and shameless. No matter what, Nangong Moli was a person of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Even if she was not their blood younger sister born from the same father and mother, she was still their younger sister who possessed the same bloodline as them. Furthermore, she was still only a child.

Yet, the two of them were actually able to do such a thing to her. It was sufficient to reveal to Chu Feng that the two of them were people devoid of conscience.

For people like them, it would be fine if they did not take on the position of the next Clan Chief. However, if either of them were to

become the next Clan Chief, it would be disastrous for the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chu Feng had already made the resolution that he would properly teach the two of them a lesson.

Chapter 1648 – The Might Of The Water Immortal

Just like this, Chu Feng began to secretly tail Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.

The two of them had not gone through the teleportation formations controlled by the Nangong Imperial Clan. Instead, they had deliberately gone around the teleportation formations. Furthermore, when they discovered that there were people from the Nangong Imperial Clan nearby, they would deliberately evade them.

It would appear that the two of them also sneaked out of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Thus, they did not want the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to know this.

However, their actions only served to provide Chu Feng with an opportunity.

At the moment when Nangong Tianshi, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Moli proceeded toward the teleportation formation that was closest to the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory, they would definitely pass through a remote and uninhabited land. After all, the Holy Land of Martialism was a very vast place. Regardless of how numerous the population was, they were still unable to fill every corner of the Holy Land of Martialism.

At this moment, Chu Feng had managed to successfully wait for an ample opportunity. They had arrived at a remote location with no sign of human life for a thousand miles around them. Like a phantom, Chu Feng appeared before Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi. He had blocked their path.

At this moment, Chu Feng revealed his anger without concealing anything at all. Even the weather was changed by his anger.

Violent gales began to form, and black clouds surged forth. Like the descent of a natural disaster, the earth darkened.

“Who are you? You actually dare to block our path? Do you know who we are?”

The sudden appearance of an individual that blocked their path and emitted such a strong anger caused Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi to frown. They knew that the person before them had not come with good intentions.

However, the two of them were not afraid because of this. Instead, they were very confident. With arrogant tones, they began to question Chu Feng.

After all, the two of them were both able to sense that the person who blocked their path was merely a rank nine Martial King, a nobody who they could drown to death with a single spit.

Such a nobody actually dared to block their path? He was most definitely courting death.

“The person you two wished to see the most,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” The two men were startled.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s appearance began to change. Not only did his cultivation increase from rank nine Martial King to rank one Half Martial Emperor, he had also changed from a middle-aged man to his original appearance.

“Chu Feng, it’s you?” Sure enough, both Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi were shocked to see Chu Feng. However, their shock was immediately replaced with immense joy. They said, “Truly, there’s a path to heaven you refuse to take, and there’s no gate to hell, yet still you charge in. We were unable to find you, yet you actually came to us on your own initiative.”

“Release Moli,” Chu Feng said coldly. At this moment, he was worried about Nangong Moli the most.

“Yoh, I’d never expected that you would really be such a loyal person. You actually really came for us for the sake of this girl.”

“Haha, very well. We’ll hand her to you. After all, you will not be able to take her away anyways,” As Nangong Tianshi spoke, he released the shackles in his hands. Then, he threw Nangong Moli to Chu Feng like a meteor hammer.

His toss was no ordinary toss. It contained a certain amount of offensive nature to it. If Chu Feng were to catch Nangong Moli, he would definitely be injured. However, if he didn’t catch her, she would definitely be injured.

“Water Immortal Profound Technique.”

Right at this moment, with a thought, a boundless stream of water shot forth explosively from Chu Feng’s body and reached the incoming Nangong Moli.

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when that stream of water touched Nangong Moli, the water suddenly changed into the shape of a man. This appearance was the appearance of the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

The Water Immortal Profound Technique caught Nangong Moli. However, the instant it caught her, a very powerful impulse exploded from Nangong Moli’s body and shattered the body of the Water Immortal Profound Technique, turning it into nothing more than splashes of water.

It was not that the Water Immortal Profound Technique was weak. Rather, it was that Nangong Tianshi’s strength was too strong. As a rank four Half Martial Emperor, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Thus, his true battle power was on par with ordinary rank seven Half Martial Emperors.

As for the Water Immortal Profound technique, it was only a

rank two Half Martial Emperor. Even though it also possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, it was evidently unable to withstand Nangong Tianshi's attack.

However, the Water Immortal Profound Technique was not a secret skill for nothing. In the instant its body was shattered, it was immediately restored. Just like that, it grabbed Nangong Moli and brought her over to Chu Feng.

“Such a good secret skill actually ended up in the hands of trash like you. What a waste!”

Suddenly, Nangong Tianshi extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Then, a golden-bright and dazzling hand formed with martial power grabbed toward Chu Feng.

“Water Immortal Profound Technique, block the two of them for me,” Right after Chu Feng finished saying those words, his eyes shone with lightning. Instantly, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared together.

Chu Feng's cultivation increased in a flash. From rank one Half Martial Emperor, he became a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

However, this was not the important matter. Most importantly, after Chu Feng's cultivation increased, the Water Immortal Profound Technique's cultivation also increased alongside his.

In a flash, the Water Immortal Profound Technique had reached the same level of cultivation as Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi. It had become a rank four Half Martial Emperor.

Sure enough, it was as the Water Immortal Profound Technique had said to him. Its strength would all depend on Chu Feng's strength. Regardless of what cultivation Chu Feng was, it would be one level of cultivation above Chu Feng.

“That guy, what sort of method did he train to allow him to instantly increase his cultivation by two levels?”

Neither Nangong Tianhu nor Nangong Tianshi had anticipated that Chu Feng would have such a technique. The two of them were both shocked by it. After all, even for them, who possessed an Imperial Bloodline, they were only able to increase their battle power and not their actual cultivation.

“Hulalala~~~”

However, what shocked them the most would have to be the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

The Water Immortal Profound Technique’s reputation as one of the strongest secret skills in the Holy Land of Martialism was truly not a false reputation.

When its cultivation was on par with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, it was immediately able to reveal its divine might. Boundless waves of water hid the sky and covered the earth in an instant. In that instant, a sea was formed in the sky.

Most importantly, all of the waves of water contained frightening power. After the appearance of the floating sea, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, who were trapped within the waters, were immediately at a disadvantage.

Feeling helpless, the two of them activated their Imperial Bloodlines. When the golden-bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character appeared on their foreheads, their battle power immediately increased by a huge margin. They had actually become able to contend against the surging sea waves floating in the sky.

However, at this moment, all that the two of them were capable of doing was resisting the attacks of the Water Immortal Profound Technique. Furthermore, the two of them had to jointly defend together.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng gasped in admiration at how powerful the Water Immortal Profound Technique was.

At this moment, the Water Immortal Profound Technique had fused with him. Thus, its consciousness was already gone.

However, the Water Immortal Profound Technique's battle techniques were constantly changing. Furthermore, each and every skill was used at the perfect time. It was simply an expert with extremely abundant battle experience.

At this moment, it was able to fight two people on its own, and it was even capable of suppressing Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi. As for how it was accomplishing that, it was not by absolute strength. Rather, it was by using its abundant combat techniques.

The Water Immortal Profound Technique was capable of both attacking and defending. Furthermore, it was able to fight by itself without the need for Chu Feng to control it. It was much more powerful than Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

However, it could not be said that Chu Feng's Four Great Secret Skills were weak because of this. After all, Chu Feng's Four Great Secret Skills were originally Sacred Beasts, real living things.

They were only turned into secret skills by Qing Xuantian because their bodies had been destroyed. Even though they were secret skills now, they were not real secret skills. Instead, they were only techniques to help Chu Feng in times of crisis. They had not really fused with Chu Feng's body. Sooner or later, they would have to leave him and return to their actual bodies.

As for this Water Immortal profound Technique, it was through and through a secret skill. Thus, it was normal for the Four Great Secret Skills, the Azure Dragon, the White Tiger, the Vermillion Bird and the Black Tortoise, to be weaker than the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

Chapter 1649 – Cyan Rainbow Sword

“Big brother Chu Feng.”

At this moment, the shackles around Nangong Moli’s hands was removed by Chu Feng. This little girl directly threw herself into Chu Feng’s bosom. Tears began to flow from her eyes nonstop. In fact, her petite body was even twitching nonstop.

Back then, when Nangong Moli had been bullied by Nangong Tianshi, she did not even utter a single sound of pain or shed a single tear.

However, it remained that she was still a girl, and a child on top of that. Thus, after she saw Chu Feng, all of the grievances she felt in her heart were immediately revealed.

“Moli, it’s alright now. With big brother Chu Feng here, they will not be able to harm you.”

Chu Feng gently caressed Nangong Moli, who was in his bosom. He was feeling very pained for all the suffering she had endured. However, his gaze was fixed on Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi. It was a gaze of anger. Traces of killing intent were already in his gaze.

“Big brother Chu Feng, Moli is fine. Moli is already feeling very relieved to see that you’re fine,” Nangong Moli resisted her urge to cry and revealed a sweet smile.

Not only that, she even asked Chu Feng worriedly, “Big brother Chu Feng, since you’ve left the Nangong Imperial Clan, why did you not go far away, and instead return to save me? Did you not know that the Nangong Imperial Clan is posting wanted posters for you all over the place, and they are looking to capture you dead or alive?”

Even though Nangong Moli was a young child, she was very intelligent and knew about everything. She knew that the situation

right now was extremely bad for Chu Feng.

“I heard that your older sister, Nangong Ya and Aunt Lian were imprisoned because of me. Thus, I was unable to be at ease.”

“I had wanted to return to the Nangong Imperial Clan to inquire about their current situation. However, to my surprise, I encountered your two scumbag brothers bringing you out. Thus, I ended up tailing you all,” Chu Feng truthfully told Nangong Moli what had happened.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you must definitely not return. Aunt Lian and the others are all fine. You do not have to worry about them,” Nangong Moli said.

“Moli, is what you said true?” Chu Feng was skeptical.

“Moli would not deceive big brother Chu Feng. Oh, that’s right. Big brother Chu Feng, don’t you know Lord Longjian?”

“Lord Longjian is very cold and detached towards others. Even though he is clearly Lord Clan Chief’s blood brother, he rarely associates himself with Lord Clan Chief. However, there is one exception, and that is Aunt Lian. Lord Longjian truly considers Aunt Lian as his younger sister. Furthermore, he once swore that if anyone dared to touch Aunt Lian, regardless of who it might be, he would still not let them get away.”

“Thus, even though Aunt Lian is being imprisoned, it will only be to the point that her freedom is restricted. Right now, she is completely fine within the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, by her request, big brother Ya and my big sister have both gone to accompany her. They are all fine,” Nangong Moli said with a serious expression.

After hearing what she said, Chu Feng felt a lot more at ease. Chu Feng’s perception was very strong. Thus, he was able to tell that Nangong Moli was not lying. Evidently, what she had said was the truth.

“Then, what about you? Why did you suddenly get kidnapped and brought out by those two?” Chu Feng asked.

“Originally, it was Aunt Lian who had been protecting me the entire time. Even when Aunt Lian was not there, big brother Ya and my big sister would also not leave me by myself.”

“But right now, all three of them have had their freedom restricted. Thus, there’s no one to accompany me. Furthermore, our clan is currently rebuilding itself. Thus, it is extremely chaotic. As such, no one paid any attention to me.”

“I found myself alone and bored. Thus, I ended up roaming around. After I ran into those two, they began to insult big brother Chu Feng. As such, I started to refute their insults. This caused them to fly into a rage and kidnap me. They even declared that they would use me to force you out.”

“Originally, I had thought that the two of them were joking. It was only later that I found out that they were not joking. Even though I thought of them as my older brothers, they were actually this heartless,” When mentioning this matter, Nangong Moli stared fiercely at Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi. A very deep sense of hatred was present within her eyes.

It could be seen that the hatred Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu had left in Nangong Moli’s heart this time around would likely not be easily removed.

“You should not have considered people like them your older brothers to begin with. However, it’s alright. I will not allow them to bully you without paying the price. I will avenge you right away,” As Chu Feng spoke, he set up an extremely powerful spirit formation that protected Nangong Moli. He was planning to attack Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi personally.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you must not be careless. The two of them are actually quite powerful. When they were at the same level of cultivation, Nangong Tianshi once swapped pointers with

big brother Ya. Yet big brother Ya was unable to win against him,” Nangong Moli warned.

“There’s actually such a thing?” After hearing what Nangong Moli said, Chu Feng had a whole new level of respect for Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu.

“Interesting, truly interesting,” Right at this moment, Nangong Tianhu burst into crazy laughter.

“In the past, I had only heard about the legends of the Water Immortal Profound Technique. Today, after experiencing it for myself, I see that it is indeed very powerful. Even though it’s a secret skill, it is capable of fighting independently like another person. If one were able to grasp this secret skill, one would no longer have to fight alone. Instead, there would always be another person to fight with you.”

“Furthermore, its power is a level of cultivation above its master. From another point of view, the Water Immortal Profound Technique is simply even more powerful than Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.”

“It is no wonder the Five Elements Secret Skills have been so widely sought after since the Ancient Era. Today, I have finally realized their value.”

“A secret skill like that was actually obtained by our Nangong Imperial Clan. This is truly our Nangong Imperial Clan’s fortune. Hahaha...” Nangong Tianshi also started to laugh heartily.

“Your Nangong Imperial Clan’s secret skill? I think you two are mistaken about the situation here. Right now, that secret skill is mine,” Chu Feng sneered.

“Yours? It will soon be mine,” Suddenly, Nangong Tianhu flipped his palm, and a cyan sword appeared in his hand.

Once this sword appeared, a very powerful aura swept forth. Even space started to violently tremble. The violent sea in the sky

was blown away by it.

Following that, Nangong Tianhu's battle power rose dramatically. He had managed to stop the Water Immortal Profound Technique by himself.

“An Incomplete Imperial Armament?!” Chu Feng's eyes shrank upon seeing Nangong Tianhu's weapon. He was able to tell that his weapon was not a copy. Rather, it was an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament. Otherwise, it would be impossible for it to possess a might this powerful. In fact, his Incomplete Imperial Armament seemed to be even stronger, even more ferocious, than Tantai Xue's Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute.

“Country bumpkin, could it be that this is the first time you're seeing an Incomplete Imperial Armament? Might as well tell you. My second brother's Incomplete Imperial Armament is called the Cyan Rainbow Sword. It was created by the strongest Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist from ten thousand years ago, Grandmaster Rainbow. Grandmaster Rainbow is someone who existed in the same era as Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian!”

“Furthermore, this Cyan Rainbow Sword is one of his most outstanding works,” At this moment, Nangong Tianshi had broken away from the Water Immortal Profound Technique and arrived behind Chu Feng. However, he was not in a rush to attack Chu Feng right away. Instead, he began to brag about his second brother's weapon.

“So it's actually called the Cyan Rainbow Sword. Indeed, it's a rare, good weapon. Unfortunately, your second brother is unable to obtain the true acknowledgement of that weapon.”

“If my guess is correct, your second brother is simply unable to conquer that Cyan Rainbow Sword at all. It is through the help of someone else that your second brother managed to make it approve of him as its master.”

“However, it is precisely because of this that your second brother

is simply unable to unleash that Cyan Rainbow Sword's true strength. If that Cyan Rainbow Sword were to be in my hands, hehe... it would be completely different." Speaking till this point, a complacent smile appeared on Chu Feng's lips. An actual Incomplete Imperial Armament was before him. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly let it slip by him?

Even though that Cyan Rainbow Sword was still Nangong Tianhu's possession, in Chu Feng's eyes, it was already his.

An actual Incomplete Imperial Armament was not a copy. Thus, it possessed an actual Emperor's Might.

If he could conquer the Cyan Rainbow Sword through absolute submission, not only would he be able to have the Cyan Rainbow Sword serve him, he would also be able to obtain a portion of the Cyan Rainbow Sword's power and add it to his cultivation. Even if he were unable to break through, it would still provide a foundation for future breakthroughs.

Upon thinking of this, the smile on Chu Feng's face grew even stronger.

Chapter 1650 – Revealing One's Strength

“Bastard, you actually dare to think about my second brother's Cyan Rainbow Sword? I will properly teach you a lesson, you arrogant trash.”

Nangong Tianshi's perception was very keen. He actually discovered that Chu Feng was thinking about obtaining the Cyan Rainbow Sword for himself. This immediately enraged him. In a violent rage, he immediately attacked Chu Feng. His two palms shot forward with lightning speed. Each palm strike created wind. He was planning to completely tear Chu Feng to pieces.

“Heh...”

However, Chu Feng only chuckled at Nangong Tianshi's attack. His footsteps changed, and his body moved slightly. Like a phantom, he disappeared. His speed was so fast that one simply could not see how he managed to accomplish it.

“This guy,” Seeing Chu Feng disappear before his eyes, Nangong Tianshi was startled. Evidently, he did not expect that Chu Feng would have a speed this fast.

“If you want to teach me a lesson, you must first possess the strength to do so,” Chu Feng's voice sounded. Nangong Tianshi immediately turned around and discovered that Chu Feng was standing behind him. He was looking at him with a gaze of contempt.

“I'll kill you!” At this moment, Nangong Tianshi was so enraged that his martial power began to surge forth explosively. Like an inescapable net, it covered the sky above and the earth below. He was trying to seal Chu Feng off with his omnipresent power.

This was a martial skill, a rank nine martial skill. However, when it was being used by Nangong Tianshi, this rank nine martial skill's might was extremely strong.

Not only was it strong, it was dreadfully strong. This rank nine martial skill simply seemed to possess the power to bring about destruction to the world.

As Chu Feng saw this attack that sealed off both heaven and earth coming toward him, even Chu Feng began to feel admiration for Nangong Tianshi.

Nangong Tianshi was truly worthy of being a prince of the Nangong Imperial Clan. He truly possessed very remarkable strength, and he could be considered to be someone capable of fighting against Chu Feng.

Thus, when facing Nangong Tianshi's attack, Chu Feng did not plan to hold back. With a flip of his palm, he took out his Infinity Edge. He was planning to meet Nangong Tianshi head on.

Chu Feng immediately attacked. His foot began to step forward. His speed was many times faster than lightning. He charged toward Nangong Tianshi's golden-bright and dazzling net of martial power.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng slashed downward. Then, a slash appeared in the sky. As the golden light shone in the sky, as the energy ripples wreaked havoc, he sliced apart Nangong Tianshi's inescapable net.

After the first successful attack, Chu Feng attacked again. The Infinity Edge in his hand turned into many blurs as it was waved toward Nangong Tianshi.

At this moment, Nangong Tianshi discovered that the situation was bad. He immediately flipped his palm and took out a large golden-bright and dazzling hammer.

This large hammer was the same as Chu Feng's Infinity Edge; it was an Incomplete Imperial Armament copy. As the hammer waved up and down, it actually managed to block Chu Feng's numerous attacks.

As he had also taken out an Incomplete Imperial Armament copy, Nangong Tianshi became equally matched against Chu Feng. After he blocked Chu Feng's attacks, he immediately unleashed counterattacks at Chu Feng.

However... right at this moment, he was shocked to find out that he was only equally matched against Chu Feng.

He was clearly a rank four Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Even if Chu Feng had increased his cultivation to that of a rank three Half martial Emperor, he shouldn't possess the ability to contend against him.

However, Chu Feng had managed to do so. Not only was he able to contend against him, Chu Feng even seemed to be able to obtain the upper hand in their battle.

This not only shocked Nangong Tianshi, this was also something that he found very difficult to accept. One must know that he had already activated his Imperial Bloodline at this moment.

“Impossible! This is impossible! How could you possibly have a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?!”

Nangong Tianshi had an expression of disbelief on his face. Evidently, he had come to realize that it was definitely not a coincidence that Chu Feng was able to fight against him. Instead, it was because Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?” After hearing what Nangong Tianshi said, Nangong Tianhu started to frown deeply, and he began to carefully observe the battle between Chu Feng and Nangong Tianshi. After observing their battle, his expression immediately changed. Evidently, he had also discovered that Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

As Nangong Tianhu spared no effort in suppressing the Water Immortal Profound Technique, he shouted to Nangong Tianshi, “Third brother, we absolutely cannot let him live! Else, he will definitely become a problem in the future! Use your full strength, kill him!!!”

“I understand,” As Nangong Tianshi spoke, his body moved backward explosively. Following that, he put away his large golden hammer away.

Chu Feng did not chase after Nangong Tianshi. He was very confused by Nangong Tianshi’s actions. He wondered what exactly Nangong Tianshi had under his sleeve. When Chu Feng saw Nangong Tianshi’s next actions, he finally came to a realization.

Right at this moment, Nangong Tianshi flipped his palm and took out another weapon.

It was a purple sword. Not only did it have the same appearance as Nangong Tianhu’s Cyan Rainbow Sword, even the might it emitted was exactly the same. Evidently, this was another Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Yoh, the Nangong Imperial Clan is truly wealthy. The two of you actually both possess Incomplete Imperial Armaments. If my guess is correct, this weapon of yours should also have been created by that Grandmaster Rainbow from ten thousand years ago?”

After Nangong Tianshi took out his Incomplete Imperial Armament, his battle power immediately increased enormously. However, Chu Feng was not afraid, and instead became even more excited. He truly never expected that both Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi would possess Incomplete Imperial Armaments. To Chu Feng, this was an enormously pleasant surprise.

“You truly do not know how death is written. A calamity is before you, yet you actually dare to think about my Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

At this moment, Chu Feng's eyes were shining. Nangong Tianshi was able to tell with a single glance that Chu Feng had taken a fancy to his Purple Rainbow Sword.

When Nangong Tianshi thought about how he had taken out his Purple Rainbow Sword for the sake of killing Chu Feng, and seeing how Chu Feng was not afraid and even had a reaction of lusting for his Purple Rainbow Sword, this caused him to grow even more enraged. Thus, he did not bother to say anything to Chu Feng, and he immediately brandished the Purple Rainbow Sword in his hand to attack him.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The Purple Rainbow Sword was truly mighty. Each and every slash from it possessed fatal destructive power capable of slicing through space and shattering the earth. As it slashed through the air, it created cracks of void in the air that lasted for a short moment. However, when it slashed toward the ground, it would leave an everlasting ravine behind. If a slash were to hit Chu Feng, Chu Feng would undoubtedly be killed.

Furthermore, the slashes shot forth by the Purple Rainbow Sword were not only powerful, they also possessed astonishing speed. In a flash, they arrived before Chu Feng.

However, those boots on Chu Feng's feet were not worn by him for decorative purposes. Even though the slashes from the Purple Rainbow Sword were extremely mighty and fast, Chu Feng still managed to dodge all of them.

“Trash! Before this Prince's true strength, you only know how to run, isn't that right?!”

“I can tell those boots on your feet are treasures. Else, it would be impossible for you to possess such a speed.”

“However, since I've revealed my Purple Rainbow Sword, you will undoubtedly die,” Nangong Tianshi said confidently.

However, he was actually trying to attack Chu Feng psychologically to enrage him and make him fight him head-on.

“Oh, in that case, maybe you should try hitting me for once,”
However, his psychological attack did not work on Chu Feng at all.
Not only was Chu Feng not enraged by it, he even started to mock and ridicule Nangong Tianshi in return.

Chapter 1651 – Four Great Secret Skills

“Earthen Taboo: Thousand Spearhead Slash!” Nangong Tianshi was completely infuriated by Chu Feng. This time around, he was not using an ordinary attack. Instead, he used an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill from the get-go.

Earthen Taboo Martial Skills were very powerful to begin with. When an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill was unleashed with the power of an Incomplete Imperial Armament like the Purple Rainbow Sword, its strengthened might was something that one could well imagine.

At this moment, over a thousand purple blade rays appeared simultaneously. They formed an inescapable net formed by blade rays. With a speed ten times faster than before, they charged toward Chu Feng. If Chu Feng were to be hit by the blade rays, he would definitely meet a horrible death with his body dismembered into ten thousand pieces.

However, even when facing such an attack, Chu Feng still had a smile on his face. Then, light began to flash underneath his feet and he disappeared like a phantom. Merely by relying on his pair of boots, Chu Feng dodged Nangong Tianshi’s fatal attack again.

“While your martial skill appears to be quite powerful, unfortunately, it is completely useless. Once again, you are unable to land a single slash on me,” Chu Feng’s figure appeared in the distance. With a smile on his face, he looked to Nangong Tianshi. His gaze was filled with contempt.

“Continue smiling, I shall see whether you’ll be able to smile after this,” Suddenly, Nangong Tianshi brandished the Purple Rainbow Sword in his hand. When a purple blade ray shot toward him again, Chu Feng’s expression immediately took a huge change.

The reason for that was because Nangong Tianshi’s slash was not shot toward Chu Feng. Rather, it was shot toward Nangong Moli.

Even though Chu Feng had already set up a defensive spirit formation for Nangong Moli, his world spirit formation, regardless of how powerful it might be, would not be able to withstand Nangong Tianshi's slash.

If this slash were to hit, not only would it shatter Chu Feng's world spirit formation, it would also undoubtedly kill Nangong Moli.

“Woosh~~~”

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng did not hesitate. The boots on his feet immediately shone with light. In a flash, Chu Feng arrived before Nangong moli.

Right at this moment, that sharp slash had arrived.

“Boom~~~~”

In an instant, a large explosion spread throughout an area of several miles. Following it, energy ripples began to sweep across the horizon. Like an enormous purple cloud, the energy ripples lingered in midair.

“Humph... in terms of tricks, you're still lacking.”

At this moment, Nangong Tianshi was immensely pleased with himself. The reason for that was because he was certain that his slash had successfully landed on Chu Feng. As long as it landed on Chu Feng, he was certain that Chu Feng would not be able to resist his slash.

Even if Chu Feng were lucky and did not die, he would definitely lose the ability to continue fighting.

“What's that?” However, at the moment when the purple energy ripples began to gradually dissipate, Nangong Tianshi's eyes started to shine, and his expression took a huge change.

As more and more energy ripples dissipated, Chu Feng's appearance became clearer and clearer, and Nangong Tianshi's

expression became more and more brilliant. His complexion had turned pale, and his lips were trembling. He was clearly deeply frightened.

At this moment, not only was Chu Feng completely unharmed, there were four auras lingering around his body. These four auras were four different colors, and possessed four different forms.

There was a white tiger, an azure dragon, a black tortoise, and a fiery red phoenix.

They were four powerful beasts. At this moment, they all appeared on Chu Feng's body. They were coming out of Chu Feng's body.

It would be one thing if it was only the four beasts that appeared. However, the four powerful auras that appeared alongside the beasts frightened Nangong Tianshi immensely.

At this moment, Nangong Tianshi felt that even though Chu Feng still possessed the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor, his battle power had absolutely surpassed his own.

This was naturally because of the Four Great Secret Skills that Chu Feng had grasped. The Azure Dragon, the Vermillion Bird, the White Tiger, and the Black Tortoise.

At this moment, Chu Feng was not only the enemy of the Beitang Imperial Clan, he was also the Nangong Imperial Clan's wanted criminal. He felt that his current situation was extremely bad. Thus, there was no longer a need to conceal his Four Great Secret Skills.

With the increase of Chu Feng's cultivation, the might of Chu Feng's Four Great Secret Skills was also incomparable from before.

Currently, not only was Chu Feng able to use the Four Great Secret Skills simultaneously, they were also capable of making him unstoppable. While none of the Four Great Secret Skills were comparable to the Water Immortal Profound Technique by

themselves, when they were used simultaneously and fused with Chu Feng, where he could use them as he wished, the might of the Four Great Secret Skills most definitely surpassed that of the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

The White Tiger possessed enormous offensive power. The Black Tortoise possessed enormous defensive power. The Azure Dragon possessed enormous speed. The Vermillion Bird possessed enormous healing power.

When these four different powers fused together with Chu Feng, they simply allowed Chu Feng to become invincible. When fighting someone of the same battle power, with the assistance of these Four Great Secret Skills, how could there possibly be anyone capable of contending against Chu Feng?

“You... what exactly are you?!” Faced with such a Chu Feng, Nangong Tianshi revealed an appearance of fear. His legs grew weak, and he began to involuntarily move backwards.

At this moment, Nangong Tianshi suddenly felt that the person before him was not a human at all. Rather, he was a monster. If he wasn't a monster, how could there be the auras of four different monsters lingering around him?

However, their auras seemed to resemble the Water Immortal Profound Technique a lot. It was the aura of secret skills. Nangong Tianshi firmly believed that what Chu Feng had used right now were definitely secret skills.

However, it was one thing for Chu Feng to obtain the Water Immortal Profound Technique. Yet, suddenly, Chu Feng was now actually revealing that he controlled four other secret skills in addition to the Water Immortal Profound Technique. This was something that Nangong Tianshi was unable to accept.

“I seem to remember you saying that you were going to reveal your true strength.”

“Right now, I will return those words to you. This is my, Chu Feng’s, true strength.”

Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, a dragon roar sounded, and Chu Feng instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, Chu Feng was already behind Nangong Tianshi.

A white tiger’s claw grabbed onto Nangong Tianshi’s Purple Rainbow Sword. Then, Chu Feng ruthlessly shot a fist into Nangong Tianshi’s chest, causing him to vomit blood and suffer a serious wound.

After his first fist strike, Chu Feng continued to throw more fists. All of his fists landed onto Nangong Tianshi’s chest.

While none of the fists were fatal, each one of them caused Nangong Tianshi to feel enormous pain, so much pain that he wished he was dead. After several fist strikes, Nangong Tianshi’s entire body was covered with blood and he lost consciousness.

After he lost consciousness, he also lost the ability to continue standing in the air. Thus, he fell from the sky and ruthlessly crashed into the ground.

However, even though he had fallen to the ground, his Purple Rainbow Sword was still being held by that White Tiger’s claw.

“Bastard! You dared to injure my third brother! I’ll kill you!” All of this was seen by Nangong Tianhu. In an incomparable rage, he began to attack the Water Immortal Profound Technique frantically. He was trying to eliminate the Water Immortal Profound Technique as quickly as possible so that he could avenge his third brother.

However, even though the Water Immortal Profound Technique was no longer a match for Nangong Tianhu, it possessed a frightening power of restoration. Every time it was destroyed by Nangong Tianhu, it would immediately be reborn. This caused Nangong Tianhu an enormous headache. Even though he was able

to suppress the Water Immortal Profound Technique, he was unable to break free from it at all.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, the Water Immortal Profound technique suddenly turned into a jet of water and shot into Chu Feng’s forehead. Just like that, it disappeared.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had taken back the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

He was planning to face Nangong Tianhu alone for a decisive battle. In other words, he planned to take care of Nangong Tianhu himself.

Chapter 1652 – Seizing Items

“Ahh~~~”

Nangong Tianhu roared angrily. Then, holding the Cyan Rainbow Sword, he hacked at Chu Feng.

In an instant, a cyan blade ray sliced through heaven and earth.

Based on the might of his attack, Nangong Tianhu was indeed more ferocious than Nangong Tianshi. After all, at this moment, Nangong Tianhu did not have any sense of cowardice at all. All he possessed was overflowing killing intent.

Thus, the Cyan Rainbow Sword in his hand was many times sharper and more powerful than the Purple Rainbow Sword in Nangong Tianshi's hand.

However, faced with the ferocious attack from Nangong Tianhu, Chu Feng actually stood there motionlessly. He was allowing the Cyan Rainbow Sword to continue to unleash fatal slashes toward him without dodging at all.

It was not because Chu Feng possessed a deathwish. Merely, Chu Feng did not expect that his battle power would increase to such a degree after using the Four Great Secret Skills.

With the combined protection of the Four Great Secret Skills, even if Nangong Tianhu were brandishing the Cyan Rainbow Sword, he would not be able to harm Chu Feng.

“Bastard, I refuse to believe that I cannot injure you!”

Nangong Tianhu was so enraged by Chu Feng that he was nearly driven mad. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's actions were simply an enormous humiliation to him.

He was unable to endure such humiliation from Chu Feng. In fury, he arrived before Chu Feng, and wanted to use the divine might of his Cyan Rainbow Sword to slice through Chu Feng's

defense.

“Paa~~~”

However, right at the moment when the Cyan Rainbow Sword was hacked toward Chu Feng, an enormous White Tiger claw suddenly appeared and grabbed the incoming Cyan Rainbow Sword.

After the Cyan Rainbow Sword ended up being grabbed by the White Tiger claw, it was unable to break free. No matter how hard Nangong Tianhu tried, he was unable to pull the Cyan Rainbow Sword back out. It was as if the Cyan Rainbow Sword had already been embedded into the White Tiger claw.

“You...” At this moment, Nangong Tianhu’s expression changed enormously. After struggling, he became aware of how bad the situation was. Chu Feng was much more powerful than he had anticipated.

Facing Nangong Tianhu’s frightened expression, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “I am not boasting here. Unless you possess the cultivation of a rank five Half Martial Emperor, forget about injuring me in the slightest.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng took the initiative to attack. He shot forth many fists. “Bang, bang, bang...” A series of muffled sounds. His fist strikes landed firmly onto Nangong Tianhu’s body. After the series of fist strikes ended, Nangong Tianhu, like his younger brother, lost consciousness and fell ruthlessly to the ground. He was no longer able to continue fighting.

As for the Cyan Rainbow Sword that he possessed, like his younger brother’s Purple Rainbow Sword, it had also ended up in Chu Feng’s hands.

“Wow! Big brother Chu Feng, you’re amazing! The two of them were actually no match for you, even when joining hands.

Furthermore, they both possess a cultivation one level above yours.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, exactly how powerful are you? I have simply never met someone as powerful as you are.”

“Our clan says that Moli is a genius. However, when Moli sees big brother Chu Feng, she really feels very inferior.”

Nangong Moli ran over while cheering excitedly. While Chu Feng had placed a defensive spirit formation around her to protect her, his spirit formation did not restrict her freedom. Thus, she was naturally able to move about.

“Moli, you’re being corrupted by bad examples; you’ve actually started to joke around with your big brother Chu Feng,” Chu Feng lightly flicked Nangong Moli’s little forehead. Then, he began to fiddle with the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword. They were two Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Furthermore, they both possessed quality superior to Tantai Xue’s Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute. Chu Feng was truly in love with them.

“Big brother Chu Feng, those two Incomplete Imperial Armaments are both top quality items. Reportedly, back then, Grandmaster Rainbow used all that he had learned, and all of the resources that he had obtained in his life to refine seven Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Those seven Incomplete Imperial Armaments are collectively known as the Seven Rainbow Swords. They are the seven best weapons refined by Grandmaster Rainbow in his lifetime,” Nangong Moli said.

“Little girl, you know quite a bit. In that case, do you know how the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword ended up in your Nangong Imperial Clan’s hands?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course I do. It was not long after our Lord Clan Chief became our Nangong Imperial Clan’s new clan chief. At that time, he opened up an Emperor’s Tomb alongside the Beitang Imperial

Clan. From that Emperor's Tomb, they discovered the Seven Rainbow Swords. Among them, three became possessions of our Nangong Imperial Clan, and three became possessions of the Beitang Imperial Clan."

"However, Lord Clan Chief did not bestow those three swords that we had obtained to his subordinates who had opened up the Emperor's Tomb together with him and the Beitang Imperial Clan that day. Rather, he kept them for himself. Never would I have expected that he would actually give them to his children. It would appear that he is truly selfish."

Speaking of this matter, Nangong Moli began to pout. It would seem that her impression of her Lord Clan Chief had become rather bad.

"Seven Rainbow Swords, shouldn't there be seven swords? Both the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan came to possess three swords. What happened to the last one? Where did it go?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"It is not that easy to open an Emperor's Tomb. They invited a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist to help them open the Emperor's Tomb. The best sword among the seven swords was given to that world spiritist," said Nangong Moli.

"That Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist must be one of the Ten Immortals, right?" Chu Feng asked.

"Mn, it's the Ten Immortal's Avaricious Immortal," Nangong Moli said.

"Avaricious Immortal, why would there be such a name?" Chu Feng was astonished. The term 'avaricious' didn't appear to be fitting for an Immortal.

"It's because he's extremely money-grubbing, and values money and wealth as much as his own life. That was why he was known as the Avaricious Immortal. That's what I guessed, at least, hehe..."

Nangong Moli said.

“Oh you,” Chu Feng was amused by Nangong Moli. Then, he looked to Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu on the ground and said, “How was it? Did it manage to calm your anger? If you think that giving them a beating is not enough, I’ll kill them for you.”

Even though Chu Feng loathed Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, and was itching to kill them, it remained that they were Nangong Moli’s older brothers. Thus, he must first obtain permission from Nangong Moli to kill them.

If Nangong Moli did not wish for them to die, Chu Feng would naturally not kill them. After all, no matter what, they were still the sons of the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Forget about it. I am not a narrow-minded person. Let’s spare their lives,” Nangong Moli laughed mischievously. Then, she said, “Big brother Chu Feng, that Cyan Rainbow Sword and that Purple Rainbow Sword are treasures. You couldn’t possibly be thinking about returning them, right?”

“Of course not. I am already being extremely forgiving by not killing them. How could I possibly return the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword to them? Furthermore, these two swords are a waste in their hands. It would be wronging the two swords.”

“Likely, if Grandmaster Rainbow were to learn about this matter in the underworld, he would also not be happy about it. Thus, it’s better that I take care of the Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword instead,” Chu Feng did not even possess an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament weapon. And now, he had suddenly obtained two. How could he possibly return them?

“Haha, I don’t think you should return them either. In that case, big brother Chu Feng, you should seize those two weapons for yourself. Are you able to have both swords approve of you as their

master? If it were other ordinary people, they would definitely not be able to do it. However, I think you might be able to.”

“Quickly, give it a try. Moli really wants to see,” Nangong Moli opened her eyes widely and spoke with an expression of anticipation.

“I can’t do it. The Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were not conquered by Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi themselves. They received the help of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, the connection between them is not that easy to sever. I will require a certain amount of time to sever the connection.”

“Unfortunately, I am only able to attempt to have these two weapons recognize me as their masters after severing the connection between them,” Chu Feng said.

Chapter 1653 – Witch Descended From Heaven

“It’s that troublesome?” Nangong Moli had an astonished expression. After that, she had an expression of disappointment.

“Indeed, it’s very troublesome. However, it’s all because your Nangong Imperial Clan possessed robust strength, and was able to even have Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists work for you all,” Chu Feng had a smile on his face. His words contained special implications.

“I extremely dislike that White-browed Immortal. I also dislike his disciple. I keep feeling that the two of them, master and disciple, are not good people,” Nangong Moli was very smart. She knew that Chu Feng was talking about the White-browed Immortal.

“Birds of a feather flock together. It is not only the White-browed Immortal and his disciple, you must also be careful of your clan chief.”

“After you return to the Nangong Imperial Clan, do not run around. Instead, stay with Aunt Lian and the others,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, after what has happened, I will definitely not run around anymore. I’ll stay with Aunt Lian, big brother and big sister,” Nangong Moli said.

Afterward, Chu Feng landed from the sky, arrived beside Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi and plundered all the treasures they had on them.

Chu Feng had an idea. Even though he would not kill Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, Chu Feng was determined to not let them get away this easily.

Thus, Chu Feng planned to have Nangong Moli return to the

Nangong Imperial Clan first. He wanted to wait until Nangong Moli safely returned to Aunt Lian and the others.

Then, Chu Feng would choose a very populated city, strip the clothing off Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu, then hang them on the city gate to humiliate the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“This aura, Moli, careful.”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly started to frown. He immediately grabbed Nangong Moli and started escaping without concerning himself with Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt a very frightening killing intent. That killing intent was charging toward him with an extremely fast speed. It was so quick that one's hair would stand up upon feeling it. Most importantly, it seemed to be fixed upon Chu Feng, and was coming at him.

“Boom~~~”

Before Chu Feng could escape, in a flash, that frightening power smashed Chu Feng into the ground.

“Damn it, I've actually been discovered in such a place.”

Chu Feng was frowning very deeply. He had truly never expected to be discovered by someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan in such a place. Not only had he been discovered, he had also been captured.

The reason for that was because that frightening power had already sealed off this region of space. Chu Feng was simply unable to escape at all. The reason for that was because his opponent was a Martial Emperor.

“This is?” However, when Chu Feng raised his head and carefully looked around, his expression turned to one of shock.

At this moment, there was another person in this enormous crater alongside him and Nangong Moli. It was a woman.

This woman had white, snow-like hair. However, she was not a wrinkled old lady. Instead, she had jade-like skin, and showed traces of wellness.

However, she had an ice-cold expression. There was not a single trace of emotion on her face. As for her eyes, they were filled with killing intent.

Chu Feng was someone who had experienced a lot of things. He had experienced a lot of frightening characters. However, Chu Feng's heart trembled upon his first glance at this woman. This woman's killing intent was simply too strong.

However, what shocked Chu Feng was not this woman's facial features. Rather, not only was this woman not wearing the clothing of the Nangong Imperial Clan, her body was even semi-transparent. She was simply not a human at all. Instead, she was either a consciousness or a clone.

Furthermore, at this moment, she was very weak. It was as if she could disappear at the very next second.

Right at this moment, that woman suddenly cast her sharp gaze onto Chu Feng.

“Properly look after it for me. Do not lose it.”

“I will come and find you. When I find you, if you are still here while it has disappeared, I will definitely make you meet a miserable death,” The woman handed a scroll to Chu Feng.

Then, without asking whether Chu Feng was willing to accept it or not, she turned into a golden strand of light and shot into Chu Feng's chest.

“Ssss~~~”

At this moment, Chu Feng sucked in a mouthful of air. The reason for that was because he felt an unbearable pain when that woman entered his chest.

However, that pain only lasted for a moment before disappearing. At this moment, Chu Feng hurriedly opened his clothes. Only then did he discover that a golden imprint had suddenly appeared on his chest.

After discovering that imprint on his chest, the first thing Chu Feng tried to do was remove it.

However, Chu Feng was speechless to find that he was unable to remove the imprint. In fact, even after Chu Feng cut out the meat around his chest, that imprint was still there. It was simply impossible for Chu Feng to remove it.

“What’s this? She didn’t come to capture me, but had instead come to make me look after an item?”

“Exactly who are you? We don’t even know each other, why did you suddenly have me safeguard your item? Furthermore, it’s one thing to safeguard something for you. Yet, you actually even threatened me that you’ll kill me if I am to discard it.”

“Hey, hey, say something at the very least. What’s going on with you?”

Chu Feng felt very helpless. A frightening woman like this had suddenly appeared. Without saying anything else, she had Chu Feng safeguard an item for her. Furthermore, she had left an imprint on Chu Feng’s body so that she could find him in the future.

However, no matter what, this was still better than encountering someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan. At the very least, Chu Feng did not have to die.

“Big brother Chu Feng, what is this?” Nangong Moli picked up the scroll that the woman had handed Chu Feng.

Chu Feng took a glance at the scroll. Immediately, he knew that it was a remarkable item. However, there was a spirit formation on the scroll. Furthermore, that spirit formation had been set up by a

Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, it was simply impossible for Chu Feng to open it. In turn, it was impossible for Chu Feng to know what was recorded on the scroll.

Furthermore, even if he could open it, Chu Feng would not dare to do so. He knew that the frightening woman from earlier had merely been a clone. Even though she had turned into an imprint, her actual body was definitely still present somewhere. Furthermore, her actual body would come to find him sooner or later.

With the killing intent that had been emitted by that woman, if Chu Feng dared to do anything to her possessions, Chu Feng would likely be unable to keep his little life. Thus, even if Chu Feng was able to open that scroll, he would not dare to do so.

“Moli, your big brother Chu Feng now thoroughly understands how dangerous the Overlord Domain is,” Chu Feng said.

“Why’s that?” Nangong Moli asked.

“This is simply a place with monsters on a rampage. Back then, when I was in other domains, it was extremely difficult for me to encounter a single Martial Emperor.”

“After coming to the Overlord Domain, there are so many Martial Emperors. It’s one thing if they’re Martial Emperors. But, why must I encounter people that are this dangerous all the time?” Chu Feng said.

“Actually, Moli has been out playing very frequently too. However, very rarely does she ever encounter powerful seniors. It is also the first time that I’ve met a senior as powerful as the one before,” Nangong Moli said.

“You’re saying that... I am extremely unlucky to encounter all these unfortuitous things?” Chu Feng asked.

“That really seems to be the case,” Nangong Moli nodded her head earnestly.

Chu Feng smiled bitterly. He was feeling very helpless. At this time, he hoped that frightening woman would come find him sooner and take away that scroll from him. He also hoped that she would not make things difficult for him after she took that scroll away.

Furthermore, he hoped that she would be able to help him remove the imprint and return his freedom to him.

After all, Chu Feng was currently the Nangong Imperial Clan's wanted criminal. It was naturally not very good for him to have an imprint on his body that told others his location.

Chapter 1654 – Swindler Monk

Afterward, Chu Feng carefully put the scroll, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword away.

Then, he took out a special burlap sack and placed Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi within it.

After Chu Feng did all that, he began to bring Nangong Moli back to the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory. He was planning to bring her back to the Nangong Imperial Clan. After all, Chu Feng was currently a wanted criminal. Thus, it would not be suitable for him to bring Nangong Moli around with him. If he were to encounter a true expert, merely their oppressive might would be able to instantly bind Chu Feng. Chu Feng simply had no means of protecting Nangong Moli.

Thus, at this time, it was still the Nangong Imperial Clan that was the safest for Nangong Moli. Coincidentally, when Chu Feng was returning to the Nangong Imperial Clan, he passed through a city. In that city, he actually encountered people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Thus, Chu Feng had Nangong Moli go to them. When those people saw Nangong Moli, they were extremely respectful. Likely, they knew that Nangong Moli was a genius who their Nangong Imperial Clan was focused on nurturing. Thus, they did not dare to neglect her.

After finding out that Nangong Moli wanted to quickly return to the clan, they immediately stopped everything they were doing and began to escort Nangong Moli back to the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chu Feng secretly followed them for a while. He was only relieved when he discovered that they did not have any ulterior motives toward Nangong Moli, truly wanting to escort her back to the Nangong Imperial Clan, and were treating her extremely well.

Chu Feng did not immediately distance himself from the range of the Nangong Imperial Clan's area of activity. Instead, he returned to the city that he had passed earlier with the burlap sack that contained Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.

Chu Feng planned to wait until nighttime, when there were not a lot of people around, in order to strip the clothes off Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi and hang them on top of the city gate as a minor retaliation against the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chu Feng wanted to let the Nangong Imperial Clan know that although he was still very small and weak, he was not someone who they could bully as they wished. If they wanted to bully him, they would be destined to pay the price.

Chu Feng was strolling around the city and trying to find a less populated tavern to spend the night when he suddenly found an amusing person.

That person was a monk. He was extremely fat, so fat that his width was almost longer than his height. He looked to be in his seventies, and had a very corrupted appearance.

However, he was wearing very plain and ordinary cotton clothing. His clothes were filled with mends and sewings, it was simply akin to the clothing of a beggar.

Furthermore, beside that fat monk was a lousy banner. There were several characters on top of that lousy, badly damaged banner.

‘Oh Heavens, oh Earth, I am the best at fortune telling.’

‘From five thousand years from the past to three thousand years in the future,’

‘People call me know-it-all. I am a wanderer without name or surname.’

This monk was actually a fortune teller. However, it had always been Daoists who would do fortune telling. Since when did monks

start telling fortunes too?

The reason why Chu Feng found this amusing was because this fat monk was currently telling the fortune of a young girl.

That young girl appeared to be only fifteen or sixteen years old. She was very fair-skinned, and possessed quite a clean face. While she could not be considered to be a great beauty, she did possess a decent appearance. However, at this moment, she had a very uncomfortable expression on her face. Without thinking about it much, Chu Feng already knew the reason why she had that expression.

That fat monk was tightly grabbing onto that young girl's right hand with one hand. With his other hand, he was rubbing that young girl's fair-skinned hand nonstop. How could this possibly be palmistry? This was simply taking advantage of someone.

"Mister, I'm not going to have my fortune told anymore."

The young girl pulled her right hand back, turned around, and immediately tried to leave. Evidently, she had managed to become aware that the situation was bad.

"Little girl, could it be that you thought that this monk was taking advantage of you?" Seeing that young girl trying to leave, the fat monk spoke with a serious expression.

"Mister, that's not it. Merely, I must go because I have something urgent that I must take care of," That young girl was shy. She found it embarrassing to tell the truth. Thus, she hurriedly tried to provide an explanation.

"Hehe..." However, right at this moment, that fat monk suddenly opened his large mouth and revealed a mouthful of stinky yellow teeth. While laughing very vulgarly, he said, "Actually, I was taking advantage of you. Little girl, the world is a dangerous place. You must know how to be on guard against those who are shameless."

“Mister, you...” The young woman naturally did not anticipate that this monk would actually dare to openly admit to taking advantage of her. All of a sudden, she stood there in a stunned manner and did not know what to do.

“Little girl, what’s wrong? Could it be that you’ve fallen for me? If that’s the case, you don’t have to leave. How about you spend the night with me instead?” The fat monk laughed shamelessly.

“Shameless!” The young girl’s face became extremely red. She truly regretted thinking that this monk would truly be able to tell her fortune.

Not only did she allow him to fondle her hand, she had even allowed him to fondle her hand for so long. Upon thinking about how she had been taken advantage of by this old, ugly, fat and shameless person, the young girl was filled with so much regret that she wanted to find a wall to crash into.

As she began to leave, she left the words, “Just you wait.”

“My! Little girl, what do you mean by that?”

“This monk did what he did out of kindness. It was done to remind you that you must be on guard against shameless individuals. You should be grateful toward me,” The old monk was actually not afraid of her. Instead, he said those words while laughing.

The young girl ignored him and directly left. The way she left, it seemed that she was really planning to find someone to come and take care of this monk. No, to be precise, he should be a fake monk.

“With a cultivation of rank nine Martial King, he actually dares to swindle people in public. Does he really not fear that he’ll be beaten to death?” Chu Feng inspected the cultivation of this fake monk and immediately began to feel fear for him. This was the Overlord Domain. It was a place with countless Half Martial Emperor-level experts. For a person of his level of cultivation to do

this sort of thing was simply courting death.

However, due to the fact that Chu Feng had things to do, he did not try to bother with someone like this monk. After enjoying the show, he was prepared to find a tavern to take shelter for the night.

Right at this moment, that monk looked to Chu Feng. “My, young man, I see that the space between your eyebrows has darkened. You will definitely be met with a great calamity. However, I have an ingenious technique that is capable of helping you resolve this calamity.”

“Since the two of us have encountered one another here, it means that we have been brought together by fate. This poor monk will not charge you a single cent and will, in fact, resolve your calamity free of charge. What do you think?”

Chu Feng looked to his surroundings and discovered that he was the only one there. It seemed like the monk was really speaking to him. Thus, he asked, “Are you talking to me?”

“It is fate that brought us together. Thus, other than talking to you, who else would I be talking to?” As the fake monk spoke those words, he arrived before Chu Feng and was looking at him with a beaming smile.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He had clearly concealed his cultivation and changed his appearance.

At this moment, his cultivation was that of a rank nine Martial King, and his appearance was that of a burly middle-aged man. However, that fake monk actually addressed him as ‘young man.’ What sort of eyesight did he possess?

“I’d suggest you go and deceive others. I fear that you will have to pay the price if you want to deceive me,” Chu Feng was disinclined to bother wasting time with a swindler.

The fake monk patted his big belly and said, “Young man, it

seems that you do not trust me. You can ask me any random question. See if I can answer it. I'll tell you this, this old man's reputation as a know-it-all is definitely not underserved."

"Heh, okay then. You've heard of the Five Elements Secret Skills, right?" Chu Feng casually asked.

"Gold Immortal Profound Technique, Wood Immortal Profound Technique, Water Immortal Profound Technique, Fire Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique."

"They were created in the Ancient Era by a very powerful expert called the Five Elements Old Ancestor. As for those five great secret skills, they are not only known collectively as the Five Elements Secret Skills, they are also known to be the five strongest secret skills in the Holy Land of Martialism."

"According to legend, if someone were capable of obtaining all five of the secret skills, they would be able to obtain a secret."

"Unfortunately, after one obtains a secret skill, one's body will feel a sense of oppression. There is simply no one in the entire world with a body capable of housing all five secret skills. If one tried to do it forcefully, one would only harm oneself and die from the explosion of one's body," The fake monk said in a very knowledgeable manner.

Speaking of it, what this fake monk had said was even more detailed than what Chu Feng had heard before. However, the extra bits said by this fake monk were simply things that Chu Feng did not believe. After all, the way Chu Feng saw it, this monk was nothing more than a swindler.

Chapter 1655 – Too Shameless

“Young man, the question you asked is too easy. Even if this poor monk were to close his eyes, he would still be able to answer your question,” After answering Chu Feng’s question, this fake monk was extremely proud of himself and actually flipped his head elegantly.

Speaking of it, even though he was so fat that there was no neck to be seen, his head was still quite nimble. He was able to flip his head without any issue. Furthermore, his head flip was quite rhythmic.

However, no matter how one looked at it, he had the appearance of trying to anger and annoy you. As there was only him and Chu Feng in this place, he was evidently trying to anger and annoy Chu Feng.

“Did I say that I was asking you that? What I wanted to ask is who currently possesses the Fire Immortal Profound Technique,” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

“Young man, you’re truly evil. Aren’t you simply trying to make things difficult for this monk?”

“That question of yours, if you were to ask others, there would really not be anyone that could answer your question. After all, the Fire Immortal Profound Technique has disappeared for a long time. It has already become a mystery.”

“However, your question is of no difficulty to this monk,” The fake monk laughed mischievously. Then, he said, “Speaking of it, it’s a long story. If you really want to investigate it, it’s something that happened fifteen thousand eight hundred and thirty-three years ago.”

“That was after Emperor Gong’s era, and before Emperor Qing’s era. Even though the human power’s Three Palaces, Four Clans

and Nine Powers all existed in the Holy Land of Martialism, they were unable to contend against the Ancient Era's Elves."

"That was an era that was relatively mediocre. Thus, that was also an era that ended up being forgotten. In that era, there was a genius."

"That person used poison techniques to super artistic achievements. His world spirit techniques were all poisonous, his martial skills were all poisonous, and even his weapons were all poisonous."

"[Du Wanwu](#) was his name. He had given himself this name. The implication behind his name was that there was nothing in this world that he could not poison."

"Later on, due to the fact that the people whom he had killed with poison all died extremely ugly deaths and suffered enormously before death, the people gave him another name, Poison Demon."

"After that, Poison Demon Du Wanwu was born. He became the most frightening existence in that era. The Great Evildoers of this era, when compared to that Du Wanwu, are all greatly inferior."

"However, Du Wanwu was too arrogant. He had clearly only learned poisonous techniques. Yet, for the sake of pride, he actually insisted on fighting against the Three Palaces for the newly-emerged Fire Immortal Profound Technique."

"In the end, even though he managed to successfully obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, he had slaughtered a lot of people from the Three Palaces while fighting against them for the Fire Immortal Profound Technique."

"This greatly enraged the Three Palaces. They ended up joining hands to suppress the Poison Demon. They planned to eliminate him completely. After investigating, they discovered the Poison Demon's hometown. Then, they assembled great forces and

proceed to the Poison Demon's hometown. They wanted to use the Poison Demon's family to threaten him."

"However, when they reached his hometown, they found out that the village he was from had already disappeared. Since then, the Poison Demon had also disappeared alongside his village. Furthermore, it was not only him and that village; the Fire Immortal Profound Technique had also disappeared," The fake monk narrated all this extremely vividly. In the end, he did not forget to sigh. It was as if what he had said was all real.

This monk was truly worthy of being a swindler. His acting skill was extremely excellent. If it wasn't for the fact that he had seen this fake monk deceive that young girl earlier, Chu Feng might really have believed his words.

"Not bad, your story was made up extremely well," Chu Feng smiled lightly and prepared to leave.

"My, you don't believe me?" However, that monk grabbed Chu Feng and said, "It's fine for you to not believe me. However, you must still pay the explanation fee."

"Explanation fee?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's the fee of me explaining and answering the question you asked me earlier," The monk replied.

"Didn't you said that it's free of charge?" Chu Feng stated.

"Yes, it's free of charge. But, you will still have to pay the explanation fee," The fat monk said with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng sneered in his heart. Sure enough, this monk was a swindler. While it was one thing to deceive others, he actually dared to come deceive him too. Chu Feng would definitely not let him get away with it.

However, right at this moment, that monk muttered with a low voice, "If you do not pay me the explanation fee, I'll go and find the Nangong Imperial Clan."

After hearing what the monk said, Chu Feng's heart was startled. He felt that the situation was bad. Why would this monk mention the Nangong Imperial Clan all of a sudden? Could it be that he had discovered something? Even though Chu Feng was feeling very uneasy, he still acted extremely calm. Not only was he not afraid, he instead sneered, "Find the Nangong Imperial Clan? What do you mean by that? Could it be that you dare to deceive others like this because the Nangong Imperial Clan is your backer?"

"Young man, stop pretending. You yourself know best who the people in your burlap sack are. Not only did you kidnap the Nangong Imperial Clan's princes, you've even beaten them to such a state. If I were to report you, you would likely have to suffer an enormous consequence," said the monk.

"Woosh~~~"

Hearing those words, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and strength suddenly entered his foot. He was planning to escape the monk.

He had managed to realize that this monk was not simple. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to instantly see through the burlap sack. One must know that the burlap sack was a treasure that ordinary people could not see through at all.

"Young man, where are you going?"

However, that monk continued to grab onto Chu Feng's hand. His grasp was so firm that Chu Feng was unable to break free no matter how hard he tried. This monk was many times more powerful than Chu Feng had imagined him to be. His cultivation was definitely above Chu Feng's, and he was likely many times stronger than Chu Feng too. Chu Feng was evidently no match for him.

It turned out that this monk was not only a swindler, he was also an expert.

"Exactly who are you?" Chu Feng was frowning deeply and

feeling extremely uneasy. He began to suspect that this monk might have come precisely for him.

“Hehe, young man, who else could this monk possible me? I am know-it-all,” The monk laughed mischievously.

“Exactly what do you plan to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Young man, don’t be afraid. I do not care about the grudges between you and the Nangong Imperial Clan. I merely want my explanation fee,” The monk said.

“Explanation fee? How much do you want?” Chu Feng asked.

“I want the scroll sealed in that Cosmos Sack that’s sealed by a world spirit formation,” The monk pointed to Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack with a gleeful smile.

Chu Feng was immediately stunned to hear those words. It turned out that this monk had not come for him. Instead, he had come for that scroll. Could it be that this monk was related to that ferocious witch?

“Senior, this scroll was given to me to keep safe for someone else. I’m afraid that I cannot hand it to you. Would it be possible for me to use other items in place of that scroll?” After discovering that the monk was not a simple character, Chu Feng’s face was immediately filled with smiles. As the saying goes, before eaves, one must lower one’s head. At this moment, this was the exact situation Chu Feng was in.

Chu Feng was grabbed by the monk. It was simply impossible for him to escape. Not to mention whether the monk planned to hand Chu Feng to the Nangong Imperial Clan or not, the monk himself possessed the ability to kill Chu Feng.

Before him, if Chu Feng dared to act tough, he would definitely be courting death. When he could not act tough, he had no choice but to act soft.

“Young man, this monk only wants that scroll,” said the monk.

“Senior, if I were to give that scroll to you, I would likely be killed,” Chu Feng said.

“Young man, you will only be killed if you keep that scroll. I am taking it away in order to neutralize your calamity,” said the monk.

“Senior, what do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“If you do not hand the scroll to me, I will hand you to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Do you think that the Nangong Imperial Clan will let you get away? Naturally, it will be your calamity.”

“However, if you are to hand the scroll to me, I will let you leave right away. From then on, we will not owe each other anything. Naturally, I will also have neutralized your calamity,” said the monk with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt like vomiting blood. He had seen a lot of shameless people. However, he had never seen a person as shameless as this monk. This monk was clearly threatening him. Yet, he kept insisting on saying that he was helping him neutralize a calamity. This was simply too shameless.

Du Wanwu → Poison All Living Things

Chapter 1656 – Forced Onto A Path To Death

“Young man, think this over carefully. I’ll give you until the count of ten.”

“One, two, three, four, five...” This monk was truly shameless. Immediately after he said those words, he started counting. He had not given Chu Feng any time to consider at all.

“Take it,” Chu Feng was forced into a state of helplessness. He had no choice but to take out the scroll and hand it to that monk.

“Hehe, that’s more like it. Young man, what you’ve done is a sensible act. No matter how important heaven or earth might be, they are not as important as your life,” said the monk with a vulgar laugh as he held onto the scroll.

“You must know that woman, right? She has left behind an imprint on me. Could you remove it for me? Else, if she were to come and find me later, and I am unable to hand over the scroll to her, she will definitely kill me,” Chu Feng said.

“Young man, I can tell that you are a man blessed by heavens. For the time being, you will not die. Thus, just rest assured. I’m sure we’ll meet again someday,” When the monk’s words reached Chu Feng’s ears, he had long since disappeared.

He was truly extremely powerful. Chu Feng suspected that he was not only a Half Martial Emperor. Rather, he was likely a Martial Emperor.

However, that monk was extremely inhumane. Chu Feng felt that he would definitely be able to help him. Yet, he had refused to help him.

“I am truly unfortunate today. What’s with all these people I’m encountering?!” Chu Feng felt extremely helpless. The only bits of comfort he managed to find were in the Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword he had obtained from Nangong Tianhu and

Nangong Tianshi.

However, when he thought of those two swords, Chu Feng was truly confused by the actions of that monk. Since he knew that the scroll was with Chu Feng, he should have been able to see the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword that were placed in the same Cosmos Sack as the scroll.

Yet, he only wanted the scroll, and was not interested in anything else. Was it that he was not greedy for wealth, or was that scroll really so precious that its value greatly surpassed that all of Chu Feng's other treasures?

Even though the monk had not robbed Chu Feng of all his treasures and had not killed him, Chu Feng still hated that monk very much. After all, the fact that the monk had robbed him of the scroll meant that the monk had forced him onto a path to death.

In any case, Chu Feng had decided that he could not continue to stay here. Chu Feng carefully inspected the city to determine the people who posed a threat to him.

Then, he changed back into his original appearance, arrived before the city gates, publicly took out the naked Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshu from his burlap sack and hung them upside down on top of the city walls.

Furthermore, in front of everyone, he used a very large crimson writing brush to write eight large characters on Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi's naked bodies: 'Defeated by Chu Feng, this is the result.'

The crowd were all stunned to see this scene. Chu Feng was currently wanted by the Nangong Imperial Clan. Yet, he actually dared to appear in this city. One must know that this city was extremely close to the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory.

This was simply too arrogant, too daring. Chu Feng simply did not place the Nangong Imperial Clan in his eyes at all.

Provocation, this was an undisguised provocation.

However, at the moment when the crowd was stunned by Chu Feng's actions, Chu Feng had already disappeared. When people reported this matter to the Nangong Imperial Clan and brought the Nangong Imperial Clan to the city, Chu Feng was already tens of thousands of miles away. Not even his shadow was left behind.

The two princes from the Nangong Imperial Clan were not only defeated by Chu Feng, they were also stripped by Chu Feng and hung upside down on top of the city wall. When this matter was spread to the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Beidou flew into a violent rage.

“Trash! You two are utter trash! How could you two not defeat Chu Feng even when acting together?”

“It's one thing to not be able to defeat him, but the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were also snatched away by him. Furthermore, you've been hung upside down on top of the city gate. You have utterly lost all my face.”

“I have painstakingly nurtured you all for these many years in vain. All those resources I've given to you all are wasted. If I knew this would happen, I might as well have fed those cultivation resources to dogs.”

Nangong Beidou pointed at his two sons who were kneeling before him and loudly cursed at them. The finger that he pointed at them with was shivering. He was truly extremely enraged by how disappointing they were. As a clan chief, and the grand Nangong Imperial Clan's clan chief on top of that, what was most important to Nangong Beidou was his face.

Furthermore... it would be one thing if they were captured by Chu Feng and defeated by him. However, the two of them had actually gone to find Chu Feng themselves, and then been taught a lesson by Chu Feng.

They had overestimated their capabilities. This was an extraordinary shame and humiliation. The two of them had caused him to lose all face.

Fortunately, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi were his sons. If they were other people, he would've already killed them with a palm strike.

“Imperial Father, it really isn't your sons that were incompetent. Rather, that Chu Feng is too heaven-defying. Other than the Water Immortal Profound Technique, he also controlled four other secret skills. Furthermore, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation,” Nangong Tianhu said.

“Is what you said the truth?” Nangong Beidou was shocked to hear those words.

“Imperial Father, what second brother said is absolutely true. That girl Nangong Moli was also present. She saw everything. Chu Feng only attacked us in order to save her,” Nangong Tianshi said.

“That Chu Feng is actually that powerful? Exactly what are his origins?” After hearing those words, Nangong Beidou started to frown deeply. He felt extremely uneasy.

Based on the intelligence they had obtained, they had come to know that Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist. That Martial Emperor-level Asura Evil Spirit had most likely been released by Chu Feng.

And now, Chu Feng was revealed to be extremely powerful himself. A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, this was something that no other human possessed. This was the potential to become an era's overlord.

“The two of you, excuse yourselves. Without my order, neither of you are allowed to take another step outside of the Nangong Imperial Clan. Oh, that's right. You are not allowed to disturb

Nangong Moli again,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Yes,” Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi hurriedly left.

After the two of them left, Nangong Beidou sat on his throne. At this moment, he appeared to be somewhat beaten. He was truly regretting his decision. If he knew that Chu Feng would be this hard to deal with, he would’ve listened to what Nangong Lian said, and not made Chu Feng an enemy. Instead, he would’ve befriended Chu Feng.

“Clan Chief Nangong, your mental state doesn’t appear to be very good,” Suddenly, a figure floated in. It was White-browed Immortal.

Suddenly, Nangong Beidou asked, “Brother White-brow, say, if I try to reconcile with that Chu Feng now, would he agree to it?”

“Clan Chief Nangong, why would you be thinking of that? Could it be because the two princes were defeated by Chu Feng?” White-browed Immortal asked.

“Even now, we do not know that child’s background. Exactly who he has supporting him behind his back is a mystery. However, based on what Nangong Lian said, there is an existence behind Chu Feng that is no weaker than me.”

“Furthermore, the way I see it, the fact that Chu Feng dares to oppose our Nangong Imperial Clan this unrestrainedly means that the person behind him is likely stronger than me.”

“Furthermore, based on what my two sons said, that Chu Feng actually possesses a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Furthermore, other than the Water Immortal Profound Technique, he also possesses four other secret skills. Adding on the abnormal sign he triggered that day, I truly think that this child is too heaven-defying. Likely, he is someone who possesses the potential to become an era’s overlord. I should not continue to make him an enemy.”

“Furthermore, Chu Feng attacked my two sons this time for the sake of saving Nangong Moli. This means that that child is a loyal person.”

“Thus, I think that if I can reconcile with Chu Feng, we will have one less great danger,” said Nangong Beidou.

Chapter 1657 – Chu Feng Captured

“Clan Chief Nangong, I think you’re overthinking it. Without mentioning that Asura Evil Spirit, if Chu Feng really possessed such a powerful background, they would likely have already attacked our Nangong Imperial Clan after all this.”

“However, nothing has happened. Furthermore, that Chu Feng is only fleeing for his life. The most he could do were some petty maneuvers to retaliate against our Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“As for his so-called loyalty, that’s very hard to determine. If he really is a loyal and affectionate person, how could he release that Asura Evil Spirit?”

“That Asura Evil Spirit was extremely ferocious. If it wasn’t for Nangong Longjian acting to save us, I fear that our Nangong Imperial Clan would have been completely destroyed. Nangong Lian, Nangong Moli and the others that possessed a good relationship with him would undoubtedly have died too.”

“Thus, the way I see it, this Chu Feng being affectionate and loyal is merely a disguise. That child is extremely scheming. Furthermore, he is too much of a threat to the Nangong Imperial Clan. We must eliminate him.”

“As for his talent, I do not think he’s that exceptional. Else, why is it that he is still unable to sever the connection between the Cyan Rainbow Sword, the Purple Rainbow Sword and the two princes?” said the White-browed Immortal. He seemed to have a deeper impression of Chu Feng than Nangong Beidou.

“However, that child is a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. It will be no easy task to capture him.”

“What I fear is that child possessing too heaven-defying of a talent. Even if his background is not that frightening, he himself could be extremely frightening.”

“If he were to conceal himself, not reappear and begin to wholeheartedly train so that he can return to retaliate against our Nangong Imperial Clan years later when his cultivation is higher, it would mean...!!!” White-browed Immortal sighed.

Nangong Beidou sighed repeatedly. A single Chu Feng was truly causing him endless headaches.

“If that’s the case, Clan Chief Nangong, you would not have to worry about it. I have not been idling around for the past couple days. I have gathered all of the items that Chu Feng has come into contact with, and extracted Chu Feng’s aura from them. With a Taboo Formation Technique, I was able to condense this,” As White-browed Immortal spoke, he took out a compass. The pointer on that compass was currently trembling.

“Brother White-brow, what is that?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“This compass points toward Chu Feng’s current location. With it, Chu Feng will not be able to escape,” said the White-browed Immortal.

“As expected of Brother White-brow, one of the Ten Immortals. You actually managed to find Chu Feng’s location using merely his aura,” At this moment, Nangong Beidou finally revealed a smile on his face.

“If I cannot do even this, I would not be qualified to be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” White-browed Immortal smiled confidently. Then, he said, “Clan Chief Nangong, you do not have to be vexed by that Chu Feng anymore. This time, I will personally set out to capture that Chu Feng for you alive.”

“In that case, I’ll stay in the Nangong Imperial Clan and wait for Brother White-brow’s return with that Chu Feng,” The smile on Nangong Beidou’s face grew even denser.

.....

Right now, Chu Feng was really forced into a corner.

Disregarding the Beitang Imperial Clan and the Nangong Imperial Clan, that witch who had suddenly appeared was what was causing Chu Feng the greatest headache.

She had explicitly stated that if Chu Feng were to lose the scroll, she would make him suffer a miserable death.

Yet now, Chu Feng had lost the scroll. Well, to be exact, the scroll had been snatched away by that monk. However, regardless, that scroll was no longer with Chu Feng.

However, the thing that depressed Chu Feng the most was that the imprint left behind by that witch was still on Chu Feng's body. No matter how hard he tried, he was unable to wipe it off. Right now, Chu Feng was simply akin to someone waiting for death to arrive, waiting for that witch to come and kill him.

Originally, Chu Feng had already planned to return to the Cyanwood Mountain and find a way to rescue Yao'er. After all, his cultivation had already reached the Half Martial Emperor level.

Yet now, Chu Feng did not dare to go anywhere. He feared that the witch would suddenly appear and kill not only him, but also those around him.

In this kind of crisis, Chu Feng thought of a place to go. It was one of the Holy Land of Martialism's forbidden areas, the Ancient Era's Cemetery, the so-called Realm of Gods.

Chu Feng had obtained a ladle from that Ancient Era's Elf in the Yan Clan's village. That ladle was an item from the Realm of Gods.

Most astonishingly, that ladle actually caused Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline to waver. Thus, Chu Feng felt that the so-called Realm of Gods might be related to his clan.

Originally, Chu Feng had planned to wait until the future, and go to the Realm of Gods when he had the opportunity to do so. However, it would now appear that the Realm of Gods had become the only place that Chu Feng could go, the place that he must go to

take refuge. Chu Feng did not believe that the witch was powerful enough to dare set foot into the Realm of Gods to capture him.

At this moment, Chu Feng had passed through a teleportation formation and reached the teleportation formation closest to the Ancient Era's Cemetery.

"The Nangong Imperial Clan is truly quick to act. They actually managed to put my wanted posters here already. Likely, my wanted posters are present in all corners of the Overlord Domain."

Chu Feng walked out of the teleportation formation, saw the numerous wanted posters, and began to laugh bitterly.

However, Chu Feng did not stop here. Instead, he soared directly into the sky and began to rapidly fly into the distance.

The reason for that was because the Realm of Gods was a very dangerous area. There were simply no teleportation formations around it. The teleportation formation that Chu Feng had just stepped out of could be said to be the closest teleportation formation to the Realm of Gods.

However, even though it was the closest, it was still a very large distance away from the Realm of Gods.

Chu Feng did not know when that witch would come to find him. Thus, he had to proceed to the Realm of Gods and hide in it before that witch could reach him.

Even though the Realm of Gods was known to be the number one forbidden area in the Holy Land of Martialism, and it was said that all those who entered the Realm of Gods would die, Chu Feng faintly felt that he would be able to come out alive after entering it.

The Holy Land of Martialism was extremely vast and boundless. Even though Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast, and he could travel a thousand miles in a flash, he had still not managed to reach the Realm of Gods even after journeying for two entire days.

Furthermore, it had been an entire day since Chu Feng had last

seen the presence of another person. This was truly a desolate place.

“Hahahahaha...” Right at this moment, frantic laughter sounded. At the same time Chu Feng heard that laughter, a boundless oppressive might suddenly appeared and directly bound Chu Feng.

Following that, countless golden-bright and dazzling spirit formations appeared and sealed off both heaven and earth. The entire area had been completely sealed off.

Furthermore, these were no ordinary spirit formations. Instead, they were Dragon Mark Royal-cloak spirit formations.

“Little friend Chu Feng, where are you planning to go?”

Right at this moment, several figures appeared in the distance, not far from Chu Feng. Even the weakest among them were Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. As for the strongest among them, he was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, he was none other than the White-browed Immortal.

“How could it be you? Why would you be here?” Chu Feng was shocked. He had never expected to encounter the White-browed Immortal on his journey to escape from the witch. This White-browed Immortal was currently part of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Why would I be here? I have come here by following you. You didn’t expect that, right? Even though you’ve escaped this far, I still managed to catch you.”

“Speaking of it, you are truly quite smart. You actually chose such a desolate place to run off to. If it weren’t for the fact that I could follow your aura, I really would not have expected that you would come to this place to hide.”

When speaking those words, the White-browed Immortal revealed a complacent smile. He had not said those words to praise

Chu Feng. Instead, he was praising himself. The hidden implication behind his words was that no matter how well Chu Feng could escape, he would not be able to escape his grasp.

Chapter 1658 – The Appearance Of The Witch

“Followed my aura?”

Hearing that, Chu Feng came to realize how the White-browed Immortal had managed to find him. Merely, he did not expect the White-browed Immortal to know such a technique where he could find Chu Feng without the need of any imprint, and only needing his aura.

However, upon thinking about it, Chu Feng could understand that it was possible. Back then, in the Sealing Ancient Village, Chu Feng and those with him had managed to track the World Spiritist Alliance’s traitor through the use of a special spirit formation.

As for this White-browed Immortal, he was one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s ten greatest Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. It was not surprising at all for him to have grasped such a technique.

Thus, it was Chu Feng who had been careless this time around. Merely, Chu Feng was feeling extremely unreconciled at being captured by the White-browed Immortal this quickly. He was even more unreconciled to die at the White-browed Immortal’s hands.

“What’s wrong? Feeling unreconciled? That’s what you should be feeling. This is the gap between you and me.”

“Even if your talent for world spirit techniques is extremely amazing, even if you are able to obtain the power of the Asura Spirit World, you are still much too weak when compared to me. After all, I am a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, whereas you’re a mere Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” The White-browed Immortal said with a cold laugh. However, one could hear a faint amount of jealousy in his words.

From merely those words, one could tell why the White-browed

Immortal detested Chu Feng this enormously. Evidently, he was jealous of Chu Feng's talent, jealous that Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist.

“What are you planning to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Nothing much. I'll bring you back to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Clan Chief Nangong shall handle you personally,” said the White-browed Immortal.

“You don't plan to kill me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Kill you? If I wanted to kill you, it would be easier than crushing an ant to death. However, you have done extremely malicious deeds to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Thus, Clan Chief Nangong should personally execute you before the Nangong Imperial Clansmen.”

“I've done extremely malicious deeds? Haha... you, as the nominal elder of the Nangong Imperial Clan, should know better than me as to exactly what had happened back then.”

“All that I, Chu Feng, have done was forced onto me by you all,” Chu Feng said with a cold voice.

“My my my, what a 'forced onto you.' Indeed, we indeed forced you. Forced you to release an Asura Evil Spirit.”

“Truth be told, I never saw you personally release that Asura Evil Spirit. Thus, I really do not believe that you are capable of releasing that Asura Evil Spirit.”

“How about this? I'll force you again today, so that you can release another Asura Evil Spirit to broaden my knowledge. What do you say?”

As the White-browed Immortal spoke, he arrived before Chu Feng, grabbed his neck and raised him up. At a close range, he said, “Come, release another Evil Spirit. Aren't you extremely powerful? Aren't you an Asura World Spiritist?”

“Since you could release one, you should be able to release another. Why aren’t you releasing it? The way I see it, you simply cannot release an Asura Evil Spirit to begin with. That Asura Evil Spirit from that day wasn’t released by you to begin with.”

“My guess is correct, no? The true Asura World Spiritist is simply not you. You have an Asura World Spiritist behind you, isn’t that right?”

“Haha...” Seeing the White-browed Immortal acting in such a manner, Chu Feng laughed and shook his head.

“What are you laughing about?” The White-browed Immortal frowned and asked with a cold voice.

“I had thought that the Holy Land of Martialism’s legendary Ten Immortals were all like the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, like real Immortals.”

“However, after I met you, I discovered that I was mistaken. There is actually a person as filthy as you among the Ten Immortals,” Chu Feng’s words were filled with contempt.

“Filthy? You dare to call me filthy?!” The White-browed Immortal was extremely angry upon hearing those words. He could tell that Chu Feng was insulting him.

“You spoke of an Asura Evil Spirit every single time you opened your mouth. You are actually extremely envious of me, no? You’re extremely jealous of me, isn’t that right? You are envious and jealous that I managed to obtain the approval of an Asura World Spirit, while you have not. That’s why you detest me.”

“Although you’re known to be an Immortal, you’re actually such a narrow-minded individual that you cannot watch others be superior to you. With your mindset, you are simply unworthy of the title Immortal,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you are the first to dare to insult me like this. Did you really think that I would not dare to kill you?” Killing intent began

to emerge in the White-browed Immortal's anger-filled eyes.

“Killing him? You're not qualified.”

Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded from the distance. Following that, a stream of violent power surged forth while covering the entire region.

That power was simply too ferocious. In merely an instant, it had shattered the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak world spirit formations set up by the White-browed Immortal.

When the spirit formations were shattered, a figure suddenly appeared.

When that person appeared, everyone present was shocked. That was because this person was emitting an extremely frightening killing intent that caused even the weather to be affected.

This person was none other than the white-haired witch Chu Feng had encountered that day. Merely, this time around, it was not her clone, but rather her true self, who had come.

“Woosh~~~”

After this witch appeared, she lightly waved her sleeve, and a frantic power surged forth explosively. That power directly sucked Chu Feng over from the White-browed Immortal's grasp.

“Snow-haired Immortal, it's actually you?!”

Upon seeing this witch, the White-browed Immortal was even more shocked than Chu Feng. Furthermore, based on his reaction, he seemed to know this witch.

“Snow-haired Immortal, this witch is also one of the Ten Immortals? One of the Holy Land of Martialism's ten Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists?” After hearing what the White-browed Immortal uttered, Chu Feng was also shocked. The reason for that was because this woman, no matter how one looked at her, simply did not resemble an immortal at all; she was simply a witch.

“Snow-haired Immortal, I truly never would have expected that the person behind Chu Feng would be you.”

“That Chu Feng should be your personal disciple, right? Weren’t you known to never accept disciples?” The White-browed Immortal asked.

“All of you, scram!” However, not only did the witch not answer the White-browed Immortal’s question, she instead cursed at them. Her attitude was extremely arrogant. She had simply not placed the White-browed Immortal in her eyes at all.

“Snow-haired Immortal, that Chu Feng is the Nangong Imperial Clan’s wanted criminal. Even you will not be able to shelter him,” The White-browed Immortal continued.

“If you dare to utter another word of this rubbish, I’ll kill you,” When the witch said these words, the sky instantly darkened, and space started to shatter and violently shake. Even the peak Half Martial Emperors present were unable to stand firm. They began to roll and crawl in mid-air.

Before this ferociously oppressive might, the White-browed Immortal’s complexion turned deathly pale. In fact, even his body was wavering left and right, unable to stand firmly. Evidently, even though he was a rank two Martial Emperor, he was unable to contend against that witch.

“Let’s go,” In this sort of situation, even though the White-browed Immortal was feeling extremely unreconciled, he still ended up leading his people and leaving.

As Chu Feng saw the White-browed Immortal and the others leaving before his sight, Chu Feng did not feel the slightest bit of joy. The scene from earlier had shown him that this woman known as the Snow-haired Immortal was much more frightening than the White-browed Immortal.

When even the White-browed Immortal feared her, how could

Chu Feng possibly not fear her?

“Senior, that scroll, it...” At this moment, Chu Feng wanted to explain.

However, before Chu Feng could finish what he wanted to say, the Snow-haired Immortal cut him off, “That scroll is not on you. Tell me truthfully where it has gone to.”

“Senior, I was properly looking after that scroll for you. However, a fat monk suddenly appeared. That fat monk’s cultivation greatly surpassed this junior’s. Junior was simply no match for him. That scroll has been snatched away by him,” Chu Feng did not dare to conceal this. However, he also did not dare to say that he had personally handed over the scroll to that monk. In this moment of crisis, he lied a bit.

“Damned fatty, he actually [acted as the fisherman](#).” After hearing what Chu Feng said, that Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes were filled with even more intense killing intent.

“Senior, exactly who is that fat monk? You should know him, right?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

That Snow-haired Immortal did not answer Chu Feng’s question. Instead, she suddenly turned around and looked to Chu Feng with her murderous-looking gaze.

With that gaze looking at him, Chu Feng’s heart shivered. How could this possibly be a gaze? This was simply akin to countless sharp blades penetrating his body.

Fortunately, Chu Feng possessed a strong spirit. Else, this gaze was sufficient to cause Chu Feng to have a nervous breakdown, turning him into a madman.

Right at this moment, that Snow-haired Immortal asked, “I’ve heard that you’re an Asura World Spiritist?”

Fisherman’s benefit: A chinese story where a snipe caught an oyster and a fisherman came from behind to snatch them both.

Basically, profiting from the conflicts of others.

Chapter 1659 – Seeking Survival By Breaking Through The Formation

The Snow-haired Immortal used her sharp gaze to look at Chu Feng. It was as if she could see through Chu Feng completely.

This woman was too frightening. Before her, Chu Feng did not dare to hesitate. Thus, he immediately said, “Junior is indeed an Asura World Spiritist.”

“It’s baseless to just declare something. Show me proof,” As the Snow-haired Immortal spoke, she took out a compass.

This compass was very ancient. Furthermore, it was very special. There was no pointer in the center of the compass. Instead, there were seven symbols all around the compass.

It was Chu Feng’s first time seeing these symbols. However, he was able to guess that these seven symbols should signify the Fairy, Buddha, Ghost, Demon, Beast, Elf and Asura, the Seven Spirit Worlds.

Chu Feng realized the intention of the White-haired Immortal. Chu Feng had declared that he was an Asura World Spiritist, but he possessed no proof. Thus, she wanted him to prove himself. As for this compass, it was capable of determining whether or not Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist.

Not only did Chu Feng know about the use of this compass, Chu Feng also knew how to use it. After all, Chu Feng was not a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist in name only.

Thus, Chu Feng received the compass and instilled a strand of his spirit power into it. After his spirit power entered the compass, the seven patterns on the compass actually began to shine.

Chu Feng’s strand of spirit power entered the location where the pointer should be. However, his strand of spirit power did not turn into a pointer. Instead, like a little snake that was swimming in the

water, it began to swim around in circle.

Wherever the strand of spirit power reached, the Fairy, Buddha, Ghost, Demon, Beast and Elf, the six of them all stopped shining.

However, when the strand of spirit power reached the Asura symbol, the light started to rapidly increase. Then, that strand of spirit power turned into a strand of light and entered the Asura symbol.

At this time, the light from the Asura symbol began to decline, and stopped being as dazzling as before. However, it did not die out. Instead, it continued to shine. Compared to the other six symbols, it was much more dazzling.

“Never would I have expected that you were really an Asura World Spiritist. Truly, anything can happen in this era.”

The Snow-haired Immortal took the compass back from Chu Feng. However, she was still as expressionless as ever. It seemed that Chu Feng actually being an Asura World had caused her emotions to waver slightly.

However, Chu Feng had been paying attention to the Snow-haired Immortal the entire time. He had discovered that when the light emitted by the Asura symbol started to shine brightly, that Snow-haired Immortal’s pupils had shrunk slightly. This meant that she was still shocked by this, and was merely acting very calm.

“Boy, you’ve lost my scroll. However, taking into consideration that you’re an Asura World Spiritist, I’ll give you a chance.”

“I’ll set up a spirit formation. If you are able to break through it, I’ll spare your life,” After the Snow-haired Immortal finished saying those words, without even waiting for Chu Feng to respond, she began to set up a spirit formation.

As expected from a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. When setting up that spirit formation, she was extremely proficient. Even Chu Feng felt inferior, and began to admire her

techniques.

However, when the Snow-haired Immortal finished setting up the spirit formation, Chu Feng started to frown. Gradually, an uneasy feeling began to rise in his heart.

This spirit formation was too frightening. Just by looking at it, one's hair would stand on end, and one's back would start to chill.

That spirit formation was filled with bugs. There were all sorts of bugs. However, one thing was certain, all of those bugs possessed extremely powerful offensive abilities.

“When you enter that spirit formation, those bugs will enter your body and begin to devour your internal organs, your meridians, your bones and the rest of your body.”

“If they finish devouring your internal organs, your meridians and your bones, they will begin to attack your dantian.”

“As for what you must do, it'll be to enter that spirit formation and stand there without using spirit formations to defend or counterattack. Furthermore, you are not allowed to resist the attacks from the bugs,” said the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Aren't you simply telling me to die?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng cursed out.

How could this woman possibly be an Immortal? She was simply a malicious witch. What did she mean by ‘a chance’? In the end, she wanted him to be devoured alive by bugs. This was simply too ruthless.

“If you wish to die, I can grant you that wish right now. However, if you do not wish to die, then do as I say,” The Snow-haired Immortal's eyes shone, and a boundless killing intent penetrated Chu Feng's chest.

At this moment, even though his body was completely unharmed, Chu Feng shivered violently. Then, he moved back several steps and nearly fell to the ground.

At this moment, Chu Feng's entire body was filled with cold sweat. He did not dare to talk back to the Snow-haired Immortal anymore. The reason for that was because, after the gaze from her earlier, Chu Feng firmly believed that if this Snow-haired Immortal wanted to torment him, he would definitely feel so much pain that he would wish to die.

“When those bugs begin to devour your body, they will die quickly afterwards. Furthermore, the number of bugs in that spirit formation is limited.”

“While you cannot attack, cannot defend, and cannot oppose them, you can use spirit techniques to restore your internal organs, your bones and your meridians,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Very well, bring it on,” Chu Feng nodded, then stepped into the center of that spirit formation.

Chu Feng had understood the intentions of the Snow-haired Immortal. No matter how numerous the bugs might be, they would certainly run out. She wanted Chu Feng to preserve his life through the use of his internal organs. When all of the bugs disappeared, it would be equivalent to Chu Feng breaking through that spirit formation.

“Seems like you're very intelligent, and have managed to understand my intentions.”

“However, I must still warn you of this. These bugs' attack speed is not slow. You must quickly repair your body. Else, when your internal organs, your meridians and your bones have all been devoured, they will start to attack your dantian.”

“I believe you should know very well what the consequences of having your dantian damaged would be,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“I only wish to ask, other than world spirit techniques, am I able

to use other techniques to restore my body?” Chu Feng asked.

“You are. All techniques are allowed,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Bring them on then,” Chu Feng said.

“Ji, ji, ji, ji~~~”

The Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes shone. Then, like an army that was just handed orders, those densely packed bugs all began to move. With lightning speed, they landed on Chu Feng’s body, drilled into Chu Feng’s body and began to tear away at Chu Feng’s body.

At this moment, even Chu Feng started to frown. He was in so much pain that his complexion turned pale, his lips turned purple, and he began to sweat profusely.

The reason for that was because those bugs were not ordinary bugs. When they were devouring Chu Feng’s body, the pain that they brought along was extremely difficult to endure.

However, Chu Feng had no other choice. Not only must he endure this pain, he must endure them devouring his internal organs and the rest of his body continuously.

The only thing Chu Feng could do was clench his teeth tightly and use his spirit techniques and the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique to restore the parts of his body that had been devoured by the bugs to ensure that the bugs would not attack his dantian.

The reason for that was because as soon as the bugs started to attack his dantian, Chu Feng’s cultivation would start to decline. This was something that Chu Feng could not allow to happen at any cost.

This was a crisis. If he successfully passed through it, he would be able to live. If he failed to pass through it, he would surely die.

As for Chu Feng, he must pass through it.

Because, he must not die.

Chapter 1660 – Extremely Poisonous Sea Of Clouds

“This sensation, sure enough, it’s not a world spirit technique. However, it’s not a martial skill either. What a particular sensation. So that’s it. It’s a secret skill.”

“Heh, interesting... never would I have expected to accidentally run into such an interesting little demon.”

The Snow-haired Immortal had been paying attention to Chu Feng the entire time. Furthermore, her perception was extremely strong. At the moment Chu Feng used the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique, she had instantly managed to tell that he had used a secret skill.

At this moment, the corners of the Snow-haired Immortal’s lips began to rise slightly. She had displayed a rare smile on her face.

Even though she was incomparably ice-cold, and emitted a dense killing intent all over like a witch that had killed countless people, she appeared very beautiful when that smile appeared on her face.

Her smile was very wicked. Yet it was also very enchanting...

However, Chu Feng simply did not have the heart to appreciate such an enchanting smile. He had already closed his eyes to fully concentrate on controlling his world spirit techniques and the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique to restore the portions of his body that had been devoured by the bugs.

It was not that Chu Feng was weak. Rather, it was that those bugs were simply too fast at devouring his body. Fortunately, this was Chu Feng. If it had been another Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, not to mention restoring their bodies unceasingly, they would likely have already crumbled from the pain of their bodies being devoured nonstop.

“Not bad. His perseverance is exceptionally strong. Likely, this

little guy has experienced quite a few trials to reach this point. Else, he would not have that sort of willpower.”

As the Snow-haired Immortal spoke, she took out a wanted poster. This was the same wanted poster of Chu Feng that the Nangong Imperial Clan had been placing all over the place. Chu Feng’s portrait was drawn on that wanted poster.

“Chu Feng. He actually dared to release an Asura Evil Spirit in the Nangong Imperial Clan. Quite an enormous nerve he has there,” When she read Chu Feng’s name on the wanted poster, the Snow-haired Immortal smiled again. Then, she put the wanted poster away.

Right at this moment, the final bugs had finally entered Chu Feng’s body. After they devoured parts of Chu Feng’s body, they died.

Chu Feng had managed to hold on. However, he was extremely beaten. At this moment, his entire body was covered with blood. That said, he was in no mind to care about his injuries. Instead, with a ‘putt,’ he laid on the ground and began to pant for air.

He was truly exhausted. His body was weary, and his strength was all gone. This exhaustion was not only limited to his body. More than his body, it was mostly an exhaustion of the mind. His mind was even more beaten up than his physical body.

“Clap, clap, clap, clap~~”

Applause began to be heard. It was the Snow-haired Immortal. She walked over to Chu Feng and said, “Truly not bad. You actually managed to break through this spirit formation of mine.”

“Senior, could you let me go now?” Chu Feng asked weakly. Even though he was utterly exhausted, he did not feel safe at all. He felt that his little life was completely in the grasp of this witch’s palm.

If she wanted him alive, he would be able to live. If she wanted him dead, he would definitely be killed.

This sort of sensation was extremely uncomfortable.

“Don’t be so anxious. I’ll bring you to see something first,” The Snow-haired Immortal smiled lightly. Then, with a wave of her sleeve, she brought Chu Feng into the air.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt that scenery surrounding him was changing, growing further and further away nonstop. The speed was so fast that Chu Feng could not even see the surrounding scenery accurately.

Chu Feng knew that the Snow-haired Immortal was taking him somewhere right now. Merely, he did not know where she wanted to take him.

“Senior, no matter what, you are one of the Ten Immortals. You must not go back on your word.”

“Since you said that you would let me go if I break through the spirit formation, you should keep your promise, no?” Chu Feng said.

“What? You who dared to release an Asura Evil Spirit in the Nangong Imperial Clan is actually afraid?” The Snow-haired Immortal asked.

“How do you know that?” Chu Feng was startled. The Nangong Imperial Clan had concealed the matter regarding the Asura Evil Spirit. This Snow-haired Immortal shouldn’t have known about it.

“Chu Feng, I heard your conversation with White-brow earlier. You should reveal your true appearance. To confront a senior with a disguised appearance is very disrespectful behavior,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt even more helpless. It turned out that this Snow-haired Immortal had long since discovered him. Merely, she had not revealed herself. Else, it would be impossible for her to know about the dialogue between him and the White-browed Immortal.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt very ashamed. He had thought that he would be able to enter the Realm of Gods before this witch discovered him. It turned out, after all his efforts, this witch had already discovered him without him noticing at all.

And now, everything regarding him had been seen through by that witch. As such, Chu Feng no longer bothered to conceal his appearance, and revealed his true appearance.

“Senior, there shouldn’t be many Asura World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism, right?”

“I can tell that you’re also a very highly principled person. Do you think that a junior like myself should be emphasized and nurtured?”

“Even if you do not plan to nurture me, you still shouldn’t kill me, no?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little demon, you’re quite needy. Do you believe that if you continue spouting nonsense, I’ll break my promise and smash you to death with a palm strike?” The Snow-haired Immortal glanced ruthlessly at Chu Feng.

After that glance, Chu Feng hurriedly closed his mouth. At this moment, Chu Feng’s heart was wavering. He was extremely worried, and his mind was extremely stressed.

Captured by this witch, Chu Feng really didn’t know when he would die. However, he had to do his best to think of a way to not be killed.

After journeying for some time, the witch finally stopped. At this time, Chu Feng did not know where he was. However, he was certain of one thing. That was, below them was a vast sea of clouds.

This sea of clouds was extremely special. The clouds were rolling about in waves. Furthermore, they extended as far as the eye could see, and looked like the actual sea.

However, those clouds were no ordinary clouds. They were green in color, and contained extremely frightening power. It was poison. These clouds were extremely poisonous. Not to mention touching them, merely breathing the air around the cloud would be enough to have one meet a violent death.

Furthermore, other than the frightening poison, the sea of clouds was also capable of isolating one's spirit power.

"What sort of place is this?" Chu Feng asked nervously. Being very worried to begin with, he became even more worried when seeing this place.

"This is the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds, one of the Holy Land of Martialism's forbidden areas. One will be infected by extreme poisons upon entering that place. Furthermore, there are practically no medicines capable of removing the poisons."

"Through successive generations, there have been countless people who believed themselves to be expert poison removers who came to challenge the extreme poisons from the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds. However, without any exception, they all died from it," said the Snow-haired Immortal.

"Senior, since this place is this dangerous, we shouldn't bother staying here for long," As Chu Feng spoke, he planned to run away.

However, the Snow-haired Immortal grabbed Chu Feng and said, "I have brought you here to help you. Yet you actually do not appreciate my kindness."

"Help me?" Chu Feng used a skeptical gaze to look at the Snow-haired Immortal. He did not believe in this witch.

"Your aura has already been locked onto by White-brow. No matter where you escape to, the Nangong Imperial Clan will be able to find you."

"In this sort of situation, even if you find shelter under someone, that person will also be met with a calamity. Unless you are able to

find someone that the Nangong Imperial Clan would not dare to provoke to shelter you.”

“Are you capable of finding such a person to protect you?” the Snow-haired Immortal asked while looking at Chu Feng.

“If I were able to find such a person, I wouldn’t have to flee all over the place,” Chu Feng suddenly smiled. He looked to the Snow-haired Immortal and asked, “Senior, how do you plan to help me?”

Chapter 1661 – Experiment Failure

“Since White-brow’s spirit formation has locked onto your aura, the method to break free from his spirit formation will be very easy. By changing your aura, he will no longer be able to find you.”

“Actually, my spirit formation from earlier has already changed a bit of your aura,” the Snow-haired Immortal said.

After hearing what the Snow-haired Immortal said, Chu Feng also noticed that his aura had really changed slightly. He had thought that this witch had been deliberately tormenting him. However, it would appear now that that wasn’t the case.

This inevitably caused Chu Feng to be shocked, and forced him to have a new impression of this Snow-haired Immortal. With a smile on his face, Chu Feng said, “Senior, so you’re actually helping me. You are truly a good person.”

“Don’t be so happy this quickly. My spirit formation has only managed to change your aura slightly. If you want the Nangong Imperial Clan to be unable to track you, you must change your aura completely.”

“While it’s easy to change your outer aura, it is very difficult to change the aura beneath the surface. As you are a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, I believe you should know how difficult it is, no?” said the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Junior knows. However, I believe that senior must have a way,” Chu Feng said.

“Smart. The poison aura from the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds is capable of changing your aura completely,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Senior, in that case, what do you plan to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“What to do? You merely need to jump into that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Senior, please don’t joke around. As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, you should know better than me how frightening that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds is. If junior is to enter it, I will definitely die,” Chu Feng said.

“If it was before, you would naturally die for certain by entering it. However, as it is now, you have a ten percent chance of being able to survive.”

“Little demon, did you really think those bugs from before were really created by me through spirit formations? Let me tell you, those were the Holy Land of Martialism’s extremely well-known Poisonous Soul Devouring Bugs.

“After being bitten by the Poisonous Soul Devouring Bugs, one will be able to gain immunity from all kinds of poison. I had that many Poisonous Soul Devouring Bugs bite your entire body, you should now be able to withstand the poisons from the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Based on that, it would seem that I have a ninety percent chance of dying upon entering it. However, what if I am unable to withstand the poisons?” Chu Feng asked.

“You said it yourself. You have a ninety percent chance of dying. If you fail to withstand the poisons, you will naturally die in there. There will not be anyone to retrieve your corpse for you,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Senior, I’ve carefully thought over it. I am truly thankful for your kindness. However, I think it is better that I find some other method,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the Snow-haired Immortal, turned around and prepared to leave.

“Paa~~~”

However, that Snow-haired Immortal grabbed onto Chu Feng and restricted him with a layer of powerful world spirit power. Then, with a smile, she said, “Little demon, whether you jump into

that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds or not is not up to you to decide.”

“Senior, what are you planning to do? You said that you wouldn’t kill me,” Chu Feng said.

“I am not trying to kill you. I am helping you. Even though there’s ninety percent chance of dying, if you are able to come out of the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds alive...”

“... I will make an exception and accept you as my disciple,” After she finished saying those words, the Snow-haired Immortal lightly pushed Chu Feng. Then, Chu Feng fell down into that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds.

“Ahhhh~~~” Right after entering that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds, Chu Feng’s heart-tearing and lungs-splitting screams began to resound

After pushing Chu Feng into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds, the Snow-haired Immortal sat cross-legged and closed her eyes. It was only after an entire night had passed that she slowly opened her eyes. As she saw the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds that showed no sign of activity, she sighed, “It would seem that you are ill-fated and have died in there.”

“I had thought that there would finally be someone qualified to become my personal disciple. However, it would appear that there really isn’t anyone who is qualified to become my personal disciple.”

“Sigh~~~” The Snow-haired Immortal sighed. However, she then revealed a wicked smile. It could be seen that even though she had spent a lot of effort to help Chu Feng, she did not feel any sadness at Chu Feng’s death.

It was as if Chu Feng were nothing more than her experimental subject. If he successfully passed her experiments, she would nurture him. If he failed to pass her experiments, she would feel a

bit of regret, but no sadness for his death.

The Snow-haired Immortal left. She had given up on Chu Feng. The way she saw it, this experiment of hers had ended up as a failure.

However, Chu Feng did not die.

Chu Feng had been pushed into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds by the Snow-haired Immortal. Due to the fact that his body was bound by her spirit power, he was simply unable to break free, much less escape.

After he fell into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds, the spirit power that was binding him disappeared and he regained his liberty. However, he was still unable to escape.

The poison in the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds was simply too strong. The moment he came into contact with it, Chu Feng grew paralyzed. An indescribable pain filled his entire body.

This was not the first time that Chu Feng had tasted the flavor of death. However, this was the first time he was feeling such an intense flavor of death.

At that moment, Chu Feng really felt that he was definitely going to die.

However, at the moment when Chu Feng was close to true despair, Chu Feng felt that the blood within his body had started to boil. As his blood boiled, the flavor of death actually began to dissipate.

However, Chu Feng was too tired. He no longer had the strength to resist. Soon, he lost consciousness.

When Chu Feng regained consciousness, Chu Feng discovered that he was lying on top of a hard, wooden slab for a bed. There was a large face before him. It was an extremely ugly face.

“The hell!” Chu Feng was frightened by the face. He immediately

tried to move back. It was only at this time that he noticed that this large face was actually the face of a child.

It was a little boy. He was not very tall and he had an incomparably ugly face. How should one describe him? He was even more ugly than a disfigured person.

At this moment, this little boy was smiling at Chu Feng with his teeth revealed. Happily, he said, “You’re awake. Amazing! You are the first one who managed to pass through the Poison Mist Formation.”

“You should be someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, right? Is the Holy Land of Martialism a fun place? Are there a lot of beauties there?”

“Oh, that’s right. Can you bring me out? I really want to experience the Holy Land of Martialism. I’ve heard that the Holy Land of Martialism is an extremely fun place.”

If one asked what the ugliest regarding this little boy was, then it would definitely be his mouth. His lips were like two sausages. Furthermore, his teeth were all crooked, and either extremely large or extremely small. It was as if all of the ugliest teeth were all growing in his mouth.

It was truly rare for a little boy to have such an ugly appearance. Speaking of it, even though his mouth was very ugly, that didn’t mean it was useless. Since he had started talking, he had never once stopped.

“Poison Mist Formation? Holy Land of Martialism?” Chu Feng took notice of the words mentioned by the little boy.

Then, Chu Feng used his Heaven’s Eyes to look outside. Before his Heaven’s Eyes, the shabby wooden house disappeared from his line of sight, and the world outside appeared.

Chu Feng discovered that this was a village. It could be said to be a relatively shabby village. However, this village was not small;

there were people everywhere.

Furthermore, each and every one of them possessed a certain level of cultivation. Even though their cultivations were not very strong, they were definitely not weak. For example, this little boy before him possessed the cultivation of the Profound Realm.

A ten-year-old boy with the cultivation of the Profound Realm, this would be something unimaginable in the Nine Provinces Continent.

When Chu Feng looked up, he was immediately shocked. There was no blue sky, white clouds or sun in this place. All there was on the horizon was a layer of light-emitting mist. As for that mist... it was that Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds.

At this moment, Chu Feng was actually underneath the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds. Furthermore, there were people in this place. Moreover, there appeared to be a lot of them too.

Chapter 1662 – Poison Demon's Valley

“Little child, where is this?” Chu Feng asked.

“This is the Poison Demon's Valley,” The little boy answered.

“Poison Demon's Valley?” Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. He hurriedly asked, “Is the Poison Demon you spoke of Du Wanwu?”

“That's right. How did you know?” The little boy looked to Chu Feng with the same shocked expression that Chu Feng had.

In shock, Chu Feng asked, “Is this really the place where the Poison Demon, Du Wanwu, has secluded himself for the last fifteen thousand years?”

“Wow! You actually knew all that! It would seem that we are quite famous in the Holy Land of Martialism,” Seeing Chu Feng's shocked appearance, the little boy immediately revealed a proud smile.

“Is the Poison Demon Du Wanwu still alive?” After verifying what this place was, Chu Feng was truly shocked. Firstly, he didn't expect that what the monk had said was real. Not only was Du Wanwu a real person, he had also hidden himself away.

Most surprisingly, Chu Feng had actually accidentally arrived at the place where the Poison Demon Du Wanwu had hidden himself.

“Are you stupid? It's something from fifteen thousand years ago. How could he possibly still be alive? He's long dead,” The little boy looked at Chu Feng with a gaze of contempt.

“In that case, how are you related to him?” Chu Feng asked. However, when he saw the poverty-stricken situation that these people were living in, Chu Feng immediately managed to react and said, “I got it, you all are the descendants of the people from Du Wanwu's village.”

“You actually even knew about that. It would seem that we are extremely famous,” The little boy looked to Chu Feng with an expression of amazement. At the same time, the proud expression on his face grew even stronger.

Chu Feng felt that this boy had truly tough skin. He knew that this was all a coincidence, and that not many people in the Holy Land of Martialism actually knew about them. Thus, what the hell was he acting so prideful about?

“Cough, cough, cough...”

“[Goudan'er](#), stop fucking chatting. If you don't pay attention to me, your dad's going to die. Quickly, bring the medicine over.”

Suddenly, a series of violent coughs sounded. It was only then that Chu Feng discovered that there was another bed in the corner, and that a middle-aged man was lying on the bed. That middle-aged man's entire body was purple in color. He was coughing violently and vomiting blood.

Not only was the blood that he vomited black in color, it was also bubbling nonstop. Furthermore, there were even insect-like things wriggling in the blood. It was truly disgusting.

“Coming, coming,” After hearing those words, the little boy hurriedly ran over, took out a black thing from his trouser pocket, and placed it in that man's mouth. After the middle-aged man swallowed that black item, his situation became much better. However, the purple color on his body did not go away.

“He has been poisoned,” Chu Feng said.

“Wow, how did you know that?” Hearing those words, Goudan was shocked.

“With the way I am now, only a fool cannot tell that I've been poisoned. Tsk...” However, that middle-aged man sneered at Chu Feng's words, and even cast a disdainful side eye at Chu Feng.

“I have a question, did you all save me?” Chu Feng asked.

“It was my father that saved you. Eh... that’s wrong, it’s my father that carried you back,” Goudan’er said.

“In that case, have you all tried to give me medical treatment after bringing me back?” Chu Feng asked.

“Treat my ass! I myself am on the verge of dying, how can I treat you?” When he said those words, the middle-aged man took another glance at Chu Feng. Then, he said, “You are truly blessed by the heavens. You actually still haven’t died yet.”

“However, I know that there is no one that can resist the poison within the Poison Mist Formation. Even the descendants of the Poison Demon were unable to resist the poison, much less you. You will not be able to live for long.”

“Hehe, don’t bother with my father. My father is a person with a sharp tongue but a soft heart. As his poison’s acting up, his words have become even more offensive.”

“However, if it wasn’t for him carrying you back, you would still be in the wilderness, and might’ve been eaten by wild beasts,” Goudan’er said whilst laughing happily.

In fact, Chu Feng did not take Goudan’er’s father’s words to heart either.

Even though his words were very offensive, it was as Goudan’er said; he had carried him back. Not only that, he had not taken Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack or any of his other possessions.

If he had malicious intentions toward Chu Feng, he could totally have tried to kill him while he was unconscious, and then seize his Cosmos Sack for himself. After all, Chu Feng possessed quite a lot of treasures on him.

However, he didn’t do that. This meant that he was not a malicious person.

As for Chu Feng’s current health, he was the one who knew about that the best. He had completely recovered. Not only had he

completely recovered, the imprint left behind by the Snow-haired Immortal on his chest had also disappeared.

Not only that, Chu Feng had also discovered that his aura had changed. He had managed to successfully change his aura. That meant that the Nangong Imperial Clan would no longer be able to track him.

Even though Chu Feng had been tormented, it would seem that there had been a profit from this disaster.

“I have a method that might be able to help your father get rid of the poison,” Chu Feng wanted to help Goudan’er and his father. No matter what, they were his benefactors.

“Really? You are able to cure my father’s poison?” Hearing those words, Goudan’er was overjoyed.

“Don’t you try to scam me. You can heal me? I hope you don’t make me die,” As for Goudan’er’s father, he cast a side-eye at Chu Feng.

“The poison you’re inflicted with, if you do not cure it urgently, and only rely on the medicine that you just ate, you will not be able to live for more than a year,” Chu Feng said.

“Forget about it. I might as well let you try healing me,” After hearing that he would not be able to live for more than a year, Goudan’er’s father immediately sat up.

“Eat this first,” Chu Feng handed an antidote to Goudan’er’s father.

When Goudan’er’s father saw this antidote, his eyes immediately started to shine. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he swallowed it. The reason for that was because the medicine Chu Feng handed to him was flickering with light. It was completely different from the medicine he had taken before. He knew from a single glance that it was not an ordinary medicine.

Afterward, Chu Feng set up a poison removing formation and

began to help Goudan'er's father remove his poison.

The poison Goudan'er's father was inflicted with was something that ordinary Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to remove. However, Chu Feng was capable of doing it.

Especially when combined with the antidote Chu Feng had given him earlier, Chu Feng managed to instantly remove the poison from Goudan'er's father.

Goudan'er's father stood up and began to move his limbs around. He discovered that he was not only no longer poisoned, his body was much stronger than before too. He now felt extremely vigorous.

Suddenly, Goudan'er's father kneeled onto the ground with a 'putt.' He grabbed onto Chu Feng's leg and said while crying with tears and snot, "Young Hero, I knew that you were extraordinary to have fallen from the sky without dying. Sure enough, you are like a god, you are a god!"

Seeing Goudan'er's father acting this way, black lines ran down Chu Feng's head. He finally understood why Goudan'er was this weird. It turned out that it was because he had such a weird dad.

Furthermore, the weirdest matter of all was that Chu Feng discovered that not only had Goudan'er run out from the house, he was even shouting loudly as he ran.

"[Cuihua'er](#), Shani'er, quickly, get your fathers out. A god has descended from the sky. He's capable of removing your fathers' poison."

As Goudan'er shouted, a group of children around the same age as Goudan'er ran out.

These children were all very normal-looking. However, when compared to the incomparably ugly Goudan'er, they could be considered to be handsome young boys and beautiful young girls.

However, Chu Feng was bewildered. What was with the names of

these children?

However, Chu Feng noticed that even though these children were around eight or nine years old, some of them actually ran out without even wearing pants. It was not only the boys, there were even girls doing that.

From the way it appeared, it was not only Goudan'er and his father that were weirdos, all of the people in this village appeared to be abnormal. Could it be that they had all grown up in the Poison Demon's Village, and ended up being poisoned to stupidity?

Goudan → Dog Balls. That kid's name is dog balls... Xima: Finally Bee, a name that's funny and not standard!

Cuihua → jade flower, if memory serves me correct, should be a name of a violent manly woman. Shani → Foolish girl.

Chapter 1663 – The Pitiful Villagers

“Goudan’er, is what you said the truth? That man is capable of removing the poison from my father?” A fair skinned little girl with two pig tails asked with a serious expression.

This little girl could be considered to be one of the best-looking among this group of children. Thus, Goudan’er looked to her with a completely different sort of gaze. Likely, this little girl with twin pigtails should be Guodan’er’s dream lover.

“Cuihua’er, you must not believe what Goudan’er says. Have you forgotten how he scammed you out of three sweet potatoes last time and still hasn’t returned them to you?” A little boy that was covered with snot said while pouting his mouth. Based on his nervous appearance, he was most definitely another boy that was secretly in love with that little girl.

“Cuihua’er, I am really not lying. If you do not believe me, go and look at my father. He is already cured,” Goudan’er pointed at his father.

“Children, Goudan’er is not lying. This person here is really a god. Quickly, call your fathers over. This god will be able to help them escape from their suffering and attain rebirth,” Goudan’er’s father stepped forward.

Afterward, this group of children immediately ran back to their homes and soon brought a group of adults back to Goudan’er’s home.

There was a total of twenty-three people. They were all middle-aged men. All of them were exhibiting the same sort of symptoms that Goudan’er’s father had previously exhibited. It would appear that they had all been poisoned by the same sort of poison.

To Chu Feng, it would be extremely easy to remove their poison. Furthermore, Chu Feng could not bear to watch this group of

villagers being tormented by the poison. After all, if they were to die, those children would have lost their fathers. Thus, Chu Feng began to help these people cure their poison one by one.

After having their poison removed, this group of villagers were extremely grateful to Chu Feng. They insisted on holding a banquet for him. They were extremely passionate and hospitable to Chu Feng.

Afterward, Chu Feng came to understand the general situation of the Poison Demon's Village.

Over fifteen thousand years ago, the Poison Demon had provoked the Three Palaces. As he was no match for the Three Palaces, he brought his family and took shelter in this place, then hid it. As he went to take shelter, he had not only taken his family members with him, he had also taken all of the people in his hometown with him.

After coming to this place, the Poison Demon, for the sake of preventing the people from the Three Palaces from charging into their hiding place, set up the Poison Mist Formation that existed in this place henceforth.

However, the Poison Demon did not treat those villagers who he had brought with him with kindness.

While the Poison Demon had settled his own family down properly, he brought the other villagers to this place with an ulterior motive.

He had brought the villagers here to grow a special kind of poison for him. The poison was able to allow him to cultivate a special kind of mysterious technique.

Furthermore, in order to make sure that the villagers would be obedient to him, he did not allow any of the villagers to have cultivations above Half Martial Emperor. He made it so that they were only allowed to reach rank one Martial King at the very most.

If there was any villager with a cultivation above rank one Martial King, he would kill them. The reason he did so was so that he could continue to control the villagers.

As matters stood, even though the Poison Demon had died long ago, the Poison Demon's descendants were still alive, and the villagers were still present. Furthermore, the rules set up by the Poison Demon were also still present.

Thus, these villagers were like slaves. For generations, they had been here serving the Poison Demon's descendants for the past fifteen thousand-plus years.

Even though all these villagers were cultivators, they had to grow poison plants every day. Then, at the end of every month, they would have to hand the poison plants over to the Poison Demon's descendants.

If they did not produce enough poison plants, they would be punished. The reason why Goudan'er's father and the others had been poisoned was because they failed to provide a sufficient amount of poison plants in a timely manner. Thus, they had been punished with poison.

Furthermore, due to the fact that the villagers were growing poison plants all the time, their bodies had been affected by the poison from the plants. Thus, even though they were all cultivators, they were generally unable to live for more than a hundred years. After coming to this place, the longest living villager was only able to live to around a hundred and fifty years old.

To cultivators, this sort of lifespan could be said to be extremely short.

"Never would I have expected that the descendants of the Poison Demon were this malicious," After Chu Feng found out about this, his impression of the Poison Demon and his descendants became extremely bad.

“God, I can tell that you are very powerful. You were able to survive that Poison Mist Formation. This means that you are very strong. Can you help us so that the Poison Demon’s descendants will stop making things difficult for us?”

“That’s right, god, we do not wish to continue growing those poison plants everyday. We also wish to properly cultivate.”

“God, why don’t you just break apart that Poison Mist Formation and bring us away from here and to the Holy Land of Martialism with you?” At this moment, the villagers were all begging Chu Feng. They wanted Chu Feng to help them break free from this plight.

“Do you all know what the strongest cultivation of the Poison Demon’s descendants is?” Chu Feng asked. While he wanted to help these villagers, he could not fight a battle that he had no certainty of winning.

“We don’t know. However, one thing is certain. The strongest among them is Du Wanwu,” A villager said.

“Du Wanwu, isn’t he dead?” Chu Feng was very surprised. That was because Du Wanwu was the name of the Poison Demon.

“God, it’s like this. This Du Wanwu is not that Du Wanwu from before. The Poison Demon from back then is indeed dead. However, among the Poison Demon’s descendants, there appeared a very powerful person. When he was born, he even caused an abnormal sign that was very spectacular.”

“The Poison Demon’s descendants felt that that child was capable of becoming the second Poison Demon. Thus, they named him Du Wanwu,” The villagers explained.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng understood. Likely, a Divine Body had appeared among the Poison Demon’s descendants. Thus, Chu Feng continued to ask, “Do you all know what the age and cultivation of this Du Wanwu is right now?”

“His age is about the same as you, god. He is twenty something, not yet thirty.”

“As for his cultivation, we do not know. However, we are certain that he should be a Half Martial Emperor, and most definitely not a Martial Emperor.”

“That’s right. Ever since Poison Demon died, there has never been a Martial Emperor appearing from his descendants. Furthermore, each successive generation is worse than the last. This has caused the Poison Demon’s descendants to feel extremely vexed.”

“God, are you a Martial Emperor? If you are a legendary Martial Emperor, you will definitely be able to properly teach the Poison Demon’s descendants a lesson,” The villagers said.

“Everyone, truth be told, I am merely a rank one Half Martial Emperor. I’m afraid that I will not be able to help you all teach the Poison Demon’s descendants a lesson,” Chu Feng spoke the truth. There were many people below Martial Emperor who were capable of suppressing him.

As for that Poison Demon’s descendant Du Wanwu, even though his age was similar to Chu Feng’s, Chu Feng could not be certain that he was stronger than that Du Wanwu. Thus, he didn’t have any certainty that he would be able to teach the Poison Demon’s descendants a lesson for these villagers.

“In that case, god, are you able to break through that Poison Mist Formation and take us away from this place?” The villagers continued to ask.

“I have carefully inspected this Poison Mist Formation. Even I am not certain in being able to break through it, much less break it apart,” Chu Feng shook his head while smiling bitterly. Even though he had managed to pass through the Poison Mist Formation, reach this place, survive, alter his aura and break free from the Snow-haired Immortal’s imprint, Chu Feng did not have

any certainty in being able to pass through the Poison Mist Formation and reaching the other side. After all, the poison in the Poison Mist formation was too ferocious, too frightening.

Chapter 1664 – Poison Demon’s Descendants

“It’s alright. God, you have already removed our poison for us. We already cannot thank you enough.”

“That’s right, if it wasn’t for you, god, we would have died already.”

“Right, right, right. We have been like this for generations. We have already grown used to it. It’s actually not that bad either. Hahaha...”

The villagers began to laugh. They had the appearance of indifference. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that they still deeply longed to be able to break away from the binding of the Poison Demon’s descendants. The reason why they were pretending to be indifferent was because they did not wish to make things difficult for Chu Feng.

“While I am unable to help you all take care of the Poison Demon’s descendants, I am able to talk to them for you all and help speak up for you all.”

“As an outsider, if speaking of it in a pleasant manner, I could also be considered to be a guest of this Poison Demon’s Valley. Perhaps they might listen to my words,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Really? That would truly be great. God, you are truly a living Buddha,” The villagers were immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words.

The reason why Chu Feng wanted to help them even though he did not possess the certainty of being able to do so was because he felt that they were very pitiful.

Furthermore, as he had arrived here, Chu Feng was in no hurry to leave. After all, when the Poison Demon disappeared, he had taken an item with him, one of the Five Elements Secret Skills, the

Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

With how the descendants of the Poison Demon treated the villagers, it was likely that they were not good people either. There was no need for Chu Feng to be compassionate toward this sort of people.

If Chu Feng were truly capable of taking care of the Poison Demon's descendants, then, as he rooted out evil and brought peace to the villagers, he would naturally also seize that Fire Immortal Profound Technique for himself.

Not to mention that obtaining all the Five Elements Secret Skills would present to one a secret, just the power of the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was something that Chu Feng wanted to obtain very much. After all, the Water Immortal Profound Technique was already this powerful. If he obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, Chu Feng would become even more powerful.

If the Fire Immortal Profound Technique could be summoned like the Water Immortal Profound Technique and was capable of fighting on its own, then Chu Feng would no longer be fighting alone when fighting against others. Instead, he would be fighting three against one.

Upon thinking of that, Chu Feng planned to set off for the location of the Poison Demon's descendants and meet with them.

The Poison Demon was, after all, a very grand character in the Holy Land of Martialism back then. Even though he had died long ago and it was impossible for Chu Feng to experience his grace, the descendants of the Poison Demon should possess some of the Poison Demon's skills.

Thus, to be able to meet up with his descendants would be a pretty decent thing too.

However, before Chu Feng could go to find the Poison Demon's

descendants, the Poison Demon's descendants had arrived at the village.

When they saw that the Poison Demon's descendants had come, the villagers were so scared that their complexions turned pale. From happily chatting before, they now started to involuntarily shiver all over.

From the old to the young, none of the villagers dared to continue to stay in their houses. All of them ran out of the village to welcome the Poison Demon's descendants.

Chu Feng did not go out immediately. Instead, he first observed the cultivations of these Poison Demon's descendants.

Chu Feng discovered that it was three men and two women who had come. Even though they had the appearance of middle-aged people, they were not middle-aged people at all. Instead, they were old people who had already lived for hundreds of years.

Even though the lifespan of the villagers were quite short, the lifespans of the Poison Demon's descendants were not short at all. Although these three men and two women all possessed cultivations superior to the villagers', none of them were Half Martial Emperors. Among them, the person with the strongest cultivation was merely a rank eight Martial King.

When they saw Goudan'er's father and the others, they were immediately enraged. They threw fists and directly knocked Goudan'er's father and the others onto the ground. One by one, Goudan'er's father and the others all became covered with blood; they were all suffering from serious injuries.

"How did the poison in your bodies go away?" The Poison Demon's descendants asked with cold voices. At this moment, dense killing intent was present within their eyes.

The reason for that was because the villagers removing the poison without permission was going against their rules. This was

something that they would not tolerate.

Chu Feng was able to tell that regardless of how Goudan'er's father and the others answered the Poison Demon's descendants, they would likely not be able to escape death.

These Poison Demon's descendants were truly ruthless. Chu Feng was unable to tolerate people like them. He felt that he had to teach them a lesson.

"I am the one who removed their poison," Chu Feng walked out from the house and stood before Goudan'er's father and the others.

"Who are you?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, the expressions on the three men and the two women's faces changed enormously. They were both shocked and frightened. They were feeling extremely uneasy.

Their reactions were understandable. After all, no matter how big the Poison Demon's Valley might be, there were only so many people.

The people from the village and them, the descendants of the Poison Demon, all knew one another.

As for Chu Feng, he was someone that they did not recognize.

In all the years that the Poison Demon's Valley had been sealed by that Poison Mist Formation, the people inside were unable to leave, and the people outside were unable to enter.

However, suddenly, a stranger appeared. It would be strange if they were not afraid.

Goudan'er's father pointed at Chu Feng and said, "Humph, you're afraid, no? This person here is a god. He's from the Holy Land of Martialism,"

"Holy Land of Martialism? Impossible! Over the years, there have been a lot of people from the Holy Land of Martialism who wanted

to pass through the Poison Mist Formation. However, when they fell down here, they were all corroded by the Poison Mist. Not a single person has managed to successfully pass through the Poison Mist alive,” The Poison Demon’s descendants did not wish to believe this fact.

“You’re believing your own lies,” Chu Feng shook his head. He felt that the Poison Demon’s descendants were a bit laughable.

“Regardless of where he came from, he must still be captured and handed to the clan chief to handle,” One of the men said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

As he spoke, a layer of boundless martial power surged forth. It turned into an enormous net and came toward Chu Feng. He was trying to use this net of martial power to capture Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng only smiled at the incoming net of martial power. He did not even move his body, and allowed that net of martial power to land onto him and tightly bind him.

“Heh...” Seeing that he had successfully captured Chu Feng, that man revealed a complacent smile. Then, he hooked his finger at Chu Feng and wanted to pull him toward his side.

“This...”

However, after he hooked his finger, his expression immediately changed. He was shocked to discover that he seemed to have lost control his net of martial power, and it was not moving at all.

“With merely this bit of ability, you want to capture me?” Chu Feng smiled again. As he spoke, his body trembled, and that net of martial power shattered.

“You’re a Half Martial Emperor?” At this moment, the three men and two women were extremely terrified. They had managed to sense Chu Feng’s aura, and realized that his aura greatly surpassed their own, that it was the aura of a Half Martial Emperor.

“What’s wrong, you all do not dare to capture me because I’m a Half Martial Emperor?”

“Turns out that the Poison Demon’s descendants are actually nothing more than a bunch who bully the weak and fear the strong,” Chu Feng sneered.

“Run away,” At this moment, the three men and two women did not dare to stay. They turned around and immediately started escaping.

“Run? Where do you all plan to run to?” Chu Feng smiled coldly. He extended his palm and grabbed at the five people. Then, a frantic power surged forth and sucked the five people over to him.

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when the five of them were around ten meters from Chu Feng, the five of them all opened their mouths simultaneously. Five streams of purple poisonous gas shot toward Chu Feng.

The poisonous gases were not ordinary poisons. The poison contained within them was very powerful. With their cultivation, they knew that they would be no match for a Half Martial Emperor by relying on martial power. However, if the purple poison that they had just shot out from their mouths landed on an ordinary rank one Half Martial Emperor, it would be able to kill that rank one Half Martial Emperor.

“Insignificant talent,” However, the person that they were facing right now was not an ordinary rank one Half Martial Emperor. Instead, it was Chu Feng.

With a thought, golden-bright and dazzling world spirit power surged forth from Chu Feng. His spirit power turned into a defensive wall and completely blocked the poisonous gases shot forth by the five people.

After stopping them, the spirit formation wall turned into five

chains and bound the five people.

“Wow! God is truly worthy to be called god. So amazing!”

All of this was seen by the villagers. They had seen with their own eyes how the people who bullied them all the time were taken care of by Chu Feng and forced into submission in an instant. At this time, their eyes were filled with adoration.

In fact, there were some excessive villagers who directly kneeled onto the ground and began to worship Chu Feng.

Chapter 1665 – Chu Feng’s Challenge

After being captured by Chu Feng, one of the men said, “Bastard, release us! If you don’t, you will wish you were dead!”

“You actually dare to even threaten me in your current situation. Do you believe that I won’t make it so that you all wished you were dead now?” As Chu Feng said those words, a section of the world spirit chain that had bound that man turned into a sharp blade. “Puuu,” it pierced into that man’s body.

That was not an ordinary sharp blade. Instead, it was a sharp blade formed by a spirit formation. The pain from the blade piercing through one’s body was over a hundred times that of an ordinary blade.

“Ahhh~ Don’t! Don’t kill me!” With the blade pierced into his body, the man’s facial expression became distorted. He was crying with tears and snot. He had begun to hurriedly beg for forgiveness.

However, Chu Feng ignored his begging. With how he shouted, it was clear that this man had never experienced pain like this before. His endurance was extremely weak. In merely a short moment, he lost consciousness.

“Spare us, please spare us.”

Seeing that, the remaining four people immediately started to beg for forgiveness. They deeply feared that they would suffer the same sort of torment as that man.

At this moment, Chu Feng came to realize what sort of people the Poison Demon’s descendants were. It turned out that these Poison Demon’s descendants were nothing more than paper tigers. They possessed absolutely zero integrity.

“While I am able to spare your lives, you must answer some of my questions. Among you all, whose cultivation is the strongest?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s Lord Clan Chief,” The four people answered in the same manner.

“What is the name of your Clan Chief and what is his cultivation?” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“Lord Clan Chief’s name is Du Wanwu. He is a rank four Half Martial Emperor,” One of the men said.

“How strong is your Clan Chief’s battle power? How many levels of cultivation is he capable of surmounting?” Chu Feng asked.

“Levels of cultivation he is capable of surmounting? What do you mean by that? We don’t understand. Regardless of who it is, those with the same cultivation are unable to defeat Lord Clan Chief,” they answered.

Chu Feng had been observing the reactions of the five people. They had replied extremely quickly and without the slightest hesitation. Furthermore, they had all given the same sort of answer. It could be seen that they were not lying.

Chu Feng considered matters carefully. As Du Wanwu was a rank four Half Martial Emperor, Chu Feng, with his current abilities, would be able to fight against him.

After all, even the top geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism would only possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. With Chu Feng’s heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he would be able to make up for the gap in cultivation between him and Du Wanwu.

However, there was one more thing that he had to consider. Du Wanwu was a Divine Body. The power of Divine Bodies was something that he could not underestimate.

The way Chu Feng saw it, Divine Bodies were a power stronger than Imperial Bloodlines. The reason why many Divine Bodies were not very powerful was because they themselves were unable

to completely grasp their powers.

If they were able to completely grasp their Divine Bodies' powers, they would be extremely powerful. One such example would be Yan Xie. As a Half Martial Emperor, he was able to, through his Divine Body's power, increase his cultivation by one level.

If this Du Wanwu was truly a top genius, he would likely possess Divine Power on par with Yan Xie. If that were to be the case, Chu Feng would likely not be a match for him.

Thinking of it, Chu Feng took out his two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow sword, and began to carefully inspect them.

Chu Feng had already placed two spirit formations on the two swords. Those two spirit formations would be able to sever the connection the swords had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi through the passage of time.

As long as the connections were severed, Chu Feng would be able to subdue the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments with his own power and make them be of use to him.

Furthermore, if he were able to have the two of them enter absolute submission, he would be able to obtain a portion of their power. The power he would obtain would also be able to fill his dantian and potentially increase his cultivation.

Chu Feng had calculated the power of these two Incomplete Imperial Armaments and compared them to the power he had obtained when his Demon Sealing Sword had entered absolute submission.

Through that, Chu Feng calculated whether he would be able to reach a breakthrough should the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments really enter absolute submission toward him.

Unfortunately, after calculating, with the requirement that his dantian currently possessed, even if these two Incomplete Imperial

Armaments were to enter absolute submission, he would still not be able to reach a breakthrough.

It was not that the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword possessed insufficient power. Instead, their powers were very strong, stronger than ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

Merely, the appetite Chu Feng's Divine Lightnings possessed had become more and more enormous. Things were completely different now. Even if the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were to enter absolute submission, Chu Feng would not be able to break through.

Moreover, after the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were unsealed, Chu Feng was also not absolutely certain that he would be able to make the two of them enter absolute submission and serve him.

After all, they were actual Incomplete Imperial Armaments, and not copies. It would have been very good already if they were to acknowledge Chu Feng as their master.

After all, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi were unable to even make them acknowledge them. They were only able to use these two Incomplete Imperial Armaments with the help of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Thus, Chu Feng had no ways of increasing his cultivation here.

Even though Chu Feng was not fond of fighting battles that he had no certainty of winning, he also knew the meaning of seeking fortune amidst dangers. As matters stood, he had no choice but to choose the latter.

Thus, after Chu Feng helped heal the injuries Goudan'er's father and the others sustained, he brought the five Poison Demon's descendants and proceeded toward the place where they resided. Chu Feng wanted to meet that Du Wanwu who had become their

Clan Chief at such a young age.

In truth, Chu Feng's main purpose was to obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and find out whether there might be any way for him to leave this place without taking on additional risks.

After arriving at the Poison Demon's descendants' residence, Chu Feng discovered that this was a very fascinating place.

They had not constructed palaces. Instead, they were actually living in a cave. However, this cave was naturally no ordinary cave. It was very large and possessed over a dozen gates of entry. Among them, the tallest gate was over a hundred meters tall, and the shortest gate was over thirty meters tall.

In order to create this enormous cave, they had likely excavated the entire mountain.

There was currently no one guarding the entrances of the cave. Likely, due to the fact that they had ruled over this place for so long, the villagers simply did not dare to come here. Thus, they were confident that there would not be any trouble or need for guards.

Chu Feng had the five Poison Demon's descendants stand in a row and kneel before him. Then, he placed his hands behind his back and loudly shouted, "The Poison Demon's descendants are without morals and virtue. They bully and humiliate commoners. As such, they shall be beheaded."

"All of you, scram out here. Allow me to properly teach you all how to conduct yourselves."

"Who is the reckless individual who dares to come here and display such atrocious behavior?!"

The Poison Demon's descendants had never been insulted by others before. After hearing Chu Feng's insults, several hundred people's shouts were instantly heard. There were even a portion

among them that were young people and even children. Likely, they had thought that a villager had come to court death. Thus, they all came to enjoy the show.

Therefore, when they saw Chu Feng, they were all shocked. The reason for that was because, no matter how hard they looked at Chu Feng, he did not resemble the villagers.

One of the Poison Demon's descendants with a relatively high level of cultivation, a rank nine Martial King, pointed at Chu Feng and asked, "Who are you?!"

"A bunch of trash is not qualified to speak with me. Go and call out your clan chief," Chu Feng lightly waved his sleeve and caused a gale to suddenly surge forth. Other than the children, all of the Poison Demon's descendants before him were blown away by the gale like fallen leaves. In the end, they all crashed onto the ground miserably.

"Quickly, call Lord Clan Chief. This man has passed through the Poison Fog Formation. He's from the Holy Land of Martialism. We are no match for him," The five people who first encountered Chu Feng shouted in unison.

"What?! The Holy Land of Martialism?!" Hearing those words, the Poison Demon's descendants were all shocked. Regardless of whether they might be old or young, they all began to flee into the cave.

Evidently, the name 'Holy Land of Martialism' brought great fear upon them. As Chu Feng was someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, he was also extremely frightening to them.

Chapter 1666 – The Fierce Du Wanwu

Not long after those people escaped into the cave, thirty-five people walked out from the cave.

These thirty-five people were all old white-haired people. The youngest among them was over five hundred years old. The oldest was many thousand years old.

They were all Half Martial Emperors. Among them, there were a total of sixteen rank one Half Martial Emperors, eleven rank two Half Martial Emperors, five rank three Half Martial Emperors and three rank four Half Martial Emperors.

Fifteen of them possessed heaven-defying battle power. However, they were all only capable of surmounting one level of cultivation.

After these thirty-five people appeared, they immediately surrounded Chu Feng and set up a poison gas formation that completely sealed off Chu Feng's escape.

“You're from the Holy Land of Martialism?”

“Are you someone from the Three Palaces?” The oldest rank four Half Martial Emperor stared cautiously at Chu Feng.

From his tone, it could be heard that even though it had been fifteen thousand years, they still deeply feared the people from the Three Palaces.

As Chu Feng had come from the Holy Land of Martialism, the first thing they thought was that someone from the Three Palaces had come to carry out revenge against them.

“Are you all deaf or what? I said to go and get your clan chief and have him speak with me.”

“If you do not bring your clan chief out, do not blame me for being ruthless. After all, I do not have that much time to waste

around here,” Chu Feng cast a gaze of contempt at them and spoke with a cold voice.

“What arrogance! Attack!” Chu Feng’s words actually enraged them. After those words were said, the thirty-five old people started to attack together. They began to control the poison gas formation around Chu Feng to attack him.

That formation was no ordinary formation. It was a poison formation. The attacks of a poison formation were different from those of ordinary formations.

Generally, formations formed with martial power were very aggressive and direct in the way they attacked.

However, poison formations were different. Poison gas could enter through one’s mouth and one’s nose. It could effortlessly cause one’s death.

It was very difficult for ordinary people to resist such an attack. However, Chu Feng was no ordinary person. Chu Feng was a world spiritist, and a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist on top of that. His perception was extremely strong and not something that ordinary martial cultivators could compare with.

Faced with the poison formation set up by these thirty-five people, Chu Feng was filled with contempt. With a thought, Royal level spirit power was emitted from his body. The royal level spirit power first started to revolve around Chu Feng and turn into a protective barrier that blocked the poison gas.

Then, the Royal level spirit power turned into thirty-five sharp blades. As they flashed, they pierced into the bodies of the thirty-five Half Martial Emperors like thunderbolts.

Regardless of whether they were rank one Half Martial Emperors or rank four Half Martial Emperors; regardless of whether they possessed heaven-defying battle power or not, they all had their bodies pierced through by Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

“Wuu~~~”

After having their bodies pierced through, the complexions of the thirty-five Half Martial Emperors instantly turned pale. Then, they all vomited a mouthful of blood. They were struggling very hard. However, it was all useless. They had already lost their ability to continue fighting.

The outcome of the battle was determined with a single strike.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Afterward, with a thought, the spirit formation blades that had entered the thirty-five people flung all of them to the entrance of the cave in an orderly manner.

After they landed on the ground, they wanted to continue fighting. However, they discovered that they were unable to move at all. Other than their bodies being stronger than those of normal people, they were now no different than ordinary people.

Chu Feng's attacks did not pierce their dantians. However, he had restricted their power. World spirit techniques possessed all kinds of uses. They could attack head-on like martial power. They could paralyze others like poison gas. In fact, they could even take others' lives.

“Don't waste your breath. Go and get your clan chief. I believe you all can tell that I did not wish to kill you all; otherwise, you would've already died,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the thirty-five people started to frown. They were no fools. They knew that if Chu Feng wanted to kill them, they would all have died already.

Even though Chu Feng was very young, he was an enemy who they could not defeat.

Upon thinking about this, they, who were extremely frightened, became even more frightened. One must know that the thirty-five of them could be said to be the strongest battle power of the Poison

Demon's descendants.

As matters stood, they had no choice but to go and get their Lord Clan Chief.

Thus, after they glanced at once another, thirty-four of them remained and the person with the weakest cultivation among them ran into the cave.

Evidently, they still feared that Chu Feng would kill their people. Thus, the strongest thirty-four of them decided to stay to prevent Chu Feng from entering the cave and slaughtering their clansmen.

However, they had clearly already lost their battle power. Yet, they still decided to stay to stop Chu Feng. If Chu Feng were to really kill his way into the cave, they would simply be courting death by trying to block him. Based on their determined expressions, they were most likely already prepared to face death.

When he saw this, Chu Feng's impression of the Poison Demon's descendants changed slightly.

At the very least, the thirty-four Half Martial Emperors before him were capable of giving up their lives to protect the younger generation. It was a determination worthy of praise.

“Boom~~~”

Not long after that person with the weakest cultivation entered the cave, an overflowing killing intent swept forth from within the cave. Following that, green gaseous flames emitted from the cave. In the end, the gaseous flames descended before Chu Feng.

Those green gaseous flames were poison gas. They were so poisonous that even the air they touched started to dissolve. It was extremely frightening.

After the poison gas dissipated, Chu Feng discovered that there was a person standing in the center of the poison gas. It was a young man about his age.

However, he had a very special appearance. By special, it was not that he had distinctive facial features. Rather, it was his skin's color; it was actually green.

The combination of green skin and black hair made him appear extremely strange.

Although he had a very strange appearance, his aura was very powerful. He possessed the cultivation of a rank four Half Martial Emperor, and he had a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

Evidently, this person was the Divine Body acclaimed to be able to become the second Poison Demon, Du Wanwu.

“It seems that you are Du Wanwu,” Chu Feng said while smiling.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, that Du Wanwu suddenly attacked.

Green poison gas surged toward Chu Feng with earth-shattering might. If Chu Feng were to be touched by the poison in the slightest, even if he survived, he would still be infected by extreme poison and would have to endure pain and suffering.

Without even bothering to talk, Du Wanwu had unleashed a fatal attack right away. This man was truly ruthless.

“Step, step, step~~~”

Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate such an attack. He did not continue to use spirit formations to block it. The reason for that was because he would not be able to block Du Wanwu's attacks with his world spirit techniques.

Thus, Chu Feng stepped forth in succession and used his Incomplete Imperial Armament boots' absolute speed to escape from the range of the poison gas.

However, that Du Wanwu was not willing to let Chu Feng escape. He stepped into the air, revealed a movement martial skill, and

began to chase after Chu Feng. Furthermore, his speed was extremely fast. In this sort of situation, Chu Feng was actually unable to escape him.

However, right at the moment when Du Wanwu was about to catch up to Chu Feng, Chu Feng suddenly stopped running and turned around.

Furthermore, a light smiled emerged on the corner of Chu Feng's mouth.

Chapter 1667 – Victor And Loser

“Step~~”

Chu Feng suddenly turned around with a smile on his face which caused even Du Wanwu to be shocked. He did not understand what Chu Feng’s intention was, and thus he immediately stopped his movements. He wanted to carefully observe Chu Feng.

Upon closer inspection, his expression took a huge change.

He discovered that lightning was suddenly flickering in Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on his body.

The Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were very vivid and lifelike. Furthermore, they were formed with orange, purple, red, black, blue and gold, six different colored types of lightning.

Each lightning bolt possessed its own shape. It was as if they possessed independent lives. It was very strange, yet powerful.

Being covered by this sort of powerful aura, Chu Feng’s cultivation instantly went from rank one Half Martial Emperor to rank three Half Martial Emperor.

Furthermore, this was not all there was. With a flip of his palm, his Incomplete Imperial Armament Infinity Edge appeared in his hand.

At the same time, a layer of crimson gaseous flames began to appear unceasingly. It was very terrifying.

At this moment, Du Wanwu’s pupils shrunk. He had noticed that the situation was bad. He had sensed fatal danger from Chu Feng’s body.

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing that the situation was bad, Du Wanwu’s body shot back explosively.

However, Chu Feng did not give him the opportunity to escape. He brandished the Infinity Edge in his hand and shouted,

“Earthen...Taboo:...Firmament...Slash!!!!!!”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Three consecutive slashes shot forth explosively with rapid speed. At such a close distance, Du Wanwu was simply unable to dodge them in time.

“Boom, boom, boom!” Three loud explosions sounded, and heaven and earth began to shake violently. Energy ripples surged forth nonstop. All three of the slashes Chu Feng had cast landed directly on Du Wanwu.

Chu Feng had decided to use a fatal attack the moment he attacked. What he planned to do was launch a surprise attack to prevail over his opponent!!!

“Lord Clan Chief!!!”

The Poison Demon’s descendants were all frightened by this scene. Unable to contain themselves, they shouted worriedly.

They were all able to sense how frightening Chu Feng’s earlier attack had been. Likely, even Du Wanwu would find it very difficult to resist that attack.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at this moment, a loud explosion sounded once again. A layer of green gaseous flames was actually emitting out from Du Wanwu’s body. The green gaseous flames began to sweep forth into his surroundings.

At the moment when the green gaseous flames started to dissipate, a very powerful aura suddenly appeared.

Du Wanwu reappeared before everyone. At this moment, not only was he completely undamaged, there were also green gaseous flames lingering around him. Those green gaseous flames were

very frightening and possessed a fatal aura.

At this moment, the green gaseous flames were revolving around Du Wanwu in layer upon layer, like soldiers waiting for orders as they protected him.

At this moment, with his entire body being covered with green gaseous flames, Du Wanwu's eyes actually also turned a dark green color. As for his aura, it had gone from rank four Half Martial Emperor to rank five Half Martial Emperor.

At this time, he did not appear to be human at all. Instead, he looked like a demon god from hell.

"It would seem that there will be a fierce battle today," Facing the current Du Wanwu, Chu Feng realized that the situation wasn't good.

He knew that Du Wanwu had used his Divine Power. Not only had he unleashed his Divine Power, Du Wanwu had also increased his cultivation by one level through the use of his Divine Power.

Du Wanwu was now a rank five Half Martial Emperor. On top of that, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. As such, his actual battle power was capable of contending against ordinary rank eight Half Martial Emperors.

As for Chu Feng, even though he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he only had the cultivation of rank three Half Martial Emperor. Thus, he was only able to contend against ordinary rank seven Half Martial Emperors.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng would not be a match for Du Wanwu. However, Chu Feng would not give up. The reason for that was that if he gave up, he would definitely be killed. However, if he continued fighting, he might be able to live.

Thinking of this, Chu Feng began to brandish the Infinity Edge in

his hand again.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

As crimson light flashed, the Firmament Slash’s fourth slash, fifth, sixth, seventh, eighth and ninth slashes were all unleashed!!!

Chu Feng shot forth the slashes in succession. Even space was shattered by Chu Feng’s slashes, turning into darkness. The only things that were present in this darkness were Chu Feng’s crimson slashes and Du Wanwu’s green gaseous flames.

The Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash could be said to be the strongest martial skill that Chu Feng currently grasped. Especially the ninth slash, its extremely frightening might was comparable to that of Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

When the ninth slash was unleashed by Chu Feng, the Poison Demon’s descendants all paled with fear. They began to step back repeatedly. They were all extremely worried for Du Wanwu, fearing that he would be killed by Chu Feng’s slash.

In fact, the defensive barrier formed by Du Wanwu’s Divine Power was broken through by Chu Feng’s ninth slash. However, Du Wanwu was not wounded. He stood there completely undamaged.

Chu Feng was able to clearly see that there was a layer of green light covering Du Wanwu’s body. That should be a special sort of defensive martial skill. Likely, it was an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill that was stronger than ordinary Earthen Taboo Martial Skills. Otherwise, it would be impossible for its defense to be this strong, and capable of withstanding Chu Feng’s Firmament Slash’s ninth slash.

However, regardless of how he had done it, Du Wanwu had managed to withstand Chu Feng’s strongest slash.

“You actually possess a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, something that is even stronger than mine.

What is your name?" Du Wanwu spoke. Evidently, he was shocked by Chu Feng's powerful strength.

"Chu Feng," Chu Feng replied.

"Very well, I will not kill you. I will instead refine you alive and turn your strength into my own," Du Wanwu said.

"Heh, if you want to refine me, you must first demonstrate that you have the ability to do so."

As Chu Feng spoke, with a thought, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, Black Tortoise Armor Technique, Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Vermillion Bird Revival Technique and the Water Immortal Profound Technique, these five different supreme secret skills, were all unleashed at once.

The Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Secret Skills, fused together with Chu Feng and increased his battle power sharply.

As for the Water Immortal Profound Technique, it was even more amazing. It turned into an independent body and stood before Chu Feng. Furthermore, when it appeared, it created strong gales that caused heaven and earth to change, releasing wave upon wave of surging water. It had taken the initiative to unleash a torrential rainstorm-like attack at Du Wanwu.

"This sensation, could it be that they're secret skills? You have actually grasped five secret skills?!!"

Du Wanwu was no fool. He was able to sense how powerful Chu Feng's current strength was. Even though Chu Feng's cultivation was only that of a rank three Half Martial Emperor, he really possessed the ability to fight against him.

"Ever since my birth, there has never been anyone that could make me feel this way."

"You, you have made me feel this sensation of itching to defeat you."

“Come! Chu Feng, allow me to experience exactly how powerful you are!”

However, faced with Chu Feng that had revealed his five secret skills, Du Wanwu was not only unafraid, he was instead incomparably excited and overflowing with the desire to battle.

As he shouted, green gaseous flames surged forth in wave upon wave as they charged toward Chu Feng.

In an instant, the entire horizon was completely occupied by the green poison gas and Chu Feng’s secret skills.

The people below were simply unable to see the details of their battle. The only thing that they were capable of sensing was the aura that caused even their souls to tremble.

After an entire hour, the curtain to the battle finally dropped. When the violent energy ripples stopped surging, when the energies in the sky stopped dancing, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu’s silhouettes finally reappeared. The victor and the loser of this battle were also revealed.

Chapter 1668 – Immune To Poisons

At this moment, both Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were standing in the sky. The distance between them was only about ten meters. This sort of distance was something that could be closed in an instant by cultivators like them.

At this moment, Du Wanwu's body had changed. Not only was he covered by the green Divine Power, there were purple veined patterns on his green skin. Those veined patterns were actually flashing with a faint light.

Being covered by the purple veined patterns, Du Wanwu's aura was actually even stronger than before. Evidently, he had used a special method to increase his strength.

As for Chu Feng, his situation was not that good.

At this moment, a large bloody hole had appeared in Chu Feng's chest. Not only was that hole dripping with crimson blood, there was a green liquid that was bubbling and boiling in the hole.

Furthermore, green veined patterns had appeared on Chu Feng's body. It was a very frightening sight. This was the sign of being poisoned.

Not only had his body changed, even his aura had changed. Suddenly, Chu Feng's body wavered; he actually ended up descending from the sky. In the end, he landed on the ground and lost consciousness.

Chu Feng had used all of his techniques and abilities in this battle. However, in the end, he was still defeated by Du Wanwu.

“You possess a cultivation of rank three Half Martial Emperor, but were able to force me to such a degree. Furthermore, even though you've been poisoned by me, you only ended up losing consciousness and not dying. You are truly powerful.”

The purple veined patterns on Du Wanwu's body began to

disappear. His powerful Divine Power also returned to his body. He had returned to the appearance that he had before.

Even though he had won this battle, the gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with contained traces of respect.

“Lord Clan Chief, how are we to deal with this man?” Seeing that the battle had ended, the Half Martial Emperor-level experts were finally daring enough to walk over and surround the unconscious Chu Feng.

“His battle power is extremely powerful, even more powerful than my own. Furthermore, he possesses five secret skills, as well as a special power. We absolutely cannot kill him like this. It would be too much of a waste.”

“Throw him into the Poison Refinement Formation. As long as we refine him, he will be of enormous assistance to my cultivation,” Du Wanwu said.

“But Lord Clan Chief, he is from the Holy Land of Martialism. It might be possible that he’s from the Three Palaces. Shouldn’t you question him about where he is from, as well as his purpose in coming to this place?” One of the old men asked.

“If it’s a fortune, it will not be a calamity. If it is a calamity, one will not be able to avoid it. What must come will eventually come. We will not be able to avoid it. Do as I say,” Du Wanwu said. He appeared to be very calm and confident. Even though he was very young, he possessed the prestige of a great clan chief.

“Yes,” That Half Martial Emperor did not dare to hesitate. He immediately dragged the unconscious Chu Feng into the cave.

At this moment, Du Wanwu stood with his hands behind his back and looked to the sealed horizon and the Poison Mist Formation that was still active up ahead and muttered, “The power of the Poison Mist Formation has not weakened. Could it be that the Holy Land of Martialism’s Three Palaces truly possess a method to break

through the Poison Mist Formation?”

“Impossible. After all, even we cannot do anything to that Poison Mist Formation.”

“In that case, the cause will be him,” Speaking till this point, Du Wanwu turned his gaze to the cave and muttered, “Chu Feng, exactly how did you manage to pass through the Poison Mist Formation without dying?”

“I think this secret is definitely within your body. After I refine you, I will obtain all of the answers.”

Chu Feng was brought into the depths of the cave and thrown into a formation called the Poison Refinement Formation.

As its name implied, the Poison Refinement Formation was capable of refining anything, whether humans or items, cast into it.

As for Du Wanwu, he was capable of training with the energy refined by the Poison Refinement Formation. This was what he meant by making Chu Feng’s power his own.

After throwing Chu Feng into the Poison Refinement Formation, that Half Martial Emperor took a glance at the Poison Refinement Formation’s refinement energy starting to slowly assail and refine Chu Feng’s body without any reaction from Chu Feng. Only then did that Half Martial Emperor feel at ease.

However, after a day, after two days, after three days and, in a blink of an eye, after ten days passed...

Chu Feng, other than his skin, which had been corroded by the Poison Refinement Formation, had no change at all. It was as if the Poison Refinement Formation was completely useless against him.

One must know that if it was an ordinary person that had been thrown into the Poison Refinement Formation, they would have been completely refined and died within a day’s time.

In this sort of situation, that old Half Martial Emperor who was in charge of guarding Chu Feng became more and more uneasy. Feeling helpless, he went to find their Lord Clan Chief.

However, after Du Wanwu defeated Chu Feng, he had entered closed-door training, and this old Half Martial Emperor was only able to find the person in charge of matters in the clan, Elder Xiuyuan, the rank four Half Martial Emperor who had questioned Chu Feng back then, the strongest person in the Du Clan after Du Wanwu.

“There’s no need to make a fuss about nothing. That Chu Feng’s talent is outstanding. He is no ordinary person. Thus, it is also normal that he is difficult to refine,” Elder Xiuyuan said.

Seeing that Elder Xiuyuan had put it like that, the old Half Martial Emperor in charge of guarding Chu Feng said no more and returned to continue guarding Chu Feng.

However, after this, ten more days had passed. After twenty entire days had passed, Chu Feng, other than his skin being corroded, was completely unharmed like before.

With the way things were, even Elder Xiuyuan started to panic. He led the numerous elders and arrived at the Poison Refinement Formation together to carefully inspect Chu Feng.

“That child is truly extraordinary. He has been in the Poison Refinement Formation and refined by that poison for so long. Yet, he is still alive. He truly is the first person in the entire history of the Poison Refinement Formation who has managed to do so,” Elder Xiuyuan looked to Chu Feng who was in the poison formation. At this time, Chu Feng’s breathing was very normal. As such, Elder Xiuyuan exclaimed in shock.

“Elder Xiuyuan, what do we do? We cannot ignore that child. If we have no other choice, we must go and bring Lord Clan Chief out and have him kill that child to prevent future troubles,” Someone suggested.

“I’m afraid we cannot do that. Last time when that child came to cause havoc at our cave mansion, it was when Lord Clan Chief was in closed-door training. Originally, Lord Clan Chief had been hopeful to break through to rank five Half Martial Emperor. However, due to us forcibly disturbing his closed-door training to bring him out, we caused Lord Clan Chief to be unable to reach his breakthrough.”

“This time around, we absolutely cannot disturb Lord Clan Chief. After all, Lord Clan Chief is the future hope of our clan.”

“Besides, this Poison Refinement Formation is only useful, only capable of being used by Lord Clan Chief for cultivation by refining living things.”

“If we are to kill him, it would be too much of a waste. I believe that even Lord Clan Chief would not agree to it. After all, Lord Clan Chief very much wanted to use this Chu Feng’s power to increase his cultivation,” Elder Xiuyuan said.

“What do we do then? Are we to ignore him?” Everyone asked together.

“I believe there’s no harm to it. After all, this Poison Refinement Formation was personally set up by our Ancestor. Regardless of how heaven-defying that Chu Feng might be, he will definitely die. Sooner or later, he will be refined,” Elder Xiuyuan said.

“But, that Poison Mist Formation was also set up by our Ancestor. Yet, didn’t that Chu Feng manage to pass through it and enter this place unscathed? As matters stand, we must admit that that child’s resistance to poison is extremely strong. It is as if he possesses a body that is completely immune to poisons,” someone said worriedly.

Chapter 1669 – A Fair Battle

“I naturally know about this. That child was capable of passing through the Poison Mist Formation and coming out unscathed, capable of surviving Lord Clan Chief’s Divine Power’s poison, even if you are to beat me to death, I would not believe that he doesn’t have the ability to resist poison.”

“However, when our Ancestor moved about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism, many world spiritists that declared themselves to be immune to poisons challenged him. However, without exception, they were all killed by our Ancestor’s poison.”

“Our Ancestor’s poison is no ordinary poison. Even world spiritists are unable to withstand his poison. As for the Poison Refinement Formation, it was also created through meticulous effort by our Ancestor.”

“Furthermore, even if this Chu Feng is so powerful that the Poison Refinement Formation is unable to refine him, and even if he was to manage to wake up and escape the Poison Refinement Formation, he is still no match for Lord Clan Chief.”

“Thus, as long as Lord Clan Chief is here, even if he is able to come out from the Poison Refinement Formation alive, he will still not be able to escape death,” Elder Xiuyuan said.

“Right. Elder Xiuyuan, what you said is very true. No matter how strong that child by the name of Chu Feng is, he is still no match for our Lord Clan Chief.”

“With Lord Clan Chief present, we actually do not have to worry about him at all.”

The crowd began to voice their agreement. After all, the battle between Chu Feng and Du Wanwu was something that they had all seen with their own eyes. Chu Feng was indeed very powerful, so powerful that none of them could contend against him. However,

in the end, Chu Feng was still defeated by their clan chief, Du Wanwu.

After that battle, they became filled with even more adoration and admiration for their clan chief. In their hearts, Du Wanwu was not simply their clan chief. Instead, he was like a god that protected their Du Clan.

Whether or not a second Poison Demon would appear in the Du Clan, and whether or not they would be able to move about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism all depended on Du Wanwu.

Thus, Du Wanwu was the hope of everyone from the Du Clan.

“Let’s do this. I’ll set up a spirit formation outside of the Poison Refinement Formation. If that child is really able to escape from death, and escape from the Poison Refinement Formation, he will definitely trigger my spirit formation. As long as he triggers my spirit formation, I will be able to detect it. At that time, I will immediately go and call for Lord Clan Chief to come out from his closed-door training to take care of that Chu Feng.”

“Furthermore, with this spirit formation of mine, there will be no need for us to continue guarding here. After all, guarding him is useless. If that child is able to be refined, he will, sooner or later, be refined.”

“However, if that child really possesses heaven-defying power capable of escaping from the Poison Refinement Formation, then the person guarding over him here will be in extreme danger,” Elder Xiuyuan said.

“That method is very good,” Hearing those words, everyone began to nod their heads. They all felt that the method Elder Xiuyuan had proposed was very ingenious. This was especially true for that old Half Martial Emperor in charge of guarding Chu Feng. He was overjoyed by the proposal.

The reason why he was uneasy was, on the one hand, because he was worried about the safety of the Du Clan. On the other hand, it was naturally because if Chu Feng was to really wake up, then he, the person in charge of watching over this place, would naturally suffer a great calamity.

After Elder Xiuyuan set up a spirit formation outside of the Poison Refinement Formation, the crowd all left.

However, right after they left, Chu Feng, who had been sleeping for the last twenty days, suddenly opened his eyes.

After he opened his eyes, a smile emerged on Chu Feng's face.

He exclaimed, "Du Wanwu, if my cultivation is the same as yours, will you be able to defeat me, Chu Feng?"

It turned out that after Chu Feng was defeated by Du Wanwu, he had not actually lost consciousness. Instead, he had pretended to lose consciousness so that he could find an opportunity to escape.

However, after Chu Feng was thrown into the Poison Refinement Formation, he did not wish to leave. The reason for that was because Chu Feng discovered that the Poison Refinement Formation was truly worthy of being the formation Du Wanwu used to train with. Contained within the Poison Formation was a very rich amount of Natural Energy.

Although the Natural Energy contained within the Poison Refinement Formation was linked with Du Wanwu, and Chu Feng had to find a way to extract it in order to refine it, it remained that it could be used by Chu Feng.

In these twenty days, Chu Feng had only done one thing. He had been secretly using his world spirit techniques to extract Natural Energy from this Poison Refinement Formation.

As matters stood, Chu Feng had managed to extract, absorb and refine all of the Natural Energy contained within the Poison Refinement Formation.

The Poison Refinement Formation was unable to refine Chu Feng's power, and instead had its power refined by Chu Feng.

After being nourished by the Poison Refinement Formation, Chu Feng was only a slight bit away from reaching a breakthrough. However, it was also clear that there was nothing that could give Chu Feng any more Natural Energy.

Although there wasn't anything here, Chu Feng possessed things that could give him Natural Energy himself. There was still hope for Chu Feng. As for that hope, it was the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments in his Cosmos Sack, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword.

As a total of twenty days had passed, the spirit formations on the two swords were about done severing the connection they had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.

It was only lacking a tiny bit until it could sever the swords' connection with the two Nangong brothers. As long as the connections were severed, Chu Feng would be able to attempt to have the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments recognize him as their master.

If they not only recognized him as their master, and also to entered absolute submission to him, Chu Feng would be able to obtain a portion of their power. That portion of their power was currently definitely enough for Chu Feng to reach a breakthrough.

As long as Chu Feng was able to reach a breakthrough, his battle power would no longer be inferior to Du Wanwu's.

When his battle power was on par with Du Wanwu's, it would be hard to determine who the winner and loser of their battle would be.

At this moment, those people from the Du Clan had thought themselves to be clever, and actually set up a spirit formation around this area to guard against Chu Feng's escape. This,

however, only served to present a better opportunity for Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s hands began to change unceasingly. Layer upon layer of spirit power surged forth from him and swept outward, landing on the spirit formation Elder Xiuyuan had set up.

After the two of them collided with one another, Chu Feng lightly shouted “Open,” and a hole opened up in Elder Xiuyuan’s spirit formation.

Then, Chu Feng escaped from the Poison Refinement Formation like a dragon coming out from the sea.

After Chu Feng walked out through the hole he opened, he canceled his spirit formation, and Elder Xiuyuan’s spirit formation was restored to its original form.

Not only did it appear to be completely undamaged, its function was also completely intact. Unfortunately, Chu Feng had already escaped from within it. Yet, Elder Xiuyuan had not managed to detect it at all.

After Chu Feng exited the Poison Refinement Formation, his corroded, rotting body started to heal. From an appearance of beyond recognition, he soon recovered his handsome appearance.

Actually, Chu Feng was simply immune to the assaults from the Poison Refinement Formation’s poison. Even his corroded skin had been a facade created by Chu Feng himself.

He had done that for the sake of having the people from the Du Clan believe that he was being affected by the Poison Refinement Formation so that they would lower their guard.

At this time, there was already no need for Chu Feng to put up a disguise. What he needed to do now was to quickly sever the connection the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi so that he could make them his own.

“The outcome of the battle will all depend on this,” Chu Feng took the two swords out and closed his eyes. Like sharp blades, layer upon layer of spirit power began to pour into the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword unceasingly. They were trying to sever the connection the two swords possessed.

Chu Feng was fighting for the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments to serve him, to give him power so that he could reach a breakthrough.

He was planning to fight against Du Wanwu again.

This time, the battle would be a fair battle.

Chapter 1670 – Severing The Connection

In the Nangong Imperial Clan. Nangong Tianlong, Nangong Tianhu, Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianfeng were gathered together.

After Chu Feng had beaten Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi and hung them upside down on top of a city gate naked, the four siblings all had their freedom restricted and were not allowed to take half a step outside of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

As they were trapped within their clan, the only thing that they were able to do, other than training, was drink and chat together.

These days, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi had been living under Chu Feng's shadow the entire time. They were extremely depressed and gloomy.

“You two, stop hanging your heads dispiritedly. Isn't it only being hung upside down on the city gate by that Chu Feng? This matter has already been suppressed by our Imperial Father. No one will dare to spread it,” Nangong Tianlong comforted his brothers while smiling.

“Big brother, you don't know. Being hung upside down on the city gate was merely being humiliated by Chu Feng. That was nothing serious. Our self-esteem is also not that weak.”

“The reason why we are feeling depressed is because the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were snatched away by that Chu Feng.”

“After all, those two swords were obtained by Imperial Father through meticulous effort. He had bestowed the two swords to us; it meant that he was very fond of us and put a lot of trust in us.”

“But we... ended up losing them. We have truly let our Imperial Father down,” Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi said together.

“It’s merely two weapons, as long as the two of you are fine, what is there to worry about? You’ll be able to obtain good weapons again in the future.”

“Don’t forget, we four siblings are the successors to our Nangong Imperial Clan. The two of you are both going to be people who will shoulder great responsibility. Thus, do not continue to be tangled by something this small.”

“Furthermore, your connections with the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword are still there, no? This means that those two swords have already approved of you two as their masters.”

“Even if they are snatched away by Chu Feng, they are, in truth, still yours. Even though Chu Feng has obtained the two excellent swords, he is unable to use them. Thus, the one that should be depressed is him, no?” Nangong Tianlong said.

“That’s true. Even with the help of the Snow-haired Immortal, he has not been able to sever the relationship the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword have with us. This means that those two swords acknowledged the two of us. Else, it would impossible for even the Snow-haired Immortal to be unable to sever the connections.”

Speaking of this matter, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi looked to one another and revealed proud smiles.

Back then, the White-browed Immortal had gone to personally capture Chu Feng. However, due to the interference of the Snow-haired Immortal, he had ended up failing to capture Chu Feng.

The White-browed Immortal had believed that the Snow-haired Immortal was Chu Feng’s backer.

And now, the White-browed Immortal had already returned to the Nangong Imperial Clan and mentioned what had happened that day to Nangong Beidou.

Thus, Nangong Tianlong and the others in the Nangong Imperial Clan all came to know that Chu Feng had the Snow-haired Immortal as his backer.

Who was the Snow-haired Immortal? She was one of the top existences among the Ten Immortals. In terms of both reputation and ability, she was not someone that the White-browed Immortal could compare with.

Thus, if the Snow-haired Immortal wanted to sever the connection to the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, it would be a very simple task.

And yet, so many days had passed and the connections were still there. There was only one possible explanation. That was, the two weapons had wholeheartedly acknowledged Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi as their masters. Thus, the connection between them was unable to be severed.

Even though this was a very unbelievable thing, it was something that had happened many times in the Holy Land of Martialism.

One of the most popular stories in the Holy Land of Martialism of something like this happening had been with a rank one Martial King. Even though his cultivation was very weak, he possessed a Royal Armament.

One day, his Royal Armament was snatched away. The person who snatched away his Royal Armament was not only a peak Half Martial Emperor, he was also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, no matter how hard he tried, that peak Half Martial Emperor was unable to sever the connection between that rank one Martial King and the Royal Armament.

In the end, that peak Half Martial Emperor killed that rank one Martial King. Surprisingly, when that rank one Martial King died, the Royal Armament automatically perished alongside its master.

Thus, as the connections to the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi were still present after all this time, it made them believe that the two swords had acknowledged them. That was why Chu Feng had been unable to obtain the two swords.

“Puu~~~”

Suddenly, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi’s expressions changed enormously. Then, they vomited out blood and sat on the ground in a very weak manner.

They were in extremely weak health. It was as if they have been seriously injured by someone.

“Second brother, third brother, what happened to you two?”

“Second brother, third brother, are you alright?”

Nangong Tianlong and Nangong Tianfeng were both incomparably shocked and frightened upon seeing this scene. They immediately got up and lent their arms to support Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.

As for Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi, their complexions turned green, and they became unable to speak.

“Exactly what happened? Why would the two of you vomit blood all of a sudden and become this weak?” Nangong Tianlong asked very worriedly. This matter was truly strange.

However, neither Nangong Tianhu nor Nangong Tianshi gave any reply. It was as if they had received an enormous shock; the two of them were sitting there with distracted expressions on their faces.

“Fourth sister, go and get the White-browed Immortal,” Feeling helpless, Nangong Tianlong instructed his younger sister.

“Mn,” Nangong Tianfeng did not hesitate. She immediately turned around and prepared to leave to find the White-browed

Immortal.

“Big brother, there’s no need for that,” It was only upon hearing those words that Nangong Tianhu hurriedly spoke to stop Nangong Tianfeng.

“Second brother, exactly what has happened to you and third brother? Quickly, tell your big brother,” Nangong Tianlong asked urgently.

“It’s nothing, merely, my connection with the Cyan Rainbow Sword has been...” he sighed.

“It has been severed by someone. Likely, third brother, that’s what happened to you too, right?” Nangong Tianhu said in a very frustrated manner.

“Mn,” Nangong Tianshi nodded. He had the same sort of frustrated expression in his eyes.

“Oh you two, and here I was wondering what it was. With the Snow-haired Immortal present, the connections you two have with the two swords being severed is something that is bound to happen. There’s no need for you two to feel sad about this,” Nangong Tianlong comforted.

“Big brother, that’s not the case,” Nangong Tianhu raised his head. He looked to Nangong Tianlong and said, “At the moment when the connection between my Cyan Rainbow Sword and I was severed, I sensed a strand of aura. That aura was very familiar. It was Chu Feng’s aura.

“What do you mean by that? You’re saying... it was not the Snow-haired Immortal who severed your connection with the Cyan Rainbow Sword, that it’s Chu Feng who did it? How could that be?”

“After all, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword’s acknowledgement of the two of you was all because of the White-browed Immortal’s spirit formation. No matter how strong

Chu Feng might be, how could he possibly be able to break the White-browed Immortal's spirit formation? It must definitely be the Snow-haired Immortal's doing," Nangong Tianlong had an expression of disbelief.

"Big brother, what second brother said is the truth. No matter how useless we are, we did, after all, obtain the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword before. Thus, our souls were connected with them."

"Thus, we are able to determine with certainty who it is that severed our connections. It was indeed Chu Feng. We would not fail to recognize [Chu Feng's aura](#)," Nangong Tianshi said with a bitter smile.

"....."

After hearing those words, both Nangong Tianlong and Nangong Tianfeng were stunned. It was as if they had been petrified. They were unable to say a single word. At this moment, they had extremely ugly and incomparably marvelous expressions on their faces.

Editors pointed out that Chu Feng's aura had changed. True... not sure how they recognized his aura... oh wells. Bee just being Bee again, nothing new. **A reader pointed out that Chu Feng had put the spirit formation before his aura change. Thus, it explains why Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi knew it was Chu Feng.

Chapter 1671 – Challenge Again

Not only did the connections the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword, the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, had with Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi been severed, they had also acknowledged Chu Feng.

This was not a simple acknowledgement, the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments had entered absolute submission.

At this moment, with the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments in his hands, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense two streams of energy entering his body.

As this continued, Chu Feng's cultivation was no longer that of rank one Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he had reached a breakthrough and become a rank two Half Martial Emperor.

"It would seem that I underestimated myself," Chu Feng laughed at himself.

Earlier, he had been worried that the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword would not acknowledge him. However, now it would seem that his worries were completely unnecessary.

The reason for that was because the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were extremely urgent to serve him. It was as if they had been waiting for the opportunity to do so.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword started to tremble. This sort of trembling was not the trembling of resistance. Instead, it was as if they were requesting orders from Chu Feng to fight for him.

Sure enough, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were extraordinary items. The two of them possessed their own intelligence.

“I know that the two of you have been wronged, to be forced to be used by Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi.”

“Now that the two of you are willing to be used by me, I will definitely not fail to live up to your expectations.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he put away the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword that he was holding in his hands, and his figure suddenly shifted. With a speed akin to a phantom's, Chu Feng left the cave and arrived outside.

After arriving outside of the cave, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he placed his hands on his waist and shouted, “The Poison Demon's descendants are without morals and virtue. They bully and humiliate commoners. As such, they shall be beheaded.”

“All of you, scram out and come over here. Allow me to properly teach you all how to conduct yourselves.”

The Poison Demon's descendants were all shocked and frightened to hear this shout. That was because this voice was very familiar to them, as it sounded very much like Chu Feng's voice.

“Heavens, this...”

Upon reaching the entrance and seeing the person standing out there shouting those words, some of the people that came out were so frightened that their legs grew weak, they fell onto their butts and began to piss their pants.

Like Chu Feng? No, this simply was Chu Feng! But, Chu Feng should be in the Poison Refinement Formation, he should be being refined by the Poison Refinement Formation. Why would he be standing before the entrance of their cave completely unscathed?

Thus, they immediately went to call their elders. When Elder Xiuyuan and the others arrived and saw Chu Feng standing outside the cave, they all immediately displayed expressions of shock.

They never would have expected that Chu Feng would truly escape from the Poison Refinement Formation. Furthermore, not

only did he escape, he had actually escaped this quickly. They had simply left the Poison Refinement Formation just moments ago. Yet, Chu Feng had also come out from the Poison Refinement Formation right after.

At this moment, the person with the most unsightly expression would naturally be Elder Xiuyuan. In order to guard against Chu Feng escaping from the Poison Refinement Formation, he had specially set up a spirit formation.

However, Chu Feng was already standing before their entrance and challenging them. Yet, he had not detected Chu Feng escaping from his spirit formation at all. As such, how could he possibly accept this? Could it be that his spirit formation was completely useless?

“Stop making a fuss while looking at me. Go and call your Clan Chief out. Don’t tell me you all really plan to make me kill all of you,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Elder Xiuyuan and the others did not dare to hesitate. They immediately went to call their Lord Clan Chief Du Wanwu out.

After Du Wanwu came out, he was a lot calmer than Elder Xiuyuan and the others. However, he still had a very shocked expression on his face.

Evidently, even he did not expect that Chu Feng would be able to escape from the Poison Refinement Formation. Not only did he escape, Chu Feng was completely unscathed. In fact, his condition appeared to be even better than before.

“It would appear that I have underestimated you.”

“To be able to stay in the Poison Refinement Formation and escape unscathed, you are the first. You should possess a body immune to poisons, right?” Du Wanwu said.

“Immune to poisons? You are truly overpraising me.”

“I do not think that I possess a body immune to poisons. Merely, it’s just that your poisons do not work on me,” Chu Feng said while smiling beamingly. However, his words were filled with mockery.

The poisons used by the Poison Demon’s descendants were most definitely not ordinary poisons. However, Chu Feng had such a low opinion of their poisons. This was simply an undisguised insult.

“What arrogance! You actually dared to insult our Du Clan. Today, I shall use poison to kill you!”

Du Wanwu shouted coldly. Then, surging green gaseous flames were emitted from his body and swept towards Chu Feng.

This was no ordinary poison gas. Instead, this was the poison gas that was innate to him. When that green gaseous flame appeared, the sky started to change color, and Du Wanwu’s cultivation instantly increased from rank four Half Martial Emperor to rank five Half Martial Emperor.

In other words, the Divine Power that Du Wanwu possessed was a kind of poison gas. This child was a natural born poison expert.

Furthermore, his poisons were extremely fierce. It could be said that Du Wanwu had used a fatal attack right away. It would appear that Du Wanwu had realized that Chu Feng could not be left alive. Thus, he had the intention to kill Chu Feng in order to prevent future troubles.

However, facing Du Wanwu’s surging poison gas that was capable of refining all living things, Chu Feng stood there without even bothering to dodge or defend.

Earlier, Du Wanwu had defeated him through the use of martial power. However, this time around, Du Wanwu had been provoked by Chu Feng and decided to attack him with only poison gas.

Chu Feng had been fearful of Du Wanwu’s poison gas before. However, after being immersed in the Poison Refinement Formation for a total of twenty days, Chu Feng no longer feared it.

Chu Feng believed in one thing; that it was definitely not a coincidence that he had managed to pass through the Poison Mist Formation unscathed. Likely, the method that the Snow-haired Immortal had used on him was effective.

Right now, Chu Feng did indeed possess a body that was immune to poisons. At the very least, his body was immune to the majority of extremely poisonous things. Even the Poison Demon's poison and Du Wanwu's Divine Poison would not be able to affect him.

“Boom~~~”

At this moment, Du Wanwu's Divine Poison had completely covered Chu Feng in many layers. They were entering through Chu Feng's body from all of his orifices to corrode and refine his body from within and without.

At this moment, Chu Feng's surroundings were filled with green poison gas. That poison gas was emitting an extremely stinky odor.

Du Wanwu's Divine Poison was truly unpleasant to smell. After the surrounding air around Chu Feng was all covered by the poison gas, the unpleasant odor became even more intense.

However, Chu Feng was standing there completely unscathed. Even though the poison gas was violently surging and assailing him, Chu Feng was not affected by the poison gas in the slightest.

“Heh...” Suddenly, Chu Feng laughed. If he had been skeptical that he possessed a body immune to poisons before, then he fully believed it now.

Chu Feng firmly believed that he now possessed a body that was immune to poisons.

“Du Wanwu, your poison is useless against me. No matter how many times you try, the result will be the same.”

“If you wish to kill me, you should use your martial power,” Chu Feng sneered. Then, with a thought, Chu Feng's Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared.

At the same time, a stream of water shot out from Chu Feng toward Du Wanwu.

Chapter 1672 – Wiping Away Former Shame

The stream of water was unstoppable. The moment it came out, overflowing waves of water surged forth, destroying all things in its path. How could this possibly be water? This was simply a magnificent army of celestial troops and generals capable of toppling cities.

The waves of water possessed might capable of toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, destroying mountain ranges and splitting the vast earth apart.

Being attacked by this sort of water waves, even though Du Wanwu's poison gas was very strong, it was still broken through by the waves of water.

Not only that, the Water Immortal Profound Technique had appeared in an instant. With overflowing water, it possessed the might of a rank five Half Martial Emperor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation as it charged to ferociously attack Du Wanwu.

At this moment, there was simply no need for Chu Feng to act himself. Merely his Water Immortal Profound Technique was capable of fighting against Du Wanwu.

“You... your cultivation actually increased?!!!” Faced with such ferocious attacks from the Water Immortal Profound Technique, Du Wanwu was greatly shocked.

This was the first time Chu Feng had seen a shocked expression on Du Wanwu's face.

However, his shock was understandable. After all, even if he wanted to remain calm, it would be impossible to do so. When Chu Feng attacked, Du Wanwu was able to sense that Chu Feng's current aura was completely different from before.

Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough and obtained a battle

power on par with his own.

“What?! He actually reached a breakthrough?!”

After finding out that Chu Feng had obtained a breakthrough, the other people from the Du Clan were extremely frightened. They all knew very well that Chu Feng had been defeated by their Lord Clan Chief last time around because his cultivation was inferior to their Lord Clan Chief’s.

However now, although Chu Feng’s cultivation was still inferior to their Lord Clan Chief’s, Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power one level above their Lord Clan Chief’s. As such, the two of them were equally matched. If they were to fight again, the outcome of the battle would be very hard to determine.

Furthermore, Chu Feng possessed a body immune to poisons. Thus, their Du Clan’s pride, their poisons, including even Du Wanwu’s Divine Poison, were all useless against Chu Feng. As such, all of the advantages that they had possessed were now gone.

This battle... would likely lead to disaster.

In fact, their worries were not baseless. After Chu Feng’s cultivation increased, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s cultivation had also increased.

With the activation of his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng’s cultivation went from rank two Half Martial Emperor to rank four Half Martial Emperor.

However, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s cultivation was a level above Chu Feng’s. At this moment, the Water Immortal Profound Technique possessed a cultivation of rank five Half Martial Emperor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation; it was at the same level as Du Wanwu.

Furthermore, the Water Immortal Profound Technique was said to be one of the strongest secret skills. Its reputation was not

undeserved, as its attacks were extremely valiant, and it possessed an undying body.

Even though Du Wanwu possessed overflowing battle power and countless techniques, he was still helpless against such a troublesome opponent. At this moment, Du Wanwu was covered with sweat.

“Du Wanwu, you must try harder. If you do not put forth more effort and reveal stronger techniques, I will start killing your clansmen,” Chu Feng acted as if he was a bystander in the battle, and spoke to Du Wanwu while smiling beamingly.

“Chu Feng, don’t you act arrogant! Even if you possess the same battle power as me, it does not necessarily mean that I, Du Wanwu, will be defeated by you.”

Du Wanwu shouted angrily. Then, purple veined patterns that glimmered with light appeared on his body.

When that purple veined pattern appeared, Du Wanwu’s aura actually rose dramatically. Then, he began to frantically unleash counterattacks at the Water immortal Profound Technique.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

This time around, Du Wanwu stopped using poison gas to attack. Instead, he used his martial power. With fists and kicks, Du Wanwu smashed apart the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

“Have you finally gotten serious? Last time around, I was defeated by that. This time, I will not be defeated again.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly, then retracted the Water Immortal Profound Technique and unleashed his Four Great Secret Skills, the White Tiger, Azure Dragon, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise. After the Four Great Secret Skills fused with him, Chu Feng unleashed attacks at Du Wanwu. Chu Feng was planning to personally fight against Du Wanwu and obtain victory over him.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast. In an instant, he had arrived before Du Wanwu. Without using any martial skills, he attacked with his fists and feet. He was planning to fight Du Wanwu physically.

Chu Feng knew very well that Du Wanwu's battle power had become extremely strong after that purple veined pattern appeared on his skin. Not only that, his body had also been strengthened.

Last time around, when Chu Feng was defeated by Du Wanwu, the hole in his chest was not something that was caused by Du Wanwu with martial skills or weapons. Instead, it was caused by Du Wanwu's fist. Du Wanwu had shot through Chu Feng's body with his fist.

Chu Feng's body was tempered by his Divine Lightnings. Ever since his youth, Chu Feng's body was very strong. He had been capable of contending against monstrous beasts using his body. There had never been a time when his body was penetrated by someone's fist.

Thus, the defeat last time around was a humiliation to Chu Feng. This time around, Chu Feng was planning to wipe away his former shame.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Chu Feng became more and more ferocious as the battle went on. His speed, his power and even his offensive techniques all surpassed Du Wanwu's.

His every fist was capable of shattering space. His every kick was capable of twisting space.

In this sort of situation, the only thing Du Wanwu could do was retreat repeatedly. With a slight misstep, Du Wanwu ended up receiving two fist strikes from Chu Feng.

Even though those two fist strikes did not penetrate through Du Wanwu's body, the locations where they hit were badly mutilated

with flesh ripped apart.

At this moment, Du Wanwu finally became aware of how powerful Chu Feng was. If it wasn't for the fact that Chu Feng's cultivation was a level weaker before, there was simply no way for him to be able to defeat Chu Feng. Chu Feng's strength had already surpassed his imagination.

“Woosh~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng used the boots on his foot as well as the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique to increase his speed to a frightening level. In a flash, he arrived behind Du Wanwu. His fist instantly shot forth with the increased power of the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and landed on Du Wanwu's back.

At this moment, a ‘puu,’ sound was heard. Then, Du Wanwu screamed in pain. A large amount of blood splattered. Chu Feng's fist had pierced through Du Wanwu's body; pierced through his chest.

“Woosh~~~”

After penetrating Du Wanwu's chest with his fist, Chu Feng suddenly waved his arm and sent Du Wanwu flying. In the end, Du Wanwu ruthlessly smashed into the wall of their Du Clan's cave.

The throw was done with a great amount of power. A large explosion was heard when Du Wanwu smashed into the wall. Furthermore, Du Wanwu was smashed thousands of meters into the wall and entered deep into the mountain.

“Lord Clan Chief!!!”

The people from the Du Clan were endlessly worried and scared when they saw this scene. The worry that they had, had become the reality. When Chu Feng possessed the same battle power as their Lord Clan Chief, their Lord Clan Chief was no match for Chu Feng.

If their Lord Clan Chief was someone akin to god in their heart,

then Chu Feng would be a man stronger than even their god. As such, how could they possibly not be afraid of Chu Feng?

“Du Wanwu, I might as well tell you this. Even though I, Chu Feng, am from the Holy Land of Martialism, I am not from the Three Palaces.”

“I entered here purely by coincidence. The reason why I’ve come to find you all is all because of your mistreatment of the people here. I merely came here to speak for them.”

“Else, why do you think that the people of your clan would all be alive even now?” After obtaining dominance, Chu Feng suddenly said those words.

The people from the Du Clan already wanted to kill Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had never had the intention to kill them.

This was not because Chu Feng was compassionate or lenient, because he was definitely not a compassionate or lenient person. In fact, before he came here, he had had the notion of wiping out the Du Clan.

However, after he saw the people of the Du Clan, Chu Feng did not want to kill them.

Especially after these past twenty days. Even though Chu Feng had been trapped in the Poison Refinement Formation, he was able to sense what was happening outside. He was able to see how the people from the Du Clan got along with one another.

Even though the Du Clan could not be considered to be large when compared to the other large clans in the Holy Land of Martialism, they still numbered close to ten thousand people with all the old and young combined.

A clan close to ten thousand people was, no matter how one looked at it, definitely not a small number.

Inevitably, for a clan, and especially a large clan, people who had their own special interests, disputes were inevitable.

But... a clan like the Du Clan was actually filled with empathy toward their kinsmen and nothing else.

Everyone from the Du Clan, regardless of whether they were old or young, all viewed Du Wanwu as a god. They were all extremely loyal to him. The rest of the Du Clan did not have any intention to strive for leadership and benefits. They lived very harmoniously with one another.

Something like this was very rarely seen. Chu Feng felt that, regardless of how they treated outsiders, as they were a family that viewed blood to be thicker than water, he should not eliminate them and, instead, should let them live.

That was why Chu Feng wanted to reason with them so that they would treat the villagers better and reconcile this matter.

Chapter 1673 – The Outcome Of The Battle

“Chu Feng, what is your intention in saying all that?”

“To suddenly say those kinds of words after things having already reached this point, could it be that you’re afraid?”

Suddenly, right at this moment, an abnormally powerful aura suddenly swept forth from the cave. It was Du Wanwu’s aura. His aura had actually increased again.

Furthermore, it was not only a slight increase, it was a dramatic increase. [His battle power](#) had become incomparably close to that of a peak Half Martial Emperor.

Immediately afterward, a loud explosion sounded. Du Wanwu had flown back out from that cave and stood before Chu Feng again.

At this moment, he appeared to be completely the same as before. In fact, the hole in his chest that had been created by the penetration of Chu Feng’s fist was still there.

However, a purple bottle gourd had appeared in Du Wanwu’s hand. That was no ordinary bottle gourd. It was a total of a meter long. Not only was the bottle gourd very large, there were veined patterns and nine large black snakes carved onto it.

Furthermore, the bottle gourd was emitting a very intense Emperor’s might. The reason why Du Wanwu’s battle power had strengthened and become infinitely close to that of a peak Half Martial Emperor was all because of that bottle gourd.

That bottle gourd was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. It was not a copy, but an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Heh, afraid? You must be overthinking.”

“I am merely clarifying my purpose in coming here.”

“Since you do not wish to properly talk it out with me, I can only

communicate it to you with force.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. As he spoke, he flipped his hands, and the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword, appeared in his hands.

Once the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments appeared, two streams of boundless aura surged forth. Everyone in the surrounding thousand miles was capable of feeling those two powerful auras.

This was especially true for the people of the Du Clan. They were so shocked by the two streams of Emperor’s might that they began to step back repeatedly. In fact, those with a low level of cultivation even vomited blood and became seriously injured.

“You’re actually using two Incomplete Imperial Armaments simultaneously?!”

Upon seeing the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword in Chu Feng’s hands, Du Wanwu started to frown. He had truly never expected that after he had revealed his Incomplete Imperial Armament, Chu Feng would reveal two Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

One must know that Incomplete Imperial Armaments were very powerful. However, precisely because they were very powerful, it was very difficult for a single person to simultaneously use two Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

Yet, at this moment, Chu Feng was actually able to do that. This made it clear how powerful Chu Feng was.

“What’s wrong? Are you afraid?” Chu Feng asked while smiling.

“Afraid? The word ‘afraid’ does not exist in my dictionary.”

Du Wanwu snorted coldly. Then, he pointed the bottle gourd in his hand at Chu Feng. “Aouu~~~” a loud roar was heard, and then a giant dark black snake shot forth explosively from the bottle gourd.

Once the giant snake shot out, the sky immediately changed color. Rising winds and scudding clouds suddenly appeared, following an overflowing dragon's might that charged to attack Chu Feng.

Faced with this giant dark black snake, Chu Feng started to dodge all over the place. He did not immediately counterattack. Instead, he was carefully observing the snake.

“This appearance, could it be a King Monstrous Dragon Beast?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because the giant black snake before him was not really a giant snake. Instead, it was a monstrous dragon beast. However, it was not an ordinary monstrous dragon beast. Chu Feng felt that it was very possible that the giant snake before him was the Holy Land of Martialism's King Monstrous Dragon Beast.

“Your eyesight is quite good. This bottle gourd of mine is no ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. It was created by my clan's Ancestor by refining the King Monstrous Dragon Race's nine strongest King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' consciousness,” Du Wanwu explained.

“What an extraordinary origin. Unfortunately, I'm afraid that its origin is still very inferior to the origin of my Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword.”

Chu Feng chuckled. He unleashed both his Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword simultaneously. As the cyan and purple mingled with one another, two slashes were shot forth. The two slashed ruthlessly landed on that King Monstrous Dragon Beast, slicing it apart.

“Humph,” However, after that King Monstrous Dragon Beast was sliced apart, Du Wanwu merely snorted coldly. The bottle gourd in his hand trembled, and then nine more King Monstrous Dragon Beasts shot out toward Chu Feng in succession.

The nine King Monstrous Dragon Beasts did not attack recklessly. Instead, they formed an offensive formation. With this clear-cut formation, they were capable of both attacking and defending against Chu Feng as they continued to launch attacks against him.

At this moment, even Chu Feng could not help but gasp in admiration. Du Wanwu's bottle gourd was truly remarkable. Indeed, it was different from ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments. It was not a weapon that would increase one's battle power. Instead, it was more like a large formation that one could carry with them.

However, Chu Feng possessed the two great swords, the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword. As such, how could he possibly fear a formation of King Monstrous Dragon Beasts?

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng's movements became faster and faster. The cyan and purple blade rays became sharper and sharper. In an instant, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were slaughtered by Chu Feng.

However, after Chu Feng eliminated the nine King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, nine more King Monstrous Dragon Beasts actually emerged from the bottle gourd.

Even after Chu Feng killed them again, more King Monstrous Dragon Beasts reemerged from the bottle gourd. It was as if the number of King Monstrous Dragon Beasts was not nine, but instead infinite. No matter how many he killed, he would never be able to kill them all.

“Chu Feng, it's useless. No matter how strong the swords in your hands are, regardless of how many of my King Monstrous Dragon Beasts they are capable eliminating, you will never be able to kill all of them. If this is to continue, no matter how strong your stamina might be, you will still, sooner or later, be exhausted,” Du

Wanwu said.

“Is that so? I have a method capable of determining the outcome of the battle right away,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re planning to kill the king in order to subdue the army and attack me directly? If that’s what your plan, I will have to tell you that you’ve made a mistake in judgement. I, Du Wanwu, am no fool. I will not stand here and allow you to come to kill me.”

As Du Wanwu spoke, his body started to tremble. At the same time, a special aura began to emit from his body.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Du Wanwu’s body shifted. In an instant, he revolved around Chu Feng and appeared in all directions. His speed was speechlessly fast.

“This is the Earthen Taboo: Instant Shifting Technique. With this martial skill of mine, you can forget about catching me,” After revealing his speed, Du Wanwu did not forget to mock Chu Feng.

“So that’s the case. Other than poisons, you actually know quite a decent martial skill.”

“However, are you truly certain...” Speaking till this point, a smile emerged on the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth. Then, he suddenly disappeared. When he reappeared, he had arrived behind Du Wanwu. With a slight smile, he said, “... that I will not be able to catch up to you?”

“Damn it,” After discovering that Chu Feng was behind him, Du Wanwu immediately shifted his body. He was planning to use the Earthen Taboo: Instant Shifting Technique to quickly escape Chu Feng.

“Puuu~~~”

However, before he could use his Earthen Taboo: Instant Shifting Technique, he felt a pain in his body. The Cyan Rainbow Sword

had pierced into him. Chu Feng's attack speed was faster than his reaction speed.

At the same time the Cyan Rainbow Sword was pierced into Du Wanwu, Chu Feng suddenly waved his right hand with the Purple Rainbow Sword. "Woosh," a flash of crimson light swept past. Du Wanwu's arm that was holding the bottle gourd had been hacked off by Chu Feng.

With his arm gone, that bottle gourd also flew into the air. When the gourd fell to the ground, the nine King Monstrous Dragon Beasts that were charging toward Chu Feng to attack him vanished like smoke in thin air.

"It would seem that the outcome of the battle has been determined."

"Du Wanwu, how do you wish to die?"

As Chu Feng spoke, he pointed his Purple Rainbow Sword at Du Wanwu's head. He had a light smile on his face.

He is rank five HME with +3 battle power. So his bp is 8 HME.

Chapter 1674 – Lady Xiangyu

“Lord Chu Feng, please show leniency!”

Seeing that Du Wanwu had been defeated by Chu Feng, the people from the Du Clan all ran out from the cave. Under the leadership of Elder Xiuyuan and the others, they all knelt onto the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng, who was in the sky, to beg him to spare Du Wanwu’s life.

“A warrior can be killed but not insulted. All of you, show some honor! Do not disgrace our Du Clan’s reputation!” Du Wanwu shouted coldly.

Once those words were heard, the people from the Du Clan immediately stopped their begging. However, they were still kneeling and refusing to stand back up.

“You are a person with integrity. However, have you thought about what use your honor and dignity would be if I am to eliminate your entire Du Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

“You... exactly what do you want?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Du Wanwu’s body shivered. Even the tone that he spoke with had changed. Evidently, Chu Feng’s words had stabbed his vulnerable spot.

“Two conditions. First, do not bully the villagers in this place anymore. Return their liberty to them so that they no longer have to serve you all.”

“No matter what, they are people from the same village as you. It is too excessive for you all to treat them like slaves,” Chu Feng said.

“Those are the rules that have been passed down from our Ancestor. I cannot change that,” Du Wanwu said.

“You are truly stubborn. It would seem that, to you, the so-called rules are more important than the life and death of your Du Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh, I’ve said it already. A warrior can be killed but not insulted. As a descendant, I do not possess the qualifications to change the rules of my Ancestor. If you wish to kill me, then go ahead and do it. I, Du Wanwu, will not blink or frown. If I am to frown in the slightest, I shall be your son,” When Du Wanwu spoke those words, he had made the determination to face death.

“If you want to kill us, then go ahead. There is no one in our Du Clan who fears death.”

Seeing Du Wanwu’s determination, the rest of the Du clansmen also shouted in unison. As they spoke, they all stood up. Like Du Wanwu, they had all made the resolution to face death.

Faced with such a Du Clan, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Do you all really think that I, Chu Feng, do not dare to kill you all?”

As Chu Feng spoke, a flash of coldness shone through his eyes.

When his first condition had already been refused by the Du Clan, his second condition would definitely be refused by the Du Clan too.

After all, his second condition was to obtain their Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

When they refused to even change the rule established by the Poison Demon, how could they possibly be willing to hand over the Fire Immortal Profound Technique? Thus, Chu Feng knew that he already had no way to discuss it with the Du Clan.

It was precisely because of this that Chu Feng felt that he had been placed in an extremely difficult situation...

Actually, Chu Feng was able to not kill them. However, sooner or later, he would have to leave this place. If Chu Feng didn’t kill the people of the Du Clan and only used techniques to bind them, if the people from the Du Clan were able to break the bindings Chu Feng had put on them, the ones who would suffer a calamity would be

Goudan'er and the other villagers.

However, the Du Clan were, after all, the descendants of the Poison Demon. For them to be able to survive this long was no easy task. Furthermore, Chu Feng admired their manner of conduct. Thus, he did not wish to eliminate this unyielding clan filled with familial love for one another.

All of a sudden, Chu Feng didn't know what he should do.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please be lenient and leave a path to survival for our Du Clan."

Right at this moment, an aged voice suddenly sounded from within the cave.

When this voice sounded, not to mention Chu Feng, even the people from the Du Clan were stunned.

"Step... step... step..."

After that voice sounded, the sound of slow-moving footsteps could be heard.

At this moment, Chu Feng immediately used his Heaven's Eyes to observe the cave. Once he saw who was coming, he immediately started to frown.

It was an old woman. She had an extremely old appearance. The wrinkles on her body were too many to count. All of her teeth and hair had fallen out. As she walked, she was hunching her back. That appearance was like someone who had walked out from a coffin.

That old woman's age was extremely old. Likely, in several more years, she would die.

However, the matter that caused Chu Feng to feel the most depressed was that not only was that old woman still alive, she was also a Martial Emperor.

The Du Clan actually possessed a Martial Emperor.

That big mouth in the village said that there had been no Martial Emperor born to the Du Clan after the Poison Demon. Yet, wasn't this old woman a Martial Emperor?

However, thinking about it, Chu Feng could understand. The villagers did not even dare to approach the place where the Du Clan lived. As such, how could they possibly know whether or not there were any Martial Emperors in the Du Clan?

“You are?”

After that old woman walked out from the cave, the people from the Du Clan also had shocked expressions on their faces when they saw her. Their appearance seemed to show that they had never seen that old woman before.

“Hahaha, this old woman has been in closed-door training for so long that no one remembers me now.”

“However, I still remember you all. I watched all of you grow up,” That old woman laughed out loud. Then, she asked, “My name's Du Xiangyu, is there anyone who remembers me?”

“Du Xiangyu, it's actually Lady Du Xiangyu, you're... you're actually still alive.”

“We pay our respects to Lady Du Xiangyu.”

After finding out the name of the old woman, the people from the Du Clan immediately knelt onto the ground. Many of them were weeping bitter tears, and they were extremely emotional. They felt as if they were dreaming and did not dare to believe everything before their eyes.

Even the corners of Du Wanwu's eyes started to become moist.

At this moment, Chu Feng realized that this old woman was most likely also an ancestor-level character in the Du Clan.

As she had been in closed-door training for too long, it was likely that all of the people from her generation had already died. As

such, all of the Du Clan's descendants had thought that she had died too.

However, it was clear that this old woman called Du Xiangyu had paid attention to the changes that were happening in the Du Clan during her closed-door training. Thus, she knew about the situation of the Du Clan extremely well.

In fact, she even knew about what had happened after Chu Feng had arrived here. Else, it would be impossible for her to know Chu Feng's name and ask him to be lenient toward the Du Clan.

However, regardless, Chu Feng was feeling very uneasy right now. After all, this old woman was a person of the Du Clan. Furthermore, she was a Martial Emperor. No matter how powerful Chu Feng might be, he would not be able to contend against a Martial Emperor.

Thinking about this, Chu Feng pulled out his Cyan Rainbow Sword from Du Wanwu's body and then put the two swords away. At the same time, he also removed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, returning his cultivation to that of a rank two Half Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng had decided to not continue to fight. It was not that Chu Feng was a coward and did not dare to use Du Wanwu to threaten that old woman, instead, it was because there was truly no way for him to contend against a Martial Emperor.

If Chu Feng dared to use Du Wanwu as a hostage to threaten Du Xiangyu, he would be overestimating his abilities too much. After all, a single thought from a Martial Emperor would be capable of taking away Chu Feng's life.

Thus, what Chu Feng must do right now was the same as what he had planned to do before. That was, to reach a peaceful settlement.

"Senior, I believe you have seen all that had happened earlier. I have not come here with malice. The ones who were pressing and

forceful towards me were the people of your Du Clan,” Even though Chu Feng was feeling very uneasy, his tone was neither servile nor overbearing. He was behaving very calm and collected.

“Little friend, I have indeed seen all that has happened earlier. It is true that you have not done anything wrong, and that it was the people of our Du Clan who were wrong,” The old lady smiled lightly. Then, she turned to her clansmen and said, “What are you all waiting for? Quickly apologize to little friend Chu Feng.”

“This...”

The people from the Du Clan were all shocked to hear those words. They did not understand why their Lady Xiangyu would not stand up for them, and instead stood up for Chu Feng.

However, it remained that their Lady Xiangyu was an ancestor-level character to their Du Clan. Thus, how could they possibly dare to go against her wishes? One by one, they began to apologize to Chu Feng. Even Du Wanwu lowered his head to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was also very surprised by this. He did not understand exactly what Du Xiangyu intended to do.

Was she a person who was very broad-minded, or could she be scheming something?

Chapter 1675 – A Request

“Little friend Chu Feng, please,” Du Xiangyu said to Chu Feng while smiling beamingly. Her appearance was very amiable and she waved toward the cave behind her, beckoning Chu Feng to enter.

As for Chu Feng, he actually did not want to enter the cave. However, he knew that even if he didn’t want to enter the cave, he must still enter it. Thus, with no other option, he entered the cave.

After entering the cave, a guest room was arranged for him. He was the only person in the guest room.

Even though he was the only person at the guest room, the Du Clan had still prepared dimsum for him. Chu Feng did not try to be courteous. As he had tired himself out for this many days, how could he not eat the fine food presented to him?

If Goudan’er and the others were to see that Chu Feng actually dared to enjoyably eat the dimsum presented by the Du Clan, they would definitely be scared senseless.

However, Chu Feng was not afraid. Even Du Wanwu’s Divine Poison was unable to do anything to him, how could the poison from the rest of the Du Clan possibly be able to affect him?

Furthermore, Chu Feng firmly believed that the people from the Du Clan would not dare to poison the dimsum. After all, even if they were to poison the food, it would not be able to affect Chu Feng.

It was only after a long while that Du Xiangyu walked in with Du Wanwu. Evidently, the two of them had been discussing things with one another before coming here. Else, the hostility Du Wanwu had toward Chu Feng would not be decreased by this much.

The first sentence that Du Xiangyu said after she arrived came as

a shock to Chu Feng. However, he seemed to have anticipated something like that.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I do not like to keep people in suspense. Thus, I’ll get to the main point right away. There is a matter that I wish your help with,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Senior, there is no harm in telling me what the matter is,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Truth be told, back then, our clan’s Ancestor, the Poison Demon, had set up the Poison Mist Formation in the sky, beneath the ground and all around this place after coming here.”

“I believe you also know that he set it up in order to guard against his great enemies, the Three Palaces.”

“However, what you do not know is that not only does that Poison Mist Formation prevent others from coming in, it also prevents us from going out.”

“The people outside cannot come in, and the people inside cannot go out. There was actually a reason why our Ancestor did that.”

“He felt that if his descendants were unable to even open his Poison Mist Formation, they would not be qualified to enter the Holy Land of Martialism, and even less qualified to encounter the people from the Three Palaces.”

“As matters stand, a total of fifteen thousand years have passed. The people of our clan have already grown accustomed to the peaceful days that we enjoy now.”

“However, Wanwu is a rare poison genius who has never appeared since the days of our Ancestor. Furthermore, his Divine Power is also a type of poison. This is extremely rare and hard to come by.”

“The way I see it, Wanwu’s birth is simply the grace shown to our Du Clan by the heavens. I do not wish for him to spend the rest

of his life ordinarily in this valley floor. I want him to go out into the Holy Land of Martialism and experience the rest of the world,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Senior, you mean to say that even you all are unable to break through that Poison Mist Formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is precisely the case. With this many years passing, there have been many people from the Holy Land of Martialism who tried to charge through the Poison Mist Formation. However, all of them died.”

“As for our Du Clan, there have also been many who wanted to charge through the Poison Mist Formation and enter the Holy Land of Martialism. However, they too were all killed by the Poison Mist Formation,” When mentioning this matter, Du Xiangyu smiled bitterly.

“Senior, in that case, what help could I provide?” Chu Feng asked.

“I hope that you will be able to bring Wanwu out,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Me, bring him out?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. He said, “Senior, even I myself do not know how I managed to pass through the Poison Mist Formation. Whether or not I’ll be able to leave through the Poison Mist Formation safely is something that I do not know. Thus, how could I possibly be able to take Du Wanwu with me?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, I discovered you the moment you arrived here, and I have been secretly monitoring you. You possess a body immune to poisons. I dare to guarantee that the Poison Mist Formation will definitely not be able to harm you,” Du Xiangyu said.

“But even if I possess a body immune to poisons, I can only guarantee that I myself will not be affected by poisons. How could I

bring Du Wanwu along with me?” Chu Feng asked.

“You do not have to worry about that. I have a method that will allow you to bring at least two other people out with you. However, you only need to bring Wanwu with you.”

“Also, rest assured. I will not make you help us for free. I have already discussed the matter you spoke of earlier with Wanwu.”

“Rules are dead, whereas people are living. Back then, Ancestor had set up those rules thinking about our Du Clan.”

“Thus, Wanwu and I had decided that we would make an exception, and restore the freedom of those villagers. They will be able to peacefully coexist with the people from our Du Clan in this valley.”

“As for the poison plants that the people from our Du Clan used to cultivate with, they shall be grown by our Du Clan ourselves.”

“However, I know that little friend Chu Feng still has a second demand. May I know what this second demand might be?” Du Xiangyu asked.

“My second condition is that I wish to obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t you think about it!” Hearing those words, Du Wanwu was immediately enraged.

“Wanwu,” However, Du Xiangyu was rather calm. She took a light glance at Du Wanwu.

Seeing that, Du Wanwu sat back down. Merely, he still had an angry expression on his face. Even though Du Wanwu was an uncommunicative person, he was a very hot-blooded individual and was not proficient in disguising his mood.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I actually already guessed that you would ask that. You possess five secret skills. If I am not mistaken, one of them is the Water Immortal Profound Technique, right?” Du

Xiangyu said.

“Water Immortal Profound Technique? It’s that secret skill as equally famous as the Fire Immortal profound Technique?” Du Wanwu was startled to hear those words. His face revealed a shocked expression.

Even though he was able to tell that Chu Feng possessed five secret skills, he had never expected that one of them would be a secret skill as equally famous as the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

However, he could not be blamed for this. After all, Du Wanwu had never even seen the Fire Immortal Profound Technique before. Thus, how could he possibly know what the Water Immortal Profound Technique would be like?

However, after hearing the words ‘Water Immortal Profound Technique’, he was able to guess that the secret skill that Chu Feng had used to create a humanoid out of water should be the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

“Senior’s eyesight is truly amazing,” Chu Feng said while smiling. He had indirectly answered Du Xiangyu’s question.

Seeing that Chu Feng had confirmed it, the expression of shock on Du Wanwu’s face grew even more intense. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng became even more complicated.

“Actually, I was merely guessing,” Du Xiangyu smiled lightly. As she spoke, she stood up and said, “Actually, if you want the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, I am able to hand it to you.”

“Merely, after our Ancestor, there has never been anyone capable of obtaining the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. It is not that easy to obtain.”

“However, if little friend Chu Feng is interested, you can give it a try. However, little friend Chu Feng, I must warn you first. The place where the Fire Immortal Profound Technique is placed in is a

place where the people of our Du Clan can enter and leave as they wish. However, for outsiders, it is an extremely dangerous place.”

“The reason for that is because it is our Du Clan’s number one forbidden area, the Inheritance Hall,” Du Xiangyu said.

“If senior is really willing to allow junior to take the Fire Immortal Profound Technique away, then junior will definitely be willing to enter that place and give it a try,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chapter 1676 – Fire Immortal Profound Technique

“After all these years, there has never been anyone from our Du Clan capable of obtaining the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Even Wanwu is unable to do so,” As Du Xiangyu spoke those words, she took a glance at Du Wanwu.

At this time, Du Wanwu revealed an expression of frustration. Evidently, his inability to obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was one of his greatest regrets.

“Secret skills have the ability to choose their masters. If little friend Chu Feng is capable of conquering the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, it would mean that our Du Clan no longer possesses anyone worthy enough to deserve it. If we are to have it continue to stay in our Du Clan, it would instead cause the ruin of a supreme secret skill.”

“Rather than that, it would be better that little friend Chu Feng take it away so that its brilliance can be revealed in the Holy Land of Martialism once again,” Du Xiangyu continued.

“Senior is truly open-minded. May I know where the Inheritance Hall is? When does senior plan to take me there?” Chu Feng asked. He was impatient to experience the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

“I can take you there right now,” As Du Xiangyu spoke, she began to lead the way for Chu Feng. Chu Feng followed behind her, and Du Wanwu also followed her.

Under Du Xiangyu’s guidance, Chu Feng arrived at the deepest region of the cave. Currently, there was no more path forward. At this time, Du Xiangyu took out a key. Once the key appeared, the wall before them started to slowly move.

“Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Before the wall was opened, Chu Feng had not been able to discover anything strange. However, after the wall was opened, he felt a very intense Dragon Mark Royal-cloak world spirit power being emitted.

At this moment, Chu Feng came to realize that it seemed that the Poison Demon who had moved about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism fifteen thousand years ago was not only a poison expert, he was also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

After the wall opened, what appeared before Chu Feng was a very deep hall. Dense poison gases filled the entire hall.

There were many different types of poison gases. However, all of them were fatal poisons. Looking through the poison gases, Chu Feng was able to see that there were many martial skills and poison techniques on either side of the hall. This was evidently the Du Clan's Inheritance Hall.

"Little friend Chu Feng, the Inheritance Hall is filled with traps and mechanisms. When those not from our Du Clan enter it, the traps and mechanisms will be triggered. Put this in your body. With it, you will not trigger those traps and mechanisms," As Du Xiangyu spoke, she handed a jade pendant to Chu Feng.

"Do I have to put it inside me?" Chu Feng asked.

"It is only effective inside of you. Little friend Chu Feng, you should listen to me. After all, those are the traps set up by our Ancestor. As none of the people from our Du Clan have ever triggered those traps, we also do not know how dangerous the traps are."

"However, I presume that the traps set up by our Ancestor will definitely not be simple," Du Xiangyu said.

"Junior understands," Chu Feng knew that Du Xiangyu was thinking for his sake. He also knew that she was afraid that he would die. After all, if Chu Feng were to die, Du Wanwu would not

have a way to leave this place and go to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Thus, Chu Feng did not hesitate and directly stuffed the jade pendant into his body.

In order to stuff an item into one's body, that item would have to pass through skin and flesh. Blood and pain were inevitable. However, Chu Feng acted as if nothing had happened, because this bit of pain was simply akin to tickling for Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have given you the opportunity. Regardless of whether you succeed or not, you must still help our Du Clan,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Junior understands. Senior, may junior enter now?” Chu Feng asked.

“I wish you luck,” Du Xiangyu nodded.

Chu Feng directly stepped into the Inheritance Hall and continued to proceed forward. He knew that the Fire Immortal Profound Technique would be at the deepest part of the Inheritance Hall.

“Lady Xiangyu, it is not that this junior is questioning your decision. Merely, I wish to know, if Chu Feng really manages to conquer the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, will we really hand the Fire Immortal Profound Technique over to him?” After Chu Feng entered the Inheritance Hall, Du Wanwu questioned Du Xiangyu.

“How could the Fire Immortal Profound Technique be that easily obtainable? I presume you've been in there before too, no? You should know what it is like inside,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Junior knows. The Fire Immortal Profound Technique possesses an Emperor's might. Back then, when junior entered the Inheritance Hall, before I could even see it, I was chased out by it. When I am unable to even see it, there's no need to mention

obtaining it,” Du Wanwu sighed.

“That’s right. You also know what sort of existence the Fire Immortal Profound Technique is.”

“Secret skills are very extraordinary. Even though after fusing with someone they will become only a technique, a method to fight, they will possess a living consciousness before fusing with someone. Furthermore, they are frighteningly powerful.”

“Thus, it has always been that secret skills will get to choose their users. If one does not possess sufficient strength, how could a secret skill possibly be willing to give up its liberty and turn into a technique?”

“This is especially true for the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Back then, for the sake of obtaining it, our Ancestor had spent a great amount of effort. The Fire Immortal Profound Technique could be considered to be an extremely arrogant secret skill. Ordinary people are simply unable to enter its line of sight.”

“Thus, while that Chu Feng might possess five secret skills, I still think that it would be extremely difficult for him to obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Likely, he will come out fruitless.”

“After all, back during the time when a senior of ours went in to attempt to conquer the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, he heard the Fire Immortal Profound Technique saying these words; ‘After the Poison Demon, there’s no one else worthy of my strength. Descendants of the Poison Demon, you all are truly delusional to think of subduing me,’” Du Xiangyu said.

“But, Lady Xiangyu, it remains that Chu Feng possesses five secret skills. What if the Fire Immortal Profound Technique really decides to swear allegiance to him?” Du Wanwu asked.

“If that is the case, then it will be the will of the heavens. We should allow him to take the Fire Immortal Profound Technique away,” Du Xiangyu said.

Chu Feng did not know about the conversation between Du Xiangyu and Du Wanwu. He had continued onward through the Inheritance Hall, and had arrived at the deepest region of the Inheritance Hall now.

There was no longer any poison gas covering the path. Instead, it was filled with blazing flames. The flames had sealed off the corridor ahead, preventing people from continuing onward.

However, Chu Feng did not stop his footsteps. Instead, he continued to walk onward. He knew that the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was close.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, a powerful oppressive might swept out from the deepest region of the Inheritance Hall and knocked Chu Feng back out.

Faced with this oppressive might, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because he was able to clearly sense that it was not an ordinary oppressive might. Rather, it was an Emperor’s might.

“How many times have I told you to not come and disturb me again?” Suddenly, a vigorous and powerful voice filled with anger sounded from the deepest region of the Inheritance Hall.

“Eh? Strange, boy, you...” Immediately after that voice filled with anger sounded, an extremely surprised voice immediately sounded after it.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, the blazing flames started to surge. Waves of flames started to roll out from the deepest part of the Inheritance Hall. Soon, a giant formed of flames appeared before Chu Feng.

That oppressive appearance, that powerful aura, without even needing to think about it, Chu Feng knew that the being before him was one of the Five Elements Secret Skills, the Fire Immortal

Profound Technique.

At this moment, the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was sizing up Chu Feng. The more it inspected Chu Feng, the more shocked it became. In the end, it was actually unable to contain itself.

With an extremely shocked and incomparably excited voice, it said, “Boy, you actually possess that Water Immortal fellow on you. You... you are not a descendant from the Du Clan. How did you get here?”

When the Fire Immortal Profound Technique said those words, even its voice changed. This supreme secret skill was actually emotionally stirred up.

Evidently, it was Chu Feng that caused it to be this emotional.

Chapter 1677 – The Fire Immortal's Request

“Great eyesight senior. Not only did you manage to tell that I am not someone from the Du Clan with a single glance, you also discovered the Water Immortal Profound Technique on me,” Chu Feng said.

“I have been in the Du Clan for this long. If I cannot tell whether or not you are someone from the Du Clan, I will have lived in vain.”

“As for the Water Immortal Profound Technique, it possesses the same origin as me. Thus, there is a certain amount of connection between us. Naturally, I am able to discover it.”

“Speaking of it, boy, since you are not someone from the Du Clan, how did you manage to reach this place? Could it be that the Poison Mist Formation set up by Du Wanwu has been broken through by someone?” The Fire Immortal Profound Technique asked.

“The Poison Mist Formation is still active. Like before, it still surrounds this place, protecting it,” Chu Feng replied.

“In that case, how did you manage to reach here?” The Fire Immortal Profound Technique asked.

“That is a long story. To speak of it simply, it could be said that I came here purely by coincidence. It was all an accident,” Chu Feng replied.

“This can be considered to be fate then. You have especially come to find me in order to have me serve you, isn't that so?” The Fire Immortal Profound Technique asked.

“There is nothing that junior can hide from senior. Indeed, junior wishes to be able to obtain senior's assistance,” Chu Feng did not conceal the matter and spoke of the truth.

“Boy, I will not hide this from you either. After Du Wanwu, I had

thought that there would not be anyone capable of obtaining my loyalty and devotion. I had originally planned to stay here and spend the rest of my life in solitude.”

“However, your appearance has made me very excited. That’s because your talent is enough to make this Immortal vow loyalty and devotion to you.”

“That’s because your talent is much stronger than Du Wanwu’s talent. If there aren’t any mishaps, you have the potential to become an era’s overlord. As for that, it is something that Du Wanwu could not accomplish.”

“However, there is one thing that I must tell you. It is very difficult for us, the Five Elements Secret Skills, to coexist.”

“Back then, when Five Elements Old Ancestor created the five of us, he hid a secret within us. Even we do not know exactly what this secret is. However, one thing is certain. That is, as long as the five of us are gathered in one person’s body, that secret will be known.”

“Precisely because of that, the Five Elements Old Ancestor added another kind of power to the five of us. That is, an oppressive power making us unable to coexist with one another.”

“For ordinary people, not to mention possessing all five of us, even just attempting to have two of us fuse with his or her body would be extremely difficult to sustain.”

“The reason for that is because when we are fused into one body, the oppressive sensation which we will emit is something that is extremely difficult for ordinary souls to bear. In less serious cases, one’s soul might be damaged, and one’s cultivation might become stagnant, unable to increase. In a more serious case, one’s body and soul will explode on the spot, causing one’s death.”

“I am most definitely not trying to scare you by saying these things. Over the course of all these years, something like that has

happened many times. Among all of the people who managed to fuse with us, the strongest person was able to successfully fuse with three of us. However, even though he was successful, not long after, his body still exploded.”

“Thus, if you wish to have me serve you, you must be mentally prepared. I am able to serve you, and I also wish to return to the Holy Land of Martialism with you so that I can experience new battles. However, I do not wish for you... to die because of me.”

The Fire Immortal Profound Technique warned Chu Feng in a very serious manner. It could be seen that it was very fond of Chu Feng. Otherwise, it would not have said all these things to him.

In short, it was worried about Chu Feng dying, as it was fond of Chu Feng’s talent.

“Senior, thank you for your warning. However, the path of cultivation is a path where one will start falling back the moment one stops moving forward. Without dangers, it would not be a martial cultivation world.”

“Junior is confident in being able to sustain the oppressive energy created by senior and senior Water Immortal. It is not that junior is arrogant. But, if possible, I wish to be able to have the Gold Immortal, Wood Immortal and Earth Immortal also fuse with me. I wish to become the first person since the Ancient Era to obtain the secret left behind by Five Elements Old Ancestor.”

Chu Feng said those words effortlessly. However, when those words left his mouth, they felt very grand and powerful. What Chu Feng had expressed with those words was not only confidence. In addition to that, there was ambition, a boundless ambition.

“You wish to become the first person since the Ancient Era to obtain the secret? Good, very good,” The Fire Immortal Profound Technique praised Chu Feng. Then, he said, “Boy, you are truly to this Immortal’s liking. What is your name?”

“Junior is called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng clasped his fist. He appeared to be very serious.

Even though Chu Feng possessed exceptional talent, it remained that he was currently weak. To have such a powerful secret skill serve him would be putting it through great inconveniences and making it suffer grievances.

However, this secret skill was willing to put itself through those inconveniences and suffer those grievances in order to serve Chu Feng. Merely this intention was enough to have Chu Feng feel respect and admiration for it.

“Chu Feng, this Immortal is capable of telling that you are definitely not a frog in a pond. Sooner or later, you will be able to move about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, today, this Immortal is willing to lend you a helping hand and accompany you as you move about unhindered through the world, conquering it.”

As the Fire Immortal Profound Technique said those words, it turned into a strand of light and entered Chu Feng’s forehead.

“Chu Feng, there is another matter that I hope that you can help me with.”

Right at the moment when the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was about to fuse with Chu Feng, it suddenly spoke again.

“Senior, what is it that you need, please say it. As long as junior is capable of helping, I will definitely help you accomplish it,” Chu Feng said.

“Actually, it is not my request. Rather, it is Du Wanwu’s request. Back then, Du Wanwu had not chosen this place without cause.”

“There is a Poisonous Substance being nurtured within this valley. With that Poisonous Substance here, it is capable of helping the Du Clan grow the poison plants that they use to cultivate

with.”

“However, that Poisonous Substance is also extremely dangerous. Du Wanwu set up a binding formation on that Poisonous Substance in order to prevent it from bringing harm to the people from the Du Clan.”

“However, Du Wanwu also mentioned that the Poisonous Substance might mature at any moment. At that time, it will take on human form and break through the bindings he had placed on it.”

“Due to the fact that the Poisonous Substance has been trapped in here for so long, and had its poison consumed by the people of the Du Clan, if it manages to mature, it will definitely be filled with killing intent. If that day is to come, the Du Clan will be faced with a catastrophe.”

“Even though that Poisonous Substance maturing is only a possibility, in order to prevent the unexpected, Du Wanwu once requested that I help him protect the Du Clan.”

“I have guarded this place for over ten thousand years. However, that Poisonous Substance has still not shown itself. I presume that the formation Du Wanwu set up might have succeeded in containing it.”

“However, there are always unexpected things that could happen. Right now, I will be following you. Thus, I am not able to feel relieved in leaving this place. I am able to tell that you’re a world spiritist, and possess very decent talent on top of that. In the future, you will definitely be able to become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Thus, I hope that you will promise me one thing. In the future, after you become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, can you return to this place and set up a binding formation around that Poisonous Substance to ensure that it will not harm the Du Clan’s descendants?” This was the Fire Immortal Profound Technique’s

request.

“Although senior is a secret skill, senior is truly loyal. Junior promises senior that he will definitely do what you have asked.”

“However, senior, there is also a matter that junior wishes to consult with you on,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it that you wish to know? Speak of it quickly. I have already entered your body, and must fuse with your soul soon. Else, it will be detrimental to both you and I,” The Fire Immortal Profound Technique said.

“Exactly what did the Ancient Era look like? Compared to the Holy Land of Martialism today, which is stronger and which is weaker?” Chu Feng asked.

There were countless rumors regarding the Ancient Era. However, none of them could be verified. Thus, Chu Feng was very curious as to exactly what the Ancient Era was like.

“The Ancient Era? That’s too distant of a time. Furthermore, the Five Elements Old Ancestor was born into the end of the Ancient Era. Thus, he did not manage to see the most flourishing age in the Ancient Era.”

“However, even though it was the end of the Ancient Era, it still surpassed the current Holy Land of Martialism by many times.”

“The world is enormous. Nothing is too bizarre. This region of the world is merely the tip of an iceberg. In the Ancient Era, there were people that went against heaven and entered the Outer World. Has there been anyone in the current era capable of doing that?”

“The path of martial cultivation is forever without limit. Chu Feng... your path is still long. Walk slowly. If possible, I also wish to experience the Outer World. I hope that you will be able to help me obtain that dream.”

“Hahahaha...”

After saying those words, the Fire Immortal Profound Technique burst into loud laughter. After its laughter stopped, it spoke no more. Even its aura was gone. This supreme secret skill had fused with Chu Feng.

Earlier, it had been the majestic Fire Immortal Profound Technique that wielded impressive power.

Yet now, it was only one of Chu Feng's techniques.

Chapter 1678 – Finding The Poisonous Substance

The Fire Immortal Profound Technique had fused with Chu Feng. Chu Feng's complexion remained the same and his aura was not chaotic either. He had not received the oppressive power that the Fire Immortal Profound Technique had mentioned to him.

Chu Feng felt that the Fire Immortal Profound Technique didn't seem to be lying to him. After all, that swindler monk had also mentioned the same thing as the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Likely, it was true that all the Five Elements Secret Skills could not be possessed by one body.

However, Chu Feng did not feel any oppression. There could only be one explanation for that – Chu Feng's soul was exceptionally powerful. Merely the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and the Water Immortal Profound Technique would not be able to create any pressure for him.

At this moment, Chu Feng was overjoyed. He had never expected to be able to obtain the Fire Immortal Profound Technique this easily. Furthermore, the Fire Immortal Profound Technique actually did not cause any pressure on his soul.

Thus, Chu Feng was determined to do one thing – he had to find a way to obtain the three remaining secret skills of the Five Elements Secret Skills: the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique, and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

Chu Feng wanted to know the secret left behind by the Five Elements Old Ancestor very much.

“Eggy, I've obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. I wonder... when will you wake up?”

After successfully obtaining the Fire Immortal Profound

Technique, Chu Feng began to feel a sense of loss. If it was before, Eggy would be enjoying the joy of this moment together with him. However, this time around, she was not.

Eggy had slept for a while now. Chu Feng did not know when she would wake up. However, one thing was certain. Before Eggy woke up, Chu Feng's heart would be shrouded with worries.

Afterward, Chu Feng walked through the Inheritance Hall and returned. Due to the fact that Chu Feng had obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique too quickly, Du Xiangyu and Du Wanwu both thought that Chu Feng had failed when he returned.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it would appear that even you are unable to subdue the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.”

“However, you do not have to feel depressed. After all, over the course of all these years, there has never been anyone capable of subduing the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Likely, there is already no one in this world capable of having it serve them.”

Even though Du Xiangyu was trying to comfort Chu Feng, she was beaming with happiness as she spoke those words. It could be seen that she was made very happy by Chu Feng's failure to subdue the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

Chu Feng was naturally capable of telling what Du Xiangyu was thinking. He knew that the people from the Du Clan actually did not wish for him to be able to bring the Fire Immortal Profound Technique away.

Since Du Xiangyu and Du Wanwu had thought that Chu Feng had returned in failure, there was simply no reason for him to tell them that he had successfully obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

Thus, Chu Feng did not tell them whether he had obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique or not. Instead, he only slightly smiled. The meaning behind his smile was something that only he

knew.

Du Xiangyu and Du Wanwu had evidently misunderstood Chu Feng's smile. They both felt that he was silently verifying that he had failed.

At this moment, even though Du Xiangyu was deliberately concealing her happiness, the joy in her gaze had become even more intense.

No matter what, humans were still humans. Even an old monster that had lived for close to ten thousand years and possessed heaven-defying strength could not break free from the seven emotional states and six desires, the fundamentals of humans.

Of course, it was only because one possessed those emotions that one could be considered to be human.

Afterward, Chu Feng and the others returned to the guest room that they were previously in.

"Senior, may I know what the method to bring Du Wanwu out of here with me that you spoke of is?" As Chu Feng had obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, he was itching to get out of this place and return to the Holy Land of Martialism.

"That method is very simple. It's a secret technique that is passed down in our Du Clan. Through that secret technique, you will be able to bring at least two people out with you."

"However, this secret technique requires some materials to activate. Furthermore, those materials are very important. I must make some preparations," Du Xiangyu said.

"Roughly how long must you prepare?" Chu Feng asked.

"A day will be sufficient," Du Xiangyu said.

"If that's the case, may I return to the village first? I wish to inform them of the news of your Du Clan's intention in returning their freedom to them," Chu Feng said.

“That’s of course not an issue,” Du Xiangyu said while smiling.

“I’m afraid that they will not believe me if I go by myself. Let’s have Du Wanwu come along with me,” Chu Feng said.

“I’m not going,” Du Wanwu refused flatly.

“Look, with how insincere he is, how could I possibly put my faith in you all? If you all decide to go back on your promise after I leave this place, what do I do then?” Chu Feng asked with a skeptical expression.

“Wanwu, go with him. What Chu Feng says is reasonable. If he goes by himself, there will be no one to verify his claims. Likely, those villagers will not believe him. Bring some more people with you, bring Xiuyuan and the others along with you. This way, those villagers will believe you all.”

“Since we have agreed with little friend Chu Feng’s requests, we must keep our promise. For something like this, we should show sincerity. As the chief of the Du Clan, you should go,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Okay,” Seeing that Du Xiangyu had suggested that he go, Du Wanwu found it unbecoming to refuse her. Even though he was the chief of the Du Clan, ever since Du Xiangyu had appeared, the person truly in charge of the Du Clan had become Du Xiangyu. Furthermore, as Du Wanwu was someone that deeply respected his elders, he immediately obeyed what Du Xiangyu said.

Before they left, Du Xiangyu added, “Remember, act with a good attitude,”

Afterward, Chu Feng brought Du Wanwu and the others and arrived at the village.

In the beginning, the villagers were so frightened by the appearance of the Du Clan’s army that they started to roll and crawl to escape. They all thought that Chu Feng’s discussion with them had ended in failure, and that the Du Clan had come to create

troubles for them.

However, when Chu Feng stood out from the Du Clan unscathed and declared what the situation was, and Du Wanwu personally authenticated his words, the villagers were so emotionally moved that they started to cry with snot and tears.

“God! God! God!!!”

All of a sudden, the word ‘god’ began to resonate through the horizon. The villagers were shouting that word nonstop. Even Goudan’er and the other children were also shouting that word.

Chu Feng had truly become a god in their hearts, a god who had saved them, a god who had altered their destiny.

When someone was being worshipped and thanked by others to such a degree, one might feel a sensation of false glory. Actually, to be precise, this could not be considered to be a false glory. Instead, it should be pride in one’s achievements. As for Chu Feng, he too felt this sensation.

However, more than that, he felt joy for the villagers from the bottom of his heart. He felt that what he had done was correct and worthy.

As some people say, the greater one’s powers, the greater one’s responsibilities.

For the strong, they should root out the strong and support the weak, they should help the weak fight against injustice.

Chu Feng felt that to be very true. He had done those things in the past and would continue to do those things in the future.

After the people from the Du Clan left, Chu Feng was brought to the village. The villagers, while crying with tears and snot, gathered around and tightly surrounded Chu Feng.

Especially the children, they were tightly hugging Chu Feng, diving into his bosom. Among them, the person who was the most

enthusiastic was Goudan'er. Not only was he hugging Chu Feng, he was using his large face to rub against Chu Feng's body nonstop, leaving snot all over his clothes.

After a series of cheers of excitement, Chu Feng finally broke free from the crowd. Chu Feng did not continue to stay in the village. Instead, he began to wander the Poison Demon's Valley.

He was not taking a stroll. Instead, he was observing the Poison Demon's Valley with his Heaven's Eyes.

The Fire Immortal Profound Technique had mentioned to Chu Feng that there was a Poisonous Substance in the Poison Demon's Valley. That Poisonous Substance was extremely exceptional. Even though the Poison Demon had sealed it with world spirit techniques, over the course of all these years, his spirit formation had grown weaker, whereas the Poisonous Substance had become stronger. Thus, it was very possible for that Poisonous Substance to break through the spirit formation and come out.

Thus, Chu Feng wanted to detect where exactly that Poisonous Substance was located. Even though a Poisonous Substance was different from a Natural Oddity, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were capable of detecting the change in fengshui. Logically, unless that Poisonous Substance was hidden extremely well, Chu Feng should be able to find it.

"Found it," After precisely observing the Poison Demon's Valley, Chu Feng finally found the location of that Poisonous Substance. Thus, Chu Feng entered underground. He wanted to observe that Poisonous Substance at a closer distance.

"Oh no!" However, after Chu Feng entered into the underground, his expression took a huge change.

It was not that Chu Feng had found the wrong location. On the contrary, it was precisely the location of the Poisonous Substance that he had found.

There was a spirit formation around this place. That spirit formation was extremely powerful. It was not an ordinary sealing formation. Rather, it was a type of binding formation capable of using the power of the Poisonous Substance.

However, at this moment, that spirit formation already no longer contained any power. Furthermore, that Poisonous Substance was also gone.

The spirit formation had been broken through, and the Poisonous Substance had escaped.

Chapter 1679 – Suspicious Individual

Chapter 1679 – Suspicious Individual

That Poisonous Substance had broken through the spirit formation. However, Chu Feng could tell that it had not left the Poison Demon's Valley.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to discover a vague clue. It was the route through which the Poisonous Substance had fled this place.

It was precisely this route that caused Chu Feng to feel extremely uneasy. That route did not lead to the Du Clan. Instead, it was leading to the villagers' village.

Furthermore, when that route reached the area beside the village, it suddenly disappeared. No matter how Chu Feng tried to search, he was unable to find any more tracks.

“The Poisonous Substance did not leave. Instead, it reached the vicinity of the village? Did it hide itself outside of the village?” At this moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. His gaze was flickering with a great amount of unease.

This was an extremely bad situation. With how dangerous that Poisonous Substance was, if it had hidden itself in the vicinity of the village, the villagers would be met with a great calamity.

Thus, Chu Feng entered deep into the underground of the village and began to search for the location where that Poisonous Substance might have hidden itself. However, after an entire day of searching, Chu Feng was unable to find it.

This caused Chu Feng to feel even more uneasy. If that Poisonous Substance had not hidden itself underneath the village, then there were only two possibilities.

For the first one, it was possible that Poisonous Substance had been seriously injured upon breaking through the spirit formation,

and had already died before it managed to reach the village. If that were the case, it would explain why the route would suddenly stop upon reaching the vicinity of the village.

If that were the case, everything would be fine, and there would be no danger to the Poison Demon's Valley.

However, there was a second possibility too. That would be that that Poisonous Substance was in the village. The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not know how that Poisonous Substance looked. However, he was certain of one thing – if that Poisonous Substance was alive, it would definitely be an extremely powerful existence.

It might be possible for it to disguise itself as something or someone. Like that, it could have hidden itself in the village.

If that was the case, it would not only be the villagers that would be in danger, the Du Clan would also be in danger; the entire Poison Demon's Valley would be in danger.

The reason for that was because the Fire Immortal Profound Technique had mentioned to Chu Feng that the Poisonous Substance had possessed murderous intentions to begin with. After being sealed away by the Poison Demon for so long, and having so much of its power consumed by his descendants, its murderous intentions had most definitely strengthened. Likely, it possessed overflowing hatred.

If it were to escape the spirit formation, it would definitely bring about slaughter. As of now, it had already escaped. However, it had yet to slaughter anyone. This meant that there were two possibilities.

First, it had died. Second, it had not died, but its strength had decreased enormously, and was no match for the Du Clan. Thus, it had concealed itself to train and regain its strength.

Chu Feng arrived outside of the village and began to use his

Heaven's Eyes to inspect each and every house and villager in the village. However, he did not discover anything peculiar. This caused Chu Feng to feel extremely helpless.

If that Poisonous Substance had really hidden itself in the village, then it hid itself extremely brilliantly for Chu Feng to not be able to discover it at all.

“Could it be?”

Chu Feng started to analyze the situation again. However, after analyzing it, his expression suddenly changed.

He had analyzed that the Poisonous Substance should have broken through the spirit formation roughly ten years ago. In other words, regardless of whether that Poisonous Substance had taken the form of a human or an object to enter the village, it should have done so ten years ago.

However, other than that, Chu Feng had thought of another possibility. Could it be that Poisonous Substance had not disguised itself as someone from the village, but instead disguised itself as a certain infant that was just born to the village?

After all, if it were to disguise itself as someone from the village, it would not know about the past of that individual. Thus, it would not be able to blend into the village.

However, if it were to disguise itself as a newborn, it would be able to start from scratch. Like that, no one would suspect anything.

If that really were the case, then Chu Feng had already thought of a possible suspicious individual – Goudan'er.

Goudan'er just so happened to be ten years old. Furthermore, he was extremely ugly. He was so ugly that he could not be considered to be normal.

However, generally, a person's appearance would be inherited from one's parents. Although Goudan'er's father could not be

considered to be a very handsome man, he could still be considered to be normal-looking. At the very least, he was not out-of-control ugly like Goudan'er.

As for Goudan'er's mother, she was already dead. Thus, Chu Feng had not seen her appearance. However, Chu Feng believed that Goudan'er's mother shouldn't have been a hideously ugly individual. Otherwise, how could Goudan'er's father possibly have married her?

There was one other thing, and that was Goudan'er himself. He longed to leave for the Holy Land of Martialism. In this short period of time, he had mentioned to Chu Feng many times whether or not he could bring him to the Holy Land of Martialism.

This sort of longing for the Holy Land of Martialism was present in all of the villagers. However, this was rarely present in the children around Goudan'er's age.

Judging from this, Goudan'er really did appear to be unconventional.

The more he thought about it, the more Chu Feng felt Goudan'er to be suspicious. However, Chu Feng really did not hope for his suspicion to be true.

Even though he had not known Goudan'er for long, Chu Feng's impression of Goudan'er was pretty good. He did not think Goudan'er was a bad person.

Chu Feng really did not hope for Goudan'er to be related to that Poisonous Substance. After all, that Poisonous Substance was extremely dangerous.

Thus, Chu Feng went to find Goudan'er's father. He wanted to learn about Goudan'er from his father.

It just so happened that Goudan'er's father was not in the village, and was instead outside of the village at the place where they grew the poison plants. He was currently harvesting poison plants.

“God, you are truly a living Buddha. You have saved us!”

“I truly do not know how to repay you. How about I devote my life to you?”

When Goudan'er's father saw Chu Feng descending from the sky, he hurriedly ran over. It would appear that his current mood was extremely good, as he actually began to joke around with Chu Feng.

However, when Chu Feng saw Goudan'er's father acting in this manner, he was very happy. At the very least, Goudan'er's behavior resembled his father's very much. Even though Goudan'er might not have inherited his appearance, he had managed to inherit his personality. In turn, this lessened the possibility of Goudan'er being the Poisonous Substance.

“Goudan'er's father, didn't the Du Clan return your freedom to you all? Why are you still taking care of and harvesting these poison plants?” Chu Feng asked.

“Sigh, no matter what, we have already grown these poison plants. Thus, we couldn't possibly leave them behind to rot here, no? I think it would be better to harvest the mature poison plants and present them to the Du Clan one last time,” Goudan'er's father said with a smile.

“Never would I have thought you to be such a considerate person,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Even though I might appear to be very carefree, I am actually a very attentive person. If that wasn't the case, how could Goudan'er's mother possibly have fallen for me?”

“I'm not boasting at all. Goudan'er's mother was the most beautiful woman in our village back then. There were countless men who wanted her, countless men who competed against me for her. Unfortunately for them, they were all defeated by me. In the end, I was the one who managed to obtain Goudan'er's mother.

Hehe..." Goudan'er's father spoke in a very boastful manner.

"Based on what you've said, Goudan'er's mother was a very beautiful woman?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's to be expected. While her beauty could not be said to be on par with celestial fairies, she was still devastatingly beautiful, capable of causing the downfall of a city," Goudan'er's father said.

"In that case, how did Goudan'er, that child, grow up to have such an appearance?" Chu Feng sighed.

Goudan'er's father sighed, "That's true. That child Goudan'er's appearance truly does not resemble me, and even less his mother. When he was born, all of the villagers said that Guodan'er was not my child."

"However, if Goudan'er isn't my child, then whose child could he be? There are this many people in the village. However, not a single one of them have an appearance that resembled Goudan'er's. Thus, he's still my son. He's still my child," Mentioning this matter, Goudan'er's father had a helpless expression.

"I have a question that I do not know whether it is suitable for me to ask or not," Chu Feng said.

"God, you are our benefactor. Please don't say something like that. If there is anything you wish to ask, please ask away. It is my honor to be able to speak with you," Goudan'er's father said in a very sincere manner.

When he said devote my life, it means to marry Chu Feng.

Chapter 1680 – Gu Poison

“How did Goudan’er’s mother die?” Chu Feng asked.

“In order to deliver a sufficient amount of poison plants to the Du Clan, Goudan’er’s mother had grown the poison plants even when she was pregnant with Goudan’er. Perhaps it might be that she was poisoned by the poison plants. When Goudan’er was born, she died from poison.”

“Speaking of this, Goudan’er’s ugly appearance might also be because of the poison. Sigh...” When mentioning this matter, Goudan’er’s father became sentimental. Evidently, the death of Goudan’er’s mother was an unforgettable and painful matter to him.

“In that case, does something like that happen frequently in the village?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes. Even though the people in the village are all cultivators, they are in contact with the poison plants all year round. Thus, their bodies are extremely weak. It is not only Goudan’er’s mother that has died from giving birth.”

“However, there was not anyone that died as miserably as Goudan’er’s mother,” Goudan’er’s father said.

“Miserable? How?” Chu Feng asked.

“Her body was infused with poison gas. After she finished giving birth to Goudan’er, her entire body was corroded by poison gas. In the end, not even her corpse remained,” Speaking of this matter, Goudan’er’s father had a bitter smile and red eyes.

As for Chu Feng, he felt even heavier. Based on what Goudan’er’s father had said, Goudan’er’s mother’s death was clearly unusual.

This also greatly increased the possibility of Goudan’er being that poisonous substance.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Goudan’er’s father, if I am able to bring Goudan’er away from here and into the Holy Land of Martialism, are you willing to let me bring him away?”

“God? Really? You can take Goudan’er to the Holy Land of Martialism?”

“If you are willing to bring Goudan’er to the Holy Land of Martialism to experience it, I would not be able to thank you enough. I will not be able to repay your grace in my entire life. Even if I have to become an ox or a horse in my next life to work for you, I would be gladly willing to do so.”

“God, I am kowtowing to you. I am kneeling to you to express my thanks for your great kindness,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Goudan’er’s father was immediately overjoyed. He became extremely emotional and started to tear up. As he spoke, he was about to kneel to the ground and kowtow to Chu Feng.

“Goudan’er’s father, you must not act like this. This matter is still uncertain. However, if I can bring Goudan’er out, I will definitely bring him out,” Chu Feng lent Goudan’er’s father an arm, stopping him from kneeling. However, he was feeling extremely complicated in his heart.

The reason why Chu Feng wanted to bring Goudan’er out was not because he was thinking about Goudan’er’s future prospects.

Instead, more than that, it was because Chu Feng felt that Goudan’er was that Poisonous Substance. By bringing Goudan’er away from here, he would be able to bring peace to the villagers and the people of the Du Clan.

However, Chu Feng was not certain whether he would be able to bring Goudan’er out with him. Whether or not he would succeed would not depend on him. Rather, it would depend on the secret technique that Du Xiangyu had spoken of.

“Chu Feng,” Suddenly, a voice sounded. As Chu Feng turned

toward the voice, Du Wanwu was standing in the sky. With a cold expression, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Lady Xiangyu is calling for you.”

“Got it,” Chu Feng knew that a day’s time had passed. Likely, Du Xiangyu had finished preparing the materials needed for that secret technique.

Sure enough, when Chu Feng returned to the cave’s guest room, Du Xiangyu had already prepared everything.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is the secret technique that I spoke of. Please have a look. I believe that, with your world spirit techniques, it should not be hard for you to set it up. If you are to find any difficulties in setting it up, I can assist you.”

As Du Xiangyu spoke, she took out a scroll, some materials and some poison plants. The scroll had detailed records on how to use the secret technique.

In simpler terms, this secret technique was actually a world spirit formation technique. It was a spirit formation with special materials added to it, and made use of poison techniques.

However, upon activating the spirit formation, it would indeed be able to make Du Wanwu immune to poisons like Chu Feng for a short period of time. This spirit formation could be said to be extremely profound. Merely, Chu Feng had never seen a spirit formation like this before.

Of course, the reason why this spirit formation was able to have this sort of effect was all due to the special poison plants and materials that the Du Clan had prepared.

A thing worthy of mentioning was that this Du Clan’s secret technique was indeed capable of being used on two people simultaneously. In other words, not only would Chu Feng be able to bring Du Wanwu out with him, he would also be able to bring Goudan’er out with him.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng was feeling very good.

Suddenly, Du Xiangyu said, “Little friend Chu Feng, there is a matter that I hope that you will be able to help Wanwu with,”

“Senior, please tell me what it is,” Chu Feng said.

“Back then, before our Ancestor entered this place, he had planted a Gu in the Holy Land of Martialism’s Five Poisons Mountain. [That Gu](#) is formed by ten thousand poisons. Our Ancestor set up a spirit formation to have it mature in the Five Poisons Mountain. To Wanwu, that is an extremely beneficial cultivation item.”

“Right now, that Gu should have already matured. If it is obtained, Wanwu’s cultivation will be able to increase greatly.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, I wish to trouble you with helping Wanwu obtain that Gu,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Is this matter dangerous?” Chu Feng asked.

“Truth be told, it is dangerous,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Senior, I have only agreed that I would bring Du Wanwu out, and have not agreed to help him search and obtain some sort of Gu,” Chu Feng refused.

As a world spiritist, Chu Feng knew what Gu’s were. There were many different kinds of Gu’s. However, they were generally created using very vicious methods to refine very nefarious items.

One must always brave dangers to obtain a Gu. The danger might be small or large. However, Chu Feng felt that the Gu that the Poison Demon had planted fifteen thousand years ago would definitely be extremely dangerous to obtain.

Chu Feng was unwilling to brave this danger.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please rest assured. This matter is not as dangerous as you think. After all, you are a world spiritist, and a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist on top of that.”

“I know that your world spirit techniques are extremely brilliant. It should not be difficult for you to handle that Gu at all,” Du Xiangyu said with a smile.

“Senior, while it is true that junior’s world spirit techniques are quite decent, my cultivation is not high. In order to prevent mishaps, how about I bring you out along with Du Wanwu? You can go and help him retrieve that Gu. Wouldn’t that solve the problem?”

“I will bring you two out and then bring you two back. Then, I will bring Du Wanwu out himself. Senior, what do you think about that?” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, when you say it like that, I will not conceal anything from you anymore. Truth be told, I have only been able to live up till now by relying on some things left behind by our Ancestor. If I am to leave the Poison Demon’s Valley, I will not be able to live for more than a month; I will definitely die.”

“However, if I am to stay in the Poison Demon’s Valley, I will be able to continue to live for at least ten more years,” Du Xiangyu said.

“This...” Chu Feng felt that Du Xiangyu was lying. He began to ponder the matter. Upon considering that he had obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique here, Chu Feng decided that he would brave this danger and help Du Wanwu this once.

“Furthermore, little friend Chu Feng, this is already no longer up for you to decide. Truth be told, whether you are willing to help or not, you must still help. Assuming that you still wish to live, that is.”

Right at this moment, Du Xiangyu suddenly revealed a strange smile on her face.

“What do you mean by that?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng became alerted.

“When you entered the Inheritance Hall, the jade pendant that I gave you not only contained our Du Clan’s aura, it also contained a special poison, a Gu poison.”

“Right now, the Gu poison has already entered your dantian. If you are unable to obtain my antidote within a month’s time, your cultivation will definitely be crippled,” Du Xiangyu said.

A Gu is an [ancient Chinese witchcraft](#). Through special methods, one could meticulously cultivate a mysterious substance known as ‘Gu.’ The Gu could be big or small. Generally, they take the form of animals or bugs. Those in the form of animals or bugs are generally in a pair. However, there are also rare Gu that take form in the appearance of plants.

Chapter 1681 – Placed Together

“Gu poison?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng immediately began to inspect his body. He discovered that jade pendant had turned into aura and disappeared. However, he had not discovered that there was any danger to his body.

“Senior, you must be joking, right? This joke of yours is not funny at all,” Chu Feng was very cautious. From Du Xiangyu’s gaze, Chu Feng could tell that she didn’t appear to be lying to him.

“Chu Feng, I am not frightening you. I know that you possess a body that is immune to poisons. However, this Gu poison is different from ordinary poisons. While it is a poison, it is also a Gu.”

“If you do not believe me, I can teach you a hand seal. Upon doing that hand seal, you can inspect your dantian again. At that time, you will be able to sense the Gu poison,” As Du Xiangyu spoke, she began to demonstrate a hand seal to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did not hesitate and immediately performed the hand seal according to Du Xiangyu’s demonstration. Then, he went and inspected his dantian.

Once he inspected his dantian, Chu Feng started to frown and his eyes started to shine.

He was shocked to discover that there was a strange object in his dantian. That was not as simple as being a poisonous substance. Rather, it was something that possessed a great amount of destructiveness. Furthermore, it was alive. Right now, it had hidden itself in Chu Feng’s dantian.

If this item were to wake up, it would be able to destroy Chu Feng’s dantian. It was no wonder that Du Xiangyu would say that Chu Feng’s cultivation would be crippled should she not hand him the antidote.

“Haha... senior, I, Chu Feng, have truly misjudged you.”

“You truly are someone who acts like a senior.”

At this moment, Chu Feng laughed coldly. Then, his complexion turned cold, and his tone was filled with mockery. He had grown angry.

Even though Chu Feng had been on guard against Du Xiangyu to begin with, he had not expected her to be this treacherous.

Du Xiangyu was truly worthy of being an old monster who had lived for ten thousand years. Unknowingly, she had struck Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you can bear grudges against me. However, please do not bear grudges against Wanwu or the Du Clan.”

“I have only done this out of helplessness because I feared that you would not be willing to help Wanwu.”

“If you help Wanwu bring the Gu back, I will immediately hand you the antidote. I will definitely keep my promise,” As Du Xiangyu spoke, she actually knelt onto the ground with a ‘putt.’

She raised her right hand and said, “I, Du Xiangyu, swear to the heavens. If little friend Chu Feng is to help our Du Clan this once, yet I continue to do things detrimental to little friend Chu Feng, I, Du Xiangyu, will be consigned to eternal damnation and never be reincarnated.”

“You...” Faced with Du Xiangyu acting like this, Chu Feng felt extremely helpless. He did not know what to do.

Du Xiangyu was actually not that bad of a person. If she were worse, she could continue to threaten Chu Feng. There was simply no need for her to kneel down to Chu Feng and swear to the heavens.

Furthermore, on her extremely aged face, there was a very

painful expression.

It would appear that she was feeling extremely tangled, that her heart was struggling with her actions.

Likely, she did not trust Chu Feng completely. Thus, in order to prevent mishaps, she poisoned Chu Feng with the Gu. While doing so, she also felt a great amount of guilt, and felt that she had let Chu Feng down.

“Senior, please get up. I agree to help you,” Chu Feng helped Du Xiangyu up. Then, he said, “However, I have a request.”

“Please speak of your request,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Since this secret technique is capable of bringing two people out from the valley, other than Du wanwu, I wish to bring a child out,” Chu Feng said.

“Child? Which child? What is that child’s name?” Du Xiangyu asked in succession.

“It’s a child from the village. A relatively ordinary child. His name is Goudan’er,” Chu Feng did not speak the truth.

Chu Feng feared that Du Xiangyu would immediately kill Goudan’er in order to prevent future misfortunes should he speak the truth.

Even though Chu Feng knew that Goudan’er was very dangerous, Chu Feng felt that Goudan’er was actually a good child.

Not to mention that Chu Feng could not be certain whether or not he was that poisonous substance, even if he were that poisonous substance, Chu Feng felt that as long as he was properly guided, it was very possible for Goudan’er to walk the path of righteousness.

Thus, Chu Feng merely wanted to bring Goudan’er away from here, and had not thought about eliminating him.

“That is fine. After all, this secret technique of mine is capable of

bringing two people out. You can bring whoever you wish to bring with you,” Du Xiangyu said.

“In that case, when do we set off to leave?” Chu Feng asked.

“We’ll make some preparations and leave tomorrow,” Du Xiangyu said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng nodded.

After this matter was decided, Chu Feng did not stay there. Instead, he returned to the village. He wished to spend the last day in the valley with the villagers.

To Chu Feng’s surprise, Du Wanwu, who had been hostile toward Chu Feng the entire time actually insisted on seeing him off. Furthermore, when they arrived at the outside of the village, Du Wanwu spoke to Chu Feng in a very apologetic manner: “Chu Feng, my apologies. I truly never expected for the jade pendant that Lady Xiangyu handed you to be a Gu poison.”

Chu Feng was truly surprised to hear those words. That was because not only did Du Wanwu say those unexpected words, he also had a very apologetic expression on his face.

At this time, Chu Feng suddenly recalled how Du Wanwu had not gone up to lend Du Xiangyu an arm to support her when she had knelt to Chu Feng to swear to the heavens. That did not resemble the way that Du Wanwu had acted before.

Right now, Du Wanwu’s actions seemed to illustrate to Chu Feng why he had not gone to stop Du Xiangyu, his highly esteemed senior, when she was kneeling and making such a cruel vow to the heavens.

Likely, he felt that their Lady Xiangyu was in the wrong, and rejected her actions from the bottom of his heart. That was why he had not stopped her from making such a cruel vow.

“No matter what, I am very surprised to hear those words from your mouth,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Our Du Clan owes you a favor in this matter. In the future, I will return this favor to you,” After Du Wanwu finished saying those words, he left.

Seeing such a Du Wanwu, Chu Feng slightly smiled. Even though Du Wanwu possessed a cold personality and had wanted to kill Chu Feng earlier, it was merely an issue of their standpoints.

Actually, Du Wanwu was a straightforward and emotional person. At the very least, he was not a scheming and cunning individual. If possible, Chu Feng might be able to befriend him.

After Du Wanwu left, Chu Feng immediately felt gloomy upon thinking about how a Gu poison had suddenly appeared in his dantian that was capable of breaking his dantian at any moment.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng did that hand seal again to inspect the situation of that Du poison. However, when he inspected his dantian this time around, Chu Feng’s eyes started to shine with surprise.

Even though that Du poison was still within Chu Feng’s dantian, Chu Feng was shocked to discover that the power of the Du poison had already weakened by a lot compared to before.

Chu Feng began to carefully observe it. At this time, he discovered that the Du poison was still being weakened. Furthermore, it was being weakened at a state of not being triggered.

If this were to continue, there was simply no need for an antidote, and the Gu poison would naturally be removed from Chu Feng’s body.

It was not Chu Feng himself who had managed to accomplish this feat. Rather, it was the Divine Lightnings in his dantian, Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline.

Chapter 1682 – Chu Feng Is Already Dead

“It would seem that Du Xiangyu will have no way to use the Gu poison to threaten me anymore.”

Upon discovering what was happening to the Gu poison, the pressure in Chu Feng’s heart immediately vanished and was replaced with joy.

Not only was his Inherited Bloodline overbearing, it was also very smart. It did not directly try to fight against the Gu poison. Likely, it knew that the Gu poison would destroy Chu Feng’s dantian, crippling his cultivation, should it be triggered.

Thus, it began to weaken the Gu poison without it detecting. Likely, when the Gu poison discovered it, it would have already lost its danger and been devoured and refined by Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline.

Like this, even though the Gu poison was still within Chu Feng’s dantian, Chu Feng did not have to worry about anything. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline was able to handle it.

“Even though you all were heartless toward me, I do not plan to act unjustly toward you all. I have promised that I will help, thus, I will definitely help all the way through,” Chu Feng said as he looked in the direction of the Du Clan.

Even though Du Xiangyu had left a Gu poison in Chu Feng’s dantian and enormously angered him, Chu Feng felt that Du Xiangyu was a pitiful individual.

Thus, Chu Feng decided that even though she had struck at him, he would still help her. He had decided to take it as his compensation for obtaining their Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

Afterward, Chu Feng directly arrived at Goudan’er’s house.

Goudan'er and his father were both present in their home.

“God, you’ve returned. We truly missed you.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, this pair of father and son were immediately overjoyed. This was especially true for Goudan'er. He directly jumped to Chu Feng and grabbed his thigh.

Then, in an extremely excited manner, he said, “God, I’ve heard that you’re going to bring me to the Holy Land of Martialism. This is truly too great, too great. I am finally able to go to the Holy Land of Martialism and see the beauties there.”

As Chu Feng saw how excited Goudan'er was and how his father was smiling foolishly on the side, Chu Feng knew that Goudan'er's father, this big mouth, had already mentioned what he had said previously to Goudan'er.

Truly, this Goudan'er's father. Even though this matter had not yet been determined, he had already told Goudan'er. Fortunately, this had turned out to be doable. Else, if it were determined to be undoable, how would Chu Feng possibly explain this to Goudan'er?

“Goudan'er, this... is not something for me to decide. Whether or not I am able to bring you to the Holy Land of Martialism will be dependent on the decision of the Du Clan,” Chu Feng said to Goudan'er.

As he said those words, Chu Feng paid close attention to Goudan'er's state of mind. Chu Feng had already suspected that Goudan'er was the poisonous substance. Thus, he deliberately mentioned the Du Clan in order to evoke Goudan'er's hatred.

“Ah? In that case, would it mean that I will not be able to get out? How could the Du Clan possibly let me go out?” Goudan'er had a very nervous reaction. Even his eyes started to grow red. However, he did not reveal a trace of hatred.

At this moment, his reaction was like that of an ordinary child.

The only difference was that his mentality was stronger than children of his same age. Even though his eyes had grown red, he did not cry.

“Regarding that, I’ve already settled it. Tomorrow, we will be able to set off to the Holy Land of Martialism together,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Really? God, you must not lie to me,” Hearing those words, Goudan’er was immediately overjoyed. He was so happy that he was unable to believe that what Chu Feng said was the truth.

“Foolish child, how could God possibly lie to you? Quickly, express your thanks to God,” At this moment, Goudan’er’s father was in even greater joy than Goudan’er.

As the saying goes, in the world, one’s parents care the most about them. There was not a single parent who would not wish for their children to attain greater heights and walk further. Even if that would bring their children further away from them and make it difficult to see them again, they would still be delighted to do so, as they hoped that their children would be able to obtain better prospects.

After this matter was decided, Goudan’er became extremely excited. In order to thank Chu Feng, he insisted on sleeping with him. This caused Chu Feng to feel very helpless. It was the first time he had slept together with another person of the male gender. Even though Goudan’er was a little boy, Chu Feng still felt very awkward.

The thing that caused Chu Feng to feel the most helpless was that Goudan’er was extremely talkative. His large sausage mouth had simply not stopped once.

In the dead of night, Goudan’er’s father had already started to snore loudly. However, Goudan’er was unwilling to sleep. He was still talking endlessly to Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Goudan’er, could it be that you have something that you want my help with?”

He had discovered that Goudan’er was blabbing nonstop. It was clear that he was beating around the bush, and had something that he wanted Chu Feng’s help with.

With how strong Chu Feng’s perception was, he was able to even see through the way that his seniors from the older generation thought. Thus, how could he not see through what Goudan’er, a child, was thinking?

“Hehe, God, you are truly amazing. You are simply omniscient, omnipotent. There is nothing that I can hide from you.”

“Indeed, I have something that I wish your help with. God, you must help me. This matter concerns my future,” Sure enough, after Chu Feng said those words, Goudan’er started to scratch his head and smile bashfully.

“What is it? Just tell me straight away,” Chu Feng said.

“Hehe. I’ve heard from my father and the others that you are an omnipotent world spiritist. In that case, can you help me change my appearance and make me more handsome? Like this, Cuihua’er will like me,” Goudan’er said with a shy expression.

“Stinky brat, you’re this young, yet you’re already this perverted?” Chu Feng felt very helpless. When he was Goudan’er’s age, he did not know about this sort of thing.

“My father said that one must start going after one’s wife when she is young. Else, she will be snatched away by someone else,” Goudan’er said with a serious expression.

“However, do you know that what a man requires is strength and ability, and not external appearance?” Chu Feng said.

“I do. Thus, I will definitely put forth great effort to train. However, little girls are shallow individuals. They all like boys who are more handsome. Thus, God, please help me. You also do

not wish for me to spend the rest of my life alone, no?" Goudan'er started to beg Chu Feng pitifully.

"Okay then. After we leave this place, I'll help you change your appearance. If we are to do it now, I fear that your father will not recognize you after waking up," Chu Feng said.

"Then God, you must definitely help me," Goudan'er said excitedly.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded his head.

"Haha, this is great. God is the best. Come, let me give you a kiss."

"Get the hell away! Go and kiss your father," Chu Feng raised his head and stopped the incoming Goudan'er, throwing him to the side. He did not wish for his face to be covered with Goudan'er's saliva.

Seeing Goudan'er acting in such a manner, Chu Feng began to wonder whether Goudan'er was really that poisonous substance.

Could it be that the poisonous substance had already died ten years ago, and that all the things related to Goudan'er were merely a coincidence; that Goudan'er was actually not the poisonous substance?

However, no matter what, Chu Feng had already decided to bring Goudan'er to the Holy Land of Martialism. Chu Feng had decided that he would look after Goudan'er regardless of whether Goudan'er was the poisonous substance or not.

.....

At the same time, in the Nangong Imperial Clan. A different scene was happening.

Nangong Beidou and the White-browed Immortal had just returned from the outside, leading a huge army.

The place that they had returned from was the Ten Thousand

Miles Heavenly Summit.

What sort of place was the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit? It was the Snow-haired Immortal's residence.

The reason why they had mustered such a large force to go there was so that they could eliminate Chu Feng.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng had been rescued by the Snow-haired Immortal, they had thought that the Snow-haired Immortal was Chu Feng's backer.

The Nangong Imperial Clan did not plan to let Chu Feng get away. Thus, after learning about what they thought was his backer, Nangong Beidou immediately organized a large army and headed to the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit to eliminate Chu Feng.

Nangong Beidou had called all members from the upper echelon of the Nangong Imperial Clan over in order to announce a matter.

At this moment, the four siblings, Nangong Tianlong, Nangong Tianhu, Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianfeng were also present.

"Chu Feng is already dead. We can remove the wanted posters now," Nangong Beidou declared to the crowd.

Chapter 1683 – This Is The Truth

After hearing what Nangong Beidou said, the upper echelons of the Nangong Imperial Clan were all overjoyed.

They all felt that the Nangong Imperial Clan had obtained a huge success, that the Snow-haired Immortal was afraid of them. That was why she had handed Chu Feng over to them; that was how they had managed to kill Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng died?” However, upon hearing what Nangong Beidou said, Nangong Tianlong and his three siblings were all shocked. Their expressions became very unnatural. Then, Nangong Tianhu even asked, “Imperial Father, did you kill Chu Feng?”

“No, Chu Feng has been killed by the Snow-haired Immortal. The Snow-haired Immortal said that Chu Feng was not her disciple at all. Back then, she had only saved Chu Feng because she was interested in him.”

“On the same day that she saved Chu Feng, she had conducted an experiment on Chu Feng. That experiment of hers failed and Chu Feng died in the process.”

“We have checked the timing. It turned out that the time of Chu Feng’s death declared by the Snow-haired Immortal just so happened to be the time when the White-browed Immortal’s spirit formation lost track of Chu Feng.”

“In other words, Chu Feng has really died. The Snow-haired Immortal did not lie to us. Else, how could the White-browed Immortal’s tracking formation possibly lose its effectiveness?” Nangong Beidou said.

“Imperial Father, that doesn’t add up. That is impossible. You all must have been deceived by the Snow-haired Immortal. Chu Feng is definitely still alive,” Nangong Tianhu said.

“What did you say?” After hearing what Nangong Tianhu said,

Nangong Beidou, the White-browed Immortal and the others' expressions all changed.

“Imperial Father, I said that Chu Feng is still alive, that the Snow-haired Immortal is definitely deceiving you all,” Nangong Tianhu repeated.

“Tianhu, could it be that you know something?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Imperial Father, if it is as the Snow-haired Immortal has said, then Chu Feng should have died over twenty days ago. However, roughly two days ago, the connection between the Purple Rainbow Sword and the Cyan Rainbow Sword were severed from me and third brother.”

“At the crucial moment when they were severed, the two of us sensed Chu Feng's aura. If Chu Feng is dead, how could we possibly have sensed his aura?” Nangong Tianhu said.

“Tianshi, did this happen?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Imperial Father, what second brother said is the truth. Big brother and fourth sister were also present at that time,” Nangong Tianshi said.

“Imperial Father, that is indeed the case. At that time, we four siblings were chatting with one another when second brother and third brother suddenly vomited blood and grew extremely weak in health. It was indeed that the connection between them and their Incomplete Imperial Armaments had been severed,” Nangong Tianlong testified.

“Wait a moment, you all are saying that you sensed Chu Feng's aura?” The White-browed Immortal asked.

“Yes, Immortal, it was indeed Chu Feng's aura. How could we possibly forget Chu Feng's aura?” Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi replied together.

“Bullshit!” However, upon hearing those words, the White-

browed Immortal was suddenly enraged.

He pointed at Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi and said, “That spirit formation of mine is capable of tracking Chu Feng’s aura. However, not long after Chu Feng was saved by the Snow-haired Immortal, my tracking formation lost track of Chu Feng. At the same time, Chu Feng’s aura completely disappeared.”

“There is only one explanation for that. And that is that Chu Feng is already dead.”

“When I went to find the Snow-haired Immortal, my intention was not to have her hand over Chu Feng. Merely, I wanted to verify whether Chu Feng was already dead.”

“The result was the same as I had guessed. Chu Feng had died. Furthermore, the time at which he died was the same as the time that I expected.”

“Yet now, you all are saying that you sensed Chu Feng’s aura roughly two days ago? Is this not spouting nonsense? Chu Feng is already dead. Thus, how could you have sensed Chu Feng’s aura?” The White-browed Immortal was very angry.

The reason why he was so angry was because he was certain that Chu Feng was dead. Otherwise, his tracking formation would not have been unable to track Chu Feng’s aura.

However, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi declared that they had sensed Chu Feng’s aura, and that it was Chu Feng that had severed their connection to the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword. To the White-browed Immortal, their declarations were simply questioning his ability. That was the reason why he had gotten this angry.

“Brother White-brow, don’t be so emotional. The way I see it, Tianhu and them don’t seem to be joking around. You had also mentioned before that your tracking formation was only able to track Chu Feng because it was able to lock onto Chu Feng’s aura.”

“Say, do you think that it might be that there’s another possibility? Could it be that Chu Feng has not died and has only changed his aura? Could that be the reason why your tracking formation failed to continue tracking Chu Feng?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“This... is indeed possible. Merely, the probability of it happening is extremely small. While one’s external aura is easily changed, it is extremely hard to change one’s internal aura. At the very least, it is impossible for me to accomplish that.”

“As for the Snow-haired Immortal, I will admit that she is stronger than me. Among the Ten Immortals, the Snow-haired Immortal is an unconventional person. Even though her world spirit techniques are unconventional, it is true that her world spirit techniques are extremely profound and capable of accomplishing things that would be impossible for others to accomplish.”

“However, if you are to tell me that she could change Chu Feng’s aura in such a short period of time, I would definitely not believe you,” The White-browed Immortal said.

“In that case, Chu Feng’s death must be a fact. Then, the person that should have severed the connection from the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword should be the Snow-haired Immortal.”

“It would seem that the Snow-haired Immortal has deceived us still.”

Nangong Beidou sighed. The reason for that was because they had also asked the Snow-haired Immortal about the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword in their journey to the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit.

However, the Snow-haired Immortal declared that she had not touched any of Chu Feng’s possessions. Thus, she simply did not know of any Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword.

Furthermore, even if she knew, she would not want them, because she was not interested in them.

However, right now, the connection the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword had possessed with the two Nangong Clan princes had been severed. This caused Nangong Beidou to feel that it had been done by the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Lord Clan Chief, the Purple Rainbow Sword and Cyan Rainbow Sword are treasures of our Nangong Imperial Clan. We cannot let them be obtained by the Snow-haired Immortal like this. Should we go and demand them back?” The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan asked.

“Demand them back? It would be one thing if it was for the sake of eliminating Chu Feng that we go on that expedition against the Snow-haired Immortal. However, if it’s for two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, it is best to forget about it.”

“The Snow-haired Immortal is not someone who we can easily trifle with. It is not worth our efforts for us to fight against the Snow-haired Immortal for two Incomplete Imperial Armaments,” The White-browed Immortal said.

“Then, Immortal, are we to just forget about the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Clan Chief Nangong, I have already said that my true purpose in bringing you all with me to the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit to meet the Snow-haired Immortal was merely to verify Chu Feng’s death, and not to fight against the Snow-haired Immortal.”

“Among the Ten Immortals, the Snow-haired Immortal possesses strength ranked within the top five. As for I, among the Ten Immortals, I am only ranked tenth.”

“If we were to truly go on an expedition against the Snow-haired Immortal, unless you are capable of having Nangong Longjian or

your Nangong Imperial Clan's several Utmost Exalted Elders act, with merely our power, we will not necessarily be a match for her."

"Think of it carefully. Are you really willing to make such a person an enemy for the sake of two Incomplete Imperial Armaments?" The White-browed Immortal asked.

Chapter 1684 – [Mooncloud City](#)

“What brother White-brow says is reasonable.”

Nangong Beidou nodded. Actually, in their journey to the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit, they had not even managed to meet the Snow-haired Immortal face to face. The Snow-haired Immortal had only spoken to them without revealing herself.

Furthermore, the Snow-haired Immortal had a very vile attitude toward them. That attitude was simply the attitude of someone who didn't place them in her eyes.

Nangong Beidou had managed to become aware at that time that the Snow-haired Immortal was not someone who was easily trifled with. In fact, he had heard about the various deeds that the Snow-haired Immortal had done before. She was an extremely crazy woman. Even though she was known as one of the Ten Immortals, she was a very vicious character.

Even though the Nangong Imperial Clan had existed for a very long time and possessed a very deep background, the Ten Immortals' fame for fighting prowess was not unfounded. All of them were existences not easily trifled with.

Nangong Beidou also did not wish to start a war with the Snow-haired Immortal. That was the reason why he had asked the White-browed Immortal for his opinion. It was all so that he could find a way out of this difficult situation, find a reason to not start a war against the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Immortal. We are not questioning you. Merely, we really did sense Chu Feng's aura that time. Exactly why did that happen?” Nangong Tianhu asked timidly. He truly feared that the White-browed Immortal would be angered. However, he deeply wished to know why he had felt Chu Feng's aura.

“Why? Isn't it obvious?”

“You and your brother’s Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword have been snatched away by Chu Feng. Thus, fear of Chu Feng has grown in your hearts. The two of you were worried about Chu Feng completely seizing away your Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword the entire time.”

“Thus, when the connections between the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword were severed from you two, the two of you had a misperception that it was Chu Feng who severed the connections.”

“However, that was nothing more than a misperception,” White-browed Immortal said.

“Tianhu, Tianshi, as men, you two must not bother with trifling matters. The two of you must quickly walk out from Chu Feng’s shadow. Else, how can you attain greatness in the future?” Nangong Beidou said.

“Yes,” Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi nodded. They did not dare to contradict what their Imperial Father said.

Afterward, Nangong Beidou began to discuss some matters with the rest of the crowd, and announced that they would be removing the wanted posters for Chu Feng.

After the discussions were over, White-browed Immortal and the rest left. However, Nangong Beidou had his four children stay behind.

After the White-browed Immortal left, Nangong Tianlong asked, “Imperial Father, did Chu Feng really die?”

“He should have. That Chu Feng was truly unfortunate to encounter the Snow-haired Immortal. She is the most vicious and merciless witch among the Ten Immortals,” After saying those words, Nangong Beidou smiled. Evidently, he was very happy to know that Chu Feng had died.

“But, Imperial Father, if what that Snow-haired Immortal said is

the truth, doesn't it mean that Chu Feng's backer has yet to appear?"

"With Chu Feng dead, that person will inevitably attack our Nangong Imperial Clan. We cannot lower our guard," Nangong Tianlong said.

"Tianlong, you have indeed grown up. Now, your way of thinking is very thorough."

"I have already thought about those things. Our Nangong Imperial Clan put out the wanted posters of Chu Feng because we did not fear him."

"Thus, if the person behind him dares to come to our door, it would be even better. We will be able to eliminate future trouble."

"However, as the saying goes, it is easy to dodge a spear in the open, but hard to avoid a stab in the dark. What I fear the most is not an open enemy, but instead a shadowy enemy who will attack us with dirty tricks."

"In order to prevent that, I will spread the word to have everyone know that it was the Snow-haired Immortal who killed Chu Feng."

"Thus, if there really is someone behind Chu Feng, that person will likely search for the Snow-haired Immortal first."

"After all, it is the truth that the Snow-haired Immortal killed Chu Feng," Nangong Beidou said.

"As the sandpiper fights with the clam, the fisherman catches both. Imperial Father is truly wise," After hearing those words, Nangong Tianlong and the others began to express their admiration.

"Merely, Imperial Father, the aura that we felt was truly not a misperception. We sensed that aura with certainty. If you do not believe me, go and ask third brother," Nangong Tianhu said.

"Imperial Father, what second brother says is the truth,"

Nangong Tianshi also said with a determined expression.

“Tianhu, Tianshi, forget about this matter. Even if what you two sensed was real, that does not necessarily mean that Chu Feng has not died. It might be that the Snow-haired Immortal deliberately released Chu Feng’s aura before severing the connections in order to play with us.”

“This matter is settled. Do not think about it anymore. The four of you have been staying in the clan for some time now. Now that Chu Feng has died, I will allow you all to go out.”

“Days ago, didn’t the Dongfang Imperial Clan invite the younger generation from the other Three Imperial Clans to Mooncloud City to swap pointers with one another and determine the strongest of the younger generation among the Four Imperial Clans?”

“I’ve thought about it. In the end, I feel that it is best to have you all go there. If you all don’t go, I fear that we will be mocked by the other Three Imperial Clans,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Thank you Imperial Father,” Hearing those words, Nangong Tianlong and the others were overjoyed. They had wanted to experience the might of the other Three Imperial Clan’s younger generation for some time now.

Merely, due to the matter concerning Chu Feng, they had had their freedom restricted, and had been unable to go there. Naturally, the four of them would be extremely ecstatic to know that they were allowed to go about their business now.

“Remember, do not disgrace our Nangong Imperial Clan. While I do not demand that you all be the strongest, you must not be the weakest,” Nangong Beidou said.

“We will not dare to disappoint you, Imperial Father,” The four siblings said simultaneously with expressions of confidence and excitement on their faces.

.....

Early next morning, Chu Feng began to set up the secret technique. This secret technique was very simple. It was merely a defensive barrier. This defensive barrier was not an ordinary world spirit defensive barrier. Rather, it utilized Chu Feng's aura and blood. This caused the defensive barrier to appear exactly like Chu Feng.

In simpler terms, this defensive barrier was a fat Chu Feng. When Goudan'er and Du Wanwu entered this defensive barrier, it would be akin to them entering Chu Feng's body, fusing with him and sharing the immunity to poisons that his body possessed. Naturally, they would be able to pass through the Poison Mist Formation like this.

However, this was only in theory. Chu Feng was not absolutely certain that he would be able to bring Du Wanwu and Goudan'er out with him. Thus, Chu Feng had already made preparations should any accidents happen. He would immediately bring the two of them back. No matter what, he would not have the two of them lose their lives in vain.

"Are you two ready? This is a do or die matter," Chu Feng looked to Du Wanwu and Goudan'er, the two people in the defensive barrier with him.

"Let's go," Du Wanwu said. Even though Du Wanwu was an uncommunicative person, his eyes revealed a faint excitement. It would appear that he wanted to go have a look at the Holy Land of Martialism too.

"Hehe, I don't fear death. Even if I am to die, I must still have a look at the Holy Land of Martialism," Goudan'er had an indifferent expression. He was impatient to leave.

"Very well, we'll set off then."

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's footsteps began to move. Like a reverse

meteor, he explosively shot toward the sky, toward the surging cloud of poison.

At this moment, regardless of whether they might be the villagers or the people from the Du Clan, they were all extremely nervous. None of them wished for any accidents to occur

Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan'er soared into the sky with an extremely fast speed. Soon, they had passed through the layers of poison mist and reached the outside of the valley floor.

"It seems like we have succeeded," Seeing the dark blue sky as well as the clouds in the sky, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief. Then, he said to Du Wanwu, "Du Wanwu, do you know which direction that Five Poisons Mountain with the Gu is located at?"

"Mooncloud City, do you know of it?"

"The Five Poisons Mountain is located very close to the Mooncloud City. We merely need to proceed toward the direction of Mooncloud City," Du Wanwu said.

The name of the city literally reads worship moon cloud city. The worship part is too hard to integrate and I feel like mooncloud city sounds better.

Chapter 1685 – Proceeding Towards The Five Poisons Mountain

“I don’t,” Chu Feng shook his head after hearing what Du Wanwu said.

“You don’t even know where Mooncloud City is? Are you not someone from the Holy Land of Martialism?” Du Wanwu looked at Chu Feng disdainfully.

“Who said that everyone from the Holy Land of Martialism must know where Mooncloud City is?”

“Furthermore, are you not someone from the Holy Land of Martialism too? Isn’t that Poison Demon’s Valley located in the Holy Land of Martialism?”

“If we are to judge things like that, all of you who lived in that Poison Demon’s Valley are people from the Holy Land of Martialism,” Chu Feng took a fierce glance at Du Wanwu.

Du Wanwu was not someone who was fond of speaking. Thus, how could he possibly win against Chu Feng in an argument? Therefore, he took out a map and handed it to Chu Feng. “Here’s a map, look over it.”

“You should’ve given me that map to begin with,” After Chu Feng received the map, he began to carefully look over it. Then, with a thought, his appearance began to change. Even though he still had the appearance of someone in his early twenties, his appearance was completely different from before.

At this moment, Chu Feng looked to be very ordinary. He had the appearance of someone who wouldn’t attract the attention of others should he stand in a crowd.

“There is one thing that I must inform you two of.”

“There are some grudges between me, the Nangong Imperial

Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan. Thus, I must change my appearance in order for them to not discover me.”

“If the two of you do not wish to be implicated by me, do not address me by my name. Else, if my enemies discover this, you two might be out of luck too,” Chu Feng warned.

“Got it,” Du Wanwu nodded.

“God, I also want to change my appearance. Please help me change my appearance,” Goudan’er said.

“Why change your appearance? You don’t have any enemies, no?” Chu Feng asked.

“I wish to change my appearance to that of a handsome man that is capable of causing countless women to fall for me,” As he spoke those words, Goudan’er’s face grew a bit red.

“Oh you,” At this moment, Chu Feng realized that Goudan’er was reminding him about the thing that he promised him.

Chu Feng did not hesitate. He immediately activated his world spirit techniques. In a blink of an eye, the incomparably ugly Goudan’er turned into a boy so handsome that no faults could be found.

That fair face. Those large eyes. That charming air. He simply did not resemble a boy. Instead, his appearance was more like that of a young girl.

“Check it out. Are you satisfied?” Chu Feng casually formed a mirror and handed it to Goudan’er so that he could check out his current appearance.

“Wow! I’m so handsome that even I could fall for me,” After Goudan’er saw his current appearance, he acted as if he were intoxicated. He was definitely satisfied, and could not be more satisfied. At this time, Goudan’er muttered nonstop: “Heavens, how can I be this handsome? How could others live with how handsome I am?”

Goudan'er acted very narcissistically. It was as if he had thought that he was naturally this handsome and had completely forgotten about how ugly he had been before.

Chu Feng felt a bit helpless. This child was already such a big pervert at such a young age. When he grew up, wouldn't he become an enormous pervert? How many girls would end up being played by him. What Chu Feng had done for Goudan'er was simply equivalent to helping a tyrant obtain power for future oppression.

However, if he didn't change Goudan'er's appearance, Chu Feng feared that Goudan'er's appearance would frighten others. After all, Goudan'er's actual appearance was truly too ugly.

Between helping a tyrant obtain power for future oppression and deeply frightening others, Chu Feng had decided to help a tyrant.

"Du Wanwu, your appearance is also very frightening. Should I help you change your appearance too?" Chu Feng asked Du Wanwu with a smile.

Actually, Du Wanwu was not ugly. Merely, his skin was green all over. It was simply a bit too unconventional. Those who didn't know him might even think that he was a monstrous beast.

"No need," However, Du Wanwu firmly refused Chu Feng's kind intentions.

"In that case, we will be setting off. If either of you regret coming here now, I can still send you back." Chu Feng said as he looked to the surging poison mist down below them.

"I'm not going back. I don't like the Poison Demon's Valley. I like this vast world. These legendary blue skies and white clouds are truly beautiful."

"I also wish to have a look at the legendary night sky filled with stars, as well as the boundless sea. There are also various monstrous beasts and powerful races," Goudan'er said while smiling happily.

Even though he was a child, he had a very excited reaction right now. It could be seen that this was the world that he had longed for for a long time.

As for Du Wanwu, his determination was inferior to Goudan'er's. He took a glance at the poison mist below them. In his eyes were traces of yearning. However, he still said to Chu Feng, "Let's go."

Du Wanwu was a person with a very strong sense of purpose. He knew very well his purpose in leaving the Poison Demon's Valley – to retrieve that Gu.

Thus, Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan'er left the valley and began to proceed toward the direction of the Mooncloud City.

After a long journey, Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan'er finally arrived at Five Poisons Mountain.

However, at this moment, sounds of fighting could be heard from the direction of the Five Poisons Mountain. There were people fighting.

Upon getting closer, Chu Feng and the others discovered that it was actually two groups of people fighting. One group possessed uniformed clothing and war chariots. On top of each war chariot was a large banner with two characters written on it: 'Luo Family.'

It would appear that they should be people from the Luo Family.

At this moment, there were roughly five hundred people from the Luo Family. The majority of them possessed cultivations in the Martial King realm. Among them, the person with the strongest cultivation was a yellow-clothed old man.

This old man was at least several hundred years old. He possessed the cultivation of a rank nine Martial King. However, he was only an ordinary rank nine Martial King.

He had only been able to obtain his current accomplishments through perseverance in cultivation. The reason for that was because he did not possess any stunning talent. Else, it would be

impossible for him to only have such a cultivation at several hundred years old.

As for the other group of people, it was a bunch of people wearing black clothes. On the back of the black clothed individuals' clothes was engraved a frightening red skull.

Furthermore, they had covered their faces. Thus, it was impossible to determine their appearances. However, there was one thing that could be certain. That was, they all possessed soaring killing intent. Each and every attack that they used was fatal.

The number of black clothed individuals was much fewer than the people from the Luo Family; there were only a total of thirty six individuals. However, they were all very strong. The majority of them were rank six Martial Kings or above. Among them, three were even rank nine Martial Kings.

At this moment, those three rank nine Martial Kings were surrounding and attacking that old man. At this time, that yellow-clothed old man was already in a disadvantageous position.

As for the rest of the people from the Luo Family, they were even more miserable. Of the more five hundred people who had been there originally, over three hundred had already died. Only a little more than two hundred people were still alive. If the yellow-clothed old man was defeated, they would inevitably be wiped out completely.

“The Luo Clan possesses women and children. We cannot sit and watch without doing anything,” Upon seeing the situation at hand, Chu Feng planned to act. The reason for that was because he had managed to tell that that group of black clothed individuals had ambushed the people from the Luo Family.

There were many powers in the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, disputes were constant. Something like this was very common. Generally, Chu Feng would not bother with this sort of thing.

However, as there were women and children, Chu Feng would definitely get involved.

“Woosh~~~”

Right when Chu Feng was planning to attack, Du Wanwu actually acted before him. Each and every attack from Du Wanwu was ruthless. In a blink of an eye, he slaughtered all of those black clothed individuals.

The battle had been reversed in an instant. In fact, those black clothed individuals did not even know how they had died. They had truly died with remaining grievances.

His sudden attack not only stunned the people from the Luo Family, even Chu Feng was shocked by this. He had truly never anticipated that Du Wanwu would be someone who would willingly come to aid people suffering from injustice.

“Thank you, Young Hero, for saving us. Young Hero, may we know of your great name, so that our Luo Family will be able to repay Young Hero’s rescue today in the future.”

At this moment, a middle-aged woman walked out from the Luo Family’s crowd. This woman’s conduct and speed were very natural and unrestrained. She also had quite a good looking appearance. Even though she was relatively old, she still possessed nice curves and ample charm.

When the Luo Family had been fighting the black clothed individuals, all of the people from the Luo Family were doing everything they could to protect this woman. Furthermore, it was also this woman who stepped forward to speak to Du Wanwu. This meant that this woman should be someone with a certain level of status in the Luo Family.

However, Du Wanwu did not answer the woman’s question. Instead, he asked, “If I may ask, are you all the Luo Family from the Five Poisons Mountain?”

Chapter 1686 – Thorny Problem

“Benefactor, we are indeed the Five Poison’s Mountain’s Luo Family.”

“My name is Luo Huan. I am the Third Miss of the Luo Family. May I know benefactor’s name, and which master or sect you might be from?”

“Furthermore, benefactor, how do you know of our Luo Family?”

Luo Huan was very shocked to hear what Du Wanwu asked. However, she still had a very respectful attitude as she asked Du Wanwu those questions.

Luo Huan’s attitude to Du Wanwu was superb and filled with gratefulness. However, this was also natural. After all, Du Wanwu had saved her life.

In this world, was there any grace greater than the grace of someone saving one’s life?

“Since you’re from the Five Poisons Mountain’s Luo Family, there is no need for you to be this courteous toward me. Fifteen thousand years ago, my Ancestor passed by the Five Poisons Mountain. At that time, the Luo Family showed kindness to him.”

“My Ancestor declared that matters concerning the Luo Family would also be matters concerning our Du Clan. Thus, what I have done today is merely my duty,” Du Wanwu said.

Upon hearing what Du Wanwu said, Chu Feng knew that the Luo Family must have shown grace and kindness to the Poison Demon. It was no wonder that someone like Du Wanwu would step forth and help them without the slightest bit of hesitation.

It turned out that he had acted to help them not only because he was helping the weak; more than that, it was because he had seen the flag of the Luo Family that they carried with them.

However, that Luo Huan naturally did not know about this matter. Thus, she asked, “Benefactor, dare I ask, who might your Ancestor be?”

“The person that had shown grace to my Ancestor was not someone from the Luo Family that is well-known. Likely, that person had not mentioned this matter to the Luo Family either. Even if I were to tell you the name of my Ancestor, you all would definitely not know about it.”

“As for me, my name is Du Wanwu,” Du Wanwu said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. He knew why Du Wanwu did not declare the name of the Poison Demon. After all, they possessed the same name.

“So benefactor’s name is Du Wanwu. That is a very unique name,” Other than feeling that the name was strange, Luo Huan did not have too much of a reaction from hearing Du Wanwu’s name.

This meant that she should not have known about the Poison Demon’s famous name. If she didn’t even know about the Poison Demon, she would naturally not know about what had happened fifteen thousand years ago.

Furthermore, Chu Feng guessed that even if the Luo Family had really shown grace and kindness to the Poison Demon, it would definitely only have been a small kindness. Else, it would not have been possible for it to be presented to the Poison Demon by an unknown individual from the Luo Family.

After all, no matter what, the Luo Family was a family that had been in existence for over fifteen thousand years. Currently, they did not appear to be powerful. Likely, even if the Luo Family were more powerful fifteen thousand years ago compared to now, it would not have been that much more powerful.

Thus, what sort of help could an unknown individual from the

Luo Family possibly provide the all-powerful Poison Demon with? Likely, the Poison Demon had decided to repay a favor akin to a droplet of water in the manner of a gushing spring.

“I dare ask, these people, do you know them? Why have they attacked you all?” At this moment, Chu Feng walked out with Goudan’er.

As Du Wanwu had already declared that he was associated with the Luo Family, it would be unsuitable for Chu Feng to continue watching from the side.

“This person is?” When they saw Chu Feng, Luo Huan and the others displayed respectful expressions.

No matter what, Chu Feng was already a rank two Half Martial Emperor, whereas they were only mere Martial Kings. Thus, they were able to naturally sense how powerful Chu Feng was.

“I am Du Wanwu’s friend. My name is Feng Xing. He is...” Chu Feng looked at Guodan’er and started to hesitate slightly. After all, Guodan’er had become very handsome. If he were still to be addressed as Guodan’er, it would truly be too unsuitable of a name. Thus, taking Guodan’er’s outer appearance into consideration, Chu Feng said to him, “forget about it, you can introduce yourself.”

“Hehe, I am called Guodan’er.” At this moment, Guodan’er spoke his name without the slightest hesitation.

“Guodan’er, why would such an adorable child have such a name?”

Sure enough, after hearing Guodan’er’s name, Luo Huan was unable to contain herself. She covered her mouth and started to laugh. However, the gaze with which she looked to Guodan’er with possessed an undisguised sort of fondness.

Her reaction was only normal. Not only had Du Wanwu saved her, Guodan’er’s current appearance was extremely delightful to

the eyes.

Seeing Luo Huan's affectionate gaze, Guodan'er's eyes narrowed into two crescents, and his mouth lifted into a curve. He revealed a sincere and brilliant smile as he said, "Aunty, I want a hug."

Luo Huan had wanted to hug Guodan'er to begin with. After all, even though Guodan'er was ten years old, he was still only a child. For women Luo Huan's age, they loved adorable children the most.

Thus, after hearing what Guodan'er said, Luo Huan was overjoyed. Without the slightest hesitation, she placed Guodan'er in her bosom as she hugged him.

Seeing this scene, the bystanders did not have any special opinions. Even Du Wanwu felt this to be very normal.

However, Chu Feng discovered that the moment when Luo Huan hugged Guodan'er, Guodan'er's eyes shined with a sinister gaze.

This cannot be blamed on Guodan'er. After all, in their village, there were simply too few good-looking girls. Even though Luo Huan was only a somewhat good-looking middle-aged woman who was very commonly seen in the Holy Land of Martialism, she would be an exceptional beauty akin to a celestial fairy should she be placed in Guodan'er's village.

With how perverted this Guodan'er brat was, he would naturally be overjoyed to be hugged by such a beautiful woman.

However, Chu Feng had still underestimated how vulgar Guodan'er really was. Without the slightest hesitation, Guodan'er snuggled his little head into Luo Huan's two soft lumps and shouted, "Aunty Luo Huan's embrace is truly comfortable." At this time, black lines rolled down Chu Feng's forehead.

Not only had Guodan'er used his face, he even used his hands. This was simply too out of control.

Being fondled by Guodan'er, Luo Huan started to turn red. No matter what, Guodan'er's perverted actions were simply too

obvious. All of a sudden, Luo Huan didn't know what to do.

“Miss Luo, Guodan'er is too heavy. It's better that I carry him,” During the moment of crisis, Chu Feng stepped forward and grabbed Guodan'er away from Luo Huan's bosom.

However, Chu Feng did not hug Guodan'er to carry him. Instead, he directly cast him to the ground and said, “You're already ten. You're not a child anymore. Do you not know how to walk? Do not ask for hugs just because you see a beauty.”

The intention of Chu Feng's words was very obvious. He was reminding Luo Huan and the other women from the Luo Family that Guodan'er was not as pure and innocent as he appeared to be, and that they should be on guard against him.

“Hehe, Auntie Luo Huan was too beautiful. I was unable to restrain my emotions,” Guodan'er had an expression of wanting to continue.

Seeing the current Guodan'er, Luo Huan started to have a lingering fear. She finally realized that this innocent-looking child was actually an early-blooming little sex fiend. At this moment, even though Luo Huan was already a middle-aged woman, she started to fear Guodan'er.

“Miss Luo, you have yet to answer the question I asked earlier,” Chu Feng said.

“This is a long story. Benefactors, might it be possible for you to come to our Luo Family to talk about this?” Luo Huan was inviting Chu Feng and them to be guests at their Luo Family.

“Of course,” As their destination was the Five Poisons Mountain, Chu Feng and the others naturally did not refuse. Not only was the Luo Family located at the foot of the Five Poisons Mountain, it had also existed in that place for over fifteen thousand years. Thus, they should know about the situation of the Five Poisons Mountain extremely well.

If Chu Feng and the others were to be guests at the Luo Family, not only would they have a place to stay, it would also make things a lot more convenient.

Thus, Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Guodan'er followed Luo Huan and arrived at the Luo Family.

Chu Feng discovered that this Luo Family was very large. At the very least, there were close to ten thousand people. If such a family were to be placed in the Nine Provinces Continent, it would definitely be a huge family.

However, even though there were a lot of people in the Luo Family, there were not many powerful experts. Upon entering the Luo Family, Chu Feng used his spirit power to sweep through the entire Luo Family, and discovered that there were three Half Martial Emperors. Among them, the strongest individual was only a rank two Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he was only an ordinary rank two Half Martial Emperor.

Luo Huan was very attentive to Chu Feng and the others. She arranged first-rate guest rooms for Chu Feng's group, and also arranged for maids to attend to them.

After arriving in the Luo Family, Chu Feng came to know that the black clothed individuals with skulls on their backs were not people to be trifled with.

This had truly become a somewhat thorny problem.

Chapter 1687 – Astonishingly Powerful

It turned out that those black-clothed individuals with skulls on their backs were from a power called the Black Fiend. As for this Black Fiend, it was a very notorious power. It could be said that they had committed all imaginable crimes.

Especially their two leaders, the Black and White Skulls. The two of them were said to be on their way to becoming the Holy Land of Martialism's sixth and seventh Great Evildoers.

For the reputation and title of the sixth and seventh Great Evildoer, the Black and White Skulls had led the Black Fiend to commit malicious deeds all over in recent years. They had become the target of elimination for many powers.

The Black Fiend had come to cause trouble for the Luo Family with an objective. They wanted to obtain the inherited treasure of the Luo Family, the Invisible Dew.

The Luo Family had not been willing to hand the Invisible Dew to them. Thus, the Black Fiend sent people to launch a surprise attack at Luo Huan and the others. Luo Huan felt that, with the way the Black Fiend did things, this would only be the beginning.

Likely, in the near future, the Black Fiend would lead their main forces to their Luo Family. At that time, if they were still unwilling to hand the Invisible Dew over to them, what would await the Luo Family would be a calamity capable of destroying their entire family.

“As those Black and White Skulls actually dared to declare themselves to be the existences who will become the sixth and seventh Great Evildoers, they are most definitely not people to be trifled with.”

“The way I see it, the people the Black Fiend dispatched to attack you all today are merely shrimp soldiers and crab generals. They

were merely sent to test out your strength.”

“If they are to come again, there will definitely be Half Martial Emperors in their ranks. With the strength of your Luo Family, you all will definitely be no match for the Black Fiend,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s true. We also know that we are no match for the Black Fiend. That is why we have been requesting that my father hand over the Invisible Dew to them the entire time. However, my father is very stubborn, and he refuses to hand the Invisible Dew over no matter what,” When speaking of this matter, Luo Huan had a very worried and uneasy appearance. This could not be blamed on her. When a great catastrophe was about to befall someone, when one’s death was before them, how many people would be able to keep calm without fear?

“Exactly what is that Invisible Dew? Is it more important than the survival of your Luo Family?” Du Wanwu asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to smile. It was one thing for others to say words like those. However, Du Wanwu actually said those words.

Back then, Chu Feng had only wanted Du Wanwu to change the rules and coexist with the villagers of the Poison Demon’s Valley peacefully.

Yet, Du Wanwu declared that he could not change the rules left behind by his ancestor, and stubbornly refused to comply with Chu Feng’s demand. In fact, he did not even hesitate even when death was placed before him.

Compared to the Luo Family, Du Wanwu was evidently an individual who was much more stubborn with rules.

If Luo Huan were to know that Du Wanwu was such a person, yet he still had the nerve to talk about them being stubborn, Chu Feng truly wondered what sort of reaction Luo Huan would have.

“Benefactor, you all do not know about this. Although that Invisible Dew has a pleasant sounding name, it is actually a very powerful poison. It is colorless and odorless. Even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists will not be able to detect it.”

“Even though the Invisible Dew is likely not a fatal poison, it is capable of causing paralysis for a period of time. If one is paralyzed, one will no longer have the capability to defend oneself. If the person using the poison had the intention to kill, then the person poisoned will definitely die.”

“With how notorious the Black Fiend is, they most definitely have not planned to use our Luo Family’s Invisible Dew for good deeds. If they are to obtain our Invisible Dew, countless people will end up suffering.”

“My father believes that we simply should not help the evildoers. Thus, he is unwilling to hand over the Invisible Dew,” Luo Huan explained.

“So that’s the case. Since that is the case, why do you all not flee?” Du Wanwu asked.

“Our Luo Family’s Ancestor left a rule that our Luo Family shall live and die with this place. Thus, we will not escape,” Luo Huan said.

“Adherence to old ideas,” Chu Feng sneered. He felt that the Luo Family was truly unsuitable to live in this sort of world.

“Benefactor, what you said is extremely correct. My father is indeed someone who adheres to old ideas. Unfortunately, we are unable to persuade him,” Luo Huan laughed bitterly. She did not blame Chu Feng for saying those words. Instead, she agreed with him completely.

“I wish to ask, how did that Black Fiend come to know of your Luo Family’s Invisible Dew, your Luo Family’s inherited treasure?” Chu Feng asked.

“Someone from our Luo Family blurted it out after drinking too much,” Luo Huan said.

“In that case, has the Black Fiend seen your Luo Family’s Invisible Dew for themselves?” Chu Feng asked.

“No,” Luo Huan shook her head.

“In that case, wouldn’t the problem be solved should you all insist that you do not have the Invisible Dew?” Du Wanwu interrupted.

“If it were that simple, the Black Fiend would not have come to attack us. With the way the Black Fiend handle things, even if our Luo Family insists that we do not possess the Invisible Dew, they will definitely not believe us.”

“The Black Fiend was determined to see the Invisible Dew. If he could not see it, he would eliminate the Luo Family,” Chu Feng guessed.

“What Benefactor Feng Xing says is very correct. Back then, when the Black Fiend sent people over to our Luo Family to demand for the Invisible Dew, my father had said that our Luo Family did not possess any Invisible Dew. In fact, he even publicly killed that person from our Luo Family who had blurted about the Invisible Dew after drinking too much.”

“However, the people from the Black Fiend only laughed at us and left behind these words, ‘Hand over the Invisible Dew within ten days. Otherwise, the Luo Family shall vanish from the face of this earth.’” Luo Huan said.

“As expected, they are vicious and merciless,” Du Wanwu sighed upon hearing those words. A trace of anger emerged in his eyes.

“Since they have not seen the Invisible Dew before, I have a method that can be used to deceive them,” Chu Feng said.

“What method do you have?” Hearing those words, Du Wanwu and Luo Huan asked together.

“I am proficient with world spirit techniques, while Du Wanwu is proficient with poison techniques. It shouldn’t be hard for the two of us to create a fake Invisible Dew,” After saying those words, Chu Feng looked to Du Wanwu and asked, “What do you think?”

“Indeed, we can try that out,” Du Wanwu nodded. As a descendant of the Poison Demon, he was very confident in his poison techniques.

“Benefactors, is that true? Is that really feasible?” Luo Huan was overjoyed to hear those words. In fact, she was feeling a slight bit of disbelief. It was as if she had seen the dawn of a new era, seen the light of hope.

“Unless that Black Fiend possesses Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they will definitely not be able to discover that the Invisible Dew we created is fake,” Chu Feng said.

“That would truly be great!” Hearing those words, the joy on Luo Huan’s face grew even stronger.

“Don’t be happy too quickly. I feel that even if your Luo Family is to hand over the Invisible Dew, you will still not be able to escape from this calamity,” Chu Feng said.

“Benefactor, what do you mean by that?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Luo Huan’s expression changed. Not only her, even Du Wanwu was currently looking at Chu Feng with a confused expression.

“With the way a power like the Black Fiend does things, even if you all are to hand over the Invisible Dew to them, they will likely still kill you all in order to silence you and prevent the matter regarding the Invisible Dew from spreading,” Chu Feng said.

“This... in that case, our Luo Family will really be unable to escape this calamity,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Luo Huan stepped back several steps, and her complexion turned as pale as paper. The joy on her face had completely turned to an expression

of depression.

“Feng Xing, since you already know that they are such ruthless people, why would you suggest making a fake Invisible Dew with me? Isn’t that completely unnecessary?” Du Wanwu asked.

“Du Wanwu, let me ask you this. Since the Luo Family showed kindness to your Ancestor, and your Ancestor left instructions to help the Luo Family, you will definitely not sit and watch without doing anything, you will definitely protect the Luo Family, isn’t that right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Right,” Du Wanwu nodded.

“With your temperament, even if you are to die, you will not cower, isn’t that right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Right,” Du Wanwu nodded.

“In that case, you must be prepared to cause a massacre, isn’t that right?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Right,” Du Wanwu nodded again.

“However, one must possess justifications for killing others. Otherwise, we will become criminal elements equal to the Black Fiend.”

“Firstly, the Black Fiend is a power that has caused countless evils, a power that everyone wants to eliminate. Thus, we have justification for killing them.”

“Secondly, the Black Fiend have come to threaten the Luo Family. What we are doing is merely self-defense. Thus, we have even more justification for killing them.”

“However, it remains that they have made a demand. Thus, if we are to hand the Invisible Dew to them, and they still insist on attacking the Luo Family, we will have even more abundant justification for killing them.”

“Of course, my guess earlier is merely a possibility. If possible, I would like to be able to solve this problem with the Invisible Dew.”

“If that Black Fiend decides not to slaughter the Luo Family after obtaining the Invisible Dew, if we can protect the Luo Family without killing, wouldn’t that be even better?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“You are very correct,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Du Wanwu nodded his head again. At this time, he had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng, because everything that Chu Feng had said was so reasonable that he could not find any fault to refute with.

When even Du Wanwu had acted like this, the gaze which Luo Huan looked to Chu Feng with became even more complicated.

It was one thing for Chu Feng to be a Half Martial Emperor at his young age. However, Chu Feng was actually this cool-headed and calm in the manner he handled things. In merely a short moment, he had thought of all these things and analyzed everything so thoroughly.

This was something impossible for Luo Huan. Not to mention her, likely even her father, the grand Family Head of the Luo Family, would not be able to accomplish what Chu Feng had.

This young man was truly astonishingly powerful.

Chapter 1688 – The Dreadful Intention For Self Interest

“However, there is an item that I will need Third Miss’s help with,” Chu Feng suddenly said.

“Benefactor, what it is? Please do not hesitate and tell me,” Luo Huan said straightforwardly.

“Can you go and gather some drops of Invisible Dew so that the two of us can use them as a reference?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. Even if we are to make a counterfeit, we should still make it resemble the original. If we can see what the Invisible Dew looks like, it will be easier for the two of us to make the counterfeit,” Du Wanwu said.

“No problem, I will go and tell my father about this right away.”

“Benefactors, please wait here for a moment. I will return immediately,” Luo Huan did not dare to hesitate and immediately left. The reason for that was because she knew that Chu Feng and Du Wanwu would be able to save their Luo Family.

Thus, Luo Huan directly arrived at her father’s residence.

At this moment, it was not only her father that was present in his residence. There were also some other people.

Her father had a head full of white hair and a pair of sword-like eyebrows. His gaze appeared very much like the gaze of a family head.

Furthermore, the Luo Family’s Family Head was also the strongest individual in the Luo Family. He was a rank two Half Martial Emperor.

Other than Luo Huan’s father, there were four other people in the room. Two were old men who possessed cultivations of rank one Half Martial Emperor. These two people were Luo Huan’s two

uncles. In the Luo Family, they were elders who possessed very high status. They could be said to be only subordinate to Luo Huan's father and above everyone else.

Other than these three Half Martial Emperors, there were also two rank nine Martial Kings. One was around fifty years old, and the other was around a hundred years old. However, both of them had the appearances of middle-aged men. These two people were Luo Huan's oldest brother and second brother.

Due to the fact that Luo Huan was extremely eager to inform her father about the matter regarding Chu Feng and Du Wanwu, she did not greet them and directly entered the room without knocking on the door.

Luo Huan was overjoyed to see that the most important people in the Luo Family were all gathered here. Immediately, she stepped forward and said, "Father, uncles, big brother, second brother, our Luo Family has encountered noble people. Our Luo Family will be saved."

"Kneel on the floor!" However, before Luo Huan could finish what she wanted to say, a boundless aura appeared unexpectedly and forced her knees to the ground.

The powerful aura not only caused the ground created by special rocks to be shattered, it also caused Luo Huan's knees to bleed.

"Father, what are you doing?" Luo Huan looked to her father with an expression of being wronged. She knew that the oppressive might that had forced her to kneel on the ground was her father's oppressive might. However, she didn't know why her father was doing such a thing.

"You are truly daring! You actually colluded with outsiders to kill the people from the Black Fiend. You are simply pushing our Luo Family onto the path toward destruction!"

"Not only that, you actually invited the culprits that killed the

Black Fiend to our Luo Family as guests. Do you want our Luo Family to be immediately eliminated by the Black Fiend?!" The Luo Family's Family Head pointed at Luo Huan with a shivering finger and spoke with extreme anger.

Hearing those words, Luo Huan's complexion turned red. She was angered. She said, "Father, what are you saying?!"

"It is not us who are killing the people from the Black Fiend. Rather, it was the people from the Black Fiend who were killing us! If it wasn't for the two benefactors, you would not be able to see your daughter again!"

"Yet, how could you say these sorts of words now?! How could you say that I have pushed our Luo Family onto a path toward destruction?! If it must be said, the person who has pushed our Luo Family onto a path toward destruction would be you! If you had handed over the Invisible Dew, these things would not have happened!"

"Sigh, third sister, you are unaware of this. In order to preserve our Luo Family, father has already made the firm resolution to hand over the Invisible Dew."

"However, you all have killed the people from the Black Fiend. Thus, even if we are to hand over the Invisible Dew, the Black Fiend will not let us off. You have truly caused an enormous calamity," Luo Huan's big brother criticized her.

"Enough of the rubbish. Third sister, quickly, tell us where those three people are. We will go and capture them so that we can push all of the blame onto them when the people from the Black Fiend show up," Luo Huan's second brother said.

"That would be for the best," Luo Huan's big brother nodded.

"Big brother, second brother, what are you saying? They are the people who saved my life! How could you do that sort of thing?!" Hearing what they said, Luo Huan was extremely enraged.

“Third sister, we are only doing this because we are thinking about our Luo Family. In the end, they are only outsiders. For the sake of the continued existence of our Luo Family, what wrong is there in sacrificing the lives of three outsiders? Are you someone from our Luo Family or not?” Luo Huan’s big brother said.

“However, one must behave with integrity and conscience. Furthermore, those three people, one of them is only a child,” Luo Huan was unyielding.

“All of you, shut up!” Right at this moment, the Luo Family’s Family Head spoke again. He took a deep breath and then said, “Luo Huan, what your big brother and second brother said is correct. If you are still a person of our Luo Family, lead the way to them.”

“Father, you must absolutely not do that. Not only should we not attack them because they have shown kindness toward us, even if we are to actually attack them, our Luo Family would still be no match for them. You all have not seen them. They are extremely powerful. They are definitely not ordinary people.”

“Not to mention big brother and second brother, even if you and uncles were to act together, you all would still be no match for them,” Luo Huan urged against it with determination.

“You are truly speaking highly of others and denouncing your own people! Bring us there right away. I shall see exactly who they are for you to exaggerate them in this manner.”

Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother both arrived before Luo Huan. They picked her up and prepared to leave. They were planning to force Luo Huan to show them the way to capture Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan’er.

“There’s no need for that.”

However, right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded. At the same time, the tightly shut door was abruptly and violently

opened.

At the moment when the door was opened, the people from the Luo Family noticed that there were three figures outside.

“Benefactors!” Luo Huan was shocked to see these three people. The reason for that was because they were none other than Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan’er.

“Du Wanwu, didn’t I say that the Luo Family would not hand over the Invisible Dew for us to use as a reference that easily?”

“Merely, I didn’t expect that the people of the Luo Family would be this despicable. We saved them out of kindness, yet they actually wanted to capture us so as to push the blame onto us; they want us to die. Truly, this is the dreadful intent of self interest.”

Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. Even though he was very surprised by all this, he was able to accept it.

Compared to Chu Feng’s calmness, Du Wanwu’s expression was extremely ugly. Evidently, he had not expected that the people of the Luo Family would act like this.

“Perfect timing,” Right at this moment, Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother suddenly moved. They turned into two rays of light and, with the imposing might of rank nine Martial Kings, they charged toward Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan’er.

At the same time, their hands started to move about. Numerous powerful eagle claws were being shot out from their hands. That was a martial skill. They were trying to capture Chu Feng and the others alive.

Faced with the attacks of these two men, Du Wanwu did not even bother to move. As for Chu Feng, he first pulled Goudan’er behind him, and then stepped forward; he had stepped in front of Du Wanwu.

However, Chu Feng did not attack. Instead, with a smile on his face, he quietly waited for the two men’s attacks to arrive.

Chapter 1689 – Revealing Godly Might

“Papapapa~~~”

At this moment, Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother had reached Chu Feng. Several eagle claws that carried enormous power were landing on Chu Feng’s body nonstop, ruthlessly grabbing onto his flesh. Furthermore, they were all on his joints. It seemed that the eagle claws were trying to shatter Chu Feng’s joints.

However, no matter how hard they tried, the eagle claws were unable to shake Chu Feng at all.

Standing there, Chu Feng was like an unshakable god. There was simply no way for them to harm Chu Feng in the slightest.

In fact, after this series of attacks, Luo Huan’s big brother and second brothers’ hands were drenched with blood. Even their bones had shattered. Before they could harm Chu Feng, they themselves were already injured.

“You...?”

After finding out that their series of attacks had been useless, Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother stood there with stunned expressions as they looked at Chu Feng. At this time, fear emerged in their eyes. Evidently, they had realized that the situation was not good.

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed and he shouted, “Scram.” Then, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might swept forth, and knocked Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother several meters away.

Chu Feng’s powerful might not only knocked Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother away, it had also caused the buildings, walls, and houses in the range of several miles to shatter.

Seeing this, the Luo Family’s Family Head immediately acted to

relieve Chu Feng's power from Luo Huan's big brother and second brother. However, even with this being the case, Luo Huan's big brother and second brother were already bleeding from both their mouths and noses and had their breastbones shattered; the two of them had already become half crippled.

“Rank two Half Martial Emperor?”

Upon sensing Chu Feng's aura, the Luo Family's Family Head and the two rank one Half Martial Emperors all had an enormous change in expression. Evidently, none of them had anticipated that Chu Feng would be this powerful.

What Luo Huan had said was actually true. These two youngsters before them were not to be trifled with.

The commotion caused by Chu Feng earlier had also caught the attention of the other people from the Luo Family. One by one, they grasped their weapons and rushed over. However, upon reaching the place where the fighting was going on and seeing the scene before them, none of them were able to remain unfrightened. They had all become lost as to what to do.

The reason for that was because they were all able to sense that Chu Feng was emitting the aura of a rank two Half Martial Emperor. A man this young actually possessed a cultivation on par with their Family Head. Wouldn't this mean that he was a legendary exceptional genius?

Why would such a person come to their Luo Family? Could it be that their Luo Family had provoked an existence even more frightening than the Black Fiend?

“Since you fear the Black Fiend this much, why didn't you hand the Invisible Dew over to them sooner? Your indecision has brought about your own destruction. You are unqualified to be the family head,” Chu Feng looked to the Luo Family's Family Head and mocked him unrestrainedly.

“I do not need a brat like you to tell me how to handle things!”

As the Luo Family’s Family Head spoke, he acted to attack Chu Feng. As a rank two Half Martial Emperor, his attack was not something to be trifled with. Not only did he take out a Royal Armament, he also unleashed a Mortal Taboo Martial Skill right away.

It was not only the Luo Family’s Family Head that attacked, Luo Huan’s two uncles also acted to attack Chu Feng at the same time. The three of them all unleashed their full strength to attack Chu Feng. They were simply not planning to capture Chu Feng and the others alive. Rather, they were planning to kill the three of them.

“Overestimating your capabilities.”

Faced with this combined attack from the three men, Chu Feng snorted coldly. Then, a cold flash shone through his eyes, and his surging aura instantly swept forth.

Not only had the three Half Martial Emperors from the Luo Family used Taboo Martial Skills, they had also used their Royal Armaments. Their attack power was shockingly dreadful.

However, Chu Feng had merely used his aura. Yet, his imposing might surpassed that of the combined attack from the three men. In fact, that was not all. Chu Feng’s might had also absolutely suppressed their combined might.

This was all because the three of them were only ordinary Half Martial Emperors, whereas Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

“Boom~~~”

Following a loud explosion, thick smoke surged forth, and rocks and sand began to roll and fly. The Luo Family’s Family Head and the two elders were both knocked several meters away. Their bodies were covered with blood, and their auras had become extremely weak.

However, even though Luo Huan was in the heart of the battle, she was completely unharmed. Not even a speck of dust landed on her body.

Seeing this scene, the people from the Luo Family were all stunned like chickens. Their bodies were all shivering.

In fact, many of the people that were prepared to attack earlier involuntarily dropped the weapons that they were holding and fell on their butts in fear.

After all, the three men who had attacked earlier were the strongest people in their Luo Family. However, their opponent had defeated them and left them in such a state without even moving. This was truly too enormously powerful.

Most importantly, at the moment when Chu Feng attacked, they felt an extremely frightening oppression. That oppression surpassed that of their Family Head by over several times.

The young man before them was so frightening that he could cause their hair to stand on end. It was definitely impossible for their Luo Family to be a match for someone like that.

“You... exactly who are you?”

The Luo Family’s Family Head wiped clean the blood on the corner of his mouth. However, his aura was still very unstable and weak. When he spoke those words, he sounded extremely weak.

However, undoubtedly, he now had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. At this time, his gaze was filled with fear.

He finally realized how frightening this young man before him was.

“Who I am is not important. All you need to know is that even without the Black Fiend doing anything, I myself will be able to eliminate your entire Luo Family,” As Chu Feng said those words, a flash of ruthlessness shone through his eyes.

“Buzz~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Royal level world spirit power began to emit from Chu Feng's body like golden light. His world spirit power sealed off heaven and earth. In merely a blink of an eye, the entire Luo Family was sealed off by him.

However, that was not all there was to it. After Chu Feng sealed off the entire Luo Family with his world spirit power, more world spirit power began to transform into countless sharp spears. Densely packed, the spears descended from the sky and aimed at the entire Luo Family.

At this moment, all of the people from the Luo Family were deeply frightened. All sorts of wailing and howling sounds were being heard nonstop. They were all able to detect how frighteningly powerful the spears in the sky were. If those spears were to land, there would not be a single survivor left in the Luo Family. This region of land would be left with the devastation of a disaster.

“Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist!!!”

Upon seeing the world spirit power that sealed off heaven and earth, the Luo Family's Family Head and the two Half Martial Emperor-level elders had extremely dejected expressions and stood there stunned, as if they were petrified.

In the Luo Family, the three of them were most definitely the people with the most knowledge. Thus, they were able to recognize that Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Chu Feng was only in his early twenties. In the entire Holy Land of Martialism, there were extremely few Royal-cloak World Spiritists his age. As for Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, there were even fewer.

However, undoubtedly, each and every one of them were world-shaking grand characters who possessed extremely robust and

powerful backgrounds.

Not only had such a grand character arrived at their Luo Family, he had also been planning to help them. This would've been a great fortune to their Luo Family.

Yet... yet they had been unable to differentiate good from bad, unable to recognize others' good intentions, and had wanted to use him as a scapegoat for their crimes. They were simply devoid of conscience, worse than dogs and pigs.

At this moment, they finally realized how enormously stupid their decision was. They now knew that their Luo Family was definitely going to cease existing. The reason for that was because a genius like the one before them would always possess power behind them that was much more frightening than that of the Black Fiend.

As for the main cause of this disaster, it would be they themselves. They had offended someone that they should not have. They were the ones who pushed their Luo Family down the path to destruction.

However, they were unable to feel any hatred for Chu Feng. The reason for that was because they knew from the bottoms of their hearts that they were the ones in the wrong. Even if their Luo Family were to be destroyed by Chu Feng, they could only blame it on their own stupidity.

“Benefactor, please don't! Benefactor, please show leniency!”

Seeing this scene, Luo Huan immediately kneeled before Chu Feng and began to plead for her Luo Family. At this moment, she was also aware of how powerful Chu Feng was.

In fact, Chu Feng was so powerful that he had already greatly surpassed her imagination. With a single thought, he was capable of utterly annihilating their Luo Family.

“Young Hero, all of the wrongs are mine only. If you must kill,

then please kill me. Please spare the rest of the people from our Luo Family. They are all innocent,” At the same time, the Luo Family’s Family Head also kneeled and started begging Chu Feng for forgiveness.

He was not hopeful that Chu Feng would spare their Luo Family. However, he still wished to be able to obtain a thread of survival for them.

Chapter 1690 – Invisible Dew

“Heh...” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng laughed.

“Earlier, when I wanted to help your Luo Family, you instead wanted to kill me. Now, you’re kneeling before me and begging for me to let your Luo Family go.”

“Luo Family’s Family Head, how shall I say this to you? If I must describe you, then I suppose nine words would be sufficient.”

“Bullies... the weak... fears... the strong, muddleheaded... and... incompetent,” Chu Feng pointed at the Luo Family’s Family Head and said those words one at a time.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the Luo Family’s Family Head started to tremble. His expression became extremely depressed. It was as if over ten thousand invisible blades had pierced into his body, covering him with cuts and bruises.

Chu Feng’s nine words had completely described his failings. He was unable to refute it. Those words had deeply penetrated his heart.

It was only after a very long time that the Luo Family’s Family Head managed to get over those words. He said, “Yes, yes, yes, I am indeed muddleheaded and incompetent. I am indeed someone who bullies the weak and fears the strong. Regardless of whether you want to kill or punish me, I will have no complaints. However, please, please do not implicate the other people of our Luo Family.”

“Young Hero, I beg of you,” The Luo Family’s Family Head began to beg and kowtow to Chu Feng nonstop. He was extremely lowly and petty-looking.

It was not that he was an enormously cowardly person. Rather, it was because after he saw Chu Feng’s might, he did not dare to not act this lowly and petty.

In fact, it was not only the Luo Family's Family Head that was kowtowing and begging Chu Feng right now. It was only natural for people to fear death. Not all families and clans were as unyielding as the Du Clan.

When even the Luo Family's Family Head was acting this way, one could easily imagine how the people from the Luo Family would act. Thus, at this moment, of ten individuals, at least eight of them were begging Chu Feng to spare their lives.

“Third Miss, please get up. If I had truly wanted to eliminate your Luo Family, your Luo Family would've already been gone from this earth to begin with.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he slightly lifted his palm, and a powerful force brought the kneeling Luo Huan back up. However, Chu Feng had only brought Luo Huan up from kneeling.

After he finished saying those words, with a thought from Chu Feng, the world spirit formation that sealed off the entire Luo Family, as well as the world spirit spears, all shattered into countless specks of golden light. Like golden raindrops, they slowly sprinkled down from the sky. Merely, at this time, Chu Feng's world spirit power no longer possessed any destructive power.

“We have not come here to destroy your Luo Family. Instead, we have come to help your Luo Family. Thus, all of you can get back up. I will not kill you all,” Chu Feng said.

The crowd did not dare to believe what they had heard with their ears. One by one, they were stunned. They did not believe this was real.

The Luo Family's Family Head was the first to react. With an expression of disbelief, he asked, “Young Hero, you... you are really willing to spare our Luo Family and help us instead?”

The reason why the Luo Family's Family Head asked those words was because he had discovered that Chu Feng was extraordinarily

powerful and greatly surpassed his imagination. Thus, he was most definitely not someone ordinary. Likely, he possessed an enormous origin, and thus possessed the strength to save their Luo Family.

However, he was also very worried. After all, he was the one had been heartless and unjust to begin with. He was extremely wrong. Would Chu Feng really be willing to disregard former hatreds and continue to help their Luo Family?

“I said that I would help you, thus, I’ll help you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he suddenly waved his sleeve. Then, a boundless world spirit palace suddenly appeared. Luo Huan, the Luo Family’s Family Head and Luo Huan’s two brothers, as well as the other two elders were covered by the world spirit palace. As for the other people from the Luo Family, they were isolated and left outside of the palace.

As the saying goes, the walls have ears. There were some things that Chu Feng needed to say. However, those were things that he could not say publicly, as there was no guarantee that there were no traitors that worked for the Black Fiend within the Luo Family.

When Luo Huan’s big brother and second brother saw the world spirit palace that had covered them, they revealed expressions of fear, and thought that Chu Feng was planning to kill them.

“Buzz~~~~”

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a world spirit formation appeared out of nowhere. Then, five rays of light shot out. They respectively landed on the Luo Family’s Family Head and the two elders, as well as Luo Huan’s two brothers.

After being enveloped by the light, the injuries that these five people had sustained began to rapidly heal. Soon, their auras returned to normal. Even the bloodstains on their clothes disappeared.

“Thank you, Young Hero, for the grace of not killing us.”

At this moment, the people from the Luo Family all came to believe that Chu Feng was not planning to kill them. Otherwise, he would not have treated their injuries.

“I am not helping your Luo Family free of charge. I want your Luo Family’s Invisible Dew,” Chu Feng said.

“Invisible Dew?” Hearing those words, not to mention the people from the Luo Family, even Du Wanwu was shocked.

“Feng Xing, why would you need that Invisible Dew? If you are to do that, how are you different from the Black Fiend?” Du Wanwu asked with a puzzled expression.

“Different? Of course I am!”

“The Black Fiend wanted the Invisible Dew without any reason. When the Luo Family refused to hand it over to them, the Black Fiend planned to exterminate them. Thus, the one in the wrong is the Black Fiend.”

“As for the Luo Family and us, it is the Luo Family that was ungrateful and heartless toward us first. They were the ones who wanted to kill us. Thus, I am being extremely benevolent by not killing them. Therefore, what wrong is there in me demanding some Invisible Dew as compensation?”

“You should know that we had originally planned to help the Luo Family free of charge. However, not only was the Luo Family not grateful to us, they instead wanted to kill us. They have truly disappointed me.”

“Thus, if it wasn’t for giving the Luo Family’s Third Miss’ face, I would have definitely not let the Luo Family off.”

“However, even if it is to give the Third Miss face, I still cannot let this matter pass just like this. The Luo Family must compensate me for my mental trauma.”

“Otherwise, if this matter were to spread out in the future, if people are to know that I, Feng Xing, tried to help someone but was instead stabbed in the back, yet I decided to not look after that matter, I will definitely become everyone’s laughingstock.”

“In the future, how would I, Feng Xing, be able to continue to exist in the Holy Land of Martialism? Who should be blamed for this?”

Chu Feng argued strongly and spoke with an unyielding tone.

“This...” Du Wanwu didn’t know how to respond. Indeed, Chu Feng was being extremely benevolent to not eliminate the Luo Family. Even if he wanted Invisible Dew as compensation, it would not be excessive.

Truth be told, if it wasn’t for the instructions of his Ancestor, with Du Wanwu’s temperament, he would definitely not spare the Luo Family.

However, since his Ancestor had left instructions, no matter how the Luo Family treated him, he would still help the Luo Family. Du Wanwu was just a stubborn person like that.

“Young Hero, what you said is right. It is I who was too ungrateful. You decided to help us out of kindness, yet I tried to place you all as the culprits before the Black Fiend. I am truly inhumane and devoid of conscience. I will agree to all your demands. As long as you can save our Luo Family, I am willing to hand over all of the Invisible Dew to you.” At this moment, how could the Luo Family’s Family Head possibly dare to refute Chu Feng? He had an expression of compliance to everything that Chu Feng demanded.

“Very well, this matter is decided then. However, I must tell you this. While I will help your Luo Family, I had never said that I would definitely be able to save your Luo Family. You understand what I mean, right?” Chu Feng said.

“I understand, I understand,” The Luo Family’s Family Head nodded repeatedly.

“In that case, why are you still here? Quickly go and bring the Invisible Dew over. Remember, bring all of it,” Chu Feng said.

“Yes, yes, yes. Young Hero, please wait a moment. I will return right away,” The Luo Family’s Family Head did not dare to hesitate. He immediately turned around and left.

Not long afterward, he returned. In his hand was a foot-tall bottle. This bottle was very exquisite. It was transparent in color. Thus, one could see what was contained inside. Inside the bottle was something that looked like water, and the entire bottle was filled with it.

Chu Feng opened the bottle and took a sniff. It was colorless and odorless. He was unable to detect anything. Even when he used his spirit power to sense the water-like substance in the bottle, he was unable to detect anything special regarding it.

It was only when Chu Feng carefully inspected the water-like substance with his Heaven’s Eyes that he discovered that it was a bit strange. Other than that, Chu Feng was unable to discover anything.

However, Chu Feng was certain about one thing, that this Invisible Dew was a treasure, a rare treasure.

Chapter 1691 – Benefactor's Descendant

Du Wanwu was also observing the Invisible Dew from the side. In the end, he said, “What a good item. This sort of poison is not something that I can refine. Likely, it is something my Ancestor made.”

“You’re saying that this is something that your Ancestor presented to the Luo Family?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is definitely the case. I am able to recognize the poisons created by my Ancestor,” Du Wanwu nodded.

“Young Hero, who is your great Ancestor?” Hearing those words, the Luo Family’s Family Head looked to Du Wanwu with a shocked expression. There was an obvious change in his gaze.

“Even if I spoke his name, you all would not know who he is. However, I am certain that your family’s Inherited Treasure is something that my Ancestor created,” Du Wanwu said.

“Father, the reason why these Young Heroes were willing to help us was because Young Hero Du Wanwu’s Ancestor had some relationship with our Luo Family fifteen thousand years ago,” Luo Huan hurriedly explained.

“Young Hero, I dare ask, is your Ancestor known as the Poison Demon?” The Luo Family’s Family Head asked.

“How did you know?” Du Wanwu was surprised. That was because Luo Huan clearly did not know who the Poison Demon was. However, it seemed that the Luo Family’s Family Head seemed to know about the Poison Demon.

“This...” When he saw Du Wanwu’s reaction, the expression of the Luo Family’s Family Head changed enormously. An indescribable mood filled his heart. Then, with a ‘putt,’ he actually kneeled onto the ground before Du Wanwu and Chu Feng.

With a loud voice, he said, “Our benefactor’s descendant is before

me. Yet, I actually wanted to kill our benefactor's descendant. I have truly sinned and shall be killed ten thousand times, killed ten thousand times!!!”

After saying those words, the Luo Family's Family Head raised his arms and ‘pa, pa, pa, pa...” began to ruthlessly slap and hit himself.

He beat himself to a bloody face with cuts and bruises all over. Yet, even with that, he still refused to stop, and had the attitude of wanting to beat himself to death.

This scene not only shocked Du Wanwu, but even Luo Huan and the others were shocked. They did not know why the Luo Family's Family Head was acting in such a manner.

“Father, what are you doing?” Luo Huan walked toward her father and asked worriedly.

“Other than Huan'er, everyone else from our Luo Family, kneel down and apologize to benefactor's descendant,” The Luo Family's Family Head spoke with a loud voice.

Hearing those words, even though the other people from the Luo Family were confused as to what was happening, they all kneeled onto the ground.

“Benefactor, I truly have no eyes. I truly deserve to be killed ten thousand times for my crimes. Please, please kill me,” The Luo Family's Family Head said.

This time around, there was a clear distinction between his attitude from before. Earlier, he had been begging for death because he feared that Chu Feng would extinguish their Luo Family. He was trying to shoulder all of the blame himself.

However, this time around, he was begging for death from the bottom of his heart because he was too ashamed and wanted to use his death to apologize for his fault.

“What exactly is going on? It would not be too late to seek death

after you explain what's going on," At this moment when everyone was confused, Chu Feng said.

After what Chu Feng said, the Luo Family's Family Head spoke of his reason for behaving in such a manner. It turned out that fifteen thousand years ago, there had indeed been someone from the Luo Family who had saved the Poison Demon.

At that time, the Poison Demon had been seriously injured. That person from the Luo Family saved the Poison Demon and brought him back to the Luo Family. However, the Poison Demon's injuries were not something that the people from the Luo Family could cure. In the end, it was the Poison Demon who healed his own injuries.

Even though they had not saved his life, the Poison Demon was still extremely grateful to the Luo Family.

Back then, the Five Poisons Mountain not only had the Luo Family. In addition to them, there was also a great enemy to their Luo Family. In order to fight over the authority to control the Five Poisons Mountain, the two families fought each other both openly and secretly for a very long time.

At the moment when the Poison Demon woke up from healing his injuries, it was right at the crucial moment when the Luo Family was fighting their enemy. Furthermore, it happened that the Luo Family had been no match for them, and were faced with the disaster of extermination.

Feeling grateful to the Luo Family, the Poison Demon exterminated the Luo Family's great enemy and completely rooted them out. It was only through that, that the Luo Family became the ruler of the Five Poisons Mountain.

Furthermore, the Poison Demon left behind the Invisible Dew to compensate the Luo Family for the grace they had shown him.

However, that was something that only the person that saved the

Poison Demon and the then Luo Family's Family Head knew about.

When the Poison Demon left, he had instructed the Luo Family not to mention this matter to anyone else, and pretend that he had never appeared.

Even though the Poison Demon had helped the Luo Family out of gratefulness, he had still helped the Luo Family enormously. To the Luo Family, the Poison Demon was their great benefactor.

The Luo Family's Family Head at that time felt that he could not let his descendants forget about the enormous grace and kindness shown by the Poison Demon, that he must continue to inform them about this matter. However, he was also unwilling to go against the Poison Demon's wish. Thus, he had only told this to the next Luo Family's Family Head and instructed that this matter, while it could not be mentioned to anyone else, must be known by each successive Family Head; that they could not forget about the grace shown by the Poison Demon.

Thus, only the Luo Family's successive Family Heads knew about the matter regarding the Poison Demon. Other than their successive Family Heads, none of the other people from the Luo Family knew about it.

Today, after the Luo Family's Family Head heard what Du Wanwu said, he had realized everything. It turned out that this green-skinned young man before him was the Poison Demon's descendant, their Luo Family's benefactor's descendant.

After knowing about this, he was overcome with extreme pain. He felt that he had let down his ancestors and their benefactor, and that he should die to pay for his crimes. That was the reason why he had such an intense reaction.

"Luo Family Head, you could be considered to be someone with difficulties. Your conduct and deeds were all done for the sake of the Luo Family. Thus, I will disregard the things that happened today."

After knowing about those things, Du Wanwu completely forgave the Luo Family's Family Head because he had felt the sincerity of the Luo Family's Family Head.

As for Chu Feng, if it wasn't for the fact that he knew that Du Wanwu would insist on helping the Luo Family regardless of what they did, he would not have stayed to help these sorts of people.

However, since things had already progressed like this, Chu Feng had no other choice but to help the Luo Family. After all, he knew that Du Wanwu would still help them.

After this, the attitude the Luo Family's Family Head had toward Chu Feng and the others became exceptionally good. He began to provide warm hospitality to them. It was as if he wanted to bring out all of the best things that their Luo Family possessed to present to Chu Feng's group.

Chu Feng knew that this was not only because the Luo Family's Family Head feared them. More than that, it was mainly because the Luo Family's Family Head was expressing his gratefulness to Du Wanwu for being the descendant of the Poison Demon.

After these things, Chu Feng's impression of the Luo Family took a turn for the better. Regardless of how heartless and unjust they were before, they still possessed a deeply grateful side to them.

When everyone from the Luo Family came to know that Chu Feng's group would not only not eliminate their Luo Family, but instead help them with the Black Fiend, they were all overjoyed.

They had experienced Chu Feng's strength themselves. Thus, they felt that if Chu Feng were to help them, they would be able to escape this calamity.

However, only Chu Feng knew that the Black Fiend would not be that easy to handle. After all, their leaders were people who dared to proclaim themselves as being able to become the Holy Land of Martialism's sixth and seventh Evildoers. Even if they were not

Martial Emperors, they should be at least peak Half Martial Emperors. Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were still no match for peak Half Martial Emperors.

Thus, everything was still going to be handled the way they had originally planned.

At this moment, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were working together to make counterfeit Invisible Dew. Actually, to Chu Feng and Du Wanwu, this was not hard at all. In merely half a day, the two of them had succeeded.

After they had finished making the counterfeit Invisible Dew, Chu Feng said to Du Wanwu, “Du Wanwu, I’ll state this beforehand. I will not throw away Goudan’er’s and my life for the sake of this Luo Family.”

“After the people from the Black Fiend come, if we can handle them, then we shall handle them. However, if we cannot, I will not defend this place to the death.”

“This matter is unrelated to you two to begin with. Even if you two do not help, it will still be understandable,” Du Wanwu said.

“You are quite reasonable. Very well, let’s go. We have proper business to take care of. Do not forget about why we have come here to begin with,” Chu Feng got up and said. He was planning to go to the Five Poisons Mountain to retrieve the Gu the Poison Demon left in the Five Poisons Mountain back then.

Chapter 1692 – Mysterious Old Man

“But, the Luo Family is currently facing a crisis; the people from the Black Fiend might come at any moment. Is it really proper for us to leave at such a time?” Du Wanwu understood what Chu Feng wanted to do. However, he was worried about the safety of the people from the Luo Family.

“Du Wanwu, I’ve discovered everything regarding the way you think. You possess a one-track mind that is unable to turn around at all.”

“When even the Luo Family knows about the importance of the rise and fall of their family, how could you, Du Wanwu, not know about it?”

“Back then, the Poison Demon was that impressive and dared to contend against the Three Palaces by himself.”

“Look at the Du Clan now. Not to mention contending against the Three Palaces, any random one of the Nine Powers would be able to completely exterminate your Du Clan.”

“As for you, you bear the heavy responsibility of reviving your Du Clan. That mission of yours is more important than any instruction left behind by your Ancestor, for if you are to die, it will be extremely difficult for the Du Clan to emerge in power again. At that time, you will be the one who is unfilial to your Du Clan.”

“Thus, rather than worrying about the Luo Family, you should worry about yourself first. You should go and obtain that Gu first. Moreover, the Luo Family is located right underneath the Five Poisons Mountain. If something is to happen, we will be able to hear it and return immediately.”

“If you are still worried, I can set up a spirit formation around here,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Du Wanwu's expression changed. He became speechless for a long time. Then, after his mind settled, he looked at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, I am truly inferior to you."

"Why did you suddenly say that?" Chu Feng asked.

"I am not as talented as you. You also possess a much deeper understanding of principles than me. Most importantly, not only do you know principles, you can also act upon them."

"As for me, my great downfall is that even if I understand the principles of something, I am oftentimes unable to act upon them. It is as you said, I have a one-track mind, and am stubborn. This is my shortcoming, something that I must change."

"However, since I have already agreed to protect the Luo Family, I must keep my word. I, Du Wanwu, am someone who always keeps my promises," Du Wanwu said.

"What exactly is your intention then? Are we going to retrieve the Gu or not? Du Wanwu, you should know that this is something concerning your Du Clan and not me, Chu Feng," Chu Feng said.

"We'll go. However, you must set up spirit formations around here to protect the Luo Family," Du Wanwu said.

"I would have done that without you saying it. After all, Goudan'er and the Third Miss are both in the Luo Family. I do not wish for an unexpected accident to happen to them," Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng set up layer upon layer of spirit formations around the entire Luo Family. Not only were there defensive spirit formations and detection spirit formations, there were also trap spirit formations and concealment spirit formations.

At this moment, the Luo Family appeared to be no different when looked at from the outside, and Chu Feng's spirit formations could not be seen either, but the Luo Family was actually covered

with layers of traps. Not to mention Martial Kings, even ordinary Half Martial Emperors would undoubtedly die should they try to trespass into the Luo Family.

After setting up the spirit formations, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu proceeded to the Five Poisons Mountain.

The Five Poisons Mountain was very large. The reason why it was called the Five Poisons Mountain was because there had been five monstrous beast kings that appeared on this mountain. Those five monstrous beast kings were all very powerful, and were all experts in poison techniques.

Even though the five monstrous beast kings were now only legends, there were indeed a lot of poisonous insects and beasts on the Five Poisons Mountain.

These poisonous insects and beasts were all great materials for concocting medicines. Thus, they could be said to be quite valuable. This was also the reason why the Luo Family had fought against their enemy for control of the Five Poisons Mountain fifteen thousand years ago.

However, the Five Poisons Mountain was definitely not as simple as it appeared to be. Otherwise, the Poison Demon would not have chosen this place to cultivate the Gu that could only mature after ten thousand years.

The deepest region of the Five Poisons Mountain could be said to be a place that contained an enormous amount of poison. Each and every object there possessed poisonous properties. It was a forbidden area that ordinary people did not dare to enter.

At this moment, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu had already entered the deepest region of the Five Poisons Mountain. They were going straight for the location where the Gu was being nurtured, according to the map in their hands.

“Someone’s here?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes flashed. He hurriedly stopped moving forward. Cautiously, he looked into the distance.

At this moment, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were in the deepest region of the Five Poisons Mountain. Even though this place appeared to have nothing peculiar in it, it actually gave off a very strong oppressive sensation. It was simply impossible for people underneath the Half Martial Emperor realm to reach this place.

However, in the direction where Chu Feng was looking, there was a lake. That was not an ordinary lake. The water in the lake was green and bubbling disgustingly. As the bubbles burst, they emitted extremely stinky odors. That was a poison lake.

Not to mention the water of that poison lake, merely the poisonous gas emitted by the lake had caused the surrounding hundred miles to be completely barren, without even grass growing.

However, an old man was actually sitting in midair above the poison lake. This old man had a fishing rod in his hand, and was actually angling above the lake.

This old man was the reason why Chu Feng started to act this cautiously.

This old man was as thin as a matchstick. He wore plain cyan cotton clothing. Looking from afar, he appeared no different from an ordinary old man. However, he emitted an immortal-like aura. From a single glance, one could tell that he was an extraordinary character.

“That man is truly powerful. In the records left behind by my Ancestor, he had written that the Five Poisons Mountain is extremely poisonous because there exist three thousand eight hundred and eighty three poison lakes on the Five Poisons Mountain.”

“These poison lakes are all incomparably dangerous. They are

the reason why the depths of the Five Poisons Mountain have become a restricted area. Even we people from the Du Clan who have been associated with poison since birth are warned by our Ancestor to not enter the poison lakes should we come and retrieve the Gu in the future.”

“This is especially true for the poison lake before us. It is known to be the number one poison lake of the Five Poisons Mountain. The poison gas emitted from this poison lake is capable of forming poisonous substances. It is extremely powerful. If we are to approach the poison lake, we will definitely be attacked by those poisonous substances.”

“Yet, that man actually dares to fish in this place. He is clearly provoking those poisonous substances. His nerve is truly enormously large. Exactly who might he be?” Du Wanwu sized that old man up with his gaze and then revealed a cautious expression, because they did not know whether that old man might be a friend or foe.

After hearing what Du Wanwu said, Chu Feng looked to the map in his hand and discovered that the lake before them was indeed recorded on the map. Sure enough, this lake was extremely dangerous.

“Youngster, you are destined to meet calamities one after another.”

Right at this moment, that old man suddenly turned his gaze to Chu Feng. He actually spoke to Chu Feng.

“Senior, who might you be?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had already realized that this old man was extraordinary, and might even be a Martial Emperor. Even if he was not a Martial Emperor, he would definitely be a peak Half Martial Emperor.

The reason for that was because he gave Chu Feng a feeling, the

feeling of being unable to see through him. People that gave Chu Feng that sort of feeling were generally all people that were much more powerful than him.

“Don’t be afraid, I have come to help you,” The old man said with a smile.

“Help me?” Chu Feng started to frown upon hearing those words. He did not know who this old man was. His sudden appearance in this place had caused Chu Feng to be uneasy to begin with. And now, he actually declared that he had come to help him. This made Chu Feng even more certain that it was not a coincidence that this old man had appeared here. Likely, he had come for him.

“Senior, do you know who I am? Why have you come to help me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Heh...” Hearing those words, the old man smiled. Then, he said, “Chu Feng, while you can deceive others, you cannot deceive me.”

“Senior, exactly who might you be?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng immediately clasped his fist with one hand respectfully. Since this old man knew who he was, he was definitely an extraordinary person.

“Who I am is not important. The important thing is that I will help you,” The old man looked to Chu Feng with a smile.

Chapter 1693 – Extremely Dangerous Location

“Since senior does not wish to say who he is, junior will not ask anymore. However, since senior said that my life is destined to be filled with calamities and that you have come to help me, may I know how you’re going to help me?”

From the gaze of this old man, Chu Feng felt that he had not come to cause him harm. Instead, he seemed to have really come to help him. Thus, Chu Feng relaxed his guard.

Let alone, before someone like the old man before him, even if he didn’t lower his guard, it would still be useless. If the old man wished to kill him, he would not be able to escape death.

“Calamities from heaven cannot be avoided. Calamities caused by humans cannot be escaped from. Your calamities are from heaven. As for why, it’s because your talent is too exceptional. With exceptional talent, you will inevitably cause others to become jealous of you and see you as a threat.”

“It is people’s nature to fear what they are uncertain of. To them, the best method would be to eradicate the thing that threatens them. That is why you are destined to be met with calamities one after another. Because of your talent, you are destined to have people who want to eliminate you,” The old man said.

“Senior, please inform this junior how I can dissolve these calamities of mine,” Chu Feng asked respectfully.

“One cannot avoid calamities. Instead, one must meet them head-on. One cannot flee from disasters. Instead, one must meet them head-on.”

“You can comprehend the meaning behind those words yourself,” The old man said with a smile.

“It’s here,” Suddenly, the old man’s gaze flashed. Then, he

abruptly swung his fishing rod. The fishing rod turned into a ray of light and flew toward the sky.

“Hulala~~~”

In an instant, waves of water surged toward the sky and the earth started to tremble. A sea monster a hundred meters long with the size of a small mountain was pulled out from the lake. It had its stinky mouth wide open as it tried to devour the old man.

Once this sea monster appeared, a ferocious oppressive sensation swept forth. Even though Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were very far away from the lake, they were still knocked several miles away by that oppressive might before they were able to steady themselves.

“It’s a poisonous substance from the lake. It is formed by poison gas and possesses no intelligence. All it knows is killing.”

“It, it is actually a Martial Emperor!!!” Upon seeing that monster, Du Wanwu cried out in alarm.

The reason for that was because the sea monster was even more powerful than he had anticipated it to be. It was not a peak Half Martial Emperor, and was actually a Martial Emperor. Even though it did not possess intelligence, it possessed the strength of a rank one Martial Emperor.

At this moment, it was not only Du Wanwu who was in shock. Chu Feng’s gaze had also become extremely serious.

After all, the poisonous substance was truly too frightening. Not only was it very powerful by itself, it also possessed the geographical advantage when inside the poison lake. The poison energy within the lake was all being used by it.

However, even with this being the case, that old man still had an unchanged expression without the slightest bit of alarm.

“In.”

That old man suddenly shouted with a low voice. Then, that

enormous poisonous substance actually disappeared. At the same time, that old man had also disappeared.

Even the surface of the lake that had waves rolling about returned to the way it was before. It was as if nothing had ever happened. It was strangely tranquil.

“That poisonous substance cannot leave the Five Poisons Mountain. However, it is capable of leaving the poison lake. The two of you will have to pass by this place. Even if you are to avoid the poison lake, it will still attack you two.”

“I have helped you two with this calamity. As for what remains, you two will have to take care of them yourselves.”

Even though the poisonous substance and the old man had both disappeared, the old man’s voice sounded again. Merely, after his voice was heard, he no longer appeared. No matter how much Chu Feng expressed his thanks, that old man would not answer.

“Chu Feng, who was that person?” Du Wanwu asked.

“I don’t know. I don’t recognize him,” Chu Feng said.

“He’s very powerful. He was able to easily take care of that rank one Martial Emperor-level poisonous substance. If it wasn’t for him, we might really have become things inside the stomach of that poisonous substance.”

“However, why would he help you all of a sudden?” Du Wanwu looked to Chu Feng with a complicated expression. Ever since they had left the Poison Demon’s Valley, his impression of Chu Feng had been changing nonstop.

Firstly, Chu Feng was very mature, and would think matters through with careful consideration and execute things according to the way he thought. This had caused admiration in Du Wanwu, making him feel inferior to Chu Feng.

And now, there was actually such an expert helping Chu Feng clear the path for him. This caused him to have a whole new level

of respect for Chu Feng yet again. In terms of background, Chu Feng seemed to possess a much more robust background than him.

This also caused Du Wanwu to be a bit worried. After all, Chu Feng had been threatened to help him. With the way their Du Clan had threatened Chu Feng, and with the strength that Chu Feng possessed, if he wanted to retaliate against their Du Clan, they would likely have to bear an enormous consequence.

“What you asked is also what I wish to know. Forget about it, let’s stop thinking too much. Right now, it is more important to retrieve the Gu. After all, the Black Fiend could come at any time. We must return to the Luo Family as quickly as possible,” Chu Feng smiled lightly and then proceeded onward.

Actually, at this time, Chu Feng was feeling very joyous. The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that the appearance of that mysterious old man was not a coincidence.

Since that old man was willing to help Chu Feng once, it would be very likely for him to help Chu Feng again. With that mysterious old man’s strength, not to mention the Black Fiend’s shrimp soldiers and crab generals, even if the two leaders of the Black Fiend were to show themselves, they would likely not be a match for that mysterious old man.

Even though Chu Feng could not guarantee that that mysterious old man would help him again, he knew that there would still be a chance for him to do so. As long as there was a chance, it would make him feel a trace of hope. As such, how could Chu Feng not feel joy?

Suddenly, Du Wanwu asked, “Chu Feng, what he said earlier, ‘that one cannot avoid calamities. Instead, one must meet them head-on. One cannot flee from disasters. Instead, one must meet them head-on.’ What did he mean by that?”

“It’s very simple. For example, if someone is to try to kill you, you cannot flee blindly. Instead, you must take care of the people

that want to kill you.”

“As the saying goes, one must eliminate the root in order to eliminate the weed. That is what he meant by those words,” Chu Feng said.

“It would seem that he really does plan to help you,” Du Wanwu said.

“Why do you say that?” Chu Feng asked.

“I can tell that you possess enemies. However, with your current strength, you are evidently not powerful enough to handle your enemies. However, he said that he would help you. Doesn’t that mean that he will handle your enemies for you?” Du Wanwu said.

“Let’s hope that to be the case,” Hearing what Du Wanwu said, Chu Feng smiled.

Chu Feng did not know about the origin and purpose of that mysterious old man. Regardless of what reason he had for helping him, regardless of what goal he had in helping him, Chu Feng still hoped that he would really be willing to help him. The reason for that was because, at this moment, Chu Feng really needed the backing of Martial Emperors.

Chu Feng and Du Wanwu continued onward according to the map’s directions. Finally, they reached the opening of a cave. This cave opening was very hidden. If they didn’t have the map, they would simply not have been able to find it.

Furthermore, even if one were to find the cave, if one did not possess the key in Du Wanwu’s hand, one would not be able to enter the cave either. After all, the Poison Demon was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. The methods of the Poison Demon were something that even Chu Feng would find very difficult to dispel.

After entering the cave, a very dense poison gas immediately assaulted Chu Feng and Du Wanwu. Even though Chu Feng

possessed a body immune to poisons, he still started to frown.

This place was too frightening, was it not? Likely, the word 'eerie' would be unqualified to describe this place. Only the word 'hell' could describe this place more fittingly.

Corpses were everywhere. Furthermore, they were not bones, and were instead rotten corpses. They were not only human corpses. More than human corpses, there were a lot of monstrous beast corpses, frightening monstrous beasts. The largest among them was a rotten corpse a thousand meters long, with a size akin to a mountain, lying in the distance.

That was a Martial Emperor-level monstrous beast. Furthermore, it was no ordinary Martial Emperor. Likely, it was a monstrous beast king that had ruled over a region. Before dying, it should have been extremely powerful.

Chu Feng didn't know how the Poison Demon had managed to make these corpses keep from turning into bones after fifteen thousand years. However, Chu Feng knew that these corpses had no trace of energy in them. Even their source energy had been completely absorbed.

Chu Feng was able to sense that there was a power that was still devouring everything in their surroundings. In fact, after Chu Feng and Du Wanwu entered this place, that power turned into large, invisible hands that wanted to rip Chu Feng and Du Wanwu to pieces so that it could devour their organs, split apart their dantians and snatch their cultivations. That power was planning to devour Chu Feng and Du Wanwu alive.

If it wasn't for the fact that both Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were resistant to poison, this power would have been capable of causing the two of them to die on the spot.

That was a very sinister power. It originated from the depths of this vast underground cave. All of the frightening scenes in this place were caused by that sinister power.

This place was an extremely dangerous location.

Chapter 1694 – Taboo Gu

“So even you can be nervous,” Chu Feng looked to Du Wanwu. He was able to hear that Du Wanwu’s heart rate had accelerated, and his breathing had become heavy.

“Truth be told, I am truly frightened by my Ancestor’s methods,” Du Wanwu smiled wryly. Then, he said, “There are many different ways to create a Gu. As for this place, it is one of the most frightening kind. I will not conceal this from you. This place is very dangerous. You don’t have to go in with me.”

“I knew that this place was dangerous before I got here. Since I agreed to help you, I have already prepared to take risks. Let’s go.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he stepped onto the mountain of corpses and the sea of blood to continue onward. Compared to Du Wanwu, Chu Feng was a lot more calm and collected.

The reason for that was because they had the map with them. The map had clearly recorded the method to break apart all of the formations. Furthermore, Chu Feng’s perception was very sharp. Thus, all of the traps left behind by the Poison Demon were unable to stop Chu Feng and Du Wanwu from proceeding onward, and the traps were easily broken through by them.

After continuing their journey, the two of them finally arrived at the deepest region. What appeared before them was an ancient jug. That jug was only the size of a wine jug.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell with only a single glance that this jug was very dangerous. The sinister power was originating from within that jug. This meant that the Gu that they had come to retrieve was located within the jug.

However, upon closely inspecting the jug, Chu Feng started to frown. Traces of unease appeared in his gaze.

“Du Wanwu, I’d like to ask you this. The Gu before us, exactly

what did your ancestor use to make it?”

Chu Feng knew that Gus were generally made with poisonous insects. For powerful Gus, they would be made with Evil Spirits. Essentially, there were a lot of methods to make Gus, and Gus possessed a lot of different functions. However, it was extremely difficult to make Gus.

Making a Gu was a crooked method to begin with. Furthermore, the greater the risk, the greater the reward.

Since ancient times, there had been a lot of people who ended up being devoured and dying by Gus that they were trying to make. Making Gus could be said to be a taboo for world spiritists.

As for the Gu before them, it was emitting an extremely powerful and dangerous aura. Furthermore, it had already matured. This meant that it was extremely powerful.

This made it apparent that this Gu was not made with poisonous insects or Evil Spirits. It was very likely that this Gu was made from living people.

To make a Gu with living people was a taboo technique. It was the method that was the hardest to control, the method that was the most dangerous.

The Poison Demon had used fifteen thousand years to create this Gu. If he had really used living people to make it, then he would definitely have not used ordinary living people. They were most definitely peak experts.

Chu Feng also knew that Du Wanwu had come to retrieve this Gu with the intention of using it to increase his cultivation. Thus, Chu Feng was truly curious as to exactly what sort of Gu it was.

“I am also uncertain as to what this Gu was made from. However, I know that this is an Inherited Gu,” Du Wanwu said.

“Inherited Gu?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. He then asked, “What is it that he wanted to pass on?”

“Truth be told, I also don’t know,” Du Wanwu smiled. Then his body moved, and he arrived before that Inherited Gu. He took out a special burlap sack, and prepared to load that jug that contained the Inherited Gu into the sack.

“Stop,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng immediately spoke to stop Du Wanwu.

However, Du Wanwu was truly urgent to retrieve the Gu. By the time ‘stop’ left Chu Feng’s mouth, Du Wanwu had already retrieved the Gu.

“Damn it!” Seeing that the Gu had been removed from the ground, Chu Feng’s expression changed, and he sighed.

“Boom~~~~”

Right after that Gu was retrieved, a loud explosion was suddenly heard. At the same time, the surrounding ground started to crumble, with dust and rocks flying everywhere.

After a series of collapses, a total of eighty-one huge monsters flew out of the ground and surrounded Du Wanwu.

None of these eighty-one huge monsters were ordinary. They were all Evil Spirits, a total of eighty-one Evil Spirits. Furthermore, they were not ordinary Evil Spirits. Instead, they were all peak Half Martial Emperor-level Evil Spirits.

These eighty-one Evil Spirits had already lost all intelligence. Like vicious beasts, after they appeared from underneath the ground, they began to brandish their sharp claws and teeth to attack Du Wanwu with the most primitive method.

Du Wanwu was stunned the moment the eighty-one Evil Spirits appeared. Even though he was a Divine Body, the descendant of the Poison Demon, and possessed heaven-defying battle power, he was still only a rank four Half Martial Emperor. As such, how could he possibly be a match for these eighty-one Evil Spirits?

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment of imminent peril, Chu Feng turned into a ray of light, passed through the Evil Spirits and arrived beside Du Wanwu.

After reaching Du Wanwu, Chu Feng shouted, “Evil Suppression Talismans!!!” Then, numerous golden talismans shot out explosively from Chu Feng’s body. They turned into a barrier that surrounded Chu Feng and Du Wanwu.

Immediately afterward, Chu Feng began to control the golden talismans, turning them into numerous chains that shot toward the eighty-one Evil Spirits, locking their limbs.

“Aoouuu~~~”

Upon coming into contact with the golden talismans, those Evil Spirits immediately started to scream repeatedly. The portion of their bodies that came in contact with those golden talismans also began to emit thick smoke.

What Chu Feng had used were the Evil Suppression Talismans that could restrain Evil Spirits.

While the Evil Suppression Talismans were capable of restraining Evil Spirits, the Evil Spirits before them were not ordinary Evil Spirits. Chu Feng was only capable of contending against them, and was not capable of subduing them. In fact, even when contending against them, he would be in a disadvantageous position.

“Let’s go,” Chu Feng knew that if they continued to linger here, they would definitely be met with a calamity. Thus, without the slightest bit of hesitation, he took out a talisman paper and placed it on his boots.

Once the talisman paper came in contact with his boots, it immediately disappeared and was assimilated into the boots. Chu Feng’s boots started to shine with dazzling light.

Then, Chu Feng’s body moved and disappeared. He was so fast

that one would simply be speechless. Likely, even peak Half Martial Emperors would not be able to compare to his speed.

What Chu Feng had used was one of the ten talisman papers that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had given him. Once the talisman paper assimilated into the boots, it would increase the speed that they gave Chu Feng. Once he used it, no one underneath the Martial Emperor realm would be able to catch up to him. That was an escape mechanism that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had bestowed to Chu Feng.

However, regardless of how fast Chu Feng might be, it would still not be that easy for him to escape. The reason for that was because those eighty-one Evil Spirits had already tightly surrounded Chu Feng and Du Wanwu from all directions.

Chu Feng was only able to increase the strength of the Evil Suppression Talismans to bring even more pain to the Evil Spirits so that he could search for a gap between them to escape.

“Shualalala~~~”

However, those Evil Spirits actually disregarded the pain brought forth by the Evil Suppression Talismans and all began to pounce at the defensive barrier that covered Chu Feng and Du Wanwu. They were so powerful that they completely covered the defensive barrier Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were in and piled on top of it; they refused to even give Chu Feng and Du Wanwu any space to escape with.

Furthermore, at this moment, wave upon wave of powerful attacks were bombarding the defensive barrier. If this were to continue, even though the defensive barrier was formed with Evil Suppression Talismans, it would not be able to stand the attacks.

“Damn it, these Evil Spirits are affected by the Gu and have changed. They are no longer ordinary Evil Spirits. The suppression brought forth by the Evil Suppression Talismans has lessened greatly on them. If this is to continue, the Evil Suppression

Talismans will soon lose all effectiveness.”

Chu Feng frowned deeply. At this moment, the generally calm Chu Feng had started to feel extremely uneasy.

He had realized that it was not that the power of the Evil Suppression Talismans was decreasing. Rather, it was that those Evil Spirits’ immunity to the Evil Suppression Talismans was increasing.

Chapter 1695 – Imminent Peril

Seeing everything that was happening in the surrounding area, Du Wanwu asked, “Chu Feng, exactly what is happening?” with a panic-stricken and confused expression.

Everything was happening too quickly. He was simply unable to react in time. He had not known that he would be forcing them into such dangers upon retrieving the Inherited Gu.

“Fool. In any case, you are a descendant of the Poison Demon, and could also tell how dangerous that Gu was. Do you not know what it means to be extra careful? How could you try to retrieve the Gu that straightforwardly?” Chu Feng said in a somewhat complaining manner.

“I...” Du Wanwu didn’t know how to respond to Chu Feng. He knew that he had been too careless.

“Sigh, forget about it. This cannot be blamed on you. Not to mention you, likely even your Ancestor did not anticipate that this place would become like this after fifteen thousand years,” Chu Feng sighed helplessly.

Then, he continued, “There were eighty-one Evil Spirits underneath that Gu. They were providing nourishment for it the entire time. I think that all of those Evil Spirits must have been at the Martial Emperor level before. Furthermore, they were all remarkable Martial Emperors.”

“Your Clan’s Ancestor must’ve thought that after the Gu matured, these Evil Spirits would have been completely absorbed by it. However, the stronger the Gu is, the more dangerous it is. After taking a total of fifteen thousand years to mature, this Gu had already escaped your Ancestor’s control.”

“Right now, this Inherited Gu has already matured. However, these eighty-one Evil Spirits did not perish. Instead, they were only

lying dormant. Earlier, when you moved the Gu, you woke them all up.”

“Evil Spirits are ruthless beings to begin with. After becoming nourishment for the Gu for fifteen thousand years, these Evil Spirits were already filled with overflowing killing desire. When they saw the two of us, how could they possibly let us escape?” Chu Feng smiled bitterly. He truly never expected for Du Wanwu, the person who was always calm, to retrieve the Inherited Gu this urgently today. He had only spoken those words a moment too late and this disaster was the result.

“It’s all my fault. I was too impatient. What do we do now?” Du Wanwu had an expression of remorse.

“We have already been completely surrounded. My Evil Suppression Talismans will not be able to hold them for long. Even though I am not someone who is fond of resigning myself to fate, there is nothing we can do now.”

“All we can hope is that that old man will be willing to act and save us,” Chu Feng continued to smile bitterly. This sort of feeling of waiting for death was truly unpleasant.

However, at this moment, he could only put all of his hope onto that mysterious old man. The reason for that was because he and Du Wanwu really did not possess the capability to escape this place.

“Snap, snap~~~”

The attacks from the Evil Spirits grew fiercer and fiercer. The suppression the Evil Suppression Talismans had on them grew weaker and weaker. Before their ferocious attacks, the defensive barrier Chu Feng had set up with Evil Suppression Talismans had already begun to shatter. If this were to continue, they would not be able to withstand it anymore, and could only die in this place.

“Could it be that, that senior is really going to let us die here?” At

this moment, Chu Feng started to mutter in his heart. He feared that the mysterious expert had not followed them, and did not know about what was happening in this place.

Or perhaps he was not planning to help them. Otherwise, if he was going to help them, he should have already acted. There should have been no need for him to wait so long. After all, this was a moment of imminent peril. If he still did not act, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu really would die here.

“Aouuu~~~”

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was worrying, a series of explosions suddenly sounded from outside. At the same time, those Evil Spirits unleashed heart-tearing and lung-splitting screams and roars of anger.

Some of the Evil Spirits that were attacking Chu Feng’s defensive barrier turned around and flew toward the direction where the explosions had sounded from.

Seeing this scene, both Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were overjoyed. They both felt that mysterious expert had returned to save them.

“This is?!”

However, upon closer inspection, the two of them were shocked. Indeed, there was a very strong source of power fighting against those Evil Spirits right now.

However, it was not the mysterious old man. Instead, it was an extremely ferocious power. It seemed to have been formed by trees and emitted dark green gases. To speak of it easily, the thing fighting against the evil spirits was an unusual yet extremely powerful plant, a plant monster.

It possessed the cultivation of a peak Half Martial Emperor, and a battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Regardless of how powerful the eighty-one Evil Spirits were, they

were still no match for that plant monster.

As the tree vines were flung forward, violent wind swept forth. With each swing, an Evil Spirit would be struck. Upon being struck, the Evil Spirits would disintegrate and be destroyed on the spot.

In merely a blink of an eye, all eighty-one Evil Spirits were killed.

“What is that thing?” At this moment, Du Wanwu was both shocked and in fear. His reaction was only normal. After all, he was not certain whether the monster before them was a friend or a foe. However, he was certain of one thing: the monster before them was even more ferocious than the eighty-one Evil Spirits.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, the enormous plant monster that had eliminated the eighty-one Evil Spirits in an instant turned around and began to walk toward the exit of the cave. It was not planning to attack Chu Feng and Du Wanwu, and was actually planning to leave.

Du Wanwu was even more shocked by this scene. He did not understand the origin of this monster and what its intention was.

“Goudan’er!!!” Right at this moment, Chu Feng shouted that name in a rather calm manner.

“What?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Du Wanwu was instantly stunned. He did not understand why Chu Feng would call out Goudan’er’s name.

However, after Chu Feng called out Goudan’er’s name, that monster that was leaving suddenly stopped.

“You don’t have to go. I know it’s you. You can show yourself,” Chu Feng continued. His gaze was still fixed on that monster.

“Chu Feng, what did you say?” Du Wanwu was even more puzzled.

“How did you notice?” Right at this moment, that monster uttered a hoarse and frightening voice.

Even though this voice was very frightening, it did not contain any malice. Furthermore, after that voice sounded, that monster’s body started to shrink. Soon the tree vines disappeared, and the monster took the form of a human.

Not only did it take the form of a human, it was also a child. It was none other than Goudan’er.

Merely, at this moment, Goudan’er no longer possessed the handsome appearance that Chu Feng had given him. Instead, he had returned to his previous ugly appearance.

“Actually, I had already guessed it in the Poison Demon’s Valley. Merely, I was not certain.”

“However, when you helped us, I was certain that it was you,” Chu Feng walked over to Goudan’er and used world spirit techniques to restore Goudan’er’s appearance back to that handsome appearance.

He knew that while Goudan’er was able to take the form of a human, he was unable to alter his appearance. Otherwise, Goudan’er who longed to become handsome would not have allowed himself to be that ugly.

Originally, Chu Feng had already helped him obtain a handsome appearance. However, Goudan’er revealing his true form had abolished the handsome appearance Chu Feng gave him. Even if he managed to regain the appearance of a human, he would still only be able to obtain that ugly appearance. That was why Chu Feng took the initiative to help Goudan’er change his appearance back to that handsome appearance.

“Impossible. Even if you suspected me before, the aura that I emitted after taking my true form is completely different from the one I am now. How were you so certain that it was me?” Goudan’er

had a shocked expression on his face.

“I had suspected it was you not because of your aura. Rather, it’s because I had suspected that you were a poisonous substance to begin with.”

“As for your true form, it is precisely that of a poisonous substance. In this place, poisonous substances are very commonly seen. However, there is only one poisonous substance that would be willing to act to save us. That is why I was certain that it must be you who saved us,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“God, you are truly amazing. I am unable to hide anything from you,” Goudan’er said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, what exactly is going on?”

Du Wanwu who had been hearing the conversation between the two of them, was finally unable to contain himself and asked, “Goudan’er, how come you are a poisonous substance?” At this moment, he was filled with confusion.

Chapter 1696 – A Familiar Voice

After being questioned by Du Wanwu, Chu Feng began to explain to him about Goudan'er.

It turned out that Du Wanwu also knew about Goudan'er's existence. Merely, he did not know where Goudan'er was hidden and, more than that, did not expect that Goudan'er had already taken human form and had left the Poison Demon's Valley together with him.

What he did not expect the most was that not only had Goudan'er not tried to harm him, he had even acted to save Chu Feng and his life.

Afterward, Chu Feng asked Goudan'er what had happened back then.

What had happened was, more or less, as Chu Feng had anticipated. Goudan'er was a poisonous substance that had matured. He was very strong, and possessed the cultivation of a Martial Emperor.

However, by breaking through the spirit formation set up by the Poison Demon, he had suffered great injuries to his vitality. This caused his strength to decrease enormously. In order to survive, Goudan'er had entered his mother's body, replacing the fetus in her stomach and being born with the appearance of a human.

However, Goudan'er was too poisonous. Even though he had taken the form of a human, he was incomparably ugly. This was something that he was unable to alter.

Not only that, due to the fact that he was too poisonous, he caused his mother's death after giving birth to him.

Whether he was willing or not, his mother had indeed died by his poison.

Although, strictly speaking, she was not Goudan'er's mother,

because of this, Goudan'er had a change of heart. Originally, Goudan'er had been filled with hatred, and wholeheartedly wanted to retaliate against the Du Clan. However, due to his mother's death, he felt enormous guilt, and his hatred had begun to gradually decrease.

Especially after Goudan'er had interacted with his father day and night for the past ten years. The hatred that Goudan'er had was practically all gone. Not only did he no longer have the intention to retaliate against the Du Clan, he had even become a very grateful and kind-hearted person. This was also the reason why he would help Chu Feng and Du Wanwu.

Furthermore, perhaps due to being born again, Chu Feng discovered that even though Goudan'er was a monster that had lived for over ten thousand years, he still had the temperament of a child.

"Goudan'er, I must thank you," Suddenly, Du Wanwu bowed to Goudan'er. He was truly feeling that his Du Clan owed Goudan'er enormously.

"Tsk, you don't have to thank me. I acted in order to save God, not to save you."

Goudan'er cast a side-eye glance at Du Wanwu. It could be seen that even if he did not plan to retaliate against the Du Clan, he still felt a deep amount of grievance against the Du Clan. After all, the Du Clan had used him for many years and trapped him for so long.

"Still, I must thank you. I must thank you for your grace of not killing me," Du Wanwu bowed once again.

"That's true. If I wished to kill you now, it would be as easy as stamping an ant to death," Goudan'er said rather proudly.

"Oh you two, it's enough."

"It's time for us to return. If the people from the Black Fiend are to come, with the strength of the Luo Family, they will not be able

to stop them,” Chu Feng said while smiling.

“Rest assured. With me here, the people from the Black Fiend can forget about bullying the Luo Family,” Goudan’er said as he waved his little fist.

Even though he looked very ridiculous, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu had seen for themselves how fierce Goudan’er really was. Thus, they did not doubt his strength in the slightest.

Seeing Goudan’er acting in this sort of manner, Chu Feng felt a lot more relieved. Generally, poisonous substances all possessed very violent natures. Yet, Goudan’er was kind-hearted. This meant that he would not only not harm people, he would instead help them. That was a good thing.

“In that case, let’s return,” As Chu Feng spoke those words, he began to leave toward the exit.

“Chu Feng, hold on,” However, right at this moment, Du Wanwu suddenly spoke to stop him.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, eat this. It will be able to remove the Gu Poison in your dantian,” As Du Wanwu spoke, he handed a medicinal pellet to Chu Feng.

“So the antidote is actually with you,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he said, “You’re giving it to me right now? Do you not fear that I will break my promise and not bring you back to the Poison Demon’s Valley?”

“Truth be told, I had never planned to return to the Poison Demon’s Valley upon exiting. Go ahead, take the antidote. I will feel more relieved should you take it,” Du Wanwu said.

“There really is no need for that. It is not that I do not want to take it; rather, there is already no longer any Gu Poison in my body. Thus, there really is no reason for me to take that antidote,” Chu Feng said.

“No longer any Gu Poison? What do you mean by that? Could it be that Lady Xiangyu did not really poison you with the Gu Poison?” Du Wanwu asked in shock.

“She indeed poisoned me. Merely, I have already removed the poison,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he turned around and began to walk away. Goudan’er followed closely behind Chu Feng and began to walk toward the exit too.

As Du Wanwu saw Chu Feng’s back view that was gradually growing more and more distant, he then looked to the antidote in his hand, he suddenly realized what Chu Feng meant by those words. Then, he laughed bitterly and put the antidote in his hand away. Then, he ran after Chu Feng and Goudan’er.

After returning to the Luo Family, Chu Feng handed the counterfeit Invisible Dew that he and Du Wanwu had created to the Luo Family’s Family Head. Furthermore, he instructed that if the people from the Black Fiend were to come, they should hand this counterfeit Invisible Dew to them.

Furthermore, Chu Feng removed all of the spirit formations that he had placed around the Luo Family. He did not wish to have the people from the Black Fiend know that they were protecting the Luo Family. He wanted the Black Fiend to underestimate the Luo Family.

Speaking of this matter, it was quite a coincidence. On the same night, the Black Fiend army arrived. They completely sealed off the Luo Family from all sides.

In an instant, the Luo Family became extremely afraid. Even though they knew that Chu Feng and the others were protecting them from the shadows, they were still extremely afraid.

This could not cannot be blamed on them. This time around, the Black Fiend had actually come with all their strength. Not to mention those shrimp soldiers and crab generals, their two leaders, the Black and White Skulls, were capable of scaring the

entire Luo Family.

The Black and White Skulls were two peak Half Martial Emperor-level experts. They possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. The two of them had the potential to become Martial Emperors. Thus, it was no wonder that they dared to act so arrogant, and declare that they would become the Holy Land of Martialism's sixth and seventh Evildoers, become people equally famous as the Five Great Evildoers.

At this moment, neither Chu Feng nor Du Wanwu revealed themselves. The reason for that was because the two of them knew from the moment when the Black and White Skulls had showed up that it would be useless, even if they were to reveal themselves. Right now, the only person capable of saving the Luo Family was Goudan'er.

However, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were observing the movements of the Black Fiend from the shadows. If they were to truly battle, what the Luo Family must handle would not only be limited to the Black and White Skulls. Instead, it would be the entire Black Fiend. At that time, both Chu Feng and Du Wanwu would have to reveal themselves and act to protect the Luo Family.

"Luo Family, the final time limit that I have given you all has arrived. Right now, you all have two options. You either hand over the Invisible Dew, or face the extermination of your family. You all decide which option to take," said the Black Skull.

The Black Skull wore a cloak that covered his appearance. However, he was emitting a very dense killing intent, and his tone was ice-cold.

However, he did not mention the matter of his people being killed. Instead, he directly offered two options for the Luo Family. His manner of conduct was extremely direct and efficient. All he wanted was the result.

"I am willing to hand over the Invisible Dew. Milords, please give

our Luo Family a path to survive.”

The Luo Family’s Family Head acted according to Chu Feng’s instructions, and handed the Invisible Dew over to the Black Fiend. However, he did not personally hand the Invisible Dew to the Black and White Skulls. Instead, he sent the Invisible Dew to the Black and White Skulls through the air.

The Black and White Skulls were not surprised by the Luo Family Family Head’s decision to hand over the Invisible Dew. It was as if this was something that they had anticipated.

After receiving the Invisible Dew, the two of them carefully inspected it. However, the two of them did not immediately put the Invisible Dew away. Instead, they handed it to a person behind them.

That person was also wearing a cloak. Thus, his appearance could not be seen, and his aura could not be detected. Different from the Black and White Skulls, this person’s cloak was very special. It did not have the symbol of the Black Fiend.

This meant that this person was likely someone not from the Black Fiend. Most importantly, the leaders of the Black Fiend, the Black and White Skulls, were extremely respectful toward this person. This made it even more certain that this individual was not someone from the Black Fiend.

That person carefully sniffed the Invisible Dew and then said, “It’s real,” before putting the Invisible Dew away.

“This voice, could it be him?” After hearing this voice, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Following that, he revealed a very shocked expression.

Chapter 1697 – Beitang Zimo?

Upon hearing that voice, Chu Feng thought of a person. This person should not have any relationship with the Black Fiend. Yet, at this moment, he was among the Black Fiend's army. This was the reason why Chu Feng was so surprised.

As for this person, he was the Beitang Imperial Clan's fourth prince, Beitang Zimo.

Even though he had concealed his appearance and aura, Chu Feng would not mistake his voice. Chu Feng was certain that this was Beitang Zimo's voice.

However, as the grand Fourth Prince of the Beitang Imperial Clan, why would he wallow in the mire with a power like the Black Fiend?

Why would the Black Fiend not keep the Invisible Dew for themselves after obtaining it, and instead hand it to Beitang Zimo? Could it be that there was some sort of shady business between them that could not come to light?

At this moment, many questions were lingering in Chu Feng's mind. Earlier, Chu Feng had thought that the Black Fiend wanted the Invisible Dew in order to harm people. After all, they were evil people that committed all sorts of crimes to begin with.

However, Chu Feng now discovered that this matter was much more complicated than he had anticipated. After all, Beitang Zimo was a famous individual. It would be fine if he were to become enemies with the Black Fiend. However, no matter what, he should not wallow in the mire with the Black Fiend.

“Not bad. To be willing to hand over the Invisible Dew, it seems that you have some understanding. However, several days ago, I dispatched people to your Luo Family, but then lost all contact with them. Likely, they were killed by your Luo Family, right?”

“As you all have handed over the Invisible Dew, I should have let you all off with this. However, since you’ve killed my people, I cannot not avenge them. Men! Eliminate the Luo Family!” White Skull shouted with a cold voice.

“Kill~~~~”

Right after the White Skull’s voice sounded, people shouting ‘kill!’ could be heard from all around, and overflowing killing intent swept forth, covering the entire Luo Family.

At this moment, the people from the Luo Family were all extremely nervous. The reason for that was because the people from the Black Fiend were not pretentious individuals. After their shouts, many of them revealed their weapons and unleashed martial skills to fatally attack the people from the Luo Family.

Boundless oppressive might swept forth. For many of the people in the Luo Family, before they were attacked, their complexions had already turned deathly pale. It was as if they had already been seriously injured.

“With Granddaddy Goudan’er here, I shall see who dares to eliminate the Luo Family!”

Right at the moment when the Luo Family felt that they were doomed, Goudan’er, who was standing beside Luo Huan, suddenly shouted coldly. Then, he jumped forward and stood in the air.

Goudan’er was a child. Thus, his build was very petite and small. However, when he soared into the air, his body suddenly changed. His clothes ripped apart. It was as if his body were exploding.

However, he had most definitely not exploded. Instead, from a small child, he had turned into a ferocious monster.

He had become several hundred meters tall. As he stood in midair, he appeared like a vast black cloud. His limbs that were formed with treevine-like substances covered the entire sky and twitched left and right.

With each twitch of his limb, a boundless might would turn into a sharp blade and split apart heaven and earth, killing everything in its path.

Not only had Goudan'er instantly blocked all of the attacks from the Black Fiend, he had also slaughtered all of the people who had unleashed attacks at the Luo Family. He was so powerful that he could simply be said to be a celestial being.

“Heavens! What sort of monster is that?!”

As they looked to Goudan'er who was slaughtering everything in midair, not to mention the people from the Black Fiend, even the people from the Luo Family were deeply frightened.

After all, Goudan'er was a poisonous substance. Not only was his form that of an enormous monster, his frightening aura was capable of causing one to feel their blood run cold. He was much more frightening than monstrous beasts.

Furthermore, Goudan'er was extremely ruthless. Those struck by him all ended up dying horribly without a corpse remaining.

“So there's actually a peak Half Martial Emperor behind you all. No wonder you all dared to kill my people.”

“However, even if you possessed the backing of a monster, your Luo Family will still be eliminated.”

At this moment, the Black and White Skulls were the first to react. After they saw through Goudan'er's strength, the two of them would naturally not stand there and allow Goudan'er to kill their subordinates willingly. The two of them acted together and surrounded Goudan'er.

Both the Black and White Skulls took out Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Even though they were copies, they were extremely powerful. Furthermore, the two of them should have cultivated in a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. With the two of them working together, their strength increased. Sure enough, the Black and

White Skulls were very powerful.

Unfortunately, no matter how strong they might be, they were unable to defeat Goudan'er. All they were capable of doing was fighting Goudan'er to a standstill.

After a bout of battle, Goudan'er suddenly unleashed counterattacks. Several vines swept forth toward the Black and White Skulls from all directions like dragons.

Goudan'er's attacks were simply invulnerable. The Black and White Skulls were like turtles trapped in a jar. The two of them were trapped within the vines.

In a blink of an eye, the two of them went from having and holding the upper hand to being suppressed. Other than defending, there was nothing they could do.

As they saw Goudan'er locked in battle against the Black and White Skulls, many of the people from the Luo Family managed to react. They felt that Goudan'er had not come to harm their Luo Family. Instead, he had come to help them. Otherwise, he would not have killed the people from the Black Fiend.

All of a sudden, practically everyone from the Luo Family hoped that the monster in the sky would be able to defeat the Black and White Skulls. Like that, their Luo Family would be saved.

In fact, Goudan'er lived up to their expectations. After being frantically suppressed by Goudan'er, the Black and White Skulls were unable to continue enduring anymore. They were on the verge of being defeated by Goudan'er.

"Milords, are the two of you really not going to save us?" However, right at the moment when they were about to be defeated, the Black Skull suddenly shouted.

"Black and White Skulls, you two only possess this bit of strength, yet you still wanted to join our ranks?"

In the moment after the Black Skull's words left his mouth, a

laugh filled with mockery suddenly sounded in the sky.

After that laughter was heard, a golden ray of light suddenly shot forth out of nowhere and struck Goudan'er.

The speed of that golden ray of light was simply too fast. Goudan'er was simply unable to dodge in time. "Boom!" Not only had that golden ray of light struck Goudan'er's body, it also exploded upon impact, shattering Goudan'er into pieces.

"Goudan'er!" Seeing this scene, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because that attack earlier had most definitely been fatal.

However, to Chu Feng's surprise, after Goudan'er's scattered body pieces landed on the ground, a piece of his destroyed body rushed to the location where Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were hiding with an extremely fast speed akin to a thunderbolt.

After that piece of destroyed body reached Chu Feng and Du Wanwu, it quickly changed into Goudan'er's appearance. Even though his aura was extremely weak, it was indeed Goudan'er.

"Goudan'er, you're actually alright?" Chu Feng and Du Wanwu were overjoyed to see that Goudan'er was alright. Originally, the two of them had both thought that Goudan'er had died.

"God, it's bad! There's a Martial Emperor. We must escape immediately. I am unable to defeat a Martial Emperor," Goudan'er said with a pained expression. Even though he had managed to stay alive, he was seriously injured and unable to continue fighting.

"I know. It's not only a Martial Emperor, there are two Martial Emperors," As Chu Feng spoke, he turned his gaze to the outside again, to the sky where the golden ray of light had been shot out from from.

Right at this moment, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might came crushing down from the sky and covered the entire Luo Family. It was an Emperor's might, the might of a Martial

Emperor.

Before the Emperor's might, everyone from the Luo Family lost their ability to continue standing, their ability to resist. Many of the buildings exploded on the spot and turned into dust.

Merely an Emperor's might was capable of making the entire Luo Family lose all hope and enter despair.

After the Emperor's might descended, two figures descended from the sky and appeared in midair.

“It's them?”

To Chu Feng's surprise, these two people were also two familiar people.

Chapter 1698 – Go For Broke

At this moment, there were two people standing in the sky.

One of them was one of the Five Great Evildoers, the person who killed Aunt Lian's husband and daughter, Evildoer Tie.

As for the other one, he was someone from the Beitang Imperial Clan, the person who stood up for Beitang Zimo on the Immortal Island, that rank one Martial Emperor who tried to cause trouble for Chu Feng, Beitang Zhiqiang.

This Beitang Zhiqiang was truly arrogant. He actually did not even bother to conceal his appearance. It could be seen that he really did not fear others recognizing him. Likely, he had already made preparations to kill anyone that recognized him. And in fact, he did possess the strength to do so.

Beitang Zhiqiang and Evildoer Tie were working together. Furthermore, based on the way they acted, it seemed that they were backing up the Black Fiend. There was no need to question what was going on.

Evidently, Chu Feng's guess was correct. Sure enough, the Beitang Imperial Clan was working with the Black Fiend.

However, to Chu Feng's surprise, it was not only the Black Fiend that the Beitang Imperial Clan was working with. They were actually working with Evildoer Tie too.

"My dear mother! There are actually really two Martial Emperors. We really cannot help the Luo Family anymore, no. Quickly, we must run away," Goudan'er said frantically. It could be seen that he really did not wish to die here.

"Chu Feng, you all escape quickly," Du Wanwu said.

"What about you?" Chu Feng asked.

"Since I, Du Wanwu, have agreed to protect the Luo Family, I

will definitely not let them die and escape before the enemies. Even if I am to die, I shall die protecting the Luo Family.”

After Du Wanwu finished saying those words, before Chu Feng could say anything, his body moved, and he flew into the sky and arrived before the Luo Family’s Family Head. He looked to the two Martial Emperors in the sky and shouted, “You must first kill me if you want to kill the Luo Family.”

“Brat, who are you?”

Both Evildoer Tie and Beitang Zhiqiang revealed shocked expressions upon seeing Du Wanwu’s sudden appearance. After all, among the younger generation, Du Wanwu’s strength was top notch.

The two of them guessed that it was impossible for the Luo Family to nurture such a powerful member of the younger generation. Thus, the first thing that came to their mind was that Du Wanwu must be the disciple of an expert.

“You all do not need to know who I am,” Du Wanwu had a determined expression. He was already prepared to face death.

“Your cultivation is quite good. Unfortunately, with your current strength, you are still incapable of protecting the Luo Family.”

“Regardless of your origin and who your master might be, since you have associated yourself with the Luo Family, today shall be the day you die,” Beitang Zhiqiang was already determined to kill. Regardless of how talented Du Wanwu might be, he would still not let him live.

“That guy, he’s truly as stupid as one could be. God, do not bother with him. Let’s go,” Goudan’er urged Chu Feng.

“No, I cannot run away when Du Wanwu is out there. Furthermore, the Emperor’s might has already sealed off the entire Luo Family and covered both the sky and the ground. There is nowhere for us to escape to,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“What do we do then?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Goudan’er was also lost as to what to do.

“As matters stand, we can only go for broke,” Chu Feng said.

“Go for broke? How? Those are two Martial Emperors!” Goudan’er said.

“I have a method that might be able to give us a means to survive.”

As Chu Feng spoke, his appearance began to change. Soon, he returned to his original appearance. At the same time, Chu Feng walked out from the room, looked to Evildoer Tie in the sky and said while smiling, “Evildoer Tie, never would I have expected to see you again this quickly.”

“Chu Feng, it’s actually you?” Both Beitang Zhiqiang and Beitang Zimo were extremely shocked to see Chu Feng. They had absolutely never expected to encounter Chu Feng here.

“Chu Feng? You, you are that brat from back then,” Compared to Beitang Zhiqiang, Evildoer’s Tie’s current expression was not only one of shock. Instead, his face was filled with fear, and even his body started to tremble. All of the mighty and domineering air he had emitted before was no longer there.

The reason for that was because he could not forget about what had happened outside of the Heavenly Law Auction that day. That day, because he had attacked a young man called Chu Feng, he had nearly been killed by a powerful Martial Emperor.

That was still very fresh in his memory. He was still filled with lingering fear. To him, what had happened that day was simply a nightmare.

However, never would he expect to encounter Chu Feng again, to encounter that nightmare again.

“Seems like you still remember me,” Chu Feng smiled again. His smile actually contained a trace of threatening intention.

Suddenly, Beitang Zimo took off his cloak, pointed at Chu Feng and angrily shouted, “Chu Feng, this is truly what they mean by enemies travel on a narrow road. Back then, I was unable to kill you on the Immortal Island. Never would I have expected to run into you here. Have you made preparations to die?” At this moment, his body was shivering with enormous hatred for Chu Feng.

Back then, outside of the Immortal Island, Chu Feng had utterly humiliated the Beitang Imperial Clan. Even in his dreams, Beitang Zimo wished to kill Chu Feng. And right now, he had actually encountered Chu Feng in this place. Naturally, he would not let Chu Feng get away.

“Beitang Zimo, you are truly weak. When I was a rank nine Martial King, you were already a rank three Half Martial Emperor. And now, I’m already a rank two Half Martial Emperor. Yet, you’re still only a rank three Half Martial Emperor. With your trash talent, you want to kill me?”

Chu Feng sneered. He appeared extremely calm and collected. Not only that, he had an attitude of completely not placing Beitang Zimo in his eyes.

“You are truly someone who will not shed a tear until you see your coffin. If I wish to kill you, it would be as simple as crushing an ant to death.”

As Beitang Zimo spoke, he suddenly attacked. He turned into a ray of light and arrived before Chu Feng. At the same time, he waved his fist, which began to emit golden light, and smashed it toward Chu Feng’s head. He was planning to use his fist to pulverize Chu Feng’s head.

It would appear that Beitang Zimo truly felt enormous hatred for Chu Feng. Only by smashing Chu Feng’s head with his own fist would he be able to relieve the hatred in his heart.

“Paa~~~”

However, right at the moment when Beitang Zimo's fist was about to strike Chu Feng, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly shone with lightning. His Thunder Armor appeared. Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank two Half Martial Emperor to rank three Half Martial Emperor. At the same time, he extended his palm and firmly caught Beitang Zimo's incoming fist.

"It turns out that you do not even have the strength to crush an ant to death. The Beitang Imperial Clan has truly wasted all of the resources they placed on you," After Chu Feng blocked Beitang Zimo's attack, he laughed mockingly.

"You've merely obtained the same cultivation as me. I will still be able to kill you."

Beitang Zimo was not to be outdone. A golden-bright and dazzling 'Imperial' character appeared on his forehead. Following that, his entire body's blood began to surge, and his battle power started to rapidly increase.

Furthermore, all of his power was gathered on his right fist. He was planning to punch through Chu Feng's palm with his fist.

Being extremely stubborn, Beitang Zimo was determined to pulverize Chu Feng's head with his fist.

"Are you certain?" Even when facing Beitang Zimo's fist that he had placed all of his strength into, Chu Feng continued to smile. Afterward, Chu Feng's palm that held onto Beitang Zimo's fist suddenly tightened. "Snap," blood splattered. Beitang Zimo's fist had been crushed to pieces by Chu Feng.

Chapter 1699 – Misjudged

“Ahhh~~~”

“My hand!!!”

The pain of having his fist crushed came too suddenly and caught Beitang Zimo completely off guard. Immediately, his expression changed enormously, and he began to take several steps back in succession. Then, he grabbed onto his broken fist and stared at Chu Feng with overflowing hatred while shouting in pain.

This could not be blamed on Beitang Zimo being too useless. Rather, Chu Feng’s palm was no ordinary palm. The pain of having his fist crushed was more than ten times more painful than normal. Not to mention Beitang Zimo, there was practically no one who could endure this sort of pain.

“Chu Feng, you actually possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?”

At this moment, Beitang Zhiqiang who was standing in the sky started to narrow his brows. His expression also changed greatly. The gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with became even more complicated and ice-cold.

He had discovered that Chu Feng possessed a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Otherwise, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Beitang Zimo, who was at the same level of cultivation as him and had activated his Imperial Bloodline, this easily.

However, a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation was something that, as of right now, only the Elf Kingdom’s little princess possessed in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

Yet, at this moment, Chu Feng had actually revealed he had this sort of battle power. This was truly too frightening. Beitang

Zhiqiang had truly never expected for the unremarkable brat on the Immortal Island to possess this frightening potential.

“Yoh, you actually discovered it,” Chu Feng laughed. He was not modest in the slightest. Instead, he was emitting mockery all over.

“It seems that today, no matter what, you cannot be left alive,” As Beitang Zhiqiang spoke, the killing intent in his eyes grew even denser. He was planning to personally eliminate Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng had possessed a slight chance of being kept alive earlier, then at this moment, Beitang Zhiqiang was determined that Chu Feng could not be left alive no matter what.

He knew very well that an enemy like Chu Feng must be eliminated as quickly as possible. Otherwise, once he matured, he would become an enormous worry in the future.

“Hahaha...” However, faced with those words from Beitang Zhiqiang, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter. His laughter completely puzzled the crowd.

“Kill me? Did you think you had the strength to do so?” After laughing wildly, coldness suddenly shone through Chu Feng’s eyes. He actually threatened Beitang Zhiqiang.

“Truly arrogant! Regardless of how exceptional your talent might be, you are only a mere Half Martial Emperor. If I wished to kill you, do you really think that you could escape?”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Beitang Zhiqiang sneered. As he spoke, he planned to attack and eliminate Chu Feng.

“Stop,” However, right at this moment, Evildoer Tie suddenly stood in front of Beitang Zhiqiang and stopped him from attacking Chu Feng.

“Evildoer Tie, what are you doing?” Beitang Zhiqiang asked in a slightly angered manner. He did not understand why Evildoer Tie would be helping Chu Feng.

“Beitang Zhiqiang, that child must not be touched. He possesses a rank three Martial Emperor behind him. If you are to attack him, that rank three Half Martial Emperor will definitely act and take our lives. Neither one of us will be able to survive,” Evildoer Tie said frightenedly.

“What?” Hearing those words, Beitang Zhiqiang was startled. Upon thinking about what Evildoer Tie said and then looking at Chu Feng’s confident appearance, Beitang Zhiqiang retrieved his killing intent and asked Evildoer Tie through voice transmission, “How do you know about this?”

“That is a long story. However, what happened today has happened to me before. Back then, Chu Feng was right between my hands. With a thought, I would have been able to take his life.”

“However, right at the moment when I was about to take his life, a mysterious man suddenly attacked me. His aura was truly too powerful. It was many times more powerful than mine. It is impossible for rank two Martial Emperors to make me feel that sort of oppressive sensation. At the very least, that person is a rank three Martial Emperor.”

“That man had been protecting Chu Feng from the shadows the entire time. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for Chu Feng to be this confident. The way I see it, we should forget about what happened today. If we are to force that person to act, the people who will be out of luck will be us,” Evildoer Tie said with a very low voice.

“Are you for real?” Beitang Zhiqiang asked.

“Why would I deceive you with something like that? If you don’t trust me, go and attack him. However, you must by all means not involve me in it,” After Evildoer Tie finished saying those words, he turned around and looked to Chu Feng. With a beaming smile on his face, he said, “Little friend Chu Feng, there has been some misunderstandings between us before. I would like to apologize to

you.”

“Furthermore, I did not know that you were friends with this Luo Family. If I’d known that, even if I were beaten to death, I would not have helped the Black and White Skulls to take care of the Luo Family. As the saying goes, those who don’t know are not in the wrong. Please, do not take this matter to heart.”

“.....”

This scene completely stunned everyone. Especially the people from the Black Fiend; they were all stupefied.

To them, Evildoer Tie was their idol, one of the Five Great Evildoers.

Yet, at this moment, their idol that feared nothing in heaven or earth, their idol who had committed all imaginable crimes, was actually begging forgiveness from such a brat. Exactly what was going on?

“Rest assured, if I were one to take things to heart, you would not have been able to live till now; you would’ve already died outside of the Heavenly Law Auction,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Hearing those words, Evildoer Tie’s body shivered. Chu Feng’s words had stabbed him where he feared the most, causing him to become even more afraid.

“In that case, I’ll take my leave,” As Evildoer Tie said those words, he turned around and planned to leave. He wanted to escape from this place as quickly as possible, escape from the nightmare called Chu Feng.

“Wait a moment,” However, right at this moment, Beitang Zhiqiang suddenly stopped Evildoer Tie, “Don’t be so anxious to leave. I still want to test whether this Chu Feng really possesses an expert protecting him from behind.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. However, his heart became alarmed.

What he meant by when he said ‘go for broke’ earlier was to use Evildoer Tie to scare away Beitang Zhiqiang and the others.

However, it would appear now that even though Beitang Zhiqiang had become somewhat timid, he was still skeptical, and was preparing to use his body to test the dangers, to test Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng knew very well in his heart that there was no one protecting him from the shadows now. If Beitang Zhiqiang were to really attack him, he would suffer a calamity.

“Don’t! You must not! While you might not fear death, I do fear death! Even if you wish to try, wait until I get away from here first! Can’t you do that?!” Evildoer Tie hurriedly spoke to stop Beitang Zhiqiang.

“Evildoer Tie, no matter what, you are still one of the Five Great Evildoers. How could you allow yourself to fear ropes for ten years because you were bitten by a snake one morning?”

“To be afraid of a brat, if this were to spread out in the future, how could you continue to stand tall in the Holy Land of Martialism? Not to mention our Beitang Imperial Clan, do you think that the other four Evildoers would be willing to let you live? Would they allow you to disgrace the reputation of the Five Great Evildoers?” Beitang Zhiqiang said.

“This...” Hearing those words, Evildoer Tie started to hesitate. Evidently, Beitang Zhiqiang’s incitement worked on him.

“Don’t be scared. I dare to guarantee that this brat is bluffing.”

“Let alone, if there really is someone protecting him from the shadows, we have already had killing intentions toward him. Do you really think that person will let us go?”

“Think about it logically. Since both the left and right paths lead to death, we must die honorably. In addition, I have never misjudged. I dare to guarantee that there is absolutely no one protecting Chu Feng, I am sure that he is bluffing.”

After Beitang Zhiqiang said those words, he suddenly opened his palm, and a Royal Armament appeared in his hand.

In his hand, the Royal Armament started to rapidly spin and glisten with light. Even though it was only a Royal Armament, it possessed a frightening destructive power. If he wished it, with only this Royal Armament, he would be able to eliminate the entire Luo Family and turn this place into a bottomless ravine.

At this moment, Beitang Zhiqiang pointed this Royal Armament at Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng appeared to be completely unafraid, and even had a faint smile on his face.

“You are truly able to keep your composure. However, while you can deceive others, you will not be able to deceive me. Drop dead, bluffing brat!!!”

Suddenly, the Royal Armament Beitang Zhiqiang had aimed toward Chu Feng turned into a ray of light and shot toward Chu Feng’s dantian area explosively.

As Beitang Zhiqiang’s sword strike fell from the heavens, the entire earth started to violently tremble and collapse.

Many people from the Luo Family were unable to withstand the oppressive might from Beitang Zhiqiang’s attack. Their bodies started to rip apart, and they began to vomit blood from their mouths. They were screaming and howling in grief.

Beitang Zhiqiang’s sword strike was truly too powerful. It was simply indescribable. If Chu Feng were struck by it, he would not only lose his cultivation. Instead, he would definitely be destroyed both body and soul. He would be utterly dead.

“Paa~~~”

However, right when the Royal Armament was about to pierce into Chu Feng, a palm suddenly appeared out of thin air and grabbed onto the Royal Armament.

Then, that palm suddenly exerted strength. “Bang,” that Royal

Armament that contained an Emperor's might was shattered to pieces.

“It would appear that you have misjudged,” Following that, a laugh sounded.

Chapter 1700 – Lord Headmaster

At the moment when that voice sounded, a figure also appeared. When Chu Feng saw this person, he revealed a pleasantly surprised expression.

At this moment, a familiar face was standing before him. It was the Cyanwood Mountain's headmaster, Dugu Xingfeng.

Chu Feng did not know why Dugu Xingfeng would appear in this place. However, what he knew was that, at this moment, Dugu Xingfeng was already no longer a peak Half Martial Emperor, and had become a rank one Martial Emperor. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to block Beitang Zhiqiang's attack.

Dugu Xingfeng had reached a breakthrough!!!

“Lord Headmaster,” After a moment of excitement, Chu Feng uttered in alarm. He truly never expected for Dugu Xingfeng to save him. This was too much of a surprise.

“Chu Feng, you don't have to say anything anymore. Leave the rest to me,” Dugu Xingfeng smiled. Then, he looked to Beitang Zhiqiang and said, “The Beitang Imperial Clan actually colluded with Evildoer Tie, and was planning to massacre the entire Luo Family for a single bottle of Invisible Dew. If this matter were to spread out, I wonder what the people of the world would think?”

“Dugu Xingfeng, was it? I recognize you. Cyanwood Mountain's headmaster, isn't it? I truly never expected that Chu Feng would be a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“For such a barren place like the Cyanwood Mountain to have such a disciple, it is no wonder that you, a headmaster, would follow him closely to personally protect him,” Beitang Zhiqiang said with a sneer. His tone was filled with mockery.

He was not only mocking Dugu Xingfeng. Rather, he was also mocking Chu Feng. Originally, with how talented Chu Feng was,

he had thought that Chu Feng would be a personal disciple of a grand expert.

However, after all this, he was only a mere disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain. This caused Beitang Zhiqiang to look down on Chu Feng enormously. The reason for that was because in the eyes of the Four Great Imperial Clans, the Nine Powers were only second-rate powers that they did not place in their eyes at all.

“Never would I expect that you would actually recognize me. That’s quite rare indeed. However, what you said is very true.”

“For a talent like Chu Feng, I would naturally have to follow him closely to personally protect him. After all, even trash like Beitang Zimo requires that you to follow him closely to personally protect him, how could I not follow a talent like Chu Feng and personally protect him?” As Dugu Xingfeng said those words, he looked to Beitang Zimo with a smile.

“You...” Hearing those words, Beitang Zimo was so enraged that he started to gnash his teeth in anger and his complexion began to turn blue. No matter what, he was still a genius. Yet, he was actually being insulted and humiliated by others this many times in succession today. How could he not be enraged?

“When I saw you last time, you were still only a peak Half Martial Emperor. If my guess is correct, you should’ve just reached a breakthrough and become a Martial Emperor a while ago, no?”

“Having just reached a breakthrough, exactly how much of a Martial Emperor’s abilities could you have possibly grasped? Did you really think that you would be able to match the two of us?” Beitang Zhiqiang said mockingly.

“How would you know that I am no match for you if you don’t give it a try?” Dugu Xingfeng smiled indifferently. Even though he knew that the longer one had been a Martial Emperor, the stronger one’s strength would be, he still didn’t place Beitang Zhiqiang in his eyes.

“No wonder Chu Feng would dare to act this arrogant. It turns out that he actually has such an arrogant headmaster.”

“Evildoer Tie, there’s no need for you to act. I’ll teach this country bumpkin from the Cyanwood Mountain a lesson myself. I’ll have him know the gap between Martial Emperors.”

As Beitang Zhiqiang spoke, he indicated for Evildoer Tie to step back. Evildoer Tie and the others tactfully stepped back to present a battleground in the sky for Beitang Zhiqiang and Dugu Xingfeng.

“In that case, allow me to experience the strength of your Beitang Imperial Clan.”

At this moment, Dugu Xingfeng actually revealed an excited expression. Then his body shifted, and he soared into the sky and began to battle Beitang Zhiqiang.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Rumbles began to sound from all around. Martial powers were rampaging in the sky. The ferocious martial power surged forth like golden beasts as they wreaked havoc in the sky.

Before the might of the battle, the people from the Luo Family suffered enormously. Their cultivations were simply too weak. Even though the two Martial Emperors did not aim for them at all, the aftermath of their collisions was something that the people from the Luo Family were unable to bear.

However, Chu Feng was pleasantly surprised to discover that even though Dugu Xingfeng had just reached a breakthrough to Martial Emperor, he was not at a disadvantage when fighting against Beitang Zhiqiang. Instead, he had held the upper hand since the very beginning.

Dugu Xingfeng did not use any extravagant martial skills. Instead, with only fists and kicks, he was able to display overbearing might.

This came not only as a shock to Chu Feng; even Evildoer Tie was

shocked. Logically, it shouldn't be possible for Dugu Xingfeng to be a match for Beitang Zhiqiang. After all, he had just reached a breakthrough to Martial Emperor.

There was only one explanation for how Dugu Xingfeng was able to surpass Beitang Zhiqiang; his talent for martial cultivation surpassed Beitang Zhiqiang's.

Suddenly, Beitang Zhiqiang spoke out. "Evildoer Tie, attack together with me and exterminate this man." He had already realized that he was no match for Dugu Xingfeng. Even though he found it extremely embarrassing to say so, he still spoke to request help from Evildoer Tie.

Even though this was very disgraceful, he knew that it would be much better to bear the disgrace and seek help than to be defeated by Dugu Xingfeng.

"I... this..." However, facing Beitang Zhiqiang's request for help, Evildoer Tie started to hesitate. He did not dare to join the fight because he was still afraid.

He was not scared of Dugu Xingfeng. Instead, he was scared of the mysterious expert that had saved Chu Feng outside of the Heavenly Law Auction that day.

"Evildoer Tie, you damned fool! If they possessed the help of an expert, he would've shown himself already. Why would he dispatch this fellow to deal with us?"

"You have moved about unhindered through the Holy Land of Martialism for all these years in vain! How could you be this stupid when it comes to this?!"

"Quickly, join me! Kill this Cyanwood Mountain's country bumpkin together with me! We must settle this quickly!"

"Else, if we are to alarm those fellows in Mooncloud City, while I will be able to live, you'll definitely die!" Beitang Zhiqiang shouted angrily.

After being incited by Beitang Zhiqiang, Evildoer Tie gnashed his teeth and shouted, “Fuck it! your daddy will risk it all!”

At this moment, heaven and earth started to sway and shake, and the weather began to change. All of this was caused by Evildoer Tie. In fact, not only had he affected heaven and earth and caused the weather to change, even his body began to change. He had turned into an enormous eagle capable of hiding the sky and covering the earth.

Flying in the sky, that eagle appeared to be made out of steel. It possessed an extremely ferocious appearance. It was Divine Power; Evildoer Tie had unleashed his Divine Power.

Evildoer Tie had gone all-out right at the get-go. He was planning to resolve this matter as quickly as possible, to kill Dugu Xingfeng as quickly as possible.

After Evildoer Tie joined the battle, a golden-bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character started to shine on Beitang Zhiqiang’s forehead.

With the unleashing of his Imperial Bloodline, Beitang Zhiqiang’s aura instantly increased. The two men had both gone all-out as they charged toward Dugu Xingfeng to attack him together.

“Perfect timing.”

However, faced with the combined attacks from the two men, Dugu Xingfeng did not reveal any fear. Instead, he shouted loudly, and his body actually turned into a deep blue spear. Being one with the spear, Dugu Xingfeng unleashed a counterattack at Beitang Zhiqiang and Evildoer Tie.

That was no ordinary spear. Rather, it was a Divine Power. It turned out that Dugu Xingfeng was also a Divine Body. Furthermore, he had already grasped the essence of his Divine Power. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to unleash such powerful strength.

Dugu Xingfeng was truly powerful!!!

Chapter 1701 – It's Time To End This

At this moment, the three men could be said to have gone all-out. However, even though Dugu Xingfeng was fighting two people, he was not at all disadvantaged. His strength had already confirmed his reputation as a genius to be well-deserved.

However, Chu Feng knew that Evildoer Tie's strength was definitely not limited to this. Back then, it was not only because he had used his Divine Power that he managed to defeat Aunt Lian. In addition to that, he possessed a true Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Lord Headmaster, you must be careful. That Evildoer Tie possesses a true Incomplete Imperial Armament that's extremely powerful,” Upon recalling this, Chu Feng hurriedly spoke to Dugu Xingfeng through voice transmission.

“Rest assured, I am certain that I will win,” Dugu Xingfeng replied with a smile.

“Woosh~~~”

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated. At this moment, Evildoer Tie's body started to shine with light, and his battle power rose dramatically in a flash. It was unknown what sort of weapon he had used. However, one thing was certain: he had used an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Otherwise, it would be impossible for his might to become this powerful.

Once this powerful might appeared, Dugu Xingfeng's spear that was capable of puncturing the heavens was immediately suppressed. In an instant, Dugu Xingfeng had fallen into a disadvantageous position.

“It's time to end this,” After using the Incomplete Imperial Armament, Evildoer Tie laughed confidently.

At the same time, a complacent smile also emerged on Beitang

Zhiqiang's face.

The way they saw it, having reached this point, it was time for this battle to end.

However, right at this moment, an aged voice sounded. "Indeed, it's time to end this."

Then, a boundless might appeared all of a sudden, crashing down from the sky. At this moment, the people from the Black Fiend, and even the two Martial Emperors Beitang Zhiqiang and Evildoer Tie were all unable to move, as if they were petrified.

As for Dugu Xingfeng, Chu Feng, Du Wanwu, Goudan'er and the people from the Luo Family, they had not felt a single bit of oppressive sensation.

At the moment when the oppressive might that bounded Evildoer Tie and the others appeared, three figures appeared from the sky.

They were three aged old men. They were all Martial Emperors. One was a red-faced old man with a ferocious appearance. He possessed the cultivation of a rank one Martial Emperor.

As for the other, he was a white-faced old man that emitted a frightening air of righteousness. He was standing with his hands behind his back. This old man possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Emperor.

Most importantly, the old man standing between the other two old men, although he appeared thin and weak, gave off the airs of an Immortal, and possessed the cultivation of a rank three Martial Emperor.

At this moment, these three old men were all wearing identical clothing. Furthermore, they all had the same symbol on their clothing. It was the symbol of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly. Evidently, these three old men were all from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly.

What shocked Chu Feng the most was the old man standing in the center. Chu Feng had met him before. He was the same old man who had been fishing above the poison lake on the Five Poisons Mountain.

It turned out that this old man was actually someone from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly?!!

“Please spare me! Milord, please spare me! I did not want to attack little friend Chu Feng, it was all because Beitang Zhiqiang threatened me. Milord, if you must blame someone, please blame him. Please, please spare me!”

At this moment, Evildoer Tie had returned to his original appearance from that of a giant steel eagle. He was dripping with sweat, and his complexion had turned blue. He was panicking. Earlier, he had been filled with confidence. However, at this moment, he had completely lost his head with fear.

Evildoer Tie had been worried about the expert behind Chu Feng the entire time. Originally, he had felt that the expert behind Chu Feng was not present after being persuaded by Beitang Zhiqiang. However, he had been completely mistaken. Not only was the rank three Martial Emperor that he feared the most indeed present, he had also shown himself.

Furthermore, earlier, he had revealed killing intent and had tried to kill Dugu Xingfeng. This was simply an action that would bring about his own destruction. At this moment, Evildoer Tie was filled with so much regret that his intestines turned green.

“Evildoer Tie, stop acting so cowardly. No matter what, you are one of the Five Great Evildoers,” Beitang Zhiqiang cast a cold glance at Evildoer Tie.

Then, he feigned an unyielding appearance as he looked to the three old men, “You all are from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, no? To protect a single Chu Feng, you all have come out with full strength. To dispatch this much battle power is truly a troubling

matter to you all, no?”

“However, you all should know who I am. You all should know that if you dare to touch me, what sort of consequence you all will bear, no?”

“Even if a rank three Martial Emperor has appeared in your Cyanwood Mountain and increased your rank to that of the strongest among the Nine Powers, you are still absolutely no match for our Beitang Imperial Clan.”

“Thus, I advise you all that it would be best for you to be tactful. Right now, release the Fourth Prince and myself. If you do that, we can pretend that nothing has happened.”

“Hahaha.....” Hearing those words, that rank three Martial Emperor stroked his beard and laughed out loud.

There was no oppressive might to his laughter. However, it caused Beitang Zhiqiang, Evildoer Tie and the others to become extremely nervous.

This was especially true for Beitang Zhiqiang. At this moment, the corner of his mouth was twitching nonstop, and his expression had become extremely unsightly. After all, he knew that he was currently the one bluffing here.

However, there was nothing he could do other than use his Beitang Imperial Clan to scare them in order to gain an opportunity to live.

“If you dare to touch us, you should know what consequences you will have to bear. Our Beitang Imperial Clan absolutely possesses the power to completely flatten your Cyanwood Mountain,” Beitang Zhiqiang continued to threaten them.

“Whether it is colluding with the Evildoer Tie or stealing the Invisible Dew, any sort of malicious deed that you wish to do is not related to our Cyanwood Mountain.”

“However, you wanted to kill Chu Feng. That is something that I

absolutely cannot tolerate. Not to mention you being someone from the Beitang Imperial Clan, even if you were from the Three Palaces, I would still not allow you to live.”

After the old man said these words, the smiling expression in his eyes grew even stronger. Suddenly, Beitang Zhiqiang’s expression started to become twisted. Then, with a ‘bang,’ Beitang Zhiqiang exploded. Both his body and soul had been extinguished. He was completely dead.

“Milord, please spare me! Milord, please spare me!!!” Seeing this scene, Evildoer Tie immediately started to beg for forgiveness. He was so anxious that tears started to roll down the corners of his eyes. It was only because he was fixed in midair and could not move. Otherwise, he would definitely be begging while kowtowing. The reason for that was because he truly did not wish to die, and feared death.

In fact, it was not only Evildoer Tie who was begging for forgiveness. The Black and White Skulls, as well as the numerous people from the Black Fiend, were all begging for forgiveness. Even though they were evildoers, they were all cowards who deeply feared death.

At this moment, the only person that was not begging for forgiveness was actually Beitang Zimo. It was not that he possessed moral backbone. Rather, it was because he was so frightened that he had become stunned. To see Beitang Zhiqiang, who had protected him since he was young, explode before his own eyes was an enormous shock to him.

Beitang Zimo clearly remembered how arrogant Beitang Zhiqiang had been. Especially toward outsiders, never once had Beitang Zhiqiang suffered at their hands. It had always been others that had shown respect toward him.

However, today, Beitang Zhiqiang had actually been killed. Thus, Beitang Zimo knew that he was done for today too.

However, no matter what, Beitang Zimo never expected that he would die at Chu Feng's hands, at the hands of that fellow that he deeply looked down upon.

“Bang~~~”

Right at this moment, Beitang Zimo's body suddenly exploded. After Beitang Zhiqiang was killed, he was also killed.

Afterward, many explosions sounded in succession, echoing through this entire region.

Those were not the sounds of firecrackers. Rather, they were the sounds of bodies exploding. Everyone from the Black Fiend was killed. Even Evildoer Tie, one of the Five Great Evildoers, was killed.

In an instant, the people who had completely sealed off the Luo Family had all died.

Even though he had killed that many people, that old rank three Martial Emperor was still smiling. He did not feel a single trace of emotion from killing them. He was truly someone who murdered without blinking an eye.

After killing all those people, he took out a Cosmos Sack and sucked all of the Cosmos Sacks and treasures from Evildoer Tie and the others that had died into that Cosmos Sack of his. Then, he landed and arrived before Chu Feng. With a smile, he said, “Chu Feng, we meet again.”

Chapter 1702 – Baili Xuankong

“Senior, you’re actually...” At this moment, Chu Feng was utterly overjoyed by this sudden turn of events. He was already unable to describe what he was currently feeling.

It turned out that this mysterious old man was actually someone from the Cyanwood Mountain. From this, Chu Feng felt that this mysterious old man would definitely help him..

Upon thinking about how he actually possessed such a powerful backer, Chu Feng, who was currently still wanted by the Nangong Imperial Clan, felt a lot more at ease.

It was as if a homeless child had finally found shelter. Furthermore, the shelter he had found was capable of standing up for him.

“Chu Feng, allow me to introduce them to you. This is our Cyanwood Sacred Assembly’s Elder Guan Hong,” Dugu Xingfeng pointed at the red-faced old man and introduced him.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Elder Guan Hong,” Chu Feng immediately clasped his fist respectfully toward that old man. As this person was an elder of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, it was only natural for Chu Feng to greet him respectfully. After all, in terms of status, he could be said to be Chu Feng’s senior, as Chu Feng was still a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain.

While that red-faced old man had a very fierce appearance, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was very amiable. Furthermore, when Chu Feng bowed to greet him, he nodded his head in a very appreciative manner.

“As for this person here, he is an amazing individual. He is our Cyanwood Sacred Assembly’s Lord Assembly Master,” Dugu Xingfeng looked to the white-faced old man and introduced him as well.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was extremely shocked. He had originally thought that the old man who emitted the airs of an Immortal would be the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Assembly Master. However, it would appear that he had guessed wrong.

However, the Lord Assembly Master was clearly the most supreme existence of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, the true controller of the Cyanwood Mountain.

If this white-faced old man was the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Assembly Master, then who would that old man with strength that was clearly stronger than him, and who was also wearing the attire of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, be?

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Lord Assembly Master.”

Even though confusion emerged in Chu Feng's heart, he still hurriedly greeted that white-faced old man respectfully. The Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Lord Assembly Master, regardless of whether it might be his status or position, they would both be the most supreme in the Cyanwood Mountain. Even Dugu Xingfeng would be greatly inferior to him.

As a disciple, it was already a great privilege for Chu Feng to meet the Lord Assembly Master. However, his Lord Assembly Master was actually protecting him from the shadows. This caused Chu Feng to feel extremely grateful.

“Little friend Chu Feng, there is no need for you to be this courteous. This old man's name is Yin Chengkong. If little friend doesn't mind, you can address me as Senior Yin. There is no need for you to address me as Assembly Master, for it would only distance our relationship.”

Compared to that Elder Guan Hong, this Lord Assembly Master was even more fond of Chu Feng. It could be seen that he thought very highly of Chu Feng.

“As for this final person, he is even more amazing. There is no

need for me to introduce him to you. Merely by telling you his name you will know all about him,” After introducing the two old men, Dugu Xingfeng looked to that old man that gave off the airs of an Immortal and spoke in a deliberately mystifying manner. Then he said, “This person here is Lord Baili Xuankong.”

“Baili Xuankong?!!!”

Chu Feng was immediately shocked upon hearing those words. He was truly incomparably shocked. It was as if an enormous wave had suddenly appeared on a calm lake.

Who was Baili Xuankong? Chu Feng had heard about this great individual’s name since the moment he had first arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Baili Xuankong was the founder of the Southern Cyanwood Forest. He had once been one of the strongest people in the Cyanwood Mountain.

However, hadn’t Baili Xuankong died long ago? How could he possibly appear before Chu Feng now?

Furthermore, Chu Feng had seen the sculpture of Baili Xuankong in the Ascension Sect’s ancient pagoda. That sculpture was simply a completely different person from the Baili Xuankong before him right now.

“I understand now,” After guessing about it, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. The reason for that was because that day when he entered the top of that ancient pagoda and had his back facing Baili Xuankong’s sculpture, he had felt a gaze.

That gaze had originated from Baili Xuankong’s sculpture. Even though Chu Feng had turned around and carefully examined the sculpture afterward, he had been unable to discover anything. Thus, at that time, Chu Feng had felt that it was only a misperception.

However, right now, when he was facing this Baili Xuankong, he

felt that Baili Xuankong's gaze was exactly the same as the gaze he had felt in the ancient pagoda.

Sure enough, this old man was Baili Xuankong. Not only had the founder of the Southern Cyanwood Forest not died, he had also become an expert with the cultivation of rank three Martial Emperor, a top expert capable of contending against the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou, a person who could be ranked among the top existences in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"This Southern Cyanwood Forest's disciple pays his respects to Lord Ancestor," Suddenly, Chu Feng was about to kneel down to Baili Xuankong to pay his respects to him. The reason for that was because Baili Xuankong was truly a very influential person to Chu Feng.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was not considering himself as a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain when he said those words. Rather, he was considered himself as a disciple of the Southern Cyanwood Forest. After all, the old man before him was the founder of the Southern Cyanwood Forest.

"My, Chu Feng, we are family; there is no need for you to be this overly courteous. Otherwise, you'll make it appear as if we are strangers," However, before Chu Feng could kneel to him, Baili Xuankong personally reached out to Chu Feng and stopped him from kneeling. The fondness he had for Chu Feng was completely self-evident.

"Lord Ancestor, Chu Feng really never expected that you were still alive. If the people from the Southern Cyanwood Forest were to know about this, I truly do not know how excited they would be," What Chu Feng said was what he was feeling from the bottom of his heart.

Before Chu Feng had appeared, the Southern Cyanwood Forest could be said to have suffered all sorts of humiliation. Even after

Chu Feng became very famous, the Southern Cyanwood Forest had still not become as extravagant as Chu Feng had imagined it to be.

However, if they were to find out that the founder of the Southern Cyanwood Forest was still alive, who would dare to bully the Southern Cyanwood Forest? Likely, even the elders from the Cyanwood Mountain would become extremely respectful toward the Southern Cyanwood Forest.

“Haha, it doesn’t matter whether they know about this or not. What matters is that you know about this.”

“Chu Feng, we had actually met each other already. I had already met you back in the Ascension Sect’s pagoda,” Baili Xuankong said with a beaming smile.

“That’s right. Junior still remembers that. Merely, Lord Ancestor, that sculpture does not resemble you at all,” Chu Feng apoke the question in his heart aloud.

“That sculpture is simply not me. Instead, it’s a sculpture of my close friend,” Baili Xuankong said with a smile.

“So that’s the case. Ancestor, Chu Feng has another question. That day, the person who saved us in the Cursed Soil Sect, was that you?” Chu Feng asked.

This was a question that Chu Feng has had in his heart the entire time. He had always felt that it was not a coincidence that they had been saved that day. Instead, someone had purposely been helping them.

Chu Feng had wanted to know who it was that helped them the entire time. The way it seemed now, the person who had most likely helped them would be this Baili Xuankong. After all, Baili Xuankong possessed both the strength and relationship to help them.

There were reasons for Baili Xuankong to act and save Chu Feng and the others. Furthermore, Baili Xuankong possessed the

strength to save Chu Feng and the others.

“It was indeed I,” Baili Xuankong nodded while smiling. Then, he said, “When you entered the ancient pagoda, I was in closed-door training. I was desirous of reaching a breakthrough. Thus, I did not come out to find you.

“However, I was worried about you the entire time, and wanted to know whether or not you were able to become a talent, whether or not you were the person I was waiting for.”

“When I exited my closed-door training, it just so happened to be the day when the Nine Powers Hunt had ended. Even though I did not manage to see your elegance in the Nine Powers Hunt, I did manage to see the battle between you and Qin Wentian.”

“Your cultivation has increased enormously fast, many times faster than I anticipated.”

“At that time, I concluded that I was not mistaken in establishing the Southern Cyanwood Forest, that I had not waited all these years in vain. After so long, I’ve finally managed to find a disciple that is worthy for me to nurture.”

“However, I did not wish for you to know about my existence. I feared that you would feel arrogant after knowing that I would protect you, and provoke troubles for no reason.”

“Thus, I began to follow you from the shadows. Thus, I know about practically all of the things you encountered later on.”

“Of course, I do not know about what happened inside the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds,” Baili Xuankong said with a smile.

Chapter 1703 – Avenge You

After hearing what Baili Xuankong said, Chu Feng asked in a shocked manner, “Lord Ancestor, could it be that you were also present when I created that enormous disaster in the Nangong Imperial Clan?”

“That’s right. It took quite a bit of effort for me to sneak into the Nangong Imperial Clan to protect you.”

“However, even I was shocked when you summoned that Asura Evil Spirit.”

“Facing that fellow, even I had to flee to the distance.”

“That day, you left in a hurry, and did not manage to see the savageness of that Asura Evil Spirit. However, I saw it all. That sight was truly magnificent.

“Over the years, there have been many monsters that appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, of all the monsters I’ve seen, not a single one of them could compare to that Asura Evil Spirit.”

“If it wasn’t for Nangong Longjian, the Nangong Imperial Clan would likely have been exterminated because of you.”

When mentioning this matter, Baili Xuankong smiled profoundly. However, there was actually a trace of reminiscence in his gaze.

Even though that scene had been incomparably dangerous, to Baili Xuankong, it had been a pleasant surprise. It was that moment that had allowed him to know that he had underestimated the genius before him, underestimated the hope of the Cyanwood Mountain.

After hearing what Baili Xuankong said, the gazes that Dugu Xingfeng, Elder Guan Hong and the Cyanwood Assembly’s Assembly Master looked to Chu Feng with began to change. Even

though they knew about this matter, upon thinking that all that had actually been caused by a brat like Chu Feng, they felt it to be extremely unbelievable.

In fact, even Du Wanwu, someone who had lived in the Poison Demon's Valley, was currently looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with shock and admiration. Even though he had lived in the Poison Demon's Valley, he still knew about the status of the Three Palaces, Four Clans and Nine Powers in the Holy Land of Martialism. He also knew about how powerful Asura World Spirits were.

Chu Feng was actually able to nearly exterminate the Nangong Imperial Clan using a single Asura Evil Spirit, what sort of Evil Spirit must that be? Du Wanwu did not dare to continue thinking about it. However, he was certain of one thing; that Chu Feng seemed to be even more frightening than he had imagined him to be.

As for the people from the Luo Family, they were currently looking at Chu Feng as if they were looking at a god. The expressions in their gazes were simply not those of surprise. Rather, they were gazes of reverence.

Earlier, they had only thought that Chu Feng was someone with a powerful origin. However, they had now finally realized how enormous Chu Feng's origins actually were; he had simply surpassed the origins of even those at the peak of the Holy Land of Martialism.

In fact, not to mention them, even Chu Feng was shocked by the Asura Evil Spirit's strength after hearing about it from Baili Xuankong. When even his Lord Ancestor was acting this surprised by its strength, it was sufficient to show that the Asura Evil Spirit had truly been powerful.

What he had seen that day should only be the tip of the iceberg.

“”Lord Ancestor, you were also present when I was thrown into

the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds by the Snow-haired Immortal?” Chu Feng asked.

“I was. The Snow-haired Immortal is stronger than me. Thus, I was unable to reveal myself to help you. As for the Snow-haired Immortal, her methods are generally strange. However, they oftentimes possess miraculous effects.”

“That day, even though the methods she used on you were only just on the spur of the moment, she still put forth a great amount of resources.”

“That is why I did not act when she pushed you into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds. I decided to gamble that you would be able to obtain a body immune to poisons,” Baili Xuankong said.

“That day, the Snow-haired Immortal felt that her experiment ended up in a failure. When she turned around to leave, my heart also dropped to the valley floor. I had thought that I had made an enormous blunder, that I should not have used your life to gamble for better future prospects for you.”

“However, I did not give up because of that. I believed that you would be able to create miracles. Even though it was an extravagant hope, and I had thought it to only be a delusion, I was still unwilling to leave, unwilling to accept the fact that you died.”

“However... you really managed to create a miracle. Not only did you not die, your cultivation also increased by a level. Not only were you able to escape yourself, you even brought out the Poison Demon’s descendant with you.” As Baili Xuankong said those words, he took a profound glance at Du Wanwu.

Faced with Baili Xuankong’s gaze, Du Wanwu’s face turned blue. After all, he knew what Chu Feng had actually experienced in the Poison Demon’s Valley.

Truth be told, the Du Clan had treated Chu Feng extremely

insincerely. Not to mention Du Xiangyu, even he himself had wanted to kill Chu Feng. In fact, if it hadn't been for the fact that Chu Feng was immune to poisons, it was very possible that he would have already died at his hands.

“Lord Ancestor actually did all this for me. This disciple truly doesn't know how to repay your benevolence.”

Chu Feng said those words from the bottom of his heart. Even though Baili Xuankong had gambled with his life, he had done so for Chu Feng's sake. It was Chu Feng's blessing to have someone like Baili Xuankong that was willing to do all this for him.

“Chu Feng, don't say it like that. There's one thing that I must still apologize to you for,” Baili Xuankong suddenly said in an ashamed manner.

“Lord Baili, this matter was not because of you. It was clearly because of my order,” Dugu Xingfeng hurriedly said.

“Even though it was you who ordered it, it was still I who instructed you to do so,” Baili Xuankong laughed bitterly. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, when you offended the Nangong Imperial Clan, the Nangong Imperial Clan posted your wanted posters over the entire Holy Land of Martialism.”

“There are a lot of people in the Nine Powers who know of you. Thus, I knew that you, being a disciple of our Cyanwood Mountain, would become known by others sooner or later. This was something that could not be hidden.”

“Furthermore, currently, the Cyanwood Mountain does not possess the strength to contend against the Nangong Imperial Clan. In order to save the Cyanwood Mountain, I could only abandon you.”

“Thus, I instructed Dugu Xingfeng to have him announce to the public that you were an unfilial disciple to the Cyanwood Mountain. Not only did the Cyanwood Mountain remove you as a

disciple, it also said that it would also capture and kill you in order to eliminate harm to the Cyanwood Mountain, to the world.”

“Thus, you are currently not a disciple of our Cyanwood Mountain. I have done that all for the sake of preserving the Cyanwood Mountain,” When mentioning this matter, the ashamed expression on Baili Xuankong’s face grew stronger and stronger.

“Lord Ancestor, Lord Headmaster, there is no need for you two to say anymore. This disciple understands your intentions and meticulous efforts.”

“I think that what you two have done is correct. You cannot, for the sake of me, a sole individual, allow that many people to lose their lives, and destroy the Cyanwood Mountain and its foundation built through many years.”

“Regardless of what others think of me, as far as I am concerned, I, Chu Feng, will forever be the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciple,” Chu Feng said earnestly.

“Chu Feng, it is truly great that you can understand. Actually, I also did that for the sake of helping you. If you were a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain, we would be in the light, whereas they would be in the dark. We will have to be passive in all aspects.”

“However, if you are not a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain, they will be in the light, whereas we will be in the dark. We will be able to do whatever we want.”

“Right now, the Cyanwood Mountain is completely hostile toward you. No matter what, the Nangong Imperial Clan will not make things difficult for the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“After all, with how the situation stands, if they still tried to make things difficult for the Cyanwood Mountain, they would not be able to justify their actions.”

“However, in reality, not only will our Cyanwood Mountain not really set ourselves to be your enemy, we will instead protect you.

Remember what I said to you on the Five Poisons Mountain?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“I do. Lord Ancestor, you said that one cannot avoid calamities. Instead, one must meet them head-on. One cannot flee from disasters. Instead, one must meet them head-on,” Chu Feng repeated word for word what Baili Xuankong had said to him back then.

Chapter 1704 – Meticulous Planning

“That’s right, I know all that you have experienced in your journey. Not only did you not use your status as a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain to create troubles, you instead concealed your identity. I believe you likely did so in order to prevent causing troubles for our Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Furthermore, you are very low-profile to begin with, and do not go out of your way to provoke others. Even when you reveal your strength, you only do so when there is no other option.”

“However, regardless of all that, the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan viewed you as a thorn. They were jealous of your talent, and decided to eliminate you without justification.”

“While others might be willing to tolerate this sort of thing, we will absolutely not tolerate this sort of thing. If we are to tolerate it, it will only make them more arrogant. We must properly fix them up,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor, your intention is?” Chu Feng asked.

“I think that the Nangong Imperial Clan head already knows that you were pushed into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds by the Snow-haired Immortal. Otherwise, they would not have been removing your wanted posters without restraint and declaring that you died in the recent days. Furthermore, they have even deliberately announced their thanks to the Snow-haired Immortal for helping the Holy Land of Martialism get rid of evil.”

“Even though they did not say it out loud, their intention was very clear. They are dragging the Snow-haired Immortal downstream and declaring to the public that it was the Snow-haired Immortal who killed you. Likely, they did so in fear that we would retaliate against them, so that we will go and vent our anger on the Snow-haired Immortal.”

“However, they have truly underestimated us to think that this would work. Since the Nangong Imperial Clan thinks that you have died, we’ll allow them to know that you’re still alive,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Never would I have expected the Nangong Imperial clan’s sources of information to be this fast and abundant. Furthermore, they are this cunning. Ancestor, what should we do?”

After Chu Feng left the Poison Demon’s Valley, he directly rushed over to this place. Thus, he did not know much about what had happened outside. As such, he was very surprised after hearing what Baili Xuankong said.

Logically, it should be a good thing that the Nangong Imperial Clan had thought that he had died. However, with the way Baili Xuankong was acting, it was evident that he was not planning to leave the matter at that. Instead, he had something else in mind.

Let alone, Chu Feng himself was also not someone who would be willing to be taken advantage of without doing anything. Thus, he wanted to know very much what his Lord Ancestor planned to do.

“What should we do? Naturally, we must strike them in the head and let them know how powerful you are.”

“Right now, there is a great opportunity for that,” As Baili Xuankong said those words, he subconsciously revealed an expression of anticipation.

“A great opportunity?” Chu Feng’s heart moved upon hearing those words. Even his blood started to faintly boil over. He knew that Baili Xuankong had not said those words so simply. It seemed that there was an opportunity for him to reveal his strength.

“Do you know why the Beitang Imperial Clan would appear here? Do you know why Dugu Xingfeng and Yin Chengkong would join up with me here?”

“The reason for all this is because the Four Great Imperial Clans

are holding an assembly for the younger generation to swap pointers with one another. This sparring assembly is something concerning the Four Great Imperial Clans. However, in order to put up a front of being ‘fair,’ they have deliberately invited the younger generations from the Nine Powers to participate as well.”

“Actually, the true intention in why they invited the younger generation from the Nine Powers to participate is so that they can set themselves against the Nine Powers’ younger generation, to show how strong their Four Great Imperial Clan’s younger generation are. Their intentions could be said to be extremely despicable.”

“However, because of face, it is unsuitable for the Nine Powers to refuse their invitation. Thus, they can only all hurry over to this place.”

“As for the location of the Four Great Imperial Clan’s younger generation’s spar, it is Mooncloud City.”

“They have already sent the invitations to the Nine Powers. Furthermore, all the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans who are supposed to come have already come. Therefore, this sparing of the Four Great Imperial Clan’s younger generation will begin tomorrow,” Baili Xuankong said.

“There’s actually such a thing? This will truly be great. Ancestor, could it be that you want me to sneak into the sparring assembly and then attack the Four Great Imperial Clan’s younger generation?”

Chu Feng was pleasantly shocked to hear those words. His blood that was boiling over started to boil even more intensely.

“That’s right. Other than the younger generation from the Four Great Imperial Clans, the Nine Powers’ young generations also possess a spot, an opportunity to participate in this Mooncloud City’s sparring.”

“This spot must be fought for. Not only are the younger generations from the Nine Powers allowed to fight for that spot, as long as they’re someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, all members of the younger generation are allowed to participate.”

“This just so happens to provide an opportunity for you. You can disguise yourself and then participate in the competition under an alias. Then, after obtaining the spot, you can challenge the Four Clan’s younger generations, mainly, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation and the Beitung Imperial Clan’s younger generation.”

“After you completely defeat all of the younger generation from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitung Imperial Clan, you will then reveal your true appearance.”

“At that time, you will let everyone know exactly who you are, that you, Chu Feng, did not die, and that all of the younger generation from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitung Imperial Clan are inferior to you.”

“After you reveal your true appearance, I will think of a way to bring you away,” Baili Xuankong told his plan to Chu Feng.

“This is truly an opportunity bestowed to me by the heavens. By pure coincidence, I actually arrived at Mooncloud City,” After hearing about Baili Xuankong’s meticulous planning, Chu Feng revealed a smile of anticipation.

Suddenly, Baili Xuankong asked, “Chu Feng, even though the people from the Four Clans are stationed in the Mooncloud City, they believe that no one will dare to cause trouble. Thus, their guard is rather low. However, the Four Great Imperial Clans have invited a lot of experts to watch. It is said that at least three of the Ten Immortals have shown up.”

“As we are going to create troubles openly, I cannot guarantee that I will be able to bring you away from the Mooncloud City. It could be said that this will still be a very dangerous task.”

“Thus, I still wish to seek your opinion. Are you really willing to take the risk and enter Mooncloud City just to humiliate the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan?”

“When riches and honor are sought among dangers, bearing dangers for retaliation will be without question.”

“Lord Ancestor, you clearly know that it is dangerous, yet you are still willing to bear the dangers to help me. If I, Chu Feng, am to cower now, I will be a man in vain. Even if they bully and insult me, I would deserve it,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, you have spirit. As expected from someone that I thought highly of,” Baili Xuankong nodded in a very appreciative manner. He understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Chu Feng was determined to go to Mooncloud City.

“However, Chu Feng, this matter is very important. We cannot let anyone know of this. I know that you possess some friendship with the Luo Family. However, to speak the truth, I cannot trust them,” As Baili Xuankong spoke, he looked to the people of the Luo Family.

“Milord, please spare us, please spare us! We will definitely keep our mouths shut and lips tight. We will not mention what has happened here today to anyone,” Seeing this, the people of the Luo Family immediately knelt onto the ground and started begging for forgiveness while kowtowing. They all thought that Baili Xuankong was planning to silence them by killing them.

“Rest assured, I will not kill you all. However, I am going to remove your memories of us,” Baili Xuankong said.

“We are willing to do that. As long as you do not kill us, we are willing to do anything,” The people of the Luo Family agreed in unison. As long as they were allowed to live, they were willing to do anything. Compared to one’s life, what could a bit of memory possibly be worth?

“Lord Ancestor, the two of them are my friends. I trust them. Is it possible for you to not remove their memories?”

Chu Feng looked to Du Wanwu and Goudan'er who stood not far from them. He felt that having one's memory forcibly removed was a kind of humiliation. Thus, he did not wish for this sort of humiliation to be done to his friends.

Chapter 1705 – An Enormous Gift

“Rest assured, even though the Du Clan has done unjust things to you, I can tell that Du Wanwu has sincerely treated you as a friend. I will not touch your friends.”

“Let alone, even if I am to remove memories, I will only remove the memories concerning us. I will not touch any of the memories that contain you all,” Baili Xuankong patted Chu Feng’s shoulder to indicate to Chu Feng that he could be at ease.

Then, he said to Assembly Master Yin Chengkong and Elder Guan Hong, “Chengkong, Guan Hong, I’ll leave this matter to you two.”

“Understood,” Yin Chenghong was the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly’s Assembly Master, whereas Guan Hong was an Elder of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly. However, before Baili Xuankong, the two of them were extremely respectful.

From this, it could be seen that Baili Xuankong was the true ruler of the Cyanwood Mountain.

After that, Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong began to remove the memories from the people from the Luo Family. Rather than saying removing their memories, it would be more accurate to say that they were altering their memories.

The memories they had before the Black Fiend came were completely unchanged. However, the memories they had after the Black Fiend came were altered. The change was that... Goudan’er, Chu Feng and Du Wanwu had eliminated the entire Black Fiend by themselves, saving their Luo Family.

Chu Feng, Du Wanwu and Goudan’er had become the great benefactors who had saved the Luo Family.

Furthermore, not only did they change the memories of the people from the Luo Family, they also healed the injuries of those from the Luo Family that were injured.

At the time when they were changing the memories of the people of the Luo Family, Baili Xuankong brought Chu Feng along to the Five Poisons Mountain, saying that he had some things that he wanted to tell Chu Feng personally.

“Chu Feng, even though you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, and divine lightnings that can increase your cultivation by two levels, allowing your true battle power to be able to contend against ordinary rank eight Half Martial Emperors, there are also extraordinary people among the Four Clan’s younger generation.”

“As far as I know, there are many outstanding members of the younger generation in the Four Clans right now. Several among them are even said to possess heaven-defying potential that surpasses their predecessors.”

“If you wish to humiliate them, you will not be able to do so with only a rank two Half Martial Emperor cultivation; you must immediately increase your cultivation,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Increase my cultivation?” Chu Feng started to frown upon hearing those words. Only he knew how difficult it was for him to increase his cultivation. It was not that it was difficult for him to reach a breakthrough; merely, he did not possess cultivation resources.

“Rest assured, I have already made preparations for you.”

“Consider this my very first gift to you.”

As Baili Xuankong spoke, he handed a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng. Upon opening the Cosmos Sack, Chu Feng was immediately stunned.

The Cosmos Sack was filled with cultivation resources. Merely for Natural Oddities’ seeds, there were five different ones. As for other cultivation resources, they were simply innumerable.

However, there was one similarity in all of them. That was, they

all contained a considerable amount of Natural Energy.

To Chu Feng, these cultivation resources were simply precious treasures. They were definitely capable of allowing Chu Feng to reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

However, Chu Feng didn't understand how Baili Xuankong knew that he required these things to cultivate with. One must know that, for ordinary people, they simply did not need Natural Oddities to cultivate with. The reason for that was because they would not be able to bear the berserk energy contained within the Natural Oddities.

Could it be that Baili Xuankong already knew about it when he was secretly protecting Chu Feng?

After being shocked for a moment, Chu Feng asked. "Lord Ancestor, you've seen the way I train?"

"Mn, it was when you were at the Nangong Imperial Clan. While you were very cautious, I had a special method that allowed me to see through your concealing formation to see what you were doing.

"Truth be told, I was truly shocked that day."

"After that day, I had Yin Chengkong and the others help me gather as many Natural Oddities as we could so that you could increase your cultivation to a higher level in a short amount of time," Baili Xuankong said.

"I have truly troubled Lord Ancestor," At this moment, Chu Feng was very emotionally moved. The reason for that was because this Lord Ancestor of his had truly spent great effort for his sake.

"The disappearance of the Boundary Energy signifies the birth of an overlord. Indeed, the younger generation of this era are much more powerful than the ones before. I wish to make you an emperor, a ruler, the overlord of this era. For this, I will spare no effort."

“Don’t think about thanking me too quickly. I also possess selfish intentions for doing this. I hope that you can bring the Cyanwood Mountain to a new level after becoming the overlord.”

“I do not seek for our Cyanwood Mountain to become the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, it should at least break free from the Nine Powers and become on par with the Three Palaces.”

“This is my mission for you. What do you think? A lot of pressure, no?” Baili Xuankong said with a smile.

“It indeed is some pressure. However, only by having pressure will there be motivation.”

“To speak of it arrogantly, to become an overlord is not my dream. Instead, it is only a natural path that I must follow in my cultivation journey,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, great arrogance. However, I like it. The Five Overlords, is there even one among them who was not arrogant? If one doesn’t even possess arrogance, one would not be qualified to become an overlord.” Baili Xuankong burst into loud laughter. It seemed like he was fond of anything that Chu Feng said.

“Lord Ancestor, since you’ve prepared this many cultivation resources for this disciple, this disciple will not hesitate,” Chu Feng was very impatient to refine these cultivation resources. Since Baili Xuankong already knew of the way he cultivated, Chu Feng wanted to refine these cultivation resources right away.

“You don’t mind me watching, right?” Baili Xuankong asked with a smile.

“Of course not.”

Chu Feng smiled slightly, then sat down in a cross-legged position. He neatly placed all of the cultivation resources in the Cosmos Sack before him and then began to refine the cultivation resources given to him by Baili Xuankong.

As Chu Feng began to refine the cultivation resources, Baili Xuankong stepped back several steps. His eyes were completely fixed on Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng had set up a concealment formation that day. Even though he had been able to see what Chu Feng was doing, he had been unable to see it clearly. Thus, he did not wish to miss this opportunity to be able to see Chu Feng at a close distance.

After all, since ancient times, there was practically no one who dared to refine cultivation resources with energies as berserk as these. To refine these cultivation resources was simply equivalent to suicide. However, Chu Feng was able to accomplish this feat.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's cultivation method was also different from those of ordinary people. Ordinary people generally cultivated using Mysterious Techniques or hand seal techniques to absorb the Natural Energies into their body. The usage of the Mysterious Techniques and hand seal techniques was to eliminate the berserk power from the Natural Energies in order to prevent them from harming their body.

However, Chu Feng simply didn't use any hand seal techniques or mysterious techniques. Instead, he opened his mouth and sucked those Natural Energies into his stomach. It was only because Baili Xuankong managed to see it himself. Otherwise, he would definitely not believe that there was someone who could cultivate using this method.

How could this possibly be considered to be cultivation through refinement? This was simply eating cultivation resources. This sort of cultivation method was truly too savage.

"Amazing, exactly what sort of power is able to help you refine those berserk energies? That is definitely not Divine Power. Divine Power does not possess that sort of strength."

"Could it really be an Inherited Bloodline? If that's the case, then it must be an Inherited Bloodline above Imperial Bloodlines."

As Baili Xuankong saw Chu Feng eating the Natural Oddities that could not be refined in a manner even more effortlessly than drinking water with his own eyes, he became both shocked and overjoyed.

He was shocked because of Chu Feng's power. He was in joy because of Chu Feng's power. At the same time, he began to guess exactly what the divine lightnings in Chu Feng's body were.

Because they were actually this heaven-defying!!!

Chapter 1706 – Rank Three Half Martial Emperor

For ordinary people, they would generally fear being disturbed while they trained. However, it was different for Chu Feng. Even with Baili Xuankong watching him like this, it did not affect his training.

Furthermore, after Chu Feng refined the third Natural Oddity, he reached a breakthrough to rank three Half Martial Emperor. Afterward, Chu Feng completely refined the remaining two Natural Oddities, as well as the many other cultivation resources.

Unfortunately, the appetite of the Divine Lightnings in Chu Feng's body became more and more enormous. The Natural Energies contained within the remaining cultivation resources were simply not enough to satisfy his Divine Lightnings.

This time around, Chu Feng had refined a lot of Natural Oddities and rare cultivation resources; however, in the end, he was still only able to increase his cultivation by a single level, and become a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

That being said, Chu Feng was very satisfied with this result.

“Thank you Lord Ancestor for the gift. Otherwise, it would be impossible for me to reach a breakthrough this quickly,” After Chu Feng stood back up, he turned to express his thanks to Baili Xuankong.

“With this many cultivation resources, you only managed to break through a single level?” Baili Xuankong was very surprised.

“To tell the truth, Lord Ancestor, with each break through in cultivation, the Natural Energies my dantian requires will double. It is basically impossible for me to calculate how much more Natural Energy I will need. However, one thing is certain: the amount I require will become more and more frightening,” When

mentioning this matter, Chu Feng also had an expression of helplessness.

“That’s alright, cultivation resources can be gathered slowly. Even though you only managed to break through one level of cultivation, with it being you, even if you do not have an absolute certainty of victory against the younger generation of the Four Imperial Clans, you should still be able to match them.”

“That being said, I have a question that I wish to ask you,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Lord Ancestor, please go ahead and ask,” Chu Feng said.

“You really only need sufficient amounts of cultivation resources in order to reach a breakthrough in cultivation without the need to comprehend the true essence of the path of martial cultivation and search for the turning point to break through?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“I have reached bottlenecks before. However, I managed to quickly find the turning point for breaking through. The way it would appear now, unless it’s to break through to Martial Emperor from Half Martial Emperor, I will likely not run into any bottlenecks,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Sss~~~” Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong was unable to contain himself and sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Then, he said, “Truly, it hurts to compare to you. With your talent, I fear that describing you as a genius would be inadequate.”

“However, I dare to guarantee one thing. Since ancient times, you are the only person in the Holy Land of Martialism capable of accomplishing this.”

“With the talent that you possess, if you do not become an overlord, who else would possibly be able to become an overlord?” When Baili Xuankong said these words, he had an expression filled with pride. He was very proud to have a disciple like Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng will definitely not disappoint Ancestor,” Chu Feng said with an expression of confidence. This was not Chu Feng being arrogant. After all, Chu Feng’s target was the Outer World; his clan was located in the Outer World.

If he could not even become an Overlord in the Holy Land of Martialism, how could he possibly be able to reach the Outer World and contend against the heroes there? How would he be able to retaliate against his clan that had cast him away and imprisoned his father?

“I trust you,” Baili Xuankong said to Chu Feng. He was also filled with the same sort of confidence. Then, he said, “Go and return to the Luo Family and bid your farewells to them. We’ll set off immediately after.”

“Even though the Four Clan’s younger generation’s sparring will not start until tomorrow, it seems that the Nine Powers’ disciple’s contest will start today. Even though there is no time limit to it, it is still better to arrive sooner in case anything unexpected were to happen.”

“This disciple understands,” Hearing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and directly returned to the Luo Family.

It must be said that Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong were rather quick in the way they handled things. Chu Feng had actually not left the Luo Family for very long. However, by the time Chu Feng returned, Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong were both gone, and the memories of everyone from the Luo Family had been altered by the two of them.

After returning to the Luo Family, Chu Feng did not try to chat with the people from the Luo Family for too long. Instead, he directly brought Du Wanwu and Goudan’er to a location.

He wanted the two of them to wait for him here. He was planning to come back and find them after he returned from Mooncloud City.

Suddenly, Du Wanwu said, “Chu Feng, perfect timing on your return. I wanted to bid my farewells to you.”

“Bid farewell? Where are you planning to go? Are you really not planning to return to the Poison Demon’s Valley?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m not returning,” Du Wanwu smiled. Then, he said, “Chu Feng, I think of you as my friend. There is one thing that I wish to ask you for. I hope that you will be able to help me. However, even if you do not help me with it, I will also not blame you for it.”

“What is it? Speak away,” Chu Feng said straightforwardly.

“If I die, do not bring my body back. However, if I am alive but am not acting like a human should be, please bring this to me. It might be able to stop me,” Du Wanwu handed Chu Feng a green crystal pendant.

“What is this? Exactly what do you mean by those words? If you really take me as a friend, explain yourself more clearly,” Chu Feng said.

“I...” Du Wanwu started to hesitate. He hesitated for quite a while before heaving out a sigh. Then, he said, “Fine, you’ll know about this sooner or later anyways.”

“Chu Feng, I actually deceived you earlier. I know how powerful the Inherited Gu is. I also know how dangerous it is.”

“Do you know why my skin is green? Ever since the day I was born, I have been tempering my body with special poisons all for the sake of this Inherited Gu.”

“I am going to refine this Inherited Gu and obtain the power contained within it. However, whose power was this Inherited Gu from? It’s from my Ancestor. I am going to inherit my Ancestor’s power. It will be very difficult and very dangerous,” Du Wanwu said.

“Ancestor? You’re saying... the Poison Demon?!!”

“Are you saying that this Inherited Gu is formed from the Poison Demon? You’re saying that the Poison Demon made himself into this Inherited Gu?” Chu Feng was incomparably shocked. He had anticipated that this Inherited Gu was made from people. However, he did not expect that the Poison Demon had used himself to create this Inherited Gu. This was truly ruthless.

“Mn, the Inherited Gu was refined by my Ancestor using his own cultivation and body. He did that with the intention of there being a descendant capable of inheriting his strength.”

“Furthermore, this Inherited Gu has matured. The power it contains now is likely much more powerful than the strength my Ancestor possessed at his peak,” Du Wanwu said.

At this moment, even though Chu Feng was extremely shocked, he still came to a sudden realization as to why Du Wanwu was named Du Wanwu. He also came to know why Du Wanwu wanted to retrieve the Inherited Gu this urgently.

It turned out that he was planning to become the second Poison Demon. Furthermore, he was going to become a Poison Demon even more powerful than the Poison Demon from fifteen thousand years ago.

“It is definitely going to be dangerous to inherit the strength of such a powerful Gu. Death is a great possibility. However, I do not think that death will be the only possibility,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re right. There is a large possibility of death. In fact, the possibility of success is extremely small.”

“However, other than death and success, there is one other possibility. That is, I will have obtained the strength of my Ancestor, but failed to control the strength and lost my mind in the process. At that time, I will become a beast, a person without intelligence, someone filled with only murderous intent,” Du Wanwu said.

“I finally understand why you do not want to return to the Poison Demon’s Valley now. You fear that you will harm your clansmen after returning to the Poison Demon’s Valley,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” Du Wanwu nodded.

“Then, this jade pendant will be able to save you?” Chu Feng asked. ¹

“This jade pendant might be able to wake me up. However, this is only a possibility. If I am to really become a demon, I will definitely be extremely dangerous. Thus... you can choose to not help me,” Du Wanwu said.

“No, I’ll help you,” Chu Feng accepted the jade pendant and said, “It doesn’t matter whether or not my friends are demons or not. However, I will not watch without doing anything as a friend of mine turns into a walking corpse.”

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Yes, I know, it said green crystal pendant earlier. Not sure why it’s a jade pendant now. Well, I guess a jade is generally a green rock and a crystal is also a rock... so... ↩

Chapter 1707 – Parting Ways

“Chu Feng, you...”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Du Wanwu only managed to gradually calm down after a long time had passed. A rare smile appeared on the corner of his mouth.

He said, “Chu Feng, I, Du Wanwu, have never had a friend my entire life. Even my clansmen distances themselves from me.”

“Actually, I have been very lonely since my youth. However, never would I have ever imagined that I, Du Wanwu, would be able to obtain a friend like you in my lifetime.”

“Even if I am to fail in refining this Inherited Gu, I will have no regrets in this life.”

“It’s enough. You’re a grown man, so stop acting this emotional,” Chu Feng patted Du Wanwu’s shoulder while smiling. Then, he said, “I believe that you will be able to succeed. After all, your name is Du Wanwu.”

Du Wanwu smiled again at Chu Feng’s words. However, he did not say anything.

Du Wanwu was planning to find a remote location to refine the Inherited Gu. He feared that he would lose his rationality and become a demon that would willfully slaughter the innocent should he fail. As for exactly where this place was, he did not tell Chu Feng. Chu Feng also did not ask about it.

Likely, even Du Wanwu had not decided where he planned to refine the Inherited Gu. After all, he was not familiar with the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Goudan’er, he planned to stay in the Luo Family for an extended period of time. The reason for that was actually very simple. Goudan’er was a poisonous substance to begin with. In order to cultivate, he would require poisons. As the Five Poisons

Mountain was filled with abundant poison gas, it would be an optimal place for him to cultivate.

Furthermore, in the hearts of the people from the Luo Family, not only was Goudan'er a hero that had saved them, he was also a frightening monster. Thus, if he wanted to stay here, they would not dare to say no.

Chu Feng felt that even though Goudan'er was a poisonous substance, he possessed a kind-hearted nature. Thus, he was not worried that Goudan'er would do malicious deeds, and was instead relieved that Goudan'er had decided to stay in the Luo Family.

As such, Chu Feng decided that he would not return to the Luo Family for the time being, and would return to visit Goudan'er in the future when he had the time.

After all, he was not going to Mooncloud City to do something decent. Instead, he was going to cause trouble. What would he do after he finished causing trouble? Naturally, he would flee.

As the Five Poisons Mountain was located close to Mooncloud City, it would naturally not be a suitable location for him to stay. Thus, after Chu Feng finished causing trouble, he would quickly leave this place without returning to the Five Poisons Mountain.

Just like this, Goudan'er was staying in the Luo Family, whereas Chu Feng and Du Wanwu would be parting ways. While Du Wanwu did not know where he was going, Chu Feng had a clear-cut goal.

Mooncloud City was a place very close to the Five Poisons Mountain to begin with. With the expert Baili Xuankong leading the way, Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast. In merely the blink of an eye, Chu Feng arrived outside of Mooncloud City.

Mooncloud City was located above the skies. Vast white clouds drifted over it. Faintly, vast and magnificent buildings could be seen. In fact, one could even see tall mountains, flowing rivers, and

red-crowned cranes flying in groups.

This place was simply equivalent to a palace in the heavens.

Mooncloud City was originally a very secluded place. No one knew who the first city master was. However, one thing was certain; all of the successive city masters of Mooncloud City were Martial Emperors. As such, Mooncloud City was a power that could not be looked down upon.

The reason why Mooncloud City was willing to open itself to the public was because Mooncloud City's city master had been saved by the Four Clans before. After that, Mooncloud City's city master had been extremely grateful to the Four Clans, and declared that Mooncloud City would be forever open to the Four Clans.

As matters stood, Mooncloud City had become the place where the Four Great Imperial Clans would regularly gather. Whenever there were events where all Four Great Imperial Clans would participate, they would always choose to conduct those events at Mooncloud City.

At this moment, there were a lot of people proceeding toward Mooncloud City. Other than the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans and the Nine Powers, the people from the Three Palaces had also come to enjoy the excitement.

Even though all of the people who came from the Three Palaces were not great and famous people, they were still the representatives of the Three Palaces.

Other than the Three Palaces, Four Clans and Nine Powers, there were also many non-famous powers and many wanderers that came to enjoy the show. From this, it could be seen that the rallying power of the Four Great Imperial Clans was quite enormous.

After arriving outside of Mooncloud City, Dugu Xingfeng, Guan Hong and Yin Chengkong entered into Mooncloud City first. After

all, they were representatives of the Nine Powers, and could not journey together with Chu Feng.

As for Baili Xuankong, he disguised himself as a passerby and snuck into Mooncloud City to protect Chu Feng from the shadows.

As for Chu Feng, he had also disguised himself. He had changed his appearance to that of an average-looking young man and entered Mooncloud City.

Even though Mooncloud City was enormous, due to the fact that it was open to everyone at this time, anyone who arrived was allowed to enter.

As such, a vast crowd was currently gathered in Mooncloud City. People could be seen all over the place.

As for the place that Chu Feng planned to go to, it was the place filled with the most people. The reason for that was because it was the place where the Nine Powers' disciples were fiercely competing with one another.

Even though this competition would only give rise to a single victor who could compete with the younger generation of the Four Clans, the amount of participants was not few at all. Actually, the number of people from the Nine Powers participating in this competition were not numerous. More than them were the people who didn't belong to any sect or school, who had only come to join in the fun. These people were the main reason why this place was so crowded.

At this moment, Chu Feng finally arrived at the location where the competition was being held. However, upon arriving, Chu Feng discovered that there was an announcement post before him. This announcement post was hovering in the sky. Written on the announcement post were the rules of this competition.

“Enter through the entrance. Exit through the exit. Only one person is allowed to exit through the exit. This person will be the

victor, and will be able to contend with the Four Clan's younger generation for supremacy."

The announcement post was enormous, and the words written on it were also gigantic. However, there were only a few sentences.

Yet, these few sentences had already explained the rules of this competition. No matter how many people were to enter to participate in this competition, there would only be one remaining victor.

"Dang! With this many people and that small of an entrance, how am I to enter?" After reading the rules, Chu Feng began to search for the entrance. When he discovered the entrance, he found out that entrance was extremely small, and would only allow a single person to enter at once.

This led to the entrance being completely packed with people at this moment. There were so many people that there were simply six entire layers of people surrounding the entrance. If it wasn't for the fact that Chu Feng had used his Heaven's Eyes, he would simply not have been able to find the entrance at all.

Upon entering the crowd, it would be inevitable for one to push and bump into others. Furthermore, as these members of the younger generation were all very conceited and prideful, this inevitably caused friction among them. At this moment, there were people shouting and making noises all around.

"Bastard with no eyes, do you know whose chariot this is? This is the Ximen Imperial Clan's Fifth Prince's, Ximen Feixue's, chariot!!!"

All of a sudden, an angry shout was heard amongst the cacophony. Like a sudden clap of thunder, this shout completely muffled everyone's voices. This caused everyone to shift their attention to the source of the voice.

"Ximen Feixue? The person known as the strongest genius in the

history of the Ximen Imperial Clan, the person said to have the highest chance of winning the spar between the Four Imperial Clan's younger generation?"

"You don't say! How many more Fifth Princes are there in the Ximen Imperial Clan? Who else would it be other than Ximen Feixue?"

"Heavens! He's one of the super geniuses who is said to have the greatest opportunity in becoming the overlord of this era!!!"

After hearing the name 'Ximen Feixue', the crowd that was already making an uproar burst into an even greater uproar. Some people actually stopped crowding the entrance and began to proceed toward the direction where that angry shout sounded from.

Especially for some women, they actually disregarded everything and began to rush over. It was as if they had gone crazy. The incomparably prideful goddesses had instantly turned into love-struck fools.

"Ximen Feixue? Interesting name. However, based on this attitude, it doesn't seem like he's anyone good either." ¹

Chu Feng smiled. Regardless of how powerful Ximen Feixue might be, it was the first time that he had heard of him. Thus, compared to the others, Chu Feng did not have the slightest interest in this Ximen Feixue.

However, only people who were planning to participate in the competition would come here. As such, why would someone from the Ximen Imperial Clan be here? Chu Feng felt that this Ximen Feixue was simply coming to flaunt his strength.

Chu Feng disliked these types of people the most. However, as Chu Feng was not fond of meddling in other people's business, he did not think too much of it, and instead continued to cram toward the entrance.

“Senior, I am truly sorry. It is not intentional. I have something that I must take care of, can you let me go please?” Right at this moment, a gentle yet apologetic female voice suddenly sounded.

“This is!!!” After hearing this voice, Chu Feng immediately turned his gaze toward the direction where the voice had sounded from.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

[Ximen Feixue](#) → [West Gate, Flying Snow](#). ←

Chapter 1708 – Ximen Feixue

“Senior Jiang, it’s really you!!!”

The voice Chu Feng heard was Jiang Furong’s voice.

Sure enough, upon looking toward the voice, he saw Jiang Furong. Not only her, but the other outstanding disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain, Bai Yunxiao, Qi Yanyu, Tao Xiangyu, Ben Leihu and Zhao Jingang, were also present.

Merely, at this moment, Jiang Furong was being blocked by a group of people. They were people from the Ximen Imperial Clan. Not only had they completely surrounded Jiang Furong, there was also an old man standing before her. This old man had a very ferocious appearance, and was actually a Martial Emperor. The person who had angrily shouted at Jiang Furong was also him.

Behind this group of people from the Ximen Imperial Clan was a large war chariot. Hearing the discussion from the crowd, Chu Feng came to know that Jiang Furong was being stopped by this group of people from the Ximen Imperial Clan because she had accidentally run into the war chariot.

Normally, this would be something small. However, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were unwilling to overlook this matter. They had the attitude of wanting an apology, a compensation.

In this sort of situation, Bai Yunxiao and the others were all deeply frightened. One by one, they stood to the side and did not even dare to speak. They were deeply afraid that they would be implicated by Jiang Furong.

After all, the other party was the well-known Ximen Imperial Clan. Furthermore, there was a Martial Emperor-level expert among them.

“Senior, we are disciples from the Cyanwood Mountain. We have

come here by the invitation of the Mooncloud City. We martial siblings are preparing to participate in the Nine Powers' disciples' competition. Now that the competition has started, if we do not hurry over, I fear that we will be late."

"Let alone, senior sister Jiang did not do that on purpose. Senior, might you be willing to be a person of great moral status, and not mind the offenses committed by one of low moral stature and let senior sister Jiang go?"

To Chu Feng's surprise, after Bai Yunxiao hesitated for a while, he actually spoke out. Not only did he speak, he was even pleading for Jiang Furong.

Even though Bai Yunxiao was trembling with fear as he said those words, he had at least spoken out against what was happening. This was truly a surprise to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng remembered that Bai Yunxiao and the others didn't seem to get along with Jiang Furong. In the Cyanwood Mountain, they could be said to be enemies of one another.

Logically, with Bai Yunxiao's temperament, he should have not done anything in this sort of situation, and instead been rejoicing from Jiang Furong's misfortune.

Yet, he had actually decided to brave danger and plead for Jiang Furong. From this, it could be seen that Bai Yunxiao wasn't as bad as Chu Feng had imagined him to be.

"Not on purpose? You think you can settle this with a mere 'not on purpose?'"

"I do not care whose disciples you all are. The fact that you dared to run into our clan's Fifth Prince is akin to asking for death. If you all do not wish to die, then scram right now instead of being a hindrance."

Even though that old man was a Martial Emperor, he simply did

not possess a Martial Emperor's demeanor. He spoke with profanity right after opening his mouth, just like a scoundrel.

"Senior Bai, there's not enough time, we should take our leave first," Seeing that this Martial Emperor was enraged, Tao Xiangyu and the others who were deeply afraid to begin with hurriedly urged Bai Yunxiao to leave.

Seeing this, Bai Yunxiao did not dare to stay anymore, and immediately left with Tao Xiangyu and the others. Only Jiang Furong remained.

"Senior, I truly did not do that on purpose. Senior, would it do if I apologize to you?" Jiang Furong said with a low and petty appearance.

She had come here from far away, and did not wish to miss this opportunity to compete against the other members of the younger generation from the Nine Powers.

"Apologize? If an apology is useful, then wouldn't it mean that it would not be a crime to kill someone?" That old man was unwilling to forgive and acted extremely arrogantly.

Faced with how the old man was deliberately making things difficult for her, Jiang Furong's face grew very ugly. She did not know what to do. After all, the person before her was a Martial Emperor. Speaking of it bluntly, she, as a mere Martial King, was not even qualified to contend against that old man.

"Yoho, what arrogance," Right at the moment when Jiang Furong didn't know what to do, a figure suddenly walked out from the crowd and arrived before her. This person was none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had currently disguised himself. Not to mention strangers that didn't know him, even Jiang Furong didn't recognize him.

Needless to say, Chu Feng's appearance was a surprise to

everyone. None of them expected for there to be someone with the courage to challenge the Ximen Imperial Clan. Furthermore, this person was a young man.

“Who are you? Are you planning to meddle in my business?”

The eyebrows of the old man from the Ximen Imperial Clan narrowed, and he revealed a cold glint in his gaze. In fact, he had even faintly revealed his oppressive might. He was evidently trying to scare Chu Feng away, telling him to beat it.

However, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, with a slight smile, he said, “It’s not important who I am. What’s important is... who you all are.”

“What do you mean by that?” The old man asked. He faintly realized that this boy before him seemed to be different from the others.

“Ximen Imperial Clan, one of the Four Great Imperial Clans in the Holy Land of Martialism. It is said to be one of the clans that possessed the most noble bloodline in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“However, I truly never expected for such a noble clan to actually do such a disgraceful thing.”

“Firstly, we’ll not talk about how this place is where the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation competes. I do not know why your Ximen Imperial Clan would come here.”

“Secondly, we’ll also not talk about how there are this many people here. Yet, you all decided to bring a war chariot to push your way through.”

“However, merely by the fact that this young lady here had only accidentally touched your war chariot, you all immediately started to pester her endlessly, and refused to let her leave.”

“Tell me, are your actions any different from those of an evil tyrant? Is this really something that a grand Imperial Clan should

do?”

“You...” Hearing those words, that old man’s complexion immediately turned pale. He was deeply angered. He had really never expected that a mere brat would dare to provoke him and publicly insult their Ximen Imperial Clan in such a manner.

“You what? What I said earlier was about your Ximen Imperial Clan’s conduct. What I’m going to say now is about your conduct.”

“I do not know who you are. However, no matter what, you are still a Martial Emperor. You are one of the top martial experts in the Holy Land of Martialism. Yet, you utterly lack the grace of a senior. For such a trivial matter, you decided to deliberately make things difficult for one of the younger generation. You are truly a disgrace to Martial Emperors,” Chu Feng continued. Not only was he pointing his finger at that old man, his saliva was also splattering all over that old man’s face.

“You are courting death!” The old man wiped the saliva off his face and smelled the smell on his hand. He had become completely enraged.¹

Not only had Chu Feng publicly contradicted him, he had actually even insulted him in such a manner. He was truly incapable of enduring this.

“Courting death? Very well. Go ahead, beat me to death. Let everyone know how much of a scoundrel your Ximen Imperial Clan is. Let everyone know how much of a scoundrel you are.”

“Let everyone know what it means by taking advantage of one’s position to bully others, what is meant by bullying the weak,” Chu Feng placed both hands behind his back and raised his neck. His appearance was stating: come, beat me to death.

“Did you think that I wouldn’t dare?” The old man was so angry that his complexion turned deep red. He raised his hand and was about to attack Chu Feng.

However, right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded from within the war chariot. “Uncle Pang, let it pass.”

When this voice sounded, that old man who was gnashing his teeth after being enraged by Chu Feng immediately stopped his hand. Even though he was a Martial Emperor, he actually moved to the side like a servant.

At the same time, the rest of the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan also moved to the side.

This scene came as quite a surprise to Chu Feng. So far, Chu Feng had seen many Martial Emperors. However, a Martial Emperor who acted servile like this old man was a first.

Right at this moment, a young man walked out from the war chariot. This young man possessed a very handsome yet ice-cold appearance. In between his brows was a faint killing intent.

This man belonged to the sort of people that one could tell was extraordinary from merely his appearance.

Furthermore, not only did he possess an extraordinary appearance, his cultivation was also very strong. He was a rank five Half Martial Emperor. To reach rank five Half Martial Emperor at such a young age, he was wholly capable of contending against the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s disciple, Baili Xinghe.

He was most definitely one of the top geniuses from the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation. Likely, he was the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Fifth Prince that people spoke of, Ximen Feixue.

“If there’s nothing, we’ll take our leave first,” As Chu Feng spoke, he grabbed Jiang Furong’s wrist and began to walk toward the entrance of the competition.

“Wait a moment,” However, right at this moment, that Ximen Feixue suddenly spoke.

“What’s wrong? You also wish to kill me?” Chu Feng sneered.

“It seems that you wish to die. Rest assured, since you’ve contradicted my Uncle Pang today, I will definitely take your life. However, it won’t be today, nor will it be here. I do not want your filthy blood to dirty Mooncloud City’s soil,” Ximen Feixue said with a cold voice.

Once those words left his mouth, a chilliness swept forth. It was as if even the air had been frozen solid. Practically all of the younger generation present started to shiver. They were unable to resist that cold.

Threatening. He was openly threatening Chu Feng.

However, faced with Ximen Feixue’s threat, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. Instead, he smiled lightly and said, “I look forward to it.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he continued to walk toward the entrance. As he walked, everyone began to hurriedly make way for him; none of them dared to block his path.

As Chu Feng had dared to publicly contradict the Ximen Imperial Clan, this made the others feel that Chu Feng was no ordinary character.

As Chu Feng walked away, Ximen Feixue’s ice-cold gaze filled with killing intent was still fixed upon Chu Feng the entire time.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

yep, he smelled it. ↩

Chapter 1709 – Fellow Disciples Being Insulted

At this moment, Chu Feng and Jiang Furong entered the location of the competition. It was an enormous cave. The cave was very vast, and the walls were embedded with gems that emitted dazzling radiance. Those shining gems made it appear as if it were daytime in the cave.

Furthermore, there were beautiful drawings carved into the walls. This place was truly a world within rocks.

Furthermore, at this moment, there were a lot of people who had appeared in the cave. However, none of them stopped by the cave. Instead, they all began to proceed deeper into the cave.

“Young Hero, I cannot thank you enough for your grace.”

“Young Hero, you saved me today. This grace and kindness is something that I, Jiang Furong, will definitely repay in the future,” Jiang Furong said to Chu Feng with a grateful appearance.

“Senior sister Jiang, it’s one thing for you to be this courteous to others, but to me, you really do not need to be this courteous. After all, you helped me before too,” Chu Feng said to Jiang Furong via voice transmission.

“You are?” Jiang Furong was immediately stunned upon hearing those words, and involuntarily took a step back. Then, she began to carefully size Chu Feng up. However, the more she inspected him, the more startled she became.

She was shocked to discover that the man before her gave her such a feeling of familiarity. However, she clearly didn’t know him.

“Senior sister Jiang, are you unable to determine who I am from my voice?” Chu Feng said via voice transmission.

“Junior brother, it’s really you!!!” Finally, Jiang Furong managed to react. She knew that the person before her was Chu Feng.

“Junior brother, you’re alive! This is truly great!” Jiang Furong was extremely excited. She had originally thought that Chu Feng had died.

“If I were dead, I wouldn’t be standing here,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Junior brother, why did you come here? Could it be that you’re going to participate in the competition? There are a lot of experts from the Nangong Imperial Clan here. If they are to recognize you, then...” Jiang Furong was extremely worried about Chu Feng.

“Senior sister, please rest assured, I already have a plan in mind, you do not need to worry about me.”

“That said, senior sister, you’re already a rank nine Martial King, and possess abundant martial power. I presume that you will be able to reach a breakthrough to Half Martial Emperor not long from now, right? This is truly worthy of celebration,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“I had originally thought that I was pretty talented. However, after seeing you, I immediately feel that I am truly too weak.”

“When I first saw you, you had only just become a Martial King. However, you’re already a rank three Half Martial Emperor now. You have already reached the heavens, while I’m still on earth. Likely, I will never be able to contend with you again,” Jiang Furong smiled bitterly.

“Senior sister Jiang, please stop teasing this junior brother of yours. Time is of urgent importance. Come, let’s proceed quickly, I do not wish to miss this sole opportunity to fight against the younger generation of the Four Imperial Clans.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he grabbed Jiang Furong’s wrist. Then, he turned into a ray of light and directly rushed toward the deepest

region of the cave.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Jiang Furong's expression changed. She had wanted to say something, but in the end she hesitated and said nothing.

She had realized that Chu Feng was planning to do something dangerous. However, she felt that she was unable to stop him. Thus, she decided to not bother with it.

Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast. One by one, he surpassed all of the younger generation who had entered the cave before him.

On the way forward, Chu Feng reached a couple hurdles. However, none of them were able to stop him.

However, before Chu Feng could reach the deepest region of the cave, a large group of people suddenly appeared up ahead. Using his Heaven's Eyes to look, Chu Feng was surprised.

The people ahead of him were the people from the Cyanwood Mountain. Bai Yunxiao, Qi Yanyu, Tao Xiangyu, Ben Leihu and Zhao Jingang were all present.

Merely, at this moment, they were all lying on the ground. Regardless of their gender, they were all wounded.

The Cyanwood Mountain's several most outstanding disciples were actually beaten. It was no wonder that there were this many people gathered at that place. They had decided to stay here to watch the show, instead of proceeding onward to fight for the number one spot of this competition.

The reason for that was because the people that had beaten the disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain were also disciples of the Nine Powers. They were the disciples of the Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple.

The Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple's disciples had joined hands to stop the Cyanwood Mountain's disciples from proceeding onward.

“Bai Yunxiao, weren’t you extremely arrogant? What’s wrong? Have you turned into a punching bag now that Qin Lingyun is gone?” a disciple from the Firerain Hall said mockingly.

Although this Firerain Hall’s disciple’s was only a rank nine Martial King, his strength was above that of Bai Yunxiao and the others.

The reason why he had attacked Bai Yunxiao and the others was because he had had conflicts with them back when Qin Lingyun had still been alive.

Merely, back then, due to Qin Lingyun, they had been beaten, and had not dared to retaliate.

And now, as both Qin Lingyun and Qin Wentian were dead, the disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain had instantly become the weakest among the disciples of the Nine Powers. As such, the other eight powers would naturally take retaliatory actions against the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples. As for this competition among Nine Powers’ younger generation, it was the best opportunity for retaliation.

“You only dare to humiliate us in this manner because senior brother Qin Lingyun and senior brother Qin Wentian are no longer present. If they were still alive, would you possibly dare to do this?” Tao Xiangyu said with an expression of unreconciliation.

“Yoh, lil sis Tao, I might as well tell you the truth. You are right. I’ve indeed come to bully you all because Qin Lingyun and Qin Wentian have died.”

“What about it? What can you do to me?” As that Firerain Hall’s disciple spoke, he actually extended his malicious large hand and moved it toward Tao Xiangyu’s little face.

“Pah! Do not touch me with your filthy hand!” Not only did Tao Xiangyu dodge the hand, she also spat on that man’s face.

“Haha, brother Huo, it’s been so long, but you’re still unable to

settle this Tao Xiangyu,” Seeing this scene, the Jadewater Temple’s disciples burst into loud laughter. Their laughter was filled with mockery.

Even the other disciples of the Firerain Hall had expressions of wanting to yet not daring to laugh.

“Damned bitch, you truly are one to refuse the face that is given to you!” That Firerain Hall’s disciple felt that he had been humiliated and became enraged. He waved his palm and slapped it toward Tao Xiangyu’s little face.

Seeing the incoming hand, Tao Xiangyu immediately closed her eyes and revealed a painful expression. She knew that she would not be able to dodge that man’s incoming slap. Thus, she could only prepare herself for the slap.

“Paa~~~”

Right at this moment, a sudden loud and crisp sound was heard.

Hearing this sound, Tao Xiangyu subconsciously frowned. However, she felt no pain on her cheek at all.

She slowly opened her eyes. Upon opening her eyes, Tao Xiangyu’s expression changed in an instant. The reason for that was because there was a man standing before her. Furthermore, this man had firmly caught that Firerain Hall’s disciple’s wrist, stopping that slap from landing on her face.

At this moment, Tao Xiangyu’s heartbeat accelerated, and her face turned red. Involuntarily, she started to have feelings for this man. She had felt that he was simply her Prince Charming. She had been conquered by his actions of being a hero that saved the beauty from evil.

However, she did not know that this man before her was her fellow martial junior brother that she had deliberately caused troubles for multiple times, Chu Feng.

“A grown man hitting a woman, you are truly quite a man,” As

Chu Feng spoke, he exerted more with his grasp. “Snap,” that Firerain Hall disciple’s wrist had been snapped apart by him.

The pain of having his wrist broken caused that Firerain Hall’s disciple to scream out in pain. However, Chu Feng did not release his grasp just because of this. Instead, he released his oppressive might and struck at that Firerain Hall disciple’s body, knocking him into the rest of the Firerain Hall’s disciples.

“Owww!”

The Firerain Hall’s disciples tried to catch that disciple. However, the force of the impact was simply too strong. Not only were they unable to catch him, they were all knocked to the ground with him.

“Rank three Half Martial Emperor?!!”

At this moment, not to mention the Firerain Hall’s disciples, the expressions of the disciples from the Jadewater Temple also took a huge change. They were able to sense Chu Feng’s aura and know Chu Feng’s cultivation. Someone with the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor was not a person who they would dare to provoke.

Chapter 1710 – Standing Up For Others With Power

“What are you looking at? All of you, scram!” Chu Feng glowered at the crowd and shouted coldly.

His shout brought forth chilliness, and caused heaven and earth to shake. Even though the cave was very sturdy, many crushed rocks still ended up falling down after being jolted by Chu Feng’s shout.

“We have to go,” Hearing those words, the bystanders all turned pale with fright. They all realized that this man was not someone who they could provoke. Thus, they immediately left, and did not dare to stay any longer.

In merely an instant, only the disciples from the Cyanwood Mountain, Firerain Hall and Jadewater Temple remained in this place.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a concealment formation covered this area, sealing all of the remaining people within it.

“You... who are you? What are you planning to do?”

“We are the disciples of the Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple! If you dare to do anything to us, you will bear the consequences!”

At this moment, the disciples of the Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple all started to panic. They were all deeply afraid of what the rank three Half Martial Emperor standing before them was planning to do. Feeling helpless, they had no choice but to pretend to be calm and threaten him with their backgrounds. That was the only thing that they could do.

“Who am I? Do you all not recognize me?”

Chu Feng smiled slightly. As he spoke, his appearance started to change. In no time, he had revealed his actual appearance.

“Chu Feng, it’s actually you?!!!”

After seeing Chu Feng’s appearance, not to mention the disciples of the Firerain Hall and Jadewater Temple, even Bai Yunxiao, Tao Xiangyu and the other disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain were deeply shocked.

While they had thought of many possibilities for who this stranger might be, they had never expected for him to be Chu Feng.

When even Tao Xiangyu and the others were this shocked, the disciples of the Firerain Hall and Jadewater Temple were simply unable to continue to remain calm. One by one, their complexions turned deathly pale and they began to shiver. In fact, there were some who were so frightened that they actually pissed their pants.

As top disciples of the grand Nine Powers, pissing their pants in fear was a truly shameful thing to do.

However, this could not be blamed on them. It was because Chu Feng’s vicious name had been greatly spread through the Nine Powers too much.

Back then, when Chu Feng was still only a Martial King, he had already swept through all of the disciples of the Nine Powers, and even dared to kill his own fellow senior brother.

And now, Chu Feng was wanted by the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, he possessed the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor now. As such, they simply did not dare to even imagine what he might do.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, you’re actually still alive? This is truly a matter worthy of celebration!”

“For some unknown reason, the Nangong Imperial Clan actually posted wanted posters of you throughout the entire Holy Land of Martialism. In recent days, they even announced that you died.”

“Back then, I was truly grieved by the news of your death. After all, you are the strongest individual among our Nine Powers’ disciples. Without any selfishness, I dare to say that I had thought of you as the hope of our Nine Powers the entire time.”

“To see that you’re actually Fine now, as your senior brother, I am truly overjoyed.”

Suddenly, one of the Jadewater Temple’s disciples walked toward Chu Feng with a beaming smile on his face. Seeing that the situation was bad, he was extremely quick-witted, and decided to use this sort of method to obtain a relationship with Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

However, at the moment when that person approached Chu Feng, Chu Feng actually raised his leg and kicked. He directly kicked that man flying onto the world spirit wall. Like mud, he was stuck to the wall.

At this moment, his muscles and veins were all ripped. All of the bones in his body were shattered. Blood covered his entire body. He was left in a devastating sight. Even though he was still alive, his aura was extremely weak, as if his entire body had been beaten to bits.

“When you were bullying my fellow disciples from the Cyanwood Mountain, did you think about me?” Chu Feng asked with a cold voice. As he finished saying those words, he cast his ice-cold gaze to the other disciples of the Jadewater Temple and Firerain Hall.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, you’ve wronged us, you’ve wronged us. We actually did all of this for your sake.”

“We knew that Bai Yunxiao’s group of disciples were people who were unable to tell good from bad. Back then, when you were still

in the Cyanwood Mountain, they relied on the fact that they had the backing of Qin Lingyun and deliberately made things difficult on you time and time again.”

“The reason why we did the things we did today is actually because we wanted to help you teach them a lesson,” A disciple of the Firerain Hall stepped forward and tried to provide justifications for their actions.

Hearing those words, the expressions on the faces of Bai Yunxiao and the others’ faces all became very ugly. They lowered their heads silently, and their bodies started to shiver.

Actually, they were very worried too. After all, they had indeed been Chu Feng’s arch-enemies back in the day. For the sake of taking care of Chu Feng, they had done many excessive things. In fact, they had even tried to kill Chu Feng.

Thus, not to mention Chu Feng helping them, even if Chu Feng were to kill them, they would feel that to be justified too. They were deeply fearful of Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

That Firerain Hall’s disciple was evidently trying to incite the hatred Chu Feng had for them by saying those words now. He was trying to have Chu Feng take care of them instead. Naturally, this caused them to be extremely scared.

“Bang~~~”

However, at the moment when Bai Yunxiao and the others were deeply worried, Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked that Firerain Hall’s disciple that was sowing dissension among them flying. Like the Jadewater Temple’s disciple before him, the Firerain Hall disciple’s body was utterly destroyed by Chu Feng’s kick.

“Since when did we require outsiders to meddle in our business?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

“Chu Feng, exactly what are you planning? No matter what, we are all from the Nine Powers. Even if we are in the wrong, is there

a need for you to be this ruthless?” A Jadewater Temple’s disciple asked angrily.

“What I’m planning? Kneel down and admit your mistake. Do that and I’ll spare your lives,” Chu Feng said.

“You... you want to kill us? No matter what, we are disciples of the Jadewater Temple. If you dare to kill us, you will have to bear the consequences!” That Jadewater Temple’s disciple said as he gnashed his teeth angrily.

“Boom~~~”

Before that Jadewater Temple’s disciple could finish what he wanted to say, Chu Feng shot forth his palm explosively and directly smashed that man into pieces. His blood splattered all over his fellow disciples.

“I, Chu Feng, am currently the target of countless people. What else could I possibly fear?” As Chu Feng said these words, his eyes revealed an ominous glint, and his ice-cold killing intent filled the entire world spirit space.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, we were wrong, please don’t kill us, please don’t kill us!!!”

Seeing that, all of the disciples from the Jadewater Temple and Firerain Hall knelt onto the ground and began to admit their mistake while kowtowing to Chu Feng.

“I’m not telling you to apologize to me. Apologize to them,” Chu Feng said while pointing at Bai Yunxiao, Tao Xiangyu and the others.

Those Firerain Hall and Jadewater Temple’s disciples did not dare to hesitate. Immediately, they turned to Bai Yunxiao, Tao Xiangyu and the others and began to apologize.

Seeing this scene, Bai Yunxiao, Tao Xiangyu and the others were all stunned. Their current expressions were truly marvelous. What they were currently feeling was simply indescribable.

This sort of hard-line method was simply too tyrannical. Regardless of whether it was Qin Wentian or Qin Lingyun, neither of them were able to do something like this; possess such powerful authority, among the Nine Powers.

Never would they ever have imagined that the disciple who they were able to willfully trample upon would have become this powerful.

More than that, they never imagined that, with how they had treated Chu Feng in the past, Chu Feng would actually not retaliate against them, and instead help them.

At this moment, they were feeling guilt, shame and regret for their past deeds. It was as if a bottle of emotions had toppled over in their hearts.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, we...”

“If you want to speak of thanks, then don’t bother. We are fellow disciples, it is only natural for us to work together against outsiders. I merely hope that you all will be able to treat other fellow disciples better in the future.”

Bai Yunxiao and the others wanted to express their thanks. However, before they could say their thanks, they were stopped by Chu Feng.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, please rest assured, we will definitely not bully our fellow junior brothers and sisters in the future.”

“Merely, junior brother Chu Feng, could it be that you didn’t know about this? Because you offended the Nangong Imperial Clan, Lord Headmaster expelled you from our Cyanwood Mountain in order to break us away from retaliations from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Not only that...” Bai Yunxiao wanted to inform Chu Feng.

“Speak no more,” Chu Feng waved his hand. Then, he said with a smile, “Remember this: I, Chu Feng, will forever be a disciple of

the Cyanwood Mountain.”

Chapter 1711 – Enormous Change

Although Chu Feng did not kill the disciples from the Jadewater Temple and Firerain Hall who knelt and admitted their mistakes, he did not let them leave. Instead, he imprisoned them within his spirit formation.

As all the people here were of the from the younger generation, Chu Feng felt that there was no one who could break through his spirit formations. After a certain amount of time passed, this spirit formation would automatically disperse. At that time, the disciples from the Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple would all be released.

However, Chu Feng would likely have already left Mooncloud City by then. Thus, he would naturally not be afraid that they would report him.

As for the Cyanwood Mountain's disciples, regardless of how deep the hatred between them and Chu Feng might have been in the past, it remained that Chu Feng had saved them today. If they were to report him, Chu Feng will definitely not be courteous toward them the next time he met them.

Furthermore, Jiang Furong was also present. Chu Feng believed that Jiang Furong would not allow them to report him.

“I urge you all to not continue onward. There is only a single spot to compete with the Four Clans' younger generation. Even if you all are to proceed onward, you will likely not be able to obtain the spot. Instead of that, it would be better to safely stay here,” Chu Feng said to Jiang Furong, Bai Yunxiao and the others.

“Actually, we also know that there is simply no chance for any of us to obtain the spot. However, it remains that this is a distinguished assembly. We originally just wanted to experience it. However, never did we expect that there would be people who would set out against us.”

“After experiencing the Firerain Hall and the Jadewater Temple’s ambush, we already do not plan to continue onward,” Bai Yunxiao said with a bitter smile.

“I will also not be continuing,” Jiang Furong said, “However, since we’ve come, it will be unsuitable for us to forfeit. Thus, we will stay here and wait until the competition is over before going out.”

Sure enough, Jiang Furong was a very thoughtful person. While her words seemed to not mean anything, and she seemed to just be going along with what Chu Feng had suggested, she was actually staying to watch Bai Yunxiao and the others in order to prevent them from reporting Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Jiang Furong said, “Oh, that’s right. Junior brother Chu Feng, there is a piece of information that might be useful to you.”

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Countless experts are gathered in this assembly. The disciples of the Nine Powers all know very well that it was very unlikely for them to obtain victory. Furthermore, even if any of them become the victor, their fate would only be being trampled by the Four Clans’ younger generation. Thus, for many of them, they have only come here for the sake of coming. Like us, they merely wanted to experience this assembly.”

“However, it is a different story for the World Spiritist Alliance. The World Spiritist Alliance’s Assembly Master is one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Ten Immortals. He possesses a personal disciple by the name of Mu Juechen.”

“This Mu Juechen is someone who has never shown himself before. However, as the personal disciple of the World Spiritist Alliance’s Assembly Master, his strength is definitely not weak.”

“This time around, when the World Spiritist Alliance’s Assembly

Master received the invitation to come here, he did not bring a single disciple from the World Spiritist Alliance. The only person he brought with him was his personal disciple, Mu Juechen.”

“Likely, his objective is very clear-cut. He is planning to have Mu Juechen obtain the number one spot in this competition, and then compete against the Four Imperial Clans’ younger generation.”

“Thus, if you are to encounter someone by the name of Mu Juechen, you must be careful, and not underestimate him,” Jiang Furong said.

“Thank you for your warning senior sister Jiang,” After hearing what Jiang Furong said, Chu Feng nodded. However, he sighed in his heart, “Seems like I will not be able to meet up with Lil Mei and the others. What a pity.”

Chu Feng had thought that if the disciples from all the Nine Powers would be present, Su Mei would definitely be here too. Originally, he had been looking forward to seeing Su Mei again.

However, it turned out that Su Mei and the others simply had not come. All of them had been replaced by some guy named Mu Juechen.

Logically, Chu Feng was also a nominal disciple of the World Spiritist Alliance. Thus, he could be said to be a fellow disciple of that Mu Juechen, and thus should not view Mu Juechen as an enemy.

However, this time around, there was only a single spot. Thus, Chu Feng was determined to win. As such, regardless of what that Mu Juechen’s origin might be, he would not be lenient.

Upon thinking about how that Mu Juechen had painstakingly trained for so long, yet would be defeated right after coming out in public, Chu Feng began to feel pity for him.

However, there was no other way about it. This was the world of martial cultivators. This was reality. One could not blame others

for not having sufficient strength.

As for why Chu Feng was confident that he would be able to defeat Mu Juechen, it was because Chu Feng possessed the qualifications to act this confidently. He possessed the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. On top of that, he possessed the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings that could increase his cultivation by two levels.

With his overall strength, not to mention a Mu Juechen, even if that Weaponry Refinement Immortal's outstanding disciple Baili Xinghe or that Ximen Imperial Clan's Ximen Feixue were to fight against him, Chu Feng would not fear them.

The current Chu Feng was most definitely worthy of the title of the strongest member of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"In that case, senior brothers and sisters, I shall take my leave," Chu Feng clasped his hand, then left.

"Junior brother Chu Feng," However, right at this moment, Bai Yunxiao suddenly spoke.

Chu Feng turned around and asked, "What's wrong?"

"Even though I do not know what your purpose on this journey is, I still hope for you to be safe. After all, you are the Cyanwood Mountain's pride, our pride."

When Bai Yunxiao said those words, his emotions were rather complicated, and he was slightly hesitant.

He found it a bit embarrassing to say those words, because he felt that he was not qualified to say them. However, he still had to say them, for that was what he was truly feeling in his heart.

They were no fools. For Chu Feng to appear in this place when he was wanted by the Nangong Imperial Clan, and for him to want to become the victor of this competition, it was obvious that he

wanted to obtain the spot to compete with the people from the Four Clans' younger generation. Chu Feng... was planning to do something extremely shocking. He was planning to provoke the Four Imperial Clans.

Chu Feng was planning to, before all these people, publicly provoke the Four Great Imperial Clans.

They naturally know how dangerous and difficult something like that was.

Had it been before, they would have been eager for Chu Feng to die. In fact, when Chu Feng had been expelled by the Cyanwood Mountain, and when they heard the news of Chu Feng's death, they had all rejoiced.

However, after what happened today, an enormous change had happened to their hearts and minds. They suddenly felt that Chu Feng was a real fellow disciple, that what they had done before was merely the conduct of lowly, vile individuals.

They regretted what they did before, and no longer wished to continue being enemies with Chu Feng. Naturally, they would also not wish for something to happen to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because, at this moment, they had realized that not only was Chu Feng a fellow disciple who would stand up for them, he might even become a hero who would stand up for the Cyanwood Mountain.

None of them wanted mishaps to happen to Chu Feng. They wished for Chu Feng to be able to grow without predicaments and continue to stand up for them.

"Rest assured, I got this," Chu Feng held his thumb up while smiling. Then his body shifted, and he rapidly went deeper into this vast cave.

After Chu Feng left, Bai Yunxiao and the others began to gaze in the direction that Chu Feng had left in. It was as if they were

unwilling to move their gazes away.

It was only after a long while that Bai Yunxiao sat cross-legged on the ground and said to Jiang Furong, “Jiang Furong, there’s no need for you to watch us. Junior brother Chu Feng saved us. If we are to repay kindness with hatred, we would be unqualified to be considered humans.”

“Senior sister Jiang, please rest assured, we are also people with consciences. Not only did junior brother Chu Feng disregard former hatreds and not do anything to us, he instead helped us. We will definitely repay him for the great grace he has shown us,” Tao Xiangyu said. After she finished saying those words, she also sat down cross-legged on the ground, closed her eyes and began to train.

Afterward, Zhao Jingang, Qi Yanyu and the others also declared their positions and stated that they would not continue to view Chu Feng as an enemy in the future.

Seeing Bai Yunxiao and the others acting like this, Jiang Furong’s heart was moved. She truly never expected that Chu Feng saving them would cause such an enormous change to Bai Yunxiao and the others.

However, even with this being the case, Jiang Furong still did not answer them. She would naturally not admit that she was staying in order to watch over them. Instead, she merely smiled, then also sat down in a cross-legged position.

The Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples did not proceed further into the cave. Instead, they all sat down in cross-legged positions in the middle of the cave. Within the environment of the cave, they became a fixture that caused people confusion when they walked past them.

Chapter 1712 – Exactly Who Is It?

Chu Feng continued onward, and soon arrived at the end of the vast cave.

Merely, the scene that appeared before Chu Feng right now greatly surprised him.

There were a lot of people gathered here. Other than the disciples from the Firerain Hall, Jadewater Temple and Cyanwood Mountain, the rest of the Nine Powers' disciples were basically all present.

However, it remained that the Nine Powers' disciples numbered very few. However, there were over six thousand people gathered at this location. This served to illustrate that the majority of the participants in this competition were people outside of the Nine Powers.

At the end of the cave was a tall platform. On the platform hovered a title plate. That title plate was shining with light. It should be a key, as there was a large gate above the platform.

The gate was a world spirit gate. A defensive barrier encircled the world spirit gate. However, Chu Feng felt that the defensive barrier would automatically disappear when a certain time was reached.

When that defensive barrier disappeared, one would be able to open the world spirit gate using the key that hovered on the platform.

Without a doubt, the person who walked out of that world spirit gate would be the victor of this competition.

From this, it could be seen that this had been set up by the Mooncloud City. They did not wish for the first person to reach this location to be able to become the victor. That was why they had set up a defensive barrier around the world spirit gate.

Their purpose was to have everyone reach this place and then fight one another in order to determine the strongest person that would be qualified to obtain that key.

While their plans were good, reality did not work the same as they had planned at all. This was also the reason why Chu Feng was surprised upon reaching this place.

At this moment, many strong individuals were gathered below that tall platform. There were familiar faces among them.

For example, the twin sisters Nie Wan'er and Nie Xi'er. Currently, the two of them had become rank one Half Martial Emperors. Their cultivation was sufficient for them to become the strongest in the Nine Powers, and allowed them to tower over many of the other people present.

However, at this moment, those two sisters were unqualified to even get onto the platform. The reason for that was because there were three people on the tall platform.

Of those three people, one among them was someone who Chu Feng recognized.

He was a man. This man was very young, and possessed the cultivation of a rank two Half Martial Emperor. He was very handsome and possessed the sort of appearance that girls were fond of. However, one could feel a trace of maliciousness between his eyes.

Most importantly, this man was wearing a Royal World Spiritist cloak with snake-like veined patterns on it. Evidently, his world spiritist technique was even more eye-catching than his cultivation, as he was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

As for this man, he was the White-browed Immortal's personal disciple, Meng Xiaoyan.

Back in the Nangong Imperial Clan, this Meng Xiaoyan had joined hands with Nangong Tianlong and the others to deliberately

make things difficult for Chu Feng. However, he was instead made a fool of by Chu Feng and ended up having to suffer grievances.

Never would Chu Feng have imagined that even he would come join the excitement of this Nine Powers competition.

However, Meng Xiaoyan evidently did not possess sufficient strength for Chu Feng to be concerned about. The person Chu Feng was concerned about was the person who stood beside Meng Xiaoyan.

It was another man. However, unlike Meng Xiaoyan, this man possessed a very buff and tall build and a soldierly appearance. He was a sort of very manly-looking man.

While he had a manly appearance, he was not a burly man filled with muscles. Instead, he was the sort of manly man that emitted airs of maturity and charisma.

This man was also wearing a Royal World Spiritist cloak with Snake Marks, which meant that he was also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, not only did this man possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, he was also a rank three Half Martial Emperor. His strength was above that of Meng Xiaoyan.

From the quiet discussions of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng came to know about the identity of this man.

This man's name was Jian Xu. He was the personal disciple of the Ten Immortals' Avaricious Immortal.

Chu Feng had heard about that Avaricious Immortal before. As his name implied, he was a person who loved money as much as his own life. For personal gains, he was willing to cooperate with all powers.

Reportedly, the best of the Seven Rainbow Swords was in the Avaricious Immortal's hands.

Other than Jian Xu and Meng Xiaoyan, there was another man. This man was the World Spiritist Alliance's Assembly Master, the Ten Immortals' World Spiritist Immortal's personal disciple, Mu Juechen.

This Mu Juechen possessed the cultivation of a rank two Half Martial Emperor. He had come here on the order of the World Spiritist Immortal to obtain the victor spot in this competition so that he could confront the younger generation of the Four Powers.

However, at this moment, not only was Mu Juechen badly battered with a bloody nose, a swollen face and a body covered with blood, he was also hung upside down from the tall platform by others using world spirit techniques. Furthermore, the word 'trash' was written over his body in very large writing.

It really could be said that he had been utterly disgraced!!!

"Mu Juechen, oh Mu Juechen, you're the strongest among the Nine Powers' disciples, no?"

"But, why are you this useless? Isn't this place known as the Nine Powers' competition? But everyone, look at this, what are the main characters of this competition, the disciples of the Nine Powers, doing? Is watching from the sidelines all you all can do?"

"Nine Powers, what trash."

That Jian Xu walked over to Mu Juechen and mocked him as he slapped his face.

In this sort of situation, the crowd began to wildly discuss this matter. They were all starting to doubt the strength of the Nine Powers. After all, at this moment, the Nine Powers was truly being disgraced.

Faced with Jian Xu's mockery, Mu Juechen tightly closed his eyes and bit down on his teeth without saying anything. He was enduring everything.

When even he had to endure the humiliation, the rest of the Nine

Powers' disciples, even though they were feeling very displeased, had no choice but to endure too. After all, they did not wish to be hung upside down on that tall platform like Mu Juechen.

"Aren't you being excessive?" Right at the moment when everyone was silent, Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

As a disciple of the Nine Powers, he would naturally not stand by and watch as the Nine Powers was ridiculed by others in such a manner before his eyes.

"Yoh, there's actually a rank three Half Martial Emperor here. Which sect or school might you be from? What is your name?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, not to mention the others, even that Jiang Xu's eyebrows were raised in shock.

After all, among the younger generation, other than the people from the Four Clans and Three Palaces, not many were able to reach that level of cultivation.

"Who I am is not important. What's important is that I cannot bear to see the way you all are acting."

Chu Feng stepped onto the tall platform and spoke with a cold voice, "What, you two look down on the disciples of the Nine Powers very much, was it? But, what about you two? Who do you think you are?"

"Who do we think we are? The two of us are respectively the personal disciples of the Avaricious Immortal and the White-browed Immortal! And you ask who we think we are?!" Meng Xiaoyan spoke with a cold voice.

"Heh..." Chu Feng did not answer Meng Xiaoyan, and only snorted disdainfully. The contempt in his actions was extremely obvious.

"You are truly one who refuses the face given to you. Brother Jiang Xu, there's no need for you to dirty your hand with trash like him. I will be able to settle him."

As Meng Xiaoyan spoke, with a thought, his world spirit power began to surge toward Chu Feng to crush him like a tide.

He was so confident that he did not even bother to use martial power, and was instead planning on crushing Chu Feng with only world spirit techniques, so as to display his greatness of being the White-browed Immortal's disciple, the might of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Unfortunately, the person he faced was not an ordinary rank three Half Martial Emperor. Instead, it was Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

Chu Feng decided to best Meng Xiaoyan at his own game. Like him, surging world spirit power began to be emitted from Chu Feng. His world spirit power turned into an overflowing wave. Not only did he instantly scatter Meng Xiaoyan's world spirit power, he also smashed Meng Xiaoyan onto the tall platform like a dead fish. Meng Xiaoyan's muscles and bones were all broken. His entire body was covered with blood. He had the appearance of a dying person as he twitched nonstop...

“This...”

Seeing this scene, the crowd revealed expressions of disbelief.

At this time, Mu Juechen had opened his tightly closed eyes. When he saw the scene before him, he revealed an incomparably shocked expression.

Such a powerful world spirit power, not to mention him, it was likely that not even Jian Xu would be able to match up to that world spirit power.

“Exactly who are you?” Jian Xu's gaze grew cautious as he asked Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

As matters stood, he already realized that this ordinary-looking young man before him was not someone ordinary at all.

Chapter 1713 – Bound To Become Famous

“Who I am is not important to you.”

“What’s important is that I will publicly humiliate you and make you lose all face.”

As Chu Feng spoke, his body shifted. He turned into a ray of light and charged toward Jian Xu. At the same time, he extended his palm and grabbed toward Jian Xu’s throat.

“What arrogance!”

Seeing Chu Feng’s actions, Jian Xu narrowed his eyebrows and revealed an ominous glint in his eyes. He flipped his palm, and a bright and dazzling Incomplete Imperial Armament appeared in his hand. With weapon in hand, he sliced toward Chu Feng’s incoming palm to chop off his hand.

Even though that Incomplete Imperial Armament was a copy, it still possessed devastating Emperor’s might. Furthermore, Jian Xu’s attack was also not an ordinary slash; it was a Taboo Martial Skill.

A good weapon combined with a martial skill, Jian Xu’s attack naturally possessed overwhelming power. Everyone present all began to move backwards repeatedly out of fear of Jian Xu’s attack.

Even though the people present might not be able to clearly see Jian Xu’s attack, they were all able to sense how dangerous, fierce and powerful his attack was.

“Break for me!”

Right at the moment when Jian Xu’s powerful attack was about to reach Chu Feng’s palm, Chu Feng shouted coldly, clenched his open palm into a fist and shot it forward explosively.

“Boom!” A loud explosion was immediately heard. Then, surging

energy ripples began to wreak havoc.

Chu Feng's fist strike seemed to be able to break through everything. Not only had it broken through Jiang Xu's strike, it had also landed onto Jian Xu's chest.

Chu Feng's fist strike not only shattered Jian Xu's internal organs, it also pierced a large hole through Jian Xu's chest and knocked him several meters away, where he was smashed ruthlessly into the wall of the cave.

The power behind the strike that sent Jian Xu flying was so strong that he left a large crater and numerous cracks in the wall. Broken rocks began to fall down nonstop.

However, even with that being the case, Jian Xu actually stood back up on the ground steadily. Not only was there no expression of pain on his face, he actually revealed a smile.

Jian Xu looked to Chu Feng and said, "You've got some skills. However, injuries of this level are unable to harm me."

After he finished saying those words, with a thought, boundless world spirit power began to emit from his body. After his world spirit power appeared, not only did his body start to recover, even his Royal World Spiritist cloak that had been shattered started to recover.

"Amazing, as expected from the Avaricious Immortal's personal disciple. This level of world spirit technique, isn't it simply too powerful?"

The crowd began to exclaim in astonishment upon seeing this scene. Many of the people present were proficient in world spirit techniques. Thus, they knew that there were many methods to heal one's injuries and rapidly restore one's body.

However, one thing was certain. The method that Jian Xu had used was a very high level technique. It was a technique that ordinary Royal-cloak World Spiritists were unable to accomplish.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's fist strike had been extremely destructive. For ordinary people, they would likely not be able to restore their bodies in a short period of time with the world spirit techniques that they had grasped. However, Jian Xu had restored his body in an instant.

"Are you certain that I am unable to harm you?" To everyone's surprise, when Jian Xu restored his body with that powerful restoration ability, Chu Feng actually smiled.

"Puu~~~"

Right after Chu Feng's words left his mouth, Jian Xu's expression suddenly changed. Then, he opened his mouth and vomited a mouthful of blood. His blood sprayed an entire three feet away.

Following that, he began to bleed nonstop from his eyes, nose and ears. Even his legs started to violently shudder. Soon, he had lost the ability to continue standing. Like a sandbag, he fell onto his knees, and then onto his stomach.

"Bastard, what exactly did you do to me?!" At this moment, Jian Xu struggled to lift his head and stared at Chu Feng. He did not dare to believe, and did not understand why his body would be in such weak health.

"If you thought that my fist strike earlier had only injured your body, then you were gravely mistaken."

"I'll only tell you this. If I had wanted to, I would have been able to take away your measly little life with my fist strike earlier."

Hearing those words, the hearts of the crowd all shivered.

The meaning of Chu Feng's words was extremely clear. As he possessed the strength to take Jian Xu's life, he would naturally be able to cripple him. At this moment, he had only made Jian Xu unable to move. Thus, it seemed that he was already being lenient enough.

However, upon thinking about the fact that Jian Xu, a rank three

Half Martial Emperor, a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, the Avaricious Immortal's sole disciple, was actually unable to withstand a single fist strike from this man, the crowd found that this was simply too unbelievable.

After all, Jian Xu possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. How could his opponent be able to...

Suddenly, someone came to a realization and cried out in alarm. "A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. He most definitely possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation!"

"A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?!" The expressions of the crowd all changed upon hearing those words. They were all shocked. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng were filled with astonishment, fear and disbelief.

For ordinary people, they would not even be able to obtain any heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a single level of cultivation. Those who were able to do so were all geniuses. Those capable of having a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation were all super geniuses. As for those capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, they were all the legendary demon-level characters.

A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation???

This was simply too frightening. Was there really someone capable of such a feat? Someone with such a heaven-defying battle power, could they still be considered to be human?

However, Chu Feng ignored the gazes of the crowd. At this moment, he directly walked to Mu Juechen, removed the world spirit formation that was binding him and helped him down.

“Brother, thank you,” After Mu Juechen got back on his feet, he spoke his very first sentence.

“We’re family, there’s no need for you to be this courteous,” Chu Feng said with a low voice.

“You...”

Mu Juechen was startled to hear those words. Family? What did that mean?

This meant that even if Chu Feng was not someone from the World Spiritist Alliance, he would be someone from the Nine Powers.

However, Mu Juechen had thought himself to be the strongest person among the Nine Powers’ disciples. Thus, he had really never expected for there to be a fellow disciple this powerful.

At this moment, he was feeling extremely complicated. While he was feeling very joyous, there was also an unspeakable grievance.

Mu Juechen was the sole disciple of the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly’s Assembly Master, the World Spiritist Immortal. He had been in closed-door training for many years...

And now, he had come out from obscurity for the very first time. Originally, he had thought to stun the world and attain fame for himself, attain honor for his master. However, to his surprise, he had been beaten up, hung upside down and publicly humiliated.

If it wasn’t for Chu Feng saving him, he would have utterly disgraced himself and his master.

At this moment, he had finally experienced the words ‘there are heavens beyond heaven and people beyond the person.’¹

Merely... it was painful for him to realize those words.

“Victory and defeat is commonplace in battles. While it is fine to mind them, you must not take them to heart.”

“Remember, as a man, one must be manly, and not think about trivial matters all day,” Chu Feng had managed to guess what Mu Juechen was thinking, and thus comforted him.

Mu Juechen nodded. Even though he was feeling very sullen, he was still the person chosen by the World Spiritist Immortal. Thus, he possessed a strong mentality. As such, he understood all that Chu Feng had said.

“What’s your name?” Mu Juechen asked.

“You will know my name later on. Everyone present will know too,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. As he spoke, he took a glance at the crowd.

Chu Feng knew that it was definitely not just Mu Juechen who wanted to know who he was. He believed that Jian Xu, Meng Xiaoyan and all the rest of the people present wanted to know who he was too.

The people present all realized that Chu Feng’s words contained hidden implications. With Chu Feng’s strength, without a doubt, he was going to contend against the younger generation from the Four Clans.

At that time, without asking, everyone would come to know of his distinguished name.

In other words, regardless of what the outcome would be, this man before them would definitely become famous.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

In the wider world, there are people more talented than you. ↩

Chapter 1714 – Chu Feng Appearing On The Stage

After Chu Feng taught the Avaricious Immortal and the White-browed Immortal's personal disciples a lesson and saved the World Spiritist Immortal's personal disciple, there were no more battles at this place. The reason for that was because no one dared to challenge Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, he sat down in a cross-legged position and closed his eyes to rest.

During this period of time, countless people sent voice transmissions to Chu Feng in the hopes of being able to befriend him.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored them. Yet, those people did not give up, and they instead started to think of all kinds of methods to befriend Chu Feng. They were insisting on befriending Chu Feng even if they had to present treasures and the like to him.

It was only when the defensive formation around the gate disappeared that the crowd grew quiet. The reason for that was because they knew that it was time that this competition ended.

At this moment, Chu Feng, who had closed his eyes for a long time, finally opened them again. His eyes were bright and full of expressions and boundless anticipation.

Chu Feng stood up, obtained the key and opened the gate. He was neither rushing nor lagging, and was emitting airs of confidence and ease.

However, when the world spirit gate opened, Chu Feng was unable to directly walk out. The reason for that was because a series of words appeared before him.

These words provided Chu Feng with information. It was information regarding the Four Clans' younger generation's

competition, as well as the grand characters present.

Firstly, the list of the Four Clans' younger generations who were going to become Chu Feng's opponents appeared.

There were a total of six people from the Dongfang Imperial Clan. Among them, the one who Chu Feng was most interested in was Dongfang Zexuan.

Dongfang Zexuan was the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Third Prince who had challenged the World Spiritist Alliance's world spirit techniques only to be defeated by a disguised Chu Feng.

At that time, he appeared before Chu Feng with an extremely arrogant attitude. Truth be told, although, at that time, Chu Feng defeated Dongfang Zexuan in terms of world spirit techniques, he would have been no match for Dongfang Zexuan in terms of martial power.

However, times had changed. If he were to run into Dongfang Zexuan again, it would not be certain who among them would be stronger and who would be weaker.

As for the Beitang Imperial Clan, Chu Feng did not care about them at all. The reason for that was because Beitang Zimo, the person that Chu Feng had had conflicts with, had already been eliminated by Chu Feng. Even though Beitang Zimo was on the list of participants from the Beitang Imperial Clan, he naturally, would not be able to participate.

To Chu Feng's surprise, the Nangong Imperial Clan had also sent forth five individuals. Other than the Nangong Imperial Clan Chief's children, Chu Feng's friend, Nangong Ya, was actually also on the list.

Logically, due to Nangong Ya's relationship with Chu Feng, he should have been placed under house arrest. Chu Feng was very happy to be able to see Nangong Ya's name in such a public setting. After all, this meant that Nangong Ya was someone of importance

to the Nangong Imperial Clan. Otherwise, they would not have sent him out.

A thing worthy of mentioning was that the Ximen Imperial Clan, when compared to the other three Imperial Clans, had only dispatched a single individual to participate in this sparing of the Four Clans' younger generation. As for this person, it was the Ximen Imperial Clan's Fifth Prince, Ximen Feixue.

Chu Feng had already met Ximen Feixue. Indeed, he was very powerful. That man was comparable with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's personal disciple, Baili Xinghe, in all aspects. He was a top tier expert.

Chu Feng felt that, if there were no accidents, Ximen Feixue would become his great adversary.

Other than the Four Clans' younger generation, the information also listed the great characters present.

There were simply too many grand characters present. Other than the Four Clans' Clan Chiefs, the other people who brought Chu Feng the most focus were four of the Ten Immortals.

They were the Compass Immortal, the Avaricious Immortal, the World Spiritist Immortal and the White-browed Immortal.

They were the four Immortals that the Four Clans had managed to invite for their younger generation's sparring.

"Sure enough, it is as Ancestor said. This time around, many grand characters have come from the Four Clans."

Logically, with this many extremely powerful experts present, Chu Feng, who was planning to wreck the party, should have been feeling scared.

However, Chu Feng was not only not afraid, the gaze of anticipation in his eyes grew even denser, and the smile on his face even wider.

He felt that the more grand characters there were, the more he would be able to embarrass the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the information that stopped Chu Feng disappeared. At this time, Chu Feng directly walked into the gate with large strides. He walked onto the stage to compete with the Four Clans' younger generation.

.....

Outside, surrounding the stage, there were already countless gazes fixed onto the location where Chu Feng was about to walk out from.

The owners of those gazes came from all over. There were those from the Nine Powers, those from other powers, and even those from extraordinary experts.

Among them, there were two extremely confident gazes. Those gazes were from two old men.

Of these two old men, one possessed a face with all smiles, whereas the other had a very cold expression. They were the Avaricious Immortal and the World Spiritist Alliance's ruler, the World Spiritist Immortal, respectively.

There seemed to be some conflict between the two of them, as the two of them did not say a single word to one another. However, beside them sat another individual. As for that person, it was the White-browed Immortal.

Seeing that the world spirit gate had opened, the White-browed Immortal said, “Two sirs, I truly wonder which of your beloved disciples will be able to walk out from there,”

“Brother White-brow, why are you this lacking in confidence? How could you imply that only our disciples will be able to walk out from there, and your disciple would not?” The Avaricious Immortal asked with a beaming smile.

“Sigh, I know very well the level of achievement my disciple has obtained. How could he possibly compare to the disciples of the two of you?” White-browed Immortal shook his head while smiling a self-mocking smile.

“Never would I have expected that you actually know your standing too,” the Avaricious Immortal said with a smile.

Hearing those words, the White-browed Immortal’s expression immediately sunk. Even though he knew that his disciple would not be a match for theirs, he was unable to tolerate someone else saying it.

However, the Avaricious Immortal completely ignored what the White-browed Immortal was feeling. Instead, he deliberately cast his gaze toward the World Spiritist Immortal beside him.

Then, he said, “Even though my disciple is also not some sort of heaven-defying genius, it would not be a problem for him to obtain the victor spot in the Nine Powers’ competition.”

The World Spiritist Immortal did not say anything to those words. Instead, his eyes were fixed onto the world spirit gate’s exit the entire time. Nervousness and anticipation filled his eyes. He truly hoped that his disciple Mu Juechen would be the one to come out from there.

If that were to happen, he would be able to give the Avaricious Immortal a slap to the face and shut him up.

Right at this moment, the world spirit gate finally began to tremble. Immediately afterward, a figure appeared from within it.

At this moment, men, women, young and old, regardless of their status, were all startled. Then, everyone began to reveal expressions of shock.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had stepped onto the stage.

“Who is that?” At this moment, this was the first thing that came

to everyone's mind.

However, this could not be blamed on them. After all, the person who had appeared was not a disciple of the Nine Powers, nor was he a disciple of the three Immortals. Instead, the person that had come out was an ordinarily dressed and ordinary-looking young man.

If Chu Feng had revealed his true appearance, he would have definitely shocked everyone. However, at this moment, Chu Feng was still in disguise. Naturally, no one would recognize him. Inevitably, this caused the crowd to all be shocked.

"This..." However, in terms of being shocked, the ones who were the most shocked right now were none other than the Avaricious Immortal and the World Spiritist Immortal.

This was especially true for the Avaricious Immortal. Earlier, he had been all smiles. However, at this moment, he was unable to smile at all. Instead, he had the appearance of someone that had just eaten feces.

"Brother Avaricious, it would seem that you've guessed wrong. Not only was my disciple incompetent, it seems that your disciple was also incompetent."

At this moment, compared to the other two, the White-browed Immortal was extremely happy.

"White-brow, what is the meaning behind those words? Are you trying to make cutting remarks at me?" Hearing those words, the Avaricious Immortal's gaze instantly turned cold. He stared fiercely at the White-browed Immortal.

Chapter 1715 – A Powerful Character

“Sigh, Brother Avaricious, even if you are angry, you shouldn’t aim your anger at me. The person who defeated your disciple is that young man there. If you don’t like that, you can go and find him yourself. What use is there in becoming angry at me?”

“However, as a senior, if you are to attack him, I fear it would go unwell. After all, he’s a junior, hahaha...” The White-browed Immortal ignored the gaze that the Avaricious Immortal was looking at him with and began to laugh heartily in a mocking manner.

“White-brow, I shall give you a word of advice. Even though we are all part of the Ten Immortals, you are only the weakest bottom cushion. It’s best for you to not think that you can do whatever you want now just because you have the Nangong Imperial Clan behind your back,” Avaricious Immortal said with a cold voice.

“Even if I do not have the backing of the Nangong Imperial Clan, I would still not fear anymore. I, White-brow, am definitely able to assume the title of ‘Immortal,’” White-browed Immortal snorted coldly. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “I truly admire that young man, hahaha...” Then, he burst into loud laughter again.

At this moment, he was truly feeling extremely good. As he did not have any hope that his disciple would be able to emerge the victor to begin with, what he wanted the most was for the other two Immortals’ disciples to not be able to obtain the limelight. After all, if that were to happen, it would only make him look inferior.

However, he also knew that it was impossible. Earlier, even he himself felt that it was an unrealistic hope that the other two Immortals’ disciples would fail.

After all, their disciples were extremely powerful. Not to mention the younger generation from the Nine Powers, there would not be

many of the young generation from the entire Holy Land of Martialism who could contend against their disciples.

Even if there were, they would not have come to participate in this sort of competition.

The White-browed Immortal had truly never expected that his unrealistic and extravagant hope would actually become a reality. This brought him extreme joy.

At this moment, he was not only saying that he admired Chu Feng; he really felt that way. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had allowed him to obtain an equilibrium with the other two Immortals.

However, if he were to know that the young man that he admired right now was actually Chu Feng, he would likely be unable to feel any joy. Instead, he would feel more depressed than anyone else.

“It’s actually him?”

At the moment when the majority of the people were shocked, the gaze of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Ximen Feixue started to shine. He was also shocked.

“Fifth brother, you recognize him?”

Hearing Ximen Feixue’s cry of shock, the four people beside him asked together.

They were two men and two women. They were Ximen Feixue’s older blood brothers and sisters. They were respectively the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Eldest Prince, Second Prince, Third Princess and Fourth Princess.

Even though they were all blood siblings, the four of them were much older than Ximen Feixue.

The oldest among them, the Eldest Prince, was over a thousand years old. The youngest among them, the Fourth Princess, was over seven hundred years old.

Due to the fact that this was a competition between the Four Clans' younger generation, the four of them were all unqualified to participate. This was also the main reason why only Ximen Feixue was participating for the Ximen Imperial Clan.

"I met him before. He's that guy from yesterday," Ximen Feixue said.

"It's actually him?" Upon hearing those words, Ximen Feixue's older brothers and sisters revealed gazes of anger when they looked to Chu Feng again.

The four of them had all heard about what Chu Feng had done. He had actually dared to publicly contradict the Ximen Imperial Clan. That was something that they could not tolerate.

"You all don't have to do anything. That guy, I must personally take care of him," Ximen Feixue said with a low voice. As he spoke, he revealed a great deal of confidence.

It was as if Chu Feng were an ant in his hand that he could squeeze to death at any moment.

At the moment when the crowd was filled with shock and discussing Chu Feng and guessing who he might be, Chu Feng was also observing the crowd.

It must be said that there were quite a lot of people present. Other than the people from the Nine Powers who he was familiar with, there were also people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.

It could be said that this vast area was already packed with people. Likely, all those who should have come had already arrived.

What Chu Feng was interested in was not how many people had come. Rather, it was the strength of the people who were present. Especially the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans; Chu Feng was interested in knowing the exact strength of the individuals they were sending forth.

Unfortunately, the true experts present were all Martial Emperors, and the majority of them had concealed their auras. When Martial Emperors concealed their auras, Chu Feng was truly unable to see through them.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to determine their strength, he was certain that, in addition to the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief Nangong Beidou being present, the Clan Chiefs of the other three Imperial Clans must be present too.

Even though they had concealed their auras, the imposing airs that they naturally emitted, that sort of sense of superiority, was something that they could not conceal.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, four sharp gazes suddenly landed on Chu Feng. Those were the gazes from the Four Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. They were planning to suppress Chu Feng by displaying their strength.

The four Imperial Clan Chiefs were all not ordinary Martial Emperors. Likely, the other three Imperial Clan Chiefs possessed cultivations on par with Nangong Beidou's. In other words, the four of them should all be at least rank three Martial Emperors.

At the Martial Emperor realm, the gap in a single level of cultivation was akin to the gap between heaven and earth. Rank three Martial Emperor was an extremely powerful level of cultivation.

Rank three Martial Emperors were existences so frighteningly powerful that they could rank among the top existences in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Being gazed at by four rank three Martial Emperors, Chu Feng felt that breathing had become difficult. At this moment, he started to panic slightly.

Even though they had not tried to suppress him physically, their

mental oppressive might was quite strong.

Right at this moment, a voice transmission suddenly sounded in Chu Feng's ears. "Don't overthink it. Do what you must do. Regardless of success or failure, I will definitely get you out."

After hearing that voice transmission, Chu Feng's heart immediately felt a lot more at ease. The reason for that was because this was Baili Xuankong's voice.

Chu Feng did not know where Baili Xuankong currently was. However, he knew that Baili Xuankong was within the crowd.

"That brat."

Upon seeing how Chu Feng was able to regain his composure this quickly even after being stared down by this many sharp gazes, Nangong Beidou and the other three Imperial Clan Chiefs were all startled.

They began to vaguely realize that this unknown brat seemed to be rather extraordinary.

After Chu Feng regained his composure, he cast his gaze toward the spectator stand, in the direction where the Avaricious Immortal and the others sat.

Even though it was Chu Feng's first time seeing the Avaricious Immortal and the World Spiritist Immortal, he was able to immediately tell the two of them apart.

Upon seeing the expression of the Avaricious Immortal, who looked like he had just eaten feces, Chu Feng knew that the Avaricious Immortal must bitterly hate him.

Chu Feng was thinking that if he were to know that his personal disciple, whom he took such pride in, had been beaten up by Chu Feng, then he likely would not only hate Chu Feng, but rather want to kill Chu Feng himself.

"It would seem that another grand character has not shown up."

Chu Feng muttered in his heart. The reason for that was because there were four seats at the location where the Three Immortals were sitting, but the leading seat of the four was actually empty.

Not mentioning the ranking of the four Immortals, just by the fact that only that person was not present when all of the other grand characters from all over were present meant that that person's standing was extremely grand, and that he possessed a great amount of courage. Otherwise, that person would definitely not dare to do such a thing.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the Compass Immortal, who had yet to show up, was most definitely a very powerful character.

Chapter 1716 – Find A Pushover First

“My apologies everyone, this old man has arrived late.”

Right at this moment, a clear laugh suddenly sounded. After this voice sounded, a silhouette rushed forth with lightning speed and sat down onto the seat for the Compass Immortal.

At this moment, everyone came to know that the late-arriving Compass Immortal had finally shown up.

Even though the Compass Immortal had come late, there was no one who dared to say anything. The reason for that was because everyone present knew that the Compass Immortal was the strongest among all the Four Immortals who had come today.

To be able to invite someone like the Compass Immortal to Mooncloud City was a very extraordinary feat. Thus, how could there possibly be anyone who would dare to say anything about him being late?

Everyone felt that just being able to see the Compass Immortal's true appearance was already a blessing to them.

Thus, at this moment, many of the people present, regardless of their age, gender or strength, revealed expressions of admiration.

“It's actually him?!”

At this moment when everyone was feeling joyous, Chu Feng was startled. The reason for that was because the Compass Immortal was completely different from the other three Immortals, who gave off the sensation of daoist immortals.

The Compass Immortal had the appearance of a monk. Not only that, he was wearing shabby plain clothing.

His appearance and his outfit were simply the same as that shameless monk who had snatched the scroll from Chu Feng outside of the Nangong Imperial Clan's territory.

If it wasn't for that monk snatching away the scroll the Snow-haired Immortal had had Chu Feng watch over, Chu Feng would not have been played with by the Snow-haired Immortal.

Chu Feng had really never expected for the swindler monk to be one of the Ten Immortals, the Compass Immortal.

Furthermore, based on the reaction from the crowd, it seemed that this Compass Immortal's status was quite extraordinary.

"Crap, that old fart, will he expose me?"

Chu Feng was afraid. Even though his impression of that Compass Immortal was not good, Chu Feng had to admit that his world spirit techniques were very strong.

Otherwise he would not have been able to see through the scroll that had been in Chu Feng's Cosmos Sack, as well as Chu Feng's disguised appearance, with a single glance.

As he had been able to see through his disguise back then, logically, he would be able to see through his disguise today too.

"Haha, let's start."

After the Compass Immortal took his seat, he took a glance at Chu Feng. However, he did not bother to pay attention to Chu Feng. Instead, he smiled and nodded at the experts present. Then, he spoke to indicate that the competition should begin.

Logically, it was impossible for someone like him to not see through Chu Feng's disguise. However, he did not say anything about it. Likely, he did not plan to expose Chu Feng.

Chu Feng felt that, regardless of what the Compass Immortal might be planning, it was good that he had not yet been exposed.

"You on the stage, who are you?"

Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded. Turning toward the source of the voice, Chu Feng discovered that the person who had spoken was a person with an unfathomable cultivation. Likely,

that person was at least a Martial Emperor.

However, that person was not someone from the Nine Powers, nor was he someone from the Four Clans. Instead, he was Mooncloud City's City Master.

Even though Mooncloud City's City Master was a white-haired old man, he possessed a very robust build. Furthermore, he was wearing a suit of silvery-white armor that covered his whole body.

His armor shone with light. On the chest area of his armor was a moon symbol. This made him appear to be extremely domineering. Even were one to disregard the armor, the old man's aura was also extremely strong. From a single glance, one could tell that he was a very aggressive type of person.

"Junior is called Feng Xing. I am without a sect or school. I have only come here for the sake of swapping pointers with the Four Clans' younger generation," Chu Feng clasped his fist and responded.

"Without sect or school? With his cultivation, how could he be without sect or school?"

"It would seem that this boy has come with ill intentions," Hearing what Chu Feng said, the people from the Four Clans all revealed displeased expressions.

"Very well. Since you are able to prevail over others, you are qualified to compete with the Four Clans' younger generation."

"However, you must make sure to listen to the rules of this sparring contest carefully."

"The Four Clans' younger generation will spar with one another in succession. Before that, you will be able to first choose any one of the Four Clans' younger generation to challenge."

"If you are to obtain victory, you will rest for a round. The Four Clans' younger generation will continue to spar with one another. After they finish that round of sparring, you will have to continue

to challenge another of them.”

“This will continue until you lose. Upon losing, you will lose the qualifications to continue challenging them.”

“Do you understand?” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“Yes, I understand,” Chu Feng sneered in his heart. He was thinking about how unfair this rule was. With every round of sparring, he would have to challenge someone from the Four Clans’s younger generation. Even if he were able to win every single match, he would still be the person to fight the most in the end. He would have to exhaust a great amount of physical strength. This rule was truly unfair.

However, this did not truly bother Chu Feng. What he wanted was the authority to challenge the Four Clans. If he was able to challenge anyone at will, then it would be more favorable to him.

“Since you understand the rules, then let’s begin,” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“Am I to start first?” Chu Feng asked in a slightly astonished manner.

“Mn, you are to challenge first. They will spar afterward,” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

Hearing those words, not to mention Chu Feng, apart from the people from the Four Clans, many of the other people present were unable to remain collected. This rule was simply too disadvantageous toward the challenger.

Wasn’t this rule obviously there to eliminate the challenger as quickly as possible?

At this moment, the people from the Nine Powers all felt that Mooncloud City was truly a power that was in cahoots with the Four Clans. Even when bullying others, they would do it this openly.

“Very well. In that case, I’ll challenge that young lady from the Nangong Imperial Clan,” Chu Feng pointed to Nangong Tianfeng.

“Me?” Nangong Tianfeng was startled to hear those words. She had been completely distracted, and had not expected that she would be the first to be challenged.

“That’s right. It’ll be you. Young lady, please don’t harbor hard feelings.”

“After all, there are this many experts among the Four Clans’ younger generation. I would like to challenge a couple more people.”

“Thus, I will naturally have to find a pushover to challenge first,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“What? You called me a pushover?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Tianfeng’s eyes were wide open. Anger surged onto her face.

In fact, this was not only limited to her. At this moment, the expressions of everyone from the Nangong Imperial Clan turned malicious. They were extremely displeased.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was clearly mocking Nangong Tianfeng. This was a provocation, an undisguised provocation.

“That’s right, I feel that you are the weakest among everyone present,” Chu Feng smiled an innocent smile. It was as if he were saying something that was completely natural.

“You bastard! Even if I am only a rank two Half Martial Emperor, I am definitely not someone whom you can look down upon!”

At this moment, Nangong Tianfeng was utterly enraged. Her body shifted as she leapt onto the stage.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At the same time she got onto the stage, she began to attack.

With a flip of her palm, a slender sword appeared in her hand. She aimed it toward Chu Feng and thrust it forward.

Golden light began to shine. It was as if there were ten thousand snakes galloping. They turned into an enormous formation and swept toward Chu Feng. This formation was extremely strong. It contained an enormous amount of profoundness. If one were to be sealed by this formation, one would likely suffer a disaster.

Even without mentioning it, one would know that that slender sword was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Although it was only a copy, it was still an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Else, it would be impossible for it to possess such powerful might.

Furthermore, Nangong Tianfeng had used a martial skill. The martial skill she had used was not an ordinary martial skill. Instead, it was the famous martial skill of the Nangong Imperial Clan that they did not teach outsiders, the Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit.

This Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit was a very difficult to learn, yet very powerful martial skill. Nangong Tianfeng had evidently mastered this martial skill. Else, it would have been impossible for her to unleash it to such a degree of proficiency.

“As expected from the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princess. With her strength, it would seem that this brat is going to suffer.”

At this moment, many of the people present exclaimed in admiration at Nangong Tianfeng’s strength and nodded in approval.

Seeing that her martial skill had sealed off her opponent, Nangong Tianfeng revealed a proud smile.

Actually, as she was a rank two Half Martial Emperor, she did not have much hope in this sparring competition. After all, she also knew that her strength, when compared to the others’, was very

weak.

However, if she were able to defeat this challenge, it would mean that she was stronger than the personal disciples of the Avaricious Immortal, the World Spiritist Immortal and the White-browed Immortal. That, in turn, would greatly increase her reputation, and obtain honor for the Nangong Imperial Clan.

However, she also knew that her opponent was not someone to be underestimated, since he had been able to defeat the Three Immortal's personal disciples. Thus, she was very nervous, and did not possess much certainty in victory. That was why she had unleashed a fatal attack from the get-go. She was trying to obtain a chance for victory.

She truly had never expected that everything would go this smoothly. With only that one attack, she had actually been able to determine the outcome of the battle and defeat her opponent.

As such, how could she not be in joy?

However, at the moment when she was feeling extremely pleased and not paying attention, Chu Feng, who had been sealed by her Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit, also revealed a smile.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's smile was much colder than hers.

Chapter 1717 – Displaying One’s Ability For The First Time

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Golden swords bombarded Chu Feng from above like a rainstorm.

With the descent of each sword, a golden energy ripple extended out in all directions.

The golden energy ripples piled up layer upon layer, forming golden hurricanes that swept through the earth.

“This guy!”

However, even with such a ferocious attack, Nangong Tianfeng’s smile had instead disappeared. Worry began to appear in her beautiful eyes.

Even though her Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit had revealed its absolute might, she was unable to injure Chu Feng in the slightest.

In fact, Chu Feng was standing where he was without moving at all. He was looking at her with a smile on his face the entire time.

The reason why Chu Feng was capable of all this was all because of a golden defensive barrier. It was that golden defensive barrier that had blocked all of Nangong Tianfeng’s attacks.

A defensive barrier that was capable of withstanding the Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit. Without others telling her, Nangong Tianfeng knew how powerful her opponent was.

“Step~~Step~~Step~~~”

Sensing that the situation wasn’t good, Nangong Tianfeng immediately retreated. She knew that Chu Feng was going to strike back at her.

“Woosh~~~”

However, how could Chu Feng possibly give her the opportunity to escape? At the moment when she was about to escape, with a thought, golden rays shot out from Chu Feng’s defensive barrier.

Not only did Chu Feng’s spirit formation break apart Nangong Tianfeng’s Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit, it had also turned into many golden snakes that shot toward Nangong Tianfeng like a torrential rain.

This attack, it was simply the same as Nangong Tianfeng’s Earthen Taboo: Ten Thousand Snakes Pit.

Chu Feng had reconstructed the Nangong Imperial Clan’s martial skill that they did not teach outsiders through the use of his spirit formation’s ability to transform.

Furthermore, in terms of both speed and power, Chu Feng’s attack surpassed Nangong Tianfeng’s enormously.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

In a blink of an eye, Chu Feng’s attack had arrived. Rumbles began to be heard repeatedly. Chu Feng’s world spirit technique had completely landed onto Nangong Tianfeng.

This scene caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to be extremely shocked and frightened. The reason for this was because Chu Feng’s attack was absolutely capable of taking Nangong Tianfeng’s life.

However, they were only scared for a moment. The reason for that was because they soon discovered that even though Chu Feng’s attacks had landed onto Nangong Tianfeng, Nangong Tianfeng was completely uninjured; she was not even missing a single strand of hair.

At this moment, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan started to smile.

They all felt that it was not that Chu Feng could not kill Nangong Tianfeng. Rather, they felt that he did not dare to kill Nangong Tianfeng. They felt that Chu Feng was afraid of their Nangong Imperial Clan, and did not dare to do anything to Nangong Tianfeng.

In fact, when the energy ripples gradually faded away, and Nangong Tianfeng emerged completely unharmed, it was not only the people of the Nangong Imperial Clan who thought Chu Feng was scared of the Nangong Imperial Clan. In fact, many other spectators felt the same. They all thought that Chu Feng was being lenient out of fear of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke with a shocked expression. “Yoh, so this Nangong Imperial Clan’s young lady’s beautiful appearance is not natural, but rather artificial,”

“Artificial?”

Hearing those words, the crowd all turned their gazes to Nangong Tianfeng’s face. At this moment, many people started to sneer. Especially the women present; they began to look at Nangong Tianfeng with expressions of contempt.

Being led by Chu Feng, they had already discovered the change that had occurred to Nangong Tianfeng. While she was not injured, her facial appearance had changed. To speak of it simply, she had become much uglier than before.

It turned out that the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Fourth Princess had used a special method to disguise her true appearance. Her beauty was actually fake. In reality, she was not at all that beautiful.

“You bastard!”

At this moment, Nangong Tianfeng was trembling with anger. She felt as if her heart and lungs were about to explode.

To her, what she cared about the most was her appearance.

Otherwise, she would not have used a special method to make herself more beautiful.

However, to change one's appearance was, after all, something disgraceful. Thus, she was not willing to let others know about it, because others would look down on her, and this would damage her social status should it be known.

However, Chu Feng had deliberately revealed her true appearance before all these people from the Four Clans, the Nine Powers and all the other bystanders. He had let everyone know that her appearance was actually fake. This was simply akin to a public humiliation for her. To her, this was even more painful than being beaten up.

At this moment, she was so enraged that she had lost her ability to reason. She did not care about what cultivation Chu Feng might have. Her body shifted, and she arrived before Chu Feng and began to brandish the sword in her hand to pierce Chu Feng's throat.

“Paa~~”

Nangong Tianfeng's thrust of anger was easily caught by Chu Feng. Using his bare hand, Chu Feng grabbed that sharp sword.

At this moment, the sword was not bulging. It was as if the sword had been completely fused with Chu Feng. No matter how hard Nangong Tianfeng struggled, she was unable to pull her sword back from Chu Feng's hand.

“Nangong Tianfeng, it turns out that not only are you ugly, you're also stupid. Did you really think that you were a match for me?” Chu Feng said disdainfully.

“I'll definitely kill you!” Nangong Tianfeng shouted angrily. Then, she released her sword and threw a palm strike at Chu Feng's chest.

Chu Feng did not dodge her palm strike. Thus, Nangong Tianfeng's palm strike landed firmly onto Chu Feng's body.

Nangong Tianfeng's palm caused even the surrounding space to shatter. However, Chu Feng was still standing there motionlessly like Mount Tai. Even his clothes were not damaged in the slightest.

“.....”

After that palm strike, even though Chu Feng was completely unharmed, Nangong Tianfeng stood there motionlessly. The pain that originated from her palm had woken her back up.

She realized once again how enormous the gap between her and the person before her was.

“Scram, else I'll slaughter you,” At this moment, the gaze that Chu Feng looked to Nangong Tianfeng with suddenly turned cold. It was as if two sharp blades had instantly impaled Nangong Tianfeng's weak heart.

Faced with Chu Feng's gaze, Nangong Tianfeng's little face immediately changed. Her heart started to tremble violently. After taking several steps back in succession, her legs actually grew soft, and she sat on the ground in fear. She had a confused expression on her face. She had already lost her awareness. She was utterly terrified by Chu Feng.

The crowd were all shocked by this scene. They all discovered that this young man called Feng Xing was very powerful.

Without mentioning his martial power, merely his world spirit techniques were already on a superb level of attainment. They all knew that Chu Feng had used a deterring technique, a kind of world spirit technique, to frighten Nangong Tianfeng with a single gaze.

He had first used world spirit techniques to copy Nangong Tianfeng's attack. Then, using his world spirit techniques, he had terrified Nangong Tianfeng after that. His methods were things that were impossible for ordinary Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists to accomplish.

However, this young man called Feng Xing was able to accomplish it. It was no wonder that even the Three Immortals' disciples had been defeated by him.

“For this match, the victor is Feng Xing. Nangong Tianfeng is eliminated!” Mooncloud City's City Master said.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after those words left his mouth, Nangong Tianlong rushed onto the stage and lent an arm to support his sister who was stunned with terror.

“If you have the courage, challenge me next,” Before he left the stage, Nangong Tianlong spoke to Chu Feng fiercely through a voice transmission.

Faced with Nangong Tianlong's threat, Chu Feng merely smiled. He replied, “Rest assured, the next one sitting here in shock here will be you.”

“Humph!”

Those words caused Nangong Tianlong's face to grow blue. However, he did not say anything, and left with Nangong Tianfeng after a cold snort.

Chu Feng also left the stage and stood to the side. The reason for that was because he knew that the upcoming match would be a showdown between other people. He... would be able to enjoy the show.

Mooncloud City's City Master announced, “Second match, between the Four Clans' younger generation, the Nangong Imperial Clan's Nangong Tianlong against the Ximen Imperial Clan's Ximen Feixue,”

“What?” Hearing those words, the expressions on the crowd from the Nangong Imperial Clan grew even more ugly.

They had truly never expected that their Nangong Imperial

Clan's strongest Nangong Tianlong would have to confront Ximen Feixue in his first match.

If it were anyone else, the Nangong Imperial Clan would not react like this. It was only Ximen Feixue who they were not certain about.

The reason for that was because Ximen Feixue's strength had indeed reached a very frightening level.

It would not be excessive to say that he was the strongest among the Four Great Imperial Clans' younger generation.

This was something that not only the people outside of the Four Clans thought to be the case; even the people from the Four Clans thought this to be the case.

At this moment, Ximen Feixue had already reached the stage. He had a calm and cold appearance on his face. Evidently, he did not place this match in his eyes at all.

This was not because he was arrogant. Rather, it was because he was that confident.

It was precisely this sort of confidence that brought forth enormous pressure to the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chapter 1718 – One Against Two

In terms of pressure, it would naturally be Nangong Tianlong who was feeling the greatest amount of pressure at that moment.

However, this time around, he had to fight. Regardless of whether it might be victory or defeat, he had no way out.

If he were to fight, then even if he were to be defeated, he would be defeated honorably. After all, Ximen Feixue was publicly acknowledged to be the strongest member of the younger generation.

However, if he didn't fight, not only would his name and reputation be completely ruined, his Nangong Imperial Clan would also be looked down upon by others.

Thus, after a struggle in his heart, Nangong Tianlong jumped forth with overflowing determination like a wild dragon. Then, he landed steadily onto the stage, standing directly across from Ximen Feixue.

“Tink~~~”

At the moment he landed, a blue sword appeared in Nangong Tianlong's hand.

This sword was no ordinary sword. Not only did it emit a bright glimmer and strong power, it also contained incomparable imposing might, an Emperor's might.

This was an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament, one of the Seven Rainbow Swords, the Blue Rainbow Sword.

Nangong Tianlong knew that Ximen Feixue was very powerful, and that he would most likely lose. However, even if he were to lose, he was determined to lose elegantly. Thus, he had decided to take out the Blue Rainbow Sword right away, because he did not dare to be careless against Ximen Feixue.

“Ximen Feixue, I know that you are proficient with swords, and possess the Incomplete Imperial Armament ‘Heavenly Immortal Sword’.

“Although this Blue Rainbow Sword of mine is not as famous as your Heavenly Immortal Sword, it is also an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament created by the renowned Grandmaster Rainbow.”

“To fight against your Heavenly Immortal Sword using my Blue Rainbow Sword would be a fair battle.”

“Ximen Feixue, unleash your sword. Today, regardless of victory or defeat, we shall at least fight to our heart’s content,” Nangong Tianlong pointed at Ximen Feixue with his sword and spoke in a very heroic manner.

“Even though you are also a rank five Half Martial Emperor, you are not qualified for me to unleash my sword,” Ximen Feixue said coldly.

“What did you say?” Hearing those words, Nangong Tianlong’s expression immediately changed. From his earlier excited expression, he now had an extremely ugly expression.

“I said, you are not qualified for me to unleash my sword,” Ximen Feixue repeated himself.

“You are truly arrogant!” At this moment, Nangong Tianlong was enraged. Even though he himself felt that he was not a match for Ximen Feixue, he did not feel that Ximen Feixue would be able to defeat him without the use of his Incomplete Imperial Armament.

What Ximen Feixue said was equivalent to publicly humiliating him. He had regarded Ximen Feixue as his opponent. Yet, Ximen Feixue had insulted him in such a manner. As such, how could Nangong Tianlong not be enraged?

In anger, Nangong Tianlong’s Blue Rainbow Sword trembled.

Right away, cold radiated with surging killing intent. Like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses, the might of Nangong Tianlong's sword charged toward Ximen Feixue.

However, faced with such a powerful attack, Ximen Feixue stood where he was without even moving. Even though the violent gale was blowing on him, swaying his clothes, and stirring his hair, his expression remained unchanged. He did not show the slightest bit of fear.

It was only when Nangong Tianlong fused with his sword and turned into a ray of light that shot toward him did Ximen Feixue's gaze reveal chilliness. Then, Ximen Feixue actually stepped forward. He had not retreated from Nangong Tianlong, but instead advanced. In the end, he had a brief encounter with Nangong Tianlong.

“Woosh~~~”

After the brief exchange of attacks, Ximen Feixue was completely unharmed when he landed on the ground. However, Nangong Tianlong fell to the ground with a ‘putt.’ Not only that, his Blue Rainbow Sword had also flown out of his hand.

At this moment, the crowd noticed that a palm mark had appeared on Nangong Tianlong's abdomen. That palm mark had split open his surrounding clothes and burst his skin apart, leaving a firm imprint on his muscles and bones. It was precisely that palm mark that had injured him.

Even though the battle between the two of them only lasted an instant, the outcome of the battle was already determined.

“So strong.”

At this moment, the crowd all revealed expressions of shock.

Even though they had heard that Ximen Feixue was very powerful, to be able to defeat Nangong Tianlong, who possessed the same cultivation as him and held an Incomplete Imperial

Armament in his hand, this was simply too powerful.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?” At this moment, Chu Feng’s heart moved slightly. He had felt Ximen Feixue’s battle power. His battle power was likely not only capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

“No, although it’s very powerful, it’s still only capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” However, Chu Feng soon rejected his earlier guess.

Even though the battle power Ximen Feixue had revealed was very strong, the sensation of it was still only that of a battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, and not four.

“To be able to accomplish this sort of feat with the same cultivation and battle power, not only has he grasped outstanding battle techniques, he also possesses exceptional talent.”

“This Ximen Feixue is truly powerful. In the future, he might even really end up obtaining a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.”

Even though Chu Feng was already aware that Ximen Feixue would be a very formidable opponent, he had not anticipated that he would be this strong. He was even stronger than Chu Feng had anticipated.

With how powerful Ximen Feixue was, even Chu Feng did not have absolute certainty in being able to defeat him.

“This match is Ximen Feixue’s victory. Nangong Tianlong is eliminated.”

“Feng Xing, it’s time for you to continue with your challenge. You can choose to challenge any of the Four Clans’ younger generation that have not been eliminated,” The Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“That’s truly quite quick,” At this moment, Chu Feng walked

back onto the stage.

Ximen Feixue just so happened to be walking down from the stage. Thus, the two of them had a brief encounter.

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Ximen Feixue sent a voice transmission to him, “Pick the weak ones to challenge. I’ll take care of the others for you.”

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ll know,” Ximen Feixue smiled. Then, he walked down from the stage.

At this moment, Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu both got onto the stage. They were planning to help their big brother down from the stage.

“You two, there’s no need for you to leave,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“What did you say?” Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu asked simultaneously. They did not understand what Chu Feng meant by that.

“Earlier, your big brother threatened me. Originally, I had planned to teach him a lesson. However, never would I expect for him to be this useless, and be defeated by a single strike.”

“Now he’s already been eliminated, but the anger in my heart is still present. There’s nothing I can do other than vent my anger on you two. After all, the two of you are his younger brothers.”

“However, it’s obvious that you two are inferior to your big brother. To fight the two of you one at a time would be too boring. Thus, you two might as well come at me together,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Feng Xing, are you planning to challenge the two of them together?” Mooncloud City’s City Master asked.

“City Master, that is precisely my intention. Is that feasible?”

Chu Feng asked.

“If you want that, it is naturally fine,” Mooncloud City’s City Master laughed lightly. He longed for Chu Feng to be eliminated sooner. Thus, how could he not accept Chu Feng’s request to fight two people alone?

“In that case, two sirs, are you two prepared to be defeated by me?”

At this moment, Nangong Tianlong had been brought down the stage by the other people from the Nangong Imperial Clan. Only Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu were standing across from Chu Feng.

“You are truly arrogant and conceited. Do you really think that you can defeat us two brothers?”

“We will let you know what it means by not knowing the vastness of the heavens and the immensity of the earth,” Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu sneered.

First Chu Feng had defeated their younger sister. Now, he was looking down on them and publicly provoking them.

This caused the two of them that already harbored hatred for Chu Feng to want to quickly teach him a lesson, to show him how powerful they were, and help their Nangong Imperial Clan win back some honor.

“Oh? You brothers are real strong?”

“Back then, the two people that that fellow by the name of Chu Feng stripped naked and hung upside down on top of the city walls, wasn’t it the two of you?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“What? Chu Feng!” Hearing those words, the crowd were all shocked. Who was Chu Feng? They naturally all knew him. He was the person for whom the Nangong Imperial Clan had placed wanted posters all over the Holy Land of Martialism not long ago.

However, they had all heard that Chu Feng's cultivation was not very strong, and that he had already been killed.

What? That Chu Feng had actually beaten the two Nangong Imperial Clan's princes, stripped them and hung them upside down from the city gate?

This was something that they had never heard of before.

Could it be that the Nangong Imperial Clan had put out wanted posters for Chu Feng's arrest because of this matter?

Moreover, with that Chu Feng's cultivation, could he really have defeated Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi?

All of a sudden, the crowd began to guess about this matter. They were very skeptical of what Chu Feng had said.

"What did you say? Don't you dare continue to blabber nonsense!" At this moment, Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi's expressions took a huge change.

The two of them knew very well that the man before them was not lying. What he had said was all true.

Chapter 1719 – Everything Points To Disaster

“Little friend, while you can eat whatever you want, you cannot say whatever you want,” The Nangong Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou, said with a cold voice.

He had already forcibly suppressed this matter from spreading. Thus, he did not know how this young man before him by the name of Feng Xing knew about it. However, regardless, he would absolutely not allow this to be known as the truth before all these people, else it would truly be too detrimental to the image of their Nangong Imperial Clan, detrimental to the image of his two sons. Thus... his words were filled with threat.

“Indeed, one cannot say whatever one wants. Thus, I, Feng Xing, am never one to blabber nonsense. I have merely spoken the truth.”

“I dare to swear to the heavens that I was not blabbing nonsense, that what I have said is the truth.”

“Clan Chief, do your two sons dare to swear to the heavens that they were not beaten up by Chu Feng, stripped and hung upside down from the city gate?” Chu Feng spoke boldly with confidence. Even when facing Nangong Beidou’s threat, he was not afraid in the slightest.

“You...” Hearing those words, Nangong Tianhu’s complexion turned ashen. As that was the truth, how could he possibly swear?

“Enough of your bullshit,” As for Nangong Tianshi, he was unwilling to continue bickering with Chu Feng regarding this issue. His body trembled, and martial power began to surge forth.

His boundless martial power turned into enormous golden waves. The waves layered upon one another as they swept forward to engulf Chu Feng.

This power was an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. From this, it could be seen that even though Nangong Tianshi was a rank four Half Martial Emperor, and sufficiently confident in being able to defeat Chu Feng, he did not dare to be careless. Thus, he had unleashed a fatal attack from the get-go.

“Earthen Taboo: Heaven Sweeping Wind!”

At the same time, Nangong Tianhu also unleashed his attack. After a loud shout, his martial power also surged forth. It turned into many streams of golden-bright and dazzling wind. The violent wind swept through heaven and earth.

Violent wind and huge waves began to wreak havoc on top of the stage. The might of the two attacks could be said to be dreadfully ferocious. With them surging toward him head-on, Chu Feng appeared to be weak like an ant, small like a speck of dust. No matter how one looked at it, he appeared to be incapable of withstanding this sort of attack.

“Heh...”

Right when the attacks were about to reach Chu Feng, he laughed lightly. Then, with a thought, his clothes began to flutter, and his aura suddenly increased.

At this moment, his cultivation had gone from rank three Half Martial Emperor to rank four Half Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng had unleashed his Thunder Armor. That was how he had increased his cultivation by a level. However, there was no Thunder Armor to be seen on him.

The reason for this was because Chu Feng had deliberately concealed his Thunder Armor. The reason for that was because the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were the signature moves of Chu Feng.

If he were to reveal his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, the people present would definitely know that he was Chu Feng. Thus,

in order to prevent that from happening, he deliberately concealed his Thunder Armor.

Even though he had concealed his Thunder Armor, Chu Feng still received an increase in strength. As a rank four Half Martial Emperor himself, how could he possibly fear two rank four Half Martial Emperors who he had defeated before?

“Break!” Suddenly, Chu Feng clenched his palm into a fist and shot it forth explosively. Golden martial power surged forth like a golden meteor. Nothing could stop it. In an instant, it had completely shattered both Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi’s Earthen Taboo Martial Skills and knocked both of them off of the stage.

“Wuuwaa~~”

At the moment they landed onto the ground, the two men vomited blood. Evidently, they had received extremely serious internal injuries. It was unknown whether Chu Feng had done so intentionally or not, as the two of them showed no signs of injuries on the surface.

Even though their outward appearances made them appear to be fine, their clothes had been completely shattered by Chu Feng’s fist. At this moment, the two of them were completely naked and vomiting blood on the ground below the stage.

“Bastard!”

At this moment, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan hurriedly flew down to cover Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi’s naked bodies. They were all gnashing their teeth in anger and looking at Chu Feng with murderous eyes. If it wasn’t for the fact that there were this many people here, they would definitely dismember Chu Feng into ten thousand pieces.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s actions were simply aimed at their Nangong Imperial Clan. He was deliberately

embarrassing their Nangong Imperial Clan. Chu Feng's open provocation was something that they could not tolerate.

At this moment, the only person who was relatively calm was actually the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou.

Nangong Beidou was the Clan Chief of their Nangong Imperial Clan. In terms of being angry, he would naturally be the one who was the most angry.

This young man by the name of Feng Xing before him had immediately disgraced his daughter and then humiliated his two sons. Evidently, he had come to attack their Nangong Imperial Clan.

While he did not know why this young man before him would do such a thing, why he would set himself against their Nangong Imperial Clan the entire time, he had already placed this young man called Feng Xing onto the list of names of people whom he must kill.

Even though he had already made the decision to kill this young man, Nangong Beidou's appearance was very calm. He did not reveal any trace of anger at all.

"Exactly whose disciple is this Feng Xing? If he doesn't have a great teacher, how could he become this powerful?"

"That's true. Even if he had concealed his cultivation, they're still all rank four Half Martial Emperors. It shouldn't be possible for him to defeat both Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu, who possess the same cultivation as him, with a single strike."

"Furthermore, they used Earthen Taboo Martial Skills, whereas he only used an ordinary punch. That child's battle power is infinitely close to that of being able to surmount four levels of cultivation! This is simply too frightening!"

"I think that child's name might be fake. Perhaps another demon-level member of the younger generation has appeared."

“As expected of the era where an Overlord will be born. The younger generation now are all extraordinary.”

At this moment, the crowd came to realize that this young man by the name of Feng Xing actually also possessed a rank four Half Martial Emperor cultivation.

He had concealed his cultivation. Furthermore, his battle power was also extremely strong. It was no wonder that the Three Immortal's disciples were all defeated by him. This young man had concealed himself extremely well. He was stronger than they had all anticipated. They were certain that he was someone with a great origin. One by one, the crowd started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

“The Nangong Imperial Clan is unable to withstand a single strike. Mooncloud City's City Master, may I step down now?” Chu Feng revealed a very indifferent expression at the surrounding discussion. With a beaming smile, he looked to the Mooncloud City's City Master.

“Eh...” Evidently, the Mooncloud City's City Master had not expected that Chu Feng had concealed his cultivation. At this moment, he was still startled. It was only after hearing what Chu Feng said that he immediately announced, “This match is Feng Xing's victory. Nangong Tianhu and Nangong Tianshi are eliminated.”

Immediately afterward, the Mooncloud City's City Master said, “Next match, Dongfang Zexuan against Nangong Ya.”

The crowd did not have any abnormal reaction to this announcement. They were all still pondering Chu Feng's origin.

However, Chu Feng's heart was startled by this announcement. A trace of worry emerged in his eyes.

Nangong Ya was Chu Feng's friend. Currently, he possessed the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

As for Dongfang Zexuan, he was the Third Prince of the Dongfang Imperial Clan and a well-known genius. He was someone with exceptional talent.

When Chu Feng first met Dongfang Zexuan, Dongfang Zexuan was already a rank three Half Martial Emperor. His cultivation back then had been equally matched with Nangong Ya's.

However, Dongfang Zexuan was now a rank four Half Martial Emperor, an entire level above Nangong Ya's cultivation. For Nangong Ya to fight against Dongfang Zexuan, everything pointed to disaster.

Chapter 1720 – Worthy Of Admiration

“If you are not defeated within three attacks from me, it will be your victory,” Sure enough, after getting on the stage, Dongfang Zexuan appeared extremely arrogant. It turned out that he had not only not placed the younger generation of the World Spiritist Alliance in his eyes, he had also not placed Nangong Ya in his eyes.

“It’s merely a sparring match. Regardless of the outcome, it will further the friendship between the Four Clans. Is there a need for such aggression?” Nangong Ya smiled lightly. He did not have the heart to battle at all. Thus, he was not angered by Dongfang Zexuan’s provocation.

“The victor is the king and the loser is the thief. This has been the rule of the world since ancient times.”

“While your words and actions might appear to be good behavior, it is actually only the attitude of someone who doesn’t dare to fight. You are merely finding an excuse for your failure.”

Dongfang Zexuan laughed coldly. To him, what Nangong Ya had said was extremely funny. This only caused him to look down on Nangong Ya even more.

“Woosh~~~”

Faced with Dongfang Zexuan acting in this manner, Nangong Ya did not bother with superfluous words. He flipped his palm and took out his Incomplete Imperial Armament copy.

As cold light flickered, his footsteps began to change. His speed instantly increased. Like an arrow shot out from the bow, he charged forward explosively.

While he was as fast as lightning, his movements were nimble and constantly changing. He first arrived behind Dongfang Zexuan. Then, he craftily shifted to attack Dongfang Zexuan from another direction. His movements were firm and natural, and

displayed the strength that he possessed well.

Unfortunately, there was a difference of an entire level of cultivation between the two of them. Furthermore, they both possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. This enormous gap that could not be made up for gave Dongfang Zexuan absolute superiority over Nangong Ya.

At the moment when Nangong Ya's attack was about to arrive, Dongfang Zexuan's body suddenly shifted. Not only had he dodged Nangong Ya's attack, he had also unleashed an attack at the same time. His palm directly smashed onto Nangong Ya's body.

“Bang~~~”

Once the palm struck his body, Nangong Ya immediately suffered a crushing defeat. Not only did he lose grasp of his Incomplete Imperial Armament, he himself was also knocked flying into the crowd.

Fortunately, he was caught by the people from the crowd. Otherwise, the impulse from the knockback would definitely have caused him to become even more injured. However, even with this being the case, Nangong Ya was still vomiting blood nonstop. His blood dyed his lapel red, and his aura became extremely weak. Dongfang Zexuan's palm strike could be said to have been extremely ruthless. It had nearly taken away Nangong Ya's life.

In a sparring match, one should not have used such a ruthless attack. However, not only had Dongfang Zexuan used such a ruthless attack on Nangong Ya, he even said disdainfully, “You actually can't even withstand a single attack. You are truly pitifully weak. With your strength, it's better that you do not come and make a disgrace out of yourself next time.”

“Hahahaha...” After a series of mockeries, Dongfang Zexuan burst into loud laughter.

Dongfang Zexuan's ridiculing laughter began to echo through the

surroundings. This caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to frown deeply. Their complexions had turned blue.

Nangong Ya, the final competitor of their Nangong Imperial Clan, had been defeated just like this. Furthermore, not only was he defeated, he was defeated miserably, and then ridiculed in such a manner. This caused the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan to be unable to raise their heads.

If they had known that this sparring between the younger generation would end in such a manner for them, even if they were to be beaten to death, they would not have even come to participate.

How could this possibly be said to be participating in a spar between members of the younger generation? This was simply publicly disgracing themselves.

“This match is Dongfang Zexuan’s victory. Nangong Ya is eliminated. Next match, the challenger Feng Xing shall make his challenge,” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

After Mooncloud City’s City Master said those words, Dongfang Zexuan planned to leave. However, right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly jumped up and then landed onto the stage with a ‘boom,’ like a meteor. He landed before Dongfang Zexuan and blocked his path.

“There’s no need for you to go,” Chu Feng said to Dongfang Zexuan.

“Me? There are no grievances nor grudges between us. Why are you challenging me?” Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to challenge him, Dongfang Zexuan started to frown. Evidently, he did not expect that Chu Feng would challenge him.

“Mooncloud City’s City Master, I wish to challenge Dongfang Zexuan, is that possible?” Chu Feng ignored Dongfang Zexuan and directly asked Mooncloud City’s City Master.

“Of course,” Mooncloud City’s City Master nodded.

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing that Mooncloud City’s City Master had agreed to the challenge, Dongfang Zexuan immediately leapt backwards to distance himself from Chu Feng. Then, he said, “Feng Xing, you wish to challenge me? That is completely fine.”

“However, too many people have competed with one another using martial power on this stage. It is truly boring.”

“I see that your world spirit techniques are quite decent. How about this? The two of us shall change the way we compete. Let’s compete in world spirit techniques and not martial power. What do you say about that?”

Once Dongfang Zexuan said those words, the crowd immediately started to discuss the matter wildly. Even though the crowd all wanted to watch a match of world spirit powers, they actually all knew that Dongfang Zexuan was afraid of Chu Feng.

He did not dare to compete with Chu Feng using martial power. That was the real reason why he was requesting a match of world spirit techniques.

After all, Chu Feng had already revealed his absolute strength when he had defeated Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu earlier.

His strength was extremely powerful; he could be said to be a peak existence among the younger generation. Not to mention Dongfang Zexuan, a lot of the other people present were also afraid of Chu Feng.

Seemingly afraid that Chu Feng would not accept the condition, Dongfang Zexuan continued. “Feng Xing, while I mainly focus upon cultivating my martial power, I am actually also extremely proficient with world spirit techniques. Although I am not taught by a great master, I am actually considered a genius in world spirit

techniques.”

“Furthermore, I mainly focus on the world spirit techniques’ slaughtering technique. Thus, even if your world spirit techniques are extremely powerful, I might as well tell you this; you will not necessarily be able to win against me in a fight of world spirit techniques.”

With a thought, golden-bright and dazzling world spirit energy surged out from his body. They turned into many golden dragons. Those golden dragons were very vivid and lifelike. As the dragons revolved around Dongfang Zexuan, they began to emit intimidating roars. The might of those dragons was extremely powerful.

Many people’s eyes started to shine upon seeing this scene. The reason for that was because there were snake-like veined patterns moving about within those golden dragons.

Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist! The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Third Prince was actually a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist!

The crowd was incomparably shocked. After all, very few people of the younger generation were capable of becoming Royal-cloak World Spiritists. As for those that were capable of becoming Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they were even fewer in number.

Logically, the number of the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation that were capable of accomplishing such a feat could be counted on one hand.

However, there shouldn’t be anyone from the Four Clans among those members of the younger generation. After all, the Four Great Imperial Clans placed the most importance on martial cultivation.

Perhaps it might be due to the fact that they possessed Imperial Bloodlines, but the people from the Four Clans were generally not

very talented in terms of world spirit techniques.

Thus, Dongfang Zexuan's display of his attainments in world spirit techniques would naturally shock the crowd and make them feel disbelief.

He possessed such a powerful cultivation, and was also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He was an expert in two fields, a well-rounded genius.

"Amazing, no wonder Dongfang Zexuan is this arrogant. It seems that child possesses the qualifications to be arrogant."

At this moment, not to mention the others, even the people from the Four Clans were praising Dongfang Zexuan repeatedly.

Hearing the praise and gasps of surprise coming from all around, the people from the Dongfang Imperial Clan were all carrying smiles on their faces. They were feeling very honored.

As for Dongfang Zexuan himself, he was immensely proud of himself and grinning from ear to ear.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke. "The Dongfang Imperial Clan's Third Prince's world spirit techniques are indeed quite excellent. I do not doubt this at all. After all, I have heard about your past achievements."

"Back then, you challenged the World Spiritist Alliance's younger generation in world spirit techniques, and had to run away with your tail between your legs after being taught a lesson. What you did was truly worthy of admiration."

Chapter 1721 – Could Only Accept Being Defeated

“You...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Dongfang Zexuan’s expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was his life’s greatest stain.

“What’s wrong? Do you also plan to say that I’m telling lies?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he looked to the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master and asked, “Lord Alliance Master, is what Feng Xing said the truth?”

“What little friend Feng Xing said is indeed the truth. Back then, little friend Dongfang Zexuan had indeed mustered a large force to our World Spiritist Alliance to challenge our World Spiritist Alliance’s younger generation in world spirit techniques.”

“Little friend Dongfang Zexuan’s world spirit techniques are extremely outstanding. Unfortunately, he was still defeated by our World Spiritist Alliance’s disciple.”

“There were a lot of people present that day. Many other people from the Nine Powers are capable of testifying to what happened,” When the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master said those words, he looked to the other powers of the Nine Powers.

The reason for that was because Dongfang Zexuan had brought other powers from the Nine Powers with him to root for him as he challenged the World Spiritist Alliance.

Unfortunately, after Dongfang Zexuan was defeated, those people who came to support him all fled.

At that moment, those powers who had gone to support him back then were all lowering their heads. They did not know whether to laugh or cry.

As for Dongfang Zexuan, his complexion turned blue. His earlier smile was completely gone.

“There’s actually such a thing? Logically, Dongfang Zexuan’s world spirit techniques should be exceptionally powerful among the younger generation. Yet he was still defeated by a member of the World Spiritist Alliance’s younger generation?”

“The World Spiritist Alliance is truly worthy of its title as being the place where the Holy Land of Martialism’s strongest world spiritists gather,” Seeing that the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master had verified Chu Feng’s claim, and the Dongfang Imperial Clan was not refuting it, the crowd all began to believe that Dongfang Zexuan had tried to provoke the World Spiritist Alliance only to suffer a crushing defeat.

“So what if such a thing happened? That was then and this is now. Back then, I was only an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. And now, I am already a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“World Spiritist Alliance, you all can have that disciple who defeated me that day come and fight me again. I refuse to believe that he can defeat me a second time,” Dongfang Zexuan shouted.

Hearing those words, the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master started to frown. The person who had defeated Dongfang Zexuan before was Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng was no longer in this world. As such, who could the World Spiritist Alliance possibly send out to compete with Dongfang Zexuan?

Truth be told, not to mention others, even the World Spiritist Immortal’s personal disciple, Mu Juechen, would likely lose should he face Dongfang Zexuan.

“You can challenge the World Spiritist Alliance anytime. However, right now, you must accept my challenge first.”

Chu Feng spoke. As a disciple of the World Spiritist Alliance, he would naturally help the World Spiritist Alliance out of trouble.

Merely, at this moment, none of the people from the World

Spiritist Alliance, including even that World Spiritist Immortal, knew who Chu Feng was.

Thus, when they saw how Chu Feng was helping them, they all nodded in their hearts. Their impression of Chu Feng became a lot more favorable.

“Come! I’ve accepted your challenge; do you dare to accept my challenge? Without the use of martial power, we shall compete with world spirit techniques. I ask you again, do you dare to accept my challenge?”

Dongfang Zexuan was completely enraged by Chu Feng, and lost his patience. However, he firmly insisted on competing using only world spirit techniques. After all, he truly did not have any certainty in being able to defeat Chu Feng with martial power.

“Are you certain you wish to compete with me using world spirit techniques?” Chu Feng asked.

“I only fear that you will not dare,” Dongfang Zexuan said.

“Aouuu~~~”

Once Dongfang Zexuan’s words left his mouth, a roar sounded from Chu Feng’s direction. As his long hair fluttered, boundless world spirit power surged forth from Chu Feng’s body.

At the moment when his world spirit power appeared, it turned into countless ferocious beasts. Even though all of the ferocious beasts were golden in appearance, they all possessed different physical appearances.

There were giant elephants, fierce tigers, pythons and dragons.

There were those that possessed three heads and six limbs, those with enormous eyes and those with boundless power.

These were no ordinary beasts. Rather, they appeared more like Heaven’s Divine Beasts and Hell’s Demon Beasts.

“Such ferocious might, are they really formed with world spirit

techniques?”

Once Chu Feng unleashed his world spirit technique, the crowd became completely shocked.

Not to mention the outsiders who didn't know much about world spirit techniques, even the experts from the World Spiritist Alliance, the Compass Immortal, the Avaricious Immortal, the World Spiritist Immortal and the White-browed Immortal began to reveal expressions of shock.

The reason for that was because the world spirit technique that Chu Feng had unleashed was most definitely not something as simple as changing the form of his world spirit power. Rather, it was a spirit formation, a world spirit technique's slaughtering formation.

Furthermore, the one he had used was exceptionally powerful!!!

“This guy, how can this be?!”

At this moment, when even the bystanders were shocked, Dongfang Zexuan would naturally also be shocked.

He had thought himself to possess outstanding attainments in world spirit techniques, and had never thought that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques would be this powerful. He was feeling an enormous threat from Chu Feng's spirit formation.

At this moment, he wanted to escape. However, Chu Feng's spirit formation had completely covered the entire stage. There was already nowhere for him to escape to. The only way for him to get away from Chu Feng's spirit formation was by going backwards. However, if he were to do that, he would end up leaving the stage, the equivalent of defeat.

At this moment, he was regretting. He truly regretted challenging Chu Feng to a match of world spirit techniques.

Chu Feng's enormously powerful world spirit technique was simply not something that he could contend against. If he had

known this was going to happen, he would've chosen to fight against Chu Feng with martial power.

Unfortunately, it was already too late.

“Damn it.”

With no other way out, Dongfang Zexuan could only go all out and stake everything to defend. Dongfang Zexuan's hands began to change rapidly. World spirit formations began to form in rapid succession. In an instant, from inside to outside, from small to large, a total of eighteen defensive barriers surrounded him like a golden fort that protected him from all around.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng's spirit formation arrived. Like a golden tide that could wreck everything in its path, Chu Feng's spirit formation swept toward Dongfang Zexuan's defensive barriers with earth-shattering might. In a blink of an eye, they completely engulfed Dongfang Zexuan's defensive barriers.

“Boom~~~”

At this moment, other than the sound of giant beasts trampling through, the sound of something being shattered could be heard.

It was only when the tide of giant beasts trampled past the stage and galloped toward the horizon with magnificent might that the crowd saw Dongfang Zexuan's silhouette again.

At this moment, Dongfang Zexuan was still on the stage. However, he was no longer standing. Instead, he had fallen on the stage.

His body was crushed flat. If it wasn't for the fact that he possessed a powerful cultivation, having one's body crushed flat, he would've already been utterly dead.

However, even though Dongfang Zexuan possessed a very powerful cultivation, he was still only barely hanging on by a breath. His injuries were extremely serious.

“Feng Xing, this is merely a sparring match. Is there a need for you to use such a ruthless attack?” At this moment, the people from the Dongfang Imperial Clan were enraged. The reason for that was because Dongfang Zexuan was really very seriously injured. In fact, even his cultivation might suffer damage from this.

“I am already being lenient. Else, instead of being injured right now, he would be dead.”

“Let alone, ‘the victor is the king and the loser is the thief.’ That is something that your Third Prince himself said. If you cannot afford to lose, then you shouldn’t fight to begin with,” Chu Feng said.

“I believe what little friend Feng Xing said to be reasonable,” said the World Spiritist Immortal.

“I also think it to be reasonable,” The White-browed Immortal also nodded his head in agreement.

“It is indeed reasonable,” Even the Compass Immortal, the person with the most celebrated status, spoke for Chu Feng.

When even the Three Immortals spoke for him, the number of people who began to speak out for Chu Feng grew even more numerous.

In an instant, the name ‘Feng Xing’ began to resonate through the crowd.

As matters stood, the crowd was all able to realize that this young man called Feng Xing was someone with an extraordinary origin.

Facing such a young man, everyone’s first reaction would naturally be to obtain a good relationship with him in order to pave a road for the future.

When everyone was speaking out for Chu Feng, even though the Dongfang Imperial Clan was very unreconciled, they had no choice but to shut their mouths and watch as Chu Feng walked down

from the stage with a smile on his face without being able to do anything to him.

They had no choice but to accept being defeated.

Chapter 1722 – Insist On Fighting

“This match is Feng Xing’s victory. Dongfang Zexuan is eliminated.”

“Next match, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Fifth Prince, Ximen Feixue, against the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Eldest Prince, Dongfang Changkong,” The Mooncloud City’s City Master announced.

Once those words were announced, Dongfang Changkong arrived onto the stage like a phantom. He appeared to be very delighted.

Compared to Nangong Long, Dongfang Changkong, although also a rank five Half Martial Emperor, appeared to be a lot more free and at ease. Without hesitation, he immediately arrived onto the stage. Based on his behavior, it was clear that he was already prepared to be defeated.

However, Ximen Feixue did not directly go onto the stage. Instead, he slowly stood up from his seat and said to the Mooncloud City’s City Master, “Lord City Master, to continue the competition like this would be too boring. How about this? Have the remaining people of the Dongfang and Beitang Imperial Clan come at me together.”

“What? He wants to challenge all of us?!” The two clans’ younger generation were all shocked to hear those words.

Even though they all knew that Ximen Feixue was very strong, it remained that what he had said was truly too arrogant. He simply did not place them in his eyes at all.

“Ximen Feixue, you mean to say that you want to challenge all of the remaining people?” The Mooncloud City’s City Master asked.

“I hope that Lord City Master will agree to it so that we can conclude this boring battle quickly. After all, there is only a single person who will be known to be the strongest,” Ximen Feixue said.

“The rules have been set up by the Four Imperial Clans. Currently, as there is no one left from the Nangong Imperial Clan to fight, if the Beitang Imperial Clan and the Dongfang Imperial Clan have no objections to your suggestion, I will naturally have no objections either,” The Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“Since little friend Ximen is this confident, I think we shall grant his wish,” said the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief.

Once he said those words, the remaining younger generation from the Beitang Imperial Clan all leapt onto the stage. They appeared to be very aggressive.

“I have no objection to this either,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief also agreed to it.

Like what happened with the Beitang Imperial Clan, once he said those words, the remaining members of the younger generation from the Dongfang Imperial Clan all leapt onto the stage as well.

“Woosh~~~”

After seeing that all of the remaining people had gotten onto the stage, Ximen Feixue finally got up from his seat and leapt onto the stage.

However, he did not stand to a side, but instead landed in the center of the crowd. With a smile on his face, he said, “Finally, this will make it a little bit interesting. Come, attack me together. Use your strongest abilities.”

“As you wish!”

The crowd all began to attack. Those with Incomplete Imperial Armaments took them out. Those that knew Earthen Taboo Martial Skills unleashed them. The several princes and princesses from the Beitang Imperial Clan had also set up a formation together.

The character ‘Imperial’ began to flicker brightly on their foreheads. Their martial power surged forth. Weapons, ferocious

beasts, violent wind and rain storms, the younger generation from the Dongfang and Beitang Imperial Clans had unleashed all of their strongest abilities.

They wanted to take advantage of being able to work together to take Ximen Feixue down.

“Still boring,” However, even though the attacks from the young generation of the Dongfang and Beitang Imperial Clans were very ferocious, Ximen Feixue still laughed with contempt. He extended the fingers on his right hand outward, and a crimson lotus flower appeared on his palm.

That was no ordinary lotus. Instead, it was a lotus formed with martial power. However, that lotus was vivid, lifelike and extremely beautiful.

Suddenly, the lotus split apart into countless crimson lights that shot out in all directions.

Their speed was speechlessly fast. Unless one was a peak expert, it was simply impossible for one to see the crimson lights.

“Puu, puu, puu, puu, puu~~~”

In merely an instant, the lotus flower pieces pierced through the incoming martial skills. Then, like sharp blades, they pierced into the bodies of everyone on the stage other than Ximen Feixue.

“Wuuaaa~~~”

Screams began to be heard repeatedly. Other than Ximen Feixue, everyone else on the stage, regardless of whether they were from the Dongfang Imperial Clan or the Beitang Imperial Clan, regardless of whether they were men or women, were all covered in blood and screaming in pain.

Their bodies were filled with bloody holes after being pierced through by tens of thousands of lotus flower pieces. Even some of their dantians had been damaged to some degree.

In merely an instant, the outcome of the battle was determined. Ximen Feixue had managed to defeat all of the Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan's remaining younger generation all by himself using only a single attack.

“That Ximen Feixue is actually this powerful?”

At this moment, not to mention the others, even the people from the Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan, whose younger generations had been seriously injured by Ximen Feixue, revealed expressions of shock.

Even though they already knew that Ximen Feixue was very strong, they had not expected him to be this strong. Ximen Feixue's strength seemed to be so strong that the word 'demon-level character' was insufficient to describe him.

“For such a child to appear in the Ximen Imperial Clan, the Four Clans will likely be headed by the Ximen Imperial Clan in the future.”

At this moment, this sort of remark began to sound from the crowd nonstop. Everyone felt that the Ximen Imperial Clan would tower over the other three Imperial Clans with the emergence of Ximen Feixue.

“Ximen Feixue truly enjoys a well-deserved reputation. Clan Chief Ximen, truly, congratulations,” The Mooncloud City's City Master cupped his fist as he congratulated the Ximen Clan's Clan Chief.

Even the generally neutral Mooncloud City's City Master spoke words of compliment. This greatly shocked the crowd. Everyone knew that Mooncloud City's City Master had only spoken such words because of Ximen Feixue.

After congratulating the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the Mooncloud City's City Master turned to ask Chu Feng, “Feng Xing, do you plan to continue with your challenge?”

At this moment, all the people present turned their gazes onto Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he pretended to be confused and asked, “Lord City Master, what might be the meaning of those words you said?”

“Normally, you would be able to continue with your challenge. However, only you and Ximen Feixue remain. Are you sure you want to continue with your challenge?” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“Lord City Master, I do not understand what you mean by those words,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...” Mooncloud City’s City Master laughed strangely. Then, he said, “Little friend Feng Xing, do you really not understand, or are you pretending to not understand?”

“Lord City Master, if you have something to say, please go ahead and say it. Why bother hiding your words?” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, I might as well tell you the truth. Little friend Ximen’s strength is evident to everyone present. I know that you are very strong. However, the way I see it, if you are to fight against little friend Ximen, the chances of you winning would be extremely low.”

“As blades and swords have no eyes, it is inevitable that you will be injured. I do not wish for you to be unnecessarily injured. That’s why I’m advising you to give up,” Mooncloud City’s City Master said.

“Lord City Master, I, Feng Xing, have journeyed far and hard to this place all so that I can prove myself. If I were afraid, I would not have come in the first place,” Chu Feng said.

Suddenly, an old peak Half Martial Emperor from the crowd urged Chu Feng to stop. “Little friend Feng Xing, we all know that you are very powerful. We have all seen your strength ourselves. If

the two of you possessed the same level of cultivation, this would definitely be a peerlessly marvelous match.”

“However, it remains that you are a rank four Half Martial Emperor, whereas Ximen Feixue is a rank five Half Martial Emperor. With the gap between your cultivations, exactly what could you use to fight against him? Listen to this old man’s advice. It is time for this sparring competition to come to an end. Little friend, it is best for you to not continue.”

This old man was an elder from the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly. It was the first time that Chu Feng had seen him.

Even though his words had shown that he thought that Chu Feng was inferior to Ximen Feixue, he had actually spoken those words with kind intentions. Thus, Chu Feng did not say anything, and instead smiled a smile of goodwill at him to thank him for his concern.

“Little friend Feng Xing, I think that the Mooncloud City’s City Master is thinking for your sake too. Actually, this would be pretty good too. Ximen Feixue would come out first, whereas you would come out second. Isn’t this good? Why insist on injuring and disgracing yourself?” Following that, an expert from the Mooncloud City also urged Chu Feng to stop.

This person was very different from the old man from the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly. Even though he was also advising for Chu Feng to stop, it was not from the bottom of his heart. His tone was very similar to the Mooncloud City City Master’s. He was not thinking for Chu Feng’s sake. Rather, he was looking down on Chu Feng.

“Without fighting, how do you know that I’ll come out second?”

“Without fighting, how do you know that I’ll be injured?” Chu Feng asked with a cold tone.

“This...” This man had not expected Chu Feng to say such a

thing. His complexion turned pale as he became uncertain of how to answer Chu Feng's questions.

"Little friend Feng Xing, if you insist on fighting, I will definitely not stop you. However, I must still leave you a final word of advice; do not overestimate your capabilities," Mooncloud City's City Master said.

After Mooncloud City's City Master said those words, many of the other people from Mooncloud City started to mock Chu Feng. Mainly, they were saying things like Chu Feng was overestimating his abilities, that he was asking for trouble, and other similar phrases.

It was clear that they were saying these things to encourage their City Master and help him strike at Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng was unable to recognize their City Master's goodwill, and repeatedly expressed an opposing opinion to that of their City Master.

In this sort of situation, other than the people from Mooncloud City, there were actually other people who began to insult Chu Feng. All of these people who insulted Chu Feng were people who felt that Chu Feng would not be a match for Ximen Feixue.

In fact, while there were not many people who were actually insulting Chu Feng, the great majority of the crowd all felt that Chu Feng would not be a match for Ximen Feixue, that Chu Feng was inferior to Ximen Feixue. The reason why they did not voice their opinion was merely because they did not wish to offend Chu Feng.

Ximen Feixue was completely silent as all this unfolded. Even though he wanted to personally teach Chu Feng a lesson, he was very willing to watch Chu Feng get humiliated.

Faced with the words of insult and mockery from the crowd, Chu Feng not only ignored them, he also smiled indifferently. Then his body shifted, and he arrived on the stage, standing across from

Ximen Feixue.

He took a look around. Then, he said, “Apologies, everyone. I’m afraid that I will disappoint you all. I insist on fighting this match.”

Chapter 1723 – The Might Of A Single Fist

Following Chu Feng's utterance, 'I insist on fighting this match,' the sky started to change in color.

Thunder and lightning suddenly appeared. Violent wind began to blow. In an instant, everyone in this vast space felt a chilly sensation.

This chilliness was not caused by the wind. Instead, this chilliness originated from within their bodies, within their hearts. They felt this chilliness after hearing what Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng's single phrase had shocked and intimidated all of them. This was not something that ordinary people could accomplish.

"Lord City Master, since this Feng Xing is unable to differentiate good from bad, I request that you allow him to challenge Ximen Feixue so that he can learn about the vastness of the heavens and the immensity of the earth," Someone petitioned to Mooncloud City's City Master. He was itching to watch Chu Feng suffer at the hands of Ximen Feixue.

"Little friend Ximen, blades and swords have no eyes, fists and feet cannot see, what's most important in a sparring match is the outcome. With how this Feng Xing refused to place you in his eyes, you should naturally give him some lessons."

There were even people that directly spoke to Ximen Feixue to request that he beat Chu Feng up.

"Feng Xing, you are very courageous. Since this is the case, go ahead and attack. I'll let you attack me ten times," Ximen Feixue said with contempt.

"Oh," Hearing these words of insult from Ximen Feixue, Chu Feng snorted disdainfully. Then, his gaze shrunk. As his clothes fluttered, a surge of boundless power exploded out from within his

body.

“That Feng Xing, he’s... actually!!!”

At this moment, everyone present was filled with incomparable shock. Even Ximen Feixue’s eyes were filled with shock, and he began to slightly frown.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank four Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become a rank five Half Martial Emperor.

After unleashing his Thunder Armor, Chu Feng had also unleashed his Thunder Wings. Like before, even though he used his Inherited Bloodline’s power to increase his cultivation, Chu Feng had not revealed his Thunder Wings.

To others, Chu Feng’s cultivation had increased, but his outward appearance remained completely unchanged.

Thus, at this moment, all of them felt that Chu Feng had concealed his cultivation to begin with. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to increase his cultivation this effortlessly.

At this moment, the expressions of many of the people that had insulted Chu Feng began to change. Unease started to appear in their hearts.

They suddenly realized that they had underestimated this young man called Feng Xing.

As for those who had thought highly of Chu Feng, they all revealed smiles of anticipation on their faces.

Chu Feng’s strength was very strong. The reason why they felt that Chu Feng would be inferior to Ximen Feixue earlier was all because Chu Feng’s cultivation was inferior to Ximen Feixue’s.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation was the same as Ximen Feixue’s. To them, they felt that this would likely be an evenly matched battle, that the victor of this battle would be very

hard to determine.

“Yoh, no wonder you’re this confident. So you’ve actually hidden your cultivation. Since that’s the case, I’ll change my decision. I won’t let you attack me ten times,” Ximen Feixue said.

Once those words were said, many hissing sounds could be heard from the crowd. Those were all people who felt that Ximen Feixue was lacking in confidence, that he had taken back his previous declarations because he was afraid.

Right at the moment when the majority of the crowd was feeling this way, Ximen Feixue opened his mouth again and said, “I’ll let you attack me a hundred times.”

“What? A hundred times? Has he gone mad?” Once those words were said, none of the people in the crowd were able to remain calm and collected.

Chu Feng’s cultivation had already increased. He was on equal footing as Ximen Feixue, and capable of contending against him. Yet, even with that being the case, Ximen Feixue actually declared that he would allow Chu Feng to attack him a hundred times?

How arrogant was he? How courageous was he?

Could it be that Ximen Feixue was truly so powerful that no one with the same level of cultivation as him would be able to match him?

To the bystanders, Ximen Feixue might appear to be arrogant. However, to Chu Feng, Ximen Feixue was looking down on him.

If it were anybody else, they would naturally feel very uncomfortable. However, Chu Feng instead laughed lightly, and was not affected at all.

“Are you ready?” Chu Feng asked.

“Come,” Ximen Feixue hooked his finger at Chu Feng. Even though that was a simple movement, it was filled with

provocation.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. The stage started to tremble violently, and a gale swept through the crowd.

Not only was Chu Feng very ferocious, his speed was also extremely fast. This speed was many times faster than lightning.

“Pa, pa, pa, pa, pa~~~”

Before he even approached Ximen Feixue, Chu Feng had already started to unleash successive attacks. His fists began to intertwine with one another. Within each fist and each palm was a loud whiz that sounded like a clap of thunder.

Chu Feng’s attacks contained intimidation, strength and speed. Chu Feng’s strength had most definitely surpassed others of the younger generation with the same cultivation.

However, even when facing such ferocious attacks, Ximen Feixue remained unconcerned.

Even though Chu Feng’s fists were raining onto him like a torrential storm, Ximen Feixue was like a willow leaf in a windstorm. His body swayed left and right without being injured by the storm at all.

“Ten, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty...”

At the same time as he was dodging Chu Feng’s attacks, Ximen Feixue actually began to speak. He announced the number of attacks Chu Feng had unleashed toward him.

“The gap between the two of them is actually this enormous?”

The crowd were all shocked. Even the seniors present were filled with shock. At this moment, of the vast amount of people present, no more than three were able to remain calm.

Chu Feng’s attacks were sufficiently powerful. He had managed to obtain the acknowledgement of the majority of the crowd.

However, even with this sort of attack, Chu Feng was unable to injure Ximen Feixue in the slightest. Furthermore, Ximen Feixue was allowing Chu Feng to attack him without attacking back.

What did this signify? This signified one thing: that this young man by the name of Feng Xing, regardless of how powerful he might be, he was still much more inferior to Ximen Feixue.

Seeing this scene, people like the Mooncloud City's City Master began to reveal smiles on their faces. The way they saw it, Chu Feng was destined to meet a disaster. As for that, it was precisely what they wanted to see.

“Ninety, one hundred!!!”

Right at this moment, Ximen Feixue spoke the two words ‘one hundred.’ Immediately after that, his eyes shone with coldness. He first took a step back, then clenched his palm into a fist and smashed said fist toward Chu Feng's dantian.

This fist strike of his was glistening with coldness. His fist was so fast and powerful that it was like a golden meteor that was cutting through the sky and about to split space apart.

At this moment, the World Spiritist Immortal, the World Spiritist Alliance's Alliance Master and many others uttered, “Oh no! He's planning to cripple little friend Feng Xing's cultivation,” in their hearts. They had all managed to see through Ximen Feixue's intentions.

“Good, ruthless enough!”

As for others like the Mooncloud City's City Master, they were overjoyed. They were eager for Chu Feng to be embarrassed. If Ximen Feixue were capable of crippling Chu Feng's cultivation, they would naturally be even more joyous.

At this moment, in the eyes of many spectators, the outcome of the battle had already been determined. Chu Feng was going to suffer an imminent catastrophe.

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly clenched his left palm into a fist. His fist also started to surge with golden light. Like a golden meteor hammer, he smashed his fist toward Ximen Feixue's incoming fist.

Everything happened too suddenly. Before the crowd could react, Chu Feng's golden fist had already collided with Ximen Feixue's golden fist.

“Boom~~~~~”

At this instant, golden light swept through the sky. Chu Feng remained standing firm and motionless like Mount Tai. However, Ximen Feixue's legs started to waver, and he began to step back. It was only after he took ten steps backwards that he managed to steady his body.

He had been defeated. Although the outcome of this match had yet to be determined, he had been defeated in this collision of fists.

Astonishing. Silent astonishment. Not to mention the spectators, even Ximen Feixue was stunned.

As Ximen Feixue looked to his fractured, bloody fist that was sending signals of pain to him, Ximen Feixue had the appearance of a startled chicken.

He stood there in a stunned manner, and felt everything to be inconceivable. In fact, he did not even dare to believe that the things before his eyes were true.

He had been defeated? He, Ximen Feixue, had actually been defeated?

Chapter 1724 – Heavenly Immortal Sword

“How is it? Do you still plan to continue to humour me?” At this moment when everyone was stunned, Chu Feng chuckled lightly.

His light chuckle was like a sudden clap of thunder that exploded in the hearts of the crowd and woke up all of the people that were stunned.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. That Feng Xing actually possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation!!!” Suddenly, someone cried out in alarm and revealed an expression of incomparable shock. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng simply did not appear to be the gaze of someone looking at a human.

“Heavens! He’s actually that powerful?!”

Following that, the crowd all began to gasp in shock. They all discovered that Chu Feng was able to win against Ximen Feixue not because he had used any sort of special technique. Rather, it was because he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Other than the Elf Kingdom’s princess, there did not seem to be anyone in the entire Holy Land of Martialism who also possessed a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Yet, such another individual had actually appeared. This Feng Xing could be said to be the first person, the only person, from the human race that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

As such, how could the crowd not be shocked? How could they not become astonished? How could they possibly remain calm?

“A genius from the heavens!”

“An exceptional demon-level character!”

“Could it be that that child is going to become the Overlord of the human race?”

At this moment, many people began to exclaim in admiration repeatedly. Whether they were old or young, they were all subdued by Chu Feng’s battle power.

“So what if you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?”

The sudden reversal of the situation was something that Ximen Feixue would naturally not find acceptable. He shouted loudly, and then a golden-bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character appeared on his forehead.

When the Imperial Character appeared, a golden dragon actually appeared alongside it. Like a phantom, it lingered faintly behind Ximen Feixue.

“What a powerful Imperial Bloodline,” Although others might be confused by this scene, the people from the Dongfang, Beitang and Nangong Imperial Clan were all incomparably shocked.

Being also people of Imperial Clans, people that possessed Imperial Bloodlines, they were able to clearly sense how powerful Ximen Feixue’s Imperial Bloodline was.

“Boom~~~”

Sure enough, a loud explosion suddenly sounded from Ximen Feixue’s body. Immediately afterward, his aura began to rise dramatically. From rank five Half Martial Emperor, he became a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

His cultivation had increased by an entire level.

“Feng Xing, watch my attack!”

After his cultivation increased, Ximen Feixue began to attack again. Fist and palm strikes began to bombard Chu Feng. His attacks were very similar to Chu Feng’s attacks earlier. However,

the might behind his attacks was completely different.

His palm strikes were like dragon claws that could rip apart heaven and earth. His fist strikes were like meteorites capable of shattering rivers and mountains.

“This...”

At this moment, the crowd was startled once again. Chu Feng had just revealed his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Originally, he would have been able to defeat Ximen Feixue.

However, Ximen Feixue had increased his cultivation by a single level.

The two men...

One was a rank five Half Martial Emperor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

The other was a rank six Half Martial Emperor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation

Logically, the two of them should be equally matched. However, everything that had happened earlier indicated that Ximen Feixue was extremely strong. Would Chu Feng really be able to withstand him?

“Papapa~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was worried, Chu Feng did not dodge, nor did he avoid Ximen Feixue’s incoming attacks. Instead, he unleashed his own attacks.

His legs were like dragon tails as they swept toward the horizon and lashed at the space around him.

Ximen Feixue had attacked him with fist and palm strikes, whereas Chu Feng had responded with his legs. The power and might of his leg attacks were not at all inferior to Ximen Feixue’s

fist and palm attacks. In fact, they were even superior to them.

“Clank, clank, clank~~~”

The two men’s bodies were clearly made of blood and flesh. Yet, when their bodies collided with one another, they emitted sounds like the collision of steel. With how sturdy their bodies were, to describe them as having bones of steel would likely be inadequate.

Admiration. At this moment, the crowd was exclaiming in admiration. The strength of the two men had surpassed that of ordinary members of their generation. They had reached a level where even the elders had to exclaim in admiration.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Suddenly, the sound of steel collisions became loud explosions. As the explosions were heard, many energy ripples were created.

Chu Feng’s attacks had become more and more ferocious. Before these attacks, Ximen Feixue could only retreat repeatedly and reveal an ugly expression.

At this moment, the shocked expressions in the eyes of the crowd grew a bit stronger. There were many people who were so shocked that their mouths were wide open.

From a state of being equally matched, Chu Feng had obtained the upper hand and begun to suppress Ximen Feixue.

“Stop reserving your strength. Go ahead and take out your sword. Otherwise, you will not be a match for me,” While suppressing Ximen Feixue, Chu Feng coldly said those words.

“You are not qualified for me to take out my sword,” Ximen Feixue snorted coldly. Then, killing intent surged in his eyes. His palms and legs began to change together. He was planning to unleash a martial skill.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng had a grim smile on his face.

Suddenly, he explosively shot forth a palm. As a ray of light flashed past, Chu Feng's palm landed on Ximen Feixue's chest with lightning speed.

“Bang~~~”

After being struck by Chu Feng's palm, Ximen Feixue was knocked flying. When he landed on the ground, he started to roll back repeatedly, and nearly rolled off the stage.

When he got back up, his complexion turned deathly pale. He grabbed tightly onto his chest and started to frown deeply while gnashing his teeth.

He was enduring, enduring the injury that he had just sustained. However, in the end, he was still unable to stop the surging blood from rushing out of his body. Thus, with the opening of his mouth, a mouthful of blood was sprayed out.

“This...”

At this moment, the expressions of the crowd changed once again. They began to ponder. After two successive encounters, Feng Xing had come out on the upper hand in both encounters. Could it be that this young man called Feng Xing was really stronger than Ximen Feixue?

“Feng Xing, you are truly pushing it too far.”

Ximen Feixue wiped away the bloodstain on the corner of his mouth. At this moment, anger completely covered his face.

To someone like him, a person who believed himself to be an exceptional genius, what was most important was his ego.

At this moment, his most important ego was being trampled upon. To Ximen Feixue, this was something that he could not tolerate.

“Clink~~~”

Finally, a silvery light flashed by Ximen Feixue's hand. Then, a

nine-foot long-and half-inch-wide sword appeared in his hand.

The sword was completely silver in color. There was no engraving on the sword. At a glance, it appeared to be very ordinary. However, it was not an ordinary sword at all.

Once that sword appeared, not only did Ximen Feixue's aura began to explosively increase, even the martial power of the surrounding heaven and earth started to surge violently. In fact, even space itself started to become distorted.

All of this originated from that sword.

Incomplete Imperial Armament. It was a magnificent Incomplete Imperial Armament. With merely a single glance, one could tell that this was an Incomplete Imperial Armament with an even higher quality than Chu Feng's Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword.

"I've nearly forgotten. Ximen Feixue is most proficient with swords."

"It would seem that he's planning to get serious."

"Heavenly Immortal Sword, I've heard of its famous name for a long time now. Today, I will finally be able to experience its might."

The crowd began to discuss the matter spiritedly. They were all very pleasantly surprised. They had all heard rumors of how exceptional Ximen Feixue's Heavenly Immortal Sword was. Thus, they were all very happy to be able to experience it today.

"The Heavenly Immortal Sword, its reputation is well-deserved!!!" At the moment when everyone was happy to be able to see the Heavenly Immortal Sword, a shout suddenly sounded from within the crowd.

Once that voice was heard, everyone turned their gaze toward the source of the voice. At this moment, at a corner of the crowd that no one had focused on, a old man wearing a conical bamboo

hat and ordinary clothes stepped forward.

That old man had concealed his cultivation. Thus, it was impossible for the crowd to see through his cultivation. He appeared to be someone very ordinary when hidden in the crowd.

However, when the crowd cast their gazes onto him, the more they looked at him, the more their hearts began to waver. They began to feel that this old man was definitely not someone ordinary. Likely, he should be a hidden expert. At the very least, he was a Martial Emperor. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to hide his strength this well.

At this moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze toward the source of the voice too. Upon seeing the old man, Chu Feng started to smirk in his heart. While this man was praising Ximen Feixue, Chu Feng knew that this man was his backer.

As for this man, he was none other than the founder of the Southern Cyanwood Forest, Baili Xuankong.

Chapter 1725 – From The Outer World

“Never would I have expected that you really possess the Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Baili Xuankong said.

“It seems that you also recognize this Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Ximen Feixue said.

“That’s true, of course,” Baili Xuankong chuckled.

Then, he said, “According to legend, fifty-six thousand six hundred and twenty-three years ago, in the south-eastern region of the Holy Land of Martialism was a Mount Maotian. Inside that Mount Maotian was a hidden expert.”¹

“Although that man possessed an ordinary level of cultivation, he was a grandmaster-level world spiritist. He was merely a tiny bit away from becoming a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“He entered closed-door training in Mount Maotian all for the sake of being able to reach a breakthrough and become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist so that he could take revenge.”

“One day, an enormous boulder fell from the heavens and landed on Mount Maotian.”

“That boulder was no small matter. Its crash caused a sea of flames that spread out in all directions.”

“Everything in Mount Maotian, regardless of whether it was grass or animals, was all burned down completely by the flames. The mountain was burned down into a ravine. The surging flames and thick smoke reached the skies.”

“This woke up the hidden expert who was in closed-door training. Although he had managed to avoid the calamity, he was unable to extinguish the fire. It was only after the fire burned for a total of a hundred and thirty-three days that it began to gradually die out.”

“After the fire died out, that hidden expert began to search for the cause of the fire. It was only then that he discovered the enormous boulder in the ravine that had become the mountain. Merely, the enormous boulder was no longer a boulder. Instead, it had turned into a silver stele.”

“That stele seemed to be made out of silver. However, that hidden expert managed to tell with a single glance that the stele was no ordinary item. Instead, it was a treasure.”

“Not only was the stele made out of an extremely miraculous material, there was also a mysterious technique for martial cultivation and a martial skill sword technique recorded on the stele. Moreover, both of them were extremely profound.”

“They were so profound that the mysterious expert, although he had wholeheartedly focused on mastering world spirit techniques, was tempted by the mysterious technique and sword technique the instant he saw them.”

“Ever since that day, he no longer bothered to meticulously study world spirit techniques, and instead began to meticulously study the mysterious technique and sword technique.”

“After being in closed-door training for a long time, he finally managed to successfully reach a breakthrough. Even though he did not manage to become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he became a Martial Emperor.”

“Using the might of a Martial Emperor and the mysterious technique and sword technique recorded on the stele, he beheaded his great enemy and obtained revenge.”

“That battle instantly made him famous. However, he was not satisfied with only that. The reason for that was because although he had discovered that the mysterious technique was very marvelous and the sword technique was very strong, he lacked a sword that could unleash the full potential of his techniques.”

“Thus, right after becoming famous, he disappeared once again. No one knew where he had gone to.”

“It was only after five thousand and five hundred years had passed, when the people of the world had either already forgotten or were about to forget him, that he reappeared.”

“At that time, he had become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, his cultivation had also become even more powerful.”

“However, the most powerful aspect of him was the sword in his hand, that Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

“It turned out that he had been in closed-door training for that many years to meticulously study weaponry refinement techniques so that he could turn that stele into an Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

“Furthermore, he succeeded. He ended up naming the sword that he had refined the Heavenly Immortal Sword. Relying on the Heavenly Immortal Sword and the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique, he moved about unhindered through the Holy Land of Martialism. There was rarely anybody capable of contending against him. Furthermore, he focused on only killing evildoers, and caused countless evildoers to feel fear upon mention of him.”

“Because of that, he came to be known as the Heavenly Immortal Swordsman!!!”

“Later on, when the Heavenly Immortal Swordsman reached the end of his life, he carved the sword technique from the stele, the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique, onto the Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

“According to the rumors, as long as one obtains the Heavenly Immortal Sword, one will be able to obtain the teachings of the Heavenly Immortal Swordsman, the teachings of that outer world’s stele. It was precisely that which brought about the fame

of the Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Baili Xuankong explained in a very serious manner.

“Never would I have thought that the Heavenly Immortal Sword actually had such an origin. Is that really true?” Hearing those words, many of the people present were shocked. Even though they had heard about the fame of the Heavenly Immortal Sword, they had only known of the might of the Heavenly Immortal Sword itself, and not this story.

“While I do not know about the authenticity of your story, this Heavenly Immortal Sword indeed contains a sword technique called the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique,” Ximen Feixue said as he moved the sword.

“It’s actually true! No wonder Ximen Feixue’s sword techniques are this outstanding. So it’s actually also related to the Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

Hearing those words, all of the people in the crowd turned their gazes onto the Heavenly Immortal Sword. Their eyes were wide open, and many among them even began to use special techniques to inspect the Heavenly Immortal Sword. They had the appearances of deeply wanting to see through the Heavenly Immortal Sword.

The reason why they reacted in such a manner was because they wanted to see the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique carved onto the Heavenly Immortal Sword by the Heavenly Immortal Swordsman.

Unfortunately, no matter what sort of method they used, they were unable to see a single character, much less the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique.

Suddenly, the Compass Immortal who had not spoken in a very long time spoke with a beaming smile. “Everyone, don’t bother wasting your efforts,”

Hearing those words, the crowd all turned their gazes onto the Compass Immortal. They knew that the Compass Immortal, this grand character, was definitely going to say something.

Sure enough, the Compass Immortal spoke again. Slowly, he said, “The story narrated by that brother is not fabricated. Instead, it’s the truth. Merely, the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique is something that only the master of the Heavenly Immortal Sword can see. Everyone, it’s best to not waste your efforts. Else, even if you are to look so hard that you blind your eyes, you will still not be able to see anything.”

“Am I correct, little friend Ximen?” After saying those words, the Compass Immortal turned to Ximen Feixue.

“What Immortal said is the truth. I am the only one who can see the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique,” When Ximen Feixue spoke, he deliberately looked to the Heavenly Immortal Sword. He had an extremely proud expression on his face as he did that.

“Clamor~~~”

At this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar.

They all felt that being able to obtain the Heavenly Immortal Sword was luck. However, to be able to subdue the Heavenly Immortal Sword was strength.

Ximen Feixue had conquered the sword. Although he had luck, he also possessed strength.

“For little friend Ximen to be able to subdue the Heavenly Immortal Sword, your talent is outstanding. You are a rare genius.”

“However, weapons are still weapons. No matter how powerful they are, they’re only accessories, they’re just external powers. For you to use that sword, it seems that it is not very fair to little friend Feng Xing,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Heh... it is my ability that I possessed the Heavenly Immortal

Sword. Are you suggesting that I shouldn't use what I have?" Ximen Feixue sneered.

"That's true, weapons have always been the greatest assistance to martial cultivators. The Nangong Imperial Clan's Nangong Longjian was also only able to move about unhindered through the Holy Land of Martialism and become an outstanding expert of this era because of an Imperial Armament."

"To be able to obtain a weapon is also the symbol of a martial cultivator's strength. For what reason are you suggesting that little friend Ximen should not use the Heavenly Immortal Sword? Are you even qualified to demand that?" Mooncloud City's City Master spoke mockingly. His words were filled with malice.

Once those words were said, the crowd burst into an uproar again. Many people began to nod. They expressed their approval of the Mooncloud City City Master's point of view.

"Everyone, please do not misunderstand me. I am not saying that little friend Ximen should not use the Heavenly Immortal Sword."

"Merely, I am thinking about how little friend Ximen and little friend Feng Xing are both outstanding members of the younger generations, blessed by the heavens. Originally, the two of them would be able to bestow upon us a marvelous confrontation between two people from the younger generation."

"If the balance between them is to be smashed apart by a single Heavenly Immortal Sword, it would truly be too unfortunate."

"Thus, I wish to lend little friend Feng Xing an Incomplete Imperial Armament to fight little friend Ximen with," Baili Xuankong said with a smile.

"What? Lend an Incomplete Imperial Armament?" Hearing those words, many of the people present were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. The gazes with which they looked to Baili Xuankong became even more

complicated.

Incomplete Imperial Armaments, oh how precious they were! This man was actually planning to lend an Incomplete Imperial Armament to Feng Xing, how extravagant was he?!

“Mooncloud City’s City Master, what I plan to do is not a violation of the rules, is it?” Baili Xuankong asked Mooncloud City’s City Master with a beaming smile.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Maotian has no meaning as far as I can find... Abundant Field? Seems like it's the
japanese last name Shigeru... ↩

Chapter 1726 – The Legend Of The Evil God

At this moment, Mooncloud City's City Master started to frown slightly, and the corner of his mouth twitched slightly. Considering his own point of view, he would naturally not wish for there to be people who would help Chu Feng.

However, when considering the general situation, there was no reason that he could use to stop Baili Xuankong. Feeling helpless, he ended up saying, "Do as you wish."

"Little friend Feng Xing, catch this weapon," At this moment, Baili Xuankong did not hesitate. With a wave of his sleeve, a dark red ray of light flew toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed the item. Then, he immediately clasped his fist respectfully at Baili Xuankong. He said, "Thank you senior."

At this moment, what had arrived in Chu Feng's hand was a weapon.

Merely, upon seeing the weapon, the spectators around the stage began to hiss. In fact, there were even people who started to laugh while rocking their bodies back and forth.

Many people had been filled with anticipation when they heard that Baili Xuankong was going to lend Chu Feng an Incomplete Imperial Armament. They all wished to see exactly what sort of Incomplete Imperial Armament this extravagant man would lend Chu Feng.

However, at this moment, the weapon that had arrived in Chu Feng's hand was truly not up to much.

It was a sword, a longsword longer than two meters. However, no matter how much longer one looked at it, the sword did not look like an Incomplete Imperial Armament. The reason for that was because it was a wooden sword, a dark red wooden sword. Not

only did it not have a blade edge, its surface was also very bumpy, and appeared to be extremely shabby. It simply did not even look like a sword.

Such a sword, not to mention being an Incomplete Imperial Armament, it could not even be considered to be a real sword. To say that it was a wooden sword would be speaking highly of it. To call it a wooden stick would instead be more suitable.

“And here I thought what sort of weapon you were going to lend him. After all this, it turned out to be a shabby piece of wood.”

“Can it be that you planned to have Feng Xing use that shabby piece of wood to contend against my Heavenly Immortal Sword?”

“I truly do not know whether you are trying to help him or harm him,” Ximen Feixue laughed mockingly. His laughter grew louder and louder. He was not intentionally laughing. It was just that the wooden sword Baili Xuankong had given Chu Feng was truly too amusing.

“And here I thought that he was an extravagant individual who was willing to lend Feng Xing an Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

“It turns out he’s just trying to make us laugh, hahaha...”

At this time, more and more people from the crowd began to burst into loud laughter. Not only were they laughing at Baili Xuankong, they were also laughing at Chu Feng.

“Haha...”

However, Baili Xuankong was not angered by the laughter from the crowd. Instead, he also started to laugh. Then, he said, “Here I thought that everyone present was a peak level character. Never would I have expected that there would be this many ignorant people. I am truly disappointed.”

“Humph, it’s clearly a lousy piece of wood. Yet you still insist on saying that we’re ignorant. Do you really take us for fools?” The crowd scoffed at Baili Xuankong’s words. They all felt that Baili

Xuankong was babbling nonsense.

After all, many of them possessed exceptional world spirit techniques. As world spiritists, they had carefully observed the wooden sword in Chu Feng's hand, and were unable to discover anything peculiar about it. Thus, they were certain that it was nothing more than a wooden stick.

“Compass Immortal, the way I see it, among the crowd present, you are the one who is most learned.”

“Since you know about the story of the Heavenly Immortal Sword, I presume that you've also heard of the Evil God Sword, right?” Baili Xuankong asked the Compass Immortal.

“Evil God Sword?” The crowd were all startled upon hearing those words. From their shocked expressions, it could be seen that the majority of them had never heard of the Evil God Sword before.

In fact, even the Compass Immortal was startled upon hearing the words ‘Evil God Sword.’ His expression changed. Then, with a smile on his face, he said, “Haha, Evil God Sword, I have indeed heard of it before. However, it is not a story, but rather a legend.”

At this moment, the shocked expressions on the crowd grew even more pronounced. Regardless of their gender or age, the people of the Holy Land of Martialism were all fond of listening to the legends of the Holy Land of Martialism. After all, hearing about legends would be able to increase their knowledge.

“The Evil God Sword is a very ancient legend...”

“According to legend, it was from a very far gone time. It was after the Ancient Era had just passed. At that time, the world was slowly recovering. It happened in the era when the deteriorated martial cultivators were just starting to emerge in power again.”

“In that era, overlords had yet to be born. However, in that era, an existence who could be qualified to be known as an overlord

was born. However, that being was not a human. Rather, he was a monstrous beast.”

“No one knew what sort of monstrous beast he was. The reason for that was because he only showed himself in the guise of a human. What the humans remembered of him is that he had a long crimson sword in his hand. That sword of his was extremely bloodthirsty. To drink blood was its second nature. All of the people who died by that sword would have their blood sucked dry by it.”

“Thus, that sword brought about great fear to countless people. As for that sword, it was the Evil God Sword.”

“It was precisely because of that Evil God Sword that there were people who began to address that monstrous beast as the Evil God. According to legend, at that time, the Evil God was an existence that no one other than the Ancient Era’s Elves were capable of controlling.”

“Some people say that the Evil God possessed overflowing strength. If he had held an Imperial Armament, even the Ancient Era’s Elves would not have been a match for him. He would have become that era’s overlord.”

“However, with the strength that the Evil God possessed back then, it would also not have been a difficult task if he wanted to obtain an Imperial Armament.”

“Thus, another saying came to be. That was, that it was not that the Evil God did not want to switch his weapon. Rather, he was unable to switch his weapon. The reason for that is because he was only able to attain his accomplishments at that time because of that Evil God Sword. If the Evil God didn’t have the Evil God Sword, then he wouldn’t be that powerful.”

“Afterwards, the Evil God suddenly disappeared. Some people said that he had decided to retire from the world of martial cultivators. Some said the Evil God had been killed by the Ancient

Era's Elves. There were even people who said that the Evil God had been unable to control the Evil God Sword, and had ended up being devoured and refined by it."

"With this many different theories, it is very difficult to determine the truth. In fact, no one knows whether or not the legend of the Evil God is even real."

"Because of this, I especially asked some of my friends among the Ancient Era's Elves. They also knew about the legend of the Evil God Sword. However, due to the fact that it happened so long ago, even they were unable to be certain whether or not the legend of the Evil God Sword was real."

"However, one thing is certain. In the era ruled by Emperor Huang, someone discovered a Demon Sword in a very remote location."

"That Demon Sword possessed intelligence. After it appeared, it began to slaughter everything before it. It was extremely bloodthirsty. Regardless of whether they might be men or beasts, anyone who encountered that sword would suffer a calamity."

"Afterward, the human race's Three Palaces joined hands to eliminate that sword. Although the Three Palaces were capable of eliminating the sword, due to the fact that it was very special, and all Three Palaces possessed ulterior motives, they suddenly decided to not eliminate that sword and instead seized it for themselves."

"Because of that, the Three Palaces ended up fighting one another. Seizing that opportunity, the Demon Sword escaped. After that, the Demon Sword was never heard of again."

"Due to the fact that Demon Sword was also red in color, people said that the Demon Sword was the Evil God's Evil God Sword," Compass Immortal explained.

Suddenly, someone from the Heavenly Law Palace said, "Compass Immortal, you can't go around making irresponsible

remarks like that. Our Heavenly Law Palace has never done anything like that.”

“Immortal, I have grown up in the Mortal King Palace, and have never heard of anything about a Demon Sword,” Following that, someone from the Mortal King Palace also spoke out.

“What happened was not something good at all. Even for the Three Palaces, the Demon Sword is a hidden secret.”

“Your statuses are still not high enough. Even if you all are people from the Three Palaces, you will naturally not know about this matter,” The Compass Immortal said with contempt.

“You...” The people who had spoken out against the Compass Immortal earlier were angered by him. However, they could not find any justification to refute him. After all, what the Compass Immortal said was very true. Although they were people from the Three Palaces, their statuses were not high at all. Thus, there were indeed things that they did not know about.

“Brother, you asked me about the Evil God Sword, you couldn’t possibly be planning to tell me that the wooden sword you’re lending little friend Feng Xing is the legendary Evil God Sword, right?” The Compass Immortal asked with a beaming smile.

Chapter 1727 – Conquer This Sword

“Immortal has guessed correctly. That sword is precisely the Evil God Sword,” Baili Xuankong said after nodding.

Although he said those words very proudly, people began to hiss at him. Not to mention the others, even the Compass Immortal started to laugh lightly.

After all, the Compass Immortal had clearly narrated the legend of the Evil God Sword. Even the Ancient Era’s Elves that had existed since the Ancient Era did not know whether the legend was real or not.

Furthermore, even if it was real, even if the Evil God Sword existed in this world, judging from the legend, it would definitely be an extraordinary weapon. Thus, how could it possibly appear here?

Furthermore, the lousy piece of wood in Chu Feng’s hand, no matter how one looked at it, did not appear to be related to the Evil God Sword at all. Not only were the others thinking this, even the Compass Immortal was thinking this.

As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he had actually already observed the wooden sword in Chu Feng’s hand. However, the result was a disappointment. The only difference was that he did not say it like the others.

“If the Evil God Sword really exists, I also wish to experience it with my Heavenly Immortal Sword. Based on the legend of the Evil God Sword that Compass Immortal has narrated, the Evil God Sword is indeed qualified to fight against my Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

“However, if you are to tell me that that lousy piece of wood is the Evil God Sword, you would be taking us for fools, no?”

“There are a lot of expert world spiritists present. In addition to

them, there are also the Four Immortals. How could they not be able to tell whether that lousy piece of wood is a treasure or not?" Ximen Feixue said.

"Haha, the masses are ignorant. Even with a treasure before their eyes, they are unable to see it. It would appear that the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists are not up to much either," Baili Xuankong laughed out loud.

Seeing that Baili Xuankong had insulted them, the Avaricious Immortal spoke with a cold voice. "Humph, although that log is somewhat special, it is simply nothing extraordinary. The way I see it, you are simply deliberately creating trouble. Lord City Master, I humbly request you drive this man out of here."

"Very well, men..." Mooncloud City's City Master had disliked Baili Xuankong to begin with. As the Avaricious Immortal had said it like this, it provided him sufficient justification to take care of Baili Xuankong.

"Whether real or not, we'll know upon trying. Little friend Feng Xing, you know of the method to make a weapon recognize you as its master, no? Why not give it a try?!" Baili Xuankong said loudly.

Even though the crowd all felt that Baili Xuankong had come to cause trouble, they still turned their gazes to Chu Feng. Traces of anticipation appeared in their eyes.

However, this was not the good kind of anticipation. Instead, their anticipation was malicious. They were anticipating Chu Feng's failure so they could have Baili Xuankong beat it.

In this sort of situation, the pressure Chu Feng felt increased many times over. No matter what, Chu Feng was also a genius world spiritist. Furthermore, he possessed the Heaven's Eyes that others did not.

Thus, he had discovered from the very start that there was nothing special about the wooden sword that Baili Xuankong had

handed him. It simply could not be considered to be a weapon.

Originally, Chu Feng had thought that Baili Xuankong had some sort of special intention. However, it would now appear that that was not the case at all.

“Such a lousy piece of wood, even if I were to instill my martial power into it, what could it possibly do? Oh Ancestor, aren’t you deliberately trying to make things difficult for me?”

Chu Feng complained in his heart. However, he still emitted a strand of martial power from his palm and instilled it into that wooden stick.

“Buzz~~~”

Upon his martial power being instilled into that wooden stick, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately shone. Not only did this piece of wood devour Chu Feng’s martial power, it did so extremely quickly. It was like the dried up earth swallowing a drop of water. In an instant, the strand of martial power Chu Feng instilled into it had been completely absorbed without even a trace remaining.

“It’s feasible!”

At this moment, Chu Feng’s heart started to waver. He had realized that this piece of wood was more remarkable than he had anticipated it to be.

Thus, Chu Feng tightly grabbed onto the piece of wood and began to unleash a steady stream of martial power from his dantian to the wooden stick.

Upon doing so, Chu Feng became even more shocked. The martial power he was pouring into the wooden stick could be said to be extremely ferocious. It was like a surging flood that had broken through a dam.

However, that unremarkable-looking wooden sword was like a bottomless abyss. No matter how much of his martial power Chu Feng poured into the wooden sword, it did not utter the slightest

bit of response.

“Heh... sure enough, it’s nothing more than a piece of wood,”
The crowd was focused on Chu Feng’s actions the entire time. They had already realized that Chu Feng had begun to instill martial power into the log, that he was using the method to make a weapon recognize its master. Yet, there was no response whatsoever. Thus, the people began to sneer mockingly.

However, Chu Feng did not give up. He felt that no matter how deep a valley might be, it could still be filled up. He refused to believe that his martial power would not be able to fill up that piece of log.

“Snap, snap~~~”

Finally, the log gave a response. Snapping sounds began to be heard from the wooden sword nonstop.

“Heavens! That log!!!”

At this moment, the expressions of practically everyone present began to change. Their gazes started to flicker, their mouths became wide agape and their eyes were wide open.

The reason for that was because when the snapping sound was heard, the log within Chu Feng’s hand was starting to shatter.

Not only was it shattering, a very beautiful red colored light emitted from the cracks.

Finally, the wooden log shattered completely. The shattered pieces started to fall off the wooden sword. Whenever a piece fell off, a crimson sword’s body could be seen. At the moment when all of the shattered pieces fell off, a long, completed sword appeared in Chu Feng’s hand.

This sword was two meters long and less than an inch wide. At a glance, it looked like a very thin bamboo pole.

However, the sword was completely crimson in color, and

appeared to be made of blood. Furthermore, it possessed incomparably sharp blade edges.

“Rumble~~~”

When the sword appeared, the martial power in the surrounding region began to surge. Ripples began to appear in the space surrounding Chu Feng. Thunder began to be heard from the heavens.

“That sword, it’s actually an Incomplete Imperial Armament!” The crowd were all shocked. Especially the Four Immortals, they were incomparably shocked.

Earlier, the sword had only been a lousy piece of wood. However, it now gave off the Emperor’s might of an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Furthermore, the might it unleashed was extremely powerful, many times more powerful than ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

However, even though such an Incomplete Imperial Armament had been before their eyes for so long, even though they had observed it carefully, they had been unable to discover its uniqueness. As such, how could they not be shocked?

However, at this moment, the person who was most shocked was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was the one who was able to sense how powerful this sword was the most.

After all this time, Chu Feng could be considered to be someone who had a lot of experience in this world. He had used quite a few weapons. However, never had he felt the sensation brought to him by this weapon.

This sensation was extremely special. If it were any other Incomplete Imperial Armament, after Chu Feng instilled so much of his martial power into it, even if that Incomplete Imperial Armament did not enter absolute submission, it should still recognize him as its master. However, he was still not feeling this

sort of sensation from this weapon. Instead, what he felt was... resistance.

Resistance? The more it resisted, the more Chu Feng wanted to subdue it.

“Clink~~~”

Right at this moment, that long crimson sword started to violently tremble. It was trying to escape Chu Feng’s grasp and enter the skies.

“Want to escape? Not that easy!”

Chu Feng tightly grabbed onto the sword. He refused to allow it the opportunity to escape. At the same time, Chu Feng began to instill more martial power into the sword unceasingly.

At this moment, the martial power Chu Feng was instilling was different than the one he had instilled before. If the martial power he had instilled earlier were comparable to that of only commoners, then the martial power he was instilling now would be a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses that had set off for a military campaign.

The army had set off, all for the sake of subduing this sword!!!

Chapter 1728 – Cannot Be Looked Down Upon

“That sword, what power, what an enormous wild nature.”

The struggle between Chu Feng and that sword was clearly seen by the crowd. Even though Incomplete Imperial Armaments were very powerful, with Chu Feng’s strength, it should be a very simple task for him to make an Incomplete Imperial Armament recognize him as its master.

If even someone like Chu Feng was unable to make an Incomplete Imperial Armament recognize him as its master, could there possibly be any other member of the younger generation who would be capable of such a feat?

However, at this time, this sword was refusing to serve Chu Feng. Furthermore, it was struggling very violently. As long as Chu Feng let go of it, it would definitely fly into the sky and escape.

“I refuse to believe that I cannot subdue you!”

Suddenly, with a thought, golden-bright and dazzling world spirit power emerged from Chu Feng’s body. Like a stream of water, his world spirit power flowed down from his body to his foot, and then into the surrounding stage.

After the golden world spirit power landed on the ground, it turned into runes and symbols that scattered about in all directions.

“A formation, that child is actually able to set up such a powerful spirit formation with a thought?!”

At this moment, many of the world spiritists from the World Spiritist Alliance revealed expressions of amazement. Then, they began to praise Chu Feng nonstop.

They were able to tell that Chu Feng was setting up a spirit

formation, a very powerful spirit formation. The spirit formation that he was setting up was something that was impossible for many of the World Spiritist Alliance's elders to accomplish.

However, not only was Chu Feng setting up this sort of spirit formation, he had also managed to finish setting it up in an instant.

“Woosh~~~”

After Chu Feng finished setting up the spirit formation, he grasped the sword with both hands. Then, he turned the sword around and faced its tip towards the floor. Afterwards, he abruptly thrust it downwards. “Bang,” the sword was pierced into the spirit formation.

After the crimson sword entered the spirit formation, it began to react like a ferocious beast that had been trapped. Although it had been captured, it began to struggle even more violently.

At that moment, the sky suddenly turned dusky, and a large amount of black clouds rolled about. Thunder began to boom and lightning began to flash. Violent winds sprung up everywhere. Even the weather had been affected by the sword.

“What a frightening Incomplete Imperial Armament. Could it really be the legendary Evil God Sword?”

Weapons naturally possessed auras. There were those that possessed righteous auras, and those that possessed evil auras. If Ximen Feixue's Heavenly Immortal Sword possessed an overwhelming righteous aura, then the sword in Chu Feng's hand was filled with an evil aura.

Otherwise, the crowd present would not be feeling such an enormous pressure from the sword.

This did not affect the experts from the older generation that much. After all, they possessed high levels of cultivation. Thus, they were not oppressed by the aura from the sword.

However, this was a different story for the younger generation. Their cultivations were too weak. Thus, they were simply incapable of withstanding the sword's evil aura. Many people began to feel fear for the sword from the bottom of their hearts and started to shiver.

Not to mention the disciples of other schools and sects, even the participants of the Four Clans' younger generation's sparring, the elites of the Four Clans' younger generation, were all feeling their blood run cold. From this, it could be seen how strong the sword's evil aura was.

“What a malicious sword. Its evil aura is not only capable of oppression, it's also capable of disturbing one's heart and mind,” At this moment, even White-browed Immortal had an expression of shock on his face. Even for him, it was the first time he had encountered such a sword.

“That is indeed the case. Furthermore, the closer one is to the sword, the more one's heart and mind will be disturbed by it. When the members of the younger generation outside the stage who are far from it were already affected by it, with how close little friend Feng Xing is to it, he will be the main target of that sword's attacks. However, little friend Feng Xing is able to remain unaffected. His willpower is truly worthy of admiration,” The World Spiritist Immortal praised.

He spoke those words with sincerity. If it were him standing in Chu Feng's position, at Chu Feng's age and cultivation, he would definitely not have been able to withstand that sword's evil aura.

“It's not that he's unaffected. Rather, it's that he has stopped the sword from affecting him. His wisdom is truly extraordinary,” The Compass Immortal also praised. Then, he said with a low voice, “I truly never expected for that brat to be this powerful. Tsk tsk... if I knew this would be the case, back then, I should've...”

“Compass Immortal, what did you say?” The Compass

Immortal's low-voiced mutter was heard by the Avaricious Immortal beside him.

“Nothing, haha...” The Compass Immortal laughed.

The Avaricious Immortal was skeptical of him. However, he did not continue to question him, and did not think much of it either. Instead, he turned his narrowed gaze to that crimson sword. A light smile emerged at the corner of his mouth.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly sat down in a cross-legged position. Even though he had released the crimson sword from his hands, his hands were rapidly forming hand seals to manipulate the spirit formation.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, the spirit formation surged with golden light. It shone as bright as the sun, and caused many people to be unable to open their eyes.

In this sort of situation, the evil aura of that crimson sword was instantly suppressed. Not only that, even its trembling started to gradually stop.

“A fusion of martial power and world spirit technique, what a profound formation,” The White-browed Immortal gasped in admiration. Even though Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were exceptional, he did not expect that Chu Feng had been able to grasp this sort of formation.

“It's not as simple as it seems. That is not a fusion of martial power and world spirit technique. Rather, he himself has fused with the world spirit technique.”

“He has not simply used the spirit formation to assist him in subduing that sword. Instead, he has relied on the spirit formation itself to subdue that sword.”

“The spirit formation he is using is extremely hard to set up and control. It would be one thing if he succeeded. However, if he were to fail, he would likely have become crippled,” The Compass Immortal said.

“There’s actually such a spirit formation?” After hearing what the Compass Immortal said, not to mention the others, even the World Spiritist Immortal and the White-browed Immortal were shocked.

As Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they knew very well how difficult this sort of spirit formation was. Such a formation, was it really something that a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist had managed to unleash?

“That sort of spirit formation is not something that a brat like him would be capable of controlling. He is being a greedy snake and trying to devour an elephant. I’m afraid he will be the one devoured instead,” The Avaricious Immortal did not believe that Chu Feng could manage such a spirit formation.

“That’s not for certain,” The Compass Immortal said with a smile.

The Avaricious Immortal was a bit displeased to hear those words. However, as the person who had said those words was the Compass Immortal, in the end, he decided not to refute him, and instead revealed an expression of ‘let’s see who’s right later.’

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, the sword that had grown silent suddenly trembled. With that slight tremble, crimson energy ripples were emitted from the sword.

The energy ripples swept through all directions. Not only did they pound through Chu Feng’s body, they also charged into the entire spirit formation.

“Boom~~~”

Following a loud explosion, Chu Feng was knocked flying, and the spirit formation that he had set up was also shattered in an instant.

When Chu Feng landed on the ground, his entire body was covered in blood. All of his muscles and bones were broken. His aura was so feeble that it was nearly nonexistent. He had the appearance of someone on the verge of dying.

“Failed,” The World Spiritist Immortal’s complexion turned green. This was not the conclusion that he wanted to see.

“Overestimating one’s capabilities. Didn’t I say that that sort of spirit formation is not something that a mere Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist could manage? He is already extremely lucky to not have died from an internal explosion, and only suffered superficial wounds,” The Avaricious Immortal sneered.

He was immensely proud of himself. As he spoke those words, he deliberately took a glance at the Compass Immortal. It was as if he were telling the Compass Immortal ‘look, didn’t I say so?’

“It’s not that Feng Xing has failed. His control of his spirit formation was very good. Merely, that crimson sword is too powerful, and broke through his spirit formation.”

“That sword... is really not one to be looked down upon,” When the Compass Immortal said those words, a rare serious expression emerged in his eyes.

“What sophistry,” The Avaricious Immortal curled his lips and muttered in a low voice.

“Haha...” The Compass Immortal laughed. Then, he said to the Avaricious Immortal, “Are you implying that you possess a higher comprehension of world spirit techniques than me? How about the two of us have a match? Let’s gamble with three Incomplete Imperial Armaments, what say you?”

Hearing those words, the corner of the Avaricious Immortal’s

mouth started to twitch. He did not answer the Compass Immortal.

If his world spirit techniques were a match for the Compass Immortal's, he would not have to endure all the time.

The Ten Immortals possessed different levels of strength. And he... was inferior to the Compass Immortal.

Even if he disagreed with the Compass Immortal, he had no choice but to endure.

Chapter 1729 – Crimson Demon Sword

“Clink~~~”

Right at this moment, that crimson sword suddenly broke free from the surface. It turned into a crimson ray of light and soared into the sky to escape from this place.

“Paa~~~”

Right at this moment, a large hand suddenly appeared in the sky and grabbed onto that crimson sword.

The crowd were all shocked by this scene. The reason for that was because the hand that had grabbed onto the crimson sword was the seriously injured Chu Feng’s.

“Feng Xing, are you tired of living? Quickly, release it, else it will take your life!!!” The World Spiritist Immortal shouted. As matters stood, he was already certain that the crimson sword was no ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. The evil aura it emitted was too powerful. It would not be excessive to say that it was a Demon Sword. For weapons like those, they possessed murderous natures.

Earlier, when Chu Feng was still vigorous and healthy, he had put forth enormous effort, yet had still failed to subdue it. At this moment, Chu Feng was seriously injured. If he were to continue, he would likely be even more gravely injured or even killed by the sword.

“Thank you, senior, for your concern. However, I insist on obtaining this sword.”

Determination shone through Chu Feng’s eyes. Afterward, his entire person began to change.

Suddenly, he landed from the sky and arrived at the location where he had previously set up the spirit formation. “Bang,” he thrust the crimson sword into the ground again.

“Aouuu~~~”

At this moment, that crimson sword actually let out a strange roar. After that strange roar, crimson gaseous flames suddenly appeared. In an instant, they engulfed Chu Feng.

At the same time, the black clouds that covered the sky turned crimson. People seemed to be able to faintly see that there were countless ghosts that had died with grievances floating about and emitting frightening cries in the sky.

Originally, people thought that it was an illusion. However, the ghosts gradually grew clearer and clearer, more and more numerous. In the end, they were so numerous that they simply covered the entire sky.

This scene deeply frightened many of the people present. For a weapon to possess ghosts that died with grievances, it meant that the weapon must have killed innocent souls. For this crimson sword to possess that many ghosts, one could very well imagine what sort of sword it was. Undoubtedly, it was a Demon Sword.

Furthermore, even within the ranks of Demon Swords, it would be a top existence.

“So nefarious! That sword is truly nefarious! That sword has already become a demon, it absolutely cannot be allowed to continue to exist. If it is to continue to exist, it will only bring about disasters to the world.”

As the World Spiritist Immortal spoke those words, he soared into the sky. Golden light was flickering on him. He had unleashed his Emperor’s might. At this time, he appeared like a god as his Emperor’s might illuminated the crowd.

In an instant, the change to the sky brought forth by the crimson sword was destroyed. The oppressive sensation brought forth by it was also destroyed.

The might of a Martial Emperor was clearly revealed in this

situation. At this moment, countless members of the younger generation, and even people from the the older generation, revealed expressions of admiration and adoration.

However, right after the World Spiritist Immortal acted, another even more powerful Emperor's might swept forth from beside him and stopped him from proceeding onward.

It was the Avaricious Immortal. The Avaricious Immortal had acted to stop the World Spiritist Immortal from helping Chu Feng.

When the World Spiritist Immortal's Emperor's might was suppressed, the sky started to turn crimson again. Countless ghosts appeared once again. In fact, there were even crimson lightning flashes and booming thunder rolling on the horizon.

Not only did the power of that crimson sword not decrease, it had become even more frightening.

"Avaricious Immortal, what are you doing?" The World Spiritist Immortal asked furiously.

"World Spiritist Immortal, this is a spar between members of the younger generation. Why must you involve yourself and break the rules?" The Avaricious Immortal asked with a malicious smile on his face.

"That sword is too nefarious. It is no ordinary weapon. Instead, it is a Demon Sword among Demon Swords. It must be eliminated. Otherwise, it will only bring about disaster," The World Spiritist Immortal said.

"Nefarious? I don't feel that way at all," As the Avaricious Immortal said those words, he took a glance, intentional or not, at the crimson sword. An avaricious expression emerged in his eyes.

"Compass Immortal, we must save Feng Xing. Else, he will be devoured by that sword. We must eliminate that sword. Else, it will bring about slaughter to the masses," Feeling helpless, the World Spiritist Immortal began to request the Compass Immortal

for help.

“Indeed, that sword is a Demon Sword. Otherwise, it would not bring about such an enormous amount of ghosts with grievances. Looking at this number... sigh... it has indeed sinned quite a lot,” At this moment, even the Compass Immortal who was all smiles before had a serious expression on his face and sighed as he saw the ghosts with grievances that covered the sky.

“However, although Demon Swords are frightening, they are still rare treasures. If someone is capable of subduing that sword, it would be a good thing,” The Compass Immortal added.

“Compass Immortal, what do you mean by that?” The World Spiritist Immortal said in shock.

“Let’s continue to watch a bit longer. I feel like that... little friend Feng Xing still has some tricks up his sleeves,” The Compass Immortal said as he looked to Chu Feng. A trace of anticipation appeared in his eyes.

After hearing what the Compass Immortal said, the crowd turned their gazes onto Chu Feng again.

Thinking in their hearts, ‘could it be that this Feng Xing is really able to subdue even that Demon Sword?’

“Heavens! Exactly what is happening? Feng Xing’s injuries, they’re actually gone?!”

Upon turning their gazes to Chu Feng, many of the people present were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. They were deeply shocked.

The reason for that was because earlier, Chu Feng was seriously injured. However, at this moment, his injuries were all gone. The reason why they were so shocked was because what was healing Chu Feng’s injuries was not Chu Feng himself. Rather, it was that crimson Demon Sword.

It turned out that although the crimson gaseous flames being

emitted from the crimson Demon Sword had sealed Chu Feng's escape, they had not injured him. Instead, they were healing Chu Feng's injuries.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, the sky started to tremble. The ghosts that covered the sky and the crimson clouds all began to gather in one place. They turned into an enormous vortex in the sky. It was as if the entire sky were about to be sucked away by that vortex.

“Boom~~~”

Finally, the vortex turned into a ray of crimson light and dropped from the sky. It came down vertically and entered that crimson sword.

At this moment, the earth started to tremble violently. It was as if heaven was falling and the earth was sinking.

However, this only lasted an instant. The very next moment, the world returned to normal, and the stage also became tranquil.

However, at this very moment, not a single person present was able to remain calm.

Chu Feng's injuries were all healed. Not only that, the crimson Demon Sword had also changed. It no longer possessed the evil aura, that overflowing nefariousness, that it did before. However, it was still emitting a very powerful might.

Furthermore, being held by Chu Feng in his hand, the sword was no longer struggling. It was completely obedient to him. It had the appearance of being willing to serve Chu Feng.

“He succeeded! He actually successfully subdued that sword and made it recognize him as its master!”

The crowd burst into an uproar. Regardless of whether or not that sword was the legendary Evil God Sword, the crowd all knew, after experiencing its might, that it was not an ordinary

Incomplete Imperial Armament. At the very least, it was a Demon Sword.

However, such a nefarious Demon Sword was actually subdued by Chu Feng. This truly shocked them. If it were them, they would definitely not have been able to accomplish such a feat. In other words, they did not even have the courage to try to subdue that sword.

After all, demonic weapons were different from other weapons. They were weapons that would kill people of their own accord.

“Clap, clap, clap, clap~~~”

Suddenly, crisp and clear claps began to be heard. Turning toward the sound, it was actually Ximen Feixue who was clapping.

At this moment, Ximen Feixue had thrust his Heavenly Immortal Sword into the stage. He had a smile on his face as he looked to Chu Feng and clapped.

“Not bad. Never would I have thought that you’d be able to subdue such a Demon Sword.”

“It means that you are truly its partner in notoriety. It would appear that you might become a demon in the future,” Ximen Feixue’s words possessed hidden implications. While people were able to accept Demon Swords, they feared someone becoming a demon the most. What Ximen Feixue was doing was pushing Chu Feng onto the taboo subject for the people present. It must be said that Ximen Feixue was truly treacherous.

“However, regardless, that Demon Sword of yours seems to be slightly qualified to cross swords against my Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

After saying those words, Ximen Feixue suddenly pulled the Heavenly Immortal Sword beside him up from the stage and pointed it toward Chu Feng. His cold gaze was filled with killing intent.

Chapter 1730 – Needing Only A Single Sword Strike

“Yoh, what enormous killing intent. Could it be that you’re planning to kill me?” Chu Feng sneered.

“Since ancient times, good and evil have not been able to coexist. Since you have shown the potential to become a demon, I will thus eliminate you here.”

As Ximen Feixue spoke, his body trembled. Then the space behind him started to twist. Invisible strands of aura were being emitted from within the sword and his body.

Sensing those auras, many people began to feel energetic and excited.

“What an overwhelming righteous aura. Such a powerful aura is something that I’ve never felt from Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Sure enough, the Heavenly Immortal Sword stands out from the masses. Likely, it is only lacking a bit to be able to contend against Imperial Armaments,” After sensing the power of the Heavenly Immortal Sword, the people began to praise it repeatedly.

“Good sword,” Chu Feng exclaimed.

“Naturally. Else, it would not be the Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Ximen Feixue said.

“I’m talking about the Evil God Sword in my hand, not your Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Chu Feng said.

“You really think that the sword in your hand is that legendary Evil God Sword?”

Ximen Feixue did not believe that. After all, the legend of the Evil God Sword was even more dreadful than the story of his Heavenly Immortal Sword. In other words, when judging from a different

aspect, the Evil God Sword was even stronger than his Heavenly Immortal Sword. Thus, he was unwilling to accept that the sword in Chu Feng's hand was the Evil God Sword.

“The sword's in my hand. I know about what kind of sword it is more clearly than you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he suddenly pointed the Evil God Sword toward Ximen Feixue.

Once the sword was pointed toward Ximen Feixue, the sky immediately darkened. Rays of crimson light began to sweep forth from the sword in Chu Feng's hand. The evil aura that had disappeared earlier once again emerged to deter the crowd's hearts. In fact, even the ghosts that filled the sky had appeared once again. They began to howl in grief nonstop.

It turned out that the nefariousness of the sword had not disappeared. Rather, it was being controlled by Chu Feng.

“Sure enough, your demonic nature is overflowing. I must kill you,” Suddenly, Ximen Feixue swung his Heavenly Immortal Sword lightly. Immediately, flowers began to bloom in the sky as countless silvery sword strikes flew toward Chu Feng.

It appeared like several tens of thousands of Heavenly Immortals had descended to the mortal world together to behead the demon and rescue the common people.

Not only was this scene very magnificent, it was also very shocking. Countless people were affected by it.

At this moment, the crowd finally realized the reason why people all said that Ximen Feixue's sword techniques were his strongest point.

This sword technique had indeed surpassed ordinary sword techniques. Whether it be the might or the power, it surpassed Earthen Taboo Martial Skills in both, and was even comparable to the legendary Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

With such a sword technique, it was already no longer a question

of the strength of the weapon. Would Feng Xing be able to withstand it? This was what everyone present was wondering.

“Heh...”

However, when facing Ximen Feixue’s powerful attack, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Suddenly, the Evil God Sword in his hand trembled slightly. Immediately afterward, it turned into a ray of crimson light and swept forth.

“Rumble~~~”

Once the sword was unleashed, the crimson clouds in the sky began to surge. Several crimson lightning bolts struck down from the sky, landing on the stage.

The unleashed might of the sword had created a change in the heavens. This was no longer something as simple as a sword technique.

Finally, the stage that was covered with crimson light returned to normal. However, Ximen Feixue had fallen off the stage. Even though he was putting forth great effort to support his body to keep it from falling to the ground, his body was nevertheless trembling.

He had been defeated. Ximen Feixue had actually been defeated. Ximen Feixue, the person who was most proficient in using swords, had finally decided to use his Heavenly Immortal Sword.

However, he had been defeated in a single sword strike by his opponent. Oh how much of a humiliation was this?

“Clank~~~”

Right at this moment, completely drained of strength, Ximen Feixue fell to the ground. The Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand had also fallen to the ground.

“Tink, tink, tink~~~”

After the Heavenly Immortal Sword fell to the ground, it actually

began to violently tremble and move about all over the place. It was trying to escape like a sheep that had seen a hungry wolf.

This scene shocked the crowd so much that their mouths gaped wide open.

The appearance that the Heavenly Immortal Sword revealed was one of extreme fear. The legendary Heavenly Immortal Sword was actually afraid. What was it afraid of? Weapons did not fear people. They would only fear other weapons.

However, of all the weapons present, which one could possibly make the Heavenly Immortal Sword be scared?

Upon thinking of that, the crowd all turned their gaze to the crimson Demon Sword in Chu Feng's hand. The reason for that was because that was the only weapon among all the weapons present that they could think of that was capable of bringing fear to the Heavenly Immortal Sword.

In order to verify their guesses, there were even people who secretly took out their own weapons. Upon taking out their weapons, their weapons actually also started to violently tremble, as if they were trying to escape. The direction at which they were trying to escape from was the direction of the stage, the direction of Feng Xing, the direction of the crimson sword.

“Amazing! Someone capable of deterring everyone is an emperor among men. A weapon capable of deterring other weapons is a king among weapons.”

“Such a deterrence power, it truly deserves to be called a Demon Sword, an actual Demon Sword.”

The crowd were all shocked. If they had only been feeling admiration for Chu Feng before, then right now, they were also feeling envious.

Even though it was a Demon Sword, it was still a weapon. Such a powerful weapon, as martial cultivators, which one of them would

not want to obtain it?

Unfortunately, they were unable to obtain it. Most importantly, they did not have the capability to obtain it.

Thus, not only were they envious, they were also jealous. They were jealous of the fact that their talent was inferior to Chu Feng's.

"Very good. A good sword is only befitting of a hero. Little friend Feng Xing, this Evil God Sword shall be gifted to you," Suddenly, a loud shout was heard. It was Baili Xuankong.

At this moment, if one were to ask who was feeling the most joyous at this moment, then, other than Chu Feng, it would definitely be Baili Xuankong.

As Chu Feng's Ancestor, he was extremely proud at this moment. He felt that he was honored, truly honored by Chu Feng.

He had defeated all of the Four Clans' younger generation and subdued the crimson Demon Sword. His techniques and ability were things that everyone approved of.

"Could it be that that crimson sword is really the Evil God Sword?"

"He's actually going to gift such a powerful sword to Feng Xing?"

"Exactly who is that man? How did he obtain that sword? How could he be this extravagant?"

The crowd gasped with admiration and shock. They no longer bothered to continue to guess whether the crimson Demon Sword was really the Evil God Sword. Regardless of whether or not it was a Demon Sword or the Evil God Sword, it would still become a famous sword.

At this moment, what they were guessing was who exactly Baili Xuankong was. After all, at this time when even the Four Immortals had been unable to determine that the sword was a treasure, only he had firmly believed that the sword was a

treasure. Furthermore, in the end... he had been correct.

Such a man possessed such a sword, and even bestowed that sword to another person. This inevitably caused the crowd to ponder about the origins of this man.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng accepted the sword immediately. After all, he knew that the person below the stage was none other than his Ancestor.

Furthermore, he was fond of the sword. After the sword had recognized him as its master, Chu Feng was able to sense how powerful it was. It was so powerful that the Purple Rainbow Sword and the Cyan Rainbow Sword were simply unable to compare to it.

However, Chu Feng was still unable to completely grasp it. This sword was a sword that he had yet to completely grasp. There was still a hidden strength in the sword that he could not ascertain. It was precisely because of that hidden strength that Chu Feng wanted to subdue the sword completely.

“Little friend Feng Xing is truly a heavenly genius. Mooncloud City’s City master, you can announce the result now,” Suddenly, someone loudly spoke from the crowd. This person was someone from the Dongfang Imperial Clan.

Following that, many other voices began to sound. There were not only people praising Chu Feng, there were also people who voiced their desire to befriend Chu Feng.

In this sort of situation, there was already no need for the Mooncloud City’s City Master to announce the result. After all, in the hearts of the crowd, this young man called Feng Xing was the victor. In fact, this was also the reality.

Chapter 1731 – Public Humiliation

Chu Feng had fully revealed his strength. Many people felt that this young man by the name of Feng Xing was simply a heavenly genius, someone capable of becoming an era's overlord.

In this sort of situation, the number of people who began to secretly try to befriend Chu Feng became more and more numerous.

Those who were capable of representing their respective powers, for example, the headmasters and assembly masters from the Nine Powers, all began to try to befriend Chu Feng. Other than the Cyanwood Mountain, all eight of the other Nine Powers were trying to get into a good relationship with Chu Feng.

Even the World Spiritist Alliance that had already accepted Chu Feng as their nominal disciple was acting this way.

Especially the World Spiritist Immortal. This grand Assembly Master of the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly had personally spoken to openly express his fondness for Chu Feng.

In fact, he was indeed very fond of Chu Feng. After all, when Chu Feng received the backlash from the Evil God Sword, he was the only person who acted to try to rescue him.

As for those people who were unable to represent their respective powers, they were also trying to personally become Chu Feng's friends.

Not mentioning those small sects, small schools or hidden experts, even the people from the Three Palaces started to secretly communicate with Chu Feng.

In fact, they were filled with regret. They regretted the fact that there weren't any grand characters from their Three Palaces present at this moment. Otherwise, if they were to be able to rope this young man called Feng Xing into associating with their power,

it would be a great harvest.

“Little friend Feng Xing, as the saying goes, an exchange of blows may lead to friendship. If possible, our Beitang Imperial Clan wishes to invite little friend Feng Xing as well as that brother with the conical bamboo hat to our Beitang Imperial Clan as guests.”

“If the two of you are occupied with matters at hand, that would be fine too. I am able to present you two with our Beitang Imperial Clan’s Title Plate. You may come and visit our Beitang Imperial Clan at any time.”

“As long as you are to come, our Beitang Imperial Clan will definitely treat you as highly honored guests,” Right at this moment, the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly stood up and openly tried to rope in Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong.

“Little friend Feng Xing, our Dongfang Imperial Clan also wishes to invite you to be our guest,” Even more shockingly, the Dongfang Imperial Clan tried to invite Chu Feng.

The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief’s invitation caused the crowd to open their mouths wide in shock. It was one thing for the Beitang Imperial Clan to invite Feng Xing. After all, their younger generation had not fought against him.

However, the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Third Prince, Dongfang Zexuan, had suffered a crushing defeat at Feng Xing’s hand. Yet, they were actually still going to invite Feng Xing?

This truly felt unimaginable to the crowd. They were unable to comprehend the actions of the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief.

At this moment, Nangong Beidou stood up. “Two Clan Chiefs, you shouldn’t fight over this. Even if he must be a guest, I feel that little friend Feng Xing should consider our Nangong Imperial Clan the most.”

The crowd was even more shocked. However, upon seeing the

passionate expressions filled with admiration on the faces of the three Lord Clan Chiefs, they were soon relieved.

Even the Nangong Imperial Clan was inviting Feng Xing. What did this mean? It meant that this young man by the name of Feng Xing was a truly outstanding talent. The Three Great Imperial Clans were all voluntarily planning to forget previous differences in order to turn Feng Xing from an enemy into a friend.

“Nangong Beidou, what do you mean by that?” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief asked in a displeased manner.

“That’s right. First come, first serve. Even if little friend Feng Xing is to plan to become a guest to any of us, little friend Feng Xing should be considering our Beitang Imperial Clan first. Why would he be considering your Nangong Imperial Clan first?” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was also displaying a displeased expression. After all, he had been the first one to invite Feng Xing.

“Little friend Feng Xing injured my daughter and two sons in succession. However, I am filled with admiration for little friend Feng Xing, and I possess not the slightest bit of hatred for him.”

“I feel that, merely by my admiration for him, if little friend Feng Xing were to choose which among us he should be a guest to first, it would naturally be our Nangong Imperial Clan,” Nangong Beidou said with a beaming smile.

When he said those words, he deliberately took a glance at Chu Feng. Chu Feng discovered that even though there was a smile on his face, there was no genuine admiration in his eyes.

Likely, he was planning to rope in Chu Feng because of the talent Chu Feng had displayed. He had invited Chu Feng only so that he could pave the road for the Nangong Imperial Clan in the future, and not because he truly admired Chu Feng’s talent.

Upon recalling all the things Nangong Beidou had done to him, Chu Feng started to smirk in his heart. Thus, he said to the crowd,

“I am able to consider the invitations from the Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan. After all, it is difficult to reject such magnificent hospitality. However, as for the Nangong Imperial Clan’s invitation, it’s best to forget about it.”

“Even though I, Feng Xing, am a very daring person, I would still not dare to set foot into the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Little friend Feng Xing, what is the meaning of those words?” Hearing those words, even though Nangong Beidou was generally a very calm person and one who rarely revealed anger on his face, his expression still changed.

“Little friend Feng Xing, could it be that you possess some sort of misunderstanding with the Nangong Imperial Clan?” The White-browed Immortal asked. He was different from Nangong Beidou. After this competition, he was feeling admiration for Chu Feng from the bottom of his heart.

Furthermore, as he was part of the Nangong Imperial Clan, White-browed Immortal would naturally wish for this young man called Feng Xing to have a friendly relationship with the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Misunderstanding? I don’t think this is a misunderstanding,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile and an extremely determined expression.

“Little friend Feng Xing, if you do not wish to stay as a guest in our Nangong Imperial Clan, I will not demand insistently. However, why must you insult our Nangong Imperial Clan?”

Nangong Beidou was somewhat angered. He had been willing to forget previous differences, and how Feng Xing had seriously injured his sons, to instead invite him to be a guest at their Nangong Imperial Clan. Yet, this Feng Xing actually spoke these sorts of words to him. His behavior was truly impudent.

The way he saw it, what Feng Xing had said was simply declaring

that their Nangong Imperial Clan was inferior to the Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan. As such, how could he not be angered?

“Clan Chief Nangong, I’ll ask you about one thing. Not long ago, you all listed a person by the name of Chu Feng as wanted. As far as I know, that Chu Feng could be considered to be a person who showed grace and kindness to your Nangong Imperial Clan, and he was also invited to your Nangong Imperial Clan to be a guest.”

“However, later on, not only did you all put forth the arrest order for that Chu Feng, you all even wanted him dead. You all ended up posting those wanted posters for that Chu Feng all over the entire Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Exactly what sort of grievance, what sort of hatred, would make you all loathe that Chu Feng to that extent, would make you all be that ruthless?”

“After all, he is someone who showed grace and kindness to your Nangong Imperial Clan. Regardless of whether the grace and kindness he showed was large or small, it remained that he was your benefactor.”

“When even a benefactor to your Nangong Imperial Clan is treated like that, how could I possibly dare to go and become your Nangong Imperial Clan’s guest?”

“After all, I have injured your two princes and your princess today. I could be considered to be your enemy.”

“The hatred and killing intent all those seniors from your Nangong Imperial Clan directed toward me earlier, I believe I am not the only one who felt it. I believe that many of the people present also sensed it.”

“I would like to ask, how could I possibly dare to go be a guest in your Nangong Imperial Clan?” Chu Feng coldly asked.

Hearing those words, many of the people present began to nod

their heads. They felt that what this young man called Feng Xing had said was reasonable. After all, they too had sensed the hatred and killing intent the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan had directed at him earlier.

“What little friend Feng Xing said is reasonable. Nangong Beidou, if little friend Feng Xing is to stay in your clan as a guest, you will inevitably try to harm little friend Feng Xing.”

At this moment, the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief spoke with a serious expression. After saying those words, he secretly smiled. He had the expression of someone who was enjoying the show.

“Indeed, indeed,” Even the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief spoke to pour oil onto the fire.

Evidently, these two Clan Chiefs were all displeased by the words spoken by Nangong Beidou earlier. Thus, they seized this moment to retaliate against him.

Chapter 1732 – Revealing The Truth

“Little friend Feng Xing, the hatred and killing intent the people from my clan directed at you earlier was their wrongdoing. I will lecture them about it.”

“However, that said, it remains that my sons and daughter are the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princes and princess. To have their princes and princess disgraced, they would naturally feel displeased. After all, to protect these princes and princess is their duty.”

“Thus, regarding this matter, I hope that little friend Feng Xing will not take offense to it. The invitation our Nangong Imperial Clan is offering to little friend Feng Xing at this moment is definitely without any malice. Instead, we are fully sincere.”

“That said, if we are to not mention this matter, you and that Chu Feng are still completely different.”

“That Chu Feng, although he pretended to be righteous, he was, in reality, completely different from how he seemed to be.”

“Sigh~~~” Mentioning this matter, Nangong Beidou sighed. It was as if he had countless hidden troubles that were very difficult to mention.

“Actually, all that should be said is already written on the wanted posters,” At this moment, the difficult expression on Nangong Beidou’s face grew more and more heavy. However, suddenly, his difficulty vanished.

Then, he said, “Forget about it, forget about it. Since we mentioned this matter today, I might as well tell everyone exactly what happened.”

“That Chu Feng had actually deliberately saved a few members of our Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation so that he could sneak into our Nangong Imperial Clan. His intention was to steal

our Nangong Imperial Clan's most precious treasure, the Water Immortal Profound Technique."

"It's merely a Water Immortal Profound Technique. No matter how precious, it's only a secret skill. If that Chu Feng wanted it, he could've totally just mentioned it to me directly. Even if I had to gift it to him, I would not have refused."

"However, he decided to act in private. For the Water Immortal Profound Technique, not only did he kill the people of our Nangong Imperial Clan, he also dishonored the people of our Nangong Imperial Clan. You must know that the girl that Chu Feng dishonored was a child who's not even twelve."

"That Chu Feng is simply deranged. He is worse than pigs and dogs. I dare ask, how could I not kill someone like him?"

"It is only because that Chu Feng is already dead. If he were still alive, I would definitely personally kill him. I would dig out his heart and see whether or not it is black. If his heart isn't black, how could such a young man be this malicious?" Nangong Beidou spoke with righteousness and anger.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng cursed in his heart. This Nangong Beidou was truly despicable. His ability when inverting right and wrong was truly extraordinary.

Even though Chu Feng knew the truth, many of the people present did not. After hearing what Nangong Beidou said, the crowd reacted as if they had finally learned the truth, and began to curse out against Chu Feng.

"Clan Chief Nangong, as far as I know, that doesn't seem to be the truth," Right at this moment, Chu Feng spoke with a beaming smile.

"What did you say?" Hearing those words, Nangong Beidou started to frown.

"I said the truth is not as you described. Since there's this many

people present, I might as well give a narration,” Chu Feng said.

“What are you planning to tell?” Nangong Beidou asked with a cold voice. Being extremely sly, he had already noticed that something was wrong.

This young man before him by the name of Feng Xing, even though he possessed outstanding talent, was a genius with the potential to become an overlord, and someone that he wanted to rope into their Nangong Imperial Clan, it seemed that he was very resentful toward their Nangong Imperial Clan, as he had been attacking their Nangong Imperial Clan the entire time. Likely, he possessed an ulterior motive.

“What I’m planning to tell? I’m going to tell the actual truth of why that Chu Feng had been wanted by your Nangong Imperial Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t you speak nonsense. What I said is the actual truth,” Nangong Beidou shouted angrily.

“Whether or not it’s the truth, everyone will be able to differentiate after I tell my story. For you to refuse to allow me to speak, could it be that you’re scared?” Chu Feng asked.

“I, Nangong Beidou, am a fearless person. However, I will not allow you to babble nonsense to deceive the crowd,” Nangong Beidou said.

“I am telling this story to the crowd, and not to you. Thus, you are not the one who gets to decide whether I speak of it or not,” After saying those words, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the crowd.

“Everyone, do you all not wish to know exactly what Chu Feng experienced in the Nangong Imperial Clan? Do you all not wish to know the real reason why Chu Feng was loathed by the Nangong Imperial Clan?” Chu Feng turned to ask the crowd.

“We do!!!”

Once Chu Feng’s question was asked, not to mention the younger

generation, even some of the older generation started to call out that they wished to know. This was not a case of a hundred answers to a single call. Rather, it was ten thousand answers to a single call. Over ten thousand people had answered together.

Seeing this scene, Nangong Beidou started to frown deeply. A member of the younger generation who was unknown before today had actually gone over his head. This caused him to feel an enormous amount of humiliation.

At this moment, he wanted to smack that Feng Xing to death. He had realized that Feng Xing was planning to redress the injustice Chu Feng had suffered.

However, in this sort of situation, he could not kill that Feng Xing. The only thing he could do was endure.

Even though it was extremely difficult to bear, there was nothing else he could do. After all, Feng Xing had subdued the crowd with his strength.

“Speaking of this matter, it is quite a long story. However, I shall make the long story short today for everyone.”

“What had happened was like this...”

“Chu Feng came to know the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s Weaponry Bestowment Assembly. During the Weaponry Bestowment Assembly, Chu Feng helped the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Because of that, the Nangong Imperial Clan decided to invite Chu Feng to become a guest at their Nangong Imperial Clan. Logically, as Chu Feng was a guest, no matter how haughty and proud the Nangong Imperial Clan might be, they should still act as a host.”

“However, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s three princes and princess joined hands with the White-browed Immortal’s disciple

to deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng.”

“It was one thing for there to be disputes between the younger generation. However, Chu Feng accidentally revealed his talent in the Nangong Imperial Clan. His talent ended up suppressing that of the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Third Prince, Nangong Tianhu.”

“After that, the Nangong Imperial Clan began to view Chu Feng as a thorn.”

“Then, they deliberately set up a trap for him. They had all of the younger generation approach the Water Immortal Profound Technique in order to use the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s judgement to determine whether Chu Feng might be a threat or not.”

“It just so happened that the Water Immortal Profound Technique ended up choosing Chu Feng even though there were a great amount of the Nangong Imperial Clan’s younger generation present.”

“After that, the Nangong Imperial Clan was determined to kill Chu Feng. After Chu Feng escaped, they announced his capture and began to post wanted posters all over the Holy Land of Martialism. Not only that, they also began to invert right and wrong, and pushed all of the guilt onto Chu Feng,” Chu Feng’s voice was very resounding. However, he had a very calm tone as he said those words.

“This... such a thing actually happened? Is this for real?”

Hearing those words, the crowd turned to look at one another and began to spiritedly discuss what they had just heard. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was truly too different from what Nangong Beidou had said.

At this moment, the two men both possessed a different version of the story. It had become difficult for the crowd to determine who was speaking the truth.

However, if what Feng Xing had said was the truth, then the Nangong Imperial Clan was truly a disgrace.

At this moment, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Mooncloud City's City Master turned their gazes silently onto Nangong Beidou.

As people with equivalent status, and having known Nangong Beidou for many years, they felt that what Feng Xing had said was more trustworthy.

Soon, some of the astute and circumspect individuals began to cast the same sort of gaze onto Nangong Beidou. The reason for that was because they also felt that Nangong Beidou's story was too one-sided, that what Feng Xing had said was even more realistic. Even though it might appear to be inhuman and a disgraceful thing to do, what Feng Xing had described was the way that large sects and schools would handle things.

“What utter nonsense.”

“Little friend Feng Xing, I do not know what relationship you have with Chu Feng, I do not know why you are speaking out for him, but if you are to continue to invert right and wrong like so, don't blame our Nangong Imperial Clan for being impolite.”

“Our Nangong Imperial Clan will definitely not be able to tolerate anyone shielding that Chu Feng's wicked conduct. Even though he is dead, we will still not allow such a thing,” Nangong Beidou shouted with a great deal of rage.

Once those words left his mouth, heaven and earth began to shake. Even though his surging Emperor's might did not attack anyone, it had intimidated all of the people present.

Many people, especially those of the younger generation, were frightened by this. However, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged. He was not affected by it in the slightest.

Chapter 1733 – The Truth Revealed

“It would seem that Chu Feng is an extremely evil person in your heart. Since that’s the case, Clan Chief Nangong, I wish to ask, what sort of person do you consider me as?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“If little friend Feng Xing is to stop speaking for that Chu Feng, I feel that... little friend Feng Xing possesses outstanding talent, and is a top genius among the current Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation.”

“Although I do not know who your master might be, nor do I know which sect or school you might be from, I feel that a member of the younger generation like little friend Feng Xing is someone that all of us should protect. We must allow you to mature.”

“After all, on your shoulder rests the hope of our human race. If you are to become an overlord in the future, you will have honored our human race,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Well spoken,” The crowd began to nod in agreement.

“In that case, I wish to ask, Clan Chief Nangong, to you, how am I different from that Chu Feng?” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“The difference between the two of you is akin to that of heaven from earth. The two of you simply cannot be placed on par with one another. If it must be said, I can only say that you are naturally different from that Chu Feng. Else, how could I possibly invite you to our Nangong Imperial Clan as a guest after you’ve injured my children?” Nangong Beidou said.

“Based on what you said, you still want to invite me to your Nangong Imperial Clan as a guest?” Chu Feng asked.

“If little friend Feng Xing is willing, I will definitely show great hospitality,” Nangong Beidou said.

“In that case, if the person standing here today were not me, but

instead that Chu Feng, if he had also revealed the same sort of talent as I did, would you also invite him?" Chu Feng asked.

"This..." At this moment, even Nangong Beidou was baffled. Thus, he could only answer with, "This 'if' cannot be established. Chu Feng is already dead, and you are not Chu Feng."

"Are you that certain that Chu Feng is already dead?" Chu Feng asked.

"Truth be told, Brother White-brow set up a tracking formation on Chu Feng based on the aura he had left behind."

"That formation of his ended up becoming ineffective afterward. Thus, there is only one possibility: Chu Feng has died," Nangong Beidou said.

"That is true," White-browed Immortal nodded.

"So that's the case. But, as far as I know, your two sons should have sensed Chu Feng's aura after that spirit formation became ineffective. After all, the connections that they had with the Purple Rainbow Sword and Cyan Rainbow Sword were severed by Chu Feng," Chu Feng said.

"Exactly who are you?! How did you know about that?!" Nangong Beidou's expression grew serious. The gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with became very cautious.

"Have a look, what are these?" Chu Feng smiled. He flipped his palm and put the Evil God Sword away. At the same time, two Incomplete Imperial Armaments appeared in his hand. They were the Purple Rainbow Sword and the Cyan Rainbow Sword.

"You!!!"

Upon seeing the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, the expressions of Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu who were outside of the stage immediately changed. As if they had received an enormous shock, the two of them started to tremble with fear. The reason for that was because they felt the aura that they feared

the most on Feng Xing. It was Chu Feng's aura.

“Exactly who are you? Why would my sons' Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword be in your possession?” At this moment, not to mention the others from the Nangong Imperial Clan, even Nangong Beidou himself was unable to remain calm. His heart was wavering out of control.

The young man before him was simply challenging his baseline again and again. He had nearly reached the state of being incapable of tolerating it anymore.

“Nangong Beidou, White-browed Immortal, the two of you, look carefully. Carefully see for yourselves... who I really am.”

Chu Feng spoke coldly. After he finished saying those words, his facial appearance began to change. Soon, he became another person. As for this person, it was Chu Feng with his original appearance.

“Chu Feng! You're Chu Feng?!!!”

Nangong Tianshi and Nangong Tianhu cried out in shock together. However, their voices were filled with fear. In fact, their voices even trembled.

“How... how could this be?! This is impossible!”

The White-browed Immortal was so shocked that he abruptly stood up from his seat. The way he saw it, Chu Feng was definitely dead. How could he be standing before them?

Shock. Everyone was incomparably shocked by this revelation. They were all incapable of taking in what had just happened before them.

Feng Xing was the Nangong Imperial Clan's wanted Chu Feng?

However, wasn't that Chu Feng said to be extremely weak? How did he become this powerful? He had defeated the Four Clans' younger generation before their eyes and subdued the legendary

Evil God Sword.

“What’s wrong? Are you very surprised? Is it very hard to accept this?” Chu Feng looked to the stunned Nangong Beidou and smiled.

Then, with a cold tone, he said, “I, Chu Feng, originally planned to befriend your Nangong Imperial Clan. Yet, your Nangong Imperial Clan thought that my talent surpassed that of your clan’s younger generation and began to force me into a corner because you saw me as a threat.”

“I originally never had the intention to become your Nangong Imperial Clan’s enemy. However, your Nangong Imperial Clan refused to give me a way out. Thus, I’ve deliberately made the things that you were worried about a reality.”

“You feared that I would surpass your children? Then I’ll oppress your children.”

“Nangong Beidou, I shall give you one sentence of advice. Do not be too ruthless in the way you conduct things. Else, it will come back and bite you.”

“Today, I have only disciplined your children lightly. However, if you are to continue to push me, Chu Feng, into a corner, then, one day, I will definitely come and end you,” After speaking those words, a very strong killing intent emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes.

“What arrogance! The only thing I’m afraid of is that you will not live till that day,” Suddenly, Nangong Beidou attacked. His rank three Martial Emperor’s might was unleashed. His martial power turned into an enormous golden wave that charged toward Chu Feng to oppress him. He was planning to crush Chu Feng alive.

“Today, no one shall think about touching a single one of Chu Feng’s hairs!”

Right at this moment, Baili Xuankong, who had already been prepared for a very long time, suddenly appeared beside Chu Feng

like a phantom.

He pushed his hand forward. As his gown fluttered, martial power surged forth. His martial power collided with Nangong Beidou's martial power. In an instant, the two enormous waves of martial power began to emit golden radiance. Nangong Beidou's martial power was actually canceled out.

“Rank three Martial Emperor?” The crowd were all shocked with fear. They had sensed Baili Xuankong's strength.

Rank three Martial Emperor. In the Holy Land of Martialism, people with that level of cultivation could be counted on one's fingers. The majority of them were all famous people. As for this person... for him to stand up for Chu Feng, exactly who was he?

“Sure enough, you're jackals of the same tribe. Today, neither of you shall think about leaving!” Nangong Beidou attacked again. Although he shouted that he was going to eliminate both Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong, all of his attacks were aimed at Chu Feng.

If he had only thought that Chu Feng was a threat before, then, at this time, he was firmly certain that Chu Feng was a threat to their Nangong Imperial Clan.

The speed of his growth was simply too frightening. If he failed to eliminate Chu Feng today, he would definitely become an enormous calamity in the future. Likely, their Nangong Imperial Clan would be approached by a crisis.

Even today, he was unable to forget the devastation caused by the Asura Evil Spirit released by Chu Feng that day.

However, Baili Xuankong's strength was truly not one to be looked down upon. Even though Nangong Beidou's attacks were extremely powerful, and he had sealed the entire stage with his ferocious martial skills, he was unable to injure Chu Feng in the slightest.

“Nangong Beidou, you know full well that you are in the wrong.

Are you planning to silence me?” Chu Feng shouted loudly.

“Enough of your bullshit, I insist on killing you!” Nangong Beidou shouted angrily. At the same time, his attacks became even more ferocious.

At this moment, he was truly disinclined to bother speaking with Chu Feng. The only thought in his mind was to quickly eliminate him.

However, the more he acted like this, the more he seemed to have a guilty conscience. This made all of the people present feel that what Chu Feng had said was the truth.

Back then, the Nangong Imperial Clan had put out a warrant for Chu Feng because they envied Chu Feng’s talent. And Chu Feng had revealed today that he really did possess talent that could make the Nangong Imperial Clan become envious and fearful of him.

Upon realizing this, the crowd began to sympathize with Chu Feng. After all, no matter how talented Chu Feng might be, when compared to the Nangong Imperial Clan, he was still very weak.

Unfortunately, among all the people present, the ones with the strongest strength were the Four Great Imperial Clans and Mooncloud City.

Regardless of how much they fought each other on the surface, the Four Great Imperial Clans and Mooncloud City were all of the same root. It would be impossible to make them massacre one another.

At this moment, many people began to feel deep worry for Chu Feng. With the aid of only that mysterious expert, would Chu Feng really be able to come out safely?

Chapter 1734 – Enormous Crisis

“Woosh~~~”

At this moment when the crowd were all worried, Baili Xuankong suddenly shot out a palm strike explosively. His palm strike not only pushed back all of Nangong Beidou's attacks, it also shattered the entire stage. One must know that this stage had been created with special materials. Thus, it contained incomparable hardness.

One could easily imagine what enormous destructive power such a powerful palm strike had brought about. Being protected by the older generation, the younger generation watching the battle began to rapidly fall back and distance themselves from the battle out of fear of being implicated.

After all, this was not a battle between people of the younger generation. Instead, it was a battle between Martial Emperors. Furthermore, they were not ordinary Martial Emperors, but a pair of rank three Martial Emperors.

At this moment when the crowd were distancing themselves from the battlefield, Baili Xuankong and Nangong Beidou continued to fight.

“Woosh~~~”

At this moment, Baili Xuankong had fought back another ferocious attack from Nangong Beidou. After pushing it back, Baili Xuankong unleashed a counterattack. As he waved one of his hands upward and streaked his other hand across his waist, a writing brush suddenly appeared in his hand.

This writing brush was two feet long and black in color. Other than having the two characters ‘Death’ and ‘Kill,’ carved onto it, it appeared to be very ordinary.

“Buzz~~~”

However, soon, many talismans shining with golden light began to appear on the writing brush. The talismans were so numerous that they numbered in the several thousands. As the talismans began to move, it was like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses galloping within the writing brush. At the same time, a very enormous might swept forth from the brush and began to intimidate the surroundings.

Incomplete Imperial Armament. That writing brush was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Being in Baili Xuankong's hand, that Incomplete Imperial Armament was able to unleash its supreme might. After all, Imperial Armaments were meant to be used by Martial Emperors. Only Martial Emperors were capable of bringing out the true power of Imperial Armaments.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Once the brush was unleashed, Baili Xuankong's battle power surged instantly. With a wave of his sleeve, Baili Xuankong actually wrote out a golden-bright and dazzling ‘death,’ character in the air while facing Nangong Beidou.

After the ‘death’ character appeared, it began to rapidly increase in size. Like a small mountain, it moved toward Nangong Beidou to crush him.

“Humph.”

Nangong Beidou was already prepared for this. Even though he was moving backwards, a fiery red blade and a blue spear soon appeared in his hands.

As he brandished his two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, two blade rays shot forth. As the blade rays appeared, dragon roars could be heard. As the dragon roars sounded, the two blade rays turned into a fire and a water dragon.

The two dragons were enormous. As they interweaved with one another and moved as if dancing, water and fire filled the sky. The

might behind that attack was simply heavenly.

“Boom~~~”

However, even though Nangong Beidou’s attack was extremely ferocious, it was unable to contend against the ‘death’ character written by Baili Xuankong using his Death Kill Brush.

The ‘death’ character flickered with golden light. It was as if it were capable of killing everything before it. As it fought against the two dragons, it actually crushed both dragons to pieces.

After that, the ‘death’ character suddenly shattered into countless golden lights. Like ten thousand arrows, they shot toward Nangong Beidou.

“Pa, pa, pa~~”

Seeing that, Nangong Beidou was overwhelmed with shock. Evidently, he did not expect that his two top quality Incomplete Imperial Armaments would be inferior to his opponent’s writing brush.

However, at this moment, he did not have the time to think about anything. He could only move the blade and spear in his hands about to resist Baili Xuankong’s attack.

At the moment when the golden arrows gradually disappeared, a bloody wound appeared on Nangong Beidou’s left arm. He had actually been injured.

Upon seeing that wound, everybody in the crowd was shocked. Exactly who was this mysterious expert? He was actually capable of injuring Nangong Beidou?

“It would seem that the Clan Chief of the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Beidou, is not up to much,” At this moment, Baili Xuankong said mockingly.

“Die!” Being injured, it would naturally be Nangong Beidou who was the most enraged right now. He felt that he had been

humiliated, and thus unleashed his Imperial Bloodline. Golden light began to cover his entire body. At this moment, he had the appearance of a god.

It was as if he were no longer a human, but rather a golden god of war.

Most importantly, his battle power had also increased enormously. As he brandished his Incomplete Imperial Armaments again, a total of ten fire dragons and ten water dragons appeared with ear-piercing roars. Furthermore, each and every pair of dragons was stronger than the two before.

However, even with this being the case, Baili Xuankong still felt no fear. He brandished the writing brush in his hand again, and successively wrote twenty golden-bright and dazzling ‘kill’ characters at Nangong Beidou.

These twenty ‘kill’ characters were all much more powerful than the ‘death’ character from before. As the ‘kill’ characters set out, they completely exterminated all twenty of Nangong Beidou’s huge dragons in an instant.

“Is he no match for him even after using his Imperial Bloodline?”

At this moment, not to mention the others, even the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were filled with incomparable shock. After all, Nangong Beidou was the pillar of their Nangong Imperial Clan. If even he was no match for that mysterious man, who among their Nangong Imperial Clan could possibly match him? ¹

Seeing that the situation was bad, someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan shouted, “Set up the Bloodline Inheritance Formation to assist Lord Clan Chief!” Immediately afterward, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan answered his call.

They began to set up a special formation. Relying on the relationships of their bloodlines, they began to send their bloodline power to Nangong Beidou in a steady flow.

In this sort of situation, the ‘Imperial’ character on Nangong Beidou’s forehead grew brighter and brighter. The golden light that covered his body grew more and more magnificent, and his battle power also grew stronger and stronger.

However, even with this being the case, Nangong Beidou was still only able to barely fight Baili Xuankong to a tie. He was simply incapable of defeating Baili Xuankong, much less killing Chu Feng.

“White-brow, why are you still watching? Quickly, kill that Chu Feng!” Sensing that the situation was bad, Nangong Beidou could only request help from the White-browed Immortal.

However, White-browed Immortal was standing there motionlessly like a fool. He was simply unable to hear Nangong Beidou’s request. Evidently, he was still unable to accept the fact that Chu Feng was alive, and was in a state of extreme shock.

Feeling helpless, Nangong Beidou turned his gaze to the crowd outside. “Everyone, this Chu Feng has done countless malicious deeds. He is an extremely evil person. We absolutely cannot let him leave. Else, he will definitely bring about calamity to the world.”

“Everyone, help me kill that Chu Feng. I will bestow great thanks to everyone who helps kill Chu Feng.”

Hearing those words, the chaotic crowd burst into an uproar. Upon hearing the word ‘great thanks,’ it perked the interest of many of the people present.

Even though that Chu Feng was very powerful, it remained that he was a child. Even if he were to become great in the future, it didn’t seem like there would be any benefits to them.

However, if they were to help the Nangong Imperial Clan and kill that Chu Feng, they would be able to obtain benefits right away.

Thus, at this moment, not to mention the Martial Emperor-level experts, even the peak Half Martial Emperor-level experts were

tempted to help the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“Clan Chief Nangong, words are empty, if we are to help you, how are you going to thank us? If your thanks are too small, we will not do such a thing.”

Sure enough, a peak Half Martial Emperor-level old man that didn't belong to any sect or school spoke.

After hearing that man's question, all the people that were tempted perked their ears up. They were waiting for Nangong Beidou to speak about what sort of benefits they would be able to obtain. If the benefits were suitable, they would attack Chu Feng.

At this moment, even Baili Xuankong started to frown. Originally, he had thought this to be an opportunity to kill Nangong Beidou. However, if others were get to involved, the situation would become bad.

While he was not afraid of those mobs, it remained that there were many experts present. If the other three Imperial Clans and the Four Immortals were to get involved in this, not to mention killing Nangong Beidou, he would likely not be able to escape himself.

Thus, Baili Xuankong's brows were deeply narrowed. He was feeling the pressure of an enormous crisis.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Well, you have 3 elders and Nangong Longjian... but hey, I guess none of them are here. ↩

Chapter 1735 – An Exorbitant Demand

“Everyone, listen carefully. While I, Chu Feng, might not possess many things, I do possess a good memory.”

“What’s happening today is a personal matter between the Nangong Imperial Clan and I. I hope that everyone will not get involved in this.”

“This will be considered a favor that I will owe you all. I, Chu Feng, will remember this favor. If fate allows it, I will repay everyone in the future.”

“However, if there is anyone who dares to get involved, I will also remember that person. Unless I, Chu Feng, am killed, I will definitely make that person suffer a miserable fate. Not only that person, but his family, his relatives and everyone related to him will also become implicated.”

“I will definitely not let a single person get away.”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke out. Once he said those words, his bright eyes shone with frigid killing intent.

Even though he was very young, and his cultivation was not yet very high, his gaze was able to make the crowd tremble with fear.

In merely an instant, the temperature in his surroundings lowered by several degrees. It was as if winter had arrived. All of the flowers, plants and trees within a hundred mile radius were covered in a layer of frost. Rivers, waterfalls and all other things that contained water were frozen to ice. Even the air itself was about to be frozen.

This was no mere chilliness. Instead, it was a chilliness formed by enormous killing intent. Not only was it bone-chilling, it was also filled with intimidation that reached the depths of one’s heart and soul.

Astonishment. The crowd was incomparably astonished. They

were not astonished by the killing intent Chu Feng had unleashed. Rather, they were astonished by Chu Feng's determination.

His determined expression alone showed them that he was someone who would keep his word.

At that moment, not to mention the others who were planning to attack Chu Feng, even that peak Half Martial Emperor old man who had asked Nangong Beidou for clarification about the benefits they would obtain started to sweat cold bullets out of fear. Without saying a word, he turned around and left.

As he left, he even shouted loudly, "Little friend Chu Feng, please don't be mistaken. This old man merely asked out of curiosity. I never had the intention to become involved in this. Little friend Chu Feng, I hope that you will not think too much of this. Then, this old man will take his leave."

This scene shocked the crowd. The many people who had wanted to help Nangong Beidou eliminate Chu Feng but did not have a powerful backing immediately gave up on the idea.

They did not wish to bear this fatal risk for the sake of benefits.

To put it simply, all of them were frightened by what Chu Feng had said.

"Well done!" At this moment, Baili Xuankong was overjoyed and praised Chu Feng in his heart.

He had truly never expected that Chu Feng would be able to neutralize the crisis with merely a couple words.

To be able to do that at his young age, how extraordinary would he be once he grew up?

"Damn it," As the saying goes, there would always be someone who feels depressed when someone else feels joy. At the moment when Baili Xuankong was overjoyed, Nangong Beidou was feeling depressed.

With how talented Chu Feng was, he would definitely become extremely powerful in the future. Without mentioning his cultivation, Nangong Beidou had not expected him to be this sharp. This caused Nangong Beidou, who feared Chu Feng, to feel even more fear.

“Everyone here, you are all grand characters. Yet, you all were actually frightened by a member of the younger generation. You all are truly a disappointment to our Ximen Clan.”

“Brother Nangong, allow me, Ximen, to help you,” Right at this moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly acted. He held an Incomplete Imperial Armament in his hand, and his body emitted golden light all over. Like a god of war, he charged toward the battle.

Not only that, like the Nangong Imperial Clan, the experts from the Ximen Imperial Clan actually also set up a special formation and began to transfer their Imperial Bloodline’s power to their Clan Chief.

In this sort of situation, the battle power of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was not at all inferior to Nangong Beidou’s. With the two of them working together, everyone felt that Baili Xuankong was doomed to be defeated.

However, Baili Xuankong’s Death Kill Brush was extremely powerful. As he waved it around, even though the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had joined hands, they were still unable to suppress him. All they could do was fight to a standstill.

“Brother Dongfang, Brother Beitang, what that child has done today is not only aimed at our Nangong Imperial Clan. Instead, his actions are against all our Four Great Imperial Clans. If we do not eliminate that child, he will bring about a disaster in the future. Quickly, join Brother Nangong and I to eliminate this child,” Clan Chief Ximen shouted loudly.

Hearing those words, the hearts of the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief began to waver. They also realized how dangerous Chu Feng was. If someone like that could not be used by them, it would be better to eliminate him.

After all, it was as the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief had said, Chu Feng's actions today were akin to a slap in the face for the Four Great Imperial Clans. He had clearly set himself to oppose the Four Great Imperial Clans.

When that Chu Feng was already daring enough to do so with his current cultivation, if he were to mature, he might not only dare to act this way toward the younger generation of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Instead, he might act this way toward even them.

Instead of that, it would be more beneficial to take advantage of the accusation that the Nangong Imperial Clan had thrown onto Chu Feng to eliminate him right now.

“Clan Chief Dongfang, Clan Chief Beitang, are the two of you really planning to have me, Chu Feng, as an enemy? If that's the case, what exactly could your earlier invitations of great kindness possibly amount to?”

At this time, Chu Feng also spoke. His tone was neither servile nor overbearing. He did not have the intention to request for the two of them to not do anything. Instead, there was a faint trace of threatening and clear mockery in his words.

Hearing those words, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief could only smile bitterly in their hearts. Chu Feng's words were truly ruthless.

No matter what, they had indeed invited Chu Feng earlier. Furthermore, their invitations had been ones with great kindness and magnificent hospitality. If they were to turn against Chu Feng now, it would be equivalent to telling everyone present that they were dishonest and unjust individuals. This placed them in a very

difficult spot.

Suddenly, the Avaricious Immortal stood up and spoke with a beaming smile. “Two Clan Chiefs, in recent days, this old man has been trying to refine an item. I needed two Incomplete Imperial Armaments for that item. If the two of you are capable of providing me with the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, this old man is willing to assist you all in eliminating that Chu Feng.”

Hearing those words, Nangong Beidou and the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief looked to one another. They exchanged communication with their gazes and came to a mutual understanding. Then, together, they said, “We are willing to provide the Incomplete Imperial Armaments. We’ll have to trouble you, Avaricious Immortal.”

Hearing those words, the crowd was incomparably shocked. How precious were Incomplete Imperial Armaments? Even in the Four Great Imperial Clans, they were extremely considerable treasures. Yet, the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan were willing to provide an Incomplete Imperial Armament each to request the Avaricious Immortal’s assistance.

From this, it could be seen how much they wanted to eliminate Chu Feng.

However, after the two Clan Chiefs agreed to the condition, the Avaricious Immortal did not join the battle right away. Instead, the smile on his face grew even stronger.

Then, slowly, he said, “I have another condition. If I am to join the battle, I will be destined to have Chu Feng as an enemy. Thus, regardless of whether or not you all are able to kill him, you must still provide me with the two Incomplete Imperial Armaments.”

“Furthermore, if we do manage to kill Chu Feng, then Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword, Cyan Rainbow Sword, Purple Rainbow Sword, and his Water Immortal Profound Technique, as well as that man’s writing brush, shall all be mine.”

“You...” Hearing those words, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief’s and Nangong Beidou’s expressions both changed. They revealed angry expressions. This Avaricious Immortal was simply taking advantage of their crisis to demand an exorbitant amount. This condition of his was simply too excessive.

After all, everyone knew that while two Incomplete Imperial Armaments might not mean much, and that the Evil God Sword that Chu Feng possessed, the Water Immortal Profound Technique in his body and that man’s writing brush were the real precious treasures, treasures that could even be considered priceless treasures.

It was one thing for that Avaricious Immortal to want two Incomplete Imperial Armaments. However, he actually wanted to obtain all of the treasures. This demand was truly greedy.

“Two Clan Chiefs, are the treasures more important, or is that Chu Feng’s life more important? You all can consider them yourselves. As for me... I actually also do not wish to make someone like Chu Feng an enemy for that mere amount of things. After all, that child’s talent is extraordinary, and he possesses the potential to become an overlord.”

“If he is to become an overlord, hehe... not to mention me, your two Great Imperial Clans will likely suffer destruction by his hand too.”

As the Avaricious Immortal spoke, he sat back down and folded his arms across his chest. He had an appearance of wanting to continue to watch the show.

At this moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and Nangong Beidou were deeply frowning. Wasn’t that the result that they feared the most? Wasn’t that the reason why they wanted to eliminate Chu Feng?

At this moment, the two of them looked to one another again. Determination shone through their eyes. After gnashing his teeth,

Nangong Beidou said, “Avaricious Immortal, you can attack.”

Chapter 1736 – Weapon Biting Its Master

“Coming,” Hearing those words, the Avaricious Immortal was overjoyed. His body shifted, and he arrived in the sky, standing amidst the vast clouds.

After he reached the clouds, his body began to change shape. He turned into an enormous gray wolf with a pair of bat wings on its back.

Not only did that enormous grey wolf possess a very ferocious appearance, it was also a hundred meters long. As its wings moved about, a violent wind was born. The violent wind blew away the vast clouds.

This ferocious grey wolf was formed of light, and it emitted a very special aura. The aura it emitted was capable of causing even the weather to change.

It turned out that not only was the Avaricious Immortal a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he was also a Divine Body. As a rank three Martial Emperor, his battle power was extremely strong after he unleashed his Divine Power. He was not at all weaker than the two Clan Chiefs.

“Aouuu~~~”

Following a wolf’s howl, the Avaricious Immortal charged down from the sky. His speed was many times faster than lightning. Like a grey light, he entered the battle. He began to brandish his massive wolf claws that were akin to sharp blades. As he opened his large mouth, poison mist shot forth.

Not only were his attacks ferocious, all of his attacks were not aimed at Baili Xuankong. Instead, they were all aimed at Chu Feng. From this, it could be seen how treacherous of an individual he was.

To have three rank three Martial Emperors working together,

one could very well imagine how strong they were. If it were ordinary people, they would definitely not be able to withstand them.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

However, Baili Xuankong’s expression remained unchanged. As he waved the Death Kill Brush in his hand around, he began to write the characters ‘death’ and ‘kill’ consecutively. The death and kill characters written by him exploded into golden light and broke apart the combined attack from the three Martial Emperors.

“Chu Feng, don’t be scared. My Death Kill Brush is no ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. Even though I am unable to grasp the true Death Kill Technique to unleash its true power, it is sufficient for me to use it to defend. Furthermore, I am gradually grasping the power of the Death Kill Brush.”

“If those three men’s abilities are only this much, not to mention being unable to injure me and you, they will sooner or later die by my hand,” Baili Xuankong sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

After hearing those words and seeing how Baili Xuankong had managed to withstand the combined attacks from the three Martial Emperors with the Death Kill Brush, Chu Feng finally realized why Baili Xuankong had brought him here.

It turned out that Baili Xuankong possessed certainty of being able to protect Chu Feng.

Furthermore, the way it seemed now, Baili Xuankong was not satisfied with only protecting Chu Feng. Otherwise, he would definitely not continue to tangle with the three Martial Emperors. Otherwise, he would’ve brought Chu Feng away.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng muttered in his heart, “Lord Ancestor’s writing brush is very special indeed. It even greatly resembles that Evil God Sword. It is completely different from ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments.”

“But, it’s as Ancestor had said himself. He has not completely grasped the power of the brush. While it is fine to use it to defend, it is still impossible for him to effectively attack with it.”

“If this is to continue, the situation will likely become bad.”

Sensing that the situation might become bad, Chu Feng immediately sent a voice transmission to Baili Xuankong, “Ancestor, we should go.”

“Even if we must kill Nangong Beidou, today is not the best opportunity to do so. While the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief, Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and the Mooncloud City’s City Master have yet to do anything, they have been observing the entire time. If Nangong Beidou is to continue to offer treasures to lure them in, I fear that they will, sooner or later, join the battle to help him.”

“Chu Feng, don’t be afraid. This Death Kill Brush is capable of becoming stronger against more powerful attacks. Furthermore, I have discovered that I am only able to grasp its power in battles. This is a rare opportunity. As long as I am given sufficient time, I will definitely be able to turn this battle around.”

“I will not stop after killing only Nangong Beidou. That Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and the Avaricious Immortal shall also be killed by me,” After Baili Xuankong finished saying those words, he became even fiercer. Even though he was fighting three people alone, he was not at all at a disadvantage. Furthermore, he became even more imposing than them.

“Sigh~~~” Seeing this, Chu Feng felt helpless and could only sigh. It was unsuitable for him to continue urging his Ancestor against it.

After all, Baili Xuankong had lived for close to ten thousand years. He had undergone many things and was very experienced. If he was determined, Chu Feng would not be able to advise him against it.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s dantian trembled. Then, his legs grew weak. Wave upon wave of indescribable pain began to emit from his dantian and cover his entire body.

“Ancestor, I...” Sensing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng hurriedly spoke.

“Chu Feng, what happened to you?” Seeing that, Baili Xuankong’s expression changed enormously. Even though nothing appeared to be wrong with Chu Feng on the surface, the painful expression on Chu Feng’s face had allowed him to know that something major had happened.

Otherwise, with Chu Feng’s fortitude, how could he reveal such a painful expression?

“It’s the Evil God Sword. I am most definitely feeling the backlash from the Evil God Sword. Merely, I never expected for the backlash to come this quickly and for it to show no sign at all,” Chu Feng was not babbling nonsense at all.

The process of an Incomplete Imperial Armament recognizing its master was actually very similar to a world spirit recognizing a world spiritist. Both of them were virtually a process of entering an agreement. As for the contract between a martial cultivator and an Incomplete Imperial Armament, it was done within the martial cultivator’s dantian and soul.

The pain that Chu Feng was currently feeling originated from his dantian, his soul. The pain that he felt contained the aura of the Evil God Sword. Thus, Chu Feng firmly believed that the Evil God Sword was tormenting him. He was receiving a backlash from the Evil God Sword.

However, he didn’t understand why the backlash from the Evil God Sword would arrive this late, and why he did not sense anything at all before.

However, none of that was important. What was most important was that the backlash from a weapon was an extremely bad situation. Especially the backlash from the Evil God Sword, it was extremely ferocious. It simply appeared to want to kill Chu Feng.

That Evil God Sword was truly too dangerous. It surpassed even Chu Feng's expectations.

"We're going."

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Baili Xuankong's eyes shone. Seeming as if he had thought of something, he revealed an expression of alarm and worry.

Thus, he immediately had a change of heart, and decided to no longer continue to be tangled in battle. He grabbed Chu Feng and soared into the sky to escape.

"He's trying to escape, quickly, stop him!"

Seeing that, Nangong Beidou shouted. Immediately, he unleashed many dragons to form a net in the sky to stop Baili Xuankong from escaping with Chu Feng.

At the same time, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief also attacked to help Nangong Beidou stop Baili Xuankong. As for the Avaricious Immortal, he continued to unleash attacks directed at Chu Feng.

"Are you all really capable of stopping me?"

Baili Xuankong snorted coldly. He grabbed onto the Death Kill Brush. Together with his brush, he shot toward the sky like a sharp sword. In an instant, rumbles and screams could be heard nonstop. He had slaughtered the numerous dragons and reached through to the clouds.

Relying only on a single Death Kill Brush, Baili Xuankong had cut apart both Nangong Beidou and the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief's combined attack to prevent him from escaping, as well as the Avaricious Immortal's sneak attacks at Chu Feng. Baili

Xuankong was so powerful that even the three of them combined were no match for him.

“Compass Immortal, please help us. As long as you are willing to help us kill those two, as long as it’s something that my Nangong Imperial Clan is capable of, regardless what sort of demand you might request from me, I will definitely agree to it,” Seeing that the situation was extremely bad, Nangong Beidou turned his gaze to the Compass Immortal, who was watching the show down below.

Hearing those words, the people in the crowd all opened their mouths wide with shock.

As long as it was something that the Nangong Imperial Clan was capable of, regardless of what sort of demand he made, he would definitely agree to it? This sort of treatment was truly frightening. With the strength of the Nangong Imperial Clan, for them to offer this sort of treatment, who could possibly be able to withstand it?

At this moment, Baili Xuankong started to frown. Even though he had discovered the might of the Death Kill Brush from this battle, discovered how even the three rank three Martial Emperors combined were no match for him, he had no choice but to fear the Compass Immortal.

The Compass Immortal’s fame was not one to joke around with. He was definitely not someone who the Avaricious Immortal could compare with. If he were to help them, both he and Chu Feng would likely not be able to escape today.

“Haha, I have only come here today as a spectator. Clan Chief Nangong, don’t bother trying to drag me into the battle.”

However, to the crowd’s surprise, even when facing Nangong Beidou’s extravagant treatment, the compass Immortal only laughed and was not moved.

Chapter 1737 – Say It Again

Hearing those words, Nangong Beidou, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Avaricious Immortal were all startled. None of them expected for the Compass Immortal to refuse such extravagant treatment.

Right at this moment, Baili Xuankong suddenly shouted, “Break through the heavenly dome!!!”

With his shout, the Death Kill Brush in his hand started to shine brighter. Golden light radiated all over like the sun. Then, the golden light exploded in midair.

The powerful impulse pushed back even the three rank three Martial Emperors. The aftermath of the attack gradually sprinkled downward. Even though it was incomparably gorgeous, it brought about great fear to the crowd like the descent of the reaper.

The aftermath of that explosion was too powerful. If it were to land onto the surface, the majority of the crowd would likely be hit with a calamity.

Those below rank three Martial Emperor would either die or be gravely injured.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, the Compass Immortal waved his sleeve and brought about a burst of wind. The wind swept toward the horizon and blew all of the golden rays of light away instantly.

When the golden rays of light disappeared, Baili Xuankong and Chu Feng were already gone. All that remained were the ashen complexions of Nangong Beidou, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Avaricious Immortal.

Even with the three of them working together, they were actually unable to stop a man of the same cultivation. At that moment, they had lost all face.

However, at that moment, the crowd had all cast their gazes onto the Compass Immortal.

Compass Immortal's previous attack had already shown to the crowd how powerful he was. If he had been willing to stop Chu Feng, Chu Feng would definitely not have escaped.

Thus, the crowd was truly unable to understand why the Compass Immortal did not stop Chu Feng and that mysterious expert when he could easily have done so.

Why he had decided to miss out on the great opportunity provided by Nangong Beidou?

"For you all to let Chu Feng escape today, you will definitely regret your decision in the future," Suddenly, Nangong Beidou turned his gaze downward toward the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the White-browed Immortal.

Facing that gaze, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief only curled their lips and smiled. They were naturally not afraid of Nangong Beidou.

As for the White-browed Immortal, his heart tightened. After being stunned for so long, he finally woke up.

However, after waking up, he felt enormous pain and despair.

Chu Feng had not died. Not only did this mean that he had failed, most importantly, before Chu Feng had revealed his identity, he had actually been filled with that much admiration for Chu Feng.

At this moment, he was feeling extremely unwell. He had admired... a person whom he had looked down upon and wanted to eliminate before. This sort of sensation was something that only he understood.

"White-brow, exactly why were you stunned earlier?" Nangong Beidou landed from the sky and spoke fiercely to the White-browed Immortal. He was truly angry.

When Chu Feng had defeated his two sons and revealed his heaven-defying talent, he had thought that it would be a great disaster should Chu Feng be alive, that he must find a way to alleviate the situation and reconcile with Chu Feng.

At that time, the White-browed Immortal had insisted to him that he must not reconcile with Chu Feng, and must instead eliminate him.

Today, the disaster had come to fruition. Even if he wished to reconcile with Chu Feng, he would not be able to. However, White-browed Immortal had actually stood there and watched all this go on without helping him take care of Chu Feng. As such, how could he not be angered?

Not only had the White-browed Immortal brought harm to him, he even didn't help him during his time of need. Nangong Beidou only restrained himself because the White-browed Immortal was one of the Ten Immortals and still had his uses. Otherwise, he would definitely have smacked him to death with a palm strike.

"Brother Nangong, I..." The White-browed Immortal wanted to explain. However, in the end, he was unable to say anything, and could only sigh. Then, he grew silent.

"Sigh, what a pity. To have that Chu Feng escape, I fear that I will not be able to be at ease in the future," At this moment, the Avaricious Immortal also sighed.

Then, he turned to Nangong Beidou and the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and said, "Even though we didn't manage to kill that Chu Feng and allowed him to escape, I also set him up as an enemy. Thus, you two best not refuse to provide me with the Incomplete Imperial Armaments you promised."

"Tianlong, hand over your Blue Rainbow Sword," Nangong Beidou said to Nangong Tianlong.

"Father, I..." hearing those words, Nangong Tianlong's

complexion turned ashen.

“I said hand it over,” Nangong Beidou shouted angrily.

Hearing that, Nangong Tianlong did not dare to hesitate, and immediately took out his Blue Rainbow Sword and handed it to Nangong Beidou.

“Avaricious, I know you’ve always wanted this Blue Rainbow Sword. I’ll satisfy you and hand it to you. However, it currently belongs to my son. Thus, when you sever the connection between them, make sure to not injure him,” Nangong Beidou handed the Blue Rainbow Sword to the Avaricious Immortal.

“Rest assured, to me, that is a trivial matter,” The Avaricious Immortal laughed mischievously as he received the Blue Rainbow Sword. After obtaining the Blue Rainbow Sword, he gently moved his hand above it. Immediately, a golden light streak across the sword.

When that golden light streaked through the sword, Nangong Tianlong’s legs grew weak. He took two steps back, and his complexion grew as pale as paper. However, more than anything, he had an expression of sadness on his face. Evidently, the Blue Rainbow Sword no longer belonged to him.

After that, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief also took out an Incomplete Imperial Armament and handed it to the Avaricious Immortal.

At the moment when he handed the Incomplete Imperial Armament to the Avaricious Immortal, he felt as if his heart were bleeding. Not only did he not manage to kill Chu Feng, he had also suffered the loss of an Incomplete Imperial Armament. He had truly lost enormously from this.

“Yin Chengkong! Look at the disciple you’ve taught!!” Suddenly, Nangong Beidou pointed his finger in the direction of the people who had come from the Cyanwood Mountain. His finger was

directly aimed at the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Assembly Master, Yin Chengkong.

Facing this, Yin Chengkong started to frown. With even him frowning, the complexion of the rest of the people from the Cyanwood Mountain had all turned ashen. Some of the elders were so scared that they began to tremble with fear.

Judging from this, it was clear that Nangong Beidou already knew that Chu Feng was their Cyanwood Mountain's disciple.

Even though Chu Feng had managed to escape, the Cyanwood Mountain would not be able to escape. At this moment, both the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan were filled with anger. Judging from their attitudes, it seemed that they were planning to vent their anger on them.

"Chu Feng has long been expelled from our Cyanwood Mountain. He is already no longer someone of our Cyanwood Mountain. Clan Chief Nangong, what might be the meaning behind those words you've said?" Yin Chengkong pretended to be calm as he said those words.

"Expelled? Did you think you would be able to escape responsibility just because he's been expelled from your Cyanwood Mountain? Did you think that after you've nurtured a demon, you will be able to abstain from all responsibilities just because you broke off your relationship with him?" The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said angrily.

Hearing those words, the people of the Cyanwood Mountain who were worried to begin with became even more worried. It seemed that they had guessed correctly. The Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan had suffered enormously from Chu Feng and were filled with anger, and they now planned to vent their anger on the Cyanwood Mountain.

"Clan Chiefs, the Cyanwood Mountain is such an enormous power with countless disciples. It is also beyond their control for a

disciple like Chu Feng to appear there.”

“I feel that they have already done an extraordinary feat to break off all relationships with Chu Feng in a prompt fashion. After all, Chu Feng has never really committed any bloody atrocities that offend the heavens.”

“Thus, you all should stop making things difficult on the Cyanwood Mountain. Else, you’ll only appear to be the strong bullying the weak, and become the people’s laughingstock,” The Compass Immortal said those words as he sipped on the tea from the teacup in his hand.

Hearing those words, the brows of Nangong Beidou and the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief started to narrow. They began to reveal expressions of displeasure. Earlier, the Compass Immortal had refused to help them. And now, he was even speaking out for the Cyanwood Mountain. Exactly what was his intention?

“Compass Immortal, exactly what is the relationship between you and that Chu Feng? Why did you refuse to help us capture him earlier, and why are you speaking to absolve the Cyanwood Mountain’s relationship now?” The Avaricious Immortal, who had disliked the Compass Immortal to begin with, immediately seized this opportunity to sow dissension. He was planning to borrow the strength of the Ximen Imperial Clan and the Nangong Imperial Clan to take care of the Compass Immortal.

“Haha...” Hearing those words, the Compass Immortal laughed lightly. He placed the teacup in his hand onto the table beside him, stood up, looked to the Avaricious Immortal and said, “Say it again.”

Chapter 1738 – Leaving The Scene Domineeringly

“Sure, I’ll say it again. It’s not like I fear you,” The Avaricious Immortal gathered up his courage and planned to say it again.

“Bang~~~”

However, right after his words left his mouth, the Compass Immortal smacked down with a palm strike and smashed the table before him to pieces.

Then, he stood up and said with a cold voice, “You asked me what sort of relationship I have with Chu Feng? You’re clearly trying to say that I am related to Chu Feng.”

“However, use that head of yours that has been kicked by a donkey and think carefully. If I was related to Chu Feng, would you still be able to stand here alive?”

After the Compass Immortal said these words, his eyes shone. Then, light began to radiate from behind him. He was like a buddha standing there. His esteemed presence was extremely intimidating.

“Boom~~~”

At the same time, a very powerful oppressive sensation flooded the entire area. That was not only an Emperor’s might, it was a rank four Martial Emperor’s Emperor’s might.

Before this Emperor’s might, the younger generation present all started to shiver in fear. While they were feeling fear, they did not feel any oppression from the Emperor’s might.

Instead, it was those possessing higher levels of cultivation who felt greater pressure from the Compass Immortal’s Emperor’s might. For example, not only were Nangong Beidou, the Avaricious Immortal and many of the others having difficulty

breathing, even their bones were feeling so much pressure that they began to emit cracking sounds.

At this moment, the Avaricious Immortal that had spoken out against the Compass Immortal earlier did not dare to utter another word. In fact, he did not even dare to look at the Compass Immortal face to face, and had lowered his head silently.

The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief clenched his teeth and shouted, "Compass Immortal, by releasing your oppressive might, are you planning to have our Ximen Imperial Clan as enemies?"

"You should know that you are not the only rank four Martial Emperor in the Holy Land of Martialism, our Ximen Imperial Clan also possesses rank four Martial Emperors ."

"Don't think you can act this arrogantly just because our Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders are not present."

However, the smile on the Compass Immortal's face did not waver when he heard the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief's threatening words. Not only did he not release that oppressive might, his brows moved, and he actually increased the strength of his oppressive might.

Once the strength of his oppressive might was increased, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, Nangong Beidou and the Avaricious Immortal's knees all grew weak, and they nearly knelt onto the ground.

The gap between their strength was simply too enormous. In the cultivation realm of Martial Emperors, a difference of a single level of cultivation was as enormous as the difference between heaven and earth. No matter how strong they were, they would not be able to contend against a rank four Martial Emperor.

"Brother Compass, I misspoke earlier. I hope that you will not pay mind to this," Feeling that he was unable to continue resisting, the Avaricious Immortal spoke to ask for forgiveness.

However, the Compass Immortal still had a smile on his face and did not remove his oppressive might.

“I shall give face to the Compass Immortal today. You all from the Cyanwood Mountain can leave. I do not wish to see you all again,” Nangong Beidou said. He knew that if this were to continue, the ones who would suffer would be them.

It was only when those words were said that the Compass Immortal removed his oppressive might and sat back down.

In response, Yin Chengkong hurriedly got up. Together with Elder Guan Hong and Dugu Xingfeng, he led the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain and hurriedly left.

During this period of time, everyone was completely quiet. They were still stunned by the Compass Immortal’s oppressive might because that oppressive might was simply too frightening.

It was only when the people from the Cyanwood Mountain left that the Compass Immortal stood back up.

“Since the competition is over, I will no longer linger. I thank Mooncloud City’s City Master for inviting me over,” he said.

“Immortal, please take care,” The Mooncloud City’s City Master clasped his fist with a smile on his face. Evidently, despite his relationship with the Four Imperial Clans, he was not willing to offend the Compass Immortal.

The Compass Immortal soared into the sky. However, suddenly, he stopped. Then, he turned around and said, “Oh, that’s right, Clan Chief Ximen...”

“Indeed, I am not the only rank four Martial Emperor in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, I am the only person by the name of Compass in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Even though your Ximen imperial Clan has been in existence for a very long time, I, Compass, have also made friends throughout the world. If you think that your Ximen Imperial Clan is capable of

it, feel free to come and find me at any time.”

“Hahaha...”

By the time those words were heard, the Compass Immortal had already flown away. The only thing that remained was a series of ear-piercing laughs.

Arrogant. He was so very arrogant. However, faced with this sort of arrogance, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief could only furrow his brows and accept it silently. The reason for that was because he did not have the strength to fight back.

Everyone remembered this scene deep within their hearts. At the moment when they were feeling astonished, they also pondered why such a powerful Compass Immortal would shield Chu Feng like he did.

However, this was insignificant. After all, what passed had already passed. What had happened today would become the past. What was important was the future.

In the future, the name of a single person would spread through the Holy Land of Martialism. This time around, the clamor would be enormous. The reason for that was because not only had that person utterly defeated the Four Clans' younger generation, he had also subdued a Demon Sword. As for the identity of this man, he was the one who the Nangong Imperial Clan had spread wanted posters all over before, Chu Feng.

.....

The people from the Cyanwood Mountain had already left. Not only had Yin Chengkong brought with him the elders from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, even the disciples that had been dispatched this time around had been brought away with them.

“That Chu Feng is truly daring. He actually left behind such an enormous burden for us. If it wasn't for that Compass Immortal saving us out of kindness, we would've likely all died there.”

A frizzy-haired and red-complexioned old man spoke with a face of complaint. He was an elder from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly. However, he was not familiar with Chu Feng. After hearing about Chu Feng's past deeds, the only thing he felt for Chu Feng was scorn.

In fact, at this moment, there were a lot of people like him who were complaining about Chu Feng. However, to their complaints, the three strongest individuals of the current Cyanwood Mountain, the Assembly Master Yin Chengkong, Elder Guan Hong and Headmaster Dugu Xingfeng were not saying anything.

The three of them knew the truth of the matter. From the bottoms of their hearts, they despised these elders' complaints.

However, due to many reasons, it was unsuitable for them to reprimand these elders. Thus, they could only pretend to not hear anything.

“Lord Elder, I don't think this matter can all be blamed on junior brother Chu Feng. With his character, he would definitely not have planned to harm us. The ones being excessive were the Imperial Clans,” Jiang Furong said.

As matters stood, they had already learned what Chu Feng did in Mooncloud City. Different from the elders, after Jiang Furong came to know about this matter, she was extremely happy.

Furthermore, she was feeling very ferocious and angry for Chu Feng. After all, the Nangong Imperial Clan had oppressed Chu Feng to this extent.

Thus, even though this elder possessed a higher status than her, she was still unable to tolerate him speaking out against Chu Feng.

“His character? What sort of character could he possibly possess? You're nothing but a child, what the hell would you know?” That red-complexioned old man angrily berated Jiang Furong. He felt it very insulting to be criticized by a member of the younger

generation.

“I know junior brother Chu Feng’s character better than you, elder. When we were being humiliated in the underground palace, it was junior brother Chu Feng who saved us. Not only did he save us, he also redeemed our Cyanwood Mountain’s dignity,” Jiang Furong said unyieldingly.

“Junior brother? You’re still calling him junior brother? Do you not think that our Cyanwood Mountain has wiped his ass enough?”

“He saved you all? What use is that? If the Four Clans are to become further enraged, all of the people in our Cyanwood Mountain will be killed. Who will take responsibility for that? Are you going to take responsibility for that? Are you capable of taking responsibility for that?” The red-complexioned elder shouted angrily.

“Elder, are you that afraid of death?” Finally, Dugu Xingfeng, who had been silent for a very long time, was unable to endure it anymore.

Furthermore, when he spoke those words, chilliness filled the air. Within his tone was a very strong sense of annoyance.

Chapter 1739 – Further And Further Away

Hearing those words, the expressions on the elders who were cursing out at Chu Feng earlier all changed. Their old faces began to tremble.

Had it been before, they would not have placed Dugu Xingfeng in their eyes at all. After all, they possessed higher seniority than Dugu Xingfeng.

However, Dugu Xingfeng had become a Martial Emperor, whereas they were still only peak Half Martial Emperors. Thus, they would naturally not dare to act rudely toward him.

“Oh Xingfeng, what sorts of words are those? You must not misunderstand us. We are naturally not people afraid of death. Merely, we feel that it would truly not be worth it if we were to ruin our Cyanwood Mountain’s several tens of thousand of years of foundation because of a single Chu Feng,” Feeling helpless, that red-complexioned elder smiled politely and spoke to explain.

“Our Cyanwood Mountain’s foundation will not be ruined. I’m afraid you all are overthinking,” Although Dugu Xingfeng spoke with a very tranquil tone, the coldness contained within his tone was not reduced in the slightest.

Sensing Dugu Xingfeng’s annoyance, that elder could only continue to smile politely, “Of course, you’re right, of course. However, even with that being the case, we must still teach these members of the younger generation how to keep their mouths in control. Else, sooner or later, they’ll provoke a disaster.”

“You...”

Hearing those words, Jiang Furong wanted to continue to talk back. However, at this moment, a hand suddenly grabbed her. It was Tao Xiangyu.

Tao Xiangyu began to blink and shake her head at Jiang Furong

to indicate that she needed to stop arguing with that elder.

“Senior sister Jiang, it would do for us to remember the grace junior brother Chu Feng showed us in our hearts. There is no need to bother arguing with this bunch of inflexible old men,” At the same time, a voice transmission entered Jiang Furong’s ears. It was Bai Yunxiao.

At this moment, Jiang Furong looked to Bai Yunxiao and the others. She discovered that they were all looking at her. Their current appearances were completely different from before.

Seeing this, Jiang Furong’s heart was moved. It seemed that Chu Feng saving them had not only caused Bai Yunxiao and the others to remember the grace he had shown them in their hearts, he had also changed them.

“I can take care of my disciples myself. There is no need for you to worry,” Right at this moment, Dugu Xingfeng spoke again. At the time he spoke those words, he even took a fierce glance at that elder.

That glance from Dugu Xingfeng caused the red-complexioned elder’s face to turn ashen. He was unable to say anything. At that moment, he felt extremely depressed.

He truly did not understand why Dugu Xingfeng would speak out for a member of the younger generation.

Of course, they didn’t know that Dugu Xingfeng was not speaking out for Jiang Furong. Instead, he was speaking out for Chu Feng.

“Yoh, it’s truly lively here,” Right at this moment, a silhouette suddenly appeared in the sky and descended before the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain.

Seeing this person, the people from the Cyanwood Mountain immediately felt enormous veneration. The reason for that was because the person who had arrived was the Compass Immortal.

“We pay our respects to Compass Immortal,” Led by Yin

Chengkong, the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain immediately bowed courteously to the Compass Immortal. After all, the Compass Immortal was one of the Ten Immortals, one of the peak experts of the Holy Land of Martialism.

Without mentioning others, just by the fact that he managed to suppress the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Avaricious Immortal by himself was sufficient enough to show how powerful he was.

However, this was not the important aspect. The important aspect was that the Compass Immortal had helped them before and shown them enormous grace.

"Yin Chengkong, we've met each other before. Thus, we could be said to be acquaintances. There is no need for you to be this courteous. I have come here to ask you about something," the Compass Immortal said with a beaming smile. Although he was fat and ugly, he appeared to be very amiable. Thus, even though his status was extraordinary, he did not cause others to feel very restrained around him.

"Immortal, please ask," Yin Chengkong said.

"May I know where Chu Feng is from?" The Compass Immortal asked.

Hearing those words, Dugu Xingfeng's gaze narrowed slightly. He had become alert. Regardless of whether or not the Compass Immortal had spoken out for them earlier, it remained that he did not know the Compass Immortal well. Thus, he did not know exactly what sort of intention the Compass Immortal had in asking about Chu Feng.

"As far as I know, Chu Feng is from the Southern Sea Region. Other than that, I know very little about him. Immortal, why have you asked about this?" Yin Chengkong said.

"It's nothing, I merely thought of it," After the Compass

Immortal spoke those words, he turned around and planned to leave.

“Immortal, thank you for speaking out for us in righteousness today. It is only because of you that we managed to escape a potential calamity. The great grace Immortal has shown us is something that we will engrave in our hearts. If Immortal is to pass by our Cyanwood Mountain in the future, you must definitely come and stay as a guest so that we can treat you with hospitality.”

Right at this moment, that red-complexioned elder stood forward courteously and spoke in a very eager manner.

The Compass Immortal turned around and asked, “What is your name?”

“Immortal, I am called Song Wanjie,” Seeing that the Compass Immortal had actually spoken to him, the red-complexioned elder immediately started to smile. He was so excited that he was unable to conceal his happiness.

“What do you think of Chu Feng?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“Chu Feng?” Hearing the words ‘Chu Feng’, the red-complexioned elder was startled. He did not understand why the Compass Immortal would ask that. However, soon, he had a sudden inspiration. Seeming as if he thought of something, he said, “That child is an utter disgrace. He places no one in his eyes and was expelled by our Cyanwood Mountain long ago. He is no longer related to our Cyanwood Mountain.”

“You seem to indicate that you despise Chu Feng enormously?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“Actually, I not only despise that child, I utterly detest him. If possible, I would definitely eliminate him myself so that he will not bring harm to the people of the world in the future,” The red-complexioned elder made a motion with his knife-hand to show his determination.

“In that case, do you know why I’ve helped you all?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“Immortal is a person of great righteousness. You were unable to sit and watch as the Imperial Clans bully the weak. You are truly a person of great virtue, truly a person worthy of being praised as an Immortal,” The red-complexioned elder said.

“Your ability to flatter is quite good. For you to be able to obtain your current status in the Cyanwood Mountain, you must’ve flattered quite a few people and done many despicable things, no?” The Compass Immortal asked with a smile.

“Eh... this...” At this moment, the red-complexioned elder was immediately stunned. He had truly never expected that the Compass Immortal would say such a thing.

“I might as well tell you, the reason why I helped you all was only because of one person. That person is Chu Feng.”

“Some time ago, Chu Feng helped me once. Today, I was merely returning the favor that I owed him.”

“Since you all have expelled little friend Chu Feng from your Cyanwood Mountain, you all no longer have any relationship with little friend Chu Feng. Thus, what happened today is a one time thing. I wish you all the best.”

After speaking those words, the Compass Immortal coldly swept his glance at the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain. Then, he brushed his sleeve and flew away.

Only the people from the Cyanwood Mountain remained there. They stood there as if they were petrified. Especially the red-complexioned elder and the others who had been complaining about Chu Feng. At this moment, they were stunned like chickens. They were feeling so embarrassed that they were unable to even say a single word.

They had truly never expected that the Compass Immortal had

helped them because of Chu Feng. Yet, the red-complexioned elder had actually insulted Chu Feng before the Compass Immortal.

He had truly become a victim of his own ingenuity. Just thinking about how he had unknowingly offended someone as powerful as the Compass Immortal, he felt like dying.

Those who had slandered Chu Feng were all scared witless. As for Jiang Furong and the others, their hearts were beating rapidly.

Even though they did not know what Chu Feng had done, just thinking about how the Compass Immortal said that Chu Feng had helped him, and that he owed Chu Feng a favor, they were unable to remain calm. Their emotions were rushing overwhelmingly. Even their hairs were erect.

The reason for that was because they knew that Chu Feng had grown further and further away from them, that he had stepped into an extraordinary level.

A level that they might not be able to set foot into in their entire lives.

Chapter 1740 – Two Major Events

After this matter ended, in order to save face, the Four Great Imperial Clans bribed the people who had witnessed the events in Mooncloud City with many treasures and benefits, hoping that they would keep everything that had happened confidential. They truly did not want word of the event to spread out.

However, as the saying goes, walls have ears and doors have eyes. With so many people present, how could all of them keep what had happened confidential, just because they had obtained benefits? Those with large mouths immediately leaked what had happened.

Sure enough, not long afterward, Chu Feng's complete suppression of the Four Clans' younger generation began to spread...

At this moment, on the Immortal Island, there was an old man that emitted airs of immortality standing by the lake with his hands behind his back. This person was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

"I got it, you can go," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal waved his hand at the messenger behind him.

After that messenger left, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal cast his gaze toward the direction of Mooncloud City and sighed, "He actually didn't die. That's enormously fortunate. If it were anybody else, they would definitely choose to live out their lives in seclusion. However, Chu Feng... he instead decided to do such a world-shaking matter. That child is truly not one to allow others to be worry-free."

Even though the Weaponry Refinement Immortal spoke those words with a tone that contained a slight trace of complaint, his eyes were filled with anticipation, and he had a slight smile on his face.

.....

At the same time, in an ancient pagoda located at the peak of the Ten Thousand Miles Heavenly Summit, a slender and elegant woman with a head of white hair that emitted killing intent all over was sitting there. This woman was the Snow-haired Immortal.

Suddenly, a golden light flashed past, and the Snow-haired Immortal abruptly opened her eyes. The golden light suddenly stopped before her eyes. It was a little golden bird, a bird formed from a world spirit formation.

Cold light shone through the Snow-haired Immortal's eyes. Then, the little golden bird began to disintegrate into golden strands of gaseous matter that entered the Snow-haired Immortal's forehead.

“What? That brat is actually still alive?”

The next moment, the Snow-haired Immortal immediately stood up and revealed an expression of shock.

“Hahaha, hahahaha...” Soon, the Snow-haired Immortal revealed an extremely joyous expression and started to laugh crazily. Then, she began to repeat, “Heaven's will! This is definitely Heaven's will! The Heavens want me, Snow-hair, to have a successor!”

This matter spread extremely quickly. More and more people came to know Chu Feng's name.

Perhaps it was not the first time that they had heard the name Chu Feng. However, this time around, the name Chu Feng was deeply engraved into their hearts and minds. After all, this young man by the name of Chu Feng had done such a world-shaking thing. He had utterly humiliated the Four Great Imperial Clans...

After this matter with Chu Feng spread and shocked the world, another grand matter began to occur.

The people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan began to constantly be killed. It was not only the people from the younger generation, even the people from the older generation were being killed.

This matter brought great fear and panic to the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan. However, there was nothing they could do. With no other choice, they ended up ordering all of their clansmen to stay inside their clans.

They were no fools. Immediately, they thought that someone had come to attack them out of retaliation. Who would attack them? Naturally, it would be none other than Chu Feng, and that mysterious expert that stood behind him.

After all, in Mooncloud City, only the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan had tried to kill Chu Feng. This was also the reason why only the two of them were being attacked, while the Dongfang Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan were completely fine.

At this moment, the clan chiefs of the Four Great Imperial Clans were gathered together once again in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“That mysterious man that helped Chu Feng, for him to be able to take out Incomplete Imperial Armaments like the Evil God Sword and the Death Kill Brush, he is definitely not someone ordinary. Being educated by him, Chu Feng will definitely become someone very powerful in the future.”

“We cannot continue to sit and wait for death, else the situation will become worse and worse. We must join hands and strike back at them,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Brother Nangong, what you’ve said is incorrect. The people who ended up making that Chu Feng into their enemy is your Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan. It’s not related to us,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said with an indifferent smile. He was declaring that he was unrelated to this matter.

Suddenly, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief asked, "Brother Beitang, Beitang Zhiqiang and your son Beitang Zimo have already disappeared for many days. Have you manage to obtain any news of them yet?"

"Why are you asking this? Could it be that you've managed to obtain hints to where they are?" The Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief raised his eyebrows slightly. Evidently, he was worried about this matter deeply.

"Since you can't find them, you shouldn't bother looking for them anymore. Your son and that Beitang Zhiqiang once had conflicts with that Chu Feng. I believe that the location that they've disappeared in should be around Mooncloud City, no?" The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Ximen, while you can say what you want, do not damn my son and Zhiqiang," The Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief was slightly angered.

"It's useless to be angry at me. With that Chu Feng's temperament of taking revenge, if he were to encounter Beitang Zhiqiang and your son, he would definitely not let them get away."

"Actually, you should know very well what has happened to them. You should stop trying to deceive yourself."

"That said... to be able to remain this calm after having your own son killed, I am truly in admiration," The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said mockingly.

The Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief did not refute his words, and instead grew silent. He was no fool. How could he not have guessed that his son might have been killed by Chu Feng?

He merely did not wish to make Chu Feng an enemy for the sake of the safety of the Beitang Imperial Clan. That was the reason why he was refusing to acknowledge this. After all, Chu Feng was extremely dangerous.

“Beitang, Dongfang, I’ll tell you two the truth. Back then, when Chu Feng was staying as a guest in our clan, he did not do any malicious deeds. Indeed, I was the one who wanted to push him into a corner,” Nangong Beidou said.

“Heh, even without you telling us, we already guessed it,” the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief laughed lightly and said mockingly.

“But, do you two know why I wished to eliminate Chu Feng?” Nangong Beidou asked.

“Why?” The Dongfang Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs asked together.

“That day, my youngest son Tianhu reached a breakthrough, and let out the abnormal sign of a soaring golden dragon. Right at that time, that Chu Feng also happened to reach a breakthrough and also let out an abnormal sign.”

“Something like that would be completely normal. After all, other than our Imperial Bloodlines, Divine Bodies will also cause abnormal signs when they reach a breakthrough. However, the abnormal sign caused by that Chu Feng just so happened to suppress my youngest son’s abnormal sign,” Nangong Beidou said.

“What did you say? Suppressed his abnormal sign?!” Hearing those words, the two clan chiefs were shocked.

“Not only that, when that Chu Feng’s abnormal sign appeared, all of the people in our Nangong Imperial Clan felt our bloodlines tremble in fear.”

“I believe everyone knows that when Royal Bloodlines encounter our Imperial Bloodlines, they would tremble in fear. However, you all most definitely do not know how that felt.”

“Actually, the people from our Nangong Imperial Clan also didn’t know about that. However, at the moment when Chu Feng triggered his abnormal sign, we came to know that sensation,”

Nangong Beidou said.

“You’re saying that Chu Feng is also a possessor of an Inherited Bloodline, and that his Inherited Bloodline is above our Imperial Bloodlines and capable of suppressing us?” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“That’s impossible! Isn’t our Imperial Bloodline the strongest Inherited Bloodline in the Holy Land of Martialism?!” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief became emotional. After all, if this were true, it would deeply concern the status of their Dongfang Imperial Clan in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“The world is enormous, nothing is too bizarre. That Chu Feng’s origin is mysterious to begin with. Perhaps he might’ve obtained some sort of inheritance from the Outer World? After all, the path of martial cultivation is never-ending. Furthermore, since the Ancient Era, there have been records saying that the vast starry sky is the true place for martial cultivators to continue their journey,” Speaking till this point, Nangong Beidou looked to the horizon.

Since ancient times, many experts were only capable of becoming experts due to the treasures that had fallen from the Outer World. Those were all not things capable of being found in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chapter 1741 – A Mountain Of Corpses, A Sea Of Blood

“How would we know whether or not you are making this sort of thing up?” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“I would not deceive you two in something as serious as this. That Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings are capable of increasing his cultivation by two levels. The abnormal sign caused by Chu Feng was also formed by lightning.”

“Furthermore, you all have seen with your own eyes how heaven-defying that child’s talent is. The speed at which his cultivation increases is simply unimaginable. How could you all still not understand what he is with that sort of performance?” Nangong Beidou said.

“I believe what Brother Nangong has said,” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said those words and then stood up. He looked to the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief. Then, he said, “The one you all are afraid of right now is that man who possessed the Death Kill Brush. However, I can tell you all this with certainty. The greatest threat is definitely Chu Feng.”

“No matter how strong that other man is, he is only a rank three Martial Emperor. Taking care of him would not be hard.”

“However, Chu Feng will be much more difficult to manage. If he is to mature, our Four Great Imperial Clans will not be able to retain a footing in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Even if our Four Great Imperial Clans are able to continue to exist, we will only be like the numerous Royal Clans that have struggled on at death’s door.”

“If you all truly plan to bury your descendants’ future outlook and ruin the foundation set up by your ancestors for the sake of

your own cowardice, then you can continue to remain silent like this.”

“Moreover, Brother Nangong and I have called you two here not for the sake of obtaining your assistance. We merely wished to warn you two out of kindness.”

“No matter how our Four Great Imperial Clans have fought with one another in the past, we still possess the same roots. I only hope that our Four Great Imperial Clans will be able to continue to prosper. I do not wish for us to, one day, become inferior to even the Nine Powers.”

“I’ve said all that I needed to say. Everyone, farewell,” After the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said those words, he prepared to leave.

“Brother Ximen, wait a moment,” Right at this moment, the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly spoke to stop him. He sucked in a mouthful of air and then, as if he had made a great resolution, said, “This matter is extremely important. I’ll return and consult with the Utmost Exalted Elders first.”

“I will do the same,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief also said.

Hearing those words, light smiles appeared on the faces of Nangong Beidou and the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief.

The two of them knew very well that, to those old monsters, the future of their Imperial Clans surpassed everything. If they knew of Chu Feng’s existence, they would definitely not let him live.

Afterward, the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief both left. However, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief did not leave.

At this moment, only the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and Nangong Beidou remained.

“Chu Feng’s strength has started to appear. Even if our Four

Clans are to join hands, it will still be quite difficult to take care of him.”

“All of this was caused by you. I wish to ask, as matters stand, have you once regretted your decision back then?” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief asked Nangong Beidou.

“Originally, you were able to be like them and not become Chu Feng’s enemy. Yet, you decided to join me. I also wish to ask, have you ever regretted your decision?” Nangong Beidou asked instead of answering.

“I, Ximen Chuanliu, am never one to regret,” When the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said those words, coldness shined through his eyes. It was the determination to absolutely kill Chu Feng.

Afterward, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief left. Nangong Beidou personally saw him off. However, when he looked to the direction where the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief left, a sorrowful expression appeared on Nangong Beidou’s face.

Actually, he had been regretting his actions since long ago. However, as matters stood, there was already no other choice left for him.

.....

At the moment when the Four Great Imperial Clans were plotting how to take care of Chu Feng, Chu Feng was completely ignorant as to what was happening. In fact, he didn’t even know about any of the recent things that had happened in the world.

After receiving the backlash from the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng had lost consciousness for a long time. It was only recently that he had woken up.

“Where is this?” Seeing the scene before him, Chu Feng’s heart tightened.

What appeared before him were countless bones. There were

human bones and monstrous beast bones that were all gathered in one location and piled so high that it reached the clouds.

What appeared before him was the fishy smell of blood. There was so much blood that the depths could not be seen. With a gentle breeze, waves of blood that reached the heavens could be formed.

This place was truly a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood!!!

The reeking smell of blood was truly too strong. It had covered all of heaven and earth and dyed even the sky crimson. This place was simply hell.

Especially those bones; the larger ones among them could reach the skies. Even though they had been dead for a long time, their bones still contained their might, and gave Chu Feng an enormous pressure.

Those bones, even after death they were this frightening. How frightening must they have been when they were alive? Why would they all have died here?

Suddenly, a deep and gloomy voice sounded in Chu Feng's ears. "You will not be able to conquer me. You'll only end up being used by me."

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng took several steps back in succession and, with a 'putt,' fell into the sea of blood.

From head to toe, and even the depths of his soul, Chu Feng started to tremble violently. Fear. This was the first time in his life that Chu Feng had felt this sort of fear.

"Who are you?" Chu Feng looked to his surroundings in the hopes of finding the person who had spoken those words.

"Wuu~~~" However, right at this moment, a sting of pain suddenly came from Chu Feng's head. It was so painful that Chu Feng was unable to open his eyes.

"Chu Feng, Chu Feng, what happened to you?" At this moment,

shouts could be heard. Following the shouts, the pain that Chu Feng felt began to dull.

Chu Feng opened his eyes again and discovered that he was lying in the middle of a forest. Baili Xuankong was before him and looking at him with a nervous expression on his face.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally woken up,” Seeing that Chu Feng had woken up, Baili Xuankong finally managed to heave a sigh of relief. A slight smile appeared on his nervous face.

Chu Feng rubbed his still pained head and asked, “Ancestor, how long have I slept for?”

“Nearly two months,” Baili Xuankong said.

“That long?” Chu Feng was shocked.

Back then, he had left the Cyanwood Domain to go to the Cursed Soil Sect to save Tantai Xue, had gone to the Immortal Island, made his way to the Heavenly Law Auction, went to the Nangong Imperial Clan to stay as a guest, been chased into the Poison Demon’s Valley, and then arrived at Mooncloud City to cause troubles. Even though he had experienced all of those things and places, the time he had spent doing all of that was not long at all; it was only over ten months.

Chu Feng had never expected that he would sleep for nearly two months.

To the Chu Feng who was urgently trying to become stronger, this was truly an enormous waste of time.

“It has been a total of a year and twenty one days since you left the Cyanwood Mountain that day. However, your progress has been truly enormous,” Baili Xuankong praised.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled lightly. He knew that his Ancestor was praising him.

Indeed, who would dare to say that becoming a rank three Half

Martial Emperor from a rank eight Martial King in the period of a year was not fast?

However, Chu Feng was not pleased with himself. He knew very well that in the vast Outer World, his talent might not be considered to be much at all. He most definitely could not slack off.

Suddenly, Baili Xuankong said with a very serious expression. “Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, you absolutely must not use that Evil God Sword again.”

“Ancestor, exactly where did you obtain that Evil God Sword? How are you that certain that it’s the Evil God Sword?” Chu Feng asked with a serious expression. The reason for that was because that Evil God Sword was truly too strange and evil.

As Baili Xuankong sighed, he stood up and said, “You also know that our Cyanwood Mountain possesses an Ancient Era’s Remnant. Over the period of tens of thousand of years, our Cyanwood Mountain has explored that Ancient Era’s Remnants countless times. We have experienced countless casualties. Many of our great talents have died in there.”

“Everyone felt that Ancient Era’s Remnant to be a dangerous location of death. The truth is otherwise. Our Cyanwood Mountain has managed to obtain harvests from there. My Death Kill Brush and your Evil God Sword are both from there.”

“However, although these two weapons are very powerful, they’re truly too abnormal,” After speaking those words, a strong sense of worry appeared in Baili Xuankong’s eyes.

Chapter 1742 – Returning To The Cyanwood Mountain

Chu Feng had already realized from Baili Xuankong's gaze how dangerous the Evil God Sword and the Death Kill Brush were. However, he did not continue to inquire about them. As matters stood, Baili Xuankong would definitely tell him the truth about them.

“Both the Evil God Sword and the Death Kill Brush are extremely dangerous. By using the Death Kill Brush, I am exchanging my life. Each time I use it, I end up losing ten years off my life. In Mooncloud City, that was actually my second time using the Death Kill Brush,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Each use consumes ten years of life?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was extremely shocked. No matter how long the lifespan of a cultivator might be, it was still limited. Especially for someone at Baili Xuankong's age, how many more decades could he possibly have?

“Although the Death Kill Brush is dangerous, its danger is clear. However, that Evil God Sword is much more dangerous than the Death Kill Brush. The reason why it's so dangerous is because it is a weapon capable of devouring its master.”

“That is not my random guess. Instead, it is what was written at the place the Evil God Sword was found.”

“You asked me why I am so certain that it is the legendary Evil God Sword earlier. The reason why is precisely because of those words.”

“What were those words?” Chu Feng asked.

“Evil God Sword. It is capable of subduing Evil Gods. Those without exceptional talent must not use this sword. Else, they will be devoured by the sword and die without any remains,” Baili

Xuankong said those words one word at a time.

Even though Chu Feng was already aware of how dangerous the Evil God Sword was, his heart still tightened upon hearing those words.

“Truth be told, my master, before he was about to die, tried to subdue that Evil God Sword. However, he was instead devoured by it. Even though he was very old at that time, he was a rank two Martial Emperor,” Baili Xuankong said.

“It’s that powerful?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng came to realize even more how dangerous the Evil God Sword was. Sure enough, this Evil God Sword was different from ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Else, how could a rank two Martial Emperor be devoured by it?

“I actually gambled by having you attempt to subdue the Evil God Sword. I felt that what the Evil God Sword required was not strength, but instead talent. If that were the case, only you would be able to subdue it.”

“In fact, you have not disappointed me. Merely... the current you is still incapable of handling it,” Baili Xuankong said.

“That might be the case,” Chu Feng smiled wryly. He had experienced the might of the Evil God Sword and knew how powerful it was. However, he had been unable to withstand the pain from the backlash from the Evil God Sword.

“You wouldn’t blame me for having you take on such an enormous risk, right?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“One can only obtain riches in dangers. This holds even more true for the path of cultivation. What Ancestor did was for my sake. As such, how could I possibly blame Ancestor?”

“Merely, there is a matter that I wish to tell Ancestor about,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it? There is no harm to say it,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor, do you know of Yao’er?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s that Firmament Flower Queen, right? I naturally know of her. Although that girl is occasionally very ferocious, her nature is not bad. She is definitely not someone who would bully and humiliate the weak,” Baili Xuankong said. It could be seen that the impression he had of Yao’er was rather good.

This was no wonder, and was why, even though Yao’er was such a dangerous being, she was able to remain in the Cyanwood Mountain this entire time.

“Yao’er is currently in a very dangerous situation. She is trapped in our Cyanwood Mountain’s Ancient Era’s Remnant. I must go and save her,” Chu Feng said.

“The Ancient Era’s Remnant? Even though the Ancient Era’s Remnant is very dangerous, with that girl’s abilities, there shouldn’t be many places that could trap her. Where is she trapped?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“In the Ancient Era’s killing formation’s treasure deposit,” Chu Feng said.

“What? That girl actually burst into the Ancient Era’s killing formation? Treasure deposit? She managed to enter that treasure deposit?”

“That’s impossible. Even I am unable to charge through that Ancient Era’s killing formation. With her abilities, how could she possibly be able to charge through it?” Baili Xuankong showed an expression of disbelief. He had personally tried to charge through that Ancient Era’s killing formation. Thus, he knew very well how frightening that formation was. Throughout the years, countless experts had died in there. That was simply a danger spot.

“Ancestor, I have not lied to you. This is what happened...” Chu Feng began to narrate to Baili Xuankong all that had happened.

“There’s actually such a thing?” After learning about what had

happened, Baili Xuankong was shocked. He only managed to calm his mind after a very long time. After he calmed down, he was very happy. With a smile on his face, he mocked Chu Feng, “Turns out, boy, that you entered our Cyanwood Mountain with ulterior motives, eh?”

Chu Feng laughed foolishly at Baili Xuankong’s mockery. After all, it was true; he had entered the Cyanwood Mountain for the sake of the treasures.

“However, for you to obtain that treasure map, you are truly fortunate. It would seem that you are someone blessed by the heavens,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor is flattering me. It was merely a coincidence,” Chu Feng said.

“Coincidence? You do not know how many people have lost their lives trying to charge through that Ancient Era’s killing formation over the course of several tens of thousands of years.”

He sighed. “Forget about it. Regardless of whether it’s a coincidence or not, it’s good news. I was worried about how to find cultivation resources for you. Never would I have expected that you’ve actually already found them yourself,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor, are we to return to the Cyanwood Mountain now then?” As he had completed what he set out to do, Chu Feng was anxious to return to the Cyanwood Mountain. Not only did he want those treasures, he was also very worried about Yao’er’s safety.

“The lessons I’ve taught the Ximen Imperial Clan and the Nangong Imperial Clan are more or less sufficient. Indeed, we can return,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Lessons?” Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. During the period when he had been asleep, he did not know about what had happened outside.

“Haha, boy, you’ll come to know about it later,” Baili Xuankong deliberately refused to tell Chu Feng.

Seeing Baili Xuankong’s profound smile and then thinking about the words he had said before, Chu Feng already had a guess or two as to what Baili Xuankong had done. During the period when he was asleep, his Ancestor had most definitely not been idle. Likely, both the Ximen Imperial Clan and the Nangong Imperial Clan were feeling very unwell right now.

Afterward, Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong returned to the Cyanwood Mountain.

They did not say anything on the journey back...

It was roughly noon when Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong arrived at the Cyanwood Mountain.

The Cyanwood Mountain was as prosperous as before. It was not affected too much. However, an extra group of people were outside of the Cyanwood Mountain. Those were people from the Ximen Imperial Clan.

At this moment, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were putting up an enormous signboard below the Cyanwood Mountain.

Not only was Chu Feng’s portrait on that signboard, a portrait of Baili Xuankong wearing the conical bamboo hat he had worn in Mooncloud City was also on the signboard.

They were wanted posters. The Four Clans had joined hands to post these wanted posters. As long as someone was capable of providing valuable information concerning Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong, that person would receive an Incomplete Imperial Armament, as well as many precious rare treasures.

If there was anyone capable of assisting the Four Clans in capturing Chu Feng or Baili Xuankong, they would receive ten Incomplete Imperial Armaments as well many medicinal pellets that would help with increasing one’s cultivation. Those medicinal

pellets were so precious that even Martial Emperors would be tempted.

No one knew why the Four Great Imperial Clans had joined hands. However, one thing was certain. For the sake of eliminating Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong, the Four Great Imperial Clans had put forth an enormous amount of wealth.

Not to mention the value of the ten Incomplete Imperial Armaments, merely those medicinal pellets capable of assisting one with breakthroughs and increasing one's cultivation were enough to cause people to drool.

“They are truly too excessive.”

Seeing the enormous signboard with their wanted posters on it that was being constructed, Chu Feng was extremely furious.

On their way here, he had not see any wanted posters. This meant that the wanted posters should only have just been issued.

The Cyanwood Domain was extremely far away from the Overlord Domain. Yet, they were issuing the wanted posters there first. Not only were they making such an enormous and eye-catching signboard, they were doing it right at the foot of the Cyanwood Mountain. Their actions were simply openly bullying the Cyanwood Mountain.

No matter what, Chu Feng was still a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain.

“There's no need to be angry. We should instead rejoice at their actions. This means that they fear you enormously, that they fear that you will be able to mature.”

“The more they are afraid, the more we'll make their fears come true. Not only that, we'll also make them regret. We'll make them regret making you into an enemy,” Even though Baili Xuankong said those words calmly, coldness shined through his aged eyes.

Chapter 1743 – Charging Through The Killing Formation Again

“Let’s go,” Baili Xuankong directly avoided those people and continued on to the Cyanwood Mountain. He had decided to not bother with the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan who were setting up the wanted posters.

As for Chu Feng, he too ignored them. He knew very well that the Cyanwood Mountain would only feel a slight bit of humiliation as long as those people were ignored.

Whereas, if they were to attack and kill these people from the Ximen Imperial Clan, the Four Great Imperial Clans would have sufficient justification to attack the Cyanwood Mountain.

Thus, the only thing they could do now was endure. Even if their opponents had decided to humiliate them right in front of their home, they still had to endure.

Baili Xuankong, as an Ancestor-level character of the Cyanwood Mountain, possessed special methods and authority in the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, after they entered the Cyanwood Mountain, he directly brought Chu Feng with him and entered that extremely well-guarded forbidden area, the Ancient Era’s Remnant.

However, he did not directly enter deep into the Ancient Era’s Remnant with Chu Feng.

Instead, using a special method, he summoned Yin Chengkong, Guan Hong, and Dugu Xingfeng over, the only three Martial Emperors that the Cyanwood Mountain possessed on the surface.

“Lord Xuankong,” Seeing that Baili Xuankong and Chu Feng had returned safely, Yin Chengkong and the others were extremely happy. This was especially true for Dugu Xingfeng.

“The three of you, take these,” Baili Xuankong handed three little

cyan bells to the three of them.

The bells were somewhat special. They were made of wood. Although they were only palm-sized, they appeared to be very ancient and looked as if they had existed for countless years.

Furthermore, three characters were carved onto the bells, 'Cyanwood Emperor's Bell.' Those three characters glimmered with light, and looked as if they possessed souls. The bells contained very strong power.

"Cyanwood Emperor's Bells!!!" Seeing the Cyanwood Emperor's Bells, the gazes of Dugu Xingfeng and the others shone. While others might not know about the origins of the Cyanwood Emperor's Bells, they knew very well.

The Cyanwood Emperor's Bells were a kind a treasure to the Cyanwood Mountain. They were capable of being used both offensively and defensively. The Cyanwood Emperor's Bells were left behind by the founder of the Cyanwood Mountain. Even though only Martial Emperors were capable of using them, over the several tens of thousands of years the Cyanwood Mountain had existed, the Cyanwood Emperor's Bells were nearly all exhausted.

At this moment, the three Cyanwood Emperor's Bells in their hands might very well be the last three Cyanwood Emperor's Bells in the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, these three Cyanwood Emperor's Bells were extremely precious.

Why did Baili Xuankong hand them such precious Cyanwood Emperor's Bells? Could it be that the Cyanwood Mountain would really face imminent danger because of the Four Great Imperial Clans? That Baili Xuankong had handed them the Cyanwood Emperor's Bells so that they could protect themselves?

"Chu Feng, you can explain it to them," Baili Xuankong looked to Chu Feng.

Afterward, Chu Feng began to explain the situation to Dugu

Xingfeng and the others.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were all stunned. They were even more shocked than the first time when Baili Xuankong heard about this.

It was not that their ability to accept the situation was weak. Rather, what Chu Feng had mentioned was truly too stunning. How many experts had failed to pass through that Ancient Era's killing formation?

Yet, Chu Feng was capable of charging through it. Furthermore, he had already seen the legendary treasures.

If those experts who had died to the Ancient Era's killing formation were still alive and came to know about how Chu Feng had, with the cultivation of a rank eight Martial King, passed through the Ancient Era's killing formation safely by relying on the map in his mind, they would likely die from excess frustration.

“For that fellow by the name of Long Lin to be able to live in the Ancient Era's killing formation for so long, it's very possible that he's a monster.”

“The words of a monster cannot be trusted completely. If he keeps his promise, we will not do anything. However, if he breaks his promise, I must definitely have a word with him.”

“Merely, I do not have certainty that I can defeat him. If I am to fail, you all are to use these Cyanwood Emperor's Bells to cover Chu Feng's escape.”

“Remember, even if you are to give up your lives, you must still protect Chu Feng,” Baili Xuankong said with a serious expression.

“Understood,” Dugu Xingfeng and the others said without hesitation.

Chu Feng's heart was moved by this scene. He felt an incomparable amount of warmth.

Regardless of whether or not it was for the Cyanwood Mountain's future that Baili Xuankong and the others had valued him this enormously, they were willing to give up their lives for him. What sort of spirit was this? What sort of mindset was this? What sort of love was this?

After all... they were all Martial Emperors. For them to be able to reach their current level of cultivation, the amount of effort that they had put forth was something that only they themselves knew.

At this moment, Chu Feng was completely moved. However, he did not say it out loud. Instead, he buried it deep in his heart.

One does not have to speak of one's gratefulness toward another repeatedly. Instead, when feeling grateful toward another, one must repay them with actions.

"Let's go," After making his decision, Baili Xuankong brought Chu Feng and the others and began to proceed toward the Ancient Era's killing formation.

However, after they entered the Ancient Era's killing formation, it was no longer Baili Xuankong who led the party. Instead, it was Chu Feng.

No matter what sort of cultivation Baili Xuankong and the others possessed, no matter how strong they were, at this moment, they could only follow behind Chu Feng and walk according to the path he took.

At the beginning, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were a bit worried. Even Baili Xuankong was worried. After all, this Ancient Era's killing formation possessed such a vicious fame and had killed even experts more powerful than them. The place that they were now in was simply a grave composed of experts.

However, as they followed Chu Feng, they were completely unscathed. This made them incomparably shocked. After they saw the formations around them becoming more and more frightening

while Chu Feng was still completely calm and collected while leading them, the shock they felt turned into astonishment.

Those formations were so frightening. Even without looking at them, merely by feeling the aura they emitted, one would feel fear from the bottom of one's heart. How could a normal person possibly be able to withstand the pressure?

If it were an ordinary member of the younger generation, even if they did not piss their pants in fear, they would have been trembling in fear. However, Chu Feng was even more calm and collected than them. The confident expression on his face seemed to be telling them that he could bring them safely across this frightening Ancient Era's killing formation.

After this, they were all certain that Chu Feng's ability was not only limited to his exceptional talent. His extraordinary wisdom was absolutely not something that ordinary people could compare with.

Finally, Chu Feng led the four of them past the Ancient Era's killing formation. Not only that, they had also entered the location where the treasures were hidden.

After they reached this location, what Chu Feng felt was a sense of familiarity. Nothing had changed regarding this place. That tree filled with cultivation resources, that Incomplete Imperial Armament that radiated with light, that sealed yet alluring treasure chest. Just like in the past, all of them were magnificently dazzling.

Baili Xuankong, Dugu Xingfeng, Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong were all drawn by the treasures before their eyes, much like the first time Chu Feng had arrived in this place.

After all, treasures like these were simply too rare to come by. The fruits on the tree were all rare cultivation resources. Any one of them would be able to fetch a very high price.

As for that bow, all of them were able to tell that it was not an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. Its workmanship and the aura it emitted could simply be said to be perfect. Looking at it, if one were to say that it was an Imperial Armament, people would still believe that.

In addition to those, there was that treasure chest. Looking at it, one could be lost in wild and fanciful thoughts. When the treasures outside were already this extraordinary, how extraordinary would the treasures that were meticulously stored away be?

However, compared to Baili Xuankong and the others, Chu Feng's gaze was first fixed onto a beautiful woman.

The woman was Yao'er. At this moment, Yao'er had her eyes closed. Her appearance was completely the same. It was as if time had not affected her at all. Like before, she was still as youthful and cute looking.

Seeing such a Yao'er, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief. Even though Yao'er had been trapped here, it would appear that her treatment here wasn't bad.

Chapter 1744 – Golden Palace

Seemingly sensing that people had arrived, Yao'er opened her clear eyes.

“Chu Feng!”

When she saw Chu Feng and the others, Yao'er was immediately overjoyed. An extremely brilliant smile was present on her pure little face. She immediately got up and proceeded to run toward Chu Feng and the others.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, a golden light suddenly appeared and blocked Yao'er's path. At the moment when the golden light disappeared, a middle-aged man appeared before Chu Feng and the others.

This man was precisely that man who called himself Long Lin.

This mysterious existence, even when seeing him again today, he still felt as mysterious as before. His deep gaze and shallow smile were both so extraordinary.

Chu Feng was unable to see through him and determine what he was thinking. More than that, Chu Feng was unable to determine his strength.

Evidently, Long Lin had seen Baili Xuankong and the others. However, he did not place Baili Xuankong and the others in his eyes at all. In fact, he did not even bother to take a glance at them, and directly turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

His disdainful attitude caused Baili Xuankong and the others to narrow their brows slightly. They were displeased by his behavior.

However, they did not say anything, nor did they do anything. The reason for that was because this man was simply someone that they could not see through.

Even Baili Xuankong had realized that this man's strength was most likely above his own. It would be extremely hard to deal with him.

Merely, Baili Xuankong did not expect that there would be such an existence in the Ancient Era's Remnants. Exactly how long had this man lived? Could he be an existence from the Ancient Era?

"Chu Feng, you've truly given me a pleasant surprise. I had given you the time limit of returning within two years as a Half Martial Emperor. Yet, it has only been a bit over a year, and you've already returned with the cultivation of rank three Half Martial Emperor. The speed of your progress is quite good."

"Truth be told, you are superior to what I anticipated you to be," Long Lin narrowed his eyes and smiled lightly. It could be seen that he was very happy with Chu Feng's return.

"Can you release Yao'er now?" Chu Feng asked.

Long Lin pointed at the tree filled with fruit and asked, "Why didn't you ask for those fruits first? I know those fruit are extremely useful to you,"

"As far as I'm concerned, Yao'er is more important than those fruit," Chu Feng said.

"....."

Hearing those words, Yao'er's gaze shone. Her little mouth was slightly open. Specks of glistening teardrops appeared in her two large eyes. At this moment, she was feeling extremely moved.

Back then, Chu Feng had come here for the sake of the treasures. For the sake of the treasures, Chu Feng had been willing to brave dangers to charge through the Ancient Era's killing formation.

From this, it could be seen how important those treasures were to Chu Feng.

Yet, at this moment, Chu Feng was placing her above the

treasures. As such, how could she not be moved?

Yao'er had decided to help Chu Feng out of gratefulness because Chu Feng had saved her. At this moment, the gratefulness she felt toward Chu Feng was even more intense.

In fact, not to mention her, even Baili Xuankong and the others were nodding at Chu Feng in admiration.

Especially Baili Xuankong. He felt that he had not misjudged Chu Feng. Chu Feng's affectionate and loyal nature was the reason why he was worthy of being nurtured without sparing any effort.

"Good, your affectionate and loyal nature is truly worthy of praise. In this world of martial cultivation where people deceive one another, someone like you is truly rare," Long Lin clapped his hands while praising.

"Am I allowed to take Yao'er away?" Chu Feng asked.

"Don't be so anxious," Long Lin smiled lightly. Then, he pointed his right hand at the sealed treasure chest.

"Whoosh~~~"

A ray of golden light shot out from his hand. That golden light entered the treasure chest. With a bang, the golden chest opened.

At this moment, the eyes of Chu Feng and the others all shone. They all turned their gazes onto the treasure chest. They all wished to see exactly what was in the treasure chest.

Even Yao'er reacted like this.

Before the many gazes, the treasure chest revealed a dazzling golden light. The dazzling golden light slowly floated upwards. The further up it floated, the stronger the golden light became. As the golden light shone, it was extremely dazzling.

Upon closer observation, the crowd was able to see that in the center of the golden light was a palace.

That palace was less than an inch in size. However, it was

exquisite. It was even more exquisite, immense and impressive than an actual palace.

At this moment, that golden palace floated to Long Lin's hand. Then, he began to form a hand seal with his left hand while holding the golden palace with his right hand and chanting a strange chant.

His chant was spoken so fast that Chu Feng and the others were unable to determine what he was saying, much less remember it.

However, when the chant was spoken, the spoken words became alive. Like fireflies formed by talismans, they began to enter that golden palace nonstop.

With the chant and the hand seal, the golden palace on Long Lin's right hand started to tremble. The trembling grew more and more intense. Following that, waves of oppressive might began to emit from that palace.

“Go,” Suddenly, Long Lin raised his hand and shot the golden palace into the air. Then, the golden palace started to rapidly increase in size. In merely that blink of an eye, it turned into an enormous palace with a height of a hundred and fifty meters and a width of fifteen hundred meters that floated in midair.

After the palace increased in size, everything became much clearer. As it radiated with golden might and an impressive aura, the golden palace appeared to be simply incomparable.

“Creak~~”

At this time, the enormous palace gate started to slowly open. When the palace gate was opened, waves of rumbles began to be heard from within the palace gate.

It turned out to be an army. The army was coming out of the palace.

Upon seeing this army, the expressions on Chu Feng and the others' faces all changed to one of shock.

This army was all dressed in golden armor and golden helmets and held golden spears. Their golden suits of armor were shining with glistening light, and were simply more dazzling than any golden armor that Chu Feng had seen before.

Even though their golden armor was very dazzling, there was no body to be seen in the armor. It was as if the golden suits of armor were alive.

The reason why Chu Feng and the others were shocked was not only because of this. Mainly, it was because this golden-armored army numbered a total of a thousand individuals. Furthermore, this army of a thousand all emitted the cultivation of rank one Martial Emperors.

A total of a thousand Martial Emperors. Even if they were all rank one Martial Emperors, this was still sufficient to cause enormous astonishment and disbelief.

In fact, at this moment, Elder Guan Hong, a Martial Emperor himself, was rubbing his eyes nonstop in disbelief. He was suspecting that he might be dreaming.

This could not be blamed on him. After all, Martial Emperor-level experts were truly too rare in the Holy Land of Martialism.

After all, the Cyanwood Mountain, one of the Nine Powers, when including Baili Xuankong, only possessed four Martial Emperors. As for the other Nine Powers that were slightly weaker than the Cyanwood Mountain, they might only have two Martial Emperors.

In fact, even for an extraordinary power like the Nangong Imperial Clan, their Martial Emperors would not even reach a hundred in number.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng and the others were deeply shocked and in fear. The scene before them was truly too stunning.

A total of a thousand Martial Emperors. Likely, even if all of the Martial Emperors in the Holy Land of Martialism were combined,

they would not reach a thousand.

“Kill!!!”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng and the others were in a state of astonishment, the thousand soldiers all pointed their spears at Chu Feng and the others.

Once the spears were revealed, a total of a thousand golden strands of light shot forth. Like a thousand golden dragons, the golden light began to spiral about the horizon before the palace. In the end, they formed a defensive formation and blocked the area before the palace.

The formation was so strong that even without approaching it, one could feel a surging, intimidating oppressive might from it.

This oppressive might was simply too powerful. If it wasn't for the fact that Baili Xuankong was here, Dugu Xingfeng and Guan Hong would've been forced to step back repeatedly by the oppressive might. As for Chu Feng, a mere Half Martial Emperor, there was no need to mention what he would have felt.

Chapter 1745 – Army Of Martial Emperors

“Don’t be afraid, that’s merely a mechanism,” Long Lin said with a light smile.

“Mechanism?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng and the others were all surprised. What sort of mechanism would be able to create existences this powerful? These were Martial Emperor-level experts!

Furthermore, judging from their appearance, they should have existed for countless years, and seemed to be existences that would never die.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Long Lin waved his sleeve, and a golden light swept toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng raised his hand and caught the golden light. Then, he opened his palm and discovered that it was a golden title plate.

Seeing the golden title plate in his hand, Chu Feng’s pupils shrunk. While this title plate seemed to be made out of pure gold, it felt as heavy as a mountain when held. Furthermore, it emitted a sort of intimidating sensation that reached the soul. This was most definitely not an ordinary title plate.

“With that title plate in your hand, they will not harm you. Help me with one thing. Go to the first palace hall of this place and take out ten golden arrows for me. If you do that, I’ll keep my promise and release Yao’er and bestow you the fruit,” Long Lin said as he pointed at the floating golden palace.

“This doesn’t seem to be within the extent of the promise before,” Baili Xuankong said.

Long Lin ignored Baili Xuankong and acted as if he had never heard anything. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “You can refuse to do it.”

Chu Feng looked at the title plate in his hand and then looked at the ten thousand golden-armored soldiers filled with killing intent outside of the golden palace. Then, he took a glance at Yao'er, who was standing behind Long Lin and looking at him. Then Chu Feng said, "I'll go."

"Chu Feng, that palace is too dangerous. The dangers that I'm talking about are not those golden-armored soldiers. Rather, it's the inside of that palace. In there is the aura of some unknown being. It is a power that even I do not dare to face."

At this moment, Baili Xuankong grabbed onto Chu Feng. He did not want him to bear this risk. The reason for that was because he felt a very frightening aura from that palace.

"That's right. Chu Feng, you absolutely cannot enter. He is simply not having you help him. Instead, he's trying to kill you," Dugu Xingfeng said.

Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong also nodded their heads to indicate that what Dugu Xingfeng said was very true.

"Aura?" After hearing those words, Chu Feng looked toward the inside of the palace, and discovered that there was indeed a special existence there. However, Chu Feng did not feel any fear from it.

"Do you all know why I wanted Chu Feng to enter? The reason for that is because that palace is not a place that anyone can enter as they wish. Regardless of how high your cultivation might be, if your talent is extremely poor, you'll still be killed upon entering."

"However, if your talent is exceptionally high, even if your cultivation is a bit weak, you will still be able to enter it easily. At the very least, the first palace hall will not be an issue. Thus, you all should stop trying to use your own perceptions to warn Chu Feng. The reason for that is because your perceptions are simply different," Long Lin said mockingly.

"You..." Baili Xuankong and the others were naturally displeased

by those mocking words. However, after considering it, they had nothing to say, and dropped the subject.

After all, judging from Chu Feng's appearance, he really seemed like he did not feel the danger that they felt from the palace. Else, he would not be this calm.

"Ancestor, it seems that we have no other choice. Furthermore, I feel that this senior will not try to harm me for no reason or cause. Since I've already come, I might as well help him," Chu Feng said.

"Go ahead. But, make sure to be careful and not force yourself," Baili Xuankong said.

"This disciple understands," As Chu Feng spoke, his body shifted, and he flew toward the palace.

"Pull back!!!"

Once Chu Feng approached the palace hall, the thousand golden-armored soldiers shouted loudly. Then, they pulled the spears in their hands back, and stood to either side of the entrance in an orderly manner. At the same time they did that, the defensive formation also disappeared.

Just like that, Chu Feng entered the palace. Upon entering the palace, Chu Feng's gaze grew serious, and his heartbeat started to accelerate.

Inside the palace was another world. It was much more spacious than it looked from the outside.

Furthermore, the inside of the palace was filled with golden-armored soldiers. They stood in orderly rows on both sides of the palace hall, leaving only a red carpet-covered path between them.

These golden-armored soldiers were slightly different from the ones outside. Some held spears, some held blades, and some held both blades and shields.

In addition to that, there were a hundred golden-armored

soldiers that were nearly a hundred meters tall. They held enormous hammers, and were riding on enormous monstrous beast-like stone statues. They were extremely domineering.

As far as the eye could see, there were several tens of thousands of golden-armored soldiers in this palace hall.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to sense their auras, Chu Feng felt that they were, at the minimum, all Martial Emperor-level existences.

In fact, many among them were above rank two Martial Emperor. This was especially true for those hundred golden-armored soldiers mounted on top of the monstrous beast statues.

Even though they were not moving at this time, and looked as if they were petrified, one could tell how ferocious they were just by looking at their outward appearance. The hundred of them were most definitely not ordinary Martial Emperors.

An army of several tens of thousands of Martial Emperors, if they were to charge toward the Overlord Domain, likely the Four Clans, Three Palaces and even the Ancient Era's Elves would have to submit to them.

The reason for that was because their battle strength was truly too frighteningly powerful.

"The Ancient Era, exactly how strong and powerful were the existences of that era?"

Chu Feng began to ponder. He felt that this palace was a product of the Ancient Era, and that these golden-armored soldiers should also be a product of the Ancient Era.

Even though this was merely a product, an artifact, even if all of the powers in the Holy Land of Martialism today were to join hands, they would still not be able to match the military strength of this palace.

Even though Chu Feng felt enormous shock, he did not stop.

Instead, he stepped onto the red carpet and began to rapidly proceed forward.

Before him was an entrance. An enormous signboard was attached above the entrance. Three enormous words were written on the signboard: 'First Level Hall.'

“Rumble~~~”

As Chu Feng approached, the entrance of the First Level Hall started to slowly open, as if it were welcoming its master. However, the instant the entrance door opened, an enormous pressure surged out from within like an enormous invisible wave. Chu Feng was completely submerged by the pressure.

The pressure was so strong that Chu Feng was forced back three steps in succession before being finally able to steady himself. However, at this moment, he felt a chill down his back, and his hair began to stand on end.

At this moment, he finally felt the danger that Baili Xuankong and the others had felt before.

“This is truly quite remarkable.”

Chu Feng had now realized how dangerous the First Level Hall was. Merely the pressure itself might be sufficient to take his life.

However, when he saw the ten golden arrows that were floating in midair in that palace hall, Chu Feng clenched down on his teeth and decided to enter it.

“Buzz~~~”

Sure enough, right after he set foot into the palace hall, Chu Feng felt an enormous pressure coming from all directions. His body began to twist, and his bones started to emit cracking sounds.

This was not only limited to his external body. The pressure actually managed to attack his insides too. Chu Feng's internal organs, his dantian and even his soul were all feeling that

enormous pressure. It was as if his body would burst and he would die in the very next moment.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng's eyes shone with lightning. His Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared simultaneously. Chu Feng's cultivation went from rank three Half Martial Emperor to rank five Half Martial Emperor in an instant.

However, even though his cultivation had increased, he was unable to reduce the pressure he felt at all.

"Sure enough, the pressure here cannot be resisted with one's cultivation."

Chu Feng started to frown. The situation before him was truly hard to deal with. Not only was the pressure life-threatening, the pain that he was feeling from all over his body was even more difficult to endure than having one's heart pierced by thousands of arrows. In this sort of situation, Chu Feng did not dare to continue onward.

"Zzzzz~::~"

Right at this moment, the lightnings in Chu Feng's blood soared out from within his blood like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses, covering Chu Feng's entire body, fusing together with his flesh and bones.

With the emergence of his lightnings, the pressure immediately lessened greatly. Even though Chu Feng was still feeling the pressure attacking him, Chu Feng was no longer affected by it.

"Thanks."

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then his body shifted, and he soared into the air. He flew toward the ten arrows, grabbed all of them, then flew back.

"What excellent arrows. The things from the Ancient Era are truly extraordinary," Chu Feng praised. Holding the ten arrows in his hand, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense that they were not

Incomplete Imperial Armaments, Imperial Armaments or even Royal Armaments. Instead, they were more like talismans.

However, their might was extremely powerful. The Emperor's might they contained was extremely pure. If pierced by those arrows, it was likely anyone beneath the Martial Emperor level would not be able to survive.

After obtaining the ten arrows, Chu Feng landed on the ground and prepared to leave.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at this moment, he heard rumbling from behind. Turning around, he discovered that the ‘Second Level Hall’ was slowly opening.

“That is?!” As the entrance of the Second Level Hall opened, Chu Feng looked into the second palace hall. Immediately, his eyes started to shine, and he revealed an expression of shock.

Chapter 1746 – Legendary Divine Beast

Three arrows appeared in the center of the Second Level Hall.

These three arrows were different from the arrows in Chu Feng's hand; they were three red arrows.

Not only was the external appearance of those three arrows fiery, the heads of the arrows actually contained flames. Furthermore, the flames were not red in color. Instead, they were actually purple, and appeared to bare fangs and brandish claws like the hand of the devil trying to grab something. They were extremely strange in appearance.

Although those arrows appeared to be strange, one could not feel any pressure when looking at them. They were much less alluring than the golden arrows and gave off a very strong sense of false power.

However, Chu Feng was not looking at them with his naked eyes. Instead, he had used his Heaven's Eyes to look at them. That was the reason why he was this shocked.

With his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see the might contained in these purple flame arrowheads.

The arrows were so powerful that ordinary rank one Martial Emperors would likely not be able to contend against them.

Those three purple flame arrowheads of the three arrows were capable of killing Martial Emperors.

"Treasures, you're deliberately luring me," After carefully observing the arrows, Chu Feng smiled slightly. Then, he turned around and began to walk toward the Second Level Hall.

He thought in his heart how the treasures in this place were truly treasures that were rarely seen in the Holy Land of Martialism.

To be able to come to this place could be said to be his fortune.

That Long Lin had only requested that he take out the ten golden arrows, and had not say that he could not take the other items in this palace.

If Chu Feng were to take away these three purple flame arrows, it would also not be an issue if Long Lin were to discover it. After all, he had justifications for his actions. On the other hand, if Long Lin didn't discover it, then he would have profited enormously.

Not to mention using the arrows to kill his enemies, even if he were to auction the arrows off, he would likely be able to exchange them for a lot of cultivation resources.

“Step~~~”

Once Chu Feng stepped into the Second Level Hall, an enormous pressure immediately hit him. Like the time when he first set foot into the First Level Hall, the pressure began to engulf his entire body with the intention to make him explode from within.

However, the pressure from the Second Level Hall was much more frightening than the pressure from the First Level Hall.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt that his head was swelling and emitting enormous pain. He felt like his head was about to explode. Even his eyes started to become fuzzy, and his legs grew weak without strength.

“The pressure is actually this strong?”

Chu Feng attempted to walk forward two steps. However, the pressure became stronger and stronger. At this time, his ears had gone deaf, and blood was flowing from his eyes and nostrils. Even his flesh had started to split apart, and his bones had begun to crack.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng hurriedly began to use the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique to restore his body. However, even though he was able to restore his body, he was unable to lessen the pain he felt.

At this moment, Chu Feng was trapped; he was unable to advance or retreat. If he were to continue to advance, he might die in this palace hall at any moment. If he were to retreat, he would miss the great opportunity to obtain those three purple flame arrows.

“Oh my bloodline, my brothers, Lightning Beasts, I beg of you all, give me some more strength. Can you all help me withstand this a bit more?” Feeling helpless, Chu Feng began to request help from his bloodline.

However, there was no change to his bloodline at all. Evidently, they were unable to understand Chu Feng’s words. Or perhaps they were ignoring Chu Feng’s plea.

“Hey hey hey, you all, you need to get the situation straight. What this place tests is not cultivation. Instead, it’s one’s talent. Thus, what this place tests is not me. Instead, it’s you all.”

“If I am to die here, I would have overestimated my capabilities. That is naturally disgraceful. However, the ones that would have disgraced themselves the most would not be me but you all instead,” Chu Feng refused to give up and began to mock his Divine Lightnings.

“Zzzzz~”

After Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, his lightnings seemed to have understood his words, and actually began to become even more intense. In this sort of situation, the pressure Chu Feng was feeling was lessened greatly.

“Haha, that’s more like it. Only when I’m well will you all be well,” At this moment, Chu Feng was overjoyed. Regardless of whether his prodding had worked or his Inherited Bloodline had voluntarily become stronger, they had at least allowed him to withstand the pressure of this place.

Even though his Inherited Bloodline had become stronger, Chu Feng did not dare to hesitate. With a thought, a dragon roar was

heard, and azure light began to shine. An enormous azure dragon that flickered with light appeared beneath Chu Feng's foot.

It was the supreme secret skill — Azure Dragon Dashing Technique!!!

“Roar~~~~”

The Azure Dragon Dashing Technique opened its mouth and unleashed another dragon roar. Then, its enormous body turned into an azure ray of light. After a spin in the Second Level Hall, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique returned to the First Level Hall and disappeared.

However, at this moment, the Second Level Hall was completely empty. As for Chu Feng, he had the three purple flame arrows in his hand.

“What excellent arrows,” Chu Feng looked at the three purple flame arrows he had acquired and was enormously overjoyed. He first sealed them away with World Spirit Techniques, and then carefully placed them into his Cosmos Sack.

He had done that because he feared that Long Lin would discover that he had taken the three purple flame arrows in addition to the ten golden arrows. To speak of it simply, Chu Feng was trying to embezzle the three arrows. Thus, he was afraid of being exposed.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, another series of rumbles sounded from behind Chu Feng.

“Again?” Chu Feng knew that this most definitely meant that the Third Level Hall's entrance was opened.

He turned around to look. Sure enough, the enormous entrance to the Third Level Hall was slowly opening.

Even though Chu Feng knew that he could not attempt to enter the Third Level Hall, he still looked into the Third Level Hall

through the portion of the entrance that had been opened out of curiosity.

He wanted to know what sort of treasure was contained in the Third Level Hall.

“Empty?” Finally, the door to the Third Level Hall was completely open. However, at this moment, Chu Feng was disappointed.

The reason for that was because the center of the Third Level Hall was completely empty. From the Third Level Hall, the only thing Chu Feng could see was the entrance to the Fourth Level Hall, as well as the three enormous words, ‘Fourth Level Hall,’ on top of the entrance to that Fourth Level Hall.

Feeling disappointed, Chu Feng prepared to turn around to leave.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at this moment, an ear-piercing roar sounded. Then, from a corner of the Third Level Hall, a silhouette appeared in the center of the Third Level Hall.

It was a monstrous beast. It was three meters tall and ten meters long. Among monstrous beasts, this sort of size could not be said to be huge. In fact, it could even be said to be very small.

However, looking at this monstrous beast, Chu Feng’s gaze changed, and his heart tightened. His eyes were wide open as he stared at the monstrous beast motionlessly.

This monstrous beast was simply too strange-looking. It possessed the head of a dragon, a pair of antlers, the eyes of a lion, the back of a tiger, the waist of a bear, and a body covered with scales. Furthermore, it emitted an extremely impressive and imposing might.

Its appearance was completely different from ordinary monstrous beasts. Furthermore, it emitted a completely different aura, a divine aura.

However, most importantly, this monstrous beast was emitting an Emperor's might. Even though this Emperor's might did not try to attack Chu Feng, Chu Feng was still certain that it was an actual Emperor's might.

That was a Martial Emperor-level monstrous beast. Furthermore, it was most definitely not an ordinary Martial Emperor.

“Exactly what is that? Its aura is entirely different from that of monstrous beasts. It's actually this divine?”

“Could it be... it is the legendary Divine Beast, Qilin?” After carefully observing it, Chu Feng opened his mouth wide. His already-shocked face revealed an even more shocked appearance.

The reason for that was because the appearance of the beast before him was simply the same as the description of the legendary Divine Beast, the Qilin. What were Qilins? They were Divine Beasts like the true Dragons. They were existences of legends!!!

This world really contained Divine Beasts?

Chapter 1747 – Advance By Leaps And Bounds

Chu Feng was even more shocked. Even when using his Heaven's Eyes, he was still unable to determine whether the Qilin before him was real or not.

He was unable to determine whether this Qilin was a mechanism like the golden-armored soldiers or whether it was formed with spirit formations, or whether it was actually a Divine Beast.

However, even if it was not an actual Divine Beast, it would still be a magnificent feat to create it. However, if it was actually a Divine Beast, then it would truly be shocking.

“Roar~~~”

At the same time Chu Feng was sizing up the Qilin, the Qilin was also sizing up Chu Feng. Suddenly, it let out a roar. Then its body shifted as it ran to the side and away from Chu Feng's line of sight. It had hidden itself again.

“The hell, it's looking down on me?”

Feeling speechless, Chu Feng curled his lips. He had felt a special sort of feeling from the final gaze that Qilin had shown him. It was a gaze of contempt, disdain and scorn. In fact, there was even disappointment in its gaze. The disappointment after a deep sense of anticipation.

Without a doubt, it was looking down on Chu Feng. This Qilin was truly different. Compared to the golden-armored soldiers, it evidently possessed wisdom.

Even though Chu Feng was being looked down upon, Chu Feng did not feel anything other than speechlessness. He did not feel unreconciled, nor did he feel that his ego had been humiliated. The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew extremely well that, regardless of whether or not that Qilin was real, and whether or

not it was the legendary Divine Beast, it remained that he could not defeat it in a fight.

When facing the truth, Chu Feng was never one to deceive himself. Furthermore, there was no hatred nor grievance between him and that Qilin. Even if he were to be looked down upon, there was no reason for him to feel displeased.

“Don’t worry. Once I become a Martial Emperor, I’ll return to play with you,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. This was not a provocation. More than that, it was a joke.

“Roar~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, a roar sounded from within that palace hall. That roar was filled with impatience. It was as if that Qilin was capable of understanding Chu Feng’s speech.

“Rumble~~~”

After that roar, that Third Level Hall’s entrance started to slowly close.

“Yoh, that’s quite a temper there.”

The smile on Chu Feng’s face grew denser. It was only when the Third Level Hall’s entrance was completely shut that he turned around to leave and walked out of the First Level Hall.

At the moment when Chu Feng returned to the palace hall filled with golden-armored soldiers, he carefully inspected the glorious palace, as well as the mighty and domineering soldiers.

At this moment, Chu Feng actually felt a bit of reluctance to leave this place., This was the true treasure deposit. It contained many different treasures that might be able to broaden Chu Feng’s horizons.

Even though Chu Feng was reluctant to leave, he did not continue to stay. Instead, after he observed the palace, he held

onto the ten golden arrows in his hand and quickly proceeded toward the outside.

Having obtained the ten golden arrows, he would be able to leave with Yao'er.

At this moment, Long Lin and the others all had their gazes fixed on the golden palace.

Especially Baili Xuankong and the others. Their gazes were flickering, and they were unable to sit or stand still. Their each and every action manifested what was no doubt worry for Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Finally, Chu Feng walked out of the palace and descended onto the ground. Furthermore, he was holding ten golden arrows in his hand.

“Success?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong heaved a sigh of relief. He was overjoyed.

“Success,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, he raised his palm and threw the ten arrows in his hand to Long Lin, “It’s time for you to keep your part of the agreement.”

“Indeed,” Holding the ten golden arrows in his hand, Long Lin nodded with a smile. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, wind began to surge. The tree also started to violently tremble.

From that trembling, the fruits that filled the tree began to drop off from the tree in succession. Then, the fruits began to fly toward Chu Feng. In the end, all of them were gathered before him.

While the fruits were not very large, when all the fruits were gathered before Chu Feng, they piled up even taller than Chu Feng’s height. From this, it could be seen how numerous an amount of fruits there were.

However, this was no wonder. After all, at this moment, there was not a single fruit on that giant tree. All of them had arrived

before Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did not put the fruits away. Instead, he said to Long Lin, "Release Yao'er."

"Rest assured, I am someone who keeps my promises," As Long Lin spoke, he moved to the side and indicated to Yao'er that she could go.

At the beginning, Yao'er was very cautious. She began to slowly walk forward. It was only when she had walked twenty meters from Long Lin, yet Long Lin still had done nothing stop her, that her body rapidly shifted, and she arrived beside Chu Feng.

After arriving beside Chu Feng, she grabbed tightly onto the corner of Chu Feng's clothes. She did not say anything. However, her eyes were narrowed, and she was smiling a very sweet smile. The joy she was feeling was evident on her face.

"Thank you senior," It was only when Yao'er was released that Chu Feng took out his Cosmos Sack with the intention to gather the fruits.

Right at this moment, Long Lin suddenly spoke. "Why not refine them right away? I would also like to broaden my horizons."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. He looked to Long Lin and discovered that Long Lin was looking at him with a smile on his face.

Although Long Lin's eyes were twinkling and smiling, they were still so deep that Chu Feng could not see through them. However, evidently, Long Lin had already managed to discover a lot of Chu Feng's secrets.

"Very well," Chu Feng took a look around. Then, he smiled slightly and sat down in a cross-legged position.

Seeing this, Dugu Xingfeng, Yin Chengkong and the others were startled. They did not understand what Chu Feng was doing.

It was only when Chu Feng opened his mouth and began to suck in the fruits before him that Dugu Xingfeng and the others' eyes started to shine with astonishment.

Chu Feng was refining those fruits. However, the speed at which he was refining them was truly too astonishing.

In fact, they were even able to clearly sense Chu Feng's aura increasing rapidly.

Even though those fruits were treasured cultivation resources, it was still the first time that they were seeing someone refine cultivation resources the way Chu Feng was. This sort of vicious cultivation method was likely something that even the Four Great Imperial Clans would not be able to accomplish.

To be precise, it was likely that no one else in the entire Holy Land of Martialism would be capable of it.

However, they were also feeling very joyous. They finally understood why Chu Feng's cultivation could increase so rapidly. It turned out that this child's talent was this heaven-defying. As long as he possessed sufficient cultivation resources, he would be able to increase his cultivation.

This was truly heaven-defying. The path of martial cultivation was incomparably difficult. However, this did not seem to be the case for Chu Feng. This was what it really meant to be heaven-defying. This was what a truly heaven-defying talent was.

Although this was Chu Feng's superiority over other martial cultivators, there was also a fault to it. That was that Chu Feng's appetite was too enormous.

With such powerful cultivation resources, if others were capable of rapidly refining them and turning their power into their own, it would not be difficult for them to reach a Martial Emperor-level cultivation. In fact, they might even be able to break through past rank one Martial Emperor. The reason for that was because the

power contained in those fruits was truly enormous. On top of that, there were so many of them.

However, after Chu Feng completely devoured all of the cultivation fruits, his cultivation only increased by four levels. From rank three Half Martial Emperor, he had become a rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng was extremely satisfied with this. The reason for that was because only he knew how insatiable his Inherited Bloodline was.

Although Chu Feng had managed to reach a breakthrough with a single fruit back then, it remained that he had only been a Martial Lord at the time. Yet now, Chu Feng was a Half Martial Emperor. At the same time his cultivation increased, the appetite of his Inherited Bloodline also increased. Furthermore, the extent to which his appetite increased was extremely frightening.

Thus, for Chu Feng to reach four breakthroughs in cultivation in succession, for him to be able to reach rank seven Half Martial Emperor from rank three Half Martial Emperor, was already very unexpected.

Furthermore, the martial power in Chu Feng's dantian was very abundant. He was only a bit away from reaching a breakthrough to rank eight Half Martial Emperor. This would provide a very good foundation for Chu Feng's future breakthrough. To Chu Feng, this was akin to being able to advance by leaps and bounds. As such, how could he not be in joy?

“Huff~~~”

Chu Feng stood back up and sucked in a mouthful of air. Sensing his current cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Emperor, Chu Feng revealed a smile that could not be contained.

With his current cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Emperor, if he were to use his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his

cultivation would reach rank nine Half Martial Emperor. On top of that, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Likely, very few people below the Martial Emperor realm would be able to contend against him.

In the Holy Land of Martialism, likely only Martial Emperors would be able to suppress Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you have truly broadened our horizons,” Right at this moment, Yin Chengkong exclaimed in incomparable admiration.

Turning his head around, Chu Feng saw that Yin Chengkong was looking at him with an expression of surprise and admiration all over his face. It was not only him. Guan Hong, Dugu Xingfeng and Yao'er also had the same expression on their faces.

It seemed very unreasonable for Chu Feng to only reach four breakthroughs in cultivation after devouring all those cultivation resources.

However, the speed at which he devoured them was extremely fast. In practically only moments, he had completely devoured all of the fruits.

In other words, Chu Feng had increased his cultivation by four levels in an instant. As such, how could they not be astonished by him?

Facing Dugu Xingfeng and the others who were both surprised and joyous, Chu Feng merely smiled and did not say anything.

He had dared to reveal his secret to them because he trusted them. Thus, it did not matter to him what they might be thinking.

“Not bad. It's more interesting than I anticipated. While your Bloodline might not be much in the Outer World, it is indeed capable of being considered as miraculous in the Holy Land of Martialism,” Long Lin said with a light smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression immediately

changed. He hurriedly asked, “You know of the Outer World?”

Chapter 1748 – Effective Weapon For Killing

“I know a great amount of things. However, there’s no reason for me to tell you anything. Thus, you are not qualified to ask.”

“Right now, instead of thinking about those trivial matters, it’s better that you think about yourself. After all, you will soon feel extremely sad, displeased, depressed and unreconciled.” The corners of Long Lin’s mouth raised to reveal a wicked smile.

“Let’s go,” Chu Feng started to frown. He sensed that the situation was abnormal. Immediately, he grabbed Yao’er and planned to leave this place.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, that Long Lin’s body shifted; he instantly arrived beside Chu Feng and Yao’er. Furthermore, his palm had already grabbed onto Yao’er’s shoulder.

Seeing this, Chu Feng hurriedly grabbed onto Yao’er wrist in fear that Long Lin would snatch Yao’er away again.

However, right after Chu Feng grabbed onto Yao’er’s wrist, he felt his body growing weak and powerless. Just like that, he watched as Yao’er was snatched away by Long Lin.

“Long Lin, you are breaking your promise!” At this moment, Chu Feng was deeply angry.

“Breaking my promise? Why do you say that?” Long Lin pushed Yao’er behind him and then asked with a beaming smile. It was as if he was unable to understand what Chu Feng was saying.

“You said that as long as I become a Half Martial Emperor and return, you will release Yao’er. Yet, what is the meaning of your current actions?” Chu Feng lashed out angrily.

“I think you’re mistaken. Have I not already released this girl? I had already released her, thus, I have kept my promise.”

“Merely, I caught her again. You cannot blame me for this. If you must blame someone, you can only blame yourself for being so weak,” Long Lin continued to smile.

“Shameless! You’re truly courting death!” Baili Xuankong was unable to contain himself. He waved his sleeve and revealed his palm. His Death Kill Brush was already in his hand.

“Kill all living things!!!”

Suddenly, Baili Xuankong pointed his Death Kill Brush at Long Lin. Then, the Death Kill Brush started to shine with light. A dazzling golden radiance hid the sky and covered the earth as it shot explosively toward Long Lin.

“Ancestor, Yao’er is also there,” Seeing this, Chu Feng was extremely worried. He naturally wished for Long Lin to be suppressed. However, he did not wish for anything to happen to Yao’er.

With how strong Baili Xuankong’s attack was, Chu Feng was worried that Yao’er would be harmed.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after Baili Xuankong shot out his attack, a strange sound suddenly came from Long Lin’s direction. Then, Baili Xuankong’s attack actually disappeared in mid air.

As for Long Lin, he was still standing there completely unharmed. Merely, there was already no longer any trace of smile in his eyes. His smile had already been replaced with coldness.

“Go.”

At this moment, Long Lin’s arm was raised. Then, many golden nails shot toward Baili Xuankong.

Seeing this scene, Baili Xuankong began to unleash his martial power. Light started to shine underneath his feet. He was trying to dodge.

“Puu, puu, puu, puu~~~”

“The golden nails suddenly accelerated. In the end, all of them shot into Baili Xuankong’s body and nailed him to the ground. As blood started to flow from his body, Baili Xuankong was unable to budge because of the nails.

“If it wasn’t for Chu Feng, you would already be dead now,” Long Lin said coldly.

“Bastard!” Seeing this scene, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were deeply enraged. One by one, they took out their weapons and planned to attack Long Lin.

“Stop, do not attack,” However, Baili Xuankong hurriedly spoke to stop them.

Being nailed by the golden nails, he finally realized the enormous gap between him and Long Lin. When even he was left in such a state, if Dugu Xingfeng and the others were to attack Long Lin, they would simply be courting death.

“Lord Baili,” Seeing that Baili Xuankong did not allow them to attack, even though Dugu Xingfeng and the others were very unreconciled, they had no choice but to move to Baili Xuankong’s side. They wanted to help Baili Xuankong remove the nails.

“Zzzzz~”

“This...”

However, right after Dugu Xingfeng’s hand approached the nails, before he even touched them, his hand was already badly mutilated.

“Don’t approach me. This is not something that you all can contend against,” Baili Xuankong warned.

It was only at this moment that Dugu Xingfeng and the others finally realized how frightening that Long Lin was.

Merely, they did not understand why there would be such a

frightening existence in their Cyanwood Mountain's Ancient Era's Remnant. Exactly what was his purpose in having Chu Feng help him?

“What do you want?” Chu Feng asked Long Lin.

“Become a Martial Emperor and then return. I'll tell you then,” Long Lin said with a beaming smile.

“At that time, will you release Yao'er?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally. Furthermore, I will not capture her again. I will let her leave with you,” Long Lin said.

“How can I trust you?” Chu Feng asked.

“You have no other choice. Thus, do not try to haggle with me. You do not have the means to do so,” Long Lin said.

Chu Feng felt very displeased to hear those words. However, what Long Lin said was the truth. Thus, he was powerless to refute him.

“Rest assured, I am someone who keeps their promises. I will definitely do what I say I will,” Seeing that Chu Feng had grown speechless, Long Lin spoke in a very shameless manner.

“Release my ancestor,” Chu Feng said.

“Ancestor? Someone with that sort of strength is capable of becoming an Ancestor?”

“Hahaha...” Long Lin started to laugh mockingly. This made Baili Xuankong's expression become very ugly.

However, as Long Lin laughed loudly, the golden nails that had nailed Baili Xuankong to the ground actually disappeared. Following that, the wounds on Baili Xuankong caused by the nails also disappeared. In fact, Baili Xuankong was not even feeling any pain now.

It was as if he had never been injured. But... the blood that had flowed from his wounds earlier was still present.

At this moment, even though Baili Xuankong was angered, he did not say anything and stood up silently.

He knew that, regardless of what sort of thing this guy by the name of Long Lin was, he was not someone who he could afford to provoke.

Not only him, there would probably not be anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism who could afford to provoke Long Lin.

This guy was truly too frightening.

“I hope that you will not continue to break your promises,” Chu Feng said those words and then turned around to leave.

“Wait, don’t be so anxious to leave,” Long Lin suddenly said.

“What else do you need?” Chu Feng turned around and asked.

“I’ll grant you a treasure for protection,” As Long Lin said those words, he pointed to the deep blue bow underneath the large tree.

Then, with a wave of his arm, he pointed his finger toward Chu Feng, and that bow started to rise from the ground and fly toward Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng raised his hand and caught the bow. In the instant he caught the bow, a very fantastic power surged into his body.

That power was extremely peculiar. It was not recognizing him as its master. While Chu Feng was unable to sense the true power of the bow, he was capable of using it.

Without thinking about it, Chu Feng knew that it must have been done by Long Lin.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Long Lin raised his arm again and tossed the ten golden arrows that Chu Feng had obtained from the golden palace to him.

“This bow is absolutely useless to be pulled without arrows. Only by fitting it with these arrows will its might be unleashed.”

“There is no need for you to know your opponent’s name. You merely need to shout the cultivation of your opponent, and the bow will shoot those arrows. Unless your opponent is capable of splitting apart the strength of these arrows, they will not be able to dodge them and will definitely be injured by these arrows,” Long Lin said.

Chu Feng’s heart was startled upon hearing those words. The arrows themselves were extremely powerful to begin with. Likely, no one underneath the Martial Emperor level would be able to withstand them.

As for the bow, it was also extremely powerful. If these arrows were shot from this bow, it was likely that even rank one Martial Emperors would undoubtedly be killed.

As long as he declared his opponent’s cultivation, they would not be able to dodge the arrows. Wouldn’t this mean that, by relying on these ten arrows, Chu Feng would be able to easily kill ten rank one Martial Emperors?

Sure enough, this bow was as he had imagined it to be. It was very extraordinary, and definitely not an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. This was simply an extremely effective weapon for killing.

Chapter 1749 – Sacred Land For Cultivation

After Chu Feng put the blue bow and golden arrows away, he looked to Long Lin and asked, “This bow and these arrows are mine now?”

“They can be said to be yours,” Long Lin said with a smile.

“While they are rare treasures, I will not thank you for them unless you are to release Yao’er,” Chu Feng said.

“I will release Yao’er on the premise that you become a Martial Emperor,” Long Lin said with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng looked to Yao’er and said, “Yao’er, wait for my return. Next time, I will definitely bring you away.”

“Mn,” Yao’er did not say much and only nodded her head while smiling. Even though she had not known Chu Feng for long, she trusted him enormously.

Seeing Yao’er’s smile, Chu Feng’s heart felt taut. After all... it was extremely obvious that she was forcing herself to smile.

Yao’er was only smiling this brilliantly because she was afraid that Chu Feng would be worried about her.

Afterward, Chu Feng did not continue to linger. Instead, he turned around and quickly left. He felt that the longer he stayed here, the sadder Yao’er would feel. Thus, it would be better for him to disappear sooner.

When Chu Feng had completely left the treasure deposit, left Long Lin’s line of sight, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself and heaved a long sigh. It was as if he had finally managed to relax after enduring for a very long time.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Baili Xuankong asked worriedly, “Chu Feng, what’s wrong?”

“It’s nothing,” Chu Feng smiled and shook his head. Then, he

looked to his Cosmos Sack. A faint joy flashed through his eyes.

The reason why he felt this sort of relief was because Chu Feng had been worried the entire time, that the three purple flame arrows in his Cosmos Sack would be discovered by Long Lin.

Although Long Lin had already bestowed the blue bow and the golden arrows to him, Chu Feng could not guarantee that he would be willing to gift the three purple flame arrows to him too.

After all, these purple flame arrows were extremely powerful. If the ten golden arrows were capable of killing rank one Martial Emperors when used together with the blue bow, the three purple flame arrows, when used with the blue bow, would be able to kill rank two Martial Emperors.

To Chu Feng, they were extremely effective killing weapons.

After all, no one would be able to guess that Chu Feng, with his cultivation, would have the ability to kill rank two Martial Emperors. After all, there had never been such a treasure in the Holy Land of Martialism.

At the very least, Chu Feng had never seen anyone possessing this sort of treasure.

“Although that Long Lin is despicable, the way I see it, he most definitely has something that he wishes to request that you do. Else, he would not have gone through all this trouble.”

“Thus, in this period of time, he will not do anything to Yao’er. Therefore, you do not have to worry too much,” Baili Xuankong thought that Chu Feng was worried about Yao’er, and thus spoke to console him.

“Ancestor, please rest assured. Although I am worried about Yao’er, I will not blame myself. I had already done all that I should do earlier. As for the things I have yet to do, I will do them in the future.”

Chu Feng nodded his head with a smile. While he was worried

about Yao'er, he knew that worrying for her like this would be useless. Rather than worrying about her, it would be better for him to put forth more effort to search for cultivation resources to increase his cultivation so that he could bring Yao'er out sooner.

“Good, I like your mentality,” Baili Xuankong nodded in admiration.

Only by being able to meet gains or losses with equanimity could one be considered to be a true man. While these words might sound simple, they were things that many people failed to do. Yet, Chu Feng, although very young, was already capable of accomplishing such a feat.

This made Baili Xuankong feel extremely gratified. However, before they left, Baili Xuankong was still unable to contain himself. He turned around, took a glance at the treasure deposit, and sighed, “Truly, never would I have expected such a monster to be hidden in our Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Lord Baili, could it be that he’s an existence from the Ancient Era?” Dugu Xingfeng asked.

“The way I see it, it is very possible that he’s the true body of that giant tree. The branches and leaves of that giant tree are dragon horns. Its bark was covered with scales. That man’s name just so happened to be Long Lin. No matter how I see it, they are definitely related.”¹

“Only he will know exactly what he is. What I’m concerned about is not what he is. Rather, with how powerful he is, why does he need Chu Feng’s assistance?” As Baili Xuankong said those words, he looked to Chu Feng.

Faintly, he began to feel worried again. He was afraid that Chu Feng would be exploited by that Long Lin. However, there was nothing he could do about it.

“After I become a Martial Emperor, we might get to know his

intentions.” Chu Feng said with a light smile. His smile was very at ease. There was not the slightest trace of burden in his smile. It was as if he had not placed this matter in his heart at all.

The reason why Chu Feng was acting this way was because he was afraid that Baili Xuankong and the others would be worried for him.

“With your talent, it would naturally not be difficult for you to become a Martial Emperor. Merely, the cultivation resources you’d require would not be that easy to obtain,” Baili Xuankong sighed.

The cultivation resources Chu Feng needed had become more and more frightening. He had observed all this with his own eyes. If this were to continue, the cultivation resources in the Holy Land of Martialism that would be able to satisfy Chu Feng would become fewer and fewer.

Likely, only the cultivation treasures from the Ancient Era would be useful to Chu Feng. However, those things were usually hidden in forbidden areas and Ancient Era’s Remnants.

As for those places, even with his cultivation, Baili Xuankong would still not dare to trespass into them. Thus, he was worried.

“Speaking of this, Chu Feng, you have truly broadened our horizons. It is the first time in my life that I’ve seen such a ferocious cultivation method.”

“Exactly what sort of power do you possess? Could it really be an Inherited Bloodline above that of Imperial Bloodlines?” Yin Chengkong asked curiously.

Before Chu Feng could respond, Baili Xuankong said in a very serious manner, “Regarding this, you all must not tell anyone. You must absolutely keep this a secret. Got it?”

“Got it,” Yin Chengkong and the others all nodded. None of them dared to disobey Baili Xuankong.

“Chu Feng, let’s return. I am unable to feel free from anxiety by

staying here.”

Baili Xuankong said to Chu Feng. They had only been able to arrive here safely because of Chu Feng. Thus, they would have to rely on Chu Feng to return safely.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded and then began to lead the four of them into the frightening Ancient Era’s killing formation.

To others, the Ancient Era’s killing formation was a danger spot. However, to Chu Feng, this was more like a passageway. He did not think much of it at all.

As they looked to the calm and collected Chu Feng leading the way before them, Dugu Xingfeng and the others all felt inferior. Even though they had managed to pass through the Ancient Era’s killing formation once, they were still extremely nervous and scared to enter it again.

At this very moment, inside that treasure deposit, Yao’er was still standing there and looking in the direction where Chu Feng and the others had left motionlessly.

At this moment, the smile on Yao’er’s face was completely gone. Tears were spinning about in her eyes. She was resisting and forcing herself to not cry.

Grief, reluctance and loneliness. These feelings were all pressing down on her heart.

“What’s there to be sad about? It’s not like you won’t see him again. Rest assured, with that brat’s talent, it will not be hard for him to become a Martial Emperor.”

“Furthermore, I did not place a time limit on him this time. Thus, sooner or later, he will return for you.”

“Instead of feeling sentimental here, it would be better if you seized the moment and properly trained. Compared to him, time is even more valuable for you,” Long Lin said.

“Will you really release me next time?” Yao’er asked. After what had happened, Yao’er no longer trusted Long Lin.

“As long as you’re willing to leave, I will naturally let you go. Merely, are you really willing to leave?”

“You were stuck at rank one Martial Emperor level for a very long time. Yet, you’ve been here for only a short year and are already on the verge of reaching a breakthrough. You should know who has helped you.”

“To you, this place is a sacred land for cultivation. Furthermore, I just so happen to be willing to help you. This might be the greatest opportunity of your lifetime. Are you really willing to part with it?” Long Lin asked with his eyes narrowed into a smile.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

[Long Lin](#) → [Dragon Scale](#). ↩

Chapter 1750 – Mysterious Letter

“As long as you are willing to release me, I will leave right away and stay not a single moment longer,” Yao’er said stubbornly.

“Foolish, truly too foolish. I have discovered that while others are pretending to be foolish, you, girl, are actually foolish.”

“To martial cultivators, one’s cultivation is more important than anything else. Especially to monsters like yourself, cultivation is even more important.”

“Do you know how many world spiritists dream of capturing someone like you to use as medicine concocting material?”

“Without sufficient strength, how can you protect yourself?” Long Lin asked.

“I’m not afraid of death,” Yao’er said stubbornly.

“While you might not be afraid of death, are you afraid of that Chu Feng dying?” Long Lin asked.

“.....” Yao’er became speechless. Indeed, she did not fear death. However, should Chu Feng die, she would not be able to accept it. Just thinking about it made her heart ache. This sort of feeling was the feeling of concern. Merely, she didn’t quite know it yet.

“The fact that this tree is capable of assisting with your cultivation is your luck. The fact that I am willing to teach you the cultivation method is a fated opportunity. Treasure this moment carefully. If you are to become stronger, you will then be able to protect that Chu Feng,” Long Lin said.

Hearing those words, Yao’er’s expression changed; she had suddenly come to a realization. She raised her little hand and wiped away the tears at the rims of her eyes and then flew over to the tree, sat down in a cross-legged position, closed her eyes and began to train.

At this moment, that giant tree trembled slightly. Then, a formless yet very powerful energy began to engulf Yao'er and started to be absorbed into her body.

“This is the first time I have seen you this earnest in your training. If you had done this to begin with, you would've already become a rank two Martial Emperor,” Long Lin said with slight disappointment.

As for Yao'er, she ignored him. It was as if she could not hear his words. Just like that, she continued to immerse herself in her training.

“Seems like that boy Chu Feng's charm is quite extraordinary. However, as for his talent... he will, at the very most, only be able to become an overlord here. If he were to enter the Outer World, it would likely be very difficult for him to attain any major accomplishments.”

“However, as he's not a being that should be in this pond, he will likely, sooner or later, leave this place. I wonder... at that time, would that be good or bad for him?”

As Long Lin muttered, he began to form hand seals with one hand. Then, he pointed to the golden palace in midair.

With that movement, the thousand golden-armored soldiers that guarded the outside of the palace began to return to the inside of the palace in succession. When the entrance of the palace closed, the palace started to gradually shrink in size. In the end, it returned to its original size and descended onto Long Lin's hand.

“This is?”

When the golden palace landed on his hand, Long Lin was startled. Then his gaze flashed, and he became deeply astonished.

At this moment, a slight change had appeared in the golden palace. There were three talismans that seemed like gates on the palace. The first two talismans were open. Only the last talisman

was still closed.

“That boy actually entered the Second Level Hall and took away the Second Level Hall’s three arrows?” Long Lin became even more shocked. After carefully observing the golden palace, he became certain of this.

It was only after a very long time that Long Lin’s state of mind started to return back to normal.

Then, he revealed a rather awkward smile and said, “Interesting. His talent is this powerful. Likely, even after entering the Outer World, he’ll be able to find a role to play.”

“Chu Feng, it seems that I have underestimated you.”

.....

After a short journey, Chu Feng and the others finally walked out from the Ancient Era’s Remnant. They had arrived at the most tightly guarded area in the Cyanwood Mountain.

This place was no longer part of the Cyanwood Mountain. Instead, it was a separate space. This was the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly.

The Cyanwood Sacred Assembly was not as vast as the Cyanwood Mountain. However, it was a treasured land for cultivation. Due to the existence of special formations, this place was capable of gathering the Natural Energies from outside. As time passed, the Natural Energies of this place were a lot denser compared to the outside world.

On top of that, there were a lot of special spiritual herbs and plants growing there. The auras emitted by those plants and herbs were capable of affecting the nature of the Natural Energies of this place, making the Natural Energies even easier to be refined by cultivators. Thus, the people from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly would generally spend the entire year in closed-door training in this place in order to enjoy the better training conditions.

This was also the reason why so many of the Cyanwood Mountain's elders dreamed of entering the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly.

There were also many forbidden areas in the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly. At this moment, Chu Feng and the others had arrived at the most hidden forbidden area.

It was already not a question of whether or not the elders would dare to enter this forbidden area. Rather, other than Yin Chengkong, Guan Hong and Dugu Xingfeng, no other people even knew of the existence of this place.

This was a garden. The garden was very small. Other than the garden in the center of this area, and a pavilion on the outside, there was only a small and simple cabin at the corner of the garden.

This was the place where Baili Xuankong had been in closed-door training the entire time.

Baili Xuankong did not plan to stay in the Cyanwood Mountain with Chu Feng. He was planning to bring Chu Feng to find cultivation resources so that Chu Feng could rapidly increase his cultivation.

However, there were things that he had to bring with him. That was the reason why he had decided to return here first.

However, upon reaching this place, Baili Xuankong had only taken a couple steps when his expression started to become serious. The reason for that was because he discovered that there was a letter on the stone table in the pavilion. One word was written on the letter: 'invitation.' Evidently, this was not an ordinary letter, but rather an invitation letter.

After a moment of surprise, Baili Xuankong made a grabbing gesture with his hand. The letter directly entered his hand. Then, he began to open the letter to read it.

Once he opened the letter, Baili Xuankong revealed an expression of anger. He looked to Yin Chengkong and the others and asked, "Who sent this over?"

"This..." Yin Chengkong, Dugu Xingfeng and Guan Hong looked to the letter, and then looked to one another. Their complexions turned pale. Then, together, they said, "None of us have received that invitation letter."

"What?" Upon hearing those words, the expression of anger on Baili Xuankong's face lessened. However, even though he was generally a very composed person, he still started to frown. Nervousness and unease began to appear in his flickering gaze.

After calming down, he asked again, "You all are certain that it wasn't any of you who brought this invitation letter here?"

"Lord Baili, we dare to guarantee that none of us received that invitation letter. Thus, it was truly not us who brought it over."

"Lord Baili, exactly what is written on that invitation letter?" At this moment, Yin Chengkong and the others were filled with cold sweat. Their complexions became even paler. Evidently, they were all extremely afraid.

"You all can look for yourselves," Baili Xuankong tossed the invitation letter to them.

"This..." Upon seeing the contents of the invitation letter, the expressions on Dugu Xingfeng, Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong's faces all changed enormously. They who had been extremely frightened before now started to have true fear.

Seeing what was happening, Chu Feng also went over to try to read the contents of the letter.

Chu Feng was also surprised upon reading the letter. The person the invitation letter was inviting was actually him, Chu Feng.

To outsiders, Chu Feng should have already been expelled from the Cyanwood Mountain. The two of them were already enemies.

Even if someone wished to invite Chu Feng, they shouldn't have sent an invitation letter to the Cyanwood Mountain.

Furthermore, according to what Chu Feng knew, when Baili Xuankong was not here, Dugu Xingfeng, Yin Chengkong and Guan Hong had been here training the entire time. It was only when Baili Xuankong called for them that they had gathered and left for the Ancient Era's Remnants together with him and Chu Feng. Before that, they had been here the entire time.

However, when they left, they had not seen the invitation letter. This meant that the invitation letter should have just arrived. In that case, the person who sent the invitation letter should have known that Chu Feng was in the Cyanwood Mountain.

Who was it that was capable of entering the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly without a sound, arriving at the forbidden area where Baili Xuankong trained to leave this invitation letter, and leaving unseen afterward?

This... was the reason why Baili Xuankong and the others were so panic-stricken and uneasy.

This meant that not only did this individual know of Chu Feng's relationship with the Cyanwood Mountain, he or she also possessed remarkable abilities.

Chapter 1751 – Fight For The Strongest

“Lord Baili, what are we to do?” At this moment, Yin Chengkong and the others had expressions of fear and panic on their faces. They were unable to remain calm.

This matter was simply no small matter. Not only did it concern their lives, it also concerned the existence of the Cyanwood Mountain.

“Don’t panic. Regardless of who that person might be, he has only sent an invitation letter and has not actually done anything to us. This means that, at least for the time being, that person does not have any malice toward us.”

“Else, that person would have been able to notify the people from the Four Clans and have them directly come to capture Chu Feng and me. There would be no reason for him to go through all this trouble,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Milord, what you said is very true,” Hearing what Baili Xuankong said, Dugu Xingfeng and the others started to calm down slightly. However, they were still extremely uneasy.

After all, not only had that person entered their secret forbidden area, he had also left without alarming them at all.

“Chu Feng, what do you think of this matter?” Baili Xuankong turned to ask Chu Feng.

“Let me finish reading the contents of the invitation letter first,” As Chu Feng said, he continued to read the invitation letter.

Chu Feng felt that, regardless of who that person might be, for him to come here and leave behind that invitation letter, it meant that he had some sort of objective. Likely, that objective should be written on the invitation letter.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Baili Xuankong and the others came to a sudden realization. One by one, they started to smile

bitterly. They thought to themselves in their hearts that they were actually less calm than a child. They had truly lived all these years in vain.

Although they were all smiling bitterly in their hearts, they turned their gazes onto the letter again.

After they continued reading the contents of the letter, Chu Feng and the others finally realized that whoever it was that had left the invitation letter had invited Chu Feng to participate in a ‘Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.’

Not only was Chu Feng invited, there were other people invited as well. Furthermore, the invitation letter contained all the names and origins of the people invited.

Even though Chu Feng did not know some of the people, after Chu Feng read their origins, he knew that all of the people being invited were most definitely the strongest members of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

Among them, the majority of the people being invited were disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace, the Mortal King Palace and the Underworld Palace. As for the others, they were the disciples of hidden experts. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s personal disciple, Baili Xinghe, was also among the people invited.

A thing worthy of being mentioned was that only one person from the Four Great Imperial Clans was invited. That was the person who Chu Feng had defeated not long ago, Ximen Feixue.

This indirectly signified that only Ximen Feixue of the Four Great Imperial Clan’s younger generation was qualified to participate in that Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

It must be said that if all of the people invited on the invitation letter were to show up, then the so-called Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly would be extremely extraordinary.

The Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation’s sparring

held at Mooncloud City would simply not be able to match up to this one at all.

If there was someone capable of obtaining first place in this Battle Assembly, it would mean that that person would really be the number one individual of all the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

As for what shocked Chu Feng the most, it was not this Battle Assembly. Rather, it was the person who had sent the invitations for this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

While that person had not directly declared his name, he had left behind his title.

He was actually Emperor Gong's successor.

"Emperor Gong's successor? It's actually Emperor Gong's successor?"

Reading till this point, the expressions on the faces of Baili Xuankong and the others all changed to those of amazement.

"Ancestor, you know of this Emperor Gong's successor?" Chu Feng asked curiously. Judging by the expressions Baili Xuankong and the others had, it seemed that they had heard of Emperor Gong's successor.

In fact, Chu Feng had also heard of this Emperor Gong's successor himself. After all, he had only been able to obtain the power of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram with the help of the Emperor Gong's successor's strand of aura.

However, logically, Emperor Gong's successor should have already died. Could it be that he was still alive?

"During the period when you were being listed as wanted, a newcomer arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism. His reputation rose rapidly. He continuously challenged the disciples of experts, and won every match with absolute dominance."

“His strength is extremely powerful and his talent is definitely heaven-defying. However, no one knows who he is. All they know is that he has declared himself to be Emperor Gong’s successor,” Baili Xuankong said.

“In that case, that Emperor Gong’s successor is also a member of the younger generation?” Chu Feng asked in a surprised manner.

“Mn, a member of the younger generation just like you. However, his reputation is even more magnificent than yours.”

“Even though your reputation has soared enormously after utterly defeating the Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation, it remains that Ximen Feixue was the only person with bearing among the Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation.”

“As for that Emperor Gong’s successor, the opponents he defeated were all at least of the same tier as Ximen Feixue. They are all the peak younger generation of the Holy Land of Martialism,” Baili Xuankong said.

After hearing all this, Chu Feng had a rough idea of the general situation. This Emperor Gong’s successor was most definitely not the owner of that strand of aura. It was very possible that this Emperor Gong’s successor was that Emperor Gong’s successor’s descendant.

“However, with his ability, it should be absolutely impossible for him to charge into this place and leave the invitation letter behind without alarming anyone. It would seem that he possesses an extraordinary existence behind him too.”

“This is also no wonder as he, a mere member of the younger generation, has dared to challenge that many experts’ disciples without a care for the consequences,” Baili Xuankong gasped with admiration.

“Emperor Gong has been dead for so long. If he is truly Emperor

Gong's successor, then Emperor Gong's family must have continued to exist for a very long time. Merely... they have only decided to show up again now."

"If that's the case, it would also not be surprising for him to have the backing of a powerful expert. After all, he is the person who obtained the strength of Emperor Gong," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, could you be implying that...?" After hearing what Chu Feng said, Dugu Xingfeng and the others' eyes all shone, and their expressions changed.

"What Chu Feng is implying is that Emperor Gong has had successors the entire time. Furthermore, each generation will succeed the previous generation. This member of the younger generation with a magnificent reputation should be the Emperor Gong's successor of the newest generation," Baili Xuankong explained.

"But, Emperor Gong has been dead for so long. If he really possesses successors, they should have already shown themselves long ago. Why would they only show themselves now?" Dugu Xingfeng and the others asked. Actually, they did not believe that Emperor Gong actually possessed successors. They felt that Chu Feng's guess was incorrect.

"Truth be told, back when I was in the Alliance Domain, I came across a rare opportunity. At that time, the strand of an aura left behind by an expert senior helped me."

"As for the master of that strand of aura, he was precisely Emperor Gong's successor," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, are you serious?" Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong and the others were all startled. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was no small matter. If it was true, it would be extremely major.

"Absolutely," Chu Feng nodded. Then, he pondered for a

moment and continued, “Regarding this, I should have kept it a secret. However, everyone here is a senior I trust. Thus, I will say it to everyone.”

“The founder of the Sealing Ancient Village personally met Emperor Gong’s successor. Not only that, he also obtained the graces of that Emperor Gong’s successor. Thus, the founder of the Sealing Ancient Village declared Emperor Gong’s successor as a grand person.”

“Furthermore, in his records, he intentionally left these words: This grand person’s ability is incomparable. It is likely that in the Holy Land of Martialism, this grand person is the strongest person besides Lord Emperor Qing.”

“Merely, that Emperor Gong’s successor was extremely low-profile, and he refused to have the founder of the Sealing Ancient Village mention this matter to anyone. Thus, very few people know about this.”

“However, I felt that if that Emperor Gong’s successor had really obtained the strength of Emperor Gong, it would be very possible for him to continue to pass that down to future generations,” Chu Feng explained.

Chapter 1752 – Must Go

“This... I have heard of that Sealing Ancient Village’s founder. Indeed, he is someone from the era ruled by Emperor Qing.”

“Based on that, Emperor Gong’s successor was already present in Emperor Qing’s era. Merely, he had hidden himself.”

“In that case, the Emperor Gong’s successor that appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism now might not simply be echoing the name of Emperor Gong. Instead, he is likely actually Emperor Gong’s successor.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the expressions on Baili Xuankong and the others’ faces all became even more marvelous. In fact, Elder Guan Hong was even trembling slightly out of excitement.

Before, they had not believed that that member of the younger generation that had become famous recently was actually Emperor Gong’s successor. They had all thought that he was only using Emperor Gong’s reputation to strengthen his own reputation.

However, after hearing what Chu Feng said, they all changed their ways of thinking. As for the opinion they came to have afterward, it shocked them enormously.

“If he really is Emperor Gong’s successor, then this is an extremely major matter.”

“They all say that this era is the era where heroes strive for the position of Overlord, the era where an Overlord will be born. Now it seems that that is indeed the case.”

“Not only that, it is likely that this era will be the most marvelous era after the Ancient Era. The Overlord of this era will likely become the strongest Overlord to ever exist.”

“Haha...”

“Even though we are all weary old bones, if we are to be able to see the birth of an Overlord, our lives will not have been lived in vain.”

A smile of anticipation appeared on Baili Xuankong’s face. Then, he turned his gaze filled with expectation to Chu Feng.

It was not only him. Guan Hong, Yin Chengkong and Dugu Xingfeng were also acting this way.

In troubled times, heroes will emerge. With the emergence of outstanding heroes, they will begin to battle for the position of Overlord. At this moment, the young man before them was someone that possessed a very high potential to become this era’s Overlord.

Upon thinking about how, in the future, Chu Feng would not only be able to fight against geniuses from all over the Holy Land of Martialism, but he would also be able to fight against Emperor Gong’s successor, Baili Xuankong and the others became even more excited, and they were filled with even more anticipation.

“Truth be told, I also wish to experience this Emperor Gong’s successor. This is truly a rare opportunity,” Chu Feng looked at the invitation letter and then spoke with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, you absolutely cannot go. The invitation letter has listed the names of all of the people being invited. Not to mention the others, even the Four Great Imperial Clans will know that you have been invited.”

“Regardless of whether or not you are to go, the Four Great Imperial Clans will definitely dispatch many experts to encircle and annihilate you. If you are to really go, you will end up falling into their trap,” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually planning to go there, Dugu Xingfeng was deeply shocked. He immediately began to try to persuade Chu Feng against it.

“But if I do not go, I will become the object of everyone’s ridicule.

Everyone will think that I, Chu Feng, am scared. They will not think that I am scared of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Instead, they will think that I am scared of Emperor Gong's successor."

"Thus, no matter what, I must definitely go to this so-called Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly."

At this moment, Chu Feng's eyes were filled with determination. Not only that, he had a very eager appearance. Evidently, he was looking forward to this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly, and was determined to show up.

In this sort of situation, Dugu Xingfeng and the others could only turn their gazes to Baili Xuankong. They hoped that their Lord Baili, Chu Feng's Southern Cyanwood Forest's Ancestor, would be able to persuade Chu Feng against it.

Furthermore, it was clear that Baili Xuankong was the person with the greatest possibility of being able to persuade Chu Feng.

"Good. As expected of someone that I think highly of. That resolution of yours is precisely what makes you someone with the potential to become an Overlord."

"Chu Feng, I'll accompany you," Baili Xuankong said with a loud laugh. He appeared to be extremely excited and happy.

"Lord Baili, this... you... I..." Dugu Xingfeng and the others truly did not expect that Baili Xuankong would pamper Chu Feng like this.

"Don't worry. No matter how strong the Four Great Imperial Clans might be, they are still just the Four Great Imperial Clans. Chu Feng and I will not be so foolish as to allow them to catch us that easily."

"Furthermore, I feel that since this Emperor Gong's successor has the ability to hold a competition like this, he should be able to have the ability to ensure order in the competition."

"He should know that Chu Feng is listed as wanted by the Four

Great Imperial Clans. Yet, at such a time, he has actually announced to the world that he has invited Chu Feng.”

“Logically, he should also know that the Four Great Imperial Clans would want to capture Chu Feng.”

“Thus, as the party holding this competition, he should protect Chu Feng’s safety. At the very least, he must do so when the competition is being held.”

“Else, he will also end up becoming an object of ridicule by the people around the world,” Baili Xuankong analyzed.

“But...” Dugu Xingfeng and the others were still worried.

“There’s no ‘but’. Chu Feng and I will head over to check it out first. If it is truly dangerous, we will not participate. You all do not have to worry about us,” Baili Xuankong waved his hand. He did not wish to continue on with this subject.

Seeing that Baili Xuankong had made his resolution, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were all stunned. Baili Xuankong and Chu Feng were truly too crazy.

The two of them were truly willfully heading towards the mountain while knowing full well that it contained tigers. This was what it meant to be fearless.

.....

It was as Dugu Xingfeng and the others had anticipated. After the invitations were sent out, the Four Great Imperial Clans became restless. It was not only them; the entire Holy Land of Martialism was boiling with excitement. Truly, the emergence of a gale caused motion all over.

The invitation letters had completely shaken the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

People all said that this era was the era in which an Overlord would be born. Everyone had fixed their gazes onto the younger

generation. They all felt that the Overlord would be someone from the younger generation.

As for this so-called Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly, it was there to inform everyone beforehand who the future Overlord of this era would be.

Furthermore, other than the people invited, those holding the competition had also sent word that anyone underneath a hundred years old, as long as they felt that they were qualified to participate in this competition, could all enter.

Thus, many people that had not been invited, yet were unable to accept the fact that they had not been invited, all began to proceed toward the location of the competition to prove themselves.

As for the people that were coming to watch the show, they were even more numerous. Powers from all around the Holy Land of Martialism sent people out to watch this competition. Even the old monsters that had been in closed-door training for a long time and not concerned themselves with the matters of the world all came out from their training.

This was only natural. After all, everyone wished to see who the new Overlord would be.

Thus, all of a sudden, people from all around began to proceed toward the location where the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly was being held... the Overlord Domain's Gong Ba Plains.

This Gong Ba Plains could also be considered to be an extraordinary place.

Back then, when Emperor Gong was still young, before he had become famous, he fought against a very famous member of the older generation from that time.

That man was called Ba Xingfeng.

Everyone had thought that Ba Xingfeng would definitely win that

battle. The reason for that was because not only did the two men possess an enormous gap in their fame, there was also a very large gap in their strength.

However, when the two men fought, they were evenly matched, and unable to defeat one another. This shocked everyone.

Emperor Gong and Ba Xingfeng fought for a total of ninety-nine days and nights. They leveled a mountain range down to a plain with potholes all over the ground.

Finally, Emperor Gong defeated Ba Xingfeng with a clever technique.

After that battle, not only did Emperor Gong's reputation spread like wildfire, the people also named that place the Ba Gong Plains.

However, as Emperor Gong's fame grew greater and greater and he ended up becoming an overlord unmatched by anyone in that era, that place was renamed the Gong Ba Plains.

And now, Emperor Gong's successor had chosen this Gong Ba Plain as the location for the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly. Naturally, there was actually a reason for why he had done so.

Back then, Emperor Gong's fame had started from the Gong Ba Plains. Then, he had ended up walking a journey to become an unparalleled Overlord. And now, his successor also wished to follow Emperor Gong's path.

While he was trying to prove himself, he was also trying to pay respects to Emperor Gong by doing this.

Chapter 1753 – The Gathering Of The Four Clans

At this moment, the borders of the vast and boundless Gong Ba Plains were packed with people. In the sky and on the the ground, silhouettes could be seen.

In fact, there were even enormous mountain-like bodies galloping on the horizon. Even the experts from the monstrous beast clans had arrived.

The experts from all over the Holy Land of Martialism were all flocking over like bugs that had discovered delicious food. They completely covered that delicious food from all directions.

Merely, the delicious food was not for them to eat. Rather, it was for them to watch. What was going to happen in this place would be a feast for their eyes.

At this moment, after journeying for some time, Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong had finally arrived at the Gong Ba Plains.

When they arrived at the Gong Ba Plains, like the others that had also arrived, their eyes shone, and they revealed surprised expressions.

At this moment, an enormous formation that sealed off both heaven and earth had appeared on those vast plains.

Not only was that spirit formation incomparably sturdy, it also seemed to have covered the entire Gong Ba Plain, making it look like a boundless fort. It was so enormous that it was astonishing to see, and it was entirely capable of stunning one's heart.

Furthermore, countless small doors could be seen at the bottom of that fort, making it so that one could enter the fort through those doors.

Those doors were all around the fort, and made it very easy for

people from the various powers to enter the fort.

However, while those doors were all opened, not just anyone could enter the fort. Only the younger generation under a hundred years old were able to enter through them.

For those older than a hundred years old, if they tried to charge through the doors, not only would they be knocked back by a powerful energy, they would also be seriously injured in the process.

Even Martial Emperor-level experts were unable to charge through the doors.

“That spirit formation is truly extraordinary. It is definitely a great technique that cost a lot to set up.”

Even though the fort was made very perfectly, Chu Feng was still able to see that it contained dragon veined patterns. This meant that the fort was the product of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, the spirit formation was extremely powerful. It was definitely not something that an ordinary Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist could set up. This was most definitely a great project on an enormous scale that required a lot of materials to complete.

“A spirit formation with this level of defensive power is simply comparable to the spirit formation in the Ancient Era’s Remnants. Not to mention me, likely not even rank four Martial Emperors would be able to charge into that formation.”

“It is no wonder that the person who sent the invitation letters was capable of entering our Cyanwood Sacred Assembly so easily. His abilities are truly worthy of admiration,” At this moment, even Baili Xuankong was full of praise.

“Merely, this Gong Ba Plain is extremely famous. Likely, there should have been a lot of people who have come here every day.

How could there not be anyone who saw the person that set up such a powerful spirit formation, such a sturdy fort?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"I've heard that violent winds began to appear in the Gong Ba Plains a year ago. That windstorm hid the sky and covered the earth. The entire Gong Ba Plain was covered by the wind. Thus, it was simply impossible for ordinary people to enter the Gong Ba Plains. In fact, not even Martial Emperors were able to enter it."

"When I saw the invitation letter stating that the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly would be held on the Gong Ba Plains, I was a bit worried due to the vile conditions the Gong Ba Plains have been in over the last year."

"However, now I seem to have come to a realization. The violent winds that covered the Gong Ba Plains before should not have been a natural disaster. Instead, they were created by someone," Baili Xuankong said.

"I got it. Ancestor, you're saying that the person who created the fort didn't want people to know that he was creating the fort, and thus first made the violent windstorm so that others could not approach this area. Then, in that period of time, he finished this enormous project."

"In that case, Emperor Gong's successor had planned to hold this Battle Assembly since long ago? If not, he would not have spent this much time constructing a fort," Chu Feng said.

"That is likely the case," Baili Xuankong said.

"Truly interesting. The strength of Emperor Gong's successor is truly not to be looked down upon," Chu Feng smiled.

"That's true. It would seem that even you will not be able to win this battle easily," Baili Xuankong said.

"If that's the case, it'll only be more interesting," Chu Feng smiled.

“Excellent. Your attitude is precisely what I like. Go ahead. I can only accompany you to here. You will have to rely on yourself for the road ahead,” Baili Xuankong patted Chu Feng’s shoulder lightly.

At this moment, feeling Baili Xuankong’s hand on his shoulder, Chu Feng was able to sense the high hopes Baili Xuankong had for him. Thus, he said, “This disciple does not dare to guarantee that he will be able to obtain victory. However, I will definitely give my all in this battle.”

“Boy, I trust your ability. Regardless of what the result might be, you are still this old man’s pride. Go ahead, I will wait for you here,” Baili Xuankong said.

Afterward, Chu Feng began to proceed toward that vast fort. In order to not cause unnecessary troubles, Chu Feng had not revealed his true appearance. Not only did he wear a cloak that could hide his aura, he also wore a conical bamboo hat that concealed his appearance. It could be said that Chu Feng had concealed himself completely.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans must’ve already arrived. He absolutely could not expose his identity.

If not, it would be very possible that he would die at the hands of the Four Great Imperial Clans before even entering the fort.

In fact, Chu Feng’s guess was correct. The people from the Four Great Imperial Clans had already arrived in this place before he and Baili Xuankong arrived. Furthermore, they had gathered in the Gong Ba Plains in secret.

They gathered deep in the underground of the Gong Ba Plains. They had created a temporary underground palace outside the fort using spirit formations.

At this moment, a magnificent army was gathered in this

underground palace. They were all the Four Great Imperial Clans' elites.

The four representatives of the Four Great Imperial Clans were gathered in the deepest region of the underground palace. The four of them were not the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. Instead, they were four Utmost Exalted Elders who possessed rank four Martial Emperor cultivations.

In order to catch Chu Feng, the Four Great Imperial Clans had dispatched the strongest strength that they were currently capable of dispatching.

"Say, we don't even know whether that brat Chu Feng will come or not. Yet, we weary old bones have all arrived here."

"Not only that, we have also brought the Four Clans' Emperor Dragon Seal. Are we not overestimating that brat Chu Feng too much?"

"Does he really possess that enormous of an ability to have us muster such a large force?" the Beitang Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder asked.

He had a face filled with wrinkles, and looked incomparably old. However, his eyes were shining with coldness. Even though he wasn't angry, he was very intimidating.

However, at this moment, the thing that was the most eye-catching was not him. Rather, it was a large, shiny, golden, square-shaped foot-long-and-wide seal.

Not only was there a vivid and lifelike golden dragon carved on the seal, it was also emitting a very powerful Emperor's might.

The Utmost Exalted Elders from The Dongfang Imperial Clan, the Ximen Imperial Clan and the Nangong Imperial Clan were also each holding one such large seal in their respective hands.

These were Emperor Dragon Seals. They were Imperial Armaments. However, these Imperial Armaments did not need to

recognize their master to be used. Instead, they only required powerful Imperial Bloodlines to be used.

The might of the Emperor Dragon Seals was extremely strong. They had been left behind by the Old Ancestors of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Currently, they were the most precious treasures of the Four Great Imperial Clans.

This time around, the four Utmost Exalted Elders of the Four Great Imperial Clans had not only led the Four Clans' elites with them, they had also brought their respective clans' Emperor Dragon Seals. From this, it could be seen how much importance they placed on Chu Feng.

"You have not seen that brat's abilities. Once you have, you will not question our decision," The Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder said.

While he had also not personally seen Chu Feng, he had seen and even fought against the Asura Evil Spirit Chu Feng had released. Thus, he knew very well how frightening Chu Feng was.

"While I will not question you old fellows' decisions, I feel that having the four of us dispatched with the Emperor Dragon Seals for a mere rank three Martial Emperor and a mere member of the younger generation is truly mustering too enormous of a force for something minor."

"Even if we are to kill them, it will be unfair. Likely, we will be made fun of by the people of the world," The Beitang Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder said.

"Even if we are to be ridiculed and laughed at, it is still better than to leave behind a root of trouble that will bring about the annihilation of our Four Great Imperial Clans."

"Out of carelessness, we have already missed one opportunity to eliminate him. This time around, we absolutely cannot make a mistake. Otherwise, what awaits us will be a grand disaster," The

Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder said.

Chapter 1754 – Violent Development

“Since that child possesses power capable of suppressing our Imperial Bloodline, he naturally must be eliminated.”

“Merely, are you all certain that he will definitely come? Right now... practically the entire Holy Land of Martialism knows that this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly has invited Chu Feng.”

“When all of us know that we will have to take this opportunity to eradicate Chu Feng, how could that Chu Feng not know that we would come here to ambush him?”

“If he is to come even after knowing that we would ambush him here, then that child is truly too daring; he simply refuses to put our Four Great Imperial Clans in his eyes,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said.

“He never placed our Four Great Imperial Clans in his eyes to begin with. If not, how could he dare to do the things he did?”

“Thus, that Chu Feng must be eliminated. That person with the Death Kill Brush must also be eliminated. We cannot let a single one of Chu Feng’s accomplices live,” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said slowly.

He had never seen Chu Feng nor Baili Xuankong before. However, when mentioning the two of them, he was overflowing with killing intent.

“Assuming that they show up, with the ability that they have to conceal themselves, how are we to distinguish them?”

“Furthermore, you all can see the situation around the Gong Ba Plains too. That fort over there, it is likely that even if the four of us were to use our Emperor Dragon Seals, we would still not be able to charge into it.”

“If Chu Feng were to enter it, even if he revealed his true

appearance inside, we would still not be able to capture him,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder was a bit worried.

“I’ve already had White-brow carefully inspect that fort. Indeed, it is not something that an ordinary world spiritist could set up.”

“However, as White-brow is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he is still capable of making out some things from that spirit formation. He said that although this spirit formation is currently completely sealed, it is actually capable of transforming.”

“Once the spirit formation transforms, the spirit formation will become transparent. At that time, the situation inside will be able to be seen by us outside. At that time, we will naturally know whether or not Chu Feng has come,” the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said.

“Mn, if that is the case, it will be much simpler. According to what you all have said, as long as that Chu Feng shows up, the man using the Death Kill Brush will definitely also show up. If that’s the case, we will be able to kill them both at once,” the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said.

“Rest assured, as long as they show up, we will definitely make them die here,” said the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder. As he spoke those words, he looked to the direction of the fort.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, his killing intent surged, and the Emperor Dragon Seal in his hand started to slightly tremble.

In this sort of situation, the Emperor Dragon Seals in the hands of the other three Utmost Exalted Elders also started to tremble, as if they were resonating with the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Emperor Dragon Seal.

In this sort of situation, even though the four Emperor Dragon

Seals were only Imperial Armaments, they, like humans, began to emit killing intent. In fact, their killing intent was even more intense than the killing intent being emitted by the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder.

It was as if they were impatient to eliminate that Chu Feng, who was a threat to their Imperial Bloodlines.

.....

At the same time as the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders were discussing how to eliminate Chu Feng while hiding deep underground, an old monk was sitting on the ground at a certain place outside the Gong Ba Plains.

There was a jar of top-quality wine placed beside the old monk. Before him was a bonfire. On top of the bonfire was a giant lamb leg. The lamb leg was already done roasting, and it was currently emitting an alluring aroma.

Without fear of being burned, the old monk began to take big mouthful sized bites of the lamb leg while drinking the wine. His appearance was truly unrestrained.

His appearance caused passer-bys to discuss him spiritedly. In fact, there were even some people who scoffed at him and began to point fingers.

Monks did not drink wine or eat meat; that was the standard. As for monks who would drink wine and eat meat, they were generally not good monks.

However, the old monk completely ignored the actions of the passer-bys.

He only looked to the fort and said with a low voice, "As far as I know, there are no more than three people in the Holy Land of Martialism who could create such a fort within a year."

"As for those three old fellows, they seemed to all have been in their own territories, and none of them set foot outside in the past

year.”

“It would seem that there will be the addition of another Immortal to the Holy Land of Martialism’s Ten Immortals. Emperor Gong’s successor? Interesting.”

“This Holy Land of Martialism is truly a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers. I wonder, how many more powerful existences are there that we still do not know about?”

“However, no matter what, that boy Chu Feng has finally met his match this time around.”

.....

At the same time. In the sky above the Gong Ba Plains, at the summit of the white clouds, at an altitude that ordinary people were simply incapable of reaching, a woman wearing a white dress suddenly appeared.

Not only did this woman possess a very marvelous body with all the right curves, her facial appearance was also quite beautiful.

However, this woman just so happened to give off malicious airs. Not only that, she also had a head full of white hair. Upon seeing her, one would tremble with fear.

At this moment, this woman’s gaze swept downward. As she looked at the tide of people pouring into that enormous fort, the corners of her mouth raised into a slight smile. “My disciple, master has come to see you.”

.....

At this moment, Chu Feng had already entered the fort. Upon entering the fort, he discovered that this fort was actually transparent.

Even though he was unable to see the inside of the fort at all when he was outside, upon entering the fort, he was able to clearly see everything outside.

For this fort to have such an enormously powerful defensive ability and this special effect, Chu Feng felt a greater admiration for the techniques of the person who had created the fort.

Other than the transparent fort, the first thing that came into Chu Feng's line of sight was a dense forest. Before he even stepped foot into the forest, Chu Feng was already able to sense a dangerous aura being emitted by the forest. Whatever was inside the forest was most definitely not something simple.

There were many enormous signboards outside of that forest. The words written on the signboards let Chu Feng and the others know about the rules of this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

This Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly would officially start three days from now. When it started, everyone needed to proceed to the center region of the fort. There would be many untold dangers and difficulties on the journey there. Only the twenty people that were the fastest to arrive at the center region would be qualified to participate in the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

However, before that, everyone had to pass through this dense forest. Only by passing through the forest would they be able to reach the entrance to proceed toward the central region of the fort. This... was another trial.

“To set up many hurdles to eliminate the majority of the people. This is indeed a way that would save troubles later,” After Chu Feng understood the rules of this place, he directly entered the forest.

Ferocious beasts were running amuck through the forest. Through his observational skills, Chu Feng determined that the weakest beasts in the forest had cultivations of rank one Martial Kings. As for the strongest beasts, they were only rank six Martial Kings.

While ferocious beasts of those levels of cultivation could not be said to be weak, to Chu Feng, they were extremely weak.

Furthermore, as there were a total of three days till the Battle Assembly officially started, Chu Feng was not in a rush. Thus, he began to walk through the forest unhurriedly.

“Help! Help!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng heard cries for help. Hearing those cries, Chu Feng immediately unleashed his Heaven’s Eyes to look in the direction of the cries.

“What animals!” Upon seeing what was happening, Chu Feng’s eyes started to flicker with anger.

The person crying for help was a young boy. This boy’s age was about the same as Nangong Moli’s. He was about to become a youngster.

However, his cultivation was much inferior to Nangong Moli’s. He was merely a rank two Martial King, and did not possess any heaven-defying battle power.

At this moment, he was surrounded by ten rank two Martial King-level ferocious beasts, and was in imminent danger. After all, regardless of the cultivation of the ferocious beasts of this place, they were all not ordinary ferocious beasts.

The reason why Chu Feng was angered was not because the boy was being surrounded by ferocious beasts. Rather, it was because there were three men with cultivations of rank five Martial Kings beside that boy.

Those three men were disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace. With their cultivations, they were clearly capable of immediately killing the ferocious beasts and saving that boy.

However, not only were they not helping the boy, they were instead smiling while watching from the sidelines. They simply had the attitude of planning to watch and not help as the boy was

eaten by the ferocious beasts.

As for the reason why they were doing that, it was most likely because of the clothes that little boy was wearing, as well as the title plate on his waist.

That boy was also a disciple of the Three Palaces. Merely, he was not a disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, but was instead a disciple of the Underworld Palace. ¹

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

I am quite certain it was mentioned before that the Three Palaces would only allow their disciples that had reached Half Martial Emperor realm to go out so as to not shame themselves? {Xima: yes, but don't tell that to Bee, he forgot} ←

Chapter 1755 – You Are Chu Feng?

Chu Feng had heard about the Three Palaces being antagonistic toward one another. Especially the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underworld Palace, the two of them seemed to hate one another even more.

Seeing this scene today, it would appear that that was indeed the case. Else, Chu Feng would never imagine that three grown men would refuse to help a child, and instead stand on the side and watch while mocking and ridiculing.

While the three men were able to refuse to save that child, Chu Feng was not someone who could watch and not help when there was a child in need. Even though the world was filled with injustice, Chu Feng was unable to tolerate three kinds of people being bullied by others.

The first kind was powerless individuals. The second was women. As for the last one, it was children.

Seeing that the little boy's situation was very serious, Chu Feng grabbed a branch from a nearby tree. Then, with a clench of his palm, he split the tree branch into ten pieces. Then, he shot those ten pieces forward. "Woosh, woosh, woosh..." Ten rays of light flashed past. The next moment, ten streams of blood sprayed out.

The ten ferocious beasts that surrounded the little boy all fell to the ground simultaneously. Even though they still had very ferocious expressions and ominous gazes, they, at this moment, no longer had any traces of life.

"Huuu..."

At this moment, the little boy sat down on the ground. He was dripping with sweat and gasping for breath. He had thought that he was going to die. Yet, he suddenly discovered that the ten ferocious beasts had all fallen to the ground. At this instant, he was

still unable to determine exactly what had happened.

“Who is it that dares to meddle in other people’s business? Show yourself!”

It was the three disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace that reacted first. They turned their gazes filled with dissatisfaction toward the direction where Chu Feng was.

“Meddle in other people’s business? Since when did saving someone become meddling in other people’s business? Is that the rule of your Heavenly Law Palace?” At this moment, Chu Feng slowly walked out from the forest.

He looked to the three individuals from the Heavenly Law Palace and said mockingly, “What a Heavenly Law Palace that is said to carry on heavenly laws and is willing to help others. Today, you all have truly broadened my horizons.”

“What audacity! You actually dare to slander our Heavenly Law Palace! You have grown tired of living!” Two of the three men were extremely enraged by Chu Feng’s words. As he spoke, they took out their respective Royal Armaments and planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Stop,” However, right at this moment, the man in the middle suddenly stopped the other two men. Then, with a beaming smile on his face, he said to Chu Feng, “Brother, I think you are mistaken. How could we possibly watch and not help? We merely wanted to temper that young brother. If he were truly in fatal danger, we would naturally have acted to save him.”

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly. Chu Feng was disinclined to bother with the sophistry of individuals like them.

“Brother, it would seem that your misunderstanding of us is extremely deep. Well, that is fine. In that case, we shall take our leave. Farewell,” Seeing Chu Feng’s attitude, that man was not only not angered, he instead pulled the two men beside him,

turned around and left.

“May I ask, were you the one who saved me?” At this moment, that little boy had stood back up.

“What do you think?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“I think it was you,” The little boy laughed mischievously. Then, he said, “Thank you for saving me. My name is Zhao Tuo. However, you can call me Little Radish. That’s what everyone calls me.”

“Little Radish? Why are you called Little Radish?” Chu Feng asked.

Little Radish pointed to his head and said, “Everyone says that I look like a radish.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself and started laughing. If the boy hadn’t said anything, he wouldn’t have noticed. But since he mentioned it, Chu Feng looked carefully at the little boy’s head and, sure enough, it did look like a little radish.

“Say, Little Radish, this place is dangerous. How come you came in here by yourself?” Chu Feng asked.

“Speaking of this matter, I am truly ashamed. I refused to listen to my big brother and wanted to charge through this forest myself. In the end...” He sighed. “I’ve stirred up trouble. I think I’ll likely have to receive a scolding later,” Little Radish said with an expression of fear.

Chu Feng could tell that Little Radish was not afraid of those ferocious beasts. Instead, he was afraid that his big brother would scold him later.

“How about this? Since I’ve helped you, I’ll help you all the way. I’ll bring you over. When your big brother arrives, you can tell him that you managed to charge through the forest yourself,” Chu Feng said.

“Really?” Hearing those words, the little boy was immediately overjoyed.

“Really,” Chu Feng nodded his head with a smile.

“That would be great. Thank you, thank you very much. Benefactor, what is your name? I will definitely repay you in the future,” The little boy said.

“There’s no need,” Chu Feng smiled slightly. Then, he began to walk forward. As for Little Radish, he hurriedly followed Chu Feng. He was jumping and hopping and appeared to be very joyous. Even though he possessed the cultivation of a Martial King, he still had the temperament of a child, and he was much less mature than Chu Feng had been at that age.

Seeing Little Radish acting like this, Chu Feng was quite envious of him. He was able to act this carefree and without worries, which meant that he had most likely had never suffered before.

At the same time, at a certain location in the forest, the three Heavenly Law Palace’s disciples were panting with their heads lowered and their backs bent.

It was clear that they had used extremely powerful movement martial skills in this short period of time. That was the reason why they were gasping for breath.

“Really, why are we running? He’s merely a nameless punk from the younger generation. Don’t tell me that we should be scared of him.”

“That’s right. Senior brother Liu, I don’t understand why you refused to allow us to teach him a lesson, and instead made us flee from him. This is not the way you usually do things,” The two men who wanted to teach Chu Feng a lesson asked in a very confused manner.

“The hell do the two of you know? I clearly surveyed the wounds on those ten ferocious beasts. They were extremely neat and tidy.

It is definitely not something that anyone ordinary could accomplish. At least, it's impossible for us to accomplish that."

"This means that that man's cultivation was definitely above ours. Practically all of the Holy Land of Martialism's powerful younger generation has come for this Battle Assembly. The inside of this fort is truly a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers."

"After all, even someone as reckless as Chu Feng has been invited. If we are to encounter that reckless fellow, we will not even know how we were killed," That man surnamed Liu said.

"Senior brother Liu, you're joking. Not to mention whether that Chu Feng will really come or not, even if he really did come, we wouldn't have run into him that coincidentally, no?" One of the men laughed mischievously.

Even though he said those words with a very easy-going tone, when Chu Feng's name was mentioned, a clear trace of fear flashed through his eyes.

"We'll naturally not run into Chu Feng. I am merely giving an example."

"There are this many experts here; even mavericks like Chu Feng will not number only a couple. Thus, without absolute certainty of winning, it is best for us to not fight against others. Else, even if we are killed, no one will avenge us," said the man surnamed Liu.

"Then what do we do? Are we to be humiliated without doing anything?" The two other men said.

"Since when have our Heavenly Law Palace's disciples ever been humiliated?" The man surnamed Liu said with a cold sneer.

"Senior brother Liu, what do you mean?" The two men were confused.

"There are still a total of three days before this competition officially begins. In this three day period, there will definitely be

experts from our Heavenly Law Palace that will come here. At that time, we will report what has happened with added details. Those senior brothers and sisters will definitely stand up for us.”

“After all, the honor of our Heavenly Law Palace cannot be infringed upon,” The man surnamed Liu continued to sneer.

“Senior brother Liu is truly wise,” Hearing those words, the two other men suddenly came to a realization. The two of them also began to show sinister smiles on their faces.

Chu Feng did not know about the scheme of the three men. After journeying for some time, he brought Little Radish through the forest.

At this moment, what appeared before Chu Feng and Little Radish was a spacious open field. On the other side of the spacious open field was an enormous gate.

There was a timer on that gate. It was a countdown timer. Evidently, when the gate opened, that would be the time when the competition officially began.

At this moment, a lot of people were already gathered in the spacious open field. There were people from all over the Holy Land of Martialism. In fact, even disciples from the Nine Powers could be seen. One thing worthy of being mentioned was that there were no members of the younger generation from the Four Great Imperial Clans to be seen.

At this moment, those people were all gathered in their own respective camps. Chu Feng chose a remote location and directly sat down in a cross-legged position. He was planning to rest.

There was a good thing regarding remote locations — they were quiet. Chu Feng was fond of this quietness.

“Benefactor, you have yet to tell me your name,” Little Radish had followed Chu Feng and sat down beside him. This was already the hundred and ninth time that he had asked Chu Feng this

question.

“My name’s Chu Feng,” Feeling annoyed, Chu Feng finally revealed his name.

“What? Chu Feng? You’re Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, Little Radish immediately stood up. His eyes were wide open as he looked at Chu Feng with an expression of shock.

Chapter 1756 – You Should Change Your Name

“Are you the Chu Feng who charged through the Heavenly Road alone from the Southern Sea Region and managed to successfully enter the Holy Land of Martialism?”

“Are you the Chu Feng who triggered the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle in the territory of the Ancient Era’s Elves in the Cyanwood Domain?”

“Are you the Chu Feng who, upon entering the Cyanwood Mountain, was despised by many of his fellow disciples, yet defeated all of the Nine Powers’ disciples in the Nine Powers Hunt and became the strongest disciple of the Nine Powers?”

“Are you the Chu Feng who showed his absolute talent in the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s Island and obtained the number one position?”

“Are you the Chu Feng who was wanted by the Nangong Imperial Clan because of his outstanding talent, and then proceeded to defeat all of the Four Clans’ younger generation in the Mooncloud City’s competition?” Little Radish was staring at Chu Feng with a shocked expression and asked him many questions in a very serious manner.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled. It was one thing for this boy to know about the matter of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s Island and Mooncloud City.

But, how come he even knew about Chu Feng’s origins being from outside the Holy Land of Martialism, that he had triggered the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle, as well as the things that had happened in the Cyanwood Mountain? Logically, there shouldn’t be that many people who knew about those things.

At the moment when Chu Feng was feeling disbelief at how much

the boy knew, Little Radish suddenly revealed his teeth and smiled. Then he said, “I’m just joking. I know you’re not that Chu Feng. In this world, there are plenty of people with the same name and surname.”

“But then again, benefactor, Chu Feng is currently a very grand character. The Four Great Imperial Clans are extremely insistent on killing him. It’s best that you do not say your name casually, so that you don’t invite disaster on yourself.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. It turned out that this boy had been deliberately playing with him; he simply didn’t believe that this Chu Feng was that Chu Feng.

Regarding this, Chu Feng was disinclined to bother explaining. Instead, with a smile, he asked, “How do you know so much about that Chu Feng?”

“There’s nothing I can do about it, my senior sister Chili Pepper is that Chu Feng’s superfan. After she came to know that Chu Feng was a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain, she spent a great amount of money to inquire of the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples about Chu Feng.”

“While it’s one thing for her to know about all this, she would frequently mention that Chu Feng to us. Say, how could I not know about Chu Feng then?” Little Radish said.

“There’s actually such a thing?” At this moment, Chu Feng was surprised. He had not expected that there was someone that worshipped him like that in the Underworld Palace. Furthermore, judging by what the boy said, it was a woman.

“However, speaking of this matter, that Chu Feng is truly amazing. He’s growing up in the midst of predicaments. Furthermore, the speed of his growth is extremely fast. Reportedly, when he first arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism, his cultivation seemed to only be that of a Martial Lord. However, his cultivation is already that of a Half Martial Emperor now. His

speed is truly frightening. Sigh, if only I had that Chu Feng's talent," Little Radish sighed in envy.

"Little Radish, what ill words regarding Chu Feng are you spouting now?" Right at this moment, a sharp voice suddenly sounded.

"Ah, not-nothing," Hearing this voice, Little Radish immediately displayed a deep sign of respect, hurriedly stood straight and started to smile innocently. Evidently, he deeply feared the person who just spoke out.

Turning toward the direction of the voice, Chu Feng discovered that a woman was rapidly walking over. Although this woman did not possess an outstanding appearance, her figure was extremely hot. She belonged to the type that would cause others to drool just by looking at their bodies. The person who spoke earlier was precisely this woman.

At this moment, this woman's eyes were shining as she stared at Little Radish. It was as if she were interrogating him with her eyes.

Behind this woman followed a man. At this moment, this man had an expression of anger on his face. He too was staring at Little Radish.

That man possessed the cultivation of a rank eight Martial King, whereas that sexy woman had the cultivation of a rank nine Martial King. With their cultivations at their ages, they could not be considered to be weak. At least, when placed in the Nine Powers, the two of them would be peak existences.

A thing worthy of being mentioned was that the man's appearance actually resembled Little Radish's. Furthermore, the man and woman were both wearing the same apparel as Little Radish; they were both disciples of the Underworld Palace.

Without thinking much about it, Chu Feng had managed to guess that the two of them must be together with Little Radish.

Furthermore, that man was most likely the big brother that Little Radish had spoken of.

“Zhao Tuo, what’s with you? Why did you secretly charge into that forest when I wasn’t paying attention to you? Do you know how dangerous that forest is?”

“If you had died, how was I going to explain myself to father and mother, to grandfather, to our clansmen?” Sure enough, that man who had arrived following that woman was extremely enraged. He pointed his finger at Little Radish and began to reprimand him.

“That’s right. Brat, look at what you’ve done. You’ve made your big brother Big Radish so scared that he pissed his pants,” the woman added.

“Chili Pepper, what are you saying? Since when was I so scared that I pissed my pants?” Hearing those words, that Big Radish’s expression immediately changed and he started to question her.

“You’re still not admitting to it? Look at your pants...” That woman had a mischievous smile on her face as she pointed at the man’s crotch.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that there were indeed traces of wetness of having pissed one’s pants on that man’s crotch.

“This... wasn’t this when I accidentally spilled the water I was holding in my hand after becoming worried when you told me that Little Radish had disappeared?” The man hurriedly explained.

“Haha, with how much you worried about Little Radish, isn’t it all fine that Little Radish is safe? Why bother to reprimand and scold him? Would that even make you feel more comfortable? With how young he is, to be publicly scolded by you like that, do you not fear that you’ll leave some trauma in his heart?” The woman said with a brilliant smile.

“I...” The man looked to Little Radish, and then looked to the

woman. He became speechless.

“Hehe, senior sister Chili Pepper is the best,” At this moment, Little Radish was overjoyed. He knew that his senior sister Chili Pepper was helping him.

“Stinky brat, what ill were you saying about Chu Feng earlier?” However, that senior sister Chili Pepper’s face immediately turned cold as she questioned Little Radish again.

“Not, not... nothing. I didn’t say any ill words about Chu Feng. I was only praising Chu Feng. If you don’t believe me, you can ask my benefactor,” Little Radish pointed to Chu Feng.

“Benefactor?” Senior sister Chili Pepper and Big Radish were startled. Then, they looked to Chu Feng.

“Eh... it’s like this. I... I encountered ferocious beasts on my journey. It was this benefactor that saved me and brought me here,” Seeing that he had made a mishap and leaked what had happened, Little Radish could only tell the entire truth.

“I knew that you would not be able to pass through that forest on your own,” Big Radish hit Little Radish’s head. Then, he walked over to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, brother, for your help. I am Zhao Kai, Zhao Tuo’s big brother. If benefactor does not mind, you can address me as Big Radish. That is what all those that know me well address me as,” Big Radish immediately offered his thanks and greeting to Chu Feng.

Senior sister Chili Pepper also walked over and said, “You can call me Chili Pepper. That’s what everyone calls me.” Even though she said those words very casually, she was grinning from ear to ear as she looked at Chu Feng. After all, she was also very grateful that Chu Feng had saved Little Radish. Thus, her impression of Chu Feng was extremely good.

As for Chu Feng, he began to smile in his heart. These three

people were truly interesting. Even though they all had regular names, they instead gave each other these sorts of nicknames.

However, this gave Chu Feng a good impression of them. After all, generally, only those with extremely good relationships with one another would give each other these sorts of nicknames and use them unrestrainedly.

“Pleased to meet you,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the two of them.

“May I ask, how shall I address you brother?” Big Radish asked.

“Haha, big brother, you’ll definitely not believe this if I tell you. My benefactor has a very amazing name,” Little Radish interrupted.

“Amazing name? What name? Quickly, let me hear it,” Senior sister Chili Pepper showed an expression of curiosity as she asked in high spirits.

“Hehe, he’s called Chu Feng,” Little Radish said.

“What? Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, senior sister Chili Pepper’s long, shapely eyebrows started to crease. Then, with a serious expression on her face, she asked Chu Feng, “Your name really is Chu Feng?”

“I am indeed called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng nodded.

However, after obtaining Chu Feng’s verification, that senior sister Chili Pepper’s smile instantly disappeared. With an expressionless face, she said, “You should change your name.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. Throughout his life, he had experienced many things. However, it was the first time he had seen someone that wanted him to change his name. Thus, he asked, “Why?”

“Why? You’re asking me why?!”

“Very well, I’ll tell you why. The name Chu Feng is not a name

that just anyone can have. Your name being Chu Feng is simply an insult to the name Chu Feng. Change your name,” Senior sister Chili Pepper said with a serious expression and in an aggressive manner.

Chapter 1757 – Changing Attitude Extremely Fast

“Chili Pepper, what are you saying? He is the benefactor who saved Little Radish,” At this moment, Big Radish was a bit anxious. He immediately stepped forward to try to mediate the situation.

“So what? I am also grateful that he saved Little Radish. However, he cannot be named Chu Feng. These are two completely separate matters.”

“As I said, quickly change your name. Otherwise, don’t blame me for becoming impolite,” Chili Pepper’s face was very red as she pointed at Chu Feng and spoke in a very threatening manner.

“Benefactor, Chili Pepper has gone nuts, she has gone crazy about that Chu Feng. It’s the same Chu Feng who is wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clans. You must not lower yourself to argue with her,” Seeing that trying to console Chili Pepper was useless, Big Radish hurriedly began to explain the situation to Chu Feng.

“Aiya! Big Radish, I’m giving you face, yet you actually dare to call me nuts?” Chili Pepper curled her lips.

“You’re nuts to begin with. You’ve become nuts for that Chu Feng. What’s so good about that Chu Feng? The two of you are completely unrelated to one another. Is he worth you becoming like this? If you are to continue acting this way, sooner or later, you’ll be killed because of him!” At this moment, Big Radish lost his patience.

“Impudent! While you can speak ill of me, you absolutely cannot speak ill of Chu Feng. Remember, if you dare to say those sorts of words again, I’m breaking off my relationship with you,” At this moment, Chili Pepper was even more angered. Different from Big Radish, she was really angered, from the bottom of her heart.

Chu Feng dared to guarantee that it was only because it was Big

Radish who said those words that she didn't do anything. If it were anybody else, she would've likely already fought them.

"Aiya! Senior sister Chili Pepper, big brother, can you two stop arguing?! No matter what, he is my benefactor, the person who saved my life. If it wasn't for him, I would've already been eaten by ferocious beasts," Seeing this, Little Radish spoke to stop the argument.

"Humph!" Hearing those words, that Chili Pepper finally snorted coldly, flung her arms and turned to leave.

"Benefactor, please don't mind her. Senior sister Chili Pepper is actually an extremely good person. Merely, she is unable to tolerate anyone, and I mean anyone, speaking ill of Chu Feng," Little Radish had an ashamed expression on his face as he began to apologize to Chu Feng.

"It's alright," Chu Feng waved his hand while smiling. He would naturally not be angry because of Chili Pepper. Even though he knew that she was in the wrong, it remained that she was acting this unreasonable because of him.

Thus, not only was Chu Feng not angered, he instead felt that this Chili Pepper was quite adorable. Merely, he was very curious as to why Chili Pepper would try to defend him like that. After all, they had never come in contact with one another before this.

Not long after Chili Pepper left, a sneer suddenly sounded. "Yoh, brother, you've surely made us search for you long and hard. And here I thought you'd escaped."

Turning toward the direction of the voice, Chu Feng saw that five people were currently walking toward him. They were five of the Heavenly Law Palace's disciples. The two men who led the group were two rank eight Martial Kings. As for the three men behind them, they were people that Chu Feng recognized. They were the three men who had only stood and watched with mocking smiles on their faces as Little Radish encountered danger in the forest.

As for the person that had spoken, it was the one that had offered Chu Feng an explanation for their actions in the forest, that man surnamed Liu. Sure enough, he was a very treacherous individual.

“Big brother, back in the forest, those three people not only refused to help me, they even mocked me from the sidelines,” Little Radish said to Big Radish.

“What do you all want?” After learning of the situation, Big Radish’s expression turned cold.

“We are searching for him. It is not related to your Underworld Palace. Step aside immediately, do not meddle in our business,” The rank eight Martial King that led the group spoke in a very unyielding manner.

“You have something that you need me for? Very well, let’s go and chat properly in the forest,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to walk toward the forest.

He had already let those three men go once. Never would he have expected that they were unable to recognize others’ good intentions, yet they came back to find him again with two rank eight Martial Kings.

Chu Feng had already decided to eliminate them. Merely, there were too many people in this place. Even though Chu Feng had concealed his identity, it was still inconvenient for him to directly kill them here.

As he was already wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clans, he did not wish to offend the Heavenly Law Palace too. After all, the Heavenly Law Palace was a lot more powerful than all four of the Four Great Imperial Clans combined.

Thus, he planned to bring them into the forest and secretly eliminate them.

However, right at this moment, Big Radish grabbed Chu Feng and pulled him back. “Brother Chu Feng, this matter was caused

by my little brother. Let us handle this.”

“Brother Chu Feng? Haha... you called him Chu Feng?”

“Is he the same Chu Feng who defeated all of the Four Clans’ younger generation? No wonder you wanted to bring us into the forest. Could it be that you wanted to eliminate us? Aiyoyo, I’m so scared. Hahaha...” Hearing the name ‘Chu Feng’, the five men burst into loud laughter.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, five stones shot forth. The five stones landed directly on the heads of the five men.

“Ouch!!!”

Even though the five stones were shot out with different strengths, they left nearly identical wounds on the five men. Not only were all five of the stones smashed onto the backs of the heads of the five Heavenly Law Palace’s disciples, the stones also left their heads running with blood.

“Who dared to attack us? Do you know who we are?” After being smashed in the head with rocks, the disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace were immediately enraged.

“I’m precisely beating you dogs from the Heavenly Law Palace. What, do you have complaints?” It turned out that the person that had attacked them was the person who had just left not long ago, Chili Pepper.

“Underworld Palace, our Heavenly Law Palace has always minded our own matters. For you to attack us is completely uncalled for. Are you planning to incite a war between our two Palaces?” The rank eight Martial King that led the five men spoke with hidden threats.

“Mind your own matters? Bull-motherfucking-shit!!! Did you think that I didn’t know about all of the filthy things your Heavenly Law Palace has done to our Underworld Palace in the

shadows?”

“Scram! Else, I will not mind properly teaching you all a lesson before all these people,” Chili Pepper took a glance toward the distance, at the crowd that was unceasingly growing in size, as she said those words.

“Very well, girl, you win!” The man clenched his teeth and then looked to Chu Feng. He pointed at Chu Feng and said, “Boy, just you wait. To dare go against our Heavenly Law Palace, you’ll suffer the consequences.”

After leaving those threatening words, the five men rapidly left. As they were in a remote region, there weren’t any people who saw their disgraceful appearance. However, he was afraid that Chili Pepper would make this matter huge.

If she were to really cause others to pay attention to them, if they were to be discovered to have been beaten by a disciple from the Underworld Palace, they would definitely be punished severely upon their return to the Heavenly Law Palace. After all, they would have shamed the Heavenly Law Palace.

“They were acting all arrogant before. Yet, after senior sister Chili Pepper arrived, they immediately ran with their tails between their legs. Senior sister Chili Pepper is truly amazing,” Little Radish said with a beaming smile.

“That’s to be expected.”

“I have put up a residence in that area. Let’s go and rest there. After all, there’re still three more days until the Battle Assembly begins. We can’t stay here and bask in the sunlight all day long, no?”

Chili Pepper pointed in the direction of the crowd. Sure enough, there was a small palace that had just been built there. It had been formed with spirit formations. It turned out that Chili Pepper was actually a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

However, compared to those, what Chu Feng was shocked about was how fast Chili Pepper had changed her attitude. Earlier, she had been in a deep rage. Yet, at this moment, she was actually smiling happily.

“Wow! That’s truly great. We have a place to stay now! Senior sister Chili Pepper, I truly worship you more and more now!” At this moment, Little Radish became even more joyous.

Chili Pepper looked to Chu Feng and said, “Hey, you come join us too, yeah?”

“There’s no need. You all can go. I prefer the quiet,” Chu Feng was telling the truth. The reason he had come here to rest was precisely because this place was quieter.

As for the spirit formation building Chili Pepper had set up, it was in the middle of the noisy crowd. Many people had set up camps at that place. Thus, it was not quiet at all.

Chapter 1758 – Private Chat In A Private Room

Chili Pepper curled her lips and said, “Hey, you can’t be this narrow-minded, right?”

“Forget about it. Seeing that you saved Little Radish, there’s no need for you to change your name,”

“I wasn’t angry. It’s really just that I am not fond of noise,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chili Pepper sighed. “You’re a grown man, how can you be this narrow-minded? Very well, let’s say that I was in the wrong earlier. This should be fine now, no?”

“Furthermore, if you’re really not fond of noisiness, I will be able to isolate sound and sight from the outside with a single sealing spirit formation. Like that, we can be completely isolated from what’s happening outside,” Chili Pepper grabbed her shoulders and continued to speak. She was sure that Chu Feng was angry.

“Aiya, Brother Chu Feng, it’s truly not easy to make this little Chili Pepper apologize to others. Come on, give her some face and join us. I’ve brought quite a few good wines and dishes with me. We can enjoy drinking over there,” Big Radish urged.

“That’s right, benefactor, let’s go and rest together,” At the same time, Little Radish also urged Chu Feng to join them.

“Very well then,” As the saying goes, it was hard to refuse magnificent hospitality. In this sort of situation, it was unsuitable for Chu Feng to refuse again.

Thus, Chu Feng joined Big Radish, Little Radish and Chili Pepper and entered the spirit formation building to rest.

Chili Pepper kept her promise and sealed off the spirit formation building she had created to isolate sound from the outside. She

even shut the windows.

“Wow, senior sister Chili Pepper’s world spirit technique is truly amazing. I am so envious. I also wish to become a world spiritist,” Little Radish spoke with an expression of envy.

“If you wish to learn world spirit techniques, I have a method to forcibly instill spirit power into you.”

“However, I suggest that you focus on martial cultivation. It is better to focus on only either martial cultivation or world spirit techniques.”

“Back then, if I wasn’t envious of a world spiritist’s world spirit techniques, and insisted that my mother instill spirit power into me, which made me focus on studying world spirit techniques, my current cultivation would not be only that of a rank nine Martial King.”

Chili Pepper patted her chest and said, “If I wholeheartedly focused on martial cultivation and did not spend time and efforts on my world spirit techniques, I am not boasting here, I would at least be a Half Martial Emperor now,”

“What Chili Pepper said is correct. One must not split one’s focus. It’s better to wholeheartedly focus on martial cultivation,” Big Radish urged.

Little Radish pouted his mouth and said, “But isn’t that Chu Feng training in both world spirit techniques and martial cultivation simultaneously? Not only is his martial power exceptional, he is also a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Are you able to compare with that Chu Feng? A genius like Chu Feng cannot even be found among ten thousand, no, tens of million people,” Chili Pepper said.

“Tsk...” Little Radish curled his lips. Being struck down on this topic so severely, Little Radish did not wish to continue discussing it.

Afterward, Big Radish took out the wine and food that he brought and began to set up a table full of delicacies. Perhaps it might be because he was grateful toward Chu Feng, but Big Radish insisted that they must drink till they were drunk.

Seeing that Big Radish and Chu Feng were drinking merrily, Little Radish also joined in the fun. However, Chu Feng currently possessed a body that was immune to poisons. Thus, regardless of how strong the wines might be, Chu Feng could no longer become drunk.

Thus, in the end, both Big Radish and Little Radish ended up drunk. The alcohol entered their dantians and even affected their source energy. If it hadn't been for Chu Feng secretly helping them out, the two of them would have damaged their bodies.

However, even with this being the case, the two of them still ended up falling asleep. Furthermore, they were dead asleep.

With this sort of situation, only Chu Feng and Chili Pepper remained awake in the sealed world spirit building.

As Chili Pepper was someone who was very talkative, the disappearance of the two people she was used to talking with, Little Radish and Big Radish, caused her to feel extremely awkward.

At the beginning, she was still a bit reserved. However, after enduring not talking for an entire morning, she was finally unable to restrain herself and began to chat with Chu Feng and inquire of him about the things he had experienced through his life.

As Chu Feng felt that Chili Pepper was very amusing, he decided to not tell her the truth. Instead, he casually gave himself an identity to tease her.

After getting to know her for nearly two days, Chu Feng came to find out that Chili Pepper was, as Big Radish had said, quite a good person. She was very carefree, and she would not abstain from

anything. She was a woman with a very honest temperament. A woman like her was rather rare.

Currently, she was sighing. “Exactly what is your appearance like? After all, we’re friends. Can’t you take off that conical bamboo hat and show me your face?” Chili Pepper said as she stared at Chu Feng.

“It’s better that I don’t. I’m afraid of scaring you,” Chu Feng said.

“Tsk, I’ve seen all sorts of ugly men. Yet I’ve never been scared once.”

“It’s alright, let me see exactly how you look. If you’re truly extremely ugly, I am a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, and I can change your appearance for you so that you can find a wife in the future,” Chili Pepper said with a beaming smile.

“You wish to see my appearance that much?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn, kinda. We’re friends. I feel that friends should be frank with one another. Thus, you should face us with your true appearance,” Chili Pepper said with a very serious expression on her face.

How could Chu Feng possibly not tell what Chili Pepper was scheming? Thus, he smiled cunningly and said, “Actually, I have had a question that I wished to ask you the entire time. However, I was a bit worried about asking that question. However, since you’ve said those words, I might as well ask you my question.”

“As long as you’re willing to answer my question, I’ll show you my appearance. What do you think?”

“Remember, you’re the one who said that friends should be frank with one another,” Chu Feng said.

“Aiya, so you were waiting for me,” Chili Pepper curled her lips. Then, she said, “Very well, ask away.”

“There is no relationship between you and that Chu Feng. Thus,

why do you defend him like you do?” Chu Feng asked. He had been curious about this matter the entire time.

“Let me ask you this, do you think that there must be a reason for a person to adore another person?” Chili Pepper asked.

“Yes. I feel that all things have reasons to them. For example, in terms of loving someone, it will either be familiarity that breeds fondness, or love at first sight.”

“However, even if it is love at first sight, there are still reasons for that. At the very least, it means that the person one has fallen for, regardless of whether it is their appearance or their temperament, are in accordance with what one’s heart desires. That is the reason why one will experience love at first sight,” Chu Feng said.

“I don’t think there is a need for that. I merely felt that Chu Feng is very courageous, brave and unyielding after hearing about his achievements.”

“He is loyal to his friends and uncompromising to his enemies. How could there be a girl who isn’t fond of such a man?”

“However, I’ve also heard that Chu Feng seems to not have any girlfriends. Could it be that he’s not into women, and is instead into men?” Chili Pepper propped her chin with her hand and had an appearance of contemplating. Then she sighed and said, “It doesn’t matter. After all, I only admire him, and I do not have any other thoughts. It will be sufficient if I were able to meet him one day.”

As she spoke those words, Chili Pepper had her hands on her chest and narrowed her eyes. Her appearance was like that of a love-struck fool.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt quite awkward. Especially those words, ‘Could it be that he’s not into women, and is instead into men?’ caused Chu Feng’s heart to tremble. How could someone

think that of him?

He was clearly a straight male. Furthermore, he possessed girlfriends, okay? Merely, they didn't make it public, that's all.

Chapter 1759 – Acting To Uphold Justice

“Waa, Chili Pepper, you’ve finally spoken the truth. Sure enough, you not only admire Chu Feng, you’ve fallen for him too.”

“Mmm mmm, never would I have expected that my senior sister Chili Pepper would fall for someone. What a rare occasion.”

Right at this moment, Little Radish and Big Radish suddenly jumped out from the rooms where they were sleeping. The two of them were looking at Chili Pepper and smiling vulgarly.

“You two, you were actually pretending to be asleep?!” At this moment, Chili Pepper came to a sudden realization. Her face was red with embarrassment and anger.

“Hehe, actually, we just woke up not long ago. However, after we woke up, we discovered that the two of you were getting along well. Thus, we found it unsuitable for us to disturb you two. We wanted to let the two of you ease the tension between you. Thus, we have done so out of good intentions. You must not wrongly accuse us,” Big Radish said shamelessly.

“Damn you, you two actually joined hands to bully me. Watch how I’ll properly teach you two stinky radishes,” Chili Pepper gnashed her teeth angrily as she raised her fist into a position of wanting to beat someone up.

“Don’t!” Seeing that, Big Radish grabbed Little Radish and quickly ran out from the building.

“Stop!” Chili Pepper chased after them.

After the three of them ran out while fooling around, Chu Feng also stood up and stretched his back. He had stayed in this world spirit building for a total of two days now. It would also be good for him to go out and enjoy some sunlight.

After walking out of the world spirit building, Chu Feng discovered that there was a vast crowd outside. There were so

many people gathered in this land that there were several tens of thousands of people gathered at the region where Chu Feng was. However, this was merely a corner of the fort.

Judging from this, there should at least be several hundreds of thousands of people in the fort right now.

With this many people gathered, there were bound to be many experts present too. Likely, there would be several tens of thousands of Half Martial Emperor-level experts.

At the very least, there were close to a thousand Half Martial Emperors here. Although the majority of them were old people who were nearly a hundred years old, they were still qualified to enter this place. After all, in the Holy Land of Martialism, anyone underneath a hundred years old would be considered to be part of the younger generation.

However, at this time, Chu Feng discovered that Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish, the three of them who had run out from the building while fooling around, were all standing beside the doorway.

Furthermore, that girl Chili Pepper was revealing an ominous glint in her eyes and gnashing her teeth while clenching her fists in her sleeves so tightly that creaking sounds could be heard. Furthermore, her cold gaze was directed toward the crowd.

Seeing Chili Pepper's appearance, Big Radish and Little Radish both had expressions of worry on their faces.

Turning his gaze toward the direction of Chili Pepper's gaze, Chu Feng discovered that she was looking at two disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace and a disciple from the Mortal King Palace. Their cultivations ranged between rank six Martial King and rank eight Martial King.

Not only did these three people know each other, they were currently chatting with one another. As for the topic of their chat,

it was actually Chu Feng.

“Brother Sima, how are you so certain that Chu Feng will not come here? Could it be that the Heavenly Law Palace has received some sort of intelligence?”

“Truth be told, I was actually filled with anticipation for that Chu Feng’s arrival. I wanted to watch him fight against the numerous first-rate geniuses. After all, he is someone who defeated Ximen Feixue,” The Mortal King Palace’s disciple asked curiously.

“Brother Song, you should abandon your expectations. As far as I know, that Chu Feng is merely someone who dallies around with women. He simply does not possess any real ability at all.”

“He defeated Ximen Feixue? The way I see it, that’s nothing more than a rumor. Even if Ximen Feixue was defeated, someone must’ve secretly helped that Chu Feng. With Chu Feng’s own abilities, it’s absolutely impossible for him to be a match for Ximen Feixue.”

“And now, everyone knows that Emperor Gong’s successor has invited him. The Four Great Imperial Clans must’ve definitely arrived to capture him. In this sort of situation, even if that Chu Feng were to have a hundred more guts, he would still not dare to come here.”

“Furthermore, only the younger generation is capable of entering this fortress. Without anyone helping him from the shadows, if that Chu Feng were to come here, he would only be humiliated and beaten by others. As such, how could he possibly show up here?”

“Thus, the way I see it, while that Chu Feng is capable of doing shameful things in the dark, he would not dare to participate in something as public as this. After all, he does not possess true ability. Thus, I dare to guarantee that Chu Feng will not dare to come,” A disciple from the Heavenly Law Palace patted his chest as he guaranteed. Not only that, his words were filled with insults toward Chu Feng.

“Bullshit! How do you know that Chu Feng would not dare to come? What makes you think that you can call Chu Feng someone who dallies with women, and that he doesn’t have actual ability?”

Sure enough, Chili Pepper exploded in anger. She who was unwilling to accept others speaking maliciously of Chu Feng, how could she possibly tolerate it as people slandered Chu Feng right in front of her?

“Yoh, and here I was wondering where such a talkative dog had come from, it turns out that it’s actually an Underworld Palace’s girl. Little girl, your temper is quite explosive.”

“There’s nothing wrong with having a temper. However, it’s best that you do not let your temper loose all over the place. We are merely discussing Chu Feng, what goddamn business does this have with you?” The Heavenly Law Palace’s disciple spoke with a frown. His tone was filled with hostility.

“The fact that you’re discussing Chu Feng makes it related to me. You should piss a puddle and use it as a mirror to look at yourself. Look at you, from head to toe, which part of you is comparable to Chu Feng? What makes you qualified to talk about Chu Feng?”

“Chu Feng was able to subdue the Evil God Sword Demon Sword. What about you? The way I see it, you can’t even subdue an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament, no?”

“Chu Feng dared to go to Mooncloud City and challenge the dignity of the Four Great Imperial Clans. By himself, he defeated all of the Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation.”

“What about you? Other than speaking ill of others behind their backs in this place, what else can you do? If Chu Feng were standing before you, would you dare to say those words you said before?” Chili Pepper walked forward and spoke loudly.

Originally, the discussion between those three people had been nothing major. After all, there were many people here, and all of

them were discussing all sorts of things. In fact, there were quite a lot of people discussing Chu Feng.

However, with how enraged Chili Pepper was, her voice was extremely loud. Her thunder-like voice had completely drowned out the voices of all the other people, causing all of them to hear what she had said.

All of a sudden, everyone turned their gazes over. There were even busybodies that traveled through the vast crowd from far away so that they could watch the show from a close distance.

After all, the angry words spoken by Chili Pepper were extremely provocative. Likely, a battle was going to happen here.

Furthermore, this battle would be between the disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underworld Palace. No one was willing to miss out on such a good show.

“Motherfucker, you damned girl. There are neither grievances nor hatreds between us, yet you insulted me the moment you opened your mouth. If I do not teach you a lesson, you will think that we disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace are all freeloaders.”

That Heavenly Law Palace’s disciple felt that he had been publicly humiliated by Chili Pepper. He actually took out his Royal Armament and planned to attack Chili Pepper.

However, he was completely ignorant to the fact that Chili Pepper was a rank nine Martial King. In terms of cultivation, her cultivation was above his.

At the moment he took out his Royal Armament, Chili Pepper had already arrived before him. Her lily-white hands grabbed onto his wrist. Then, with a twist of her body and a ‘snap,’ his arm was broken. Then, Chili Pepper suddenly kicked out and knocked that Heavenly Law Palace’s disciple rolling on the ground.

“Courting death!” Upon seeing this, the other disciple from the

Heavenly Law Palace immediately took out his Royal Armament and charged to attack Chili Pepper.

However, being inferior to Chili Pepper, he too was defeated by Chili Pepper in a single bout and ended up rolling on the ground in pain.

“A bunch of trash like you think you’re qualified to insult Chu Feng?” Chili Pepper patted her hands and said as she curled her lips.

“What an unruly Underworld Palace’s disciple. You actually dared to attack the people of our Heavenly Law Palace. Did you think that there was no one in our Heavenly Law Palace capable of standing up to you?”

Suddenly, several angry shouts were heard. Then, close to a hundred powerful auras came crashing toward Chili Pepper from all directions.

They were Half Martial Emperors. A total of close to a hundred auras were all those of Half Martial Emperors.

They were people from the Heavenly Law Palace. There were quite a few experts from the Heavenly Law Palace gathered here. Upon discovering that their Heavenly Law Palace’s disciples were injured by an Underworld Palace’s disciple, they all stood forth.

Chapter 1760 – Evildoers' Disciples

Close to a hundred Half Martial Emperor's auras came surging over like invisible waves. However, they were only aimed at Chili Pepper.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~” Loud impacts could be heard as the group of Half Martial Emperors landed in front of Chili Pepper.

No matter how strong Chili Pepper might be, it remained that she was only a Martial King. Facing close to a hundred Half Martial Emperors and their oppressive might, her little face instantly turned pale. She began to waver left and right like a leaf in the ocean. All she could do was drift with the waves and go with the flower. Her situation was truly pitiful.

“Buzz~~~”

However, this state did not last for a long time before close to another hundred Half Martial Emperor's oppressive auras swept forth from the crowd. They actually collided directly with the Heavenly Law Palace's Half Martial Emperor's' oppressive auras, saving Chili Pepper from them.

“Did you think that only your Heavenly Law Palace had people, and our Underworld Palace didn't?”

At the moment when the oppressive might arrived, close to a hundred silhouettes walked over from the sky. They also arrived before Chili Pepper.

There were both men and women in this group of close to a hundred Half Martial Emperors. They aged from their thirties to nineties. The weakest among them were rank one Half Martial Emperors, whereas the strongest among them were rank three Half Martial Emperors.

However, there was one thing they all had in common. That was, that they were all people from the Underground Palace.

At the same time, close to ten thousand Heavenly Law Palace and Underworld Palace disciples appeared in succession. They stood respectively behind those two groups of Half Martial Emperors.

All of a sudden, two of the strongest powers of the human race, the Heavenly Law Palace and Underground Palace, were confronting one another.

At this moment, many of the people present immediately drew back. However, they were extremely excited.

While they had heard that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underground Palace were antagonistic toward one another, very few people had actually seen the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underworld Palace fighting one another.

Today, such a chance had actually appeared before them. To be able to see the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underworld Palace fight against one another would be an enormously fortunate thing. As such, how could the crowd not be excited?

“Sure enough, the Three Palaces are different,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng was also surprised.

While bystanders would be watching for entertainment value, Chu Feng was observing their technicalities. The way Chu Feng saw it, compared to the Nine Powers, the Three Palaces’ disciples were very united.

At the very least, when their fellow disciples were in danger, they immediately stepped forth to support their fellow disciples. That was something that the Nine Powers lacked.

It was no wonder the Three Palaces had existed in the Holy Land of Martialism for tens of thousands of years, and that they ended up becoming the most powerful powers of the human race.

People must be united. Only by being united would their power become even stronger.

However, in the world of martial cultivators, a world filled with

mutual deception where one placed one's personal benefits over everything else, this sort of solidarity was growing more and more rare.

“What's this? Is your Underworld Palace trying to start a war with us?” An old rank three Half Martial Emperor from among the Heavenly Law Palace's disciples stood forth.

Although this old man's age was not a hundred years old, his attitude was different from the rest of the Heavenly Law Palace's disciples. Evidently, he was not an ordinary disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace. Likely, he was an elder-level character.

“Firstly, even if we are to start a war, our Underworld Palace will definitely not fear your Heavenly Law Palace. Secondly, if it's only all of us here, it cannot be considered to be starting a war. After all, we are only disciples of the Underworld Palace, and cannot represent the entire Underworld Palace. As for you, you are the same as us.”

“Lastly, your Heavenly Law Palace's numerous Half Martial Emperors actually attacked together to suppress our Underworld Palace's single Martial King-level disciple. Furthermore, it was a female disciple on top of that. Even if we are to truly fight, the ones in the wrong will be you all,” An old man from the Underworld Palace who was also an elder and also possessed the cultivation of rank three Half Martial Emperor spoke with a slight smile.

“What a joke! Why did we try to suppress her? That's because she injured our Heavenly Law Palace's disciples,” The elder who was leading the Heavenly Law Palace's disciples said with a cold voice.

“A joke indeed. Why did she injure your Heavenly Law Palace's disciples? Isn't it all because your Heavenly Law Palace's disciples attacked her first? If your skills are inferior to others, you shouldn't court your own disgrace,” The Underworld Palace's elder mocked.

“What sophistry! For no reason at all, why would our Heavenly

Law Palace's disciples attack a little girl? Isn't it all because she insulted our Heavenly Law Palace's disciple?" The Heavenly Law Palace's elder justified his fellow disciples' actions.

"The reason I insulted him was because he was maliciously slandering Chu Feng."

"He actually dared to slander Chu Feng. He should have asked himself whether he was qualified to do so to begin with," Chili Pepper was unable to contain herself and spoke out.

"Look at that, she admitted to it herself. That Chu Feng has done all sorts of malicious deeds. He is an utter disgrace to the world. So what if our Heavenly Law Palace's disciples speak ill of him?"

"Yet you, exactly what sort of relationship do you have with that Chu Feng for you to defend him like that?" The Heavenly Law Palace's elder asked.

"I have no relationship with Chu Feng. I merely cannot bear to see someone slander another behind their back," Chili Pepper said.

"What a 'cannot bear to see someone slander another behind their back.' Girl, you truly are filled with righteousness. This great commander is very fond of you."

Suddenly, another voice sounded from the crowd. Following that voice, three figures arrived from the sky.

They were three young men. Every one of them emitted the aura of a Half Martial Emperor. Due to the fact that they were concealing their cultivations, the crowd was unable to determine their actual cultivations.

However, once these three people appeared, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar.

It was for no other reason than the fact that these three young men's clothes were respectively marked with the words 'Gold,' 'Silver,' and 'Copper' in large fonts.

Suddenly, a white-haired old man from the crowd asked, “Are you all the disciples of Evildoer Jin, Evildoer Yin and Evildoer Tong, Jin Wei’e, Yin Wei’e and Tong Wei’e?” with enormous hatred in his tone.¹

“So what if we are? So what if we aren’t?” The man with the word ‘Copper,’ on his chest asked disdainfully.

“The sin of one’s master is something that the disciple should repay. Your masters have done all sorts of evil deeds. As their disciples, you all cannot escape responsibility.”

“Today, this old man will avenge my Ma Family’s one thousand three hundred and forty-one dead!”

As the old man spoke, a rank one Half Martial Emperor’s boundless aura surged forth. Like a myriad of bloodthirsty beasts, his aura swept forth toward the three men in the sky. He was planning to tear the three men in the sky to pieces.

“Boom~~~”

However, at this moment, that man with the word ‘Copper’ on his chest extended his hand and pointed at the old man. With that one point, not only did that old man’s oppressive might vanish instantly, the old man’s dantian was also pierced through.

“Puu~~~”

With his dantian pierced through, the old man immediately fell on his knees and began to vomit blood nonstop.

“Someone like you thinks you’re qualified to kill us?” At this moment, the man that had attacked let out a voice filled with contempt.

“Rank three Half Martial Emperor?” At this moment, many of the people present were shocked by this. There were many rank three Half Martial Emperors on the scene. However, very few of them were as young as that man.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, a loud explosion sounded. That old man that was vomiting blood actually directly exploded on the spot.

It turned out that someone had attacked again. The person that attacked was the leader of the three young men, the one with the word ‘Gold,’ on his chest. As for this man’s strength, it was even more valiant; he was a rank four Half Martial Emperor.

“Lil Bro Tong, how many times have I said to you that you must not be lenient toward trash like that? It’s better to kill them directly,” The man with the word ‘Gold’ on his chest said with a beaming smile. The person that had spoken to Chili Pepper earlier was also him.

“Got it,” At this moment, the man with the word ‘Copper,’ on his chest nodded his head obediently.

“Sure enough, they’re the personal disciples of the Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong, Jin Wei’e, Yin Wei’e and Tong Wei’e.”

“Never would I have imagined that I’d encounter the three of them in this place,” At this moment, many of the people present narrowed their brows and began to emit ill-intended gazes.

Even though the three young men in the sky could be said to be very excellent members of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism, it seemed that practically no one liked them.

The reason for that was none other than because their masters were extremely infamous for having done all sorts of malicious deeds.

However, those three men appeared to be unable to see the ill-intended gazes from all over. Especially that Jin Wei’e. He had turned his gaze to Chili Pepper again. With a smile on his face, he said, “Girl, this great commander thinks very highly of you. What do you think about becoming this great commander’s woman?”

It would seem that the Evildoers' names are most likely titles with different metals as bases. the problems of not reading ahead... Jin → Gold, Yin → Silver, Tong → Copper, Tie → Iron. Wei'e → Is Evil. I don't know why their masters gave them all the same name... ↩

Chapter 1761 – Should Know Your Standing

“An Evildoer’s disciple dares to think about our Underworld Palace’s disciple? You are truly a toad that wishes to consume the flesh of a swan, a man that has no idea of death and danger,” Before Chili Pepper could say anything, the elder from the Underworld Palace who had spoken earlier spoke mockingly.

From his words, it could be seen how much he disliked the Evildoers’ disciples.

“Yoh, the people from the Underworld Palace actually dare to call themselves swans. Do you really think that you’re good birds?” The corners of Jin Wei’e’s mouth were twitching slightly as he sneered. ¹

The way he saw it, the Underworld Palace and him were simply jacks of the same tribe. Neither one of them had the qualifications to say that the other party was worse. After all, the reason why the Underworld Palace was called the Underworld Palace was because they had done many savage things. Their methods were so ruthless that they wouldn’t hesitate to turn a region into hell.

“While the people of our Underworld Palace train in the Underworld Mysterious Technique, we have never willfully slaughtered the innocent. The reason for that is because we have not forgotten that we are also people,” The Underworld Palace’s elder said.

Hearing those words, many of the bystanders present began to nod their heads. While the methods of the Underworld Palace were extremely savage, there would always be reasons when they killed people. It was true that they had never willfully slaughtered the innocent. Not to mention not willfully slaughtering humans, they had not even done so to monstrous beasts.

While the methods of the Underworld Palace were indeed extremely ruthless and cruel at times, they could be considered to

have their own Dao, their own path. This was also the reason why the Underworld Palace was capable of continuing on at the apex of the human powers. The reason for that was because they had never done any outrageous atrocities that could cause the heavens to cry and anger all of the people in the world.

“Even though the people of our Underworld Palace train in Mysterious Techniques, we still know that we are humans and will not do things to harm others. Yet, you all are completely unaware of that aspect. That is why you all cannot be considered to be humans. Instead, you’re animals, lower than dogs and pigs.”

“For animals like yourselves, it is the obligation of the people in this world to put you to death,” As the Underworld Palace’s elder spoke those words, the many disciples from the Underworld Palace all took out their Royal Armaments and aimed them at Jin Wei’e and the others in the sky.

“Yoh, you bunch who don’t know death and dangers, are you trying to court death?” Faced with this display from the Underworld Palace, Jin Wei’e spoke disdainfully and smiled with contempt.

“Heavenly Law Palace, the disciples of Evildoers are before our eyes. It is our obligation as people of this world to eliminate animals like them. Let’s put aside our previous grudges and grievances to join hands and eliminate these three evil creatures so that they do not inflict suffering upon the people of this world anymore,” The elder from the Underworld Palace spoke to the people from the Heavenly Law Palace.

“Humph, it is beneath our Heavenly Law Palace’s dignity to join hands with your Underworld Palace,” However, the Heavenly Law Palace’s elder snorted coldly upon hearing that Underworld Palace’s elder’s words.

Upon hearing those words, many of the people present started to frown and began to feel contempt for the Heavenly Law Palace in

their hearts.

The Heavenly Law Palace had utterly let down their name. As people who should uphold Heavenly Law, when faced with the disciples of Evildoers, they should be the ones that would, on behalf of the heavens and all living things in the world, eliminate them. It shouldn't need to be the Underworld Palace.

Yet, not only did their Heavenly Law Palace not attack the three Evildoers' disciples first, they even refused the Underworld Palace's invitation to join hands.

Furthermore, not only did they refuse the Underworld Palace's invitation to join hands, they also did not express that they planned to take care of the three Evildoers' disciples. This was truly too abominable.

"It seems that you all will not have anyone to help you," Jin Wei'e also realized that the Heavenly Law Palace did not plan to get involved. Thus, he smiled complacently, and then raised his hand upward and shot out a palm strike. Immediately, heaven and earth started to tremble as boundless martial power descended from the sky like countless giant mountains.

With devastating power, it came crushing down upon the people from the Underworld Palace.

Seeing that, the Underworld Palace's elder shouted, "Set up the formation!" Then the people from the Underworld Palace set up a majestic formation to make a counterattack against Jin Wei'e.

"Boom~~~"

Unfortunately, not only was Jin Wei'e very strong, he also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Even though there were a lot of people from the Underworld Palace, they were no match for him.

After the loud explosion, the people from the Underground Palace had suffered a crushing defeat. At this moment, other than

Chili Pepper, everyone else from the Underground Palace had fallen to the ground. They were all injured.

Thus, at this moment, Big Radish and Little Radish who were also lying on the ground had expressions of bewilderment on their faces. They could see that the many Half Martial Emperor-level experts were all vomiting blood. Yet, the two of them were completely uninjured. They felt this to be very unfathomable.

Naturally, they would not have known that it was Chu Feng who had protected them from the shadows.

“A bunch of trash. If I don’t teach you all a lesson, you’ll think us to be nothing but sick cats,” After defeating them all with a single strike, Jin Wei’e became even more pleased with himself.

Then, he narrowed his eyes and turned his shameless gaze to Chili Pepper. He said, “My beloved, look at how dearly I love you. With how your Underworld Palace treated me, I was still reluctant to harm you. From this, it can be seen that my love for you is true.”

Still standing, Chili Pepper looked to her fellow disciples all around her that had all fallen to the ground with injuries. Immediately, she started to gnash her teeth with surging anger.

She gripped her Royal Armament and shouted, “You’re courting death!” Then, Chili Pepper soared into the sky to attack Jin Wei’e.

However, faced with Chili Pepper’s attack, Jin Wei’e did not even have to move. With merely a thought, he used his martial power to bind her in midair.

“Girl, don’t you continue to act this indiscriminately. This great commander has fancied you. It is your fortune,” At this moment, faint traces of anger were flickering in Jin Wei’e’s narrowed gaze.

“Pah!” Chili Pepper spit out a mouthful of saliva.

“Haha, senior brother Jin, that girl defended that Chu Feng like that, yet completely refuses to put you in her eyes. It would appear that, in that girl’s heart, you are very inferior to that Chu Feng,”

Yin Wei'e said while laughing loudly.

"Fuck! How could trash like Chu Feng possibly be comparable to this great commander?" Jin Wei'e said with an expression of unreconciliation.

"Even if there are thousands upon thousands of you, you would still be inferior to a single Chu Feng. You will not be qualified to be compared with Chu Feng through your entire life, through eternity," Chili Pepper said.

"You..." Hearing those words, Jin Wei'e was immediately angered. He turned to the surrounding crowd and asked, "Exactly who is this Chu Feng? Someone tell your daddy right now!"

The crowd were all shocked by Jin Wei'e's behavior. Chu Feng was extremely famous right now. However, from the reactions of Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e, it seemed that they really did not know who Chu Feng was.

However, upon thinking about it, the people could also understand the reason why. Other than going about doing evil deeds with their masters, the disciples of Evildoers would be in closed-door training all year round. Thus, it was also understandable that they did not know what was happening in the world outside.

If it wasn't for the invitation from that Emperor Gong's successor, it was likely that these three scoundrels would not have left their closed-door training.

Yin Wei'e looked to the Heavenly Law Palace's crowd and said, "Don't look at me. I don't know who that Chu Feng is. However, it seems like those guys from the Heavenly Law Palace know very well who he is."

"Tell me, who is this Chu Feng?" Jin Wei'e also turned his gaze toward the Heavenly Law Palace's crowd.

Hearing those words, the elder from the Heavenly Law Palace

started to frown. The reason why he had not joined the Underworld Palace to attack Jin Wei'e and the others before was because he was trying to weaken the Underworld Palace's drive using Jin Wei'e and the others.

The way he saw it, the fact that he did not attack Jin Wei'e and the others could be said to be an extremely magnanimous action. Jin Wei'e and the others should be feeling grateful to him.

Never would he ever have expected that not only would Jin Wei'e and the others not thank him, but they would instead publicly question them about Chu Feng with a tone of questioning servants. His actions showed that he simply did not place the Heavenly Law Palace in his eyes.

“Evildoers’ disciples, I shall give you all a word of advice. One should know one’s standing,” The Heavenly Law Palace’s elder said those words.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Good birds → people with good characters. ↔

Chapter 1762 – Arriving On Stage In Succession

“I know your motherfucking standing. Your daddy is asking you all exactly who that Chu Feng is!” Jin Wei’e shouted angrily. Then he shot out a palm strike, and a burst of enormous power appeared out of the blue, covering the army of people from the Heavenly Law Palace.

The might of his attack was even more powerful than when he had attacked the people from the Underworld Palace. Merely, he was acting leniently. He only revealed his might and did not actually unleash the attack at them. Else, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace would have either been injured or killed.

“Tell me right the fuck away... or else, I’ll eliminate you all,” Jin Wei’e revealed an ominous glint in his eyes and spoke very ferociously.

In this sort of situation, the disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace all started to panic. One by one, they began to ask that elder for instructions as to what to do. After all, they were faced with a life and death crisis. Evidently, none of them wished to die.

Feeling helpless, the elder clenched his teeth, then spoke with a feigned calm. “Chu Feng was originally a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain. However, that child possesses a malicious heart. Not only did he kill the younger generation of the Nangong Imperial Clan, he also snatched away the Nangong Imperial Clan’s secret skill. Currently, he has been expelled from the Cyanwood Mountain, and he is wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clans. He is a treacherous member of the younger generation who is fleeing for his life.”

Once that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder spoke those words, the crowd immediately began to feel even more contempt for the Heavenly Law Palace. Not only was that elder despicable and

shameless, he even lacked moral integrity. He had truly humiliated the name of 'Heavenly Law.' This caused the crowd to feel disdain for him from the bottom of their hearts.

"Old fart from the Heavenly Law Palace, I will only ask you this. If Chu Feng were here, would you dare to describe him like that?" Chili Pepper asked angrily. That Heavenly Law Palace's elder was inverting right and wrong, and he was speaking from the standpoint of the Nangong Imperial Clan. He had described Chu Feng as an extremely malicious person. Naturally, she would not allow it.

"What I've said is the truth. I have a heart with a clear conscience. As such, why would I not dare?"

"If that Chu Feng were standing before me, not only would I dare to say those words, I would also eliminate him on behalf of the heavens," The Heavenly Law Palace's elder said.

"Pah! When faced with the Evildoers' disciples, not only did you not say words like 'eliminate them on behalf of the heavens', you instead lowered your head and complied with their every order like a servant."

"Yet, to Chu Feng who is not present, you shouted that you would eliminate him on behalf of the heavens. You're truly disgusting," Chili Pepper said with extreme contempt.

"Disgusting indeed," Many people expressed their agreement with Chili Pepper.

"Today, the Heavenly Law Palace has truly broadened our horizons. Carry on the Heavenly Law, uphold virtue and condemn evil? What a bunch of bullshit. Your righteousness is inferior to that of the Underworld Palace!" In fact, there were even people that discreetly spoke insulting words at the Heavenly Law Palace.

There were people from all over present. Some among them were disciples from grand characters. Therefore, there would naturally

be people from the crowd who did not fear the Heavenly Law Palace.

This sort of situation caused the expressions of the people from the Heavenly Law Palace to become very ugly. However, it was unsuitable for them to refute the crowd. After all, it was true that they had been frightened by Jin Wei'e. What the crowd was saying was the truth.

Right at this moment, that Jin Wei'e burst into loud laughter. "Haha, regardless of what sort of person that Chu Feng might be, I can tell that he's greatly inferior to me."

"At the very least, even while doing misdeeds, he is not as straightforward and upright as me. Say, girl, you should stop being so hell-bent on that Chu Feng. It's better that you follow me."

"Pah!" Chili Pepper spit a mouthful of saliva again.

"Fuck! Damned bitch! You are truly one to refuse a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. Your daddy wanted you to be my woman out of kindness. Yet, you refused. In that case, I'll have you become my slave. I'll toy with you and beat you as I wish. Right now, your daddy shall toy with you in public."

As he spoke those words, Jin Wei'e opened his arms. At the same time, Chili Pepper's skirt began to flutter. She who was bound by Jin Wei'e's martial power began to fly toward his bosom.

Even though Chili Pepper was violently struggling, it was all no use. After all, the gap between her and Jin Wei'e was as enormous as the heaven from the earth.

At this moment, coldness flashed through Chu Feng's eyes, which were covered by his conical bamboo hat. While he had watched the show for a long time, he would not look on unfeelingly as Chili Pepper entered Jin Wei'e's bosom.

"Regardless of what sort of person Chu Feng might be, the way I see it, you are unqualified to be compared with him!" Right at the

moment when Chu Feng was about to act, a voice that shook heaven and earth sounded.

After that voice sounded, a figure appeared before Chili Pepper. When he appeared, the martial power Jin Wei'e had bound Chili Pepper with was instantly severed.

This scene caused the expressions of many of the people present to change. At this moment, the person who had appeared before Chili Pepper was a young man.

He had a head of black hair tied in a ponytail, a graceful and stern face, and emitted coldness all over. Most importantly, this young man's cultivation was actually the same as Jin Wei'e's; he was also a rank four Half Martial Emperor.

"Yan Xie?" Compared to the others, Chu Feng was feeling joyous. The reason for that was because he recognized the person who had come. It was the strongest member of the younger generation from the Cyanwood Domain's Yan Clan, Yan Xie.

Chu Feng truly did not expect that Yan Xie would have come here too. Furthermore, he had never expected that Yan Xie's cultivation would increase this quickly. In a period of over a year, he had gone from rank one Half Martial Emperor to rank five Half Martial Emperor.

That's right, Yan Xie was not a rank four Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he was a rank five Half Martial Emperor. He was concealing his cultivation.

While he could conceal his cultivation from others, he was unable to conceal it from Chu Feng. With a single glance, Chu Feng was able to distinguish his true cultivation.

"Young lady, thank you for defending Chu Feng. You can return. Leave the rest to me," Yan Xie said to Chili Pepper.

Chili Pepper did not hesitate. She immediately flew back down and helped Big Radish and Little Radish get back up. Then, they

moved over to Chu Feng's side.

"You are Chu Feng?" At this moment, Jin Wei'e was filled with grievances toward Yan Xie, who had come out of nowhere.

"I am not Chu Feng. I am merely Chu Feng's friend," Yan Xie said.

"In that case, are you planning to stand up for him?" Jin Wei'e asked.

"In this world, only Chu Feng is capable of fighting against me. As for you... you're still not qualified to be my opponent," Yan Xie said.

"What arrogance!" Jin Wei'e was enraged. As he spoke, he shot out a palm strike. Valiant martial power turned into an enormous, golden-bright and dazzling mountain. From the sky, that mountain fell toward Yan Xie. In rage, Jin Wei'e had unleashed a fatal attack from the get-go.

However, Yan Xie's expression remained unchanged even when faced with Yan Xie's attack. It was only when that mountain of martial power approached him that he raised his arm and lightly shook his sleeve.

At the moment when he shook his sleeve, a strong gale immediately appeared. Not only did the gale instantly shatter the golden mountain of martial power, it also engulfed Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e.

When the gale disappeared, Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e's clothes were all ripped, and they were covered with blood. Then, one by one, they fell to the ground. Even though they were still alive, they were only alive by a breath.

"As I said, you are not qualified to be my opponent," Yan Xie repeated.

"He's actually a rank five Half Martial Emperor!? He was actually hiding his cultivation!?"

“To be a rank five Half Martial Emperor at such a young age, exactly who is that child?! He’s actually this powerful?!” At that moment, the crowd was praising Yan Xie nonstop.

“Wow, never would I have expected that Chu Feng actually had a friend like him!” Even Big Radish and Little Radish had expressions of amazement on their faces.

“Chu Feng is a ruler among men. Naturally, his friends will be extraordinary people. Otherwise, how could they be qualified to be Chu Feng’s friends?” Chili Pepper said complacently.

Hearing those words, Big Radish and Little Radish had helpless expressions on their faces. The fascination Chili Pepper had for Chu Feng had reached a level of craziness. There was already no one comparable to Chu Feng in her heart.

“Never would I have expected that that coward Chu Feng would have a friend like you,” However, right at this moment, a white-clothed man slowly walked over from the sky.

This young man possessed a face with delicate features, and gave off an unfathomable air. From merely a glance, the crowd knew that this man was someone extraordinary.

The reason for that was because the aura this white-clothed man emitted was that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor.

Chapter 1763 – Confrontation Between The Strong

After Yan Xie and that white-clothed man appeared in succession, the crowd was completely shocked.

This was especially true for those old people close to a hundred years old. Although they could still be considered to be a part of the younger generation, they knew very well in their hearts that this era was already not theirs anymore.

It was only when they saw Yan Xie and that white-clothed man that they realized why this era was known as the era where powerful experts were born, the era where an Overlord would appear. The reason for that was because the powerful members of the younger generation in this era were truly very numerous.

In fact, it could even be said that this era possessed more powerful members of the younger generation than any other era after the Ancient Era.

Else, how could all those elders and disciples from the Underworld Palace and the Heavenly Law Palace be suppressed by a single Jin Wei'e?

However, the two men that had appeared were standing in midair right now, and both of them possessed cultivations above what Jin Wei'e possessed. This truly caused the crowd to gasp in admiration.

“Why are you saying that Chu Feng is a coward? Do you even know him?” Yan Xie stared at that white-clothed man with his ice-cold gaze.

As Yan Xie considered Chu Feng his friend, he, like Chili Pepper, would not allow anyone to insult Chu Feng. Furthermore, he had realized that, for that white-clothed man to appear at this time, he had most likely come with ill intentions.

“He has been invited, yet has not dared to appear. If that’s not a coward, then what is?” The white-clothed man said.

“What makes you so certain that Chu Feng has not dared to appear? Perhaps he’s already inside the fort, and you’ve merely not seen him yet,” Yan Xie said.

“With the Four Great Imperial Clans all listing him as wanted, how could he dare come?” The white-clothed man asked.

“According to my understanding of Chu Feng, as long as he’s invited, he will definitely show up,” Yan Xie said.

“If he has come, then yes, it would mean that he’s not a coward. However, I will let everyone know that even if that Chu Feng is not a coward, he still possesses an underserved reputation, and he is nothing more than trash.”

“The reason for that is because I’ll have him die by my hands,” As that white-clothed man said those words, he clenched his fist, and a trace of killing intent flashed through his eyes. He was definitely not joking around. He was truly planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Chili Pepper, it seems that Chu Feng has not only offended the Four Great Imperial Clans. His enemies are truly numerous,” Big Radish said with a low voice.

“Shut up!” Chili Pepper shouted angrily. However, her gaze was flickering. Evidently, she was worried about Chu Feng’s safety.

At this moment, the person that was the calmest was Chu Feng. He knew why so many people were slandering his name, insulting him and even wanted to kill him.

The reason for that was the enormous rewards being offered by the Four Great Imperial Clans. Those rewards were truly too attractive. Thus, there were naturally a lot of people who wanted to kill Chu Feng.

However, even if they wanted to kill Chu Feng, they couldn’t do it without just reasoning. Else, they would be disdained by others.

Thus, if they wanted to kill Chu Feng, they had to say that Chu Feng was an evil person who had sinned a lot.

Chu Feng knew the cheap tricks that these people possessed very well. The Heavenly Law Palace, those three Evildoers' disciples, and even that white-clothed man were all people that wanted to obtain the rewards. ¹

“Chu Feng is my close friend. If you wish to kill Chu Feng, I will definitely not sit by and watch.”

“I, Yan Xie, am not one to kill nameless individuals. Go ahead, tell me your name,” Yan Xie said with a cold voice.

“My surname's Zhan, and given name's Qiankun. My respected master's name is Zhan Cangtian,” The white-clothed man spoke those words one by one. ²

“What? His master is Zhan Cangtian? He's Zhan Cangtian's disciple, Zhan Qiankun?”

After hearing what the white-clothed man said, the eyes of many people started to shine. They were shocked. The gazes with which they looked to the white-clothed man turned to ones of shock, resentment and fear.

At this moment, from the discussions of the crowd, Chu Feng discovered who that white-clothed man really was.

Zhan Cangtian was the leader of the Five Great Evildoers. Before him, Jin, Yin, Tong and Tie, the four other Evildoers, would be extremely well-behaved.

Zhan Cangtian's disciple Zhan Qiankun was also one of the top and most famous members of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism.

His various accomplishments had already spread far and wide through the Holy Land of Martialism since long ago. In fact, Zhan Qiankun was one of the younger generation Emperor Gong's

successor had invited to this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

From this, it could be seen that Zhan Qiankun's reputation was definitely not underserved. Instead, he was a genius who possessed true abilities.

"He's actually one of the people invited. This situation is bad. Will that Chu Feng's friend be a match for him?" Big Radish was very worried.

"What bad luck. There were so many people invited. Yet, why would we run across the most notorious one on the list?" Chili Pepper also started to frown.

In fact, many of the people present looked down on Yan Xie. After all, that Zhan Qiankun was extremely famous.

However, at this very moment, Chu Feng was smiling. He was not worried in the slightest. He knew Yan Xie's strength very well. Regardless of how powerful that Zhan Qiankun might be, he would not necessarily be a match for Yan Xie.

However, in a battle between experts, one would be able to obtain some benefits regardless of victory or defeat. To Yan Xie, this would be a rare confrontation to come by.

Chu Feng did not wish to ruin this rare opportunity for Yan Xie. Thus, he decided to continue to be a silent observer. He planned to watch exactly who, between Yan Xie and Zhan Qiankun, would be stronger.

"So you're actually that biggest Evildoer's disciple. No wonder you've come to stand up for those three."

"Since that's the case, it's even more reasonable for me to kill you," As matters stood, Yan Xie was disinclined to bother with superfluous words. With a flip of his palm, a fiery red spear with flame lingering around it appeared in Yan Xie's hand.

Once that spear appeared, Yan Xie's aura instantly increased

dramatically. Even though they were all inside the fort, rising winds and scudding clouds still appeared above Yan Xie. It was obvious how powerful that weapon was.

“Fire Dragon Emperor Spear. However, it’s no longer a copy, but the actual Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

“As expected of the Yan Clan. Even though so many years have passed, they still hid such a treasure.”

When Chu Feng fought against Yan Xie, Yan Xie had used the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear. However, the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear in Yan Xie’s hand at that time had only been a copy, an imitation. Yet, the one he had revealed right now was an actual Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“You’re not the only one with an Incomplete Imperial Armament,” Seeing Yan Xie’s Fire Dragon Emperor Spear, Zhan Qiankun started to smile coldly. Then, a whip that emitted black flames appeared in his hand.

Not only was that black whip an Incomplete Imperial Armament, being held by Zhan Qiankun, it was like an enormous black dragon. The roars of the dragon were capable of shaking heaven and earth. The might of the dragon was capable of covering the heavenly dome.

However, Yan Xie was not at all weaker. Holding the spear in his hand, many fire dragons were shot forth. In an instant, those dragons collided with Zhan Qiankun.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

At this moment, heaven and earth had darkened. However, sparks would often appear, and violent energy ripples would spring up like invisible ferocious beasts as they wreaked havoc throughout their surroundings.

Due to the fact that the battlefield was limited in size, and that the two fighters were extremely powerful, the energy ripples

created by the two fighters had blown away many of the people down below. There were even individuals who sustained serious injuries, such as losing their limbs or bleeding from their seven facial orifices.

“Underworld Palace, set up the formation!” In this sort of situation, the people from the Underworld Palace were the ones who actually stood forward bravely. Although they were injured, they endured their injuries and began to put forth their all to set up formations to stop the energy ripples that were the result of the battle between the two men.

“Let us help too,” Seeing that even the injured people from the Underworld Palace were willing to help the people here, many experts also joined them in succession to help them defend against the nonstop energy ripples crashing down from the battle happening up above.

This scene could be said to be extremely warm and moving to watch. The unity of the human race was completely evident at this point.

“Ignorant fools! How could the energy ripples caused by rank five Half Martial Emperors be things that you all can resist? Rather than watching the battle and dying here, it’s better to quickly leave.”

However, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace did not help, and instead spoke words of mockery. As they spoke, they prepared to leave.

While the words spoken by the Heavenly Law Palace were extremely hateful, they were not without reason. Indeed, the energy ripples, the aftermath caused by the battle between Yan Xie and Zhan Qiankun, were indeed not something that the people present could withstand.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Sure enough. It was unknown whether he did it intentionally or not, but that Zhan Qiankun lashed his black flame whip many times in succession, and shot out many black gaseous flames that appeared like black dragons.

Among them, three were actually shot toward the crowd down below. Faced with the incoming dragons, the crowd's expressions all changed.

If those black dragons were to land onto the ground, the casualties of the people on the ground would be enormous. In fact, not a single one of them would be able to survive through them.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Maybe not the evildoers' disciples... since they don't even know who Chu Feng is... ↩
Zhan → Battle. Qiankun → The World. Cangtian → The Heavens/Firmament. Battle the world, battle the heavens... great names. ↩

Chapter 1764 – The Flame Emperor's Successor

“Run!!”

Seeing that the situation had become extremely bad, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace that had already quietly distanced themselves started to rapidly accelerate their footsteps to run away after hearing that shout from their elder.

“Truly despicable!”

Seeing that the people from the Heavenly Law Palace had already escaped, the people cursed in their hearts. While escaping was something normal, to secretly escape was something that people disapproved of.

“Buzz~~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd thought that they would be met with a disaster, a golden-bright and dazzling defensive barrier appeared over the crowd.

This defensive barrier appeared very promptly. Not only did it block the attacks Zhan Qiankun had unleashed at the crowd, it also did not suffer any damage at all. The defensive barrier could be said to be extremely firm.

This scene shocked the crowd. They began to carefully look at the defensive barrier. It was only then that they discovered that not only was the defensive barrier emitting golden light, there were also snake marks within it.

“Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it's a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. There's another expert in the crowd!” At this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar.

Even Big Radish was exclaiming in admiration. Repeatedly, he said, “Our Holy Land of Martialism is truly a place with hidden

dragons and crouching tigers. A Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist actually came to this place.”

“Where is he? Where is he? A Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, wouldn’t that mean that he’s the same level of world spiritist as Chu Feng?” Little Radish began to look all around. He wished to find the person that had acted.

Even Chili Pepper was unable to contain herself, and started to stealthily search for the world spiritist that had unleashed the defensive barrier to save them. She wanted to know exactly who that person was.

However, neither of them knew that the person that had saved them was actually standing right beside them. The person that had unleashed that defensive barrier was none other than Chu Feng.

Merely, Chu Feng had been extremely secretive in his actions. No one knew that he was the one that had unleashed that defensive barrier.

“Damn it, he’s doing that deliberately!”

At the moment when the crowd was searching for the world spiritist that had saved them, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were cursing nonstop.

Turning their gazes toward the direction of the voices, the crowd discovered that, due to the fact that the people from the Heavenly Law Palace had already escaped from the crowd, they were not covered by the defensive barrier.

Furthermore, it just so happened that a black dragon landed near them. The aftermath from the energy ripple of that black dragon caused all of those below the Half Martial Emperor level to either die or become seriously injured. The Heavenly Law Palace had suffered enormous casualties.

“With the abilities of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he is more than capable of covering the people from the Heavenly

Law Palace. Yet, he deliberately decided not to do so. Evidently, he didn't plan to save them."

"Selfish and despicable. Now they're receiving their retribution. Serves them right."

Seeing the devastation the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were met with, not only was the crowd not sympathizing with them, there were even people who began to cheer.

If one were to ask Chu Feng whether he had deliberately not saved the people from the Heavenly Law Palace, then naturally, he would say that he had done it deliberately. The people from the Heavenly Law Palace were extremely despicable. Not only did they publicly insult him, they even wanted to kill him so as to obtain the bounty on him from the Four Great Imperial Clans.

How could Chu Feng possibly save people like them?

However, Chu Feng didn't have time to bother with the people from the Heavenly Law Palace. Instead, his eyes were fixed upon the battle in the sky.

On the horizon, black gaseous flames and boundless seas of flames were colliding with one another. They burned the sky, and even space itself. It was a truly spectacular sight.

They were no longer casually fighting with one another. The two fighters had both used extremely powerful Earthen Taboo Martial Skills.

Both Yan Xie and Zhan Qiankun had used their signature abilities. The battle between them was growing more and more intense.

"Amazing, that Chu Feng's friend is actually this powerful. He is able to fight Zhan Qiankun to a stalemate. Could it be that Chu Feng really possesses talent as heaven-defying as he is rumored to?"

As the aftermath of the two fighters' attacks that were capable of

causing massive devastation landed onto the defensive formation Chu Feng had set up, the crowd within the defensive formation turned their gazes onto the battle between Yan Xie and Zhan Qiankun once again. Upon seeing the intense battle between the two men, not only did the crowd exclaim in admiration, they involuntarily began to think about Chu Feng.

They had only heard about Chu Feng's various accomplishments. Thus, many people were very skeptical of them. However, after seeing how powerful Yan Xie was with their own eyes, they began to inevitably become convinced that the rumors about Chu Feng might be real.

“Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust!”

Suddenly, the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear in Yan Xie's hand fused together with the vast flames in the sky. Then, he pointed his spear at Zhan Qiankun and shouted, “First thrust!”

“Aouuu~~~”

A vivid and lifelike fire dragon surged out of the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear. It charged through all of the energy ripples created by the two fighters and, with an extremely fast speed, galloped to attack Zhan Qiankun.

“Boom~~~”

Seeing this, Zhan Qiankun immediately began to wave his long whip around. He unleashed a powerful martial skill with his whip to block the incoming fire dragon.

“Seven consecutive thrusts!”

However, after Zhan Qiankun spent a great amount of effort to block the first fire dragon, a total of seven more fire dragons surged forth to devour him. Furthermore, each of the fire dragons was more ferocious than the last. Especially the last fire dragon, it was extremely terrifying.

“Damn it!”

At this moment, even Zhan Qiankun's expression took a huge change. In merely an instant, the fire dragons had arrived before him. He was unable to even run away. At this moment, he felt that his life was in danger.

In fact, many of the people present were stunned by the fire dragons in the sky. None of them knew what they were. However, they were able to sense how frightening they were.

At this moment, the only person capable of maintaining his calm was Chu Feng. Chu Feng knew that this was Yan Xie's ultimate skill. Back then, if it wasn't for the fact that he possessed the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash, Chu Feng would have likely been defeated by the Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust.

As for Zhan Qiankun, he was evidently unable to block the Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust. It would seem that the outcome of the battle between the two men had been decided.

“Ji, ji, ji, ji~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng felt that the outcome of the battle had been decided, strange sounds suddenly began to emit from the center of the fire dragons.

When the strange sounds were heard, the ferocious fire dragons actually began to gradually disappear. Finally, the fire dragons all disappeared. At this time, Zhan Qiankun reemerged before the crowd.

It was only at this moment that the crowd discovered that Zhan Qiankun's body was actually covered with black insects. Those black insects were densely packed and crawling over his entire body.

That being said, those black insects were not only swelling, their bodies were also emitting a faint fiery glow. It was extremely strange.

“Those insects...” Chu Feng started to frown. He knew that the

strange sound earlier had been made by those insects. The power of the fire dragons had not disappeared without reason either. They had all been devoured by those insects. It was those insects that had saved Zhan Qiankun.

“Pa, pa, pa, pa~~~”

Suddenly, those insects began to explode. With each explosion, a strand of fiery glow would appear. With the successive explosions of the insects, it was like watching a small feast of fireworks. It was quite a spectacular sight.

When those insects disappeared, the crowd discovered that Zhan Qiankun was actually completely naked as he stood in midair. However, his body was completely undamaged.

“Phew, that was a close call. If it wasn’t for the Ancient Era’s Black Insect Armor given to me by my master, I might have been defeated by you,” Zhan Qiankun did not put on new clothes. Just like that, he stood there naked as he said those words.

“So you actually used a precious treasure to block my Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust?” Yan Xie revealed a gaze of contempt.

The way he saw it, if it hadn’t been for Zhan Qiankun’s treasure, he would’ve already defeated him.

“I admit that you’re very powerful. Your flames are no ordinary flames. They’re extremely strong.”

“My guess is that you’re definitely not an ordinary person. Do you dare to reveal your name and origin?” Zhan Qiankun asked.

“Why would I not dare? I am called Yan Xie. I am the Flame Emperor’s successor,” Yan Xie spoke with a loud voice.

“What? Flame Emperor’s successor? Could he be talking about that Flame Emperor that fought against Emperor Qing ten thousand years ago, and then created the Holy Land of Martialism’s forbidden area, the Purgatory Sea of Flames?”

“It was because of him that the Yan Clan reached the apex. Yet, it was also because of him that they withered away. Is he speaking of that Flame Emperor?”

“The Flame Emperor actually possessed descendants? The Yan Clan actually still exists?”

“What a grand era. Not only has Emperor Gong’s successor shown himself, even the Flame Emperor’s successor has shown himself.”

Once Yan Xie said those words, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar. After all, the Flame Emperor was an expert from an era that was not very long ago, relatively speaking. Ten thousand years ago, if it hadn’t been for the appearance of Emperor Qing, it was very likely that the Flame Emperor would have become that era’s overlord. Thus, there were many people who knew of his distinguished name.

Yan Xie was actually the Flame Emperor’s descendant. Naturally, this would cause them to be shocked. However, they did not doubt him. The reason for that was because the crowd had long since discovered that Yan Xie’s abilities were extremely similar to that of the legendary Flame Emperor.

Chapter 1765 – Your Natural Counter

“Haha, you’re actually the Flame Emperor’s descendant. If that’s the case, then you are indeed qualified to die at my hands,” After learning Yan Xie’s identity, not only was Zhan Qiankun not shocked, he was instead in joy.

“A man that relied on a treasure to block my attack actually dares to boast this shamelessly? Your treasure is already gone. Are you capable of defending against my Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust again?” Yan Xie carried the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear on his shoulder and asked with a narrowed gaze.

“Haha, I was merely careless earlier. I have yet to use my full strength.”

“If I were to go all out, you, Yan Xie, would definitely be defeated by me,” Zhan Qiankun said.

“You’re overestimating your capabilities,” Yan Xie was enraged by Zhan Qiankun’s words. He held the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear and unleashed another Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust.

“Heh...”

However, faced with Yan Xie’s attack, not only was Zhan Qiankun not afraid, his mouth even lifted into a complacent smile.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, heaven and earth started to darken. Violent winds began to form and blew away the clouds. Many dazzling bolts of lighting that shined with dazzling light began to flicker in the clouds like galloping dragons.

“Crash~~~”

Following that, heavy rainfall began to pour down like a waterfall. That rainwater was so strong that it actually managed to directly extinguish Yan Xie’s Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust.

“Impossible!!!” Yan Xie was deeply shocked. He found this hard to accept. After all, the Fire Dragon Burning Heaven Thrust was his strongest martial skill.

Right at this moment, the heavy rainstorm started to stop. The black clouds that surrounded the area also began to dissipate. However, at this moment, everyone present was shocked.

At this moment, Zhan Qiankun who was standing in the sky had lost his skin, his flesh and the temperature of his body. He had actually turned into a blue man made of water.

Furthermore, at this moment, his aura was no longer that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

“Divine Body,” Chu Feng started to frown. What he was worried about was not the fact that Zhan Qiankun was able to increase his cultivation by a level through his Divine Power. The reason for that was because he knew that Yan Xie was also a Divine Body, and also capable of increasing his cultivation by a level.

The reason why he was worried was because that Zhan Qiankun’s Divine Power was water-based, whereas Yan Xie’s Divine Power was fire-based.

All things in this world counteracted and neutralized one another. As for water, it was what neutralized fire. This was a truth that everyone knew about. While ordinary water might not be able to counter Yan Xie’s fire, it would not necessarily hold true for water from a Divine Power.

“Do you know why I am so confident now?” Zhan Qiankun asked complacently.

“You are not the only one with Divine Power!” Yan Xie shouted. Then, flames began to linger around his body. In an instant, he had turned into a man covered with purple flames.

After unleashing his Divine Power, Yan Xie’s aura also increased

from rank five Half Martial Emperor to rank six Half Martial Emperor.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded. Majestic purple flames turned into a ray and were shot directly toward Zhan Qiankun.

However, Zhan Qiankun was not afraid at all. He also moved his body and charged toward Yan Xie.

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, flames covered the sky, and water began to sprinkle everywhere. The two men were fighting each other.

“Heh, even if you are able to increase your cultivation to the same level as mine, could your fire possibly be able to win against my water?” As Zhan Qiankun attacked, he also spoke words of mockery at Yan Xie.

“Enough of your rubbish. Say that again after you defeat me,” Yan Xie naturally knew that it was difficult for fire to match water. However, he also knew that he had no way out now, and had to go all-out.

If he fought, he would still have a chance to live. If he retreated, only death would await him.

However, it was as Chu Feng had thought. Zhan Qiankun’s water was no ordinary water. No matter what, it was water formed with Divine Power. If he were to fight against other people, perhaps his water would not be as valiant as Yan Xie’s fire.

However, when fighting against Yan Xie’s fire with his water, Zhan Qiankun possessed absolute superiority.

At the beginning, the two men appeared to be equally matched. However, after battling for some time, Yan Xie entered a disadvantageous state. Furthermore, he no longer had a way to turn the situation around. Turning weaker and weaker, Yan Xie

entered a bitter struggle.

In the end, Yan Xie was at an absolute disadvantaged state. He was bitterly struggling to continue fighting.

However, that Zhan Qiankun had yet to injure Yan Xie. As if toying with a monkey, he was toying with Yan Xie. His actions were truly abominable.

“That Yan Xie is also a rare genius. Unfortunately, he encountered Zhan Qiankun, his natural counter. He’s truly unlucky,” someone sighed.

“If Yan Xie were to truly die at Zhan Qiankun’s hands, it would be an enormous pity.”

The crowd were all able to tell the situation of the battle. One by one, they began to voice their pity for Yan Xie. It could be said that Yan Xie had not been defeated in terms of strength. Instead, he had been defeated by luck.

“Splatter~~~”

Suddenly, several thousand water snakes shot out from Zhan Qiankun’s body. The water snakes were all a hundred meters long. Not only did they seal off the entire sky, they also surrounded Yan Xie like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses.

After battling Zhan Qiankun for so long, the purple flames that covered Yan Xie had grown extremely weak. In the end, the purple flames disappeared, and Yan Xie’s aura returned back to that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor.

“Huuu....”

At this moment, although Yan Xie was still standing in the sky without any injuries, he was gasping for breath.

Returning to a state of being only a human, Yan Xie appeared to be extremely small and weak as he was surrounded by several thousand hundred-meter-long water snakes. If those water snakes

were to attack him, Yan Xie would undoubtedly die.

“Yan Xie, is it really worth fighting for the sake of that Chu Feng?”

“You said that he is not a coward, and not a trash. Yet now, when you’re going to die because of him, where is he?” Zhan Qiankun did not directly attack to kill Yan Xie. Instead, he began to mock and ridicule Yan Xie.

“The victor is the king and the loser is the thief. You’ve won. I have nothing to say.”

“However, while you might be able to defeat me, you will not necessarily be able to defeat Chu Feng. The reason for that is because I, Yan Xie, throughout my life, have only been defeated by two people of my same generation. One is you, and the other is Chu Feng.”

“Although I was defeated by both of you, I am convinced of my defeat at the hands of Chu Feng. As for you, I am not convinced at all!!!” Yan Xie said.

“What? That Yan Xie was defeated by Chu Feng before?” Hearing those words, the crowd was shocked once again. Yan Xie was this powerful, and yet, he was actually no match for Chu Feng. This indirectly told the crowd how powerful Chu Feng was.

“Is that so? So you were defeated by Chu Feng before? In that case, it would seem that I am quite related to that Chu Feng. At least, we’ve both defeated the successor of the Flame Emperor.”

“However, I’ve not only defeated you, I’ll also defeat Chu Feng,” Zhan Qiankun smiled coldly. Then, he said, “Yan Xie, taking the Flame Emperor into consideration, I’ll give you a chance to live. As long as you kneel to me and beg for forgiveness, I’ll spare your life.”

“It’s meaningless to say anymore. Go ahead and kill me,” Yan Xie closed his eyes. As someone who refused to yield even when facing

death, how could he possibly kneel and beg someone?

“Haha, it seems that you’re quite wise. You knew that even if you were to kneel to me, I still wouldn’t let you live,” Seeing that Yan Xie had refused to kneel, Zhan Qiankun actually burst into loud laughter.

Not only did he shamelessly speak what he had planned to do, he did not feel shame from it at all. Instead, he felt extremely proud of himself.

Seeing Zhan Qiankun acting like this, everyone present felt extremely disgusted with him. It was as the rumors had said. Although that child possessed heaven-defying talent, he was absolute scum.

“However, remember this. Your death was caused by Chu Feng.”

Suddenly, Zhan Qiankun stopped laughing. Coldness flashed through his eyes, and the several thousand water snakes all opened their mouths and charged toward Yan Xie to devour him.

“Boom~~~”

After a loud rumble, water splashed everywhere. Waterfall-like rain once again splattered downward, landing on the defensive barrier. This caused even Chu Feng’s defensive barrier to tremble unceasingly. From this, it could be seen how powerful those water snakes had been.

Being attacked by those water snakes, Yan Xie’s aura disappeared completely.

Chapter 1766 – Carefully See For Yourself Who I Am

“Sigh~~~”

Seeing that Yan Xie had lost all ability to fight back, many people began to sigh and shake their heads incessantly. Some even lowered their heads because they did not wish to see Yan Xie being killed.

Even though it was only a battle between Yan Xie and Zhan Qiankun, and was not related to them, everyone knew what sort of individual Zhan Qiankun was.

In terms of talent, Zhan Qiankun was most definitely a rare genius. However, in terms of his character, he was definitely scum, a scourge on society. If someone like him were to continue to live, he would be a threat to everyone. For people like him, it would be best for them to die.

As for Yan Xie, he was the Flame Emperor’s successor. From his earlier actions, it could also be seen that Yan Xie was an upright and righteous man. At the very least, he was someone willing to sacrifice himself for his friend, and someone who refused to lower his head. He was clearly someone with a lot of moral integrity.

Even though Yan Xie was not at all related to them, the crowd did not wish for Yan Xie to be defeated.

But... the crowd could only hope, since they had no strength to change the outcome of the battle between the two men.

Suddenly, someone pointed to the sky and cried out in alarm, “Yan Xie is not dead!!!”

“Quickly, look, Yan Xie is still alive!!”

“Yan Xie is alive?”

“Heavens! Yan Xie really is alive!”

The crowd all turned their gazes to the sky. When they saw the scene in the sky, they were all overjoyed at the turn of events. Then, they were extremely shocked.

At this moment, Yan Xie was still alive. Not only was he alive, he was not injured in the slightest.

However, that was not the only reason why the crowd was so shocked. In addition to Yan Xie being alive and completely unharmed, there was another person standing before him.

Regardless of who that person might be, for him to appear before Yan Xie at such a time, it meant that he was most definitely an extraordinary person.

“Heavens, does he have a death wish? Why would he run over there?” Compared to the others, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were extremely shocked.

Different from the others, their current reactions were not those of curiosity. Instead, they were worried.

The reason for that was because the person that was standing in front of Yan Xie was none other than Chu Feng, who was still wearing the conical bamboo hat.

Merely, to them, this person was not Chu Feng, but rather an unfamiliar man wearing a conical bamboo hat.

“You’re not qualified to kill him,” Chu Feng said slowly. His tone was neither servile nor overbearing. However, the words he spoke were extremely powerful.

“Yoh, could it be that you’re another of Chu Feng’s friends? It seems that Chu Feng has quite a number of friends.”

“However, that doesn’t matter. Killing one is killing, and killing two is still just killing. Today, I have decided, other than my three junior brothers and the people from the Heavenly Law Palace, I will kill everyone here.” Suddenly, Zhan Qiankun laughed coldly, and traces of ruthlessness flashed through his eyes.

His ruthlessness was real. It was the ruthlessness of a murderer who killed without blinking an eye, the ruthlessness of someone who treats human lives like grass.

Hearing those words, the bystanders were all startled. Then, their expressions turned pale with fear. That Zhan Qiankun was planning to murder all of them; he was planning to murder them, people who were only observers.

Innocent, they were all innocent spectators. No matter what, there shouldn't be a reason for him to kill them.

No, something was wrong. Jin Wei'e and them were Zhan Qiankun's junior brothers. After all, their masters possessed the same title. Even if their relationship was not good, it would also be reasonable for Zhan Qiankun to not kill them.

But, why was it that he also planned to spare the people from the Heavenly Law Palace? Could it be that the Heavenly Law Palace possessed some sort of relationship with Zhan Qiankun?

Actually, this was also what the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were thinking. They knew very well that their Heavenly Law Palace did not possess any relationship with the Five Great Evildoers. Thus, they would naturally not be related to Zhan Qiankun.

Therefore, they were unable to understand why Zhan Qiankun was not planning to kill them.

Could it be because that Zhan Qiankun planned to spare them because they did not try to do anything to him earlier? Could it be that Zhan Qiankun was feeling grateful to them? This was the only reason that the people from the Heavenly Law Palace could think of.

"There need to be people to spread my magnificent feat today. The people from the Heavenly Law Palace just so happen to be suited for that task," Zhan Qiankun spoke again. After he said

those words, he looked to the people from the Heavenly Law Palace, “Isn’t that right? Cowards that fear death?”

“.....”

Hearing those words, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were all enraged, and began to gnash their teeth in anger. However, none of them said a single word to refute Zhan Qiankun. After all, none of them were a match for Zhan Qiankun.

“Hey, I’m done playing. Chu Feng’s friends, are you all prepared to die for Chu Feng?” Zhan Qiankun turned his gaze filled with contempt toward Chu Feng and Yan Xie.

Having already unleashed his Divine Power, Zhan Qiankun was filled with confidence. Even though the man wearing the conical bamboo hat before him had clearly blocked his attack, he was not afraid in the slightest.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at this moment, a loud explosion was suddenly heard, and boundless oppressive might came crushing down from the sky. It was aimed at Zhan Qiankun.

That oppressive might was so powerful that it was like a vast galaxy falling down from the ninth heaven. Not only was it incomparably magnificent, it was also extremely intimidating.

Facing that oppressive might, Zhan Qiankun started to frown. He did not dare to underestimate it in the slightest, and immediately unleashed all of his strength and released his strongest oppressive might to block the incoming oppressive might.

However, when the two oppressive mights collided with one another, it was as if a single droplet of water had fallen into a surging violent river. In an instant, that droplet of water disappeared without a trace.

It turned out that the oppressive might of Zhan Qiankun’s opponent was like a surging violent river, whereas Zhan Qiankun’s

oppressive might was merely that of a water droplet.

“Wuuwaa~~~”

Thus, after a miserable shriek, Zhan Qiankun was pressed into the ground from mid-air by his opponent’s oppressive might.

“Boom~~~”

A large pile of dust began to blow through the surroundings as rock fragments flew all over. The powerful strength of his opponent’s oppressive might had directly crushed Zhan Qiankun deep underground. It was an appalling scene of devastation.

“Rank seven Half Martial Emperor?”

“He’s actually such a grand character. Exactly who is he?”

At this moment, everyone was shocked beyond belief. They were all able to sense the powerful strength of that man’s oppressive might. That oppressive might was that of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, the master of that oppressive might was that man wearing the conical bamboo hat, the man that was standing in front of Yan Xie.

Rank seven Half Martial Emperors, regardless of their age, as long as they were less than a hundred years old, they would all be considered to be a grand character in any of the major powers. They were people who would be held in high regard.

Thus, at this moment, all of the people present, regardless of their identity and status, all felt deep veneration for that man wearing the conical bamboo hat in the sky.

This was not only because that man had saved them. Most importantly, it was because of that man’s powerful strength.

“Senior, please spare me. I, Zhan Qiankun, had eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. I mistook senior to be that Chu Feng’s friend and spoke rudely earlier. I know I shall be punished. However, I beg senior to take my master into consideration and spare this

junior's life.”

At this moment, Zhan Qiankun was panicking. The arrogance he had been displaying earlier was completely gone. All that remained on him was enormous fear.

The confrontation of their oppressive might earlier had allowed him to clearly recognize how powerful his opponent was. That man with the conical bamboo hat was simply someone that he could not contend against. Before someone like that, the only thing he could do was beg for forgiveness.

“Heh... senior?” However, Chu Feng laughed lightly at Zhan Qiankun's begging. Then, he said, “You should carefully see for yourself exactly who I am first.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he slowly removed the conical bamboo hat and revealed his true appearance.

“Heavens, it's him?!!!!”

At this moment, everyone present was stunned.

Chapter 1767 – Killing Zhan Qiankun

“Chu Feng, it’s actually Chu Feng?”

It was only after a long while that the crowd managed to react. However, they were still unable to accept this.

The Chu Feng that they were skeptical and doubtful of was actually even more powerful than he was rumored to be?

Didn’t they say that Chu Feng was only a rank four Half Martial Emperor? Didn’t they say that Chu Feng only managed to barely defeat Ximen Feixue? In that case, what was going on with this rank seven Half Martial Emperor’s oppressive might?

However, none of those mattered anymore. While the rumors might be false, the aura of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor that Chu Feng was emitting was definitely real.

Chu Feng was even stronger than he was rumored to be. He was actually a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. This was something that the crowd found extremely difficult to accept. And yet, they still had to accept it.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was standing in the sky just like that. Not only that, he had defeated Zhan Qiankun who wanted to kill them with only his oppressive might, saving their lives.

“Chu, Chu, Chu, Chu Feng, Chu Feng is actually Chu Feng?” At this moment, Little Radish was so shocked that his expression became distorted, and he started to stutter as he spoke.

“Chu Feng, he’s actually not someone with the same name, but actually Chu Feng?!!!” Big Radish was also extremely shocked.

As for Chili Pepper, she did not say anything. However, her hands were tightly wrapped around her chest, and her mouth was slightly open. She was gasping for breath. It was as if she had received an enormous shock. To be exact, she was so shocked that

she was having a heart attack.

“Chu Feng, you... you’re Chu Feng?!” As for the person with the most marvelous expression, it would be none other than Zhan Qiankun.

Different from Jin Wei’e and the others, he seemed to have seen Chu Feng’s wanted poster before. Thus, he knew Chu Feng’s appearance. After Chu Feng removed his conical bamboo hat, he recognized him immediately.

However, that Chu Feng he looked down on, why would he be this powerful? He was so powerful that all Zhan Qiankun could do was beg for forgiveness.

“Thump...”

“Thump...”

“Thump...”

“Thump...”

.....

At this moment, standing in midair, Chu Feng began to walk toward Zhan Qiankun slowly. While Chu Feng’s footsteps did not give off any sound, they were like sudden thunderclaps in Zhan Qiankun’s heart. Hearing those thunderclaps, Zhan Qiankun became extremely terrified.

Finally, Chu Feng arrived before Zhan Qiankun. He was grabbing the Black Flame Whip that Zhan Qiankun had previously held in his hand, but had lost hold of.

“Ahh~~~”

“Puutt~~~”

Right after the Black Flame Whip entered Chu Feng’s hand, Zhan Qiankun’s expression immediately changed. Then, his mouth opened wide, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out of it.

At the same time, heaven and earth darkened. Violent wind began to rise. All of the martial power in this region started to surge. Then, that martial power all gathered into the Black Flame Whip and began to merge with Chu Feng.

“Heavens, that Chu Feng is actually this powerful?!” Seeing this scene, the crowd opened their mouths wide in shock.

The reason for that was because they were seeing with their own eyes that Chu Feng had severed the relationship that Incomplete Imperial Armament had had with Zhan Qiankun, and made that Incomplete Imperial Armament that used to be Zhan Qiankun’s enter absolute submission to him.

It did not only recognize Chu Feng as its master, it had even entered absolute submission.

At this moment, when the crowd thought of the rumors before, they began to believe them. Chu Feng had really subdued that legendary Evil God Sword. The reason for that was because Chu Feng possessed the ability to do so.

“It would seem that this bit of power is too lacking for me now,” Chu Feng sighed. Back then, he had been able to increase his cultivation by one entire level just by making a Royal Armament enter absolute submission.

Yet now, even after an Incomplete Imperial Armament had entered absolute submission to him, his cultivation was not affected in the slightest. It was not that the Incomplete Imperial Armament that had entered absolute submission toward him did not bestow Chu Feng power. Rather, the power that Chu Feng currently needed was simply too much. Although what had been bestowed by the Incomplete Imperial Armament was not insignificant, it was nowhere near enough.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Feng lashed the Black Flame Whip in his hand and

pointed it forward. The whip acted like a spear, becoming perfectly straight as it was aimed at Zhan Qiankun, who was still buried deep underground.

“I’ll give you an opportunity. As long as you kneel and beg for forgiveness, I’ll spare your life.”

Zhan Qiankun’s eyes were wide open. In disbelief, he asked, “Are you serious?”

“Serious,” Chu Feng said.

“Thump~~~”

Hearing those words, Zhan Qiankun immediately jumped out of the crater in the ground and then, without hesitation, knelt onto the ground the moment he landed. Not only had he knelt to Chu Feng, he was also kowtowing, admitting his mistake and begging for forgiveness from Chu Feng nonstop.

While Zhan Qiankun was begging to Chu Feng, he was actually smiling coldly in his heart. He thought to himself, “For a nobleman to take revenge, ten years is not too long. While one’s face is important, when placed against one’s life, it is not worth anything.”

“Today, I, Zhan Qiankun, kneel to you, Chu Feng. In the future, I will definitely return this humiliation ten-fold. Not only will you, Chu Feng, die, but all of your relatives, your friends and anyone related to you will also die.”

Thinking these things, Zhan Qiankun turned his gaze that concealed murderous intentions toward Chu Feng, Yan Xie and even Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

Even though Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish did not appear to be extremely close with Chu Feng, Zhan Qiankun was a very observant individual. Thus, he was certain that they possessed relationships with Chu Feng. He had already placed Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish on his list of people he must

kill.

“Puu~~~”

“Wuuwaaa~~~”

However, right at this moment, Zhan Qiankun suddenly felt an incomparably sharp pain in his dantian. He lowered his head to look at his abdomen, and discovered that Chu Feng had used the Black Flames Whip to pierce through his dantian.

Even though only a small bit of his dantian had been pierced through, blood was still flowing from his dantian area. Furthermore, the cultivation that he had painstakingly obtained over the years was also rapidly flowing out from him.

“Chu Feng, you... you’re unfaithful to your promises,” Zhan Qiankun was extremely shocked. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Zhan Qiankun, it seems like even though you’re someone who has done all sorts of malicious deeds, you are still extremely stupid. You actually didn’t even expect that even if you were to kneel and beg for forgiveness, I would still absolutely not let you live.”

Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. The gaze with which he looked to Zhan Qiankun was filled with contempt and ridicule. To Chu Feng, Zhan Qiankun was nothing more than a clown.

“You...” Even though Zhan Qiankun was extremely enraged, he was powerless to speak back to Chu Feng. The reason for that was because while what Chu Feng had said was rather shameless, those were the exact same words he had used to insult Yan Xie earlier.

Merely, being insulted by those words, Zhan Qiankun felt extremely unwell. He was being crushed by an enormous sense of humiliation.

In this battle, he had not only lost to Chu Feng in terms of martial cultivation, he had also lost to him in terms of intelligence.

“Chu Feng, if you are to kill me, my master will definitely not let you live!”

“If his distinguished self were to show himself, even the management elders from the Three Palaces would have to fear him,” Zhan Qiankun said with an expression of anger.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng asked.

“You don’t have to believe me. However, you’ll know in the future that what you’ve done here today will bring about your destruction,” Zhan Qiankun said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“You spoke those words as if you would let me get away should I spare your life.”

“However, do you really think that I will be as stupid as you are? Do you really think that I’m so stupid that I will believe that you will let me get away should I spare your life today?” Chu Feng asked with his eyes narrowed into a smile.

“Chu Feng, I, Zhan Qiankun, swear upon the heavens. As long as you spare me, I will forget all that happened here today. Not only that, I will also befriend you,” Zhan Qiankun raised his hand and vowed.

“Did you really think that I would trust an untrustworthy vile character like yourself?” Chu Feng’s smile grew even deeper. Suddenly, the Black Flame Whip in his hand thrust forward. “Puu,” it pierced directly into Zhan Qiankun’s dantian.

“Chu Feng, my master will definitely not let you get away with this. You will be met with a violent death! Not only you, all those beside you shall be killed!” Seeing that his dantian was pierced through, Zhan Qiankun knew that he would be dead soon. Thus, he no longer bothered to pretend, and instead revealed his true appearance and began to curse out at Chu Feng.

“I know that your master is extremely strong. The head of the Five Great Evildoers would naturally not be someone ordinary.

However, what about it?”

“No matter how strong your master might be now, it does not mean that he will still be strong in the future. One day, that master of yours who has caused countless people to fear him will instead fear me, Chu Feng.”

“Unfortunately for you, you will not be able to see that day,” Chu Feng sneered.

“Chu Feng, don’t do it, we can still talk through this...” Even though Zhan Qiankun knew that Chu Feng was going to kill him, he still didn’t want to die.

“Boom~~~~”

However, before Zhan Qiankun could finish his words, his body exploded.

Other than the Cosmos Sack on his waist, which entered Chu Feng’s hand, not a single hair of Zhan Qiankun’s remained. Zhan Qiankun had exploded into pieces. He was completely dead.

Chapter 1768 – Loyal To One's Friends

At this moment, quietness filled the region. At the moment when the crowd saw with their own eyes that Chu Feng had killed Zhan Qiankun, they all became speechless.

Even though Zhan Qiankun was someone who deserved to die, how many people would actually dare to kill him?

No matter how much others wanted to kill Zhan Qiankun, they only wanted to do it. However, Chu Feng had actually accomplished it. Furthermore, he had killed Zhan Qiankun without any hesitation at all.

“Earlier, there seemed to be a lot of people who wished to kill me. Now that I, Chu Feng, am here, those who wished to attack me do not have to hide anymore. Come, go ahead, attack me,” Chu Feng spread open his arms and ran his gaze over the people below. He had the appearance of telling them to come and attack him.

At this moment, the crowd all lowered their heads in silence. Even those people who had not thought of killing Chu Feng did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face.

While Chu Feng's gaze was emitting a gentle smile, the chilliness contained within that smile was capable of piercing through their souls.

They were afraid that Chu Feng might misunderstand them. They feared that Chu Feng would think that they had the intention to kill him. To put it simply, they feared that Chu Feng would kill them.

.....

All of a sudden, this place that was already silent became eerily quiet. Other than the sound of wind blowing on the grass, only the sounds of heartbeats could be heard.

“If you all do not dare to do anything, then do not speak ill of

others behind their backs. You will only ruin your own reputation by doing so,” Chu Feng said. His words were filled with mockery.

Hearing those words, the hearts of the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace tightened, and their bodies trembled. Chu Feng’s words were aimed at them.

In fact, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace had really planned to take care of Chu Feng. However, that was before. Upon seeing Chu Feng for themselves, they had already given up on that thought completely.

Naturally, there were a lot of people in the Heavenly Law Palace capable of taking care of Chu Feng. However, at the very least, those who were present were not qualified to do so.

“You, elder from the Heavenly Law Palace, say, am I correct or not?” Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly looked to that elder from the Heavenly Law Palace.

Faced with Chu Feng’s question, that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder immediately started to frown. He didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

“What little friend Chu Feng said is extremely correct, extremely correct,” Feeling helpless, that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder could only smile uncomfortably.

Not only did he have to smile, he also had to clasp his fist and bow toward Chu Feng very respectfully. He was secretly begging Chu Feng for forgiveness.

The reason why he was acting this way was because he was afraid. He was afraid of Chu Feng. As for why he was afraid, it was because Chu Feng could easily kill him.

Furthermore, he knew that not only did Chu Feng possess the strength to kill him, he also possessed the courage to act upon it.

Faced with such a Chu Feng, he had no choice but to be afraid.

.....

Seeing this scene, the crowd all sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

With a single sentence, that Chu Feng had forced that Heavenly Law Palace's elder into such a state. This sort of situation could be described with a single word — tyrannical.

“Heh...” Seeing that Heavenly Law Palace's elder acting this petty and low, Chu Feng laughed disdainfully. Then, his body shifted and he arrived before Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e.

“Chu Feng, please don't misunderstand. We were truly ignorant and inexperienced. We had never heard of your distinguished name. If we had known that you were this powerful, even if we were given ten lives, we would not dare to speak ill of you,” Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e who were all seriously injured began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness repeatedly.

“While it is fine for you all to insult me, I will not tolerate insults toward my friends,” As Chu Feng said those words, he shot forth three palm strikes in succession. “Bang, bang, bang.” Three explosions were heard, and Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e all died at Chu Feng's hands.

Seeing this scene, the crowd gasped in admiration once again. Not only was Chu Feng very powerful, he was also an extremely decisive killer. Furthermore, he was very loyal to his friends. Someone like Chu Feng was extremely rare to come by.

While the people from the Heavenly Law Palace had insulted him, Chu Feng did not kill them. This meant that Chu Feng did not mind others insulting him much.

However, Chu Feng had directly killed Zhan Qiankun, Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and Tong Wei'e. As for the reason why he had done so, it was because they insulted his friends.

“Brother Yan Xie, never would I have thought that we'd see each other again so soon,” After taking care of Jin Wei'e, Yin Wei'e and

Tong Wei'e, Chu Feng arrived before Yan Xie.

"I journeyed far and long to get here for the sake of battling you. However, it would seem... that I have come for nothing," Yan Xie shook his head while smiling wryly.

After Yan Xie was defeated by Chu Feng, he and Chu Feng had agreed to fight one another again in the future. For the sake of fighting Chu Feng again, Yan Xie had used the Yan Clan's precious cultivation treasures and cultivation resources, and bore the danger of becoming possessed by the devil to painstakingly train for an entire year. During this period of time, his cultivation had increased by a total of four levels. Originally, he had thought that even if he could not defeat Chu Feng, he would be able to fight against Chu Feng.

However, never had he expected that Chu Feng would have already become a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. There was already no need for him to fight his promised battle with Chu Feng.

"Isn't it also fine to just see me again?" Chu Feng said with a smile. He was truly very joyous to encounter Yan Xie again here.

"Naturally. However... if I can see you defeat everyone and obtain the title of the 'Strongest of the Younger Generation,' it would be even better," Yan Xie smiled a rare smile.

"Never would I have expected that even you would learn to joke around," Chu Feng said.

"I'm not joking. Instead, I feel that only you in the current Holy Land of Martialism is fitting of that title," Although Yan Xie had a smile on his face the entire time, his gaze was extremely serious.

"Come, let me introduce you to my three newly-acquainted friends," Chu Feng brought Yan Xie with him to Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

"This is Yan Xie, the successor of the Flame Emperor. I presume

there is no need for me to introduce him anymore,” Chu Feng said to Chili Pepper and the others.

Then, he looked to Yan Xie and pointed at Big Radish and Little Radish, “They are Big Radish and Little Radish. They’re blood brothers.”

Then, Chu Feng pointed to Chili Pepper, “As for this person here, she’s Chili Pepper.”

“I have already experienced Miss Chili Pepper’s abilities. She is extremely brave,” Yan Xie said.

At this moment, Chili Pepper’s face grew red. She lowered her head and grew silent. She was unable to even say anything.

“Yoh, never would I have thought that even Chili Pepper could become embarrassed. Brother Yan Xie, for you to be able to make this girl embarrassed, you’re truly amazing,” Chu Feng teased.

“Chu Feng, she’s not embarrassed because of Yan Xie. Rather, it’s because of you,” Big Radish said with a laugh.

“Big Radish, do you have a deathwish?” Chili Pepper ruthlessly kicked Big Radish. Then, she ran into the spirit formation building she had set up.

Although Chili Pepper had run into the spirit formation building, Chu Feng discovered that Chili Pepper had already removed the spirit formations capable of isolating sight and sound from the outside. Thus, he was able to see that she was stealthily gazing at him while hiding in the building. Furthermore, she had a very satisfied smile on her face.

“Haha, big brother Chu Feng, never would I have expected you to really be Chu Feng. I truly feel extremely lucky to be able to get to know you,” Little Radish said extremely excitedly.

“To become acquainted with me might not necessarily be a good thing for you all,” Chu Feng said those words with a joking tone. However, he was really a bit worried. Naturally, what he was

worried about was the Four Great Imperial Clans.

The Four Great Imperial Clans were frantically trying to eliminate Chu Feng. Likely, they would use any means at their disposal in order to capture him.

Chu Feng's friends would also become their targets. This was the reason why the Cyanwood Mountain had had to sever their relationship with him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you do not have to be worried about them. The disciples of our Underworld Palace are not people that just anyone can touch.”

“I dare guarantee to you here that our Underworld Palace will ensure their safety,” Right at this moment, that Underworld Palace's elder who lead the people from the Underworld Palace walked over with a smile across his face.

Chapter 1769 – Grand Benefactor

“This disciple pays his respects to Elder Chang and all the other elders,” Immediately, Big Radish and Little Radish hurriedly greeted them respectfully. As disciples of the Underworld Palace, the two of them appeared to be extremely reserved before those people.

Especially Little Radish. While he was not scared upon seeing Chu Feng, when he saw these elders, he began to tremble with fear.

“There’s no need to be overly courteous,” The leading elder waved his hand. Then, with a beaming smile, he looked to Chu Feng, clasped his fist and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, I am Chang Ping. It is my pleasure to meet little friend Chu Feng.”

“Senior Chang Ping is being too courteous. It is Chu Feng’s fortune to be able to meet all you seniors,” Chu Feng responded courteously. Chu Feng had a pretty good impression of this Underworld Palace’s elder. Although he was someone from the Underworld Palace, his actions earlier had been very righteous.

“Senior Chang, I believe you should know who I am worried about. Although they are inferior to your Underworld Palace, they still possess power that cannot be looked down upon in the Holy Land of Martialism. Are you certain that you’ll be able to protect them?” Chu Feng pointed at Big Radish and Little Radish.

Elder Chang patted his chest as he guaranteed, “Regarding that, little friend Chu Feng can rest assured. If our Underworld Palace lacked even that bit of ability, our reputation would be utterly undeserved.”

“Although the three of them are only ordinary disciples of our Underworld Palace, we will still absolutely not allow outsiders to bully and humiliate them.”

“This time around, a lot of experts from our Underworld Palace have arrived. Merely, they are all located outside of the fort.”

“While we do not dare to say that we are unparalleled within the fort, if we are to leave the fort, there will definitely not be anyone who dares to touch a single person from our Underworld Palace.”

“The reputation of the Underworld Palace is truly well-deserved,” Upon hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled a relieved smile. The capabilities of the Underworld Palace were extremely grand. Thus, Chu Feng naturally believed that the Underworld Palace possessed the ability to protect Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

Merely, having the ability did not necessarily mean that they would definitely protect them. After all, this elder had also said that Chili Pepper and the others were only ordinary disciples.

However, regardless of what status and position this elder held in the Underworld Palace, since he dared to publicly make a guarantee to Chu Feng like he had, and speak those words while representing the Underworld Palace, the Underworld Palace would definitely not allow Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish to be touched by the Four Great Imperial Clans. Else, the ones who would be humiliated would be the Underworld Palace.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we must still thank you for helping us today. Else, I’m afraid that we would all have died at the hands of that Zhan Qiankun today.”

“Senior Chang is flattering me. What happened today was not that serious,” Chu Feng said modestly.

“My, I wasn’t being courteous. Rather, it is that serious. Little friend Chu Feng, you do not have to continue being so modest. Today, all of us who are able to live all owe you a favor.”

“The grace you’ve shown us is not something that can be thanked with words. Thus, I will not bother with saying too many decorous

words. To express my thanks, I wish to offer a cup of wine to little friend Chu Feng,” Elder Chang waved his hand and invited Chu Feng with a smile.

“Senior, Chu Feng appreciates your kind intentions.”

“Merely, I have not seen my brother Yan Xie for a long time. To see him again here, I have a lot of things I wish to talk with him about. As time is very urgent, I’m afraid that I will have to decline the invitation to drink with senior Chang today. If the opportunity presents itself another day, Chu Feng will definitely drink with senior until we’re both drunk,” Chu Feng refused that Underworld Palace’s elder’s invitation with a smile.

Hearing those words, Big Radish and Little Radish’s expressions changed immediately. The two of them were extremely shocked.

Although this Elder Chang was only a low level elder in the Underworld Palace, it remained that this Elder Chang was an elder of the Underworld Palace. To disciples like them, Elder Chang was someone that they could not afford to offend.

Furthermore, it just so happened that this Elder Chang was in charge of Big Radish and the others. Thus, they knew very well what sort of temperament this Elder Chang had. His temperament was extremely violent. Practically none of this group of disciples dared to offend him.

Yet, Chu Feng had actually refused Elder Chang’s invitation in front of all these people. The way they saw it, Chu Feng would have most definitely offended Elder Chang.

“Haha, very well. If the chance presents itself again in the future, we shall gather to drink. Today, I will not disturb little friend Chu Feng.”

However, Elder Chang was actually not at all angered by Chu Feng’s refusal. Instead, he laughed and then left.

To see Elder Chang, who was generally extremely arrogant,

acting this peaceful before Chu Feng, Big Radish and Little Radish finally realized the principle of might makes right.

It was not that Elder Chang was a difficult person to get along with. Rather, it was that they had yet to reach a level where they could get along with Elder Chang.

As long as one possessed sufficient strength, this Elder Chang who acted like a fiend would not only be amiable, he would also be very sensible.

“This place is not suitable to talk. Brother Yan Xie, let’s go and talk in the house,” As Chu Feng spoke, he brought Yan Xie and walked into world spirit building that Chili Pepper had set up.

Seeing that Chu Feng and Yan Xie were walking in, the shy Chili Pepper immediately hid herself in her own room.

Seeing Chili Pepper acting like this, Chu Feng smiled slightly. This girl was much more interesting than he had imagined her to be.

Earlier, she had been extremely fiery, and appeared to be completely fearless. Even when facing death, she had no fear. Yet, at this moment, she was actually acting this timidly.

“Big brother Chu Feng, I do not understand why you refused Elder Chang’s invitation,” After entering the room, Little Radish asked with an expression of confusion.

“If I were to go with him, he would definitely invite you and your brother. With how reserved the two of you are before that Elder Chang, even if you were to join us after being invited, you would not be able to enjoy the event. Thus, it is better that I refuse the invitation,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, both Big Radish and Little Radish were stunned. They had truly never expected that Chu Feng had refused Elder Chang because of them. All of a sudden, a burst of warmth surged through their bodies. The two of them also began to reveal

smiles of satisfaction on their faces.

“Here, take these. They’re my gifts,” Chu Feng took out some cultivation resources and many rare treasures from his Cosmos Sack and handed them to Big Radish and Little Radish.

Throughout his journey, Chu Feng had obtained a lot of treasures. Merely, a lot of those treasures were useless to him. However, those treasures would be extremely useful to Big Radish and Little Radish.

In fact, Chu Feng had obtained quite a lot of treasures from Zhan Qiankun, Jin Wei’e, Yin Wei’e and Tong Wei’e’s Cosmos Sacks. In fact, there were even four Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Although, other than Zhan Qiankun’s Black Flame Whip, the other three were all copies, it still remained that they were Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

Merely, those things were, after all, the possessions of the Evildoers’ disciples. While it would be fine for Chu Feng to keep them himself, he could not give them to others. If he did, they would likely bring about disaster to Big Radish and Little Radish.

After all, the notorious Great Evildoers were different from the Four Great Imperial Clans. No matter what, the Four Great Imperial Clans had to consider their clans when they did things.

However, the Great Evildoers were mavericks who did not have to worry about anything. When they did things, they would act extremely crazily.

In fact, Chu Feng’s killing of the Four Great Evildoers’ personal disciples had left behind an enormous danger. If the Four Great Evildoers were to find out about this, they would definitely not let Chu Feng get away with it.

Merely, the situation today had been extremely critical. Chu Feng had had no choice but to kill them. The reason for that was because even if he were to release them, they would not let him get

away.

Furthermore, they had the intention to kill Chu Feng's friends. As such, Chu Feng would absolutely not put up with it. He definitely had to kill them.

"No, these are too precious. We cannot accept them," However, after seeing the gifts Chu Feng had presented to them, Big Radish and Little Radish immediately refused them.

"If you two consider me to be your friend, then accept them. Otherwise, do not say that you know me from today on," Chu Feng forced the treasures into Big Radish and Little Radish's bosoms.

"This..." Big Radish and Little Radish were at a loss as for what to do.

"Just accept them. Those things are useless to Chu Feng. However, they're extremely useful for you two. This is Chu Feng's kind intentions. The two of you should stop refusing them," Yan Xie urged.

"Hehe, in that case, thank you, brother Chu Feng."

"Hehe, thank you, big brother Chu Feng."

After being urged by Yan Xie, the two of them finally accepted Chu Feng's gifts. Then, they cautiously put those treasures away. After they put the treasures away, the two of them were grinning from ear to ear, unable to conceal their happiness.

They had refused earlier only because they found it embarrassing to accept them. The reason for that was because they knew that those items Chu Feng was giving them were truly precious. They were so unimaginably precious to them. Even if they were to put forth all of their family fortune, they would not be able to afford treasures like those.

However, the two of them actually wanted those treasures extremely badly. After all, it was as Yan Xie said, those treasures were extremely useful to them.

If it wasn't for Chu Feng giving those treasures to them, they might not be able to find treasures like those in their entire lives.

Thus, the two of them were extremely grateful and thankful toward Chu Feng. At the same time, they felt that they were extremely fortunate. Chu Feng was simply a grand person, their grand benefactor.

Chapter 1770 – Scouting For Intelligence

“These are for Chili Pepper. Big Radish, accept them for her,” Then, Chu Feng took out some more treasures and handed them to Big Radish.

Compared to the treasures he had given to Big Radish and Little Radish, these treasures were even more numerous. It was not that Chu Feng was biased. Rather, when he had obtained the treasures from others, a portion of the treasures he obtained were made for women.

It was meaningless for Chu Feng to keep these things to himself. Thus, he had decided to give a portion of them to Chili Pepper.

“Hehe, Brother Chu Feng, regarding this... it’s better that you do it yourself,” Big Radish said with a mischievous laugh.

“That’s right. One should personally give gifts to others. Could it be that even someone like you would be embarrassed?” Yan Xie said.

“I, Chu Feng, do not know the meaning of being embarrassed. Merely, I fear that girl Chili Pepper would be embarrassed,” Chu Feng said with a chuckle.

“Who said I’m embarrassed?” Right at this moment, Chili Pepper suddenly pushed the door to her room open and came out. Even though her tone was very unyielding, her face was still extremely red. Furthermore, after her gaze landed on Chu Feng, she immediately turned her gaze elsewhere.

At this moment, Yan Xie stood up and coughed. Then, he glanced at Big Radish and Little Radish and walked out.

As for Big Radish and Little Radish, the two of them were very, very tactful. Immediately, they realized Yan Xie’s intentions. While laughing mischievously, the two of them also walked out of the world spirit building. At this time, only Chu Feng and Chili

Pepper remained inside.

Seeing that Big Radish and the others had left, Chili Pepper became extremely embarrassed. However, since it was unsuitable for her to hide herself again, and since she did not dare to look at Chu Feng, the situation became extremely awkward for her.

“Chili Pepper, why aren’t you looking at me?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“I... I... I...” Chili Pepper didn’t know how to respond. She was grabbing tightly onto her skirt. From this, it could be seen how nervous she was.

Chu Feng sighed. “It would seem that I am too ugly, and have made you afraid to look at me. Since that is the case, it’s better that I wear this again,” As Chu Feng spoke, he placed the conical bamboo hat on his head again.

“Puuu~~~”

Chu Feng’s action caused Chili Pepper to burst into laughter. Then, she said, “That’s not it! It’s just that I find it very embarrassing to face you after finding out your true identity.”

“What’s embarrassing about it?” Chu Feng removed his conical bamboo hat.

This time around, Chili Pepper did not shift her gaze away from Chu Feng. However, her face was still as red as before. In a very ashamed manner, she said, “Before, I told you to change your name. However, I didn’t know that you were actually Chu Feng.”

“Speaking of this matter, why didn’t you tell me that you were Chu Feng? The way things are now, I feel that I have greatly shamed myself,” Chili Pepper said.

“Haha, if I were to tell you that back then, you definitely would not have believed me. In fact, you might even have scolded me,” Chu Feng said.

Chili Pepper grew silent. With her temperament, it was true; she might really have scolded Chu Feng.

“Actually, the situation now is quite good too. It is precisely because of this that I felt that you stood out from the masses and were very adorable,” Chu Feng said.

“You really think that?” Hearing those words, Chili Pepper revealed a joyous expression.

“That’s true, of course. Chili Pepper, we’re already friends. Between friends, there is no such thing as avoiding one another. In the future, if you are to see me again, do not hide anymore,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, I’ll definitely not hide anymore,” Chili Pepper nodded. Then, she blossomed into a very brilliant smile. She discovered that the sensation of chatting with Chu Feng face to face was extremely good.

“These are some gifts that I have prepared for you. Earlier, you suffered in order to defend me,” Chu Feng handed those treasures to Chili Pepper.

Chili Pepper did not try to refuse Chu Feng’s gifts like Big Radish and Little Radish. However, she was also very cautious and careful as she accepted his gifts.

However, Chili Pepper was still different from Big Radish and Little Radish. Big Radish and Little Radish were very cautious and careful because of how precious Chu Feng’s gifts were. As for Chili Pepper, she was cautious and careful because these treasures were gifts from Chu Feng.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Chili Pepper chatted about many things. During their chat, Chili Pepper’s nervousness disappeared. Even though she no longer talked to Chu Feng in as carefree and casual a manner as she did before, she acted a lot more naturally now.

Afterward, Chu Feng called Yan Xie and the others back into the world spirit building. Finally, they were all able to chat with one another normally.

“This Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly, other than Chu Feng, there also seem to be a lot of formidable opponents. While I do not plan to fight with Chu Feng anymore, I still plan to fight against the others.”

“Thus, Brother Radish, as someone from the Underworld Palace, you should know about the people that have been invited, right?”

“By chance, do you know who among them are noteworthy?” Yan Xie asked Big Radish.

“Indeed, there are a lot of powerful characters that have been invited. While I am not familiar with the monstrous beasts that have been invited, I have heard about pretty much of all the humans.”

“I feel that, of the humans invited, the ones that possess the greatest threat to you would be the nine people from the Three Palaces. They are our Underworld Palace’s three Underworld Messengers, the Mortal King Palace’s three Feng Family Siblings, and the Heavenly Law Palace’s three Heavenly Generals. All of them are extremely powerful characters.”

“This is especially true of our Underworld Palace’s three Underworld Messengers: Underworld Messenger Kuang, Underworld Messenger Zhan and Underworld Messenger Gui. The three of them are extremely strong. I have heard that Underworld Messenger Zhan is a Divine Body, and Underworld Messenger Gui practices a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. Furthermore, I’ve also heard that the two of them had broken through to rank six Half Martial Emperor not long ago.”¹

“The most powerful among them would be Underworld Messenger Kuang. Not only does he practice a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, he is also a Divine Body. Furthermore, he

has successfully grasped both of them. Without mentioning his heaven-defying battle power, his cultivation is above that of Underworld Messenger Gui and Underworld Messenger Zhan.”

“Underworld Messenger Kuang is not a rank six Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he is a rank seven Half Martial Emperor,” When Big Radish mentioned the three Underworld Messengers, he had a very respectful appearance. Although they were all disciples of the Underworld Palace, those three Underworld Messengers possessed an otherworldly status in the Underworld Palace; they were the idols of countless disciples.

“All of their cultivations are actually above my own. It would appear that the Overlord Domain is truly extraordinary,” Yan Xie said. Then, he asked, “Then, what about the six from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace?”

“I am not very familiar with the Heavenly Law Palace’s three Heavenly Generals. However, I’ve heard of them before. The three of them are the three strongest Heavenly Generals of the Heavenly Law Palace’s Ten Heavenly Generals.”

“Just think about it. The Heavenly Law Palace possess Ten Heavenly Generals who all have extraordinary strength. However, only the strongest three Heavenly Generals received the invitation. From this, it is enough to indicate how strong they are.”

“As for the Mortal King Palace’s three Feng Family Siblings, they are also the three strongest disciples from the Mortal King Palace. Their faces have already spread through the Overlord Domain. Not to mention those from the same generation, they have even defeated countless experts from the older generation.”

“However, the three of them have been in closed-door training for two years now. I am also not sure what their current cultivations are.”

“However, back then, they were always the formidable opponents of our Underworld Palace’s three Underworld

Messengers. Likely, they will not be weaker than our Underworld Palace's three Underworld Messengers now," Big Radish said.

"Sure enough, this is a place with experts as numerous as the clouds. However, it is precisely because of this that it's interesting," At this moment, Yan Xie was not discouraged. Instead, an expression of anticipation appeared on his face.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, "Brother Yan Xie, you're able to reach a breakthrough, right?"

"How did you know?" Hearing those words, Yan Xie was immediately startled. He revealed an expression of shock.

"Don't forget that I'm a world spiritist," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

"Heh, I nearly forgot that your world spirit techniques are extremely powerful," Yan Xie came to a sudden realization. Then, he said with a smile, "Indeed, I am about to reach a breakthrough. However, there's still a bit to go. If I am to train by myself, it'll take me at least three months."

"However, if I am to use this, I reckon that I will be able to successfully break through to rank six Half Martial Emperor before this competition officially begins," As Yan Xie spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

[Kuang](#) → [Mad. Zhan](#) → [Battle. Gui](#) → [Ghost](#) ←

Chapter 1771 – Bring You All In

This item was fiery red in color, and looked like a fruit. However, it was most definitely no ordinary fruit. Not only did this fruit burn with flames, it was also emitting a special sort of energy that pounded against the people present.

Chu Feng had managed to tell that this was a type of cultivation resource. However, it was not a simple cultivation resource. Instead, it was a special sort of cultivation resource made especially for the people of the Yan Clan.

“Brother Yan Xie, when you said the official start, did you mean the competition between the final twenty individuals and Emperor Gong’s successor?” Big Radish asked.

“Precisely,” Yan Xie nodded.

“But, even if it’s the final match, if we are to judge the time starting from now, there wouldn’t be much time either. Will you really be able to reach a breakthrough with only that item?” Big Radish asked with an expression of shock. Little Radish also revealed the same expression. Even Chili Pepper’s eyes were flickering slightly. She too was displaying an expression of disbelief.

They did not possess the sensitivity that Chu Feng did. Thus, although they could tell that the fiery fruit in Yan Xie’s hand was very powerful, they could not sense the special energy contained within it.

Furthermore, to people like them, reaching a breakthrough was an extremely difficult thing to accomplish. Not only did they have to gather sufficient martial power in their dantians, they also had to use their hearts and minds to communicate with heaven and earth. Through the combination of the knowledge of their predecessors and their own special comprehension ability, they would try to comprehend that turning point that allowed them to

reach a breakthrough. Only by reaching a comprehension of a completely new sort of power could they attempt to break through.

However, even if they managed to comprehend the turning point, comprehend the new power and connect with the new martial power, it was still not certain that they would reach a breakthrough.

Thus, even if they possessed the ability to reach a breakthrough, to successfully reach a breakthrough would require a lot of time. Generally, the best method to attain a breakthrough would be through closed-door training.

However, closed-door training was extremely time-consuming. For some people, after they reached the Martial King realm, they would not be able to attain any progress in their entire lives. Even after spending their entire lives meticulously trying to reach a breakthrough, they would still not be able to do so. From this, it could be seen how difficult the path of martial cultivation was.

When even the Martial King realm was like this, there was less of a need to mention how difficult the Half Martial Emperor realm would be. Thus... they did not believe that Yan Xie would be able to reach a breakthrough before the competition began.

“This is a cultivation treasure left behind by the Lord Flame Emperor for our Yan Clan. When the people of our Yan Clan use it to train, we will be able to obtain boundless benefits,” Yan Xie explained.

“There’s actually such a wondrous item? The Flame Emperor was truly amazing,” Upon hearing those words, Big Radish, Small Radish and Chili Pepper all revealed expressions of envy and admiration on their faces.

At this moment, Chu Feng nodded slightly. What Yan Xie had said was not false. Indeed, this was a cultivation treasure. However, this treasure was not something that only the people

from the Yan Clan could use. Anyone who trained in the Yan Clan's martial techniques would be able to use it.

"Merely, this is the last one," As Yan Xie looked to the fiery red fruit, he had an expression of reluctance on his face.

"I can help you with your cultivation. There's no need to wait that many days. You should be able to reach a breakthrough by tomorrow morning," Chu Feng said.

"You're kidding!" Hearing those words, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all opened their mouths wide in shock.

One could help another with their cultivation?

"Chu Feng, you're serious?" At this moment, even Yan Xie found this to be unbelievable.

"I can give it a try," Chu Feng said with a smile. Even he did not dare to guarantee this sort of thing.

"In that case, let's try it out right away," Yan Xie said impatiently.

"Here? You two are planning to enter closed-door training here?" Hearing those words, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were extremely shocked.

"Sure," As for Chu Feng, he nodded while smiling lightly.

Afterward, Chu Feng and Yan Xie entered a room together. As for Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish, they were extremely nervous as they attentively watched the situation outside, keeping an eye on what the people outside were doing. They deeply feared that someone would come and destroy this world spirit building.

What people who entered closed-door training feared the most was being disturbed. This was especially true during the crucial moment when they were attacking the barrier to reach a breakthrough. If one were to be disturbed during that time, one could suffer consequences. For light consequences, one might fail

to reach a breakthrough. For serious consequences, one's dantian may be damaged, and they would not be able to reach a breakthrough again in their entire lives.

Yet, Chu Feng had said that he wanted to help Yan Xie reach a breakthrough in a short period of a couple hours?

Was this truly possible?

Would he be able to succeed?

Slowly, time began to pass. A glimmer had appeared on the eastern horizon. Although it had only been a short few hours, to Chili Pepper and the others, it was as if several years had passed. The three of them were extremely nervous.

Not only were they worried that Yan Xie might fail to reach a breakthrough, they were also worried that Yan Xie and Chu Feng would be adversely affected because of the failure.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

Finally, they heard footsteps. Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish immediately stood up and turned their deeply concerned gazes toward the direction where the footsteps were coming from.

At this moment, Chu Feng and Yan Xie were walking out of the room together. Compared to when they had gone into the room, there was no change to Chu Feng at all.

However, when they turned their gazes to Yan Xie, they discovered that he had a rosy complexion, and his aura was already no longer that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become a rank six Half Martial Emperor.

“You two actually succeeded?!!!” Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all had their mouths wide open in shock. Contained within their eyes were expressions of being pleasantly surprised.

Whilst they had considered the possibility of success, they had not expected them to succeed this smoothly.

“I’ve always known that Brother Chu Feng was very powerful. However, it is only today that I realized that I have underestimated him the entire time,” Yan Xie smiled in an embarrassed manner. However, on his face was an unconcealable joy.

No matter how he had calculated the possibility of successfully reaching a breakthrough within a certain period of time, they were only calculations. For him to be able to successfully reach a breakthrough now, an enormous weight on his heart had been lifted.

He had finally obtained the qualifications to stand off against his fellow members of the younger generation. Naturally, Yan Xie would be extremely happy.

“Amazing, you two are truly too amazing. Although we’re all part of the younger generation, I have discovered that we, when compared to you two, are simply people from two different worlds. Likely, our concept of martial cultivation is absolutely different too,” Big Radish said with an expression of feeling inferior. In his eyes was a boundless amount of envy and admiration.

“Big brother Chu Feng, big brother Yan Xie, that sealed entrance is about to open. The two of you must definitely try your best to obtain a position among the twenty,” Little Radish said as he looked toward the outside.

“Stinky brat, what are you saying? With Brother Chu Feng and Brother Yan Xie’s cultivations, how could they not be able to obtain two of the twenty positions?” Big Radish smacked Little Radish on the head lightly.

Then, he looked to Chu Feng and Yan Xie and said, “Brother Chu Feng, Brother Yan Xie, I wish you two a safe journey. I hope that you will be able to obtain the best performance.”

“Although I am a disciple of the Underworld Palace, I really hope that you two will be able to obtain first place and second place in this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly,” After Big

Radish finished saying those words, he solemnly clasped his fist to Chu Feng and Yan Xie.

“Is there even a need for your hope? Chu Feng is a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. He is able to look down on all those outstanding heros. There is already no need to doubt that he’ll obtain the title of the Strongest Younger Generation,” Chili Pepper curled her lips.

“Right, right right. What you say is correct,” Big Radish and Little Radish did not dare to oppose Chili Pepper.

“Based on what you three said, it seems that you’re not planning to enter?” Chu Feng asked.

“Haha, with our strength, even if we were to enter, it would be a waste. Furthermore, there are layers upon layers of danger in there. We will not take this risk,” Big Radish said.

“That’s true. We only came here to accompany senior sister Chili Pepper to find big brother Chu Feng. Now that we’ve not only seen you, but also became your friends, senior sister Chili Pepper’s cherished desire has already been accomplished, and our cherished desires have also been accomplished,” Little Radish said.

At this moment, Chili Pepper was smiling sweetly. While she didn’t say anything, she had already confirmed what Big Radish and Little Radish said.

“However, to say the truth, if I can enter the center of this fort and watch the battle between the top geniuses of the Holy Land of Martialism, I would have no regrets in my life,” Big Radish gasped.

“That’s true. All the elders say that the geniuses of this battle will all become the most powerful existences in the Holy Land of Martialism in the future,” Little Radish also had an expression of yearning on his face.

After hearing what Big Radish and Little Radish said, Chili Pepper took a glance at Chu Feng and then began to smile as her

imagination began to run freely.

“If you all wish to see the battles, I have a method,” Chu Feng said.

“What method?” Hearing those words, the three of them asked simultaneously.

“I’ll bring you three in,” Chu Feng said.

“What?” Hearing those words, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were all shocked.

Chapter 1772 – Entering

“You said that you’re planning to bring the three of us in?” Big Radish and Little Radish asked simultaneously.

It was not that they did not clearly hear what Chu Feng was saying. Rather, they did not dare to believe their ears.

Although they did not know what was inside that gate, they could very well imagine that it was filled with layer upon layer of dangers.

With the strength that Chu Feng and Yan Xie possessed, it would naturally not be difficult for them to pass through those difficulties.

However, if they were to bring three burdens like Chili Pepper and the others with them, they would definitely be creating more troubles for themselves.

After all, passing through the difficult trials within the gate would only be a part of the difficulty. Most importantly, it was a race against time.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. Although Chu Feng didn’t say much, the confidence he displayed in his eyes made it so that Chili Pepper and the others could not find reason to not believe in him.

“However, if we are truly able to reach the inside, we will be included among the twenty individuals. But we simply do not have the strength to compete against those geniuses,” Big Radish was still worried.

“Wouldn’t it be fine if we are to choose to give up on fighting after we enter? I refuse to believe that if we refuse to fight, they will place their blades on our necks and force us to fight,” Chili Pepper said.

“What Chili Pepper said is reasonable. There is no set rule in this place that said that one cannot bring one’s friends in to watch the

show. Thus, I am naturally capable of bringing you all in with me,” Chu Feng said.

“If we are truly able to enter, it would truly be great,” Hearing those words, Big Radish and Little Radish both revealed smiles of incomparable joy and expressions of excitement.

If they were really able to enter, they would have successfully accomplished one of their cherished desires.

After this matter was decided, Chu Feng and the others walked out of the world spirit building. Regardless of where they went, they were the focus of the crowd.

In fact, when Chu Feng walked toward the entrance, the surrounding crowd began to make way for him. Furthermore, they were also nodding at Chu Feng with smiles on their faces.

Due to the fact that the Four Great Imperial Clans were determined to kill Chu Feng, even though many people greatly admired Chu Feng and wished to befriend him, they did not dare to be too close to Chu Feng. However, at the same time, they also did not dare to offend him.

“Buzz~~~~”

Finally, the countdown timer on the entrance stopped. However, the entrance did not open immediately. Instead, an illusory silhouette appeared before it.

It was a middle-aged man. This middle-aged man was as enormous as that entrance gate. As he stood there, he looked like an enormous mountain. It was a very shocking sight.

Although it was only an image, the aura this middle-aged man emitted caused the crowd to become nervous. They began to feel reverence for that middle-aged man from the bottom of their hearts.

That was because that middle-aged man was a Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he was no ordinary Martial Emperor. Instead, he

was a Martial Emperor of a higher rank than the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. Else, it would be impossible for him to possess this sort of air.

When this image of that middle-aged man appeared, the crowd were all able to sense how powerful this man was. Furthermore, many people did not recognize him.

It was like he was an expert that had never appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism before.

Thus, the first reaction that the crowd had was wondering whether or not this man was the creator of this fort, the person standing behind that Emperor Gong's successor?

"Everyone, this gate is about to open. I believe that, without me telling all of you, you all can guess how dangerous the other side of this gate is."

"I wish to remind everyone here that of all the people who enter the fort, only twenty individuals will be able to fight against Emperor Gong's successor. Those twenty individuals will be the first twenty people that reach the designated place."

"After those twenty people have entered, the rest of the people will not be able to enter anymore and must return."

"Thus, everyone, please consider your own strength. If you do not think that you will be able to become one of the twenty individuals, I advise you that it would be better for you to not set foot into the gate behind me."

"The reason for that is because even if you all are able to pass through all of the hurdles, you will still not be able to enter the central region. Furthermore, if you are to encounter hurdles that you cannot overcome, you'll end up losing your life."

"Lastly, the hurdles of this place will surpass your imagination. If anyone wishes to bring other people to overcome the hurdles, you must consider your own strength even more. Otherwise, you'll

only harm others and yourself,” After leaving those words, the middle-aged man smiled a profound smile. In fact, he even deliberately took a glance at Chu Feng. Then, his image began to rapidly disappear.

“Rumble~~~~”

At the same time, the entrance gate that had been shut for a long time began to slowly open while making loud rumbling sounds.

Although the entrance had been opened, no one entered. Instead, everyone turned their gazes onto Chu Feng and Yan Xie.

Evidently, after they heard what that middle-aged man had said, they gave up on trying to enter that place. However, they knew that Chu Feng and Yan Xie would definitely not give up.

Suddenly, Big Radish said, “Brother Chu Feng, I’ve thought about it. I think that it’s better for Little Radish and me to stay. You can just take Chili Pepper with you,”

“I’ll also be staying,” Chili Pepper also said.

Although they were saying those words, Chu Feng was able to tell from their gazes that they deeply regretted not being able to enter.

How could Chu Feng not know that they actually wanted to enter the deepest region of the fort together with him? Merely, after hearing that mysterious middle-aged man’s words, they didn’t wish to become Chu Feng’s burden.

Thus, Chu Feng smiled and asked, “Do you all not trust me?”

“No... it’s just...” Chili Pepper and the others didn’t know how to respond.

“Enough with the justs and buts, just follow me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve. A layer of world spirit power sprinkled down like golden sand. After his world spirit power landed on them, it turned into three defensive barriers that covered Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

These three defensive barriers were extremely close To Chu Feng. Wherever Chu Feng went, they would follow him.

“Woosh~~~”

Before Chili Pepper and the others could react, Chu Feng’s body had turned into a ray of light and charged into that open entrance gate, “Brother Yan Xie, you must catch up.”

“Although you’re a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, you’re bringing three people with you. I will not necessarily lose to you.”

Yan Xie smiled slightly. Then, he took a step forward and turned into a ray of light that followed Chu Feng into the open entrance.

“That Chu Feng actually refused to listen to that expert’s warning and brought three people in with him?”

“Those three people all possess cultivations below Half Martial Emperor. They are most definitely burdens. For Chu Feng to bring them, isn’t he just creating trouble for himself?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered while bringing Chili Pepper and the others with him, many people sucked in a mouthful of cold air and revealed expressions of shock.

“Chu Feng is very powerful. Even if he is to bring three people with him, no one will be faster than him,” However, there were also people that were extremely confident in Chu Feng.

“Humph, that child is too arrogant and conceited,” However, at this moment, that Heavenly Law Palace’s leading elder mocked and ridiculed.

“Did that Chu Feng really think that he was unparalleled under heaven just because he’s a rank seven Half Martial Emperor?”

“Doesn’t he know that there are countless experts among the younger generation who have come here? Many among them are capable of contending against him.”

“Especially our Heavenly Law Palace’s three Heavenly Generals.

Each and every one of them are not inferior to that Chu Feng. Not to mention the strongest Heavenly General, even the second and third strongest Heavenly Generals will become Chu Feng's nightmare."

"He's so arrogant and conceited that he considers everyone to be beneath him. Sooner or later, he will suffer the consequences of his actions," When that Heavenly Law Palace's elder spoke those words, he had an expression of feeling at ease. It was as if he were finally able to release a fart that he hadn't dared to release before.

Evidently, he had been holding those words in his heart for a very long time now.

Chapter 1773 – Target Of Public Criticism

“Elder, what you’ve said is incorrect. How is Chu Feng arrogant and conceited? How does Chu Feng consider everyone else to be beneath him?”

“Although it is the first time that I’ve met Chu Feng, I did not see an arrogant and conceited person who considers everyone else to be beneath him.”

“I presume that it is also the first time that you’ve met Chu Feng. In that case, how do you know that Chu Feng is as much of a degenerate as you’ve described him to be?”

Right after that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder said those words, people began to question him. Furthermore, it was not a small number of people who were questioning his words.

“Humph, that child Chu Feng has hidden himself extremely well. How could his actual character be something that people like you all can see through?”

The Heavenly Law Palace’s elder snorted coldly. The gaze with which he looked to the crowd with was filled with contempt.

As an elder of the Heavenly Law Palace, he looked down on these people present here from the bottom of his heart.

“So that’s the case. However, why didn’t you say those words before Chu Feng’s face?” Someone asked with a loud voice.

“.....” Hearing those words, that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder started to frown, and the corner of his mouth started to twitch. Although he felt extremely angry, he did not know how to respond to that question.

“Heh.....”

Seeing him reacting in this way, many of the people present started to laugh, and reveal gazes of mockery in their eyes.

While the people from the Heavenly Law Palace looked down on them, they too looked down on the people from the Heavenly Law Palace.

Perhaps people would think that the Heavenly Law Palace was a power of righteousness before; that they were one of the best reputed human powers. When they saw the elders and disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace, they would inevitably feel admiration for them.

However, after what had happened earlier, the status of the Heavenly Law Palace had already taken a hundred-and-eighty-degree turn in the hearts of the crowd. The sacred sensation they had held for the Heavenly Law Palace had been greatly devalued.

“The way I see it, you do not dare to say those words before Chu Feng, isn’t that right?” A man said. Then, he burst into a loud laughter.

“Hahahaha...”

At the same time, many of the other people present also burst into loud laughter. This was especially true for the people from the Underworld Palace; their laughter was even louder and more straightforward.

Not only was the crowd laughing, the gazes with which they looked to that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder were also filled with contempt.

The reason was because the crowd all knew why that elder did not dare to say those words in front of Chu Feng. The reason for that was precisely because he was scared of Chu Feng.

However, that was understandable. After all, Chu Feng’s strength was above his own, and he was very decisive when killing people. It was normal for that elder to be afraid of death, and thus not dare to say those words before Chu Feng.

However, the people were deeply disgusted with how he didn’t

dare to say anything when Chu Feng was present, and immediately began to speak ill of him behind his back the moment he left.

If he had spoken ill remarks about Chu Feng before, the crowd would still understand. After all, those who were ignorant could not be blamed. Before Chu Feng had appeared, many people had also suspected Chu Feng's strength.

However, they had all experienced Chu Feng's strength. Furthermore, this elder had been spared by Chu Feng once. Yet, he had actually refused to repent and still spoke ill of Chu Feng behind his back.

This made it so that the crowd had no choice but to feel disgusted with him. After all, he was a grand elder of the Heavenly Law Palace. Yet, the only thing he was capable of doing was talking badly about someone behind their back.

When behind others, he acted as ferocious as a tiger. When before them, he acted as lowly as a dog. Someone like him... was utterly a lowly vile character. Even if he were to be held in contempt by others, it could not be blamed on others.

"All of you, shut your mouths! Since when did this old man become someone that trash like you all can insult?!" Suddenly, that Heavenly Law Palace's elder was enraged.

In an instant, his oppressive might began to surge out. Like an invisible flood, it swept forth toward his surroundings to attack the crowd that was mocking him.

"What? Only you are allowed to talk about others behind their backs, but others cannot point out your wrongdoings?" However, right at this moment, an equally powerful oppressive might swept forth and canceled out that Heavenly Law Palace's elder's oppressive might. It turned out that it was the Underworld Palace's Elder Chang Ping who had acted.

"Underworld Palace, what are you planning to do?!" That

Heavenly Law Palace's elder shifted the target of his attack to Elder Chang Ping.

“Nothing much, I merely wanted to speak a few words.”

“It is not that I am denouncing you. Earlier, when you spoke ill of little friend Chu Feng behind his back, little friend Chu Feng still did not investigate it. His actions were extremely magnanimous.”

“However, now that little friend Chu Feng has left, you actually still continue to act this way. Don't you think this leaves you no face?” Elder Chang Ping asked with a beaming smile.

“You...” Seeing his adversary belittling him in public like this, that Heavenly Law Palace's elder was enormously enraged. Perhaps he might be able to endure insults from others. However, when being insulted by someone from the Underworld Palace, he could not endure it.

“That's right, to be all smiles in front of someone, and then talk badly about them the moment they leave, this is not something that a Heavenly Law Palace's elder should do.”

“You refused to fight against the Evildoers' disciples, and instead insulted Chu Feng, who had killed those Evildoers' disciples and saved our lives. Today, at last, I have a whole new understanding of the Heavenly Law Palace.”

Before that Heavenly Law Palace's elder could refute him, the surrounding crowd all began to echo insults at him.

All of a sudden, the hearts of the crowd were all aligned, and the Heavenly Law Palace became the target of public criticism.

At this moment, that Heavenly Law Palace's elder had an ashen complexion. As for the disciples, their expressions were also extremely ugly. In fact, those without thick skin even lowered their heads in shame.

Being part of the Heavenly Law Palace had always added glory and honor to them. However, at this moment, they actually felt

like they did not dare to continue to carry on the name of the Heavenly Law Palace.

They all knew very well that part of the reason why this was happening was because the leadership of their leading elder was extremely bad. He had done too many dishonorable things that caused them to lose all popularity in this place.

However, most importantly, it was because of Chu Feng. It was Chu Feng who had turned them into the target of public criticism in this place.

However, even with this being the case, the majority of the disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace did not detest Chu Feng. Instead, they were fearful of him.

As a fellow member of the younger generation, the strength that Chu Feng possessed made it impossible for them to not be fearful of him.

In this sort of situation, even though that Heavenly Law Palace's elder felt extremely unwilling, it was too embarrassing for him to continue to stay here. Thus, he ended up gnashing his teeth and leading the people from the Heavenly Law Palace who were still alive to leave their current location and head into the forest to hide from the humiliation.

“Good, leave. You all should’ve scrambled sooner. It’s much quieter now that you all have scrambled. Hahaha...” After the people from the Heavenly Law Palace left, cheers began to rise unceasingly from the area around the entrance.

“Chu Feng is truly amazing,” Seeing the reaction of the crowd, Elder Chang Ping gasped in admiration.

“Elder, what do you mean by that?” Someone asked with a low voice.

“I am not talking nonsense here. Among all the current members from the younger generation, I personally feel that only Chu Feng

possesses the character to become an overlord,” Elder Chang Ping said.

Hearing those words, the several people beside Elder Chang Ping all sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

While Elder Chang Ping could not be considered to be a person with enormous status in the Underworld Palace, it remained that he had lived for close to a hundred years, and had seen many people. He had even seen the ten Underworld Messengers.

However, Elder Chang Ping actually gave such an evaluation of Chu Feng. Even the ten Underworld Messengers were unable to compare with Chu Feng. As such, how could they not be shocked?

Chu Feng did not know about what had happened outside. In order to quickly arrive at the central region of the fort, he was racing against time.

There were a lot of hurdles in this place. There were world spirit traps, as well as bloodthirsty ferocious beasts. Even the weakest among those beasts were Half Martial Emperors.

Other than those, there were hidden obstacles too. While one's body would not be harmed by those hurdles, they were extremely time-consuming. One would have to go around them, and waste a lot of time in the process.

The hurdles of this place were not only a test of one's strength, they were also testing one's intelligence.

However, with Chu Feng leading the way, it was not that difficult.

Chu Feng had been proceeding onward the entire time. He had not even stopped his footsteps once. Not only was his speed extremely fast, even Yan Xie who was following closely behind him had received enormous benefits from him.

With Chu Feng opening the path ahead, all Yan Xie had to do was run behind him. There was simply no need for him to do anything

else.

Even though Yan Xie was not protected by Chu Feng's world spirit barriers like Chili Pepper and the others, he was actually only able to attain such a fast speed in reaching this place all because of Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped. He looked ahead and said with a serious expression, "This should be the final hurdle. Yan Xie, follow me closely."

Chapter 1774 – Believe In Chu Feng

Seeing Chu Feng acting in this sort of manner, a serious expression flashed through Yan Xie's eyes. This was the first time that Chu Feng had stopped since he had entered.

Upon closer inspection, Yan Xie discovered that the path ahead was covered by many enormous trees that reached the sky. There was only a single path which could be taken.

“Chu Feng, how do you know that this is the final hurdle?” Yan Xie asked in a puzzled manner. He did not discover any danger in the little pathway through the forest.

“Trust me. The other end of this pathway will be the center of the fort. However, you must definitely follow me closely. Otherwise, you must distance yourself from me. The further away you distance yourself from me, the better it would be. In fact, distance yourself from me before we enter.”

As Chu Feng said those words, he began to walk forward. He did not use any movement martial skills. Instead, he slowly walked forward with a normal pace.

Yan Xie was confused by what Chu Feng meant by those words. However, he would naturally not distance himself from Chu Feng. Thus, he hurriedly followed Chu Feng in.

After they entered, other than seeing the dense tree branches and leaves that blocked the sunshine, being covered with special spirit formations that made them indestructible, Yan Xie did not discover anything unusual.

Dangerous? He was unable to find any trace of danger at all.

Yan Xie was truly confused as to why Chu Feng would be so carefree toward those dangerous hurdles, yet extremely cautious in this place.

“Huu~~~”

“Huu~~~”

“Huu~~~”

“Huu~~~”

“Huu~~~”

Suddenly, dazzling golden-light shot forth from the dark depths of the forest. Upon closer inspection, a total of five golden rays of light were surging toward them with roaring wind like five golden dragons.

At this moment, Yan Xie and the others were all alarmed. They finally realized what Chu Feng had meant.

Those five golden rays of light were five streams of oppressive might, five visible rays of oppressive might. At this moment, they were coming to crush Chu Feng, Yan Xie, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

All five of these rays of oppressive might were extremely powerful. Furthermore, they were not aimed at a single person. Rather, the five of them were aimed at Chu Feng and the others respectively.

In other words, the number of rays of oppressive might that this place would release was based upon the number of people present.

However, most importantly, these rays of oppressive might were so powerful that, not to mention Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish, even Yan Xie felt an enormous pressure from them.

While the rays were was not strong enough to injure Yan Xie, if one were to descend on him, it would cause him to feel enormous pressure and make it very difficult for him to walk onward. His speed would diminish enormously, and he would end up using a lot of physical strength.

However, if those rays of oppressive might were to land on Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish, the three of them would

definitely explode on the spot and die without a soul or body remaining.

Chu Feng had Yan Xie stay close to him. It was evident that Chu Feng was planning to withstand all five streams of oppressive might by himself.

“Haaahh~~~”

Sure enough, Chu Feng suddenly shouted. Then, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared, and lightning covered his body. Chu Feng’s aura also instantly increased from rank seven Half Martial Emperor to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

At the same time as he increased his cultivation to rank nine Half Martial Emperor, Chu Feng had also unleashed his strongest defensive technique — the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The five rays of oppressive might crashed into Chu Feng simultaneously. Ear-piercing rumbles were instantly heard. Even the indestructible trees in their surroundings began to sway left and right from the aftermath of the oppressive might’s descent. The trees actually began to fracture and emit cracking sounds.

However, even though their surroundings were as frightening as hell, Yan Xie and the others who were close to Chu Feng were not affected in the slightest.

They felt a sense of comfort, as if they had found refuge among howling winds and torrential rain.

“Gulp~~~”

As they saw Chu Feng, whose body was covered with flickering bolts of lightning, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all gulped down a mouthful of saliva. They were truly awed by Chu Feng’s enormous display of strength.

Chu Feng really did possess the power that he was rumored to

have, and could instantly increase his cultivation by two levels.

In other words, Chu Feng's cultivation was not only that of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he was a rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

Although Chu Feng possessed a similar age to them, and in fact, he was even a bit younger than Chili Pepper and Big Radish, he was already a rank nine Half Martial Emperor, while Chili Pepper and Big Radish were still only Martial Kings.

Chu Feng was only a bit away from entering the Martial Emperor realm and becoming a supreme Martial Emperor-level expert.

As such, how could they not be in awe and shock? The enormous gap between them had caused them to feel extremely complicated. However, their feelings could be described with a single word: stunned.

They were all stunned by Chu Feng's cultivation.

Right at this moment, Yan Xie suddenly said, "Chu Feng, are you really able to do this? If not, I can go out."

Originally, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were overwhelmed by shock at how powerful Chu Feng, was and did not notice anything wrong with the current situation. However, after hearing what Yan Xie said, they were immediately baffled and began to feel an indescribable sort of uneasiness.

"It's fine, I can still withstand this," Chu Feng smiled.

"Really?" Yan Xie did not believe Chu Feng.

Even though Chu Feng had not revealed that anything was wrong with him, Yan Xie was able to sense how powerful those five streams of oppressive might were.

If the five rays of oppressive might were to split apart, Yan Xie would be able to withstand one of them.

However, if the five rays of oppressive might were gathered

together, their combined power would be five times as enormous. Before such oppressive might, even Yan Xie would be extremely fearful. At the very least, he would not be able to withstand them, and might actually die because of them.

Thus, even though Chu Feng appeared to be fine, Yan Xie was still worried for him.

At this time, Yan Xie had realized why that mysterious middle-aged man had warned them to not bring others with them when trying to crash through the hurdles.

The reason for that was because if one wished to bring anyone with them to take on the hurdle that they were undergoing right now, its difficulty would increase as many times as the number of people there were.

At this moment, they were only able to pass through because the person undergoing this was Chu Feng. If it were anyone else, they would definitely not be able to withstand the combined power of five oppressive might.

“Of course,” Chu Feng continued to smile.

“However, these five oppressive mights being gathered at one location is truly too frightening. I think it’s better that I step out.”

“If I am to step out, the oppressive might that has come for me will also follow me away.”

“Although it will not help you enormously, it will at least lessen the pressure on you by one fifth,” Yan Xie still didn’t trust Chu Feng. As he spoke, he planned to exit Chu Feng’s defensive barrier.

“Brother Yan Xie, this place is no ordinary spirit formation. This place is not as simple as it seems to be. If you are to insist on leaving now, not only will you not be able to help me, you will instead bring harm to Chili Pepper, Big Radish, Little Radish and me.”

“As for you, you will also be met with death,” Chu Feng said

seriously.

“Taa~~~”

After hearing those words from Chu Feng, Yan Xie's body stiffened. It was as if he had been struck by lightning.

Chu Feng's words had given him a sudden realization!!!!

The five oppressive mights had already fused together. If he were to leave Chu Feng's defensive barrier, what would attack him would not be a single ray of oppressive might. Instead, it would be five. As such, how could he possibly withstand them?

Furthermore, it was very possible for other changes to occur at that time. He might even really bring harm to Chu Feng and the others. Perhaps Chu Feng would be fine. However, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish would definitely die.

Thinking of those things, Yan Xie smiled a self-mocking smile. He finally realized how stupid he was being. Furthermore, if it hadn't been for Chu Feng stopping him, he would've brought about his own death and harmed his friends due to his stupidity.

“Trust me. Although this place is dangerous, it's still within my ability to withstand. I will be able to safely bring you all over,” Seeing Yan Xie's mood growing gloomy, Chu Feng smiled and patted Yan Xie's shoulder.

Yan Xie raised his head and looked to Chu Feng, who was worried about him and had a smile on his face. Yan Xie smiled again. This time around, Yan Xie's smile was one of feeling relieved.

Yan Xie finally realized how enormous the gap between him and Chu Feng was. This gap was not only a gap between their talents. He had discovered that, even in other aspects, he was greatly inferior to Chu Feng.

Before such a Chu Feng, there was simply no need for him to worry. After all, there was nothing he could do to help Chu Feng. The only thing he could do now was to put his trust in Chu Feng.

He had to believe that Chu Feng would be able to pass through this trial while bringing them with him.

Chapter 1775 – Golden Leaf World Spirit Flower

“.....”

After hearing the conversation between Yan Xie and Chu Feng, Chili Pepper and the others started to feel uneasy, and showed apologetic expressions on their faces.

Even though their perceptive abilities were not as sharp as Yan Xie's, after they heard the dialogue between Yan Xie and Chu Feng, the three of them also managed to indirectly guess how powerful the five rays of oppressive might crushing down onto them from above were.

They knew that they had caused an enormous inconvenience for Chu Feng. Yet, Chu Feng did not mention the difficult situation he had been placed in, and instead decided to shoulder it all himself so that they would not feel any burden.

At this moment, they were all silent. However, in their hearts, they remembered all that Chu Feng had done for them...

Although Chu Feng was able to resist the five rays of oppressive might, he did not dare to take it easy. The reason for that was because he did not wish to be eliminated, he did not wish to have come here for nothing.

Thus, there was only one thing in Chu Feng's mind right now. That was, to grit his teeth and then use his strongest power to rapidly crash through this trial.

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was about to walk out from this location, he suddenly discovered a forked path ahead.

“Really! To do this sort of cheap trick at such a time?” Chu Feng laughed lightly. This forked path was too obvious. Those with good eyesight could tell with a single glance that the left pathway

was the correct one, whereas the one on the right was fake.

Even though he knew that the pathway to the left was real and could bring one to the center of the fort, however, at the time he arrived at the fork in the path, Chu Feng couldn't help himself and took a glance at the pathway to the right.

On the way there, Chu Feng had discovered that the person who had set up all these hurdles was extremely intelligent. Many of the hurdles were set up with great ingenuity, and contained hidden profoundness.

Yet, at this moment, at this most important hurdle, such a simple multiple-choice question actually appeared. This was evidently not reasonable.

Chu Feng felt that there might be a hidden implication contained in this. Thus, he wished to take a look at exactly what sort of path that fake path to the right was.

“That is?!”

“I'm not seeing things, right?”

“Is this for real?”

Upon checking out the right path, Chu Feng's eyes immediately shone, and he revealed an expression of shock. Immediately afterward, his shocked expression turned to one of immense joy. He exclaimed, “It's real! Truly, the heavens are helping me!!!”

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Yan Xie and the others also turned their gazes over.

It was only then did they discovered that at the end of that path was a large tree. Underneath that tree was a bed of golden flowers.

Golden branches, golden leaves, golden flowers. Furthermore, the branches and leaves resembled little people.

They were so vivid and lifelike that should one look at them from afar, they would look like people made of gold that flickered with

gorgeous dazzling light.

“What is that?” Chili Pepper and the others’ eyes all shrunk. Although they did not recognize the flowers, they were able to tell with a single glance that the flowers should be treasures.

“Those are a kind of special flower called the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flower,” Chu Feng said.

“Golden Leaf World Spirit Flower?” Chili Pepper and the others were still confused.

“Essentially, they are extremely beneficial to me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to walk toward the flower bed.

The path was very deep. It took Chu Feng a lot of time to reach the end of the path. What he was doing was actually very risky. In wasting this much time, it was very possible that he would fail to obtain one of the twenty fastest spots to enter the center of the fort.

However, even though this was the case, Chu Feng felt that he still had to obtain those Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers.

It was recorded in the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram that the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers were extremely beneficial to world spirits. They possessed the same sort of power as a martial cultivator’s source energy. By using them, world spirits could greatly increase their cultivation.

Chu Feng knew very well that as long as he obtained those Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers, he would not only be able to wake the sleeping Eggy up, he might even be able to help her increase her cultivation.

Even though he was currently in a race against time for those twenty available spots, when compared to Eggy, how could missing the opportunity to compete possibly be able to compare to her?

After all, Chu Feng knew the best how much Eggy had done for him.

“Indeed, they’re the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers,” Finally, Chu Feng reached the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers.

However, he did not immediately extend his hand to snatch them. Instead, he set up a small world spirit formation, then began to cautiously draw the flowers into it.

Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers were very special. They possessed intelligence. If one were to use one’s hand to snatch them, they would disappear. Even though Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he was still incapable of snatching them with his hands, and would thus miss this opportunity before him.

Thus, at this time, Chu Feng had to be extremely careful. In fact, he did not even dare to lose his concentration. It was only when all of the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers had entered his spirit formation, and when he sealed off that spirit formation, that Chu Feng finally heaved a sigh of relief.

At this moment, Chu Feng turned around and prepared to walk toward the exit of this pathway. In his hand was the spirit formation, and his eyes were focused on the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers within it. On his face was an unconcealable smile.

He knew that, having obtained these Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers, he would definitely be able to wake Eggy.

“Although those flowers are quite the treasure, they seem to not have much usage for us martial cultivators,” Yan Xie said as he looked at the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers in Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

“Indeed, their value can only be reflected on world spiritists. However, they are priceless treasures. If a martial cultivator were to obtain them, they could exchange them for endless riches from world spiritists.”

“I reckon that with this bed of Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers,

if you were to place them before a world spiritist that knew of their value, they would be willing to hand over five Incomplete Imperial Armaments for them without the slightest bit of hesitation,” Chu Feng said.

“They’re this precious?” Hearing those words, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all opened their eyes wide with shock. They began to carefully inspect the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers. It was as if they would feel enormous regret should they miss the opportunity to see these Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers.

At this moment, Yan Xie said no more. Instead, he only smiled lightly. He believed in what Chu Feng had said because he believed in Chu Feng’s eyesight.

It was as Chu Feng had guessed. After they walked out from that pathway and entered the other pathway, they arrived at the central region of the fort.

At this moment, what appeared before them was a vast open site. This open site was formed with special materials imbued with world spirit power. Likely, anyone beneath Martial Emperor would not be able to destroy this place.

Chu Feng and the others guessed that this vast, field-like open site should be the place where the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly would be held.

On the outside of the open site were twenty peaks. On top of each peak was an exquisite pagoda.

Furthermore, before them was a stele. There was a special brush placed below the stele. Beside the brush was a special piece of paper.

Everything was explained on the stele...

Those who arrived would leave their name on the piece of paper and then choose a pagoda to rest in. Each person was allowed to

choose one pagoda. After reaching their pagoda, one must illuminate the lanterns in the pagoda so that the people who arrive afterward will be able to choose other pagodas.

After reading those words, Chili Pepper and the others immediately turned to look at the twenty pagodas. They discovered that none of the twenty towers had been lighted. Immediately, they were overjoyed.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly amazing. You brought us burdens with you and arrived here. Yet, you’re actually the first to arrive,” Chili Pepper and the others were overjoyed. They felt that even though they had dragged Chu Feng down, they had, at the very least, not harmed him by making him lose out on his chance to compete.

“Come, write your names,” Chu Feng had already written his name onto the paper. Then, he handed the brush to Yan Xie.

After Yan Xie received the brush from Chu Feng, he also wrote on the paper. However, he did not write his own name. Instead, he wrote ‘Flame Emperor’s successor’ on the paper.

After that, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish also wrote their names on the paper. However, like Yan Xie, they also did not write their own names. Instead, they wrote their nick names onto the paper.

“Big brother Chu Feng, am I also allowed to choose my own pagoda?” Little Radish asked.

“Of course,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Haha, this is truly great,” Hearing those words, Little Radish became exceptionally excited. Chili Pepper and Big Radish also revealed smiles of excitement.

The twenty pagodas should have belonged to the twenty peak geniuses. Yet, they actually possessed the opportunity to monopolize one of the twenty pagodas each. Naturally, they would be extremely happy.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chili Pepper and the others were overjoyed, a distant pagoda suddenly blossomed with dazzling light.

Seeing this scene, Chili Pepper and the others were immediately stupefied. The joyous expression on their faces instantly disappeared.

At this moment, even Chu Feng narrowed his eyes and revealed a surprised expression.

Evidently, they were not the first ones to arrive here.

Chapter 1776 – Baffled

“Someone actually arrived before us? Who might that person be?” Yan Xie raised his head and gazed deeply at the pagoda that had been lighted. It was as if he wanted to know who the master of that pagoda was.

Unfortunately, that pagoda was located extremely far away. Furthermore, the pagoda itself also possessed the effect of blocking one’s vision. Thus, Yan Xie was simply unable to see the silhouette of the person in the pagoda,

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, two large words appeared in that dazzling golden light, Leng Yue.¹

“Leng Yue, she’s a disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace. Furthermore, she is the strongest of the three Heavenly Law Palace’s Heavenly Generals,” Upon seeing the words ‘Leng Yue’, Big Radish immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air. His gaze was filled with reverence.

Although he did not know exactly how powerful Leng Yue was, it was reported that Leng Yue was the only disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace capable of contending against their Underworld Palace’s strongest disciple, Underworld Messenger Kuang.

As for Underworld Messenger Kuang, he could be said to be an existence akin to a god among the younger generation of the Underworld Palace.

“If it wasn’t for Chu Feng leading the way, even if I were to try to crash through the trials myself, I would not have been able to arrive here this quickly. Yet, that Leng Yue actually managed to arrive this quickly. Her strength is definitely above mine,” Upon seeing the words ‘Leng Yue’, Yan Xie gasped with admiration.

Although Yan Xie was anxious to fight against the peak experts of

the young generation, he also knew his own standing very well. He knew that, even when excluding Chu Feng, he would not be the strongest member of the younger generation who had come here. As for the truth, it was precisely that.

“It’s all our fault. If it wasn’t for us, Brother Chu Feng would definitely have been the first one to arrive here,” Big Radish had an expression of feeling ashamed.

“What are you saying? It was me who insisted on bringing you all here, and not you all who insisted on coming here with me.”

“Furthermore, this sequence of events is unable to illustrate anything,” Chu Feng consoled with a smile. Then, he waved his hand and said, “Let’s quickly go and choose the pagodas that we like so that they do not become occupied by people who arrive after us.”

“Mn,” Seeing Chu Feng show an expression of indifference, Big Radish, Chili Pepper and Little Radish also felt a lot more comfortable.

Then, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all went to choose their own pagodas. After the three of them reached their pagodas, not only did those pagodas shine with light, they also revealed the words ‘Chili Pepper,’ ‘Big Radish’ and ‘Little Radish.’

“It would appear that the names being displayed on the pagodas are the names we wrote on the paper previously,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s most likely the case. Merely, their names are truly somewhat unconventional. I truly wonder what others will feel upon seeing those names,” Yan Xie said.

“They will likely be baffled,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he asked Yan Xie, “Which pagoda are you planning to choose?”

“Any one is fine,” Yan Xie said casually.

“I’ll take that closest one. Brother Yan Xie, after you finish choosing yours, come and find me. I might have something that I

need to trouble you with,” Chu Feng pointed at the closest pagoda.

“Sure,” Yan Xie nodded.

Then, Yan Xie illuminated a pagoda that was beside the pagoda that Chu Feng had chosen. After the words ‘Flame Emperor’s successor’ appeared on the pagoda, Yan Xie did not choose to rest, but directly went to find Chu Feng. With a beaming smile on his face, Yan Xie asked, “What might it be that would make you request my help?”

“I will have to enter closed-door training for a while. I fear that unforeseen events might occur during the time I am in closed-door training. Thus, I wish to ask you to protect Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish during the time I’m in closed-door training so that they do not get bullied. After all, you also know their strength,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was really planning to enter closed-door training. Although he had obtained the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers, it was not that simple to use the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers to wake Eggy up.

Chu Feng would have to first transfer the spirit formation that contained the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers into his own world spirit space. As for that, it was not something that was easy to do. Instead, it was something that required a certain amount of time to accomplish.

However, Chu Feng knew that of the people who would be arriving here, not a single one of them would be ordinary characters. Furthermore, based on Chu Feng’s understanding, those people would mostly be arrogant individuals who viewed everyone else to be beneath them.

Thus, he was worried for the safety of Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

“Oh you. And here I was wondering what it was that would make

you ask for my help with such a serious expression. It turns out you just want me to protect Chili Pepper and the others.”

“Rest assured, as they are your friends, they are also my friends. With me, Yan Xie, here, I will definitely not allow anyone to bully them,” Yan Xie said with a smile.

“I, Chu Feng, naturally know that you, Yan Xie, are a person who is loyal to his friends. Merely, I must still inform you of this beforehand, no?” Chu Feng smiled. With Yan Xie agreeing to help him, Chu Feng felt relieved.

After this matter was decided, Chu Feng immediately entered closed-door training. The reason for that was because he had to wake Eggy back up before the competition officially began.

Actually, Chu Feng could have waited until the competition was over before he tried to wake Eggy.

However, upon thinking about how he would be able to wake Eggy sooner, Chu Feng became extremely impatient to wake Eggy.

Although Yan Xie didn’t know why Chu Feng had decided to enter closed-door training, he knew that Chu Feng must not be disturbed.

Thus, Yan Xie did not return to his own pagoda to rest. Instead, he stayed in Chu Feng’s pagoda to prevent others from disturbing his closed-door training.

To his surprise, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish soon arrived in Chu Feng’s pagoda as well. Furthermore, they were not planning to pay Chu Feng a visit. Instead, they were planning to stay here.

Although Yan Xie felt that it was not very sensible for all of them to be in one pagoda and waste the other four pagodas, he determined that with them all being together, they would lower the possibility of unnecessary troubles happening.

Thus, Yan Xie did not try to urge Chili Pepper and the others to

leave.

After all of them settled in Chu Feng's pagoda, the remaining pagodas began to be illuminated by other people in succession.

When the final pagoda was illuminated, the entrance to the various traps and mechanisms began to shut off one by one.

At this moment, many dazzling names that were shining on the various pagodas began to shoot toward the sky to appear in the horizon.

Underworld Messenger Kuang, Underworld Messenger Zhan, Underworld Messenger Gui, Feng Yihao, Feng Erhong, Feng Sanmei...²

Baili Xinghe, Ximen Feixue...

King Monstrous Dragon Beast, Eastern Divine Deer, Golden Peng Clan, Sea Alligator Clan...³

Seeing those names, Yan Xie was actually very unfamiliar with them.

However, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were discussing them beside him. Thus, Yan Xie came to have a general understand of who those people were.

There were a total of twenty spots. Discounting the five that had been obtained by the five of them, there remained fifteen other spots.

Of those fifteen spots, nine had been taken by the Three Palaces, and four had been taken by the monstrous beasts. As for the remaining two, they had respectively been taken by the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Baili Xinghe, and the strongest member of the younger generation from the Four Great Imperial Clans, Ximen Feixue.

In short, none of the remaining fifteen spots were taken by ordinary characters. They were all obtained by people with

impressive fame in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“There’s actually no one from the Ancient Era’s Elves? Could it be that none of them managed to successfully pass through the trials?” After carefully observing the names of the remaining fifteen pagodas, Big Radish was a bit disappointed.

The Ancient Era’s Elves had existed since the Ancient Era. They possessed very strong and powerful strength that brought fear to both humans and monstrous beasts.

As for the younger generation of the Ancient Era’s Elves, they were generally the top existences among the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism. In fact, it was not only Big Radish who was wondering about this; many other people had been anticipating the arrival of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ younger generation. They all wished to see exactly what sort of abilities the Ancient Era’s Elves’ younger generation possessed.

“With the Ancient Era’s Elves’ strength, if they were to come, it would be impossible for none of them to be here. The way I see it, they simply have not come,” Yan Xie said.

“That’s most likely the case. However, even with this being the case, the people here are all extraordinary characters. Just thinking about how this bunch of people will be fighting one another to determine the victor makes my blood begin to boil,” Big Radish said with a face filled with excitement.

“So what? They’re all going to be defeated by Chu Feng,” Chili Pepper curled her lips as she said those words. However, a keen sense of anticipation was flickering through her beautiful eyes. She was anxious to see with her own eyes how Chu Feng would defeat those various geniuses with extraordinary statuses.

At the moment when Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were discussing the powerful members of the younger generation from all around the Holy Land of Martialism that were present here, they did not know that they had also become the target of

speculation for those same members of the younger generation.

The first thing that the people who had arrived at the fort did was inspect who their opponents were.

It was one thing for there to be a Flame Emperor's successor. Although they were surprised, it was something that was within their expectations.

After all, the successor of an era's overlord, Emperor Gong's successor, had appeared. Thus, it would not be strange for the successor of the Flame Emperor, who had been defeated by Emperor Qing, to appear.

However... Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish, exactly what was this?

The three of them had actually already occupied pagodas before they had arrived. Their speed was even faster than them?

Could they be the personal disciples of a certain hidden expert?

Could they be Natural Oddities that had trained for several tens of thousands of years? 4

At this moment, the dragons among men that were in the various pagodas were all baffled.

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

Leng Yue → Cold Moon. ↩

Yihao → First, Grand. Erhong → Second, Great. Sanmei → Third, Younger Sister. Great naming sense... ↩

Peng is a giant bird of myth. Kinda like a Roc. ↩

How would they be younger than 100 if they were? ↩

Chapter 1777 – He Really Came

Inside the fort, the hearts of the crowd were wavering back and forth. Outside the fort, the crowd was also very restless.

At this moment, a ray of light appeared above the fort. The light formed twenty numbers in an orderly fashion.

Starting from number twenty, the names of the Eastern Divine Deer, the Sea Alligator Clan, the Golden Peng Clan, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast, Ximen Feixue, Feng Sanmei, Feng Erhong, Baili Xinghe, along with the others that had made it to the fort, were starting to appear.

“Amazing. They’re practically all people on the invitation list, the most impactful members of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Even Ximen Feixue has come? I wonder, will Chu Feng show up too?” Someone asked with an expression filled with anticipation.

“Humph, the Four Great Imperial Clans have sent out so many people, and surrounded the entire fort. If Chu Feng dares to show his face, he will only be courting death,” Another person spoke. As he spoke, he took a look at his surroundings.

Sure enough, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ magnificent army of tens of thousands was standing there orderly columns, blockading the entire fort. The ones leading this magnificent army of tens of thousands of men were the Four Great Imperial Clans’ four Clan Chiefs.

In addition to the troops from the Four Great Imperial Clans, the subsidiary powers of the Four Great Imperial Clans had also dispatched many of their elite troops. Adding them all together, the number of troops the Four Great Imperial Clans had under their control right now numbered in the millions.

However, this was only the strength that they were showing to

the public. Their creme de la creme were actually hidden deep underground and led by the four Utmost Exalted Elders.

Someone in the crowd sighed. “Never would I have expected that the Four Great Imperial Clans would loathe Chu Feng to this extent. In order to capture him, they have sent out this many of their elites. Even the four Clan Chiefs have personally come here for him.”

“That Chu Feng is merely a kid from the younger generation. Exactly how enormous are his abilities?” Seeing that the Four Great Imperial Clans had mustered such a large force for Chu Feng, many of the people present realized the importance the Four Great Imperial Clans had placed on Chu Feng, as well as how enormous their hatred for him was.

The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was standing in the sky as he asked Nangong Beidou, who was standing beside him, “Brother Nangong, do you think that Chu Feng will appear?”

“I think he will,” Nangong Beidou said.

“He will? Heh... I think that he simply will not show up. Last time around, the reason why he dared to go to Mooncloud City was because he knew that we were not on guard against him.”

“However, this time around, practically everyone knew that we would squat in this place and wait for Chu Feng’s arrival. That Chu Feng is no fool. How could he possibly show up in such a place?” The Beitang Imperial Clan Chief said with a light laugh. Although they had mustered such an enormous amount of strength, he did not think that Chu Feng would show up. The way he saw it, they had all come here for nothing.

“I also don’t think Chu Feng will come. Even if he did, he must’ve run away by now,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said. Then, he looked to the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief and asked, “Clan Chief Ximen, what do you think?”

“It would be best for him if he doesn’t show up. If he does, I’ll definitely make it so that he cannot return after coming here,” the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said with a cold voice.

“I also hope that he has come. Merely, I’m afraid that he would not dare to come,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief sighed.

“I think that he will definitely have come,” Nangong Beidou said resolutely. “You all do not know that Chu Feng’s character still. However, after experiencing what happened before, I already have somewhat of an understanding of his character. That child is extremely courageous. His courage surpasses your imaginations.”

“Furthermore, the backers he has might not only be limited to that one mysterious man with the Death Kill Brush from that day. Thus, we must absolutely not become careless,” After saying those words, seriousness and unease flashed through Nangong Beidou’s eyes.

He knew very well that the battle power their Four Great Imperial Clans had dispatched for Chu Feng was already extremely dreadful. There had even dispatched four of their Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders for Chu Feng. It would not be excessive to say that the Four Great Imperial Clans had sent out their strongest battle power.

However, even with this being the case, he still did not have absolute certainty in being able to kill Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because...

The scene of Chu Feng’s release of the Asura Evil Spirit in his Nangong Imperial Clan was still vivid in his mind.

The scene of Chu Feng defeating all of the Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation in Mooncloud City was still vivid in his mind.

During those times, he was only able to watch as he suffered at Chu Feng’s hands, as he was humiliated by Chu Feng while being

unable to do anything to him.

As matters stood, he did not dare to lower his guard against Chu Feng in the slightest.

“Hahaha...”

“Brother Nangong, the way I see it, you’ve been too frightened by that Chu Feng. Regardless of how exceptional his talent might be, he is still only a member of the younger generation. Is it really proper to regard him this highly?” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said with a light laugh.

“That’s right. This is unlike the Nangong Beidou that we know,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief also had a teasing smile on his face.

“If possible, I also hope that my worries are unnecessary. Otherwise...” Nangong Beidou said no more. The reason for that was because he also didn’t wish for the possibility of that ‘otherwise’ to happen.

“Quickly, look, the seventh individual’s name has been announced. The remaining spots seem to all be occupied by people from the Three Palaces. The Three Palaces are truly worthy of being the Three Palaces. Amazing, truly amazing,” The Beitang Imperial Clan looked to the names that were appearing on the horizon nonstop and gasped with admiration.

“The younger generation from the monstrous beasts and humans have pretty much all been announced. In that case, the ones that’ll be announced now should be the Ancient Era’s Elves, right?” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief’s gaze also became serious.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a flash of light shone. Then, the name ‘Little Radish,’ appeared in the sky underneath the sixth place spot.

“What?!!!”

“Little Radish? What the fuck is this?”

Upon seeing the words ‘Little Radish,’ not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs, practically everyone present was so shocked by those words that their mouths fell wide open, and they had expressions of being completely baffled on their faces.

“Buzz~~~”

Following that, another flash of light shone. Then, the name ‘Big Radish,’ appeared underneath the fifth place spot.

“What?! Big Radish?! It’s a pair of radishes?!!!”

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was still shocked, the name ‘Chili Pepper’ appeared underneath the fourth place spot.

“What the fuck! Is this a collection of vegetables?! Radishes and chili pepper? This is enough to make a dish!”

The crowd was completely speechless. Exactly what was going on? The spots were being shown according to the order in which those people had arrived at the fort. The higher one was ranked, the faster they had passed through the hurdles, which in turn meant the greater their strength.

The disciples of the Three Palaces and the representatives from the monstrous beasts were pretty much all present. The crowd had thought that the names that would appear afterwards would be the younger generation from the Ancient Era’s Elves or some sort of grand character. Yet, what has appeared before them were radishes and chili pepper. Exactly what was going on?!

“Could it be that the Ancient Era’s Elves’ younger generation did not wish to use their real names, and instead used aliases?” At this moment, this was the only thing the crowd could think of.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, the words ‘Flame Emperor’s successor’ appeared underneath the third place spot.

“Flame Emperor’s successor? Could it be the Flame Emperor from ten thousand years ago that brought the Yan Clan to the apex of humanity, and later fought against Emperor Qing?”

“Didn’t the Yan Clan end up being chased by their enemies after the death of the Flame Emperor, and were wiped out because of that? Why would there be a Flame Emperor’s successor? Could it be that the Yan Clan is still in existence?”

Upon seeing the words ‘Flame Emperor’s successor,’ the crowd was both excited and astonished. Compared to the Radishes and Chili Pepper, the ‘Flame Emperor’s successor’ was the sort of pleasant surprise that they wanted.

“Even the Flame Emperor’s successor has appeared. Sure enough, this is an unprecedented era. The younger generation of this era is truly frightening,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief gasped with admiration.

“That’s true. Even the strongest of the younger generation from our Four Great Imperial Clan’s, little friend Ximen Feixue, is only able to be ranked sixteenth. From this, it can be seen how powerful those members of the younger generation ranked above him are,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Humph, the strength of my son is definitely not as obvious as what is present. It is not absolutely certain that the disciples from the Three Palaces will be a match for him,” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Indeed, that does seem like little friend Ximen Feixue’s character,” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief smiled an indifferent smile. Then, he said, “If Chu Feng had come, he should only have been ranked below the top ten. After all, even the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal is only ranked thirteenth.”

“The list of names has already been announced to the third place now. The way I see it, Chu Feng truly did not come. Brother Nangong, what do you think?” After saying those words, the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief looked to Nangong Beidou.

“That might be the case,” As matters stood, Nangong Beidou also began to doubt his own guess. After all, the third ranked individual had been announced. How could Chu Feng possibly be among the remaining two individuals? No matter how strong Chu Feng might be, it should still be unrealistic for him to be first or second.

After all, back then, Chu Feng had only barely defeated Ximen Feixue. As for the names of people who appeared afterwards, their strength all greatly surpassed Ximen Feixue’s.

.....

In fact, it was not only the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs who were thinking like this. Many of the people present also felt that Chu Feng had not come.

Upon thinking that Chu Feng had not come, many of the people present revealed expressions of disappointment in their eyes.

No matter how much the Four Great Imperial Clans wanted to arrest and kill Chu Feng, they had all wished for Chu Feng to appear. They all wished to have a look at exactly how heaven-defying that rumored heaven-defying child was.

Unfortunately, it would appear that they would not have the opportunity to do so.

“Buzz~~~”

Yet, right at this moment, light began to flicker underneath the second place spot. Two large words appeared in the sky.

Chu Feng!!!!!!!!!!

.....

.....

.....

“Chu Feng?”

“It’s actually Chu Feng?”

“Chu Feng actually came?”

“Not only that, he’s actually ranked second?”

“But, that Ximen Feixue that fought against Chu Feng is only ranked sixteenth. Yet, Chu Feng is ranked second. So the gap between Chu Feng and Ximen Feixue was actually that enormous!!!”

“Could it be that Chu Feng’s strength is even more powerful than it was rumored to be?”

“Hahaha, this is great, truly great. I have not traveled here from far away in vain. This time around, there’ll be a show for me to enjoy.”

All of a sudden, the people in the sky and on the ground outside of the fort all started to boil with excitement. Practically everyone began to discuss Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, he actually came,” At this moment, the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs all started frowning.

The relaxed sensations that they had had before completely disappeared, and were replaced with seriousness.

Chapter 1778 – Disparity

“Chu Feng is ranked second. In that case, who’s ranked first?” After feeling excited, the crowd turned their eyes to the horizon once again.

“Buzz~~~”

In front of the focused gazes of tens of thousands of people, the words ‘Leng Yue’ appeared.

“Leng Yue, it’s the Heavenly Law Palace’s disciple Leng Yue.”

The crowd were all startled. After all, the name Leng Yue was very famous. She had always been a well-known figure among the younger generation.

When they saw the words ‘Leng Yue’, the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace revealed smiles of pride. As for the crowd from the Underworld Palace, they started to frown and became a bit moody.

Compared to the Underworld Palace, the people from the Mortal King Palace were not that downcast. However, they were also not very happy.

After all, the Three Palaces were equally famous. Yet, of their disciples, a disciple from the Heavenly Law Palace had obtained the first spot. This, to a greater or lesser degree, caused them to feel humiliated.

“Let’s act. Since Chu Feng has come, we absolutely cannot let him leave here alive.”

At the moment when the crowd was astonished by Leng Yue’s name, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs led their respective elite troops and quietly hid themselves in the vast crowd.

They had already made plans. If Chu Feng didn’t come, it would

all be fine. However, if Chu Feng was to show up, they would definitely not let him leave here alive.

.....

Inside the fort. The crowd was still wondering exactly who Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a figure shot out explosively from a pagoda. Like a meteorite, that figure landed in front of Chu Feng’s pagoda.

This scene piqued the attention of many people. The people from all the other pagodas all turned their gazes toward Chu Feng’s pagoda.

At this moment, it was a man that had landed below Chu Feng’s pagoda.

This man had a handsome appearance. However, he emitted a very cold and aggressive air. He was none other than Ximen Feixue.

Ximen Feixue’s eyes were filled with coldness and devoid of emotions to begin with, but at this moment, his gaze was even more ice-cold.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, Ximen Feixue pulled out his Heavenly Immortal Sword and pointed it at the pagoda that Chu Feng was in. In an instant, surging coldness turned into a frosty wind that brought about great devastation.

In the end, the cold air that was visible to the naked eye began to engulf the pagoda Chu Feng was in like many ferocious beasts, causing Chu Feng’s pagoda to tremble slightly.

It turned out that Ximen Feixue was no longer a rank five Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he was a rank six Half Martial Emperor. Ximen Feixue... had actually reached a breakthrough.

With a voice like thunder, Ximen Feixue shouted, “Chu Feng, I, Ximen Feixue, have come for none other than you.”

“Since you’ve actually dared to show yourself too, I will definitely defeat you with my Heavenly Immortal Sword this time around, and wipe away my previous disgrace!”

Although Ximen Feixue had spoken those words with enormous resentment, he was also filled with confidence.

He did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to reach a breakthrough in such a short period of time like himself. Thus, he felt that if Chu Feng were to fight against him, he would definitely be defeated.

“Yoh, so it’s actually a battle for revenge. This is quite interesting.”

The many dragons among men all realized Ximen Feixue’s intentions. Thus, they all began to earnestly watch the show.

In fact, there were even people that took out dimsums that were already prepared in their respective pagodas and began to enjoy them while watching the show.

They had not had the opportunity to see the battle between Chu Feng and Ximen Feixue before. However, it was pretty good too to be able to see Ximen Feixue’s battle for revenge against Chu Feng today.

“Oh no! It’s actually Ximen Feixue. Why would he come to challenge Chu Feng before the competition has even begun?” Although the people outside were enjoying the show, Big Radish and Little Radish were extremely nervous.

Although they were disciples of the Underworld Palace, they still knew how powerful Ximen Feixue was.

“Don’t be afraid. Stay here. I’ll go out and meet this Ximen Feixue,” As Yan Xie spoke, he turned into a ray of light and flew out.

At the moment he appeared outside, his rank six Half Martial Emperor aura also swept forth and beat down Ximen Feixue's cold aura that had engulfed Chu Feng's pagoda.

After descending, Yan Xie took out his Fire Dragon Emperor Spear and pointed it at Ximen Feixue. He shouted, "A guy who was defeated by Brother Chu Feng dares to act this arrogant? It is fine if you wish to challenge Chu Feng. However, you must first pass through me!"

"Who are you?" Sensing Yan Xie's aura of a rank six Half Martial Emperor, Ximen Feixue became serious.

"I am the Flame Emperor's successor, Yan Xie," Yan Xie said.

"And I was wondering who it might be. So you're that Flame Emperor's successor. And here I was thinking about how amazing that Flame Emperor's successor would be. But it turns out he's nothing more than Chu Feng's lackey," Ximen Feixue said mockingly.

"Enough of your rubbish. You can either fight me or scram. Everyone's already looking at you, it would be best if you stopped trying to make an exhibition of yourself," Yan Xie said.

Hearing those words, Ximen Feixue looked to his surroundings. It was only then that he discovered that a figure was standing on top of each pagoda. Each and every one of them was extremely imposing and extraordinary. They were all dragons among men, children blessed by the heavens... They had actually all come out from their respective pagodas to watch the show.

Seeing this scene, the corners of Ximen Feixue's mouth lifted into a light curve. The reason why he had challenged Chu Feng at such a time was precisely to have these people know that Chu Feng was inferior to him.

"Very well, it wouldn't be too late for me to eliminate you first and then eliminate Chu Feng."

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After saying those words, Ximen Feixue unleashed his attacks. Cold rays began to flash all over. His Heavenly Immortal Sword turned into a sharp, murderous weapon as it pierced through the air toward Yan Xie.

“Humph!” At the same moment the Ximen Feixue unleashed his attacks, Yan Xie also unleashed his own attacks. Holding the Fire Dragon Emperor Spear, he collided with Ximen Feixue.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The two men both held an Incomplete Imperial Armament in their hands. Their attacks were constantly changing. The strength of their attacks were powerful enough to shake the blue dome of heaven.

While Ximen Feixue possessed his Imperial Bloodline, Yan Xie was a Divine Body. With the two men going all out to fight against one another, the outcome of the battle was unable to be decided instantly.

“Heeahh~~~”

Another shout. Following that shout, violent surging winds began to blow away the clouds, and golden light began to radiate all over. Ximen Feixue had unleashed his Imperial Bloodline and increased his cultivation to rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Ximen Feixue unleashed his Imperial Bloodline, surging purple flames swept forth. Yan Xie had unleashed his Divine Power, also increasing his cultivation to rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

The two men had both unleashed their trump cards. However, when they fought again, they were still unable to prevail over one another, and entered a stalemate again.

Two hours.

Four hours.

A total of six hours passed...

Ximen Feixue and Yan Xie were still fighting against one another. Furthermore, judging from their appearances, the two men would not be able to determine victory unless one of them exhausted his stamina first.

However, with the cultivation and strength of the two men, it would likely be impossible for either of them to exhaust all of their stamina until after several days and nights' worth of fighting.

If they were to fight for several days and night, this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly would likely have already ended before they were done.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Ximen Feixue missed his attack. Then, his body moved backward, and he distanced himself from Yan Xie. After that, he shouted, “I’m not fighting anymore. The person I am searching for is Chu Feng, and not you, Yan Xie.”

Yan Xie also retreated. He also did not wish to continue fighting. If they were to continue to fight, even if they were to be able to determine a victor, neither of them would be able to participate in the official competition.

Since Ximen Feixue had stopped his attacks, there was no need for Yan Xie to continue fighting. After all, even if he were to win against Ximen Feixue, his gains would not make up for his losses.

“Chu Feng, you have truly disappointed me.”

“I had previously thought you to be a man. However, never would I have thought that after my cultivation increased, you would not even dare to fight against me.”

“However, remember this: while you can hide now, you can’t

hide forever. Even if you are able to hide inside that tower like a turtle today, you will still have to fight me tomorrow.”

“I will let you know that you, Chu Feng, only defeated me, Ximen Feixue, because of luck.”

“However, you will absolutely not be able to defeat me a second time. From today hence, I, Ximen Feixue, declare that I will crush you to death. I’ll make you, Chu Feng, be beneath me forever. I’ll have everyone know that you, Chu Feng, are inferior to me. I will also let you know the true gap between us.”

Ximen Feixue began to insult Chu Feng nonstop. Although he did not plan to continue fighting Yan Xie, he had not planned to let Chu Feng get away.

Seeing that Chu Feng had still not shown himself even though Ximen Feixue was insulting him like this, many of the others present began to ponder in their hearts.

Could it be as Ximen Feixue had said, and that Chu Feng only defeated him back then because of luck?

Now that Ximen Feixue’s cultivation had increased, did Chu Feng not dare to face him anymore?

That legendary Chu Feng was merely a coward.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, a loud explosion suddenly sounded from Chu Feng’s pagoda. Following that, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might flew out of the pagoda.

Once that oppressive might appeared, the crowd’s expressions all changed. As that oppressive might spiraled in the sky, it was like an invisible, bloodthirsty ferocious beast overlooking its prey down below. It... was actually the aura of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, that oppressive might gathered in one location, turned into a ray of rainbow-like light that came crushing down onto Ximen Feixue.

“Humph!”

Seeing this, Ximen Feixue snorted coldly. Then, he brandished the Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand and unleashed his strongest attack to face the incoming oppressive might.

“Wuuaah~~”

However, that oppressive might was unstoppable. Not only did it completely shatter Ximen Feixue’s attack, it also crushed Ximen Feixue into the ground.

Ximen Feixue’s clothes were all torn, and he was drenched in blood. Over half of his body had been destroyed by that oppressive might.

Ximen Feixue had used his strongest attack, but had been unable to even resist a single burst of oppressive might, and was instead left with a disastrous injury.

“Ssss~~~”

At this moment, the dragons among men who stood atop the pagodas were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. The owner of that oppressive might possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. That was why Ximen Feixue had been defeated so utterly.

A rank seven Half Martial Emperor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. This sort of strength was extremely powerful.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, a figure flew out from the pagoda and steadily landed before Ximen Feixue.

Seeing this figure, the crowd's eyes all shone. The reason for that was because it was none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng looked to Ximen Feixue, whose body was filled with blood and injuries. There was not the slightest trace of sympathy in his gaze. His mouth was raised into a curve as he asked, "Do you know the disparity between you and me now?"

Chapter 1779 – Publicly Snatching Away Another’s Possessions

“Do you know the disparity between you and me now?”

Hearing those words, Ximen Feixue, who had been seriously injured, instantly felt his blood boiling over. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out of his mouth.

“Puu~~~”

As the blood reached the ground, it began to emit hot steam. That was no ordinary blood. Rather, it was blood from anger.

Ximen Feixue was deeply angered. Chu Feng’s words were like invisible blades that pierced deep into his heart, leaving behind a great amount of pain as they entered his ears.

“Impossible! Your cultivation was below mine. How could you possibly obtain the same sort of cultivation as me this quickly?!” Ximen Feixue showed an expression of disbelief. It was not that he really didn’t believe in Chu Feng’s current cultivation. Rather, he was unwilling to believe it. He was incapable of accepting the truth that Chu Feng had surpassed him.

“Heh, didn’t I tell you already? This is the disparity between you and me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Then, a boundless suction energy shot forth. The Heavenly Immortal Sword in Ximen Feixue’s hand, as well as the Cosmos Sack at his waist, were both sucked into Chu Feng’s hand.

Seeing this scene, the people in the crowd were all startled. Not only did Chu Feng seriously injure Ximen Feixue, he also publicly snatched away his treasures. His actions were truly arrogant.

“What are you doing?” Seeing that his treasures had been snatched away, Ximen Feixue became worried. Disregarding his injuries, he got back up and pounced at Chu Feng to try to take back his Heavenly Immortal Sword.

“Scram,” However, Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked Ximen Feixue away. His kick was so heavy that Ximen Feixue was knocked flying several tens of thousands of meters before ruthlessly falling onto the distant ground.

When he fell, Ximen Feixue’s injuries became even more serious. At that time, he no longer had the strength to stand up again.

Ximen Feixue, who had been able to compete against Chu Feng in Mooncloud City back then, was currently absolutely no match for Chu Feng now.

“It is one thing for your Four Great Imperial Clans to be despicable. However, you, Ximen Feixue, overestimated your own abilities and dared to publicly provoke me. Yet, I have only taken away your Heavenly Immortal Sword, and not your life. You should be thanking me for not killing you,” Chu Feng waved the Heavenly Immortal Sword around and spoke with laughter.

“Chu Feng, return my Heavenly Immortal Sword. You are not qualified to use the Heavenly Immortal Sword,” Ximen Feixue shouted.

“Use? While this Heavenly Immortal Sword is indeed quite decent, it is much inferior to my Evil God Sword. I never planned to use it. I merely planned to use it to exchange for some things,” Chu Feng said with a snicker.

“You’re planning to sell off my Heavenly Immortal Sword?! Chu Feng, you are courting death! My Ximen Imperial Clan will definitely not let you get away with this!” Ximen Feixue roared angrily.

“You spoke as if your Ximen Imperial Clan would let me get away even if I didn’t snatch your Heavenly Immortal Sword.”

“Currently, the entire Holy Land of Martialism knows of the behaviour of your Ximen Imperial Clan. Thus, you should stop trying to make an exhibition of yourself here,” Chu Feng sneered.

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng turned around. Although Ximen Feixue continued to insult him, Chu Feng was disinclined to bother to take another glance at Ximen Feixue.

Indeed, Ximen Feixue had been capable of fighting against Chu Feng back then. However, from now on, Ximen Feixue would no longer be qualified to fight against Chu Feng.

“That Chu Feng is truly something.”

“For Ximen Feixue to encounter him as his adversary, Ximen Feixue is truly unfortunate.”

At this moment, the people on the various pagodas were all focused on this scene. Many people gave Chu Feng a high evaluation.

“Humph, he should have used his lightnings that are capable of increasing his cultivation by two levels to reach rank seven Half Martial Emperor, right? If that’s the case, you’re still not the strongest here.” However, at one pagoda, someone sneered mockingly.

This person was someone that Chu Feng had met before. He was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s personal disciple, Baili Xinghe.

For some unknown reason, the gaze with which Baili Xinghe was looking at Chu Feng was filled with hostility.

“Mn?”

Chu Feng’s perception was extremely sharp. With how strong the hostility present in Baili Xinghe’s gaze was, Chu Feng was able to detect it right away. Involuntarily, Chu Feng turned his gaze toward the direction of the hostile gaze.

When he discovered that it was actually from Baili Xinghe’s pagoda, Chu Feng’s brows lifted slightly in surprise.

Chu Feng had met Baili Xinghe before on the Immortal Island. At

that time, Baili Xinghe had been an enormously powerful genius to him. He had been much more powerful than Chu Feng and the others present on the Immortal Island.

After all, at that time, Chu Feng's cultivation, when compared to Baili Xinghe's from back then, had simply been incomparable.

As for now, although Baili Xinghe's cultivation had also increased, and he had reached rank seven Half Martial Emperor from rank five Half Martial Emperor in such a short period of time, he was still inferior to Chu Feng.

However, that was not important. The important matter was that Chu Feng did not possess any conflict with Baili Xinghe. Thus, he did not understand why Baili Xinghe would possess this enormous hostility toward him.

As for Baili Xinghe, when he saw that Chu Feng's gaze had shifted to him, not only did the cold smile on his face not decrease, it instead increased.

Furthermore, a new implication appeared in his gaze of hostility. It was contempt. Not only was he hostile toward Chu Feng, he also did not place Chu Feng in his eyes. His gaze was filled with contempt.

"Heh..." Seeing Baili Xinghe acting this way, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Although he did not know why Baili Xinghe was this hostile toward him, Chu Feng was not afraid of him.

While he looked down on Chu Feng, he didn't know that Chu Feng also looked down on him.

Then, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the other pagodas. He wished to see the strength that his opponents possessed.

To his surprise, the people here were all more powerful than he had anticipated.

Firstly, there were four monstrous beast representatives from four monstrous beast clans. Their cultivations were the same.

They were all rank six Half Martial Emperors.

According to Big Radish, of the Underworld Palace's three Underworld Messengers, Underworld Messenger Gui and Underworld Messenger Zhan possessed cultivations of rank six Half Martial Emperor, while Underworld Messenger Kuang possessed a cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

However, at this moment, standing on their respective pagodas, Underworld Messenger Gui and Underworld Messenger Zhan possessed cultivations of rank seven Half Martial Emperors. As for Underworld Messenger Kuang, his cultivation was even stronger. He was a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. His cultivation was even stronger than Chu Feng's.

Compared to the Underworld palace, the three Feng Family Siblings were a bit weaker. The second brother and third sister of the three siblings were rank six Half Martial Emperors. Only the eldest brother, Feng Yihao, was a rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

However, the person that shocked Chu Feng the most was the strongest Heavenly General of the Heavenly Law Palace, the person who had reached the center of the fortress before him, Leng Yue.

Leng Yue was a cold and detached woman. Although she did not possess a stunning appearance, she gave off a very extraordinary air.

Most importantly, her cultivation was extremely powerful. Like the Underworld Palace's Underworld Messenger Kuang, she was also a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. However, she was different from Underworld Messenger Kuang; Leng Yue's aura was very extraordinary.

Chu Feng was able to faintly sense that Leng Yue might not have a heaven-defying battle power that surmounted three levels of cultivation. Instead, it was very likely that she possessed a heaven-

defying battle power that surmounted four levels of cultivation. In other words... Leng Yue's battle power was likely as powerful as Chu Feng's.

"It would seem that Leng Yue will be my strongest rival," After observing the crowd, Chu Feng placed Leng Yue as the person he needed to worry about the most.

"Woosh, woosh~~~"

Right at this moment, two figures suddenly descended from the sky and landed in front of Chu Feng.

They were two men. The two of them had identical appearances. Evidently, they were twins. Their cultivations were also not weak; they were both rank seven Half Martial Emperors.

The two of them were the other two Heavenly Generals from the Heavenly Law Palace.

"Chu Feng, your name has been known to us for a long time. After seeing you today, your abilities are truly as extraordinary as they say."

"After seeing your abilities earlier, we brothers have become a bit itchy. Might you be willing to spar with us?" The two men from the Heavenly Law Palace spoke with beaming smiles. Although they were smiling, they actually possessed hidden malicious intentions. They were not planning to simply spar with Chu Feng.

"Are you two challenging me?" Chu Feng asked with a smile. Although the two men were powerful, Chu Feng did not place them in his eyes.

"Precisely," The two men replied in unison.

Chapter 1780 – Exactly Who Is It?

The crowd became even more joyous upon seeing this scene.

As the saying goes, when watching a show, one would not mind it becoming bigger. Although Chu Feng had defeated Ximen Feixue, the disparity between the two of them was simply too enormous. Thus, although the match had revealed how powerful Chu Feng was, it had not been a marvelous battle to watch.

However, these two men from the Heavenly Law Palace were a different story. The two of them were both Divine Bodies. Furthermore, they were twin brothers. Thus, their Divine Powers had a resonance with one another.

It was precisely because of their special resonance that their Divine Powers appeared to be much more powerful than ordinary Divine Powers.

Thus, although their battle power was inferior to Chu Feng's, the crowd felt that this pair of brothers would be able to fight against him.

“Impudent!!!”

However, at the moment when the crowd was prepared to enjoy the show, an angry shout suddenly sounded out of nowhere. This ear-piercing voice caused the crowd to feel pain in their eardrums.

This was especially true for the two Heavenly Law Palace's brothers. They were in so much pain that they started to grimace, and hurriedly covered their ears. It was clear that that voice was aimed at the two of them.

Not long after that voice landed, a boundless oppressive might also appeared. That oppressive might covered the entire region.

Once that oppressive might appeared, space itself started to distort. Everyone present was able to feel that enormous pressure that covered their bodies and souls.

That oppressive might was so powerful that they were simply incapable of escaping it. With merely a thought, the owner of that oppressive might would be able to completely eliminate them, leaving behind neither body nor soul.

Martial Emperor. Furthermore, it was not an ordinary Martial Emperor. That person's cultivation... was most likely above the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. Else, it would be impossible for that oppressive might to be this powerful.

After being shocked, the crowd raised their heads and looked upward. It was only then that they discovered a figure was standing in the sky.

When they saw this person, Chu Feng and the others all revealed expressions of reverence.

This person was none other than that mysterious man that had appeared in front of the entrance before it had been opened.

Merely, this time around, he was no longer a projected image. Rather, it was his actual body. His actual body's oppressiveness was evidently many times more powerful than that of his image.

"The competition has yet to begin. Yet you all have begun to spar without permission. This is extremely disrespectful toward the party holding this competition."

"It is one thing for that Ximen Imperial Clansman to not understand the rules, but do the Heavenly Law Palace's disciples also lack understanding of rules?" That man stared at the two men from the Heavenly Law Palace and spoke in a stern manner.

"....."

Hearing those words, Ximen Feixue's bloody face began to become distorted. Although those words were being said to the two Heavenly Law Palace's brothers, they were actually insulting him.

However, that man's strength was extremely powerful. Furthermore, this was his territory. Thus, other than enduring the

humiliation, there was nothing else Ximen Feixue could do. Today, he had truly been utterly humiliated. The humiliation he had suffered today was even more enormous than all of the humiliation he had experienced in his life.

“Senior, we were merely joking around with Chu Feng. We never truly planned to fight him,” The two Heavenly Law Palace’s brothers said with smiles on their faces.

“That would be for the best,” That middle-aged man nodded. Then, he swept his gaze at the crowd, “All of you, listen carefully. The sparring will officially begin tomorrow. Before that, make sure to act properly. You are not allowed to fight without permission.”

“If there is anyone who refuses to listen, I will remove their qualifications to participate in the competition and expel them from this place.”

.....

Hearing those words, the crowd were all startled. This man’s attitude was truly unyielding.

Although all of the people present were from the younger generation, and their strengths were all greatly inferior to his, it remained that they all possessed grand origins. While these members of the younger generation might be afraid of him, the powers standing behind them might not necessarily be afraid of him.

However, this man’s attitude was extremely unyielding, and his tone did not leave room for anyone to say otherwise. It was evident that he did not place the powers behind these members of the younger generation in his eyes.

“What senior says is correct. As the saying goes, without rules, there will be no standards.”

“We have understood senior’s words. However, Chu Feng and

Ximen Feixue have already broken the rules. Senior, how shall this matter be handled?" Baili Xinghe said with a respectful appearance.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's eyes narrowed slightly. A trace of displeasure flashed through his eyes.

He discovered that this Baili Xinghe was a truly treacherous individual. It was clear by those words he said that he wanted for that man to kick Chu Feng and Ximen Feixue out of this competition.

Chu Feng didn't know how he had offended Baili Xinghe. However, at this moment, Chu Feng placed Baili Xinghe onto his list of enemies.

If others didn't provoke him, he wouldn't provoke them. If others provoked him, he would definitely eliminate them.

"What happened earlier was a bit different. The two of them were not sparring. Rather, Ximen Feixue publicly provoked Chu Feng. Although Chu Feng had attacked him, the way I see it, what he did was correct. He protected his dignity as a man. Thus, I am able to forgive Chu Feng's behavior," the man said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief. He had never expected this senior to speak on his behalf like that.

"Senior is wise, discriminating and fair-minded. I am truly in admiration," To Chu Feng's surprise, the man representing the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts began to clasp his fist and bow to that man with an expression of admiration.

Although he had spoken those words on his own behalf, it was very clear that he was crying out for justice for Chu Feng.

As the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's princess had invited Chu Feng to be a guest of their King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, and left a very good impression on Chu Feng, Chu Feng's current impression of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts was also

extremely good.

“While I am able to forgive Chu Feng’s behavior, I am not able to forgive this Ximen Feixue’s behavior,” The man turned his gaze to Ximen Feixue.

Hearing those words, Ximen Feixue’s expression took a huge change. What sort of situation was this? Chu Feng could be forgiven, but he could not? Wasn’t this simply discrimination against him?

“Senior, I was ignorant of the rules before. I hope senior will give me a chance,” Although Ximen Feixue was unconvinced in his heart, he still begged for forgiveness.

He did not wish to be the first one to be eliminated, because there were a lot of people outside. If he were to be kicked out from this place, he would not only humiliate himself, he would also humiliate the entire Ximen Imperial Clan.

“Woosh~~~”

However, the mysterious man completely ignored Ximen Feixue’s begging. He made a grabbing gesture in the air, and Ximen Feixue started to float upward. Then, he raised the hand he had made the grabbing gesture with, and made a throwing motion, and Ximen Feixue turned into a ray of light that started to fly toward the sky and out of the fort.

.....

At this moment, although the fort was sealed, the crowd’s gazes were still focused on the fort’s central region. They all knew that the strongest members of the younger generation from the Holy Land of Martialism were all gathered there.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a flash of light shone in the center region of the fort. Then, a figure shot out explosively from the fort.

“Ahhh~~~”

At the same time, Ximen Feixue’s scream began to resonate through heaven and earth.

“What is this?”

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all shocked. Why would someone fly out of the fort?

“That seemed to be a member of the younger generation. But exactly who is it? Why would he be beaten to such a state? The competition hasn’t started yet, right?”

The crowd looked carefully at Ximen Feixue, who had been shot out. However, because Ximen Feixue had been badly mutilated by Chu Feng, the crowd was unable to determine who he actually was.

Chapter 1781 – Losing All Face

Chapter 1781 – Losing All Face

“Feixue!!!”

While the others were unable to distinguish who the person that had been shot out from the fort was, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was able to instantly tell that it was his son the moment he heard Ximen Feixue’s scream.

Upon closer inspection of Ximen Feixue, he was overwhelmed with shock and horror. Disregarding the formation with the troops he had brought with him, his body shifted, and he arrived in the sky to catch Ximen Feixue.

“Feixue, what happened? Who left you with such a serious injury?” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief looked to his son in his bosom. While he was angered by the appearance of his son, he was mainly feeling heartache for the sufferings his son had obviously experienced.

Ximen Feixue was the most outstanding talent to have appeared in their Ximen Imperial Clan for the past several tens of thousands of years. He was also his most beloved son. The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had always considered Ximen Feixue to be his treasure.

In fact, the reason why he detested Chu Feng like he did was all because Chu Feng had publicly humiliated his son.

And now, his son had been beaten to such a state by someone. How could he not be enraged?

“Father, your son has disappointed you. I was actually the first to be eliminated,” Ximen Feixue laughed bitterly. He felt that he was too ashamed to face his father.

“Eliminated?” Hearing those words, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was startled. Then, he became extremely angry. With a

voice many times louder than thunder, he shouted at the fort down below, “Why was my son eliminated from the competition?!!!”

Once that voice was heard, many of the crowd below hurriedly covered their ears. The reason for that was because this voice was simply too ear-piercing.

“Eliminated? Why would he be eliminated?”

Although the voice was very ear-piercing, the crowd was able to clearly hear that Ximen Feixue had been eliminated.

“Ximen Feixue disobeyed the rules. Before the competition began, he provoked and insulted another participant to force a fight. As such, I had to kick him out of the competition.”

A man’s voice sounded from within the fort. The voice was loud and resounding, so much so that it surpassed even the Ximen Imperial Clan Clan Chief’s voice. Although that voice was very loud, it was not ear-piercing at all.

“Amazing!” At this moment, the crowd were all startled. With merely that sentence, the crowd was able to tell that the man inside the fort possessed strength above the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief.

“It is one thing to kick him out, but why did you injure my son?” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“It is not I who injured your son. Instead, he provoked Chu Feng, only to end up being injured by him,” The man’s voice sounded from the fort again.

“What? It was Chu Feng?”

“In that case, Ximen Feixue was kicked out from the competition because he provoked Chu Feng?”

“Holy shit. It’s one thing to be kicked out of the competition by provoking Chu Feng. However, he actually got beaten to such a

state by Chu Feng too?”

The crowd were all able to clearly hear the words spoken by that man. At this moment, many people began to snicker.

This matter was truly humiliating.

“Chu Feng! It’s that Chu Feng again!” After hearing the name ‘Chu Feng’, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was so angry that his veins were violently bulging. Boundless killing intent was surging in his eyes.

“Wuuaah.” Right at this moment, Ximen Feixue’s mouth was opened wide. Then, with a ‘puu,’ he sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

Due to being caught off guard, Ximen Feixue’s mouthful of blood sprayed directly onto the Ximen Imperial Clans’ Clan Chief’s face and body.

“Feixue, what happened?” Being sprayed with his son’s blood, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was not only not angered, he instead revealed a very worried expression.

Although Ximen Feixue had been seriously injured, those were, after all, only physical, external injuries. However, after Ximen Feixue sprayed out that mouthful of blood, his entire aura became incomparably weak. This was an internal injury.

“Father, your son is incompetent. The Heavenly Immortal Sword has been snatched away by that Chu Feng.”

“Right now, the Heavenly Immortal Sword is no longer your son’s,” Ximen Feixue laughed bitterly. His gaze was filled with incomparable frustration and disappointment.

Not only had he been defeated, he had been utterly defeated. He had truly failed and wiped over the floor with his defeat.

“Am I mishearing things? Ximen Feixue’s Heavenly Immortal Sword has been snatched away by Chu Feng? Furthermore, Chu

Feng has severed his connection with the Heavenly Immortal Sword? Is that why Ximen Feixue vomited blood?”

“But, the battle between Ximen Feixue and Chu Feng should have just ended. That Heavenly Immortal Sword should have just been snatched away by Chu Feng.”

“Holy mother of god! Exactly what sort of demon-level character is that Chu Feng? How could he be this powerful to be able to sever the relationship between Ximen Feixue and the Heavenly Immortal Sword in such a short period of time? One must know that the Heavenly Immortal Sword is no ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament!!!”

At this moment, the surrounding crowd had all perked up their ears. Thus, they were able to clearly hear each and every word that Ximen Feixue said.

After learning of what had happened, other than being amazed, they only felt more shock. They were all shocked by Chu Feng.

The gasps of shock from the surrounding crowd were like countless sharp blades when they entered the ears of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief. Those sharp blades were stabbing into his bones and making him feel utterly humiliated.

Suddenly, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief shouted, “Insolent!!!!”

Then, with an extremely angry gaze, he stared down at the fort below him, pointed at it and asked with incomparable rage, “You kicked my son out of the competition because he broke the rules. Yet, that Chu Feng also broke the rules. Why have you not kicked him out?”

“Why is it that you care about my son breaking the rules, and yet did nothing when my son was being injured by that Chu Feng?”

“When my son’s Heavenly Immortal Sword was snatched away by that Chu Feng, why did you do nothing about it?”

“What sort of host are you? Do you even have a trace of impartiality in you?”

His voice shook the heavens and echoed nonstop. The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was truly enraged. He was so utterly enraged that he had lost all ability to reason.

“Your son was the one who initiated the provocation. Thus, he invited the consequences upon himself,” These words sounded from the fort. However, merely those two sentences were enough to display that man’s attitude toward this matter.

“You’re fucking bullshitting me!!!”

Finally, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief exploded into a violent rage. Unable to contain himself anymore, he cursed out loud. Then, his body turned into a ray of light and, with his right fist clenched tightly, he shot his fist that contained the might of a rank three Martial Emperor toward the fort.

“Booom~~~”

His fist instantly brought about a loud explosion that echoed nonstop. Violent energy ripples sprung forth. Many of the surrounding crowd were knocked flying by the energy ripples like kites with broken strings.

However, even after such a fist strike, the fort was still completely undamaged. Instead, it was the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief that was knocked several tens of thousand of meters away through the air like an arrow shot out from a bow.

At the moment when the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief managed to steady himself, blood began to flow out from the corner of his mouth, and the fist that he had used to strike at the fort had also become badly mutilated. Even the bones of his fist had been shattered.

“Humph,” At this time, a snort sounded from the fort. It was filled with contempt.

However, even when facing that snort, the extremely enraged Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief did not attack the fort again. Other than the corners of his mouth that started to twitch, he did nothing.

From merely that fist strike, he had realized the disparity between him and that man.

“Sssss~~~”

Seeing this scene, the crowd present were all unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

They had thought that the master of the fort was an extraordinary existence. And now, it would appear that it was exactly as they had expected.

At the very least, the grand Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief was unable to withstand a single blow from that man.

Deep underground outside of the fort, the Four Great Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders were also paying attention to what was happening aboveground. They sighed, “No matter what, that Ximen is a Clan Chief. Why would his temper be this bad? Look at the situation now, he has disgraced himself in public. Not only has he lost face for the Ximen Imperial Clan, he has humiliated all of our Four Great Imperial Clans.”

At this moment, the Dongfang, Beitang and Nangong Imperial Clan's three Utmost Exalted Elders were all shaking their heads. They felt that the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief had been too impulsive.

Only the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder remained silent. However, at this moment, coldness filled his aged eyes.

“Chu Feng, this old man will definitely dismember your body into ten thousand pieces.”

Suddenly, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder said those words while gnashing his teeth in anger.

Chapter 1782 – Friend Appearing On Stage

“Calm your anger. It is to our benefit that Chu Feng has shown up. Rest assured, we will help you take the Heavenly Immortal Sword back. At that time, the Heavenly Immortal Sword will still be your Ximen Imperial Clan’s possession. As for that Chu Feng... he will undoubtedly be killed,” The other three Utmost Exalted Elders said with beaming smiles.

After knowing that Chu Feng had come, the ones who were most excited were them. They had set up an inescapable net just to capture Chu Feng. Since Chu Feng had shown up, it meant that Chu Feng would definitely not be able to escape.

“Gulp~~~”

Inside the fort, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish all gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

While the people outside of the fort were unable to see the situation inside, they were able to see everything outside. Thus, they had also seen what had happened earlier.

The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had attacked the fort, only to be knocked flying by the fort. This was a truly stunning sight to behold.

However, what they saw was not only limited to the humiliation the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had suffered. In addition to that, they had also seen his overflowing killing intent.

Thus, they turned their gazes filled with worries to Chu Feng.

While he might be safe within the fort, if Chu Feng were to exit the fort, how would he be able to survive?

In fact, it was not only the three of them that were thinking like this; many other people were also thinking the same thing. However, Chu Feng had a very unconcerned expression. He was focused on the Heavenly Immortal Sword that he held in his hand.

While it was true that his Evil God Sword was more powerful than the Heavenly Immortal Sword, Chu Feng did not dare to use his Evil God Sword again.

As for this Heavenly Immortal Sword, although he was planning to sell it off, he did not mind using it before he sold it. After all, he also knew very well how powerful the Heavenly Immortal Sword was.

Although it was inferior to the Evil God Sword, it was superior to ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, an aura surged forth, and the sky started to change as a ray of light flew out from the Heavenly Immortal Sword and entered Chu Feng’s body.

The very next moment, that Heavenly Immortal Sword that was violently trembling stopped its trembling. Its current appearance was much more obedient than the time it was in Ximen Feixue’s possession.

“Absolute Submission.”¹

“Chu Feng was capable of making even such a weapon enter Absolute Submission?”

“Making it enter Absolute Submission is not the most amazing feat. The most amazing feat was that he was able to make such a powerful Incomplete Imperial Armament enter Absolute Submission in such a short period of time.”

As they saw Chu Feng making the Heavenly Immortal Sword enter Absolute Submission before their very eyes, the dragons among men, the peak geniuses of the Holy Land of Martialism, were all stunned. Unable to help themselves, they sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

“How could this be?! That Chu Feng possesses such enormous talent?!” At this moment, envy and refusal to accept appeared

within Baili Xinghe's gaze that was filled with hostility toward Chu Feng.

He also wanted the Heavenly Immortal Sword. He felt that the Heavenly Immortal Sword was very well suited to him, and that it should be his.

Thus, when Chu Feng was trying to subdue the Heavenly Immortal Sword, he had hoped that Chu Feng would fail to do so. If that were the case, he would have the opportunity to make the Heavenly Immortal Sword his.

However, not only did Chu Feng not fail, he had instead made the Heavenly Immortal Sword enter Absolute Submission. This made him feel an enormous frustration and displeasure.

In fact, not to mention the others, a flash of surprise even appeared in the eyes of the mysterious man standing in the sky.

Merely, his surprise lasted but a moment. Not to mention the others, not even Chu Feng noticed it.

Suddenly, the mysterious man looked to Chu Feng's pagoda and said, "Chili Pepper, Big Radish, Little Radish, you all can come out."

Hearing those words, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish were all startled. However, they did not hesitate and all walked out from within Chu Feng's pagoda.

"What? They're actually three Martial Kings? They are that Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish?" Upon seeing the three of them, the people in the crowd were all shocked. While the crowd had thought about a lot of possibilities for Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish's identities, it was clear that they were completely different from what the crowd had anticipated.

They... they were too freaking weak. How could they reach here with their level of cultivation? Furthermore, they got here before them?

“You three do not possess the level of cultivation to participate in the competition tomorrow. If you three wish to withdraw from the competition, you can do so now,” The mysterious man said.

“We’ll withdraw,” Big Radish and Little Radish said in unison.

“I’ll also withdraw,” Chili Pepper hesitated momentarily, then also declared that she would withdraw.

“Mn, the three of you know your own standings,” The mysterious man nodded.

“Merely, senior, may we stay here and watch the competition of the various experts?” Chili Pepper asked.

At the same time, Big Radish and Little Radish were also looking at that mysterious man with longing gazes.

“Heh...” The mysterious man laughed lightly. Then he said, “You three were brought in here by Chu Feng. Unless you’ve broken the rules, only he will be able to decide whether you three can stay or not.”

“So they were actually brought in here by Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, the crowd involuntarily turned their gazes onto Chu Feng. Their gazes were filled with admiration.

They had all come here after passing through the various trials and hurdles. Thus, they knew how difficult it was. Especially that final hurdle; the more people there were, the more difficult it would become.

Chu Feng had actually been able to bring three Martial Kings in with him. Furthermore, he had been the second fastest to reach this place. How enormous was the strength that he possessed?

At this moment, even Leng Yue, the first to arrive in this place, revealed a complicated gaze.

However, they didn’t know that not only had Chu Feng brought Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish in with him, he had also

brought Yan Xie with him. He had come here while bringing four people with him.

“I hope you all will be able to remember the words I said before. The competition will officially begin tomorrow. For now, you all should properly rest yourselves,” After he finished saying those words, the mysterious man disappeared into thin air.

However, at this moment, the crowd did not return to their respective pagodas. Instead, their gazes were focused on Chu Feng the entire time. Chu Feng had allowed them to see a great show today. It would not be excessive to say that Chu Feng had broadened their horizons.

In fact, for some people, they had begun to feel that they were inferior to Chu Feng before even fighting him.

This was especially true for that pair of Heavenly Law Palace’s brothers that still stood before Chu Feng. They were rejoicing in the fact that they had not actually fought against Chu Feng.

The two of them had seen Chu Feng subduing the Heavenly Immortal Sword at a very close distance. Thus, they knew deeply in their hearts that they were inferior to Chu Feng.

He was a demon-level character. Although all of them were called demon-level characters, they felt that Chu Feng was someone that was actually qualified to be known as a demon-level character.

While the crowd’s gazes were all focused on Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s gaze was focused on the Heavenly Immortal Sword.

Carved on the Heavenly Immortal Sword was the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique. Compared to the Heavenly Immortal Sword, the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique was the actual thing of value.

However, the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique was something that only the master of the Heavenly Immortal Sword could see. Now that the Heavenly Immortal Sword was in Chu

Feng's possession, he would naturally be able to see the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique. As he saw the superb sword technique, even Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from exclaiming in admiration, "What a good sword technique!"

"The Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique is naturally a good sword technique. Junior brother Chu Feng, congratulations."

Suddenly, a voice sounded from the forest in the distance

"Junior brother?" Hearing those two words, Chu Feng was startled. The reason for that was because that person had addressed him as 'junior brother.' Furthermore, that voice was so familiar.

Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly shifted his gaze toward the direction where the voice sounded from.

It was only then that he discovered that a man was currently walking over from the direction of the forest with a beaming smile on his face.

That man was very powerful. Not only did he possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, his cultivation was also that of a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

To Chu Feng's great surprise, not only was this man someone that he knew, he was someone that he knew very well.

This man was his senior brother from the Azure Dragon School, his good brother of many years, Zhang Tianyi.

Zhang Tianyi had arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism together with Zi Ling, Su Rou and the others. However, Chu Feng had not managed to see Zhang Tianyi the entire time. He had truly never expected to see Zhang Tianyi here today. Furthermore, Zhang Tianyi's strength had become this powerful, to the points where he was much more powerful than Zi Ling and the others.

"Zhang...." Overcome with joy, Chu Feng wanted to call out his

senior brother Zhang. However, right when the words reached his mouth, he swallowed them.

Not only was Zhang Tianyi's cultivation so unreasonably powerful, his outfit was also somewhat special. He was wearing a cyan-green light armor. His armor was evidently special. Furthermore, a large character was written on the armor. It was the character 'Gong.'

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

How could Chu Feng still sell it if it entered Absolute Submission? ↩

Chapter 1783 – Senior Brother's Origin

“Gong!”

“Emperor Gong’s successor!!!”

“Could it be that senior brother Zhang is that Emperor Gong’s successor?!!!” Upon thinking of this possibility, Chu Feng was enormously shocked.

“Emperor Gong’s successor? That person is Emperor Gong’s successor? But, that Emperor Gong’s successor addressed Chu Feng as junior brother earlier. Could it be that they are related?”

At this moment, the crowd’s gazes were all focused on Zhang Tianyi. They had not only discovered Zhang Tianyi’s identity, they were also unable to forget the fact that this Emperor Gong’s successor had addressed Chu Feng as ‘junior brother’ in a very intimate manner.

“Everyone, I am the eighth generation successor of Emperor Gong, Zhang Tianyi.”

“Tomorrow, the person competing with all of you will be me. Although we will be fighting one another with weapons tomorrow, I am still very happy to be able to befriend everyone here,” Zhang Tianyi arrived at the stage and then clasped his fist to the crowd.

At this moment, the everyone present was welcoming him with smiles on their faces and returning his greeting. Even the proud and arrogant Baili Xinghe did not dare to act disrespectfully toward Zhang Tianyi. After all, Zhang Tianyi was the successor of Emperor Gong.

“Humph.”

However, after seeing Zhang Tianyi, that Leng Yue snorted coldly. Then, with a mocking smile on her face, she turned around and entered her pagoda.

While the others might not have noticed this scene, Chu Feng noticed it immediately.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that when Leng Yue snorted coldly, a trace of discomfort flashed across Zhang Tianyi's face. A special sort of feeling flashed through his eyes.

After Zhang Tianyi finished greeting the crowd, he walked over to Chu Feng and, with a smile on his face, patted Chu Feng's shoulder, "Junior brother Chu Feng, I finally get to see you again. I trust that you have been well since we last met."

"Senior brother Zhang, you have truly given me a pleasant surprise," Chu Feng laughed heartedly. Then, he hugged Zhang Tianyi.

The two brothers embraced one another without saying anything. Their affection for one another was endless.

"Come, let's talk inside," Chu Feng invited Zhang Tianyi to his pagoda.

"They're really fellow martial brothers. I've heard that Chu Feng's origin was extraordinary. To see it for myself today, it seems that that is really the case."

"Sigh, it is no wonder that senior discriminated in favor of Chu Feng. With this relationship, it would be strange if he didn't."

Seeing that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi had entered Chu Feng's pagoda together, the crowd revealed even more shock. At the same time, they suddenly felt sympathy for Ximen Feixue.

Chu Feng possessed this sort of relationship with Zhang Tianyi. Yet, Ximen Feixue had actually provoked him publicly like that. He had simply been courting disaster.

At this moment, Chu Feng had entered his pagoda with Zhang Tianyi. Chili Pepper and the others, being discreet, had walked out of Chu Feng's pagoda to allow the two of them space to talk with one another privately.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, you have truly shocked me. Although I knew that your talent was exceptional, I never expected you to progress this quickly.”

After entering the pagoda, Zhang Tianyi began to inspect Chu Feng from head to toe, and then from toe to head. Seeing such a robust and strong Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi revealed a joyous expression.

“Senior brother Zhang, you are the one that has truly shocked me instead. Rank eight Half Martial Emperor, your cultivation greatly surpasses mine.”

Chu Feng was also extremely happy. He did not feel the slightest bit of jealousy from Zhang Tianyi having a stronger cultivation than him. All he felt was happiness. As brothers, he only wished for Zhang Tianyi to become stronger and stronger.

Zhang Tianyi sighed. “Don’t mention it. I know best how my cultivation came to be. It is simply incomparable to yours,” Zhang Tianyi smiled bitterly.

“Senior brother Zhang, how did you become Emperor Gong’s successor? Didn’t you become the disciple of that blind old man? Exactly how did you obtain this great opportunity? Quickly, tell me about it,” Chu Feng was impatient to know about what Zhang Tianyi had experienced.

Speaking of it, Chu Feng could be considered to be Emperor Qing’s successor. However, at the very most, he could only be considered to be half a successor. That said, this was already an enormous opportunity for Chu Feng.

Yet, Zhang Tianyi was actually the true successor of Emperor Gong. The opportunity he had received was even greater than the one Chu Feng had received.

It could be seen from how Zhang Tianyi was able to obtain his current cultivation.

“This is a long story. It’s better that I try to make this long story short.”

“Back then, it was only because of you that we were able to become master’s disciples. After being cared for by master, we arrived at the Holy Land of Martialism, and our cultivations had also increased greatly.”

“Afterward, master sent little brother Wushang and me to the Overlord Domain, and he told the two of us to train by ourselves. However, master also made a request of us. That is, he didn’t want us to go and find you on our own.”

“Although our cultivations were both strengthened with master’s help, we were still extremely weak and small in a place like the Overlord Domain.”

“In this period of time, little brother Wushang and I suffered quite some hardships too. Our greatest humiliation was at the hands of that devil woman Leng Yue,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Leng Yue?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled. It was no wonder why that Leng Yue had looked at Zhang Tianyi with such contempt, and why Zhang Tianyi’s mood was that complicated. It turned out that the two of them had known one another to begin with.

“Senior brother Zhang, exactly what happened?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“That day, Leng Yue was fighting against a hidden expert’s disciple. Little brother Wushang and I heard the news and decided to go over there to broaden our horizons and see exactly how exceptional the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace was.”

“However, when we saw that the legendary number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace actually had such an ordinary appearance, little brother Wushang muttered to me about it.”

“To our surprise, that Leng Yue’s ears were extremely sharp. She heard the words that little brother Wushang had said to me, and then dug out our eyes publicly. Then, she threw the two of us into a cesspool.”

When mentioning this matter, Zhang Tianyi began to tightly clench his fists. He was clenching them so tightly that creaking noises could be heard.

Chu Feng knew Zhang Tianyi very well. With Zhang Tianyi’s nature, he would naturally not be able to endure this sort of humiliation.

In fact, after knowing that Leng Yue had actually done such a wicked thing to his brother, Chu Feng was also surging with anger. He now hated that Leng Yue to his bones.

Although Chu Feng was filled with anger, he did not interrupt Zhang Tianyi, and let him finish his story.

“Not only did that Leng Yue throw the two of us into a cesspool, she also bound us with her martial power. She wanted the two of us to drown to death in that cesspool.”

“Fortunately, my father stepped forth and helped us. Else, we would’ve definitely died,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Father?” Hearing the word ‘father,’ Chu Feng became shocked. He remembered clearly that Zhang Tianyi was an orphan.

“My father is Emperor Gong’s seventh generation successor. You saw him earlier,” Zhang Tianyi said with a beaming smile.

“Ah? It’s that senior?” Chu Feng was extremely shocked upon hearing those words. What sort of situation was this? It was not that Zhang Tianyi had encountered an enormous opportunity. Rather, that he had been Emperor Gong’s successor to begin with?

“Actually, I was also shocked the first time I saw my father. I truly never expected to be able to see my father in my lifetime. Furthermore, my father was actually that powerful.”

“Truth be told, I was also very shocked after finding out what had happened back then. I had thought that I was an orphan. However, to my surprise, I had actually carried an extremely important mission.”

Zhang Tianyi gasped. As he spoke, his gaze began to flicker. It was as if the scene of him encountering his father for the first time was still vivid in his eyes.

“Senior brother Zhang, exactly what is going on?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chapter 1784 – Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation

“Speaking of this matter, it is also a long story. It’s better that I make that story short too. Back then, my father didn’t possess the strength he does now. Yet, together with my mother, they created me.”

“During the time when I was one year old, my father’s enemies found him. My father decided to take on his enemies himself, and he had my mother and my clansmen take me away.”

“However, it turns out that my father’s enemy also brought helpers that intercepted my mother and clansmen.”

“At the moment of crisis, my mother used her life as the price to have my clansmen take me away.”

“My mother died because of that. As for me, I do not know how, but I ended up in the Eastern Sea Region, and in the Nine Provinces Continent on top of that. Afterward, I became an orphan.”

“As for my father, although he managed to survive, when he saw my mother’s corpse and the corpses of my clansmen, he was filled with grief and heartbreak.”

“Due to the fact that not only were my mother and clansmen killed, I was also nowhere to be found. My father thought that we had all died,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“While the pain of having one’s clan wiped out is indeed very heavy, you aren’t dead. You were merely lost. That doesn’t mean that you were definitely dead. Why did your father come to the conclusion that you were dead, and not try to find you?” Chu Feng asked.

“This cannot be blamed on my father. My father had left a tracking imprint on me. As long as I was alive, he would be able to

find me anywhere. However, at that time, he had been unable to find me. This left only one possibility in his mind. That was, that I was dead,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“But you weren’t dead. Instead, you ended up in the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. I wasn’t dead. I merely ended up in the Eastern Sea Region. It might be because the distance was too far, or due to some sort of isolation power, but even though I had a tracking imprint on me, my father was unable to sense me. However, my father was able to sense me as long as I returned to the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Thus, when master and I returned to the Holy Land of Martialism, my father was surprised to discover that I was still alive. Thus, he left to find me right away.”

“He had been protecting me from the shadows the entire time. It was only when little brother Wushang and I nearly died at the hands of that devil woman Leng Yue that my father acted to save us. Afterward, he told me about my origins,” Zhang Tianyi explained.

“Never would I have expected that senior brother Zhang actually possessed such a tragic origin,” Hearing what Zhang Tianyi said, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. Although it involved different reasons, Zhang Tianyi’s origins were somewhat similar to his own.

Merely, Zhang Tianyi had managed to reunite with his father. While he... was still unable to see his father.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Is the enemy who exterminated your clan still present?” The hatred of his mother being killed, his clansmen being killed and the separation from his father for many years, it was all because of that enemy from back then.

A hatred this enormous could not go unavenged. If those people that caused this were still alive, without even Zhang Tianyi saying

anything, Chu Feng would definitely help him obtain revenge.

“Dead. With the exception of one person, they’ve all been killed by my father,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“One person? Who is that?” Chu Feng asked.

“My father also does not know who exactly that person is. However, he was the main culprit behind our Zhang Family’s calamity.”

“Our Zhang Family has been hidden from the public for years. Ordinary people were simply unable to find out where we lived. It was that man that guided my father’s enemy to find our Zhang Family.”

“Merely, after that day, he has disappeared completely. No matter how hard my father tried, he was unable to find him.”

“However, my father said that someone like him would not die that easily. He must still be alive somewhere in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Unfortunately, other than the fact that he possessed a snake-like mark on his forehead, we do not know anything about him,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Damn it! If that man is alive, I will definitely not forgive him,” Chu Feng said.

“If I am to find him, I will definitely not let him off that easily,” When mentioning that man, Zhang Tianyi’s hatred was overflowing.

“Senior brother Zhang, you said that little brother Wushang had also been saved by your father. In that case, is he here too?” Chu Feng asked.

“No. Little brother Wushang possessed an Imperial Bloodline. My father is unable to help him with his martial cultivation. Thus, he sent little brother Wushang to one of his old friend’s hidden

places so that little brother Wushang could progress there.”

“If you wish to find him, I am able to tell you where he is,” Zhang Tianyi handed Chu Feng a map.

After receiving the map from Zhang Tianyi, Chu Feng discovered that the hidden location that little brother Wushang was training in was truly well-hidden. However, if the opportunity presented itself, he would definitely go over there to pay a visit to Jiang Wushang.

After all, the three of them were brothers, and they had known each other since their time at the Nine Provinces Continent. Over the years, their affection for one another had grown very deep. For them to reunite with one another in the Holy Land of Martialism was not easy.

Chu Feng carefully put away the map that Zhang Tianyi had handed him.

Then, he said, “Senior brother Zhang, your father is Emperor Gong’s successor. Did he obtain Emperor Gong’s teachings, or was he a descendant of Emperor Gong to begin with?”

“Emperor Gong is our clan’s ancestor. The people of our clan are all descendants of Emperor Gong. The title of Emperor Gong’s successor has been passed on from generation to generation,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Senior brother Zhang, since the title of Emperor Gong’s successor is passed on from generation to generation, why is his name Emperor Gong and not Emperor Zhang?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“My ancestor’s name was originally Zhang Xianfeng. However, for the sake of protecting the safety of his descendants, he changed his name to Gong Wuming,” Zhang Tianyi said. ¹

“The surname ‘Zhang’ would be Gong without Chang. So that’s the case. I understand now,” Chu Feng came to a sudden

realization. Even though Emperor Gong had concealed his true name, he had left behind a trace of a hint.²

“No matter what, it is still a thing worthy of celebration for senior brother Zhang to be able to meet your relative,” Chu Feng congratulated.

He was feeling joy for Zhang Tianyi from the bottom of his heart. As a person with a similar experience, Chu Feng knew the loneliness Zhang Tianyi had suffered the most. He knew the desire of wanting to meet one’s relatives the most.

At this moment, Zhang Tianyi also smiled. It could be seen that even though his clansmen were all dead and his mother was also dead, he was extremely content to be able to reunite with his father.

“Senior brother Zhang, you have invited all these people here and then announced your name, are you planning to announce Emperor Gong’s true surname to the world?” Chu Feng asked.

“Gong Wuming is not my ancestor’s true name to begin with. He only addressed himself as Gong Wuming because he feared his family being implicated by him.”

“As for now, only my father and I remain from our Zhang Family. My father felt that it was time for the world to know the true identity of my ancestor,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded in agreement.

“That said, it was actually not my intention to hold the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly. Instead, it is a trial my father has set for me,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Trial?” Chu Feng’s gaze shone.

“Mn. Do you still remember that I trained in a Forbidden Mysterious Technique?” Zhang Tianyi asked.

“Of course. Senior brother Zhang’s Forbidden Mysterious

Technique is not at all weaker than Divine Bodies,” Chu Feng said.

“Indeed. That Forbidden Mysterious Technique of mine possesses a great origin,” When mentioning this matter, Zhang Tianyi was very proud. He said, “I had thought since long ago that the Forbidden Mysterious Technique I trained in possessed even more powerful strength. Merely, I was only unable to grasp or comprehend it.”

“In fact, the Forbidden Mysterious Technique I trained in is the one that has been passed on from generation to generation in our Zhang Family. It is fundamental to how we became powerful. It is also fundamental to how my ancestor’s name spread through the Holy Land of Martialism, and how became his era’s overlord.”

“The true name of that Forbidden Mysterious Technique is Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation?” Upon hearing that name, Chu Feng realized that that Forbidden Mysterious Technique was not simple.

Previous Chapter Next Chapter

Gong → a last name meaning bow/arch. Wuming → Nameless. ↩

Zhang 张 is a compound character (not really a compound surname because there aren’t two characters. It composed of Gong 弓 → (Bow) and Chang 长 → (Long/Wide).

More can be learned here. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhang_\(surname\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhang_(surname)) ↩

Chapter 1785 – For One’s Brother, Resolve

“That’s right. I am currently only at the Immortal Fire First Layer Transformation. However, my cultivation has already increased this enormously to my current level.”

“As for my father, he has reached the Immortal Fire Second Layer Transformation. Although he cannot be said to be unparalleled in the Holy Land of Martialism, he is still a rare expert.

“As for my ancestor, the Emperor Gong of yore, he had mastered the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation. Having mastered the Tri-layer Transformation, even the Ancient Era’s Elves from that time feared him enormously. During his era, he was truly unparalleled.”

“My father has said that as long as I am able to obtain the title of the Strongest of the Younger Generation, he will help me open up the Second Layer Transformation. As long as I am able to successfully open the Second Layer Transformation, while I will not dare to guarantee other things, I am certain that I will be able to reach the Martial Emperor realm,” After saying these words, Zhang Tianyi showed a face filled with anticipation.

“To reach the Martial Emperor realm directly? What a profound mysterious technique,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to admire Zhang Tianyi’s mysterious technique. With the opening of each layer, his cultivation would increase dramatically. This was truly miraculous.

“Actually, the mysterious technique is not that profound. The one that’s powerful is my ancestor,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Oh? What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Each layer of the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation is more difficult than the previous one. To train in it can be said to be

as difficult as scaling the heavens. Back then, my ancestor possessed exceptional talent and managed to steadily conquer the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation to become an overlord.”

“As for us, his descendants, we merely managed to obtain grace from our ancestor,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Grace from your ancestor? Could it be that your ancestor did something?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. At the same time that my ancestor mastered the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation, he also realized how difficult the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation was. In order to help his descendants master the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation successfully, he used a special method to pass on his strength.”

“When his strength is combined with the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation, his descendants will be able to reach a breakthrough rapidly. Compared to having his descendants train in the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation themselves, this method is much easier,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“So that’s the case. Your ancestor was truly a thoughtful person,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. With my ancestor’s ability, he should have been able to live for over ten thousand years or even longer. However, in order to preserve his power for the benefit of his descendants, my ancestor died before he reached five thousand years old,” Zhang Tianyi said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was surprised. Evidently, Emperor Gong had sacrificed himself for his descendants. That sort of spirit was truly rare to come by.

“Not only that, my ancestor also left behind instructions. For the sake of allowing our clan to continue on, all those who are able to master the Tri-layer Transformation are to use the same method to

preserve their power to benefit their descendants during their peak,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“This...” Chu Feng was at a loss of words. While Emperor Gong’s spirit was worthy of admiration, his request truly made things difficult for his descendants.

No matter what one decided to do oneself, it would be fine. However, to force others to do the same would always be wrong.

Furthermore, those who managed to master the Tri-layer Transformation were all qualified to become overlords. Who would be willing to sacrifice themselves at their pinnacle for the benefit of others?

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng asked, “In that case, has there been anyone who has managed to master the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation?”

“While my ancestor left behind the method, only the ones with the strongest talent in our clan are qualified to receive his power. That is why there’s me, an eighth generation successor.”

“However, the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation is simply too difficult. Even though my ancestor sacrificed himself, the majority of his descendants were only able to reach the Immortal Fire Second Layer Transformation.”

“From the day of my ancestor’s death till now, we have had a total of eight generations of successors. Among them, only one senior was able to master the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation.”

“Unfortunately, that senior had been born at the wrong time. Although he had mastered the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation and obtained the same might as my ancestor, he was coincidentally born into the same era as Emperor Qing.”

“Emperor Qing?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

“That’s right, it was that Emperor Qing, the same Emperor Qing that was deemed to be the strongest of the Five Emperors. Before him, no one would dare to declare themselves to be Emperors.” When mentioning this matter, Zhang Tianyi had an expression of regret on his face.

As for Chu Feng, his heart was also moved. He was able to guess who the senior that Zhang Tianyi mentioned was. Likely, he was the same person who had left his strand of aura behind in the Sealing Ancient Village.

“The might of Emperor Qing is merely a rumor. Why are you so certain that that senior from your clan was inferior to Emperor Qing?” Chu Feng asked.

“The two of them fought each other privately before. Although that battle was very hidden and, no one else other than my clan’s senior and Emperor Qing knew about it, you should know how the battle concluded even without me saying it,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng really understood. Evidently, the battle had concluded with Emperor Qing’s victory. Else, that era’s overlord would not have been Emperor Qing. Instead, it would have been that senior Zhang Tianyi had spoken of.

“After that senior was defeated by Emperor Qing, he bitterly trained for some time in order to try to defeat Emperor Qing again. Unfortunately, Emperor Qing became stronger and stronger. He reached a state where he could not be contended against.”

“Unable to see a hope of defeating Emperor Qing anymore, that senior followed my ancestor’s instructions and sacrificed himself to pass on his strength. Unfortunately... the later generations all failed to master the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation,” Zhang Tianyi said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng also felt regret for the Zhang Family. However, more than that, he pondered exactly how powerful Emperor Qing was back then.

He was actually able to make someone who had mastered the Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation give up all hope?

“Senior brother Zhang, in that case, you must absolutely win the competition tomorrow?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. However, this is not my father deliberately making things difficult for me. Rather, it is the rule left behind by my ancestor. According to my ancestor’s rule, only those younger than a hundred, and those who are the strongest of their younger generation in our clan can use his power to open the Immortal Fire Second Layer Transformation.”

“Else... they must use their own strength to defeat all of their fellow members of the younger generation from the Holy Land of Martialism,” After Zhang Tianyi said those words, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Junior brother Chu Feng, when we were planning to leave for the Eastern Sea Region, we fought one another in the Azure Dragon School.”

“I was defeated by you in that match. After that, the distance between us grew further and further. I had thought that I would not have the opportunity to fight against you again.”

“However, to my surprise, my ancestor has given me the opportunity to fight you again. Truth be told, what I look forward to the most is being able to fight against you again. Regardless of victory or defeat, it is still what I wish for.”

“I’m also looking forward to it,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Oh, that’s right. Junior brother Chu Feng, we will get to choose our opponents in the battles tomorrow. You must not select that devil woman Leng Yue as your opponent. You must definitely leave her for me.”

“Although I cannot kill her, I must make her have a taste of her own medicine, make her suffer the same humiliation that she made little brother Wushang and me suffer.”

After finishing saying those words, Zhang Tianyi's gaze turned complicated. It was as if the scene of the humiliation was right before his eyes.

“What percentage of certainty do you have in defeating that Leng Yue?” Chu Feng asked.

“Truth be told, I only have a fifty percent certainty,” Zhang Tianyi said with a bitter smile. “While our cultivation and battle power might be the same, her techniques might not necessarily be inferior to my own. I can only say that I have a fifty percent chance of victory. However, even with that being the case, I must still defeat her.”

“You will,” Chu Feng patted Zhang Tianyi's shoulder with a smile.

While Chu Feng said those words with his mouth, he was thinking in his heart, ‘Senior brother Zhang, it is very likely that Leng Yue does not possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, but instead one that is capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.’

“Junior brother Chu Feng, the competition will begin tomorrow. We brothers can continue to chat with one another slowly. For today, it is better that we properly rest ourselves.”

“Oh, that's right. You must not go easy on me tomorrow,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng nodded.

After Zhang Tianyi left, Chu Feng had an expression of worry on his face. He was at a loss as to what to do. He had not expect that the competition tomorrow would be this important to Zhang Tianyi.

After a while, Chu Feng smiled a relieved smile. It was as if he had come to a decision.

“Hey, fool, what are you thinking about?” Right at this moment,

a pleasant-sounding voice suddenly sounded in Chu Feng's ears.

Hearing this voice, Chu Feng was overjoyed. "Eggy, you've woken up?!!!"

"Rubbish, if I'm not awake, who's talking to you?" Eggy said with a mischievous laugh.

Hearing this familiar teasing, Chu Feng was even more overjoyed. With a thought, he cast his consciousness into his world spirit space.

Sure enough, the beautiful woman was standing there with an attractive posture and a smile on her face as she looked at him.

Chapter 1786 – Don't Make Things Difficult For Me

“Milady Queen, I’ve missed you to death.”

Seeing that Eggy had woken up, Chu Feng was unable to contain his excitement. Like an eagle trying to capture a little chick, he pounced at Eggy.

If he were to successfully reach Eggy, that little beauty would definitely be embraced by Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

However, when she saw the incoming Chu Feng, Eggy’s body shifted. As her skirt fluttered, a gentle breeze swirled. Then, a fragrant aroma assailed Chu Feng’s nostrils and left him feeling very relaxed.

However, by the time Chu Feng landed on the ground, Eggy was already no longer standing where she was.

“Little boy, you’re trying to take advantage of this Queen again? This Queen is an extremely noble person, how could I allow you to sully me repeatedly?” Eggy’s laughing voice sounded from behind Chu Feng.

Turning his head over, Chu Feng discovered that Eggy was looking at him with a mischievous smile on her face. Even though she was smiling mischievously, due to the fact that she possessed an extremely beautiful face and innocent airs, no matter how Chu Feng looked at her, she appeared to be extremely adorable.

“Eggy, your cultivation...”

“Rank three Half Martial Emperor. You’ve actually broken through directly to rank three Half Martial Emperor?” After sensing Eggy’s current aura, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

Even though he knew that the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers

might help Eggy increase her cultivation, he had not expected that her cultivation would increase this much.

After all, Eggy's method to increase her cultivation was similar to the way Chu Feng increased his cultivation. While she could increase her cultivation by absorbing source energy, the amount needed was incomparable to ordinary world spirits.

It was beyond Chu Feng's expectations for the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers to bring about such a great benefit to Eggy.

"That's true. For this Queen to possess her current cultivation, it's all thanks to the Golden Leaf World Spirit Flowers you got for me."

"This Queen has always been one to repay favors shown to her. In order to express my thanks to you, here, I'll bestow you with a hug." As Eggy spoke, she began to gracefully walk toward Chu Feng while smiling sweetly. When she was about to reach Chu Feng, she suddenly leaped. Like an elf, she jumped into Chu Feng's bosom.

As he felt that soft body reaching his bosom, Chu Feng's heartbeat actually started to accelerate. Chu Feng, a person who would remain calm even before Mount Tai, was actually nervous from Eggy throwing herself into his arms.

Chu Feng could be considered to be someone who had embraced quite a few women. Yet, when embracing Eggy, he felt the most wonderful.

When such a beauty had entered his bosom, how could Chu Feng possibly let her get away? He extended his arms and planned to tightly hug Eggy.

However, before he could even hug her, Eggy's delicate body suddenly moved backwards; she had once again separated herself from Chu Feng's bosom. The only thing that remained was her alluring fragrant aroma.

Eggy hid to the side and extended her little tongue, “I gave you the opportunity, but you were unable to seize it.”

“Tsk,” Chu Feng curled his lips. Even though he was feeling a bit unreconciled, there was nothing he could do.

Her Lady Queen’s battle power was at least capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation. Furthermore, Chu Feng didn’t even know her overall battle power. Likewise, he also did not know her abilities.

Thus, although Eggy was only a rank three Half Martial Emperor, it was not certain that Chu Feng would be able to defeat her. Thus, even though she was toying with him, there was nothing that Chu Feng could do about it.

“It’s fine for me to not hug you. However, the next time we encounter danger, you must not make the selfish decision to sacrifice yourself,” Chu Feng said in a very serious manner.

“Since when have I sacrificed myself? I merely slept for a while. I know everything that you’ve encountered during the time I was asleep,” Eggy said in a witty manner.

“In that case, do you know how worried I was?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course I do. I’m no fool,” Eggy’s beautiful eyes narrowed as she revealed a brilliant smile. Her appearance was so sweet that she could melt one’s heart.

“Oh you,” Faced with Eggy’s ability to act cute, Chu Feng gave up his resistance. He no longer had the heart to continue finding fault in her.

“Brother Chu Feng!!!” Right at this moment, Yan Xie walked in with a nervous expression on his face.

“Someone’s looking for you. Quickly, go back out,” Eggy waved her hand.

Seeing Eggy acting like this, Chu Feng was truly reluctant to part

with her. However, as proper business was more important, Chu Feng ended up casting his consciousness back into his body.

It was only then that Chu Feng discovered that not only had Yan Xie walked in, he was also holding a special letter in his hand.

That letter was flickering with light and lingering with runes. Furthermore, it contained world spirit power. It was a world spirit letter. Without the ability of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it was impossible for someone to open that letter.

“Who sent that letter?” Chu Feng asked.

“Leng Yue,” Yan Xie said.

“Oh? That Leng Yue is actually a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng was startled. He had originally thought that the only Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists present here were him and Baili Xinghe. To his surprise, this Leng Yue was also a snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist..

Not only does that woman possess heaven-defying battle power and overwhelming strength, her world spirit techniques are also this powerful. Even Chu Feng did not dare to look down on her.

However, not daring to look down on her did not mean that Chu Feng was afraid of her. At the very least, opening that letter was a simple task for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng unleashed his technique, and golden light began to shine. He managed to easily undo the seal on the letter. After the seal was undone, the letter turned into a strand of golden light that began to spin before Chu Feng.

Chu Feng understood what this meant. While the letter possessed contents, there was no substance. If he wished to know the contents of the letter, he would have to absorb that golden strand of light into his mind.

To do this would require very powerful control. It would be impossible to accomplish unless one was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak

World Spiritist.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng’s eyes flashed. Then, that floating strand of golden light, as if it had been controlled by Chu Feng, shot toward Chu Feng’s forehead and was assimilated into Chu Feng’s mind.

The very next moment, words began to appear in Chu Feng’s mind.

‘I am not interested in the other people in this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly. I only wish to fight against you, Chu Feng.’

‘Tonight, come to this location and fight me. As long as you come, regardless of whether you win or lose, I will still bestow you with rewards!!!’

“What an arrogant Leng Yue,” Chu Feng sighed lightly, This Leng Yue was actually using rewards to coerce Chu Feng to battle her.

However, she used the word ‘bestow’ to describe the rewards she would give him. From this, it could be seen that although she wished to fight Chu Feng, she actually looked down on him.

“Chu Feng, what’s going on?” Yan Xie asked.

“Leng Yue has challenged me to a fight against her tonight,” Chu Feng said.

“What? Wouldn’t this be going against the rules? If that man were to find out, both you and her would be disqualified from the competition,” Yan Xie was shocked at first. Then, he asked Chu Feng, “Are you going?”

“Of course,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?” Yan Xie was even more shocked. He advised, “Chu Feng, you absolutely cannot go. If you wish to fight her, you can do so tomorrow. Why take this risk?”

“Brother Yan Xie, I possess my own reasons to fight Leng Yue.”

“Even if she hadn’t come to find me, I would’ve gone to find her tonight too. Since she has actually come to find me, it just so happens to be exactly what I wanted,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“It would seem that I am unable to advise you against it,” Yan Xie said.

Chu Feng smiled. Even though he did not say anything, he had declared his standing.

“In that case, the only thing I can tell you is to be careful,” Yan Xie said.

“My thanks,” Chu Feng was able to tell that Yan Xie was really worried about him. Although they hadn’t known one another for long, Chu Feng felt that Yan Xie was an affectionate and loyal brother.

At this moment, Eggy’s voice suddenly sounded. “If Yan Xie’s advice is useless, then what about this Queen’s advice?”

“Milady Queen, you should understand me. Please don’t make things difficult for me, okay?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

When Chu Feng said those words, there was a trace of pleading in his tone. He feared Eggy advising him against this matter, because he held Eggy in high regard and cared deeply about her point of view. If Eggy was against it, that would make it very difficult for him.

Chapter 1787 – Killing Intention

“If that boy Zhang Tianyi wants to obtain the title of the Strongest of the Younger Generation, it will not be that easy.”

“That Underworld Palace’s Underworld Messenger Kuang cannot be considered to be much. His greatest opponents would be you and Leng Yue.”

“Especially you. If you were to be serious, and not lose on purpose, it would be impossible for that Zhang Tianyi to defeat you.”

“However, the outcome of this battle will determine whether or not Zhang Tianyi will be able to make progress in his cultivation. With how loyal to one’s friends you are, you will definitely try to help him attain victory.”

“If you were to deliberately lose to him, it would be disrespectful toward him. Thus, it would be better for you to withdraw from the battle beforehand.”

“However, if you were to withdraw, you would be afraid that Zhang Tianyi might not be a match for Leng Yue. Thus, you plan to pull Leng Yue down with you by being disqualified from the competition by breaking the rules with her.”

“Furthermore, you plan to avenge Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang at the same time.”

“In addition, you had made this decision before this Queen even woke back up,” Eggy said.

“As expected of Milady Queen. You’re truly sharp,” Chu Feng was truly feeling the urge to clap his hands in applause to his Queen.

“Since you’ve said that you’ve made your decision, would this queen’s advice even be of use?” Eggy asked.

“Depends on the subject,” Chu Feng said.

“What if it’s this matter?” Eggy asked.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed mischievously. He did not answer Eggy directly. However, he had made it known what his attitude was toward this matter.

As this matter concerned Zhang Tianyi’s future, even though he would be placed in a difficult situation should Eggy advise against it, he would still go and do it.

Eggy sighed. “I’ve gotten used to it. You’re someone who cares about your nonsense camaraderie enormously.”

“This Queen is very displeased, because by doing so you are giving up on your own interests.”

“Furthermore, I am still against your decision even now. But, you are, after all, my master. As such, I should respect your decision.”

“Do as you wish, I’ll support you,” Eggy said those words with a tone of helplessness.

“Thank you, Milady Queen,” Seeing that Eggy did not try to stop him, and was instead supporting him, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief. Like this, he would be able to go and do what he wanted without worries.

“The one I’m fighting this time is not an ordinary person. Instead, she is Leng Yue, the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, someone who plays a critical role in the Heavenly Law Palace.”

“If I am to avenge senior brother Zhang and little brother Wushang, I must humiliate her. However, she is also someone who cannot be humiliated.”

“Thus, I must possess an absolute certainty of success before doing anything. As for this... I will need Milady Queen’s help,” Chu Feng said.

“So you already have a plan?” Eggy asked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng said.

“You can start then. This Queen has wanted to do some stretching and move her limbs after having been asleep for so long,” Impatience appeared on Eggy’s face.

Afterward, Chu Feng spent two entire hours setting up a spirit formation. Then, using treasures to conceal it, he changed the appearance of the spirit formation into that of a ring, and placed it on Her Lady Queen’s finger.

After observing that unremarkable-looking ring on her finger, Eggy asked skeptically, “Merely this will do?”

“There’s also this,” Chu Feng took out a spittoon-shaped item. There was another spirit formation within it. An unknown substance was sealed within the spirit formation.

“What is this?” Eggy asked curiously.

“You’ll know,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile.

“These two items are the absolute certainty of yours?” Eggy asked skeptically.

“Yes, they’ll be sufficient,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he had Eggy return to his world spirit space. After that, he walked out of his pagoda and began to proceed toward the location that Leng Yue had designated.

Although they were in the central region of the fort, there were still secluded places. Although Leng Yue was prepared to be disqualified, she did not wish for others to disturb the battle between her and Chu Feng. Thus, she had chosen a relatively hidden location.

After Chu Feng arrived in the hidden forest, he looked to the little brook before him.

Suddenly, he said, “No matter what, you are still the disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Is there a need for you to be

this sneaky? If there's something that you wish to say, go ahead and say it."

"Humph," After Chu Feng said those words, a slight snort sounded from the forest behind him. Soon, a figure walked out from the forest. Sure enough, it was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's disciple, Baili Xinghe.

"For you to follow me this sneakily, what matter might you have?" Chu Feng asked.

"Chu Feng, I know the relationship you have with junior sister Zi Ling and junior sister Su Rou," Baili Xinghe said.

"Oh?" Chu Feng was rather surprised. Then, he asked, "What about it?"

"I feel that you do not suit them. Thus, I wish that you sever your relationship with them. From today on, you are to not disturb them," Baili Xinghe said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's eyes narrowed. A trace of chilliness flashed through his eyes.

Chu Feng was very smart. After hearing those words, he already knew Baili Xinghe's intentions. The reason why this guy had such great hostility toward him was because he had taken a fancy to Chu Feng's women, Zi Ling and Su Rou.

The reason why he came to find Chu Feng and said those words to him was evidently because he had been rejected by Zi Ling and Su Rou. Without any alternative, he had decided to come and threaten Chu Feng.

It was one thing for him to fall for his women. After all, regardless of what Zi Ling and Su Rou's cultivations might be, they were two exceptional beauties.

Noblemen fancied sweet, fair and graceful ladies. This was nothing major.

However, this Baili Xinghe actually, for the sake of obtaining Chu Feng's women, came to threaten Chu Feng.

As a man, how could Chu Feng endure this?

As such, the anger in Chu Feng's heart was surging already, and on the verge of exploding. However, Chu Feng did not reveal any of that.

Instead, with a light smile on his face, he said, "Baili Xinghe, go and take a piss, then use that as a mirror to look at yourself. After that, use your brain that is filled with dogshit to think about it. How are you qualified to come and say these words to me, Chu Feng?"

"You..." Hearing those words, Baili Xinghe's gaze flashed, and he began to tightly clench his fists. Although he was extremely angry, he involuntarily recalled the scene of being rejected by Zi Ling and Su Rou.

It was the first time in Baili Xinghe's life that he had experienced such ruthlessness. Before them, not a single woman had ever rejected him.

Thus, his feelings for Zi Ling and Su Rou were one-sided. As for Zi Ling and Su Rou, they were dead set on Chu Feng. Indeed... he did not have the qualifications to say those words to Chu Feng.

However, the things that he, Baili Xinghe, wished to obtain must be obtained. This included women.

As for now, the only way for him to obtain them was through Chu Feng.

"You'd best do as I say," Baili Xinghe said with a cold snort. His tone was filled with threat.

"What if I don't?" Chu Feng asked.

"Then I'll kill you," Upon saying those words, coldness flashed through Baili Xinghe's eyes. A boundless killing intent smashed

into Chu Feng.

This Baili Xinghe was not joking around. He was really planning to kill Chu Feng for the sake of obtaining Zi Ling and Su Rou.

“Come, give it a try then,” The corners of Chu Feng’s mouth were raised slightly. However, behind his smile was a deep killing intent.

Chapter 1788 – Successful Capture

“Buzz~~~”

However, at the moment when the two of them were about to fight, a surge of boundless oppressive might came out of nowhere and landed on Baili Xinghe. Like chains, that oppressive might firmly restricted his movements.

That oppressive might was so powerful that Baili Xinghe was unable to struggle free, and he was crushed deep into the ground by it.

Then, that oppressive might moved. Like a dragon surging out from the sea, it leapt out from underground. Baili Xinghe was also brought out alongside it.

Merely, at this moment, Baili Xinghe's complexion was pale like paper. He had a painful expression on his face as creaking sounds emitted from his body nonstop.

Those were the sounds of bones breaking...

Although that oppressive might did not leave Baili Xinghe with heavy injuries, it brought him enormous pressure and was crushing down on his entire body, including even his dantian and soul.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, a woman's silhouette suddenly descended from above. She slowly floated down to land before Baili Xinghe.

This woman was none other than Leng Yue.

Leng Yue had a cold expression on her face. Without the slightest trace of emotion, she looked to Baili Xinghe and said, “My opponent is not someone that you can touch.”

Hearing those words, Baili Xinghe was startled. Although it lasted only a moment, Chu Feng had managed to see fear in Baili

Xinghe's eyes.

“Heh...”

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng laughed slightly. Back then, he had thought Baili Xinghe to be the strongest genius in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, upon seeing him today, it turned out that he was nothing much.

The moral integrity Baili Xinghe possessed was greatly inferior to that of Yan Xie, Zhang Tianyi and the others.

For someone like him, regardless of how talented he might be, he would still not be able to escape his destiny of being scum. He was someone that bullied the weak and feared the strong and would use any means to obtain his goals.

At this moment, Chu Feng's anger was lessened enormously. Although Baili Xinghe's actions were excessive, from his nature, Chu Feng could tell that he was destined to be a minor character and unworthy for Chu Feng to fight against.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, Leng Yue tossed out three golden bowls. After the three golden bowls were tossed into the air, they all disappeared.

Chu Feng was able to sense that there were three invisible powers that had now enveloped this region of space.

Those three golden bowls were treasures. Evidently, they had sealed off this region. With the concealment of the three golden bowls, no one would be able to detect anything even if Chu Feng and Leng Yue were to cause utter devastation with their battle.

This Leng Yue had truly come prepared.

“You and that Zhang Tianyi are fellow martial brothers?” Leng Yue asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng said.

“That senior brother of yours is truly amazing. He’s actually Emperor Gong’s successor.”

“However, regardless of what sort of dogshit luck he has stumbled upon, I still look down on him.”

“Do you know why I said that he was unqualified to be my opponent?”

“Although he was only a minor character back then, I still remember him.”

“Back then...”

“You don’t have to say anymore. I will take revenge for him,”
Before Leng Yue even finished her words, Chu Feng interrupted her.

He knew what Leng Yue was planning to say. Leng Yue was planning to mention how Zhang Tianyi had been disgraced before him and Baili Xinghe.

If this matter were to spread, it would affect Zhang Tianyi’s reputation. Chu Feng would naturally not allow her to say it.

“So that’s the case. No wonder that Chu Feng would run all the way over here. He had already made an appointment with Leng Yue.”

Hearing those words, Baili Xinghe came to a sudden realization that Chu Feng had come here because he had made an appointment to fight against Leng Yue.

Upon thinking about this, the corners of Baili Xinghe’s mouth lifted into a sinister smile.

Although he would not be able to take care of Chu Feng himself, if Leng Yue were to kill Chu Feng for him, it would be even better. After all, he would not have to bear any criminal charges should that be the case.

Furthermore, he knew very well how strong Leng Yue was. For

Leng Yue to take care of Chu Feng, it would be as simple as an adult taking care of a child. After all, even he, Baili Xinghe, feared Leng Yue.

“Heh... avenge him you say? You must have the ability to do so first,” Leng Yue laughed mockingly. Although she wished to fight against Chu Feng, she also did not place Chu Feng in her eyes.

“I will not be lenient against you. However, my world spirit wishes to watch our battle. Might that be doable?” Chu Feng asked.

“Is it to see you be defeated? Very well, since there’s already a spectator, one more will not amount to anything. Go ahead, release your world spirit,” Leng Yue said in an indifferent manner.

“Remember, it’s not release. Instead, it’s invite,” Chu Feng corrected Leng Yue. Then, he opened his World Spirit Gate.

“Damned girl, this Queen is here to see how you’ll be beaten,” After Eggy walked out, she first took a disdainful glance at Leng Yue. Then, she walked over to Baili Xinghe.

Seeing that Baili Xinghe was staring at her with fixed eyes, Eggy had a displeased expression, “That hell are you looking at? Never seen a beauty before?”

“I’ve seen quite a few beauties. However, it is the first time that I’ve seen a world spirit as beautiful as you,” Baili Xinghe said with a light smile. Although he was extremely hostile toward Chu Feng, he was very amiable toward Eggy. In fact, he was even polite.

Seeing this, Chu Feng’s impression of Baili Xinghe took a hundred and eighty degree change again.

When he first met Baili Xinghe, Baili Xinghe had been towering from above, and emitted an air of arrogance. Like a saint, he had not placed any of his fellow generation in his eyes.

However, never would Chu Feng have expected that this fellow, who seemed to be unaffected by female charms on the surface, was

actually an utter pervert. From the gaze that he was looking at Eggy with, it could be seen what he was thinking in his mind.

“All those who have seen this Queen said the same things you did. However, it’s still the first time that this Queen has seen someone as disgusting as you. Pah!” After finishing her words, Eggy spit on Baili Xinghe. Then, she said, “Turn your disgusting gaze away. The more you look at me, the more disgusted I feel.”

After Eggy finished saying those words, she arrogantly walked toward a more distant location.

As for Baili Xinghe, he was shivering in anger. As the grand personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, when had he ever suffered from this sort of humiliation?

However, his body was currently bound by Leng Yue’s power, and simply incapable of moving. Even though he was enraged, there was nothing he could do.

“Is that an Asura World Spirit? Quite arrogant indeed. However, with her nature, sooner or later, she’ll suffer,” Leng Yue said.

Chu Feng’s past achievements were already widespread. As matters stood, practically everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism knew that Chu Feng, when disregarding his talent for martial cultivation, was a legendary Asura World Spiritist.

Chu Feng was not anxious to fight right away. Instead, he asked, “Leng Yue, you said that as long as I come to fight you, you will bestow me a gift. What might that gift be?”

“Of course,” As Leng Yue spoke, she raised her hand and tossed a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng inspected the Cosmos Sack, and discovered that there were actually ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones inside.

“These bits of things, are you trying to shoo a beggar away?” Chu Feng sneered and threw the Cosmos Sack back to Leng Yue.

“You actually think that that is insufficient? You must know that these are ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones,” Leng Yue frowned. She had truly never expected that Chu Feng would think that these ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones would be insufficient.

“Of course they’re insufficient,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, tell me, what do you want?” Leng Yue raised her brows and asked.

“I want all the treasures on you,” Chu Feng said while looking at Leng Yue.

“You are truly boasting shamelessly. You actually want all of my treasures? Has someone smashed your head so badly today that you’ve gone stupid?” Hearing those words, Leng Yue sneered. The way she saw it, what Chu Feng said was extremely unrealistic and simply day-dreaming.

“I never said that I want all of your possessions without a good cause. The two of us shall fight one another fairly. The loser will hand over all their possessions to the winner.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his Cosmos Sack and took out the Heavenly Immortal Sword, the Evil God Sword and his various other treasures to show them to Leng Yue.

Seeing the treasures in Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack, Leng Yue’s gaze began to change nonstop. Especially when she saw the Evil God Sword, her gaze was staring deeply at it.

“Very well, since you have the courage, I shall gamble with you. If you are able to win against me, I will give you all of my treasures. However, if you are to lose, you will hand all of your treasures over to me,” Being enticed by Chu Feng’s treasures, Leng Yue was successfully ensnared in Chu Feng’s trap.

Chapter 1789 – Rank One Martial Emperor

“It’s settled then?” Chu Feng asked.

“Definitely!” Leng Yue said.

“What if you go back on your word?” Chu Feng asked.

“If I, Leng Yue, am to go back on my word, I will be inferior to pigs and dogs. I will not be qualified to be the head of the Heavenly Law Palace’s Heavenly Generals. After this life of mine, I shall be reincarnated as animals that will be slaughtered and trampled upon by others for eternity,” Leng Yue raised her arm and vowed.

“Yoh, quite ruthless. Since that’s the case, I’ll reluctantly trust you this once,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“In that case, you can attack. I’d suggest that you go all out. Else, it will be boring.”

After Leng Yue said those words, she actually closed her eyes. She did not even bother to look at Chu Feng. Her intention was extremely clear. Even though she wanted to fight against Chu Feng, she did not place Chu Feng in her eyes at all.

“Arrogant enough. However, Leng Yue possesses the means to be this arrogant,” Seeing Leng Yue acting like this, Baili Xinghe smiled complacently. As he looked to Chu Feng, he thought in his heart, ‘Chu Feng, I shall see how you’ll be humiliated.’

“There is no need for me to personally fight against you,” However, facing Leng Yue’s provocation, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a thought, a wave of water flowed out from within his body. The Water Immortal Profound Technique appeared before him.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right after the Water Immortal Profound Technique appeared, it immediately began to attack Leng Yue. Tens of thousands of water

droplets turned into sharp arrows as they splashed at Leng Yue like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses.

Most importantly, while Chu Feng's current cultivation was that of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, the Water Immortal Profound Technique was actually a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

“Water Immortal Profound Technique. That guy really does possess a supreme secret skill,” At this moment, Leng Yue suddenly opened her eyes and revealed an expression of shock.

As a disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, she had been fortunate enough to see her Heavenly Law Palace's Utmost Exalted Elder revealing the might of the Wood Immortal Profound Technique.

At that time, when she saw that vivid and life-like Wood Immortal Profound Technique that possessed a cultivation one level higher than even its user, Leng Yue felt endless admiration, and vowed that she would definitely obtain that Wood Immortal Profound Technique.

And now, the Water Immortal Profound Technique that was equally as famous as the Wood Immortal Profound Technique was right before her. Furthermore, it was attacking her.

Even more, the possessor of this Water Immortal Profound Technique was actually a fellow member of the younger generation. This caused her to feel extremely unreconciled.

“A mere rank eight Half Martial Emperor will not be a match for me,” Leng Yue shouted. Then, like a willow leaf, her body shifted. As she began to move, not only did she dodge all of the Water Immortal Profound Technique's attacks, she had also arrived before the Water Immortal Profound Technique in an instant.

“Pa, pa, pa~~~”

After approaching it, coldness flashed through Leng Yue's eyes. Her lily-white hands shot multiple strikes at the Water Immortal

Profound Technique.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Her speed was extremely fast. Even though her hands were very tender and soft, each of her palm strikes created a splash on the body of the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

In merely an instant, the Water Immortal Profound Technique had been utterly smashed to bits by Leng Yue.

“Sure enough, it’s as I anticipated,” Although the Water Immortal Profound Technique was defeated, Chu Feng was smiling lightly. Leng Yue was this powerful because she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Thus, even though they were at the same level of cultivation, the Water Immortal Profound Technique, which only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, was simply no match for Leng Yue.

The reason why Chu Feng was not worried, and instead felt joyous, was because he had guessed correctly.

This Leng Yue was simply not someone that Zhang Tianyi could defeat. Thus... his decision to come and fight Leng Yue was correct.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, that Leng Yue also possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.” Although Chu Feng had anticipated this, Baili Xinghe was extremely shocked. Evidently, he had not expected Leng Yue to be this powerful, more powerful than he had anticipated.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly unlucky,” However, after a moment of surprise, Baili Xinghe suddenly looked to Chu Feng. The smile on his face grew even denser.

“Crash~~~”

Suddenly, with another attack, the Water Immortal Profound Technique had been completely destroyed by Leng Yue. However, as the Water Immortal Profound Technique turned into waves of water, the water began to surge. Then, the Water Immortal Profound Technique returned to its original appearance. Without the slightest damage, the Water Immortal Profound Technique began to unleash attacks at Leng Yue again.

However, Leng Yue's battle power was an entire level above the Water Profound Immortal Technique's. No matter how ferocious the Water Profound Immortal Technique might be, it was incapable of injuring Leng Yue in the slightest.

"As long as its master is alive, the secret skill will be indestructible. The Water Immortal Profound Technique is truly miraculous."

"Chu Feng, it is your fortune to have been able to obtain the Water Immortal Profound Technique. However, for this Water Immortal Profound Technique to serve you, is its misfortune," Leng Yue said mockingly. From her every word and every action, it could be seen that she deeply wanted to obtain the Water Profound Immortal Technique.

"Are you certain?" Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, lightning flashed in his eyes, and his Thunder Armor appeared.

When his cultivation increased to rank eight Half Martial Emperor, the Water Immortal Profound Technique's cultivation increased to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

"Humph," Seeing that the Water Immortal Profound Technique was now capable of fighting on par with her, Leng Yue did not dare to be careless anymore. She had started to become serious.

"Impossible!" At this moment, Baili Xinghe was enormously shocked. The entire time, he had thought that Chu Feng's cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Emperor had been obtained by using the power of his lightnings.

It was only now that he came to discover that he had been mistaken. Chu Feng had not relied on the power of his lightnings to obtain his cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Emperor. Instead, it was his actual cultivation. His actual cultivation was that of a rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

However, when he thought of how Chu Feng had only been a mere Martial King when he had first met him, but was already a rank seven Half Martial Emperor now, and was capable of obtaining a cultivation above his own, Baili Xinghe started to involuntarily tremble with fear.

Unreconciliation. Jealousy. However, more than all of those, he was feeling fear.

To be able to reach rank seven Half Martial Emperor from rank nine Martial King in such a short period of time, how enormous of an amount of talent did he possess? His talent most definitely surpassed that of ordinary people. It could be said that he could not be considered to be human at all!

Such an existence was actually a fellow member of the younger generation like himself? Baili Xinghe felt that Chu Feng's existence was a great calamity to both him and all the rest of the younger generation.

“Leng Yue, you must definitely kill that Chu Feng. Else, he will assuredly become an enormous disaster,” After his moment of shock and fear, Baili Xinghe cast all of his hope onto Leng Yue.

He wished for Chu Feng's death. He wished that Chu Feng would be killed today. The reason for that was because he knew that he was already no match for Chu Feng. Yet, he had spoken those threatening words to Chu Feng earlier. Today, if Chu Feng wasn't killed, he, Baili Xinghe, would be killed instead.

“Chu Feng, I know that your lightning power is capable of increasing your cultivation by another level. Why not directly use it? Else, if this is all the strength you're showing, I'm afraid that

even the Water Immortal Profound Technique will not be able to help you.”

Suddenly, Leng Yue shouted. Then, gales began to appear within her ice-cold gaze. At the same time, heaven and earth became dark, and violent wind sprung forth everywhere. Leng Yue’s cultivation had increased from rank eight Half Martial Emperor to rank nine Half Martial Emperor. She was only a fine line away from becoming a Martial Emperor.

This was Divine Power. Leng Yue was a Divine Body.

“As you wish.”

Seeing that Leng Yue had increased her cultivation, Chu Feng did not hesitate. Lightning flashed through his eyes again as two magnificent Thunder Wings began to spread from his back.

When Chu Feng’s cultivation increased from rank eight Half Martial Emperor to rank nine Half Martial Emperor, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s cultivation also increased from rank nine Half Martial Emperor to rank one Martial Emperor.

“Boom~~~”

Although there was only a fine distinction between Half Martial Emperors and Martial Emperors, what Half Martial Emperors possessed was impure Emperor-level martial power, whereas the one possessed by Martial Emperors was real Emperor-level martial power.

Although the Water Immortal Profound Technique no longer possessed its own intelligence anymore, its cultivation was that of an actual rank one Martial Emperor.

In this regard, the Water Immortal Profound Technique’s strength was many times more powerful. As water surged forth, even space itself was shattered. Wherever the water passed, a pitch-black void would be left behind.

The might of the Water Immortal Profound Technique could

only be described with one word, 'frightening.'

Chapter 1790 – Dumbstruck

“Humph.”

However, while Leng Yue was only a rank nine Half Martial Emperor, she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. She... was a Half Martial Emperor capable of fighting against Martial Emperors.

However, even with this being the case, a Half Martial Emperor would remain a Half Martial Emperor, while a Martial Emperor would remain a Martial Emperor. While Leng Yue was capable of fighting against the Water Immortal Profound Technique, her imposing might was still inferior to its imposing might.

As this continued, Leng Yue had no choice but to start using martial skills. She had to borrow the strength of her martial skills to fight against the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

“Not bad, not bad. You’re actually capable of being equally matched against my Water Immortal Profound Technique.”

“It would seem this is still not your limit. Since this is the case, I’ll help you out,” Like an observer, Chu Feng mocked and ridiculed Leng Yue.

As he spoke, his gaze flashed. Then, like a volcanic eruption, boundless flames exploded from his body.

When the flames appeared, not only was this region covered with heat, the surging flames also turned into a man of fire. With a might akin to raging flames burning the heavens, the man of fire charged to attack Leng Yue from a different direction.

“This!!!”

When Leng Yue saw the incoming man of fire, her expression immediately changed. That man of fire’s aura was actually exactly the same as that of the Water Immortal Profound Technique; it was also a rank one Martial Emperor.

“Fire Immortal Profound Technique, it’s the long lost Fire Immortal Profound Technique! Chu Feng, where did you obtain that?!” Upon seeing the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, Leng Yue was extremely shocked.

“There is no need for me to inform you of something like this. You wish to know? How about... you do a striptease dance for this gentleman here? If you make me happy, I might consider telling you. However, there’s also a possibility of your figure being too bad that this gentleman will end up becoming disgusted. If that’s the case... I will not tell you,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Once Chu Feng said those words, Baili Xinghe immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Leng Yue was the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, an existence high above everyone else. Had there ever been anyone who dared to disrespect her?

Yet, Chu Feng had deliberately done such a thing.

“Chu Feng, you’re courting death,” Upon hearing what Chu Feng said, Leng Yue became extremely angry. As she spoke, she flipped her palm, and a golden-bright and dazzling rod appeared in her hand.

Once that rod appeared, a ray of golden light began to spread out from within Leng Yue’s body.

The reason for that was because that rod was no ordinary rod. Instead, it was an Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Once she revealed her Incomplete Imperial Armament, Leng Yue’s battle power instantly increased. Although she was fighting against two rank one Martial Emperors, she actually held the upper hand against them.

Leng Yue’s Divine Power was a type of powerful wind. It just so happened that her Incomplete Imperial Armament was able to

work harmoniously with her Divine Power, increasing her battle power even further.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

At this moment, the violent wind was whistling as explosions began to sound from all around. Being blown by that devastating wind, the water was no longer fierce, and the fire was no longer ferocious. Leng Yue was unstoppable. She held absolute superiority.

However, the strongest aspect of the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique was that they were indestructible. No matter how strong Leng Yue was, she was unable to destroy them. All she could do was end up being tangled in a battle against them.

“Chu Feng, do you dare to fight me yourself?” Leng Yue shouted angrily.

“What’s wrong? You’re unable to win against my secret skills?”

“When you are unable to even win against my secret skills, how are you qualified to fight against me?” Chu Feng was fiddling with his sleeve, and had an inattentive appearance as he spoke those words. It was as if he were truly only an observer.

“I’m only asking you whether you dare or not,” Leng Yue was so angered that her face turned red. She felt as if her heart and lungs were about to explode because of Chu Feng.

However, although she was extremely angry, she also had no choice but to become serious.

Originally, she had not placed Chu Feng in her eyes. However, she had never expected that Chu Feng would force her to such a state using only two secret skills. Not only had she used her Divine Power, she had also used her Incomplete Imperial Armament.

Right now, she wished to quickly end this battle. However, the only method for her to be able to end this battle quickly would be

to fight against Chu Feng, and not continue to be tangled with the two secret skills.

“Leng Yue, oh Leng Yue, you’re forcing me to fight. However, I must tell you this. If I, Chu Feng, am to fight, you’ll have to prepare to pay the price,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out an Incomplete Imperial Armament. It was a sword.

The sword was extremely thin. In fact, it was so thin that it didn’t appear to be a sword, and instead looked more like a very thin and long ruler. However, not only was it a sword, it was also the impressively famous Heavenly Immortal Sword.

“Enough of your rubbish. Come and fight me with your strength,” Leng Yue shouted again.

“The Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique are parts of my strength to begin with,” Holding the Heavenly Immortal Sword, Chu Feng stepped into the air and began to walk toward Leng Yue one step at a time, “However, since you insist on fighting against me, I can grant you your wish.”

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng took a step forward, and his speed increased in a flash. As his clothes and long hair fluttered in the wind, Chu Feng’s speed reached the speed of light. In a flash, he arrived before Leng Yue.

When Chu Feng arrived, like two spirits, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique entered Chu Feng’s body.

At this moment, only Chu Feng and Leng Yue stood in midair.

The two of them possessed the same cultivation, the same heaven-defying battle power and were both part of the younger generation...

At this moment, even Baili Xinghe opened his eyes wide to

earnestly look to the sky. He did not wish to miss out on this confrontation between the strongest members of the younger generation.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Leng Yue had unleashed her attack. The rod in her hand was extremely sharp. The sound it emitted was akin to the cry of ten thousand beasts. Adding onto her Divine Power, it could be said that she possessed unrivalled divine might.

To be exact, Chu Feng’s current opponent could not be considered to be a Half Martial Emperor. Instead, Leng Yue should be considered a Martial Emperor. After all... Leng Yue was able to suppress two rank one Martial Emperors.

However... Chu Feng was also not an ordinary Half Martial Emperor.

“Clank~~~”

Chu Feng moved, and his Heavenly Immortal Sword moved alongside him. The movement of the Heavenly Immortal Sword was no small matter.

“Snap!” The incoming wind that looked like ferocious beasts was split apart by the Heavenly Immortal Sword. Not only that, with that slash from the Heavenly Immortal Sword, space itself was split in half. It was as if there were nothing that could stop it.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing sound was heard. That slash was stopped. It was stopped by the rod in Leng Yue’s hand.

“My Heavenly Law Unfettered Rod is not inferior to your Heavenly Immortal Sword,” After stopping Chu Feng’s attack, Leng Yue, who had been in a rage before, revealed a complacent smile.

“While the weapons are equally matched, I wonder, are your rod

techniques comparable to my sword techniques?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he shouted, “Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique!!!”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

With a trembling of his hand, the Heavenly Immortal Sword Chu Feng held instantly turned into a myriad of blade rays. With an overwhelming power of righteousness, they surged toward Leng Yue.

“You’ll come to know,” Leng Yue was not to be outdone. She waved her rod around and collided with Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng’s sword was extremely thin, it was incomparably hard.

As for Leng Yue’s rod, although it was thick and long, it was flexible like a snake, and capable of changing nonstop.

The attacks between the two fighters were extremely fast. As they confronted one another, they were evenly matched.

“So powerful. Their strength has already surpassed that of all their fellow members of the younger generation. Only the Martial Emperors from the older generations are capable of contending against them.”

“Chu Feng actually reached such a level in such a short period of time,” Baili Xinghe was already no longer capable of clearly seeing the attacks between the two fighters. However, he was able to tell that Chu Feng and Leng Yue were equally matched.

At this moment, Baili Xinghe had an extremely downcast expression as he tightly clenched his fists. He wished for Chu Feng’s death at Leng Yue’s hands. Yet... Chu Feng was not showing any signs of defeat. Instead, he seemed to faintly hold the upper hand in this battle.

In this sort of situation, Baili Xinghe... felt extremely nervous.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, light began to shine brightly at the location of Chu Feng and Leng Yue’s battle. Those were the lights of sword rays. That light was formed by tens of thousands of sword rays flashing past simultaneously.

“Woosh~~~”

A figure shot out explosively from the light. It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had left the battle.

“What’s going on?” Originally, Baili Xinghe had thought that Chu Feng had become afraid and ran away. However, he soon discovered that not only was Chu Feng completely uninjured, he even had a mischievous smile on his face. Upon seeing that smile, Baili Xinghe knew that Chu Feng was not afraid. Rather, he must have some sort of different plan.

Right at this moment, Leng Yue’s body appeared before his line of sight.

“Heavens, that!!!” Upon seeing the current Leng Yue, Baili Xinghe’s mouth was wide open. He was dumbstruck.

Chapter 1791 – Two Divine Powers

“Chu Feng, you can’t escape.”

At this moment, like Baili Xinghe, Leng Yue thought that Chu Feng was trying to escape. She hurriedly moved the rod in her hand and came chasing after Chu Feng.

“Haha, not bad,” However, while standing in the distance, Chu Feng did not have the intention to dodge. Instead, he was staring at Leng Yue’s body and laughing heartily. Furthermore, Chu Feng’s gaze was extremely strange and wicked.

This situation caused Leng Yue to feel very uncomfortable. Involuntarily, she looked to herself.

“Ahhhh~~~~”

Once she saw her body, Leng Yue immediately cried out in alarm. Then, panic covered her face. She was surprised to discover that she was currently completely naked. The clothes that she was wearing were all gone. Just like that, she had revealed her everything to Chu Feng.

After discovering that the situation was bad, Leng Yue immediately used her world spirit power to create clothes to cover her naked body.

Then, she subconsciously turned her gaze onto Chu Feng and Baili Xinghe. Baili Xinghe’s gaze was still fixed onto her body. That’s right. His gaze was on her body and not her face. Furthermore, the precise location of his gaze was at a very shameful location.

She had been seen, all of her had been seen. Even though she had covered herself, it was already too late. Everything had already been seen.

Shame. Enormous shame. To women, the most important thing was their chastity. Especially for a woman like Leng Yue, who did

not place any of the men in the world in her eyes, she held her chastity in even greater importance.

She felt that, in the entire Holy Land of Martialism, other than the Five Emperors that were already dead, there were no other men who could suit her, there was no one qualified to see her jade body.

Yet, today, her jade body had been completely seen. As such, how could she accept this?

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” At this moment, Leng Yue shouted. Her voice caused space to tremble. All of her unreconciliation, shame and anger was present in her scream.

“Chu Feng, you did that!!!!” Suddenly, Leng Yue cast her ice-cold gaze onto Chu Feng. She suddenly remembered what had happened earlier.

Earlier, Chu Feng had unleashed an exceptionally fierce sword technique at her. Not only had that sword technique been very profound, it had also caught her off guard. She had had no choice but to put forth all of her strength to block Chu Feng’s attack.

Originally, she had thought that she would be injured. However, not only was she not injured, Chu Feng’s attack became slower and slower. Then, Chu Feng suddenly distanced himself from the battle. Then, the thing from earlier happened.

It was only now that she realized that Chu Feng’s sword technique was not meant to injure her. Rather, it was meant to disgrace her. Using that sharp sword technique, Chu Feng had cut apart all of her clothes, leaving her completely naked.

“Chu Feng, you shameless bastard, I’ll kill you!” It was all because of Chu Feng that her naked body was seen by two men. As such, Leng Yue was unable to contain her anger. In fury, she turned into a hundred-meter-long silver sword that pierced at Chu Feng.

Leng Yue had unleashed an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill from the Heavenly Law Palace. Its might was extremely strong. She managed to directly cut through the enormous void in the sky.

“Earthen Taboo: Five Elements Formation,” Seeing that Leng Yue had unleashed a powerful martial skill, Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate her. Without hesitation, he unleashed the five elements of wind, lightning, water, fire and earth. The five elements interweaved with one another and turned into an enormous compass that surrounded Chu Feng within it.

“Buzz~~~”

The sword that Leng Yue turned into had arrived. It was trying to pierce through Chu Feng’s compass. However, when the sword and the compass collided, they were withstanding one another. For now, Leng Yue was unable to injure Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said with a very serious expression, “Leng Yue, I was merely playing a joke earlier. Calm yourself first. I have a very important matter that I need to tell you,”

While Leng Yue was extremely angry at this moment and possessed overflowing killing intent toward Chu Feng, she was startled to discover that Chu Feng had removed his smiles, and spoken those words with a very serious expression. Thus, she asked, “What is it?”

“Although you’re ugly, your figure is exceptionally good.”

“Hehe,” After finishing those words, Chu Feng revealed an extremely shameless smile on his face. Furthermore, he began to run his shameless gaze all over Leng Yue’s body again.

“Chu Feng, I, Leng Yue, will definitely kill you today!!!” Leng Yue was so enraged that her heart was twitching and her soul was trembling with anger. She began to continue to unleash attacks at Chu Feng with the intention to break apart Chu Feng’s Earthen Taboo: Five Elements Formation. She wanted to hack Chu Feng

into eight pieces in order to alleviate the anger in her heart.

“Aiyo, not bad, not bad. This is what I was looking for. Only by acting like this do you resemble the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace.”

“However, I bet it would be an even better thing to watch if you were naked while you were angry. Come, strip for this gentleman again.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted. He had separated himself from his Earthen Taboo: Five Elements Formation and reached behind Leng Yue.

“Woosh~~~”

As light flickered, Chu Feng swung the Heavenly Immortal Sword, unleashing the same sharp Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique from before to attack Leng Yue.

As for the sword that Leng Yue had turned into, it had managed to pierce deep into Chu Feng’s Earthen Taboo: Five Elements Formation, and was currently stuck. She was simply unable to escape, and could only watch as Chu Feng’s attacks reached her.

“Damn it!”

At this moment, Leng Yue’s expression changed greatly. In this moment of desperation, blue lightning flashed through her eyes. Then, the weather began to change. Several lightning bolts shot from her body and toward Chu Feng.

“Pa, pa, pa, pa~~~”

The lightning bolts had come too suddenly. Furthermore, they were extremely powerful. Chu Feng couldn’t ignore them. Thus, he ended up using the Heavenly Immortal Sword to block them.

That said, Chu Feng’s Heavenly Immortal Sword was even stronger. After blocking the incoming lightning bolts, Chu Feng continued onward to attack Leng Yue.

The lightning had been unable to stop Chu Feng.

“Huuu~~~”

However, right at this moment, like a whistling gale, Leng Yue’s Divine Power came sweeping toward Chu Feng.

The combination of the violent wind with the lightning bolts instantly increased their overall strength. Even though Chu Feng possessed the Heavenly Immortal Sword, he was still only able to barely block them.

“That girl, is actually this powerful?!!!”

At this moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. He had noticed that something was amiss the moment the lightning bolts had appeared. At this moment, he had confirmed his guess.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked loudly, “Leng Yue, you actually possess two Divine Powers?!!!”

The moment when the lightning bolts appeared, Chu Feng had discovered that their power was extremely special. It was not an ordinary martial skill. Instead, it was Divine Power.

However, upon recalling how Leng Yue had already revealed her Divine Power, Chu Feng became puzzled. After all, it was impossible for one person to possess two Divine powers.

At the very least, he had never heard of such a thing before.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng was certain that Leng Yue possessed two Divine Powers. Both the wind and the lightning were Divine Powers. He was certain about that.

“Humph, you’re quite sharp. Among my fellow younger generation, you are the first to force me to reveal my Heavenly Lightning Divine Power.”

“However, I might as well tell you this. All those who have seen me use these two Divine Powers simultaneously have been killed by me.”

After Leng Yue said those words, her lightning Divine Power and wind Divine Power fused together. Within wind, lightning. Within lightning, wind. Its might was boundlessly powerful.

“Rumble~~~”

After the wind and lightning fused with one another, they surged toward Chu Feng like an enormous dragon of wind and lightning.

Not only was that attack extremely powerful, it was filled with killing intent. Leng Yue was not lying. She was truly planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Divine Powers. They’re really two Divine Powers. How could this be?”

“How could a single person possess two Divine Powers?”

“Furthermore, she has grasped these two Divine Powers this skillfully, and has actually managed to ingeniously fuse them together to increase their might?”

At this moment, as Baili Xinghe looked to Leng Yue in the sky, he revealed an expression of disbelief.

Chapter 1792 – Heaven Taboo Martial Skill

As Baili Xinghe was also a Divine Body, he knew very well how powerful Divine Powers were. Divine Powers were stationed within one's body. One could attempt to grasp them and control them. However, it was extremely difficult to grasp and control them.

The reason for that was because Divine Powers were boundless, and very difficult to measure. Regardless of how much of one's Divine Power one was capable of grasping, as long as one possessed Divine Power within one's body, its power would also be one's own. Even if one failed to grasp the Divine Power, one's body would still have to endure it.

It was already the limit for a single person to be able to have a single Divine Power within their body. How could there possibly be two Divine Powers in a single body? How could one possibly endure them, master them?

“Leng Yue, are you a monster? How can you be this powerful?” Baili Xinghe was filled with astonishment. The way he saw it, what Leng Yue had accomplished was not something that humans were capable of accomplishing.

“Chu Feng is done for. He's most definitely done for. Regardless of how outstandingly talented he might be, he will still definitely be no match for that devil woman.”

“His opponent is already no longer human. She's a demon, an actual demon!!!” Baili Xinghe exclaimed in his heart.

Even though Baili Xinghe had wanted Chu Feng to be killed the entire time, he was feeling sorry for Chu Feng at this moment. He had already seen Chu Feng's talent for himself. He firmly believed that if Chu Feng were to continue to mature, he would very likely become the strongest among the younger generation.

Unfortunately, before Chu Feng had matured, he had encountered Leng Yue, a fellow demon-level character.

Judging from the situation now, Leng Yue was even more demon-like than Chu Feng.

In fact, it was true that Chu Feng was being suppressed by Leng Yue right now.

Leng Yue's cultivation and battle power were on par with Chu Feng. Their Incomplete Imperial Armaments were also of extremely high quality, and were also on par with one another.

However, Leng Yue possessed two Divine Powers. Those two Divine Powers were also in perfect harmony with one another, increasing their overall strength by many times.

In this sort of situation, even if Chu Feng were to summon his Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique, he would not be able to contend against Leng Yue.

“Leng Yue, since you’ve revealed your trump card, I’ll also let you experience my abilities.”

Chu Feng did not retreat. Instead, he proceeded onward. Then, four rays of lights shot forth explosively from his body.

“Roar~~~~”

In an instant, roars began to resonate throughout heaven and earth!!!

Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

Vermillion Bird Revival Technique.

Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

Like four Divine Beasts, in a vivid and lifelike manner, the Four Great Supreme Secret Techniques appeared around Chu Feng.

With the appearance of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills,

Chu Feng's might was no longer inferior to Leng Yue's. Furthermore, he currently appeared even more imposing than Leng Yue.

“This feeling, they're supreme secret skills. Chu Feng... you actually possess four more supreme secret skills?!” At this moment, Leng Yue was extremely shocked. How precious were secret skills? Even though she possessed two Divine Powers, she did not possess a single secret skill.

Yet not only did Chu Feng possess the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, he possessed four more secret skills in addition to them. Furthermore, judging from their appearances, those four secret skills were even stronger than the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

Chu Feng possessed a total of six secret skills. Yet she, Leng Yue, possessed none. How could she not be startled by this?

Actually, Leng Yue's startled reaction was already quite composed. When Chu Feng revealed his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, Baili Xinghe, who was watching the battle, was completely stunned.

No matter what, Baili Xinghe was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's personal disciple. He could be said to be someone who had experienced the wider world, the greater aspects of society. For him to be in such a stunned state, it was truly unbecoming of his status.

However, this also signified how astonishing it was for Chu Feng to possess six secret skills.

At this moment, by relying on the divine might of his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, Chu Feng was able to block Leng Yue's attacks. Once again, the two fighters reached a balance of power.

“Chu Feng, interesting, truly interesting.”

“They say that when the master of secret skills is alive, that secret skill will not die. That when the master of a secret skill is killed, the secret skill will still not die. However, should the master die, the secret skill will find a new master.”

“Today, you actually dared to disgrace me like this. I’ll definitely kill you. Not only will I kill you, I’ll also dig out your eyes, plunder your weapons, seize your treasures and subdue your secret skills.”

“All that you possess, all that you’ve acquired through meticulous effort, shall be mine! All of your previous efforts shall be devoted to me, Leng Yue!”

Seeing Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, greed flashed through Leng Yue’s eyes. Following that, Leng Yue, who rarely smiled, actually started to smile. Merely, her current smile was extremely wicked.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, her hands began to rapidly change. Many complicated hand seals were being formed unceasingly. With speed akin to light, they flashed past.

At the same time, a very powerful aura began to spread from Leng Yue’s body.

“This aura,” Upon sensing Leng Yue’s aura, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because Leng Yue’s aura was simply too unusual.

“That Leng Yue, what is she planning to do?”

Chu Feng felt that the situation was bad. He immediately raised the Heavenly Immortal Sword and unleashed the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In a moment of desperation, Chu Feng sent forth nine slashes in succession. He was no longer holding back.

The nine slashes overlaid one another. Heaven and earth turned pitch black. Only the dazzling crimson slashes could be seen.

At the moment when the nine slashes broke through the many walls formed by wind and lightning and approached Leng Yue, Leng Yue suddenly revealed a cold smile on her face. “Heh, surprise attack? Unfortunately, you’re too late.”

“Boom~~~”

Right after she finished saying those words, Leng Yue abruptly raised her hand. Then, a golden ray of light suddenly appeared.

That golden ray of light was extremely bright. It actually managed to forcibly intercept all nine of Chu Feng’s slashes.

“That is?”

That golden ray of light was truly too dazzling. Even Leng Yue’s body was covered by it. In this sort of situation, Chu Feng could only use his Heaven’s Eyes.

Before his Heaven’s Eyes, everything was clear. Chu Feng was able to clearly see that there was a golden imprint seal floating above Leng Yue’s palm. That seal was square shaped and half the size of her palm. As for that overbearing golden ray of light, it was being emitted by that golden seal.

Furthermore, the space surrounding that golden seal was trembling nonstop. That sort of trembling did not resemble the trembling caused by oppressive might. Instead, it appeared more like the trembling from fear.

That golden seal had actually managed to make space itself fear it!!!

There was already no need to mention how powerful that golden seal was. However, most importantly, Chu Feng discovered that the golden seal was not a treasure, nor was it an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Rather, it was pure martial power.

“Could it be?!” Upon seeing that golden seal, Chu Feng’s eyes shone, and his heart tightened.

“Chu Feng, your martial skill is extremely powerful. It could be said to be the most powerful Earthen Taboo Martial Skill I’ve seen. However, unfortunately, regardless of how powerful your Earthen Taboo Martial Skill might be, it will not be able to injure me in the slightest. The reason for that is because what I have unleashed is a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.”

Leng Yue loudly spoke five words, “Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal!!!”

“Heaven Taboo, sure enough, it’s a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. The Heavenly Law Palace is truly worthy of being one of the Three Palaces. It actually possesses a Heaven Taboo for its disciples to cultivate,” Upon seeing that powerful golden seal in Leng Yue’s hand, a rare trace of admiration and envy shone through Chu Feng’s eyes.

Heaven Taboo Martial Skills were martial skills akin to legends. Chu Feng had never been able to encounter one yet. Today, he had finally seen one. However, it was being used by his opponent. To Chu Feng, this was not a good news at all.

“Chu Feng, you should give up. If you are to kneel and beg for forgiveness now, I am willing to not dig out your eyes and leave you an intact corpse,” Leng Yue said.

“What if I don’t?” Chu Feng said.

“Humph, if you refuse, then I’ll make it so that you will not even know how you were killed,” Leng Yue said fiercely. At this moment, she spoke with absolute confidence. That said, she did possess the qualifications to act this confidently.

It was true that Leng Yue was the strongest fellow member of the younger generation that Chu Feng had ever encountered.

In fact, it could even be said that, facing such a Leng Yue, Chu

Feng was currently at an absolute disadvantage.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng was not panicking. Instead, he smiled lightly and said, “Give it a try then.”

Chapter 1793 – Are You Looking For Me?

“I’ll show you right now. Unfortunately, you won’t be able to see it.”

As Leng Yue spoke, the golden light grew even brighter. Then, she tossed the golden seal toward Chu Feng.

Once the golden seal was tossed, it started to shoot straight toward Chu Feng at an extremely fast speed.

Most importantly, that golden seal contained an incomparably frightening power. Even Chu Feng was astonished by its might.

If that golden seal were to strike Chu Feng, he would be met with a horrible death, with a torn body and crushed bones. Both his body and soul would be destroyed.

However, although the golden seal was very powerful, Chu Feng was able to clearly see the trajectory of its attack. Using the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Chu Feng dodged to the side and dodged the golden seal’s attack.

“He actually dodged it? How could this be?” Seeing that Chu Feng had dodged the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal, Leng Yue’s eyebrows rose in shock. She was very surprised.

She knew the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal’s characteristics very well. Other than its overbearingly powerful might, the light emitted by it was capable of blocking one’s opponent’s line of sight. From there, it would be able to launch a surprise attack that one’s opponent could not dodge.

Furthermore, that golden light was extremely powerful in blocking one’s opponent’s line of sight. Even Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to see through it.

“Could it be luck?”

Leng Yue had no choice but to think that Chu Feng had managed

to dodge the attack with luck. Thus, with a wave of her hand, the golden seal began to shoot straight at Chu Feng once again.

“Woosh~~~”

However, like before, azure light flashed underneath Chu Feng’s feet. Once again, he had dodged the golden seal.

“It’s not luck. He is actually capable of seeing the trajectory of the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal.”

“That Chu Feng, exactly how many more tricks does he have up his sleeve?” Leng Yue started to frown, and her gaze became serious.

Although she had indeed not placed Chu Feng in her eyes in the beginning, as matters stood, she now had no choice but to admit that Chu Feng was a very frightening opponent.

“Since you can see it, then we’ll see whether you will be able to match its speed,” Leng Yue began to form hand seals with her hands. Then, the golden light grew even more dazzling, and the golden seal’s speed also increased.

While trying his hardest to escape, Chu Feng shouted, “Damn it, is this the power of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill? How am I to defeat it? Leng Yue, can we not just call it off?” At this moment, panic filled his face. He... was scared.

“Humph, continue to beg. Even if you are to beg me for forgiveness, I will still not let you off,” Seeing Chu Feng, who had been toying with her since the very beginning, running around all over the place while panicking in fear and even trying to reconcile with her, Leng Yue revealed an expression of complacency and malice.

As matters stood, she had unleashed all of her trump cards. Fortunately... she had managed to obtain absolute superiority.

“Chu Feng, who would’ve expected that even you would have such a day. However, it’s too late. Everything is too late.”

Had it been at the very beginning, Leng Yue might have decided to let Chu Feng off. After all, this was Emperor Gong's successor's territory, and Chu Feng possessed quite a good relationship with that Emperor Gong's successor. It would naturally not be sensible for her to kill Chu Feng in this place.

However, upon discovering that Chu Feng possessed six secret skills on him, she would absolutely not let Chu Feng live. She was determined to obtain those six supreme secret skills.

“Leng Yue, you damned bitch! We clearly said that this was just sparring. Yet, you want to kill me. I'll bring you down!” Chu Feng's grievance was overflowing. He began to curse out at Leng Yue nonstop. At the same time he cursed at Leng Yue, he also began to try to approach her.

However, as Chu Feng staggered along in mid air while trying to frantically escape from Leng Yue's golden seal, no matter how one looked at him, he seemed to be stuck in a dilemma.

“Have you lost your ability to reason? You want to give your all to attempt to take me down?”

“Come. Regardless of what sort of ability you might have, you will still undoubtedly be killed today. My Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal is most definitely beyond your imagination.”

The more Chu Feng cursed, the more joyous Leng Yue felt. The way she saw it, Chu Feng was already no longer a threat.

“Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash!!!”

Finally, Chu Feng found an opportunity. He unleashed his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash and sent out nine slashes in succession.

However, Leng Yue did not bother to pay attention to Chu Feng's attack at all. She continued to control that golden seal to attack Chu Feng.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Right at this moment, the nine successive slashes of the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash all exploded. They were all blocked by the golden light that covered Leng Yue.

“Hahahahahaha...” Leng Yue burst into loud laughter. She looked at Chu Feng and said, “Did you really think that my body would not be protected just because my golden seal had gone to chase after you?”

“I might as well tell you this: my Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal is capable of attacking and defending at the same time. The one chasing after you is its offensive ability, whereas the one protecting me is its defensive ability.”

“For the current you, even if you are to put forth all of your strength, you will not be able to injure me in the slightest. You don’t have to try so hard to approach me. I will not stop you. I’ll allow you to come toward me. Come, attack me. Today, I shall let you know exactly what is meant by despair.”

“Hahaha...” Leng Yue opened her arms wide and revealed an appearance of telling Chu Feng to attack her.

Although she had acted like this, the golden seal that had been chasing after Chu Feng was still chasing him.

“Leng Yue, you are forcing me here. Quickly, stop right now. Else, I will no longer hold back,” Chu Feng shouted.

“No longer hold back? Come, show me how you’ll stop holding back.”

“You only know about boasting and nothing else. What sort of man are you?”

The more Leng Yue laughed, the more frantic her laughter became. At this moment, Chu Feng was akin to a clown before her.

“I’ll tell you the truth. I possess a treasure. If I am to use it, even rank two Martial Emperors will be killed. Even your Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal will not be able to protect you.”

“But, in respect to the Heavenly Law Palace, I do not wish to kill you,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t! Come, you must take it out and broaden my horizons. So what if I am killed?” Leng Yue said with a disapproving expression. She did not believe that Chu Feng possessed a treasure capable of killing rank two Martial Emperors.

“Leng Yue, you are truly forcing me into a corner here! Fucking hell! You damned bitch!” In great anger, Chu Feng started to curse wildly.

“The outcome of the battle is already decided. Chu Feng... is already defeated,” Seeing the scene in the sky, Baili Xinghe finally revealed a relaxed smile.

Like Leng Yue, he also felt that Chu Feng was acting like a clown right now. He no longer possessed the strength to continue to fight against Leng Yue.

As long as Chu Feng was killed, Baili Xinghe would have one less major enemy. Naturally, he would feel reassured at this moment.

“Heh...” However, at the moment when both Leng Yue and Baili Xinghe were looking at Chu Feng as if he were a clown, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth lifted into a strange smile. He thought to himself, ‘It’s time for me to let you experience the special ability of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.’

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted. Following that, a boundless mist began to spread.

“What is that?”

When that fog began to spread, Leng Yue’s vision was filled with confusion. At that very instant, illusions appeared before her.

“Illusions? I was hallucinating earlier. That Chu Feng had actually used a hallucinatory ability?” At this moment, Leng Yue

had regained her awareness. However, panic filled her face, because she was shocked to discover that the Chu Feng who had been fleeing before her had disappeared.

“Are you looking for me?” Right at this moment, faint laughter suddenly sounded from behind Leng Yue.

“Chu Feng, you!!!” Hearing this voice, Leng Yue grew nervous. She turned around and discovered that not only was Chu Feng behind her, he was less than ten meters away from her.

Logically, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to get that close to her, as she was protected by the golden light. However, Chu Feng was precisely that close to her.

Chapter 1794 – Absolute Humiliation

“I’ll let you experience true lightning,” Chu Feng eyes narrowed. Then, his body started to spin.

“Zzzzzzzzz~”

As he spun, light began to flicker, and countless lightning bolts were out explosively from Chu Feng’s body like sharp blades.

Wherever the lightning passed, everything in its path was destroyed. Even the golden light that protected Leng Yue was unable to resist the lightning.

Finally, a total of six lightning strikes pierced through Leng Yue’s hands, legs, chest and abdomen.

“Ahh!!!”

Once the lightning bolts entered her body, Leng Yue immediately let out a scream. Then, like a kite with its string cut, she fell from the sky and crashed onto the ground.

The power of her fall was so strong that even the Incomplete Imperial Armament which she had held in her hand ended up being knocked far away.

“What were those lightning bolts? Could it be a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill? But, why do they so closely resemble the lightnings that cover Chu Feng?”

Everything had happened too quickly. Baili Xinghe had not managed to see what had happened clearly. However, he had managed to see the lightning bolts that Chu Feng had unleashed, and felt how frightening they were.

Then, Baili Xinghe looked to Leng Yue. At this time, she had fallen to the ground, and was rolling about and screaming in pain.

From this, Baili Xinghe knew that, regardless of what sort of technique Chu Feng had used earlier, he had managed to

successfully break through the defense of Leng Yue's Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal and inflicted serious injuries upon her.

This battle was Chu Feng's victory!!!

"Impossible! This is impossible! How could I be defeated?!"

"Wuuahhh~~~" At this moment, Leng Yue struggled to get back up. However, a portion of the lightning that had pierced through her body was left behind within her body.

It was precisely that portion of lightning that was tormenting Leng Yue, causing her to suffer terribly. She was unable to unleash any of the power in her body. In fact, she did not even have the strength to stand back up.

"As they say, there can never be too much deception in war. Leng Yue, you've been completely defeated," At this moment, Chu Feng's voice sounded from the sky.

"Chu Feng, you..." Seeing Chu Feng, who was looking at her with a calm smile on his face, Leng Yue was shocked.

Chu Feng's gaze was filled with contempt, filled with the intention to toy with her. It was as if he was looking at a plaything.

Plaything. Leng Yue was a plaything in his eyes. Even though she possessed overflowing strength, she had been toyed around with by Chu Feng since the very beginning.

Everything had been fake. Chu Feng's clown-like appearance earlier, that flustered and panicking appearance, had been made deliberately.

Chu Feng did that so that she would let down her guard so that he would have an opportunity to approach her and unleash a surprise attack.

"Putt~~~"

Leng Yue sat onto the ground. She had a dejected expression on her face.

Although she had come to that realization now, it was already too late. She had truly been defeated in this battle.

She had not been defeated in terms of cultivation, battle power or even martial skills. Rather, she had been defeated in terms of techniques.

However, it was precisely because this was the case that she was unreconciled to accept the truth.

“Damn it,” At this moment, Leng Yue had already forgotten the pain of her body. She clenched her jade fists tightly.

Defeat. This was the first time that she had been defeated this miserably.

Suddenly, Leng Yue’s expression changed greatly. She raised her head and shouted, “Chu Feng, what are you doing?!”

It turned out that Chu Feng had actually arrived before her. Not only that, he had snatched away the Cosmos Sack at her waist.

Leng Yue had connected that Cosmos Sack to her body through the use of spirit formations. Thus, it was simply impossible for ordinary people to snatch it away. However, Chu Feng had easily severed the connection between her and her Cosmos Sack, and then snatched it away. Then, he snatched away her other Cosmos Sacks.

“What am I doing? Leng Yue, since you agreed to the bet, you must accept the loss. Have you forgotten what you said earlier?”

“It’s fine if you’ve forgotten. I can remind you. This match between us, the victor shall obtain all of the treasures that the loser possesses. Thus, these treasures of yours are all mine now.”

“That said, you have quite a lot of treasures with you. It must have taken quite a bit of effort to acquire all these treasures, no? I must truly thank you for all your meticulous effort to provide all these treasures for me. Thank you.”

Chu Feng inspected the Cosmos Sacks in his hand, then said those words with a complacent expression on his face. The reason for that was because Leng Yue truly had quite a lot of treasure in her Cosmos Sacks.

Chu Feng's complacent appearance appeared to be extremely provoking to Leng Yue.

However, Chu Feng was not satisfied just yet. Instead, he began to walk toward a southwestern direction. The reason for that was because Leng Yue's Incomplete Imperial Armament was there.

"Not bad. It's a very good weapon. It should be quite valuable," Chu Feng picked up the rod and began to examine it earnestly.

"Chu Feng, put down all of those items!" At this moment, Leng Yue obtained strength out of nowhere and actually managed to stand back up. Although she was staggering, she began to run toward Chu Feng to take her treasures back.

"Leng Yue, I'd advise you to not come here. Else, you shall bear the consequences," Chu Feng said.

"Return them to me!" With how deeply angered Leng Yue was, how could she stop?

"Snap~~~"

Suddenly, a shattering sound came from underneath Leng Yue's foot. She lowered her head to look, and discovered that she had stepped into a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was very delicate, and had been hidden extremely profoundly. Overcome by desperation, Leng Yue had not noticed that spirit formation at all.

At this moment, Leng Yue had a very uneasy expression on her face. She first smelled a strange and stinky odor from underneath her foot. Then, she saw yellow-brown substances spilling forth from underneath her foot.

“Puuu~~~”

In an instant, the yellow-brown substance erupted from underneath Leng Yue’s foot like a volcanic eruption. There was so much of the yellow-brown stuff that it swallowed Leng Yue up in an instant.

“This...”

Seeing the yellow-brown substance that had submerged Leng Yue, Baili Xinghe’s eyes were wide open, and his tongue was tied. He did not dare to believe what he was seeing.

“For real?!” At this moment, even Her Lady Queen had a stunned expression on her face.

She recognized that spirit formation. Chu Feng had set up that spirit formation. Furthermore, he had set it up before coming to this place.

Back then, Chu Feng had told her that he needed two items to make his plan a success. First, there was the ring on Eggy’s finger. Second, there was that spirit formation.

Back then, Eggy had not understood exactly what that spirit formation was. However, she now understood.

Contained within that spirit formation was manure. Once the spirit formation was activated, it would turn into an enormous cesspool. At that moment, Leng Yue had fallen into the cesspool.

Chu Feng sighed, “Didn’t I say not to come over? Why must you refuse to listen? Look at this, you’ve jumped into it yourself. You can’t blame me for this,” Chu Feng said with an innocent appearance. Then, he smiled beamingly and said, “That said, Leng Yue, tell me the truth, how do you enjoy this flavor? After all, those are treasures from me, Chu Feng. Ordinary people would not even be able to see them. And yet, you’re taking a bath in them. You could be said to be quite fortunate.”

“Are you kidding? Those are his own.... He used his own to make

the spirit formation?”

“Eaaah, Chu Feng, you’re truly disgusting,” Eggy first cast a side eye at Chu Feng. Then, she laughed and said, “Although it’s very disgusting, I must admit, you’ve done it beautifully.”

“Chu Feng, I’ll kill you!!!” Leng Yue jumped out from the cesspool. Due to the fact that she was seriously injured, she had been unable to protect herself using world spirit techniques in time. Thus, her body had been soaked in that cesspool.

At this moment, not only did she stink from head to toe, she was also in a furious rage.

She, the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, had actually fallen into a cesspool. If this matter were to spread, how could she possibly continue to live?

With enormous killing intent, she pounced at Chu Feng. She truly wished to rip Chu Feng to pieces with her own hands!!!

“Get the hell away from me, stinky woman,” Chu Feng raised his sleeve and waved. Then, a surge of wind appeared. The wind directly blew Leng Yue away several hundred meters away. When Leng Yue landed, she rolled on the ground several times before being able to steady herself.

Due to being injured by Chu Feng’s Divine Lightnings, Leng Yue was extremely weak right now. Thus, she was simply incapable of fighting against Chu Feng.

Chapter 1795 – Sweat Like A Pig

“Chu Feng, not only have you snatched away my treasures, you’ve even humiliated me like this. I will definitely not let you get away with this, I absolutely will not let you get away with this!!!” Leng Yue roared angrily.

Her voice filled with grievance echoed through this entire sealed region. Even after a very long time, her voice was still echoing.

“I have merely returned what you’ve done to my friends, merely given you a taste of your own medicine,” Chu Feng said disapprovingly.

“Chu Feng, you’re dead, you’re definitely dead. Even though I am unable to kill you, once you leave this fort, you will definitely die.”

“I will report to the Heavenly Law Palace that you have stolen my Cosmos Sacks and Incomplete Imperial Armament using a despicable method. Our Heavenly Law Palace will not let you get away with this.”

“While the Four Great Imperial Clans are unable to capture you, if our Heavenly Law Palace wishes to handle you, it’ll be as easy as crushing an ant to death,” Leng Yue knew that she was no match for Chu Feng. Thus, she began to use her Heavenly Law Palace to threaten Chu Feng.

“Clap, clap, clap, clap~~~”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to clap. He said, “Leng Yue, you are truly one to never break your promises. Not only have you refused to accept your loss, you even plan to file a false countercharge against me, plan to say that I have stolen your things. No matter what, you are still a young woman. How can you be this shameless?”

“There can never be too much deception in war. That is something that you said. If you are to return my treasures right

now, I can consider letting you go,” Leng Yue said ruthlessly. Even though she was saying that she’d let Chu Feng go, the murderous intention in her eyes did not lessen in the slightest.

“You’ve already broken your promise once. Yet, you actually still have the nerve to say these kinds of words. Do you really think that I will trust you?” Chu Feng asked.

“It doesn’t matter whether you trust me or not. You have no other option. This is the only conclusion that you shall have for going against me, Leng Yue,” Leng Yue said.

“No,” Chu Feng shook his head. Then, he said, “I still have another path that I can take.”

Hearing those words, Leng Yue became nervous. Even though Chu Feng was saying those words without anything to back them up, she felt unease as she looked at Chu Feng’s confident appearance.

“Eggy, it’s your turn,” Chu Feng turned his gaze to Eggy.

“No problem,” Eggy removed the ring from her finger and tossed it to Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng caught the ring, he began to form hand seals with one hand. It was not a martial technique. Rather, it was a world spirit technique.

As Chu Feng continued to form hand seals, that ring began to shine brightly. An image began to appear from the light.

Not only were there images, there were also voices...

‘Leng Yue, you said that as long as I come to fight you, you will bestow me with a gift. What might that gift be?’

‘Of course.’

‘These bits of things, are you trying to shoo a beggar away?’

‘You actually think that that is insufficient? You must know that these are ten Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones.’

“You!!!” Seeing till this point, Leng Yue’s expression changed enormously. The reason for that was because the contents that the light was revealing was precisely the scene of her agreement with Chu Feng. Furthermore, the image was still continuing. This meant that Chu Feng had used a special world spirit formation to record the entire process of their fight.

Although she didn’t know how Chu Feng had managed to do it, it remained that he had done it.

“Do you wish to continue watching? Truth be told, I’ve recorded from the beginning till the end. Even the scene of you bathing in the cesspool was recorded.”

“If you wish to let everyone know that you, Leng Yue, have not only been defeated by me, Chu Feng, but also that you’ve also bathed in my dung, gone back on your promise, and want to file a false countercharge against me.”

“Then, go ahead, try it. Tell the Heavenly Law Palace that I have stolen your treasures. As long as you dare to do that, I will reveal all that has been recorded here to the public,” Chu Feng fiddled with the ring in his hand and spoke with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, those images could totally be fake. Even if you are to spread them, no one will believe you,” Leng Yue said.

“Indeed, the images could be fake, the voices could be fake. But, could the might of the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal also be fake?” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he put the ring onto his own finger and looked to Leng Yue, “Leng Yue, if you have the courage to do so, let’s play. I dare to wager that as long as I reveal the contents of this recording, eighty percent of the people will believe it.”

“.....”

At this moment, Leng Yue grew quiet. She was speechless. She naturally knew that there would definitely be people who would believe the recording should it be shown.

As for her, she could not allow others to know about what had happened here today. If it were to be known, her reputation would be completely ruined. She would also not be able to continue to be the Heavenly Law Palace's number one disciple, continue to be the head of the Heavenly Generals, or even continue to survive in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, she was extremely unreconciled. Not only had Chu Feng humiliated her and snatched away her treasures, he was even holding the means to blackmail her in his hand. Today, she had been utterly defeated.

Feeling unreconciled, Leng Yue said angrily, "Chu Feng, you are truly despicable!"

"Despicable? You're wrong. I, Chu Feng, have always been a straightforward and upright individual. However, when faced with despicable people like you, I can only use despicable methods," Chu Feng said in a disapproving manner.

As Chu Feng said those words, he had a smile, an extremely wicked smile, on his face the entire time. However, that smile left Leng Yue speechless.

Leng Yue knew very well that if Chu Feng had not prepared this, she would have definitely broken her promise today. Not only that, she would have also borrowed the strength of the Heavenly Law Palace to take care of Chu Feng.

Even though she was feeling very unreconciled, and deeply hated Chu Feng, Leng Yue also felt great admiration for Chu Feng. It was as Chu Feng had said. She, Leng Yue, had not been wrongly defeated. It was not that she was too weak. Rather, it was that her opponent, Chu Feng, was simply too strong.

Seeing that Leng Yue had become quiet, Chu Feng knew that she had reached a compromise. Thus, Chu Feng began to slowly walk toward Baili Xinghe.

Seeing Chu Feng approaching him, Baili Xinghe grew extremely nervous. He had seen with his own eyes how Chu Feng had used various methods to toy around with Leng Yue.

At this moment, Baili Xinghe was deeply aware of the terror that was Chu Feng. Even Leng Yue was no match for Chu Feng. As such, how could he, Baili Xinghe, possibly be able to contend against Chu Feng?

Chu Feng looked to Baili Xinghe and said, “Baili Xinghe, what did you say earlier? Come, say it again.”

Baili Xinghe gulped down a mouthful of saliva. Then, nervously, he said, “Brother Chu Feng, I was in the wrong earlier. As a person of great moral stature, please forgive the offenses committed by this one of low moral stature. Please, let me off this one time.”

Although Baili Xinghe was begging Chu Feng for forgiveness, he did not dare to even look Chu Feng in the face as he begged. He was truly afraid that Chu Feng would kill him.

“Heh, look at your cowardly appearance,” Seeing Baili Xinghe trembling in fear because of him, Chu Feng laughed with contempt. Then, he said, “Taking the Weaponry Refinement Immortal into consideration, I will not kill you.” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and left.

“Huuu~~~” After hearing those words, Baili Xinghe finally heaved a sigh of relief. As he saw Chu Feng gradually growing further and further away, he thought to himself, “Chu Feng, I knew that you wouldn’t dare to kill me. Heh, I admit that you have some skills. While I am no match for you alone, I have plenty of methods to take care of you.”

“While Leng Yue will hide all that has happened here today, I will not. As long as I spread this matter, even though Leng Yue will become extremely infamous, the Heavenly Law Palace will definitely not let you get away with it.”

“Chu Feng, your decision to not kill today is a mistake. I’ll have you know my ability. As for your women, they will, sooner or later, be mine.” When thinking of these things, the corners of Baili Xinghe’s mouth lifted into a treacherous smile. He had already made plans to take care of Chu Feng.

“Taa~~~”

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly stopped his footsteps.

Seeing Chu Feng standing there, Baili Xinghe started to grow so nervous that his soul was nearly about to fly out from his body. He thought to himself, “Could it be that he can even hear what I said to myself in my heart?”

Thinking of that, Baili Xinghe began to sweat like a pig...

Chapter 1796 – Borrowing Another’s Blade To Kill

Chu Feng naturally could not hear what Baili Xinghe was thinking in his heart. However, Chu Feng was able to guess what he was thinking.

Thus, Chu Feng looked to Leng Yue and said, “Oh, that’s right. Leng Yue, you’d best make sure that I do not discover people from the Heavenly Law Palace trying to assassinate me. Else, I will publicize all that has happened here today. I believe you know the consequences that that will bring.”

“That being said, while I am able to temporarily keep what has happened here confidential, I am not sure about others,” As Chu Feng said those words, he deliberately took a glance at Baili Xinghe.

“Chu Feng, you!!!” Hearing those words, Baili Xinghe, who was already sweating like a pig, nearly fainted from anger.

Chu Feng was sowing dissension. He was most definitely sowing dissension. He was trying to borrow another’s blade to kill. Chu Feng was trying to have Leng Yue kill him.

At this moment, Leng Yue also managed to react. She turned her gaze filled with coldness toward Baili Xinghe.

In panic, Baili Xinghe immediately said, “Leng Yue, I, Baili Xinghe, swear upon the heavens that I will definitely not spread what has happened here today!”

“How am I supposed to trust you?” Leng Yue began to walk toward Baili Xinghe one step at a time.

“Leng Yue, you must trust me. No matter what, I, Baili Xinghe, am the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. I am someone who will definitely keep my word. I am definitely trustworthy.”

At this moment, Baili Xinghe discovered that Leng Yue began to have intentions of eliminating him. Thus, he tried his hardest to struggle free from Leng Yue's binding. Unfortunately, Leng Yue's power that had restricted him was simply too strong. He was simply unable to escape at all.

Feeling helpless, he had no other choice but to bring up the name of his master.

Baili Xinghe was truly afraid, extremely afraid. He, Baili Xinghe, was the personal disciple of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. He possessed both talent and status. In the future, he would definitely have a bright road ahead. As such, how could he possibly be willing to die? How could he possibly be willing to lose all that he possessed?

"Very well, I'll reluctantly trust you," Leng Yue had already arrived before Baili Xinghe. The murderous intent in her gaze had also decreased greatly.

"My thanks," Seeing that Leng Yue's killing intent was gone, Baili Xinghe heaved a sigh of relief.

"Puchi~~~"

However, right at that moment, Baili Xinghe's expression became distorted. He lowered his head and discovered that Leng Yue's hand had pierced into his dantian. Blood was flowing from below his abdomen.

Even though Leng Yue was already seriously injured by Chu Feng, it required no effort from her to take care of someone like Baili Xinghe.

"Leng Yue, you!!!" Baili Xinghe had an expression of irreconciliation.

"Baili Xinghe, although I trust you, I must kill you. As for the reason why, we both know."

"Boom~~~"

After saying those words, a trace of ruthlessness flashed through Leng Yue's eyes. Her palm suddenly trembled. Then, Baili Xinghe was shattered into pieces.

"Chu Feng, this is yours. I hope that you can keep your promise. I won't do anything to you. So, do not say anything about me," Leng Yue tossed Baili Xinghe's Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng.

That Cosmos Sack was a scalding sweet potato. No matter what, Baili Xinghe was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's disciple. However, Chu Feng still accepted that Cosmos Sack. The reason for that was because Baili Xinghe's treasures were quite alluring.¹

Although Leng Yue had handed Baili Xinghe's Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng, Chu Feng did not feel grateful to her at all. Instead, he took off the ring on his finger and said, "Leng Yue, I have also recorded the scene of you killing Baili Xinghe."

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng carefully put the ring away.

"Chu Feng, you are ruthless," At this moment, Leng Yue came to a sudden realization that she had been made a fool of by Chu Feng again.

"Heh, there's no other way. For someone like you, I must resort to this sort of method."

"Remember, do not mention anything to your Heavenly Law Palace's elders. Else, not only will I ruin your reputation, I will also make it so that you cannot stay in the Heavenly Law Palace. I will also make the Weaponry Refinement Immortal chase after you to kill you."

"You should know what sort of consequence you will suffer should you lose the protection of the Heavenly Law Palace and gain the Weaponry Refinement Immortal as your enemy." When Chu Feng said those words, he was smiling. His appearance was extremely relaxed.

However, when those words entered Leng Yue's ears, they were like a myriad of blades piercing into her body. Furthermore, those blades were all coated with poison that caused deep penetrating pain to her heart and soul.

Leng Yue did not say anything anymore. She retrieved the three bowls that sealed this region and prepared to leave.

“Cough cough, I believe those are not yours, no?” Chu Feng said.

Leng Yue turned around and discovered that Chu Feng was currently using an avaricious gaze to look at the three golden bowls in her hand.

At this moment, Leng Yue's body trembled. That Chu Feng was truly planning to suck her dry.

However, there was nothing she could do. She was completely under Chu Feng's control. As such, she could only toss the three golden bowls to Chu Feng.

After tossing the golden bowls to Chu Feng, with serious injuries, Leng Yue soared into the air and left this place. She did not wish to stay here for a moment longer. She did not wish to see Chu Feng's complacent expression again.

The reason for that was because seeing his complacent expression would make her remember her defeat.

“These bowls are quite good. They're rare treasures too,” Chu Feng put the bowls away. Then, he opened his world spirit gate and said to Eggy, “I have troubled you, Milady Queen.”

“This is a trivial matter not worth mentioning,” Eggy waved her hand. Then, she entered the world spirit gate and returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

After returning to Chu Feng's world spirit space, Eggy asked, “Chu Feng, did that ring of yours really manage to record everything? It's that miraculous?”

“How could it be that powerful? Although I obtained this spirit formation from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram, it is not that miraculous. It only recorded the portion that I showed her earlier. It is unable to record anymore. Furthermore, that portion it recorded will also disappear very soon. It is impossible for me to save it long term.”

“The hardest thing to change in the world are the things that have occurred. The time that has already passed, how could it possibly be saved?” Chu Feng looked toward the horizon and sighed.

The strength of humans was, after all, limited. For a lot of things, it would be impossible to change.

“That means, the scene of you defeating Leng Yue, and the scene of Leng Yue breaking her promise, neither of those are recorded?” Eggy was even more shocked.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, what about when Leng Yue killed Baili Xinghe?” Eggy asked.

“Also not recorded,” Chu Feng said.

“Even that small portion you’ve recorded will soon disappear?” Eggy asked.

“That’s right. It will disappear by the end of today,” Chu Feng said.

“My god! In that case, doesn’t it mean that you simply do not have anything that can be used to threaten Leng Yue?” Eggy began to worry.

“Indeed. However, Leng Yue thinks that I do. Thus, I naturally do,” Chu Feng smiled. He had a confident expression on his face.

The way he saw it, Leng Yue considered her honor to be more important than anything else. Even though she was skeptical of

Chu Feng, she was not willing to take the risk.

Chu Feng had already contained Leng Yue completely. Likely, from today onward, Leng Yue would not dare to make Chu Feng her enemy again.

“My my my, little fellow, you’ve made this Queen gain a whole new level of respect for you.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was able to remain this calm and confident when even she started to get a bit panicky, Eggy suddenly realized that Chu Feng had truly matured.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, a ray of light suddenly flew past. In the end, it landed beside Chu Feng. It was a person.

“Leng Yue?” Seeing that it was Leng Yue, Chu Feng was surprised.

Not only had Leng Yue arrived beside Chu Feng with a speed akin to light, her body had also been restricted.

The next moment, a voice filled with anger sounded. “The two of you have fought in private, and even tried to act as if nothing had happened?”

[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

The Cosmos Sack was a sweet potato because it contained treasures. It was scalding because contained within the Cosmos Sack were Baili Xinghe’s treasures. If Chu Feng were to reveal them, people would know, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would know → Consequences for Chu Feng. ↩

Chapter 1797 – A Bamboo Slip

After that voice filled with anger was heard, two figures descend from the sky. They were two men. One was a middle-aged man, and the other was a young man.

They were Zhang Tianyi and that mysterious man, Zhang Tianyi's biological father.

Seeing them together, Chu Feng discovered that Zhang Tianyi really did resemble that mysterious man. Standing next to one another, they sure looked like father and son.

Merely, Zhang Tianyi had a very worried expression on his face, and was hinting at Chu Feng with his eyes the entire time. As for that mysterious man, although he had a calm expression, anger filled his face.

Without even thinking about it, Chu Feng was able to guess that Leng Yue's three golden bowls were not as powerful as she had thought. Although they were able to conceal them from the others, they were evidently unable to conceal them from Zhang Tianyi's father.

That was the reason why Zhang Tianyi's father was this angry.

“Chu Feng, Leng Yue, the two of you have refused to abide by the rules. Are you prepared to accept your punishment?” Zhang Tianyi's father's sword-like eyebrows were narrowed as he said those words while staring at Chu Feng and Leng Yue.

“Punishment? What punishment? Even if we have broken the rules, at the very most, you can disqualify us. Where did punishment come from?” Leng Yue asked.

“If the two of you had only competed with one another, you would naturally not be punished. However, you have killed someone in my territory, killed the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's disciple. How am I to explain this matter to the

Weaponry Refinement Immortal? Naturally, you must be punished,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“.....” At this moment, Leng Yue grew speechless. She also knew that it had been wrong for her to kill Baili Xinghe.

Zhang Tianyi stepped forward and said, “Father, while Leng Yue has killed someone, Chu Feng did not kill anyone. He doesn’t have to receive punishment, right?”

“Tianyi, it is precisely because that Chu Feng is your friend that he must be punished. In order to not have others think that I am shielding Chu Feng, he too must be punished,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“But...” Zhang Tianyi wanted to say more.

“Senior Zhang, Chu Feng is willing to accept your punishment,” Before Zhang Tianyi could finish what he wanted to say, Chu Feng interrupted him. He did not wish to make things difficult for Zhang Tianyi.

“Very well. The two of you, prepare yourselves,” Zhang Tianyi’s father took a bottle gourd from his sleeve.

That bottle gourd was extremely shabby-looking. In fact, there were even fine cracks on it. However, when the bottle gourd appeared, both Chu Feng and Leng Yue’s eyes started to shine.

Special veined patterns filled the surface of the bottle gourd. Those were characters that neither Chu Feng nor Leng Yue could understand. Apart from that, the bottle gourd was also emitting an ancient aura. That bottle gourd was something from the Ancient Era.

“What are you planning to do? Exactly how are you planning to punish us?” Leng Yue started to panic. She had managed to detect that the bottle gourd was dangerous.

“Stay in here for two hours. After two hours, I’ll release you two,” Zhang Tianyi’s father first opened the bottle gourd. He then

extended his arm and made a grabbing motion. Then, a powerful suction power sucked both Chu Feng and Leng Yue into the bottle gourd.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Instantly, Chu Feng felt that his surroundings were shaking. Not only were his surroundings pitch-black, the space in the gourd was also being distorted nonstop. Most importantly, in this place, Chu Feng was unable to move in the slightest.

“Wuu~~~”

Chu Feng started to tightly clench down on his teeth. The reason for that was because an unbearable pain was starting to engulf his entire body.

Especially his head, it was hurting extremely badly. It was as if countless sledgehammers were smashing upon his head with a speed of three thousand blows every second. His head was in so much pain that Chu Feng started to tightly clench his fists. It was so unbearable that even his soul started to tremble.

Two hours? Could he really endure this for two hours?

Chu Feng began to worry in his heart. He thought to himself that Zhang Tianyi's father was truly impartial, truly ruthless.

What was contained in this place was an ancient era's formation. Even Chu Feng would not be able to break through the formation. Not to mention him, even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to break through the formation.

If one were to enter this place, one could only endure the torments from the formation. Chu Feng knew that this formation was meant to be used to torment others.

Although two hours might not be a long time, it was very possible for one to have a nervous breakdown after spending two hours in this sort of place. If one were to have a nervous breakdown, one would end up dying in here.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was enduring the pain, he was shocked to discover that his senses had become clear. He had discovered an object in this originally pitch-black space.

“What is that?” Although Chu Feng was still unable to clearly see that object, Chu Feng’s heart was moved. He had determined that it was most definitely not something ordinary.

.....

“Father, what you’re doing is too excessive. No matter what, Chu Feng is my brother. Furthermore, both you and I know very well that Chu Feng did this for my sake.” Outside, Zhang Tianyi had an expression of unwillingness as he looked to his father.

Zhang Tianyi had always held his father in high regard, and had never dared to be rude to him. However, this time around, he was unable to contain himself. The reason for that was because he did not wish for his brother to suffer after helping him.

“Tianyi, you also saw what happened earlier. That Leng Yue and Chu Feng’s techniques, what do you think about them?” Zhang Tianyi’s father asked.

“They are both above me. I am inferior to them,” Zhang Tianyi looked to his father, “Why did you ask this? Could it be that you want to do something to Chu Feng?”

“You’re looking down on your father too much,” Zhang Tianyi’s father smiled. Then, he said, “Tomorrow, if you were to encounter Chu Feng, he would definitely let you win. However, if you were to encounter Leng Yue, she would definitely not go easy on you.”

“You can tell that Chu Feng did what he did to help you, thus, how can I not tell that too? You are grateful to Chu Feng, how could I not be grateful to Chu Feng too?”

“Tianyi, you need to know that, in this world, there is no one who cares about you more than me. I naturally wish for you to

become even stronger,” After saying those words, Zhang Tianyi’s father placed his hands onto Zhang Tianyi’s shoulders. With a very passionate gaze, he looked to Zhang Tianyi and said, “Thus, I am not harming Chu Feng. Instead, I am helping him.”

“But father, I have been to that place before. Even you have been to that place before. You should know how difficult it is for one to endure that place. If one spends too much time in there, one will die. Two hours, how could they possibly endure so long?” Zhang Tianyi was extremely worried. He had personally experienced it before. Thus, he knew how frightening that place was.

“Indeed. Both you and I have failed. However, Chu Feng and Leng Yue’s talents are above us, father and son. Especially Chu Feng. I feel that he might be able to obtain the benefit contained within that place,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“But father, that bottle gourd is already a legend. No one knows whether or not it actually contains the legendary benefit. At the very least, ever since our Ancestor’s time, no one has ever obtained the benefit of that bottle gourd. Even that senior did not,” Zhang Tianyi was still worried.

“No, the legend is real. It is merely us descendants who are incompetent.”

“Rest assured, I have plans. I will not let Chu Feng die in there,” After saying those words, Zhang Tianyi’s father looked to the bottle gourd in his hand and said, “I am merely giving him an opportunity, the opportunity to obtain a whole new level of understanding of martial cultivation.”

.....

At the same time, Chu Feng’s gaze was growing clearer and clearer. He was able to gradually see what that object was.

Bamboo slip. It was a bamboo slip.

Although it was a bamboo slip, it was floating in midair. It

appeared to be unparalleled, like the ruler of all living things looking down from above.

Chapter 1798 – Divine Lightnings Revealing Their Might

The dark golden bamboo slip was not only emitting a very strong Ancient Era's aura, it was also emitting the aura of an unparalleled sovereign.

Even though he was very far away from it, with the help of his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was practically certain that it was a bamboo slip.

“That is a treasure from the Ancient Era.”

With his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng came to see the bamboo slip more and more clearly. At the same time, the joyous expression on his face grew more and more intense.

Although it was only a single bamboo slip, the bamboo slip contained countless symbols. Those symbols were words. Each word contained a certain amount of profoundness.

In that small little bamboo slip, there were a total of several tens of thousands of such symbols. They gathered together like a stream of water, a river, as they rapidly flowed through the bamboo slip.

“Martial skill. It actually contains instruction regarding martial skills.”

“What profoundness. If I am able to grasp the contents of that bamboo slip, I will definitely be able to obtain enlightenment. My grasp of martial skills will also increase by an entire tier.”

After realizing the contents of that bamboo slip, Chu Feng became overjoyed. Sure enough, that bamboo slip was a treasure. Furthermore, it was a treasure of enormous assistance to one's path in martial cultivation.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was carefully observing and comprehending the contents of the bamboo slip, the bamboo slip suddenly and faintly trembled. Then, it began to slowly float toward Chu Feng's direction. Even though it was very slow, it was indeed floating toward Chu Feng.

“I’m actually able to form a connection to that bamboo slip?”

At this moment, Chu Feng was overjoyed. At the moment he had discovered the bamboo slip, Chu Feng had started to gradually get used to the pain that engulfed his entire body.

This caused Chu Feng's spirit power to become more and more focused. The bamboo slip also started to float toward Chu Feng faster and faster.

“Snap~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, a dazzling blue bolt of lightning flashed across Chu Feng's body. Not only did it emit a very ear-piercing sound, Chu Feng had also managed to clearly capture the sight of that lightning bolt.

Indeed, it was a lightning bolt. However, it did not appear to be ordinary lightning. Looking at it, Chu Feng felt uneasy.

“Why would there be lightning here?” Chu Feng started to frown as he pondered.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Right at this moment, the sound of strong wind that sounded like the roaring of ten thousand beasts began to resonate. Furthermore, the sound was growing closer and closer.

“Snap~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Following that, many thunderous sounds began to be heard continuously. At the moment when the lightning flashes appeared,

Chu Feng was able to see that there were lightnings along with the violent wind that were surging toward him.

Furthermore, the lightnings and violent wind were extremely powerful in appearance. Even though he was very far away from them, they still appeared to be enormous, unimaginably big.

“Hahaha, Chu Feng, the Heavens are truly helping me.”

“Although I am unable to move my physical body here, I am able to control my Divine Powers. Chu Feng, you’re toast!”

“Eh? There’s such a treasure here? It seems to be something from the Ancient Era. Haha. Good, very good!”

“Not only will you die today, that treasure will also be mine. And here I thought that Emperor Gong’s successor was helping you. It turns out he’s helping me instead. Hahaha!!!”

An incomparably malevolent voice sounded. It was Leng Yue’s voice. Her voice sounded from the depths of this empty space. Her voice was extremely disgusting to hear.

“Damn it, she can control her Divine Powers?”

“Why is it that I can’t control my powers?”

Chu Feng started to panic. The wind and lightning that had appeared were Leng Yue’s Divine Powers.

However, in here, they appeared to be many tens of thousand of times more frightening. Before them, Chu Feng felt that he was very weak and small.

He knew that, with Leng Yue’s strength, it should be impossible for her to unleash the power of her Divine Powers to such a frightening degree. It was very likely that what had appeared before him were the true appearances of her Divine Powers.

But, why was it that Leng Yue could unleash the true appearances of her Divine Powers, while he was unable to unleash his Inherited Bloodline?

That's right. Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline was not willing to be controlled by him at all.

Thinking till this point, Chu Feng laughed a bitter laugh. Although he possessed a very powerful Inherited Bloodline, unfortunately, he had never been able to control it.

“Buzz~~~”

Fortunately, Leng Yue was not anxious to kill Chu Feng right away. Instead, after she discovered that bamboo slip, she began to control her wind and lightning to take the bamboo slip from Chu Feng.

Likely, Leng Yue had also discovered the importance of that bamboo slip, and she was not willing to miss out on the opportunity to obtain it.

At this moment, Leng Yue's boundless Divine Powers had managed to tightly bind the bamboo slip. The power being emitted by her Divine Powers was incomparably strong. They greatly surpassed the power that Chu Feng was able to grasp in this place.

That frighteningly strong power from Leng Yue's Divine Power created a clear contrast against the small bamboo slip.

However, although the bamboo slip was small, it also possessed a boundless amount of power; it was actually contending against Leng Yue's Divine Powers.

Even though Leng Yue's Divine Powers were dragging that bamboo slip toward her, its speed was extremely slow. It was only a tiny bit faster than the speed it had moved toward Chu Feng at.

If all she had was two hours, she would definitely not be able to subdue the bamboo slip.

“Damn it, why is this item so hard to deal with?” Although Chu Feng could not see Leng Yue, he was able to hear her frustration.

‘Heh, if it's not hard, it wouldn't be an object from the Ancient

Era,' Chu Feng sneered in his heart. The more difficulty Leng Yue ended up suffering, the more he would enjoy it.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, the wind and lightning suddenly gave up on the bamboo slip. With unstoppable might, they swept toward Chu Feng once again.

‘Crap!’ Chu Feng cried out in his heart. Evidently, Leng Yue had discovered that it was impossible for her to obtain the bamboo slip. Thus, she had decided to abandon it and take care of Chu Feng instead.

Although Leng Yue was unable to subdue the bamboo slip, with her enormously frightening Divine Powers, it would be extremely easy for her to kill a defenseless Chu Feng.

What to do? Chu Feng was unable to even move. Furthermore, even if he were able to move, he would still undoubtedly be killed by Leng Yue’s frightening Divine Powers. There was simply no way for him to escape them.

“Could it be that I, Chu Feng, must resign myself to fate and die here?” Chu Feng felt extremely unreconciled upon thinking that he would die at Leng Yue’s hands here in such a way.

“Zzzzzzz~~~”

Right at the moment when the wind and lightning were about to reach Chu Feng, ear-piercing sounds suddenly emitted from Chu Feng’s body.

When the ear-piercing sounds were heard, Leng Yue’s Divine Powers actually trembled slightly. Then, they stopped.

“What is that?” At this moment, Leng Yue’s worried voice could be heard. She seemed to have seen something.

“Rooooaarr~”

Right at this moment, many ear-piercing roars suddenly

exploded in this region of space.

When the roars sounded, Chu Feng was able to clearly see sonic waves that spread through all directions. Even the empty space started to become distorted.

As the roars were heard, nine Divine Lightnings shot out explosively from within Chu Feng.

When the Divine Lightnings were shot out, they soon turned into enormous lightning beasts. Even though their current size was not their true size, when compared to Leng Yue's Divine Powers, they appeared to be incomparably gigantic.

Although Leng Yue's Divine Powers were enormous, when compared to the nine enormous lightning beasts before Chu Feng, they were incomparably small.

“Boom~~~Boom~~~Boom~~~Boom~~~Boom~~~Boom~~~”

Suddenly, the nine enormous lightning beasts moved. With each step, they created a violent quake and emitted ear-piercing noises. It was as if a continuous mountain range or a continent ten thousand miles wide was crumbling nonstop.

“Huuu~~~”

Seeing that Chu Feng's nine enormous lightnings had galloped forth, Leng Yue's Divine Powers started to surge. Merely, this time around, they were not coming toward Chu Feng. Instead, they were retreating.

They were afraid. Leng Yue's Divine Powers were actually afraid of Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline.

“How could this be?! How could this be?!!!”

“Get back here and kill him! Damn it!!!!”

Leng Yue shouted in frustration. It seemed that her Divine Powers had broken free from her control.

Chapter 1799 – Subduing the Bamboo Slip

With Divine Powers that strong, anyone would try to flee upon seeing them.

However, it was precisely those two enormously strong and frightening Divine Powers that were fleeing at this time.

Although the two Divine Powers were escaping, the speed of the enormous lightning beasts was simply too fast. Soon, they caught up to them.

“Roar~~~~”

Right at this moment, the enormous lightning beast leading the others let out a roar. That roar turned into sonic waves that could be seen with the naked eye. Merely, the sonic wave this time around was many times more ferocious than the one from last time.

“Hualala~~~”

The sonic wave dashed through the Divine Powers. Wherever the sonic wave passed, the Divine Powers of wind and lightning turned into strands of gases before disappearing.

Merely the roar of a single lightning beast had left Leng Yue’s Divine Powers in utter devastation.

“Ahhhh~~~~”

At the moment when the Divine Powers were destroyed, Chu Feng heard a heart-splitting and lung-tearing scream. It was Leng Yue’s voice.

It was the first time that Chu Feng had heard Leng Yue screaming this miserably.

Likely, Leng Yue had received a backlash from the destruction of her Divine Powers.

“Zzzzz~”

Afterward, those nine enormous lightning beasts did not slow their pace. Instead, they continued to gallop onward.

“Wuuaoouu~~~”

Suddenly, the lightning beast that led the others opened its enormous mouth of lightning and swallowed the bamboo slip. Then its body shifted, and it turned back into a lightning bolt that shot toward Chu Feng.

Following it, the other eight enormous lightning beasts also turned into eight different-colored lightning bolts and returned to Chu Feng’s body.

“How could this be? Exactly what are those?”

“Chu Feng, exactly what sort of monster are you?!!!”

Chu Feng heard Leng Yue’s voice once again. At this moment, her voice was incomparably weak. However, contained within her voice was a very dense amount of disbelief.

Likely, Leng Yue had managed to see Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline easily bringing that bamboo slip into Chu Feng’s body. Not only was she stunned, she was also deeply frightened by it.

After all, she had tried to obtain the bamboo slip using her Divine Powers. However, even after spending a lot of effort, she had been unable to subdue the bamboo slip. Yet, that enormous lightning beast from Chu Feng’s body had managed to easily devour it.

With how enormous the difference between them was, how could she not be afraid?

“Heh...”

“Who would’ve thought that you guys would actually not fall short at the crucial moment.”

At this moment, Chu Feng smiled a satisfied smile. The reason for that was because he was able to clearly sense that, in addition to the enormous lightning beasts, there was also a bamboo slip in

his dantian. It was floating steadily within his dantian.

Furthermore, this could also be said to be the first time that Chu Feng had experienced the might of his Inherited Bloodline.

As the saying goes, without testing something out, one will not know its strength. Not only did Imperial Bloodlines fear Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline, it turned out that even Divine Powers would flee from Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline.

Although Chu Feng could not be sure whether it might be because Leng Yue's Divine Powers were weak, or whether the Divine Power she had unleashed was not the true strength of her Divine Powers, even if Leng Yue's Divine Powers were not at their true strength, Chu Feng also knew that the strength of his Inherited Bloodline that he had revealed earlier was not their true strength either.

Thus, in this match between Divine Powers and Inherited Bloodline, it was Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline's victory. Furthermore, it was an overwhelming victory.

.....

"It's actually a success? Furthermore, it's not even been an hour yet?!"

At this moment, Zhang Tianyi's father looked at the bottle gourd in his hand. An unconcealable shock was present in his eyes.

Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi expression changed to one of shock. Then, with a joyous expression on his face, he asked, "Success? Father, you're saying Chu Feng succeeded?"

"It's not certain whether it's Chu Feng or Leng Yue. However, one of them has most definitely managed to comprehend the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip in the bottle gourd."

"Tianyi, look at this bottle gourd. If someone is able to comprehend the contents of the bamboo slip, the bottle gourd will react. This symbol represents that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip,"

Zhang Tianyi's father pointed at the bottle gourd in his hand.

Zhang Tianyi looked carefully at the bottle gourd. Sure enough, a symbol was currently flickering on the bottle gourd. Earlier, that symbol had appeared to be nothing out of the ordinary. However, looking at it now, it appeared to be very special.

"Father, the symbol disappeared!" Zhang Tianyi cried in alarm. The symbol that had been flickering on the bottle gourd had disappeared.

"How could that be?!" Zhang Tianyi's father was stunned, as if he had been petrified.

"Father, what happened? Might it be that the disappearance of that symbol means something?" Zhang Tianyi hurriedly asked. It was the first time that he had seen his father have such a reaction.

"Huuu~~~" Zhang Tianyi's father finally woke back up from his stupor. At this moment, he had a very complicated expression in his eyes. He said, "Regardless of exactly who it is between the two of them that has done that, his or her talent has already surpassed that of our clan's Ancestor."

"Ah?" Zhang Tianyi opened his mouth wide in shock. Disbelief filled his eyes.

"Someone has not only comprehended the contents of the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip, he or she has also subdued the bamboo slip," Zhang Tianyi's father said.

"Subdued? What do you mean by that?" Zhang Tianyi asked.

"The Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip no longer belongs to the bottle gourd. Instead, it now belongs to the person who subdued it," Zhang Tianyi's father said.

"How could that be?! That frightening Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip! Father, didn't you say that the formation within the bottle gourd is only that powerful because of the bamboo slip's power?" Zhang Tianyi felt disbelief.

After all, Zhang Tianyi knew how powerful that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip was. He was able to barely see some of the bamboo slip's contents. However, the symbols on the bamboo slip were truly moving about too quickly for him to comprehend.

Such a powerful Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip had actually been subdued? This was something that he would never have dared to imagine.

"This bottle gourd is originally from the Ancient Era. Our Ancestor managed to obtain it through luck. He had said that the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip within the bottle gourd could be subdued. However, it is only capable of being subdued by those with outstanding talent. Even Lord Ancestor... failed to subdue it."

"Furthermore, Ancestor said that after one entered the bottle gourd, one would be suppressed by the formation within it. At that time, the only thing one could use would be one's talent. Thus, if one wished to comprehend the contents of the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip or subdue it, one must rely on one's talent to do so," Zhang Tianyi's father explained.

"....." Zhang Tianyi's expression became extremely uneasy. If it was Chu Feng that did that, it would naturally be great. However, if it was instead Leng Yue that did that, it would be an extremely bad piece of news for him.

"Father, quickly release them. I want to know exactly who did that," Zhang Tianyi said.

"There's no need. Without the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip as its foundation, the bottle gourd has already lost its value. The formation in the bottle gourd will collapse by itself. Even without me helping, they will be able to break free from the bottle gourd themselves."

"Crack~~~"

Right after Zhang Tianyi's father said those words, a crack

appeared on the bottle gourd. This crack was different from the cracks on the surface of the bottle gourd, because it had originated from the inside of the bottle gourd.

At the moment when that crack appeared, the Ancient Era's aura that the bottle gourd had been emitting started to dissipate.

"Look, it has begun," Zhang Tianyi's father placed the bottle gourd onto the ground.

"Crack, crack~~~"

Sure enough, more cracks began to appear on the bottle gourd. Like a spider web, the entire bottle gourd was now covered with cracks.

Seeing that the bottle gourd was about to split open, Zhang Tianyi felt so nervous that his heart reached his throat. He truly did not wish for it to be Leng Yue who had subdued that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip.

In fact, even Zhang Tianyi's father's gaze was flickering with unease.

"Boom~~~"

Finally, the bottle gourd exploded. Then, a dark black radiance began to flicker, and two figures appeared before them. They were Chu Feng and Leng Yue.

At this moment, Chu Feng was gasping for breath. Furthermore, his face was covered with giant beads of sweat. However, his overall health was quite good. Furthermore, he had a faint smile on his face.

As for Leng Yue, her complexion was ashen, her lips were purple and her eyes were sunken. After escaping from the bottle gourd, she directly fell onto her butt with a 'putt.' Not only did she not even have the strength to stand up, her body was trembling violently.

Seeing this scene, Zhang Tianyi started to beam with smiles. He was overjoyed.

As for Zhang Tianyi's father, he was nodding his head repeatedly. Even though he did not reveal it very clearly, he had also heaved a sigh of relief.

After seeing the current appearances of Chu Feng and Leng Yue, this father and son pair had obtained their answer.

Chapter 1800 – Profound Firmament Annihilation

“Junior brother Chu Feng, congratulations!”

Zhang Tianyi stepped forward and congratulated Chu Feng. He was so happy for Chu Feng that he was grinning from ear to ear.

“You knew?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes. You are truly amazing. Even though I already knew that you were amazing, I never expected you to be this amazing.” Zhang Tianyi placed his hands on Chu Feng’s shoulders. He was extremely happy.

“Chu Feng, I had originally planned to punish you. Never would I have expected you to obtain benefits from a disaster.”

“You must know that that Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip is the most precious treasure that our clan’s Ancestor obtained during his lifetime,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng clasped his fist to express his thanks. No matter what, that treasure was the possession of the Zhang Family. However, judging from the attitudes of Zhang Tianyi and his father, it was clear that they were planning to give it to Chu Feng.

Even though Chu Feng had suffered torment in that bottle gourd, he had obtained this sort of treasure from it. No matter how one looked at it, Chu Feng had earned a profit. Naturally, Chu Feng had to express his thanks.

“There’s no need to thank me. This is your ability.”

“Although you will not have to continue to receive punishment, you will still not be allowed to participate in the competition tomorrow,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“Senior, you’re not kicking me out of the fort?” Chu Feng was

surprised.

“You can stay for another day,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“Chu Feng thanks senior,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and expressed his thanks again.

It had been Chu Feng’s intention to not participate in the competition. After all, for Zhang Tianyi’s sake, even if he was allowed to participate, Chu Feng would still have to concede. Rather than conceding, it was better to be disqualified from participating.

The reason why Chu Feng thanked Zhang Tianyi’s father was because he knew that the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans were waiting for him outside the fort. If Zhang Tianyi’s father were to kick him out of the fort now, he would not be able to escape them.

However, if Chu Feng were to wait until the competition ended to leave the fort together with everyone else, he would be able to obtain an advantage in the chaos to escape.

While Chu Feng knew about this, Zhang Tianyi’s father also knew about it too. Thus, Chu Feng understood that Zhang Tianyi’s father was thinking for his sake.

“Leng Yue has been quite affected by that formation. I will bring her back first. You two brothers can have a chat with one another,” Zhang Tianyi’s father looked to Leng Yue and shook his head.

Originally, he had thought that, with Leng Yue’s talent, even if she were unable to comprehend the contents of the Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip, she should be able to withstand the torment from the formation. However, the result before his eyes brought him great disappointment.

At this moment, Leng Yue took a profound glance at Chu Feng. Only she knew that she had not been left in such a state because of

the formation in the bottle gourd, but instead had been left in such a state because of Chu Feng.

It was Chu Feng who had used his frightening enormous lightning beasts to leave her in such a state. Even though the Divine Powers in her body had not been adversely affected, her entire mental state was on the verge of collapse.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, thank you,” After Leng Yue was brought away by his father, Zhang Tianyi thanked Chu Feng.

“If you were me, you would also have done the same thing,” Chu Feng said with a smile. He did not try to conceal that he had done this to help Zhang Tianyi.

At this moment, Zhang Tianyi said no more, and instead smiled. As the saying goes, great grace cannot be thanked with words. Zhang Tianyi firmly remembered this grace shown by Chu Feng in his heart.

When Chu Feng returned to his pagoda, it was already very late into the night. The others had all fallen asleep. However, Yan Xie, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Raish were still awake. They were all unable to sit or stand still from being worried for Chu Feng.

After seeing that Chu Feng had returned safely, Yan Xie and the others were overjoyed. However, still, they nervously asked, “Chu Feng, how was it? Did you win?” They wished to confirm the result of the battle.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Haha, that’s truly great. Even Leng Yue is no match for you. Zhang Tianyi will definitely not be a match for you either.”

“The title of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Strongest Younger Generation will definitely be yours. As expected of my idol, you’re amazing!” Chili Pepper started to dance in joy. She was extremely excited.

Big Radish and Little Radish were acting the same way. Even Yan Xie, who was generally very calm, had a smile on his face.

“I will not be participating in the competition tomorrow. The match between Leng Yue and I was discovered by that senior,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?” Hearing those words, Chili Pepper and the others were all startled. However, they immediately asked worriedly, “Then, did he try to make things difficult for you?”

“If he did, how would I have been able to return here?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“It’s alright. As long as you’re fine, everything’s good.”

Hearing those words, Chili Pepper and the others smiled in relief. However, upon thinking about how Chu Feng would be unable to participate in the competition tomorrow, they were unable to conceal the regret they felt from their gazes.

Chu Feng knew that they were feeling regret for him. He also did not wish to make them feel regret for him. However, there was no other choice. For Chu Feng, compared to a title, his brotherly affection was much more important.

Afterward, Chili Pepper and the others all went to rest. However, Chu Feng not go to sleep.

The reason for that was because he was impatient to comprehend the contents of the Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip in his dantian.

Contained within the Bamboo Slip were quintessences of using martial skills. If Chu Feng were able to comprehend it, not only would he achieve a higher level of comprehension for martial skills, he might even be able to comprehend the relationship between the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash and the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield.

If he were able to combine the two of them, he might even be able to obtain the strength of a Heaven Taboo.

Chu Feng had experienced a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill today. Indeed, it had been extremely powerful, and definitely not something Earthen Taboo Martial Skills could compare with.

If it wasn't for the fact that Chu Feng had employed a stratagem to have Leng Yue lower her guard, then use the Black Tortoise Armor Technique's illusion to confuse Leng Yue so that he could use his Divine Lightnings to cut through Leng Yue's golden light and approach her with his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique so that he could launch a surprise attack with his Divine Lightnings at close range, it would have been impossible for him to defeat Leng Yue.

Thus, Chu Feng began to long for the strength of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill even more. And now, the fastest way for him to obtain the strength of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill would be to fuse the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash with the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to be certain whether the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash and Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield could actually fuse with one another, and whether they would be able to match against Heaven Taboo Martial Skills should they fuse, he still felt that he had to give it a try.

.....

Time flashed past. In a blink of an eye, the starry sky gradually disappeared. A gleam of light began to emerge from the eastern horizon. The sky... had already brightened.

As for Chu Feng, he had been sitting in a cross-legged position with closed eyes the entire time.

He had not fallen asleep. Instead, he was in deep concentration. Merely, all of his concentration was focused upon his dantian.

“Woosh~~~”

Finally, Chu Feng opened his eyes. At the moment when he

opened his eyes, boundless joy and shock filled his eyes.

He was in joy because he had, from that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip, managed to comprehend things about martial cultivation techniques that he had never been able to before. He now possessed a whole new understanding of martial skills.

From now on, Chu Feng would be able to use his martial skills more skillfully, and more effortlessly.

Even for martial skills that placed enormous burden on the body like the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash would have its burden on the body decreased.

However, most importantly, Chu Feng had managed to completely grasp the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield, that Earthen Taboo Martial Skill that could be used offensively and defensively simultaneously.

Furthermore, he had discovered... that, sure enough, the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield and the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash could be fused together.

Should the two of them be fused together, their might would be several times more powerful. Although Chu Feng could not guarantee that their might would be able to reach that of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, he believed that they would, at the very least, not be weaker than the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal that Leng Yue had revealed yesterday.

Thus, from today onward, Chu Feng's strongest martial skill was no longer the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash. Instead, it was the new martial skill originating from the fusion of the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash and Earthen Taboo: Firmament Shield.

As this martial skill lacked a name, Chu Feng decided to name it... Profound Firmament Annihilation.

The meaning behind the name was that once that profound attack was unleashed, the firmament would appear. Once the

firmament appeared, a complete annihilation would be the result.

Chapter 1801 – Competition Begin

Chu Feng was only able to grasp the Profound Firmament Annihilation because of that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip. As for the reason why Chu Feng was filled with astonishment, it was also because of that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip.

Chu Feng discovered that the contents of that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip were not only limited to the bits concerning martial skills. At the very most, he had only managed to comprehend a tenth of the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip's contents.

There was ninety percent more that he had not yet grasped. However, he could not comprehend those. The reason for that was because those contents were incomplete.

“This Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip is something from the Ancient Era. It is no wonder they say that the Ancient Era was the golden age of martial cultivation. Merely from a portion of the contents in this bamboo slip, it could be seen that the comprehension for martial cultivation that martial cultivators currently possess is much inferior to that of the Ancient Era's martial cultivation experts.”

“There is most definitely more than a single Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip. Likely, there are a lot more. If I were able to obtain all of them, they would not be only limited to the usage of martial skills, I will be able to make progress in all aspects of martial cultivation. Perhaps I might even be able to obtain previously unimaginable harvests.”

“No wonder, no wonder...”

“No wonder senior Zhang said that this is the most precious treasure Emperor Gong obtained in his lifetime.”

“The value of this treasure is indeed unmeasurable. If the matter regarding this bamboo slip were to spread, it would likely overturn

the entire Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Fortunately, that girl Leng Yue did not manage to discover the real mystery contained within this Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip. Else... I would likely suffer a calamity,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration. He had realized how amazing this Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip was. Merely a single bamboo slip was already this powerful. If he were to be able to obtain all of them, how extraordinarily powerful would they be?

Chu Feng felt that if he were able to comprehend all of the contents in the Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slips, while he would not dare to guarantee anything else, he was certain that it would definitely be able to help those that had been unable to reach a breakthrough for a long time reach a breakthrough.

However... merely that would be enough to drive countless cultivators mad. They would fight one another to obtain this treasure. While the bamboo slips might be treasures, they would also be the originator of disasters. Chu Feng absolutely could not allow anyone to know that such a thing was hidden within his dantian.

Suddenly, Chili Pepper’s voice sounded from outside. “Chu Feng, the competition is about to begin. Are you going to watch?”

Using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that not only were Chili Pepper and the others outside, the people from all of the pagodas had come out. Even Zhang Tianyi’s father was standing in the center of the battle stage. It would appear that this Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly was really going to begin.

“Of course,” Chu Feng stood up and began to walk outside.

Even though he could not fight against the competitors himself, as well as the fact that those people were not worthy of him fighting against them, Chu Feng still wished to see Zhang Tianyi defeating everyone and obtaining the title of the Strongest Younger Generation.

“Buzz~~~”

“That is?”

However, before Chu Feng walked out of the pagoda, he suddenly discovered that the spirit formation above them was starting to change.

Upon looking at the spirit formation, although there was no clear change, Chu Feng was able to see that the people outside all revealed surprised expressions.

Although he could not hear their voices, Chu Feng was able to read their lips with his Heaven's Eyes.

“It opened? The spirit formation actually opened?!”

“No, the spirit formation didn't open. It merely became transparent. We are able to see the inside.”

“We can see inside, we can see everything. Aren't those people the finest of the Holy Land of Martialism's younger generation?”

At this moment, the crowd was gasping with surprise. It was as they said, a portion of the sealed spirit formation had been opened. Although it was only the central portion, it was already enough to bring great excitement to those people. After all, they all knew that the central portion was the location where the finest of the younger generation had gathered.

They were being given the opportunity to watch the competition for the title of the Strongest of the Younger Generation.

“Quickly, look. That man standing in the center of the competition stage, his aura is very extraordinary. He's a Martial Emperor, at the very least. He should be this place's master, no?”

“Then... that young man standing beside him should be Emperor Gong's successor, right? He's actually a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. Amazing,” After discovering Zhang Tianyi and his father, the crowd exclaimed in astonishment.

Even though they were unable to enter due to the spirit formation, they were able to sense the aura of those within the spirit formation.

“Quickly, look, those are our Underworld Palace’s three Underworld Messengers.”

“Those are our Mortal King Palace’s disciples.”

“Our Heavenly Law Palace’s three Heavenly Generals are truly dragons among men. Even when standing with those geniuses, they’re still exceptionally outstanding. Eh... something’s wrong, why are there only two of them? Where’s Leng Yue?”

“Chu Feng is also not present.”

.....

.....

.....

After a moment of astonishment, the crowd discovered that the two people that they were anticipating the most were not present.

“Today is the day of the competition for the title of the Strongest Younger Generation.”

“There were originally a total of twenty one participants. However, the three little friends from the Underworld Palace have decided to forfeit,” As Zhang Tianyi said those words, he looked to Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish.

“Who are those three? I don’t seem to recognize them. Could it be... that they’re that Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish?”

“That’s most definitely them. After all, other than those three, the rest of the people are all people with overwhelming fame. I only do not recognize the three of them.”

“What’s going on? They’re actually the Underworld Palace’s disciples? But, why are their cultivations so weak? They’re not even Half Martial Emperors. With their cultivations, how did they

manage to reach the fort's center region?" The crowd were all guessing wildly. At the same time, they were all disappointed. Originally, they had thought Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish to be extremely powerful. However, it turned out that they were actually this weak.

"What about that Chu Feng and Leng Yue? Where are they?" The crowd asked. Especially the people from the Heavenly Law Palace, they were very worried about where Leng Yue had gone off to. After all, Leng Yue was their strongest disciple.

"Leng Yue and Chu Feng had decided to privately spar with one another. As they have gone against the rules, they are both disqualified from this competition," Zhang Tianyi's father said.

"Ah? The two of them fought one another in private? Who won?" The crowd were disappointed. Then, they began to guess. There were even people that spoke the question they were guessing out loud.

The way people saw it, Emperor Gong's successor, Chu Feng and Leng Yue were definitely hot topics in this competition for the title of the Strongest Young Generation.

However, as matters stood, only that Emperor Gong's successor remained. In other words, they would not have the opportunity to see Leng Yue and Chu Feng's strength. This caused the crowd to feel extremely regretful. That said, they also wished to know exactly who won in the match between Leng Yue and Chu Feng.

"Why is it that when my son broke the rule, you expelled him directly, yet when Chu Feng broke the rule, you let him stay?" The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief asked with a cold voice.

"The two of them have already received punishment for their actions. As such, they can stay. As for that punishment they received, it is not something that your son could endure," Zhang Tianyi's father said.

“.....” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief clenched his fists tightly. He felt that those words were simply insulting his son. To say that his son could not even endure a punishment, it was clear that he was calling his son weak.

“The private match between Chu Feng and Leng Yue, exactly who won?” Other than the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans, the others were still mainly concerned about the result of the match between Chu Feng and Leng Yue.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

Right at this time, Leng Yue walked out. At this moment, her complexion was somewhat pale. However, it was already much better compared to last night.

“Quickly, look! It’s the Heavenly Law Palace’s number one disciple, Leng Yue. She’s a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. What outstanding strength. Only that Emperor Gong’s successor and Underworld Messenger Kuang are capable of rivaling her cultivation.” Leng Yue’s appearance immediately caused the people from the Heavenly Law Palace to burst into an uproar.

“Leng Yue, she is Leng Yue? Amazing. What powerful strength. Didn’t he say that she was punished? Didn’t he say that her punishment was something that not even Ximen Feixue could endure? Why does Leng Yue appear to be completely fine?”

“Is there even a need to ask that question? Leng Yue’s strength greatly surpasses Ximen Feixue and Chu Feng’s. No matter how strong a punishment it might be, it is still nothing more than a piece of cake for her.”

“Strange. Since Leng Yue is that powerful, why did she fight Chu Feng? Didn’t they say that Chu Feng was only a rank three Half Martial Emperor when he fought against Ximen Feixue? Logically, even if Chu Feng were able to defeat Ximen Feixue, he shouldn’t be qualified to fight against Leng Yue, no?” Many people were confused.

“I know now! That Chu Feng deliberately challenged Leng Yue. He knew that he could not obtain the title of the Strongest Younger Generation. Thus, he deliberately broke the rules and pulled Leng Yue into the water with him so that she would be disqualified alongside him. Someone like him is simply too shameless!”

“That’s right. With that Chu Feng’s strength, how could he possibly be a match for Lady Leng Yue? However, if he decided to pull Leng Yue down by breaking the rules, then, regardless of the outcome of the battle, Leng Yue would be disqualified. That Chu Feng is extremely despicable. He’s simply a shameless vile character!” The disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace placed all of the blame onto Chu Feng.

“Although those words might be extreme, they seem reasonable. Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng is, Leng Yue is simply much too powerful. It should be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Leng Yue.”

After hearing the deductions of the Heavenly Law Palace’s disciples, many of the other observers also began to feel the same way.

Right at this moment, Zhang Tianyi spoke. “Everyone, there is no need to make wild guesses anymore. It is Leng Yue who challenged Chu Feng. As for the result of their match, it was Chu Feng’s victory.”

“What?” Hearing those words, the crowd present were all stunned.

Chapter 1802 – Brought About Great Military Might

“Tianyi!” Zhang Tianyi’s father glanced at Zhang Tianyi. Based on his gaze, it seemed that he did not wish for Zhang Tianyi to run his mouth.

“Father, Chu Feng is my brother, I cannot sit by and do nothing while others slander his reputation before my eyes.”

“Furthermore, I merely spoke the truth,” Zhang Tianyi said stubbornly.

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi’s father said no more.

“Ah? That Emperor Gong’s successor is Chu Feng’s brother?”

“Chu Feng actually possesses such a relationship?”

“In that case, it seems that Chu Feng really defeated Leng Yue.” The crowd were shocked once again.

“How could that be? Leng Yue is a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. How could Chu Feng possibly be able to defeat Leng Yue?” The people from the Heavenly Law Palace were unwilling to accept it.

“If you all do not believe it, go and ask Leng Yue what the outcome of the battle was,” Chu Feng walked out from his pagoda.

“Chu Feng! It’s Chu Feng!”

“Rank seven Half Martial Emperor! Chu Feng is actually a rank seven Half Martial Emperor?!”

“Didn’t they say that Chu Feng was only a rank three Half Martial Emperor when he fought Ximen Feixue? How did he become a rank seven Half Martial Emperor in such a short period of time?!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd were all shocked.

This was especially true for the people from the Four Great

Imperial Clans. They were all frowning and feeling even more uneasy.

At this moment, even the previously carefree Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chiefs were frowning. They had finally realized how frightening Chu Feng was.

His speed of reaching breakthroughs was simply too fast.

At this moment, Leng Yue had an ugly expression on her face, while Chu Feng had a very natural expression. Even though Leng Yue didn't say anything, the crowd was able to guess that Leng Yue had indeed been defeated by Chu Feng.

As for this... it caused the crowd to be shocked by how powerful Chu Feng was.

However, what the Four Great Imperial Clans were worried about was not this. They had made absolute preparations to eliminate Chu Feng here.

However, they never had expected that Emperor Gong's successor was Chu Feng's brother. While they would not fear that Emperor Gong's successor, since he was only a member of the younger generation, they still did not know how powerful that middle-aged man was.

However, one thing was certain. That was that if that man were to act, he might cause a major headache for them.

"I hereby announce that the Holy Land of Martialism's Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly will officially begin," Right at this moment, Zhang Tianyi's father announced the beginning of the competition.

Once those words were said, everyone turned their gazes to the competition stage. Although Leng Yue and Chu Feng were disqualified, the other members of the younger generation present were all extraordinary people too. This still was a very marvelous competition that the crowd did not wish to miss.

.....

.....

...

The competition lasted for a total of two full days, two full nights and six more hours. The final result was within the crowd's expectations.

Without Chu Feng and Leng Yue as his two great formidable opponents, Zhang Tianyi managed to successfully obtain first place, and the title of the Strongest Younger Generation. As for the others... they were all defeated by him one by one.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that the match between Zhang Tianyi and the Underworld Palace's Underworld Messenger Kuang was very marvelous. The crowd was unable to forget their battle, and continued to enjoy it in their memories.

Even though Zhang Tianyi managed to obtain victory in the end, the Underworld Palace's Underworld Messenger Kuang was able to obtain the crowd's approval with his strength.

Merely, when Zhang Tianyi was declared to be the victor of the competition, when he was declared to be the possessor of the title 'Strongest Younger Generation,' the crowd involuntarily took glances at Chu Feng and Leng Yue.

Neither Leng Yue nor Chu Feng fought in the competition. The younger generation from the Ancient Era's Elves were also not present. Thus, although Zhang Tianyi had obtained the crowd's approval, they still felt that his title of the Strongest Younger Generation was not actually true.

As for Yan Xie, due to the fact that the competitors were extremely powerful, even though his performance was not the worst, it was also not extremely good.

However, Yan Xie enjoyed this competition. He knew from the very beginning that he would not be able to obtain the title of

‘Strongest Younger Generation.’ However, he enjoyed being able to spar with fellow expert members of the younger generation.

“Everyone, thank you all for coming here today to witness my son obtaining the title of the Strongest Young Generation,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said.

“My son? That man is actually that Emperor Gong’s successor’s father?” The crowd burst into an uproar.

“Truth be told, this one’s name is Zhang Ming. I am the seventh generation successor of Emperor Gong. My son, Zhang Tianyi, is the eighth generation successor of Emperor Gong.”

“Emperor Gong, Gong Wuming’s original name was Zhang Xianfeng. He is our Zhang Family’s ancestor.”

“Merely, back then, my ancestor did not wish for the people of the world to know of the existence of our Zhang Family. Thus, he concealed his identity, and named himself Gong Wuming as he traveled the world,” Zhang Ming announced the truth of Emperor Gong. Actually, he had wanted to use his ancestor’s reputation to increase Zhang Tianyi’s reputation.

After all, Emperor Gong’s successor and Emperor Gong’s descendant possessed different connotations.

“Ah? They’re not merely Emperor Gong’s successors, they’re also Emperor Gong’s descendants?”

“Emperor Gong’s actual name is actually Zhang Xianfeng?”

“Zhang without Chang is Gong. So that’s the case!”

“Never would I have imagined that Emperor Gong’s descendants are actually still alive,” Sure enough, after knowing about this, the crowd became even more astonished.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when everyone was shocked, Zhang Ming waved his sleeve. Then, following a spatial fluctuation, the portion of the

fort that had been visible to the public was closed off again.

After sealing off the fort, Zhang Ming said, “Little friends, the competition has ended. You all can return back through the same route,”

“Thank you, senior, for your hospitality,” Seeing that the entrance that had previously been sealed had been opened, the various disciples clasped their fists respectfully to Zhang Ming and then left in succession.

While the others left normally, when Leng Yue left, she took a profound glance at Chu Feng.

In an instant, the only people that remained here were Chu Feng and the others.

“Chu Feng, I’ve heard from my father that the Four Clans have set up an inescapable net outside for the sake of capturing you. If you are to go out now, you’ll walk right into the trap. How about you stay here instead of leaving?”

“If you are to stay here, they will not dare to do anything to you,” Zhang Tianyi advised Chu Feng.

“Since I’ve come, I must definitely leave. There is still a senior waiting for me outside.”

Chu Feng shook his head. Since he dared to come, he knew that such a thing would happen. Thus, Chu Feng was not surprised at the so-called ‘inescapable net’ set up by the Four Great Imperial Clans.

Furthermore, Baili Xuankong was waiting for him outside. If Chu Feng were to stay here, Baili Xuankong would not know anything about the situation inside the fort. Thus, he would also stay outside. As long as Baili Xuankong stayed outside, he would inevitably be captured by the Four Great Imperial Clans. Thus, Chu Feng did not plan to continue to stay here.

“But it is truly dangerous outside. It is better that you stay here.

In here, with my father present, they will not dare to do anything to you,” Zhang Tianyi continued to urge Chu Feng to stay.

“Senior brother Zhang, I appreciate your kindness. However, if I am to stay, while I will be able to be safe for the time being, I will definitely not be safe forever.”

“The Four Clans detest me enormously. They consider me to be a future danger, and are willing to do everything within their power to eliminate me. If I were to stay here, I would definitely implicate you and senior Zhang. Thus, I absolutely cannot stay,” Chu Feng knew that even if he stayed, it would not be the best option.

Even though the Four Great Imperial Clans are unable to destroy the fort right now, as long as Chu Feng stayed in the fort, the Four Great Imperial Clans would think of all sorts of means to kill him. They might even search for experts to breach the fort. At that time, Zhang Tianyi and his father would be implicated. Chu Feng did not wish for that to happen.

“But...”

Zhang Tianyi wanted to continue to urge Chu Feng against it. He was truly worried for Chu Feng. Especially after he heard from his father that all of the various preparations the Four Great Imperial Clans had made outside the fort were for the sake of only Chu Feng, he became even more worried for Chu Feng.

Tens of thousands of experts had set up an inescapable net for the sake of a single member of the younger generation, Chu Feng.

This was sufficient to signify how determined to kill Chu Feng the Four Great Imperial Clans were.

The reason for that was because... they had truly brought great military might with them.

Chapter 1803 – Inescapable Net

Right at this moment, Zhang Ming said, “Tianyi, Chu Feng has made his resolution. You should stop urging him against it,”

After hearing what Zhang Tianyi’s father said, Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed slightly. Chu Feng was already able to tell that while Zhang Tianyi wanted him to stay, his father didn’t seem to want him to stay.

However, Chu Feng did not blame him for it. Instead, he felt very relieved. After all, regardless of what sort of relationship Zhang Tianyi had with him, Zhang Tianyi’s father still had to consider Zhang Tianyi’s well-being first and foremost.

Let alone, as the competition had ended, Zhang Tianyi’s father could have totally just immediately opened the fort and allowed everyone to exit directly. However, he had not done so. Instead, he had everyone return through the same path they had come from. The actual reason why he did that was actually so that he could help Chu Feng obtain the opportunity to escape.

No matter what, Chu Feng felt that Zhang Tianyi’s father was a pretty decent person. He did not do anything that he shouldn’t have, and had done all that he should to help Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, the White-browed Immortal, with the help of many experts, has set up an inescapable net outside of the fort over the past couple days.”

“I know that your World Spirit Techniques are very strong. However, no matter what, that White-browed Immortal is still a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. You might not necessarily be able to break through his world spirit techniques.”

“However, if you have this with you, you will be able to escape from the White-browed Immortal’s spirit formation without him knowing about it,” Zhang Ming handed a paper talisman to Chu

Feng. This was no ordinary paper talisman. Contained within this paper talisman was a very powerful unsealing formation. It would be able to break the White-browed Immortal's spirit formation without alerting him so that Chu Feng could escape.

Sure enough, Zhang Tianyi's father's world spirit techniques were extremely powerful. At the very least, his world spirit techniques were more powerful than those of the White-browed Immortal.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng did not refuse. He felt that that paper talisman would really be able to help him.

"This is all that I can do," Zhang Ming said.

"Senior, this junior appreciates your kind intentions."

"Senior, senior brother Zhang, farewell," Then, Chu Feng left this place alongside Yan Xie and the others.

"Chu Feng, quickly escape. All of the traps and mechanisms here have been sealed. We will be able to go out by ourselves."

"However, you're different. At this moment, the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans must be present at all of the exits of the fort waiting for you to go out. If you are to exit alongside us, you will definitely be captured."

"It's better that you exit by yourself. Take advantage of the current situation and leave with the crowd," Yan Xie said.

Chu Feng clasped his fist and said, "In that case, everyone, I hope that we will see each other again,"

"Farewell," Yan Xie, Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish also clasped their fists toward Chu Feng.

Then, Chu Feng's body shifted, and he turned into a ray of light that began to rapidly proceed toward the central region's exit.

What Yan Xie had said was very true. The best method for Chu Feng to escape would be to hide within a large group of people.

This was especially true should he hide among the people from the Three Palaces. No matter how arrogant and despotic the Four Clans might be, they would not dare to do anything to the people from the Three Palaces.

.....

Outside of the fort. The people from the Four Great Imperial Clans, regardless of whether they were concealing themselves or not, were all standing tightly in their respective formation locations. Massive forces were present all around. They were all staring fixedly at the various exits.

However, the exits were still shut. Even now, they were not open. As of now, not a single person had exited the fort.

At this moment, Chu Feng had already arrived at the location of the exit from the central region. Merely, he had concealed his aura and hidden his body within the air. No one knew that he had already arrived at the exit.

However, at this moment, he was able to see the current situation. Although only twenty people had been able to enter the center of the fort, there were an innumerable number of people that had entered the fort itself. At this moment, all of those people were still present in this place.

These people would be the cover for Chu Feng to exit this place.

“Senior Zhang is truly benevolent to me.”

As Chu Feng saw the exit gates that were still tightly closed, as well as the crowd from the various powers, he knew that Zhang Tianyi’s father had not opened the exits. He was deliberately keeping those people inside so that they could provide cover for Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~~”

Right at this moment, the exits started to open. Right after Chu Feng arrived, the exits were opened. This verified Chu Feng’s

guess. Everything was under Zhang Tianyi's father's, Zhang Ming's, control.

After the exits were opened, the crowd began to rush outward. As for Chu Feng, he had sneaked himself into the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace.

As matters stood, Chu Feng had already clashed with the Heavenly Law Palace. Although his conflict with them was not deep, it remained that there had been conflicts between them. Chu Feng felt that no one would anticipate that he will hide himself among the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace.

"Sure enough, they've actually really sealed this region off," Chu Feng used his Heaven's Eyes to observe the outside, and discovered that the Four Clans had indeed set up a layer of invisible spirit formations outside the fort, sealing it.

Furthermore, it was not only a sealing formation. There was also a detection formation. As long as someone used a world spirit formation, that detection spirit formation would be able to detect it immediately. Voice transmission talismans, connection talismans and various other talismans were all unable to be used.

Although the Four Great Imperial Clans had set up many spirit formations, it was clear that they could not trap everyone here. Thus, the Four Great Imperial Clans left many exits in their spirit formations. Merely, these exits were all tightly guarded. Not only were Martial Emperors present at these exits, there were also world spiritists there as well.

It seemed that the Four Great Imperial Clans were planning to inspect the crowd one by one so that Chu Feng could not escape.

"There's quite a few experts from the Three Palaces here. I refuse to believe that your Four Clans will dare to publicly inspect the people from the Heavenly Law Palace," Chu Feng sneered. No matter how strong the Four Clans might be, they would not dare to disrespect the Three Palaces. Thus, even though the Four Clans

had set up an inescapable net, Chu Feng was still certain of being able to escape.

“Help! Senior, save me!!!”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly heard a shout.

That voice came from another exit. As the exits were quite a distance from one another, and there were a lot of people present at this place, which caused the entire place to be filled with noise, it should have been impossible for Chu Feng to hear a cry for help.

However, that voice was extremely special and familiar. The reason for that was because... that was Chu Feng’s voice.

“Help me! Help me!!!”

“Chu Feng, don’t you think you can escape today!!!”

A person was rapidly fleeing in the direction the voice had sounded from. There were many people pursuing him.

As the people from behind pursued him, they were unleashing martial skills to kill the person escaping.

“Everyone, quickly look, it’s Chu Feng!!! That man is Chu Feng! There are people chasing after him to kill him!”

More and more people noticed this scene. All those that noticed this scene were startled.

The reason for that was because the person that was fleeing was none other than Chu Feng. Merely, he was a fake. Although he was a fake, he appeared to be very real. It was simply impossible for ordinary people to be able to distinguish him as a fake. Not to mention ordinary people, even a lot of the people close to Chu Feng would not be able to distinguish that the Chu Feng that was fleeing was a fake.

“Chu Feng, I shall see where you can escape.”

At this moment, the people from the Four Clans that were guarding the surrounding exits began to rapidly fly over. From all

directions, they began to surround that fake Chu Feng.

Furthermore, the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief was the first to arrive. He unleashed his overwhelming Emperor's might and suppressed the fake Chu Feng. Then, with one hand, he grabbed onto the fake Chu Feng's neck and pulled him upward. While gnashing his teeth angrily, he said, "Chu Feng, are you prepared to die?!"

"Ah! It's the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief. Is he really going to kill Chu Feng?"

"A genius like Chu Feng, is he really going to fall like this?"

The crowd did not know that the Chu Feng that the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief was holding was a fake. They all thought that the actual Chu Feng had been captured. Seeing that Chu Feng was about to be killed, the crowd all began to express their regret.

"What treachery. They actually found someone to disguise as me."

At this moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. The reason for that was because his impersonator's disguise was truly too good. Chu Feng was afraid that Baili Xuankong would fall for it.

As the Four Great Imperial Clans had set up an inescapable net, Chu Feng did not dare to use many special techniques to contact Baili Xuankong, as they would reveal him.

Upon thinking about it, Chu Feng believed that the Four Great Imperial Clans had done this deliberately. They had already planned to use this sort of method to lure Baili Xuankong out.

Then, using Baili Xuankong, they would lure Chu Feng out as well.

Chapter 1804 – A Chess Move Behind

Nangong Beidou looked like he was planning to kill the fake Chu Feng. However, even after having captured the fake Chu Feng for some time, he still hadn't killed him. It was clear that this was all a show.

“As expected of Ancestor. It would seem that he will not show himself. Four Great Imperial Clans, you all can continue to play with yourselves.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. If Baili Xuankong fell for the trap, he would've acted right away. However, Baili Xuankong had still not revealed himself. Thus, Chu Feng knew that Baili Xuankong would not reveal himself.

If Baili Xuankong wouldn't fall for the trap, the show that the Four Great Imperial Clans had spent meticulous effort to put on would be in vain. Not only that, they will have wasted many of their experts for this, and given Chu Feng an opportunity to escape.

Thus, Chu Feng planned to use this opportunity, as well as the talisman paper that Zhang Ming had given him, to rapidly escape from this place.

As long as he escaped from this place, escaped from the various spirit formations the Four Great Imperial Clans had set up, Chu Feng would have many method to allow Baili Xuankong to know that he was safe. At that time, with Baili Xuankong's abilities, he would also be able to safely withdraw from this place.

“Nangong Beidou, if you dare to touch a single hair on Chu Feng's head, I will make you suffer the consequences.”

Right at this moment, a sudden shout was heard. Following that, an Emperor's might spread out. It turned into a golden sword that thrust toward Nangong Beidou.

“Ah?” Hearing that voice, Chu Feng was immediately startled. He turned his gaze toward the direction of the voice, and a figure appeared within his line of sight.

“Senior Hong Qiang?” Upon seeing this person, Chu Feng’s body trembled. The person that had acted earlier was Hong Qiang.

Furthermore, he was the real Hong Qiang. At this moment, Hong Qiang was already no longer a peak Half Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become a rank one Martial Emperor. It would appear that he had successfully reached a breakthrough and stepped into the Martial Emperor realm.

However, with only a cultivation of rank one Martial Emperor, how could he possibly be a match for Nangong Beidou? With a wave of his sleeve, Nangong Beidou took control of all the surrounding martial power, then turned it into a whirlwind that swept toward Hong Qiang.

The golden sword that Hong Qiang had formed began to spin in the wind like a maple leaf. In the end, it was shattered.

Then, Nangong Beidou raised his hand and grabbed. Immediately, Hong Qiang was captured in his hand.

When Hong Qiang landed in Nangong Beidou’s hand, he lost all ability to fight. It was not that he was weak. Rather, it was that Nangong Beidou was simply too strong.

“Damn it, I’m a chess move behind,” At this moment, Chu Feng ruthlessly smacked his thigh. He felt himself to be very useless.

While Baili Xuankong had not fallen for the trap, he had not expect that Hong Qiang would fall for the trap. Furthermore, he had not expected that Hong Qiang would be here.

This was something that he neglected. With Hong Qiang’s character, if he knew that Chu Feng was in danger, he would definitely show up. Thus, how could he have failed to anticipate Hong Qiang being here?

Unfortunately, thinking about all this was useless now. Chu Feng absolutely couldn't do anything, now that Hong Qiang had been captured. Else, Hong Qiang would definitely be tormented.

Sure enough, after Hong Qiang was captured, Nangong Beidou shouted loudly, "Hahaha, Chu Feng, are you still not going to reveal yourself? Do you wish to watch this senior of yours suffer so much that he'll wish he was dead?"

"What is the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief saying? Isn't Chu Feng captured and in his hands?" The crowd were all puzzled.

Then, Nangong Beidou let go of the fake Chu Feng in his hand. The fake Chu Feng started to tremble, and turned into a person covered fully in black.

This person the fake Chu Feng turned into was very disgusting. Although he had the shape of a person, he appeared to be made out of mud. It had no nose or mouth. The only thing present was a pair of pupil-less eyes. It was very frightening to look at.

"Ah? He's actually a fake. It was actually... formed by the Hundred Transformations Clay Man."

"It was actually a scheme. For the sake of capturing Chu Feng, the Four Great Imperial Clans set up such a scheme."

"Truly, never would I have expected them to request the help of even the Hundred Transformations Clay Man. Truly, for the sake of capturing Chu Feng, the Four Great Imperial Clans have spent meticulous effort," As the crowd looked to the black mud-like man, they all came to a sudden realization.

Hearing the discussion of the crowd, Chu Feng came to realize the origin of that Hundred Transformations Clay Man.

The Hundred Transformations Clay Man was not a man. Rather, it was a Natural Oddity that had managed to mature. His strength was on par with Yao'er, both being rank one Martial Emperors.

Merely, due to the fact that the Hundred Transformations Clay

Man possessed the ability to change his appearance to that of anyone, he became very famous in the Holy Land of Martialism.

It was precisely because of the Hundred Transformations Clay Man's special ability that many people had tried to request his help. Merely, the Hundred Transformations Clay Man was someone that would come and go without a trace. Thus, no one was able to find him. Furthermore, even if he was found, he would also refuse their request.

Yet, the Four Great Imperial Clans had actually managed to successfully request the help of the Hundred Transformations Clay Man. The crowd felt that the Four Great Imperial Clans must have spent a large amount of wealth to request his assistance.

However, this was not what Chu Feng was worried about. He was worried about Hong Qiang.

"Chu Feng, you're still not going to show yourself? Turns out that you're also a vile coward who fears death," Nangong Beidou sneered. Then, he looked to Hong Qiang and said, "It's the first time we have met each other. However, I know that you're called Hong Qiang. When Chu Feng went to the Immortal Island, it was you that went alongside him to protect him."

"You're truly a righteous person, loyal to your friends. Even though you knew that your strength was insufficient, you still came to throw your life away. I admire your camaraderie."

"Unfortunately, while you're a righteous person that is loyal to your friends, Chu Feng is nothing more than a coward," Nangong Beidou said those words to sow dissension. He was trying to publicly ruin Chu Feng's reputation.

"Pah! If you wish to kill me, then kill me. If you wish to torment me, then torment me," Hong Qiang snorted coldly. Then, he shouted, "Chu Feng, do not come...puu!!!"

Hong Qiang wanted to warn Chu Feng to not come out. However,

before he could finish saying those words, he vomited a mouthful of blood.

It was Nangong Beidou. Nangong Beidou had pierced his hand into Hong Qiang's heart.

“Chu Feng, since you're this fickle and unrighteous, I shall help you accomplish your aim, and let you see how this senior of yours will suffer a life worse than death.”

As Nangong Beidou spoke, he took out a jade bottle from his Cosmos Sack. As he opened the black bottle, black gases surged forth. Then, many little earthworm-like insects appeared from within the black gases. Those insects were entirely black in color. They were very slender. Although they were very small, they were fully covered with black hair, and appeared to be very terrifying.

“It's the Black-haired Poison Insect. Through the heart, they will enter one's bloodstream and reach one's entire body, leaving one feeling so much pain that they'll want to die,” Someone recognized those insects.

Nangong Beidou was going to place those insects into Hong Qiang's heart that he had pierced through with his hand.

“Damn it!” How could Chu Feng possibly do nothing? At this moment, he was planning to reveal himself.

“Chu Feng, escape when you can. Leave this place to me. I will bring Hong Qiang away safely.”

Right at this moment, a boundlessly powerful aura surged forth. In a blink of an eye, the aura arrived before Nangong Beidou.

It was a man wearing a conical bamboo hat and holding a golden brush. He was so strong that he managed to actually seize Hong Qiang from Nangong Beidou's grasp. Furthermore, right after he arrived, he immediately suppressed Nangong Beidou.

This man was Baili Xuankong. Merely, at this moment, Baili Xuankong's strength was even stronger than when he was in the

Mooncloud City. Of course, the reason why he was so strong was all because of that Death Kill Brush.

“You’ve finally revealed yourself,” In response, coldness flashed through the eyes of the Ximen, Beitang and Dongfang Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs. Then, they took out their respective Incomplete Imperial Armaments and began to surround Baili Xuankong to attack him.

“Amazing. He is actually fighting the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs by himself. Is this man Chu Feng’s backer?”

The crowd were all shocked. Baili Xuankong was indeed fighting the four Imperial Clan Chiefs by himself. Furthermore, he was not at all losing to them.

“Chu Feng, quickly escape. I will protect Hong Qiang,” Baili Xuankong shouted again.

“Escape? Am I really to escape?” At this time, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. Even though Baili Xuankong was very strong, Chu Feng felt that, with how much the Four Great Imperial Clans wanted to kill him, they would definitely not have only sent forth their Four Clan Chiefs.

“None of you can escape,” Sure enough, an extremely imposing voice suddenly sounded from deep underground.

In an instant, the earth shattered, and the soil began to burst into the air. Like reverse meteors, many golden rays shot into the sky as a very powerful might enveloped this entire region.

Chapter 1805 – The Overbearing Snow-hair

A magnificent army with thousands of men appeared from deep underground. They were all wearing armor, and were all the elite of the Four Great Imperial Clans.

However, what shocked the crowd were the four aged old men. Their auras were extremely powerful. The four of them possessed auras that were much superior to those of the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. They were four Rank Four Martial Emperors.

As for these four old men, they were naturally the four Utmost Exalted Elders from the Four Great Imperial Clans.

“Even the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders have appeared! Didn't they say that the Utmost Exalted Elders are all nearing ten thousand years old? They're actually still alive?”

Many people exclaimed in admiration. It was one thing for the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs to appear. However, even the Four Great Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders had appeared. This was sufficient to signify how much importance the Four Great Imperial Clans placed on eliminating Chu Feng.

“Wuuu~~~”

Being suppressed by the four Utmost Exalted Elders, Baili Xuankong no longer possessed the ability to continue fighting. Like Hong Qiang, he was also captured.

“Eaahh~~~”

At this moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder spread open his hands. Like eagle claws, he grabbed at Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong. Even though they were several meters away from him, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang both uttered a scream of pain.

“Chu Feng, I will not bother with superfluous words. I will count to three. You will either show yourself, or I'll sever these two

men's heads," The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said in a very fierce manner.

Due to the fact that Ximen Feixue had suffered a miserable defeat at Chu Feng's hands, the hatred the Ximen Imperial Clan had for Chu Feng was greater than even that of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

"Stop!" Seeing this scene, Chu Feng would naturally not do nothing. He soared into the sky and appeared before the crowd.

"Chu Feng, it's really Chu Feng!" Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd were all startled. They had truly never expected for Chu Feng to be daring enough to reveal himself in this sort of situation.

"I will take responsibility for the things I've done myself. The person your Four Clans should view as their enemy is me. Aim your spearheads at me. Release them," Chu Feng said.

"Huuu~~~"

Hearing those words, the expressions of many of the people present changed. Furthermore, they were unable to help themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

However, the gaze that all of the crowd was looking to Chu Feng with revealed a trace of admiration.

Who said that Chu Feng was unrighteousness and disloyal? Who said that Chu Feng was a coward that feared death?

At this moment, Chu Feng clearly knew that he would be killed. Yet, he had still revealed himself to his friends. His camaraderie was truly bottomless. It was something that ordinary people did not possess.

"With how righteous and loyal this Chu Feng is, he is most definitely not the despicable person that the Four Great Imperial Clans have described him to me. For someone like him to die, it is truly unfortunate."

“Indeed. Unfortunately, he is only a member of the younger generation, yet he offended the Four Great Imperial Clans that possess powerful backing!!!” At this moment, many people were sighing. They were feeling regret for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had gained the crowd’s respect with his appearance. However, the crowd also knew that his appearance meant that he would undoubtedly be killed.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally shown yourself,” When the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder saw Chu Feng, his sword-like brows narrowed. He was torn between joy and anger. Without bothering to say any superfluous words, he waved his sleeve and caused space to become distorted. As martial power surged, several golden rays turned into a myriad of blades that shot toward Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The speed of those blades formed with martial power were not very fast. He was deliberately letting the crowd see how he would kill Chu Feng. He was planning to slice Chu Feng to pieces, leaving him to die without an intact corpse.

However, there was nothing that Chu Feng could do. Even though he was facing such a slow attack, he could only wait for death. The reason for that was because the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had already used his oppressive might to restrict Chu Feng’s movements. It was simply impossible for Chu Feng to escape.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right when the myriad of blades were about to reach Chu Feng, the space before Chu Feng started to suddenly distort. As if they were stones thrown into the sea, the myriad of blades all disappeared into the space before Chu Feng. They failed to injure Chu Feng in the slightest.

“What’s going on?” Seeing this scene, the expressions of the crowd all changed.

“A bunch of shameless old bastards. With your status, do you all not feel ashamed that you’re attacking a member of the younger generation that has not even cultivated for twenty years?”

Right at this moment, the space before Chu Feng started to distort again. Then, a beautiful figure stepped out from the space and appeared before the crowd.

It was a woman with an alluring stature and an exceptional appearance. However, not only did she possess a head of snow-white hair, she was also emitting overwhelming murderous intent. Her gaze was filled with killing intent.

“Snow-haired Immortal?” At this moment, not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans’ four Utmost Exalted Elders, practically all the experts present that possessed status and strength started to frown. They all recognized the person that had appeared. She was none other than one of the Ten Immortals, the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Snow-haired Immortal? That person is the renowned Snow-haired Immortal?” After hearing the dialogue of the crowd, many people that had not recognized the Snow-haired Immortal were also shocked with their mouths wide open. They began to seriously inspect the Snow-haired Immortal.

After all, the Snow-haired Immortal’s fame was much superior to that of the White-browed Immortal. She was a true expert that possessed exceptionally powerful killing techniques capable of bringing fear to countless powers.

Merely, the Snow-haired Immortal was a person that would appear and disappear unpredictably. Very few people had ever seen her true appearance. Today, the opportunity to see her had presented itself. Naturally, they would have to properly look at her and remember her appearance so that they could brag about this

experience to others in the future.

“Snow-hair, there are no grievances or hatred between you and our Four Great Imperial Clans. Why are you preventing us from killing Chu Feng today?” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder asked. Even though he was overflowing with anger, he still had to exercise restraint and act calm when facing the Snow-haired Immortal.

It was not that he was scared. After all, he was a grand Utmost Exalted Elder of the Ximen Imperial Clan. Merely, the Snow-haired Immortal was truly too infamous. Even though the Four Great Imperial Clans possessed the ability to contend against the Snow-haired Immortal, they were unwilling to make her their enemy.

“Why? You’re actually asking me why? Hahaha...” The Snow-haired Immortal suddenly burst into loud laughter. Her laughter was extremely crazed and terrifying, like the howling of wolves and weeping of ghosts.

Hearing her laughter, many people started to feel their hair standing upright, and their bodies trembling. The reason for that was because her laughter was truly too frightening.

“All of you, listen carefully. Chu Feng is my, the Snow-haired Immortal’s, disciple. If anyone dares to kill him, I will eliminate their entire clan.”

As the Snow-haired Immortal said those words, her snow-white hair started to flutter wildly and a boundless killing intent instantly enveloped this entire region. Everyone began to tremble with fear.

“What? Chu Feng is actually the Snow-haired Immortal’s disciple?” Hearing those words, not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans, even those that did not understand what was going on were shocked.

In fact, not to mention others, even Chu Feng himself was

surprised.

He thought to himself, ‘When did I become that devil woman’s disciple?’

However, Chu Feng then thought, ‘Well, it doesn’t matter. As long as that devil woman is willing to help me, what harm is there in being her disciple?’

“Snow-hair, since when did Chu Feng become your disciple? I have never heard of this before,” the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder asked. He was actually probing. The reason for that was because he really did not wish to make the Snow-haired Immortal their Beitang Imperial Clan’s enemy.

“Right now,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“You... you’re simply blabbing nonsense here! You’re simply finding a pretext to save Chu Feng!” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder was furious with rage.

“Humph,” The Snow-haired Immortal snorted disdainfully. Then, she said, “I said he’s my disciple so he’s my disciple. If there is anyone that dares to touch him, it will be equivalent to making me, Snow-hair, their enemy.”

“Snow-hair, I advise that you leave some leeway for yourself in times of need. Do not act this excessively insolent. You must know that our Four Great Imperial Clans are not that easily humiliated!” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder shouted angrily.

As the Snow-haired Immortal was not planning to give them face, he too was not going to give her face. Today, they would likely face one another with weapons drawn.

“Hahaha...” The Snow-haired Immortal burst into loud laughter. Then, with a flip of her palm, she waved toward her surroundings.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, explosions were heard in succession like a string of

firecrackers.

Merely, those were not firecrackers. Instead, it was people that were exploding. Furthermore, all of them were the elites from the Four Great Imperial Clans.

In an instant, close to a thousand elites from the Four Great Imperial Clans were killed by the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Go ahead, give it a try. See what kind of end you will get for making me, Snow-hair, your enemy,” After killing those people, the Snow-haired Immortal smiled lightly.

That appearance of hers, not only was she not feeling any remorse for the close to a thousand lives she had just taken, she was instead... feeling extremely excited.

Chapter 1806 – Confrontation Of Imperial Armaments

Blood sprinkled down like rain. While this sort of scene might be something that people frequently saw, the crowd were all feeling their hairs stand on end. After all, the people that had died were all the elites of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Each and every one of them were Half Martial Emperor-level experts.

While Half Martial Emperors were not as rare as Martial Emperors, they were still not a realm that just anyone could reach. At this moment, close to a thousand Half Martial Emperors had been killed in an instant. As such, how could the crowd not be startled by it?

This was especially true for the younger generation. They were deeply frightened. At this time, they had finally managed to see what it meant by viewing human life as grass, what it meant by murder without blinking an eye.

“Snow-hair, you’re truly courting death!”

Seeing that his clansmen had been killed, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder burst into a furious rage. He shook his sleeve and sent forth many waves of martial power to attack the Snow-haired Immortal.

However, facing the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder’s attack, the Snow-haired Immortal actually did not even bother to dodge. She stood there and allowed his unceasing attacks to bombard her body. However, not only was she not damaged in the slightest, even her clothes were not damaged in the slightest.

“Attacks like those are not even capable of tickling me,” The Snow-haired Immortal smiled disdainfully. Then, she raised her hand and made a grabbing motion. Immediately, an invisible power surged out to attack that Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost

Exalted Elder.

“Emperor Dragon Seal!!!”

Although the Snow-haired Immortal’s attack was invisible, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder’s expression took a huge change. He did not dare to rashly dodge, and ended up taking out the square-shaped Emperor Dragon Seal to block her attack.

“Roar~~~”

Once the Emperor Dragon Seal appeared, not only did it begin to radiate with golden light, it also let out a dragon roar. Furthermore, a enormous several-hundred-meter-long dragon appeared before the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder.

Upon seeing that enormous dragon, many people began to feel deep veneration for it. They felt that with the protection of that enormous dragon, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder would be absolutely safe. The reason for that was because they felt that there was nothing that could shake that enormous dragon.

“Clank~~~”

However, in the very next moment, the enormous dragon’s body trembled. Then, the space around it started to crumble.

“How can this be? We’re clearly both rank four Martial Emperors. How could the Snow-haired Immortal’s battle power be that strong?”

Even though he had managed to block the Snow-haired Immortal’s attack with the Emperor Dragon Seal, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder, as well as the other three Utmost Exalted Elders, all started to frown deeply.

Earlier, had the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder not used the Emperor Dragon Seal, he really might not have been able to block the Snow-haired Immortal’s attack. However, the

Snow-haired Immortal was clearly also a rank four Martial Emperor like the four of them.

“Yoh, so it’s actually the Emperor Dragon Seal,” The Snow-haired Immortal said with a light smile.

“Emperor Dragon Seal, that is the Emperor Dragon Seal? The Inherited Treasure of the Four Great Imperial Clans? No wonder... No wonder it possessed such an overwhelming might.” Upon hearing what the Snow-haired Immortal said, the crowd all turned their gazes to the Emperor Dragon Seal in the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder’s hand.

While these people had all heard about the strength of Imperial Armaments, how many among them had actually seen them? After all, Imperial Armaments were like legends. They were items in myths.

“Emperor Dragon Seal? That somewhat resembles the Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal Leng Yue used. Merely... there is also an enormous difference. That is an Imperial Armament, an actual Imperial Armament. Sure enough, it is very extraordinary.”

At this moment, Chu Feng also felt very surprised. No matter how strong a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill might be, it was still a martial skill. However, Imperial Armaments were actual items. The oppressive might that they emitted was simply incomparable.

“However, you’re not the only one with an Imperial Armament,” Right at this moment, the Snow-haired Immortal swung her sleeve. Then, a white light shot forth explosively.

“Boom~~~”

Once that item appeared, heaven and earth started to tremble, and even the oppressive might being emitted by the Emperor Dragon Seal was suppressed. At this moment, an oppressive might not at all weaker than the Emperor Dragon Seal’s was being emitted.

Imperial Armament. It was another Imperial Armament. However, upon looking at it, the crowd was even more shocked.

That Imperial Armament was actually a hairpin. That's right. It was a hairpin that females would commonly use.

The hairpin was silver in color. Looking at it, it seemed to have been forged with silver. Although there were delicate patterns carved onto it, it did not appear to be very different from ordinary hairpins. In fact, it was even less extravagant-looking than modern hairpins.

However, that hairpin was an Imperial Armament. With the powerful oppressive might it emitted, there was no mistake that it was an Imperial Armament.

“What a dense Ancient Era's aura. That is an Imperial Armament from the Ancient Era,” Chu Feng had already determined the hairpin's origin.

In fact, when the hairpin appeared, the experts from the older generation sent forth by the Three Palaces all revealed complicated expressions in their gazes. It was as if they had recognized that hairpin.

“So that Ancient Era's Imperial Armament ended up in your hands. No wonder you are daring enough to oppose our Four Great Imperial Clans,” At this moment, it was clear that the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders also recognized that hairpin.

“Humph, there's a lot more things that you all do not know about,” The Snow-haired Immortal said disapprovingly. However, she did not tell them how that hairpin had ended up in her hands. It was as if she looked down on the Four Great Imperial Clans.

While the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders wanted to say something, they swallowed down the words that they wanted to say. The Snow-haired Immortal was very strong to

begin with. Now that she possessed an Imperial Armament, they really did not wish to fight against her. Even though close to a thousand of their clansmen had been killed, they were still somewhat afraid of her.

Suddenly, a thought came to the Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. A cunning light flashed through his eyes. Then, he turned his gaze to Chu Feng and shouted, "Chu Feng, if you are to commit suicide now, I will release your seniors. Else, I will immediately kill your seniors. Make your decision yourself."

"Chu Feng is my disciple. His life and death is up to me to decide," However, before Chu Feng could respond, the Snow-haired Immortal had restricted Chu Feng with a Dragon Mark world spirit formation.

Not only did she restrict Chu Feng's movements, she also restricted the flow of his martial power. She was preventing Chu Feng from attempting to kill himself.

At this moment, Chu Feng was no longer capable of doing anything to his own life. Everything was controlled by the Snow-haired Immortal.

"Snow-hair, with you doing this, you leave us no choice but to kill them," The Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder covered Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang with his boundless killing intent.

"Go ahead and kill them. What does you killing them have anything to do with me?" The Snow-haired Immortal said disapprovingly.

"You..." Hearing those words, the corners of the four Utmost Exalted Elders' mouths started to twitch.

Even with this being the case, they did not kill Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang. They actually knew very well that Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were their own bargaining chips against Chu

Feng. Before Chu Feng was killed, they absolutely could not kill them.

“It would seem like you are all just a bunch of cowards. Even with your clansmen being killed, you do not plan to avenge them.”

“Oh, how boring. Since that’s the case, this Immortal shall take her leave,” After the Snow-haired Immortal said those words, she planned to leave.

“Snow-hair, you are truly overly excessive!” At this moment, the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder, who had been restraining his rage this whole time, finally exploded. It was not only him, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder also exploded.

The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder and the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders joined hands. They both took out their respective Emperor Dragon Seals and charged to attack the Snow-haired Immortal.

The reason they reacted in such a manner was because what the Snow-haired Immortal had said was simply equivalent to a public insult. If they still continued to endure even after all this, the fame and reputation of their Four Great Imperial Clans would be completely obliterated.

“Humph, that’s more like it,” However, even with the two Utmost Exalted Elders joining hands to attack her, the Snow-haired Immortal was not afraid in the slightest.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Her hands began to move. Her two sleeves left fragrant wind in their path. Then, her Imperial Armament hairpin suddenly grew in size. It streaked across the horizon and, like a sharp sword, collided with the two Emperor Dragon Seals.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, rumbles resonated nonstop. Emperor’s might

surged violently. Many frantic energy ripples, like invisible armies of thousands of men and horses, wreaked havoc through their surroundings.

“Wuuahh~~~”

In no time, many more people from the Four Great Imperial Clans met their deaths. It was not only the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans. Many of the bystanders were also unwillingly involved, and were either killed or injured.

“Block the Emperor’s might!” Upon seeing this, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs all started to act. Although they were incapable of participating in the battle between their Utmost Exalted Elders and the Snow-haired Immortal, they could not do nothing about it. They had to try their best to stop the frantic Emperor’s might so as to prevent their clansmen from being killed.

However, the Emperor’s might was truly too powerful. Even though they were rank three Martial Emperors, they were still unable to block all of the surging Emperor’s might.

As long as one was within a certain range of the Emperor’s might, those below Martial Emperor, even if they didn’t die, would be seriously injured.

Seeing how frightening the Emperor’s might being unleashed was, many people began to hurriedly distance themselves from the battlefield. They did not wish to be implicated. Even the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans with low levels of cultivation rushed to escape.

The reason they reacted in this manner was because the Emperor’s might from the battle had already taken the lives of several tens of thousands of people.

“Dongfang, Beitang, she already does not place our Four Great Imperial Clans in her eyes. Why are you all still not joining the fight? Are you planning to ignore this humiliation to our Four

Great Imperial Clans?!” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder shouted hysterically.

The reason he shouted those words was not because he was deeply concerned for their Four Great Imperial Clans. Rather, it was because even when joining hands with the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder, they were unable to defeat the Snow-haired Immortal, and were instead being suppressed by her. They had to ask for help. Else, they would pay bitterly today.

Chapter 1807 – Fighting Over A Disciple

“This...”

After hearing what the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said, the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder started to frown. His expression became extremely unnatural. He was actually unwilling to fight. He did not wish to make the Snow-haired Immortal their Dongfang Imperial Clan’s enemy.

After all, even if they were to join hands, they might not necessarily be able to kill the Snow-haired Immortal. And if they were to fail in killing the Snow-haired Immortal, she would definitely hold a grudge.

With the Snow-haired Immortal’s strength and her maverick nature, if she were to become their enemy, the people from the Dongfang Imperial Clan would not be able to walk freely in the Holy Land of Martialism anymore.

Not to mention the regular clansmen, even if he were to hold the Emperor Dragon Seal, he would likely also suffer a disaster should he end up encountering the Snow-haired Immortal himself.

The reason for that was because the Snow-haired Immortal was simply too fierce. Else, how could she possibly be able to suppress two Utmost Exalted Elders, experts with the same cultivation as her, that held Emperor Dragon Seals? One must know that the more Emperor Dragon Seals there were, the stronger their strength would be.

“Dongfang, we cannot watch with folded arms anymore. Else, the reputation of the Four Great Imperial Clans will be ruined by that Snow-haired Immortal today. Even if our Four Great Imperial Clans are to remain, we will no longer be able to lift our heads up in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“However, if we are to join hands, then, relying on the strength

of the Emperor Dragon Seals, as well as the power of our various clansmen, we might be able to kill the Snow-haired Immortal. In that case, not only will we be able to eliminate a great enemy, the fame of our Four Great Imperial Clans will also flourish even more.”

After the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said those words, he waved his sleeve and took out his Emperor Dragon Seal.

“Roar~~~”

Once the Emperor Dragon Seal was revealed, it turned into an enormous dragon, several hundred meters long. The dragon covered the sky like a golden magic cloud. It was very dazzling and emitted a great amount of might.

“It would seem that I can only put my all into this fight,” Immediately following this, the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder also acted.

“Roar~~~”

Another dragon roar. Another Emperor Dragon Seal had been taken out.

The four Utmost Exalted Elders of the Four Great Imperial Clans all held Emperor Dragon Seals to attack the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Heh,” Right at the moment when the Beitang and Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders joined in to attack her, the Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes narrowed slightly. A trace of cunning flashed past her eyes.

Then, the Snow-haired Immortal began to force open a path with her Ancient Era’s Imperial Armament. Her body turned into a ray of light that streaked through the area between the Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders. She arrived before Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang.

“Crap! She’s trying to save them!” Seeing that scene, the guards

who were guarding Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang rushed forth to stop the Snow-haired Immortal.

“Scram,” However, before they could even reach the Snow-haired Immortal, they were knocked away like kites with broken strings into the distance by a single thought from the Snow-haired Immortal. When they landed on the ground, their bodies were mutilated, and they had lost all traces of life.

“Chu Feng, as your master, I treat you pretty well, no?” At this moment, the Snow-haired Immortal had placed Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong into the spirit formation that was protecting Chu Feng. She had reunited the three of them.

“Thank you senior,” At this moment, Chu Feng was able to talk again. However, he did not address Snow-haired Immortal as ‘master’. It was not that he did not wish to have her as his master. Rather, it was that he did not dare to do so.

This devil woman was simply too ever-changing. Chu Feng still vividly remembered the scene of her using him as an experiment back then. Thus, even though she was braving death to save him today, he still did not dare to trust her.

“Little brat, can it be that you still bear grudges against me for that day?” The Snow-haired Immortal saw through Chu Feng. However, she was not angry at him. Instead, she smiled an alluring smile.

“Snow-hair, you’ll definitely be killed today!”

Right at this moment, the four Utmost Exalted Elders had caught up to them. Not only that, they had surrounded the Snow-haired Immortal from all directions. Furthermore, their eyes were bloodshot, and their killing intent was surging.

One must know that the people who the Snow-haired Immortal had just killed were the crème de la crème of the Four Great Imperial Clan’s elites. Not only were many among them capable of

becoming Martial Emperors, two of them had even been rank one Martial Emperors from the Ximen Imperial Clan.

Thus, at this moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder hated the Snow-haired Immortal to his bones. He wished that he could eat her flesh and drink her blood. However, even if he were able to do all of that, he would still not be able to alleviate the hatred in his heart.

"I've heard that the Emperor Dragon Seals are only able to reveal their true strength should the four of them be gathered together. Perfect timing. Allow me to experience the might of your Emperor Dragon Seals."

"No, 'my' Emperor Dragon Seals," After saying those words, the Snow-haired Immortal revealed an avaricious smile.

"You actually dare to think about our Emperor Dragon Seals! Your sin is unforgivable!" At this moment, even the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder was filled with incomparable rage.

The Emperor Dragon Seals were their inherited treasures. They were the foundation of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Yet, the Snow-haired Immortal actually thought about seizing them for herself. This was something that he could not tolerate. Thus, he had to eliminate the Snow-haired Immortal.

"Kill! Kill that devil woman! We shall eliminate this evil from our Holy Land of Martialism!" The four Utmost Exalted Elders attacked together.

"Set up formations! Help the Utmost Exalted Elders eliminate that witch!!!" At this moment, the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs shouted in unison.

"Yes, milord!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

The people from the Four Great Imperial Clans shouted in unison. Their shout was so strong that it seemed like it could

pierce the skies and reach the outer world.

After that, the foreheads of all of the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans started to radiate with the word ‘Imperial.’ Then, the elites of the Four Great Imperial Clans flipped their palms, and each took out a golden title plate and placed their title plates onto their foreheads while pointing one finger at the four Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, several tens of thousands of little golden dragons streaked across the sky and began to enter the bodies of the four Utmost Exalted Elders unceasingly.

At this moment, the ‘Imperial’ characters on the foreheads of the four Utmost Exalted Elders grew brighter and brighter. The might of the Emperor Dragon Seals in their hands also grew stronger and stronger. The four golden dragons were becoming larger and larger, more vivid and lifelike, and their scales began to drift about. At that time, they looked like real dragons moving about through the sky.

“Buzzz~~~”

Being oppressed by those four golden dragons, the Ancient Era’s Imperial Armament that the Snow-haired Immortal controlled, that hairpin of hers, also became weaker and weaker. In fact, the light that it emitted was also starting to grow fainter and fainter.

“Snow-hair, you are unable to differentiate good from bad. You dared to think that you could withstand our Four Great Imperial Clans by yourself. Today, no one should pity your death.” Seeing that the Snow-haired Immortal was being suppressed, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders finally started to smile complacently.

“Who said that Snow-hair is by herself?” However, right at this moment, a laugh was heard. Then, a golden spear a hundred

meters long pierced into the battlefield. It began to help the Snow-haired Immortal fight against the four golden dragons.

“You... it’s actually you. Compass Immortal, why would it be you?”

At this moment, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders were all shocked. The reason for that was because there was a person within the golden spear. As for that person, he was none other than the Compass Immortal.

“Compass Immortal, even he came?” Although the crowd were unable to see the Compass Immortal, they were able to hear the mentions of his name.

“Damned shameless monk, why have you come?” In fact, even the Snow-haired Immortal was puzzled. Furthermore, she was looking at the Compass Immortal with a face of hostility.

“Snow-hair, while you’re allowed to come to obtain a disciple, am I not allowed to?” the Compass Immortal asked with a beaming smile.

“Obtain a disciple?” Hearing those words, many people were bewildered.

“Damned monk! You’re planning to fight over Chu Feng with this Immortal?!” It was the Snow-haired Immortal who realized the Compass Immortal’s intentions.

“Precisely,” The Compass Immortal nodded with a smile.

“Ah? What? The Compass Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal have both come to fight over having Chu Feng become their disciple? This...”

Hearing those words, many people opened their mouths wide with shock.

This was especially true of the younger generation. They all felt extremely envious of Chu Feng.

The Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal, what sort of statuses did the two of them possess? Many people could only dream about becoming their disciples.

Yet, these two people who never accepted disciples actually came to fight over Chu Feng to have him become their disciple. What sort of honor was this?

However, at the same time, there were people who also realized that it was not that these two Immortals did not wish to obtain disciples. Rather, their requirements were set extremely high, and they had yet to find a suitable disciple the entire time.

However, Chu Feng had most definitely satisfied all of their requirements. Else, how could they insist on making Chu Feng their disciple even knowing that they would become enemies of the Four Great Imperial Clans?

Chapter 1808 – Not Afraid Of Martial Emperors

“Chu Feng, say, are you going to become my disciple, or that damned monk’s disciple?” The Snow-haired Immortal asked.

“Chu Feng, although Snow-hair possesses the title of Immortal, she is actually a devil woman. If you become her disciple, sooner or later, you will be tormented to death by her,” Before Chu Feng could answer, the Compass Immortal interrupted.

“Insolent monk! Not only have you stolen from me, you actually want to snatch my disciple too. And now you even dare to spout lies about me and slander my reputation,” The Snow-haired Immortal was so enraged that her complexion turned deathly pale. Overflowing hatred filled her eyes.

However, even with this being the case, she did not attack the Compass Immortal. Like her, the Compass Immortal also did not attack her.

The two of them knew very well that, regardless of what sorts of grievances and hatreds the two of them possessed for one another, for Chu Feng’s sake, they had to, at this time, work together. Currently, their only enemies were the Four Great Imperial Clans.

“Snow-hair, let’s stop arguing. Our most important mission right now is to save Chu Feng. Do you have any good plans?” The Compass Immortal sent a voice transmission to the Snow-haired Immortal.

“That’s simple. I’ll hinder those four old farts, and you can seize the opportunity to take Chu Feng away. However, remember this, Chu Feng is this Immortal’s disciple,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“That is a good plan. Merely, the power of the Emperor Dragon Seals is growing stronger by the moment. Are you sure you can do

it?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“Rest assured, this Immortal is definitely able to safely escape. Afterward, I’ll come and slaughter you, damned monk, and take back my disciple,” After the Snow-haired Immortal said those words, her snow-white hair began to violently flutter again. Her Ancient Era’s Immortal Armament that had already grown dim actually started to shine brightly. In an instant, the light from her Ancient Era’s Imperial Armament actually overshadowed that of the four golden dragons.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

Using this opportunity, the Compass Immortal began to step forward. Each and every one of his footsteps was extremely profound. By relying on that profound movement martial skill, as well as the cover provided by the Snow-haired Immortal, the Compass Immortal successfully carried Chu Feng and the others with him and pierced through the encirclement of the four Utmost Exalted Elders to fly into the distance

“Damn it! That Compass has escaped with Chu Feng!” Upon discovering this, the four Utmost Exalted Elders immediately turned around to give chase.

“Four shameless bastards, none of you can leave,” However, how could the Snow-haired Immortal possibly allow them the opportunity to pursue Chu Feng? The power of her Ancient Era’s Imperial Armament soared vigorously. None of the four Utmost Exalted Elders were capable of breaking free from her.

With an irresistible force, no one was able to stop the Compass Immortal. Although he did not start to openly slaughter the crowd like the Snow-haired Immortal, after he seriously injured several thousand people, no one dared to try to stop him anymore.

“Boom~~~”

Following a loud explosion, the Compass Immortal broke

through the invisible spirit formation set up by the Four Great Imperial Clans.

“Damned Snow-hair! I shall dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!” Seeing the Compass Immortal escaping with Chu Feng, the four Utmost Exalted Elders were infuriated. They began to put all of their strength into attacking the Snow-haired Immortal. The four of them planned to eliminate her.

“Four sirs, do not be anxious. That Compass will not be able to escape, and that Chu Feng will also not be able to escape. Today, none of them will be able to escape.”

Right at this moment, two rays of light suddenly arrived before the Compass Immortal. They were two white-haired old men.

Although the two of them were very old, they possessed exceptionally strong auras. The two of them were both rank four Martial Emperors.

After the two of them approached the Compass Immortal, they immediately took out their Incomplete Imperial Armaments and began to unleash attacks at the Compass Immortal. All of their attacks were fatal.

“They’re our Nangong Imperial Clan and Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders,” At this moment, Nangong Beidou recognized the two old men.

“You two have also come? Aren’t you supposed to be in charge of guarding the clans?” At this moment, the four Utmost Exalted Elders who were fighting the Snow-haired Immortal were shocked. However, more than that, they were overjoyed. If it wasn’t for the backup of these two Utmost Exalted Elders, Chu Feng would have really been taken away by the Compass Immortal.

“We were unable to feel reassured. Thus, we decided to come and have a look. Sure enough, our decision to come was correct,” Although these two Utmost Exalted Elders had just arrived, the

two of them, as people with extensive experience, immediately knew what the situation was. They knew that the Compass Immortal had become their enemy. Naturally, they would have to kill the Compass Immortal.

“Haha, very well. I have always wanted to match myself with the Nangong Imperial Clan and the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders. For me to be able to fight against the two of you by myself, I could be said to be fortunate,” The Compass Immortal burst into loud laughter. Although he was facing the two of them alone, he was not at a disadvantage.

“If this is to continue, it’ll never end. There might even be more reinforcements from the Four Clans. I will hand Chu Feng to the two of you.”

“Even if you are to die, you must still protect Chu Feng, understand?” Although the Compass Immortal appeared to be very imposing, he was actually secretly telling Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang to protect Chu Feng.

“Understood,” Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang said together.

“Go,” The Compass Immortal directly shot Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang away. At the same time, he removed the spirit formation the Snow-haired Immortal had placed on them and restored their freedom to move.

“You cannot escape!!!” However, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs, as well as many Martial Emperor-level experts, immediately chased after them. It was as if they had been on guard against the Compass Immortal releasing them the entire time.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

Furthermore, at this moment, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs and the various Martial Emperors unleashed many fatal attacks. However, their target was neither Baili Xuankong nor Hong Qiang. Their fatal attacks were all aimed at Chu Feng.

“Come, come, come. If you have the courage, come at me. To bully a member of the younger generation, do you all not fear ruining your reputations?”

Baili Xuankong held the Death Kill Brush and withstood all of the attacks from the crowd. Afterward, his body turned, and he flew toward the incoming Martial Emperors. By relying only on himself, he had managed to suppress the four Clan Chiefs, as well as five rank two Martial Emperors.

“Hong Qiang, regardless of what sort of method you use, you must bring Chu Feng out,” Baili Xuankong said to Hong Qiang.

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” Hong Qiang did not dare to hesitate. He immediately brought Chu Feng with him and began to escape.

“Chu Feng, today, you are definitely going to die here!” However, not long after Hong Qiang began to escape with Chu Feng, seven Martial Emperors flew toward them from outside the spirit formation. They were all people from the Four Great Imperial Clans. Although they were only rank one Martial Emperors, there were still seven Martial Emperors.

“Damn it,” Being enveloped by their powerful oppressive might, Chu Feng and Hong Qiang were sealed off in an instant. Immediately afterward, the seven rank one Martial Emperors encircled Chu Feng and Hong Qiang from both the sky and the ground.

“Whoever dares to touch Chu Feng will be dismembered into ten thousand pieces!” Baili Xuankong shouted. He immediately tried to turn around to rescue Hong Qiang and Chu Feng.

“You should think about yourself first,” However, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs sneered at Baili Xuankong. Joining hands with the five rank two Martial Emperors, they encircled Baili Xuankong and stopped him from saving Chu Feng.

“So that’s the case. They have already planned this. This was

done on purpose,” Chu Feng started to frown. He had managed to tell that the four Imperial Clan Chiefs had deliberately chased after him from behind so that Baili Xuankong would go and stop them.

However, they had actually planned to trap Baili Xuankong and prevent him from being next to Chu Feng to protect him. The reason for that was because they already had people stationed outside.

As long as Chu Feng lost Baili Xuankong’s protection, the seven rank one Martial Emperors would be sufficient to take care of Chu Feng and Hong Qiang.

“Truly despicable!” Baili Xuankong also realized what had happened. However, he was already tightly trapped by the four Imperial Clan Chiefs and the five rank two Martial Emperors. At this moment, he simply did not have a way to break free of them to save Chu Feng. All he could do was watch as the seven rank one Martial Emperors surrounded Chu Feng and Hong Qiang.

“Chu Feng is doomed now. Although that man by the name of Hong Qiang is also a Martial Emperor, he is only a rank one Martial Emperor.”

“As Martial Emperors, which one of them does not possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation? That Hong Qiang is definitely incapable of contending against seven people alone,” The crowd began to spiritedly discuss the current situation.

In fact, it was true. Hong Qiang would not be able to fight against seven people alone. At the very most, he could contend against two rank one Martial Emperors. After all, his opponents were all people from the Four Great Imperial Clans; they all possessed Imperial Bloodlines and heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Practically none of them were weaker than him.

“Senior Hong Qiang, you do not have to worry about me. You

merely need to protect yourself. Mere rank one Martial Emperors are incapable of killing me,” At this moment, lightning began to flicker on Chu Feng’s body. His aura had soared from rank seven Half Martial Emperor to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

Although Chu Feng was surrounded by Martial Emperors, his imposing might was not at all weaker than that of those Martial Emperors.

Furthermore, there was no trace of fear in Chu Feng’s gaze. He... was truly not afraid of Martial Emperors.

Chapter 1809 – Watching With Folded Arms

“What? Mere rank one Martial Emperors? What arrogance! Today, I shall let you know the gap between Martial Emperors and Half Martial Emperors!”

Upon seeing how arrogant Chu Feng’s behaviour was, other than the two Martial Emperors being pinned down by Hong Qiang, the remaining five Martial Emperors all began to attack Chu Feng.

“What? You’re implying that rank one Martial Emperors are very extraordinary?”

“In that case, come, try killing me,” With a thought from Chu Feng, water and fire appeared at the same time. Like protector gods, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique appeared on either side of Chu Feng.

Furthermore, they were both emitting the aura of rank one Martial Emperors.

“Quickly, look. What are those? They are actually capable of fighting Martial Emperors?”

“That’s a secret skill. It’s the Water Immortal Profound Technique.”

“If that water is the Water Immortal Profound Technique, then wouldn’t that mean that fire is the Fire Immortal Profound Technique?”

“How could this be? Didn’t Chu Feng only obtain the Water Immortal Profound Technique? How come even the Fire Immortal Profound Technique is with him? Hasn’t the Fire Immortal Profound Technique been lost for many years?”

Seeing that the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Techniques had blocked the attacks aimed at Chu Feng by the five rank one Martial Emperors, the crowd

were all extremely shocked.

At this moment, even the elders from the Three Palaces began to narrow their eyes. Chu Feng possessed both the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. This was no small matter.

While others might not know about it, they knew very well how difficult it was for the Five Elements Secret Skills to be controlled by a single person simultaneously. While they would be fine with a single secret skill, if they were to have two secret skills in their bodies, the two secret skills would create an enormous pressure. The pressure was so strong that ordinary people were simply incapable of enduring it.

However, it was evident that Chu Feng had managed to endure the pressure from the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to have such fluent control over them.

“Rumble~~~”

“Crash~~~”

Soon, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique exploded. Even though their bodies were instantly restored, they were smashed apart again immediately afterward.

“It’s no good. No matter what, secret skills are only secret skills. They are simply incapable of withstanding real Martial Emperors,” The crowd cried out in alarm.

Even though both the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique emitted the aura of rank one Martial Emperors, they were unable to withstand the attacks from the five Martial Emperors.

“Chu Feng, did you really think that you would be saved because of your secret skills? Do you know our strength now? Martial

Emperors are not existences that you can look down on.”

At that moment, three of the rank one Martial Emperors had broken free from the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, and were charging toward Chu Feng to attack him.

Those three rank one Martial Emperors all held Incomplete Imperial Armaments in their hands. Their might was extremely strong.

“Clank~~~”

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate them. He took a step back and then revealed the Heavenly Immortal Sword to face them.

“Heavenly Immortal Sword?”

“Is that the Heavenly Immortal Sword he snatched away from Ximen Feixue? It has actually already acknowledged Chu Feng as its master?” Upon seeing the Heavenly Immortal Sword, the crowd burst into an uproar.

“Hand over the Heavenly Immortal Sword!” Upon seeing the Heavenly Immortal Sword, one of the three Martial Emperors that was charging to kill Chu Feng became extremely furious. It turned out that he was a person from the Ximen Imperial Clan.

“Humph,” Chu Feng snorted coldly. He unleashed the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique and collided with the three Martial Emperors.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

Golden light radiated all over. Martial powers were wreaking havoc as the four people fought one another.

Although Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, and could contend against rank one Martial Emperors with his cultivation of

rank nine Half Martial Emperor, it was still very strenuous for him to fight against three rank one Martial Emperors simultaneously.

“As expected of Martial Emperors. It would appear that I have underestimated the power of Martial Emperors.”

Chu Feng frowned slightly. After his battle against Leng Yue, Chu Feng had thought that he already possessed the strength to kill rank one Martial Emperors. However, it would appear that he had overestimated himself.

No matter how strong Leng Yue was, she was still only a Half Martial Emperor. However, his current opponents were actual Martial Emperors.

Even though Chu Feng and Leng Yue possessed the battle power to contend against rank one Martial Emperors, it would be very difficult for them to defeat rank one Martial Emperors.

As for why that was the case, Chu Feng also didn't know. In short... the strength of Martial Emperors was stronger than his own. It was as if there was a thin yet unsurmountable string that separated Half Martial Emperors and Martial Emperors.

As long as Chu Feng remained a Half Martial Emperor, even if his battle power was already approaching that of a Martial Emperor, or even surpassed that of the Martial Emperor he was fighting against, he would never be able to surmount that string, never be able to defeat a Martial Emperor.

When all was said and done, Half Martial Emperors were inferior to Martial Emperors.

“Chu Feng is amazing. He's actually managing to fight against three Martial Emperors with the cultivation of a Half Martial Emperor.”

“Humph, so what? He's still being oppressed by those three Martial Emperors.”

“That's different. If it were any other ordinary peak Half Martial

Emperor fighting against three Martial Emperors, they would not be able to last a single bout. Yet, Chu Feng, with his cultivation of a peak Half Martial Emperor, is able to contend against three rank one Martial Emperors. If it was you, could you do that?”

“I... this...”

Even though Chu Feng was being kept on the defensive, his strength was acknowledged by the crowd. After all, being able to contend against Martial Emperors with the cultivation of a peak Half Martial Emperor was something akin to legend since ancient times.

Yet, at this time, this thing which was akin to legend was actually happening before the crowd’s eyes. As such, how could they not be astonished?

“With Chu Feng’s strength, if he were to fight against Zhang Tianyi, it’s likely that even Zhang Tianyi would not be a match for him.”

“Unfortunately, if this is to continue, Chu Feng will not be able to withstand them anymore. As a mere Half Martial Emperor, no matter how strong the martial power contained within his dantian is, it will not be able to surpass an actual Martial Emperor’s martial power.”

At this moment, some of the older generation’s experts shook their heads and sighed regretfully. They did not wish for a genius like Chu Feng to die like this. However, they also did not dare to oppose the Four Great Imperial Clans. All they could do was look on helplessly as everything unfolded before them.

.....

At this moment. Inside the fort, Zhang Tianyi was kneeling before Zhang Ming and begging, “Father, I beg you, please save Chu Feng. Your son is kowtowing to you.”

After saying those words, Zhang Tianyi ruthlessly smashed his

head into the ground. Due to the fact that the ground was composed of special materials, Zhang Tianyi smashing his head so ruthlessly soon caused his head to become bloodied.

“Tianyi, it is not that your father is heartless. I too wish to save Chu Feng.”

“Merely, I believe you know the reason why our Zhang Clan was exterminated. I want you to obtain the title of Overlord. While I cannot lower my head to anyone, I also cannot willingly make enemies.”

“That child Chu Feng is destined to be extraordinary. As long as he’s extraordinary, there will definitely be people who want to kill him.”

“If I am to act today, I will only make enemies of the Four Clans. However, what if the Three Palaces and the Ancient Era’s Elves also want to kill him in the future? Are we to become enemies with the Three Palaces and the Ancient Era’s Elves too?” Zhang Ming asked.

“Fine. Your son will not trouble father. However, I absolutely cannot watch my brother dying without doing anything. Even if I am to die, I shall die with him,” Zhang Tianyi abruptly got up and prepared to leave.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after Zhang Tianyi got up, he became incapable of moving or even saying anything. It was as if he had been petrified. Zhang Tianyi had been bound by his father.

“Tianyi, even if you are to hate me now, you will one day understand the heart of your father,” After Zhang Ming said those words, he closed his eyes. He had already made the resolution to watch with folded arms.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

At this moment, the attacks from the three rank one Martial

Emperors were growing fiercer and fiercer. In fact, they had even unleashed their Imperial Bloodlines and were using Earthen Taboo Martial Skills to frantically unleash fatal attacks at Chu Feng. They were truly determined to kill Chu Feng.

However, even with this being the case, it was still very difficult for them to kill Chu Feng.

At this moment, that Ximen Imperial Clan's Martial Emperor actually tossed out a talisman paper. Once that talisman paper was tossed out, it immediately turned into a ferocious beast. That ferocious beast was exceptionally fierce.

That was a treasure for slaughtering others. Although it could only be used once, its power was boundless.

"No matter what, you're a Martial Emperor, and yet you're actually this shameless. You're incapable of killing me yourself, and actually ended up using treasures," Chu Feng dodged the ferocious beast and revealed an expression of contempt.

"If you have more tricks up your sleeve, you can use them. I'm only afraid that you don't," The Ximen Imperial Clan's Martial Emperor sneered.

"Humph," Hearing those words, Chu Feng snorted.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng flipped his palm, and then a blue bow appeared in his hand. Once that bow appeared, a blue oppressive might that was visible to the naked eye swept forth. Not only did it cover the three rank one Martial Emperor's Incomplete Imperial Armaments, it also forced the three rank one Martial Emperors to fall back from Chu Feng.

Chapter 1810 – Shooting Martial Emperors With Arrows

“Another Incomplete Imperial Armament. Exactly how many Incomplete Imperial Armaments does that Chu Feng possess?” As the crowd saw the deep blue bow in Chu Feng’s hand, they were extremely shocked.

After all, they already knew that Chu Feng had snatched away the Cyan Rainbow Sword and the Purple Rainbow Sword, two Incomplete Imperial Armaments, from the Nangong Imperial Clan’s princes.

Then, he had managed to subdue the renowned Demon Sword, the Evil God Sword, in Mooncloud City. Earlier, he had been using Ximen Feixue’s Heavenly Immortal Sword. And now, Chu Feng actually took out another Incomplete Imperial Armament. Furthermore, this Incomplete Imperial Armament was of extremely high quality. This caused the crowd to be extremely envious of him.

After all, Incomplete Imperial Armaments were extremely precious. Not even all of the Martial Emperor-level experts of the Four Great Imperial Clans possessed Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Yet, Chu Feng, a single Half Martial Emperor, actually possessed five Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd was endlessly envious of Chu Feng, Chu Feng streaked his right hand over his Cosmos Sack and took out a golden arrow. He held the golden arrow in his hand.

With the arrow in his hand, Chu Feng immediately placed it onto the bowstring. Then, he violently pulled the bowstring and shouted, “Rank one Martial Emperor, die!!!”

“Boom~~~~”

Once the arrow shot out, heaven and earth trembled, and a thunderous explosion sounded from the bowstring. At the same time, a golden ray of light streaked through the sky. The rank one Martial Emperor that was closest to Chu Feng was pierced through by the golden arrow.

“Eaaahh!!!”

After the golden arrow pierced through his body, that rank one Martial Emperor uttered a bitter, heart-tearing and lung-splitting scream.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Immediately afterward, golden beams of light shot out from that Martial Emperor’s body. The beams grew more and more numerous. In the end, that Martial Emperor was beyond recognition. Soon, his body exploded, and he died.

As for that Martial Emperor... he was precisely the Martial Emperor who had been arguing with Chu Feng, the Martial Emperor from the Ximen Imperial Clan.

“Ah? What happened?” Seeing this scene, not to mention the others, even the two other Martial Emperors that had been chasing after Chu Feng to kill him were stunned.

The people in the crowd were all confused as to exactly what had happened. How could a grand rank one Martial Emperor die just like that?!

“Rank one Martial Emperor, die!”

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng shouted once again. Following that, another golden arrow shot forth.

“Eeaahh!!!”

Immediately afterward, of the two stunned Martial Emperors, one was shot by the golden arrow. Immediately, he started to

scream in pain.

As rays of golden light began to blossom from his body, his body, like the Ximen Imperial Clan's Martial Emperor from before, exploded. He had died.

“Ah? It's that golden arrow! Chu Feng is using that golden arrow to kill Martial Emperors!” Finally, the crowd managed to react.

Before the two Martial Emperors had died, they had both been struck by a golden arrow. Those arrows were precisely the ones Chu Feng had shot.

Merely, exactly what sort of treasures were those golden arrows? They were actually capable of easily killing even rank one Martial Emperors. With their might, even rank two Martial Emperors would not necessarily be able to survive after being struck.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd was completely astonished, Chu Feng took out another golden arrow.

“Ah?” Seeing that Chu Feng had already placed the golden arrow onto the bowstring, the rank one Martial Emperor that was closest to Chu Feng immediately started to panic. He was so scared that his complexion turned green.

“Heh...” As Chu Feng saw that Martial Emperor's ashen expression, he laughed lightly. Then, he suddenly aimed at one of the two rank one Martial Emperors that were fighting with Hong Qiang and shouted, “Rank one Martial Emperor, die!”

“Boom~~~”

The arrow followed Chu Feng's will. Once the arrow was shot out, it immediately flew toward the rank one Martial Emperor that Chu Feng wanted to kill.

“Damn it!”

Immediately after the golden arrow was shot out, that Martial

Emperor actually shifted his body and hid himself in space.

It turned out that while he was fighting against Hong Qiang, he was also paying attention to what was happening over by Chu Feng. As he knew how powerful the arrow was, he had decided to flee from it.

“Puchi~~~”

However, the arrow pierced through space, and then a line of blood appeared in the sky.

“Eeeaahhh!!!”

Immediately after that, the Martial Emperor that had hidden himself reappeared. Merely, when he reappeared, his body was already filled with golden beams. Soon, his body exploded, and he died.

“Rank one Martial Emperor, die!”

“Boom~~~”

Immediately after that Martial Emperor died, another golden arrow was shot forth. The golden arrow directly killed the other Martial Emperor that was fighting against Hong Qiang.

“Not good! Chu Feng’s golden arrows are indeed capable of killing Martial Emperors!” At this moment, of the three remaining Four Clans’ Martial Emperors, the one that was with the other two rank one Martial Emperors Chu Feng had killed shouted and started fleeing right after.

He had seen with his very own eyes that Chu Feng had killed four rank one Martial Emperors. Thus, he was certain that he would not be able to survive should he face Chu Feng. Thus, he decided that he must escape right away.

“This...” Seeing that a grand rank one Martial Emperor was scared witless by Chu Feng and started fleeing in panic, the crowd did not know how to describe their current frame of mind.

“Escape? Do you really think you can escape?” Chu Feng laughed coldly. He then took out another golden arrow, shouted out that man’s cultivation, and released it.

“Boom~~~”

Another golden arrow streaked across the horizon. Even though that man had escaped far away, the golden arrow was like a fatal talisman that would chase after its target the moment it left the bowstring. In the end, the fleeing Martial Emperor was pierced by the golden arrow, and died from an explosion of his body.

“Damn it! That bastard is simply inhuman!” The two Martial Emperors that were fighting against the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and Water Immortal Profound Technique were also fleeing. Not only were they using very fast movement martial skills, they had also taken out treasures that could conceal their tracks and aid their escape.

“Boom, boom~~~”

However, Chu Feng shot out two arrows in succession. Then, two screams were heard, and those two escaping Martial Emperors also suffered the same fate as the other five Martial Emperors.

“This...”

At this moment, everyone was dumbstruck. Many people were so stunned that they became speechless.

A total of seven rank one Martial Emperors were all shot dead by Chu Feng in the blink of an eye. It was impossible for the crowd to not be shocked by this.

How could Chu Feng be that fierce? Was he really only a member of the younger generation? Was he really only a Half Martial Emperor? Was he even human?

“Chu Feng, exactly how many tricks do you have that I do not know about?” Leng Yue was standing beside the various elders of the Heavenly Law Palace.

Merely, at this moment, lingering fear filled her eyes. She still remembered that Chu Feng had mentioned to her during their battle that he possessed a treasure that could take her life, and that he merely did not wish to use it.

At that time, Leng Yue had mocked and ridiculed Chu Feng. She simply did not believe that he possessed that sort of treasure. However, today, she discovered that she had truly been ridiculously ignorant.

Contrary to what she expected, Chu Feng really possessed that sort of treasure. Today, he had used that treasure to shoot seven rank one Martial Emperors dead.

Merely, when Chu Feng fought her, he had been disinclined to use it. Else... she would not be standing here now. Instead, she would've already been killed by a golden arrow.

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you possessed something this powerful. Today, this old man's life is instead saved by you,” Hong Qiang arrived beside Chu Feng, and was unable to conceal his happiness. Chu Feng had truly brought him a pleasant surprise.

At this moment, there were several astonishing wounds on Hong Qiang's body. There were burns and cuts. The burns charred his flesh, and the cuts had reached his bones.

From this, it could be seen that even though Hong Qiang was able to contend against two rank one Martial Emperors, he was barely able to contain them. In truth, it was simply impossible for him to contend against two Martial Emperors alone.

Else, he would not have received this many wounds in such a short period of time. If he were to have continued to battle them, even if he didn't die, he would have been seriously injured.

Thus, it was as he had said, Chu Feng had saved him.

Chapter 1811 – Unprecedented

“I already knew about the strength of those golden arrows. However, they are even more powerful than I had anticipated.”

“I wonder, would I be able to lift the siege for Ancestor?” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out another golden arrow. He placed it onto the bowstring and aimed at the four Clan Chiefs and the five rank two Martial Emperors that were fighting against Baili Xuankong.

“Ah? Chu Feng is not escaping. Instead, he’s aimed his arrow at the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs? The four of them are rank three Martial Emperors!” Seeing this scene, the crowd were shocked.

“Rank two Martial Emperor, die!” Chu Feng shouted explosively. Then, he released the golden arrow.

“Boom~~~”

The golden arrow streaked through the sky. Like a perfectly straight golden dragon that carried a might capable of penetrating everything in its path, the golden arrow was shot toward one of the rank two Martial Emperors.

That’s right. Chu Feng was not planning to kill the four Imperial Clan Chiefs. After all, they were rank three Martial Emperors. No matter how strong the golden arrows might be, it would still be impossible for the golden arrows to kill them. Chu Feng knew about this. Thus, even if he were to experiment, he could only experiment using a rank two Martial Emperor.

“Heeaah!!!”

Seeing the golden arrow flying toward him, that rank two Martial Emperor was extremely frightened. He knew that it was impossible to dodge the arrow. Being very intelligent, he unleashed an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill with his Incomplete Imperial Armament in hopes of stopping the incoming golden

arrow.

“Rumble~~~~”

The golden arrow collided with that Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Then, it turned into a dazzling golden radiance that showered all over.

When the golden light began to dissipate, that rank two Martial Emperor's body was drenched with blood. He was filled with astonishing wounds. However... they were merely superficial wounds.

He was still alive. The golden arrow was only capable of injuring him, but was not capable of killing him.

“Ah? He's still alive? That golden arrow was blocked?” The crowd were all astonished.

“Sure enough, it's only capable of killing rank one Martial Emperors,” Chu Feng also realized that, regardless of how strong the golden arrows might be, unless he were to mount a sneak attack, it would still be impossible for them to kill a rank two Martial Emperor head-on. All they were capable of killing were rank one Martial Emperors.

“White-brow, what are you still waiting for? He's unable to kill rank two Martial Emperors. Quickly, kill him!” The Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief shouted.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we meet again.”

After the Nangong Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said those words, a silhouette shot out from deep underground and began to fly toward Chu Feng and Hong Qiang.

It was none other than the White-browed Immortal.

Furthermore, two rank two Martial Emperors separated themselves from the battle against Baili Xuankong and flew toward Chu Feng. One of them was that rank two Martial Emperor that

had been injured by Chu Feng's golden arrow.

That man was overflowing with killing intent. While he had arrived before Chu Feng because he had been ordered to kill him, Chu Feng knew that, in addition to the order, he was more interested in obtaining revenge for the injuries Chu Feng had caused him.

“Rank two Martial Emperor.”

Chu Feng took out another golden arrow, aimed it underneath him, and shot it toward the White-browed Immortal, who was the closest to him.

“Hahahaha...” The White-browed Immortal burst into loud laughter. Then, many defensive barriers began to appear before him in succession. They were all Dragon Mark Royal-cloak-level defensive barriers.

Although that golden arrow pierced through all of the defensive barriers, it had already lost all of its power the moment it reached the White-browed Immortal. Then, the White-browed Immortal grabbed the arrow.

“Good arrow. Unfortunately, it's incapable of injuring me,” As the White-browed Immortal held the golden arrow in his hand and saw it disappear into golden light, he revealed a very complacent smile.

“Chu Feng, I knew you possessed exceptional talent. Truth be told, I am quite reluctant to kill you. Unfortunately, today, I must... En?”

Before the White-browed Immortal could even finish saying what he wanted to say, his pupils suddenly shrunk. He was surprised to discover that Chu Feng had actually taken out an arrow that was emitting purple flames. Furthermore, Chu Feng had placed that arrow onto the bowstring and aimed it at him.

Most importantly, as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,

he immediately realized that the power contained within that purple flame arrow greatly surpassed that of the golden arrows.

“White-browed Immortal, farewell,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he shouted, “Rank two Martial Emperor, die!”

“Rumble~~~~”

Another loud explosion was heard. This explosion was even more ear-piercing than the explosion from the golden arrow before. Following that loud explosion, the purple flame arrow turned into a line of fire that shot toward the White-browed Immortal.

“Not good!” The White-browed Immortal shouted. He immediately turned around and began to flee.

Unfortunately, that purple flame arrow was a fatal arrow. Its speed was even faster than the White-browed Immortal.

At this moment, the White-browed Immortal had no choice but to escape while setting up spirit formations to stop the incoming purple flame arrow.

Unfortunately, the spirit formation barriers he created were like air before that purple flame arrow. Not only were they pierced through in an instant, they were incapable of even decreasing the speed of that purple flame arrow.

“Puchi~~~”

Finally, that purple flame arrow, before the gazes of the crowd, pierced into the White-browed Immortal’s body.

“Eeeahhh!!!!”

The very next moment, White-browed Immortal let out a painful scream as purple flames began to cover his body. Indeed, they were purple flames. Furthermore, those flames were extremely strange; they were making threatening gestures. Like the hands of countless malicious spirits, they began to rip the White-browed Immortal’s body apart piece by piece.

Under this sort of situation, the White-browed Immortal was soon burned to nothingness. He had died by that purple flame arrow.

“Master!!!!!”

A cry filled with heartache and disbelief sounded from the crowd. It was the White-browed Immortal’s disciple, Meng Xiaoyan.

His cry had also informed the crowd that the person who had just been killed was not only a rank two Martial Emperor, he was also an Immortal, one of the only ten Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Damn it!”

At this moment, the complexions of the two Martial Emperors that had already approached Chu Feng instantly turned deathly pale. They immediately stopped in midair.

The reason for that was because after Chu Feng killed the White-browed Immortal, he took out two more purple flame arrows and pointed them at the two of them.

“Rank two Martial Emperors, die!”

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Chu Feng did not give the two of them the opportunity to escape. He shot both arrows out in succession and then, like the White-browed Immortal, those two rank two Martial Emperors were burned to ashes by the surging purple flames. They were both killed by the purple flame arrows.

“Heavens, am I dreaming? Isn’t that Chu Feng a bit too frightening? He actually killed three rank two Martial Emperors! With that strength, who could possibly stop him?!”

Many of the older generation were gasping incessantly. As for the younger generation, they felt themselves to be deeply inferior.

Was he still a member of the younger generation? Who among the younger generation were capable of effortlessly killing Martial Emperors? This was simply unprecedented! Since ancient times, there had been no one that had accomplished such a feat.

As such, the crowd was filled with astonishment!!!

Although Chu Feng had killed seven rank one Martial Emperors and three rank two Martial Emperors in succession, there was a trace of frustration in his eyes.

He had used nine golden arrows and three purple flame arrows in succession.

Of the arrows he had obtained that day, only one golden arrow remained.

Those arrows were extremely precious. If he hadn't used them, and instead auctioned them after today, he would definitely have been able to obtain a great amount of wealth for them.

Unfortunately, with the situation today, he had no choice but to use them. Else, it would be extremely difficult for him to survive. However, with how precious those arrows were, Chu Feng was feeling reluctant to have used them.

However, as Chu Feng looked to the ten Cosmos Sacks in his hand, he started to smile. Even though he had used nine golden arrows and three purple flame arrows, he had obtained many treasures from the White-browed Immortal and the others that he had killed.

Without mentioning the other treasures, those ten Cosmos Sacks contained a total of seven Incomplete Imperial Armaments. As for the various other treasures, they were too many to count. This was especially true of the White-browed Immortal's Cosmos Sack.

The amount of treasures in his Cosmos Sack was truly a delight to the eye. Everything that one wanted was present. Especially treasures useful to world spiritists; they were even more

numerous.

The only regret Chu Feng possessed was that, although there were a lot of treasures, there were no treasured cultivation resources among them. However, as those treasures were extremely valuable, should Chu Feng sell them in the future, he would be able to exchange them for a lot of Natural Oddities that he could use. Thus, Chu Feng was still very happy with this harvest.

Chapter 1812 – Reappearance Of The Avaricious Immortal

“Senior Hong Qiang, this dual sword is quite good. It suits you very well. Please accept it,” Chu Feng handed an Incomplete Imperial Armament that a rank two Martial Emperor was using before to Hong Qiang.

As that Incomplete Imperial Armament was, after all, something used by a rank two Martial Emperor, it was one of the better quality Incomplete Imperial Armaments of the seven Incomplete Imperial Armaments Chu Feng had obtained. Although it was inferior to Chu Feng’s Heavenly Immortal Sword, it was on par with Chu Feng’s Cyan Rainbow Sword and Purple Rainbow Sword.

“This...” Hong Qiang wanted to decline.

“You shouldn’t refuse it. I have this many Incomplete Imperial Armaments with me. If you don’t accept it, I will only end up selling it,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, I’ll accept it,” Hong Qiang received the Incomplete Imperial Armament.

Even though Hong Qiang was a Martial Emperor now, he did not possess an Incomplete Imperial Armament. After all, Incomplete Imperial Armaments were extremely precious.

If it wasn’t for the fact that they were from the Four Great Imperial Clans, how could one possibly obtain that many Incomplete Imperial Armaments? As far as Hong Qiang knew, of the Nine Powers, the Sword Crafting Villa possessed the most Incomplete Imperial Armaments. However, even with that being the case, they only possessed three Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

As for the other powers of the Nine Powers, it would already be very decent should they be able to possess two Incomplete Imperial

Armaments. In fact, some among them only possessed a single Incomplete Imperial Armament. Furthermore, they would be deemed to be their sect's protective treasure, in the possession of people at the level of Assembly Masters, and passed on from generation to generation.

Yet, at this moment, he was actually able to obtain an Incomplete Imperial Armament himself. Furthermore, its quality was extremely good. As such, how could Hong Qiang not be joyous?

Furthermore, as the master of that Incomplete Imperial Armament was already dead, Hong Qiang was able to easily subdue it and make it be used by him. Today, Hong Qiang had truly profited enormously.

“Damn it, he’s actually using our clan’s Incomplete Imperial Armament as a repayment for a favor?! Furthermore, he said that he was planning to sell it?!”

As they saw how Chu Feng had obtained all those treasures, and had actually given away one of the Incomplete Imperial Armaments before their faces, the people from the Four Clans were all gnashing their teeth in anger and envy.

Those Incomplete Imperial Armaments had only been obtained by the Four Great Imperial Clans throughout the years by entering many Ancient Era’s remnants at the price of the deaths of many experts.

Yet, today, Chu Feng had actually seized all of them. Naturally, they would feel unreconciled.

In fact, at this moment, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ magnificent army of thousands of men had already encircled Chu Feng and Hong Qiang from afar.

However, they were only able to encircle them from afar. Furthermore, none of them dared to attack Chu Feng and Hong Qiang.

At this moment, practically all of the Martial Emperors from the Four Great Imperial Clans had been pinned down by their enemies.

Those underneath rank two Martial Emperor were either dead or wounded. Even those who were still alive did not dare to approach Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng was able to kill even rank two Martial Emperors. As such, how could any rank one Martial Emperor dare to attack him? If they were to do that, they would simply be throwing their lives away.

“If only I had tried to enter deeper into that palace hall. Perhaps I might have been able to obtain treasures capable of killing rank three Martial Emperors. If I had been able to do so, I would’ve been able to help Ancestor escape from the siege.”

After Chu Feng stored away his treasures, he did not leave right away. Instead, he looked to Baili Xuankong, who was still fighting bitterly.

He was regretting the fact that he had not made it deeper into the palace hall Long Lin had opened that day. Although it might have been extremely dangerous, although he might have been killed by that Qilin, it was also possible that he would have been able to subdue that Qilin.

After all, in that palace hall, only one’s talent mattered.

If he had entered deeper, it would’ve been better than the current situation that he was placed in. At this moment, Chu Feng could only watch as the Snow-haired Immortal, the Compass Immortal and Baili Xuankong fought for him without being able to do anything.

“Hong Qiang, why are you still standing there? Quickly, take Chu Feng away!” Seeing that Chu Feng and Hong Qiang had yet to escape, Baili Xuankong shouted angrily.

“Chu Feng, let’s go. We are unable to interfere with their battles.”

“Furthermore, they are all doing this for your sake. If you are to escape now, they might be able to escape later. However, if you are to continue to stay here, you will only wear out their strength, and might even bring harm to them,” After Hong Qiang said those words, he grabbed Chu Feng and began to escape.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after the two men turned around, a golden-bright and dazzling spirit formation appeared from all directions and covered the two of them.

“Dragon Mark world spirit formation?” Seeing the spirit formation before his eyes, Chu Feng started to frown. The White-browed Immortal was already dead. Thus, why would there be another Dragon Mark world spirit formation? There was definitely another Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist working for the Four Great Imperial Clans.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk... little friend Chu Feng, no matter what, we’re old acquaintances. You shouldn’t be this urgent to leave.”

Sure enough, after the Dragon Mark world spirit formation appeared, a familiar figure appeared outside of the spirit formation.

This man was one of the Ten Immortals. Furthermore, Chu Feng also knew him. He was the Avaricious Immortal.

Back in Mooncloud City, this Avaricious Immortal had tried to prevent Baili Xuankong from escaping with Chu Feng. Never had Chu Feng expected that he would come to prevent him from escaping again today.

Furthermore, judging from his appearance, he must have waited here for a long time for the chance to ambush Chu Feng.

“Avaricious Immortal, you are truly despicable. Remember this! With how you kept going against me repeatedly, I, Chu Feng, will definitely make you die miserably!” Chu Feng’s eyes were surging

with coldness. He was truly feeling bitter hatred for the Avaricious Immortal.

“Hehe, little friend Chu Feng, what you said is extremely true. Someone like me does deserve to die. However, it would still have to depend on whether or not you have the opportunity to kill me.”

The Avaricious Immortal laughed mischievously. Then, he looked to the four Utmost Exalted Elders in the distant and shouted, “Four Elders, Chu Feng’s life is currently in my hands. Say, should I kill him or not?”

“Kill him! Avaricious Immortal, please kill him! As long as you kill him, our Four Great Imperial Clans will definitely thank you with vast treasures,” The Four Utmost Exalted Elders spoke in unison.

“Avaricious, you dare?! If you dare to touch my disciple, I will make you meet a fate more miserable than death!” The Snow-haired Immortal said furiously.

“Snow-haired Immortal, I know of your temperament. Even if I am to let Chu Feng off today, you will definitely not spare me.”

“Since I have shown myself, that means that I do not fear you,” The Avaricious Immortal smiled complacently. Then, he said, “Four Lord Elders, I do not need you all to thank me with vast treasures. I merely need you all to agree to one thing. As long as I kill Chu Feng, all of his treasures shall be mine, and you all will not look into it anymore. Is that fine?”

“.....” Hearing those words, the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans became extremely enraged. This Avaricious Immortal was seizing the opportunity to plunder them by making an extravagant demand again.

Although he had not requested anything specific this time, the number of treasures Chu Feng possessed were too many to count. Not to mention what he possessed, merely the number of

Incomplete Imperial Armaments that he had snatched away from the Four Great Imperial Clans was already extremely numerous.

Even though those Incomplete Imperial Armaments had already been seized by Chu Feng, it remained that they were their Four Great Imperial Clans' possessions. What the Avaricious Immortal had said was simply equivalent to seizing those treasures for himself.

“Very well. Avaricious, do it, kill him,” The four Utmost Exalted Elders did not hesitate in the slightest, and spoke decisively. They knew very well that, compared to Chu Feng's life, those treasures could not amount to anything.

“Righto,” Hearing those words, the smile on the Avaricious Immortal's face grew even stronger. Then, he turned his treacherous gaze to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, you must not blame this Immortal for being ruthless. It is simply that I must help those who pay me to avoid calamities. Furthermore, you bullied my disciple that day. As such, how could I possibly let you live?”

As he said those words, deep hatred flashed through the Avaricious Immortal's eyes.

“Puu~~~”

However, right after he finished saying those words, the Avaricious Immortal sprayed out a mouthful of blood onto the spirit formation before him.

“.....” Seeing this scene, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng and Hong Qiang were startled.

Didn't this Avaricious Immortal want to kill him? Why would he be vomiting blood instead?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a figure suddenly appeared behind the Avaricious Immortal.

This person was wearing a black cloak that concealed his body and appearance. However, the cloak was incapable of hiding his aura. He was a rank four Martial Emperor.

Chapter 1813 – Plan Failure

“Kill!!!!”

The Avaricious Immortal had been injured. Thus, he naturally knew that an expert had interfered. However, his avaricious heart was already determined to kill. As such, he ignored that expert, instead shouting loudly, taking out a weapon and thrusting it toward Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

However, that black-cloaked individual raised his hand and shot out a palm. Then, a miserable scream was heard. The Avaricious Immortal had been knocked several miles away.

Even though that palm strike did not kill the Avaricious Immortal, he was badly mutilated the moment he fell to the ground. He had been seriously injured, and lost the ability to continue fighting.

“Pop~~~”

Then, that black-cloaked individual placed his palm onto the world spirit formation. With a tremble of his palm, divine might was revealed. Before his overwhelming strength, that Dragon Mark spirit formation started to shatter and scatter.

Then, with a wave of his palm, Chu Feng and Hong Qiang both entered his control.

“Senior, although I do not know who you are, I hope that you can help my Ancestor, as well as the two Immortals, escape,” Seeing that mysterious man had come to save him, Chu Feng spoke and requested his assistance.

Hearing those words, that man was slightly startled. Then, he waved his sleeve once again.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, heaven and earth grew dark. Black clouds began to surge as a boundless tornado appeared out of nowhere. The tornado arrived at the place where Baili Xuankong and the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs were fighting.

As the violent winds spun about, they were simply unstoppable. Although the tornado did not possess the intention to kill, being engulfed by it, the grand Clan Chiefs of the Four Great Imperial Clans could only allow themselves to be spun about like fallen leaves. They were unable to contend against the violently spinning wind.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, that black-cloaked man extended his hand and grabbed. Then, Baili Xuankong turned into a ray of light and arrived before him.

After that, the man brought Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong with him and entered space. They had concealed themselves.

“You can't escape!”

The Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs led their army and began to chase after them. However, how could they possibly catch up to them?

Not to mention his body, that man had instantly concealed all of his aura. Of course, Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were also concealed with him.

“Ah? Chu Feng has been saved? That man was extremely powerful. He's actually a rank four Martial Emperor. Who exactly is he?”

“Who else could he be? He's most definitely Zhang Tianyi's father, the master of the fort. Other than him, who could possibly possess this sort of ability?” The crowd all turned their gazes toward the fort.

As for the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans, not only were they looking at the fort, their gazes were also filled with killing intent. They were so angry that their eyes had turned red. Boundless killing intent had covered the entire fort.

Even though they knew that Zhang Tianyi's father was not someone to look down upon, it remained that he was making enemies out of their Four Great Imperial Clans by saving Chu Feng. As such, they would naturally not let the matter drop.

"Everyone, you must have proof of what you say. Else... do not blame me for being impolite," However, right at this moment, Zhang Tianyi's father flew out from the fort. He stood above the fort and started at the crowd with a murderous expression.

His reaction was understandable. After all, it was true that the crowd was wrongly accusing him.

"This... it's actually not him?"

Upon seeing the appearance of Zhang Tianyi's father, the people were all shocked. That black-cloaked man had already escaped. Furthermore, he had escaped outward. Yet, Zhang Tianyi's father had appeared immediately. This meant that the person who saved Chu Feng was really not him.

However, if it wasn't him, then who saved Chu Feng?

Didn't this mean that there was another grand character with a cultivation of rank four Martial Emperor backing Chu Feng?

Not only did Chu Feng possess the backing of the Compass Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and that Martial Emperor wearing the conical bamboo hat, he actually possessed the backing of another rank four Martial Emperor. This was simply too astonishing.

Exactly how enormously powerful was Chu Feng's backing? Wouldn't this mean that he was truly capable of contending against the Four Great Imperial Clans that had continued to exist

for several tens of thousands of years?

When the crowd thought of this, many of them were overwhelmed. Even after a long time, they were unable to regain their calm.

Chu Feng had come out of nowhere. However, he turned out to possess a grand origin.

Right at this moment, the Snow-haired Immortal suddenly shouted, "Shameless old trash, this Immortal will not play with you all anymore."

Then, she threw out an item. Immediately, thick smoke began to surge. The smoke covered everyone's line of sight.

"Everyone, farewell," At the same time, the Compass Immortal also took out a similar item. After he tossed that item out, thick smoke also began to surge.

As the thick smoke dispersed, the two Immortals had already escaped.

"If you all do not chase after me, I will not look further into what happened today. However, if you are to chase after me, I will definitely make it so that your Four Clans cannot live in peace," Not only did the Snow-haired Immortal escape, she even publicly threatened the Four Great Imperial Clans.

"Damn it!" At this moment, the six Utmost Exalted Elders from the Four Great Imperial Clans were all trembling with anger. However, none of them went to chase after the Snow-haired Immortal or the Compass Immortal.

Actually, if they truly wanted to contain the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal, they were capable of doing so. However, even if they were to contain them, what could they possibly do? If they were capable of killing the two of them, they would've done so already. Why would they have fought them for so long?

If they were to continue to fight them, they might push the two of them into a corner. Should that happen, the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal might start to openly slaughter the people from their Four Great Imperial Clans. At that time, the casualties to their Four Great Imperial Clans might not only be this much.

However, the more it was like this, the more unreconciled and furious they were. The hatred they felt for the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal was enormous.

They had laid in ambush for a long time, and prepared meticulously to capture and kill Chu Feng. However, in the end, not only had Chu Feng escaped, they seemed to have not even injured Chu Feng in the slightest.

Yet, look at them. They had suffered disastrously. Not mentioning those who were not Martial Emperors, there were many casualties even among their Martial Emperors. Most speechlessly, ten of the Martial Emperors that were killed had been killed by Chu Feng. Even the White-browed Immortal had died at Chu Feng's hands.

However, ultimately, all of this had been caused by the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal. If they had not interfered, how could Chu Feng possibly have been able to escape? He would've already been killed by them.

However, even though they knew that it was all the fault of the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal, they had no choice but to let them escape. After all, with the troops they had with them here, it was unsuitable for them to fight the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal to the bitter end. If they wished to eliminate the two of them, they would have to think of a different way to do so.

That being said, it remained that they had been defeated in the battle today. Utterly defeated on top of that. What they had

suffered was not only limited to the loss of Martial Emperors and elites from the Four Clans that they had nurtured for years, their Four Great Imperial Clans' dignity and face had also been trampled upon.

Thus, at this moment, the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans were extremely depressed. Each and every person possessed extremely ugly expressions on their faces.

They truly did not understand why a mere Chu Feng could possess the backing of that many people.

However, regardless of how depressed the Four Great Imperial Clans might be, they were incapable of stopping the crowd from running their mouths. After all, today, the crowd had seen with their own eyes how valiant Chu Feng was.

Not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans themselves thinking about it, even the observers present here today knew that the Four Great Imperial Clans' decision to make Chu Feng an enemy would likely mean that their future days would be very difficult.

After all, that child by the name of Chu Feng was truly too heaven-defying.

.....

At this moment, away from the crowd, three silhouettes were hidden inside the void. While these three people possessed human-like appearances, there was a uniqueness to them.

They possessed blonde hair, green eyes and a tall and thin stature. Their appearance was many times more beautiful than that of ordinary humans. Even though two of them were clearly old men, they were much more handsome than ordinary human old men. It was certain that they had been extremely handsome when they were young.

Among the three of them was a member of the younger

generation. That man possessed a face akin to that of a female. Before him, ordinary females would lose their splendor. He was truly too beautiful. If he were a woman, he would be a beauty. However, with his appearance, he lacked any trace of masculinity.

However, when ignoring his appearance, this man possessed an exceptional cultivation. He was, at the very most, only ten years older than Chu Feng. He could most definitely be considered to be a member of the younger generation. However, he was a Martial Emperor, a rank one Martial Emperor.

As for the two old men standing to either side behind him, they were even more extraordinary. Not only were they Martial Emperors, they were rank four Martial Emperors.

Those two old men were people of the same caliber as the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders, the Compass Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal.

These three people were all Ancient Era's Elves.

No, to be exact, they were people from the Elf Kingdom.

Chapter 1814 – The Reactions From The Various Powers

“That Chu Feng is truly extraordinary. After all these years, there has finally appeared another person from the human race who can contend against our Ancient Era’s Elves’ younger generation,” Of the two old men, the one with a scar on the left side of his face looked to the direction in which Chu Feng escaped and gasped.

“Contend? Merely that Chu Feng? Elder Mo Xu, you are thinking too highly of him, no?” The younger elf snorted lightly. Even though he had experienced Chu Feng’s techniques, he still did not place Chu Feng in his eyes.

“Young master Yuyin, if you were to fight against that Chu Feng, what percentage of certainty would you have in victory?” The elder by the name of Mo Xu asked.

That disciple by the name of Yuyin coldly snorted and then said confidently, “Humph, what percentage of a certainty of victory? Naturally, a hundred percent.”

“A hundred percent? Even if that Chu Feng doesn’t use treasures, he is still capable of fighting against rank one Martial Emperors,” That Elder by the name of Mo Xu frowned lightly. He did not believe Yuyin.

“If you do not believe me, I will find the opportunity to fight against him. At that time, you will come to know my strength,” After he finished saying those words, that young master Yuyin turned around and walked away.

Elder Mo Xu sighed. “While young master Yuyin indeed possesses exceptional talent, he is too arrogant and conceited.”

“Furthermore, geniuses are appearing among the humans in great number. I’m afraid that it will be as the rumors say, and another overlord will soon be born.”

“If this is to continue, with young master Yuyin’s temperament, I’m afraid that he will end up suffering,” A trace of worry appeared in Elder Mo Xu’s eyes.

“Brother Mo Xu, I think you are overthinking things. Although young master Yuyin is extremely conceited, he possesses the strength to be conceited. You must now know that he is about to break through to rank two Martial Emperor,” The other white-haired old man said.

“Brother Mo Wen, is what you say the truth?” Hearing those words, Elder Mo Xu was startled.

“Of course. Likely, young master Yuyin will once again obtain the standing of our Ancient Era’s Elves’ number one younger generation.”

“Ever since Lady Princess entered the Martial Emperor realm half a year ago, the status of the number one member of the younger generation has been held by Lady Princess the entire time. And now, it will finally return to young master Yuyin,” When mentioning this matter, Elder Mo Wen was quite happy. It seemed that he wanted that young master Yuyin to become the number one younger generation of the Ancient Era’s Elves.

“Naturally, no fault can be found in young master Yuyin’s talent. Else, how could he have continued to hold the status of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ number one younger generation for so long? Unfortunately, Lady Princess has already grown up now. I’m afraid that young master Yuyin will never have the opportunity to take back the position of number one in the younger generation. In his entire life, he will only be number two,” Elder Mo Xu said with a beaming smile.

“You mean, could it be?” Hearing those words, Elder Mo Wen revealed an expression of shock.

“That’s right. Lady Princess is already a rank two Martial Emperor,” Elder Mo Xu nodded.

“Haha, Lady Princess truly lives up to expectations.”

“This era is indeed an era where an overlord will be born. Merely, the overlord of this era will no longer be human. Instead, it will be an Ancient Era’s Elf,” Hearing what Elder Mo Xu said, Elder Mo Wen was also overjoyed.

.....

At the moment when the majority of the people were reminiscing on the marvelous battles Chu Feng and the others had fought against the Four Great Imperial Clans, the truly important characters had all left in succession. The top experts of the Three Palaces were among those people who had left.

.....

Heavenly Law Palace. The elder that led the group of people from the Heavenly Law Palace was a rank three Martial Emperor. At this moment, there were a total of three people following him. Two of them were elders of the Heavenly Law Palace. The two of them possessed cultivations weaker than his, and were rank two Martial Emperors. As for the remaining person, it was a disciple. Naturally, this person would be the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace, the head of the Heavenly Generals, Leng Yue.

“Leng Yue, you must have actually been defeated by that Chu Feng, right?” The leading elder asked.

“This disciple is incompetent. I have shamed our Heavenly Law Palace’s reputation. Elder, please punish me,” Leng Yue had an ashamed expression.

“Punish? Punish what? It is not that you are incompetent, it is merely that Chu Feng who is too strong. That child... is indeed amazing. This old man has lived for seven thousand nine hundred and thirty-seven years. I have seen countless people throughout my life. However, this is the first time I’ve ever met a member of

the younger generation that powerful. By younger generation, I am talking about those underneath a hundred years old. As for that Chu Feng, he is likely not even thirty years old, no?" That elder gasped with admiration.

"Elder, that child dared to attack Leng Yue. He is simply not placing our Heavenly Law Palace in his eyes. Should we go and kill him?" One of the two rank two Martial Emperors asked.

"Do you want to kill Chu Feng, or is it that you want the treasures that he possesses?" The leading elder asked.

"Elder, I merely..."

"You don't have to say anymore. How could I not know what you are thinking?" Before that elder could finish what he wanted to say, the leading elder cast an eye at him.

At this moment, that elder did not dare to refute him, and lowered his head guiltily. It was as if he were admitting to it.

"The two of you, listen carefully. Before Lord Palace Master exits his closed-door training, you are not allowed to stir up troubles for him. Even if we are to attack that Chu Feng, we must wait till Lord Palace Master exits his closed-door training first before deciding. Else, if you are to anger Lord Palace Master, no one will be able to save you. Understand?" The elder said.

"This subordinate understands," The two rank two Martial Emperors nodded their heads.

.....

Mortal King Palace. At this moment, there were also several Martial Emperor-level elders that were rushing back. The person leading them was also a rank three Martial Emperor. At this moment, he appeared to be in deep thought.

"Milord, what are you thinking about?" A rank one Martial Emperor asked the leading elder.

“That child Chu Feng is truly too heaven-defying. If an overlord is really going to be born in this era, I believe that overlord will be none other than him,” The leading elder said.

“Isn’t there also that Emperor Gong’s successor, that Zhang Tianyi? Perhaps that Zhang Tianyi is even more powerful than Chu Feng. After all, he obtained the title of the Strongest Younger Generation,” Someone said.

“Strongest Younger Generation? That’s nothing more than a false reputation. Trust me. That Zhang Tianyi is definitely inferior to Chu Feng,” After that elder said those words, he sighed and then said, “With the birth of an overlord, our Mortal King Palace will no longer be the strongest among all humans. If that Chu Feng is to truly mature, in the future, our Mortal King Palace will have to take him into consideration on every matter.”

“Milord, are overlords really that powerful?” Someone asked.

“Of course. Else, why would they be called overlords?” The leading elder said.

“Milord, how about we eliminate that Chu Feng before he matures?” The rank one Martial Emperor asked.

“Heh, with merely you?” The leading elder cast a disdainful glance at that rank one Martial Emperor. Then, he said, “Even three rank two Martial Emperors have been killed by him today. Among them was even the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, White-browed Immortal. You are a mere rank one Martial Emperor, what certainty of being able to kill Chu Feng do you have?”

“I...” That rank one Martial Emperor turned speechless. Thinking about it, he really had no certainty at all.

“Forget about it. We must consider this matter at length. Let’s return and report this to Lord Palace Master first, and we’ll have him make the decision,” The leading elder said.

“Yes,” The others said in unison.

.....

Underworld Palace. At this moment, they were also discussing Chu Feng. However, their reactions were completely different from that of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

“Lord Underworld Judge, you’re saying that Chu Feng is very likely to become this era’s overlord?” A rank two Martial Emperor said to the leading elder with an expression of excitement. The others were also extremely excited.

The leading elder was an old man with a black, ink-like complexion skin. Furthermore, he was as thin as a match. Looking at him, one would think that he was composed of only skin and bones. If his clothes were taken off, he would resemble a dried corpse. His appearance was truly frightening.

However, while this old man had a very frightening appearance, his eyes were bright and full of expression. Furthermore, his cultivation was that of a rank four Martial Emperor. He was much more powerful than the two leading elders dispatched by the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace for this occasion.

As for this man, he was very well-known in the Holy Land of Martialism. Not to mention the Four Clans’ Clan Chiefs, even their Utmost Exalted Elders would not dare to act imprudently toward him.

This man, due to the fact that he possessed a dark complexion, an extremely fiendish appearance, and the position of Underworld Judge in the Underworld Palace, he was known as Underworld Judge Black Fiend.

“What do you all think? Very exciting, isn’t it? Back then, when Emperor Chi, Emperor Huang, Emperor Gong and Emperor Qing were overlords, our human race possessed awe-inspiring authority. We were truly existences that stood at the apex of the

Holy Land of Martialism. Even the Ancient Era's Elves did not dare to act imprudently toward us.”

“However, after the passing of Emperor Qing, there has never been anyone that was capable of suppressing the Ancient Era's Elves. Even though they rarely show themselves and give off the sensation of being hidden from the secular world, our Three Palaces know best how arrogant those Ancient Era's Elves are.”

“They occupy the most Ancient Era's Remnants and Burial Grounds. They have monopolized a lot of the benefits. While they appear to be removed from worldly matters, they are actually bandits.” He sighed.

“However, if Chu Feng were to really become this era's overlord, he would definitely stand up for us humans. At that time, how could those Ancient Era's Elves still dare to act arrogant?” As Underworld Judge Black Fiend said those words, his gaze began to flicker. As if he was already seeing the arrival of that day, he revealed a loosened expression.

“What Lord Underworld Judge said is extremely correct. But, Lord Underworld Judge, why is it that you mentioned Emperor Chi, Emperor Huang, Emperor Gong and Emperor Qing, but not the Beast Emperor?” An elder asked in a puzzled manner.

Chapter 1815 – Request From One’s Benefactor

“The Beast Emperor was not human. He naturally cannot be counted,” Underworld Judge Black Fiend said.

“Ah? He really wasn’t a human? Aren’t there people who say that the Beast Emperor is only known as the Beast Emperor because he was a human who cultivated in a special monstrous beast-like martial technique?” At this moment, the surrounding elders were all startled.

“Those are merely rumors. The Beast Emperor was a monstrous beast. Merely, no one knew what sort of monstrous beast he was. The reason for that was because there was no one in his era capable of forcing him to reveal his true form,” Underworld Judge Black Fiend said.

“So that’s the case,” The crowd nodded.

“Lord Underworld Judge, who do you think it was that saved Chu Feng today?” An elder asked curiously.

“It could have been anyone. He might have been a hidden expert, or one of the Ten Immortals. It might even be possible for him to have been someone from the Three Palaces or even the Four Clans. Everything is possible,” Underworld Judge Black Fiend said.

“Ah? It’s even possible for him to have been someone from the Four Clans? Lord Underworld Judge, please excuse this subordinate’s offense, but I feel that that doesn’t seem to be realistic, no? The Four Clans are anxious to kill Chu Feng. Thus, why would someone from the Four Clans save him?” Someone said.

“You don’t understand. Chu Feng possesses countless treasures on him, and his talent is also extremely heaven-defying. Not only are the treasures that he possesses enough to make people want to

kill him, merely his exceptional talent is already enough to make a lot of people view him as a threat.”

“Merely, what I’m saying is, it is possible for anyone to save him. That being said, it is also very possible that the person that saved him did so with the intention of harming him,” Underworld Judge Black Fiend said.

“So that’s the case. This subordinate understands now,” The crowd all revealed an expression of sudden realization. However, someone then said worriedly, “Lord Underworld Judge, if that person who saved Chu Feng really did so with an ill intentions, wouldn’t that mean that Chu Feng is in deep danger right now?”

“I also do not wish for his death. After all, he carries the hope of our human race. However, with the situation today, it is truly unsuitable for us to involve ourselves. Thus, it is better that we return and report this matter to Lord Palace Master.”

After saying those words, Underworld Judge Black Fiend looked into the distance and muttered, “For there to be people wanting to harm that child, there will naturally be people that would want to protect that child. Else, if he is to only rely on himself, it will be very difficult for him to mature. Hopefully Lord Palace Master will be willing to protect that child.”

.....

At this moment, the army from the Four Great Imperial Clans were also on their way back. Among the vast and magnificent army was a sparkling golden war chariot. The six Utmost Exalted Elders and the four Clan Chiefs were all in that war chariot.

Other than them, there was another individual. He was the person who had faked Chu Feng’s appearance before, the Hundred Transformations Clay Man.

Merely, at this moment, while the four Clan Chiefs were all standing, that Hundred Transformations Clay Man was actually

sitting alongside the six Utmost Exalted Elders. Furthermore, there was no trace of nervousness or feeling of constraint in his gaze. Even though he was only a rank one Martial Emperor, he had an attitude of standing on equal footing with the six Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Chu Feng’s survival means that there will be no end of trouble. Likely, your Four Great Imperial Clans will not be able to remain peaceful. With that Chu Feng’s temperament, once he matures, it would not be surprising should he come and exterminate your Four Great Imperial Clans in the future,” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man sat there and fiddled with his fingers. He acted as if he were speaking about something insignificant.

“We already know that without you needing to tell us. Else, why would we be so insistent on killing Chu Feng? You said that you have the means to take care of Chu Feng, exactly what is that means that you spoke of?” A Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder asked.

“Very simple. Increase the bounty on his head. There will definitely be people who will inform us about information regarding that Chu Feng,” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man said.

“Increase the bounty further? Is the bounty right now still insufficient?” The four Clan Chiefs asked in near unison.

“It’s insufficient, deeply insufficient. If you all were to add an Imperial Armament onto your current bounty, it would be sufficient then,” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man said.

“What? Imperial Armament? You want us to use our Emperor Dragon Seals as bounties?”

“No, absolutely not. The Emperor Dragon Seals are the foundations of our Four Great Imperial Clans,” The Four Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders all shook their heads.

“Even if you all are to offer an Emperor Dragon Seal as the bounty, no one will trust you all. Everyone knows how important the Emperor Dragon Seals are to you all.”

“My master is capable of lending you all an Imperial Armament. However... he has a condition,” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man said.

“What is the condition?” Everyone asked in unison.

“You all are to present the Moonlight Maze’s four Stellar Keys to my master. If you are to do that, he will lend you an Imperial Armament. However, remember, it is only lending. As for ‘lending,’ I believe you all understand what this means,” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man said.

“This...” The Utmost Exalted Elders looked to one another. They all revealed expressions of difficulty.

“No rush. You all can consider this slowly. However, before a maze that you all cannot open and the opportunity to eliminate a great enemy, I believe you all will come to a decision,” As the Hundred Transformations Clay Man spoke those words, he stood up and prepared to leave.

“Wait. Our Nangong Imperial Clan is willing to hand over our Stellar Key,” A Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder said.

“We are also willing,” After that, the Utmost Exalted Elders from the other three clans also voiced their willingness.

“That’s the correct choice,” At this moment, the Hundred Transformations Clay Man turned around. A smile actually appeared on his face that lacked facial features. That smile was extremely vicious.

“Merely, even if we are able to find that Chu Feng, with that many people protecting him, I’m afraid that it will be very difficult to eliminate him,” The Beitang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted

Elder said.

“Regarding that, you all can rest assured. As the saying goes, when helping, one must help all the way. If you all are willing to hand the four Stellar Keys to my master, my master will take care of that Snow-haired Immortal. As for that Compass Immortal, without the Snow-haired Immortal, I believe you all should be able to take care of him, no?” The Hundred Transformations Clay Man said.

“If that’s the case, it would definitely be great,” Hearing those words, a faint joyous expression emerged on the previously gloomy faces of the Four Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders.

.....

At the moment when the people from the various powers were discussing Chu Feng, that black-cloaked man was still bringing Chu Feng and the others with him and rapidly flying through the void.

It was only when they arrived at a mountain range that he slowed his speed and landed in the mountain’s forest.

“Senior, your great kindness is not something that this junior can thank with words. However, I still hope that you are willing to tell me your highly honorable name, so that this Chu Feng can repay your grace of saving my life in the future.”

At the moment they landed, Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the mysterious black-cloaked man. Even Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong were clasping their fists respectfully toward that black-cloaked man to express their thanks.

However, that black cloaked man completely ignored them. Instead, he faced the depths of the forest and said, “This is all that I can help you with. If this still won’t do, you can only abdicate.”

After he finished saying those words, the mysterious black-cloaked man once again disappeared into the void.

“This...” At this moment, Chu Feng and the others were dumbfounded. Even though that mysterious black-cloaked man had saved them, he had not said a single word to them.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng and the others still turned their gazes toward the direction in which that black-cloaked man had spoken earlier. The reason for that was because there was currently an aura approaching them from that direction. It was the aura of a rank three Martial Emperor.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have heard of your great name for a long time now, and was looking forward to meeting you. Today, I finally get to see you. It is truly my pleasure, truly my pleasure,” That rank three Martial Emperor appeared before them. Although he had the appearance of a human, Chu Feng was capable of sensing that he was not human. From his aura, Chu Feng determined that he was a monstrous beast.

“Senior, are you from the King Monstrous Dragon Race?” Chu Feng asked.

“As expected from a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, little friend Chu Feng actually saw through me. Yes, I am the Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, Yaojiao Guang,” Yaojiao Guang said with a beaming smile.

“So it’s actually senior Yaojiao Guang. Junior Chu Feng thanks senior for saving my life,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and bowed respectfully to Yaojiao Guang.

Chu Feng knew that the black-cloaked man, regardless of who he was, had only been asked by someone else to save him. As for the person that really wanted to save Chu Feng, it was this Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, Yaojiao Guang.

“My, little friend Chu Feng, don’t thank me so quickly. I had you brought here because I have a matter that I need your help with. Might little friend Chu Feng be willing to help me?” Yaojiao Guang said.

Chapter 1816 – Fighting Over The Position Of Clan Chief

“Help?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled.

However, nevertheless, he asked, “Senior has saved me. What might it be that this junior can help with? As long as this junior is capable, I will definitely put forth all of my effort to be of assistance.”

Yaojiao Guang sighed, “Regarding this matter, it is a long story. However, little friend Chu Feng is indeed capable of helping me. Thus, I might as well tell you all the truth,” Yaojiao Guang began to explain the situation to Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong.

It turned out that even though Yaojiao Guang was the Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, his position as the Clan Chief was about to expire.

According to the rules of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, it was not up to him to decide who the next Clan Chief would be. Instead, the person to become the next Clan Chief was the strongest member of the younger generation.

At this moment, of the children that Yaojiao Guang had that were still part of the younger generation, which is to say, less than a hundred years old, there was his ninety-sixth son, ninety-seventh son, ninety-eighth son and ninety-ninth daughter.

Among his three sons and one daughter, the one with the strongest strength was his ninety-sixth son, Yaojiao Tinglei.

Chu Feng had already met Yaojiao Tinglei. He had been the representative of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts in the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly.

Back then, that Yaojiao Tinglei had indirectly spoken for Chu Feng before Zhang Tianyi’s father. Thus, Chu Feng had a pretty

good impression of him.

However, according to Yaojiao Guang, although his ninety-sixth son was very strong, he was not the strongest among the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' younger generation.

Currently, the strongest of the younger generation among the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts was a person by the name of Yaojiao Xueran.

Although that Yaojiao Xueran was already ninety-three years old, he was still considered to be a member of the younger generation. Furthermore, he possessed a cultivation stronger than even Chu Feng's. He was a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

Logically, Yaojiao Xueran would be the optimal successor to the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' Clan Chief.

Normally, this would not be an issue. However, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were separated into two factions. One of them was the one that the current Clan Chief, Yaojiao Guang, was in. This faction was called the 'Peace Faction.' They advocated for peaceful coexistence with humans, and did not wish for unnecessary conflicts to arise.

As for the other faction, it was called the 'War Faction.' The War Faction advocated for monstrous beasts to become the rulers. They did not wish to continue to act modestly toward humans. Instead, they wanted the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts to reach the apex of the Holy Land of Martialism, to have everyone fear their name.

Thus, if someone from the War Faction were to become the Clan Chief, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would likely not be able to coexist peacefully with humans. Conflicts and calamity would inevitably come about. As for that, it would not be good for either humans or the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts.

As for that Yaojiao Xueran, he was the son of the current leader of the War Faction. Furthermore, the leader of the War Faction

possessed an antagonistic relationship with Yaojiao Guang. Thus, if his son were to become the Clan Chief, then the Peace Faction which Yaojiao Guan lead would definitely end up suffering in the future.

Thus, Yaojiao Guan really did not wish for Yaojiao Xueran to succeed as the next Clan Chief. This was the reason why he had sought Chu Feng's help.

“Although Yaojiao Xueran is a rank eight Half Martial Emperor, and is also very powerful among the King Monstrous Dragon Race's younger generation, the Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Race must face the Holy Land of Martialism's Martial Emperors. With the cultivation he possesses, it is clear that he is insufficiently qualified to take upon himself the position of Clan Chief.”

“I don't understand why you all must have him succeed as the next Clan Chief instead of finding someone stronger. Furthermore, I can see that senior's health is completely fine. Even if you are to continue to be the Clan Chief for two thousand more years, there should also not be any problem to it. There is simply no reason for you to abdicate, no?” Chu Feng asked with a puzzled expression.

“Little friend Chu Feng doesn't know about this. This has been a rule of our King Monstrous Dragon Race since ancient times. I became the Clan Chief of our King Monstrous Dragon Race when I was ninety-eight years old. As matters stand, I have already been the Clan Chief for eight thousand years.”

“According to our King Monstrous Dragon Race's rule, as long as a Clan Chief has been the Clan Chief for eight thousand years, regardless of what their cultivation might be, regardless of how powerful they might be, they must still abdicate. Then, the member of the younger generation with the strongest strength shall be the one to succeed the position of Clan Chief,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Eight thousand years? You’ve already lived for eight thousand years?” Hearing those words, Hong Qiang was extremely startled. The way he saw it, Yaojiao Guan was very strong and robust. At the very most, he would only appear like a human who had lived for three thousand years. He simply did not resemble someone who had lived for eight thousand years.

After all, for humans, even if one were a Martial Emperor, one’s body would become weak and feeble like that of an old man upon living for eight thousand years. Even if one possessed overwhelming abilities, it remained that they would be near the limit of their life expectancy. To speak simply, they would soon die, and would have to use heavenly treasures and earthly gems if they wanted to extend their lifespan.

For example, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders and even Baili Xuankong were all people who were near the limit of their life expectancy. They were all using special methods to extend their lifespan. However, even with that being the case, they would not be able to continue to live for another thousand years. At the very most, they could live for several hundred more years.

Although Yaojiao Guang had also lived for that long, judging by his appearance, one would feel that it would be no issue for him to continue living for four to five thousand more years. The reason for that was because he simply did not give off the appearance of having deteriorated with age.

“Our King Monstrous Dragon Race possesses the Bloodlines of True Dragons. Although it is only a tiny bit, it is sufficient to allow our lifespans to surpass those of ordinary monstrous beasts. Moreover, monstrous beasts possess a longer life expectancy than humans to begin with,” Yaojiao Guang explained.

“Monstrous beasts fill every corner of the Holy Land of Martialism. However, very few among them possess noble Bloodlines. Today, this old man’s horizons have been broadened,”

Baili Xuankong nodded.

Yaojiao Guang looked to Baili Xuankong and asked, “This brother, you should be the one who saved little friend Chu Feng in Mooncloud City, right? I already know of Brother Hong Qiang. Brother, may I know your distinguished name?”

From his passionate gaze, it could be seen that he wanted to find out Baili Xuankong’s identity underneath that conical bamboo hat.

“This...” Chu Feng was slightly hesitant. After all, the identity of his Ancestor was something that no one knew about even now. The reason for that was because Baili Xuankong’s identity concerned the safety of the Cyanwood Mountain.

“It’s alright,” However, Baili Xuankong waved his hand at Chu Feng. Then, he removed his conical bamboo hat and said, “I am Baili Xuankong.”

“So it’s actually Brother Baili. It is my pleasure to meet you,” Yaojiao Guang felt very honored to be able to see Baili Xuankong’s true appearance.

At this moment, Hong Qiang also looked to Baili Xuankong with a pensive gaze. After all, it was also the first time that he had seen Baili Xuankong’s true appearance. Merely, that name ‘Baili Xuankong’ was sounded somewhat familiar to him. Yet, he was unable to recall where he had heard it.

This was not because Hong Qiang possessed a bad memory. Although Baili Xuankong had become famous very early, he had disappeared and entered seclusion training when his fame in the Cyanwood Domain was at its greatest. Currently, there were truly not many people who still knew of him.

“Clan Chief Yaojiao, please forgive this old man for being blunt. This rule of your King Monstrous Dragon Beasts seems to be somewhat unconventional.”

“Even if you should abdicate after being the Clan Chief for eight

thousand years, the next Clan Chief should be someone with the proper qualifications. How could you all jump so far and directly choose the next Clan Chief from the younger generation?"

"How is the new Clan Chief, with his cultivation and status, possibly capable of convincing the masses, not to mention the outsiders, but merely the people within the King Monstrous Dragon Race, to serve him?" Baili Xuankong asked in a very puzzled manner. As for this, it was also what Chu Feng and Hong Qiang were puzzled by.

"There are two factions in our King Monstrous Dragon Race. The two factions are the most crucial. As for the position of Clan Chief, it is merely a title. When a member of the younger generation succeeds as the next Clan Chief, it will only be in name. The true authority will actually end up going to the leader of the faction that the member of the younger generation belongs to," Yaojiao Guang said.

"So that's the case. This old man understands now. Merely, you said earlier that Chu Feng can help you. However, I feel that Chu Feng will likely be powerless in something like this, no?" Baili Xuankong asked.

"It is indeed possible for little friend Chu Feng to help me strive for a chance," Yaojiao Guang said as he looked to Chu Feng.

"Senior, please tell me straightforwardly," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, do you still remember my daughter, Yaojiao Tingyu?" Yaojiao Guang asked.

"I became acquainted with Princess Tingyu on the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's Immortal Island. Chu Feng naturally remembers her," Chu Feng had a very good impression of Yaojiao Tingyu. In fact, it could be said that Chu Feng had a very good impression of the entire King Monstrous Dragon Beast race so far.

After all, during the moment when so many humans wanted to

kill him, it was the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts who had saved him. That sort of special sensation was something that only Chu Feng understood.

“Although Tingyu is very young, she is actually the one with the best talent among my ninety-nine children.”

“Generally, our King Monstrous Dragon Race’s elders never interfere with the two factions fighting over the position of Clan Chief. All they care about is the younger generation’s cultivation and strength.”

“However, this time around, they have made an exception and put forth a condition. As long as Tingyu is capable of succeeding Lord Dragon King’s inheritance, she will become our King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Lord Dragon King?” Hearing those words, the expressions of Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong all changed. Their gazes began to flicker. For some reason, they felt a sense of familiarity upon hearing that name.

“Lord Dragon King is one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Five Emperors, the five overlords.”

“Beast Emperor, Black Dragon King,” Yaojiao Guang said.

Chapter 1817 – A Fine Line

“What? He was actually the Beast Emperor, Black Dragon King?” Hong Qiang opened his mouth wide in shock. Even Chu Feng and Baili Xuankong were feeling very surprised.

After all, hearing what Yaojiao Guang said, he seemed to be indicating that the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King, had a definite relationship with their King Monstrous Dragon Beast race.

“It is as you all have thought, Lord Dragon King was a monstrous beast. Furthermore, he was a member of our King Monstrous Dragon Beast race. He is the hero of our King Monstrous Dragon Beast race,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“I have indeed heard that the Beast Emperor might have been a monstrous beast. However, that was only a possibility. Never would I have expected it to actually be true,” The shock Baili Xuankong was feeling did not decrease in the slightest. It was very difficult for him to digest this matter.

“Amazing! After the Five Emperors disappeared, no one knew anything about them. Not to mention their descendants, people don’t even know where they were buried.”

“Yet now, not long after the emergence of Emperor Gong’s successor, the Beast Emperor’s successor is also about to emerge. This is truly astonishing.”

“What are troubled times? These are troubled times!” Hong Qiang exclaimed repeatedly.

“When mentioning it, I am truly ashamed. Lord Dragon King possessed remarkable abilities. However, no one in our entire King Monstrous Dragon Race has been able to obtain his inheritance. Even for my daughter Tingyu, she only has a possibility of success.”

“However, whether or not she will actually be able to obtain it

will all depend on little friend Chu Feng's help. As long as little friend Chu Feng is willing to help, regardless of success or failure, I, Yaojiao Guang, will definitely remember this favor. If little friend Chu Feng were to need my assistance in the future, I would definitely risk my life and limb to help you out," Yaojiao Guang said as he looked to Chu Feng.

"Senior, you mean to say that as long as Princess Tingyu is able to obtain the inheritance, she will be the next Clan Chief?" Chu Feng asked.

"That is indeed the case. Lord Dragon King possessed a special status in our King Monstrous Dragon Race. As long as Tingyu is capable of obtaining his inheritance, regardless of what her cultivation might be, she will still be able to become the next Clan Chief."

"Merely, Tingyu has already attempted to obtain the inheritance many times. Although she was able to enter the Inheritance Pond left behind by Lord Dragon King, she was incapable of successfully obtaining the inheritance," When mentioning this matter, Yaojiao Guang had an expression of helplessness.

"Am I really capable of helping in something like this?" Chu Feng asked.

"Little friend Chu Feng, do you still remember the pond in the Immortal Island?" Yaojiao Guang asked.

"I do," Chu Feng said.

"The Inheritance Pond Lord Dragon King left behind resembles the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's Pond in some respects. One's talent is what determines whether one can enter that pond. As for whether or not one can obtain the inheritance in the pond, it depends on one's talent even more."

"I have heard that little friend Chu Feng possesses an extremely valiant talent. If you were to enter the Inheritance Pond alongside

my daughter, you might be able to make the Inheritance Pond pass Lord Dragon King's power on to my daughter," Yaojiao Guang said.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng finally realized why Yaojiao Tingyu would invite him to be a guest after seeing him revealing his talent on the Immortal Island. Likely, she had wanted to request his assistance since that time.

"But, what if after Chu Feng enters that Inheritance Pond and uses his talent to activate the Inheritance Pond, the Beast Emperor's power decides to pass the inheritance on to Chu Feng instead?" Baili Xuankong asked.

"You don't have to worry about that. The Inheritance Pond will only pass its power on to the younger generation of our King Monstrous Dragon Race. As long as little friend Chu Feng activates the Inheritance Pond, the power in the Inheritance Pond will begin to distinguish between the people within it before actually passing the power on to someone. As it will not be able to distinguish Chu Feng, it will naturally not pass its power onto Chu Feng. At that time, my daughter will be the only candidate to inherit the power," Yaojiao Guang said.

"In that case, Chu Feng is willing to give it a try," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please rest assured. Although the Four Great Imperial Clan's view you as their enemy, our King Monstrous Dragon Race does not fear them. If you are able to help my daughter become the successor to the position of Clan Chief, our King Monstrous Dragon Race is willing to protect your safety," Seeing that Chu Feng had actually agreed to help that straightforwardly after knowing the story, Yaojiao Guang was extremely happy, and actually promised to protect Chu Feng.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng also felt very grateful. He was able to tell that Yaojiao Guang was not joking around when he said those words.

It was true that Chu Feng needed more backers to protect him. At the very least, he needed people to protect him during the time of his growth. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were a very good option.

After that, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong began to follow Yaojiao Guang, and began to journey toward the King Monstrous Dragon Race's territory.

On the way there, Chu Feng became increasingly surprised. The reason for that was because the direction in which Yaojiao Guang was proceeding was actually the same direction as where Jiang Wushang was currently located.

Ultimately, they arrived at their destination, and Chu Feng came to realize that the King Monstrous Dragon Race's territory was actually not the same location as where Jiang Wushang was. However, they were truly not far from Jiang Wushang's location.

The King Monstrous Dragon Race was located in an ancient mountain range. This mountain range had existed since the Ancient Era. Furthermore, the entire mountain range was covered by an invisible world spirit formation barrier. While that spirit formation was invisible, it possessed a defense that was much superior to that of the Nangong Imperial Clan's defensive barrier.

"That spirit formation is amazing. May I know which world spiritist made it?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"It was Lord Dragon King," Yaojiao Guang said.

"The Beast Emperor was actually a world spiritist?" Hong Qiang was extremely shocked. The reason why he was so shocked was because very few monstrous beasts possessed spirit power. Even if they were able to obtain spirit power, they would generally lack the talent for world spirit techniques.

However, the spirit formation that covered the mountain range was something that very few world spiritists in the entire current

Holy Land of Martialism were capable of creating. From this, one could easily imagine how powerful the Beast Emperor's world spirit techniques were.

"Brother Hong Qiang, truth be told, it is said that Lord Dragon King possessed extremely powerful world spirit techniques. It is said that he was only a fine line away from becoming a legendary Immortal-cloak World Spiritist," When mentioning this matter, Yaojiao Guang was extremely proud.

"Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?"

Hong Qiang, Baili Xuankong and even Chu Feng all gasped in surprise. Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were existences akin to legend.

"Nonsense! How could one become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist that easily? The way I see it, only you in the entire Holy Land of Martialism possesses the qualifications to become one," Eggy snorted disdainfully. She did not believe that the Beast Emperor had only been a fine line away from becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

"Eggy, is it truly that difficult to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?" Chu Feng asked.

"Difficult. Of course it's difficult. Martial Kings are capable of becoming Royal-cloak World Spiritists. However, for Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, even Martial Emperors might not necessarily be able to become one. This is the disparity between them."

"Look at the number of Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism. Adding all of them up, it's still a very small number. But, what about the Martial Kings in the Holy Land of Martialism? How numerous are they?"

"From this, it can be seen that the people from the Holy Land of Martialism are truly limited in mastering world spirit techniques.

That being said, the Holy Land of Martialism's Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations are extremely extraordinary. They should be the products of Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. In the Ancient Era, there were most definitely Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism," Eggy said.

"Mn, the Ancient Era was truly much more powerful than the Holy Land of Martialism is now," Chu Feng naturally knew how amazing the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formations were. Involuntarily, Chu Feng began to recall that bamboo slip in his dantian. Everything pointed to the cultivators of the Ancient Era being much stronger than the cultivators present now.

"However, you do not have to be too discouraged. As far as I know, you are not far away from becoming a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, no? I feel like you will definitely become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist before you become a Martial Emperor," Eggy said.

"I hope that's the case," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Although Chu Feng needed to refine a great amount of cultivation resources in order to increase his martial cultivation, he was able to train in world spirit techniques normally and make comprehensions himself. It was as Eggy had said, Chu Feng was only a fine line away from becoming a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Likely, in the near future, another Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist would appear in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please," Yaojiao Guang said. It turned out that Yaojiao Guang had opened an entrance in the spirit formation that sealed the mountain range.

As Chu Feng looked into the entrance that had been opened, his brows lifted slightly. He was surprised. When looking in from the outside, the inside of the spirit formation seemed to clearly be filled with vast mountains and towering giant trees.

However, when looking through that opened entrance, Chu Feng

could see that the inside was filled with magnificent buildings and forts. It was a vast city.

Furthermore, eight hundred King Monstrous Dragon Beast experts had already walked out through that entrance. They stood in an orderly fashion to either side, then bent their knees and half-kneeled onto the ground.

Furthermore, there were thousands of King Monstrous Dragon Beast experts inside the entrance. They were all wearing thorny black armor as they stood there in a manner like guards.

“So the inside is a completely different world. The King Monstrous Dragon Race is much more powerful than I had imagined.”

Chu Feng had thought that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were inferior to the Nangong Imperial Clan the entire time. However, after seeing all this, he now knew that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were not at all inferior to the Nangong Imperial Clan. In fact, as a whole, the quality of their elites even surpassed those of the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Chapter 1818 – Scum King Monstrous Dragon Beast

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng and the others were about to enter the King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s territory, six figures suddenly rapidly flew toward them from the distant horizon and descended before them.

They were King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. They were returning from a long journey, and were currently covered in dust. Among them was a face that Chu Feng recognized. It was the King Monstrous Dragon Beast representative he had met in the Gong Ba Plains’ fort, Yaojiao Tinglei, Yaojiao Guang’s ninety-sixth son.

“Brother Chu Feng, we meet again. You have truly broadened our horizons and brought face to us members of the younger generation.”

After greeting Yaojiao Guang, Baili Xuankong and the others respectfully, Yaojiao Tinglei began to call out to Chu Feng with a smile on his face. Furthermore, the expression that he wore when he looked to Chu Feng was an expression of admiration.

In fact, it was not only him. Even the five Martial Emperors that arrived alongside him were looking at Chu Feng with expressions of idolization on their faces.

Had it been before, people of their status would definitely not have reacted in such a manner. However, after they personally saw Chu Feng’s abilities on the Gong Ba Plains, they knew very well that the young man before them possessed the qualifications for them to feel admiration towards him.

“Prince, you are flattering me,” Chu Feng replied modestly.

“My, you don’t have to address me as prince. If you don’t mind, you can address me directly as Tinglei,” Yaojiao Tinglei said.

“Brother Tinglei,” Chu Feng greeted again. Then, he asked, “How was the situation in the Gong Ba Plains after we left? Did Snow-haired Immortal and Compass Immortal manage...”

“I know what you’re worried about. Rest assured. After you were saved by our Utmost Exalted Elder, the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal both escaped. As for the Four Clans, they did not dare to chase after them.”

“The Four Great Imperial Clans wracked their brains to meticulously plan your capture. However, in the end, they suffered a crushing defeat. Haha. You weren’t there to see it when the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans were being ridiculed by the crowd. They had truly and utterly disgraced themselves. Thus, they did not stay, and instead left in a dejected manner.”

Yaojiao Tinglei said with a carefree expression. At the same time as he described what had happened to Chu Feng, he had also revealed to Chu Feng that the person who saved him before was also a King Monstrous Dragon Beast. Merely, it seemed that his status was even higher than that of Yaojiao Guang. He was actually their Utmost Exalted Elder.

After hearing what Yaojiao Tinglei said, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang both started to smile. As for Chu Feng, he felt relieved.

“Tinglei, you’ve returned at the perfect time. I still have some matters that I wish to mention to the elders. Go and take Chu Feng, as well as the other two sirs, to the Distinguished Guest Palace Hall to rest,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Father, please rest assured, I will definitely entertain the two seniors and Brother Chu Feng properly,” Then, Yaojiao Tinglei led Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong to the Distinguished Guest Palace Hall to rest.

Although the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were monstrous beasts, their castle walls and buildings imitated those of human constructions.

Furthermore, for the sake of being visually pleasing, many of the forts had been created with pure gold, and ornamented with natural treasures. They were truly dazzling sights, truly luxurious.

However, this sort of dazzling sight was truly a bit excessive. Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong were all unable to appreciate them. It would seem that the taste for art between humans and monstrous beasts was still a bit different.

“Yoh, this must be that human race’s genius, Chu Feng, right?”

However, not long after Chu Feng and the others were seated in the palace hall, a group of people appeared. It was a large group of people; there were Martial Emperor-level experts among them. However, only ten people entered the palace hall.

These ten people were all part of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ younger generation. There were men and women among them, and they all had humanoid appearances. Their leader was a man with the cultivation of a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. Merely, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was filled with hostility.

Of course, the gaze with which he looked to Yaojiao Tinglei was also filled with the same sort of hostility.

“Yaojiao Xueran, why have you come here? Can you not see that I am entertaining distinguished guests?”

“With your status, this is not a place that you can enter as you please,” Yaojiao Tinglei berated.

“Yoh, yoh, yoh, Ninety-sixth Prince, what arrogance you have here. However, you should know very well that you will not be able to continue to be prince for long. Thus, it’s best that you pay attention to the way you talk to me. For I... will be your master in the future.”

Yaojiao Xueran started to poke at Yaojiao Tinglei’s chest repeatedly. He was acting extremely impudent.

“Yaojiao Xueran, you are still not the Clan Chief yet. As a member of the younger generation, you are required to greet me respectfully upon seeing me. Not only have you not done so, you have actually dared to threaten and provoke me. Do you not fear that I will punish you?” At this moment, Yaojiao Tinglei was furious.

“Punish me? With merely you? Or is it that you want them to punish me?” As Yaojiao Xueran said those words, he turned his gaze to the guards in the palace hall.

However, all the guards that were met with Yaojiao Xueran’s gaze immediately shifted their gaze away. They all knew that Yaojiao Xueran was going to become the next Clan Chief. Thus, how could they possibly dare to disrespect him?

“Lord Prince, it would seem that you have no power whatsoever. No one is even willing to listen to you anymore. Heh... punish me? Someone like you is unqualified,” Yaojiao Xueran mocked and ridiculed with a smile on his face.

As for Yaojiao Tinglei, he was so enraged that his complexion turned deep red, and his veins bulged violently. However, he could do nothing other than endure in silence.

Although his father was the Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, everyone knew that Yaojiao Xueran would become the next Clan Chief.

Should Yaojiao Xueran become the next Clan Chief, it would mean that the War Faction would gain control of the King Monstrous Dragon Race. At that time, they, the people from the Peace Faction would all end up suffering. If they were to dare to go against Yaojiao Xueran at such a time, their days in the future would become even more unendurable.

Thus, Yaojiao Tinglei did not blame those guards. As the facts were before their eyes, there was nothing that they could do.

“Oh, that’s right. You said that I am still not yet the Clan Chief. I know what you’re thinking.”

“You’re thinking that your little sister will still have the chance to become the Clan Chief of our King Monstrous Dragon Race, isn’t that right? Furthermore, that will all be dependent on that human. That Chu Feng will be your savior, isn’t that right?” After saying those words, Yaojiao Xueran took a glance at Chu Feng again and smiled disdainfully.

“I might as well tell you this. Your little sister is hopeless. How could a mere human possibly activate the Inheritance Pond? For the sake of obtaining the position of Clan Chief, you all actually went to request help from a human. You have truly shamed our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Yaojiao Xueran said to Yaojiao Tinglei.

“Even if my little sister is incapable of obtaining Lord Dragon King’s inheritance, she is still the only one of us to ever be able to step into the Inheritance Pond. She is much more powerful than you. Sooner or later, she will surpass you,” Yaojiao Tinglei said.

“I know that she’ll surpass me. But what about it? At that time, I will have already become the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief. I will hold a position so high and above her, that even if she were to surpass me, she would still have to listen to my commands and work for me.”

“However, you do not have to worry for your little sister. After all, she is the person with the greatest talent since Lord Dragon King. I will let her live a very good life.”

“I have already decided. On the day that I become Clan Chief, I will request that the elders marry your little sister to me,” Yaojiao Xueran said.

“Yaojiao Xueran, you are truly a scoundrel. As a princess, how could my sister possibly marry you to become your concubine?” Yaojiao Tinglei was incomparably furious. The reason for that was

because Yaojiao Xueran was already married. Not only did he have a wife, he also possessed close to a hundred concubines.

If his little sister were to marry Yaojiao Xueran, she would only become a concubine.

Furthermore, Yaojiao Xueran was extremely unfaithful. He had pursued Yaojiao Tingyu many times, only to be refused by her every time. Furthermore, Yaojiao Tingyu had requested that their father punish Yaojiao Xueran before.

This Yaojiao Xueran already harbored hard feelings for her. If Yaojiao Tingyu were to really marry him, she would definitely be miserable.

However, most helplessly, if Yaojiao Xueran were to really become the Clan Chief, the elders would definitely agree to his request. At that time, his little sister would have no other choice but to marry him.

“Truth be told, your little sister is only qualified to be my concubine. However, rest assured, I will make sure that she’ll be extremely happy. She’ll remain very noble outside. However, when she’s with me, she’ll be my sex slave. Hahaha,” After saying those words, Yaojiao Xueran looked to the sky and burst into loud and shameless laughter.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng said, “Never would I have expected that there would be such scum even among the King Monstrous Dragon Race. My eyes have truly been opened today.”

Chapter 1819 – Chu Feng Vs. Xueran

“Mere human, since when was this a place where you could talk?” Yaojiao Xueran was deeply enraged. As he spoke, invisible oppressive might swept forth toward Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before that oppressive might even managed to approach Chu Feng, it vanished like smoke into thin air. Chu Feng had stopped it with his own oppressive might.

“Yoh, rank seven Half Martial Emperor. Chu Feng, you’re even stronger than you are rumored to be, stronger than Yaojiao Tinglei.”

“However, don’t you dare think that you will be able to contend against me with your mere cultivation. If I were to truly attack, you would not even know how you died,” As Yaojiao Xueran spoke, he revealed an ominous glint and began to walk toward Chu Feng.

However, before he managed to approach Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang both stood up and stood before Chu Feng.

“What’s going on? You all wish to attack me? Let me tell you all this. This place is the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s territory. It is not a place that you humans can act imprudently in!” Yaojiao Xueran shouted.

Seeing that, Chu Feng walked out from behind Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang. He looked Yaojiao Xueran in the face and said, “It seems that you really look down on humans?”

“Yes, that’s precisely it. I look down on humans. In my eyes, you all are nothing more than a despicable bunch. Other than scheming, you all are trash with no usefulness. What’s wrong? Are you unconvinced?” Yaojiao Xueran said with a loud voice.

“Unconvinced...? Is there any part of you that can convince me?”

Chu Feng smiled with contempt. He began to size Yaojiao Xueran up. Then, his smile grew even stronger, and he started to shake his head disappointedly.

“If you’re unconvinced, then come. Let’s spar. This will also allow me to know exactly how exceptional the human genius is.”

“However, let me tell you this. If I, Yaojiao Xueran, am to fight, I will definitely make you incapable of standing back up,” Yaojiao Xueran pulled back his sleeves and revealed an appearance of being eager to battle Chu Feng.

“Even though I dislike you greatly, you are still a King Monstrous Dragon Beast. Having been invited here by the Clan Chief, I must give him face. Thus, I do not wish to injure you. It’s best that you do not continue to brag before me. Else, I will not be able to even give your Clan Chief face,” As Chu Feng said those words, a flash of coldness shone through his eyes.

Seeing that cold gaze, the several people behind Yaojiao Xueran all trembled. At that very instant, they, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, actually felt as if they had encountered a frightening existence. From the bottoms of their hearts, they actually began to feel fear of Chu Feng.

Even though it was extremely inconceivable, it remained that they indeed felt that way. Merely, Yaojiao Xueran still didn’t notice the cold gaze in Chu Feng’s eyes.

“Yoh, what arrogance you have. I can see that you are someone who will not shed tears until the coffin is before you. Today, I must let you know how frightening I, Yaojiao Xueran, am.”

Yaojiao Xueran spoke to the guards in the palace hall. “Listen carefully. I am sparring with Chu Feng. Regardless which of us is injured, none of you are allowed to interfere. Likewise, you are to prevent anyone else from interfering. Understand?”

Yaojiao Xueran spoke those words with hidden intentions. While

he was telling the guards to not interfere, he was also telling them to prevent Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang from interfering.

Yaojiao Xueran had made a firm decision to properly teach Chu Feng a lesson, and use this as an opportunity to demonstrate his might as the future Clan Chief.

After all, Chu Feng was the representative of the human race's geniuses. If he were to defeat Chu Feng, it would be a rare opportunity for him to become famous.

"Understood," The guards did not dare to disobey. One by one, they moved to the side. Furthermore, they tacitly understood Yaojiao Xueran's intentions, and moved to either side of Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang to prevent them from interfering.

However, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were not worried in the slightest. The two of them knew that there was simply no need for them to interfere in this battle between Chu Feng and Yaojiao Xueran. The reason for that was because there was no reason for them to interfere to save that Yaojiao Xueran from Chu Feng.

At the same time, many of the guards outside the palace hall also walked in. They fixed their gazes on Chu Feng and Yaojiao Xueran.

They all wished to see how their strongest younger generation, their future Clan Chief, would toy with the human race's genius.

This was especially true of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts of the War Faction. When they looked at Chu Feng, a cold smile emerged on their faces. They all wished to see the scene of Chu Feng being utterly defeated.

"Heh..." Seeing this scene, Yaojiao Tinglei actually laughed. As he had been present at the Gong Ba Plains, and personally seen Chu Feng's abilities, he knew very well that regardless of how strong Yaojiao Xueran might be among their King Monstrous Dragon Beast Race, he would only end up being thrashed by Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, don't say that I'm bullying you. I will not dodge, and

will allow you to hit me three times.”

“Come, come, come. Hit me here. I shall see how you will injure me,” Yaojiao Xueran walked over to Chu Feng and patted his chest firmly. He wanted Chu Feng to hit him there.

“As you wish,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he clenched his hand into a fist and directly landed it on Yaojiao Xueran’s chest.

“Boom~~~”

A loud noise was heard as Yaojiao Xueran was knocked flying before firmly crashing into the palace hall’s wall and falling to the ground after that.

“This...”

At this moment, all of the guards were dumbstruck. At that moment, not only did Yaojiao Xueran have a pale complexion, he also vomited a mouthful of blood onto the floor.

“Bastard! You damned bastard!” [Yaojiao Xueran](#) quickly wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth. However, the blood that was on the ground was still there. Even though he had wiped his mouth clean, it could not conceal the fact that he had been wounded by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng fiddled with his fist as he said, “No wonder you had me attack first. You’ve actually hidden a treasure in your chest area. You must really thank that treasure of yours. Else, that fist strike of mine would have been more than capable of killing you.”

“And here I was thinking how you could dare to have Chu Feng hit you first. It turns out that you’re actually wearing your defensive inner armor.”

“That inner armor of yours is capable of preventing injuries. Especially against people with cultivations below yours. If they were to launch a sneak attack at you and hit that inner armor, even if they survived, they would be crippled.”

“Unfortunately, Chu Feng is a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He already saw through the fact that you were wearing your inner armor. Furthermore, he undid the defensive ability of that inner armor with his world spirit techniques.”

“This time around, you have truly thought yourself to be clever only to be utterly humiliated,” Yaojiao Tinglei seized the opportunity and began to mock Yaojiao Xueran from the side.

“You shut up!” Yaojiao Xueran was extremely angry. The reason for that was because what Yaojiao Tinglei had said was the truth.

His reaction further verified Yaojiao Tinglei’s accusations. At that moment, all of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present turned their gazes to Yaojiao Xueran’s chest and discovered that, sure enough, there was an inner armor hidden there.

All of a sudden, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts all felt shamed by Yaojiao Xueran.

“Chu Feng, you will pay for this,” Yaojiao Xueran’s eyes turned red. Knowing that he had been utterly humiliated, he was in such a rage that steam was coming out of his pores. Overcome with anger, he actually took out a large hammer.

The hammer was wholly black in color, and nine meters long. Not only was it enormous, it was also covered with scale-like veined patterns. Light was circulating through the veined patterns. The hammer was emitting a boundlessly mighty aura.

“Incomplete Imperial Armament, Black Scaled Giant Hammer. He actually even managed to obtain the Black Scaled Giant Hammer.”

Upon seeing that weapon, Yaojiao Tinglei revealed an expression of jealousy. He knew that the Black Scaled Giant Hammer was a top quality weapon that had been in the possession of the elders. For Yaojiao Xueran to obtain that Black Scaled Giant Hammer, he had most definitely been bestowed that weapon by the elders.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, an overwhelming explosion sounded. Then, boundless black flames began to surge to fatally attack Chu Feng. That Yaojiao Xueran had unleashed his attack.

I forgot to mention this Yaojiao Xueran's name is literally Monstrous Dragon, Dyed With Blood. Yaojiao Tinglei's name is Listen/Hear, Thunder. His sister, Tingyu's name is Listen/Hear, Rain. Their father's name, Guang, means vast.

Chapter 1820 – Invited One's Own Humiliation

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the black flame turned into an enormous snake. The snake possessed a pitch-black body and a pair of crimson eyes. With its mouth wide open, it revealed a mouth full of sharp teeth.

Looking at it, it gave off the sensation of being capable of devouring mountains and rivers and destroying heaven and earth.

Not only was Yaojiao Xueran attacking, he was even attacking with an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. He was not only planning to defeat Chu Feng. Instead, he was planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Heh...”

However, although he was faced with such a ferocious attack, Chu Feng still laughed disapprovingly.

“Zzzzz~”

Suddenly, lightning began to flicker. Immediately, the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on Chu Feng's body.

Then, Chu Feng turned into a flash of lightning as his body shot forward explosively. He actually entered the mouth of that snake and penetrated all the way through to its tail.

In merely an instant, not only had Chu Feng defeated the Earthen Taboo Martial Skill that Yaojiao Xueran had unleashed with his Incomplete Imperial Armament head-on, he had also arrived before Yaojiao Xueran.

“You...” Seeing Chu Feng penetrating through his most proficient Earthen Taboo Martial Skill and arriving before him completely uninjured, Yaojiao Xueran became dumbstruck.

His hair was standing on end, and his heart had reached his

throat. At this time, he sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Fear. Fear emerged in his heart. As matters stood, he finally realized how frightening the human before him was. Unfortunately, it was already too late.

“This palm of mine will soon be slapping you in the face. However, I’ll give you a chance. You can choose to flee right now,” Chu Feng raised his right hand and spoke to Yaojiao Xueran with a beaming smile.

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing that, Yaojiao Xueran’s body shifted. He immediately began to flee.

Merely, the very moment his body began to move, Chu Feng’s palm landed on his face with the speed of light.

“Pow~~~”

A loud echo was heard as Yaojiao Xueran was knocked to the ground.

As Chu Feng looked at Yaojiao Xueran, who was on the ground with a bloody handprint on his left cheek, Chu Feng laughed and said, “I gave you a chance. Unfortunately, you were too useless to grasp it.”

“This...”

Seeing that Yaojiao Xueran had been beaten, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present were all stunned. This was especially true for those from the War Faction. At this moment, they did not know what to do.

Rank nine Half Martial Emperor. At this moment, the Chu Feng standing before them not only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he also had the cultivation of a rank nine Half Martial Emperor. His strength already greatly surpassed that of Yaojiao Xueran.

Younger generation, how could he still be considered to be a member of the younger generation? How could there be someone from the younger generation as powerful as him?

“Humph, on the Gong Ba Plains, even the Four Clans’ rank two Martial Emperors were killed by Brother Chu Feng. You, a mere rank eight Half Martial Emperor, actually dared to provoke Brother Chu Feng. You were truly overestimating your capabilities and inviting your own humiliation,” Yaojiao Tinglei mocked and ridiculed. What Chu Feng had done brought him great satisfaction.

“Ah? He killed rank two Martial Emperors? How is that possible?” The other King Monstrous Dragon Beasts exclaimed in astonishment. They all found this to be unbelievable.

“Insolent! What are you all still standing there for?! A mere human actually dared to hit the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s future Clan Chief, yet you all are still standing there doing nothing! Quickly, seize him!” Yaojiao Xueran shouted angrily.

“Seize him!!!” Hearing those words, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts from the War Faction immediately complied with Yaojiao Xueran’s orders, took out their respective weapons and began to surround Chu Feng.

“I shall see who dares!” However, right at the moment when they began to surround Chu Feng, a shout of anger sounded from outside and resonated through the palace hall.

Hearing that voice, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were all startled. This was especially true for the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts from the War Faction, as their bodies even trembled. After all these years, they were naturally able to determine the owner of that voice. It was their King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief, Yaojiao Guang.

Yaojiao Guang was someone who had brought a lot of suffering to their War Faction. As such, all the people from the War Faction feared him.

“Little friend Chu Feng is a distinguished guest, invited here by none other than myself. I shall see who dares to act disrespectfully toward him!” Yaojiao Guang walked into the palace hall. Accompanying him were four old men. These four old men all possessed the bodies of men and the faces of beasts. While their appearances were frightening, their auras were even more terrifying. They were all rank four Martial Emperors. Likely, they were the elders of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts.

The vestiges of having lived for a very long time were present on their bodies. Likely, the four of them had lived for over ten thousand years.

Yaojiao Guang looked to the people from the War Faction and shouted, “Who allowed you all to enter this place? This is the Distinguished Guest Palace Hall. No one is allowed to enter here without my permission. All of you, scram!”

The people from the War Faction did not dare to talk back. One by one, they respectfully bowed to Yaojiao Guang and the four elders and then hurriedly left.

Even Yaojiao Xueran, whose left cheek was extremely swollen right now, did not dare to stay. Like the others, he hurriedly left. From this, it could be seen that while their War Faction was soon to win power, they were still extremely afraid of Yaojiao Guang.

“All of you, stay here. There is no need to leave,” However, before Yaojiao Xueran and the others were able to leave the Distinguished Guest Palace Hall, a middle-aged man walked in.

This man was three meters tall, and possessed a very robust build. He looked like a small giant. As he walked into the palace hall with large strides, he appeared to be very imposing.

He possessed a pair of crimson eyes. Those were a beast’s eyes. Like Yaojiao Guang, he was also a rank three Martial Emperor.

“Yaojiao Guang, you have truly become promising. While

humans are allowed to enter the territory of our King Monstrous Dragon Race, our own clansmen are not allowed to enter. What sort of logic is this?" After that man entered, he actually began to lash out at Yaojiao Guang.

Chu Feng noticed that after that man arrived, the people from the War Faction all grew confident. Even without thinking about it, Chu Feng knew that this man should be the leader of the War Faction, that Yaojiao Xueran's father.

"Yaojiao Ba, who gave you the courage to speak to me in such a manner?" Yaojiao Guang asked coldly.

"Heh, Lord Clan Chief, you are truly awe-inspiring. However, you seem to have forgotten that your time as the Clan Chief is already up. It is merely that you are dragging this on by refusing to abdicate," Yaojiao Ba mocked.

"Impudent!" Yaojiao Guang was immediately angered.

"Enough. Both of you, exercise restraint. To act like this before guests, do you not fear being laughed at?" One of the four elders spoke.

Hearing that elder's voice, Chu Feng's heart was moved. From his voice, Chu Feng was able to determine that he should have been the black-cloaked man who had saved them from the Gong Ba Plains.

"Brother Tinglei, what is that elder's name?" Chu Feng secretly asked Yaojiao Tinglei.

"He is Elder He. The person that saved you all that day should be his greatness. The person beside Elder He is Elder Shan. The two of them are from our Peace Faction. That is why they are willing to help us."

"As for the other two elders, they are from the War Faction and have been pressuring us with the rules the entire time. They had been urging my father to abdicate practically everyday. They want

Yaojiao Xueran to immediately succeed as the next Clan Chief so that the War Faction can gain control,” Yaojiao Tinglei walked over to Chu Feng and secretly said those words to him.

“Weren’t the elders not supposed to intervene in this sort of thing?” Chu Feng asked in a puzzled manner.

“Not intervene? How could that be possible? They all long for their own offspring to grasp power,” Yaojiao Tinglei seemed to feel extremely discontented with the two War Faction’s elders.

An elder from the War Faction arrived before Chu Feng and asked, “Are you that Chu Feng, that boy who has done all sorts of evil atrocities and is wanted by the Four Clans?” His gaze was gloomy, cold and filled with ill intentions.

“Buzz~~~”

When that man spoke, Chu Feng was startled. He felt an invisible yet bone-chilling aura engulfing his entire body, trying to freeze his soul.

It was spirit suppression. That War Faction’s elder was actually secretly using spirit suppression on Chu Feng.

Chapter 1821 – Internal Strife

Spirit suppression was not spirit power. Instead, it was a method to attack another's spirit.

While this sort of method would not directly cause injury to a person's body, it was capable of defeating another's spirit, and might cause them to crumble or even go insane.

As for right now, the spirit suppression that War Faction's elder was using on Chu Feng was a very powerful sort.

His intention was very clear. Even if Chu Feng didn't go insane, he still wanted Chu Feng to crumble. He was oppressing Chu Feng via his spirit.

There was neither hatred nor grievance between them. Yet, this War Faction's elder was actually using such a malicious attack on Chu Feng. From this, it could be seen how ruthless that elder was.

That said, while this sort of method would be capable of being used on other people from the younger generation, it was completely useless against Chu Feng. As for the reason why, it was none other than the fact that Chu Feng's strongest aspect was his spirit power.

“Mn?”

Seeing that Chu Feng's expression remained completely unchanged even though he was already using his strongest spirit suppression, that War Faction's elder's expression changed to one of surprise.

“Senior, I am indeed Chu Feng. However, I think you are mistaken about one thing. I have never committed any atrocious crimes. Senior, what might you mean by those words?” Chu Feng asked in a calm manner. He did not expose the malicious conduct of that elder. It was as if nothing was happening.

The reason why Chu Feng acted in such a manner was because he

had no other option. If he were to publicly expose that elder attacking him with spirit suppression, that elder would definitely not admit to it. Instead, he would bite back at Chu Feng and make him suffer great consequences.

“The atrocities you’ve committed are known to everyone,” The War Faction’s elder said.

“Known to everyone? Those are merely rumors. Senior, you have not seen them yourself, yet you have already declared that this junior has committed atrocious crimes. Senior, you have truly wronged this junior.”

“Or, could it be that senior is a person that believes rumors to be true?” Chu Feng asked.

“Humph,” Hearing those words, the elder started to frown, and then snorted coldly. Evidently, he had not expected Chu Feng to dare to talk back to him in such a manner in their territory.

However, he did not continue to bicker with Chu Feng. Instead, he turned around and said, “This Chu Feng gives off the impression of a bandit. He is simply not someone who can be trusted. We absolutely cannot allow someone like him to enter Lord Dragon King’s Tomb.”

“Lord Elder, you already agreed earlier that should I be able to invite Chu Feng here, he will be allowed to enter Lord Dragon King’s Tomb with Tingyu to attempt to obtain the inheritance. Why would you now...” Hearing those words, Yaojiao Guang became anxious. After all, this matter was extremely important.

“That was then, this is now. Back then, Tingyu’s health was good. At that time, we could indeed give it a try.”

“However, Tingyu was shortsighted, and only sought after instant benefits. After Lord Dragon King’s Tomb was opened, she entered Lord Dragon King’s Tomb by herself, and immersed herself in the Inheritance Pond for a total of sixteen hours. This led

to her body growing weak, and her losing consciousness and receiving a backlash from the Inheritance Pond.”

“Although she managed to regain consciousness, her health is still extremely weak. If she is to enter the Inheritance Pond again, she will undoubtedly be courting death,” The War Faction’s elder said.

“Lord Elder, thank you for your concern. However, Tingyu is still capable,” Right at this moment, a beautiful female figure walked in from the palace’s entrance. This woman possessed a very beautiful appearance. However, she was a monstrous beast. Naturally, she was Yaojiao Tingyu.

“Tingyu pays her respects to the elders, father and seniors,” Yaojiao Tingyu courteously greeted the crowd. Then, she arrived before Chu Feng.

With joy and surprise, she observed Chu Feng and then said, “Young master Chu Feng, we finally meet again.”

“It is my pleasure to meet you again, Princess Tingyu,” Chu Feng replied courteously.

“Young master Chu Feng is truly amazing. I still remember that you were only a Martial King back on the Immortal Island. At that time, I was a rank three Half Martial Emperor. Seeing you again today, I have become a rank five Martial Emperor. Yet, you’re already a rank seven Martial Emperor. How am I to tolerate this?”

“Princess Tingyu, if you are to say it like this, I, Chu Feng, will feel truly ashamed,” Chu Feng was able to tell that Yaojiao Tingyu was joking around, and not mocking him in the slightest. Thus, he was not angry either.

“Tingyu, your complexion is still not very well. The way you are now, you should be unable to enter the Inheritance Pond, right?”

“Tingyu, you are, after all, the only person among our King Monstrous Dragon Race who is capable of entering the Inheritance

Pond. With your talent, you will be able to obtain the inheritance sooner or later. Why must you insist on being impatient?" The War Faction's elder asked.

"Lord Elder, what if I am to say that I want to become our King Monstrous Dragon Race's Clan Chief?" Yaojiao Tingyu asked in return.

"This..." The War Faction's elders, as well as the people from the War Faction, were all startled. None of them had expected that Yaojiao Tingyu would speak this bluntly.

"If I am able to obtain Lord Dragon King's inheritance in the future, say, will I become the Clan Chief then, or not?"

"Could it be that, even after obtaining Lord Dragon King's bloodline, I will still not be qualified to become the Clan Chief?" Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

"This..." The War Faction's elders did not know how to respond. Beast Emperor Black Dragon King was the pride of their King Monstrous Dragon Race. Who would dare to disrespect him?

Furthermore, at that time, the Beast Emperor Black Dragon King had been part of the Peace Faction. Even though the War Faction had controlled the position of the Clan Chief at that time, the elders had decided to make an exception, and have the Black Dragon King become the Clan Chief instead.

Merely, the Black Dragon King refused their proposal. Although he did not take on the position of Clan Chief, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were all led by him at that time. Even the elders were extremely respectful toward him.

"I only plan to try this one last time. Whether or not I'll succeed will all depend on this time. If I am to fail, I will no longer set foot into the Inheritance Pond ever again," Yaojiao Tingyu said.

"Tingyu, what are you saying?" Hearing those words, Yaojiao Guang was startled.

“Father, please forgive your daughter for being incompetent. My talent is truly insufficient. I am incapable of succeeding Lord Dragon King’s inheritance. If I am to fail even with Chu Feng’s help, I believe that I will never be able to succeed in the future,” Yaojiao Tingyu said with a serious expression on her face.

Yaojiao Guang sighed a deep sigh. When even Yaojiao Tingyu was saying it like this, what could he possibly do?

Seeing Yaojiao Tingyu’s determined expression, the War Faction’s elders, as well as the people from the War Faction, all revealed cheerful expressions. Actually, none of them wished for Yaojiao Tingyu to be able to obtain the Lord Dragon King’s inheritance.

The reason for that was because they had heard from their seniors that when the Lord Dragon King was alive, their War Faction had been left in a very tragic state. They had been miserably suppressed. While it was not the Black Dragon King who had suppressed them, the people from the Peace Faction had relied on the fact that they possessed the backing of the Black Dragon King to miserably suppress them. To the War Faction, that period of time was extremely dark.

Although they knew that it would be beneficial to their King Monstrous Dragon Race as a whole should Yaojiao Tingyu obtain Black Dragon King’s inheritance, due to the fact that they possessed selfish desires, they did not wish for Yaojiao Tingyu to obtain the inheritance.

As long as Yaojiao Tingyu stopped stepping foot into the Inheritance Pond, she would not have the opportunity to obtain the Black Dragon King’s inheritance. Naturally, they would be joyous upon hearing this matter.

“Lord Elders, please rest assured. Although I, Yaojiao Tingyu, am young, I am always one who holds my words with enormous weight, and never goes back on them. I am serious about this

matter,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“This...” The expression of that War Faction’s elder grew ugly. He was able to tell that Yaojiao Tingyu was secretly mocking them.

“Since Tingyu insists on doing this, let’s let her give it a try. Merely, I am still suspicious of that human brat. Someone must go and watch over him,” The other elder from the War Faction said.

“Lord Elder, this junior is willing to watch over him,” People from the War Faction began to volunteer.

“Lord Elder, we are also willing to watch over him,” Immediately afterward, the people from the Peace Faction also volunteered.

“You, you and you. The three of you shall do it,” The War Faction’s elder pointed out two rank one Martial Emperors and a rank two Martial Emperor.

Seeing this, Yaojiao Guang started to frown. The reason for that was because the three people that the War Faction’s elder pointed out were all people from the War Faction.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt quite helpless. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were not weak at all. However, their internal strife was extremely fierce. If they were unable to work together, how could they face foreign enemies?

Chapter 1822 – Conspiracy

“Elder He, the War Faction has always viewed the humans as enemies. If the people accompanying them are all from the War Faction, I fear that some sort of misunderstanding might happen in Lord Dragon King’s tomb. Thus, I feel we should have the people from our Peace Faction go instead,” Yaojiao Guang said to Elder He.

“Yaojiao Guang, what are you implying by that? Are you suspicious of me?” That War Faction’s elder said in a very displeased manner.

“I believe that is not what Yaojiao Guang is implying. Merely, it is a fact that the War Faction views humans as enemies. Could it be that you are not certain of that?” Elder He said.

“Very well. You go too,” That War Faction’s elder pointed at a Peace Faction’s King Monstrous Dragon Beast. Then, he looked to Yaojiao Guang and said, “That should be fine now, no?”

“Naturally,” Actually, Yaojiao Guang was still dissatisfied. After all, the people dispatched from the War Faction were a rank two Martial Emperor and two rank one Martial Emperors. However, as for their Peace Faction, it was only a single rank one Martial Emperor.

If something were to truly happen, their Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor would simply not be able to do anything. However, it remained that the opposing party was an elder, whereas he was a Clan Chief in name only. As such, he possessed no authority anymore, and had no choice but to accept this.

“It’s decided then. Early tomorrow morning, we will open the Dragon King’s Tomb. Yaojiao Guang, Yaojiao Ba, the two of you must come as well,” The War Faction’s elder said. Afterward, he did not say anything else.

It was only later that Chu Feng found out that the Dragon King's Tomb would only open by itself on a specific date every year. At other times, it would remain closed.

If one wished to open it, it could only be accomplished through a single method. That is, through the use of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's bloodline. Merely, it was very strenuous to open the tomb using this method. Thus, every single time they opened the tomb, they would need the elders, Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Ba to work together on opening it.

Upon thinking about how he would enter the grand Beast Emperor's tomb, Chu Feng felt extremely excited. However, he was unaware about a conspiracy centered around him that was secretly being plotted...

In Yaojiao Ba, the leader of the War Faction's, palace hall. The three King Monstrous Dragon Beast Martial Emperors who had been selected by the War Faction's elder to accompany Yaojiao Tingyu and Chu Feng tomorrow were all present. Yaojiao Xueran was also present.

"Tomorrow, after entering the tomb, eliminate Chu Feng," Yaojiao Ba said.

"Milord, I'm afraid that's not very good, no? No matter what, that Chu Feng is our King Monstrous Dragon Race's guest. Even if we dislike him, to kill him in our territory will inevitably be bad..." Hearing Yaojiao Ba's command, the three Martial Emperors were all startled.

"What's not good about it? Lord Dragon King is the great secret of our King Monstrous Dragon Beasts that cannot be allowed to be known by outsiders. Else, it will lead to disaster."

"And now, three outsiders know about this matter. Who can guarantee that they will not spread news of it?" Yaojiao Ba said.

"But, even if we eliminate Chu Feng, there's still those two other

humans,” A rank one Martial Emperor said in a puzzled manner.

“As long as Chu Feng is eliminated, I naturally have the means to make those two humans die here too,” Yaojiao Ba said.

“But, Princess Tingyu is also going. She will definitely be right next to Chu Feng. We fear that we will not have the opportunity to kill him,” Another said.

“Must I teach you how to deal with even this sort of thing?” As Yaojiao Ba said those words, a trace of ruthlessness flashed through his eyes.

“Milord, your intention, could it be?” At this moment, those three Martial Emperors all revealed alarmed expressions.

“What’s there to be afraid of? The rule of the King Monstrous Dragon Race will sooner or later be ours. While the humans are a threat, Yaojiao Tingyu is also a threat. Seize this opportunity to eliminate this threat. Only then will our War Faction be able to firmly grasp our rule for the next eight thousand years,” Yaojiao Ba said.

“Milord, this...”

After hearing those words, those three Martial Emperors looked to one another. They were hesitant.

Although the Peace Faction and the War Faction had fought for several tens of thousands of years, they had never killed one another.

Furthermore, Yaojiao Tingyu was a rare genius of their King Monstrous Dragon Race. She might even be able to bring their King Monstrous Dragon Race to a whole new altitude. As such, Yaojiao Ba’s command to have them kill Yaojiao Tingyu was extremely difficult to accept.

“Has our War Faction not been suppressed enough by the Peace Faction for the past eight thousand years?”

“Are we to continue living as nobodies for the next eight thousand years after being suppressed for the past eight thousand years?”

“The elders are all very old. At the very most, they can live for another thousand years. After a thousand years, what sort of cultivation will Yaojiao Tingyu have? Can you all possibly imagine that? At that time, perhaps even I will be inferior to her. If she wanted to seize the position of Clan Chief then, who could possibly stop her?”

“Even if she doesn’t seize the position of Clan Chief, if she becomes the strongest person in our King Monstrous Dragon Race, even though Xueran might be the Clan Chief, she will be the one with the absolute authority.”

“Thus, it is only by eliminating Yaojiao Tingyu that Xueran will be able to firmly sit in the position of Clan Chief,” Yaojiao Ba said.

At this moment, the three Martial Emperors were swayed. They took a look at Yaojiao Xueran. Then, that rank two Martial Emperor knelt onto the ground, “For the sake of the War Faction’s honor, for the sake of our race’s future, I am willing to follow Milord’s command.” Immediately following him, the other two Martial Emperors also knelt onto the ground.

“Although we must eliminate them, we must still have an actual plan as to how to do so. Xueran, you will join them too. Then, find an opportunity to lure them to this place and rouse the Underworld Fire Bugs as per the methods written on this map.”

“It would be for the best if you are able to eliminate them with the Underworld Fire Bugs. After they are eliminated, come back out and say that Chu Feng triggered the Underworld Fire Bugs and caused Yaojiao Tingyu to die in there.”

“After knowing about this matter, the elders will definitely be enraged. At that time, those two other humans will definitely not be able to live either,” Yaojiao Ba handed a map to Yaojiao Xueran.

“Underworld Fire Bugs? Father, isn’t that a kind of very ferocious bug from the Ancient Era? If one is to be hit by the flames that they release, even Martial Emperors will be burned to ashes.”

“Although the Underworld Fire Bugs in Lord Dragon King’s tomb were refined by Lord Dragon King, it remains that they possess boundless power. If they are to be released, then we...” Yaojiao Xueran had a panic-stricken expression.

Not to mention him, at this moment, the three Martial Emperor’s complexions had also turned green. They were feeling extremely uneasy.

The tomb of their Lord Dragon King was not only an Emperor’s Tomb, it was much more frightening than an ordinary Emperor’s Tomb. Even though they were the descendants of their Lord Dragon King, they would still not dare to touch many of the mechanisms and traps in the tomb.

“What’s there to panic over?” Yaojiao Ba took a fierce glance at Yaojiao Xueran. Then, he said, “Carry this talisman paper with you and place it on your chest. After the mechanism has been triggered, the Underworld Fire Bugs will not attack you all.”

As Yaojiao Ba spoke, he handed four green talisman papers to Yaojiao Xueran and the other three Martial Emperors.

Yaojiao Xueran and the three Martial Emperors immediately placed the talisman papers onto their chests. Then, they bowed respectfully and said, “We will definitely not disappoint you.”

The next day. Chu Feng and the others arrived before the Beast Emperor Black Dragon King’s Tomb very early in the morning.

The Black Dragon King’s Tomb was hidden in a very deep location. Furthermore, it was tightly defended. On their way here, they had passed by countless spirit formations. Without the keys to those spirit formations, one would simply not be able to pass

through them.

From this, it could be seen that this Black Dragon King's Tomb was most definitely an extremely forbidden area in the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's territory.

At this moment, Chu Feng and the others were in an open space deep in the mountain range. Forests surrounded them in all directions. Underbrush covered their feet. However, Chu Feng knew that the Black Dragon King's Tomb was right underneath his feet.

"I'm finally able to enter an Emperor's Tomb again. I wonder, this Beast Emperor's Tomb, when compared to Emperor Qing's Tomb, which one would be stronger?" Eggy said excitedly.

"Emperor Qing's Tomb is not completely open yet. At the very least, we are still unable to open that Imperial Armament gate. Thus, I'm afraid that it would be very difficult to compare the two of them," Chu Feng said.

"That's true. However, I feel that Emperor Qing's Tomb is even more powerful," Eggy said.

Right at this moment, Yaojiao Xueran stepped forward and said, "Lord Elders, it is very rare and difficult for Lord Dragon King's tomb to be opened. Xueran also wishes to use this opportunity to enter the Inheritance Pond. I wish to see whether or not the current me is capable of entering it,"

"Very well, go ahead," The four elders all nodded.

Seeing that the elders had agreed to it, Yaojiao Xueran was unable to help himself from taking a glance at Chu Feng. There was a strangeness to his gaze. Although his glance flashed past Chu Feng quickly, he still noticed it.

"Something's fishy about that Yaojiao Xueran," Chu Feng said in his heart.

When Chu Feng discovered Yaojiao Xueran's strange gaze, he

immediately observed him with his Heaven's Eyes, and discovered something strange about Yaojiao Xueran.

“What's fishy?” Eggy asked.

“Look at his chest. There's a talisman paper on it. That talisman paper is an Insect Avoidance Talisman that is capable of helping one avoid powerful poisonous insects. Furthermore, the Insect Avoidance Talisman on his chest is an extremely high level one. It is something created by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said.

“Indeed, it is an Insect Avoidance Talisman. He didn't have that on him yesterday; why would that suddenly appear on him today?” Eggy shared Chu Feng's line of sight. Thus, she also discovered the Insect Avoidance Talisman.

“This is abnormal! It's not only him, the War Faction's three Martial Emperors also have Insect Avoidance Talismans on them. They are all people who are to enter the Black Dragon King's Tomb alongside me.”

“Furthermore, Yaojiao Tingyu and that man from the Peace Faction do not have Insect Avoidance Talismans on them,” After discovering that something was amiss, Chu Feng began to inspect everyone with his Heaven's Eyes. It was only then that he discovered that this was no small matter, and not something that had happened by chance.

“Damned bastards! They most definitely have something planned. More than likely, they are planning to harm you,” Eggy realized their plot.

Chapter 1823 – Beating Someone At Their Own Game

“Chu Feng, take advantage of the fact that the tomb is hasn’t been opened yet to expose their evil conduct,” Eggy said.

“I’m afraid it’ll be useless. They’ve merely placed Insect Avoidance Talismans on their bodies, and have not actually done anything. Even if I am to reveal that they have them on them, what difference would it possibly make?” Chu Feng said.

“What do we do then? Are we to allow them to plot against you?” Eggy asked.

“The way I see it, there is most definitely some sort of powerful insect in the tomb. They are planning to have that insect kill me.”

“If that is the case, I will beat them at their own game. Eggy, do you still remember that I obtained both Insect Avoidance Talismans and Insect Luring Talismans from White-browed Immortal?” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, I understand now. You’re planning to give them a taste of their own medicine, you plan to use the Insect Luring Talismans to undo the Insect Avoidance Talismans after they release the insects so that they can suffer the consequences of their actions and be attacked by the insects,” Eggy came to a sudden realization.

“Precisely,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, good, good. Only you can think of such a rotten idea. It’s decided then,” Eggy was extremely happy.

Meanwhile, the four King Monstrous Dragon Beast elders, Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Ba had sat cross-legged onto the ground. They were using their bloodline’s power to open the Black Dragon King’s Tomb.

It required some time to open the tomb. As they were opening

the tomb, Chu Feng brought Yaojiao Tingyu to a concealed corner.

“Young master Chu Feng, what is the matter?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“To be addressed as young master is too courteous. You can just address me as Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, you don’t have to address me as princess either. Just address me as Tingyu,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Sure,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he secretly handed two Insect Avoidance Talismans to Yaojiao Tingyu and said through voice transmission, “Put one on your chest and give the other to your Peace Faction’s senior and have him place it on his chest too.”

“What are these?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“It’s nothing. They’re just a precaution. Just do as I say,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay,” Yaojiao Tingyu agreed. She held a lot of trust in Chu Feng.

While it was one thing for her to trust him, Chu Feng never expected for Yaojiao Tingyu to undo her clothes before him with the intention of placing the Insect Avoidance Talisman on her chest.

“Cough, cough...” Seeing this, Chu Feng was stunned. He hurriedly coughed to call to Yaojiao Tingyu’s attention to the fact that she was a female and he was a male.

“What’s wrong?” However, Yaojiao Tingyu acted as if she didn’t understand him and continued to remove her clothes.

“Eh... it, it’s nothing,” Seeing that Yaojiao Tingyu had already revealed her snow-white skin, Chu Feng hurriedly turned around and closed his eyes. As Yaojiao Tingyu was unreserved, he could only choose to not look at her.

“Boy, why are you acting this foolishly? That girl is doing that

deliberately. She's trying to seduce you. To not look at her, isn't this a waste? Why did you decide to not look?" Eggy asked in a disappointed manner.

"Regardless of whether or not she is doing that deliberately, if I am to look, I would be taking advantage of her. I cannot take advantage of her," Chu Feng said.

"Haha, I was merely teasing you. Never would I have expected you to be a man of honor," Right at this moment, a soft and lily-white hand landed on Chu Feng's back.

Turning around, Chu Feng discovered that Yaojiao Tingyu was looking at him with a beaming smile. Not only that, her clothes were all back in order now.

"Fortunately I am a man of honor. Else, you'd have been defiled," Chu Feng said.

"Do you not fear that I will reveal my true appearance?" Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

"Gulp~~~" Chu Feng was so startled that he gulped down a mouthful of saliva. True appearance? She was a monstrous dragon beast. Chu Feng did not dare to think any further about it.

"Haha, look how scared you are," Yaojiao Tingyu covered her little mouth and laughed joyously.

"Don't disclose the Insect Avoidance Talismans. It would be best if only the three of us know about this," Chu Feng immediately shifted the topic.

"Rest assured. I, Yaojiao Tingyu, am not a fool," Yaojiao Tingyu smiled sweetly. Her appearance was truly fascinating. They all say that when monstrous beasts changed their forms to those of female human women, they would be much more charming than actual female human women. Today, Chu Feng had experienced it.

Afterward, Yaojiao Tingyu found a way to hand the other Insect Avoidance Talisman to the rank one Martial Emperor from the

Peace Faction. Although he did not understand what was happening, he still did as Yaojiao Tingyu said and found an opportunity to place the Insect Avoidance Talisman onto his chest.

“Rumble~~~”

After some time passed, rumbles began to sound from underneath their feet. The underbrush split open, and an entrance appeared before them.

“Go on in,” The three Martial Emperors from the War Faction and Yaojiao Xueran entered first.

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” Following them, Chu Feng, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Martial Emperor from the Peace Faction also entered.

As Chu Feng and the others disappeared before their gazes, Baili Xuankong started to frown. He was worried for Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, with the attitude of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, even if he wished to accompany Chu Feng, it would most definitely be refused. As such, he could only worry on helplessly out here.

“This place is truly worthy of being the Black Dragon King’s Tomb,” After entering the tomb, Chu Feng began to gasp with admiration. Ignoring the spirit formations, mechanisms and traps present here, merely the sensation this place gave off was already extraordinary.

Other than the sensation of impressiveness, each and every corner of this place gave off a sort of oppression.

“Chu Feng, Lord Dragon King’s Tomb is like a maze that is filled with mechanisms and traps. The paths are extremely complex and crisscross with one another. If one is to take a wrong step, one will undoubtedly die.”

“We only know of a single path that can safely bring us to the Inheritance Pond. Other than that path, the people from our King Monstrous Dragon Race also do not dare to walk about this place

randomly. Thus, you must follow us and not go anywhere else,” Yaojiao Tingyu warned with a low voice.

“Got it,” Chu Feng actually wanted to explore the tomb. He wished to see exactly what the Black Dragon King’s Tomb was like. Perhaps he might even be able to obtain some unexpected harvest. However, since Yaojiao Tingyu had already mentioned it like this, he would naturally do as she said. After all, as a guest, he could not refuse to give the master of this place face.

“While I will follow the path, will they?” Chu Feng took a glance at Yaojiao Xueran and the others. A cold smile emerged on his face.

Chu Feng was practically certain that Yaojiao Xueran was planning to harm him. However, if they were to follow the safe path the entire time, there would be no way for him to harm him. Thus, if they wished to harm him, they would definitely have to stir up troubles.

As for Chu Feng, he actually looked forward to Yaojiao Xueran stirring up trouble. After all, only by him stirring up trouble would Chu Feng have the opportunity and justification to take care of him.

“Ta~~~”

Suddenly, Yaojiao Xueran and the others stopped. The reason for that was because three different paths had appeared before them.

“Take the right path,” Yaojiao Tingyu stepped forward and said.

“Seniors, I’ve heard my father say that the left path leads to a side palace hall with a lot of stone carvings. These stone carvings show Lord Dragon Emperor’s different appearances from his youth to his old age. I wish to go and have a look at the heroic appearance of Lord Dragon Emperor,” Yaojiao Xueran said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to smile coldly in his heart. Sure enough, this Yaojiao Xueran was going to make his move.

“No, the elders have said that we cannot take any path other than the one that leads to the Inheritance Pond. Else, if we are to trigger mechanisms and traps, who shall take responsibility for that?” Yaojiao Tingyu flatly refused.

“Lil sis Tingyu, do you not wish to see Lord Dragon King’s heroic appearance? You must know that those sculptures were those of his appearance from his youth to his old age,” Yaojiao Xueran enticed.

“Tingyu, there would be no harm in going there. Lord Ba has been there before. There are no dangers there,” The War Faction’s rank two Martial Emperor urged.

Hearing those words, Yaojiao Tingyu’s eyes started to flicker. She was also tempted. How could she not wish to look at the heroic appearance of their Lord Dragon King throughout his years?

However, after carefully considering it, she still shook her head resolutely. She said, “Senior, I feel that we should abide by what the Lord Elders said.”

At this moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke. “Tingyu, I also wish to have a look at the Beast Emperor’s heroic appearance. Let’s just go and take a look, no?”

Yaojiao Xueran and the others were surprised by Chu Feng voicing his intention to go. None of them expected that Chu Feng would speak on their behalf.

However, upon thinking about it, the corners of Yaojiao Xueran’s mouth lifted into a mocking smile. He thought to himself, ‘While that Chu Feng’s talent is exceptional, he is a fool to the core. I don’t even have to push him down the pit of fire that I’ve dug for him. Instead, he has decided to jump into it himself. Even if you are to die, you deserve it.’

Chapter 1824 – Digging One’s Own Grave

As a result, Yaojiao Xueran did not take a different position from Chu Feng. Instead, he tried his best to go along with Chu Feng, “Right, right, right. Lil sis Tingyu, Brother Chu Feng is our guest. When even our guest has made a request, you should stop refusing.”

“This... okay then,” After a moment of hesitation, Yaojiao Tingyu finally agreed to it reluctantly.

Thus, Chu Feng and the others entered the left path and the side palace hall while being led by Yaojiao Xueran.

The side palace hall was splendorous and majestic. This was especially true for the walls. They gave off a sense of brilliance from a single glance. It was as if there were valuable treasures hidden inside. It was extremely captivating.

How could this possibly be a simple side palace? It was simply a treasury.

However, Chu Feng was already able to tell that the walls that seemed to contain treasures were actually bait. It should be a mechanism. As long as someone touched the wall, they would definitely be met with a great catastrophe.

Chu Feng felt that should the mechanism be triggered, there would definitely be poisonous insects released. Thus, after he entered this place, he stood by the entrance with a smile on his face as he looked to Yaojiao Xueran and the others walking deeper into the palace hall. He did not say anything.

When Yaojiao Tingyu saw how gorgeous the palace hall was, but also saw that there were no sculptures of the Lord Dragon King, she also felt that something was amiss. Along with that Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor, she stood by the entrance beside Chu Feng and did not enter deeper into the palace hall.

“Yaojiao Xueren, there are simply no sculptures of Lord Dragon King here. I think your father was mistaken. Let’s return,” Yaojiao Tingyu said. The tone that she spoke with contained a trace of anger. She knew that she had been deceived.

“I might be mistaken. However, these walls are truly gorgeous,” Upon saying those words, Yaojiao Xueran’s eyes revealed an ominous glint. Then, he suddenly shot a palm strike forward. His martial power formed a golden-bright and dazzling giant fist. With a ‘boom,’ that fist landed on the wall.

“Bang~~~”

The walls crumbled instantly. Then, a magma-like substance began to erupt from the walls on all sides. In an instant, they submerged Chu Feng and the others.

“Yaojiao Xueran, what are you doing?” At this moment, Yaojiao Tingyu started to panic. She had discovered that the red substance was not magma. Rather, it was made up of densely-packed red insects.

Those insects were very small. However, a very frightening power was contained in their blazing bodies.

“Haha, what am I doing? I’m going to take your lives,” Yaojiao Xueran burst into loud laughter. At this time, he was no longer concealing anything, and had revealed his fangs.

“What? You want to take our lives? You’ve done this deliberately! You are deliberately trying to harm us!” Yaojiao Tingyu revealed an expression of shock. The Martial Emperor from the Peace Faction beside her had the same expression as her.

The two of them both knew that Yaojiao Xueran was a dishonorable person. However, they had never expected for him to want to kill them. To kill a fellow clansman was an enormous taboo to their King Monstrous Dragon Race.

“That’s right, you are correct. I am planning to kill you all. But,

so what if you all are to know about it? Soon, you will be burned to ashes by the Underworld Fire Bugs. You will be utterly killed. Hahaha,” Yaojiao Xueran revealed a malevolent expression and began to laugh frantically.

“Are you sure you’re not joking? These bugs are capable of killing us? They are simply not a threat at all, no?” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and grabbed a bunch of Underworld Fire Bugs. Not only was he playing around with the bugs, he was even pinching them.

In fact, some of the bugs were crushed by Chu Feng’s pinching and turned into liquid flames that roamed around Chu Feng’s hand. However, they were not able to harm Chu Feng in the slightest.

“How could this be?!” Yaojiao Xueran was dumbstruck by this scene.

Not only were the legendary extremely ferocious Underworld Fire Bugs not attacking Chu Feng, they were also allowing him to trample upon them. Exactly what sort of situation was this?

Could it be that the vicious reputation of the Underworld Fire bugs was fake?

“Why would it be like this? Could it be that these Underworld Fire Bugs are fake?” A rank one Martial Emperor from the War Faction also raised his hand and grabbed a bunch of Underworld Fire Bugs and began to pinch them like Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

Once he started to pinch the bugs, they began to explode in succession. In an instant, the exploding Underworld Fire Bugs turned into scalding liquid flames that spurted everywhere. In an instant, that rank one Martial Emperor was engulfed by the liquid flames.

“Ahh!!!”

His screams began to resonate through the palace. As his screams were so heart-tearing and lung-splittingly loud, it caused even the other Underworld Fire Bugs in the surrounding to emit ear-piercing sounds. They had been agitated, and were now emitting overflowing killing intent.

“Are you a fool or what? Why did you pinch them?” At this moment, that rank two Martial Emperor was enraged. As he shouted at that rank one Martial Emperor covered with flames, he moved in front of Yaojiao Xueran to protect him.

That rank one Martial Emperor did not scream for long. Soon, he turned into magma-like liquid flames and was dissolved among the numerous Underworld Fire Bugs.

“He’s not the fool. Rather, you all are the fools. Trying to plot against me, Chu Feng? You should determine whether you have the ability to do so first,” At this moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

“So it’s you!” At this moment, Yaojiao Xueran discovered that Chu Feng, Yaojiao Tingyu and that Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor had escaped the encirclement of the Underworld Fire Bugs amidst the chaos.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was smiling and looking at them with a gaze filled with contempt. His appearance was as if he were looking at a bunch of fools.

“Senior, kill him! Kill them!” After the sudden realization, Yaojiao Xueran shouted in anger.

“Haah!!!” That rank two Martial Emperor did not hesitate. With a thought, boundless martial power began to surge toward Chu Feng and the others.

Although his martial power was formless, it remained that he was a rank two Martial Emperor. Thus, the strength of his martial power was extremely terrifying.

“Bang, bang~~~”

However, right after his martial power surged forth, two explosions sounded from beside him. After the explosions sounded, an invisible power started to spread.

“Ji, ji, ji, ji, ji~~”

The very next moment, it was as if the Underworld Fire Bugs had received a command. Fiery columns of flame not only blocked that rank two Martial Emperor’s attack, they were also shooting toward Yaojiao Xueran and the two War Faction’s Martial Emperors to kill them.

“Ahhh!!! Save me, save me!!!”

The other War Faction’s rank one Martial Emperor was caught off guard and hit by many columns of flame. Like the rank one Martial Emperor before him, the locations on his body that were hit began to turn into magma-like liquid flames that spread through his entire body. With his body and his source energy being destroyed, that rank one Martial Emperor began to scream in miserable pain.

“Chu Feng, what did you do? Exactly what did you do?!” Yaojiao Xueran was shocked, afraid and angry as he shouted at Chu Feng.

“What did I do? I merely undid the Insect Avoidance Talismans on your bodies. You wish to plot against me? You all were simply digging your own graves,” Chu Feng said.

“What? You knew? You knew all about it?” Hearing those words, Yaojiao Xueran stood there stunned.

Originally, he had thought that Chu Feng was extremely stupid. It was only now that he discovered that Chu Feng had already seen through everything, and also found a way to take care of them.

It turned out that Chu Feng was not the fool. Rather, it was them. They were the actual fools. They were so foolish that they had been toyed around with in Chu Feng’s palm the entire time

and didn't even know about it.

“Chu Feng, I will tear your skin and flesh off while you're still alive! I will pull out your tendons and drink your blood!!!” After that rank two Martial Emperor realized that he had been fooled, he began to shout angrily.

His voice was extremely ear-piercing. It surpassed the sound of ten thousand bears. That was simply not the voice of a human. Rather, it was the roar of a King Monstrous Dragon Beast.

“You wish to kill me? You'll have to kill all these bugs first. However, are you able to kill all of them?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he turned to Yaojiao Tingyu and said, “These bugs have already been agitated. Likely, our Insect Avoidance Talismans will soon be useless too. Let's get far away from here so that we do not get involved with them.”

“Mn,” Yaojiao Tingyu nodded. Then, she turned around and began to lead Chu Feng out of that place. After experiencing this matter, she took Chu Feng's words to heart even more.

Chapter 1825 – Miraculous Inheritance Pond

“What utter bastards. They actually tried to assassinate the princess. I will go and report this to Lord Clan Chief right away,” After reaching safety, that Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor spoke angrily.

“Report? What use is there for you to go and report this now? You have absolutely no proof. How would they possibly trust you?”

“Furthermore, if you are to report this now, Yaojiao Ba will know that his son and his subordinates had been met with an ill fate. He will definitely propose coming in to save them.”

“For the sake of the greater good, the elders will definitely agree to let him come in here to save them. At that time, you reporting to them will be equivalent to saving Yaojiao Xueran and the others,” Chu Feng said.

“What do we do then? Are we to suffer this without being able to do anything?” That Martial Emperor was very unwilling to let the matter go.

“Suffer? Heh, that’s not necessarily the case. After they die, we can say whatever we want. After all, they will have no way to refute us,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s true. Chu Feng, you are truly clever,” Yaojiao Tingyu admired Chu Feng’s way of thinking.

At this moment, the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor’s eyes also shone. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng had become very different.

Although he did not have an enormous change in his behavior, there was a turbulent storm in his heart.

Not only did Chu Feng discover that Yaojiao Xueran and the others had wanted to harm them, he had also thought of a countermeasure right away. Furthermore, he had managed to successfully entrap Yaojiao Xueran and the others and obtain an impossible victory.

No matter what, there had been a rank two Martial Emperor among their opponents. If they were to truly fight, they would have been no match for him.

However, at this moment, that rank two Martial Emperor could only stay beside Yaojiao Xueran to protect him while struggling against the Underworld Fire Bugs himself and wait for death amidst pain and suffering.

Furthermore, even now, Chu Feng did not try to go out and report Yaojiao Xueran's wicked conduct out of impulse. Instead, he had considered all aspects. The things that he had done in such a short period of time could simply be said to be planned and done perfectly.

If Chu Feng was an old monster that had lived for ten thousand years, it would be understandable for his planning to have reached this degree. However, Chu Feng was a member of the younger generation that was not even thirty years old. He was someone that had lived for several thousand years less than him.

When comparing himself to Chu Feng, that Peace Faction's Martial Emperor felt that he had lived the past thousand years of his life in vain.

'That human brat's methods are truly fearful. Fortunately, he is a friend and not a foe. Else... I truly do not dare to imagine,' Thinking of this, that Peace Faction's Martial Emperor sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Fear actually emerged in his eyes as he looked to this person from the younger generation with a cultivation much weaker than his own.

"Chu Feng, in that case, where should we go now?" Yaojiao

Tingyu asked. She had decided to listen to Chu Feng and have him determine what they should do. Only by doing this would she feel safe.

“We’ll do what we came here for. Go to the Inheritance Pond,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” Yaojiao Tingyu revealed an expression of joy. After what had happened earlier, she was more confident in Chu Feng. She felt that her decision to rely on Chu Feng would have a high chance of success in obtaining the Lord Dragon King’s inheritance.

As the path toward the Inheritance Pond was a safe path, Chu Feng was unable to continue to see any more mechanisms left behind by the Black Dragon King.

While the path was very clear and safe, even with the speed at which Chu Feng and the others were walking, they were still unable to reach the Inheritance Pond after walking for two entire hours. From that, one could imagine how enormous this Emperor’s Tomb was.

“We should be arriving soon, no?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

“Yes, we’ll be arriving soon. However, it’s still some distance away. How did you know?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked curiously. She saw that Chu Feng didn’t seem to have said those words through mere guesses. Rather, it seemed that he was certain when he said them.

However, the walls of this place were capable of blocking spirit power. The observation methods of world spiritists would be extremely limited in this place. Regardless of how heaven-defying Chu Feng’s observation method might be, he should not be able to see the Inheritance Pond at this distance.

“I am faintly able to sense an aura that resembles you all. Merely, that aura is simply too powerful. It is much more powerful than your elders, and is simply incomparable. I think that aura should

be emitted by the Inheritance Pond,” Chu Feng said.

“Why is it that we can’t sense that?” Both Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor were shocked. Even though they were King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, they were unable to sense it. Yet, Chu Feng was able to sense it.

“Heh...” Chu Feng smiled lightly. He did not explain to them how he had sensed it. After all, something like this could not be explained. Perhaps this was the difference between their talents.

It would be unsuitable for Chu Feng to boast of his own talent before them because Chu Feng felt that he should maintain his modesty.

“Chu Feng, you are truly mystical. That said, I have a question I have wished to ask you the entire time,” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“Ask away,” Chu Feng said.

“Earlier, when you pinched apart those bugs, why were you fine? Yet, when Yaojiao Liuyi did that, he was burned?”

“Yaojiao Liuyi, is he that fool that died after pinching those bugs?” Chu Feng asked.

“That was him,” Yaojiao Tingyu nodded.

“The reason is simple; the ones I pinched apart were fake, whereas the ones he pinched apart were real,” Chu Feng said.

“Fake?” Both Yaojiao Tingyu and that Martial Emperor were startled.

“It’s a world spiritist’s cheap trick. If you all had observed them carefully, you would have been able to tell them apart. Merely, at that time, the situation was so intense that no one thought that I would make fake bugs,” As Chu Feng spoke, he spread his hands apart, and two palmfulls of Underworld Fire Bugs appeared in his hands.

Seeing those Underworld Fire Bugs, Yaojiao Tingyu and that

Martial Emperor subconsciously stepped back. Having seen the Underworld Fire Bugs already, they were extremely afraid of them.

“Don’t be scared, they’re fake,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, with a clench of his hands, he crushed the Underworld Fire Bugs in his hands.

After the Underworld Fire Bugs were crushed, they turned into liquid flames. However, when the liquid flames landed on Chu Feng’s hands, Chu Feng was not damaged in the slightest. Furthermore, not long afterward, those liquid flames turned into golden light and disappeared.

“They’re actually fake.”

At that moment, both Yaojiao Tingyu and that Martial Emperor were blushing with shame. Even though they had carefully observed Chu Feng’s Underworld Fire Bugs, they had been unable to discover that they were fake. Those fake Underworld Fire Bugs practically looked exactly the same as the real Underworld Fire Bugs.

Although they were monstrous beasts, they were, after all, the descendants of the Black Dragon King. Thus, they actually all possessed spirit power. On top of that, as they were cultivators, they possessed keen observation. Therefore, their perceptions were not weak at all. Yet, the Underworld Fire Bugs Chu Feng had formed through world spirit power had truly been something that they were unable to determine to be fake in a short period of time.

“Seems like we’re here,” Right at this moment, Chu Feng and the others stopped. Chu Feng was able to sense that the enormous Monstrous King Dragon Beast’s Bloodline’s aura was much more powerful.

Finally, Chu Feng and the others entered a spacious location. This place was extremely vast, and appeared like a world by itself.

However, Chu Feng’s gaze was completely attracted by a lake

before him.

That lake was no ordinary lake. It was so deep that the bottom could not be seen. Furthermore, the water was muddled in color, and a layer of special mist lingered over the water. The aura that Chu Feng felt was being emitted from this place. Likely, this was that Inheritance Pond. Merely, how could this possibly be considered to be a pond? It was simply a lake.

‘Strange, why is the aura that I felt moving about in the lake?’ Chu Feng felt that something was amiss. Thus, he used his Heaven’s Eyes to observe the lake.

‘What miraculousness,’ Upon observing the lake with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s eyes shone, and he revealed an expression of shock.

With his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to clearly see that there was an enormous shadow at the depths of this Inheritance Pond.

That enormous shadow was a Monstrous Dragon. It was close to a thousand meters long. It was extremely frightening. Although it was only a shadow, and not an actual Monstrous Dragon, it was the source of that aura.

Yaojiao Tingyu saw that Chu Feng was muttering to himself, and that his expression had changed. Thus, she asked curiously, “Chu Feng, did you discover something?”

Chu Feng raised his head, and discovered that not only was Yaojiao Tingyu looking at him with that gaze, even that Martial Emperor was looking at him with the same gaze.

Chu Feng pointed to the pond and asked, “Could it be that you all are unable to see it?”

“See what?” Yaojiao Tingyu and the Martial Emperor asked in unison.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?” Yaojiao Tingyu and the Martial Emperor became even more confused.

Chapter 1826 – Reappearance Of The Dragon King

“Chu Feng, what did you say?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“Tingyu, let me ask you this. After you entered into the Inheritance Pond, you were able to sense the Beast Emperor’s power, isn’t that right? Merely, that power cannot be sensed all the time. By comparison, the times when you don’t sense it are even more frequent,” Chu Feng said.

“How did you know?” Yaojiao Tingyu revealed an expression of astonishment. This was something that only she knew about, because she was the only one to have ever been able to set foot into the Inheritance Pond. As such, she was the only one who knew about the sensation one would feel in the Inheritance Pond.

“The Beast Emperor’s inheritance power does not fill the entire Inheritance Pond. Rather, it takes the form of the image of a King Monstrous Dragon Beast as it moves about the Inheritance Pond. It is only when that image is in contact with you that you will be able to sense its power,” Chu Feng said.

“Really? Why is it that I cannot see it?” Both Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor cast their gazes into the pond. However, they were unable to see anything.

“I am only able to see it through using a special method. However, this might be good news,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you mean by that?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“The way I see it, one’s talent will only determine whether or not one is qualified to enter the Inheritance Pond. However, if one wishes to obtain the inheritance, one must make that image follow you.”

“If you are to only quietly stay in the Inheritance Pond and wait for that image to flow to your side, it would be extremely

difficult.”

“However, I am able to observe it, and have you follow that image. This will allow you to be within that image the entire time. Like that, you should be able to receive the inheritance,” Chu Feng said.

“That might be feasible. Let’s try it out now,” Yaojiao Tingyu was extremely impatient. Both of her hands turned around, and then she directly jumped into the pond.

Right after she entered the pond, her complexion changed slightly. Even though she was able to enter the Inheritance Pond, she still had to endure its pressure.

It was also because of the existence of that pressure that she was unable to immerse herself in the Inheritance Pond for an extended period of time. This was also the reason why her body was unable to endure it, and she lost consciousness after forcing herself to be in the pond for an extended period of time earlier.

That time, had she not been promptly discovered and saved, she would have died in the pond.

“Putt~~~”

A splash. Chu Feng also entered the Inheritance Pond. He said, “Let’s begin.”

“Chu Feng, you!!!” Seeing Chu Feng, Yaojiao Tingyu was startled once again.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s nothing,” Yaojiao Tingyu shook her head. Actually, she had wanted to say that Chu Feng’s talent was truly too outstanding. His expression actually remained completely unchanged even after entering the pond. Evidently, he was unable to feel the pressure of the pond.

It was at this moment that Yaojiao Tingyu realized that it was not

that this Inheritance Pond was too difficult, but rather that her talent was greatly insufficient.

If she had Chu Feng's talent, regardless of how strong the Inheritance Pond might be, regardless of how much that image moved about, she would still be able to obtain the inheritance. Unfortunately, she didn't have Chu Feng's talent.

"Tingyu, follow me," As Chu Feng spoke, he began to swim further into the pond. Yaojiao Tingyu did not dare to hesitate, and followed Chu Feng closely. Not long after she started swimming, a boundless energy entered Yaojiao Tingyu's entire body. At the same time, the energy started to merge with her body.

"It's really feasible!"

Yaojiao Tingyu became even more pleasantly surprised. As she swam following Chu Feng, she was truly able to sense Lord Dragon King's power the entire time. If this were to continue, she might really be able to succeed this time around.

"That child is our King Monstrous Dragon Race's lucky star."

Although that Martial Emperor was standing on the shore, and was unable to enter the Inheritance Pond, he had been watching everything the entire time. He had begun to increasingly admire this member of the younger generation by the name of Chu Feng.

At the time when Yaojiao Tingyu was receiving the inheritance, Chu Feng was also able to sense how enormous the power contained within that image was. However, apart from that, he did not sense much of anything else.

If it wasn't for the fact that Chu Feng had used his Heaven's Eyes to see through the mystery of the Inheritance Pond, if he had instead run around the Inheritance Pond like a fool, then, regardless of how talented he might be, he might still not have been able to help Yaojiao Tingyu.

"Chu Feng, try sensing the spirit formation in this place. It might

allow your spirit formation techniques to reach a breakthrough,” Eggy called to Chu Feng’s attention to the spirit formations in this Emperor’s Tomb.

“That’s right! Why didn’t I think of that? It is still Milady Queen that is clever,” Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. Earlier, he had only been thinking about finding things that could assist him with his martial cultivation, and had completely forgotten that the Black Dragon King had possessed exceptional world spirit techniques, and that the entire Emperor’s Tomb was filled with the products of grand world spirit formations.

Especially this Inheritance Pond; it was the essence of the entire Emperor’s Tomb. The world spirit techniques used to create this place were even more exceptional. If Chu Feng were to earnestly feel the world spirit formations here, he might really be able to use this opportunity to reach a new level of comprehension for world spirit techniques, connect with Dragon Mark World Spirit Power, and become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Thus, as Chu Feng chased after the image, he began to feel the exquisite world spirit techniques that had been used to create that image.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng became motionless. That image of a King Monstrous Dragon Beast that was moving about also stopped moving. Immediately afterward, Yaojiao Tingyu also stopped moving. It was as if they were all frozen.

“Crash~~~”

At this time, the surface of the Inheritance Pond started to boil.

“This, this is the first time I’ve seen something like this. Could it be that Chu Feng is really able to help Princess obtain the inheritance?” As the Martial Emperor standing outside saw the boiling water surface, astonishment filled his face. Even his body

started to tremble with excitement.

The reason why he reacted in such a manner was because that boiling water surface was extremely extraordinary. The portion that was boiling over formed an enormous dragon. It was precisely the image of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast in the water.

While that Martial Emperor was unable to see the image of the King Monstrous Dragon beast, he was able to see the boiling water's surface. However, with merely that, he was already filled with endless astonishment.

The way he saw it, that was not an image at all. Rather, it was the actual silhouette of their Lord Dragon King.

“Where is this?”

At this moment, what Chu Feng saw was no longer the deep water of the Inheritance Pond. It was no longer the image of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast. He had already arrived at another space.

Underneath his feet were boundless white clouds. Above his head was a vast and borderless blue sky. Surrounding him were eight enormous sculptures. Each of the sculptures was a thousand meters tall. They were King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, the images of King Monstrous Dragon Beasts.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, a roar sounded. Hearing that roar, Chu Feng's hair stood on end. That roar was truly too frightening.

The direction from which the roar sounded was filled with white mist. At this moment, two dazzling red rays appeared in the white mist. They were crimson red in color, and truly terrifying to look at.

It was a pair of eyes, the eyes of a King Monstrous Dragon Beast.

Finally, that King Monstrous Dragon Beast revealed itself. It was

capable of supporting both heaven and earth, as it actually possessed the same size as those sculptures.

However, while those sculptures were fake, it was real. An incomparable might was being emitted from its body. This might made Chu Feng feel extremely uneasy.

“Mn? It’s actually a human!!!”

That King Monstrous Dragon Beast suddenly approached Chu Feng. It was only half a foot away from Chu Feng. Its two crimson eyes were many tens of times larger than Chu Feng. At this moment, those two enormous eyes were staring at Chu Feng. It was as if he were planning to use his gaze to skin Chu Feng alive.

“A human, what makes you think that you are qualified to obtain my inheritance?” That King Monstrous Dragon Beast uttered a gloomy, cold and unwilling voice.

“Senior Beast Emperor, this junior never thought about obtaining your inheritance. I have only come here to help your descendant obtain your inheritance,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn?” Soon, that King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s body swayed. Its gaze became different. It was revealing an expression of disbelief.

“No, you are qualified,” Even that King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s tone had changed. It was no longer one of annoyance, and had instead become gentle.

“Senior, please don’t misunderstand. This junior does not wish...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng hurriedly tried to explain. He did not wish to snatch away Yaojiao Tingyu’s inheritance.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before Chu Feng could even finish his words, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast opened its mouth and swallowed Chu Feng whole.

Chapter 1827 – Obtained The Inheritance

After being swallowed by the Black Dragon King, the scene before Chu Feng became fuzzy.

When his line of sight became clear again, Chu Feng discovered that he had returned to the Inheritance Pond.

Merely, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast image within the Inheritance Pond was currently shrinking in size. To be exact, it was shrinking in size while being centered around Yaojiao Tingyu. The King Monstrous Dragon Beast image that contained an extremely powerful Monstrous Dragon Bloodline was currently being assimilating into Yaojiao Tingyu's body.

“It would seem that we've succeeded,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to smile and heaved a sigh of relief.

Originally, he had thought that the Black Dragon King was planning to pass on his power to him. At that time, Chu Feng had been deeply shocked.

If the Black Dragon King were to really pass on his power to him, it would mean that he would have snatched away the power that should have belonged to Yaojiao Tingyu. In other words, Chu Feng would have become a disloyal and unrighteous individual.

However, at this time, the change to Yaojiao Tingyu was extremely evident. Even her aura was rapidly growing stronger. From her original cultivation of rank five Half Martial Emperor, she had already become a rank seven Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, her aura was still growing stronger.

“Strange,” At this moment, Chu Feng was startled. While it was clear that Yaojiao Tingyu had received the inheritance, as her cultivation was increasing right before him, Chu Feng's own aura was also growing stronger. He too had reached a breakthrough. He was no longer a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, instead

becoming a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

Not only that, Chu Feng was able to feel that his spirit power had also grown many times stronger. With a thought, he unleashed some world spirit power from his world spirit space. It was no longer Snake Mark-level spirit power. Instead, it had become Dragon Mark-level spirit power.

“I’ve also reached a breakthrough? Could it be that I’ve obtained the inheritance too?” Chu Feng exclaimed in astonishment. His cultivation of rank eight Half Martial Emperor and his Dragon Mark spirit power was already set in place. Although he did not feel any possibility of them increasing in strength again, it remained that they were his current level of power.

“Chu Feng, quickly, come in and look,” At this moment, Eggy spoke in excitement.

“What happened?” Hearing the tone of Eggy’s voice, it seemed that she had something urgent to show him. Thus, Chu Feng immediately cast his awareness into his world spirit space.

“Heavens! How did this happen?” Upon reaching his world spirit space, the generally-calm Chu Feng was unable to remain calm anymore.

In addition to the extraordinary beautiful Queen, there were actually three additional items in his world spirit space. They were floating in midair.

Those three items were... a map, a title plate and a key.

The map appeared both illusory and real. It was as if was changing between illusion and reality. It was extremely mystical.

That title plate appeared to have been constructed from ordinary stone. It possessed a very crude appearance. In fact, it could even be said that it was somewhat ugly. However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that it was an extraordinary item that contained a special sort of power.

As for that key, it was even more peculiar. That key was made of light. That light was made up of countless smaller substances of light. It was as if all of the stars in the sky had gathered together to form a key.

That's right. Looking at it, the key looked like a key of stars.

In amazement, Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed toward the three items. He wanted to carefully inspect them.

“Bang~~~”

However, right when Chu Feng's hand touched the key of stars, that key exploded into countless rays of light and disappeared.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

Immediately following it, the title plate and the map also exploded and disappeared.

“Why would it be like this?” Seeing this scene, Eggy was deeply shocked. The way she saw it, those three items were all treasures. If they were to disappear, it would truly be a pity.

“No, they're already on me,” Chu Feng said.

“What?” Eggy was confused.

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he cast his awareness back into his body. He opened his hands, and the stone title plate and the key of stars were in both of his hands.

“They actually shifted from the world spirit space to your body,” Eggy was extremely surprised. However, she immediately asked, “But the map's still missing.”

“The map's in my head,” Chu Feng pointed at his head. Although the map was gone, the contents of the map were in his head.

“Yoh, that's not bad. It would seem that Black Dragon King really does have some skills. He was actually capable of accomplishing

this sort of feat,” Eggy nodded in admiration. A sweet smile was present on her exceptionally beautiful face. She was truly charming. Looking at her, one would feel as if their heart was going to melt.

“What’s recorded on that map? What is its relationship with that title plate and key?” In joy, Eggy asked curiously.

“Moonlight Maze. This is the map of the Moonlight Maze. The key and title plate are also related to the Moonlight Maze,” Chu Feng said.

“One of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Three Great Forbidden Areas?” Eggy asked.

“Mn, the Three Great Forbidden Areas, the Moonlight Maze, the Blood Devouring Killing Formation and the Ancient Era’s Cemetery. These three items left behind by the Black Dragon King were all related to the Moonlight Maze,” Chu Feng said.

“Is it a treasure deposit?” Eggy asked.

“Yes. It leads to the treasures left behind by the Black Dragon King. All of the wealth that he had accumulated throughout his life is there. There might even be Imperial Armaments,” Chu Feng said.

“Woah! In that case, he really has passed on his inheritance to you?” Eggy became even more excited.

“Although he has passed on his strength to Yaojiao Tingyu, he has passed on his treasures to me,” Chu Feng said.

“Great! This trip has truly not been made in vain,” Eggy became even more joyous.

“No, this belongs to the King Monstrous Dragon Race. I cannot take them,” Chu Feng said.

“You couldn’t be possibly thinking about returning them to Yaojiao Tingyu, right?” Eggy asked.

“Of course,” Chu Feng said.

“Fool! Stupid! Idiot! You are simply wasting the kind intentions and laborious effort of the Black Dragon King,” Eggy was angered.

“These do not belong to me to begin with,” Chu Feng forced a smile. Even if Eggy was angered, he would still not appropriate these things for himself.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, the image of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast was all gone. It had completely entered Yaojiao Tingyu’s body.

At this moment, Yaojiao Tingyu’s cultivation had reached that of a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, it was still increasing.

In the end, her cultivation stopped at the peak of rank eight Half Martial Emperor level. She had not managed to break through to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng knew that she would be making a breakthrough very soon. The reason for that was because the power of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s image was simply too strong. At this moment, its power was perfectly fusing with Yaojiao Tingyu in her body. She had already obtained the Black Dragon King’s inheritance.

The inheritance she had obtained was different from Emperor Gong’s inheritance that Zhang Tianyi had obtained. Yaojiao Tingyu had completely received the Black Dragon King’s power.

She was destined to obtain extraordinary achievements in the future. It would not be impossible for her to surpass even the Black Dragon King.

“I’ve succeeded! I’ve succeeded!” Yaojiao Tingyu opened her eyes. She was in incomparable joy. She actually threw herself into Chu Feng’s bosom and hugged him tightly.

“Congratulations,” Chu Feng had a smile on his face. He was feeling joy for Yaojiao Tingyu and the King Monstrous Dragon Race from the bottom of his heart.

“Thank you. I truly do not know how to thank you for this. How about, I devote my life to you?” Yaojiao Tingyu said as she looked to Chu Feng.

“Eh...” Chu Feng was at a loss as to how to respond. While it was true that Yaojiao Tingyu was extremely sexy and charming, he did not have any special feelings for her, and had only considered her to be a friend.

“Haha, look at how shocked you’ve become. I’m merely playing with you. We from the King Monstrous Dragon Race are only able to bind with the opposite sex of our same race. It is impossible for us to be together with humans,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Oh you girl,” Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief.

“Eh, Chu Feng, your cultivation also increased?” Yaojiao Tingyu sensed that Chu Feng’s aura was also that of a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

Chapter 1828 – Extremely Heaven-defying

“Mn, this is all because of your blessings. If I hadn’t accompanied you here, it would have be impossible for me to reach a breakthrough this quickly,” Chu Feng said.

“Great! Great! Great! This is truly great! This is simply two joyous events happening simultaneously! Let’s go out and let that senior who is waiting for us enjoy the joy too,” As Yaojiao Tingyu spoke, she leapt out of the Inheritance Pond.

“Succeeded?” That Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor had a pleasantly surprised expression. After all, the change that had happened to Yaojiao Tingyu was extremely evident.

“Succeeded. Senior, I’ve really managed to successfully obtain the inheritance. Our Peace Faction will be able to continue to maintain the authority in our King Monstrous Dragon Race. All of this is because of Chu Feng. He is our King Monstrous Dragon Race’s great benefactor,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Great, great, great!” That Martial Emperor was extremely excited, and said three ‘greats’ in succession. Then, with a ‘putt,’ he actually knelt before Chu Feng.

“Senior, what are you doing?” Chu Feng hurriedly tried to help him back up.

“Little friend Chu Feng, your enormous kindness is not something that I can thank with words. The benevolence you’ve shown our King Monstrous Dragon Race is something that we must definitely repay. If you are to ever need me in the future, please don’t hold back. Even if I am to go through water and tread on fire, even if I am to throw my measly life away, I will be willing to do so,” That Martial Emperor spoke with a serious expression, and refused to get back up.

“Senior, you’re taking this too seriously. Princess Tingyu and I

knew one another to begin with. We are friends. I, Chu Feng, am never one to seek for returns when helping my friends,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, your benevolence is something that our King Monstrous Dragon Race must repay. You do not know how important this is to our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” That Martial Emperor insisted.

“You actually kneeled to a human. You are truly a disgrace to our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Right at this moment, a familiar voice sounded from the distance

“You’re still alive?” Upon seeing that person, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor were both shocked. The two of them both revealed expressions of panic. The person that had arrived was precisely the rank two Martial Emperor from the War Faction.

He had actually survived the siege of the Underworld Fire Bugs.

“Tingyu, no matter what, I am still your senior. Do you really wish for my death that much?” That man sneered as he proceeded to walk toward Chu Feng and the others.

“What do you want?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“Very simple. You wished for my death. Thus, I am going to kill you. Especially the current you. You actually managed to obtain Lord Dragon King’s inheritance. As such, you must be killed,” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor said coldly.

“Chu Feng, Tingyu, quickly escape,” At this moment, that Peace Faction’s rank one Martial Emperor suddenly leapt forth. He turned into an enormous black monstrous dragon and pounced at the War Faction’s rank two Martial Emperor.

He had revealed his true form. He was planning to use his life to buy time for Chu Feng and Yaojiao Tingyu’s escape.

“Humph, overestimating your capabilities,” The War Faction’s

Martial Emperor snorted coldly. As a rank two Martial Emperor, how could he possibly fear a rank one Martial Emperor?

With a thought, his oppressive might swept forth. He was planning to use his oppressive might to crush that Place Faction's Martial Emperor to death.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when his oppressive might crushed down toward the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor, a golden-bright and dazzling spirit formation suddenly appeared out of nowhere. It turned into a wall and blocked his oppressive might.

“Dragon Mark world spirit formation?” As the golden spirit formation filled with dragon marks appeared, not to mention the War Faction's Martial Emperor, even the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor and Yaojiao Tingyu were shocked.

“Chu Feng, you're actually a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” The War Faction's Martial Emperor looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with astonishment. He knew that that spirit formation had been unleashed by Chu Feng.

“Your life is quite tough. You must've used some sort of treasure to survive, right?” Chu Feng said.

“Answer my question!” The War Faction's Martial Emperor shouted. The shocked expression he revealed did not decrease, and instead increased.

“You are able to see my spirit formation. Aren't you just asking a question that you already know the answer to?” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, he said, “Actually, it is quite good that you were able to survive. For scum like you, I have always been fond of personally taking care of them.”

As Chu Feng finished saying those words, he had already walked to the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor's side. Then, he said to the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor, “Senior, allow this junior to take

care of this scum of the King Monstrous Dragon Race.”

“Chu Feng, you...” The Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor was worried. Although Chu Feng’s cultivation had increased, he was still only a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. As such, how could he possibly fight against a rank two Martial Emperor?

“Senior, please trust me,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“Be careful,” The Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor gave in. After all, he did not possess the ability to contend against that War Faction’s Martial Emperor. Yet, Chu Feng had blocked that War Faction’s Martial Emperor’s oppressive might with his spirit formation.

Although he wasn’t very confident in Chu Feng, it remained that Chu Feng’s strength surpassed his own. If he were to fight the War Faction’s Martial Emperor, only death would await him. However, if Chu Feng were to fight, they might really be able to live.

Thus, the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor arrived beside Yaojiao Tingyu and brought her to a distant and sufficiently safe location.

As for Chu Feng, he stood in confrontation against the War Faction’s Martial Emperor.

“Ridiculous. A mere rank eight Half Martial Emperor actually dares to speak nonsense about taking care of me? Humans are truly ignorant,” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor did not place Chu Feng in his eyes.

“Enough of your rubbish. I’ll let you attack me first,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, even if you are a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, you are definitely no match for me. I am not a rank one Martial Emperor. Rather, I am a rank two Martial Emperor. Furthermore, I am an elite of our King Monstrous Dragon Race. I will let you know the meaning of fear with my King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s Bloodline,” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor

said as he stared at Chu Feng ferociously with his crimson eyes.

“I’ll tell you this. To fight against you, I’m not going to use spirit formations. Instead, I will only use my martial power,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor’s expression changed. He did not dare to believe what he had just heard.

“You will understand soon enough,” Immediately after Chu Feng finished saying those words, a buzzing sound could be heard. Lightning flashed through his eyes, and then his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared together. In a flash, Chu Feng’s cultivation went from rank eight Half Martial Emperor to rank one Martial Emperor.

“Boom~~~”

Then, Chu Feng’s body shifted, and he instantly arrived before that War Faction’s Martial Emperor. Furthermore, his fist was shot explosively at that War Faction’s Martial Emperor.

“Damn it!”

The War Faction’s Martial Emperor immediately raised his arm to block Chu Feng’s fist. However, while he managed to block Chu Feng’s fist strike, the aching pain that was being transmitted from his arm made him feel disbelief.

It was one thing for Chu Feng’s cultivation to increase from rank eight Half Martial Emperor to rank one Martial Emperor. However, his battle power was actually capable of contending against him.

One must know that he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. For Chu Feng to be able to threaten him as a rank one Martial Emperor, it meant that Chu Feng’s battle power was capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

“Prepare to die,” Chu Feng did not give him time to consider. As his fists and feet crisscrossed one another, his attacks grew increasingly more ferocious. The War Faction’s Martial Emperor had been caught unprepared, and was incapable of dealing with Chu Feng’s attacks. At this moment, all he could do was dodge, block and be thrashed upon.

“This is truly inconceivable. Little friend Chu Feng’s talent is actually this heaven-defying?!!!!”

Both the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor and Yaojiao Tingyu were exclaiming in astonishment. They felt this to be extremely unimaginable. It was extremely unbelievable that Chu Feng actually possessed a method to break through from Half Martial Emperor to a rank one Martial Emperor.

Martial Emperors and Half Martial Emperors were intrinsically different. Many people and monstrous beasts possessed special methods to increase their cultivations for a short period of time when they were Half Martial Emperors.

For example, there were Imperial Bloodlines and Divine Powers as well as special Inherited Bloodlines for certain monstrous beasts. All of them were capable of accomplishing this feat.

However, after reaching the Martial Emperor level in their cultivation, it would be extremely difficult and practically impossible to accomplish that.

While one could increase one’s cultivation through the use of one’s bloodline or Divine Power at the Half Martial Emperor level, it was no longer possible once one became a Martial Emperor.

For example, the Utmost Exalted Elders of the Four Great Imperial Clans, as well as those Martial Emperors that possessed Divine Bodies, were all extremely talented individuals.

When they were rank eight Half Martial Emperors, they had all been able to use their respective methods to increase their

cultivations to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

However, upon reaching rank nine Half Martial Emperor, they were no longer capable of using special methods to increase their cultivations to rank one Martial Emperor.

After becoming Martial Emperors, it was also impossible for them to use their methods to increase their cultivations from rank one Martial Emperor to rank two Martial Emperor.

Regardless of whether it was Divine Powers or Inherited Bloodlines, they were only capable of raising their battle power by a certain amount when they reached the Martial Emperor level of cultivation, and it was impossible for these methods to actually increase their cultivation itself.

In other words, no matter what sort of method one possessed, it was impossible to increase one's cultivation from Half Martial Emperor to Martial Emperor.

Half Martial Emperors and Martial Emperors were completely different. There was an intrinsic gap between them, as well as an unbreakable confinement. It was an insurmountable disparity.

However, this sort of thing that was impossible to accomplish was actually done by Chu Feng. What others could not accomplish had been accomplished by Chu Feng. That enormous gap that could not be surmounted was actually crossed by Chu Feng.

As such, how could Yaojiao Tingyu and the others not be shocked?!!!

Chapter 1829 – Heaven Taboo Martial Skill

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Chu Feng continued to attack. His attacks were extremely extravagant and incomparably ferocious. It was as if ten thousand meteorites were falling at once as his attacks continued to land on the War Faction’s Martial Emperor.

A moment of carelessness from the War Faction’s Martial Emperor allowed Chu Feng’s fist to break through his defense and land on his left rib.

“Boom~~~”

Another loud explosion sounded. The War Faction’s Martial Emperor was knocked several thousand meters away before firmly crashing into the cave’s wall.

The cave’s wall was completely undamaged. However, his body was emitting cracking noises. With merely a single fist strike, Chu Feng had broken three of the ribs on his left side.

“With merely this amount of ability, you actually dared to proclaim yourself to be an elite of the King Monstrous Dragon Race?” Chu Feng said with a disdainful smile.

“I’ll kill you!” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor was extremely enraged. He took out an enormous meteor hammer and smashed it at Chu Feng.

“Huu, huu, huu, huu~~~”

As the meteor hammer was being spun around, whistling sound of winds started to echo. Wherever it passed, it would leave an area of pitch-blackness. Even space itself was destroyed by it. It turned out that that meteor hammer was an Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“I’m afraid that you still won’t do even if we are to compare

weapons,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the Heavenly Immortal Sword and held it in his hand. Then, he began to unleash his sharp sword techniques like a torrential storm of pear blossoms. Not only did he block that War Faction’s Martial Emperor’s meteor hammer, he was also unleashing counterattacks at that Martial Emperor.

“Damn it,” Being suppressed repeatedly, that War Faction’s Martial Emperor started to gnash his teeth with bulging veins in anger.

No matter what, he was an actual rank two Martial Emperor. When using an Incomplete Imperial Armament, he was capable of unleashing its true might. As for that meteor hammer, it had accompanied him for many years. Fundamentally, he had reached a point of fusion with his weapon. Many Martial Emperors at his same cultivation had been defeated by that meteor hammer.

As for Chu Feng, while his cultivation was also that of a Martial Emperor right now, he had only obtained it through using a special method to increase his cultivation. He refused to acknowledge Chu Feng’s current cultivation as being real.

To him, Chu Feng was a fake Martial Emperor. Yet, this fake Martial Emperor had not only managed to suppress him in terms of fighting with fists and feet, he had actually also surpassed him when using Incomplete Imperial Armaments. As such, how could he possibly tolerate this?

However, the thing that made him feel the most helpless was that even though he was unable to tolerate being suppressed, there was nothing that he could do about it, as he was no match for Chu Feng. This was the truth that he could not change.

“Your hammer’s quite good. Unfortunately, you are unable to master it. Your usage of it is truly bad. It is simply a waste of a good weapon,” While Chu Feng was suppressing that War Faction’s Martial Emperor, he also spoke words to mock him.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly excessive!” The War Faction’s Martial Emperor was so enraged by Chu Feng that he felt as if his heart, liver, spleen and lungs were all about to explode. In anger, he suddenly shouted, and then a boundless power began to emit from within him.

Being forced into a corner, he had decided to strike back and not hide and dodge anymore. He had decided to meet force with force.

The powerful strength of the War Faction’s Martial Emperor did not come out of nowhere. Many fiery red veined patterns appeared on his body.

Those veined patterns were like magma. It was extremely blazing and dazzling to the eyes. Chu Feng noticed that blood was coming out of the fiery red veined patterns. Yes, that was actual blood.

“A self mutilation technique?” Chu Feng had discovered the secret to the increase of the War Faction’s Martial Emperor’s strength.

“Chu Feng, this is bad! He’s burning his bloodline! He is planning to use his own life to exchange for your life!” Yaojiao Tingyu shouted.

“Burning his bloodline? He is able to become more powerful after burning his bloodline?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. He is burning an extremely high degree of his bloodline right now. After this attack of his, he will explode and he will definitely die. However, in exchange for that, he has obtained enormously powerful strength. His strength is now infinitely close to that of a rank three Martial Emperor,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Since that’s the case, I’ll give him a chance,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he actually moved to the side, and no longer continued to attack the War Faction’s Martial Emperor.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Quickly, stop him!” Seeing that Chu Feng was no longer beating down on the War Faction’s

Martial Emperor and had instead moved to the side, both Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor were extremely frightened.

However, Chu Feng did not do as they said. Instead, he looked to the War Faction's Martial Emperor and said, "Go and accumulate your strength. After you're done, come and fight me again."

"Humph," The War Faction's Martial Emperor snorted coldly. He was being looked down upon. Chu Feng's action was most definitely looking down on him.

Even though he was extremely furious, he had to accept being looked down on. It was true, it required some time for him to unleash his next attack. If Chu Feng were to disturb him, he might not be able to unleash it. However, if Chu Feng were to look on without lifting a finger, he would definitely be able to unleash it.

Upon thinking of how Chu Feng would be met with a miserable death because of his arrogance and conceit, the War Faction's Martial Emperor felt that even if he were to suffer even more humiliation, it would all be worth it.

"Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~"

Suddenly, the War Faction's Martial Emperor spread open his arms. Then, a fiery gaseous substance began to flow out from the fiery cracks all over his body.

The speed of the fiery gaseous substance was extremely fast. In an instant, it formed a several hundred-meter-long enormous fiery monstrous dragon.

Although the monstrous dragon was formed with gaseous substance and semitransparent, it possessed a ferocious appearance, and was even more domineering than ordinary King Monstrous Dragon Beasts.

Most importantly, it contained an extremely powerful strength capable of destroying heaven and earth.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled explosion was heard. That War Faction’s Martial Emperor had exploded. However, after he exploded, his aura was still present. He was not dead. Instead, he had fused with that fiery red gaseous substance.

At this moment, he was that gaseous substance, and that gaseous substance was him. Furthermore, he was getting even bigger.

“Damn it, he actually mastered that technique,” Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor both had dejected expressions on their faces.

The two of them both knew how frightening this move was. It was a taboo technique by the name of ‘Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon.’ This technique could only be unleashed by burning a King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s bloodline.

Burning one’s bloodline was equivalent to committing suicide. Thus, if any King Monstrous Dragon Beast was able to successfully unleash this technique, they would soon die.

However, without a doubt, the Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon was extremely powerful. It was a technique comparable to that of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

“Haha, it seems that you all will not be able to recognize me anymore. However, it’s too late now. I have successfully unleashed this technique. All that you all can do now is wait for your deaths,” Seeing the dejected expressions on Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor’s faces, the War Faction’s Martial Emperor revealed a smile that had not been seen for a long time. Merely, his smile was currently being shown on the fiery red gaseous monstrous dragon. Looking at it, he appeared to be extremely sinister-looking.

“Chu Feng, you will soon pay for your arrogance. I shall let you experience the might of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill now,” The

War Faction's Martial Emperor turned his fierce gaze onto Chu Feng. At this moment, he had already turned into the Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon and obtained the strength to suppress Chu Feng.

“And here I was thinking about what sort of exceptionally amazing technique you would unleash with the price of your death. It turns out, after all this, it's only at this level. Heaven Taboo Martial Skill? Haha...” Chu Feng revealed a mocking smile.

“What are you laughing about?” Seeing that Chu Feng was still looking down on him even after he had turned into his current form, the War Faction's Martial Emperor became extremely angry.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly flashed with sharpness. Immediately afterwards, his black hair started to drift, and his gown started to flutter violently as a crimson gaseous substance was emitted from his body.

When the crimson gaseous substance appeared, it moved about extremely quickly. In no time, it covered this entire region. Not to mention Chu Feng, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor, even the huge monster that the War Faction's Martial Emperor had turned into, that Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon, was also covered by the crimson gaseous substance.

At that moment, an extremely horrifying sound began to be heard from within the crimson gaseous substance.

No one could describe what sort of sound it was. It was as if that sound simply did not belong to this world.

Chapter 1830 – Slaughter With A Point Of One's Finger

“This... what is this?” At this moment, the War Faction's Martial Emperor was panicking. Although they were both red gaseous substances, the fiery red gaseous substance that formed the Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon had actually become an entire size smaller. Not only that, it was actually also trembling violently. It was as if it was afraid of the crimson gaseous substance that Chu Feng had emitted.

Furthermore, he himself was also able to sense how frightening the crimson gaseous substance that Chu Feng had emitted was.

The sensation he felt made it seem as if that crimson gaseous substance was simply not something of this world. Rather, it was a gaseous substance that had originated from the depths of the underworld. It was like a devil from the underworld that had been unleashed to exterminate all living things in the world. Thus, the killing intent being emitted by that crimson gaseous substance was simply incomparable.

Indeed, the crimson gaseous substance was much more frightening than the Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon that he had summoned.

Most importantly, at this moment, that crimson gaseous substance had completely surrounded him. Even if he wanted to escape, he was already unable to do so.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, two enormous beams of light appeared on either side of Chu Feng.

“No!!!” Upon seeing those beams of light, the War Faction's Martial Emperor cried out in surprise. He was extremely terrified.

The reason for that was because those two enormous beams of

light were not merely composed of light. Rather, they were two enormous eyes. They were the eyes of that crimson gaseous substance.

Furthermore, when the eyes appeared, a crescent-shaped enormous crack appeared underneath the crimson gaseous substance. The crack began to distort back and forth. It was extremely frightening and sinister to look at.

It was only when that pair of eyes appeared that the War Faction's Martial Emperor noticed, upon looking at the crack again, that it was not simply a crack. Instead, it was an opened mouth. It was the mouth of that crimson gaseous substance.

That crimson gaseous substance was not only a gaseous substance. Rather, it possessed life. It did not resemble a devil. Rather, it was the devil itself.

"Today, I shall let you experience a true Heaven Taboo Martial Skill," Chu Feng said.

"Heaven Taboo Martial Skill?! This is a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill?!"

"How are you capable of unleashing such a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill?!" The War Faction's Martial Emperor let out an incomparably frightened voice and revealed a gaze of disbelief.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly raised his hand and pointed at the War Faction's Martial Emperor.

"Boom~~~"

A loud sound was heard. The Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon that the War Faction's Martial Emperor had turned into was destroyed instantly. He had been utterly killed.

Seeing this scene, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor were unable to contain themselves from gulping down a

mouthful of saliva.

With merely a point of his finger, Chu Feng had eliminated the Bloodline King Monstrous Beast that the War Faction's Martial Emperor unleashed with the price of his life.

They knew that it was not that their King Monstrous Dragon Race's taboo technique, the Bloodline King Monstrous Dragon, was too weak. Rather, it was that Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo Martial Skill was too powerful.

"Is that really a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill?" Yaojiao Tingyu muttered in shock.

She had seen Heaven Taboo Martial Skills before. However, the one that Chu Feng had unleashed seemed to be even more frightening than the ones that she had seen.

"Indeed, it's a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Merely, although they're all Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, their strengths are dependent on their user. It could only be said that Chu Feng's mastery of martial skills is simply too powerful. Under the same level of cultivation, even if his opponents also possess Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, they will likely still be no match for him," the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor said.

"That guy, he is truly excessively powerful," Although Yaojiao Tingyu was saying it like that, the gaze that her beautiful eyes were looking at Chu Feng with were filled with adoration.

As fellow members of the younger generation, she was not envious of Chu Feng's talent. Rather, she felt pride because of Chu Feng, and viewed him as her idol.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved his sleeve. He casually sprinkled a spirit formation below him. The spirit formation actually turned into limbs and dispersed onto the ground. Then, Chu Feng leapt, and arrived beside Yaojiao Tingyu

and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor.

After he landed, Chu Feng raised his hand and covered the three of them with a concealment formation.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing?" Yaojiao Tingyu asked in a very surprised manner.

Although what Chu Feng had formed with his spirit formation were mutilated body parts, Yaojiao Tingyu was able to recognize that the mutilated body parts were those of Chu Feng, the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor and herself.

"You'll know soon enough. Just patiently wait a bit," Chu Feng said in a deliberately mystifying manner.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor became even more curious. Thus, they no longer asked questions, and turned their gazes to the scene of devastation that Chu Feng had set up.

The following moments were eerily silent. After an entire hour passed, a figure cautiously appeared.

After that figure appeared, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor were both surprised. The reason for that was because the person that had appeared was Yaojiao Xueran.

Although Yaojiao Xueran's body possessed scars from being burned, he was not badly injured. Likely, the War Faction's Martial Emperor had protected him. Else, with his abilities, it would have been impossible for him to survive being besieged by a flock of Underworld Fire Bugs.

"Humph!!!"

Yaojiao Xueran was actually extremely cautious. It was only when he saw the mutilated body parts scattered all over the ground that he revealed a complacent smile. Then, he turned around and began to quickly leave the tomb.

“Chu Feng, why are you not killing him?” Yaojiao Tingyu asked.

“Why should we kill him?” Chu Feng asked.

“Isn’t this the best opportunity to eliminate Yaojiao Xueran? If he is to escape, we would not be able to eliminate him anymore,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“No. If we are to kill him now, we would have given them a chance to escape,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? Why is it that I don’t understand?” Yaojiao Tingyu looked to Chu Feng with a confused expression. The Peace Faction’s Martial Emperor beside her had the same expression as her.

“While I can kill Yaojiao Xueran, how are we to report what had happened here to the elders? If we are to speak the truth, Yaojiao Ba will definitely refuse to admit it. In fact, he might even bite back at us.”

“Without any proof, even if the elders knew that something had happened, they would, for the sake of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, cover up this matter. Afterall, Yaojiao Xueran and the three Martial Emperors from the War Faction had all been killed. They would not wish for more lives to be sacrificed,” Chu Feng explained.

“Then, your intention is?” After hearing what Chu Feng said and thinking about it herself, Yaojiao Tingyu seemed to have realized something. Merely, she was not certain.

“Just wait to watch a show. Follow me,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he undid the concealment formation and removed the mutilated corpses on the ground. After finishing all his preparations, he then walked toward the direction in which Yaojiao Xueran had left.

Truth be told, Chu Feng was actually very tempted upon seeing the Incomplete Imperial Armament and the Cosmos Sack on the

floor. Merely, as they belonged to the King Monstrous Dragon Race, Chu Feng could not touch them.

.....

At this moment, outside of the Dragon King's Tomb, Yaojiao Guang, Yaojiao Ba, the elders of the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the top experts of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, as well as Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang, were all present.

Other than Yaojiao Guang and the others that were using all their strength to continue to keep the entrance of the tomb open, the rest of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were staring at the entrance of the tomb with fixed eyes. They were awaiting the return of Yaojiao Tingyu and the others.

“Woosh~~~”

Finally, a figure flew out from the entrance.

Seeing that someone had come out, the crowd were all in joy. However, the very next moment, their expressions all turned stiff, and revealed panic and worry.

The person that came out was Yaojiao Xueran. Merely, at this moment, not only was Yaojiao Xueran's face covered with tears, he was also wounded all over. After coming out, without saying anything, he kneeled before the elders with a ‘putt.’

With a weeping and shivering voice, Yaojiao Xueran said, “Lord Elders, Lord Father, Lord Clan Chief, the situation is extremely bad!”

“Xueran, what happened to you? What happened in there?” At this moment, the first to react was Yaojiao Xueran's father, Yaojiao Ba. Without worrying about anything else, he stood up and began to examine his son's body. It was only when he discovered that there were no fatal wounds that he heaved a sigh of relief.

“Xueyan, who caused you to be in such a state?” The four elders

asked.

“It’s Chu Feng. Chu Feng was trying to plunder Lord Dragon King’s inheritance. Not only did he kill Princess Tingyu, he also killed the seniors. If it wasn’t for the fact that the seniors protected me with their lives, even I would not have been able to return alive.”

“I was useless. I was incompetent. I was too weak. It was all because of the seniors protecting me that they ended up losing their lives,” Saying those words, Yaojiao Xueran appeared to be grieving even more.

Chapter 1831 – Frightening Brat

“Xueran, what did you say? Repeat what you just said,” One of the War Faction’s elders revealed an expression of disbelief.

“Lord Elder, Chu Feng has plundered Lord Dragon King’s Inheritance and killed Princess Tingyu, as well as the seniors. I only managed to escape alive because the seniors were protecting me with their lives,” Yaojiao Xueran said.

“What sort of nonsense are you talking about? Chu Feng is a mere rank seven Half Martial Emperor. How could he possibly kill them?” Not to mention the others, even the two elders from the War Faction did not believe Yaojiao Xueran. After all, not only were there three rank one Martial Emperors accompanying them, there was also a rank two Martial Emperor.

“Lord Elder, I am truly not deceiving you. Chu Feng had concealed his cultivation. His actual cultivation is that of a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he learned some sort of ability that is actually capable of increasing his cultivation by two entire levels with the appearance of a lightning armor and a pair of lightning wings.”

“After his cultivation increased by two levels, he became a rank one Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he used an extremely despicable method to trigger the mechanisms within Lord Dragon King’s Tomb. As such, even the seniors were no match for him,” Yaojiao Xueran said.

“That bastard!!!!” Hearing those words, the expressions of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present all changed. Then, they turned their incomparably angry gazes to Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang.

Yaojiao Xueran’s story was extremely vivid. As such, they did not feel that Yaojiao Xueran was lying, and believed his entire story.

“I knew that you humans could not be trusted. For Chu Feng to do such a thing, the two of you cannot escape responsibility. Both of you shall die,” Yaojiao Ba shouted angrily. As he spoke, he planned to attack and kill Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang.

“Stop!” However, right at this moment, Yaojiao Guang suddenly stood before Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang. He said, “This story might not necessarily be the truth. I feel that with little friend Chu Feng’s personal character, he is not someone who would do something like that.”

“Yaojiao Guang, get the hell out of the way. You were the one that brought that Chu Feng back here. As such, you also cannot escape responsibility for this matter!” Yaojiao Ba seemed to have lost his ability to reason. He did not stop, and instead stood right before Yaojiao Guang.

“What did you say? You said that I am also responsible? If what Xueran said is real, do you really think that I would collaborate with Chu Feng to murder my own daughter?” Yaojiao Guang was extremely enraged.

“For the sake of preserving your position as the Clan Chief, what do you not dare to do? The way I see it, you didn’t plan to kill your daughter. Instead, you were planning to kill Xueran. If Xueran is killed, no one will be able to snatch away the Clan Chief position from your Peace Faction. Yaojiao Guang, you are truly despicable!” Yaojiao Ba began to accuse Yaojiao Guang of being the main culprit.

After hearing those words, the gazes with which the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts looked to Yaojiao Guang also changed. They all knew that Yaojiao Guang was unwilling to hand over the position of the Clan Chief. In addition to that, Chu Feng had been invited over by him. Furthermore, even now, Yaojiao Guang was speaking on behalf of the humans. As such, they all began to doubt their Lord Clan Chief.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might appeared out of nowhere. It forcibly separated Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Ba.

“Someone has killed our clansmen, yet you two are actually fighting? What is this behavior?!” It turned out that it was an elder from the Peace Faction that had acted.

“Lord Elder, I do not believe that little friend Chu Feng would do such a thing. Lord Elder, please allow me to enter the tomb to investigate this matter,” Yaojiao Guang asked for permission.

“Yaojiao Guang, while the truth must be investigated, you cannot be the one to do so. Instead, Yaojiao Ba should be the one to investigate,” A War Faction’s elder said.

“Lord Elder, that absolutely must not be done. Yaojiao Ba detests humans enormously. Furthermore, he also bitterly hates Chu Feng. If he is to enter, even if what Yaojiao Xueran has said is not the truth, as long as he kills Chu Feng and the others, as long as there is no one left to defend themselves, the matter will be as they have described it,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“You’re implying that Xueran is lying, and that I am planning to murder to silence? Together with Xueran, we planned to wrongly accuse a human?”

“Yaojiao Guang, while you distrust me, I also distrust you. If you are to enter and save that Chu Feng, what do we do then?” Yaojiao Ba shouted angrily.

“Lord Elders, please reconsider this,” Yaojiao Guang no longer bothered to argue with Yaojiao Ba. Instead, he turned his gaze towards the elders.

“At this moment, between you and Yaojiao Ba, I trust Yaojiao Ba more,” A War Faction’s elder said.

“Lord Elder,” Seeing this, Yaojiao Guang turned his gaze toward

the Peace Faction's elders. As matters stood, he could only appeal for help from the Peace Faction's Elders. After all, they were from the same faction.

"Yaojiao Guang, it is true that Chu Feng was invited here by you. Furthermore, I also do not believe that Xueran would joke about something like this. In order to avoid arousing suspicion, it is better that you allow Yaojiao Ba to enter," A Peace Faction's elder said.

"You all..." At this moment, Yaojiao Guang had an extremely dejected expression. It was as if he had received an enormous shock. He truly did not expect that he, the grand Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, he who had protected the King Monstrous Dragon Race for eight thousand years, would have reached a state where no one was willing to trust him.

"Lord Elders, I'm afraid that Yaojiao Xueran and Yaojiao Ba are simply unworthy of your trust," Right at this moment, a voice suddenly sounded from the entrance of the tomb. Immediately afterward, three figures walked out from the tomb.

Upon seeing these three people, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were all startled. The reason for that was because it was not only Chu Feng that walked out, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor that Yaojiao Xueran had said were killed by Chu Feng were also there.

"Xueran, what is the meaning of this?" Upon seeing Chu Feng and the others, the Peace Faction's elders immediately glared at him imposingly. They looked to Yaojiao Xueran with angry gazes.

"Elders, I... this...." Upon seeing Chu Feng, Yaojiao Tingyu and the Peace Faction's Martial Emperor, the one that was the most shocked was none other than Yaojiao Xueran. At this moment, he had become speechless from shock.

He thought in his heart, 'Didn't Chu Feng, Tingyu and that elder die? Didn't they die together with that senior? The devastated

battleground was not fake. Why would they still be alive?’

“It’s better to allow me to explain what happened,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he began to narrate, “Yaojiao Ba did not wish for Yaojiao Tingyu to obtain Lord Dragon King’s inheritance, since it would cause his son to lose the opportunity to become the Clan Chief. Thus, he ordered his three subordinates, as well as his son, to assassinate us after entering the tomb.”

“Merely, even though they used all sorts of despicable tricks, all of them still ended up failing. However, this fool Yaojiao Xueran thought that they had succeeded, and immediately ran out to inform you all of this matter. He wanted you all to eliminate my two seniors, and also ruin senior Yaojiao Guang’s reputation. Like this, he would have the confidence to firmly sit as the Clan Chief.”

“Merely, if scum like him is to truly become the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief, I fear that it would be the misfortune of the King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, don’t you make malicious accusations,” Yaojiao Ba shouted angrily. He took out his Incomplete Imperial Armament and slashed it at Chu Feng. He was planning to silence Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before that slash of his could even land, it was stopped by a very powerful strength. It was an elder. Merely, it was not an elder from the Peace Faction. Instead, it was a War Faction’s elder.

“If you dare to attack again, I will cripple you,” The War Faction’s elder took an extremely fierce glance at Yaojiao Ba.

“Elder, I...” Yaojiao Ba wanted to say something. However, he didn’t know what to say. Although the War Faction’s elders were always supportive of him, they would absolutely not allow something like killing a fellow clansman. At this moment, Yaojiao Ba was at a loss as to what to do.

He did not know why the situation would become like that.

He had clearly planned meticulously. There shouldn't be a reason that a mere Chu Feng and Yaojiao Tingyu could not be eliminated.

Upon thinking of those things, he involuntarily looked to Chu Feng, and discovered that Chu Feng was also looking at him. At this time, Chu Feng had a gaze filled with contempt. It was as if he was going to destroy him for certain.

If it was before, Yaojiao Ba would find this to be ridiculous. He would laugh at the fact that a mere human brat actually dared to look at him with such a gaze.

However, at that moment, he had been forced into a corner. Not to mention that he did not have the opportunity to explain, even if he tried to explain, he would not be able to explain. All of this was because of Chu Feng.

Thinking about all of those things, Yaojiao Ba's heart thumped. As matters stood, he finally realized that this unremarkable human brat was actually very terrifying.

Chapter 1832 – The King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Benefactor

“I do not trust what that Chu Feng said. Tingyu, you tell me what happened,” The War Faction’s elder that had blocked Yaojiao Bao’s attack looked to Yaojiao Tingyu.

“Lord Elder, everything that Chu Feng said is true. Yaojiao Xueran first lured us to a certain location in the tomb that possessed a mechanism and unleashed bugs that were capable of emitting flames. He wanted to use those bugs to kill us.”

“Fortunately, Chu Feng had prepared, and placed Insect Avoidance Talismans on us. It is only because of that that we managed to escape.”

“However, they were unwilling to let the matter go. After I obtained the Lord Dragon King’s inheritance from the Inheritance Pond, they came again to attempt to kill us.”

“It was also because of Chu Feng protecting us with his life that we were able to survive. Else, even though I obtained Lord Dragon King’s inheritance, Lord Elders would not have been able to see it,” Yaojiao Tingyu said.

“Tingyu, what did you just say? You’re saying that you’ve obtained Lord Dragon King’s inheritance?” The Four Elders asked simultaneously. It was not only them, the other King Monstrous Dragon Beasts also turned their gazes onto Yaojiao Tingyu. The reason for that was because this matter was simply too important to them.

“Lord Elders, Tingyu has already obtained Lord Dragon King’s inheritance. It was all thanks to Chu Feng. I only managed to obtain Lord Dragon King’s inheritance with Chu Feng’s assistance,” Yaojiao Tingyu nodded her head while smiling beamingly. After she finished saying those words, she even took a

meaningful glance at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and an invisible spirit formation was removed from Yaojiao Tingyu's body. At this moment, Yaojiao Tingyu's aura was revealed before the crowd.

Everyone was able to sense that Yaojiao Tingyu's current aura was no longer that of a rank five Half Martial Emperor. Instead, she had become a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

“Succeeded! Tingyu really managed to succeed!” Yaojiao Guang was overjoyed. He leapt forward, arrived before Yaojiao Tingyu and embraced her. He was extremely happy.

In fact, it was not only her. Practically all of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present were unable to conceal their happiness, and were smiling joyfully. This was especially true for the four elders. At this moment, even their aged bodies were trembling. They were truly overjoyed.

Lord Dragon King was an era's overlord, the pride of their King Monstrous Dragon Race. And now, his strength had managed to be passed on. As such, how could they, the people from the King Monstrous Dragon Race, not be overjoyed?

“Yaojiao Ba, Yaojiao Xueran, what else do you have to say?” A Peace Faction's elder looked to Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran with an incomparably angry expression. His gaze was filled with killing intent.

In fact, it was not limited to him. At this moment, all of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts present were looking at Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran with deep hatred in their gazes.

Yaojiao Tingyu had managed to obtain the Lord Dragon King's inheritance. Thus, they firmly believed what she had said. Furthermore, what Yaojiao Xueran had said before had been

discredited now. Thus, they were practically certain that Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran really had been trying to kill Yaojiao Tingyu.

This father and son were extremely treacherous. They were scum that dared to harm their fellow clansmen!!!

Furthermore, Yaojiao Tingyu had already managed to obtain Lord Dragon King's inheritance. If she were to actually be murdered by them, the loss to their King Monstrous Dragon Race would be enormous. Thus, the crowd was even more furious. They were so angry that they began to gnash their teeth.

"Lord Elders, please allow me to explain, please allow me to explain," Yaojiao Ba was still trying to explain.

"There's no need for your explanation. If my guess is correct, you should have had Yaojiao Xueran bring Tingyu and the others to the location with the mechanism that triggers the Underworld Fire Bugs."

"I am the one who told you about that place. Other than you, no one else knows about it. However, never did I think at the time that you would have them go there, and even try to use the mechanism there to kill Yaojiao Tingyu, the future hope of our King Monstrous Dragon Race."

"Yaojiao Ba, you have truly disappointed me. As our King Monstrous Dragon Race have a rule that we cannot kill one another, I have no choice but to leave you your dog life. However, while you can escape death, you cannot escape punishment. I must remove your cultivation."

As that War Faction's elder spoke, he raised his hand and made a grabbing motion. Then, two claws formed with spirit power shot forth. They penetrated into Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran's dantians.

"Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!" Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran both unleashed

incomparably miserable screams.

“Put the traitors Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran into the Poisonous Insect Underground Prison. They shall suffer being devoured by poisonous insect for the rest of their lives until the day they die,” That War Faction’s elder said.

“Yes, Milord,” Several King Monstrous Dragon Beasts immediately stepped forward and dragged Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran away.

“Chu Feng, I won’t forgive you! I won’t forgive you! Even if I, Yaojiao Xueran, am to turn into a ghost, I will still not forgive you!!” Yaojiao Xueran shouted hysterically.

The way he saw it, he should be the future Clan Chief of the King Monstrous Dragon Race. However, all because of Chu Feng’s arrival, not only did he lose his opportunity to become the Clan Chief, his cultivation was instead crippled, and he was going to be imprisoned in the Poisonous Insect Underworld Prison. All of this was due to Chu Feng. As such, he hated Chu Feng to his bones.

“Shut up!”

However, before Yaojiao Xueran could finish cursing out at Chu Feng, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast that was dragging him away stepped down on his face with his foot and smashed his mouth. He was extremely brutal and ruthless.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng smiled lightly. The change in attitude of the people from the King Monstrous Dragon Race was truly fast. However, that was understandable too. After all, Yaojiao Xueran had broken an extreme taboo.

That being said, Chu Feng’s impression of the War Faction’s elders had also changed.

Although they had been making things difficult for Yaojiao Guang, and had been supporting Yaojiao Ba, when the matter concerned their King Monstrous Dragon Race’s future, they were

able to stand on the correct side without any hesitation. They did not show any mercy toward the traitors of their King Monstrous Dragon Race.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I truly do not know how to thank you. You are truly the great benefactor to our King Monstrous Dragon Race,” The two Peace Faction’s elders walked over to Chu Feng and looked to him with grateful expressions on their faces.

Especially that elder that had saved Chu Feng on the Gong Ba Plains. At this moment, there was a special sort of emotion in his gaze.

Back then, he had been hesitant to accept Yaojiao Guang’s request to save Chu Feng and bring him here. The reason why he had been hesitant was because he had not believed that Chu Feng would be able to help Yaojiao Tingyu, and thus he had not wished to take the risk of saving Chu Feng.

However, in the end, he had chosen to accept Yaojiao Guang’s request. At this moment, when he thought back upon it, he was extremely glad to have made that decision. Else, Yaojiao Tingyu would not have obtained their Lord Dragon King’s inheritance.

“Woosh~~~”

At this time, other than the elders and Yaojiao Guang, all of the rest of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts actually half kneeled before Chu Feng in a uniform manner.

“Thank you, little friend Chu Feng, for your enormous grace and kindness!” The thankful voices from the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts sounded like an ear-piercing thunder that shot straight into the sky.

“Elders, seniors, you all are being too courteous. Not only have you all saved me, I am also friends with Princess Tingyu. As long as I am capable, it is only something that I should do,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, while what you said is true, you must

know that Tingyu obtaining the Lord Dragon King's inheritance is extremely important to our King Monstrous Dragon Race. This kindness you've shown us is something that we are unable to repay. As such, we shall protect little friend Chu Feng with the strength of our King Monstrous Dragon Race."

"Warriors of our King Monstrous Dragon Race, listen carefully. Little friend Chu Feng shall be a permanent distinguished guest of our King Monstrous Dragon Race. No one is allowed to transmit news of him outside. If anyone is to spread news of little friend Chu Feng, they shall be killed," the War Faction's elder shouted. He was planning to have Chu Feng stay here, and protect Chu Feng with the strength of their King Monstrous Dragon Race.

"Yes, Milord!!!" The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts voiced in unison. They all agreed with that War Faction's elder.

Faced with this sort of situation, Chu Feng was momentarily at a loss. He had truly never expected the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts to have such an ardent reaction.

Chapter 1833 – You Shouldn't Deceive Me

“Chu Feng, you have truly brought me one pleasant surprise after another,” At this moment, Baili Xuankong was looking at Chu Feng with smiles all over his face.

Seeing the excited appearance of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, he had realized that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were truly considering Chu Feng to be their great benefactor. In the future, there would no longer be any King Monstrous Dragon Beast who would dare to make things difficult for Chu Feng.

Not only that, even at the time when the Four Great Imperial Clans were sparing no effort to kill Chu Feng, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, this enormous power, was willing to protect Chu Feng. This was truly a matter worthy of great joy.

Afterward, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts held a grand feast at their largest plaza. On the one hand, they were announcing to the rest of their clansmen that Yaojiao Tingyu had managed to obtain their Lord Dragon King's inheritance so that they could celebrate together.

On the other hand, they were gathering all the people from their race to thank Chu Feng. They were having all of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts remember what Chu Feng, their great benefactor, looked like.

This feast continued for a total of three days and three nights. However, even then, it was still going on. After inquiring about it, Chu Feng found out that they were planning to continue the feast for a total of at least ten days and ten nights before concluding the feast.

Even though the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts wanted Chu Feng to stay in their city for an extended period of time, Chu Feng did not wish to continue to stay.

Firstly, Chu Feng did not wish to implicate the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. After all, the walls had ears.

As there were scum like Yaojiao Ba and Yaojiao Xueran among the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, there would definitely be other scum like them.

Even though the majority of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts saw Chu Feng as their great benefactor and felt extremely grateful toward him, Chu Feng felt that it was certain that a portion of the War Faction's King Monstrous Dragon Beasts viewed him as their enemy.

After all, Yaojiao Ba had been in power in the King Monstrous Dragon Race for so long. He would definitely have people extremely loyal to him. If those who were extremely loyal to Yaojiao Ba were to spread news of Chu Feng being among the King Monstrous Dragon Race, the King Monstrous Dragon Race would likely not be able to withstand a joint effort of suppression from the Four Great Imperial Clans.

At that time, it would not only be Chu Feng who would suffer. Instead, he would have implicated the entire King Monstrous Dragon Race. The gains at that time would truly not make up for the losses. Chu Feng would also not be able to shoulder the responsibility.

Thus, Chu Feng found Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Tingyu. He had something that he needed to tell them.

.....

At this moment Chu Feng, Hong Qiang, Baili Xuankong, Yaojiao Tingyu and Yaojiao Guang arrived at a quiet side palace.

“Yoh, Tingyu, you’ve become a rank nine Half Martial Emperor already. The Beast Emperor’s power is truly enormous,” Chu Feng felt slightly envious of Yaojiao Tingyu upon seeing her current cultivation of rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

“Lord Dragon King’s power is indeed extremely strong. I am not boasting here. After inheriting this power, I am confident that I will be able to reach the Martial Emperor realm within a year’s time,” Yaojiao Tingyu said joyously.

Her current reaction was understandable. After all, she was only a rank five Half Martial Emperor three days ago. Yet, she was already a rank nine Half Martial Emperor now. Furthermore, her aura was still increasing in strength. With this sort of change, how could she not be joyous? Not to mention her, if anyone else were to obtain this power, they too would be in great joy.

“Tingyu, you are being too modest. There is simply no need for a year. In at the very most three months, and at the minimum half a month, you will become a rank one Martial Emperor,” Chu Feng said.

“That fast?” Hearing those words, Yaojiao Tingyu revealed an ecstatic expression. She was so happy that she directly stood up. After all the things that had happened, she deeply believed in anything that Chu Feng said.

“I wouldn’t deceive you. No matter what, I am a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? Little friend Chu Feng, you said you’re a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” Hearing those words, Yaojiao Guang was immediately startled.

“Chu Feng, so you’ve not only broken through to rank eight Half Martial Emperor, you’ve also become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were both looking at Chu Feng with overjoyed expressions.

They all knew that Chu Feng had become a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. After all, Chu Feng’s aura was right in front of them. However, if Chu Feng didn’t reveal his world spirit technique, they would not be able to see what level he was at. Thus, none of them had known that Chu Feng had become a

Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Actually, it’s all thanks to Lord Beast Emperor that I was able to break through to rank eight Half Martial Emperor and become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. It was all because of Lord Beast Emperor’s power left in the Inheritance Pond,” Chu Feng said.

“Great, great, great! This is truly an extremely good thing to have happened. Everyone knows that you have killed White-browed Immortal. This led to there being one less Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist in the Holy Land of Martialism. Because of that, many people were speaking maliciously of you.”

“However, if you are to let the people of the Holy Land of Martialism know that you’ve also become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, and the youngest one to have ever done so in history, I wonder what those who speak ill of you would think,” Yaojiao Guang felt extremely happy for Chu Feng.

“Boy, why didn’t you inform us of such an enormously happy occasion sooner?” Baili Xuankong said in a slightly complaining manner. He was feeling joyous for Chu Feng from the bottom of his heart. After all, Chu Feng was his hope, his pride.

That was also the reason why he was complaining. He blamed Chu Feng for not telling him of this matter sooner so that they couldn’t be happy about this sooner.

“Ancestor, don’t you know about it now?” Chu Feng laughed mischievously.

“Actually, Lord Beast Emperor not only helped me with these. He also left behind some items. These items are extremely important. As such, Chu Feng does not dare to accept them.”

“However, as these items are truly too important, I do not dare to reveal them publicly. That is why, after considering it, I have decided that they should be handed to the current Clan Chief of the

King Monstrous Dragon Race,” Chu Feng handed the Stellar Key and the stone title plate to Yaojiao Guang.

Yaojiao Guang did not accept them. Instead, he asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, what are these?”

“They were left behind by Lord Beast Emperor. They are treasures to open the Moonlight Maze. I think that the treasures Lord Beast Emperor obtained throughout his lifetime must be hidden in the Moonlight Maze,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? This!!!”

Hearing those words, the expressions of Yaojiao Guang, Yaojiao Tingyu and even Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang changed enormously. After a moment of shock, they grew silent. They were all silently staring at the key and title plate in Chu Feng’s hand. It was unknown what they were thinking about right now.

After a long while, Yaojiao Guang asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, why would they be in your possession?”

“Truth be told, when Tingyu was receiving the inheritance, Chu Feng entered an illusionary world. I met Lord Beast Emperor there. It was he who handed those things to me,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, was that illusionary world filled with whist mist, and did it have eight enormous sculptures?” Yaojiao Guang asked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“So that was what happened. This is Heaven’s Will, it is simply Heaven’s Will,” After hearing Chu Feng’s confirmation, Yaojiao Guang smiled a relieved smile. It was as if an enormous burden that had just landed on him was cast away.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you shouldn’t deceive me,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Senior, Chu Feng has not deceived you,” Chu Feng was startled. Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang were also startled.

“Haha, you’re still saying that you didn’t deceive me?” Yaojiao Guang laughed. Then, he said, “Lord Dragon King in that illusionary world must have said that he was planning to pass his treasures on to you. Why did you not tell me that? Why are you instead returning these treasures to me?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang all heaved a sigh of relief. It turned out this was what Yaojiao Guang had meant when he said deceive.

Chapter 1834 – Concerning The World's Hidden Valley

“Senior, while Lord Beast Emperor indeed mentioned passing down his inheritance, and while he had also said that I was qualified, he did not say that I was to be the one to inherit these treasures.”

“Furthermore, these are Lord Beast Emperor's treasures. As such, they belong to the King Monstrous Dragon Race. Even if he were to pass them to me, I absolutely cannot accept them,” Chu Feng explained.

“Little friend Chu Feng, our King Monstrous Dragon Race has always had a legend. If someone is able to enter the illusionary world, it means that that person obtained Lord Dragon King's acknowledgement. In turn, that person would be qualified to obtain Lord Dragon King's treasures.”

“Originally, we had always thought this to be a legend. After all, even after all these years have passed, there has never been anyone among us who was capable of entering that illusionary world.”

“No, that's incorrect. We have entered it. Merely, it was in our dreams. As it was in our dreams, it could not be considered to be real.”

“However, you are different. You actually entered it. Furthermore, when you woke up, you obtained these items. You truly entered that illusionary world. As such, you are the one that Lord Dragon King wanted to pass on his treasures to,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“But...” Chu Feng wanted to refuse.

“Little friend Chu Feng, let me finish,” Yaojiao Guang refused to give Chu Feng the chance to speak. He continued, “Little friend Chu Feng, think about it. Why would Lord Dragon King not

directly pass on his inheritance to our King Monstrous Dragon Race? Why did he separate his treasures and his power? Furthermore, it was not that we could obtain his inheritance just because we knew about it.”

“Lord Dragon King most definitely had his own way of thinking. As the saying goes, the greater one’s ability, the greater one’s responsibility. If one does not possess sufficient ability, but was shouldered with an excessively important responsibility, very few people would actually be able to carry on that burden. If they were to forcibly do so, the outcome would generally be extremely bad.”

“Tingyu was only able to obtain Lord Dragon King’s inheritance by borrowing your strength. We have already gone against Lord Dragon King’s wishes.”

“As for Lord Dragon King’s treasures, his great self has already stated that he will pass them onto you. If you are to still refuse them, you will have placed us in an extremely unrighteous and disloyal state. In the future when we die and reach the underworld, how could the two of us, father and daughter, possibly face Lord Dragon King?” Yaojiao Guang said.

“.....” Chu Feng didn’t know how to respond to this.

Yaojiao Tingyu stepped forward and urged, “Chu Feng, just accept them. Although your talent is extremely exceptional, the people who are jealous of your talent and want to harm you are too numerous. Lord Dragon King’s treasure deposit most likely contains countless treasures, as well as Imperial Armaments. They will definitely be able to help you grow stronger sooner.”

“When you become the overlord in the future, you merely need to come and help our King Monstrous Dragon Race more frequently. Wouldn’t this solve the problem? Why make such a clear-cut distinction now?”

“Chu Feng, Lord Clan Chief and Princess Tingyu have already said it like this. You should stop making things difficult for them

and accept those items,” Baili Xuankong naturally wished for Chu Feng to be able to obtain the treasures.

“That’s true, that’s true. What Senior Baili said is very correct,” Hong Qiang echoed in agreement.

“Very well, since seniors have all said it like this, then I, Chu Feng, shall no longer decline,” Chu Feng put the Stellar Key and stone title plate away.

Although he found it somewhat difficult to do so, he was extremely excited deep in his heart. How could he not wish to obtain the treasures of the Beast Emperor? He merely did not dare to seize them for himself because of his camaraderie toward his friends. But as Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Tingyu had already said it like that, Chu Feng no longer had any preoccupation as to whether to accept them or not. Thus, he openly accepted them.

“Little friend Chu Feng, the Moonlight Maze is the second ranked among the Holy Land of Martialism’s Three Great Forbidden Areas. Over the years, the various powers have tried to seize control of the Moonlight Maze many times. However, they have never succeeded.”

“Although you possess the key and title plate left behind by Lord Dragon King, you must not charge rashly into the Moonlight Maze if you do not have a sufficient amount of strength. That place... is truly extremely dangerous. It can be said that dangers lurk everywhere in there,” Yaojiao Guang warned.

“Thank you, senior, for your warning. This junior will definitely keep that in mind,” Chu Feng said.

“Senior, thank you for the magnificent hospitality and great kindness you’ve shown me over the past few days. Unfortunately, Chu Feng is afraid that he cannot stay here for long. I wish to bid my farewells today. Senior, I hope that you will allow me to leave.”

“What? Chu Feng, you’re planning to leave?” Chu Feng’s words

shocked both Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Tingyu. Neither of them wished for Chu Feng to leave.

Afterwards, Chu Feng explained about a lot of things and gave a lot of reasons as to why he had to leave. Even though Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Tingyu put forth all their effort to keep Chu Feng with them, in the end, they did not wish to go against Chu Feng's desires. As such, they could only reluctantly agree to him leaving.

"Little friend Chu Feng, with how the Four Great Imperial Clans are trying to catch you right now, where are you planning to go to?" Yaojiao Guang asked.

"Senior, you should know of the World's Hidden Valley, right?" Chu Feng asked. That place was Jiang Wushang's current location.

"World's Hidden Valley," Hearing those three words, Yaojiao Guan's expression immediately changed.

"Senior, what's wrong?" Chu Feng sensed that something was amiss.

"World's Hidden Valley, World's Hidden Valley, how could I possibly not know of it? That place is a pain to our King Monstrous Dragon Race," Yaojiao Guang said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and the others all realized that there should be some sort of story associated with the World's Hidden Valley. Thus, they did not interrupt Yaojiao Guang and instead looked to him.

"Forget about it, there are no strangers here. I'll tell you all about it."

"The World's Hidden Valley is located within our King Monstrous Dragon Race's territory. Our King Monstrous Dragon Race has never been one to allow others to pass through our territory as they wished."

"However, many years ago, an old man suddenly charged into

our territory. Not only that, he also occupied the World's Hidden Valley and declared that the World's Hidden Valley would be his from that day on, and that we, the King Monstrous Dragon Race, were not allowed to disturb him."

"How could our King Monstrous Dragon Race possibly tolerate something like that? Thus, we sent people to drive him out. However, to our surprise, regardless of how powerful the people we dispatched were or how numerous the amount of people we dispatched was, they were all driven back by that old man."

"After realizing that our opponent was not simple, I personally lead our King Monstrous Dragon Race's army to suppress that old man. However, even with that, we were no match for him."

"At that time, I realized that that old man's strength greatly surpassed my own. Thus, I requested the help of the elders. Unfortunately, even the elders were no match for that old man," After reaching this point in his story, Yaojiao Guang started to smile bitterly. Pain and agony filled his smile.

"Exactly who is that old man for him to be that powerful?" Chu Feng asked.

"Who? He's someone with an enormous origin. Chu Feng, how am I to explain this to you? There are countless hidden experts in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, I feel like the strongest among them is that old man," Yaojiao Guang said.

"The strongest hidden expert?" The expressions of Chu Feng and the others all changed. However, upon thinking about it, it was reasonable. After all, even the entire King Monstrous Dragon Race was incapable of doing anything to him. That was sufficient to show how strong he was.

"Senior, exactly who is that old man?" Chu Feng asked.

"I am uncertain as to who he is. However, I know that an old friend of mine sought refuge under him and became his lacky.

That truly came as an enormous shock to me,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Your old friend is?” Chu Feng asked.

“[Yin Gongfu](#),” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Yin Gongfu? Is he that Yin Gongfu whose original name was Ximen Gongfu?” Hong Qiang hurriedly asked.

“Precisely. You know of him?” Yaojiao Guang asked.

“Of course I do. He is my idol, the person who saved my life,” Hong Qiang said in an extremely excited manner.

Yin → Hidden. Gongfu → laborer/effort. It is the same word as Kung Fu. Technically, Kung Fu does not mean martial arts...

Chapter 1835 – Increasing The Bounty

“Senior Hong Qiang, exactly who is that Yin Gongfu?” Chu Feng asked. He wished to know who the person who had saved Hong Qiang was.

“Yin Gongfu used to be someone from the Ximen Imperial Clan. Back then, the position of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief should have been passed on to him.”

“However, for some unknown reason, not only did he not take up the position of the Clan Chief, he even broken off all relations with the Ximen Imperial Clan. Furthermore, he changed his surname and took on the new name of Yin Gongfu.”

“Yin Gongfu was extremely powerful. His strength was most likely not inferior to that of the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs. When I was younger, he saved my life once. I had always wanted to personally thank him for that.”

“Merely, he disappeared for many years, and no one was able to find any news regarding him.”

“There were people who said that he had been assassinated by the Ximen Imperial Clan. At that time, I had felt it to be an enormous pity that he had died. After all, Yin Gongfu was rumored to be an extremely heroic and passionate person who possessed a spirit of loyalty and self-sacrifice. Who would’ve thought that he didn’t die, and instead came to that place,” Hong Qiang was extremely excited.

“Of course he’s alive. He disappeared for many years because he came to the World’s Hidden Valley to seek refuge under that old man. Currently, he is working for that old man and handling matters across the World’s Hidden Valley,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“So that’s what happened. Exactly what sort of place is that World’s Hidden Valley?” Hong Qiang asked.

“Inside the World’s Hidden Valley is a mine. Merely, we thought of it as a waste mine that did not have any value.”

“However, that old man has gathered a group of people, and has been having them mine ores from that mine all day long.”

“Oh, that’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, why are you planning to go there?” Yaojiao Guang asked.

“A close friend of mine is currently training there. Thus, I wish to go there and see him,” Chu Feng said.

“So that’s the case. Although it is our disgrace that the World’s Hidden Valley has been snatched from us, fortunately, that old man only seized control of that place, and he has never caused any disturbances. Furthermore, even though we have tried to suppress him many times, he has not injured a single person from our King Monstrous Dragon Race. Furthermore, as Yin Gongfu has sought refuge under him and pleaded to me many times, as time passed, our King Monstrous Dragon Race became accepting of the World’s Hidden Valley being occupied by that old man, and was no longer hostile toward him or the World’s Hidden Valley.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, if you wish to go there, I am able to send you there. Although Yin Gongfu was unwilling to mention anything about that old man to me, it remains that he is my old friend. If you are to go there, he should receive you as a distinguished guest,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“In that case, senior, I will trouble you then,” Hearing what Yaojiao Guang said, Chu Feng had realized that the World’s Hidden Valley was not an ordinary place.

If he were to go by himself, he would only be able to bring up Zhang Tianyi’s father’s name and not provide any proof. Likely, the people from the World’s Hidden Valley would not believe him. However, if Yaojiao Guang were to personally go there to introduce and recommend him, he should not have any problems.

Afterward, after a series of farewells, Chu Feng was publicly and ceremoniously sent off by the King Monstrous Dragon Race.

As for the reason why he was leaving publicly, it was because Chu Feng wished to have all of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts know that he, Chu Feng, was leaving their King Monstrous Dragon Race. He was trying to have those that were going to inform the Four Clans of his whereabouts give up on that idea.

After leaving, Chu Feng, Hong Qiang and Baili Xuankong were led by Yaojiao Guang and proceeded toward the World's Hidden Valley.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a flash of light flew past. Its speed was so fast that it passed through the distant horizon in a blink of an eye and arrived before Baili Xuankong.

Upon closer inspection, they discovered that it was a little bird, a little golden bird. Its size was only that of half a palm. Its entire body was golden in color. It was extremely pretty. Especially its forehead, which was flickering with a special sort of radiance. There were actually words flowing through the light. Although one could not see those words clearly, it was sufficient to let them know that this was some sort of message.

“A Golden Flash Bird, is it for you?” Yaojiao Guang looked to Baili Xuankong in a slightly surprised manner.

It was not only him, even Chu Feng was surprised. Chu Feng had also heard of the Golden Flash Birds before. They were a sort of miraculous bird used to transmit messages. They were so fast that even Martial Emperors could not keep up with them.

However, a Golden Flash Bird was only capable of remembering a single person's aura. In other words, after someone left their aura in a Golden Flash Bird, regardless of where that person might be, the Golden Flash Bird would be able to find them.

However, after the Golden Flash Bird reached that person, it would forget about that person's aura. Furthermore, it would no longer be able to remember another person's aura in its entire life.

In other words, Golden Flash Birds could only be used to transmit a message once. After that, they would regain their freedom.

This led to Golden Flash Birds growing rarer and rarer. As matters stood, they were on the brink of extinction. Very rarely would one encounter a Golden Flash Bird. That was the reason why Yaojiao Guang reacted with such astonishment.

"Indeed, it's for me," As Baili Xuankong spoke, he placed his finger on that Golden Flash Bird's head.

"Buzz~~~"

The light that was being emitted from the head of the Golden Flash Bird disappeared. It had entered Baili Xuankong. After that light disappeared, the Golden Flash Bird shone with light, and then began to fly into the distance.

"You're not going to escape," Seeing that Golden Flash Bird flying away, Yaojiao Guang actually waved his sleeve and let out a layer of martial power that surged forward to stop the Golden Flash Bird.

Unfortunately, the speed of the Golden Flash Bird was simply too fast. It only flickered with light for a moment before disappearing altogether. No one knew where it had gone to.

"It's actually that fast. It is truly miraculous. Likely, even if the Five Emperors were alive, they would not be able to capture that bird," Yaojiao Guang shook his head with a smile. After failing to capture the bird, he was aware of how amazing the Golden Flash Bird was.

"Indeed, it's extremely amazing. Unfortunately, we most likely will not be able to see such a miraculous bird again," Hong Qiang nodded in a manner that showed that he agreed.

“Ancestor, did something happen? Who was the one who sent that Golden Flash Bird?” Chu Feng asked Baili Xuankong.

“It’s merely a trivial matter,” Baili Xuankong shook his head with a smile. Then, he said to Hong Qiang, “Brother Hong Qiang, I’ll leave Chu Feng in your care. I have a matter that I must attend to for the time being.”

“Rest assured, I will definitely protect Chu Feng with my life. Merely, this boy Chu Feng already no longer needs my protection. Instead, it will be me who needs his protection. Haha,” Hong Qiang laughed jokingly.

Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong also laughed. He was laughing out of enormous joy. He knew that Hong Qiang was not merely joking. After all, what Hong Qiang had said was the truth.

As matters stood, Chu Feng was capable of killing even rank two Martial Emperors. Furthermore, he was able to do so without relying on treasures, and by merely relying on his own strength. It must be said that the speed at which Chu Feng was growing caused him to feel extremely gratified.

“Chu Feng, I will only be gone for a short while. I will return right after. Stay in the World’s Hidden Valley and wait for my return,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor, please go ahead and do what you have to do. You do not have to worry about me,” Chu Feng said.

“I am very reassured with the current you,” With a smile on his face, Baili Xuankong patted Chu Feng’s shoulder.

Then, Baili Xuankong left. While Yaojiao Guang and Hong Qiang did not think anything much about Baili Xuankong leaving, Chu Feng was worried.

Even though Baili Xuankong appeared to be very normal, Chu Feng felt that Baili Xuankong must have some sort of worry in his mind. Likely, that trivial matter that he had mentioned was no

trivial matter at all.

However, as Baili Xuankong was not saying what it was, it was unsuitable for Chu Feng to ask either. After all, he was still unable to get involved in the business of his Ancestor.

Thus, Chu Feng decided to do as Baili Xuankong said, and wait for his return in the World's Hidden Valley.

.....

In fact, a lot of things were happening in the Holy Land of Martialism right now. The entire Holy Land of Martialism had burst into an uproar.

For example, there was Emperor Gong's successor, Zhang Tianyi, who had defeated the various other members of his generation and received the title of the strongest member of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Then there was Chu Feng, who had fought against the Four Great Imperial Clans. Not only had he been unharmed in the slightest, he had also managed to successfully escape a seemingly impenetrable trap. Furthermore, he had killed many Martial Emperors, and even the White-browed Immortal of the Ten Immortals.

However, what Chu Feng didn't know was that the latest matter that caused the Holy Land of Martialism to burst into an uproar was the Four Great Imperial Clans increasing the bounty on him. Not only did they double their original bounty, they also added an Imperial Armament, an actual Imperial Armament, to the bounty.

It must be said that the bounty the Four Great Imperial Clans had placed on Chu Feng tempted a lot of people. Even many hidden experts were tempted by it. After all, Imperial Armaments were the most paramount treasures in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Because of that increased bounty, Chu Feng had once again become the target of a multitude of arrows. Many people once again wanted to eliminate him.

Chapter 1836 – Lovers' Worry

Currently, what the people of the Holy Land of Martialism were discussing the most were the grudges and grievances between Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans. However, as for the Immortal Island, what they were concerned about the most was Baili Xinghe's death.

Baili Xinghe had disappeared on the day of the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly and had not shown himself afterward either. While others were not worried about his life and death, his master, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, was extremely worried.

Seeing that his disciple still had not returned after a long time had passed, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal personally left for the Gong Ba Plains again. Although Zhang Ming and Zhang Tianyi were no longer present on the Gong Ba Plains and only that fort remained, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had managed to obtain some clues after making inquiries and investigations.

Right now, he was certain of one thing. That was that his disciple, Baili Xinghe, was definitely dead.

As for the culprits who had caused the death of his disciple, they were two people: Chu Feng and Leng Yue.

.....

On the Immortal Island. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal was standing before a grave. Four characters were written on the tombstone — Baili Xinghe. However, this grave was empty.

“Xinghe, your master has let you down. Even though you met a violent death, I was unable to even preserve your corpse.”

“But, your master will definitely avenge you. You can rest assured,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal looked to the empty grave. Guilt filled his aged eyes.

“Senior,” Suddenly, a gentle voice sounded. The Weaponry Refinement turned around to look. There were three beautiful women standing there.

These three beauties were Chu Feng’s three lovers; Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei.

Su Rou was sexy. Su Mei was adorable. As for Zi Ling, she was much more attractive than Su Rou and Su Mei in all aspects; being both sexy and adorable. She gave off an extremely distinguished air yet was still very attractive. She was a beauty capable of causing the downfall of a city or state.

Su Rou and Zi Ling had been on the Immortal Island since long ago. As for Su Mei, she had originally been staying in the World Spiritist Alliance. However, in recent days, she had been personally taught by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

The three sisters were originally supposed to be extremely happy to reunite with one another. However, at this moment, the three of them all had worried expressions on their faces. The three of them already knew that Baili Xinghe had died, and that there were two suspects that could have caused the death of Baili Xinghe. One was Leng Yue, and the other was Chu Feng.

“So you all have come,” Although the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was extremely sentimental, he did not reveal his sadness to the three of them. Instead, he showed the same sort of amiableness when facing them.

“We wish to [burn incense sticks](#) for Senior Brother Baili,” Zi Ling and the others said.

“Mn, go ahead,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal waved his hand.

After that, Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei all offered incense sticks to Baili Xinghe. Actually, Zi Ling, Su Rou and even Su Mei, who had just arrived here, all deeply loathed Baili Xinghe.

However, it remained that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had taught them a lot of things, and spent a great amount of effort to completely remove the backlash which they were suffering from. Thus, taking the Weaponry Refinement Immortal into consideration, they still had to offer incense sticks to Baili Xinghe.

“Senior, the dead cannot be revived. Please don’t grieve anymore,” After offering their incense sticks, the three girls said together.

“That’s right, the dead cannot be revived. However, this hatred must be avenged,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Senior, could it be that you’ve determined who senior brother Baili’s murderer is?” Zi Ling asked in a deeply concerned manner. She was not concerned about Baili Xinghe’s death. Rather, she was extremely concerned about who his murderer was, whether or not his death was related to Chu Feng. She naturally hoped that his death was not related to Chu Feng.

The three of them had lived on the Immortal Island for quite some time now. As such, to a greater or lesser degree, they already knew how powerful the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was. As Chu Feng was currently wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clans, and their master refused to show his face the entire time, if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were to attack Chu Feng at such a moment, it would be very difficult for Chu Feng to escape death.

“I’ve ascertained who his murderer is. It was the Heavenly Law Palace’s disciple, Leng Yue,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Leng Yue?” Hearing those words, Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei all heaved a sigh of relief.

“Senior, Leng Yue is the most highly regarded disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace. If you are to touch her, the Heavenly Law Palace will definitely not let you get away,” Su Rou said.

“I naturally know that the Heavenly Law Palace is hard to deal with. But, my disciple is also not someone that anyone can kill.”

“Furthermore, Xinghe was entrusted to me by my close friend before his death. I was entrusted with taking care of him.”

“Now that Xinghe has been killed, I have let my close friend down. If I am to do nothing about it, how could I still be considered to be human?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“You all do not have to concern yourselves with this matter anymore. I am definitely going to avenge Xinghe,” The Weaponry Refinement immortal waved his hand to indicate to Zi Ling and the others that they did not have to urge him against it anymore. Then, he looked to Su Mei and asked, “Lil Mei, are you used to this place yet? How is it compared to the World Spiritist Alliance?”

“Yes, I’ve grown very used to this place. Senior treats me like his own relative. I also consider senior to be my relative. Furthermore, my sisters are also here. This place feels like home to me. It is much better than the World Spiritist Alliance,” Su Mei said with a beaming smile.

What she had said was the truth. Even though the Left Reverend and the others were extremely good to her in the World Spiritist Alliance, there were too many people there. As such, there had always been people who were trying to court her favor. She disliked that very much.

“That’s good. If you like this place, then stay here longer. Your big brother Chu Feng has currently offended the Four Great Imperial Clans. If people were to know that you all are related to him, you all will definitely be implicated. At that time, even the World Spiritist Alliance will not be able to protect you.”

“As for me, although I have entered seclusion to refine weapons for years, and I have not killed anyone for years, the Four Great Imperial Clans would still have to consider deeply should they

wish to intrude upon my Immortal Island,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Senior is extremely formidable,” Su Mei nodded and smiled sweetly.

Afterwards, they chatted for a bit longer. Then, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal left.

When the Weaponry Refinement Immortal left, the smiles on Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei’s faces all disappeared.

“It would seem that senior has already determined the murderer to be Leng Yue. This matter is unrelated to big brother Chu Feng. Merely... if this matter is related to big brother Chu Feng, I wonder what senior will do,” Zi Ling was still worried.

“Whenever senior mentions big brother Chu Feng, he reveals an extremely appreciative expression. Furthermore, we can tell from his tone that he is worried about big brother Chu Feng.”

“It is only because of certain things that he decided to not help big brother Chu Feng. I think... that even if Baili Xinghe’s death is caused by big brother Chu Feng, senior would also not look into it.”

“After all, I’ve heard from others that Baili Xinghe is a scoundrel. With how wise and sensitive senior is, how could he not know about the character of his disciple?’ Su Mei said.

“I’m afraid that wouldn’t necessarily be the case. Baili Xinghe was only able to become senior’s disciple because of his ancestor’s relationship with senior. I’ve heard that senior and Baili Xinghe’s ancestor were life and death brothers. Furthermore, his ancestor only died because he was saving senior.”

“With that special relationship, even if it was big brother Chu Feng that killed Baili Xinghe, senior would likely not spare him either,” Su Rou said.

“Rather than worrying blindly in here, I really wish to be able to

go out and see him. Unfortunately... I am not strong enough. Even if I were to see him, I would only become his burden, and not be able to help him at all,” Thinking of those things, Zi Ling’s eyes grew a bit reddened.

At this time, Su Rou and Su Mei both revealed expressions of deep worry on their faces. What the three of them were most concerned about was none other than Chu Feng.

.....

“Achoo!”

Chu Feng was on the way to the World’s Hidden Valley when he suddenly sneezed a loud sneeze.

“[One sneeze](#) is someone thinking about you, two sneezes is someone cursing you, and three sneezes is talking about you. With such a loud sneeze, little friend Chu Feng, it would seem that someone is thinking about you deeply,” Yaojiao Guang said with a smile.

[Editor’s note: the sneezing is an old wives’ tale in China and is still commonly referred to.]

“Never would I have thought that even senior would joke around,” Chu Feng wiped his nose and smiled.

“Haha, even though we are monstrous beasts, we still possess the seven emotional states and six desires like humans. Naturally, we know how to joke around too. Else, our lives would’ve been very boring.”

Yaojiao Guang was currently in a very good mood. At this moment, he stopped and pointed to the vast, borderless forest before them, “We’ve arrived at the World’s Hidden Valley.”

Burning incense sticks to the dead is a form of paying respect to the dead.

Chapter 1837 – Seeing Jiang Wushang Again

“World’s Hidden Valley? But this is clearly a forest,” Hong Qiang said.

“No. Below us is the World’s Hidden Valley. This forest is formed by a spirit formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Spirit formation?” Hong Qiang was startled.

“As expected from a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Little friend Chu Feng actually managed to see through it with a single glance. That’s right, the master of this World’s Hidden Valley is also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? Could he be one of the Ten Immortals?” Hong Qiang asked.

“Haha, the people of the world only know that the Ten Immortals are Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. However, in reality, the Holy Land of Martialism is a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers. The Ten Immortals are not the only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Merely, for some experts, they do not wish for others to know about them. One such example would be the master of this place,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Indeed, the Holy Land of Martialism is truly a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers. This senior’s world spirit techniques greatly surpass my own,” Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration. Although they were both Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, the strength of a world spiritist’s world spirit techniques was also related to the strength of their cultivation.

Although Chu Feng had become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he could only contend against rank two Martial Emperors using his world spirit techniques. That said, his world

spirit techniques were greatly inferior to those of Zhang Tianyi's father, Zhang Ming.

As for the spirit formation set up by this hidden expert, it was even stronger than the fort Zhang Tianyi's father had set up on the Gong Ba Plains. From this, it could be determined that this hidden expert's strength would likely be stronger than that of Zhang Tianyi's father.

"Yin Gongfu, stop pretending to be blind. Quickly, open the door!!!!" Yaojiao Guang shouted downward. His voice was so resounding that the world started to tremble.

"Buzz~~~"

Right after he said those words, a figure flew out from the forest underneath and stood before Chu Feng and the others.

It was a middle-aged man. He was wearing very plain and unadorned clothes. His appearance was also very ordinary. However, he was emitting an air that no ordinary people possessed. His cultivation was the same as Yaojiao Guang's; he was a rank three Martial Emperor. This person was Yin Gongfu.

"Brother Yaojiao, I trust that you have been well since we last met. What brought you the leisure to come visit me here today?" Yin Gongfu was extremely surprised upon seeing Yaojiao Guang. However, he was also very happy.

"I don't have the leisure to come to your place. I have only come here to help see my two friends here and make some introductions. This is..." Yaojiao Guang pointed to Chu Feng and Hong Qiang behind him.

"Chu Feng?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, Yin Gongfu was immediately startled. An expression of shock covered his face.

"My, you're shocked, no? That's right, he is Chu Feng," Yaojiao Guang said in a complacent manner.

"Chu Feng pays his respects to Senior Yin," Chu Feng clasped his

fist and greeted Yin Gongfu courteously.

“My, there’s no need to be this overly courteous. Little friend Chu Feng, you are currently the most famous person in the Holy Land of Martialism. There is no one who does not know about you. To see you in the flesh today, I must say, you are truly outstanding, and even stronger than I had imagined you to be,” Yin Gongfu praised Chu Feng repeatedly. Then, he looked to Hong Qiang and said, “This person is?”

“Lord Benefactor, please receive this Hong Qiang’s respects,” As Hong Qiang spoke, he got on his knees and knelt in midair. He began to kowtow to Yin Gongfu.

“My, quickly, get back up. What are you doing?” Yin Gongfu immediately lent Hong Qiang an arm to help him back up.

“While benefactor might not remember this Hong Qiang, this Hong Qiang will always remember you. Back then, when this Hong Qiang was still young, benefactor, you saved this Hong Qiang’s life,” Hong Qiang said.

“Hong Qiang. Were you that young man who was being chased by ferocious beasts in the Alliance Domain?” Yin Gongfu asked.

“I am. Benefactor, you actually still remember this junior,” Hong Qiang was extremely happy.

“Of course I do. Merely, back then, you were a graceful and handsome youth. Yet now, your old bones have become as weary as mine,” Yin Gongfu sighed.

“Indeed. Time flies. However, what happened back then is still engraved in my memory, in my heart. It is still as clear as yesterday. This junior has always wanted to repay benefactor for saving his life,” Hong Qiang said.

Yin Gongfu patted Hong Qiang’s shoulder and said, “My, it’s something from the past. There’s no need to think about it anymore. For us to be able to meet each other again after all these

years, it is fate.”

“Although I am much older than you, neither of us are young anymore. Thus, you don’t have to address me as benefactor anymore. Just address me as Yin Gongfu directly. From today onward, we shall be friends.”

“Right,” Hong Qiang agreed to it right away.

“Enough, enough, the two of you can slowly reminisce with one another in the future. Let me get to the proper business. Is there a young man by the name of Jiang Wushang here?” Yaojiao Guang asked Yin Gongfu.

“Yes,” Yin Gongfu said.

“That’s good then. He is Chu Feng’s brother. Chu Feng has come here for the sake of finding him. Is it possible to have Chu Feng enter and see him?” Yaojiao Guang said.

“That’s naturally no issue at all. For you all to come here, you are distinguished guests. Not to mention seeing someone, we will treat you as distinguished guests too. Come, Brother Yaojiao, let’s go in and drink some wine,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Forget about it, I’m not going into the World’s Hidden Valley. If you want to drink, come to my King Monstrous Dragon Race to drink,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Oh you, you’re still this narrow-minded,” Yin Gongfu said with contempt.

“Pah! As if you wouldn’t be narrow-minded. If your territory is occupied by someone else, what other feeling could you possibly have? Enough, just take care of Chu Feng. If something is to happen to him, I’ll come and find you,” Yaojiao Guang turned around and left.

“That temper of his,” Seeing that Yaojiao Guang had already left and disappeared without a trace, Yin Gongfu shook his head with a smile. Then, he brought Chu Feng and Hong Qiang into the

World's Hidden Valley.

The World's Hidden Valley was different from how Chu Feng had imagined it would be. This was not a valley. Rather, it was enormous. It was as if it were an entire separate world. There were mountains, rivers and lakes. There were white cranes flying in the sky and nimble fish swimming in the water. At a glance, this place looked like a paradise, a land of immortals.

Yin Gongfu was extremely enthusiastic toward Chu Feng and Hong Qiang. He also showed a great amount of attentiveness and hospitality toward them. After entering the World's Hidden Valley, he immediately prepared two top-notch palaces for Chu Feng and Hong Qiang to rest in.

However, Chu Feng had come here for the sake of finding Jiang Wushang. While Chu Feng had requested to see Jiang Wushang many times, Yin Gongfu had switched the subject every time. He had refused to allow Chu Feng to directly see Jiang Wushang. This made Chu Feng realize that something was wrong.

“Senior Yin, may I see Jiang Wushang?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Regarding that... you may. Merely, Jiang Wushang made some mistakes, and is being punished right now. Little friend Chu Feng, you must not be emotional upon seeing him,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Punishment? Is he fine?” Chu Feng asked.

“It's nothing too serious. Merely, he is being punished to work in the mine for an entire year. Here, I'll bring you there,” As Yin Gongfu spoke, he began to show the way for Chu Feng.

Afterward, the three of them arrived at a mining site. Right after arriving at the mining site, Chu Feng's eyes shone.

The mine was too special. It was emitting extremely hot gaseous flames. Likely, cultivators below the Half Martial Emperor level would simply not be able to approach it at all. Even if they were able to approach it, they would die within the mine.

Furthermore, the ores of the mine were extremely hard. Unless one were to use a special miner's pick, it would simply be impossible to mine those ores. Those ores should have originated from the Ancient Era.

Looking at the mining site, Chu Feng discovered that there were many people mining. Although they were all Half Martial Emperor-level experts, they were all drenched in sweat, with expressions of exhaustion on their faces.

Finally, Chu Feng saw a familiar figure in the mining site. It was Jiang Wushang.

After several years had passed, Jiang Wushang was already no longer a youngster. However, Chu Feng was still able to recognize him with a single glance.

Compared to before, Jiang Wushang's current cultivation was leaps and bounds above his cultivation back then. He was a rank one Half Martial Emperor.

However, with that level of cultivation, Jiang Wushang was only barely able to survive in this special mining site.

Thus, at this moment, Jiang Wushang was extremely weary and beaten. However, even with that being the case, he still clenched his teeth, grasped the pick in his hand tightly, and continued to mine ores.

"These ores are very special. However, they provide absolutely no assistance to one's cultivation. I also do not know what use these ores provide."

"What might be the reason the master of this place mines these ores? Could it really only be meant to be used as a means of punishment?" Eggy inspected the mine and began to make guesses.

As for Chu Feng, what he was worried about the most was not how special the ores here were. Instead, he was worried about his brother Jiang Wushang. He discovered that not only was Jiang

Wushang extremely weary and miserable-looking, there were also a lot of scars on his body. Those were scars of being whipped. They were astonishing wounds. This meant that Jiang Wushang's life here was not good at all.

Chapter 1838 – Brother Being Plotted Against By Others

“Senior, what sort of mistake did Jiang Wushang make to cause him to be punished in such a place?” Chu Feng asked.

“Stealing,” Yin Gongfu said.

“What did he steal?” Chu Feng asked.

“Items beneficial to one’s cultivation,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Might that be a mistake?” Chu Feng did not believe that. From his understanding of Jiang Wushang, he believed that Jiang Wushang was someone who would absolutely not do something like that.

“There’s definite proof. He was caught red-handed. Although he refused to admit to it, as per the rules of this place, I had no choice but to punish him,” Yin Gongfu said. From his tone, Chu Feng was able to tell that it seemed like Yin Gongfu also did not wish to punish Jiang Wushang.

“Senior, am I allowed to go and talk to him?” Chu Feng asked.

“Normally, you could not. However, if you wish to, then go ahead,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng immediately leapt forward and arrived in the mine. After he entered the mine, Chu Feng immediately felt a pressure from it. Merely, this pressure did not affect Chu Feng much.

“Little brother Wushang,” Chu Feng landed directly beside Jiang Wushang.

Hearing Chu Feng’s voice, Jiang Wushang had an extremely shocked and almost petrified expression. Immediately afterward, he hurriedly turned around to look.

“Big brother Chu Feng, it’s really you?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang was immediately overjoyed, and started to smile beamingly. He let go of his pick and hugged Chu Feng tightly.

“It’s me. Little brother Wushang, I’ve finally found you,” Chu Feng also tightly hugged Jiang Wushang.

The two brothers had been separated for many years. And now, they had managed to reunite with one another in a foreign land. This emotion that they were feeling was something that only the two of them understood.

“Big brother Chu Feng, why are you here?” Jiang Wushang asked in a very emotional manner.

“I came to know of your whereabouts from senior brother Zhang,” Chu Feng said.

“Big brother Tianyi? Haha, big brother Tianyi is amazing right now. It turned out that his father is actually Emperor Gong’s successor. No, that’s wrong. Big brother Tianyi is Emperor Gong’s successor now.”

“However, even with that, my idol still remains you, big brother Chu Feng. I have heard about all the things relating to you, especially what happened at the Gong Ba Plains recently.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, I can only say that you’re truly amazing. You are the pride of this brother of yours,” Jiang Wushang smiled brilliantly. He already knew about the various things regarding Chu Feng. However, he did not ask about who had been in the wrong. The reason for that was because he felt that Chu Feng was most definitely the one in the right.

“Little brother Wushang, I’ve heard that you are being punished because you stole something?” Chu Feng asked.

“Big brother Chu Feng, do you believe that?” Jiang Wushang asked with a smile.

“Of course not. That’s why I’m asking you. Exactly what

happened? Senior brother Zhang told me that you came here to train. Why is it that when I arrived, you're actually undergoing punishment?" Chu Feng asked.

Jiang Wushang sighed. "What else could have happened? Your little brother is a fool. I have been had by others," he smiled bitterly.

"Come here," Chu Feng pulled Jiang Wushang to the side. Then, he asked, "Exactly what happened? If you are to tell me, I might be able to help you."

"Forget about it. You have enough trouble to deal with. I do not wish to burden you with more. Things here are not as simple as you imagine them to be. You shouldn't bother with it," Jiang Wushang shook his head. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said, "Big brother Chu Feng, I am extremely happy to be able to see you." After saying those words, Jiang Wushang's eyes began to tear up.

Back then, Jiang Wushang had been a youngster. However, he was already a grown man now. Real men did not cry easily. He was also one such person. Jiang Wushang had always been a very strong person.

However, all these years of perseverance, all these years of suffering and pain, how could he possibly enjoy them? How could he possibly not feel grievances?

He naturally felt grievances, naturally felt unwell. Especially after being framed by others and ending up in such a state, he was feeling extremely pained, extremely wronged. Merely, as a man, he could not cry and, had to endure all of it.

However, when he saw Chu Feng, it was as if he had seen the person that he could depend on. Before the person that he could depend on, Jiang Wushang's stubbornness collapsed right away. He had revealed his frail side.

Seeing Jiang Wushang acting like this, Chu Feng felt extremely begrieved. He patted Jiang Wushang's shoulder and said, "If you think of me as your brother, tell me. Else, I will forcibly bring you away right now."

"Big brother Chu Feng, you..." Jiang Wushang became stunned. He didn't know what to do.

"Little brother Wushang, you know how I am. I am someone who will do what I say. Regardless of how extraordinary the master of this place is, I will still not allow him to make things difficult on my brother. If worst comes to worst, I'll just die," As Chu Feng spoke, he tightly grabbed onto Jiang Wushang's shoulder. He was planning to soar into the air with Jiang Wushang.

"Don't. Big brother Chu Feng, I'll tell you," Seeing that, Jiang Wushang hurriedly spoke. He knew that Chu Feng was really someone who would do what he said. If Chu Feng were to truly create trouble in this place, he would have implicated Chu Feng.

With no other choice, Jiang Wushang ended up telling Chu Feng what had happened. Chu Feng also came to learn the truth.

Back then, Jiang Wushang had been introduced to train in this place by Zhang Tianyi's father. The reason for that was because the master of this place possessed a grand origin, and was also someone who possessed an extremely pure Imperial Bloodline. Most importantly, he was not someone from the Four Great Imperial Clans.

His name was Duan Jidao. Duan Jidao was someone from the Duan Royal Clan. Although he came from a Royal Clan that was inferior to the Imperial Clans, he was an existence that even the Three Palaces feared. As for the Four Great Imperial Clans, there was simply no need to mention them.

As he possessed an Imperial Bloodline, and his Imperial Bloodline was extremely pure, he had, by himself, turned the Duan Royal Clan into the Duan Dynasty. Back then, the Duan Dynasty had

been extremely famous and powerful. They were capable of bringing fear to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism.

At that time, the Four Great Imperial Clans greatly feared him. They were all afraid that the Duan Dynasty would threaten their Four Great Imperial Clan's status. In actuality, with Duan Jidao's ability, he was indeed capable of doing so.

However, suddenly, one day, the Duan Dynasty was wiped out. After that, Duan Jidao also disappeared.

When Duan Jidao reappeared after many years had passed, his face was covered with a beard, and he had become a white-haired old man. His appearance of being covered with white hair made him resemble a madman. Even though he used to be extremely famous back then, no one was able to recognize him without him mentioning who he was.

Afterward, Duan Jidao arrived at this place. Not only did he seize the territory of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, he also began to find people abandoned by the Imperial Clans, as well as outstanding members of the younger generation from the various Royal Clans, to grant them Imperial Bloodlines and nurture them here.

Duan Jidao did all of this for the sake of finding a successor. Thus, after Jiang Wushang arrived in this place and found out about this, he worked extremely hard. Because of that, Jiang Wushang began to be thought of highly by Duan Jidao.

Everyone felt that Jiang Wushang would be one of the very few people who would have a chance to become Duan Jidao's successor.

Unfortunately, Jiang Wushang had been incautious when making friends, and ended up falling for a trap that someone else had set up.

That person's name was Song Yuheng. He was the person said to

have the greatest possibility of becoming Duan Jidao's successor. He was also the person that Duan Jidao thought the most highly of.

Song Yuheng was already over a hundred years old. He was no longer considered to be part of the younger generation. However, he had ended up becoming Jiang Wushang's friend.

That day, he invited Jiang Wushang to be a guest at his palace. Furthermore, when Jiang Wushang was leaving, he presented Jiang Wushang with a gift.

However, on that exact day, Jiang Wushang was wrongly accused of stealing Song Yuheng's father's inherited treasure. After a search, that treasure was indeed discovered in Jiang Wushang's residence.

It turned out that treasure was the gift that Song Yuheng had given Jiang Wushang. Jiang Wushang had been unable to explain himself. Just like that, he had been wrongly accused, lost all of his great future prospects, and sent here to mine for a year as punishment.

Chapter 1839 – Song Yuheng And His Father

“Jiang Wushang, what arrogance you have. Instead of mining like you should be doing, you are instead goofing off here. You are truly seeking a beating.”

“Paa~~~”

Right at this moment, a whip lash was heard. A powerful whip appeared out of nowhere and lashed toward Jiang Wushang’s head.

The whip was lashed with such powerful strength that even space was ripped apart by it. If the whip were to land on Jiang Wushang, then, with Jiang Wushang’s cultivation, it would definitely rip his flesh apart.

When that whip arrived before Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng immediately understood why Jiang Wushang’s body was filled with astonishing wounds. Likely, it was all done by that man.

Just thinking about it, Chu Feng was immediately enraged. He stretched forth his hand and grabbed the incoming whip. Then, he violently flung it away. “Boom!” The person holding the whip was thrown to the top of the mine cave.

“Boom~~~”

Following that loud explosion, the mine itself also trembled slightly. This commotion attracted the attention of countless people. They all stopped digging and turned to look in Chu Feng’s direction.

“Fuck! Who the hell are you? You dare to hit me, your daddy?” Although that man was stronger than Jiang Wushang, and possessed the cultivation of a rank three Half Martial Emperor, he was absolutely no match for Chu Feng. Chu Feng’s fling had left him badly injured.

Even though he was still acting very arrogant, blood was flowing

from his mouth nonstop.

“Remember my name, I am Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng? Why haven’t I heard your name before? When did you get here?” Resisting the pain with great difficulty, that man stood up and asked angrily.

“What ignorance. This person here is the person who swept the floor with the Four Great Imperial Clans’ younger generation at Mooncloud City, the Chu Feng that subdued the Evil God Sword. Remember this, he is my, Jiang Wushang’s, brother,” Jiang Wushang pointed at Chu Feng and spoke in a very proud manner.

“What? He is Chu Feng?!!!” Hearing what Jiang Wushang said, the people in the crowd were all startled. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng turned into ones of astonishment and fear.

Training here, they were not allowed to leave and go outside. Although they had not seen Chu Feng’s wanted posters, they still knew of Chu Feng’s past achievements. Thus, the name ‘Chu Feng’ was already well-known to them. They knew that he was an extremely ferocious member of the younger generation.

Sure enough, after seeing him for the first time today, it was indeed the case. He actually even dared to beat up the whipcracker of this place. This was definitely something that no one else dared to do.

“You, you, you... just you wait,” After learning of Chu Feng’s identity, that rank three Half Martial Emperor was scared. He immediately ran away while limping and staggering.

“Chu Feng, this is bad. He has gone to find helpers. Quickly, leave this place,” Seeing that, Jiang Wushang immediately warned Chu Feng.

“Who has he gone to find? Is it that Song Yuheng?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. They are all Song Yuheng’s henchmen. They were ordered by Song Yuheng to deliberately make things difficult for me here,” Jiang Wushang said.

“Perfect opportunity. I just so happened to want to meet that Song Yuheng too,” Chu Feng said with a sneer. To dare to plot against his brother, Chu Feng did not care who that Song Yuheng might be. He was determined to not let him off that easily.

Sure enough, not long after that rank three Half Martial Emperor left, a group of people ran over. They all had youthful appearances. As for the leader among them, he was even younger in appearance, and actually had the appearance of a fifteen to sixteen-year-old youngster. However, his cultivation was extremely strong. Like Chu Feng, he was a rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

Jiang Wushang pointed at the youngster, the leader of the group, and said, “He is Song Yuheng.”

“Humph, you’re already an old man, yet you still disguise yourself with the appearance of a youngster. Truly disgusting,” Chu Feng revealed an expression of disgust. The reason for that was because Song Yuheng was already over a hundred years old. He could not even be considered to be part of the younger generation. Even if he didn’t use the appearance of a white-haired old man, he should, at the very least, have the appearance of a middle-aged man. Yet, he currently had the appearance of a youngster. It was clear that he had disguised his actual appearance. Furthermore, upon thinking about what he had done to Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng felt even more disgusted with him.

“You are Chu Feng?” That Song Yuheng was also sizing up Chu Feng. There was a trace of cautiousness in his gaze. Although he had not seen Chu Feng before, he had heard about Chu Feng’s various accomplishments, and knew that Chu Feng was an extremely powerful member of the younger generation.

“I am your granddaddy,” Chu Feng spoke rudely right away. Chu

Feng found no reason to be courteous toward someone who had plotted against his brother.

Suddenly, Song Yuheng pointed at Chu Feng and said, "A thief who has stolen treasures, an animal that murdered his benefactor, actually dares to come to our World's Hidden Valley to behave this atrociously? Men! Seize him!"

Right after he said those words, his henchmen behind him all took out their respective weapons. They were planning to attack Chu Feng.

"Do not behave rudely!" However, right at this moment, an extremely imposing voice sounded. Following that, Yin Gongfu and Hong Qiang descended from the air.

"Little friend Chu Feng is a distinguished guest invited here by me. I shall see who dares to act rudely toward him," Yin Gongfu glowered at the crowd. He was extremely domineering.

Being started at by his gaze, those people that were planning to attack Chu Feng immediately put their weapons away. In fact, they did not even dare to raise their heads, and moved to the side. From this, it could be seen that they were extremely afraid of Yin Gongfu.

At that moment, the only person that dared to face Yin Gongfu was Song Yuheng.

"Lord Yin, I am truly sorry. I have only heard of what Chu Feng had done, and did not know that he was a guest invited over by you. I hope that Lord Yin will be willing to forgive my rudeness," Song Yuheng said in a very apologetic manner.

"There is no need to apologize to me. Apologize to little friend Chu Feng instead," Yin Gongfu said.

Song Yuheng was startled upon hearing those words. A trace of unwillingness flashed through his eyes. However, in the end, he clenched his fists and prepared to apologize to Chu Feng.

“Lord Yin, that Chu Feng is a person that has done all sorts of evil. Although I do not know why you invited such a man over to be a guest of our World’s Hidden Valley, I feel that my son does not have to apologize to such a man,” However, right at this moment, a middle-aged man descended from the sky and landed beside Song Yuheng.

Although this man had a middle-aged appearance, his appearance resembled Song Yuheng’s youngster appearance. Adding on what he had said earlier, Chu Feng was already certain that this man should be Song Yuheng’s father. Song Yuheng’s father possessed the cultivation of a rank one Martial Emperor.

Merely, his cultivation was greatly inferior to Yin Gongfu’s. Chu Feng did not know where he was getting the confidence to speak to Yin Gongfu in such a manner from.

“It is Lord Duan who has personally left this place under my watch. Could it be that I do not even have the privilege to invite who I want here as a guest?” Yin Gongfu’s sword-like eyebrows narrowed as he spoke those words coldly.

“Naturally, you have that privilege. I also am not saying anything else. Merely...” Song Yuheng’s father said.

“It’s good that you know that I have that privilege. You do not have to say anything else, as my decision is not something that you are qualified to question,” Yin Gongfu said.

“You...” Hearing those words, Song Yuheng’s father’s complexion turned ashen. Being publicly rebuked by Yin Gongfu in such a manner caused him to feel extremely insulted.

“Brother Chu Feng, I’ve heard that you have conquered the legendary Demon Sword, the Evil God Sword. I presume that your sword techniques must thus be outstanding. I just so happen to also be someone who specialized in sword techniques. Since we have been brought together by fate today, I wish to spar with Brother Chu Feng, and seek some advice. Might that be possible?”

Song Yuheng flipped his palm. Then, a three-foot-long cyan sword appeared in his hand.

That was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. It seemed that this Song Yuheng was trying to retrieve his father's lost face. As for his way to do so, he was planning to publicly teach Chu Feng a lesson.

"You wish to spar with me in sword techniques?" Chu Feng asked.

"Could it be that you don't dare?" Song Yuheng asked.

"Haha..." Hearing those words, both Yin Gongfu and Jiang Wushang laughed lightly.

The reason why Song Yuheng dared to act this arrogant toward Chu Feng was only because he had only heard about what Chu Feng had done at Mooncloud City. However, he didn't know about how Chu Feng had killed many Martial Emperors from the Four Great Imperial Clans at the Gong Ba Plains.

If he knew that Chu Feng was capable of killing even Martial Emperors, likely, even if he were given ten more guts, he would not dare to arrogantly provoke him, much less try to spar with him.

At this moment, neither Yin Gongfu nor Jiang Wushang mentioned how strong Chu Feng really was. There was no need to mention why Jiang Wushang did that. He deeply longed for Chu Feng to teach Song Yuheng a lesson. However, surprisingly, even Yin Gongfu did not say anything. It seemed that he was also very much looking forward to Song Yuheng being disgraced.

Chapter 1840 – The Heaven-defying Chu Feng

“You do not even dare to reveal your sword. It would appear that the rumor of you subduing the Evil God Sword was fake,” Seeing that Chu Feng had yet to accept his son’s challenge, Song Yuheng’s father mocked him with a disdainful gaze.

“Your son is not qualified for me to unleash my Evil God Sword,” As Chu Feng spoke, he pointed his hand into the distance and grabbed. Then, a branch arrived in his hand. He pointed that branch at Song Yuheng, who was holding an Incomplete Imperial Armament, and said, “Against you, this will suffice.”

“What kind of joke is this?” Seeing the tree branch in Chu Feng’s hand, Song Yuheng’s complexion turned green. That tree branch was extremely withered. Not to mention not being able to contend against Incomplete Imperial Armaments, it would shatter just by being lightly thrown to the ground. Chu Feng was actually planning to use something like that to contend against his Incomplete Imperial Armament?

Insult, This was simply a naked insult. Chu Feng simply did not place Song Yuheng in his eyes at all.

“You don’t have to be able to injure me. As long as you are capable of cutting this branch in half, it will be your victory,” Chu Feng said.

“As you wish,” The sword in Song Yuheng’s hand trembled. Then, a slash was sent forth. It was aimed at Chu Feng’s throat.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

When Song Yuheng’s slash arrived before Chu Feng, it turned into many sword rays. It was as if several tens of thousands of swords were aimed to attack Chu Feng. It was simply impossible for Chu Feng to dodge them.

“What a profound sword technique. There is simply no gap in such a sword technique. Could Chu Feng possibly stop it?”

There were many people from the older generation among the crowd. As they possessed high levels of cultivation, they were naturally capable of determining that Song Yuheng’s sword technique was very profound.

“Paa~~~”

However, Chu Feng simply did not place this sword technique which they believed to be extremely profound in his eyes. Chu Feng raised the branch in his hand unhurriedly. He aimed toward one direction and blocked. Then, in the very next moment, the tens of thousands of sword rays that Song Yuheng had unleashed all vanished like smoke in thin air. His attack was cut through by Chu Feng.

“Humph,” Even though his sword technique was cut through by Chu Feng, Song Yucheng was sneering. It was as if he felt that his plot was a success. His sword’s target changed. It was actually aimed at the branch in Chu Feng’s hand.

It turned out that he had planned to attack Chu Feng’s branch to begin with. Since Chu Feng had said that it would be his win should he slice the branch in half, he planned to slice Chu Feng’s branch in half as a means of giving Chu Feng a slap to the face.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Song Yuheng’s expression changed. Incomparable shock appeared in his eyes.

The branch had managed to block his sword. The two of them had collided with one another. As long as he aimed his sword’s blade at the branch, that branch should have been sliced apart by his Incomplete Imperial Armament without him even needing to put forth any strength at all. Even if Chu Feng had used a special method to increase the hardness of the branch, it should still be impossible for it to block an Incomplete Imperial Armament.

Yet, at this moment, the branch in Chu Feng's hand was completely undamaged.

“Woosh~~~”

Song Yuheng refused to believe this. He immediately moved away, then sent forth another slash. “Clank!” His sword collided with the branch once again.

“How could this be?” At this moment, it was not only Song Yuheng that was shocked. Even the bystanders were shocked by this scene. Expressions of disbelief filled their faces. The reason for that was because no matter how hard Song Yuheng tried to hack Chu Feng's branch in half, Chu Feng's branch was completely undamaged.

“It's my turn now,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then the branch in his hand trembled, and an enormous power emitted from it. The branch landed on Song Yuheng's sword.

“Clank, clank~~~”

The power emitted by the branch that landed on the sword was transmitted through the sword and reached Song Yuheng's hand. At this moment, Song Yuheng felt his palm growing weak. Then, the sword in his hand was sent flying. It turned into a ray of light that shot several tens of thousands of meters away before disappearing over the horizon.

“Ah?” At this moment, the expressions on everyone's faces changed enormously. They were all deeply stunned. They all knew that Song Yuheng had not thrown away his Incomplete Imperial Armament. Instead, it had been knocked away by Chu Feng using that branch.

A branch was actually capable of knocking away an Incomplete Imperial Armament? This was truly unheard of!!!

“Turns out that you can't even hold your sword tightly, yet you even dared to declare yourself an expert in sword techniques?”

Chu Feng mocked.

“You’re courting death,” Song Yuheng turned deep red with rage. As his palms began to form constantly changing hand seals, golden martial power surged forth and formed a ferocious beast. In rage, he actually unleashed an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill, a fatal attack, at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the branch in Chu Feng’s hand turned into a ray of light and shot toward Song Yuheng. It gave off an extremely ferocious aura, and was simply sweeping everything before its path. There was nothing that could stop it. In an instant, it broke through Song Yuheng’s Earthen Taboo Martial Skill.

“Pow, pow, pow, pow~~~”

After breaking through Song Yuheng’s Earthen Taboo Martial Skill, the branch became flexible like a dragon, and began to lash at Song Yuheng’s body and face all over.

“Ahh, noo!!” Being flogged by Chu Feng in this manner caused Song Yuheng to scream miserably.

Had it been an ordinary branch, how could it possibly injure his Half Martial Emperor’s body? However, Chu Feng’s branch was like a sharp blade. Not only was his flesh unable to withstand the whipping from that branch, the pain that branch created was many times more devastating than that of ordinary weapons. Song Yuheng was in so much pain that he screamed out loud.

Seeing his own son being whipped beyond recognition with blood covering his entire body, Song Yuheng’s father immediately shouted, “Stop!”

However, how could Chu Feng possibly bother to pay attention to his shout? Not only did he not stop, he became even more ferocious as he whipped Song Yuheng. Not to mention flesh being lashed apart, his whipping was so hard that even bones were

breaking apart. Chu Feng was planning to repay the pain that Song Yuheng had brought upon Jiang Wushang a hundred times, a thousand times over.

“I said stop!” Song Yuheng’s father unleashed his attack. Although he was telling Chu Feng to stop, his reaction was simply not of someone trying to stop another person. Rather, he was simply trying to gravely injure Chu Feng.

Seeing this scene, a flash of annoyance shone through Yin Gongfu’s eyes. He was already prepared to act and intercept Song Yuheng’s father.

However, he did not act right away. The reason for that was because he wished to see whether or not Chu Feng was truly as he was rumored to be. If he was as the rumors described him to be, then, even though Song Yuheng’s father was a rank one Martial Emperor, Chu Feng would still be able to fight against him.

“Wuuaah~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. A roar was heard, and suddenly an enormous, golden-bright and dazzling dragon’s mouth appeared. With one bite, it clenched Song Yuheng’s father between its teeth.

“Roar~~~~”

Then, that enormous dragon soared into the sky and revealed its true appearance. It was an enormous golden dragon several hundred meters long. Although it was not a real dragon, it gave off an extremely imposing aura that caused the bystanders to be so afraid that they began to fall back repeatedly. In fact, there even were people among them that were scared witless, and fell onto the ground with their bodies trembling, and no strength to stand back up.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Then, Chu Feng controlled that enormous dragon and began to

have it smash Song Yuheng's father into the wall of the mine repeatedly. Even after Song Yuheng's father was left badly injured with blood all over, it still continued to smash him into the wall.

“Dragon Mark World Spirit Power?”

At this moment, a shocked expression appeared on Yin Gongfu's previously calm face. He was already able to tell that the golden dragon was formed with spirit power. Furthermore, it was no ordinary Royal-cloak spirit power. Instead, it was formed with Dragon Mark Royal-cloak spirit power.

“Chu Feng, he's actually a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” At this moment, the gaze with which Yin Gongfu looked to Chu Feng had become exceptionally marvelous to look at.

While he had seen many Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists before, after all, he was someone who held a lot of experience, it was the first time that he had seen a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist as young as Chu Feng. Truly, even if he didn't want to be surprised, it would be impossible not to be surprised.

Suddenly, an old man shouted, “Lord Yin, quickly, you must stop that Chu Feng. Else, Song Yuheng and his father will be beaten to death by Chu Feng,”

Hearing those words, Yin Gongfu hurriedly said, “Chu Feng, stop,”

While Chu Feng could ignore everyone else, he still had to give face to Yin Gongfu.

Thus, with a thought, the golden dragon disappeared. Following that, he also retrieved the branch that he was whipping Song Yuheng with.

At the moment that Chu Feng stopped, Song Yuheng and his father both fell to the ground. The two of them were badly mutilated, covered completely with blood and had already lost

consciousness.

“For real? They are so unable to stand a beating. I didn’t even try hard,” As Chu Feng saw the two men that had lost conscious, he spoke contemptuously.

Hearing those words, the surrounding crowd began to wipe away the cold sweat on their foreheads.

Not trying hard? If he had tried hard, Song Yuheng and his father would’ve definitely been beaten to death by him, no?

At this moment, the people present, other than Jiang Wushang, Hong Qiang and Yin Gongfu, were all looking at Chu Feng with gazes filled with fear. In fact, for some of them, they simply did not even dare to look at Chu Feng.

That Chu Feng was simply much more frightening than the rumors of him said he was. How could he possibly be considered to be someone from the younger generation? He was simply a young demon.

He was a heaven-defying existence capable of easily defeating a rank one Martial Emperor with a cultivation of rank eight Half Martial Emperor.

Chapter 1841 – The Truth Of What Happened Back Then

Afterwards, Song Yuheng and his father were sent away to heal their injuries.

As for Chu Feng and Hong Qiang, Yin Gongfu led them to a palace where they could stay to rest. As for Jiang Wushang, due to the fact that he was still in the period of receiving his punishment, he had no choice but to continue mining day and night.

At this moment, Yin Gongfu had arrived at Chu Feng's residence alone. He said that he had an important matter to discuss with him.

"Senior Yin, Wushang was wrongly accused. The person that framed him was none other than that Song Yuheng," Chu Feng said to Yin Gongfu.

"Jiang Wushang told you about it?" Yin Gongfu asked.

"Senior already knew?" Chu Feng asked.

"Yes. I already knew that Song Yuheng and his father planned all that to frame Jiang Wushang. However, there is nothing that I can do about this matter," Yin Gongfu sighed.

"Senior, you are the person in charge of this place. How could it be that you can do nothing about this?" Chu Feng asked.

"You're mistaken. The person who is truly in charge of this place is Lord Duan, Duan Jidao. Back then, what happened with Jiang Wushang was personally decided by Lord Duan. Thus, there was nothing that I can do," Yin Gongfu said.

"Senior Duan Jidao is actually a person who cannot distinguish between right and wrong?" Chu Feng asked.

"It is not that Lord Duan is a person who cannot distinguish between right and wrong. Rather, he is someone that is disinclined

to bother to distinguish. He also did not wish for Song Yuheng's reputation to be swept away, and for him to end up being burdened with the criminal charge of wrongly accusing Jiang Wushang."

"Although Lord Duan was fond of Jiang Wushang, between Song Yuheng and Jiang Wushang, he chose Song Yuheng," Yin Gongfu said.

"Senior, Song Yuheng is already over a hundred years old, whereas little brother Wushang is still very young. Although Song Yuheng's current cultivation is above little brother Wushang's, little brother Wushang will definitely surpass him in the future. Furthermore, in terms of their character, the two of them are simply worlds apart. I truly do not understand why Senior Duan would choose Song Yuheng over little brother Wushang," Chu Feng was extremely confused.

"Chu Feng, do you know why Song Yuheng is deemed to be the person with the highest chance of becoming Lord Duan's successor?" Yin Gongfu asked.

"Could it be that there's some sort of secret?" Chu Feng asked.

"Indeed, there are some secrets. Regarding this matter, it must be mentioned starting from Lord Duan's past. This matter is an enormous secret that very few people know about. However, I am willing to tell you about it. I hope that you can keep this confidential, and not tell this matter to anyone else," Yin Gongfu said.

"Senior, please rest assured. This junior will definitely not do anything detrimental to senior," Chu Feng said.

"Although it is the first time that we have met each other, I trust you," Yin Gongfu stood up and patted Chu Feng's shoulder. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was filled with confidence and trust.

For some people, no matter how long one knew them, it would be

extremely difficult for them to be trusted. However, for some other people, one would feel trust just from knowing them for a short period of time.

However, this sort of trust was something that only those with exceptional perception and the ability to distinguish between right and wrong would feel.

As for Yin Gongfu, he was a person with exceptional perception and the ability to distinguish between right and wrong. Through how Chu Feng had stood up for Jiang Wushang, and how Yaojiao Guang thought so highly of Chu Feng, Yin Gongfu knew that Chu Feng was a person worthy of being trusted.

After all, trust was something established by how one handles matters, and not simply through familiarity.

Yin Gongfu did not directly tell Chu Feng the secret, but instead asked Chu Feng, “Firstly, I’ll tell you a secret. Do you know why Lord Duan is not someone from the Imperial Clans? Do you know why he, a person from the Royal Clan, possesses an Imperial Bloodline stronger than even the people from the Imperial Clans?”

“Senior Duan Jidao’s bloodline is an Inherited Bloodline. If his talent is not exceptional, then it must be that he encountered an enormous fortuitous meeting,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re correct. The fortuitous meeting that Lord Duan encountered could be said to be the most fortuitous meeting to ever have happened to anyone. He obtained the inheritance of Emperor Huang,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Emperor Huang? Are you talking about one of the Five Emperors, Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou?” Chu Feng asked.

“Precisely,” Yin Gongfu said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression became complicated. His heart was extremely restless.

They all say that this was an enormously grand era. Emperor

Gong's successor had appeared. The Beast Emperor's successor had appeared. And now, even Emperor Huang's successor had appeared.

It was definitely no coincidence that this existence that has never appeared before now appeared in this era.

That being said, while Chu Feng was feeling restless, he was also feeling joy. Duan Jidao was Emperor Huang's successor. Further, he was currently finding a person to succeed him. If Jiang Wushang was able to become his successor, wouldn't that mean that Jiang Wushang would become Emperor Huang's successor?

Although the current Jiang Wushang was no different than a lowly prisoner, Chu Feng felt that there were no absolutes in this matter. Perhaps Jiang Wushang would still have the opportunity in the future.

However, Chu Feng did not tell Yin Gongfu about what he was thinking. Instead, he continued to quietly listen.

"Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou, was an enormously powerful existence. For Lord Duan Jidao to obtain his inheritance, he naturally also became a grand character in his era."

"Back then, the Duan Dynasty was only able to rise in power because of Lord Duan Jidao. Unfortunately, the people from the Duan Clan were too adherent to old ideas. Not only had they ruined the Duan Family, they also ruined Lord Duan Jidao," Yin Gongfu sighed and shook his head.

"Exactly what happened back then?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked. He knew that the Duan Dynasty had originally possessed the chance to surpass the Four Great Imperial Clans. Yet, they were suddenly exterminated. Because of that, Duan Jidao disappeared for thousands of years. Even now, very few people knew that Duan Jidao was still alive.

"This will have to begin with a love story. Lord Duan Jidao fell in

love with a woman. The two of them were in love with one another. Their feelings for each other were superb. However, due to the fact that that woman was Lord Duan Jidao's aunt, the people from the Duan Family were utterly against them being together."

"Lord Duan Jidao made a firm resolution to marry none other than her. As such, the Duan Family's voices of disapproval were completely ignored by Lord Duan. Thus, when Lord Duan Jidao left the Duan Family to do some training, they forced the death of that woman."

"When Lord Duan learned of this matter, he become incomparably furious. Enraged, he ended up killing his entire clan," Yin Gongfu said.

"The Duan Dynasty was actually ruined by Senior Duan Jidao himself?" After learning of this matter, Chu Feng was also extremely shocked.

"That's right. To become enraged over a beauty, one could do anything. This holds even more true for Lord Duan Jidao, as he is a very passionate person."

"Furthermore, although that aunt of his was also considered to be a Duan Clansman, she was actually not from the same branch as Lord Duan Jidao. Merely, her age was several hundred years older than Lord Duan's. That was the reason why the people from the Duan Clan did not approve of it. If the people from the Duan Clan had not been so inflexible, such a disaster would not have happened," When mentioning this matter, Yin Gongfu felt a great amount of pity. It was true, this was a tragedy, an enormous tragedy.

"Indeed. Love is free, how could others forcibly stop someone from loving another?" Although Chu Feng felt that what Duan Jidao did was wrong, he could very well imagine that if someone were to force the death of his lovers, he too would definitely not let

them get away. Thinking about it that way, Chu Feng was able to understand Duao Jidao.

“After Lord Duan calmed down, he discovered that he had killed all of his clansmen. Because of that, he felt an enormous burden and pain, and began to blame himself incessantly. Had it not been because he had obtained Emperor Huang’s inheritance, and did not wish for Emperor Huang’s strength to die off in his hands, he would’ve already killed himself.”

“Although he did not commit suicide, living was extremely painful for him. He was depressed for an extremely long time, over a thousand years.”

“It was only after many years passed that Lord Duan began to discover that his health was growing worse and worse by the day. After discovering that he would be unable to continue on for another hundred years, Lord Duan arrived at this place and established the World’s Hidden Valley. He began to find outstanding members of the younger generation from the Royal Families to grant them Imperial Bloodlines and nurture them. He wanted to find his successor from among them,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Could it be that Song Yuheng is thought of that highly by Senior Duan because of what happened in the past?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing that, the gaze with which Yin Gongfu looked to Chu Feng changed to one of admiration. Then, he nodded and said, “Chu Feng, you’re very smart. You’ve guessed correctly.”

Chapter 1842 – Passing On By Force

“The reason why Lord Duan Jidao was so enraged back then was because not only did the Duan Clan force the death of his lover, the corpse of his lover was actually unable to be found.”

“As such, Lord Duan Jidao suspected that the Duan Clan had destroyed his lover’s corpse. That was why he was so enraged, and ended up massacring his entire clan.”

“However, Song Yuheng’s grandfather had managed to find Lord Duan Jidao’s lover’s corpse. Although many years had passed, and she had already turned into bones, but her special long skirt was still the same as it was back then.”

“It was precisely because of that that Song Yuheng was thought so highly of by Lord Duan Jidao. When all’s said and done, he was grateful toward Song Yuheng’s grandfather,” Yin Gongfu said.

“No wonder Song Yuheng’s father dares to speak to senior in such a manner. So he actually possesses backing. That said, Song Yuheng’s grandfather knew about senior Duan’s past?” Chu Feng asked.

“He didn’t. in fact, it was quite a coincidence. His grandfather was a world spiritist who was fond of doing shady things like robbing tombs. Originally, Lord Duan Jidao was extremely disgusted with him. If it hadn’t been for the fact that Song Yuheng’s talent was quite good, he would’ve already driven him away.”

“However, one day, Song Yuheng’s grandfather actually brought back a corpse. He said that he felt that the clothes on that corpse were a treasure, and wanted Lord Duan Jidao to help inspect them for him.”

“Originally, Lord Duan Jidao was extremely enraged by his actions. Not only was Song Yuheng’s grandfather robbing tombs,

he actually even wanted to make him an accomplice. As such, Lord Duan Jidao planned to severely punish him. However, when he saw the corpse, he discovered that it was actually his lover's corpse. At that moment, sadness and joy filled him simultaneously. It is said that Lord Duan Jidao actually began weeping bitter tears on the spot."

"Afterwards, not only did Lord Duan Jidao not punish Song Yuheng's grandfather, he instead rewarded him and forcibly helped him reach rank one Martial Emperor from rank nine Half Martial Emperor. Right now, with Lord Duan's assistance, Song Yuheng's grandfather has become a rank two Martial Emperor, and is highly valued by Lord Duan Jidao," Yin Gongfu said.

"There's actually such a coincidence in this world?" Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

"Yes, such a coincidence happened," Yin Gongfu felt helpless. He disliked coincidences like that very much. However, it had already happened.

"Although senior Duan Jidao wanted to help find a successor for Emperor Huang, he was influenced by his emotions. If he is to truly pass on the strength of Emperor Huang to Song Yuheng, it would definitely not be a sensible act," Chu Feng said.

"That's not the case. If Lord Duan Jidao had decided to make Song Yuheng his successor, he would've already passed Emperor Huang's power on to him. The reason why he still has not passed his power on is because he is still wishing to be able to find an appropriate candidate to pass the power on to."

"Unfortunately, he has been incapable of finding a successor even now. While there are a lot of outstanding members of the younger generation from the Four Great Imperial Clans, Lord Duan will definitely not have a genius nurtured by the Four Great Imperial Clans as his successor," Yin Gongfu explained.

"Indeed. If they have been abandoned by the Four Great Imperial

Clans, it would be fine. However, if they were geniuses nurtured by the Four Great Imperial Clans, if senior Duan Jidao were to pass them Emperor Huang's strength, it would be equivalent to him helping the Four Great Imperial Clans increase their strength," Chu Feng naturally did not wish for the Four Great Imperial Clans to obtain Emperor Huang's power.

"However, I've found a suitable candidate now," Yin Gongfu looked to Chu Feng.

"Senior, please don't joke around. I am not someone who possesses an Imperial Bloodline. How could I receive the bloodline power?" Chu Feng understood Yin Gongfu's intentions, and began to shake his head repeatedly. The reason for that was because he wanted Jiang Wushang to obtain Emperor Huang's power. He had never thought about obtaining Emperor Huang's power himself.

The reason why Chu Feng had not thought about that was because Chu Feng was able to determine that Emperor Huang's power was related to his Inherited Bloodline. Although his Inherited Bloodline might be stronger than ordinary Imperial Bloodlines, it should only be above Imperial Bloodlines.

However, his own Inherited Bloodline greatly surpassed Imperial Bloodlines. If he were to accept Emperor Huang's Bloodline, it might be possible for his cultivation to momentarily increase sharply. However, it might also be possible for his own Inherited Bloodline to become impure after mixing with Emperor Huang's Inherited Bloodline.

If that were to happen, it would affect his future cultivation progress. The gains would not make up for the losses.

"Little friend Chu Feng, do you know why I've told you about these things?"

"The reason for that is because, before I came to find you, I had already made the decision to recommend you to Lord Duan Jidao to have you become the successor of Emperor Huang," Yin

Guangfu tried his best to persuade Chu Feng.

“Senior, you absolutely must not do that. I absolutely cannot accept Emperor Huang’s power,” Chu Feng shook his head repeatedly.

“Chu Feng, think it over carefully. If Song Yuheng is to really become the successor, your brother Jiang Wushang will most likely be killed by him. For his sake, you should accept that power,” As Yin Gongfu spoke, he suddenly lifted his hand and pressed it onto Chu Feng’s head.

At this moment, Chu Feng was startled. He felt that an enormous power was entering through his head and rushing through his entire body. Before that power, Chu Feng felt his entire body turning numb. He was actually unable to move at all.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you also do not wish for the power of Lord Emperor Huang to end up in the hands of a vile character, right? For the sake of the people of the world, I can only wrong you,” As Yin Gongfu spoke, his palm trembled. Immediately, Chu Feng felt his vision growing blurry. Then, he lost consciousness.

Afterward, Yin Gongfu carried Chu Feng on his shoulder and proceeded toward a hidden location in the World’s Hidden Valley. This place was a forbidden area of the World’s Hidden Valley. Only a few people were allowed to enter this place. As for Yin Gongfu, he was one of them.

This place resembled a wild, mountainous land. However, within that wild, mountainous land was a beautiful grave. On the gravestone were the words, ‘Beloved Wife, Duan Qirou.’

An old man was sitting cross-legged before this grave. He had dishevelled hair that made him resemble a beggar. Just like that, he sat motionlessly.

“Lord Duan,” Yin Gongfu placed Chu Feng onto the ground and then stepped forward to greet that man respectfully. It turned out

that that man was the renowned Duan Jidao.

“Who is it that you’ve brought with you?” Duan Jidao asked. However, he did not even bother to turn his head around to look.

“Lord Duan, he is Chu Feng, that young man who has become a great enemy to the Four Great Imperial Clans recently,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Why did you bring him here?” Duan Jidao asked.

“Lord Duan, this child’s talent is exceptional. He is no ordinary person. With a cultivation of rank eight Half Martial Emperor, he was able to defeat a rank one Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, Duan Jidao started to slowly stand up to carefully size Chu Feng up.

“Indeed, he is a good sapling. Merely, why did you bring him here?” Duan Jidao asked.

“Milord, you have been feeling distressed this entire time because you have been unable to find a successor for Emperor Huang. I feel that Chu Feng is suitable,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Insolent! How could Emperor Huang’s bloodline be so randomly passed on to others?!” Duan Jidao shouted angrily.

“Putt~~~”

Yin Gongfu knelt on the ground and said, “Milord, although I have only met Chu Feng today, I have been paying attention to his various accomplishments the entire time. I feel this child is an upright and honest man, a person who is loyal, and he possesses righteousness that is rare nowadays. Although he is wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clans, their accusations of him are all false.”

“Currently, the Four Great Imperial Clans want this child dead. Although he possesses extremely heaven-defying talent, it remains that he is still very small and weak. If you are able to pass on the

power of Emperor Huang to him, it would be of assistance to him. I feel that if Emperor Huang's spirit was still alive in the heavens, he too would wish for his power to be passed on to this child."

"Although there is an abundant amount of geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism right now, there is not a single person from the younger generation in the entire Holy Land of Martialism more qualified to receive Emperor Huang's power than Chu Feng."

"....." After hearing what Yin Gongfu said, Duan Jidao, who was extremely angry, had managed to calm down a lot.

What Yin Gongfu had said was a stab to his sore spot. Out of gratefulness, he had planned to pass on Emperor Huang's power to Song Yuheng. However, he had not done so the entire time because he felt that he would be letting Emperor Huang down should he do so.

He naturally knew that Emperor Huang would want his power to be passed on to those with talent. Actually, back then, he himself had not been qualified to obtain Emperor Huang's power. The only reason why he had managed to obtain Emperor Huang's power was all due to luck.

Although he had obtained the power with luck, Duan Jidao made a firm resolution when he obtained Emperor Huang's power that after he gained strength, he would find the most outstanding member of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism to succeed Emperor Huang's power so that Emperor Huang would be able to rest in peace. However, things had turned out contrary to the way he had wished.

Upon thinking of that, Duan Jidao began to survey Chu Feng once again. The more he observed Chu Feng, the brighter his eyes shone. Chu Feng's each and every aspect surpassed his imagination.

Such a Chu Feng was simply even more excellent than the candidate that he had in mind. Duan Jidao felt that even if

Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou, were still alive, he would also definitely pass his power on to Chu Feng after seeing him.

Chapter 1843 – The True Remains

“Indeed, he’s a good sapling. This is the first time that I’ve seen a member of the younger generation as powerful as him.”

“But, why is he unconscious?” Duan Jidao asked.

“Lord Duan, Chu Feng did not wish to obtain your inheritance. It is I who brought him here by force,” Yin Gongfu said.

“There’s actually someone in this world who does not wish to obtain my inheritance?” Duan Jidao was shocked upon hearing that. Then, a stubborn expression appeared in his aged eyes. He looked to Chu Feng, smiled and said, “This child is truly arrogant. I shall see what abilities he possesses for him to dare to refuse even my inheritance.”

“Paa~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Duan Jidao placed his left palm onto Chu Feng’s dantian area. Then, he moved his right hand and took out countless amounts of ores from his Cosmos Sack. There were so many ores that they actually piled up into a small mountain. These were the same ores that Jiang Wushang and the others were mining.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Duan Jidao extended his hand and grabbed. A piece of ore entered his hand. After the ore entered his hand, it rapidly melted away. Following that, his body started to radiate with light.

Seeing this scene, Yin Gongfu immediately revealed an ecstatic expression. He had truly never expected that Duan Jidao would forcibly pass his power on to Chu Feng. Duan Jidao was even more straightforward than he had anticipated.

“How could it be? His dantian...” Duan Jidao revealed an expression of shock.

“Milord, what’s wrong?” Yin Gongfu asked concernedly.

“It’s nothing. I refuse to believe that this won’t work,” Duan Jidao waved his sleeve. The mountainous pile of ore began to enter his hand nonstop. Piece by piece, they dissolved and turned into a special power that was forcibly instilled into Chu Feng’s dantian.

“Boom~~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled explosion was heard. That explosion originated from within Chu Feng’s body. After that muffled explosion was heard, Duan Jidao was forced back many steps repeatedly. It was only when he was a hundred meters away from Chu Feng that he managed to steady himself.

“Milord, what happened?” Seeing this, Yin Gongfu was deeply shocked. Being associated with Duan Jidao for so long, Yin Gongfu knew very well how powerful Duan Jidao was. Describing him with the word ‘unfathomable’ would be the most suitable.

However, at this moment, not only had Duan Jidao been forced a hundred meters away, his aged body was also violently trembling.

“I’m fine.”

Duan Jidao waved his hand. However, his breathing was very rapid. It was only after a long time that he finally managed to moderate his breathing. Then, he showed a complicated gaze, and began to examine Chu Feng carefully for a while. After that, he looked to Yin Gongfu and asked, “Do you know whose descendant Chu Feng is?”

“This junior does not know. Chu Feng’s origin seems to be a mystery,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Inconceivable, truly inconceivable. No wonder that child is so heaven-defying and possesses his strength at such a young age,” Duan Jidao exclaimed in admiration.

“Lord Duan, exactly what’s going on with Chu Feng?” Yin Gongfu was completely confused.

“There is simply no need for him to receive my inheritance. I am also unable to pass on Lord Emperor Huang’s power to him,” Duan Jidao said.

“Why is that?” Yin Gongfu started to panic. He had truly hoped that Duan Jidao would pass Emperor Huang’s power on to Chu Feng.

“Why is that?” Duan Jidao smiled and shook his head, “In his body is a power stronger than even Imperial Bloodlines. Likely, the altitude that he will reach in the future is something that would be impossible for even Lord Emperor Huang.”

“Milord, is what you said the truth?” Yin Gongfu felt this to be hard to believe.

“Naturally. I possess Lord Emperor Huang’s bloodline. However, should I compare my bloodline with this Chu Feng’s, it is simply incomparable,” Duan Jidao said.

“This...”

Hearing those words, Yin Gongfu was extremely shocked. When he looked to Chu Feng again, his expression became very complicated.

Suddenly, Yin Gongfu walked over to Chu Feng and placed his hand on Chu Feng’s forehead. A stream of energy was removed from Chu Feng. Chu Feng’s body trembled, and then he opened his eyes.

“Chu Feng, although you were unconscious, you were only half unconscious. You should know what happened earlier.”

“Earlier, Lord Duan wanted to pass on his power to you. However, he was simply unable to do so. The reason for that was because you possess an Inherited Bloodline even stronger than his. Chu Feng, exactly who are you? What sort of bloodline do you have in your body? Could it really be as the rumors say, that your bloodline is a bloodline capable of bringing fear to Imperial

Bloodlines?” After waking Chu Feng, Yin Gongfu asked him many questions in succession.

“Senior, it is true that I possess an Inherited Bloodline. As for my Inherited Bloodline being stronger than Imperial Bloodlines, that is also the truth, and not just a rumor. Otherwise, the Four Great Imperial Clans would not want me dead as badly as they do. The reason for that is because I am indeed a threat to them.”

“As for my identity, even I myself am uncertain. As I do not know who my parents are, I naturally also do not know exactly what my Inherited Bloodline is,” Chu Feng did not say the whole truth. He did not wish to tell Yin Gongfu and Duan Jidao that he was from the Outer World.

Duan Jidao had not successfully passed his power on to Chu Feng. If he had succeeded, then he would’ve been on Chu Feng’s side.

However, since he had failed, Chu Feng was not certain whether or not he was a friend or a foe.

“So that’s the case,” Yin Gongfu began to ponder. He felt extremely regretful that Chu Feng was unable to obtain Duan Jidao’s inheritance.

Chu Feng stood up, then spoke to Duan Jidao. “Senior Duan Jidao, thank you very much for thinking so highly of me. To be unable to obtain your inheritance is this Chu Feng’s loss.”

“However, disregarding the things concerning me, my brother, Jiang Wushang, was wrongly accused. I hope that senior Duan Jidao will be able to distinguish between right and wrong, and not have him receive unjust treatment and bear punishments that he should not have to.”

“Jiang Wushang is your brother?” Duan Jidao asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Little friend Chu Feng’s talent is exceptional. In the future, you

will definitely become a very capable person. This old man wishes to become your friend in my later years. However, the World's Hidden Valley possesses its own rules. As Wushang has violated the rules, he must receive punishment. As such, you do not have to plead for him anymore.”

“Gongfu, it's quite late now. You can take little friend Chu Feng back. Remember, you must treat him as a distinguished guest. In the future, little friend Chu Feng is able to come and go through our World's Hidden Valley as he wishes.”

“Oh, that's right. Have the people of our World's Hidden Valley keep their mouths tight. This matter of little friend Chu Feng being here is not allowed to be spread out. If anyone dares to spread that information, they will be killed,” Duan Jidao called to Yin Gongfu.

Chu Feng was no fool. He already understood Duan Jidao's intentions. If Duan Jidao were to release Jiang Wushang, it would come as a disgrace to Song Yuheng. Between Jiang Wushang and Song Yuheng, Duan Jidao had already chosen Song Yuheng. Naturally, he would not release Jiang Wushang just because Chu Feng pleaded for him. Thus, Chu Feng did not try to plea for Jiang Wushang anymore.

Afterward, Chu Feng was brought back to his resting place by Yin Gongfu. However, at this moment, Chu Feng did not give up hope. Instead, he was rejoicing. He had seen an opportunity, an enormous opportunity.

“Eggy, did you see that?” Chu Feng asked Eggy.

“Are you talking about that gravestone?” Eggy asked.

“It's naturally that gravestone that I'm talking about,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you think about it?” Eggy asked.

“Song Yuheng's grandfather must've definitely done something

to the remains. The remains that he presented are fake,” Chu Feng said.

“If that’s the case, then Song Yuheng’s grandfather already knew about Duan Jidao’s past before he even presented the remains. Else, it would impossible for it to be that coincidental,” Eggy said.

“Of course it wouldn’t be that coincidental. Song Yuheng’s grandfather should have known that Duan Jidao deeply disliked him robbing graves. Even if he robbed graves before, he would conceal his actions from Duan Jidao. However, that one time, he decided to present the remains that he had obtained from his grave robbing to Duan Jidao, even bearing the dangers of punishment. It is evident that he did so with a purpose.”

“The reason for that is because he knew that as long as he presented Duan Jidao with what he had obtained, not only would Duan Jidao not punish him, he would instead reward him. And in fact, he succeeded,” Chu Feng said.

“Unfortunately, he doesn’t know that you’ve seen the actual remains. Furthermore, you know where they’re located,” Eggy said.

“That’s right. It would seem that I will be able to help Wushang enormously,” Chu Feng said.

“When do you plan to set out?” Eggy asked.

“Tonight,” Chu Feng said.

It turned out that Chu Feng had seen Duan Jidao’s lover’s gravestone when he had woken up. Other than the name of Duan Jidao’s lover, Duan Qirou, there was also a poem on the gravestone.

I was born when you were not

I was old when you were born

You regret that I was late early

I regret that you were early late
I wished to have been born together
We could have enjoyed our time together
I was so far away from you
You were so distant from me
I'd have become a flower-seeking butterfly
And slept on the fragrant grass every night

That poem was the same poem that was on the gravestone beside the crystal coffin in the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest.

Not only did Chu Feng discover that the poem on the gravestone was the same poem that was on the gravestone by Duan Jidao, he also discovered that there were two different types of handwriting on the gravestones. One was extremely firm and hard, whereas the other was gentle and soft.

This meant that the writings on them were by two different people. The firm and hard handwriting was most definitely written by Duan Jidao. He had personally written 'Beloved Wife, Duan Qirou' on the gravestone. As for the gentle and soft handwriting, it should be the handwriting of his beloved wife, Duan Qirou. Duan Jidao had deliberately imitated his lover's handwriting to write that poem on the gravestone.

As for Duan Jidao's imitation handwriting, it just so happened to be exactly the same as the handwriting on the gravestone in the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest.

Furthermore, that sentimental poem precisely described the tragedy of a pair of lovers who were unable to be together due to their age difference. This was also very similar to the story of Duan Jidao and Duan Qirou.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that the mysterious woman in the crystal coffin in the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest was the real

Duan Qirou.

As for the so-called remains that Song Yuheng's grandfather had presented to Duan Jidao, regardless of what sort of method he had used to fool Duan Jidao's eyes, they were fake.

Chapter 1844 – The Vicious Song Family

After some deliberation, Chu Feng gave the reason that he had some important matter to take care of, and told Yin Gongfu that he had to leave for a short period of time on that very same night.

Yin Gongfu did not ask Chu Feng any questions about it. Instead, he directly allowed Chu Feng to leave. Furthermore, he gave him a key that was capable of opening the spirit formation around the World's Hidden Valley.

However, Chu Feng did not mention to Hong Qiang that he would be leaving. Actually, regardless of how many concealment abilities Chu Feng possessed, and how enormously strong they might be, it remained very dangerous for him to go out at such a time. Chu Feng did not wish for Hong Qiang to brave the dangers with him. Thus, he planned to journey by himself.

.....

“Such a satisfying sapling is truly rare to come by. Merely... what an enormous pity,” Duan Jidao sighed repeatedly. He was feeling enormous pity that he was unable to pass his power on to Chu Feng.

“Cough, cough, cough~~~”

Suddenly, Duan Jidao began to cough violently. As he coughed, a golden liquid sprayed out from his mouth. When the golden liquid appeared, Duan Jidao's expression became very ugly, and his aura also became much weaker.

However, it seemed that Duan Jidao was already accustomed to this scene. He wiped away the golden liquid around his mouth and did not reveal any shock at all.

“Lord Duan,” Not long afterward, an old man walked over and kneeled before Duan Jidao.

This old man was at the very least three thousand years old. In

fact, in terms of age, he could be even older than Duan Jidao. However, the expression with which he looked to Duan Jidao was extremely respectful. As for this old man, he was Song Yuheng's grandfather.

"To find me this late, could it be that something has happened?" Duan Jidao asked.

"Milord, something major has happened," Song Yuheng's grandfather said.

"What is this major matter?" Duan Jidao asked.

"The greatly wanted criminal of the Four Great Imperial Clans has intruded upon our World's Hidden Valley. It was Yin Gongfu who let him in," Song Yuheng's grandfather said.

"I already know," Duan Jidao said.

"Milord, you knew?" Song Yuheng's grandfather was extremely shocked to hear that.

"Chu Feng did not intrude upon this place. Instead, I was the one who had Gongfu invite him here. Is that all you wish to tell me?" Duan Jidao asked.

"Eh..." Hearing those words, Song Yuheng's grandfather hesitated slightly before saying, "Chu Feng injured Yuheng. Furthermore, his injuries are extremely serious."

"Oh?" Duan Jidao's eyes narrowed. Then, he looked to Song Yuheng's grandfather and said, "In that case, why didn't you inform me of this sooner, why didn't you bring Yuheng here so that I could treat his injuries?"

"Eh... although his injuries were very serious, they were only superficial wounds. I felt that there wasn't a need to inconvenience Milord. Thus, this subordinate ended up treating his injuries myself."

"Merely, it remains that Yuheng is the successor that Milord

thinks highly of. For him to be publicly beaten, it was truly somewhat detrimental to Milord's prestige," Song Yuheng's grandfather began to sow dissension.

"If you want me to take care of Chu Feng, then you can forget about it. Chu Feng is a distinguished guest I invited here myself. How could I possibly punish my distinguished guest?"

"Furthermore, that child Chu Feng possesses exceptional talent. You should have Yuheng get along with him. An incident like that must not occur again. Furthermore, he must not offend Chu Feng again."

"Oh, that's right, tell your men that they are not allowed to spread any information about Chu Feng being here. If there is anyone that dares to inform the Four Great Imperial Clans that Chu Feng is here, I will definitely not show any mercy toward them," Duan Jidao said.

Hearing those words, Song Yuheng's grandfather's expression became extremely ugly. He had come here for the sake of reporting the grievances that Song Yuheng had suffered so that he could have Duan Jidao take care of Chu Feng and Yin Gongfu.

However, he never would've expected that Duan Jidao's attitude would be that cold. Not only did he not punish Chu Feng, he was even protecting Chu Feng. This made him feel extremely unreconciled.

"This subordinate understands," Although he was extremely unreconciled, Song Yuheng's grandfather did not dare to go against Duan Jidao.

"Mn, that's more like it. It's better to have one more friend than one more enemy."

"Oh, also, tell Yuheng to prepare himself and choose a good day. I plan to attempt to pass on a portion of my Inherited Bloodline's power to him," Duan Jidao said.

“Ah? Milord, you’re planning to pass your power on to Yuheng?” Song Yuheng’s grandfather was extremely shocked upon hearing those words. In fact, he didn’t even dare to believe his own ears.

“Yuheng’s body is weak. I cannot pass my power on to him all at once. I must do it over many sessions. Furthermore, he must be in a very healthy state for me to be able to pass my power on to him. You understand what I mean?” Duan Jidao said.

“Yes, yes, yes. This subordinate understands. I will return and properly look after Yuheng’s health,” After finding out that Duan Jidao was serious, Song Yuheng’s grandfather was overjoyed.

“In that case, why are you still standing here? Quickly, return and help him heal his injuries,” Duan Jidao said.

“Yes, Milord,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather hurriedly left.

“Sigh~~~~” After Song Yuheng’s grandfather left, Duan Jidao sighed helplessly. As the moonlight shone on his aged face, one could see a deep sense of guilt.

“Lord Emperor Huang, I will not live for much longer. Although I am also unwilling to pass your power on to Song Yuheng, I can only wrong your power again. I hope that you will not blame me.”

“After all, you told me that I cannot pass your power on to the clansmen of the Four Great Imperial Clans that are nurtured by them, nor could I pass your power on to the disciples of the Three Palaces. With that sort of requirement, it is truly difficult to find someone to pass your power on to.”

“That Chu Feng today is a rare good sapling. He is the best candidate ever for your power. Unfortunately, his bloodline, sigh...”

“I believe that you can also see my efforts. I hope that you do not blame me. I have truly tried my hardest.”

Duan Jidao said those words in a very ashamed manner. Then, he turned around and looked at Duan Qirou’s grave, looked at that

ice-cold gravestone. A smile of relief emerged on his face. He said, "Qirou, wait a moment longer. I will soon join you."

.....

At this moment, Song Yuheng's grandfather had arrived at Song Yuheng's residence. Song Yuheng and his father were both present in this place.

"Grandfather, how was it? What did Lord Duan say? Is he going to severely punish that Chu Feng?" At this moment, Song Yuheng was completely healed. After all, the only injuries he had sustained were superficial injuries. With the ability of his grandfather, healing him was extremely effortless.

"It's a bit thorny. Duan Jidao seemed to have met Chu Feng. Furthermore, he thinks very highly of him. Not only did he give the order to not allow anyone to spread the news of Chu Feng being here, he even wanted you to befriend that Chu Feng," Song Yuheng's grandfather said.

"What? He wants me to befriend that Chu Feng? How is that possible? Today, he beat father and I in front of so many people," Song Yuheng was unwilling.

"Quiet down. How could you possibly be able to achieve greatness should you be unable to endure something small like that? I merely want you to befriend that Chu Feng for the time being. No one said that you must truly befriend him," Song Yuheng's grandfather rebuked angrily. Seeing his grandfather's reaction, Song Yuheng calmed down.

"However, there's good news too. After my meticulous efforts, Duan Jidao has finally decided to pass his power on to you," Song Yuheng's grandfather said.

"Grandfather, is what you said the truth?" Hearing those words, Song Yuheng and his father were both overjoyed. They were so excited that their bodies even started to tremble, their breathing

began to rush and their heartbeat began to violently throb.

“Of course. Yuheng, you will soon become Duan Jidao’s successor. Ah, no, not Duan Jidao’s successor, it’s Emperor Huang’s successor. Haha... I truly have not expended all my efforts in vain. Today, all the hard times are finally over, and the good times are just beginning.”

“However, before this, you must carefully recuperate your body. Duan Jidao said that your body is weak. I am going to help you obtain the best condition. We must guarantee that the first session of passing on power will be a success. Only in that way will he be certain that you are suited to become his successor,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather said.

“Mn, I leave everything to grandfather’s arrangements,” Song Yuheng nodded his head repeatedly.

“As long as you obtain Duan Jidao’s inheritance, in the future, you will not only become the master of the World’s Hidden Valley, you will also obtain the power of Emperor Huang. You will become this era’s overlord.”

“At that time, Yin Gongfu? Jiang Wushang? Humph, all those who have gone against us will be killed.”

“Even that Duan Jidao will be killed,” After saying those words, a trace of ruthlessness flashed through Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s eyes.

Chapter 1845 – Who Is Fighting?

“Grandfather, you’re even going to kill Lord Duan Jidao?” Song Yuheng was surprised.

“You’re still addressing him as Lord? Is he even worthy of that title? The anger he gave me over the years, is it not enough? I have lowered myself before him, endured humiliation in silence for so many years, all so that I could kill him,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather said.

“But grandfather, he’s still...” Song Yuheng was afraid.

“Yuheng, there’s no need for you to fear. Duan Jidao is plagued with a chronic illness. He will not be able to continue living for long. When he has finished passing on his power to you, he will have emptied his strength completely. Adding on his chronic illness that cannot be treated, he will soon become a cripple. At that time, his little life shall be mine.”

“Humph. He most definitely wants to kill himself so that he can accompany that Duan Qirou sooner. However, I will not give him that opportunity,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather said.

“Grandfather, you’re not planning to bury the two of them together?” Song Yuheng asked.

“Bury them together? That’s right, I must bury them together. After all, that Duan Qirou was fake to begin with. After he dies, he will come to find out that the one that he will be buried together with is not the lover that he yearned for day and night. At that time, that Duan Jidao will definitely die with grievances.”

“That’s right, I will make him die with grievances. I’ll have him kill himself and then throw himself into that grave,” A perverted smile appeared on Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s face.

“Grandfather, what about that Chu Feng?” Song Yuheng asked.

“Chu Feng? He naturally has to die too. However, there’s no need

for us to take care of him ourselves. Right now, he's extremely valuable. If we are to hand him over to the Four Great Imperial Clans. Haha..." As he said those words, greed emerged on Song Yuheng's grandfather's face.

At that moment, the smile on his face grew even stronger. With his grandfather present, Song Yuheng felt that all of his wishes would be realized.

For example, back then, Song Yuheng was not the person who Duan Jidao had thought to be the most suited to be his successor. However, he was soon about to obtain Duan Jidao's inheritance. All of this was due to his grandfather.

"Milord," Right at this moment, a soft call sounded from outside the palace hall.

"Woosh~~~"

Song Yuheng's grandfather waved his sleeve and removed a layer of spirit formations. Then, he opened the tightly shut door to the palace hall and said, "Come on in."

Soon, a man with the cultivation of peak Half Martial Emperor ran in and knelt on the ground.

"It's so late now. For you to not properly be at Yin Gongfu's side and instead come to my place, do you not fear him growing suspicious?" Song Yuheng's grandfather asked.

"Milord, this subordinate naturally fears Yin Gongfu becoming suspicious. Merely, you mentioned that I must report to you immediately should something important happen," The man said.

"What is it?" Song Yuheng's grandfather asked.

"Milord, just earlier, Chu Feng grabbed the key and left the World's Hidden Valley by himself," The man reported.

"What? He escaped?" Song Yuheng's grandfather was shocked to hear that Chu Feng had escaped. Then, an expression of worry

appeared on his face. He did not wish for Chu Feng to leave.

“Indeed, he has left. He said that he had something important that he must do. However, this subordinate also heard him telling Yin Gongfu that he would return after some time,” The man said.

“He’ll return? That’s good,” Hearing those words, Song Yuheng’s grandfather heaved a sigh of relief.

“Very good, you’ve reported to me very promptly,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather waved his sleeve. Then, a Cosmos Sack fell into that man’s hand.

“Thank you Milord,” Upon receiving the Cosmos Sack, the man was overjoyed.

“Continue to properly work for me and you will be paid well. You can withdraw now,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather waved his sleeve.

“Yes,” The man withdrew himself.

“Truly, good news happens in succession today,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather said in a very joyous manner.

“Grandfather, what other good news is there?” Song Yuheng asked.

“Although Chu Feng left, he will still return. As long as I guard this World’s Hidden Valley and lay in ambush, I will be able to secretly capture him.”

“At that time, I simply will not have to wait until you finish obtaining the inheritance and for Duan Jidao to die. Instead, we will be able to obtain Chu Feng’s bounty right away. Tell me, is that good news or not?” Song Yuheng’s grandfather said.

“Brilliant! Grandfather, you are truly brilliant!” Song Yuheng praised while holding out his thumb.

“Of course. Otherwise, how could I make that renowned Duan Jidao run around in circles on my palm? Hahaha....” Song Yuheng’s grandfather laughed complacently.

Chu Feng did not know about the despicable scheme that Song Yuheng and his grandfather had for him. At this moment, Chu Feng was proceeding toward the Alliance Domain with all his strength. He had to obtain that crystal coffin as soon as possible. If he were to delay, something might happen.

There were actually many reasons why Chu Feng did not directly tell Duan Jidao and have him go and obtain the remains himself after finding out about Duan Qirou's remains were fake.

Firstly, if he were to mention Duan Qirou's remains to Duan Jidao, he would have betrayed Yin Gongfu. He would've let Duan Jidao know that Yin Gongfu had told him about his greatest secret.

In anger, Duan Jidao might severely punish Yin Gongfu. At that time, how could he possibly trust Chu Feng? If he were to trust Chu Feng, it would be fine. However, if he didn't trust Chu Feng, Chu Feng might even end up losing his life.

While Duan Jidao looked like a wreck of an old man right now, it remained that he was someone who had wiped out his entire clan due to anger. As such, Duan Jidao most definitely possessed an extremely fiery temper.

Thus, in order to prevent those accidents from happening, Chu Feng had no choice but to go and remove the crystal coffin himself. Although it would be revealed that he knew of Duan Jidao's secret when he took out Duan Qirou's corpse, Duan Jidao would definitely be extremely happy to find out that his lover's corpse was still perfectly maintained.

At that time, even if he were to blame Chu Feng and Yin Gongfu, he would likely not punish them. At that time, the one that would suffer would be Song Yuheng's grandfather.

After journeying for some time and passing through the Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation, Chu Feng arrived at the Alliance Domain.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Chu Feng walked out from the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation, Chu Feng heard thunder-like rumbling sounding nonstop from the distance.

He looked toward the direction of the rumbles, and discovered that a blaze was radiating all over the distant horizon. Even space itself was shattering nonstop. In fact, even the earth that Chu Feng stood on was trembling slightly. Someone was fighting.

For there to be such powerful might on display, Chu Feng determined that the people fighting were most definitely no ordinary martial cultivators. Most likely, they were Martial Emperor-level experts. Else, it would be impossible for him to be able to see and feel their battle from such a far away place.

Chu Feng had determined that the battlefield was several million miles away. Millions of miles, that was a distance that an ordinary martial cultivator’s might would not be able to transmit through.

Seeing that Chu Feng was looking toward the direction where the rumbles were sounding from and not continuing his journey, Eggy asked, “Chu Feng, what’s wrong?”

“That is the direction of the World Spiritist Alliance. There are not many Martial Emperors in the Alliance Domain. Yet, there are Martial Emperors fighting there right now. Furthermore, they are battling with such might. I feel that something is wrong,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s simple. Go over there and check it out. Although you’re in a rush, a short moment of delay will not mean much.”

“Moreover, your little darling Su Mei is in that World Spiritist Alliance. If something is really happening in the World Spiritist Alliance, you must involve yourself with it,” Eggy said.

“Zzzzz~”

Before Eggy had even finished what she was saying, Chu Feng had turned into a ray of light and flew towards the direction of the battle.

Chu Feng had not only unleashed his Divine Lightnings to increase his cultivation to rank one Martial Emperor, he had also unleashed his fastest movement technique, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast. In a flash, he traveled several miles. Even though the battle was very far away, with Chu Feng's speed, he soon arrived at the battlefield.

Chapter 1846 – An Enormously Pleasant Surprise

Although Chu Feng had only approached the battlefield, and had not actually entered the battlefield, with his Heaven's Eyes' extremely powerful perceptive ability, Chu Feng was able to determine exactly who it was that was fighting.

There were three people fighting. Two among them were wearing black cloaks with a strange veined pattern on their clothes. That veined pattern was crimson red in color, and gave off the appearance of being dyed with blood. Furthermore, they were emitting a faint glimmer. It was extremely strange.

Other than those strange black cloaks, those two men were also wearing masks. Their masks were also pitch-black, and also had that strange crimson veined pattern on them. Adding onto their crimson-colored eyes, the two of them looked like two human-shaped monsters, two ghosts in the world of mortals.

With the two of them wearing the same outfit, they were naturally on the same battlefield. Furthermore, the two of them both possessed cultivations of rank one Martial Emperor.

As for the other person that they were fighting, Chu Feng was able to recognize him with a single glance. He was an acquaintance. He was the World Spiritist Alliance's Left Reverend.

The Left Reverend was also a rank one Martial Emperor. Back then, the Left Reverend had appeared like a god to Chu Feng. He had seemed so enormously powerful. However, at this moment, fighting against two rank one Martial Emperors, he was placed in a very strenuous state.

There were many bloody wounds on his body already. His flesh was cut open, and white bones could be seen.

Although they were only superficial wounds that could not be

said to be anything serious, it was sufficient to show that the Left Reverend was in a very disadvantaged state in this battle.

“Left Reverend, [a fine bird chooses a good tree to nest in](#), must you act this stubbornly?” One of the two black cloaked Martial Emperors asked.

“Indeed, a fine bird chooses a good tree to nest in. As for your rotten tree, I am not interested,” Left Reverend said.

“In that case, you shall die,” Hearing those words, the two mysterious black-cloaked men simultaneously unleashed fatal attacks at the Left Reverend.

The two of them had unleashed Earthen Taboo Martial Skills. Furthermore, they were not ordinary Earthen Taboo Martial Skills. The two of them had unleashed Earthen Taboo Martial Skills that complemented one another. Being unleashed with Incomplete Imperial Armaments, those two Earthen Taboo Martial Skills were extremely frightening.

“Roar~~~”

Although they were only made up of a layer of golden-bright and dazzling martial power, they emitted extremely frightening roars. If there were people below Half Martial Emperor in their surroundings, a single roar would be enough to kill them miserably, leaving neither soul nor body behind.

Before those frightening attacks, even the Left Reverend’s expression took a huge change. It would be extremely difficult for him to block these incoming attacks. Even if he were able to block them, he would be even more seriously injured.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right when the two Earthen Taboo Martial Skills were about to approach him, they both exploded. The two Earthen Taboo Martial Skills had been blocked.

This scene came as an enormous surprise to the Left Reverend.

The reason for that was because he saw a familiar silhouette standing before him. It was shock from the person who had blocked the incoming attacks for him. As for that person, he was none other than Chu Feng.

“Junior pays his respects to Lord Left Reverend,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and greeted the Left Reverend respectfully.

“Chu Feng, it’s really you?” The Left Reverend was filled with astonishment. He was not only shocked because Chu Feng had appeared here, more than that, but also because of Chu Feng’s current cultivation. Chu Feng’s cultivation was actually the same as his own, a rank one Martial Emperor.

Not long ago, he had heard about the rumors of Chu Feng at the Gong Ba Plains. Although the Chu Feng in the rumors had been extremely powerful, he had still only been a Half Martial Emperor. How had he managed to become a rank one Martial Emperor in such a short period of time?

Right at this moment, one of the black-cloaked men spoke. “So you’re Chu Feng. Your name has been known to me for a long time. Finally, I’ve met you today.”

“You two know who I am?” Chu Feng asked.

“Is there anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism who doesn’t know the name of Chu Feng now?”

“It seems s that you really do possess a special technique that actually allowss your cultivation to increase to rank one Martial Emperor. You are truly extraordinary.”

“However, you’re only a fake Martial Emperor. Yet, you actually want to stand up for the Left Reverend? Do you think that you were really capable?” The two black-cloaked men’s gazes were crimson red, like those of monstrous beasts. However, Chu Feng could tell from their gazes that they were looking down on him.

“You asked whether or not I’m capable? I’ll let you know

whether or not I'm capable right away," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a thought, his Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique appeared. The two supreme Secret Skills soared forward to either side of him and surrounded the two mysterious black-cloaked men.

"Damn it, we actually forgot he knew this trick."

Upon seeing the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, the two mysterious black-cloaked men were immediately startled. Even though their faces were covered by masks and their expressions could not be seen, their current body language showed Chu Feng that they were afraid.

However, their fear was understandable. The two of them were only rank one Martial Emperors. As for Chu Feng's Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique, they were rank two Martial Emperors.

Suddenly, one of the two black cloaked men asked, "Chu Feng, have you heard of the Dark Hall?"

"I have not," Chu Feng said.

"You will soon come to know of the Dark Hall. It is an existence that will surpass the Three Palaces. We are the senior elders of the Dark Hall."

"Today, if you are to release us, we will let this be. However, should you not release us, the Dark Hall will definitely not let you live. The Dark Hall is not a minor character like the Four Clans. If you are to make our Dark Hall your enemy, you will definitely be courting death."

"What? You can't win against me, so you've decided to threaten me? When even your lives are in my hand, do the two of you really think that you possess the qualifications to threaten me?" Chu Feng said.

“Qualifications? You dare to speak of qualifications before the Dark Hall? Chu Feng, if you are to let us go today, then everything will be fine. However, should you not, you shall bear the consequences of your actions,” That man continued to threaten Chu Feng. The two of them did not attack Chu Feng because they knew that they were no match for Chu Feng’s Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique even if they were to join hands. At this moment, the only way for them to escape this predicament would be to threaten Chu Feng.

“Very well, I’ll let the two of you go,” Chu Feng waved his hand.

“Chu Feng, you cannot let them go. If you are to do that, you’ll be releasing tigers back into the mountain,” The Left Reverend said.

However, Chu Feng ignored the Left Reverend. With a thought, the frightening Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique moved to the side and created a path for the two mysterious men to escape.

“Chu Feng, you are quite smart. Let’s go,” The two men did not hesitate. They turned around and proceed to escape immediately.

“Crash~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

However, right after they began to leave, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique attacked simultaneously. The two men were engulfed by surging waves of water and a fiery hot seas of flames.

The speed at which the two supreme Secret Skills had attacked was truly too fast. Before the two men could react, they were already engulfed by deep water and scorching fire.

“Chu Feng, you went back on your word! Ahh!!!!”

The two men let out heart-tearing and lungs-splitting screams. At that moment, their bodies were being refined. They were unable to endure it anymore.

“You’re mistaken. I already let the two of you go. Merely, you did not leave quickly enough, which allowed me to catch up to the two of you again.”

“Thus, it is not I, Chu Feng, who went back on my word. Instead, it is the two of you who were too incompetent,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“You... are truly shameless. Our Dark Hall will not let you get awhhhh!!!” Before the two men could finish cursing at Chu Feng, they screamed again. Then, their bodies disintegrated, and their souls were extinguished. The two men had been killed.

After the two men died, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and Fire Immortal Profound Technique turned into two rays of light that entered Chu Feng’s body. At that moment, two Cosmos Sacks and two Incomplete Imperial Armaments were in Chu Feng’s hand. They had been obtained from those two mysterious men.

After obtaining those goods, Chu Feng looked to the Left Reverend, and discovered that the Left Reverend was looking at him with a shocked expression.

As those two men had fought against the Left Reverend, the Left Reverend knew how powerful they were. While he was fine fighting against one, he was no match against the two of them.

However, opponents that he could not win against were effortlessly killed by Chu Feng. As such, how could he not be shocked?

After all, the Chu Feng from back then had merely been a weak Martial King. Before him, Chu Feng would not have been able to withstand a single blow.

However, Chu Feng was now an existence capable of killing Martial Emperors. Furthermore, he had saved him.

The speed of Chu Feng’s progress was simply lightning fast, and was about to surpass what he could accept.

“Chu Feng, you have truly brought me an enormously pleasant surprise,” The Left Reverend said.

A fine bird chooses a good tree to nest in → A talented person chooses a patron of integrity

Chapter 1847 – Imminent Danger

“Pleasant surprise?” Chu Feng was somewhat puzzled by those words.

“I never expected that someone would save me from this inescapable crisis. However, not only was I saved, I never would’ve imagined that you would be the one to save me. Say, is this not a pleasant surprise?” The Left Reverend said.

“Senior Left, you’re flattering me,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled lightly. It turned out that the Left Reverend was praising him.

“Senior Left, what is that so-called Dark Hall? Why did they attack you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, let’s talk about this while we travel. Quickly, follow me back to the World Spiritist Alliance first,” Hearing Chu Feng asking him those questions, the Left Reverend seemed to have thought of something, and began to hurriedly fly toward the direction of the World Spiritist Alliance.

Seeing the nervous appearance of the Left Reverend, Chu Feng started to frown. Involuntarily, he grew nervous. He had managed to guess that the Dark Hall must not have come for the Left Reverend. Instead, it seemed that they had come for the entire World Spiritist Alliance.

There were many people that were very important to Chu Feng in the World Spiritist Alliance. There’s no need to even mention Su Mei, his lover.

However, other than Su Mei, there was also Sima Ying, Miao Renlong, Fu Feiteng, Lin Yezhou and the others.

Furthermore, even when disregarding those people, the World Spiritist Alliance had also helped Chu Feng enormously. Furthermore, Chu Feng was also a nominal disciple of the World

Spiritist Alliance. With the World Spiritist Alliance in a crisis, Chu Feng could not disregard it.

“Senior, let me lead the way,” Upon thinking of this, Chu Feng arrived before the Left Reverend and unleashed his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. His speed increased enormously in a flash. Being guided by Chu Feng, the Left Reverend’s speed also increased enormously.

As the Left Reverend looked to Chu Feng who was leading the way beside him, his gaze changed once again. Earlier, he had only been shocked by how quickly Chu Feng had progressed after he had saved him. However now, he truly felt as if he was being overshadowed by Chu Feng.

As a senior, being overshadowed by a junior should ordinarily make one feel uncomfortable.

However, the Left Reverend was feeling extremely happy. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was not an ordinary person from the younger generation. Instead, he was a person from the younger generation who he thought very highly of. It was not only him; the entire World Spiritist Alliance thought very highly of Chu Feng. And now, this person from the younger generation that they thought of so highly had not disappointed them.

On their way to the World Spiritist Alliance, the Left Reverend began to tell Chu Feng the matters concerning the Dark Hall.

The World Spiritist Alliance had never heard of the Dark Hall before. In fact, even now, very few people in the Holy Land of Martialism knew about the Dark Hall.

Not long ago, the Dark Hall had suddenly appeared. It directly found the Assembly Master of the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly, the World Spiritist Immortal, and ordered him to lead his Left and Right Reverends and pay allegiance to the Dark Hall.

Furthermore, they demanded that the World Spiritist Alliance

work for the Dark Hall from then on.

Faced with an unknown power making such unreasonable demands, the World Spiritist Alliance naturally refused immediately.

Especially after the people from the Dark Hall demanded that the World Spiritist Alliance assist them in capturing Chu Feng, the World Spiritist Alliance was so enraged that they drove them away on the spot.

However, the Dark Hall harbored hard feelings, and had returned today to retaliate. Furthermore, they were so powerful that they simply surpassed the World Spiritist Alliance's imagination. Currently, the World Spiritist Alliance was being attacked by the Dark Hall and in a state of imminent danger.

.....

At that moment. In the World Spiritist Alliance. It was as the Left Reverend had described. The entire World Spiritist Alliance was turned upside down and left in an abyss of suffering.

After the people from the Dark Hall charged into the World Spiritist Alliance, they killed everyone they saw and destroyed everything before them. They were extremely ruthless.

At this moment, the losses to the World Spiritist Alliance were disastrous. At the very least, several hundred thousand disciples and elders had been killed. As for the buildings that had been destroyed, they were innumerable.

The World Spiritist Alliance that was located deep underground was currently surging with smoke as far as the eye could see. Rubble was scattered all over the ground. It was truly an appalling scene of devastation.

Fortunately, the experts from the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly had been extremely quick to react, and had immediately dispatched experts to confront the people from the Dark Hall.

If they had come out any slower, then, with the people that the Dark Hall had dispatched this time around, they would have totally been capable of massacring everyone in the World Spiritist Alliance in a short period of time.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

In the sky, the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master, Miao Renlong, the World Spiritist Sacred Assembly’s various elders, as well as the person with an equal status to the Left Reverend, the Right Reverend, were all fighting against the people from the Dark Hall.

In order to prevent more devastation from befalling the World Spiritist Alliance, they were doing their best to draw the people from the Dark Hall away from the World Spiritist Alliance’s headquarters.

Unfortunately, the people from the Dark Hall were extremely cunning. They seemed to realize what the World Spiritist Alliance’s experts were planning to do, and refused to be taken in.

So far, only the Left Reverend had managed to lure two rank one Martial Emperors away from the World Spiritist Alliance. However, he had actually been no match for those two Martial Emperors. Had it not been for Chu Feng’s timely arrival, the Left Reverend would have been killed by them.

As for the disciples of the World Spiritist Alliance, they were all being led by the elders to their refuge location. Panic filled all the disciples. In fact, panic was also present in many of the elders’ faces and hearts.

This was not because they were cowards. Instead, it was simply that the people the Dark Hall had dispatched were too powerful. Even the weakest among them were peak Half Martial Emperors. As for Martial Emperors, there were seven of them. With battle

power of that level, the World Spiritist Alliance was greatly inferior to them. To the World Spiritist Alliance, this was a catastrophe.

Even though the disciples were able to seek refuge for now, if the experts from the World Spiritist Alliance fighting the people from the Dark Hall in the sky were all killed by them, then how could they, the disciples, possibly be able to continue to live? How could a mere refuge possibly be able to block the attacks of Martial Emperors?

Not to mention the disciples, even the elders had never seen such a disposition of forces. However, they all knew how powerful their opponents were. As such, how could they not be afraid?

“Ying’er, Yezhou, Feiteng, do as I say and quickly hide yourselves,” The elders were currently earnestly urging Sima Ying and the other disciples to enter the refuge. However, Sima Ying and the others were refusing to enter. Instead, they were standing there and continuing to observe the battle in the distance.

“Elders, you don’t have to urge us anymore. While we live, we will be people of the World Spiritist Alliance. When we die, we will remain ghosts of the World Spiritist Alliance. Although our strength is petty and low, and we are unable to fight and kill those that have assaulted our World Spiritist Alliance alongside the seniors, we insist on living and dying together with the World Spiritist Alliance,” Sima Ying and the others were determined. They all refused to hide.

Hearing those words, the elders sighed and stopped urging them. Furthermore, they also stopped trying to prevent other disciples from staying. Instead, they decided to stand their ground, and looked to the horizon in the same manner as Sima Ying and the others.

At this moment, a frenzied battle was occurring in the sky. There was no need to mention peak Half Martial Emperors.

In terms of the most deadly Martial Emperors, their World Spiritist Alliance possessed a total of three Martial Emperors. The Left and Right Reverends were both rank one Martial Emperors. As for their strongest World Spiritist Immortal, he was a rank two Martial Emperor.

However, the Dark Hall had dispatched a total of seven Martial Emperors. Among them, four were rank one Martial Emperors and three were rank two Martial Emperors.

Even though the Left Reverend had managed to lure two rank one Martial Emperors away, there remained two rank one Martial Emperors and three rank two Martial Emperors.

At this moment, the Right Reverend was fighting one against two, taking on the other two rank one Martial Emperors.

As for the World Spiritist Immortal, he was fighting one against three. Even though the World Spiritist Immortal was one of the Ten Immortals, and his strength was stronger than ordinary rank two Martial Emperors, the three rank two Martial Emperors dispatched by the Dark Hall were all not to be looked down upon either. With the three of them attacking the World Spiritist Immortal from all sides, the World Spiritist Immortal was repeatedly forced to retreat, and barely able to withstand them.

“Boom~~~”

“Wuuahh~~~”

A deafening explosion was heard. Then, a figure dropped from the sky and fell deep into the ground. The powerful impulse of his fall as well as the energy ripples directly turned that region of land into a deep valley.

It was the Right Reverend. The Right Reverend was injured. Even though he was injured, the Right Reverend immediately leapt out from deep underground and returned to fight against those two rank one Martial Emperors again.

There was nothing else that he could do. He must continue to fight against them, for if he stopped fighting them, their opponents would have two rank one Martial Emperors that could massacre their World Spiritist Alliance's elders and disciples. At that time, the consequences would be too horrible to contemplate.

Chapter 1848 – The Descent Of A God

“Could it be that our World Spiritist Alliance that has existed for tens of thousands of years will really cease to exist from today on?”

Faced with the devastation, tears of unreconciliation appeared in the eyes of many of the elders. They were so enraged that their bodies started to tremble.

To them, the World Spiritist Alliance was their home. Who would want one’s home to be ruined and one’s family to be killed?

“World Spiritist Immortal, I’ll give you another opportunity to decide. As long as you agree to serve our Dark Hall and reveal Chu Feng’s whereabouts, your World Spiritist Alliance will not only be able to come out from this unscathed, our Dark Hall is also able to help your World Spiritist Alliance become even stronger, and turn it into the head of the Nine Powers,” A rank two Martial Emperor that was the leader of the people from the Dark Hall said with a loud voice as he fought against the World Spiritist Immortal.

“Listen carefully, we do not know about Chu Feng’s whereabouts. And even if we did, we would not tell you. You can kill us, but you will not shame us. You all have already killed so many innocent people from our World Spiritist Alliance. You wish for reconciliation now? You’re truly delusional!” The World Spiritist Immortal was determined to kill them. After saying those words, his attacks grew even more ferocious.

“Truly refusing a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. Since you do not know how to appreciate the kindness being shown to you, do not blame me for being ruthless.”

“People of the Dark Hall, listen up. You do not have to be lenient anymore. Today, I shall have this World Spiritist Alliance disappear from the Holy Land of Martialism,” The rank two Martial Emperor shouted.

Once he said those words, the people from the Dark Hall all shouted, “Kill!!!!!!” Their enormous killing intent surged forth. Immediately, the sky darkened, and black clouds began to surge.

Their killing intent filled this entire region. Many elders and disciples were so scared that their legs grew limp and they fell onto their butts. They had lost the ability to continue standing.

At that moment, the battle power of the people from the Dark Hall all began to surge. The World Spiritist Alliance that was still able to barely withstand them before immediately sunk into an absolutely disadvantaged state. Even the World Spiritist Immortal was starting to be unable to withstand the attacks of the three rank two Martial Emperors.

In this sort of situation, the sounds of wailing and despair filled the entire World Spiritist Alliance. Not to mention the disciples, even the elders were unable to withstand the Dark Hall.

They were drowned in calamity. The killing intent of their opponents was no joke at all. They knew that it was not only them who would die today. The entire World Spiritist Alliance would also be destroyed today.

“Trying to extinguish the World Spiritist Alliance with merely you all? You’re not qualified.”

At the moment when a great amount of people from the World Spiritist Alliance had started to despair, a voice suddenly sounded from the entrance of the World Spiritist Alliance.

“What?” Hearing that voice, the people present were all startled and confused.

“Roar~~~~”

Right at that moment, a majestic fire dragon and a surging water dragon soared forth from the entrance simultaneously. They dashed toward the two Martial Emperors that were fighting against the Right Reverend.

“Ahhh~~~”

Everything happened too quickly. Before those two rank one Martial Emperors could react, they were devoured by the fire and water dragons. Immediately, their nonstop screams could be heard as their bodies began to be refined by the two dragons.

“What the hell are those?” Seeing that scene, the people from the Dark Hall were all alarmed. Not only were the water and fire dragons extremely ruthless, their auras also brought endless fear to the people from the Dark Hall. The reason for that was because the two dragons possessed the auras of rank two Martial Emperors.

“What’s going on? Where the hell did two rank two Martial Emperors come from?”

Seeing that scene, many people from the Dark Hall started to panic. The reason they possessed such an overwhelming advantage over the World Spiritist Alliance was all because of their Dark Hall’s three rank two Martial Emperors suppressing the World Spiritist Immortal.

Similarly, the World Spiritist Immortal had restricted the Dark Hall’s three rank two Martial Emperors from attacking others. As a whole, the reason why the Dark Hall was winning was because they possessed more experts than the World Spiritist Alliance.

However, two rank two Martial Emperors had suddenly appeared. To them, this was extremely detrimental. The state of affairs might even have a reversal because of this.

“Wha... what’s going on?”

At this moment, the eyes of many of the people from the World Spiritist Alliance who had been on the verge of despair shone with light. Although they were confused as to what was happening, they felt as if they could see traces of hope from the water and fire dragons.

“Roar~~~~”

Right at that moment, countless frightening howls sounded from the sky. Upon turning their gazes toward the sky, the expressions of the crowd present all changed enormously.

It was a group of golden-bright and dazzling ferocious beasts. Not only were they glistening with light, each and every one of them was several hundred meters tall. Some even surpassed a thousand meters. They were truly huge monsters.

These huge monsters, some of them possessed three heads and six arms. Some were grotesquely shaped. Each and every one of them was different from the next. However, there was one common aspect regarding them. That was, they all possessed the battle power of a rank one Martial Emperor. There was a total of several hundred of these ferocious beasts.

After those golden-bright and dazzling ferocious beasts appeared, they immediately charged toward the experts from the Dark Hall. With their mouths wide open and their claws sweeping forth, they began to frantically kill the experts from the Dark Hall.

Although the Dark Hall had dispatched a lot of experts, they numbered less than a hundred. Furthermore, other than the seven Martial Emperors, the rest of them were all only peak Half Martial Emperors. As such, how could they possibly be a match for the several hundreds of ferocious beasts?

In an instant, all of the peak Half Martial Emperors dispatched by the Dark Hall had been torn to pieces by the ferocious beasts.

At the same time, the screams from the two rank one Martial Emperors disappeared. The reason for that was because the two of them had been completely refined and killed by the water and fire dragons.

“Who? Who is it? Who dares to kill the people of our Dark Hall?” The remaining three rank two Martial Emperors from the Dark Hall all turned their gazes toward the golden sphere of light in midair by the entrance of the World Spiritist Alliance.

That golden sphere of light was incomparably gorgeous. In mid air, it was dazzling like the bright sun.

The several hundred golden ferocious beasts had all come from that place. Thus, they knew that the master of those beasts was within that golden sphere.

That said, while their tones were extremely arrogant, they were actually panicking in their hearts.

Their opponent had instantly eliminated all of the experts dispatched by their Dark Hall other than the three of them. This was sufficient to show how powerful their opponent was.

In fact, at this moment, the people from the World Spiritist Alliance were also looking at that golden sphere of light in the sky with stupefied expressions.

Compared to the three rank two Martial Emperors from the Dark Hall, they also wanted to know where those fire and water dragons, as well as the several hundred golden-bright and dazzling ferocious beasts, had come from.

However, regardless of who that person might be, they were all incomparably grateful to him, for he had rescued their World Spiritist Alliance.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, the several hundred golden-bright and dazzling ferocious beasts were led by the fire and water dragons back toward that golden sphere of light. They stopped before the golden sphere of light. Then, other than the water and fire dragons, all of the golden ferocious beasts knelt in an orderly fashion before the golden sphere of light. It was as if they were displaying their allegiance to that golden sphere of light.

Many people from the World Spiritist Alliance were stunned by this scene. Overcome with emotions, they felt as if they also wanted to kneel down and worship that golden sphere of light.

Those golden ferocious beasts had been extremely powerful. They had already seen their might for themselves. How could they even be considered to be ferocious beasts? They were simply Divine Beasts.

However, at this moment, the Divine Beasts before them all displayed expressions of servitude. From this, it was evident to them how exceptionally powerful the existence within the golden sphere of light was.

“God, could it be that there’s a God who came to save our World Spiritist Alliance?”

“Could it be that our World Spiritist Alliance’s ancestor saw this in the heavens and returned to earth to save us?”

The disciples of the World Spiritist Alliance were all guessing. They all felt that a God had descended before them to save them.

This was not because they were ignorant. After all, to them, the existence in the sky was truly too powerful, to the point that it surpassed the capabilities of their imaginations. As such, the only way for them to describe that existence was with the word ‘God.’

Chapter 1849 – Absolute Despise

At the moment when the people from the World Spiritist Alliance were all cheering excitedly, the three rank two Martial Emperors from the Dark Hall didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

The reason for that was because they discovered that the water dragon, the fire dragon and the golden ferocious beasts were all carrying Incomplete Imperial Armaments or Top Quality Royal Armaments and Cosmos Sacks in their mouths. Those were all the possessions from the people of their Dark Hall.

Upon thinking about how the previously mighty and impressive experts from the Dark Hall that were openly slaughtering the people from the World Spiritist Alliance had all been killed and their treasures plundered, the three Martial Emperors felt extreme lament.

“Exactly who is it? Do you dare to show yourself?” The more the three rank two Martial Emperors thought about it, the more angry they became. Unable to contain themselves, they shouted at the golden sphere of light. At this moment, the three of them were no longer bothering to continue fighting against the World Spiritist Immortal. Instead, they firmly fixed their gazes onto that golden sphere of light.

“Show myself? How would I not dare?” The voice from before sounded.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, the golden sphere of light began to dissipate. Soon, a figure appeared before everyone's line of sight.

“It's the Left Reverend, it's Lord Left Reverend.”

“It's Lord Left Reverend. Could it be that he has brought back reinforcements?” Upon seeing the man that had appeared before them, the crowd from the World Spiritist Alliance began to cheer

nonstop. They all knew who he was. He was their Lord Left Reverend.

At this moment, many elders and disciples felt that the Left Reverend had brought back reinforcements.

“Mn?” At this moment, those people with good eyesight continued to fix their gazes onto the dissipating golden sphere of light. The reason for that was because they all knew that the person that had spoken earlier was not the Left Reverend. There were definitely other people in that golden sphere of light.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the golden sphere of light disappeared completely. At this moment, Chu Feng appeared before the crowd.

At this moment, Chu Feng’s body was covered with an armor of lightning and on his back were also two wings of lightning. His cultivation was the same as the Left Reverend’s. He was currently a rank one Martial Emperor.

“Chu Feng?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the expressions of the people from the World Spiritist Alliance all grew stiff. Then, different sorts of gazes appeared in their eyes.

Some were baffled and others were shocked. They were all able to imagine that the God that had saved them was not the Left Reverend. In that case, it would be very likely for that God to be Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, is it really you?” At this moment, Sima Ying and the others’ gazes were also firmly fixed onto Chu Feng. They were all extremely emotional. At the same time, they all felt disbelief. They were not certain that it was really Chu Feng that had saved their World Spiritist Alliance.

This was not because they were looking down on Chu Feng. Rather, it was because Chu Feng was a person from the younger generation, a person of the same age group as them.

The battle earlier was something that even the strongest existence in the World Spiritist Alliance, the World Spiritist Immortal, had been powerless against. This was why they were skeptical as to whether the one that had saved them in that desperate crisis was truly Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, it’s actually you?” At this moment, the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors revealed expressions of deep shock. They had thought about many possibilities. However, none of them had ever expected for the person that saved the World Spiritist Alliance to be Chu Feng.

“What’s wrong? Scared? Didn’t you all wish to capture me? I’m standing right before you. Come, capture me,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. His gaze simply did not place those three rank two Martial Emperors in his eyes.

“Chu Feng, regardless of what sort of treasure you used to create those golden ferocious beasts, it remains only the product of a treasure, and not your actual strength.”

“As for the three of us, we are rank two Martial Emperors. Our strength is real,” Although they were extremely shocked to discover that it was Chu Feng, they soon heaved a sigh of relief.

The World Spiritist Alliance possessed a lot of experts. They were truly scared that some exceptional expert had arrived to save the World Spiritist Alliance. After all, the might revealed earlier had truly not been something to look down upon.

However, if it was Chu Feng, then they would not be afraid. Regardless of what sort of ability Chu Feng had used to increase his cultivation to rank one Martial Emperor, regardless of what sort of treasure Chu Feng had used to create the hundreds of golden ferocious beasts, they still felt that Chu Feng was merely a member of the younger generation.

They had lived for a very long time, and experienced all sorts of crises. As such, how could they possibly fear a person from the

younger generation, and one that was so young on top of that?

“Treasure? Since when did world spirit techniques become treasures in your eyes?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, the several hundred golden ferocious beasts all turned into golden light and entered Chu Feng’s body.

“Heavens! Those were actually world spirit techniques?”

At that moment, not to mention the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors, even the experts of the World Spiritist Alliance that were extremely proficient with world spirit techniques were enormously astonished by Chu Feng.

It was only when the golden ferocious beasts let out golden light that they discovered that they had been formed with world spirit techniques. Furthermore, Dragon marks filled those golden-bright and dazzling world spirit energy. Thus, they had also discovered that Chu Feng had not only unleashed such an exquisite world spirit technique, he had also become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Chu Feng, you’re a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist now?” Although he already knew that, the Left Reverend was still unable to contain himself from asking Chu Feng that question. He wished to verify this, for it was truly no small matter.

“Senior, this junior has just recently become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said.

“Great, this is truly great. Chu Feng, the speed of your progress truly surpasses my imagination,” The Left Reverend was extremely overjoyed.

At the same time, many of the people present, for example, the World Spiritist Immortal, Miao Renlong, the World Spiritist Alliance’s Alliance Master and others, also revealed extremely overjoyed expressions on their aged faces.

Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. How many of them

were present in the entire Holy Land of Martialism? Chu Feng had become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist at such a young age. He was most definitely the youngest Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist in the history of the Holy Land of Martialism.

“You’ve actually become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” At that moment, the expressions of the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors changed.

If Chu Feng had used treasures to summon those ferocious beasts, they would not have been afraid of Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had actually created them with his world spirit techniques. This was absolutely not a small matter at all.

While there were a few Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, not many among them could actually create that many Martial Emperor-level ferocious beasts. At the very least, it was impossible for the World Spiritist Immortal to accomplish that feat. However, Chu Feng had managed to do it.

Logically, Chu Feng should have only just become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. His world spirit techniques should not be that powerful.

However, he had unleashed such a powerful world spirit technique. This was sufficient to show that his world spirit techniques were extremely exquisite. As such, they had no choice but to take Chu Feng seriously.

Chu Feng ignored the questioning of the Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors. Instead, he walked toward the World Spiritist Immortal one step at a time. As he walked, the water dragon and the fire dragon revealed their true forms. They were the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

Although they were Secret Skills, they looked extremely sacred. However, those two sacred existences were following behind Chu Feng like two bodyguards. This scene caused the crowd from the World Spiritist Alliance to become awestruck. They gasped in

amazement, and their eyes were filled with admiration.

After arriving before the World Spiritist Immortal, Chu Feng said to him, “Senior, you’ve been through a lot. Take a rest. Allow this junior to take care of these three animals on your behalf.”

“Chu Feng, we should join hands against them,” The World Spiritist Immortal was worried about Chu Feng taking the three rank two Martial Emperors on alone.

“Senior, please rest assured. I am enough to take care of the three of them. You do not have to trouble yourself again,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“.....”

“Then, be extra careful,” Seeing Chu Feng’s extremely confident gaze, the World Spiritist Immortal moved to the side. The reason for that was because he knew that Chu Feng was not acting arrogant. For Chu Feng to be this confident at such a time, it was most likely because he possessed the strength to be confident.

Thinking about it, when Chu Feng swept the floor with the Four Clan’s younger generation at Mooncloud City, he was already filled with astonishment and with admiration for Chu Feng’s heaven-defying strength.

And now, Chu Feng was going to fight by himself against three rank two Martial Emperors. The World Spiritist Immortal truly wished to see how Chu Feng was going to fight against them.

“What arrogance! However, that’s fine. I also happened to want to experience exactly how amazing the legendary Secret Skills are.”

“Come, allow me to experience whether the strength of the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal profound Technique are truly as they are rumored to be,” One of the Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors held his Incomplete Imperial Armament and stood forth.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique suddenly entered Chu Feng’s body.

After retrieving the two Secret Skills, Chu Feng said with a beaming smile, “Who said that I’m going to fight against you all using my Secret Skills?”

“You...” That Martial Emperor who had stood out to fight against Chu Feng stood there in a stunned manner. He was at a complete loss.

He had thought that Chu Feng had relied on the strength of his Secret Skills. Yet, Chu Feng had now deliberately refused to use his Secret Skills. This brought great anger to him.

He was being looked down upon. Chu Feng was absolutely looking down on him.

Chapter 1850 – The Mysterious Dark Hall

“Chu Feng, you are truly confident in yourself. However, world spirit techniques remain only world spirit techniques. Even if you are capable of creating even more rank one Martial Emperor-level ferocious beasts, it would still impossible for you to defeat the three of us, for we are true rank two Martial Emperors.”

After Chu Feng retrieved his Secret Skills, the other Dark Hall’s Martial Emperor thought that Chu Feng was planning to fight against them with world spirit techniques.

“World spirit techniques? There’s simply no need for that. Today, I shall use my own strength to take care of the three of you.”

“Clank~~~”

After Chu Feng said those words, he drew his Heavenly Immortal Sword. Once the Heavenly Immortal Sword was revealed, an overwhelming righteous aura surged forth and began to linger around Chu Feng, changing the airs that Chu Feng emitted. At this moment, Chu Feng looked like a Sword Immortal descending upon the world. Looking at him, one would feel deep veneration.

“Chu Feng, I’ve heard that you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. While that might be to your advantage now, that advantage of yours will only work against Half Martial Emperors.”

“At the level of Martial Emperors, you will no longer possess that advantage. Everyone knows that only those that possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation are capable of becoming Martial Emperors,” The last Dark Hall’s Martial Emperor said.

“You’re telling me that my heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation is the same as your

heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Thus, I do not have an advantage?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally, you still possessed an advantage. Merely, when facing Martial Emperors, you would, at the very most, only possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation. If the ones standing before you right now are three rank one Martial Emperors, you would naturally possess an advantage over them.”

“However, the three of us are actually three rank two Martial Emperors. Did you think that you would possess an advantage over us?” That Dark Hall’s Martial Emperor said.

“Wouldn’t you know whether or not I possessed an advantage by fighting against me?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Immediately afterward, his smiling gaze shone with coldness. At the same time that happened, his Heavenly Immortal Sword turned into ten thousand sword rays that shot toward the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors.

“Perfect timing,” The three Martial Emperors all snorted coldly as they released their majestic killing intent. They took the initiative and charged forward to face Chu Feng’s attacks.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

At this moment, ear-piercing rumbles resonated nonstop. Blade rays and sword silhouettes were appearing all over the sky. Chu Feng and the three Martial Emperors fought in one location.

However, right after the four of them started fighting, Chu Feng immediately obtained an absolute superiority over them. By relying on his sharp sword techniques, he forced the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors to retreat in defeat again and again. At this moment, the only thing they could do was defend.

“Good! What a profound sword technique! I have never seen such a profound sword technique before. It would seem that Chu Feng

has managed to completely comprehend the essence of the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique.”

Seeing Chu Feng suppressing the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors by himself, the people from the World Spiritist Alliance exclaimed in astonishment. Chu Feng’s sword techniques were truly too exquisite. They could simply be compared to Taboo Martial Skills. With merely that sword technique, Chu Feng was able to beat down on those three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors.

“Damn it! I refuse to believe this!”

To be suppressed by Chu Feng right after they started battling caused the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors to feel extremely unreconciled. All of them shouted loudly, and then golden rays began to spread out from them. They turned into an enormous tornado that engulfed heaven and earth as it swept toward Chu Feng.

It was a martial skill, an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Being suppressed by Chu Feng, they could only start using martial skills to contend against Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng’s Heavenly Immortal Sword was constantly changing as it revealed its ability. Relying on merely that Heavenly Immortal Sword, Chu Feng blocked the Earthen Taboo Martial Skill unleashed jointly by those three Martial Emperors.

‘And here I thought the Dark Hall was extremely powerful. It turns out that you guys are inferior to even a rank two Martial Emperor from the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts,’ Chu Feng sneered in his heart.

When Chu Feng had fought against that rank two Martial Emperor from the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, he had felt some pressure. However, when facing these three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors, Chu Feng felt absolutely no pressure from them. He

simply did not have to use his Taboo Martial Skills or Secret Techniques against them. He was able to completely suppress them using only his Heavenly Immortal Sword.

Of course, although Chu Feng was still a rank one Marital Emperor, his strength today was not comparable to the strength he had possessed back then. At this moment, he had already gradually gotten used to the Martial Emperor's power. Naturally, he was more powerful compared to back then.

“Puu, puu, puu~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's sword technique changed again, and then three rays of blood sprayed out from the bodies of the three Dark Hall's Martial Emperors. A hole appeared in the dantians of those three Martial Emperors. They actually all had their cultivations crippled by Chu Feng.

“Bastard! I'll tear you apart alive!”

Sensing that their dantians had been damaged and their cultivations were rapidly flowing away, the three Dark Hall's Martial Emperors all flew into a rage, and began to recklessly throw themselves at Chu Feng. They planned to engage in a final life and death struggle.

“Humph,” Chu Feng snorted coldly. Then, the Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand swept through the air. As a cold ray streaked across the horizon, and the three Dark Hall's Martial Emperors were all sliced in half before falling to the ground. They had lost all ability to continue fighting against Chu Feng.

“Speak! Exactly what is the Dark Hall? Who is it that created it? Why did you all insist on making me an enemy?” Chu Feng landed beside the three men and questioned them while pointing his sword at them.

“Haha... hahahaha... wahahahahaha...” The three men burst into loud laughter. Their laughter was extremely strange.

“You all had best tell me the truth. Else, I will make you all wish you were dead,” As Chu Feng spoke, he used world spirit techniques to bind the three men. Other than speaking, there was nothing else that the three of them could do.

“Chu Feng, you’re actually using this sort of trick on us? You’re truly looking down on our Dark Hall.”

“I’ll tell you this. The Dark Hall shall become your nightmare. Those that the Dark Hall want to kill, none of them will be able to survive. You are no exception,” The leader of the three Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors spoke coldly.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng raised his hand and swept his sword across. He sliced apart the man’s mask. He was trying to see exactly who he was.

However, when that man’s mask was sliced apart, what appeared before Chu Feng was a disfigured face beyond recognition.

His face could be said to be completely and utterly disfigured. Even when using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was unable to make out his original facial features.

“Chu Feng, I’ve already said it. Our Dark Hall shall become your nightmare. You should give up on cheap tricks like these,” The man sneered, and then a ‘bang’ was heard. His body exploded on the spot.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

Immediately after him, the other two Dark Hall’s Martial Emperors’ bodies also exploded. They were all dead.

“Why would it be like this?” At this moment, the Left Reverend and Right Reverend, as well as the other experts of the World Spiritist Alliance, all rushed over. Astonishment filled their faces.

“A certain kind of self destruction spirit formation was

implanted into their bodies. As long as they wished to die, even I would not be able to stop them,” Chu Feng said.

“Indeed, that is the case. It would seem that this Dark Hall is no small matter. After all, very few people in the Holy Land of Martialism are capable of setting up that sort of spirit formation,” The World Spiritist Immortal nodded.

“Lord World Spiritist, do you know of the Dark Hall’s origins?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not. There are too many hidden experts in the Holy Land of Martialism. Even if you had me guess, I would not be able to guess who created it. All I know is that the Dark Hall is currently raising a large army. Furthermore, their appearance was absolutely not a coincidence. I have an ominous premonition,” The World Spiritist Immortal said.

After hearing what the World Spiritist Immortal said, Chu Feng grew silent. Like the World Spiritist Immortal, he too felt an ominous premonition.

While there were a lot of powers in the Holy Land of Martialism, the Three Palaces, the Four Clans, the Nine Powers, the Ancient Era’s Elves and several large monstrous beast races were publicly accepted to be the strongest powers.

However, regardless of how those powers fought with one another, they would never try to extinguish the other powers. At the very least, they would only teach the other powers a lesson.

However, this newly-appeared Dark Hall had planned to extinguish the entire World Spiritist Alliance merely because they had refused to join them. From this, it could be determined that the Dark Hall was a vicious and merciless power.

For such a power to appear in the Holy Land of Martialism, not to mention Chu Feng, it would likely not be something good for the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

Chapter 1851 – Making Inquiries About The Blind Old Man

“Chu Feng, it’s really you,” Right at this moment, Sima Ying and the others ran over. Sima Ying even directly leaped in front of Chu Feng and grabbed the corner of his sleeve. She was grinning from ear to ear. It could be seen that she was extremely excited.

“Lil Sis Ying, it’s been a while,” Chu Feng stroked Sima Ying’s blazing red hair intimately. He was also extremely happy to see Sima Ying, for she was truly a friend that he had spent life and death with. Their relationship was very deep.

“That’s right, it’s been a while. However, seeing you again, I am truly shocked. What’s with you? How did you become this powerful? You’ve become so powerful that you’ve cast us far behind,” Sima Ying asked.

“That’s right. Brother Chu Feng, isn’t the speed of your cultivation’s increase too fast? How are we supposed to catch up to you?” Fu Feiteng and the others said.

Faced with Sima Ying’s questioning as well as the passionate gazes of Fu Feiteng, Lin Yezhou and the others, Chu Feng could only smile foolishly. After all, how was he supposed to explain this sort of thing? Should he say that his talent was exceptional, and that was why his breakthrough speed was so lightning fast? That this was why he had managed to leave them far behind? Chu Feng would naturally not be able to say something like that.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Eh? Where’s Su Mei?” He had discovered that Su Mei was not among the crowd here.

“Lil Mei was received by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal,” The Left Reverend said.

“The Weaponry Refinement Immortal?” Although Chu Feng was surprised to hear that Su Mei was with the Weaponry Refinement

Immortal, he did not continue to ask.

The reason for that was because the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was a very strong senior in Chu Feng's heart. Furthermore, he was also his benefactor that had helped him before.

Furthermore, Chu Feng knew that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, like the Left Reverend, also possessed a certain connection with the master of Su Mei and the others, that blind old man. Thus, Chu Feng was not at all worried that Su Mei was with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. As such, he did not ask further.

"The Dark Hall is unfathomable. They have failed this time. However, they will definitely come to create trouble for the World Spiritist Alliance again. I'm afraid that the World Spiritist Alliance cannot remain here anymore," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, regarding that, you can rest assured. Our World Spiritist Alliance has not been in existence for so long without any preparations for the unexpected. As long as we activate our defensive formation, regardless of how many experts the Dark Hall might send, they will not be able to break through to our World Spiritist Alliance."

"We had allowed them to enter this time around because we were caught off guard. However, after today, our World Spiritist Alliance will activate that defensive formation. Unless we have important matters to take care of, our disciples and elders will all not leave here," The World Spiritist Immortal said.

"Is that truly feasible?" Chu Feng was worried.

"Chu Feng, you can rest assured. What sort of place is our World Spiritist Alliance? It is a gathering of World Spiritists. Perhaps our current generation is inferior to the generation of our founder. However, the defense of our World Spiritist Alliance is most definitely among the very best in the Holy Land of Martialism."

“As long as we activate our grand defensive formation, absolutely no one will be able to break through it and reach our World Spiritist Alliance. Furthermore, our World Spiritist Alliance possesses all the required materials to do so. Even if our people are to live here for several thousand years, it would still not be an issue,” The Left Reverend said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng realized the intentions of the Left Reverend and the World Spiritist Immortal.

The reason why the Dark Hall had been able to break in was actually very simple. As long as they abducted an elder or disciple, they would be able to enter the World Spiritist Alliance. Upon entering, that defensive formation would be ineffective.

However, after what had happened, the World Spiritist Immortal planned to completely seal off the World Spiritist Alliance. Once that happened, there would be no gap for the Dark Hall to break through into the World Spiritist Alliance. If they wished to attack the World Spiritist Alliance, they could only do so head-on.

However, it could be seen that the people from the World Spiritist Alliance were extremely confident in their defensive formation. Even if the Dark Hall were to come again, they would still not fear them.

However, this would also lead to the elders and disciples of the World Spiritist Alliance only being able to stay in the World Spiritist Alliance.

To speak of it unpleasantly, they were so frightened by the Dark Hall that they would not even dare to open their doors again, and could only withdraw themselves into that defensive formation. However, to the current World Spiritist Alliance, that was the only method for them to protect themselves.

Even if they became an object of ridicule for others by doing so, it would still be better than the massacre of everyone in the World Spiritist Alliance and the destruction of the World Spiritist

Alliance itself.

“Chu Feng, with your talent, you will be able to surpass the Four Great Imperial Clans sooner or later. You might even be able to become the strongest person in this era.”

“However, it remains that you have yet to mature, and the Four Great Imperial Clans are determined to take your life.”

“How about you stay here with us? It would not be too late to seek revenge after you’ve matured,” The World Spiritist Immortal suggested.

“Senior, you do not know about this. However, for this junior to reach a breakthrough, I need an enormous amount of cultivation resources. If I am to stay here, I fear that I will not be able to progress.”

“Furthermore, I possess many friends outside. If the Four Great Imperial Clans were to discover their connection with me and decided to go after them after being unable to catch me, I would feel extremely guilty,” Chu Feng said.

“This... Okay then,” Seeing how determined Chu Feng was, the World Spiritist Immortal and the others no longer tried to urge him to stay.

“Chu Feng, while it’s fine to leave, you must take this,” Suddenly, the Left Reverend took out a cloak and handed it to Chu Feng.

This cloak was no ordinary cloak. It was dazzling with a golden sheen, and made out of exquisite materials. This was a Royal World Spiritist Cloak. However, it was no ordinary Royal World Spiritist Cloak, for it was much more precious than ordinary Royal World Spiritist Cloaks.

The reason for that was because a large character was written on that Royal World Spiritist Cloak. This character was an Ancient Era’s character. The people of this era were incapable of

understanding it, nor did they know what it represented. However, it greatly resembled the character ‘King,’

Furthermore, this ‘King’ character was emitting a special sort of power. This power caused the cloak to appear extraordinary. With a single glance, one could tell that it was an extraordinary item.

“King Royal Cloak,” Chu Feng’s eyes shone upon seeing that Royal Cloak. This King Royal Cloak had been presented to him as a gift by the Left Reverend before. Merely, at that time, Chu Feng felt that he did not have the strength to protect the King Royal Cloak. As such, he did not accept it, and asked the Left Reverend to safekeep it for him.

“Chu Feng, this Reverend has helped you safekeep this King Royal Cloak for some time now. It’s time for it to be returned to its rightful owner,” The Left Reverend said.

“Chu Feng, this time around, you must definitely not refuse it again. Right now, you possess the power to safekeep this King Royal Cloak yourself,” Miao Renlong said with a beaming smile. He was intentionally mocking Chu Feng for refusing the Left Reverend’s gift back then.

“Chu Feng, accept it. This junior brother of mine has treated that King Royal Cloak as a treasure. He refused even me when I asked to borrow it to wear. However, he was willing to present it to you. As such, he has truly placed his trust in you, and thinks highly of you,” The World Spiritist Immortal added.

“Thank you seniors,” This time around, Chu Feng did not refuse, and accepted the King Royal Cloak.

“Senior Left, I have another question that I wish to ask of you,” Chu Feng said those words through a voice transmission.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have something that I wish to discuss with you alone,” The Left Reverend understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Thus, he said those words and soared into the sky. He

proceeded to fly toward a place without people. As for Chu Feng, he naturally followed after the Left Reverend.

None of the people present were fools. They were actually able to guess a bit about what was going on. Thus, no one followed them, and no one tried to disturb Chu Feng and the Left Reverend.

“Senior Left, exactly who is that senior that entrusted Lil Mei to your care? Might you be capable of telling me?” Chu Feng wanted to make some inquiries about the blind old man from the Left Reverend.

After all, Su Mei had once said to Chu Feng that the Left Reverend was an old friend of that blind old man. Thus, Chu Feng felt that the Left Reverend might know things regarding that blind old man.

Chapter 1852 – Luring A Snake Out Of Its Hole

“Chu Feng, it is not that I do not wish to tell you. Rather, I truly do not know much about that senior.”

“Back then, he had helped our World Spiritist Alliance and saved my life. Thus, when he entrusted Lil Mei to be, I naturally did my best to look after her.”

“As for his identity, truth be told, I truly do not know anything at all. In fact, I do not even know his name.

“However, I personally think that he is one of the top existences in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“As for Lil Mei, since she is his disciple, there should not be anyone that would dare to touch her. If anyone were to truly dare to touch Lil Mei, they would incur great troubles for themselves. Thus, you do not have to worry about Lil Mei’s safety,” The Left Reverend said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng nodded. However, he became even more curious as to the identity of that blind old man. He truly never expected that the old man who was thought to be a madman in the Eastern Sea Region was actually such a powerful existence in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Afterward, with the reasoning that he possessed an important matter to take care of, Chu Feng left the World Spiritist Alliance. After Chu Feng left, the World Spiritist Alliance immediately activated their grand defensive formation. After that, all the people from the World Spiritist Alliance ended up living their daily lives within the World Spiritist Alliance.

That said, the World Spiritist Alliance would never forget that they would have been completely massacred should Chu Feng not have appeared today. Thus, Chu Feng became their great

benefactor that had saved their World Spiritist Alliance.

At the moment when the majority of the people were feeling extremely grateful toward Chu Feng, there was also a small group of people that were feeling an endless amount of guilt, shame and fear.

Those people were the people that tried to deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng when he had just arrived at the World Spiritist Alliance.

There were both elders and disciples in this group. Back then, they absolutely had not placed Chu Feng in their eyes. That was the reason why they had dared to bully and humiliate him.

Currently, they remained the same as when they had first met Chu Feng. The elders were still elders, and the disciples were still disciples. However, Chu Feng had become their great benefactor that had saved their World Spiritist Alliance. Chu Feng's strength was not only above their Alliance Master's, his strength was also above that of the World Spiritist Immortal. Likely, even if the entire World Spiritist Alliance were to fight against Chu Feng, they would still be no match for him.

At this moment, they felt extremely guilty and ashamed. They were regretting their decision to do that sort of thing to Chu Feng. They felt that they possessed eyes, but had failed to recognize Mount Tai.

In addition to that, they were also feeling a lingering fear because of what they had done to Chu Feng. After all, with Chu Feng's current strength, if he wanted to take their lives, even the World Spiritist Immortal would not be able to stop him. Furthermore, with Chu Feng's current status, if he insisted on taking their lives, the World Spiritist Immortal would simply not try to stop him at all.

They knew very well that between minor characters like themselves and Chu Feng, the World Spiritist Immortal would

definitely choose Chu Feng.

However, they were also extremely glad. They were rejoicing that Chu Feng was not such a narrow-minded individual. Else, they would not be able to continue living right now. Thus, at the moment when they were feeling guilty and ashamed, they also felt a sense of adoration for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

Chu Feng did not know what the people from the World Spiritist Alliance were thinking. He had not forgotten his true purpose in coming to the Alliance Domain because of what happened with the World Spiritist Alliance.

Thus, after journeying for some time, Chu Feng arrived at the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest. The Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest appeared to be the same as before. There had not been much of a change.

Chu Feng did not disturb anyone. With his current situation, it was better that he have as little contact with others as was possible. Else, he might end up implicating them in the future.

Thus, Chu Feng stealthily arrived before the cave that contained the crystal coffin.

That crystal coffin had been hidden by Hong Qiang through the use of a concealment formation. Without the key to the formation, it was very difficult to reveal the crystal coffin.

However, Chu Feng stood before the concealment formation and waved his sleeve. Then, the empty space before him began to change, and revealed waves like the surface of a lake. Soon, the crystal coffin and that gravestone appeared before him.

Chu Feng had undone the concealment formation without using the key that had been given to him by Hong Qiang. After all, the current Chu Feng was already a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Hong Qiang's techniques would not be able to stop him.

As Chu Feng looked to the crystal coffin and saw that beautiful

woman who still looked like a celestial fairy, great waves surged forth in Chu Feng's heart.

When Chu Feng first saw that woman, he was still extremely weak. At that time, Martial Emperors were unfathomable existences to him.

However, Chu Feng now possessed the strength to kill rank two Martial Emperors. Furthermore, he also knew the name of this woman. She was Duan Qirou.

“Senior Duan, I am truly sorry. This junior should not have disturbed your rest. Merely, you are truly capable of helping me. Thus, I have no choice but to disturb your rest.”

“Furthermore, if you can see this from the heavens, you should also wish to be reunited with Senior Duan, right?”

Chu Feng first bowed to Duan Qirou's corpse. After all, she had hidden herself in this place. For Chu Feng to move her coffin, it was inevitably not too good of a thing to do.

Afterward, Chu Feng set up a spirit formation. After finishing his spirit formation, Chu Feng lightly shouted, “In!”

Both the crystal coffin and that gravestone ended up being sucked into that spirit formation. Then, Chu Feng formed hand seals with his hands, and the spirit formation began to shrink in size. It turned into the size of a palm before entering Chu Feng's Cosmos Sack.

The crystal coffin and gravestone were extremely extraordinary. Likely, ordinary rank two Martial Emperors would not be able to move them. However, it was different for Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram contained many powerful spirit formations that were extinct to others. Thus, this crystal coffin was already not at all an issue to Chu Feng.

The spirit formations contained within the Nine Spirits Divine

Diagram were truly very miraculous. For example, there was the spirit formation that summoned several hundred Martial Emperor-level ferocious beasts which Chu Feng had used at the World Spiritist Alliance. Then, there was the spirit formation he had just used to remove the crystal coffin and the gravestone. Both of them were spirit formations that no ordinary world spiritist possessed. However, Chu Feng had grasped both of them.

After retrieving the crystal coffin, Chu Feng began to hurry back to the World's Hidden Valley without stopping. Merely, before he arrived at the World's Hidden Valley, Chu Feng suddenly stopped.

Using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng had discovered a layer of hidden sensing formations. As long as Chu Feng continued onward, he would have triggered that formation. At that time, someone would come to know of his coordinates for a short period of time.

"What's going on? This spirit formation wasn't here earlier," Eggy said.

"Let me carefully inspect it," Chu Feng began to carefully inspect the spirit formation, and discovered that this spirit formation was set around the World's Hidden Valley. It had sealed both the sky and the ground leading to the World's Hidden Valley. As long as Chu Feng wished to return to the World's Hidden Valley, he must definitely pass through that concealed sensing formation.

"Chu Feng, this is fishy. Could it be that someone's lying in ambush for you?" The alert Eggy said.

"That's most likely the case. Eggy, who do you think it is?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's definitely not the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. After all, only Yaojiao Guang and Yaojiao Tingyu know that you've come here. They would not betray you."

"It should also not be the Four Clans. If it were them, they would

not use this sort of cheap trick. Likely, when you discovered this spirit formation, they would've already surrounded you."

"Thus, the way I see it, there must definitely be someone from the World's Hidden Valley that wants to plot against you. What do you think?" Eggy said.

"I am of the same opinion. After all, I also possess enemies in the World's Hidden Valley", Chu Feng said.

"You're talking about Song Yuheng? But wasn't Yin Gongfu the only one that knew that you left the World's Hidden Valley?" Eggy said.

"Senior Yin will definitely not have betrayed me. I trust him. However, Senior Yin was not the only one that saw me leaving this place that day," Chu Feng said.

"You're talking about Yin Gongfu's servant?" Eggy asked.

"He's most likely Song Yuheng's spy," Chu Feng said.

"That's very possible. In that case, what do you plan to do?" Eggy asked.

"For something like this, it would be extremely easy for me to break through it. However, I am not going to." As Chu Feng spoke, he walked over and triggered the concealed formation.

"Boy, you're planning to lure the snake out from its hole?" Eggy asked with a beaming smile. She was not worried for Chu Feng. Instead, she had an expression of anticipation.

Chapter 1853 – Within The Grasp Of One's Palm

After triggering that spirit formation, Chu Feng did not stay there. Instead, he continued onward toward the World's Hidden Valley.

The reason for that was because if he were to stand his ground, it would be too obvious. It would be as if he was telling his opponent that he had discovered the spirit formation. Only by continuing to move onward was he able to make everything appear to be normal and make his opponent take the bait.

“Chu Feng, who do you think will be the one that will end up ambushing you later?” Eggy asked curiously.

“As far as I know, the strongest person behind Song Yuheng is his grandfather. If my guess is correct, it should be that grandfather of his,” Chu Feng said.

“I think that's the case too. Song Yuheng and his father both appeared to be very stupid. The reason why Song Yuheng was able to obtain that Duan Jidao's acknowledgement was all because of his grandfather,” Eggy said.

“That's why his grandfather is probably the main culprit behind all this. If I can eliminate his grandfather here, I would have swept clean an enormous obstacle for little brother Wushang,” Chu Feng said.

“Oh you, you only know about thinking for the sake of your brother,” Eggy curled her lips. She was only concerned about whether or not Chu Feng would be able to obtain benefits for himself, and was not at all concerned about his brother's life and death.

“Woosh~~~”

Not long after Chu Feng continued on with his journey, a

powerful aura appeared out of nowhere and covered his surroundings, sealing them off completely. It was a layer of spirit formation. Someone had used a spirit formation to seal off Chu Feng's surroundings and cage him within it.

As long as that spirit formation was present, regardless of how enormous a thing were to happen here, regardless of how much destruction and devastation happened here, no one would know.

“Haha...” At this moment, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he turned his gaze toward the southeast. The reason for that was because the fox had finally shown its tail. That snake that he was luring out had finally left its hole.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng fixed his gaze at that region. The space there was slightly trembling. Then, an old man with a very sinister gaze walked out from that region of space. That person was none other than Song Yuheng's grandfather.

“You knew I was here?” Song Yuheng's grandfather was very smart. He had immediately discovered that the situation was amiss based on Chu Feng's reaction.

“Why should I not?” Chu Feng smiled. His smile was filled with contempt. He had sensed that his opponent possessed a cultivation of rank two Martial Emperor. It was as he had guessed.

“You're Song Yuheng's grandfather, right?” Chu Feng asked. He had already determined the identity of his opponent.

“How did you know? Impossible! There shouldn't have been anyone that told you about this!” Song Yuheng's grandfather started to panic. He was worried that his evil plot had been exposed. Chu Feng had never met him before, yet he knew who he was. This caused him to be extremely worried.

“Told me? There's simply no need for others to tell me. That spirit formation you set up earlier was too obvious. Only a fool

would not be able to see through it,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“No, impossible! How could you see through the spirit formation I set up?” Song Yuheng’s grandfather had an expression of disbelief.

“I admit, you have some skills. Among Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, you could be said to be quite outstanding.”

“However, did you think that the methods of a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist could be hidden from a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” As Chu Feng spoke, he lifted his right hand and emitted some world spirit power from his index finger’s tip.

His golden-bright and dazzling world spirit power looked like a snake swimming in the water as it spiraled around Chu Feng’s finger. However, that spirit power was filled with dragon marks.

“You!!! You’re a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?! How... how could this be?! How could this be?!” Song Yuheng’s grandfather was deeply stunned. As he was proficient in world spirit techniques, he was naturally able to determine with a single glance that the spirit power Chu Feng had unleashed was that of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, he didn’t dare to believe his eyes. He didn’t dare to believe that a young man like Chu Feng would be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. After all, this was something that was simply unprecedented.

“Don’t be so shocked. All that you’re seeing right now is the truth,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Originally, I had wanted to let you live. But since this is the case, I have no choice but to kill you,” After panicking, Song Yuheng’s grandfather suddenly revealed his killing intent. After realizing how frightening Chu Feng was, he planned to go through with his intentions to the end and kill Chu Feng now to prevent future

nightmares.

“Come. Use whatever abilities you have. Allow me to see exactly how powerful the person who dared to pass off fake remains to deceive Duan Jidao is,” Chu Feng extended his arms and raised his neck. He revealed an appearance that stated to Song Yuheng’s grandfather to come and attack him.

Seeing how much Chu Feng looked down on him, Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s expression stiffened. Then, he gnashed his teeth in anger and revealed a giant crimson axe. It was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. As he waved that axe, a crimson blade ray shot forth to hack Chu Feng apart.

“Woosh~~~”

Song Yuheng’s grandfather was not holding back at all. His axe strike was so powerful that, not to mention ordinary rank eight Half Martial Emperors, even ordinary rank two Martial Emperors would be killed should they be hit by that axe strike.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when that crimson blade ray was about to reach Chu Feng, a ripple appeared in the space before Chu Feng. When the crimson blade ray came in contact with that ripple, it disappeared as if it had sunk to the bottom of the ocean.

“This!!!” Song Yuheng’s grandfather was deeply shocked. His face that was already pale had started to turn ashen. He was feeling more and more uneasy. The reason for that was because he had realized more and more that the young man before him was much more difficult to take care of than he had imagined.

Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s sword-like eyebrows narrowed. He shouted, “I refuse to believe this!” and then raised his axe to hack at Chu Feng once again.

“Rumble~~~”

After his axe strike was sent forth, even the void started to

tremble. A majestic oppressive might instantly arrived before Chu Feng. Merely, that oppressive might was naturally incapable of injuring Chu Feng.

While that oppressive might was incapable of injuring Chu Feng, the golden axe strike that was flying toward Chu Feng could not be looked down upon. This was no longer an ordinary axe slash. Instead, it was an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Song Yuheng's grandfather had used his Incomplete Imperial Armament to unleash his trump card.

“Buzz~~~”

However, even though his axe slash was extremely powerful and simply incomparable to the one from before, the conclusion was exactly the same as before. His axe slash came into contact with the space before Chu Feng and sunk into nothingness.

“No... impossible!” Song Yuheng's grandfather held the giant axe in his hand and began to step back repeatedly in midair. Then, with a stunned expression, he looked to Chu Feng. It was as if he was incapable of accepting what had just happened.

“Are you done? Is there no other technique left? Sigh... it turns out you're only of this level,” Chu Feng shook his head in disappointment.

“Woosh~~~”

At this moment, Song Yuheng's grandfather suddenly turned around and began to flee.

“You're trying to flee now? I'm afraid it's too late,” As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve, and a layer of spirit power appeared before Song Yuheng's grandfather. Then, Song Yuheng's grandfather was sealed off by it. Chu Feng said, “Of course, ever since the moment you appeared, you were destined to be unable to escape.”

Chu Feng looked to Song Yuheng's grandfather that he had

captured in his world spirit formation. An expression of contempt filled Chu Feng's eyes. Song Yuheng's grandfather had wracked his brains and meticulously planned to ambush Chu Feng here. Yet, he didn't know that the moment when Chu Feng triggered his concealed spirit formation, Song Yuheng's grandfather was already completely within the grasp of Chu Feng's palm.

“Chu Feng, what are you planning to do? If you dare to touch me, Lord Duan Jidao will definitely not let you get away with it,” While struggling in Chu Feng's spirit formation, Song Yuheng's grandfather revealed a malevolent expression and began to threaten Chu Feng.

Chapter 1854 – Wrecking The Inheritance Process

“Hahaha...” After hearing Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s threatening words, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter.

He was truly unable to contain himself. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had discovered that, other than a pretty decent comprehension of world spirit techniques, he was extremely lacking everywhere else. This was especially true in terms of battle power. Although he was a rank two Martial Emperor, he was the weakest rank two Martial Emperor Chu Feng had encountered so far.

From this, Chu Feng could imagine that he really did not possess the qualifications to become a Martial Emperor, and that his current cultivation of rank two Martial Emperor had only been obtained through the meticulous effort Duan Jidao had placed into helping him over the years.

Thus, Chu Feng was wondering what sort of reaction Duan Jidao would have should he find out that the person that he had painstakingly helped cultivate over the years had actually deceived him.

Thus, Chu Feng said to Song Yuheng’s grandfather, “Rest assured, I will not kill you. I’ll have senior Duan Jidao personally kill you.”

“What did you say? Have Lord Duan Jidao personally kill me?” Hearing those words, a mocking smile appeared on Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s previously terrified face. While he did not dare to guarantee anything else, he was absolutely confident that Duan Jidao was completely within the grasp of his palm. Not only did Duan Jidao consider him to be his trusted aide, he also considered him to be his benefactor.

As such, how could Duan Jidao possibly kill him? Chu Feng was simply delusional! If Chu Feng were to bring him to Duan Jidao, not only would he have the means to explain all that had happened here today, he would also be able to place a counter charge against Chu Feng.

Thinking about all this, Song Yuheng's grandfather began to ridicule Chu Feng in his heart. He thought to himself that regardless of how heaven-defying Chu Feng was, he was still too inexperienced. As such, how could he possibly win against him?

"Say, with Duan Jidao's temperament, if he were to come to know that Duan Qirou's remains that you've presented are fake, would he pardon you?" Chu Feng looked to Song Yuheng's grandfather and questioned him with a beaming smile.

"What? What did you say?!!" Hearing those words, Song Yuheng's grandfather immediately started to panic, and his expression became very emotional.

"You know very well what I'm talking about," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"You're blabbing nonsense! Enough of your crazy and unfounded ravings!" Song Yuheng's grandfather denied it with his all. In that moment, he was truly panicking. Earlier, when he had first heard Chu Feng talk about fake remains, he had thought that Chu Feng was only blabbing nonsense. After all, many people had thought that he had presented fake remains. However, after Chu Feng continued to bring this up and spoke with such a determined tone, he had no choice but to panic.

Especially now, after he had been defeated and captured by Chu Feng, he truly did not know of any alternative aside from denying such a thing. After all, he absolutely could not admit that to be real.

"Whether or not I'm blabbing nonsense will be decided by senior Duan Jidao," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. His smiled

contained absolute confidence.

“You!!! You damned devil! What exactly are you planning to do?! What are your intentions?!” It was only at this moment that Song Yuheng’s grandfather realized how frightening Chu Feng was. This young man was simply an existence akin to a nightmare. He had a premonition that this young man called Chu Feng would ruin everything that he had meticulously planned. All the effort that he had spent over the years would be futile. He was extremely unwilling and unreconciled, and actually began to shout hysterically.

However, after only a couple shouts, Chu Feng immediately shut him up. Then, Chu Feng took out a special sack and placed him into it.

Although Cosmos Sacks were capable of hiding all kinds of things, they were incapable of holding living things. Thus, it was much simpler to use a special sack to carry living people.

After capturing Song Yuheng’s grandfather, Chu Feng continued onward toward the World’s Hidden Valley. On his way there, he did not encounter any more obstructions.

At this moment, a very major event was happening in the World’s Hidden Valley. Duan Jidao was going to pass his power on to Song Yuheng.

At this moment, Duan Jidao, Yin Gongfu, Song Yuheng and Song Yuheng’s father were all gathered at Duan Jidao’s resting location, the place of Duan Qirou’s grave.

Other than them, there was another person present there. It was Jiang Wushang, who should have been under punishment.

Jiang Wushang, with his current status, should not be allowed to participate on such an occasion. However, Song Yuheng had suddenly found Duan Jidao and began to plead for leniency for Jiang Wushang.

As Duan Jidao did not wish to punish Jiang Wushang to begin with, he naturally released Jiang Wushang since Song Yuheng did not plan to continue looking into it.

However, even Duan Jidao did not expect for Song Yuheng to, without his permission, bring Jiang Wushang over here on this special day.

As Duan Jidao was someone who had lived for a very long time, how could he not tell that Song Yuheng was planning to attack Jiang Wushang with this? That he was deliberately trying to make Jiang Wushang suffer?

However, since he was determined to pass his power on to Song Yuheng, Jiang Wushang had to, sooner or later, accept this. As for the pain Jiang Wushang would feel today, he would have to bear that sooner or later too.

Thus, Duan Jidao did not say much, and instead prepared to pass his power on to Song Yuheng before Jiang Wushang.

“Yuheng, you are originally someone from the Song Royal Clan. Originally, a Royal Bloodline flowed within your dantian.”

“Right now, what you possess is an Imperial Bloodline. From today forward, you shall possess the strongest Imperial Bloodline in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“However, you do not have to thank me. You only need to thank one person, Emperor Huang, Lord Huangfu Shou. You must remember this. The power that you shall obtain today was bestowed to you by Lord Huangfu Shou.”

“Furthermore, you must promise me one thing. The bloodline that you possess must be passed on to a person from the younger generation in your old age.”

“Furthermore, you must remember this. You are not allowed to pass on your bloodline to the geniuses nurtured by the Four Great Imperial Clans, nor are you allowed to only pass it on to your

descendants. You must pass it onto a suitable candidate. Do you understand?” Duan Jidao asked Song Yuheng.

“This junior understands. Milord, please rest assured,” Song Yuheng knelt on both knees and kowtowed to Duan Jidao.

“Very well, enter the formation,” Duan Jidao pointed to the area before the grave. He had already set up the Inheritance Formation in front of the grave. Furthermore, as he spoke, he sat in the center of the formation.

Hearing and seeing that, Song Yuheng naturally hurriedly entered the formation and lay down. An unconcealable excitement and joy emerged on his face. After he finished lying down, he even deliberately took a provocative glance at Jiang Wushang.

At this moment, Jiang Wushang was bleeding from his heart. It was as if a sharp blade was digging at his heart and cutting his flesh. This sort of heartache was simply so painful that he felt as if he wanted to die.

However, he had no choice but to endure it. He could only choose to remain silent. After all, he was inferior to Song Yuheng, and had been unable to win against him.

As such, he could only watch as Duan Jidao pass his power on to that shameless and despicable Song Yuheng.

“Senior Duan, please wait!” Right at the moment when Duan Jidao was about to activate the Inheritance Formation, a voice suddenly sounded. This voice shocked everyone present.

“Chu Feng?!” After seeing the person who had arrived, the people present were all shocked. The reason for that was because none of them expected Chu Feng’s arrival.

“Chu Feng? Why would you be here?” In terms of being shocked, the ones who were the most shocked were none other than Song Yuheng and his father.

The two of them both knew that Song Yuheng’s grandfather was

lying in ambush for Chu Feng outside of the World's Hidden Valley. Furthermore, with his strength, as long as Chu Feng dared to return to the World's Hidden Valley, he would definitely be captured. As such, how could Chu Feng be here? Exactly what was going on? They were truly confused and somewhat stunned.

“What’s wrong? Are you all very disappointed that I managed to get here?” Chu Feng took a smiling glance at Song Yuheng and his father.

“Disappointed?” Hearing those words, Duan Jidao, Yin Gongfu and even Jiang Wushang’s expression changed. They were all smart people. Therefore, they naturally managed to hear a special connotation behind the word ‘disappointed.’

“Chu Feng, what nonsense are you talking about? I merely wanted to say that this place is not a place that you can enter. What makes you think you are qualified to be here?” Song Yuheng angrily denounced Chu Feng.

“Song Yuheng, that shouldn’t be what you want to say the most. What you want to say the most should be ‘Where’s my grandfather?’” Chu Feng said.

“You... what are you talking about? I do not understand,” Hearing Chu Feng saying those words, the expressions of Song Yuheng and his father changed.

“Don’t understand?” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he opened the sack on his back and threw it to the ground. Song Yuheng’s grandfather appeared from the sack. He pointed at Song Yuheng’s grandfather and said to Song Yuheng, “Do you understand now?”

Chapter 1855 – Revealing The Trump Card

“Grandfather?” Upon seeing his grandfather being thrown out of Chu Feng’s sack like some sort of merchandise and then rolling on the ground many times, Song Yuheng had an expression so ugly it was as if he had eaten feces. It was only after a very long time that he managed to calm himself.

Song Yuheng hurriedly ran over to his grandfather and helped him up. Then, he angrily asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, why is my grandfather held in a sack by you? Exactly what did you do to my grandfather?”

Duan Jidao immediately left the Inheritance Formation and asked, “Chu Feng, exactly what is going on here?”

At this moment, Yin Gongfu and Jiang Wushang were both looking at Chu Feng with shocked expressions. Firstly, they were wondering how Chu Feng had managed to capture Song Yuheng’s grandfather. After all, the difference in strength between them was immense. Could it be that Chu Feng really possessed the strength to defeat rank two Martial Emperors?

Actually, they both felt that Chu Feng had provoked a great trouble. After all, Song Yuheng’s grandfather’s was Duan Jidao’s trusted aide.

“Senior Duan, Song Yuheng’s grandfather set up a trap outside of the World’s Hidden Valley with the intention of killing me.”

“Logically, for him to covet the Four Great Imperial Clans’ bounty and want to kill me, I should immediately kill him.”

“However, it remains that he is someone of your World’s Hidden Valley. That is why I brought him back here for senior Duan to handle,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, don’t you blabber nonsense and wrongly accuse me. How could I possibly do such a thing?” Song Yuheng’s grandfather

would naturally not admit to his evil conduct. He immediately denied what Chu Feng had said.

“Song Chenghong, is what little friend Chu Feng said the truth?” However, Duan Jidao still questioned Song Yuheng’s grandfather.

“No, absolutely not. Lord Duan, please listen to my explanation,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather tried to explain.

“Explain,” Duan Jidao said.

“Lord Duan, I left the World’s Hidden Valley today and ended up encountering Chu Feng. Without saying anything, he immediately attacked me. I never expected for that child’s strength to be that strong. I was actually no match for him and ended up being captured by him and brought to this place.”

“However, I never expected for him to wrongly accuse me in such a manner,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather revealed an innocent expression. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, there are neither grievances nor grudges between us. Why must you wrongly accuse me like this?”

After saying that, Song Yuheng’s grandfather took a glance at Jiang Wushang. After seeing Jiang Wushang, he revealed an appearance of sudden realization. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Could it be because of Jiang Wushang? I know that you are close friends with Jiang Wushang. You must have wanted Lord Duan to pass his power on to Jiang Wushang.”

“That’s why when you came to know that Yuheng was about to obtain Lord Duan’s inheritance, you decided to use this sort of method to wrongly accuse me and prevent Lord Duan from passing his power on to Yuheng, isn’t that right? Chu Feng, you are truly despicable! Our World’s Hidden Valley has treated you as a distinguished guest in vain!”

Sure enough, Song Yuheng’s grandfather was quite remarkable. Even though his words were extremely far-fetched, he was able to

shift the blame from himself extremely quickly. He was truly a great actor. It was no wonder he had managed to deceive Duan Jidao.

“Let’s assume that you’re not speaking nonsense, it meant that I happened to run across you. If I did not encounter you, how was I able to wrongly accuse you?”

“You said that I’m despicable? The way I see it, you’re the truly shameless one. You actually dare to speak lies with such enormous loopholes to defend yourself. Not only that, you instead decided to file a counter charge against me,” Chu Feng said.

“You should know whether or not I am wrongly accusing you the best. People knew that I was going out today. If someone were to tell you beforehand, you would naturally be able to keep watch for my appearance outside of the World’s Hidden Valley,” As Song Yuheng’s grandfather said those words, he took a deliberate glance at Yin Gongfu. He was trying to kill two birds with one stone. Not only was he going to accuse Chu Feng, he was also going to take Yin Gongfu down with Chu Feng.

“Song Chenghong, what is the meaning behind looking at me? I did not know that you were going out. Even if I did, I would not have been able to inform Chu Feng,” Yin Gongfu said angrily.

“You know yourself whether or not you knew about it,” Song Yuheng’s grandfather snorted coldly. Then, he looked to Duan Jidao and said, “Lord Duan, some people are truly too shrewd. I hope that you can do me justice.”

“Chu Feng, Gongfu, is what Song Chenghong said the truth?” After Duan Jidao pondered for a moment, he looked to Chu Feng and Yin Gongfu.

“Lord Duan, you... are you suspicious of me?” After hearing those words, Yin Gongfu revealed a blank expression of disappointment. He never would have expected that to Duan Jidao, the man to whom he had been loyal and devoted to for so many years, he

would be inferior to a despicable, shameless graverobber.

“Even though Song Chenghong’s lies are filled with hundreds of loopholes, senior Duan still believed him,” Chu Feng sighed, “it seems that senior Duan’s eyes have been completely deceived.” Chu Feng smiled lightly at Duan Jidao’s suspicion. He was not angry in the slightest. After all, he had already anticipated this.

Since Duan Jidao was able to make the firm resolution to pass his power to on Song Yuheng, it meant that his wisdom had already been completely fooled by Song Chenghong.

As for the reason why Duan Jidao was acting in such a manner, it was not because Song Yuheng’s grandfather was extremely brilliant. Rather, it was because Duan Jidao truly placed too much importance on Duan Qirou. A single Duan Qirou’s remains had made Duan Jidao extremely grateful toward Song Yuheng’s grandfather, believing every single word he said.

Thus, if Chu Feng wanted Duan Jidao to regain his rationality and stand on their side, it was very easy. That would be to use Duan Qirou as the bargaining chip. And it just so happened that... Chu Feng possessed that bargaining chip in his hand. In other words, that was Chu Feng’s trump card that would turn the situation around.

“Chu Feng, not only did you wrongly accuse me, you actually dared to even mock Lord Duan. I will definitely not forgive you!” Song Yuheng’s grandfather had an expression of incomparable anger. He dragged his extremely weak body forward to attack Chu Feng.

He actually knew extremely well that he was simply incapable of injuring Chu Feng in the slightest. However, he had to do this, for it would reveal how devoted he was to Duan Jidao. By doing this, he would obtain Duan Jidao’s trust.

Thus, he formed a fist with his right hand and gathered all of his strength to smash it at Chu Feng. While he might not be able to

injure Chu Feng, this was something that he had to do.

Faced with Song Yuheng's grandfather's incoming fist, Chu Feng revealed a cold smile. He did not try to dodge the incoming fist and instead allowed it to land on him.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Song Yuheng's grandfather's fist was about to reach Chu Feng, Chu Feng waved his sleeve and revealed the crystal coffin. That crystal coffin appeared before Chu Feng, blocking the path of the incoming fist.

Everything happened too quickly. Song Yuheng's grandfather was unable to react in time. Thus, his fist did not stop, and firmly continued to smash toward that coffin.

Right at this moment, Duan Jidao shouted, “Stop!!!”

His shout created an extremely powerful energy ripple that shook all of heaven and earth. Not to mention Jiang Wushang and Song Yuheng, even Chu Feng and Yin Gongfu were unable to stand firmly, and nearly fell to the ground.

At this moment, the person that was the most miserable was Song Yuheng's grandfather. An enormous power had directly knocked him flying several tens of thousands of meters away. As he flew, he smashed through countless giant trees. When he fell, he vomited blood, and his complexion turned extremely pale.

Chu Feng had only restricted his power, and had not injured him at all. However, Duan Jidao's shout had left him with serious injuries.

“Grandfather!!!” Seeing this scene, Song Yuheng became extremely worried. He simply did not understand what had happened, and even thought that Chu Feng was the one that injured his grandfather. Thus, he pointed at Chu Feng, gnashed his teeth in anger and shouted, “Chu Feng, you dare injure my grandfather!? I'll kill you!!!”

In fact, Jiang Wushang and Song Yuheng's father both thought that Chu Feng was the one that had injured Song Yuheng's grandfather.

At this moment, only Yin Gongfu discovered that it was not Chu Feng that had injured Song Chenghong. Instead, it was Duan Jidao that injured Song Chenghong.

Merely, to him, Duan Jidao attacking Song Chenghong was even more shocking than Chu Feng attacking Song Chenghong. At this moment, he was somewhat baffled.

Only Chu Feng knew the truth.

Duan Jidao knew that Song Yuheng's grandfather was no match for Chu Feng. Thus, his eyes had been fixed on Chu Feng the entire time. If Chu Feng were to injure Song Yuheng's grandfather, Duan Jidao would definitely act to stop him.

However, even Duan Jidao himself did not expect Chu Feng to not attack Song Yuheng's grandfather, but instead reveal a coffin. As for the person in the coffin, it was actually Duan Qirou, his lover that he had yearned for day and night for thousands of years.

At the moment he saw Duan Qirou, Duan Jidao was stunned. Thus, his attack at Song Yuheng's grandfather was done entirely subconsciously. The reason for that was because he would absolutely not allow anyone to bring harm to Duan Qirou. Even if Duan Qirou was already dead, he would still not allow it.

Chapter 1856 – The Furious Duan Jidao

“Putt~~~”

At this moment, Duan Jidao was kneeling before that crystal coffin. His eyes were filled with deep emotions as he looked at Duan Qirou, who was within the coffin.

At first, other than Chu Feng, everyone else was puzzled by Duan Jidao's reaction.

Soon, Song Yuheng's grandfather, Song Yuheng's father and Song Yuheng all discovered that the woman in the coffin was actually wearing the exact same clothes as the ones which Song Yuheng's grandfather had forged.

“How could this be?” Song Yuheng's grandfather was completely flabbergasted. He who had managed to stand back up with great difficulty directly fell onto his butt. His expression turned ashen.

Earlier, he had been confused the entire time as to why Chu Feng knew that the remains of Duan Qirou he had produced were fake. Now, he finally realized. It turned out that Chu Feng had discovered the actual remains.

After being emotional for some time, Duan Jidao suddenly asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, where did you obtain Qirou's remains?”

“Senior Duan, this is a long story. Senior, might you be willing to listen to it?” Chu Feng said.

“Go ahead. Tell me from the very beginning. Tell me all about it,” Duan Jidao nodded his head repeatedly. He wanted to know about what had happened.

Chu Feng began to tell Duan Jidao about what had happened from the very beginning.

This included how he encountered Duan Qirou's remains at the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest, and how he had seen the poem and

the handwriting on the gravestone after coming to this place.

He also told Duan Jidao how he knew about his past from Yin Gongfu, as well as how the remains in the grave were a fake produced by Song Yuheng's grandfather.

Chu Feng did not conceal anything from Duan Jidao, and instead told him all about what had happened.

“How preposterous!”

After learning of what had happened, Duan Jidao became incomparably furious. First, he smashed this palm downward, and shattered that grave with the fake remains that he had treasured for many years to pieces.

Then, he extended his hand and grabbed. Song Yuheng's grandfather was grabbed before him and forced to kneel on the ground.

“Lord Duan, please listen to my explanation. That Chu Feng is wrongly accusing me. That Chu Feng is wrongly accusing me. The remains that I presented to you are the real remains of Lady Duan Qirou. Chu Feng's remains are fake,” Song Yuheng's grandfather was still trying to make excuses.

“You actually still dare to deceive me? That crystal coffin is something that Qirou requested from me back then. She said that the two of us would both lie in that crystal coffin in the future,” Duan Jidao was so enraged that his beard hairs were all perked straight, and his body was violently trembling. It could be seen that he was truly angry.

The moment he saw that crystal coffin, the moment he saw Duan Qirou's remains, he knew that these were her real remains. Yet, Song Yuheng's grandfather still insisted on saying that they were fake. As such, how could he possibly tolerate it?

“Milord, I wouldn't dare, I wouldn't dare to deceive you. I am loyal and devoted to you. I...” Naturally, Song Yuheng's

grandfather would refuse to admit that he had deceived Duan Jidao even if he were to be beaten to death. As such, he continued to justify himself.

“Shut your mouth!” Duan Jidao smashed his palm down. ‘Boom,’ as blood splattered, Song Yuheng’s grandfather was crushed to bits.

“Ah?!!!!” Seeing that Song Chenghong had been killed, Song Yuheng and his father were all stunned.

It was only after a very long time that Song Yuheng managed to react. In order to be able to survive, he hurriedly crawled to Duan Jidao and began to kowtow to him while begging for forgiveness nonstop, “Lord Duan, please spare me, please spare me! Please take into consideration how loyal and devoted I have been to you for all these years and spare my life and the life of my father. I will never dare to deceive you again, never dare to deceive you again.”

“What? Even the two of you were involved?” Hearing those words, Duan Jidao turned his furious gaze at Song Yuheng.

“This... Lord Duan, I, I...” It was only at this moment that Song Yuheng managed to react and discovered that he had misspoken. He wanted to explain himself, but was at a loss as to how to do so.

Song Yuheng’s panicking appearance of not knowing what to do was enough to show that he knew the truth.

As for the truth, it was that the three of them, grandfather to grandson, were all deceiving Duan Jidao together.

“I have trusted you all in vain. I was truly blind,” Duan Jidao smashed his palm downward again. Song Yuheng and his father were both smashed to bits, and the two of them went to accompany Song Chenghong.

“Hahaha, this is too funny. That Song Yuheng was truly stupid beyond help,” At this moment, in Chu Feng’s World Spirit Space, Eggy was laughing at Song Yuheng’s stupidity.

As for Chu Feng, he was also smiling while he shook his head. He knew that even though Song Chenghong had deceived Duan Jidao, Duan Jidao might have spared Song Yuheng and his father by taking old affections into consideration. After all, Duan Jidao would not have thought that the father and son would also be related to this matter.

However, in his panic, Song Yuheng had actually spoken the truth. This let Duan Jidao know that Song Yuheng and his father had also been deceiving him. As such, he would naturally be incomparably angry, and not spare Song Yuheng or his father.

It could be said that Song Yuheng had caused his own death and the death of his father. His action was truly one of enormous stupidity.

“Qirou, I have let you down. Not only did I cause your death, I was unable to even find your remains. I even set up a grave for those fake remains while thinking that it was you the entire time. I had even wanted to bury myself in the same grave as those remains that I don’t even know whose they are. I...”

At that moment, Duan Jidao arrived before the crystal coffin. Overcome with emotions, this old man whose face showed that he had experienced a lot of things was actually shedding tears.

“It seems that this Duan Jidao is truly a passionate man of emotions. It is no wonder he was deceived and exploited by Song Chenghong,” After seeing Duan Jidao acting in such a manner, Eggy’s opinion of Duan Jidao improved slightly.

Eggy was an extremely observant individual. Thus, she knew that Duan Jidao’s current reaction was not fake. He truly loved Duan Qirou dearly.

Else, how could he have massacred his entire clan out of anger at her death?

Although his action of massacring his entire clan was an

incomprehensible action, in this world where people only considered their own self-interest, how many people were actually capable of doing that sort of thing for a single woman?

While that sort of action appeared to be extreme, it was able to better reflect that Duan Jidao was a man of emotions and passion.

After a long time passed, Duan Jidao walked to Chu Feng with an expression of gratefulness all over his face. “Little friend Chu Feng, I truly do not know how to thank you for this. If it wasn’t for you, I... I would not have even been able to accompany Qirou in death.”

“Senior, don’t say it like that. What this junior has done are only the things that I should have done.”

“Furthermore, you shouldn’t be that heart-broken. I have always thought that the founder of the Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest was... senior Duan Qirou.”

“If that Fallen Leaves Bamboo Forest really was established by senior Duan Qirou, it would mean that she was not killed because of you. Instead, she merely left the Duan Clan. Thus... you were not the cause of senior Duan Qirou’s death,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right, Milord. Please look at Lady Duan Qirou’s remains. She is completely undamaged. It really does not resemble the remains of someone that was killed,” Yin Gongfu said.

“Qirou, so you weren’t killed by the people from the Duan Family? Did you commit suicide?” At this moment, Duan Jidao managed to react. With his world spirit techniques, if he were to carefully observe Duan Qirou’s remains, he would be able to determine her cause of death, as well as her time of death.

At this moment, he was determined that Duan Qirou had died after he had extinguished the Duan Clan. Furthermore, she had died from suicide, and not from being killed by another. Furthermore, Duan Qirou had killed herself when the news of him was completely gone from the world, at the moment when

everyone thought that he had died.

From this, he could imagine that she had thought that he had died, and thus killed herself because of that. Duan Qirou had wanted to accompany Duan Jidao in death.

It was precisely because of their deep affection for one another, with the freak combination of many factors, that lead to such a tragedy.

Chapter 1857 – Passing On The Power To Jiang Wushang

However... Duan Jidao was incapable of accepting this truth even more. Not only had he wrongly killed his entire clan, he had also caused his most beloved to kill herself because of him becoming depressed and disappearing afterwards.

If he had not disappeared, then perhaps Duan Qirou would have been able to one day let go of the matter that gnawed at her heart to find him. At that time, he would have been able to reunite with her.

Unfortunately, that never happened. All because of his impulses, all because of his depression, he had caused the death of his entire clan and his lover. Thinking about all of those things, Duan Jidao felt enormous pain and was torn with grief.

While he was deeply grieved, Duan Jidao was able to quickly adjust his state of mind. Before Chu Feng and the others, he personally set up a grave for Duan Qirou and buried her deep within it.

“Senior Duan, this was also part of senior Duan Qirou’s remnants.”

At this moment, Chu Feng took out the gravestone that Duan Qirou had personally engraved and handed it to Duan Jidao.

“That is also something that Qirou requested from me back then. She said... that even if we were to die, we must be buried together. At that time, we would use that coffin and this gravestone,” Seeing that gravestone, Duan Jidao recalled the beautiful past he had experienced with Duan Qirou.

“Qirou, let the past be past now. I will not make you be lonely by yourself anymore. I will soon join you,” Duan Jidao said while looking at that gravestone. At the moment he said those words,

there was no longer guilt and shame on his face. Instead, he had an expression of blessed happiness. Deep yearning was present in his gaze.

While ordinary people all feared death, to Duan Jidao, death... was a way to free himself.

“Milord, please, you must accept the situation and move on,” At this moment, Yin Gongfu started to panic. He thought that Duan Jidao was planning to kill himself to accompany Duan Qirou.

“Gongfu, ever since the day that I thought Qirou had died, I have never wanted to live. You understand what I mean?” Duan Jidao took a glance at Yin Gongfu. Then, he looked to that Inheritance Formation and said, “The only reason why I continued to live like a walking corpse is because I did not want to let down the hopes that Lord Emperor Huang had placed onto me. Thus, I must have his strength continue to be passed on.”

After saying those words, Duan Jidao looked to Jiang Wushang and said, “Wushang, enter the formation.”

Hearing those words, Jiang Wushang’s body stiffened. He was so excited that he became stunned. Happiness had truly come too fast for him.

“Wushang, why are you standing there? Lord Duan is telling you to enter the formation to accept his Inherited Bloodline,” Yin Gongfu said with a smile on his face.

“Right away, thank you Milord, thank you Milord,” Jiang Wushang was extremely excited, so much so that even his speech became incoherent. However, he still hurriedly entered the Inheritance Formation and lay down within it. The moment he did so, he repeatedly turned his head toward Chu Feng with a gaze filled with gratefulness. He knew... that he had only been able to obtain this opportunity because of Chu Feng.

Back then, he had only been someone who possessed a Royal

Bloodline. It was only because of Chu Feng that he had managed to obtain his Imperial Bloodline. And now... he was actually able to inherit Emperor Huang's Imperial Bloodline. This too was all thanks to Chu Feng.

After Duan Jidao entered the formation, Duan Jidao sat cross-legged in the center of the formation and began to pass his strength on to Jiang Wushang.

This inheritance process was completely different from how Duan Jidao had helped the other possessors of Royal Bloodline obtain their Imperial Bloodlines.

He was shifting his own Imperial Bloodline's power to Jiang Wushang. Thus, it meant that when the inheritance process began, his own strength would begin to weaken.

At this moment, Chu Feng was able to sense Duan Jidao's cultivation.

Rank seven Martial Emperor. Duan Jidao's unprecedented power that he felt was actually the aura of a rank seven Martial Emperor. Duan Jidao's cultivation was actually that of a rank seven Martial Emperor.

"So powerful. No wonder they say that Duan Jidao was an existence that even the Three Palaces feared, that the Four Clans were incapable of doing anything to," After sensing Duan Jidao's cultivation, Chu Feng gasped in admiration.

Thinking about it, the Clan Chiefs of the Four Great Imperial Clans were only rank three Martial Emperors, and even their Utmost Exalted Elders that were on the verge of dying were only rank four Martial Emperors.

Yet, Duan Jidao was actually a rank seven Martial Emperor. From this, it could be seen that Duan Jidao's powerful strength was not an undeserved reputation.

Thus, Chu Feng determined that Duan Jidao, with his strength,

was definitely one of the most powerful existences in the Holy Land of Martialism, if not the most powerful.

Back then, if Duan Jidao had not been affected by that unforeseen event and entered into a state depression, if he had continued to train, then it would not be impossible for him to have become the strongest person in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng felt regret for Duan Jidao. He had truly been toyed with by fate. Duan Jidao had caused everyone to become envious of him in being able to obtain Emperor Huang's inheritance. Yet, he possessed an extremely tragic fate.

“Wuuu~~~!!!”

Right at this moment, Jiang Wushang who was lying in the Inheritance Formation let out a light groan. Then, he revealed an expression of pain, and his body began to twitch slightly.

“Not good, Wushang's cultivation is too weak. He's still unable to endure Lord Emperor Huang's bloodline's power,” Duan Jidao started to frown deeply.

“Lord Duan, what are we to do then?” Yin Gongfu asked worriedly.

“If I am to forcibly instill Lord Emperor Huang's bloodline's power into him, it will likely cost him his life. Not only that, I will have exhausted Lord Emperor Huang's bloodline's power in vain,”

“We can only attempt it again. If Wushang is truly unable to bear the power, we can only drop this matter and then search for another suitable candidate,” At the moment when Duan Jidao said those words, he spoke with great helplessness.

He had actually very much wanted to pass his power on to Jiang Wushang. Not only did he think highly of Jiang Wushang to begin with, he was also anxious to pass the power of Emperor Huang on to someone else as soon as possible. In that case, he would have

completed his mission to Emperor Huang. At that time, he would no longer have any burden, and would be able to accompany his lover.

Yet, Jiang Wushang was unable to endure his power. As such, he had no choice but to find a new candidate. It would mean that... he would have to continue living the life of a walking corpse for a longer period of time. Duan Jidao naturally did not wish for that.

“Senior, it is true that Wushang’s cultivation is relatively weak. However, I feel that his reaction is... also related to this formation.”

“This Inheritance Formation is not able to lower the berserk nature of the bloodline to its lowest point.”

“This [untalented](#) Chu Feng knows of a formation that might be able to resolve the berserk nature of your bloodline. May I give it a try?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you do not have to be so reserved. If you have a method, go ahead and give it a try,” Duan Jidao said.

“Yes,” After Chu Feng spoke, he sat down in a cross-legged manner and began to set up another spirit formation on top of Duan Jidao’s Inheritance Formation.

Chu Feng set that spirit formation up extremely naturally and in an unforced manner. Soon, the spirit formation was successfully set up. After the formation was completed, the expression of pain on Jiang Wushang’s face lessened, and his complexion actually became rosy. The bloodlines power that Duan Jidao was instilling into him was easily fused into him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this formation of yours is truly miraculous. It would seem that you’re also someone that has encountered an enormous chance opportunity,” Duan Jidao was in incomparable joy, and began to praise Chu Feng nonstop. The reason for that was because even he did not know about the spirit

formation that Chu Feng had set up.

However, he did not bother to ask Chu Feng about where he had learned that spirit formation. The reason for that was because he was certain that Chu Feng had obtained some sort of chance opportunity. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to know such a miraculous spirit formation.

In fact... that was indeed the case.

Untalented is a humble way of referring to oneself.

Chapter 1858 – The Situation Turning Bad

Even though the issue with Jiang Wushang's body was solved, the bloodline inheritance process was still not something to be looked down upon. It still had to be done slowly.

In the blink of an eye, an entire month passed. In this period of one month, Jiang Wushang's cultivation had increased from rank one Half Martial Emperor to rank seven Half Martial Emperor. He was only a single rank below Chu Feng now.

For him to obtain such an enormous change in the period of a single month, this truly could be said to be miraculous.

However, while Jiang Wushang had obtained such enormous gains, Duan Jidao was left in a tragic situation.

In merely the period of a single month, he had become so skinny that he was akin to only skin and bones. He had become so aged that over half of his hair had shedded. Countless wrinkles filled his skin, and his complexion had turned deathly pale like paper without the slightest trace of rosiness. His appearance resembled that of a dead man.

Not only that, his cultivation had also decreased from rank seven Martial Emperor to rank six Martial Emperor. Furthermore, his current health was extremely weak.

All of this was caused by him passing on the power of his bloodline. In other words, what Jiang Wushang was obtaining was what Duan Jidao was losing.

“Huu...” Finally, Duan Jidao stopped. It was not because Jiang Wushang was unable to accept any more of his power, but rather it was because his own physical strength was insufficient to continue, and he had to rest for a period of time before being able to continue. Else, he would die before he could finish the inheritance process,.

“Lord Duan, are you alright?” At that moment, Yin Gongfu hurriedly stepped forth and lent Duan Jidao an arm to support him. Worry filled his entire face. The reason for that was because the current Duan Jidao was truly too weak.

“I’m fine, I’m fine,” Even though his body was extremely weak, Duan Jidao was very happy. He looked to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, it is truly all thanks to your assistance. Else, it would be impossible for me to be able to pass on all of my bloodline’s power to Wushang at once.”

“The way it looks, I will only need to do it two more times before I will be able to completely pass on all of Lord Emperor Huang’s bloodline power to Wushang.”

“After I finish this mission given to me by Lord Emperor Huang, I will be able to go and accompany Qirou in ease,” When Duan Jidao said those words, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was filled with gratefulness. It was all because of Chu Feng’s assistance that he was able to complete his mission ahead of time.

“Senior Duan, you’re flattering me. This junior has only done what he should do,” Even though Chu Feng knew that Duan Jidao would die sooner or later, it was still very uncomfortable for him to see Duan Jidao with such an appearance.

Even though he had not known Duan Jidao for long, he knew that Duan Jidao was a good, loyal and true man. His sense of responsibility was extremely strong. Else, he would not have persisted in living like a zombie even though he had wanted to die for so long. He had done all this so that he could find a suitable successor for Emperor Huang’s power.

“Lord Duan, this junior is unworthy of you,” Jiang Wushang walked out of the formation and then knelt onto the ground with a ‘putt.’ Tears were flowing from his eyes. At this moment, he felt extremely ashamed and guilty. After all, it was because of him that Duan Jidao had been left in such a state.

“Wushang, quickly, get up. There’s no need for you to feel guilty. What you’ve done is to help me obtain my aim, complete my cherished desire,” Duan Jidao lent an arm to help Jiang Wushang stand up.

“Thank you, Milord, for your great affection. Your enormous grace and kindness is something that Wushang will never forget,” Jiang Wushang was still tearing up.

“You don’t have to thank me. If you want to thank someone, you should be thanking your brother Chu Feng. If it wasn’t for him, then this senile old man would have passed Lord Emperor Huang’s incomparably precious bloodline to Song Yuheng,” When mentioning this matter, Duan Jidao began to smile bitterly. He felt extremely ashamed of himself.

At that moment, both Jiang Wushang and Yin Gongfu turned their gazes to Chu Feng. It was not only Jiang Wushang, even Yin Gongfu felt extremely grateful to Chu Feng. If it wasn’t for Chu Feng, the consequences would have been too horrible to contemplate.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, rumbles sounded from outside.

Yin Gongfu and the others were all startled upon hearing the rumbles. It was evident that someone was attacking this place.

“It’s the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts?” Using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see the situation outside.

Chu Feng never would’ve imagined that Yaojiao Guang would lead the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ army here. Not only that, even the two elders from the War Faction were present.

Other than the few grand characters from the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, there was also an army of several hundred thousand King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, all with helmets and

armor.

The weakest among them were Martial Kings, peak Martial Kings on top of that. The majority of them were Half Martial Emperors.

While the great majority of them were standing in orderly rows with human forms, there was also a small portion of them who were in their true King Monstrous Dragon Beast form that ranged from hundreds of meters to several hundreds of meters in length.

Looking at them, one would feel incomparable fear from the overflowing might they were displaying.

“It’s actually the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts? Why would they come to stir up trouble now?”

Yin Gongfu also possessed a special sort of method that allowed him to see the scene outside.

If the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were to have arrived here before, he would definitely persuade them kindly and try to resolve the matter without fighting. However, today, he was uncharacteristically angry.

After all, Duan Jidao was currently extremely weak. This caused Yin Gongfu’s mood to be extremely bad. For the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts to come stir up trouble now caused him to be extremely angry.

Thus, Yin Gongfu did not bother to speak to them kindly. Instead, he gathered all of the experts in the World’s Hidden Valley and rushed out of the World’s Hidden Valley with the intention to meet the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts head-on.

Although the troops from the World’s Hidden Valley were of a completely different level when compared to that of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, they possessed the resolution to fight till the death.

Chu Feng naturally did not wish for the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and the people from the World’s Hidden Valley to fight to

the death. Thus, he followed Yin Gongfu out with the intention to mediate the situation. Seeing that Chu Feng had followed them out, Hong Qiang also followed Chu Feng out.

After Yin Gongfu appeared, he immediately shouted angrily, “Yaojiao Guang, what is the intention of this? Didn’t we come to an agreement that you all will not come to seek trouble here again? Why are you all going back on your word?” There was no trace of friendliness that he displayed that other day.

“Yin Gongfu, what sort of nonsense are you talking about? I’ve come here to find little friend Chu Feng. Merely, you all refused to let me enter. That is why I ended up attacking your defensive barrier so that you all will come out,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“What? Find Chu Feng?” Yin Gongfu was at a loss upon hearing those words. It turned out, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts had not gathered such a large force for the sake of trying to take back their lost territory. Instead, they had come to find Chu Feng.

At this moment, Chu Feng arrived before Yaojiao Guang and asked, “Senior Yaojiao Guang, could it be that something has happened?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, it’s great that you’re here. Indeed, a major event happened. To you, there will be two pieces of extremely bad news,” Yaojiao Guang said emotionally.

Chu Feng realized that the situation was bad. Thus, he asked again, “Senior Yaojiao Guang, exactly what happened?”

“Baili Xuankong was captured by the Four Great Imperial Clans,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“You said my Ancestor has been captured? Is this for real?” Hearing those words, even Chu Feng started to panic.

“Absolutely true. Right now, many people in the Holy Land of Martialism know about this matter. It is already no longer a secret,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“But, why would Ancestor be captured?” Chu Feng was confused.

“Even I do not know exactly how he was captured. Regardless, Baili Xuankong has been captured, as well as your Cyanwood Mountain’s headmaster, most of the elders and a lot of the disciples. Reportedly, they were all people that possessed decent relationships with you.”

“Right now, the Four Great Imperial Clans have let out news. They want you to reach the Ximen Imperial Clan within a month’s time. Else, Baili Xuankong and the others will all be killed,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“Damn it!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists. Why would they be captured all of a sudden? How did the Four Great Imperial Clans know of the relationship he possessed with those people?

This would only mean one possibility — a traitor had appeared in their Cyanwood Mountain. Someone must’ve sold them out. That was why Baili Xuankong and the others had been captured.

Furthermore, the one that sold them out must be a person with a very high status in the Cyanwood Mountain. At the very least, that person should be someone from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly. Else, it would be impossible for them to know of Baili Xuankong’s existence.

Chapter 1859 – Surging Hot Blood

“Chu Feng, you’ve also thought that a traitor has appeared in the Cyanwood Mountain?”

“Although it cannot be certain, I also feel that to be the most likely possibility.”

“However, that is also understandable. After all, the Four Great Imperial Clans have even used an Imperial Armament as part of your bounty; there will definitely be people that will not be able to resist the enticement,” Yaojiao Guang said. It would seem that he had thought of the same thing as Chu Feng.

“Even with this being the case, I must still find that person,” Chu Feng’s eyes were filled with killing intent. What he could not tolerate the most was betrayal.

“Of course. I have already prepared my army. We can proceed toward the Ximen Imperial Clan with you to rescue your friends and seize that traitor right away,” Yaojiao Guang pointed to the army behind him.

“No, this cannot do. This is a personal grudge between the Four Great Imperial Clans and myself. How could I implicate your King Monstrous Dragon Race?” Chu Feng shook his head repeatedly.

Everything in this journey to rescue his friends pointed to disaster. If he were to bring the King Monstrous Dragon Beast army with him, even if he were able to successfully save his friends and win the battle, a large portion of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ elites would definitely be sacrificed in the process. If they were to be defeated, it would mean utter annihilation for all of them.

That was especially true now. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts had even sent forth two of their four elders. From this, it could be seen that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts had mobilized nearly

all of their battle power.

If this army were to be defeated and annihilated, the remaining King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would definitely not be a match for the Four Great Imperial Clans. Likely, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would end up being extinguished completely because of Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, listen to me. Other than Baili Xuankong being captured, there’s another extremely bad piece of news.”

“The Snow-haired Immortal who helped you on the Gong Ba Plains before, after she came to know about this matter, she immediately sent out news that she would no longer concern herself with the grudges between you and the Four Great Imperial Clans. This time around... she is planning to watch with folded arms,” Yaojiao Guang said.

“There wasn’t much of a relation between the Snow-haired Immortal and I to begin with. I am already extremely grateful that she helped me before. For her to not help me again, it is only natural,” Chu Feng did not blame the Snow-haired Immortal. After all, she did not owe him anything to begin with.

Merely, Chu Feng felt that, with the Snow-haired Immortal’s personality, she should have continued to help him. For her to suddenly announce such a thing was equivalent to her telling the people of the Holy Land of Martialism that she was afraid of the Four Great Imperial Clans. This did not resemble something that the Snow-haired Immortal would do.

Chu Feng felt that there must be a secret reason as to why she had done that. Merely, only the Snow-haired Immortal herself knew that secret.

“Without the Snow-haired Immortal helping you, you have lost an enormous helper. If you are to fight against the Four Great Imperial Clans, your odds of winning would be too low. If you were to go by yourself, you would simply be throwing your life

away. Thus, it's better that you allow us to help you."

"Our King Monstrous Dragon Race possesses the bloodline of dragons. As such, our lifespan greatly surpassed those of humans. Our bodies are also much more powerful than humans. Thus, even if we are to fight against the Four Great Imperial Clans, our King Monstrous Dragon Race is not without any odds of winning," Yaojiao Guang said.

At this moment, a War Faction's elder said, "Little friend Chu Feng, let's set out now. After all, their lives are at risk,"

"Chu Feng, our King Monstrous Dragon Race has already made its determination. We insist on helping you."

"Originally, we had planned to dispatch an elder from both the War Faction and the Peace Faction. However, the two Lord Elders from the War Faction insisted on going into battle. Do you understand their intentions?" Yaojiao Guang pointed to the two War Faction's elders.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart was moved. The War Faction's two elders had deliberately made things difficult for him many times. However, they only did for the sake of the interests of the War Faction. They were actually not monstrous beasts that could not distinguish between right and wrong.

Ever since Chu Feng had helped Yaojiao Tingyu obtain the Black Dragon King's inheritance, the two War Faction's elders' attitudes toward Chu Feng had had a hundred and eighty degree reversal. Right now, they even wanted to help Chu Feng fight against the Four Great Imperial Clans. Even though everything pointed to disaster, and they might end up losing their lives in the process, they still insisted on joining the battle, and handed the great responsibility of protecting the King Monstrous Dragon Race to the two Peace Faction's elders.

From this, it could be seen how determined they were to repay Chu Feng.

“Elders, I understand your kind intentions. Merely, this is truly...” Chu Feng really did not wish to implicate the King Monstrous Dragon Race.

“Little friend Chu Feng, do not urge us against it anymore. The enormous grace and kindness you’ve shown our King Monstrous Dragon Race is something that we must repay.”

“This time, if you are to allow us King Monstrous Dragon Race to accompany you into battle, it would mean that you’ve thought highly of us.”

“If you insist on refusing us, we will not force you either. However, if you are to not be able to return after leaving, our King Monstrous Dragon Race will definitely gather up the strength of our entire race to fight a life and death battle against the Four Great Imperial Clans,” The War Faction’s elders said.

“Warriors of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, is what the elders said correct?” At this moment, Yaojiao Guang turned to ask the several hundred thousand King Monstrous Dragon Beast army behind him.

“Our King Monstrous Dragon Race must repay the grace Chu Feng had shown us!!!”

“Our King Monstrous Dragon Race must repay the grace Chu Feng had shown us!!!”

“Our King Monstrous Dragon Race must repay the grace Chu Feng had shown us!!!”

.....
.....
.....

The King Monstrous Dragon Race army shouted loudly. Their voices were so loud that they resonated through the vast sky.

Chu Feng hesitated for a moment. He was able to tell that the

King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were determined. Thus, in the end, he took out his Heavenly Immortal Sword, pointed it toward the heavenly dome and shouted, “Very well! Today, I shall fight with the King Monstrous Dragon Race. We shall dye the Four Great Imperial Clans with blood!”

“Dye the Four Great Imperial Clans with blood!!!”

“Dye the Four Great Imperial Clans with blood!!!”

“Dye the Four Great Imperial Clans with blood!!!”

.....

.....

.....

The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts soldiers shouted loudly alongside Chu Feng.

“A battle against the Four Great Imperial Clans. How could our World’s Hidden Valley possibly miss out on this? Little friend Chu Feng, would you mind bringing this old man with you?” Right at this moment, Duan Jidao suddenly appeared behind Chu Feng.

“Lord Duan, your body...” Upon seeing Duan Jidao, Chu Feng was startled. Duan Jidao’s body was already extremely weak after instilling his bloodline’s power to Jiang Wushang. Even though he appeared to be in much better health now, so much so that he appeared to be completely fine, Chu Feng had discovered an even more serious problem.

By instilling his power to Jiang Wushang, Duan Jidao’s cultivation had begun to degenerate. Originally, he had possessed the cultivation of a rank seven Martial Emperor. However, due to the inheritance process, his cultivation had degenerated to that of a rank six Martial Emperor.

Yet now... Duan Jidao’s cultivation had actually become that of a rank five Martial Emperor. His cultivation had degenerated by

another level.

Chu Feng was no fool. He was proficient in world spirit techniques and many taboo techniques.

Thus, he knew that after Duan Jidao had passed on his bloodline's power to Jiang Wushang, his body was extremely weak. As such, it would be impossible for him to recover in a short period of time.

Therefore, for Duan Jidao to appear healthy right now, he must've paid an enormous price to obtain it. As for that price, it should be that level of cultivation he had lost.

For the sake of helping Chu Feng, Duan Jidao had used a taboo technique to recover his health without the slightest bit of hesitation.

"Little friend Chu Feng, my body is fine. Merely, I must join this battle."

"As far as I'm concerned, you are also my benefactor. If it wasn't for you, I would not only have passed on Lord Emperor Huang's power to that Song Yuheng, I would also have buried myself for eternal rest with someone that I do not even know," When mentioning this matter, Duan Jidao shook his head repeatedly. An ashamed expression filled his aged eyes.

"Senior Duan, it's just..." Chu Feng was still unable to bear Duan Jidao doing such a thing for the sake of helping him.

"Little friend Chu Feng, listen to me. I am someone that was about to die to begin with. What use is cultivation to me?"

"Even if I am to keep it, I will have to pass it to Wushang anyways. Wushang has also said that he would rather obtain less power in order to help you," As Duan Jidao spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, a figure appeared beside him. It was Jiang Wushang.

"Big brother Chu Feng, if you consider me as your brother, then do not say anymore. Just agree to have me join you," Jiang

Wushang said to Chu Feng while looking at him.

“Very well. Little brother Wushang, this battle... we’ll go together,” Chu Feng did not try to persuade Jiang Wushang against it. He knew that with Jiang Wushang’s personality, even if he were to urge him against it, it would be useless.

“Chu Feng, when you’ve even agreed to have Wushang join you, what about this old man?” Duan Jidao asked with a smile.

“Senior Duan, I’ll have to trouble you,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward Duan Jidao. Chu Feng was actually very happy to have Duan Jidao join him.

After all, Duan Jidao was an existence that even the Three Palaces feared. Although his cultivation had greatly decreased now that he had passed on a portion of his power to Jiang Wushang, it remained that he was still a rank five Martial Emperor. His cultivation greatly surpassed that of the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders.

If Duan Jidao were to act, even if the Four Great Imperial Clans had set up an inescapable net, they would not necessarily be able to baffle Duan Jidao. Thus, Duan Jidao joining them had raised their odds of success enormously.

“Chu Feng, when you’ve agreed to all of them, you wouldn’t tell me that you’ll refuse should I tell you that I want to go too, right? Else, you would truly not be giving me face,” Yin Gongfu said with a beaming smile while leading the experts from the World’s Hidden Valley.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng did not try to refuse them. Instead, he clasped his fist and bowed to them. Then, he turned around and clasped his fist and bowed to the others, “Thank you everyone!!!”

At this moment, Chu Feng’s body was surging with hot blood. He was feeling an indescribable sense of being moved emotionally.

As they say... in a crisis, one's true friends will be revealed.

The Four Great Imperial Clans insisted on killing Chu Feng. Chu Feng's decision to save Baili Xuankong and the others pointed to disaster. Yet, in this sort of moment, there were actually this many people that were willing to join him to fight against the Four Great Imperial Clans. Even if they were to be defeated in battle, so what?

Chapter 1860 – Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation

Yaojiao Guang saw Duan Jidao. He stepped forward and asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, this senior is?” He naturally knew that Duan Jidao was that expert from the World’s Hidden Valley.

However, he had wanted to know exactly who it was that had occupied the World’s Hidden Valley, for him to be that overwhelmingly powerful.

“Senior Duan...” Chu Feng did not directly answer Yaojiao Guang. Instead, he looked to Duan Jidao. He was asking for Duan Jidao’s opinion, whether or not he was willing to tell Yaojiao Guang the truth.

“This old man’s name is Duan Jidao. Over the years, I have disturbed your King Monstrous Dragon Race. However, my actions were because I possessed some secret troubles. I hope that everyone from the King Monstrous Dragon Race will not mind this matter,” Duan Jidao clasped his hand at Yaojiao Guang and the two War Faction’s elders behind him. His tone was serious and extremely apologetic.

Actually, with Duan Jidao’s personality, he was not someone that would lower his head and apologize to the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts. Merely, he was able to tell that the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts possessed an extremely significant relationship with Chu Feng. Else, how could they have dispatched such a grand disposition of forces to fight for him?

Thus, merely in this account, Duan Jidao had to give the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts face.

“Duan Jidao? Senior, might you be that Duan Dynasty’s Duan Jidao?” Yaojiao Guang asked in shock.

“Precisely. However, Clan Chief Yaojiao, you shouldn’t address

me as senior. In terms of age, this old man is much younger than you,” Duan Jidao said with a beaming smile.

“Heavens! It’s actually really the legendary Duan Jidao,” After Yaojiao Guang verified his identity, not to mention the other King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, even the two War Faction’s elders were endlessly shocked.

Duan Jidao’s reputation in the Holy Land of Martialism was truly enormous.

At this moment, after their moment of shock, they all felt regret for their previous actions of repeatedly trying to suppress the World’s Hidden Valley. If they knew that it was Duan Jidao that had occupied the World’s Hidden Valley, how would they possibly have doen something like that?

After all, Duan Jidao was a frightening existence that possessed the strength to be able to extinguish their King Monstrous Dragon Race by himself.

“I never would’ve expected that we would be able to fight alongside the renowned Duan Jidao. It would appear that our King Monstrous Dragon Race’s trip here has not been made in vain,” Yaojiao Guang said in a very excited manner. At this moment, he was feeling extremely happy.

Originally, he had been determined to face death by leading this grand army to the Ximen Imperial Clan to rescue Chu Feng’s friends. However, with Duan Jidao joining them, he was able to see the dawn of victory.

“The King Monstrous Dragon Race is a righteous and loyal race. I am also deeply honored to be able to fight alongside the King Monstrous Dragon Race.”

“Merely, this battle is no small matter. It could even be said that if we do not succeed, we will end up dying. I believe that everyone here does not wish for needless casualties.”

“Thus, we cannot proceed toward the Ximen Imperial Clan just like this. For the sake of the unexpected, we must make absolute preparations,” Duan Jidao said while looking at the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s army.

“Brother Duan, what do you have in mind?” Yaojiao Guang asked.

“I know of a formation by the name of Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation. This formation is created by the combination of the Monstrous Race’s bloodline’s power. It just so happens to be suited to the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s army.”

“For example, the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s grand army of eight hundred thousand warriors here could evenly distribute their strength into eight smaller units. Then, each of them could set up a Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation.”

“Furthermore, with the help of these Monstrous Dragon Banners here, your grand army of eight hundred thousand will no longer be Half Martial Emperors. Instead, they’ll become eight Martial Emperors.”

“While their offensive power might only be on par with rank one Martial Emperors, their defensive power will be on par with rank three Martial Emperors.”

“In other words, they will be able to easily defeat those with a cultivation below rank one Martial Emperor. However, even if a rank three Martial Emperor wished to harm them, they would not be able to do so,” Duan Jidao said.

“There’s actually such a miraculous formation?” Hearing those words, the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ expressions all changed. Their King Monstrous Dragon Race had existed for many years, and also possessed many special formations. However, it was still the first time that they’d heard of a formation like the one Duan Jidao had just described.

“How could the formation created by Lord Emperor Huang be false?” Duan Jidao asked with a smile.

“Lord Emperor Huang? Could it be Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou?” Yaojiao Guang and the two War Faction’s elders asked together.

“Precisely,” Duan Jidao nodded his head while smiling.

“In that case, brother Duan, we’ll have to trouble you,” Yaojiao Guang and the two elders of the War Faction nodded. While they might not trust a formation created by someone else, they would absolutely trust a formation left behind by Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou. After all... he had been an era’s overlord.

Then, Yaojiao Guang separated the army of several hundred thousand into eight units of equal strength.

Then, Duan Jidao personally began to teach them the Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation. Logically, the talent of the individuals among the King Monstrous Dragon Beast army would vary drastically. Thus, to have them all learn a single formation would be an extremely difficult task. For them to master it in a short period of time would be an even more impossible matter.

However, Duan Jidao’s teachings were extremely brilliant. He made it so that they were able to understand and comprehend his words immediately. With the use of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts’ special bloodline’s power and the precious treasures that were the Monstrous Dragon Banners, Duan Jidao managed to, in the short period of a single day, transform the King Monstrous Dragon Beast’s army of several hundred thousand into eight Monstrous Dragons that wreaked havoc through the sky.

Each of these eight Monstrous Dragons were close to ten thousand meters in length. As they galloped through the sky, they emitted truly earth-shattering might, and were extremely terrifying.

Furthermore, they were extremely imposing, as they were emitting the auras of rank three Martial Emperors. If those huge monsters were to attack the Four Great Imperial Clans' army and charge around violently, who could possibly withstand them?

“Emperor Huang is truly Emperor Huang. He left behind many remarkable treasures.”

As Chu Feng looked at the eight enormous dragons in the sky, he was unable to contain himself from gasping in admiration. He knew that regardless of how strong the bloodline of the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's army of eight hundred thousand might be, it would still be impossible for them to turn into those overwhelmingly powerful eight enormous dragons with their current cultivations.

The reason why they were capable of transforming into those eight enormous dragons was all because of the eight treasures that Duan Jidao had bestowed to them. In other words, it was all because of the eight Monstrous Dragon Banners.

In other words, it was not that the Monstrous Dragon Banners were assisting the King Monstrous Dragon Beast army successfully set up the Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation. Rather, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast army had relied on the eight Monstrous Dragon Banners in order to turn into those eight enormous dragons.

Thus, Chu Feng felt those eight Monstrous Dragon Banners to be extremely precious treasures. Looking at it from a certain angle, they were even more precious than Imperial Armaments.

Imperial Armaments were things that only true experts could wield and unleash their true power. For ordinary people, other than being extremely precious, Imperial Armaments did not possess much actual practicality.

However, the eight Monstrous Dragon Banners were able to turn the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's army of eight hundred

thousand into eight incomparably powerful, strong and enormous dragons. Not only did this increase their battle power, this also allowed them to be safer. Those eight Monstrous Dragon Banners were the true treasures.

“Great, great, great. With this, how could the Four Great Imperial Clans possibly defeat us?”

“Likely, they will be scared witless and start pissing their pants in terror the moment they see us. Hahahaha!!!” Seeing that their clansmen had turned into eight enormous dragons, the one that was the most happy was none other than Yaojiao Guang.

This battle was no small matter. Even though the army of eight hundred thousand that he had brought with him were all elites, they would not be able to withstand a single blow before Martial Emperors. Even if they were to fight against the Four Great Imperial Clans’ army, there would inevitably be casualties among them.

As he was their Clan Chief, it would be impossible for him to not feel heartache from the casualties. To speak of it unpleasantly, they were his subordinates. However, it also remained that they were his clansmen.

Yet, at that moment, his army of eight hundred thousand had turned into eight enormous dragons that even rank three Martial Emperors could do nothing to. Not to mention the shrimp soldiers and crab generals, even if the Four Great Imperial Clan’s’ Martial Emperors were to encounter them, they would immediately turn around and flee. Unless there were rank four Martial Emperors that acted to attack them, his clansmen would, with absolute certainty, not face any fatal danger.

Chapter 1861 – Rank Nine Half Martial Emperor

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have a method that can increase your cultivation by a level for a short period of time. From rank eight Half Martial Emperor, you will become a rank nine Half Martial Emperor.”

“This method relies on an Ancient Era’s medicinal pellet. Although it is only effective for Half Martial Emperors, it just so happens to be suited for you to use,” Duan Jidao said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, before Chu Feng could say anything, Hong Qiang asked worriedly, “Medicinal pellet? Are there any side effects?”

After all, Hong Qiang was also a world spiritist. He knew that medicinal pellets capable of increasing one’s cultivation would generally have enormous side effects accompanying them. This was especially true for someone of Chu Feng’s cultivation. If there was a medicinal pellet capable of increasing his cultivation by one level, then the pain from the backlash would definitely be extremely frightening.

“Before taking that medicinal pellet, one must first set up a spirit formation. When that spirit formation is used alongside the medicinal pellet, there will not be any side effects,” Duan Jidao explained.

“Senior Duan, Chu Feng is willing to give it a try,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was currently a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. By relying on the power of his divine lightnings, he was able to increase his cultivation by two levels to become a rank one Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. As such, he was capable of fighting against rank two Martial Emperors.

However, if he was able to increase his cultivation to rank nine Half Martial Emperor from rank eight Half Martial Emperor by using the medicinal pellet that Duan Jidao had spoken of, even if it was only temporary, he would be able to contend against rank three Martial Emperors by himself.

Although rank three Martial Emperors were extremely powerful existences in the Holy Land of Martialism... they were definitely not the strongest. However... they were definitely not weak either. After all, the Clan Chiefs of the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race's Clan Chief Yaojiao Guang were all only rank three Martial Emperors.

“Very well, time doesn't wait. Let's set off for the Ximen Imperial Clan immediately. I'll teach you how to use the medicinal pellet on the way there,” Duan Jidao said.

“Okay, we shall do as senior Duan suggested,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Soldiers and warriors of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, listen up! Proceed for the Ximen Imperial Clan!” Yaojiao Guang shouted.

Then, the eight enormous dragons began to open a path toward the Ximen Imperial Clan. Chu Feng and the experts from the World's Hidden Valley were all sitting atop the eight enormous dragons. They were rapidly traveling to the Ximen Imperial Clan.

“Chu Feng, this is that Ancient Era's medicinal pellet,” On the way there, Duan Jidao took out a medicinal pellet and handed it to Chu Feng.

Upon seeing the medicinal pellet in Duan Jidao's hand, Chu Feng's eyes shone. Although the medicinal pellet was black all around, and did not resemble anything special, and was unnoticable and even resembled a ball of clay, Chu Feng's heart was extremely excited the moment he saw that medicinal pellet. The Natural Energies contained within this medicinal pellet had reached an unfathomable level.

“Senior, where did you obtain this medicinal pellet?” Chu Feng asked.

“This medicinal pellet is something left behind by Lord Emperor Huang. All I know is that it is from the Ancient Era. I do not know its origin,” Duan Jidao said.

“Are there any more of these sorts of medicinal pellets?” Chu Feng asked.

“When I obtained them, there were only two. I used one as a experiment, and helped one of my clansmen. Currently, this medicinal pellet is the only one remaining,” Duan Jidao said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt pity in his heart.

“Chu Feng, rest assured. That clansman of mine possessed a talent greatly inferior to yours. At that time, he just so happened to be a rank eight Half Martial Emperor too. After he used the medicinal pellet, his cultivation persisted for an entire month and half. Furthermore, he received absolutely no side effects or any backlash. Thus, you can use this medicinal pellet without any worries,” Duan Jidao continued.

“Thank you, senior,” Chu Feng received the medicinal pellet. He directly opened his mouth, tossed the medicinal pellet into his mouth and then swallowed it.

“Little friend Chu Feng, quickly, vomit it out,” Duan Jidao was greatly shocked by this scene. Although that Ancient Era’s medicinal pellet possessed no side effects, it must be used alongside the special spirit formation. To directly swallow it like he did was equivalent to courting death.

Thus, at that moment, it was not only Duan Jidao that was shocked, Hong Qiang, Yin Gongfu, Yaojiao Guang, Jiang Wushang and the others were all deeply frightened by Chu Feng’s actions. They hurriedly arrived before Chu Feng to see if they were able to help him with anything.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's body actually started to glimmer faintly. Soon, Chu Feng's aura started to surge. From rank eight Half Martial Emperor, his aura was now that of a rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you!!!”

Seeing such a change happening to Chu Feng, even Duan Jidao's expression took a huge change. Disbelief filled his gaze. Even his breathing became hurried.

“Succeeded? He actually succeeded this quickly?” Seeing that Chu Feng was not only fine, but had also successfully increased his cultivation, the crowd finally heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, smiles of joy appeared on their faces.

“No, the situation with little friend Chu Feng is amiss,” However, the expression of shock on Duan Jidao did not decrease, and instead increased.

“Amiss? Lord Duan, what is amiss?” Hearing Duan Jidao saying those words, Yin Gongfu and the others started to panic again. Merely, none of them knew exactly what was wrong with Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng has not borrowed the power of the medicinal pellet to temporarily increase his cultivation. Rather, he has refined the medicinal pellet and permanently increased his cultivation.”

“What?!!!” Hearing those words, the crowd all opened their mouths wide in shock. They turned their gazes to Chu Feng and began to have a look at him again.

When they saw him again, they became even more shocked. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's aura was extremely stable, and simply did not resemble the aura of someone who had obtained temporary power after using a medicinal pellet. Instead,

it appeared more like his own power.

“Senior Duan, thank you for that medicinal pellet,” At that moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes. With a beaming smile on his face, he clasped his fist and bowed to Duan Jidao. He was extremely grateful to Duan Jidao, for it was precisely because of Duan Jidao’s medicinal pellet that he had managed to increase his cultivation to rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

At the same time, Chu Feng felt pity. If both of the Ancient Era’s medicinal pellets were still present, then even if he could not break through to Martial Emperor, it would also build a great foundation for his future breakthrough.

“Chu Feng, you really managed to reach a breakthrough by using that medicinal pellet?” Yaojiao Guang and the others all looked to Chu Feng with expressions of shock on their faces.

“Seniors, I actually possess a special bloodline. Although even I do not know what sort of bloodline I possess.”

“However, one thing is certain. That is, my bloodline greatly resembles Imperial Bloodlines. As long as I possess a sufficient amount of cultivation resources, I will be able to rapidly increase my cultivation.”

“The medicinal pellet that senior Duan gave me earlier contained an extremely dense amount of Natural Energies. With that, I was able to increase my cultivation by a level,” Chu Feng did not try to conceal anything, and spoke the truth to the crowd.

“But... even for Imperial Bloodlines, they will only be able to refine a certain amount of cultivation resources. They are not able to refine all cultivation resources given to them. That medicinal pellet is definitely not something within the criterion of cultivation resources which Imperial Bloodlines can refine,” Jiang Wushang said.

Jiang Wushang was the possessor of an Imperial Bloodline. Thus,

he knew of the characteristics of Imperial Bloodlines . While it was as Chu Feng had said, and those who possessed Imperial Bloodlines were capable of refining cultivation resources to increase their cultivation, there were a lot of restrictions. Chu Feng's bloodline was simply much more frightening than Imperial Bloodlines.

It could be said that the two of them were simply incomparable.

Chapter 1862 – A Grand Formation

“If it were Wushang... or I, it would indeed be impossible to accomplish. However, little friend Chu Feng’s bloodline’s power is instead capable of this feat. Furthermore, he has already accomplished it,” At that moment, Duan Jidao had become much calmer. After all, he knew very well that Chu Feng’s bloodline was a sort of bloodline that was above Imperial Bloodlines.

Due to the fact that the people from the Holy Land of Martialism were incapable of obtaining this sort of bloodline, they would naturally not know about how frightening that bloodline was. This was why they would react with such shock and disbelief. However, Duan Jidao had already begun to gradually accept Chu Feng’s power.

The reason why people were incapable of understanding many things was because those things surpassed the range of their comprehension. In this world, there were many things that surpassed one’s range of comprehension. Among them was power.

“Little friend Chu Feng, no wonder you’re this shocking. It turns out that you actually possess such a frightening Inherited Bloodline. Your Inherited Bloodline is truly something that we feel deeply envious of,” Yaojiao Guang said with an expression of envy and admiration.

As a King Monstrous Dragon Beast, Yaojiao Guang was also someone that possessed a very powerful monstrous beast bloodline. He had thought the entire time that his Inherited Bloodline was not inferior to the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Imperial Bloodline. In fact, he believed his Inherited Bloodline to be stronger than Imperial Bloodlines. However, if he were to compare his Inherited Bloodline with Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline, his would be greatly inferior.

“The stronger one’s bloodline, the stronger one’s body must be in

order to withstand the bloodline. Else, one would simply not be able to grasp the strength of one's bloodline, nor will one be able to unleash the power of one's bloodline. However, little friend Chu Feng possesses both of these things. Thus, even if people are envious of him, it would still be impossible for anyone ordinary to accomplish what he had," Duan Jidao said.

"Indeed, indeed," Yaojiao Guang nodded repeatedly. Then, he looked to the direction of the Ximen Imperial Clan and said with a beaming smile, "For the Four Great Imperial Clans to make little friend Chu Feng their enemy, they are truly bringing about their own destruction."

.....

Inside the vast city of the Ximen Imperial Clan. The city was extremely well-fortified. It was simply an enormous fort.

It was not only the army of the Ximen Imperial Clan that was gathered in this fort. The armies of the Nangong Imperial Clan, Dongfang Imperial Clan and Beitang Imperial Clan were also stationed here. Furthermore, it was not only the elite soldiers of the Four Great Imperial Clans that were stationed here. Instead, all of the battle power from the Four Great Imperial Clans was stationed here.

In the center of the city. The Four Great Imperial Clans' younger generation were all gathered here. They were hidden in the safest location. Outside of the city, the elites of the Four Great Imperial Clans were in a grand formation awaiting Chu Feng's arrival.

Not only were the four Clan Chiefs present, there were also a total of thirteen of the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders present.

Currently, the Four Great Imperial Clans had all gathered their armies in the Ximen Imperial Clan. This led to the headquarters of the other three Imperial Clans becoming empty cities.

They had ignored their own cities and gathered all of their clansmen here all for the sake of carrying out their final battle against Chu Feng. From this, it could be seen how determined the Four Great Imperial Clans were to eliminate Chu Feng. They were determined to succeed or die trying.

At that moment, on the city walls of the Ximen Imperial Clan, behind the grand formation that had been set up to await Chu Feng's arrival, hung many of the people from the Cyanwood Mountain.

There were not only a lot of elders and disciples, even Baili Xuankong, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were also suspended on the walls. However, without a doubt, they were all people that possessed decent relationships with Chu Feng.

Fortunately, they were only hung on the walls, and were not injured. This meant that the Four Great Imperial Clans had not tortured them. This meant that they still possessed some sort of humanity.

Of course, this could also mean that... the Four Great Imperial Clans had not tortured the people from the Cyanwood Mountain for the sake of their own image.

That said, to Baili Xuankong and the others, this was an extremely disgraceful thing. However, at that moment, what they were worried about were not their faces. Rather, it was Chu Feng. They truly did not wish to implicate Chu Feng and cause him to lose his life.

"I truly never would've expected that the one that has been helping Chu Feng the entire time was actually the Cyanwood Mountain's Ancestor."

"That's true. I also never expected for the Cyanwood Mountain's Ancestor to be this powerful. He was actually capable of fighting against the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs all by himself. If it wasn't for the fact that they had offended the Four Great

Imperial Clans, then, with his strength and Chu Feng's enormous talent, the Cyanwood Mountain would have definitely become the head of the Nine Powers."

At that moment, many people were gathered outside of the Ximen Imperial Clan's fort. They were all people that had come to watch the show. They were discussing the matter spiritedly as they looked to Baili Xuankong and the others that were suspended atop the city walls.

"The Four Great Imperial Clans seemed to have gathered all of their battle power here. It would seem that they plan to stake their all to kill Chu Feng."

"Didn't they say that the Snow-haired Immortal had already let out news that she would no longer concern herself with the grudges between Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans? Without her assistance, won't Chu Feng's side be extremely weak? Is there really a need for the Four Great Imperial Clans to muster such a large disposition of forces?"

"You don't understand. Back then, on the Gong Ba Plains, it was not only the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal that helped Chu Feng. Wasn't Chu Feng saved by a mysterious man in the end?"

"That's true. That child Chu Feng possesses enormous talent. He could be said to be the strongest person from the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism. Although there are many people that view him as a thorn, there are also a lot of people that admire and think highly of him. Perhaps there might be experts that will come to Chu Feng's rescue again today."

"In that case, the Four Great Imperial Clan's' decision to muster such a large force for Chu Feng is only natural?"

"Of course."

.....

.....

.....

Suddenly, someone asked, “Say, do you all think Chu Feng will come or not?”

“Of course not. If Chu Feng were to come here, he would be throwing his life away. However, with his talent, he will sooner or later make the Four Great Imperial Clans regret their actions. Even becoming an overlord will not be impossible for him. Rather than throwing his life away, wouldn’t it be better for him to wait until the day when he can emerge in power to attain revenge?” Someone said in a very serious manner.

“That’s your opinion. Chu Feng is not you. I feel that he will definitely come,” A man wearing a conical bamboo hat said.

“How do you know that Chu Feng will definitely come? Who are you, Chu Feng?” Seeing that man wearing the conical bamboo hat had said those words with such certainty, the crowd surrounding him all took a glance of contempt at him. They did not believe what he said.

“You all do not know how much of a righteous and loyal person Chu Feng is. Thus, it’s best that you all do not project your own filthy ideologies onto Chu Feng. The reason for that is because you all are unqualified,” The man in the conical bamboo hat said.

“You! You actually dare to insult us? You’re looking for a beating!” Hearing those words, many of the surrounding crowd were enraged. As they spoke, they took out their weapons and were prepared to attack that man wearing the conical bamboo hat.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, an oppressive might swept forth. Immediately, those people all stood there motionlessly, as if they had been petrified.

“We’re sorry, we’re sorry!!!” Then, those people began to

apologize repeatedly while falling back from the man wearing the conical bamboo hat. They were so frightened that cold sweat covered their bodies.

The reason for that was because the aura that man wearing the conical bamboo hat had unleashed was that of a Martial Emperor. As for Martial Emperors, they were not existences that these people dared to provoke.

.....

Although there were a lot of people that felt the same way as the man wearing the conical bamboo hat, and thought that Chu Feng would definitely come, as he was a righteous and loyal person, the great majority of the people felt that Chu Feng would not come.

After all, with the circumstances as they were now, if Chu Feng were to really come, he would truly be courting death.

Although this was what they were thinking in their hearts, they all wished for Chu Feng to come.

Else... they would have journeyed to the Ximen Imperial Clan for nothing. They had all come here for the sake of seeing Chu Feng's true appearance, as well as his grand battle against the Four Great Imperial Clans.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, a roar suddenly sounded. When that roar was heard, the crowd's bodies all started to tremble. Even space itself started to vibrate violently.

“What is that?” At that moment, many people were deeply afraid. The reason for that was because that roar from before had truly been too frightening. It was so frightening that they started to shiver in fear.

“Roooarrr~~~”

At that moment, another roar was heard. Then, the crowd

discovered that a huge monster had appeared in the distant horizon.

Chapter 1863 – Arriving Atop Dragons

That huge monster was galloping toward this place from afar. Not only was it's aura extremely imposing, it was also extremely terrifying.

At the moment when that huge monster appeared, black clouds surged, and waves of thunder sounded in succession. Violent winds swept forth, blowing all living things within its path away. Those with weak levels of cultivation, even if they were far away, were also swept up by the wind like leaves. As they wailed and screamed, they were blown far away, rolling about on the ground.

Upon closer inspection, the crowd were even more shocked. It was actually an enormous dragon that had arrived. A dragon so indescribably huge. Its size... was simply too gigantic. Likely, it was ten thousand meters long. It was as if a mountain range was galloping through the sky.

It was an enormous ten thousand meter-long dragon. Furthermore, it was so vivid and lifelike. [Those dragon horns, those dragon scales, those dragon claws, those dragon feelers, and that overwhelmingly intimidating dragon roar](#). None of those resembled an illusory dragon. Instead, they resembled a real dragon.

“A dragon, a dragon has descended upon the world! It's the legendary Divine Beast!!!” Many people began to shout with trembling voices.

“No, it's not a single one. Look! There are, there are still more...” Soon, trembling shouts were heard again.

Hearing those voices, the crowd turned to look again. They were shocked to see that seven enormous dragon heads had appeared beside that enormous dragon. Soon, seven more enormous dragon bodies appeared.

Eight dragons. There were a total of eight enormous dragons. At that moment, those eight enormous dragons were rapidly flying toward the Ximen Imperial Clan.

“Sure enough, he really came.”

At that moment, the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders that were in the center of their grand formation revealed expressions of seriousness. They all knew very well that, regardless of what those eight enormous dragons were, they had come for Chu Feng’s sake.

Their guesses were correct. After the eight enormous dragons grew closer to the Ximen Imperial Clan, the silhouettes standing atop the eight enormous dragons began to appear before the crowd. The appearances of Chu Feng and the others were clearly visible to everyone present.

This was especially true for Chu Feng, who was standing atop the leading dragon’s head. Thus, the crowd were able to see him with a single glance.

“Chu Feng! He came! He really came!!!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd were both shocked and excited. They felt as if their already hot blood was boiling. They truly never would have expected for Chu Feng to be this courageous; that he, for the sake of Baili Xuankong and the others, would come to battle the Four Great Imperial Clans.

However, more than that, they never would have expected for Chu Feng to bring eight enormous dragons with him; that he would arrive atop enormous dragons.

“Chu Feng, you...”

Compared to the crowd, when Baili Xuankong and the others from the Cyanwood Mountain saw Chu Feng, their mindsets were even more complicated.

They deeply hated the fact that they had been captured, that they

had caused Chu Feng to walk right into this trap. Yet, at the same time, they were extremely moved by how Chu Feng was willing to brave danger to rescue them. The camaraderie Chu Feng had shown made them feel extremely warm inside.

“Ancestor, Headmaster, Elders, fellow disciples, please wait a moment longer. I will immediately bring you all home,” With a beaming smile on his face, Chu Feng ran his gaze over Baili Xuankong and the others. Then, ‘paa,’ Chu Feng clasped his fist and bowed courteously to the people from the Cyanwood Mountain. Chu Feng’s bow possessed extraordinary significance.

“Chu Feng...”

Chu Feng’s single short sentence had caused the people from the Cyanwood Mountain that were tied by up and suspended atop the city wall to feel extremely moved. This was especially true for those who were the original members of the Asura Division, those disciples that used to be Chu Feng’s subordinates. They were feeling so moved by Chu Feng’s words that they actually started to shed hot tears.

Chu Feng was an extremely talented genius blessed by the heavens, whereas they were nobodies. Yet, Chu Feng considered them to be his brothers. For the sake of saving them, he was willing to come here while braving death. With this camaraderie, even if Chu Feng was to fail, even if they were to die here, it would all be worth it.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally shown up. Merely, I never expected that even our Ximen Imperial Clan’s traitor would come to help you.”

“Ximen Gongfu, are you really planning to kill the people of our Ximen Imperial Clan for the sake of that Chu Feng?” The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief looked to Yin Gongfu.

“Clan Chief Ximen, I think you’re mistaken here. My name is Yin Gongfu. I am absolutely not related to your Ximen Imperial Clan.

As for little friend Chu Feng, he is my friend. For you to become his enemy means that you are also my, Yin Gongfu's, enemy. For your Ximen Imperial Clan to wish to kill my little friend Chu Feng, what wrong is there for me to kill the people of your Ximen Imperial Clan?" Yin Gongfu said with a loud voice.

"You!!!" The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Utmost Exalted Elders were all deeply enraged. No matter what, Yin Gongfu was someone from their Ximen Imperial Clan. Yet now, he actually said those sorts of words.

However, Yin Gongfu knew best what the Ximen Imperial Clan had done to him. He had already broken all ties with the Ximen Imperial Clan.

"King Monstrous Dragon Race, I never would have expected that you all would be participating in this. I will give you all another chance. Are you really planning to make our Four Great Imperial Clans your enemy for the sake of a single Chu Feng?" A Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder looked to the various monstrous beasts from the King Monstrous Dragon Race.

"There's no need to bother with superfluous words. Little friend Chu Feng's enemies are the enemies of our King Monstrous Dragon Race. For you all to make little friend Chu Feng your enemy, we are already destined to have irreconcilable differences," Yaojiao Guang said coldly. His tone was very unyielding and without the slightest bit of restraint.

"Humph, mere King Monstrous Dragon Beasts actually want to contend against our Four Great Imperial Clans. You are simply daydreaming!" Right at that moment, another voice sounded. That voice shook the heavens and pierced through the vast sky.

Merely, that voice was not from the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders, nor was it from the four Clan Chiefs.

When that voice sounded, a figure flew out from the Ximen Imperial Clan's city and stood across from the eight enormous

dragons.

It was an old man with white hair. Wrinkles covered his face. His appearance was so aged that it was beyond recognition. One could not even see his facial features properly. However, his aura was extremely strong. He was actually a rank five Martial Emperor.

“A rank five Martial Emperor. Who is that person? He’s actually a rank five Martial Emperor? Did the Four Great Imperial Clans invite such an expert to help them?”

“No, look at his attire. It’s the attire of the Ximen Imperial Clan. Could he be someone from the Ximen Imperial Clan?” Upon seeing that old man, the crowd were all shocked.

In fact, it was not only the others. Even Chu Feng’s group started to frown. They did not expect that there was actually a rank five Martial Emperor backing up the Four Clan’s troops.

“You’re Ximen Baiyuan, right?” Duan Jidao said. He was rather calm and collected. Evidently, [he knew that powerful old man](#).

“Ximen Baiyuan? Could it really be Ximen Baiyuan? But, didn’t Ximen Baiyuan already die long ago? Why would he still be alive?” After hearing the name ‘Ximen Baiyuan’, many of the older generation’s experts present exclaimed in astonishment.

Ximen Baiyuan was someone from the Ximen Imperial Clan. He was Ximen Feixue’s great grandfather, a super genius of his era. Back then... he could be said to have been an existence akin to the current Nangong Longjian. His reputation was extremely widespread.

Merely, Ximen Baiyuan was born not long after the disappearance of Emperor Qing. From then till now, his age should be close to ten thousand years old. It should be impossible for someone like him to still be alive. After all, humans were not monstrous beasts. Their life spans were not that long.

In fact, Ximen Baiyuan had already disappeared a thousand years

ago, and had never appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism since. Thus, many people had thought that he had died. As such, they truly never expected for this super expert to still be alive.

While to the bystanders, this was something unbelievable, however, to Chu Feng and the others, this was very bad news.

What is described here is the appearance of a chinese dragon. Imagine Shenron from DBZ.

How did Yin Gongfu not know him if he's also from the Ximen Imperial Clan?

Chapter 1864 – Super Expert

“You actually managed to recognize me. That’s truly remarkable. In that case, please tell me who you are?” Ximen Baiyuan smiled coldly and confirmed his identity.

“Of course I recognize you. Not only that, I also remember how you were kowtowing and begging for forgiveness after having all of your front teeth broken and smashed apart at the Grand Slope’s Ancient Era’s Remnants,” Duan Jidao said with a light smile.

“What? Ximen Baiyuan’s front teeth were smashed apart by someone? Furthermore, he even kowtowed and begged for forgiveness?” The crowd felt great disbelief upon hearing those words. After all, Ximen Baiyuan was someone with an extraordinary status.

“What crazy and unfounded ravings are you talking about?! You’re simply slandering my reputation! Exactly who you are for you to dare to slander me like that?!” Ximen Baiyuan was extremely enraged, and his eyes grew blood-red. The reason for that was because he knew very well that what Duan Jidao had said was real.

“You really don’t recognize me?” Duan Jidao smiled again. As he spoke, he moved aside the white hair that covered his face.

“Exactly who are you?” Ximen Baiyuan inspected Duan Jidao carefully, but was unable to recognize him.

“I was the person that made you look for your teeth all over the floor, the person that you were kowtowing to and begging for forgiveness to in order to survive,” Duan Jidao said.

“Duan Jidao, you’re saying that you’re Duan Jidao?!!!”

“No... impossible... this is impossible,” Ximen Baiyuan shook his head repeatedly. However, his words had also indirectly admitted the fact that he had indeed been beaten by Duan Jidao, and had

ended up begging him for forgiveness.

“Duan Jidao?” Hearing the name ‘Duan Jidao’, the crowd’s hearts were all startled. They all turned their gazes to Duan Jidao. Their gazes were all flickering.

The reason for that was because Duan Jidao was much more famous than Ximen Baiyuan. After all, he was an existence that even the Three Palaces had feared back then. He was that super expert that had nearly become the strongest human.

“That’s precisely me,” When Duan Jidao said those words, he suddenly took out a golden spear. When the golden spear appeared, heaven and earth immediately started to shake.

The shaking caused the people present to be unable to stand firm. Many of them lost their balance and ended up rolling and crawling. Some even lost their ability to fly and began to fall to the ground.

Not only that, although that golden spear was not exceptionally dazzling, it caused the crowd to not dare to face it head on. If one were to attempt to look at it, one would feel that it was extremely dazzling. It was as if a single glance at that golden spear would blind their vision.

Imperial Armament. The golden spear that Duan Jidao had taken out was an Imperial Armament. Its name was the Great Sun Golden Ray Spear.

“The Imperial Armament, Great Sun Golden Ray Spear. It would seem that you are indeed Duan Jidao. Merely, why would your cultivation have decreased this enormously? Exactly who was the one that extinguished your Duan Dynasty back then?” Ximen Baiyuan asked repeatedly. It turned out that when Duan Jidao revealed his Great Sun Golden Ray Spear, he had also revealed his cultivation of rank five Martial Emperor.

At that time, practically everyone perked their ears up. They all

wished to know about the secret as to what happened back then. They also wanted to know exactly who it was that had been so powerful that they had even defeated Duan Jidao and made his cultivation decrease.

However, what they were thinking about in their hearts was simply not the truth of what had happened.

“What you should be worrying about is not my past. Rather, it should be your Four Great Imperial Clan’s’ future,” Duan Jidao said.

“Hahaha. Duan Jidao, oh Duan Jidao, if you possessed the same cultivation that you did back then, I would naturally be no match for you.”

“However, right now, you possess the same cultivation as me. We are both rank five Martial Emperors. Did you really think that I would fear you now?” Ximen Baiyuan sneered. Then, a long blade appeared in his hand, and he pointed that blade at Duan Jidao.

That long blade was extremely special. It actually possessed the body of an alligator. The alligator’s mouth was wide open, and a sharp blade extended from its body.

However, the might of that long blade was not at all weaker than Duan Jidao’s Great Sun Golden Ray Spear. Like it, the long blade was also an Imperial Armament.

“That’s a weapon from the Ancient Era, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade,” Someone recognized that long blade. The reason why Ximen Baiyuan possessed such enormous fame and had been deemed to be an era’s genius was all because he had managed to subdue that Imperial Armament, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, in an Ancient Era’s Remnant.

“Fight against me? Are you truly certain that you’re capable?” However, Duan Jidao smiled lightly. Then, his gown fluttered. With a flash of light, he disappeared.

“Clank~~~”

An ear-piercing sound was heard. A dazzling spark spread through the sky.

Duan Jidao's Great Sun Golden Ray Spear actually collided with Ximen Baiyuan's Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade. In merely an instant, Duan Jidao had arrived before Ximen Baiyuan and unleashed an attack at him.

“Woosh~~~”

After the collision of their weapons, Ximen Baiyuan was actually knocked back several steps in midair before finally being able to steady himself.

At that moment, his hands that were holding onto the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Sword were trembling slightly. Although they were both rank five Martial Emperors, he was evidently no match for Duan Jidao.

“People of the Four Clans, set up the formation!” Seeing that the situation was bad, a loud shout sounded from the Four Great Imperial Clans. Then, the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans actually began to combine their strength to set up a formation. Then, a golden light soared into the sky and was assimilated into Ximen Baiyuan.

At that moment, a golden bright and dazzling ‘Imperial’ character appeared on Ximen Baiyuan's forehead. With the help of the people from the Four Great Imperial Clan's, his battle power had soared enormously, and his aura overflowed.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After obtaining assistance from the Four Great Imperial Clans, Ximen Baiyuan became even more vigorous. He began to brandish the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade to unleash continuous slashes at Duan Jidao.

“Duan Jidao, you have come at the perfect time. Emperor

Huang's bloodline shall become the possession of our Four Great Imperial Clans," As Ximen Baiyuan attacked Duan Jidao, he began to threaten him fiercely. It could be seen that he possessed an overflowing hatred for Duan Jidao.

"It seems that you already knew that the power of my bloodline originated from Lord Emperor Huang's inheritance," As Duan Jidao blocked Ximen Baiyuan's continuous attacks, his eyes narrowed.

"Your Great Sun Golden Ray Spear is the possession of Emperor Huang. The various techniques which you have grasped are also the techniques of Emperor Huang. And you... you were born to a Royal Clan. Yet, you possess such a pure Imperial Bloodline. If you had not obtained Emperor Huang's bloodline, how else would that possible? Did you really think that the people of this world were all fools?" Ximen Baiyuan said coldly. His words were filled with mockery and ridicule.

"So what if you know? I might as well tell you this. Indeed, I obtained the whole inheritance of Lord Emperor Huang. Not only did I obtain his Imperial Armament and techniques, I also obtained his bloodline's power."

"Merely, this bloodline's power does not belong to your Four Great Imperial Clans. Your Four Great Imperial Clans also do not possess the fate to obtain this power. Today... I will extinguish your Four Great Imperial Clans," After Duan Jidao said those words, he suddenly shot an explosive attack at Ximen Baiyuan.

At the same time, his eyes flashed, and then a hundred world spirit gates appeared behind him in succession.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Following that, enormous figures flew out from those world spirit gates. In an instant, over a thousand world spirits stood in an orderly row behind Duan Jidao.

All of those world spirits were from the Fairy Spirit World. Each and every one of them was radiating flickering light and giving off extraordinary airs. Furthermore, they were all Martial Emperors.

The weakest among them were rank two Martial Emperors. As for the strongest... they were rank four Martial Emperors.

“Heavens, this...”

Seeing the thousand-plus world spirits that stood behind Duan Jidao, not to mention the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans and the bystanders, even the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were stunned.

Over a thousand world spirits with cultivations of Martial Emperors. The weakest among them were rank two Martial Emperors, and many of them were rank four Martial Emperors. This was truly too frightening.

Such a scene had already surpassed the range of ordinary people’s comprehension of what a battle between two armies was.

Such a battle was simply not at a level that ordinary people could involve themselves in.

This was a battle that only super experts could participate in.

Chapter 1865 – Unrivaled Divine Might

“World spiritist. This is the frightening aspect of world spiritists. With merely a single person, he is capable of displaying a battle power of thousands of men.”

“Is there simply even a need for us to act? Merely Duan Jidao himself will be able to extinguish the entire Four Great Imperial Clans,” Yaojiao Guang was extremely excited. The way he saw it, this signaled doom for the Four Great Imperial Clans.

In fact, it was not only him that was thinking like that. Practically everyone present all felt that way. They felt that Duan Jidao was able to eliminate the Four Great Imperial Clans by himself. Even the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans were thinking that way.

“If I had known this was going to happen, I wouldn’t have allowed Lord Duan to pass his power to on me that quickly. If his cultivation had not suffered because of me, with his original cultivation of rank seven Martial Emperor, the world spirits which he could have summoned would definitely not be limited to only these. Likely, Lord Duan will not even have to act. With merely his world spirits, he will be able to extinguish the Four great Imperial Clans,” At that moment, Jiang Wushang felt extremely remorseful.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng silently agreed with what Jiang Wushang had said. The reason for that was because he was thinking the same thing.

The strength of one’s world spirit was dependent upon one’s own strength. The stronger the world spiritist, the more powerful the world spirit would be. If the world spiritist was weak, the world spirit would in turn become weak.

World spirits would only submit to powerful world spiritists. This was especially true for world spirits with higher levels of

cultivation. What they valued were power and personal benefits.

Having reached Duan Jidao's level, although he was extremely powerful, he was only capable of subduing world spirits weaker than himself.

It was as Jiang Wushang had said. If Duan Jidao was still a rank seven Martial Emperor, the cultivation of the world spirits that he could summon today, the world spirits that were willing to submit to him, would definitely contain rank five Martial Emperors or even rank six Martial Emperors.

However, when Duan Jidao's cultivation decreased from rank seven Martial Emperor to rank five Martial Emperor, even if he still possessed contracts with rank five or rank six Martial Emperor-level world spirits, those world spirits would not be willing to submit to him and fight for him.

In that sort of situation, Duan Jidao would have no choice but to remove the contracts he had with those world spirits and return their freedom to them. After all, to world spiritists, having disloyal world spirits that were also more powerful than them was a very dangerous matter.

After all, the great majority of world spirits were only loyal to world spiritists for their own personal benefits. Extremely few world spirits were like Eggy, a world spirit that shared life's joys and sorrows with Chu Feng and was even willing to sacrifice her life for him.

Furthermore, if it wasn't for the fact that Eggy was forcibly sealed into Chu Feng's body by Chu Feng's mother, then, with her personality, how could she possibly be loyal and devoted to Chu Feng?

To speak of it simply, at the very beginning, Eggy was only willing to help Chu Feng because she was sealed in Chu Feng's body, and would perish should he die. She had actually only helped Chu Feng in the beginning for her own sake.

As for later on, she began to harbor feelings for Chu Feng over time. That was the reason why she was so loyal and devoted to Chu Feng now. This was also the reason why Chu Feng did not try to summon and contract more world spirits when he could. The way he saw it, world spirits that were not loyal to him, world spirits that were not strong, even if he were to summon them, they would only be a nuisance.

“Wushang, you do not have to blame yourself. For Lord Duan... to want to pass on his power to you so urgently, he actually also possessed his own difficulties,” Yin Gongfu consoled Jiang Wushang. He knew that Duan Jidao was suffering from a serious, incurable illness. Even if he didn’t kill himself, he would not be able to live for much longer. That was why Duan Jidao had been trying to find a successor so urgently.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Right at that moment, explosions were being heard nonstop, and many waves of energy ripples began to wreak havoc throughout heaven and earth. The thousand plus world spirits had all unleashed their attacks. Using their special Fairy Spirit World’s techniques, they continuously attacked the Ximen Imperial Clan’s fort.

However, the Four Great Imperial Clans had evidently made preparations beforehand. A very powerful protective barrier was protecting the Ximen Imperial Clan’s fort. Even though the world spirits were attacking the barrier nonstop, they were unable to break through it.

However, in order to maintain that barrier, the Four Great Imperial Clans had exerted all of their strength to maintain it.

Thus, they were unable to continue to provide assistance to Ximen Baiyuan.

The Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders had even taken out their respective Emperor Dragon Seals. They had begun to protect that enormous protective barrier with the power of their Imperial Armaments.

At the moment when his world spirits were attacking the Ximen Imperial Clan's fort nonstop, at the moment when many of the Four Great Imperial Clans' younger generation and women were crying bitterly in fear, Duan Jidao held his Imperial Armament and unleashed attacks at Ximen Baiyuan.

As for Ximen Baiyuan, after losing the energy instilled into him by everyone from the Four Great Imperial Clans and having to rely on only his own power, he was simply no match for Duan Jidao.

At this moment, every single time he received Duan Jidao's attack, he would be knocked back several meters. In merely a couple bouts, his palm was split open by the power of the collisions from the two Imperial Armaments, and blood was flowing out of his palms.

"Heavens, this... exactly who is killing who now?"

At that moment, the crowd were unwilling to even blink. They were feeling enormous astonishment in their hearts.

The Four Great Imperial Clans had unleashed such a grand disposition of forces all for the sake of killing Chu Feng. In fact, the great majority of the people present all felt that Chu Feng would not dare to show up, and even if he did, he would only be throwing his life away.

However, not only had Chu Feng come, he had also beaten the Four Great Imperial Clans to an utterly sorry state right after arriving, leaving them no choice but to hole up in their fort. Even the Four Great Imperial Clan's' strongest Ximen Baiyuan was being

utterly suppressed by Duan Jidao right now.

This battle had truly surpassed everyone's imagination. It was not only something that the Four Great Imperial Clans had not anticipated, even Chu Feng and the others had not anticipated this. Duan Jidao's strength truly surpassed their imagination.

Today, they finally got to experience Duan Jidao's... unrivalled divine might!!!

“Damn it!”

In this sort of situation, Ximen Baiyuan did not dare to continue fighting Duan Jidao. His body shifted, and he began to retreat. He was trying to return to the fort and use the power of the protective barrier to stop Duan Jidao's onslaught.

“Ximen Baiyuan, didn't you say that you were going to seize my bloodline's power? Why aren't you seizing it, and instead fleeing?” Seeing that Ximen Baiyuan was fleeing, Duan Jidao did not give chase. Instead, he coldly watched as Ximen Baiyuan escaped. Contempt and ridicule filled his eyes.

How could Ximen Baiyuan possibly dare to bother to respond to Duan Jidao? At this moment, the only thing in his mind was to quickly return to the fort. Else, he would definitely be killed today. Even though he had failed in his most recent closed-door attempt at extending his lifespan, and would not be able to continue living for long, he still felt the desire to continue to live.

The reason for that was because if he were to die, then no one in the Four Great Imperial Clans would be able to contend against Duan Jidao. Not only would he die, the Four Great Imperial Clans would also be extinguished by Duan Jidao.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at the moment when Ximen Baiyuan reached the protective barrier and was about to pass through it, a figure suddenly appeared before him and blocked his path.

It was Duan Jidao. At this moment... a golden-bright and dazzling 'Imperial' character appeared on Duan Jidao's forehead. Due to that, his battle power soared enormously. Compared to before, he was now much more imposing and powerful.

Although they were both rank five Martial Emperors, Ximen Baiyuan was simply not of the same tier as Duan Jidao.

"You shouldn't be able to pass through the protective barrier, right? How?" Duan Jidao stared at Ximen Baiyuan's body. He was trying to find the secret to Ximen Baiyuan being able to pass through the protective barrier.

"By my Imperial Bloodline. What I possess is our Four Great Imperial Clans' bloodline. As for you, you do not possess that. Thus, while I am able to pass through the protective barrier, you... can forget about passing through it," Ximen Baiyuan said loudly.

"Oh, so that's the case," Duan Jidao smiled lightly. He then grabbed Ximen Baiyuan by his neck and lifted him up.

At this moment, Duan Jidao looked to Ximen Baiyuan and said, "Watch carefully. Even if I do not possess your Four Great Imperial Clans' bloodline, I am still able to enter your Ximen Imperial Clan's fort."

After saying those words, Duan Jidao held tightly onto the spear in his hand and thrust it at the protective barrier.

"Boom~~~"

An ear-piercing sound was heard. Then, that protective barrier started to tremble violently. When Duan Jidao retrieved his spear, Ximen Baiyuan and the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans all had extremely ashen expressions on their faces.

With merely a spear strike, Duan Jidao had left an enormous crack on the protective barrier.

Chapter 1866 – Because They’re Brothers

“Heavens, the fort that the Four Great Imperial Clans have spent their entire clan’s’ power to set up has actually received a crack on its protective barrier with a single spear thrust.”

“Furthermore, this is Duan Jidao after his cultivation has decreased. If his cultivation had not decreased, if he were still at his peak state from back then, how much more frightening would he be?” Seeing this scene, the crowd were so shocked that their hair began to stand on end. They were feeling an overwhelming amount of admiration for Duan Jidao.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was overwhelmed with shock and admiration, Duan Jidao unleashed continuous attacks. Several spear thrusts shot forth in succession. All of them landed on the fort. After his bombardment of attacks, that crack on the fort grew larger and larger. Soon, the crack spread through over half of the entire protective barrier. At that moment, the invisible protective barrier was completely present before everyone’s line of sight.

Ximen Baiyuan was only able to look on helplessly as all this happened. He was powerless to do anything. Even though he was also a rank five Martial Emperor, he simply did not possess the strength to contend against Duan Jidao.

At that moment, the wailing sounds that originated from within the Ximen Imperial Clan’s fort grew even more ear-piercing. Many people felt that they would be doomed the moment their fort was broken through.

The thousand plus world spirits and those eight enormous dragons would be able to force their way in and begin their massacre. All of the people from their Four Great Imperial Clans would be killed.

To them, the sound of Duan Jidao's attacks bombarding the fort were equivalent to the grim reaper's timer. At the moment when the final sound was heard, it would mean the time of their deaths.

“Wuu~~~”

Suddenly, Duan Jidao's expression changed. His spear that was about to be thrust forward actually stopped midway through its thrust.

“What happened?” The crowd all noticed that something was amiss. The Ximen Imperial Clan's protective screen was clearly about to be broken through. Thus, why did Duan Jidao suddenly stop?

“Pfff~~~”

Right at this moment, Duan Jidao's mouth suddenly opened, and then a mouthful of golden liquid sprayed out.

At the moment that the golden liquid sprayed out, Duan Jidao's expression became extremely ugly in the blink of an eye. Even the 'Imperial' character on his forehead disappeared instantly. His aura had decreased enormously in a flash.

“Oh no!” Seeing this scene, Yin Gongfu's body immediately stiffened. He knew that Duan Jidao's illness had acted up again.

“Woosh~~~”

When even the bystanders were able to notice that something was wrong with Duan Jidao, Ximen Baiyuan naturally caught it too. He seized this opportunity and break free from Duan Jidao's grasp. Then, seeing that Duan Jidao was this weak, he immediately brandished the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade in his hand and slashed it at Duan Jidao's dantian.

“Puchi~~~”

Duan Jidao flipped his hand and actually caught Ximen Baiyuan’s incoming blade. Although he had caused his palm to become incomparably tough with the use of world spirit power, it remained that he was facing an Imperial Armament. As such, Duan Jidao’s hand was sliced through by the blade and left badly mutilated with blood flowing out from it.

“Break!!!”

However, even though he was in such a state, Duan Jidao still brandished the Great Sun Golden Ray Spear in his hand and thrust it at that protective barrier filled with cracks.

“Rumble~~~”

Following that spear thrust, the impregnable protective barrier shattered like a piece of glass. It split into countless pieces and scattered all over the place.

“Wuuahh~~~”

At that moment, many of the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans vomited blood. Some even lost consciousness on the spot. They had received a great backlash from the protective barrier being destroyed.

However, while Duan Jidao’s spear thrust had managed to break through the Four Great Imperial Clan’s protective barrier, he appeared to have exhausted all of his power and became exceptionally weak.

“Duan Jidao, so what if you’ve broken through our Ximen Imperial Clan’s protective screen? Without you, Chu Feng and the others are simply equivalent to fishes on the chopping block. They can do nothing but be slaughtered by me.”

Ximen Baiyuan sneered. Then, killing intent surged in his eyes. Once again, he slashed his Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade at Duan Jidao’s dantian. He was determined to kill Duan Jidao.

However, Duan Jidao was still in a state without power to resist his attacks.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment of life and death crisis, a silver longbow suddenly appeared out of thin air. Then, with a loud ‘clank,’ that longbow actually blocked Ximen Baiyuan’s fatal attack at Duan Jidao.

It turned out that silver longbow was actually an Imperial Armament!!!

“Fishes on the chopping block? Are you certain?” Right at this moment, a figure appeared out of thin air. It was Zhang Ming, Zhang Tianyi’s father Zhang Ming.

“Zhang Ming, it’s you?” Seeing Zhang Ming, Duan Jidao was very surprised.

“Brother Duan, rest yourself properly. Let me handle this Ximen Baiyuan for you,” Zhang Ming smiled lightly. Then, he grabbed Duan Jidao and tossed him to Chu Feng and the others, “Take care of him.”

Yin Gongfu leapt forth and caught Duan Jidao. He hurriedly took out a golden pellet from his Cosmos Sack and placed it into Duan Jidao’s mouth.

“Senior Duan, are you alright?” At this moment, Chu Feng and the others also arrived with extremely concerned expressions.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I am truly sorry. This body of mine truly fails to live up to expectations. My illness has acted up again at such a bad time,” Duan Jidao said with a bitter laugh.

“Senior Duan, you’ve already done enough. Rest yourself properly and leave the rest to us,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, this battle cannot be lost,” Duan Jidao said.

“Rest assured,” Chu Feng nodded.

Suddenly Yaojiao Guang shouted, “Warriors of our King Monstrous Dragon Race, listen up!” Then, with a very ferocious gaze, he looked to the Ximen Imperial Clan’s fort. Then, he pulled out his Incomplete Imperial Armament, pointed at the fort and shouted, “Kill!!!!!!”

“Roar~~~~”

The eight enormous dragons roared together. At the moment when their roars shook the horizon, their eight enormous bodies carried their boundless killing intent as they charged to attack the fort.

“Stop them!!!”

In response, many experts from the Four Great Imperial Clans soared into the sky with the intention to stop the eight enormous dragons.

While those eight enormous dragons only possessed offensive power equivalent to rank one Martial Emperors, they possessed defensive powers on par with rank three Martial Emperors. Thus, all those below rank four Martial Emperor would not be able to injure them.

At this moment, only the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders were capable of subduing the eight enormous dragons. However, while Duan Jidao was injured, his thousand plus world spirits were not injured at all. His thousand plus world spirits were all from the Fairy Spirit World. Furthermore, over a hundred of them were rank four Martial Emperors.

Faced with that, even though the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders possessed Emperor Dragon Seals, they were only barely able to contain the world spirits. As such, they simply had no means to concern themselves with the others.

When even the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders were forced to such a state, the experts of the Four Great Imperial

Clans, including their Clan Chiefs, were all powerless to defend themselves.

“Wuuahh~~”

“Eeahh~~~”

Screams began to sound from the Four Great Imperial Clans repeatedly. The eight enormous dragons had begun to massacre the people of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Although they were massacring them, the eight enormous dragons did not target the younger generation or the weak. Instead, they were massacring the Four Great Imperial Clans’ elites, and especially the Ximen Imperial Clan’s elites. They were the main target of their massacre.

As for the world spirits, they unleashed fatal attacks at anyone from the Four Great Imperial Clans that they encountered. They were incomparably ruthless. It was as if they were trying to avenge Duan Jidao.

“Damn it!”

Seeing this scene, Ximen Baiyuan became extremely worried. He wanted to go and rescue them, but was simply incapable of breaking free.

The reason for that was because of Zhang Ming. Zhang Ming also possessed the cultivation of a rank five Martial Emperor. At that moment, Zhang Ming was unleashing fierce attacks at Ximen Baiyuan. He had the attitude of planning to take Ximen Baiyuan’s life.

Being overwhelmed with worry, Ximen Baiyuan asked angrily, “You’re Zhang Ming?”

“What about it?” Zhang Ming replied unenthusiastically.

“There are neither grievances nor grudges between us, why are you making yourself an enemy out of our Four Great Imperial Clans?” Ximen Baiyuan asked angrily.

“Indeed, there are neither grievances nor grudges between us. However, there’s nothing I can do about it. The reason for that is because my son is Chu Feng’s brother,” After saying those words, Zhang Ming turned his gaze to the crowd.

Chapter 1867 – Fighting Against The Four Clan Chiefs Alone

“Woosh~~~”

With Zhang Ming’s gaze sweeping toward them, those that ended up meeting his gaze all felt their bodies trembling and their hearts startled. In order to dodge his gaze, they hurriedly moved far away. In an instant, only a single person remained at the location where Zhang Ming had looked.

At the moment when everyone was choosing to flee, only a single person did not.

This man wore a conical bamboo hat. Before the attentive gazes of the crowd, he slowly removed his conical bamboo hat and revealed his true appearance. This person... was Zhang Tianyi.

It turned out that the person wearing the conical bamboo hat that had firmly believed that Chu Feng would come was none other than Zhang Tianyi.

Furthermore, Zhang Tianyi’s cultivation was a night and day difference from the time at the Gong Ba Plains. Currently... he was already a rank two Martial Emperor. Compared to back then, the speed of his cultivation’s increase could be said to be lightning fast. His cultivation had increased much faster than Chu Feng’s.

Of course, he was only able to attain such enormous progress all because of Emperor Gong’s inheritance. As for that, it was also partially thanks to Chu Feng.

“Emperor Gong’s successor! That person is Emperor Gong’s successor, the person that obtained the title of the Strongest Younger Generation in the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly held on the Gong Ba Plains, Zhang Tianyi!!!”

Zhang Tianyi was currently extremely famous. Once he revealed himself, many people immediately cried out in alarm. After all,

Zhang Tianyi was the person who held the title of the strongest younger generation.

“Woosh~~~”

Zhang Tianyi did not bother with the discussions of the surrounding crowd. Instead, he suddenly leapt into the sky and arrived beside Chu Feng and Jiang Wushang.

“Yoh, little brother Wushang, you’ve also come? Your progress is quite quick,” Zhang Tianyi said to Jiang Wushang with a smile on his face.

“How could I possibly compare to you? You’re actually already a rank two Martial Emperor,” Jiang Wushang took a glance at Zhang Tianyi. Then, he took a glance at Chu Feng and said, “Before the two of them, I am truly so ashamed that I feel like dying.”

“I was only able to obtain my current cultivation because of junior brother Chu Feng,” Zhang Tianyi said as he looked to Chu Feng.

“Could it be... that you’ve also been helped by big brother Chu Feng?” Jiang Wushang asked in shock.

“Eh? Could it be that boy, you’ve also only managed to have your current cultivation because of junior brother Chu Feng’s assistance?” Zhang Tianyi was also shocked.

“Precisely,” Jiang Wushang nodded with a smile. Then, he moved to Zhang Tianyi’s side and said in his ear with a low voice, “Big brother Zhang, let me tell you this in secret, I am currently Lord Duan Jidao’s disciple now. I will soon obtain Emperor Huang’s inheritance. As for that, it’s all thanks to big brother Chu Feng.”

“Really?” Zhang Tianyi was overjoyed upon hearing this. He then looked to Chu Feng and said, “Junior brother Chu Feng, you are truly our great benefactor.”

“Senior brother Zhang, there is no need for you to be this

courteous at such a time. I never expected that you would actually manage to persuade your father,” Chu Feng knew that Zhang Ming did not wish to provoke the Four Great Imperial Clans. Mainly, he did not wish to help Chu Feng and provoke needless troubles in the process. The reason for that was because if he were to help Chu Feng once, it would mean that he would have to help them again the next time even if he did not wish to do so. After all, even if he refused to help them again, he would not be able to escape the implication. Thus, Chu Feng knew that it was all thanks to Zhang Tianyi that Zhang Ming was willing to help them.

“No, I never tried to persuade him. Merely, I ran out while he was not paying attention. I didn’t expect that he would follow me here,” Zhang Tianyi looked to his father that was fighting fiercely against Ximen Baiyuan. Joy filled his eyes. No matter what, his father had come for his sake. Thus, he was extremely happy and proud that he possessed such a father.

“No matter what, it is all thanks to you that senior Zhang Ming came to assist me.”

“That said, brothers, a grand battle has begun. Let’s chat with one another at a later time. Since we’ve come, we cannot stand by and do nothing. Let’s battle them,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his Heavenly Immortal Sword.

“Of course. Since we’ve come here today, we must fight to our heart’s delight!!!” As Zhang Tianyi spoke, he suddenly leapt forth. Chu Feng followed closely behind him.

Seeing that Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi had already fiercely slaughtered their way onto the battlefield, Jiang Wushang also soared into the sky and followed them onto the battlefield. Although he was only a Half Martial Emperor, his cultivation was unable to contain his determination to battle.

“World spirits, listen up! Protect the three of them with your lives!” Duan Jidao shouted.

After those words were said, of the thousand plus world spirits, several tens of them appeared beside Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang to secretly protect them.

At this moment, Chu Feng was charging straight for the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. After getting close to them, he shouted to those world spirits, "Everyone, thank you for your trouble. Please leave the four of them to me."

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Once Chu Feng said those words, those world spirits all complied with his wishes and handed the Clan Chiefs of the Nangong, Beitang, Dongfang and Ximen Imperial Clans to him.

"Chu Feng, what did you say? You plan to take care of the four of us alone?" The Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief felt that Chu Feng's actions were extremely unfathomable. Thus, when he looked to Chu Feng, he had the appearance of looking at a fool.

Originally, they had had to put forth all of their effort to take care of the world spirits. This had been extremely strenuous for them. If they were to continue, they would definitely be killed. However, to their surprise, Chu Feng suddenly came at such a moment. Not only had he rescued them from the world spirits, he had even declared that he was going to fight against the four of them himself.

Chu Feng, a mere Half Martial Emperor, what made him think that he could contend against them? What he had done was simply provide them with a great opportunity for them to kill him. Thus, they felt that Chu Feng's brain had gone completely retarded.

"Haha..." Chu Feng did not respond to the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief's mocking words. Instead, he looked to those world spirits again and said, "You all do not have to interfere with our battle. However, everyone, I will have to trouble you all with keeping others from disturbing us."

“Understood,” Those world spirits clasped their fists toward Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After clasping their fists at Chu Feng, those world spirits formed a defensive sphere around Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs, sealing them within.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

The very next moment, lightning started to flicker in Chu Feng’s eyes. His aura began to rapidly rise. In an instant, he went from rank nine Half Martial Emperor to rank two Martial Emperor.

“How could this be? How could you directly break through from Half Martial Emperor to Martial Emperor?”

“This is impossible! No matter how heaven-defying your methods might be, it’s still impossible for you to accomplish this. This is simply unreasonable!”

Seeing Chu Feng’s cultivation becoming that powerful in an instant, seeing how he had actually managed to break through from Half Martial Emperor to Martial Emperor, the expression of the Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief that was previously mocking Chu Feng instantly changed. It was not only him, the other three Clan Chiefs were also overwhelmed with shock.

To them, regardless of what sort of method one might have, it was impossible to directly break through from Half Martial Emperor to Martial Emperor.

“Unreasonable? The common sense that you know of involves only those things within the range of your comprehension. In this world, there are a lot of things that you cannot comprehend.”

“Actually, it’s not that they’re incomprehensible. Merely, you thought that just because you could not reach a certain height that others also cannot reach that height. That sort of mentality is utterly stupid and ridiculous,” Chu Feng shook his head with a

smile on his face.

“Why bother speaking superfluous words with him? Kill him immediately! After he’s dead, who will dare to make our Four Great Imperial Clans their enemy again?!”

At that moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had unleashed his attack. In terms of their hatred for Chu Feng, the one that hated Chu Feng the most among the Four Clans’ Clan Chiefs was none other than him. After all, Chu Feng had violently trampled upon his son many times. He had personally crushed the title of genius that his son had possessed.

Thus, not only did the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief immediately unleash a fatal attack at Chu Feng, he also used his Incomplete Imperial Armament to directly slash at Chu Feng’s body. He was planning to personally slice Chu Feng in two to alleviate the hatred in his heart.

Chapter 1868 – Killing Ximen

“Clank~~~”

Right at the moment when the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief’s attack was about to reach Chu Feng, Chu Feng lightly waved the Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand. As a ray of light flashed past, the Heavenly Immortal Sword soared into the sky and knocked the Ximen Imperial Clan Clan Chief’s Incomplete Imperial Armament to the side.

“Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique!!!”

Immediately, after that, Chu Feng unleashed the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique. A myriad of sword rays that carried a ferocious amount of righteous aura with them began to thrust at the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief nonstop.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief never expected that Chu Feng’s sword technique would be this overbearing. Being caught off guard, he was unable to react in time. Even though he had already put forth all of his energy to dodge and block Chu Feng’s sword rays, he was still grazed by the Heavenly Immortal Sword three times. At that moment, blood was flowing from three places on his body.

“How could this be?”

After seeing with their own eyes how Chu Feng had managed to injure the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief in a single bout, the other three Clan Chiefs started to frown. They were extremely shocked. Although the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief’s injuries were only minor cuts, it remained that he had been injured.

No matter what, he was a rank three Martial Emperor, whereas Chu Feng was a rank two Martial Emperor. As such, how could he have possibly been injured by Chu Feng?

“Clan Chief Ximen, how was it? Did you enjoy the taste of the Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique?” Chu Feng fiddled with the Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand while smiling at the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief. That gaze of his was filled with mockery.

Chu Feng had injured the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief using their Ximen Imperial Clan’s Heavenly Immortal Sword. To the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief, this was absolutely an enormous humiliation.

“I’ll slaughter you!” How could the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief possibly accept such a humiliation? He brandished his Incomplete Imperial Armament and began to slash it at Chu Feng once again. Over ten thousand crescent shaped golden slashes shot forward toward Chu Feng.

The golden slashes sliced through the sky and shattered the void. What the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief used was no longer an ordinary slash. Rather, he had unleashed a Taboo Martial skill.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At the same time, the Nangong Imperial Clan, Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs also unleashed their attacks. The three of them all used their powerful Taboo Martial Skills to launch fatal attacks at Chu Feng. As it was the perfect opportunity to kill Chu Feng, the four of them would definitely not let this slip by them.

The Four Great Clan Chiefs all unleashed Taboo Martial Skills simultaneously to attack Chu Feng. Their combined might was so powerful that it was simply heaven-defying. All of this was aimed at a single Chu Feng.

“Come, come, come... today, we shall settle this,” However, even when facing the four Clan Chiefs’ combined attacks, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest. With the Heavenly Immortal Sword in hand, he collided with the four Clan Chiefs.

As their weapons intersected with one another, sparks radiated all around, and energy ripples began to wreak havoc. It looked as if their weapons contained endless power.

“Quickly, look! Chu Feng is actually fighting against the Four Clan’s four Clan Chiefs by himself.”

“My god! It’s actually real! How could Chu Feng be that powerful? Is he still only a Half Martial Emperor? How did he instantly become a rank two Martial Emperor?”

“Too frightening! He is clearly only someone from the younger generation. Yet, he is able to fight against the Four Clan’s four Clan Chiefs. That Chu Feng is actually that powerful? He is simply even more powerful than he was rumored to be.”

The chaotic warfare came as a feast to the eyes for the crowd. However, the battle between Chu Feng and the four Clan Chiefs was extremely eye-catching. In fact, there were more people watching the battle between Chu Feng and the four Clan Chiefs than there were watching the battle between Zhang Ming and Ximen Baiyuan.

The reason for that was because everyone knew that the main character in this battle was Chu Feng. Furthermore, Chu Feng’s performance was truly too heaven-defying. No one had expected that Chu Feng would actually be capable of fighting against the Four Great Imperial Clan’s four Clan Chiefs.

One must know that the four of them were people with extraordinary fame and grand statuses in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Suddenly, the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief shouted, “Everyone, use the Golden Dragon Demon Slaying Formation!!!!”

Immediately after that, he took out a golden-bright and dazzling medicinal pellet from his Cosmos Sack and swallowed it.

Seeing that the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had swallowed

that medicinal pellet, the other three Clan Chiefs frowned. They revealed expressions of hesitation on their faces. However, soon... traces of determination flashed through their hesitant gazes. Like the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief, they also took out the same sort of golden-bright and dazzling medicinal pellet and swallowed them.

“Aoouu~~~”

Not long after they swallowed the golden pellets, their bodies actually started to emit bright and dazzling golden light. At the same time, dragon roars were sounding from within their bodies nonstop. Then, the four men stood in four opposite directions and surrounded Chu Feng between them.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, several dragon roars sounded like explosions. Then, dazzling light being emitted by the four Clan Chiefs began to flicker at the same time. Upon closer inspection, several golden dragons could be seen to have actually burst forth from within them.

Right after the golden dragons burst out from their bodies, they began to surround Chu Feng from all directions. In this sort of situation, there was no longer anywhere for Chu Feng to escape to. [Xima: welllll, except for up and down. Martial Emperors love to fly around when they fight.]

“Oh no!”

The might of the golden dragons swept across the sky. Practically all the people present were capable of sensing their enormous power. At that moment, Zhang Ming and the others all felt the situation to be bad. Their expressions changed enormously as worry filled their eyes.

The Golden Dragon Demon Slaying Formation was a very powerful technique of the Four Great Imperial Clans. Although it

was a formation, its power was comparable to that of a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, as the formation was being used by the four Clan Chiefs, they had managed to perfectly unleash the power of the Golden Dragon Demon Slaying Formation.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment of life and death peril, Chu Feng’s eyes suddenly emitted a strange red glow. Then, crimson gaseous flames began to flow out from Chu Feng’s body like a volcanic eruption. In merely an instant, it covered the golden dragons as well as the Four Great Imperial Clans’ four Clan Chiefs.

“Roaaarr~~~”

After the gaseous crimson flames appeared, the speed of those incomparably mighty dragons actually decreased enormously. At that moment, their speed was less than a ten thousandth of what they had possessed before. They were truly extremely slow.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Then, muffled explosions sounded in succession. The golden dragons actually exploded into pieces and turned into golden light.

“How could this be?” Seeing this scene, the expressions of the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs all changed enormously. They were deeply stunned.

They knew best how frightening their Golden Dragon Demon Slaying Formation was. It was a technique that they were incapable of using without taking a golden pellet. Yet, at that moment, such a powerful technique was actually broken by Chu Feng.

Furthermore, the crimson gaseous flames that covered them made them feel a sort of extremely fatal threat, and caused them to become extremely uneasy. It was as if they were standing before the sickle of the Grim Reaper and could be killed at any moment.

“Heavens! What is that?!”

At that moment, the bystanders were so frightened that their complexions had turned pale. The reason for that was because they, who were standing far away from the battlefield, were able to clearly see... that the crimson gaseous flames that covered Four Great Imperial Clan's Clan Chiefs was actually an enormous crimson head.

That head was extremely frightening. It did not resemble the head of a human, nor did it resemble the head of a monstrous beast. If one had to describe it, it resembled a blood-sucking devil that had a total disregard for life.

“Die!!!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng pointed his Heavenly Immortal Sword at the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief.

“What did you say?” The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief was confused, and revealed a blank expression.

“Boom~~~”

The very next moment, a loud explosion sounded. The Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief's body actually exploded. His body that was completely fine was actually disintegrated into pieces. He was completely dead.

“Chu Feng, he.... Actually grasped a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill?!!!”

At that moment, not to mention the others, even Zhang Ming was extremely shocked. He had never expected that Chu Feng, at his young age, would actually have grasped such a frightening technique. Chu Feng's technique most definitely had to be a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was an extremely powerful Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

Chapter 1869 – The First Person Since Ancient Times

“Chu Feng, I’ll dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!”

Suddenly, a roar that contained overwhelming anger sounded. The two Utmost Exalted Elders of the Ximen Imperial Clan were using their Emperor Dragon Seals to clear the way and charge toward Chu Feng.

The boundless killing intent they were emitting simply did not appear like that of two old men. Instead, they looked more like two murderous gods as they charged toward Chu Feng.

Seeing that scene, those world spirits that were protecting Chu Feng hurriedly moved to intercept the two Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders. However, at that moment, the two Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders were filled with exceptional bravery and power. Even the Fairy Spirit World’s world spirits were unable to contain the two of them, and could only put forth all of their strength to withstand their onslaught of attacks.

It could be seen that Chu Feng’s slaughter of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief [had triggered their wrath](#). Thus, at that moment, they disregarded their own lives and were determined to kill Chu Feng. In rage, their battle power had also greatly increased.

Right at the moment when the world spirits were putting forth all their strength to block the two Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders, another of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders appeared out of thin air.

When he stepped out of thin air, he was less than a thousand meters away from Chu Feng. He had already breached the layer of defense the world spirits had made. At that distance, he was completely capable of killing Chu Feng.

“I’ll have you die!!!” That Utmost Exalted Elder’s eyes were deep

red. His killing intent was boundless. His appearance simply appeared as if he wanted to eat Chu Feng alive.

“Boom~~~”

The moment he appeared, he swatted his powerful hand at Chu Feng.

His attack brought forth an enormous amount of martial power that crashed toward Chu Feng. With a might capable of toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, his martial power took the form of a golden magic cloud. Being attacked by his martial power, even Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation started to distort. In the end, it exploded and dispersed.

It was too frightening. After all, that Utmost Exalted Elder was a rank four Martial Emperor. Regardless of how heaven-defying Chu Feng might be, he was still unable to withstand even a casual attack from that Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. At that moment, Chu Feng felt the taste of death.

“It's not time for him to die yet.”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded. At the same time, the taste of death that had covered Chu Feng instantly disappeared. That Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder's attack had been blocked by someone.

Immediately afterward, an aged figure appeared and stood before that Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. The Compass Immortal; the person who had arrived was the Compass Immortal.

“Compass, it's you again!!!” At that moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder was incomparably furious. To see that it was the Compass Immortal who prevented him from killing Chu Feng, he began to gnash his teeth so angrily that creaking sounds could be heard.

“You wish to kill my disciple? You must first pass through me, his master,” The Compass Immortal said with a beaming smile.

“Very well, I’ll kill you first,” That Ximen Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder’s was already determined to kill. Without bothering with superfluous words, he immediately brandished his weapon and began to unleash attacks at the Compass Immortal.

As for the Compass Immortal, even though he was smiling, his eyes were also filled with boundless killing intent. His each and every attack was extremely ferocious and ruthless. He was like someone who hid daggers within his smiles.

“Come, let’s continue.”

At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze back to the Nangong Imperial Clan, Dongfang Imperial Clan and the Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs.

“.....”

However, even though they were faced with Chu Feng’s naked provocation, they, as three grand Clan Chiefs, actually did not dare to take up Chu Feng’s challenge. Instead, they hurriedly backed away from him.

After seeing with their own eyes how Chu Feng had killed the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief, they already knew very well that they were simply no match for Chu Feng. If they were to continue to fight him, they would likely also end up being killed.

That being said, when the bystanders saw the scene of the three Clan Chiefs cowering before Chu Feng, they all felt extremely complicated. Originally, they had thought that Chu Feng would definitely lose against the Four Great Imperial Clans’ four Clan Chiefs.

Yet, at that moment, Chu Feng had killed one of them, and the other three were so scared by Chu Feng that they were backing away from him repeatedly. This truly caused the crowd to become speechless.

“Humph, trash,” Chu Feng sneered. Then, with a flash of his

body, Chu Feng entered the void. He actually did not try to force the three Clan Chiefs into a corner, and instead turned to leave.

The three Clan Chiefs were all startled. They had been sharply sensing the space around them the entire time. Thus, they discovered that Chu Feng had not tried to attack them from the void. Instead, he was leaving.

They were confused as to why, when there was no one stopping Chu Feng at this moment, Chu Feng did not continue to attack and kill them, and instead turned to leave?

“Clank ~~~”

Not long after Chu Feng left, a cold ray flashed past the top of the city walls, the location where Baili Xuankong and the others from the Cyanwood Mountain were being hung. The metal chains that tied up Baili Xuankong and the others were all sliced apart by that cold ray.

The people from the Cyanwood Mountain who had been captured and hung on the city wall all landed to the ground and regained their freedom.

“Ancestor, I’ve startled you,” After that cold ray flashed past, Chu Feng appeared beside Baili Xuankong and the others.

“Damn it! He was actually creating a diversion!”

Seeing this scene, the three Clan Chiefs shouted in their hearts. Earlier, Chu Feng had left in the opposite direction from the city walls. This had led them to think that Chu Feng was trying to escape. However, never did they expect that Chu Feng had actually done that deliberately.

After Chu Feng left, he actually turned around and went to save Baili Xuankong and the others on the city wall.

At that moment, the three Clan Chiefs suddenly realized why Chu Feng had not seized the opportunity to kill them and had instead decided to leave.

The reason for that was because, to Chu Feng, saving Baili Xuankong and the others was much more important than the lives of the three of them.

“Damn it, Chu Feng actually broke through a loophole and rescued them.”

Seeing this scene, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders were all incomparably shocked.

After the defensive barrier had been broken through, the world spirits had immediately charged in. As such, they had not, had the opportunity to go and grab Baili Xuankong and the others as hostages.

However, at the same time, they had prevented the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the other experts from rescuing Baili Xuankong and the others. Thus, even though the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s two War Faction’s elders had charged toward the city wall immediately, they had been unable to save Baili Xuankong and the others.

Originally, they had thought this deadlock would continue. However, never did they expect that Chu Feng would break through a loophole and rescue the people that even rank four Martial Emperors failed to rescue.

“Beautifully done.”

Seeing that Chu Feng had saved Baili Xuankong and the others, the two War Faction’s elders started to rejoice.

“That boy actually became a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

At that moment, the Compass Immortal’s eyes were shining. The reason for that was because he had discovered that it was no coincidence that Chu Feng had managed to secretly approach Baili Xuankong and the others.

Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He had

relied on his world spirit techniques to conceal his aura. That was why he had managed to bypass the Four Great Imperial Clan's defenses without them detecting him to stealthily approach Baili Xuankong and the others.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng ignored the gazes from the crowd. With a wave of his sleeve, a golden spirit formation covered Baili Xuankong and the others.

Baili Xuankong and the others' cultivation had been restricted. Chu Feng was trying to use his world spirit techniques to undo the restriction on their cultivations and restore their power to them.

Suddenly, someone cried out in alarm. “Quickly, look, that's a Dragon Mark world spirit formation. That Chu Feng, he's... he's actually a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Heavens! That's actually real!” When the crowd looked carefully at Chu Feng's spirit formation, they discovered that there really were dragon-like veined patterns flowing through it.

A Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. At that moment, Chu Feng had revealed that... he was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

His revelation had roiled up a violent storm in the already restless hearts of the crowd. At that moment, the crowd's hearts were incapable of calming down.

To the vast majority of the people, there were only ten Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism. Each and every one of them were extraordinary existences in the Holy Land of Martialism, and were deemed to be Immortals. Else, how could the Ten Immortals have come to be?

It was precisely because there were so few Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists that... after Chu Feng killed the White-browed Immortal, there were people who had insulted him

because of that. They said that Chu Feng was vicious, merciless and abominable to have killed a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, looking at it now, the crowd felt extremely astonished. Suddenly, they felt that Chu Feng possessed the qualifications to kill the White-browed Immortal.

The reason for that was because there had never been a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist as young as Chu Feng since ancient times.

White-browed Immortal? How could he possibly compare to Chu Feng? Even if he was killed by Chu Feng, it was not a pity for the Holy Land of Martialism.

After their moment of shock, someone cried out in alarm, “The first person since ancient times, the first person since ancient times.”

“With how heaven-defying Chu Feng is, if he doesn’t become the overlord, who else will be qualified to become the overlord?” Overwhelmed, someone cried out.....

.....

In chinese, triggering someone’s wrath is known as touching the dragon’s forbidden scale. Dragons possess tough scales, however, if one touches their inverse scale, they will feel pain and, in turn, wrath. Chinese Emperors are known as dragons. Thus, to go against the emperor is known to be touching the dragon’s forbidden scale.

Chapter 1870 – Dragon Sword Breaking Through The Void

The crowd were all exclaiming in astonishment. However, Chu Feng was in no mood to bother with them.

The only thing on Chu Feng's mind was to quickly remove the bindings on Baili Xuankong and the others.

“Ancestor, your cultivation?” After a moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He discovered that it was no ordinary spirit formation that had bound Baili Xuankong and the others' cultivations. Rather, they were Dragon Mark spirit formations.

Furthermore, the spirit formations were extremely brilliant. It was impossible for even Chu Feng, who had mastered all sorts of profound world spirit techniques, to undo the spirit formations in a short period of time.

This meant that there was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist working for the Four Great Imperial Clans. Furthermore, this Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist was not someone to be looked down upon.

“The Four Great Imperial Clans were actually turned into such a state by a Chu Feng. You all are truly too useless.”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was having misgivings, several silhouettes suddenly descended from the distant horizon.

Those people were all wearing black cloaks and strange masks. They were people from the Dark Hall.

“Dark Hall. The Dark Hall is actually in cahoots with the Four Great Imperial Clans?” Upon seeing those people, Chu Feng grew tense.

Although there were only a bit more than a hundred people from the Dark Hall, they were all Martial Emperors, actual Martial

Emperors.

Furthermore, the person leading them was someone with half snow-white and half pitch-black hair. He appeared extremely strange.

Furthermore, his cultivation was unfathomable. Even Chu Feng was unable to see through his cultivation. However, with merely a single glance, Chu Feng felt extremely uneasy. He had sensed an enormous threat from that man.

“Dark Hall?!” At that moment, everyone was startled. Although it was the first time for many of the people to hear the name ‘Dark Hall,’ not a single person dared to act disrespectful toward them. After all, their auras were extremely strong.

Everyone realized that the Dark Hall was an extraordinary existence.

“You all finally showed up. Quickly, attack them and eliminate Chu Feng!” After seeing that the people from the Dark Hall had shown up, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders looked as if they had seen their savior. This was especially true for Ximen Baiyuan. At this moment, ecstasy filled his face.

“Are you trying to give me orders?” However, the man that led the group of experts from the Dark Hall cast his ice-cold gaze to Ximen Baiyuan and the others. A trace of killing intent flashed through his crimson eyes.

“You!!!”

Faced with that gaze, not to mention the others from the Four Great Imperial Clans, even Ximen Baiyuan turned pale. Even though he was very displeased, he did not dare to go against that man from the Dark Hall. From their manner, it could be seen that the Four Great Imperial Clans deeply feared the Dark Hall.

“Exactly who are you?” Chu Feng asked with a loud voice. The way he saw it, the Dark Hall was an extremely dangerous existence

that he absolutely could not look down upon.

“Great question. Who we are is not important. What is important is that you need to know that our Dark Hall shall become the future rulers of the Holy Land of Martialism,” That leading man said with a beaming smile.

Even though he said those words with a smile on his face, his tone was extremely vicious.

When his words were heard, not to mention Chu Feng and the others, even the bystanders started to tremble and felt as if a chill had run down their bodies. Practically everyone felt an ill premonition from his words.

A power that no one had ever heard of before actually spoke those sorts of words the moment they appeared, it would inevitably cause people to feel an ill premonition.

After all, the word ‘ruler’ was something that even the Three Palaces did not dare to say. Yet, the Dark hall actually dared to say those words?

“It’s a fine dream to become the future ruler,” Chu Feng curled his lips and smiled. His words contained a trace of ridicule.

“Haha, this is not a dream. Instead, it is the goal that will soon be attained. Chu Feng, I can see that you are a talent. I am able to spare your life on the condition that you join our Dark Hall. I am also able to help you eliminate the Four Great Imperial Clans,” That man from the Dark Hall said.

“What did you say?!” Hearing those words, the expressions of Ximen Baiyuan and the others from the Four Great Imperial Clans all changed enormously. Their expressions became so ugly that it was as if they had just been fed dog shit.

It was not only them, the bystanders were also extremely shocked. Originally, they all thought that the arrival of the Dark Hall meant reinforcements for the Four Great Imperial Clans. Yet,

such a dramatic thing actually happened?

The Dark Hall was willing to, for the sake of obtaining Chu Feng, eliminate the Four Great Imperial Clans?

“Haha.....”

Chu Feng laughed lightly at the Dark Hall’s invitation. As if he had seen through everything, he said, “What if I refuse?”

“Then, today, it will not only be you that shall die. All of your friends will die alongside you,” The man from the Dark Hall said. Once he said those words, ice-cold killing intent filled the region.

That killing intent was truly too frightening. It was absolutely ice-cold. In an instant, it turned the region around him into winter. A bone-chilling wind began to blow, and living things began to freeze. White frost covered the entire region. In fact, many of the crowd’s breath turned to ice.

Even though the martial cultivators possessed very strong bodies, they were shivering after being engulfed by that ice-cold killing intent.

Seeing that scene, even Chu Feng started to frown. In that moment, he had managed to sense his opponent’s aura. The leader of the Dark Hall’s experts possessed an aura above Ximen Baiyuan and Zhang Ming. He was a rank six Martial Emperor.

At that moment, the entire region was completely under his control. This was simply a slaughterhouse that he now ruled. As long as he willed it, anyone he wished to kill would be killed.

“Chu Feng, I’ll give you until the count of ten to consider. After I count to ten, if you still refuse, I will kill all of you,” That Dark Hall’s man said. Then, he extended his ten fingers and began to count, retrieving his fingers one by one.

He had done all of this extremely naturally and without the slightest bit of hesitation. From this, it could be seen that he was someone capable of doing what he said, an incomparably ruthless

individual.

“Chu Feng, accept it,” Eggy hurriedly urged Chu Feng to accept.

“The Dark Hall is not a good power. Furthermore, they tried to eliminate the World Spiritist Alliance. The Dark Hall and I are already enemies. As such, how could I lower myself to them? Furthermore... I do not trust them,” Chu Feng spoke what he truly felt. Even though the Dark Hall had sent him an invitation, Chu Feng felt that there was deceit in their actions. The reason for that was because he did not feel the slightest bit of sincerity in their invitation. Instead, he felt a great amount of danger.

“But if you do not accept it, you will definitely be killed. Not only you, but everyone related to you that is present here will also be killed,” Eggy said.

“Damn it!” At that moment, Chu Feng clenched his fists tightly. He was at a loss as to what to do.

Chu Feng was not worried about his reputation being ruined by becoming the Dark Hall’s subordinate. What he feared the most was that it was a trick for the Dark Hall to exploit him and gradually allow them to become an even greater disaster.

However, if he refused to submit to them, then it would be like Eggy said. Not only would he be killed, he would also have caused the deaths of all the people that were with him. That was something that he absolutely could not allow to happen.

After struggling within himself for a while, Chu Feng ended up clenching his teeth. He had come to the decision to accept the Dark Hall’s invitation.

He was able to allow himself to endure any sort of hardship, suffering and disgrace. However, he would absolutely not allow his companions to be killed because of him.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was about to voice

his acceptance of the invitation, a dragon's roar suddenly resonated through the entire region. As that dragon's roar resonated, an enormous golden-bright and dazzling sword appeared while hovering the sky.

That sword was extremely enormous. It was so huge that it hid the sky and covered the earth. As it flew toward the Ximen Imperial Clan's fortress, it bathed the entire region in its light, and actually managed to dispel the ice-cold killing intent of the man from the Dark Hall.

“That is?”

Chu Feng's expression took a huge change. He had discovered that not only was that sword enormous, there was also an enormous dragon carved onto it. That dragon was so vivid and lifelike that it appeared as if that dragon was the soul of that enormous sword. The irresistible and incomparably mighty dragon's roar was emitted by that dragon.

“Roar~~~”

After that enormous golden dragon sword streaked across the vast sky and broke the ice-cold killing intent that filled the region, it let out another dragon's roar. Then, it actually slashed toward that Dark Hall's leading expert.

“Haah!!!!”

In response, the Dark Hall's man clenched his right hand into a fist and shot a fist strike toward that enormous golden dragon sword.

With that strike, boundless martial power soared into the sky. Then, an enormous fist measuring a hundred meters in length appeared in the sky and collided with that enormous golden dragon sword.

“Rumble~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. The enormous golden dragon sword

trembled slightly. However, the enormous fist that the Dark Hall's leading expert had formed from his martial power was actually sliced apart by that sword.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

Not only was the enormous fist formed with martial power sliced apart, the Dark Hall's leading expert actually also began to move back several steps in midair before finally being able to steady himself. That grand rank six Martial Emperor was actually beaten back by someone!!!

At that moment, the Dark Hall's leading expert clenched his fist tightly. The killing intent in his eyes grew even stronger. As he looked to Chu Feng's direction, he ruthlessly said, “Nangong Longjian!!!”

Chapter 1871 – Absolute Expert

“Nangong Longjian?!!!” Hearing that name, the crowd were all startled. This was especially true of the people of the Nangong Imperial Clan. At that moment, they displayed extremely excited expressions. They had already managed to recognize that enormous golden dragon sword.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the enormous golden dragon sword that was floating in the sky started to shrink. In a flash, it became much smaller. Although it was small now, the might it was emitting did not decrease in the slightest. Then, it shot toward Chu Feng.

“Crap!”

Seeing this scene, Zhang Ming and the others were all alarmed. They shouted in their hearts. The reason for that was because that golden dragon sword was truly too frightening. When even they were incapable of withstanding it, if that sword were to strike at Chu Feng, even if Chu Feng possessed a hundred lives, he would still definitely be killed.

“Paa~~~”

However, right when that sword was about to strike Chu Feng, it suddenly shifted directions. Then, a palm appeared from the space in front of Chu Feng. That palm grabbed the golden dragon sword.

Immediately afterward, a man walked out from the void and stood before Chu Feng.

This man had a head of hair that reached his waist. His hair was pitch-black, it was as dark as ink. As it fluttered in the wind, he appeared to be extremely extraordinary, and gave off an incomparably domineering air.

Merely by looking at him, one could tell that he was an absolute expert. As for this man... he was Nangong Longjian.

“Nangong Longjian, it really is Nangong Longjian!”

“Then, that golden dragon sword is the legendary Heavenly Golden Dragon Sword?!”

Upon seeing Nangong Longjian, many people became extremely excited. Today, they had truly managed to broaden their horizons. They had managed to see so many grand experts. One must know that those that they saw today were all legends they were incapable of seeing even if they wanted to.

“This aura, Nangong Longjian, he actually reached a breakthrough and became a rank six Martial Emperor. Haha... today, Chu Feng is definitely going to be killed.”

At this moment, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan were overjoyed. The reason for that was because they only knew Nangong Longjian as a rank five Martial Emperor. However, the aura that Nangong Longjian was emitting right now was that of a rank six Martial Emperor. This meant that Nangong Longjian had reached a breakthrough.

Nangong Longjian had always been the pride of the Nangong Imperial Clan. The more powerful Nangong Longjian became, the more powerful their Nangong Imperial Clan would be. Now that Nangong Longjian had stepped onto the stage, who could possibly do anything to them? No matter how many experts Chu Feng invited over to help him, they would all be killed here. As such, how could the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan not feel joy?

Not to mention the Nangong Imperial Clan, the people from the other three Imperial Clans were also extremely excited. After all, they were all Imperial Clans, and were of the same root.

“Nangong Longjian, you actually dared to attack me. You are truly arrogant.”

“However, seeing that you are also a talent, I will not bicker with you about it. Come, join our Dark Hall,” The Dark Hall’s expert

said. Although he had possessed overflowing killing intent earlier, he had removed his killing intent right now. With a beaming smile on his face, he invited Nangong Longjian to join him. The change in his mood was astonishingly fast.

“Woosh~~~”

However, at that moment, Nangong Longjian suddenly pointed his Heavenly Dragon Golden Sword at the people from the Dark Hall.

Although he merely pointed his sword at them casually, it caused all of heaven and earth to immediately begin to tremble. Following that, another dragon roar sounded, and an enormous golden dragon’s image flew out from the Heavenly Golden Dragon Sword. With its mouth wide open, it arrived before the people of the Dark Hall. It was as if that golden dragon was going to devour them the very next moment.

“Leave or die!” Nangong Longjian said those words with a very cold tone.

“You...”

“Very well, Nangong Longjian, you have balls,” Hearing those words, the expression of the man from the Dark Hall changed. However, in the end, he led the experts from the Dark Hall, turned around and left.

“Longjian, you have come at the perfect time. Quickly, kill that Chu Feng and his accomplices! They have killed a lot of people from our Four Great Imperial Clans. Today, they must be killed!” Nangong Beidou said with a loud voice.

However, Nangong Longjian suddenly narrowed his sword brows and shouted at Nangong Beidou, “You, shut up!!”

“Longjian, you!!!” Being berated by Nangong Longjian in public, Nangong Beidou felt extremely humiliated. However, at that moment, he did not dare to say anything else. Merely, his

complexion turned ashen, and his expression became extremely ugly.

He had always disliked Nangong Longjian. However, Nangong Longjian's strength was truly too powerful. Right now, he had become so powerful that the continued existence of the Four Great Imperial Clans would have to rely on him. Even though he deeply disliked Nangong Longjian, he had no choice but to yield to him.

“I already know why the Four Great Imperial Clans are targeting Chu Feng. It's merely because you are all afraid of Chu Feng's power. In the end, it's the Four Great Imperial Clans that are in the wrong.”

“While it is true that there have been some casualties among the Four Clans today, this is the result of forcing Chu Feng into a corner repeatedly. This is the result that you have all brought upon yourselves.”

“Today, there are a lot of people present. As such, I shall be the intermediary. You all will reconcile,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Nangong Longjian, what nonsense are you spouting? Are you still a fucking member of our Four Great Imperial...?!” A Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder shouted angrily.

“Boom~~~”

However, before he could even finish saying his words, Nangong Longjian waved his sleeve. Then, that Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder was swatted from the sky and ruthlessly smashed into the ground. After crashing into the ground, his body became badly mutilated and he fainted on the spot.

“When I'm speaking, you are not to interrupt,” Nangong Longjian said with a cold voice. His gaze was ice-cold and without the slightest trace of emotion.

“You!!!” Seeing this scene, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were so enraged that their complexions turned ashen. They

clenched their fists tightly, but did not dare to say anything. The reason for that was because Nangong Longjian was truly too strong.

“What’s going on? Nangong Longjian is actually not killing Chu Feng, and is instead urging for peace? Furthermore, he attacked the Ximen Imperial Clan?” At this moment, the crowd were all confused by what had happened.

Not to mention the bystanders, even Zhang Ming, Duan Jidao and the others were confused as to why Nangong Longjian was helping Chu Feng.

At that moment, only Chu Feng had an idea as to why Nangong Longjian was helping him. When he saw the powerful black-haired man before him, Chu Feng recalled a single person: Bai Ruochen.

Unless it was because of Bai Ruochen, Chu Feng could not think of another reason why Nangong Longjian would help him.

“Today, I, Nangong Longjian, shall say it like this: those who agree to reconcile shall live. Those who refuse shall die.”

“Clank~~~”

After Nangong Longjian said those words, he suddenly raised the [Heavenly Golden Dragon Sword](#) in his hand high up into the air. The very next moment, that golden dragon’s image appeared once again. Merely, this time around, that dragon was even more enormous. As it coiled above the skies, it covered the entire region.

The might of the dragon bathed the land below it and enveloped everyone present. That vast dragon’s might caused the crowd to all feel extremely uneasy.

Although Nangong Longjian’s action was different from those of that Dark Hall’s expert, and did not possess overflowing killing intent, the crowd all knew very well that their lives were within Nangong Longjian’s grasp.

With a single thought, he could kill hundreds of millions of lives.

With a single sword, he could pierce through the vast heavenly dome.

This... was a rank six Martial Emperor. This... was Nangong Longjian. This... was a true absolute expert.

“Four Great Imperial Clans, are you all willing to reconcile?” Nangong Longjian asked.

“You!!!” The people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were all gnashing their teeth in rage. This was especially true for Ximen Baiyuan. At that moment, his complexion was both green and white and his expression was extremely ugly.

As for the people of the Nangong Imperial Clan, they were at a loss as to what to do. They truly did not expect that their own clansman would actually not help them after appearing, but would instead force them to reconcile.

However, upon thinking about it, this was also reasonable. Although Nangong Longjian was the Nangong Imperial Clan’s pride, he had never been someone who cared about their Nangong Imperial Clan’s honor and reputation. Else, the Nangong Imperial Clan would have already risen in power. How could they possibly still be standing on equal footing as the other three Imperial Clans?

I just noticed, Nangong Longjian’s name is... South Palace, Dragon Sword. I guess that’s why he has a dragon sword.

Chapter 1872 – An Unexpected Conclusion

At that moment, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said, "Brother Longjian, actually, it is not impossible for us to reconcile. Merely, it will all have to depend on whether little friend Chu Feng is willing to reconcile or not."

"Actually, it was also not the desire of our Dongfang Imperial Clan for things to reach this state. If little friend Chu Feng is willing to reconcile, I am willing to personally apologize to little friend Chu Feng."

When he said those words, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders had expressions of tacit approval. It was clear that they had already discussed this matter beforehand.

"What? They're really going to reconcile? Furthermore, he said that he'll even apologize?" The bystanders were all astonished by what the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Our Beitang Imperial Clan is of the same intention." In the next moment, the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief also voiced that they were willing to reconcile.

"Longjian already represents our Nangong Imperial Clan's intentions," An Utmost Exalted Elder from the Nangong Imperial Clan said. When he said those words, the other Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders and their Clan Chief Nangong Beidou all had expressions of tacit approval.

As matters stood, they had already realized how powerful Chu Feng was. Else, they would not be this determined to kill him.

The reason for that was because they knew that if they did not eliminate Chu Feng, they would be eliminated by Chu Feng in the future. However... if they were truly able to reconcile with him, if Chu Feng was really willing to reconcile with them, they were extremely willing to do so.

In fact, the Nangong Imperial Clan, Beitang Imperial Clan and Dongfang Imperial Clan already had the intention to make peace with Chu Feng. Merely, they felt that, with Chu Feng's personality, he would absolutely not reconcile with them. Furthermore, with the way they had treated Chu Feng before, it was simply unrealistic for them to suddenly try to reconcile with him.

In addition to that, the Ximen Imperial Clan was extremely insistent on killing Chu Feng. As such, none of them mentioned their idea of reconciling with Chu Feng.

Now that Nangong Longjian was urging for peace, they felt that it was a rare opportunity to reconcile with Chu Feng.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you heard what they said, no?" Nangong Longjian looked to Chu Feng.

"There have never been any grudges or grievances between the Four Great Imperial Clans and me to begin with. The entire time, it has always been the Four Great Imperial Clans that were insistent on killing me. Never have I ever wanted to kill them."

"If they are willing to reconcile with me, I am naturally also willing to reconcile... Merely, people's intentions are unpredictable. After all, they have chased after me with the intention to kill me for so long, I truly fear that they will go back on their word. While they might say that they will reconcile with me, I fear that they will instead thrust their blades into me from behind," Chu Feng smiled.

Chu Feng knew very well what the current situation was. To reconcile would naturally be the best. Furthermore, if Nangong Longjian hadn't shown up, it was very possible that all of them would have been killed by the Dark Hall. Thus, Nangong Longjian was equivalent to being someone who had saved their lives.

As a person from the Nangong Imperial Clan, Nangong Longjian had actually suppressed the Four Great Imperial Clans and forcibly

demanded that they make peace with Chu Feng. If Chu Feng were to refuse to make peace now, he would truly be one who was ignorant of the situation. Thus... he must give Nangong Longjian face.

Furthermore, if Chu Feng was really able to reconcile with the Four Great Imperial Clans, there would only be hundreds of benefits without any harm.

Firstly, Chu Feng still possessed a weak level of cultivation, and he was no match for the Four Great Imperial Clans by himself. Next, even if he was able to emerge in power, he would still not eliminate the Four Great Imperial Clans. At the very most, he would kill those who had tried to kill him.

Chu Feng was no longer the hot-blooded youth that he was previously. He was a lot more mature now. He knew that regardless of how enormous the hatred he bore might be, one should still not kill the innocent. Although the Four Great Imperial Clans were extremely vile, there were definitely good people among them.

For example, there were Nangong Ya, Nangong Baihe and Nangong Moli. They were all Chu Feng's friends. Regardless of how enormous the hatred between Chu Feng and their Nangong Imperial Clan might be, Chu Feng would not go and kill them. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly have the heart to exterminate his friends' clan and make them destitute and homeless?

Merely, Chu Feng did not trust the Four Great Imperial Clans. That was why he wanted Nangong Longjian to provide him with a guarantee.

“Regarding that, you can rest assured. If they dare to go back on their word, regardless of which clan they might be, I will exterminate them for you,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Ssss~~~” Hearing those words, the crowd all sucked in a mouthful of cold air. As someone from the Four Great Imperial

Clans, Nangong Longjian actually said such a thing. He was truly unconventional and different from the masses.

However, at that moment, other than the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans, no one else felt Nangong Longjian's behavior to be unfilial. Instead, they felt that he was a real man, capable of distinguishing right from wrong.

Furthermore, after hearing this much, the crowd was able to tell that the Four Great Imperial Clans were actually the only ones in the wrong. As for the crimes the Four Great Imperial Clans had accused Chu Feng of committing, and how they had accused Chu Feng of being an ingrate, it was evidently all fake.

"But, if I am to be killed, I'm afraid that... even you will not know which Imperial Clan killed me," Chu Feng said.

"If you are to be killed, I will investigate the matter. If it is truly related to the Four Great Imperial Clans, I will make the Four Great Imperial Clans accompany you in death," Nangong Longjian said.

"Since senior has already said it to such a degree, then Chu Feng is willing to reconcile. Merely... I wonder what the intention of the Ximen Imperial Clan might be?" After Chu Feng said those words, he turned his gaze to Ximen Baiyuan.

"Ximen Imperial Clan, do you wish to live or die?" After Nangong Longjian said those words, he pointed his Heavenly Dragon Golden Sword at Ximen Baiyuan.

"Roar~~~"

The enormous golden dragon that sealed off the heavens let its dragon's might descend and cover all of the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan. The more powerful one was, the more pressure they felt. Many Martial Emperor-level experts were incapable of resisting the dragon's might and started to kneel one after another. At that moment... of the Ximen Imperial Clan's Martial Emperors,

only Ximen Baiyuan still strenuously stood. Merely, even though he was barely standing, he was trembling nonstop.

In fact, it was not that Ximen Baiyuan had managed to withstand the dragon's might because he was powerful. Rather, Nangong Longjian felt that as Ximen Baiyuan was the strongest individual in the Ximen Imperial Clan, he should leave him some face. Else, if Nangong Longjian had wanted Ximen Baiyuan to kneel to him, he too would have had to kneel to him.

“Sigh~~~~”

“This is the will of the heavens.”

“Merely, it's a pity for my grandson Feixue. Originally, he possessed grand prospects. Yet, just like that, his future was ruined.”

Ximen Baiyuan closed his eyes. He faced the sky and sighed a long sigh. Two streams of hot tears rolled down from the corners of his aged eyes. From his words, one could tell that the reason why the Ximen Imperial Clan insisted on killing Chu Feng, the reason why they hated Chu Feng this enormously, was actually all because Chu Feng had ruined Ximen Feixue's reputation as a genius.

After that sigh, Ximen Baiyuan waved his hand at the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders. He said, “Forget about it, forget about it. Just reconcile. If we are to continue fighting, it will ultimately be detrimental to our Ximen Imperial Clan.”

Hearing those words, even though the Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders were extremely unwilling to reconcile with Chu Feng, they did not say anything.

However, while the upper echelons of the Ximen Imperial Clan were unwilling to reconcile, from the expressions of the Ximen Imperial Clan's clansmen, it could be seen that they were actually wishing to be able to reconcile with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's speed of growth was extremely frightening. His speed

of growth had caused them to tremble with fear. Over the course of these days when they had made an enemy out of Chu Feng, the name Chu Feng had been like a nightmare to them.

In fact, many of them had the same sort of nightmare. They dreamed that one day, Chu Feng would come and massacre their entire Ximen Imperial Clan by himself.

And now... as long as they were able to reconcile with Chu Feng, they would be able to break free from that nightmare.

“Very well. Today, I, Nangong Longjian, shall bear witness to this. The grudges and grievances between Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans shall be written off with one stroke. From today on, both parties will become friends.”

“If any party is to go against the agreement today, I, Nangong Longjian, will eliminate their entire clan,” Nangong Longjian raised his sword and shouted loudly. His words were like thunder. No one doubted what he said. The reason for that was because Nangong Longjian was definitely someone who would do what he said.

Chapter 1873 – The Curtain Drops

When Nangong Longjian's words left his mouth, Nangong Beidou, the Dongfang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief and the Beitang Imperial Clan's Clan Chief all looked to one another. Then, they walked through the air and arrived before Chu Feng.

They clasped their fists at Chu Feng and said, "Little friend Chu Feng, earlier, it was our clans that were in the wrong. We hope that little friend Chu Feng will forgive us."

While their courteousness was only for show, it remained that they had apologized to Chu Feng.

For them, with their statuses, to actually apologize to Chu Feng, it could be seen that they still deeply feared Chu Feng. In turn, this displayed how sincere they were in wanting to reconcile with Chu Feng.

"Don't mention the past anymore. I only hope that you three Clan Chiefs will no longer make things difficult for this Chu Feng, and will instead become friends with this Chu Feng," Chu Feng said with a light smile. His words contained hidden implications.

"Most definitely. From today onward, little friend Chu Feng will only be our friend and not our foe."

"Furthermore, little friend Chu Feng's friends are also our friends," The Three Clan Chiefs said in unison.

"I hope that you three Clan Chiefs are capable of doing what you all said," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Even though they had reconciled, Chu Feng still bore ill feelings against these people who had been so determined to kill him.

Faced with Chu Feng acting in such a manner, the three Clan Chiefs could only smile bitterly. After all, they knew that they were the ones in the wrong. Thus, they all pledged, "Little friend Chu Feng, there's no need to say anymore. You merely need to

watch how we act in the future.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng said via voice transmission, “Three Clan Chiefs, there is a matter that this Chu Feng wonders whether or not you all might be able to tell me about.”

“What might this matter be?” The three Clan Chiefs replied in unison through voice transmission.

“Exactly who is it that sold out our Cyanwood Mountain?” Chu Feng asked.

“Regarding that, we do not know. Only Ximen Baiyuan knows,” The three Clan Chiefs replied in the same sort of manner.

“Thank you,” Even though he had not managed to determine who the traitor was, Chu Feng still thanked them. The reason for that was because he had obtained helpful information from them.

After bearing witness to Chu Feng reconciling with the Four Great Imperial Clans, many of the people present revealed smiles. They had truly never expected for such a peak confrontation to conclude in such a manner.

However, as they were all humans, to be at peace with one another was the best. This ending was actually the one that the crowd longed for the most.

Seeing the people that were previously battling one another smiling at one another, seeing how their hatred for one another was erased by their smiles, not to mention the people involved in this battle, even the bystanders were feeling very joyous.

However... at this moment, the crowd from the Ximen Imperial Clan were feeling very upset. The Nangong Imperial Clan, Dongfang Imperial Clan and Beitang Imperial Clan’s Clan Chiefs had all gone to personally apologize to Chu Feng. Only their Ximen Imperial Clan did not do so. As for the reason why, it was because their Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had already been killed by Chu Feng.

“Ximen Imperial Clan, are you all not going to express your apology?” Right at this moment, Nangong Longjian spoke. Evidently, he was not planning to let the Ximen Imperial Clan leave like this. He had wanted the Ximen Imperial Clan to offer their apology to Chu Feng too.

In response, Ximen Baiyuan put his Imperial Armament away and walked over to Chu Feng. Although he had arrived before Chu Feng, he was only standing there. He did not make any courteous gestures, nor did he offer an apology. In fact, there was not even a trace of apology on his face. Evidently... he was still incapable of apologizing to Chu Feng.

“As this is already a thing of the past, I also do not wish to dig into this excessively. As long as senior Ximen is willing to answer two of my questions, I will not demand an apology from the Ximen Imperial Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“What are your questions? Ask away,” Hearing those words, Ximen Baiyuan’s expression improved greatly. Even though he deeply hated Chu Feng, Chu Feng had still given him a way out of this difficult situation.

“My first question is, exactly what is the origin of the Dark Hall? Please answer me honestly,” Chu Feng said.

“It was the Dark Hall that came to find us. They said that they would help us. The Imperial Armament used as the bounty for you was also provided by them. Merely, they did not hand the Imperial Armament to us, and we did not obtain any Imperial Armaments from them. It was merely a verbal promise between us. Looking at it now, they simply never planned to provide us with the Imperial Armament. They were merely deceiving us.”

“As for the origin of the Dark Hall, we also do not know. Every single time, it was them who contacted us. We were simply incapable of finding them. However, I am able to provide you with a clue,” Ximen Baiyuan said.

“What is that clue?” Chu Feng asked.

“The people from the Dark Hall wore masks. Thus, I do not know their identities. However, I do know the identity of a single person from the Dark Hall,” Ximen Baiyuan said with a low voice. Only Chu Feng was able to hear what he was saying.

“Who is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Hundred Transformations Clay Man,” Ximen Baiyuan said.

“So it’s actually him,” Chu Feng naturally remembered the Hundred Transformations Clay Man. Back on the Gong Ba Plains, it was precisely because that Hundred Transformations Clay Man had disguised himself as Chu Feng that Hong Qiang had ended up falling for the Four Great Imperial Clans’ trap.

“What is your second question?” Ximen Baiyuan took the initiative to ask. This time around, he was not speaking with a low voice. Instead, he asked with a voice that all the crowd could hear.

“Who is the person that sold out our Cyanwood Mountain?” Chu Feng asked.

“It seems that you also know that someone sold out your Cyanwood Mountain,” Ximen Baiyuan smiled.

“That is something that anyone could guess. Furthermore, I know that the person who sold our Cyanwood Mountain out is currently among the people here,” Chu Feng swept his eyes over the people from the Cyanwood Mountain behind him.

Even though these people had been held hostage the entire time, Chu Feng knew that the Cyanwood Mountain’s traitor was hidden within them.

“So what? I will never tell you who that person is. That person decided to submit to us and also helped us. As such, I am obligated to protect that person,” Ximen Baiyuan smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Chu Feng, even though we have reconciled, our Ximen Imperial Clan and you are destined to never be able to become

friends with one another. Thus, I will not invite you to stay here.”

“Even if you wanted me to stay, I would not be willing to stay,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he turned to Baili Xuankong and the others and said, “Lord Headmaster, let’s return home.”

Thus, the curtains dropped on the grudges between Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans. Chu Feng and the others all left.

The Nangong Imperial Clan, Dongfang Imperial Clan and Beitang Imperial Clan also left in succession.

After the great battle was over, only trash that was scattered all over the ground remained. The Ximen Imperial Clan was left heavily damaged with holes all over. In this battle, the one who had suffered the most was none other than the Ximen Imperial Clan.

Inside the Ximen Imperial Clan’s main palace.

The Ximen Imperial Clan’s main palace was originally splendid and majestic. However, due to the battle, it had become somewhat bleak with defeat.

However, at that moment, the Ximen Imperial Clan was in no mood to repair their city or the palace. After all, their Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief had been killed. Furthermore, not even an intact corpse had been left behind. As such, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were grieving.

“Great grandfather, you must avenge my father,” Ximen Feixue was kneeling on the ground. He was weeping bitter tears.

“Milord, we cannot let Chu Feng get away with this. We must avenge Lord Clan Chief,” Many of the Ximen Imperial Clan’s upper echelons were also kneeled on the ground.

“Avenge? How are you all going to avenge him? Are you all capable of defeating Chu Feng? Are you all capable of defeating Nangong Longjian?” Ximen Baiyuan asked with a loud voice.

Disappointment filled his tone.

“.....” At that moment, the crowd spoke no more. Indeed, they did not possess the ability to get revenge. They were incapable of even defeating Chu Feng. As such, there was no need to mention Nangong Longjian.

“A bunch of trash. If it wasn’t for you all insisting on making that Chu Feng your enemy, we would not have provoked all this trouble, and all those people from our Ximen Imperial Clan would not have been killed,” Ximen Baiyuan angrily berated them.

“Puu~~~”

Suddenly, Ximen Baiyuan vomited out a mouthful of blood. Then, he fell from the dragon throne. In merely an instant, his health became incomparably weak.

Chapter 1874 – You Are The Traitor

“Great grandfather!”

“Milord!!”

Seeing Ximen Baiyuan in such a state, Ximen Feixue and the various elders were all deeply frightened. They hurriedly stepped forward and supported Ximen Baiyuan. However, the closer they approached, the more worried they became.

At that moment, Ximen Baiyuan’s body was extremely weak. In fact, even his breathing had stopped, and his body had turned ice-cold. It was as if he had already died.

The only things keeping Ximen Baiyuan alive right now were his source energy, dantian and cultivation.

“I have nearly exhausted all of my vitality this time around. I will not be able to live for long. Likely, I will not survive past today,” Ximen Baiyuan said.

“No, this can’t be. Great grandfather, you won’t die,” Hearing those words, Ximen Feixue began to grieve with tears.

“Feixue, remember this. Do not avenge your father. You are unable to win against that Chu Feng. Our entire Ximen Imperial Clan is unable to win against that Chu Feng.”

“It is better to squash enmity rather than keeping it alive. That holds especially true for Chu Feng. It is best that you do not provoke him again,” Ximen Baiyuan’s voice became exceptionally weak. However, even at such a time, he was still earnestly advising Ximen Feixue. What he had told Ximen Feixue was what he really thought in his heart.

Although he had only met Chu Feng for the first time today, he was able to tell that Chu Feng was stronger than all of their Ximen Imperial Clan’s younger generation. Even his grandson Ximen Feixue was inferior to Chu Feng in all aspects. Although he hated

Chu Feng to the bones, he had unwittingly acknowledged Chu Feng.

“No, I must take revenge. I must definitely take revenge.”

“I can go and ask the Dark Hall for their assistance. Great grandfather, isn’t the Dark Hall our ally? I can ask them to kill Chu Feng for me,” Ximen Feixue said.

“Dark Hall? Haha...” Ximen Baiyuan smiled bitterly. Then, he said, “Feixue, remember this. You absolutely must not get involved with the Dark Hall. They are a bunch that is even more dangerous than Chu Feng.”

“They were only helping us before because they wanted something from us. Now that they’ve obtained what they wanted, they will definitely not help us again.”

“Furthermore, do not forget that if Chu Feng had agreed to the Dark Hall’s invitation today, the ones that would have been extinguished today would have been our Four Great Imperial Clans.”

“The Dark Hall is a group that will only want people that they can exploit. As for our Ximen Imperial Clan, we no longer possess any value for them to exploit.”

“Puuu~~~”

After saying those words, Ximen Baiyuan vomited out a mouthful of blood again. Then, his aura grew weaker and weaker. Even his gaze started to become blank and his body began to stiffen.

“Great grandfather, are you okay? Are you okay?” Ximen Feixue was so frightened that his complexion turned pale. As his father had died, Ximen Baiyuan was the last person that he could rely on.

“Remember, you ab, absolutely must, must, must not, not make Chu Feng, your enemy again...”

After saying those words, Ximen Baiyuan’s neck leaned to the

side, and his hands spread open. He had died.

“Great grandfather, don’t die, don’t die!!!”

At that moment, Ximen Feixue cried even louder. His cries were heart-tearing and lungs-splitting. He was overcome with grief.

He knew that if it wasn’t because of him, Ximen Baiyuan would not have forcibly left his closed-door training. If Ximen Baiyuan hadn’t forcibly left his closed-door training, his vitality would not have suffered enormous damage, and he would not have died this soon.

With the death of Ximen Baiyuan, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were all thrown into despair and grief. It was as if their final protector was gone.

“Do not cry anymore. The dead cannot be revived,” Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared in the palace hall.

Upon seeing that person, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were all startled. Even the Utmost Exalted Elders turned deeply pale.

The person that had appeared before them was that leader of the Dark Hall’s group of people, that rank six Martial Emperor that was driven back by Nangong Longjian today.

“Sir, why... why have you come?” An Utmost Exalted Elder asked with a trembling voice.

“I came to retrieve my possession,” That Dark Hall’s man said. As he spoke, he arrived before Ximen Baiyuan’s corpse and removed Ximen Baiyuan’s Cosmos Sack. Then, he took out Ximen Baiyuan’s Imperial Armament, that Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

Seeing this scene, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan were all extremely enraged. However, none of them dared to say anything.

“That is clearly my great grandfather’s possession, since when

did it become yours?” At that moment, it was Ximen Feixue who actually dared to question that man from the Dark Hall.

“Heh, it used to be his. However, it’s mine now,” That man put the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade away. As he spoke, he began to walk toward the exit.

“You are simply a bandit!” Ximen Feixue shouted.

“Bandit?” Hearing that word, that Dark Hall’s man suddenly stopped and turned around, “Little friend, you can’t be saying it like that. Else, the lives of the people from your Ximen Imperial Clan might be lost at any moment.”

“Hahaha...” After he finished saying those words, the man burst into a crazed laughter. As he laughed, he floated into the air and left the Ximen Imperial Clan.

At that moment, Ximen Feixue finally realized why Ximen Baiyuan had told him that the Dark Hall could not be trusted.

That said, even though that man from the Dark Hall did such a thing, the people from the Ximen Imperial Clan did not dare to make this matter public. The reason for that was because the words spoken by that man from the Dark Hall before he left were filled with threatening intentions. They, the Ximen Imperial Clan, truly feared having their clan exterminated by him.

After all, the Dark Hall was different from the Three Palaces. Although they were all very powerful existences, the Three Palaces would not try to exterminate the Four Clans.

However, the Dark Hall was a power that would use any means to obtain their goal. This caused the Ximen Imperial Clan to be extremely afraid of the Dark Hall.

Even though Ximen Baiyuan’s Imperial Armament was snatched from them, they could only endure the humiliation and anger.

.....

As for Chu Feng's group of people, after they left the Ximen Imperial Clan, Zhang Ming and Zhang Tianyi, the father and son pair, chose to leave. Then, as Duan Jidao was seriously injured, he was brought back to the World's Hidden Valley by Yin Gongfu, Jiang Wushang and the others.

At this moment, only the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts, the Compass Immortal, Nangong Longjian, Hong Qiang and the people from the Cyanwood Mountain remained.

At that moment, they were journeying while riding atop an enormous dragon formed by the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts' army.

During their journey, Chu Feng had been working on removing the bindings on Baili Xuankong and the others the entire time. With great effort, Chu Feng finally managed to remove the bindings and gave the people from the Cyanwood Mountain their cultivations back.

"Chu Feng, you have truly not disappointed me," Baili Xuankong looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with pride.

The current Chu Feng was capable of suppressing the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs by himself, and had even managed to kill the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief.

Chu Feng's strength had already surpassed his own. This meant that Baili Xuankong was not mistaken; he had not thought so highly of Chu Feng, not disregarded everything to nurture Chu Feng, in vain.

He had finally managed to receive reciprocations for all the things that he had done before. All that he had invested into Chu Feng had not gone to waste.

"Chu Feng, you are truly the pride of our Cyanwood Mountain," At that moment, the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Assembly Master, Yin Chengkong, walked over.

“Lord Assembly Master, while I do not know whether I am our Cyanwood Mountain’s pride or not, I do know that you are our Cyanwood Mountain’s disgrace,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? How could you speak to Lord Assembly Master like that?” Hearing those words, the expressions of Dugu Xingfeng and the others from the Cyanwood Mountain all changed.

Even though Chu Feng possessed heaven-defying strength, it remained that Yin Chengkong was their Cyanwood Sacred Assembly’s Assembly Master. He was the person with the greatest authority in the Cyanwood Mountain other than Baili Xuankong. His seniority and status greatly surpassed that of Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng should not speak to Yin Chengkong in such a manner.

“Chu Feng, what you said is very true. Indeed, you’ve scolded me correctly. As the Assembly Master of the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, I am truly ashamed to have failed to protect the Cyanwood Mountain,” Yin Chengkong was not angered. Instead, he started to blame himself.

“Haha...” However, to the pretentious Yin Chengkong, Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he said, “Go ahead, continue to pretend. I shall see how long you can continue pretending.”

“Chu Feng, exactly what are you saying? What’s going on?” Baili Xuankong asked. At that time, Dugu Xingfeng and the others also turned to Chu Feng with serious expressions on their faces. They were all able to tell that Chu Feng didn’t seem to be insulting Yin Chengkong without reason or cause, that there was some hidden implication behind Chu Feng’s words.

“Yin Chengkong, our Cyanwood Sacred Assembly’s Assembly Master, is the person who sold you all off, the traitor that caused you all to be captured by the Four Great Imperial Clans,” Chu Feng said.

Chapter 1875 – Fool

“Chu Feng, don’t you speak venomous slander of me,” Hearing those words, Yin Chengkong immediately denied it and appeared extremely angry.

However, Chu Feng ignored him completely. Instead, he looked to Baili Xuankong and asked, “Ancestor, if my guess is correct, it is Assembly Master Yin Chengkong who requested that you return to the Cyanwood Mountain, right?”

“Yin Chengkong, is what Chu Feng saying the truth?” At that moment, Baili Xuankong became enraged. What Chu Feng had said was correct. That Golden Flash Bird that was dispatched to him requesting his return to the Cyanwood Mountain was precisely sent by Yin Chengkong.

Yin Chengkong had said that he had an important matter that he needed Baili Xuankong for and requested Baili Xuankong’s return to the Cyanwood Mountain.

At that time, Baili Xuankong had thought that something major had really happened. After all, there was only one Golden Flash Bird, and he had told Yin Chengkong to only use the Golden Flash Bird to find him should something major happen to the Cyanwood Mountain.

Thus, after Baili Xuankong received the Golden Flash Bird, he immediately rushed back to the Cyanwood Mountain without even stopping to rest. However, upon his return, he discovered that nothing serious had happened, and that the situation in the Cyanwood Mountain was something that Yin Chengkong could take care of himself without the need for his return.

At that time, Baili Xuankong had been extremely angry. After all, for the sake of rushing back, he had abandoned Chu Feng. However, upon thinking about how Yin Chengkong was someone that he had nurtured, and was also the current Assembly Master of

the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, how he was someone who would take charge of the Cyanwood Mountain after his death, Baili Xuankong did not say too much about it.

Afterward, Ximen Baiyuan led the Ximen Imperial Clan's army to the Cyanwood Mountain and captured all of them.

Baili Xuankong had already known at that time that he had been sold out. Else, how could the Ximen Imperial Clan's army come to the Cyanwood Mountain and capture all the people related to Chu Feng?

At that time, the first person that he thought to be the traitor was Yin Chengkong. However, upon thinking further, he felt that Yin Chengkong was not someone who would do this sort of thing.

Furthermore, he didn't have any conclusive proof. As such, it was unsuitable for him to say anything about this matter. That was why he did not interrogate Yin Chengkong. After all, at that time, the thing that he was worried about the most was Chu Feng's safety.

After being saved by Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong had planned to investigate who the traitor was after returning to the Cyanwood Mountain. That being said, the person that he suspected the most was still Yin Chengkong.

And now, Chu Feng had actually declared Yin Chengkong to be the traitor. As such, he naturally could not elect to remain silent anymore.

"Lord Baili, please uphold justice for me. You know me very well. I grew up in the Cyanwood Mountain, and I was nurtured by you. I hold the Cyanwood Mountain in even higher importance than my own life. How could I possibly betray our Cyanwood Mountain?" Glistening tears were flickering in Yin Chengkong's aged eyes. He appeared to be extremely wronged.

"....." Hearing what Yin Chengkong said, Baili Xuankong

appeared to have grown soft hearted. After all, after all these years, Baili Xuankong possessed a very deep sentiment for Yin Chengkong. Furthermore, Yin Chengkong had also contributed enormously to their Cyanwood Mountain. Else, he would not have let Yin Chengkong become the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's Assembly Master.

However, even though he had grown soft hearted, Baili Xuankong did not answer Yin Chengkong. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, I know that you are not someone who accuses another without reason. Since you have accused Yin Chengkong of being the traitor, you must have your reasons. Tell me, what are they?"

"It is Ximen Baiyuan who told me that the person that betrayed our Cyanwood Mountain was Yin Chengkong," Chu Feng said.

"Impossible, Ximen Baiyuan clearly did not say anything. Everyone here can bear witness to that."

"Furthermore, even if he said that I was the traitor, he might be lying," Yin Chengkong tried his best to defend himself.

"Heh..." Chu Feng smiled with contempt. Then, he said, "Indeed, he didn't say anything. After all, if he were to publicly announce the traitor, it would make their Ximen Imperial Clan look extremely disloyal. In the future, who would be willing to cooperate with their Ximen Imperial Clan?"

"However, in order to express his Ximen Imperial Clan's sincerity in reconciling with me, he wrote a brief note to me. The name is on the note here," As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a note.

That note was not written on ordinary paper. Instead, it was a golden-bright and dazzling piece of golden paper with a dragon and phoenix drawn on it. It was the special paper that the Four Great Imperial Clans used.

On that piece of paper were [three vigorous characters](#), 'Yin

Chengkong.’

“It’s really you?” At that moment, Dugu Xingfeng and the others from the Cyanwood Mountain all looked to Yin Chengkong with extremely furious expressions.

Not only was that golden paper something that only the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans possessed, the handwriting on that paper was also clearly not written by someone ordinary. It was not that the handwriting was extremely beautiful. Rather, it was not beautiful at all. After all, as not many Martial Cultivators were proficient in [the four arts](#), their handwriting was generally quite ugly.

However, the characters on the golden paper contained extremely powerful strength. From a glance, one could tell that they were written by someone with a very high level of cultivation. Furthermore, Martial Cultivators were able to tell that the characters seemed to be written by a rank five Martial Emperor. As such, it was evident that what Chu Feng had said was true, that this was indeed a note given to him by Ximen Baiyuan.

“Lord Baili, please spare me. Lord Baili, please spare me,” At that moment, with concrete evidence before him, Yin Chengkong did not try to deny it anymore. With a ‘putt, he kneeled before Baili Xuankong and started to beg for forgiveness.

“It really was you,” Even though Baili Xuankong was already skeptical of Yin Chengkong, his body still started to shiver, his complexion became ashen, and his breathing hurried after Yin Chengkong actually admitted to it. The struggle within his heart was evident in his twisted expression. It could be seen that he was truly enraged.

“Lord Baili, please spare me, please spare me. I was muddled, I was muddled.”

“These are the rewards that Ximen Baiyuan gave me. They’re all here. However, there’s simply no Imperial Armament at all. That

Imperial Armament was a scam.”

“Lord Baili, they’re all yours. Please, please give me another chance,” Yin Chengkong was kowtowing nonstop while begging Baili Xuankong for forgiveness. Furthermore, he was ruthlessly slapping himself to manifest his determination to repent.

Baili Xuankong accepted the Cosmos Sack with all the rewards from Yin Chengkong. However, he then slapped Yin Chengkong ruthlessly. His slap was so ferocious that it deformed Yin Chengkong’s face.

“If I am to spare you, how am I to face the elders and disciples of our Cyanwood Mountain?” Baili Xuankong shouted angrily. He was truly enraged by Yin Chengkong.

“Lord Baili...” Yin Chengkong still wanted to continue begging for forgiveness. However, Baili Xuankong was already determined, and appeared extremely cold.

“I really know that I was wrong. I know that my death is deserved. Lord Baili, please kill me,” After calming down, Yin Chengkong knew that he would not be able to live. Thus, he closed his eyes and revealed an expression of waiting for the arrival of death.

However, before he was killed, he actually faced toward the sky and shouted, “Ximen Baiyuan, I never would’ve expected you to betray me in the end. You went back on your promise, you unfaithful traitor! Even if I am to become a ghost, I will still not let you get away with this!”

His voice resonated through the vast sky and slowly spread to the horizon. From this, Yin Chengkong’s unreconciled heart was clearly manifested.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng said, “Don’t randomly declare that. Although Ximen Baiyuan is not any sort of good man, you shouldn’t wrongly accuse him either. He never betrayed you.”

“Chu Feng, what did you say?” Hearing those words, Yin Chengkong abruptly opened his already closed eyes. With an extremely confused expression, he looked to Chu Feng. At the same time, the other people present were also looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of confused expression.

“I wrote this myself. Ximen Baiyuan did not betray you,” Chu Feng fiddled with the note and looked to Yin Chengkong with a beaming smile. He had a gaze of someone looking at a fool.

Yin, Cheng, Kong. 3 characters.

Four arts = zither, weiqi (Go, the japanese name), calligraphy and painting

Chapter 1876 – Guest Elders

“What?” Hearing those words, not to mention Yin Chengkong, even Baili Xuankong and the others were extremely shocked.

At that moment, Yin Chengkong was dumbstruck. His appearance was so ugly that it seemed like he had just been fed a hundred catties worth of canine excrement.

He never expected that he would’ve actually been tricked by Chu Feng. Chu Feng simply never had any definitive evidence, and was merely trying to frighten him.

Yet... he was actually frightened into exposing himself and admitted to everything. He had suffered a crushing defeat at Chu Feng’s hand.

“Chu Feng, you treacherous bastard, even if I am to die, I will make you accompany me in death!!!” In a violent rage, Yin Chengkong pounced at Chu Feng. He was trying to kill Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

However, before he could even approach Chu Feng, his body exploded. Only the Incomplete Imperial Armament that he had previously held in his hand remained and fell to the ground. As for Yin Chengkong, he was completely dead.

It was not Chu Feng who had killed him. Rather, it was Baili Xuankong who had killed him.

Originally, Baili Xuankong had been reluctant to kill Yin Chengkong. However, seeing that Yin Chengkong had actually attacked Chu Feng, Baili Xuankong was unable to tolerate him anymore.

“That traitor’s death is well deserved. Merely, Chu Feng, how did you know that it was him?” Baili Xuankong asked Chu Feng.

At that moment, it was not only the people from the Cyanwood

Mountain that were looking at Chu Feng, even Nangong Longjian, the Compass Immortal as well as the various King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were all looking at Chu Feng. They all wished to know how Chu Feng knew that Yin Chengkong was the traitor.

“I had been paying attention to the reactions from the seniors of our Cyanwood Mountain the entire time. From that, I came to determine that the traitor was most likely Yin Chengkong. That is why I forged that note, lied and gambled. Never would I have expected that my gamble was actually right on the spot,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Oh you boy, those words are said too effortlessly, no? A mere gamble? If it was only a mere gamble, how could you be this prepared? You already had that plan in mind the moment you publicly asked Ximen Baiyuan who the traitor was, right?” At that moment, the Compass Immortal who had been silent for a very long time spoke with a beaming smile. He began to think even more highly of Chu Feng now.

Chu Feng smiled slightly at what the Compass Immortal said. Although Chu Feng did not admit to it, the crowd were all able to tell from his behavior that what the Compass Immortal said was correct, that Chu Feng had planned this from the very beginning.

When thinking about how Chu Feng was actually able to think of such a stratagem at such a time, even Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian and the other experts all felt admiration for Chu Feng. At the very least, none of them had thought of the things Chu Feng had.

When even all these grand characters were acting like this, Jiang Furong, Bai Yunxiao and the others of the same younger generation as Chu Feng were feeling extremely complicated. Back then, they stood at places above Chu Feng. Yet now, the only ones who were qualified to talk to Chu Feng face to face were Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian, the King Monstrous Dragon Beast's Clan Chief and others of that status. As for them... they had

already lost the qualifications to speak.

This feeling of enormous disparity caused them to become aware of how frightening Chu Feng's speed of progress was. At the same time, it also allowed them to realize the disparity between them and Chu Feng.

Those who were Chu Feng's friends the entire time were relatively fine. However, the others, like Bai Yunxiao, who used to be Chu Feng's enemies were unable to help themselves from smiling bitterly in their hearts. They ridiculed the ignorance that they had back then.

"Chu Feng, take this," Baili Xuankong tossed the Cosmos Sack with the rewards for Chu Feng's capture to Chu Feng.

"Ancestor, you should keep this. Our Cyanwood Mountain must still be developed in the future. These are useful for that," Chu Feng did not accept the Cosmos Sack. While it was true that the cultivation resources in the Cosmos Sack would provide him some assistance, they were truly too insignificant to Chu Feng, and simply incapable of helping him obtain an increase in his cultivation.

However, those cultivation resources and treasures would be extremely significant to the others of the Cyanwood Mountain. There was truly a great amount of wealth in that Cosmos sack.

Rather than Chu Feng keeping them for himself, it was better that he let Baili Xuankong use them to further develop the Cyanwood Mountain. Chu Feng knew that, after today, the Cyanwood Mountain would enter a period of rapid development.

"Very well then," In the end, Baili Xuankong nodded.

"Senior Yaojiao Guang, may I trouble you all with bringing my Ancestor and the others back to the Cyanwood Mountain?" Chu Feng said. He was still very worried for Baili Xuankong and the others.

“Chu Feng, you’re not going to return with us?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“I wish to go and see my friend,” Chu Feng looked to Nangong Longjian as he said those words.

At that moment, Dugu Xingfeng and the many Cyanwood Mountain’s elders all felt a thump in their hearts.

At that moment, they recalled that it was not only Chu Feng, this heaven-defying disciple, who had appeared in the Cyanwood Mountain. There was actually another extraordinary disciple.

Although that disciple’s own strength was incomparable to Chu Feng’s, she possessed an extraordinary father. As for that disciple, she was Bai Ruochen.

Back then, when Bai Suyan had caused havoc throughout the Cyanwood Mountain and declared that Bai Ruochen’s father was Nangong Longjian, the people from the Cyanwood Mountain were all skeptical of it. In fact, the great majority of them had not believed it. However, now, they all believed it.

It turned out that Bai Ruochen was really Nangong Longjian’s daughter. When the elders of the Cyanwood Mountain recalled how, when Bai Ruochen was still training in the Cyanwood Mountain, they had failed to recognize Mount Tai, they felt extremely foolish.

“That’s good too. However, we do not need to trouble the King Monstrous Dragon Race to see us off. We are able to return by ourselves,” Baili Xuankong said.

“But Ancestor,” Chu Feng was still worried. After all, they had just encountered such a crisis. As such, Chu Feng was worried that the Cyanwood Mountain would encounter another great calamity.

“Chu Feng, what should happen will happen. The numerous people of our Cyanwood Mountain can’t possibly continue to be protected by you the entire time.”

“What is fortune is not a calamity. What is a calamity cannot be avoided. If we are unable to even endure these bits of trials and hardships, even if our Cyanwood Mountain were to be extinguished, it would not be a pity,” After Baili Xuankong finished saying those words, he planned to leave.

“Brother Baili, if you do not mind, our King Monstrous Dragon Race is willing to become allies with your Cyanwood Mountain,” Yaojiao Guang suddenly said.

“Truly?” Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong was immediately overjoyed. The King Monstrous Dragon Beasts were a race of monstrous beasts with strength on par with the Four Great Imperial Clans. For them to be willing to become allies with the Cyanwood Mountain was something that he had never dared to think about.

To speak of it unpleasantly, an alliance between the Cyanwood Mountain and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts would be the Cyanwood Mountain claiming connections with those of a higher status.

“If you’re willing, I will immediately announce this to the world after my return,” Yaojiao Guang said with a smile.

“Good, this old man is naturally willing,” Baili Xuankong was extremely emotional as he nodded his head repeatedly.

“Actually, this old man also has a presumptuous request,” At that moment, the Compass Immortal also spoke to Baili Xuankong.

“Immortal, please speak. As long as it’s something within the capabilities of this old man, I will definitely do my best to help you out,” Baili Xuankong said immediately. He did not dare to neglect this grand individual.

“I wish to become your Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elder. Might that be possible?” The Compass Immortal asked with a beaming smile.

“Heavens!!!” Hearing those words, not only Baili Xuankong and the others, even Chu Feng was shocked.

“Willing, of course we’re willing. It is our Cyanwood Mountain’s blessing to have Compass Immortal become our guest elder,” Overjoyed, Baili Xuankong nodded repeatedly.

“It’s decided then,” The Compass Immortal said with a smile.

“Haha, happy occasions truly come in double today,” Baili Xuankong and the others were grinning from ear to ear, unable to contain their happiness. To have the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts as their allies and the Compass Immortal as their guest elder, if this matter were to spread out, it would definitely be explosive news.

Furthermore, with the support of the grand power of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and the Compass Immortal, if anyone dared to think about doing anything to the Cyanwood Mountain, they would have to carefully consider the consequences.

However, while they were extremely happy, the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain all knew very well that, regardless of whether it was the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts or the Compass Immortal, they were only willing to become related with their Cyanwood Mountain because of Chu Feng. All of this was due to Chu Feng’s contribution.

Right at that moment, Nangong Longjian spoke. “I, Nangong Longjian, am unable to represent the Nangong Imperial Clan. However, I can represent myself. Since I am unable to enter an alliance, I shall request to do the same as the Compass Immortal and become a guest elder of the Cyanwood Mountain as well.”

Chapter 1877 – Purple Flames

Blackmountain

“Ah?!!!”

Baili Xuankong and the others were immediately stunned upon hearing what Nangong Longjian said. This was especially true for the disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain. They simply did not dare to believe what they had just heard, and suspected that they might have misheard it.

Nangong Longjian, this Holy Land of Martialism’s absolute expert, actually also wanted to be their Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elder?

“Could it be that you are not willing?” Nangong Longjian asked with a smile. He who generally never smiled actually started to joke around.

“Willing, we’re willing of course. Not to mention our Cyanwood Mountain, even the Three Palaces would be wild with joy should they be able to have you as their guest elder,” Baili Xuankong was truly extremely excited. He who was extremely experienced with the world was actually speaking with a trembling voice right now.

This was not because Baili Xuankong’s endurance was weak. Rather, it was because Nangong Longjian was simply too heavy of a matter. It was not only to him. Nangong Longjian possessed an extremely heavy weight about him to the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

“Since I’ve become the Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elder, I am now part of the Cyanwood Mountain. If anyone dares to make the Cyanwood Mountain their enemy, they will have made me, Nangong Longjian, their enemy too. Regardless of who they might be, I, Nangong Longjian, will not let them get away with it,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Your words are already sufficient,” Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong was extremely overjoyed. Originally, he was feeling very sad to have personally killed Yin Chengkong. However, after all these people decided to make relations with their Cyanwood Mountain, the happiness that he felt had drowned his sadness.

“With all these grand experts having already become the Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elders, senior Baili, might you be willing to accept me should I also be willing to become a guest elder of the Cyanwood Mountain?” Hong Qiang asked with a beaming smile.

“Brother Hong Qiang, what are you saying? If you are willing to become our Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elder, it will definitely be our Cyanwood Mountain’s fortune,” Baili Xuankong said. Not only was Hong Qiang a Martial Emperor, the various things that he had done for Chu Feng had already caused Baili Xuankong to have a deep respect for him.

“If you really do not mind, I will return to the Cyanwood Mountain together with you. I hope that I will be able to use my power to help the Cyanwood Mountain,” Hong Qiang said.

“Very well. Welcome, welcome. Hahaha,” Baili Xuankong, Dugu Xingfeng and the others were all overjoyed.

Although a single Yin Chengkong had died, they had, in exchange, obtained many powerful experts as allies. In the future, not to mention the Nine Powers, even the Four Great Imperial Clans would not dare to look down on the Cyanwood Mountain. From this day on, the title of the strongest among the Nine Powers was destined to be the Cyanwood Mountain’s.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt sour in his heart upon hearing Hong Qiang saying that he would return to the Cyanwood Mountain alongside Baili Xuankong.

Hong Qiang had accompanied Chu Feng closely to protect him. Now that he was unable to protect Chu Feng anymore and needed

Chu Feng's protection instead, he most likely felt that it would be useless for him to accompany Chu Feng, and that he would become Chu Feng's burden. Thus, he had decided to leave.

When Chu Feng was weak and small, he had insisted on protecting Chu Feng with his life. Now that Chu Feng had become powerful, he immediately decided to leave so that he would not drag Chu Feng down.

This... was what a true friend was. This... was the behavior of someone who was truly concerned for Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, guest elders, in that case, we shall take our leave," Baili Xuankong and Hong Qiang turned to leave.

The upper echelons of the Cyanwood Mountain like Dugu Xingfeng and the disciples like Jiang Furong also followed them.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly caught up to Jiang Furong and handed her a letter. He quietly said, "Senior sister Jiang, after you all have traveled far, please hand this letter to Ancestor."

"Okay," Jiang Furong nodded her head with a smile. She carefully put the letter Chu Feng handed her away.

Chu Feng stopped his footsteps and watched the figures of the people from the Cyanwood Mountain gradually disappearing into the distance. He was feeling very complicated.

When he had just arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism, not to mention the Cyanwood Mountain, even the Southern Cyanwood Forest was a huge monster to Chu Feng.

Yet, in a mere few years, Chu Feng had experienced a lot of things. The majority of them were related to the Cyanwood Mountain. The people that were extremely grand and powerful before were all surpassed by him. With the speed of his growth, Chu Feng had proved himself. Yet, he was feeling very depressed.

Chu Feng had to continue becoming stronger. This was a path that he had to take. However, as Chu Feng had decided to take this path, he was destined to gradually cast many of his friends, companions and benefactors far behind him. The path that he was taking was too difficult. For many of his companions, they were simply incapable of accompanying him.

Upon thinking of how the friends that he had shared trials and tribulations with were destined to be cast further and further behind by him in the future, Chu Feng felt very uncomfortable.

However, there was nothing that he could do about it. The path of a powerful expert was destined to be a lonely path.

After the people from the Cyanwood Mountain left, Yaojiao Guang led the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and left too. At that moment, only Chu Feng, Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal remained.

“Senior Nangong Longjian, what is it that you want me to stay for?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

It turned out that it was not Chu Feng that wanted to go and see Bai Ruochen. Rather, it was Nangong Longjian who had sent a voice transmission to him, telling him to stay. It was Nangong Longjian that had something he needed to tell Chu Feng.

At that moment, in addition to Chu Feng, the Compass Immortal also did not show any intention of leaving. Likely, Nangong Longjian had also sent him a voice transmission requesting that he stay.

“Two sirs, please follow me,” Nangong Longjian’s body shifted. Then, he began to travel at a very fast speed. At the same time, a gentle power covered Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal. That gentle power allowed the two of them to travel rapidly with Nangong Longjian. It turned out that Nangong Longjian was using his power to bring Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal with him.

.....

The Cyanwood Mountain's crowd.

Baili Xuankong was still leading everyone and traveling back to the Cyanwood Mountain when suddenly, Jiang Furong approached him. She half kneeled in mid-air and presented a sealed letter to Baili Xuankong with her hands. She said, "Ancestor, this is what Chu Feng wanted me to hand to you."

"Oh?" Hearing the name 'Chu Feng', everyone's gazes turned to the letter. They all wanted to know exactly what Chu Feng wanted to tell Baili Xuankong in the letter. However, they did not speak their mind.

Baili Xuankong was also very curious. Thus, he accepted the letter from Jiang Furong.

"Woosh~~~"

Right after the letter entered his hand, it started to shine with light and actually began to change. In a blink of an eye, the letter in Baili Xuankong's hand disappeared, and was replaced with a Cosmos Sack.

Baili Xuankong inspected the Cosmos Sack. Immediately, his brows frowned slightly. That Cosmos Sack was filled with treasures, and even contained many Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

"Oh, that Chu Feng. He refused to accept my gift, and instead gave me a gift," Baili Xuankong shook his head. However, the frown on his face had been replaced with a smile.

Chu Feng already possessed the Heavenly Immortal Sword. Thus, these Incomplete Imperial Armaments and other treasures were truly useless to him. However, to the Cyanwood Mountain, they were extremely useful. Thus, Baili Xuankong calmly accepted the contents of the Cosmos Sack.

"Milord, exactly what was that?" Dugu Xingfeng and the others

asked curiously.

“Look for yourselves,” As Baili Xuankong said that, he waved his sleeve. Then, several rays of light shot out from his hand. They were the treasures in the Cosmos Sack. It was a dazzling lineup.

“Heavens?!” As the crowd saw the various treasures that were floating before them, not to mention the disciples of the younger generation, even Dugu Xingfeng and the others were gasping in admiration repeatedly. They were so shocked that their mouths were agape. After all, the items that had appeared before them were all priceless treasures.

.....

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng, the Compass Immortal and Nangong Longjian arrived at a mountain range.

This mountain range was no ordinary mountain range. It was completely pitch black. Furthermore, there were purple gaseous flames soaring into the skies. Without even bothering to sense this place, one could tell with one's naked eyes that this was an extremely dangerous place. This place... simply resembled a ghost mountain.

“Purple Flames Blackmountain? This is a forbidden area,” The Compass Immortal said as he looked to the borderless and frightening-looking mountains before them.

“That might be so. But it will not stop Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Of course. Not to mention Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, this place will not be able to stop any Martial Emperor. Merely, other than possessing a frightening pressure, this place does not possess any treasure. Why did you bring us here?” The Compass Immortal asked curiously.

“What I needed is precisely the pressure of this place,” Nangong Longjian smiled slightly. Then, he leapt into the Purple Flames

Blackmountain.

Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal looked to one another. Then, they both leapt into the Purple Flames Blackmountain to follow Nangong Longjian. They wanted to know what Nangong Longjian's true intentions were.

Chapter 1878 – Meeting An Old Friend Again

Nangong Longjian led the way. He proceeded directly into the Purple Flames Blackmountain's deepest region.

Even though Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he was still able to sense an enormous pressure originating from deep underground. The further in they went, the stronger that pressure became.

Finally, Nangong Longjian stopped, descended to the ground and entered a cave.

Right after entering the cave, Chu Feng immediately smelled a special fragrance. Merely by this fragrance, Chu Feng was able to tell that someone was tempering their body with a special formation, herbal medicine and natural treasures.

Chu Feng hurriedly turned his gaze to the Compass Immortal. He discovered that the Compass Immortal was also looking at him. From his gaze, Chu Feng realized that the Compass Immortal had also noticed it.

“Senior Longjian, may I ask who it is that is tempering their body deep within the cave? Did you bring us here to bring us before that person?” Chu Feng asked.

“As expected of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Did you manage to deduce this merely by the smell of the medicinal herbs?” Nangong Longjian revealed an expression of admiration. If the Compass Immortal had determined this, he would not be surprised. However, Chu Feng, with his young age, was actually able to deduce this. This made him have no choice but to feel admiration for Chu Feng.

This meant that not only was Chu Feng a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist in name, he also possessed the ability of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“It is no wonder that Suyan and Ruochen were recommending you to me even though you were only a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist back then.”

“Looking at it now, they have not recommended the wrong person,” Nangong Longjian added.

“Could it be Ruochen?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes, it’s precisely my daughter, Bai Ruochen,” Nangong Longjian nodded. Then, he said, “Go on in. Ruochen will tell you all about it after you see her.”

Then, Nangong Longjian said to the Compass Immortal, “Compass Immortal, as for you... it’s better that I tell you about it personally.”

“Sure,” The Compass Immortal smiled and nodded.

Chu Feng directly entered the cave. After he reached the deepest region of the cave, he passed through a world spirit wall. Then, what appeared before him was a spirit formation and two beautiful women.

One was an alluring and sexy married woman. The other was an exceptional beauty akin to a snow lotus blooming in a land of ice.

The two of them were Bai Ruochen and her mother, Bai Suyan.

It appeared that the two of them already knew that Chu Feng was coming. Thus, Bai Ruochen had not entered the formation to temper her body. Instead, she was standing there fully clothed.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that Bai Ruochen’s cultivation had increased extremely quickly. She was already a rank three Half Martial Emperor now.

As for Bai Suyan, this woman who was previously so powerful that Chu Feng could not determine her cultivation, Chu Feng was now able to tell what her current cultivation was with a single glance.

Bai Suyan was a rank eight Half Martial Emperor. However, her cultivation of rank eight Half Martial Emperor was her current level of cultivation. Likely, when she was at the Cyanwood Mountain, she should have been a rank seven Half Martial Emperor.

That said, things were extremely different now. Not only had Chu Feng's cultivation surpassed Bai Suyan's, his true battle power was something that she could not possibly compare with.

“Chu Feng.”

Bai Ruochen was overjoyed to see Chu Feng. Her body leapt forward and arrived before Chu Feng. A sweet smile blossomed on her little ice-cold face. Bai Ruochen rarely ever smiled. However, when she did, it was extremely beautiful.

“Ruochen, senior Bai,” Chu Feng was also extremely happy. After all, he was meeting his old friend again. As such, how could he not be in joy?

“Back when we hurriedly separated from one another at the Alliance Domain, you were only a disciple chased out by the Cyanwood Mountain. Yet now, you have become a very influential person in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Tell me honestly. Were you really the one who released that frightening Asura Evil Spirit at the Nangong Imperial Clan?” Bai Suyan asked with a serious expression. Bai Ruochen was also looking to Chu Feng with a curious expression on her face.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Oh you. You've truly surpassed my imagination,” Bai Suyan began to inevitably recall the scene of Nangong Longjian fighting against that Asura Evil Spirit back then. Even though Nangong Longjian had managed to drive the Asura Evil Spirit away, he had been injured in the process.

“I, Bai Suyan, have not held many people in admiration

throughout my lifetime. However, boy, you have truly won me over and made me admire you wholeheartedly,” Bai Suyan exclaimed in admiration.

“Senior Bai, it seems that there are some hidden implications behind your words. By admiration, did you mean that positively or negatively?” Chu Feng said with a chuckle.

“You brat, of course it’s positive. Why would I belittle you?” Bai Suyan ruthlessly smacked her palm on Chu Feng’s head. However, Chu Feng continued to laugh foolishly.

While Bai Suyan’s palm strike might seem to be extremely powerful, it didn’t hurt Chu Feng in the slightest. This was not because Chu Feng possessed exceptional strength. Rather, it was because Bai Suyan was merely putting up an act, and did not put any strength into her strike at all.

“I was merely joking. I naturally know that senior Bai thinks only good of me. Else, how could senior Longjian go and save me?” Chu Feng said.

“He went to save you with his own objectives in mind,” Bai Suyan said.

“Objectives? What objectives?” Chu Feng asked. Actually, Chu Feng had already guessed it. Merely, he did not know what Nangong Longjian’s objective was.

“Ruochen, you go ahead and explain it to him,” Bai Suyan smiled slightly. Then, she began to walk toward the exit. However, at the moment when she was about to pass through the spirit formation, she suddenly turned around and said, “Don’t rush, the two of you can take your time to chat with one another. Having not seen one another for so long, there must be a lot of things you wish to tell one another.”

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, while chatting is one thing, you must not start pawing around. While I, the mother, might not

mind, you should be careful, or the father will beat you up.” After saying those words, the smile on Bai Suyan’s face grew even more enchanting. She truly looked fascinating and charming.

As her intoxicating laughter echoed in the cave, Bai Suyan left. At that moment, only Chu Feng and Bai Ruochen remained.

Suddenly, Chu Feng had an extremely serious expression on his face. He said to Bai Ruochen in a deadly earnest manner, “Ruochen, rest assured, I am not as your mother describes.”

“Pfff~~~”

Hearing Chu Feng say those words in such a manner, Bai Ruochen was unable to contain herself, and actually burst into laughter. Her two beautiful eyes narrowed into two crescent moons. With her melodious laughter, she was truly charming. After laughing for a long while, Bai Ruochen cast a glance at Chu Feng and said, “You’re still the same as before, not serious at all.”

Then, Bai Ruochen began to describe the whole situation to Chu Feng.

It turned out that Nangong Longjian was also a world spiritist. Merely, he was wholly focused on martial cultivation. Thus, although his world spirit techniques weren’t weak, they were greatly inferior to his martial cultivation. He was merely a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Furthermore, although Nangong Longjian possessed outstanding talent, he suffered from an incurable disease. According to Bai Ruochen, Nangong Longjian would not be able to live for more than three more years.

However, Nangong Longjian did not wish to waste his cultivation. Thus, during this period of time, he had been trying to use taboo techniques to pass his cultivation to Bai Ruochen.

Back then, Bai Ruochen and her mother had left this place in accordance to Nangong Longjian’s instructions. They had gone to

search for the materials needed for Nangong Longjian to pass his cultivation to Bai Ruochen.

Furthermore, before Bai Ruochen and her mother left, Nangong Longjian explicitly told them that, regardless of what sort of methods they used, they must obtain the item which he wanted them to find.

Afterward, Bai Suyan discovered that item in the Ascension Sect. However, as Nangong Longjian was in closed-door training, and she was suspicious of other people, she had pretended to marry the Ascension Sect's Sect Master and searched for an opportunity to take that item away. And in the end... she had indeed been able to take that item away.

However, even though they had gathered all of the necessary items, with the strength of Nangong Longjian himself, it was impossible for him to pass his power on to Bai Ruochen. He needed the help of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist had to be someone that he could trust. That was why he was seeking the help of Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal.

Of course, the main purpose that Nangong Longjian had when he went to the Ximen Imperial Clan this time around was to save Chu Feng. As for the reason why Nangong Longjian had gone to save Chu Feng, it was because Bai Ruochen and her mother Bai Suyan had requested that he do so.

That said, no one had ever anticipated that Chu Feng would be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist when he appeared in the Ximen Imperial Clan.

"Chu Feng, you've really become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?" After hearing Chu Feng's story, Bai Ruochen revealed an expression of disbelief.

"When have I ever deceived you?" Chu Feng opened his palm.

Then, a strand of Dragon Mark spirit power began to float out from his palm.

“This is truly great,” At that moment, Bai Ruochen was overjoyed. However, immediately after that, her expression changed. She grabbed onto Chu Feng’s hand and, with glistening tears in her eyes, said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, I beg of you, you must help me.”

“Something like passing on one’s power is truly not that simple. However, I will definitely give my all to help you,” Chu Feng said.

“No, that’s not what I’m talking about,” Bai Ruochen shook her head repeatedly.

“Then what is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not wish to obtain my father’s cultivation. I want him to always be by my side. Chu Feng, I beg of you, please cure my father’s illness,” Bai Ruochen begged.

Chapter 1879 – To Live Or Die Together

“Cure your father’s illness?” Chu Feng did not expect for Bai Ruochen to suddenly request that he do that.

“Chu Feng, I beg of you. Our family has finally managed to reunite with one another. I do not want to have only me and my mother remain,” When Bai Ruochen said those words, glistening teardrops covered her face, leaving her with a very pitiful appearance.

“Although I do not know what sort of incurable illness your father is afflicted with, I am willing to attempt to cure it with all of my strength,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and walked out of the cave, with Bai Ruochen following closely behind him.

At that moment, Nangong Longjian, the Compass Immortal and Bai Suyan were all outside. Judging from their appearances, Nangong Longjian should have already explained the situation to the Compass Immortal.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what do you think about the whole inheritance process?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“This sort of matter is the most difficult. Since ancient times, which expert has not wanted to pass on their cultivation to their descendants? However, very few among them were actually able to accomplish it. As far as I know, only Emperor Gong, Gong Wuming, Emperor Huang, Huangfu Shou, and the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King, have managed to barely accomplish this,” Chu Feng said.

“Oh? There were actually really people who accomplished this feat of passing on their power on to the later generation? It would seem that little friend Chu Feng possesses quite extensive knowledge. Come, tell us about it,” The Compass Immortal said curiously.

Nangong Longjian, Bai Suyan and Bai Ruochen also looked to Chu Feng with surprised expressions. None of them knew about the things regarding Emperor Gong, Emperor Huang and the Beast Emperor.

“As there are no outsiders here, I will not conceal these matters from you all. Merely, I hope that you all will keep these secret. The reason for that is because those three Overlord’s successors are all my friends,” Then, Chu Feng began to explain to the crowd.

“This is truly an extraordinary era. It turned out that it is not only Emperor Gong and Emperor Huang’s successors that have appeared, even the Beast Emperor’s successor has appeared.”

“Furthermore, they are not only successors in name. Rather, they actually obtained the power of the three Overlords. It is no wonder that Zhang Tianyi’s cultivation was able to advance by leaps and bounds this quickly,” After the Compass Immortal learned about the situation, he gasped with great admiration.

“Never would I have expected the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King, to be from the King Monstrous Dragon Race. Furthermore, the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s princess has actually obtained the Beast Emperor’s inheritance. It would appear that the King Monstrous Dragon Race is bound to emerge in power,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Most remarkably, the three successors are all related to Chu Feng. I think... little friend Chu Feng must have provided meritorious services for the three of them to obtain their inheritance smoothly, right?” Bai Suyan looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng laughed mischievously. Although he did not wish to admit to it, it was indeed related to him that his three friends were able to successfully obtain their inheritances.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I will have to trouble you and Compass Immortal to help me. As long as you’re capable of helping me pass

my cultivation on to Ruochen, I will agree to anything,” Nangong Longjian clasped his fist respectfully to Chu Feng. His gaze was filled with appeal.

For such a grand character to make a request of Chu Feng, someone of the younger generation, in such a manner, Chu Feng was able to tell that he really wanted to pass his cultivation on to Bai Ruochen.

“Senior Longjian, it is not that this Chu Feng does not wish to help you. Merely, this Chu Feng has only just become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, and is not very familiar with this power yet. It is truly too difficult for me to do such a thing.”

“Furthermore, even for Emperor Huang, Emperor Gong and the Beast Emperor, while they were able to successfully pass their power on to the later generations, they were unable to allow their later generations to reach the heights that they had back then instantly. Their successors still needed to slowly train.”

“In other words, while they indeed managed to pass on their power, they did not manage to do so with absolute success. They merely managed to pass on a portion of their strength to the later generations.”

“Moreover, they were all an era’s overlords. Their world spirit techniques were all incomparable during the era in which they lived. When even they were only able to accomplish that much, if you want me to help, truth be told, it will really be extremely difficult to accomplish.”

Chu Feng shook his head. He was speaking the truth. Passing on one’s power was truly too difficult. Even though he was proficient in many of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram’s lost spirit formation techniques, he still only possessed a thirty percent certainty in successfully passing on Nangong Longjian’s cultivation.

“What little friend Chu Feng said is reasonable. Nangong Longjian, it is not that this old man does not wish to help you, it is

just that something like passing on one's power is truly too difficult. Not to mention finding little friend Chu Feng and I to help you with it, even if you were to gather all of the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism, this might still not be possible to accomplish.”

“Thus, this old man is truly powerless to help you,” The Compass Immortal also shook his head.

“Little friend Chu Feng, Compass Immortal, please, no matter what, please help me. As long as you do not cause harm to my daughter, I am willing to do anything,” Saying those words, Nangong Longjian knelt on the ground with a ‘putt.’

“Senior, what are you doing?!!!” Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously upon seeing this scene.

“Quickly, get back up. We cannot accept this,” Even the Compass Immortal was incomparably shocked. He hurriedly stepped forth to lend Nangong Longjian an arm.

What sort of person was Nangong Longjian? He was someone that would not kneel to either the heavens or the earth. Yet, for the sake of his daughter, he was actually kneeling to them.

“Father, please don’t do this. Your daughter does not wish for your power. I merely want you to continue living,” At that moment, Bai Ruochen was crying. Being shown such paternal love, how could she not cry?

However, regardless of how hard Bai Ruochen, Bai Suyan, Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal tried to help Nangong Longjian back up, they were unable to stop him from kneeling.

“Senior, please get up. I have a method that might be able to solve both issues,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, is what you said the truth?” Nangong Longjian asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded his head repeatedly.

Hearing those words, Nangong Longjian hurriedly stood back up and asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, what is the method that you spoke of?”

“I know that senior wholeheartedly wishes to pass his power on to Ruochen because you wish to use your power to protect Ruochen and her mother.”

“However, if senior is able to be cured, senior will be able to protect them himself. As such, there will be no need for you to pass your power on to Ruochen, no?” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...” Hearing those words, Nangong Longjian laughed an extremely helpless laugh.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I know my own body the best. This illness of mine is something that no one can treat. Even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was unable to cure me of it,” Nangong Longjian said.

“If we do not attempt it, how will we know?” Chu Feng asked.

“What little friend Chu Feng said is correct. Although the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s world spirit techniques are exceptional, he specializes in weaponry refinement techniques. However, this untalented old man has studied various kinds of innate diseases and incurable illnesses before. If you do not mind, allow this old man to give it a try,” The Compass Immortal said.

“This...” Nangong Longjian frowned slightly. He seemed to have hidden troubles.

“Senior, is something wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“This illness of mine is simply incapable of being detected normally because it is hidden within my dantian and mixed with my source energy. I must completely activate it with my own power in order for others to discover it.”

“However, should I activate it, I will be tormented by the illness. While the pain might not be much, I am unable to return to

normal temporarily should my illness act up. I fear... that I do not have the time,” Nangong Longjian spoke of his difficulties.

“Father, if you are to die, your daughter will not live anymore either,” Bai Ruochen kneeled before Nangong Longjian. Not only was she covered with tears, she had an extremely determined expression on her face.

“Ruochen, you...” Seeing Bai Ruochen acting in such a manner, Nangong Longjian felt extremely pained. Thus, he took a glance at Bai Suyan. He wanted her to help him advise Bai Ruochen against it.

“Longjian, I am the same as Ruochen. If we cannot enjoy life together, we shall reunite with one another in death,” Bai Suyan smiled lightly with an expression of having seen through life and death.

Chapter 1880 – Incurable Disease

‘You all...’

“Forget about it,” Nangong Longjian sighed grudgingly. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and the Compass Immortal, “I shall trouble the two of you then.”

After Nangong Longjian finished saying those words, he sat down in a cross-legged position. Soon, a stream of black gaseous substance began to emit from his dantian. Like vines, the black gaseous substance rapidly spread through his entire body, covering it.

At the same time, Nangong Longjian’s expression became increasingly ugly. In the end, the portion of his skin that had not been covered by the black gaseous substance had all turned paper pale like the skin of the dead.

“Black Vines Soul Refining Body?!” Seeing Nangong Longjian’s current appearance, the Compass Immortal’s expression took a huge change.

“Black Vines Soul Refining Body? What is that?” Bai Ruochen asked.

“The Black Vines Soul Refining Body is a sort of innate disease. While it is capable of tempering the person who is afflicted with it, allowing them to become stronger than ordinary people, it will also snatch away that person’s soul, causing him or her to die an untimely death.”

“The Black Vines Soul Refining Body is something that one is born with. It is hidden within one’s dantian and mixed with one’s source energy. Even if one were to separate from one’s flesh and turn into a free consciousness, they would still not be able to break free from the Black Vines Soul Refining Body. The only way to break free from it is through death,” The Compass Immortal said.

“In that case, is this sickness curable?” Bai Ruochen and Bai Suyan asked together.

“It’s very difficult. It can be retarded, but not eradicated. Furthermore, judging by Nangong Longjian’s appearance, he should be at the terminal stage of the Black Vines Soul Refining Body. I’m afraid... we will not even be able to slow it down,” The Compass Immortal shook his head repeatedly. When he discovered that Nangong Longjian’s illness was the Black Vines Soul Refining Body, he knew right away that he was powerless to help.

“Compass Immortal, please save my father, please save my father,” Bai Ruochen knelt to the Compass Immortal and began to plead with him. Her body was trembling in pain. The words of the Compass Immortal were equivalent to destroying her last bit of hope. She truly did not wish for her father to die.

“Young lady, please get up. It is not that I do not want to save him, it’s just that I am truly powerless,” The Compass Immortal had an expression of helplessness.

At this moment, Nangong Longjian said with his weak voice, “Ruochen, do not make things difficult for the Compass Immortal. This illness of mine is incurable.” Even though he was saying those words, Chu Feng could tell that he still held hope within his words. In the end, he wished that he could continue living.

This was not because Nangong Longjian was a coward that feared death. From his previous actions, it could be seen that he was not someone who sought fame or riches. Even in death, he wanted to pass his cultivation on to his daughter.

Thus, from this, it could be seen determined that the reason why he didn’t want to die was none other than the love he possessed for family. By family, this did not mean the Nangong Imperial Clan. Instead, it was Bai Ruochen and her mother.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, “Senior Compass, I know of a method that might be able to treat senior Longjian’s illness,”

“Are you serious?”

.....

.....

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Compass Immortal, Nangong Longjian, Bai Suyan and Bai Ruochen all looked to him.

Although the four of them all asked different questions, they all expressed joy in their eyes. They knew that Chu Feng was not someone who would joke around at a time like this, nor was he someone that would make boastful claims.

“I do not know about the Black Vines Soul Refining Body. However, I know of a spirit formation that specializes in curing innate diseases. It might be effective on the Black Vines Soul Refining Body,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, whatever method it might be, do tell,” Compared to Nangong Longjian and the others, the Compass Immortal was even more interested. He had thought that Nangong Longjian’s illness was incurable. Thus, he was extremely curious as to exactly what the method that Chu Feng spoke of was.

“Senior Compass, I have never set up this formation before. Thus, I also do not possess a hundred percent certainty.”

“As senior Compass is very familiar with the Black Vines Soul Refining Body, I wish to have senior Compass take a look at whether or not the spirit formation might be feasible.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to write with his finger in midair. He was forming a diagram with spirit power.

The diagram was glistening with golden light and very dazzling. This was the diagram of the method to set up the spirit formation.

Chu Feng had outlined the entire process, as well as all of the materials needed for the spirit formation.

Merely, for a single diagram, Chu Feng took two entire hours just

outlining it. From this, it could be seen how complicated that spirit formation was.

After Chu Feng finished outlining the diagram, not to mention Bai Suyan and Bai Ruochen, even Nangong Longjian, a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, was flabbergasted by it.

This diagram was too complicated. Even he was unable to make any sense of it. However, he was able to tell that it had not been casually or randomly drawn. Instead, it really was the outline of a spirit formation, a very powerful spirit formation.

When he saw the diagram, Nangong Longjian suddenly felt his blood rushing. Even the pain that he was feeling right now had been alleviated greatly. He had seen hope. From Chu Feng's spirit formation diagram, he saw hope to be able to continue living.

At that moment, the Compass Immortal had an extremely serious expression on his face. His eyes were moving about through the diagram nonstop. He continued to survey it for six entire hours before finally stopping. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and spoke with a resounding and extremely emotional manner.

“Amazing! That is simply too amazing! Little friend Chu Feng, exactly where did you obtain such an amazing spirit formation?” The Compass Immortal asked with astonishment.

“This formation was acquired from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram,” Chu Feng said.

“Nine Spirits Divine Diagram?” The Compass Immortal was startled to hear those words. Then, he turned his gaze of disbelief to Chu Feng, “You’ve managed to grasp the contents of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram?”

Truth be told, Chu Feng felt somewhat uneasy being looked at with such a gaze by the Compass Immortal. However, in the end, he still nodded.

“Were you able to grasp it fully?” The Compass Immortal asked

again. His gaze became even more stern.

It was not only the Compass Immortal; even Nangong Longjian was looking at Chu Feng with an astonished expression. Evidently, he also knew of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded again.

At that moment, the Compass Immortal grew silent. Even Nangong Longjian grew silent. It was only after a long while that the two of them managed to calm themselves. They looked to Chu Feng again with extremely marvelous expressions in their gazes.

“No wonder, no wonder!!!”

“Truly, no wonder!!!” The Compass Immortal became extremely excited, and began to exclaim in admiration as he looked at Chu Feng. He said, “Chu Feng, you are truly no ordinary person. That Nine Spirits Divine Diagram has been in existence for so long, and ended up in the hands of countless people. While it was true that many of them managed to obtain great harvests from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram, there has never been anyone who managed to completely grasp the contents of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.”

“Did you know that even the creator of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram, the Nine Spirits God, was unable to completely grasp the contents of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram? That was why he made the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram before his death in the hopes that later generations would be able to completely grasp those lost spirit formations.”

“However, even after all these years have passed, even after the later generations tried all sorts of methods, none of them managed to grasp all of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram’s contents.”

“There was even someone who killed the nine Evil Spirits of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram out of anger with the intention of destroying the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram. However, not long

afterward, the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram reappeared in the world. Not only was the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram not destroyed, even the nine Evil Spirits that were killed were revived by the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.”

“The Nine Spirits Divine Diagram is actually indestructible!!!”

“The Nine Spirits Divine Diagram greatly surpassed what people expected it to be. Later on, a grand world spiritist declared that the Nine Spirits God had used all that he knew to create the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram before his death. That he had already greatly alleviated the difficulty of the spirit formations within the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.”

“However, if one wished to obtain the spirit formations within the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram, one must fuse together with the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram. As for that, it required an extremely powerful physique. It was something that no ordinary person could do.”

“Never would I have expected that you’ve actually managed to accomplish it,” The Compass Immortal looked to Chu Feng with a shocked expression. His gaze simply did not appear like the gaze of someone looking at another person. Rather, it was more like the gaze of someone looking at a god.

Chu Feng had accomplished something that was impossible for ordinary people. In the Compass Immortal’s heart, Chu Feng was already akin to a god.

“Wow, Chu Feng, it turns out that it was not all because of that Emperor Gong’s successor’s strand of aura that you managed to obtain the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram’s power.”

“Instead, it was because you possessed a special body capable of withstanding the power of the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram. That was why you managed to grasp those spirit formations,” Hearing what the Compass Immortal said, Eggy cried out in alarm.

Chu Feng was also extremely shocked. Like Eggy, he had thought that had only managed to obtain the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram because of the assistance of Emperor Gong's successor's strand of aura. It was only after hearing what the Compass Immortal said that he came to a sudden realization.

He now finally understood the true meaning behind what that Emperor Gong's successor's strand of aura had said to him, 'your body is truly different from those of ordinary people.'

"Compass Immortal, in that case, do you think this spirit formation will be able to cure senior Longjian's illness?" Chu Feng asked.

At that moment, Nangong Longjian, Bai Suyan and Bai Ruochen all looked to the Compass Immortal with extremely nervous expressions.

The Compass Immortal smiled lightly. Then, he said, "Before this, I was indeed powerless to cure Nangong Longjian's illness."

"However, after obtaining this formation, I've managed to see a trace of hope."

"Perhaps we might be able to treat this illness after all."

Chapter 1881 – Elf Kingdom

“Compass Immortal, is what you said for real? Can my father really be saved?”

“Thank you, thank you. Truly, thank you very much. I...” Hearing those words, Bai Ruochen was so emotional that her speech became incoherent.

Even Bai Suyan was shedding tears again. Although she was crying, she had a joyous smile on her face.

“Don’t thank me. If you wish to thank someone, then you should be thanking little friend Chu Feng, for this spirit formation was provided by little friend Chu Feng.”

“Furthermore, I have only understood the method of setting up the formation, and have yet to completely grasp it. I’m afraid that I will have to depend on little friend Chu Feng to set it up,” The Compass Immortal said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng,” Bai Ruochen looked to Chu Feng. However, she was at a loss as to what to say. That said, her glistening eyes were filled with gratefulness toward Chu Feng.

“Senior Compass, although I possess some materials here, they are greatly insufficient. I hope that senior will be able to help me with it.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out all the required materials for the spirit formation which he possessed. All of the materials that he took out were rare treasures that he had obtained from the White-browed Immortal after killing him.

In fact, it could be said that the White-browed Immortal’s Cosmos Sack contained all the materials needed for setting up spirit formations that one could possibly imagine.

However, a lot of materials were still lacking for setting up this formation.

“This spirit formation is very complicated. The materials which it requires are even more complicated. While this old man does not dare to guarantee that he will have all of the materials, I can gather what I have with little friend Chu Feng.”

As that spirit formation truly required a lot of materials, the Compass Immortal did not dare to guarantee that he would have all the materials in his Cosmos Sack. Thus, he could only search for the materials in his Cosmos Sack one by one.

The amount of treasures that the Compass Immortal possessed was truly more numerous than that of the White-browed Immortal. While Chu Feng was only able to provide a third of the required materials, the Compass Immortal was able to provide the other two-thirds.

However, even with this being the case, they still lacked one last component.

“What miserable luck. Of all the things, we’d have to lack the one thing that is the hardest to obtain,” The Compass Immortal smiled a wry smile.

“Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, what is that? Is it very hard to obtain?” Bai Ruochen asked.

“Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower is not hard to find. Merely, it’s very hard to obtain. The reason for that is because there is only one place in the entire Holy Land of Martialism that possesses the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower. As for that place, it is the Elf Kingdom,” The Compass Immortal said.

“Elf Kingdom,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng, Bai Ruochen and the others were all startled.

“That’s right, it is located in the territory of the Holy Land of Martialism’s strongest power.”

“As the fully deserving overlord of the Holy Land of Martialism, although they do not go around bullying humans and monstrous

beasts, being arrogant is their characteristic. In their world, even the people of their own race are separated into many different tiers.”

“The Ancient Era’s Elves that are able to live in the Elf Kingdom are those who possess the purest bloodlines and the most outstanding talent.”

“Reportedly, if an Ancient Era’s Elf’s talent is determined to be insufficient, they can be kicked out of the Elf Kingdom at any time and be allocated to live in other territories.”

“Thus, the Elf Kingdom is not only a forbidden area for humans and monstrous beasts, it is also a forbidden area for the great majority of the Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“This is also the reason why it is extremely difficult to obtain something from there,” The Compass Immortal said.

“We can offer a high price to purchase it,” Bai Ruochen said.

“Did you think that the Elf Kingdom will not have what you have? However, what you don’t possess can only be found in the Elf Kingdom,” The Compass Immortal said.

“What do we do then? Do we really need that Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower? Are we unable to save my father without that Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower?” Bai Ruochen became extremely worried. Even though hope was before them, they were unable to touch it. This caused her heart to feel extremely stuffed.

“Ruochen, this spirit formation is very special. Senior Longjian’s illness is even more special. The Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower is not something that is absolutely necessary. However, senior Compass and I do not dare to lack it. Although it is only a medicinal herb that will provide assistance to the formation, if we are to lack it, it’s very possible for us to have a lower chance of success,” Chu Feng explained.

“What do we do then?” Bai Ruochen was so worried that she was on the verge of crying. In this sort of situation, she felt herself to be extremely powerless.

“Young lady, you do not have to be too worried. Although the Ancient Era’s Elves are all proud and arrogant, they are not completely unreasonable. This old man once obtained a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower from them before. However, it is precisely because I requested it once that I am not allowed to request their assistance again.”

“As for your father, as he’s already in such a state, he is evidently unable to go to the Elf Kingdom. Thus, I think that this matter will have to depend on little friend Chu Feng,” The Compass Immortal looked to Chu Feng.

At that moment, it was unsuitable for him to go, and Nangong Longjian was unable to go. Between Bai Suyan, Bai Ruochen and Chu Feng, it was clear that Chu Feng would have the highest chance of success in requesting a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower from the Elf Kingdom.

“Leave this matter to me. I also happen to wish to see what the Elf Kingdom is like,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“But...” Bai Ruochen wanted to say something, but was hesitant the entire time. She did not want to put Chu Feng in a difficult situation. Even though the Compass Immortal did not say it extremely clearly, she could tell from his words that the Ancient Era’s Elves were difficult to handle, and that the ones in the Elf Kingdom were even more difficult to handle. If Chu Feng were to go there, he would most likely be put in a difficult situation.

She did not wish to put Chu Feng in a difficult situation. She did not want Chu Feng to suffer grievances for the sake of helping her. However, more than that, she did not wish for her father to die. That was why she wanted to say something, but was hesitant the entire time.

“Ruochen, don’t think too much about it. Even without the events here today, I would have gone to the Elf Kingdom sooner or later. I have been very curious about the Ancient Era the entire time. Likely, only the Ancient Era’s Elves know the truth about the Ancient Era.”

“Thus, I am not going to the Elf Kingdom only for the sake of requesting medicine for senior Longjian. I am also doing so to satisfy my own desire,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

However, Bai Ruochen did not say anything. How could she not know that Chu Feng was only saying those words to console her?

“Little friend Chu Feng, this journey there, if you wish to successfully obtain the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, this old man only has a single word of advice. That is, endure,” The Compass Immortal said.

Hearing those words, both Bai Ruochen and Bai Suyan’s expression changed. Merely by the word endure,’ they were able to tell how difficult it would be to obtain medicine from the Elf Kingdom.

Right at that moment, Nangong Longjian said, “Little friend Chu Feng, people’s lives are only their reputation, tree’s lives are only their wood, you must not make yourself suffer grievances for my sake.”

“Thank you, seniors, for your advice. Chu Feng knows what to do,” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

“In that case, little friend Chu Feng, you should leave now so that you can return quickly. You can leave Nangong Longjian to this old man.”

“Although I am unable to slow down the development of his illness, I am capable of alleviating his suffering,” The Compass Immortal said.

“I’ll have to trouble senior Compass then,” Chu Feng clasped his

fist toward the Compass Immortal. Then, he took a glance at Bai Ruochen and said with a smile, “Don’t worry, I will definitely return with a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng left the cave. By himself, he proceeded for the Holy Land of Martialism’s longest-existing power, the Elf Kingdom.

As the journey there would be very long, for the sake of avoiding attention, Chu Feng draped a cloak over himself and covered his appearance. Furthermore, for the majority of the time, he hid himself within the void when he journeyed. People were unable to even see him.

Chapter 1882 – Refused Entry

On his journey to the Elf Kingdom, Chu Feng had managed to unintentionally come across a lot of news, the majority of which concerned the battle between him and the Four Great Imperial Clans.

Merely, Chu Feng discovered that, indeed, the more information was spread, the less reliable and more incredible it became.

The Four Great Imperial Clans had clearly only apologized to him. Yet, from the mouths of certain individuals, that actually became the Four Great Imperial Clans kneeling to him and begging him for forgiveness.

Chu Feng felt very helpless regarding this sort of thing. It was no wonder many people did not believe in rumors. After all, these rumors were truly too unreasonable.

One thing worthy of being mentioned was that, after what had happened, the Dark Hall had genuinely entered the people's line of sight. Practically everyone was talking about the Dark Hall, that mysterious power.

However, Chu Feng was able to detect that the Dark Hall seemed to have disappeared after the battle at the Ximen Imperial Clan. There was no new news of them at all. The reason for that was because the crowd was only discussing the Dark Hall in the battle at the Ximen Imperial Clan. This meant that the Dark Hall had not taken any overt action since that battle.

After continuing on his journey for some time, Chu Feng finally arrived at the territory of the Holy Land of Martialism's strongest power, the Elf Kingdom.

“As expected of a power that has existed since the Ancient Era. It would seem that the Ancient Era's Elves have occupied the most beautiful place in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

As Chu Feng looked at the territory that was occupied by the Elf Kingdom, only beauty appeared in his line of sight.

The grasses, trees and flowers of this place were all different from those of other places. Although the Holy Land of Martialism was a place with a lot of rare and beautiful plants, there were simply too many gathered in this place.

Chu Feng had heard that it was very simple to determine whether an area was within the territory of the Elf Kingdom. As long as it was filled with rare and beautiful plants, it would be part of the Elf Kingdom, and the opposite held true as well.

At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived at the Elf Kingdom's territory. Although he had entered the range of the Elf Kingdom, Chu Feng did not see their legendary fort.

Chu Feng knew... that the Elf Kingdom's territory was very vast; they had practically monopolized an entire domain. Thus, he knew that he would have to continue to proceed inward should he wish to seek out the Ancient Era's Elves.

"This place is truly beautiful," On their journey inward, even Her Lady Queen Eggy was unable to contain herself from praising the beautiful scenery of this place.

Beautiful, it was truly beautiful. The grasses were green and shining with glimmer. The flowers were all different from one another, and looked incomparably gorgeous. Like the grasses... they were also glimmering.

It would be understandable if it was just a single flower. Yet, as far as the eye could see, boundless multi-colored radiance was glimmering in an extremely gorgeous and dazzling manner. Basking in their glimmer, one would feel as if they had entered an illusory world.

In fact, the sky here was no longer blue. Instead, it was multi-colored. The clouds of this place were no longer white. Instead,

they were blossoming with light.

Furthermore, various small islands were floating in mid-air. Furthermore, Chu Feng could see a waterfall on one island with water floating straight to the ground like a silver dragon flying straight into the world of mortals.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

However, before Chu Feng even saw the Elf Kingdom's fort, four figures rapidly flew toward him. In the end, not only did they block him in midair, they also surrounded him.

They were four Ancient Era's Elves, completely different from the Ancient Era's Elves that Chu Feng had met before. They were four old men. Even though they were very old, they still had very handsome appearances. Most importantly, they were actually emitting the aura of rank three Martial Emperors.

Rank three Martial Emperors, what sort of existences were they? They were experts on par with the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs. However, looking at the four people around him, it was clear that they did not possess that high of a status. It was not that Chu Feng was underestimating them; however, Chu Feng felt that the four of them were only watchguards.

To use rank three Martial Emperors as watchguards. Merely this was sufficient to show how powerful the Elf Kingdom was.

“You should show yourself now,” The leader of the four spoke with an ice-cold voice.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the four of them were all holding a mirror-like object in their hands. That was a special world spirit map. Chu Feng's position had been locked onto by that

world spirit map.

This meant that they weren't able to discover Chu Feng because he had not hidden himself well enough. Rather, it was because they possessed an extremely powerful sensing formation, so powerful that even Chu Feng had not managed to discover it before he had already been detected by it.

"Four seniors, I do not possess any intention to offend you all. Merely, I have come here with a request," At that moment, Chu Feng revealed himself and greeted them courteously.

"You're Chu Feng?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, the brows of the four Ancient Era's Elves all moved upward. They were all surprised. It could be seen that they knew of Chu Feng's appearance.

"Senior, I am indeed Chu Feng," Chu Feng nodded.

"Have you came here under an invitation?" The Ancient Era's Elves asked.

"I have not. I have come here out of my own intentions," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I am truly sorry. Our Elf Kingdom is not a place that people can enter as they wish. If you have not been invited, I'm afraid that we will have to see you out," The Ancient Era's Elves shook their heads.

"Seniors, this junior has come here with a matter that I wish to request your Elf Kingdom's assistance in. It concerns one's life. I hope that seniors will be able to let me get around the regulations," Chu Feng clasped his fist courteously.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I've already said it. Without an invitation, you are not allowed to enter. As for it being concerning someone's life, it is not that we are helpless, but with how enormous the Holy Land of Martialism is, countless people die every day. Furthermore, one's life and death is up to fate. Our Elf Kingdom will not be able to concern ourselves with that, nor do we

wish to.”

“Thus, I hope that little friend Chu Feng will abide by our Elf Kingdom’s rules and not make things difficult for us,” The Ancient Era’s Elf said.

“But...” Chu Feng was still refusing to leave.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we have heard about your accomplishments. Truth be told, from our own personal standpoints, we admire you greatly. Although you are someone from the younger generation, we are able to admire all of your accomplishments.”

“However, we are tasked with the mission of guarding the Elf Kingdom. As such, we cannot allow anyone to intrude into our Elf Kingdom,” Another Ancient Era’s Elf said.

“It is only because it’s you that we’ve bothered to speak so much with you. If it were any other person, we would’ve already attacked them. Thus, we truly hope that you will not make things difficult for us,” Another Ancient Era’s Elf added.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt very helpless. He could tell that these four Ancient Era’s Elves were truly acting very courteously toward him.

However, their attitudes were firm. They would not allow Chu Feng to continue onward. When they are already like this, if Chu Feng were to try to force his way though, it would get him nowhere.

However, he had traveled far to get here. If he were to be driven out without even being able to enter the Elf Kingdom, he would truly have journeyed in vain.

At that moment, Chu Feng was at a loss as to what to do.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a strange sound was heard. Chu Feng

raised his head upward toward the direction of the sound, and discovered that an enormous crack had actually appeared in the space above him.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

When that enormous crack appeared, the four Ancient Era’s Elves actually all half kneeled in midair. The direction in which they were facing was precisely the location of that enormous crack.

Following that, violent winds began to sweep forth from the crack. Soon, a huge monster appeared.

It was a warship, an enormous warship. That warship emitted an extremely imposing air and appeared extremely magnificent.

When Chu Feng saw the warship, his heart trembled. The reason for that was because he had not managed to detect that warship in the slightest before it had appeared. This meant that that warship was extremely powerful, and its aura was extremely well-hidden.

If it wasn’t for it revealing itself of its own accord, even if Chu Feng were to brush past it, he would likely not be able to discover it.

Furthermore, thousands of Ancient Era’s Elves were standing in an orderly fashion on that warship. Each and every one of them emitted extraordinary airs.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to sense their cultivations, Chu Feng was able to determine merely by looking at them that those Ancient Era’s Elves were all extraordinary people.

Especially the long-haired old man standing at the front end of the warship, with his hands behind his back and his hair fluttering in the wind, his cultivation and status was definitely above those of the four Ancient Era’s Elves beside Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng noticed that the other Ancient Era’s Elves on the warship all possessed respect in their gazes as they looked to the four Ancient Era’s Elves. However, that

old man did not even bother to glance at the four Ancient Era's Elves. He had an attitude of not placing the four of them in his eyes at all.

However, Chu Feng also discovered that the four Ancient Era's Elves beside him were not kneeling to the old man on the front end of the warship. It should instead be someone else.

The reason for that was because there drifted a large banner on the warship. The most eye-catching aspect of that banner was the words 'Elf Kingdom.'

However, below 'Elf Kingdom' was another word — 'Princess.'

Chapter 1883 – Princess Lingyue

“We pay our respects to Your Highness the Princess.”

Sure enough, the four Ancient Era’s Elves beside Chu Feng spoke to the warship with respectful tones.

At that moment, that warship suddenly stopped. Then, a gentle yet still imposing voice sounded from the warship, “Who is it that has arrived?”

“Reporting to Your Highness the Princess, I am called Chu Feng. I have come to the Elf Kingdom with an important matter that I wish to request the Elf Kingdom’s assistance with,” Chu Feng lifted his head and clasped his fist toward the warship. Although he did not manage to see that princess, he knew that the person that had spoken must be the Elf Kingdom’s princess.

“Chu Feng?” Inside the warship was a celestial fairy-like beauty. She possessed a petite figure. Although she was petite, she was fully developed. Her blonde hair was exceptionally beautiful as it draped down from her head. With her exquisite hairpin and her beautiful face, she appeared to be extremely noble and extraordinary.

Furthermore, this Elf Princess was wearing a suit of armor that was flickering with a golden sheen. This made her appear very different and unusually domineering.

As for this person, she was the second daughter of the Elf Kingdom’s King, Xian Lingyue, Princess Lingyue.

While Princess Xian Lingyue possessed an exceptionally beautiful appearance, so beautiful that she was like a lotus flower on the water’s surface, she was actually over two thousand years old. Furthermore, as she possessed the inheritance of the Elf King’s noble bloodline, her cultivation was extremely strong — she was a rank five Martial Emperor.

With her cultivation, she would rarely be able to find a match in the entire Holy Land of Martialism. However, she was only a mere princess in the Elf Kingdom.

After Xian Lingyue heard Chu Feng's name, her expression changed. She carefully surveyed Chu Feng through the window below the warship, .

When she discovered that the person that had declared himself to be Chu Feng was actually the Chu Feng that was wanted by the Four Great Imperial Clan's, an enchanting smile surprisingly blossomed on her face.

"It's really that Chu Feng. Big sis Lingyue, I've heard that Chu Feng is a thorn that will cause trouble everywhere. Can it be that he has gotten bored of challenging human powers, and has decided to come create trouble in our Elf Kingdom?"

"He is truly daring, and has simply grown tired of living," At that moment, a young Ancient Era's Elf was standing beside Princess Lingyue.

It was a man. Like a female, his long blond hair trailed over his shoulders. Like Chu Feng, he was also of the younger generation. Furthermore, even his cultivation was the same as Chu Feng's; he was a rank nine Half Martial Emperor.

This Ancient Era's Elf's name was Xian Yushi. Although he was not a child of the Elf King, he was also of noble blood. His status greatly surpassed that of other Ancient Era's Elves.

"Lil brother Yushi, it must be the first time you've seen this Chu Feng, right?" Princess Lingyue asked Xian Yushi.

"Over the last several years, I have been training with big sis the entire time. It has been a long time since I've gone out. All I know about this Chu Feng are the rumors that I've heard. Today is indeed the first time I have seen him," Xian Yushi nodded.

"Since this is the first time you've seen him, you naturally will

not know about him. As such, why did you speak of him that badly?" Princess Lingyue asked.

"Big sis Lingyue, I..." Xian Yushi wanted to explain. However, after thinking about it, he stopped trying to explain. Instead, he said, "Big sis Lingyue, I was wrong. I will not jump to an unfounded conclusion again."

"That's more like it," Princess Lingyue smiled lightly. Then, he looked down toward Chu Feng again.

"Chu Feng, you should quickly leave. The person on that warship is Princess Lingyue. She is not someone that you can afford to offend," At that moment, seeing that Princess Lingyue's warship was still there, and that Princess Lingyue was silent the entire time, the Ancient Era's Elves beside Chu Feng secretly sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng urging him to leave. They feared that Chu Feng would anger Princess Lingyue.

Right at that moment, Princess Lingyue's voice was heard again. "Chu Feng, you said that you've come to our Elf Kingdom with a request, what might that be?"

"Your Highness, I needed an Elf Kingdom's Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower to save a person's life," Chu Feng spoke honestly.

"Whose life is it that you're trying to save?" Princess Lingyue asked.

Chu Feng hesitated for a moment and then said, "It is unsuitable for me to speak of who that person is. I hope that Your Highness will forgive me."

Afterall, Nangong Longjian was someone with a very honest temperament. It would be inevitable for him to have offended a lot of people in the Holy Land of Martialism. Now that his illness was acting up and he had lost the ability to fight, Chu Feng feared that Nangong Longjian's enemies would search for him should he leak

this matter.

“Impudent! You have something that you want to request our assistance with, yet refuse to tell us what it is. Your attitude is simply not one of someone requesting another’s assistance. What sort of place did you think our Elf Kingdom to be?!” A voice filled with anger sounded from the warship. It was not Princess Lingyue’s voice. Instead, it was Xian Yushi’s.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng started to frown. Although the Princess’s voice was very amiable and did not contain any antipathy toward him, it was very evident that there was an Ancient Era’s Elf beside the Princess that greatly disliked him.

“Lil brother Yushi, when I am speaking with someone, could you not interrupt?” Inside the warship, Princess Lingyue looked at Xian Yushi. There was a trace of displeasure in her gaze.

“Yes,” Xian Yushi did not dare to say anymore.

“You can go out first,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Big sis Lingyue, I...” Xian Yushi’s expression took a huge change. He thought that he had angered Princess Lingyue. Although he addressed Princess Lingyue as big sis, an intimate way of addressing someone, he actually feared Princess Lingyue enormously. After all, princess Lingyue was the biological daughter of the Elf King.

The current Elf King had already governed the Elf Kingdom for eight thousand years. However, in this period of time, he had only given birth to three children. The oldest son died five thousand years ago when he tried to charge into a forbidden area. His two other children were both daughters. As for the two of them, they were Princess Lingyue and the princess known to be the strongest genius of the Ancient Era’s Elves, Princess [Miaomiao](#).

These two princesses were the only two children of the Elf King. They were truly beloved by him. In the Elf Kingdom, not to

mention them, the younger generation, even the older generation did not dare to offend the two princesses.

“I’m telling you to go out and receive that Chu Feng,” Princess Lingyue said with a smile.

“Big sis Lingyue, you wish to receive that Chu Feng as a guest?” Xian Yushi was astonished. He did not understand why Princess Lingyue would want to receive Chu Feng.

“I never said I wanted to receive Chu Feng as a guest. Rather, I said that I want you to receive Chu Feng. You should be able to understand what I mean, no?” Princess Lingyue said with a smile.

Seeing Princess Lingyue’s particular smile, Xian Yushi seemed to have understood something. He nodded his head repeatedly and said, “Big sis Lingyue, please rest assured. I will definitely entertain that Chu Feng properly.”

“I am reassured with the way you handle things. Go on,” Princess Lingyue waved her hand.

Then, Xian Yushi descended from the warship and arrived before Chu Feng.

After Xian Yushi descended, the warship that Princess Lingyue was on flew directly toward the depths of the Elf Kingdom.

“You are that Chu Feng?” Xian Yushi asked while staring at Chu Feng. His attitude was extremely vile.

“I am precisely Chu Feng. May I ask who you might be?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

Chu Feng did not dare to forget his purpose in coming here, nor the advice he had been given by the Compass Immortal. He had come with a request for the Elf Kingdom. As such, even though he could tell that this Xian Yushi was filled with hostility toward him with a single glance, Chu Feng still had to be very polite.

Miao = cat’s meow.

Chapter 1884 – Xian Miaomiao

“This person here is our Elf Kingdom’s Young Master Yushi,” One of the Ancient Era’s Elves beside Chu Feng introduced him.

“So it’s actually Young Master Yushi. It is my pleasure to meet you,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward Xian Yushi. The smile on his face did not decrease in the slightest.

“There’s no need to be overly polite. Follow me,” Xian Yushi curled his lips disdainfully. Then he began to fly toward Elf Kingdom’s inner region.

Seeing that, Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed slightly. He did not know what sort of intentions Xian Yushi had in having him follow him. However, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and followed Xian Yushi immediately. He did not wish to miss the opportunity to enter the Elf Kingdom.

“Young Master Yushi, that Chu Feng has not received an invitation, I fear...” At that moment, the four old Ancient Era’s Elves’ elders all revealed difficult expressions. Even though Xian Yushi was a young master, he did not possess the qualifications to invite outsiders into the Elf Kingdom as guests.

“This is the intention of my big sis Lingyue, do you all dare to obstruct this?” Xian Yushi’s expression turned cold. He appeared extremely displeased. He knew that he did not possess the qualifications to invite guests. That was the reason why these elders had dared to stop him.

“We do not dare,” Hearing Princess Lingyue’s name, the four elders immediately withdrew themselves and spoke no more.

“Humph,” Xian Yushi snorted coldly. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said vilely, “What are you standing there for? Quickly, catch up.”

“That guy, he’s truly seeking a beating. It’s his status that is

insufficient. Yet, he actually decided to vent his anger on you.”

“Chu Feng, how about we don’t bother obtaining the medicinal flower? I feel that this Xian Yushi is acting extremely hostile toward you. If you were to enter the Elf Kingdom, I fear that you would be put in danger,” Her Lady Queen was extremely dissatisfied with Xian Yushi’s attitude. However, more than that, she was worried for Chu Feng’s safety.

Faced with Eggy’s worries, Chu Feng smiled indifferently. After he found out that it was Princess Lingyue who had invited him, Chu Feng seemed to have thought of something. “Before eaves, one must lower their head. Let alone... that Xian Yushi also said it. The person that allowed me to enter is Princess Lingyue, and not him. Likely, no matter how displeased he is with me, he will not really do anything to me. After all, that so-called Princess Lingyue did not seem to possess any hostility toward me.”

Thus, if Chu Feng was worried before, then, at this moment, Chu Feng was completely confident.

“I truly don’t know what to do with you,” Eggy felt that Chu Feng was consoling himself.

“Rest assured, I know what to do,” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he began to follow Xian Yushi.

After flying behind Xian Yushi for four entire hours, Chu Feng finally reached an Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation. After entering the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation, they traveled for six entire hours before finally exiting the teleportation formation.

During all this, Xian Yushi did not say a single word to Chu Feng. His attitude was extremely vile. It was as if Chu Feng owed him money.

When Chu Feng exited the teleportation formation, what appeared before him was not only illusion-like beautiful scenery;

there was also a vast and boundless city.

This city was most definitely the most spectacular of all the cities that Chu Feng had seen so far. The enormous city gates and city walls reached the clouds and filled one's line of sight.

Enormous gems were embedded into the city gates and city walls. The gems were all different colors, and were not crowded together. When combined with the white bricks and the blue roof tiles, the gems appeared to be crucial to the gorgeousness and nobility of the city.

"The Elf Kingdom is truly extraordinary," At that moment, even Eggy was unable to contain herself from prasing the Elf Kingdom.

She was not only praising it because the vast city was built so perfectly beautifully, it was mainly because each brick and tile on the city wall were all embedded with spirit formations.

That's right, it was not a gate or a wall that was embedded with spirit formations. Rather, it was the individual bricks and tiles that were embedded with spirit formations independent from one another. A city this vast possessed so many bricks and tiles that it was simply uncountable.

It was precisely those densely packed spirit formations that caused this city to possess an extremely powerful defensive ability. In fact, the city even possessed an extremely powerful offensive ability. It was capable of both defending and attacking simultaneously. This was most definitely done on an enormous scale.

At that moment, Xian Yushi brought Chu Feng to a small gate. Although it was a small gate, it was still several tens of meters tall. Close to a hundred Ancient Era's Elf guards stood to either side of the gate. They were actually all Martial Emperor-level experts.

Although they were not as powerful as the four elders from before, being merely only rank one Martial Emperors, it was

astonishing to see Martial Emperors being used only as gatekeepers.

If the Nine Powers were to know about such a thing, that their greatly respected Martial Emperors were only gatekeepers in the Elf Kingdom, one would truly wonder what sort of thoughts they might have.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized why the Elf Kingdom was reputed to be the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism. Before it, the other powers were truly so unbearably small.

“Wait for me here,” Xian Yushi said coldly. After he finished saying those words to Chu Feng, he passed through the gate.

As for Chu Feng, he stood there and began to admire the Elf Kingdom’s unimaginably beautiful scenery.

As the sky had already darkened, the flowers, plants and trees that were glimmering with light appeared even brighter; even more exceptionally beautiful.

Merely, as Chu Feng saw such beautiful scenery, he began to miss his lovers, Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei.

If he were able to admire this beautiful scenery with his lovers, oh how great that would be.

Fortunately, Eggy was accompanying him, causing Chu Feng to not be too sad.

.....

In the depths of the Elf Kingdom was a special palace.

This palace was actually made from a special enormous tree. While it was said to be a tree, it actually resembled an enormous flower. The reason for that was because all of the branches and leaves of this tree were exceptionally beautiful.

If the other plants in the Elf Kingdom were all only glimmering with light, then the intensity of the light that this tree gave off was

so intense that it was like an enormous lantern, capable of illuminating all living things in the middle of the night.

This exceptionally beautiful palace was the Ancient Era's Elves' forbidden area. Only very few people were allowed to enter this place. As for others, not to mention entering, they would not even be allowed to approach this enormous tree.

At that moment, Princess Lingyue was sitting in this palace.

Princess Lingyue had removed her brilliant armor and changed into a long blue skirt. She appeared to be extremely sexy. However... she was not the master of this palace.

“Big sister, you've finally returned. I've missed you to death.”

Suddenly, a beauty ran out from the palace. Like a crafty little rabbit, she leapt into Princess Lingyue's bosom.

She was a young lady that was roughly fifteen or sixteen years old. She possessed blonde hair, blue eyes and pointed ears. All of these special characteristics illustrated that she was also an Ancient Era's Elf.

Merely, her appearance was even more beautiful than that of ordinary Ancient Era's Elves, reaching a point of being unrealistically beautiful. It was as if she were a celestial fairy from a painting.

Thus, while she possessed an appearance very similar to Princess Lingyue, all aspects of her appearance were much more perfect than Princess Lingyue. This was especially true of her pair of large blue eyes. They were filled with spirit and cleverness. They were extremely beautiful.

This young lady was none other than the Ancient Era's Elves' exceptional genius, Xian Miaomiao, Princess Miaomiao.

She was named Xian Miaomiao by her mother. As for why her name was Xian [Miaomiao](#), very few people knew.

Remember, Miao → Meow. Xian → Immortal. So.. her name is Immortal Meowmeow.

Chapter 1885 – Innumerable Obstacles

“Oh you. After eating, you should wipe your mouth,” Princess Lingyue took out her handkerchief and began to wipe the corners of Xian Miaomiao’s mouth. She was smiling with eyes filled with gentleness.

Princess Lingyue was famous for being very amiable. She would generally display her gentle side to others. However, it was only when she was with Xian Miaomiao that she would reveal her purest gentleness.

“Hehe, I have no other hobbies other than eating,” Xian Miaomiao hugged Princess Lingyue tightly. With her eyes closed, she began to rub her little face in Princess Lingyue’s embrace nonstop. Her appearance was like that of a coquettish kitten.

“It’s no wonder that mother named you Miaomiao. You are truly a gluttonous kitten,” Princess Lingyue softly tapped Xian Miaomiao’s head. Suddenly, her gaze flashed, and she grabbed onto Xian Miaomiao’s shoulder. While looking Xian Miaomiao in the face, she asked, “Miaomiao, your cultivation... you’ve broken through to rank three Martial Emperor?”

“Yep,” Xian Miaomiao nodded her head while smiling.

“Oh you, your progress is truly too fast. It has clearly only been a short while since your last breakthrough,” Although Princess Lingyue was saying those words, she was actually extremely happy.

Originally, only males were allowed to inherit the throne of the Elf King. The death of the current Elf King’s sole son had been equivalent to him having no successor to pass on the throne to. Thus, he had wanted another son the entire time. However, after Xian Miaomiao’s birth, he gave up on that thought.

The reason for that was because he decided to have Xian

Miaomiao succeed the throne. For that, he had gathered all of the grand elders to hold a meeting with them.

After learning of his intentions, the grand elders all immediately opposed it. Even though Xian Miaomiao's father was the Elf King, he was still pressured by them.

However, Xian Miaomiao's talent was soon revealed. Her cultivation began to increase at lightning speed, a rate capable of causing people to become speechless.

Under this sort of situation, the grand elders that were originally firmly opposed to Xian Miaomiao succeeding the throne no longer said anything.

The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao's talent was simply too frightening, so unimaginably frightening. For an Ancient Era's Elf like her, even though she was a woman, it would still be understandable for her to succeed the throne.

After all, the Elf King was generally always the strongest Ancient Era's Elf. It was also only the strongest that would be qualified to sit on the throne of the Elf King.

"Miaomiao, I came across a human today. Who do you think it was?" Princess Lingyue asked.

"Big sister, you're being boring. You've already told me that it's a human. Yet, you still want me to guess. Are you looking down on my intelligence?" Xian Miaomiao cast a side-eye at Princess Lingyue.

"Oh you. I'm trying to have you guess who that human was," Princess Lingyue said.

"Nope. I'm not doing it. I'm not interested in humans," Xian Miaomiao curled her lips. As she spoke, she extended her hand and grabbed. Then, a plate of dimsum on a table in the distance reached her hand. She began to gulp down on the dimsum.

"My my my, I wonder who it was that always mentioned that

Chu Feng to me. Could it be that Chu Feng is not a human?" Princess Lingyue asked.

"Aiyah?!!"

"Big sister, you're saying that it's Chu Feng? You've met Chu Feng? Where at?" At that moment, Xian Miaomiao immediately grabbed onto the corner of Princess Lingyue's clothes. She was hopping and skipping in excitement.

"Look at you. If I were to tell you that he is currently within our Elf Kingdom, wouldn't you go wild with joy?" Princess Lingyue said with a smile.

"He came to our Elf Kingdom? Where's he at? I'm going to go find him," As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she planned to run outside to find Chu Feng.

"Get back here. No matter what, you're still a princess. Act a bit more reserved. Besides, didn't you only meet him once? Why would you keep him in your mind constantly?" Princess Lingyue asked.

"Big sister, you don't understand. Chu Feng is the only human other than Qing Xuantian that managed to trigger the Ancient Era's Immortal Needle. I am very curious about him. I want to know whether he will become the next Qing Xuantian," Xian Miaomiao said.

"There're a lot of Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. Furthermore, the ones outside are not hard to trigger. If it's merely that, he will not be able to become someone like Qing Xuantian. That said, that Chu Feng does possess quite a bit of skill."

"When I saw him, I immediately noticed that he was indeed different from the other humans," Princess Lingyue said.

"That's right, that's right. His progress is extremely fast. I've heard that even Nangong Longjian is standing up for him and forced the Four Great Imperial Clans to reconcile with Chu Feng.

He must've done so because he noticed Chu Feng's potential," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Indeed, he's very promising," Princess Lingyue nodded.

"Big sister, in that case, quickly tell me where Chu Feng is. I'll go and see him," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Don't be in such a rush. I'll have to test him first," Princess Lingyue said.

"Test? Test Chu Feng? What for?" Xian Miaomiao asked curiously.

"No, not Chu Feng. Xian Yushi," Princess Lingyue said.

"Xian Yushi?" Xian Miaomiao was completely confused.

"Xian Yushi, the reason why I decide to bring him alongside me and help him train is because I discovered that his nature is the same as his older brother Xian Yuyin's."

"That sort of nature is extremely bad. Not to mention the outsiders, it will be extremely dangerous even for us Ancient Era's Elves."

"Thus, I wish to change him. However, I discovered that one's nature is truly hard to change."

"This time around, I deliberately had him receive Chu Feng and hinted some things to him. I wish to see whether he will choose correctly or not."

"If he chooses correctly, then it will be fine. In the future, regardless of what he wants to do, I will not concern myself with it."

"However, if he chooses incorrectly, his nature must be suppressed. We absolutely cannot allow for a second Xian Yuyin to appear," Princess Lingyue said.

"I understand. But, big sister, it's not that I'm finding fault with you, but you're simply wasting time. That Xian Yushi will

definitely disappoint you. He simply possesses the same sort of nature as his older brother,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“If that is the case, there’s nothing that can be done. I have already given him his chance,” Princess Lingyue said.

.....

At that moment, Chu Feng was still waiting outside of the Elf Kingdom’s city’s gate.

However, Chu Feng did not expect that he would have to wait from dusk till dawn.

Yet, even though it was already dawn now, Chu Feng did not inquire of the guards as to where Xian Yushi had gone off to, nor did he leave the premises. Instead, he continued to wait.

When noon came, an Ancient Era’s Elf guard walked out and brought Chu Feng to the palace where Xian Yushi lived.

“Aiyo, Chu Feng, I am truly sorry. I was too tired last night. After I finished taking care of things, I fell asleep upon my return.”

“After I finished eating my breakfast and taking care of things, I kept feeling like I had forgotten something. It was only after thinking about it very hard that I remembered that I had forgotten about you,” Xian Yushi said with a beaming smile.

He was simply insulting Chu Feng with his words. He was saying that Chu Feng was so insignificant that not only had he forgotten Chu Feng’s existence, it had even taken him a great amount of effort just to recall Chu Feng’s existence.

“Heh...” Chu Feng smiled lightly at Xian Yushi’s insults. He did not take them too deeply to heart. The reason for that was because he had already anticipated that Xian Yushi would deliberately make things difficult for him.

“Chu Feng, you must be hungry right? Come, try out the culinary delicacies that I’ve prepared for you,” Xian Yushi handed a bowl

from the table to Chu Feng.

Upon seeing the bowl he had been handed, Chu Feng started to frown. Inside that bowl was a black paste-like substance. Furthermore, it was bubbling nonstop. That was simply not food. Instead, it was poison.

Chapter 1886 – When Underneath Eaves

“The things that the Ancient Era’s Elves eat are truly special,” As Chu Feng looked at the black goo in the bowl, he smiled and did not accept it.

“This is not something that we Ancient Era’s Elves eat.”

“This is called the Black Lotus Goo. It is a special substance produced by an ancient era’s fatal poison. However, I’ve heard that it can be eaten. Merely, I did not dare to attempt to eat it. That’s why I wanted you to help me test whether or not this thing can be eaten, and whether or not it tastes good,” Xian Yushi said with a smile on his face. His smile was extremely sinister.

“You wish to use me as a test subject?” Chu Feng asked.

“You don’t have to eat it. However, if you choose to not eat it, then you can forget about obtaining the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower,” Xian Yushi said.

“Are you saying that you will give me a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower should I eat it?” Chu Feng asked.

“If you eat it, you will have a chance to obtain the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower. However, if you don’t, you will have no chance at all,” Xian Yushi said.

“Paa~~”

Chu Feng extended his hand and received the bowl of Black Lotus Goo. He opened his mouth, raised his head and actually swallowed the entire bowlful of sticky substance at once.

“Mn?” Seeing Chu Feng drain the bowl with a single gulp, Xian Yushi was slightly startled. He did not expect that Chu Feng would have the courage to eat such a dangerous substance.

Unable to help himself, Xian Yushi stood up and began to carefully inspect Chu Feng. He wished to see what sort of reaction

Chu Feng would have.

After inspecting Chu Feng and discovering that Chu Feng was completely fine, he started to frown deeply.

“How does it taste?” Xian Yushi asked.

“Hard to say. If Young Master Yushi is interested in knowing, you can give it a try yourself,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“There’s no need for that,” Xian Yushi smiled lightly.

“That bastard,” At that moment, Eggy was gnashing her teeth in anger. It was clear that Xian Yushi was deliberately making things difficult for Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was fine with it. “It’s fine. I am interested in seeing exactly how he plans to continue to make things difficult for me.”

“Taa, taa, taa~~~”

Right at this moment, two little girls ran in. Right after they came in, they shouted ‘Big brother Yushi.’ Seeing the two little girls, Xian Yushi revealed a smile on his face. It seemed that he possessed a very good relationship with the two little girls.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that Xian Yushi’s smile was fake. He was pretending to smile. This meant that he actually did not truly like the two little girls.

With how proud and arrogant Xian Yushi was, he should be someone who would refuse to acknowledge even fellow Ancient Era’s Elves.

However, Xian Yushi was pretending to be this enthusiastic toward the two little girls. From this, Chu Feng was able to tell that the two little girls most definitely possessed very special statuses. Else, Xian Yushi would not try to fawn over them in such a manner.

“You two, did you hear that big brother Yushi returned? Is that

why you immediately ran over here?” Xian Yushi asked with a smile.

“We’ve heard that Chu Feng came. We wanted to have a look at that Chu Feng,” The two little girls said in unison.

“What?” Hearing those words, the smile on Xian Yushi’s face immediately turned stiff. He took a fierce glance at Chu Feng. It could be seen that the words that the two little girls said had caused Xian Yushi to feel extremely displeased.

“Wow, you must be that Chu Feng, right? I’ve heard of your distinguished name. Reportedly, you’re extremely powerful, and even Martial Emperors are no match for you.”

“I’ve also heard that even the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was killed by you. Wasn’t he a rank three Martial Emperor? A rank nine Half Martial Emperor was able to kill a rank three Martial Emperor? How did you accomplish that?”

The two little girls were running circles around Chu Feng. It was as if they had seen their idol. Their innocent eyes were filled with adoration.

Seeing this scene, Xian Yushi’s expression became even uglier. He was so enraged that his eyes turned red, and he started to tightly clench his fists within his sleeves.

“Rumors cannot be trusted. This Chu Feng is not as amazing as you two have imagined him to be,” Xian Yushi said.

“In that case, between Chu Feng and big brother Yushi, who is stronger?” The two little girls asked.

“Humph, it’ll naturally be me,” Xian Yushi stuck his chest out.

“Pfff...” Hearing those words, Eggy was unable to contain herself, and burst into loud laughter. Then she said, “This trash, where did he get his confidence from?”

“We don’t believe that.”

In fact, it was not only Eggy who felt that Xian Yushi was bursting with confidence, even the two little girls were shaking their heads repeatedly.

Hearing those words, Xian Yushi's already ugly face turned ashen. Then, he said, "If you all don't believe me, I can spar with Chu Feng. I'll let you two know who, between Chu Feng and I, is stronger."

"Really? That'll be great," Hearing what Xian Yushi said, the two little girls started to hop around in joy while clapping their hands nonstop.

"Chu Feng, you could be considered to have quite a reputation. However, I have always been skeptical of your strength. How about the two of us have a spar?" Xian Yushi said to Chu Feng with a smile on his face. However, he soon sent a voice transmission and said, "Chu Feng, if you want the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, you know what to do."

"That bastard! He's simply telling you to lose on purpose. Chu Feng, beat him to death. You cannot tolerate a bastard like him," Eggy was extremely angered by Xian Yushi's actions.

It was no wonder Xian Yushi was this confident. He was actually planning to make threats and promises to have Chu Feng lose to him on purpose. He was simply too shameless.

"It's merely pretending to lose to him, and not really losing to him. If I am really able to obtain the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower with only that, it would be worth it," Chu Feng said.

"But you should know that bastard will not give you a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower even if you are to lose," Eggy said.

"It doesn't matter whether or not he is willing to give me a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower. All that matters is whether

or not Princess Lingyue is willing to give me a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower,” Chu Feng said.

“Your intention is...” Eggy’s eyes shone. She seemed to have thought of something.

“Xian Yushi is merely a chess piece. I do not care what he thinks. However, I do care what Princess Lingyue thinks.”

“Since Princess Lingyue allowed me to come in, but did not personally receive me, and instead had Xian Yushi, who dislikes me, receive me, it was clear that she has done so with a purpose. If all these deliberate difficulties are trials, then I must endure these trials.”

“I have promised Ruochen that I will bring back a Ten Thousand Leave Sparrowtail Flower.”

As Chu Feng said those words, his heart was determined. As such, it was unsuitable for Eggy to say anymore. She knew Chu Feng’s temperament. What he had decided could not be changed by anyone else.

“Chu Feng, do you dare to fight me or not?” Xian Yushi urged.

“Please,” At that moment, Chu Feng smiled lightly. He had decided to face Xian Yushi.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right after Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, Xian Yushi immediately began to move his hands to attack Chu Feng. From this, it could be seen how impatient he was.

With a cultivation of rank nine Half Martial Emperor, with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivations and perfected martial skills, Xian Yushi would most definitely be considered to be a peak genius in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, to Chu Feng, his attacks were filled with loopholes. As

such, he was able to easily dodge Xian Yushi's attacks. But, for the sake of obtaining the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, Chu Feng could not dodge them, and had to let them hit him.

Chu Feng first put up an act by dodging a couple of Xian Yushi's attacks. Then, he began to be surrounded by Xian Yushi's attacks. Then, he found a suitable opportunity to cover his left chest with his concealed world spirit power. Then, Chu Feng planned to use his left chest to receive one of Xian Yushi's palm strikes.

Chapter 1887 – The Arrival Of The Princess

“Bang~~~”

The palm strike struck. Immediately, a loud explosion was heard. Like an arrow, Chu Feng was shot out of the palace hall and into the vast garden.

Although Chu Feng appeared to be left in a very sorry state, he was actually not harmed in the slightest. Everything was merely an act.

“Ssss~~~”

However, at that moment, Xian Yushi’s expression was twisted. He hurriedly looked to his palm that had landed on Chu Feng. It was only then that he discovered that while his palm appeared to be completely fine, all the bones in his hand were actually shattered. The pain of having his bones shattered caused his expression to become twisted.

All of this was caused by Chu Feng. His hand was shattered because his palm had struck Chu Feng.

“Damn it, he actually plotted against me,” Xian Yushi was extremely enraged. The way he saw it, Chu Feng had secretly done something to harm him. However, Chu Feng had actually only readied a simple defensive measure, and simply had not planned to harm Xian Yushi. The reason why Xian Yushi was injured was only because his physique was too weak.

“Wow! Big brother Yushi, you’re amazing. Even Chu Feng was knocked flying by you.”

“Big brother Yushi, wouldn’t that mean that you can kill and defeat rank three Martial Emperors? We truly never expected you to be this powerful.”

“Before, we had always thought that, of all the big brothers, big brother Yuyin was the most powerful. It’s only now that we have

found out that big brother Yushi is actually as powerful as big brother Yuyin.”

Right at the moment when Xian Yushi wanted to flare up at Chu Feng, the two little girls started to jump and skip around him. The two of them were looking at him with faces filled with adoration.

The words of the two little girls caused Xian Yushi, who was extremely enraged, to immediately grin from ear to ear. Especially when they said that he was as strong as Xian Yuyin, he smiled so very brilliantly.

Xian Yuyin was his biological older brother. He was the target that Xian Yushi had chased after his whole life. Merely, due to their difference in age, Xian Yushi had been unable to catch up with Xian Yuyin.

The words spoken by the two little girls caused him to feel as if he had been acknowledged and allowed him to regain his confidence. That was the reason why he was so happy.

Overjoyed, Xian Yushi said confidently, “Of course. How could the strength of us Ancient Era’s Elves possibly be something that humans could compare to? With the same level of cultivation, there is no human that can defeat us Ancient Era’s Elves,”

Hearing what Xian Yushi said, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and burst into laughter. He truly did not expect for such shameless scum to be among the Ancient Era’s Elves.

This clearly illustrated a principle. There were countless beings in the world. These beings were separated into many different races. However, regardless of what race it might be, there would always be scum. These scum all possessed the same characteristics. That is, they were all despicable and shameless.

“What are you all doing?”

Right at that moment, a woman’s voice was suddenly heard. Following that, several tens of figures walked in. The great

majority of them were of the Ancient Era's Elves' younger generation. As for the person leading them, it was Princess Lingyue.

"Big sister Lingyue," The two little girls were very excited when they saw Princess Lingyue and both ran toward her.

"Chu Feng, why are you still not greeting Princess Lingyue after seeing her?" At that moment, Xian Yushi angrily reprimanded Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng pays his respects to Princess Lingyue," As Chu Feng spoke, he planned to courteously greet her. He was not doing so because Xian Yushi had berated him. Rather, he felt that Princess Lingyue's appearance would cause his current situation to change.

Chu Feng had not placed Xian Yushi in his eyes since the very beginning. He had thought that Princess Lingyue was the mastermind of all this. Even though Xian Yushi truly disliked Chu Feng, Chu Feng felt that all of this was a trial given to him by Princess Lingyue.

Thus, the moment when Princess Lingyue appeared, it was as if Chu Feng had seen hope. His mindset felt much better. As such, so what if he had to greet Princess Lingyue courteously?

"Chu Feng, there's no need to stand on ceremony," However, before Chu Feng could greet her courteously, [Princess Lingyue stepped forward and stopped Chu Feng with her arms.](#)

"This!!!"

This scene greatly shocked the Ancient Era's Elves present. This was especially true for Xian Yushi. Not only did he have a dumbstruck expression, he was also emitting a dense amount of jealousy from his eyes.

While Princess Lingyue was two thousand years old, she was the sweetheart in the dreams of countless Ancient Era's Elves.

While Princess Lingyue was someone who treated others very

amiably, she rarely had physical contact with them. Yet now, the extravagant hope that countless Ancient Era's Elves would only dare to think about in their hearts and not out loud was actually obtained by Chu Feng. As such, how could they not be astonished, not become envious, jealous?

This was especially true for Xian Yushi. He was so jealous of Chu Feng that he wished he could hack Chu Feng into eight pieces.

“Chu Feng, what were you all doing?” Princess Lingyue asked with a beaming smile and a very amiable tone. In fact, compared to how she treated others, she appeared to be even especially gentle toward Chu Feng.

Before Chu Feng could reply, the two little girls said excitedly, “Big sister Lingyue, Chu Feng was sparring with big brother Yushi. Big brother Yushi defeated Chu Feng.”

“Little girls, what nonsense are you spouting? Although your big brother Yushi's strength is pretty decent, how could he possibly defeat Chu Feng? Chu Feng is someone who was able to kill the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief. Among the younger generation, very few people are able to contend against him.”

“Not to mention your big brother Yushi, even your big brother Yuyin might not necessarily be a match for Chu Feng,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Big sister Lingyue, we are telling the truth. We saw it with our own eyes. If you don't believe us, you can go and ask big brother Yushi,” The two little girls said earnestly.

“Yushi, is what they said real?” Princess Lingyue looked to Xian Yushi. At that time, the other Ancient Era's Elves also had expressions of disbelief on their faces.

Although they had only heard rumors about Chu Feng, and were skeptical of the rumors, it remained that Xian Yushi was only a peak Half Martial Emperor.

Although Xian Yushi could be considered to be an outstanding genius among the Ancient Era's Elves, he was not the most outstanding genius.

As for Chu Feng, he was the most reputed person in the Holy Land of Martialism right now. He was declared to be the strongest member of the younger generation. Thus, to say that Xian Yushi had defeated Chu Feng was something that none of them believed.

"Cough cough..." At that moment, Xian Yushi tidied up his clothing in a complacent manner.

Then, he said, "Big sis Lingyue, it is indeed the truth. I sparred against Chu Feng earlier and defeated him. If you do not believe me, you can ask..." Xian Yushi wanted to have Chu Feng admit that he was defeated by him.

"It is better seeing than to hear. How about the two of you spar again, so that we can broaden our horizons?" Princess Lingyue said.

"Your Highness, what a great suggestion," The other Ancient Era's Elves echoed in succession.

"I will naturally have no issue. Merely, I do not know whether Chu Feng might be willing. After all, he was struck by my palm strike earlier. I fear that he will not be able to withstand another palm strike from me," Xian Yushi said with an indifferent expression.

However, at the same time as he was saying that, he was secretly sending a voice transmission to Chu Feng. He was telling Chu Feng to refuse the sparring with the reasoning that he was afraid.

A courteous greeting would be to clasp one's fist and bow. Basically, while Chu Feng was bowing, Princess Lingyue stepped forward and stopped him mid-bow, most likely by putting her arms on his bowing arms, and helped him stand back up straight.

Chapter 1888 – Dumbstruck

“Haha...” At that moment, Chu Feng laughed.

Earlier, Chu Feng had listened to Xian Yushi’s demand and deliberately pretended to be defeated. On the one hand, it was because he had decided to consider Xian Yushi deliberately making things difficult for him a sort of trial. On the other hand, it was because he was helpless. After all, when beneath eaves, one had no choice but to lower one’s head.

Even though Chu Feng’s strength was at a level where he could move about unhindered in many places, he did not dare to act excessively impudent in a huge monstrous area like the Elf Kingdom.

When Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans were enemies, he had endured a lot of suffering. If he were to become the Elf Kingdom’s enemy, it was likely no one would be able to save him. Furthermore, with the strength of the Elf Kingdom, it was likely that all of Chu Feng’s friends and relatives would end up suffering.

Not to mention others, even Nangong Longjian was greatly inferior to the Elf Kingdom.

However, Princess Lingyue was here now. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly continue to listen to that scum? Thus, Chu Feng smiled and said, “Chu Feng is willing to seriously spar with Young Master Yushi.”

“Seriously? What do you mean by that? Are you saying that you were simply not serious in the sparring earlier?” Hearing those words, Xian Yushi immediately appeared extremely displeased.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to answer that foolish question. Instead, he smiled lightly.

At that moment, Princess Lingyue smiled. Then, she said, “Lil brother Yushi, it would seem that Chu Feng has never placed you

in his eyes.”

“Humph, what arrogance. Come, I’ll make sure to teach you a lesson,” Xian Yushi rolled up his sleeves angrily. However, at the same time he was doing that, he continued to secretly threaten Chu Feng, telling Chu Feng to act defeated by him again.

While Chu Feng heard his threats, he simply did not place them in his heart. This time around, before all these people, Chu Feng would not allow himself to be defeated by this trash again.

“”It seems lil brother Yushi is extremely confident. However, if it’s only a spar, it would be too boring. How about this, I’ll add something interesting to this spar.”

“Whoever among you two loses shall drink a cup of Black Lotus Goo. What do you two think?” Princess Lingyue said with a beaming smile.

“This punishment is good. They all say the Black Lotus Goo is edible. Yet, no one has dared to eat it. I also wish to have a look to see whether one will be fine after eating it,” At that moment, the other Ancient Era’s Elves all began to clap their hands in applause.

As for Xian Yushi, his complexion turned green. No matter how stupid he might be, he was still able to hear the intentions behind Princess Lingyue’s words. At that moment, he realized that the situation was bad. Merely, he was confused. Wasn’t it Princess Lingyue who hinted to him to deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng? Why would she be speaking for Chu Feng now?

As for Chu Feng, he was feeling secretly delighted. Of all the punishments, Princess Lingyue decided to use the Black Lotus Goo that Xian Yushi had used to deliberately make things difficult for him. Evidently, she knew about what Xian Yushi had done before, and was planning to give him a taste of his own medicine.

At that moment, Chu Feng was practically capable of being certain that Princess Lingyue did not hold any malice toward him.

Furthermore, she was standing on his side. Although he did not understand why Princess Lingyue would be standing on his side, it remained that it was a good thing.

“I have no objection to it. Young Master Yushi, what about you?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Xian Yushi summoned up his courage and said, “When even you’re not afraid, why would I be afraid? Heh, ridiculous.” At the same time, he was still secretly threatening Chu Feng.

Hearing Xian Yushi threatening him nonstop, Chu Feng knew that Xian Yushi was extremely scared right now. He did not wish to be defeated, nor could he allow himself to be defeated. The reason for that was because it would completely ruin his reputation. He would have lost all face before his fellow Ancient Era’s Elves.

Yet, Chu Feng was determined to make him lose all face. This was his punishment for deliberately making things difficult on Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, have no fear. I will handle everything for you,” Right at that moment, another voice transmission entered Chu Feng’s ears.

After hearing that voice transmission, Chu Feng began to feel some sympathy for Xian Yushi. The reason for that was because that voice transmission came from Princess Lingyue. Princess Lingyue actually gave permission for Chu Feng to teach Xian Yushi a lesson.

“Fist and feet have no eyes. If I am to injure Young Master Yushi, I hope that you will forgive me,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, we Ancient Era’s Elves are not that easily bullied. If you do not trust me, you can give it a try,” Xian Yushi said fiercely. With how Chu Feng refused to reply to his various voice

transmissions and instead continued to provoke him again and again, he already knew that Chu Feng did not plan to yield to him.

However, he could not allow himself to be defeated. Thus, his words were filled with threats. He was hinting to Chu Feng that it would be best if he didn't do anything excessive. Else, he would have to bear the consequences.

“Since that's the case, please excuse my rudeness,” However, even facing Xian Yushi's open threat, Chu Feng's smile remained unchanged.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. His speed was so fast that he arrived before Xian Yushi in a flash.

Chu Feng's speed was truly too fast, so fast that he left the crowd speechless. The other members of the younger generation present were simply incapable of seeing Chu Feng's movements. Only Princess Lingyue was able to see them.

At the moment she saw Chu Feng's astonishing speed, her expression immediately changed. Her deep eyes shone with seriousness. She thought to herself, ‘Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. The rumors are true. Chu Feng's battle power is really on par with my little sister's.’”

“Pa, pa, pa, pa, pa, pa, pa~~~”

During the short period of time when Princess Lingyue was surprised, Chu Feng's two hands were moving nonstop, turning into several thousands of hands. Like a torrential rainstorm, they continued to land onto Xian Yushi's body.

Faced with Chu Feng's ferocious attack, Xian Yushi was actually powerless to resist, and could only allow himself to get thrashed.

At the moment when Chu Feng stopped his attacks, Xian Yushi was sent flying. Xian Yushi ended up ruthlessly smashing into the

palace hall's pillar. When he landed on the ground, he was badly battered with a bloody nose, a bloody mouth and a swollen face.

As for the bystanders, they were all dumbstruck. They had all already anticipated that Xian Yushi would not be a match for Chu Feng. However, they did not expect for Xian Yushi to be defeated this quickly. It was only a split second, and Xian Yushi was already left in such a state.

However, no matter what, Chu Feng's current cultivation was the same as Xian Yushi's. They were both peak Half Martial Emperors.

A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Chu Feng actually possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Thinking of that, the gazes with which the Ancient Era's Elves' younger generation looked to Chu Feng all changed.

Earlier, they were somewhat skeptical of Chu Feng. However, their suspicions were now all gone. Instead, they now had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

Xian Miaomiao, their Ancient Era's Elves' legend, was only that exceptional special because she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

And now, an existence the same as Xian Miaomiao had appeared. Thus, how could they not hold him in importance?

"Oh my, I am truly sorry. I didn't expect for Young Master Yushi's body to be this weak. My attacks were too heavy. I hope that you will forgive me," Chu Feng said innocently. However, his each and every word was said sarcastically and filled with mockery.

"Chu Feng, I'll fucking kill you," Being beaten to such a state before this many people, Xian Yushi was extremely enraged. He took out an Incomplete Imperial Armament and charged toward

Chu Feng with a murderous appearance. He was not pretending. He was really planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before he could even approach Chu Feng, a stream of energy stopped him and knocked him back in midair.

It was Princess Lingyue.

“To be defeated is to be defeated. To lose in terms of strength is not something important. However, one must not lose one’s moral character in the process too. If you are to do that, others will think that our Ancient Era’s Elves are unable to face defeat with grace,” Princess Lingyue said.

With Princess Lingyue speaking out against it, no matter how wronged and angry Xian Yushi felt, he still had to endure it.

Not only did he have to resist his anger, he even had to present a respectful expression as he said to Princess Lingyue, “I was wrong. Big sis Lingyue, thank you for your reminder.”

“It’s fine. To make mistakes is fine as long as one is able to recognize them,” Princess Lingyue smiled lightly. Then, she said, “Men, go and get a bowl of Black Lotus Goo for Young Master Yushi.”

Hearing those words, not to mention Xian Yushi, the other Ancient Era’s Elves were also startled. They did not expect that Princess Lingyue would take what she had said before seriously.

“There’s no need for that. I just happen to have a bowl of Black Lotus Goo here,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

“What?” The crowd were startled again upon hearing those words. The Black Lotus Goo was a speciality of the Elf Kingdom. As such, how could Chu Feng possess it?

In fact, not to mention the others, even Xian Yushi had an expression of shock on his face. He did not believe that Chu Feng

would possess Black Lotus Goo.

However, before the puzzled eyes of the crowd, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand and grabbed. The bowl in the palace hall that had originally contained the Black Lotus Goo that Xian Yushi had given Chu Feng reached his hand.

Then, he opened his mouth and, ‘burr,’ vomited out a lump of black substance into the bowl.

At that moment, the crowd present were all speechless and dumbstruck.

Chapter 1889 – Beautifully Done

What sort of situation was this? Chu Feng actually vomited out the Black Lotus Goo?

At that moment, not to mention Xian Yushi and the others, even Princess Lingyue was stunned.

Compared to the others, Princess Lingyue knew the reason why Chu Feng was able to vomit the Black Lotus Goo. Merely, she did not expect that not only was Chu Feng able to eat it, he was even able to vomit it out.

“Chu Feng, this...” Princess Lingyue was also at a loss as for what to say.

“Cough, cough...”

“Everyone, please don’t misunderstand. This bowl of Black Lotus Goo before everyone was indeed vomited from my mouth.”

“I believe that everyone must be thinking that this bowl of Black Lotus Goo is extremely filthy and no longer edible. However, this is precisely the misunderstanding.”

“Although this bowl of Black Lotus Goo was indeed vomited from my mouth, it is actually not dirty at all. Why is it not dirty you ask? It’s because even though it has passed through my mouth, my esophagus and my stomach, it was not yet digested.”

“Why is that?”

“It’s because I sealed it with a spirit formation. It is the equivalent of me storing this bowl of Black Lotus Goo within my stomach without actually causing any damage to it. Thus, it is completely clean, as clean as it was before it entered my mouth.”

“Thus, everyone, please do not think that just because it’s been vomited from my mouth that it’s something that I ate.”

“Strictly speaking, I did not eat it. Instead, I merely stored it,”

Chu Feng explained to the crowd with a beaming smile. His appearance could be described with a single word — lowly.

“Bullshit! You actually want me to eat your vomit? Don’t think you can do that!!!” Xian Yushi was so extremely angered by Chu Feng that he started to jump around angrily. He was simply on the verge of being driven mad.

Chu Feng actually wanted him to eat his vomit? This was simply an insult, an enormous humiliation.

“I have a question: Chu Feng, why did you eat this Black Lotus Goo?” Princess Lingyue asked. As for this question... it was most definitely a question that she already knew the answer to.

Hearing that question, Chu Feng felt delight in his heart. At this moment, he had realized Princess Lingyue’s intentions.

“I was forced to eat it by Young Master Yushi. However, I felt that this thing would not be tasty. Yet, I found it improper for me to refuse him. Thus, I could only use my spirit formation to seal it and then store it temporarily in my stomach. Originally, I had planned to vomit it out later.”

“However, as Young Master Yushi needs it right now, and I just so happen to have it with me, I decided that I might as well take it out,” Chu Feng said.

At that moment, a woman who possessed a youthful appearance but was actually not of the younger generation asked, “Forced you? Why did he force you? Furthermore, even if he forced you, why would you give in to him? Your cultivation is clearly above his. I do not understand what about him you would fear.”

This woman’s age was close to that of Princess Lingyue, she was also roughly two thousand years old. However, her cultivation was inferior to Princess Lingyue’s. That being said, her cultivation wasn’t weak either. She was a rank two Martial Emperor.

“Princess Lingyue understands this matter. I have come to the Elf

Kingdom to request a single Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower.”

“Young Master Yushi said that he would hand me a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower should I eat the Black Lotus Goo. Merely... I never expected that Young Master Yushi would actually go back on his word. I had already eaten the Black Lotus Goo, yet he did not present to me any Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower,” When speaking those words, Chu Feng had a disappointed and sad expression on his face. It was as if he had been greatly deceived.

At that moment, the crowd were all emotionally moved by Chu Feng’s pitiful appearance. When they looked to Xian Yushi again, their gazes revealed a trace of disgust. They all felt Xian Yushi’s conduct to be extremely disgraceful.

“Chu Feng, don’t you spout rubbish. I merely said that you would have the chance to obtain a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, and never said that I would definitely get you one,” Xian Yushi hurriedly explained.

“Impudent! Based on what you said, you really did use the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower to force Chu Feng to eat the Black Lotus Goo?” At that moment, Princess Lingyue was deeply enraged. The reason for that was because Xian Yushi had indirectly admitted to Chu Feng’s story being true by providing that explanation.

“Big sis Lingyue, I have not, please... please listen to my explanation,” At that moment, Xian Yushi realized that he had misspoken.

“Do not bother explaining. I told you to receive Chu Feng. Yet you treated him in such a manner. You have truly disappointed me,” As Princess Lingyue spoke, she seized the bowl of Black Lotus Goo from Chu Feng’s hand and handed it to Xian Yushi. She said, “Eat it. This is your punishment.”

“Ah? Big sis Lingyue, that is something that Chu Feng vomited up. How could I eat his vomit?” Xian Yushi shook his head repeatedly. If he were to eat the bowl of Black Lotus Goo, how could he possibly face anyone anymore should this matter be spread?

“Young Master Yushi, you can eat it without worry. This bowl of Black Lotus Goo is exactly the same as when you had me eat it,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Xian Yushi was so angry that he shouted, “Don’t give me that bullshit! You’ve clearly eaten it. How could it still be the same?!” If it wasn’t for the fact that Chu Feng had incited disharmony among the crowd, how could his big sis Lingyue possibly treat him like this?

“Are you going to eat it or not?” Princess Lingyue’s long, shapely eyebrows narrowed. The gentleness in her eyes was no longer present, but was instead replaced with endless anger.

Seeing that angry expression, Xian Yushi’s body shivered, and his complexion turned pale with fright. For the past couple years, he had followed Princess Lingyue and trained with her. Thus, he knew her personality much better than others.

While Princess Lingyue might generally be very amiable, if she was to be angered, she would be extremely frightening.

“I, I’ll eat, eat it,” At that moment, Xian Yushi accepted the bowl. As he looked at the Black Lotus Goo in the bowl, he grimaced, and his expression began to twist. He had the appearance of wanting to vomit.

At that moment, he suddenly turned his gaze to Chu Feng. He had an extremely ferocious appearance. It was as if he wanted to kill Chu Feng on the spot. In fact, if Xian Yushi was capable, he would definitely kill Chu Feng. Merely, Chu Feng felt that Xian Yushi would not have that opportunity. Thus, Chu Feng was not worried about him. Instead, he raised his hand and said, “Young

Master Yushi, you don't have to thank me. You can go ahead and eat it."

"You!!!" Seeing Chu Feng acting like that, Xian Yushi was truly about to die from excessive anger. He had never expected that he would be forced into such a state by a human in his own territory.

However, in the end, he clenched his teeth, closed his eyes, opened his mouth and directly poured that bowl of Black Lotus Goo into his mouth.

He was actually really eating the Black Lotus Goo that Chu Feng had vomited up.

The Black Lotus Goo was extremely sticky. After it entered his mouth, Xian Yushi was unable to swallow it, and began to use his teeth to chew it nonstop. In the end, the stickiness covered his entire mouth.

"Eeh..." Seeing this scene, many of the people present did not wish to look anymore. It was not because of the Black Lotus Goo itself. Rather, it was because this Black Lotus Goo was something that Chu Feng vomited. For Xian Yushi to eat it in such a manner, the crowd all felt a sort of disgust.

"Truly disgusting," Not to mention the others, even Her Lady Queen was unable to continue watching it.

"Why is it disgusting? I didn't eat that Black Lotus Goo, and only stored it in my stomach for a while. This is pretty much the same as storing it in a Cosmos Sack. Why would it suddenly become disgusting?" Chu Feng defended himself.

"It's not whether or not the Black Lotus Goo itself is disgusting or not. Instead, it's just that looking at him eating it like that is extremely disgusting. After all, that came from your mouth. That is a fact that you cannot refuse to admit."

"If someone vomited something and wanted you to eat it by telling you it was clean, would you eat it?" Eggy asked.

“Ehh... of course not,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“There you go! With your ability, you are totally capable of getting that Black Lotus Goo out from your stomach without making a scene. Yet, you insisted on vomiting it out before the crowd. Furthermore, you deliberately made the sound of vomiting.”

“You were simply deliberately making that Xian Yushi feel disgusted. Thus, stop pretending to be innocent,” Her Lady Queen had already seen through Chu Feng’s scheme.

“Hehe, it’s still Milady Queen that knows me best. That’s right, I was deliberately making that Xian Yushi feel disgusted. This is the price that he shall pay for making things difficult for me,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Humph, that’s to be expected. How could you hide anything from this Queen?” Eggy raised her little chin proudly. Then, she said, “Although it is very disgusting, I must admit that you’ve done this beautifully.”

Chapter 1890 – You’re Not Afraid Of Me?

“Burr~~~”

Right at that moment, Xian Yushi suddenly uttered a ‘burr.’ It was as if he were about to vomit the Black Lotus Goo in his mouth.

“Do not vomit. Swallow it down. If you are to vomit, you must eat it again,” Princess Lingyue shouted angrily.

In that sort of situation, Xian Yushi hurriedly used both of his hands to cover his mouth to prevent himself from vomiting the Black Lotus Goo.

While the Black Lotus Goo which Chu Feng had vomited was clean, if he were to vomit it again, it would no longer be clean. If he were to be forced to eat that, how could he possibly endure it?

“Burrahh~~~”

However, after struggling with it, Xian Yushi was still unable to contain himself and ended up vomiting the Black Lotus Goo.

“Aiyah, so disgusting!” At that moment, the crowd were all showing expressions of disgust and covering their noses. They were all extremely disgusted by Xian Yushi.

As for Princess Lingyue, her long, shapely eyebrows narrowed. She only revealed an angry expression again because Xian Yushi had gone against her instructions.

“Big sis Lingyue, this Black Lotus Goo is truly too disgusting to eat. Please spare me. Its smell is simply too disgusting,” Xian Yushi said with a begging expression.

“Smell? What smell? Why do we not smell anything?” Princess Lingyue felt that Xian Yushi was deceiving her. The reason for that was because she simply didn’t smell anything.

“I’m really telling the truth here. One cannot smell it. One will only be able to detect it after it has entered one’s mouth,” Xian

Yushi said.

The woman that had asked Chu Feng a question earlier said, “Young Master Yushi, I am not finding fault with you. But, even if you cannot eat it, you shouldn’t find such an excuse. Back when I was a playful kid, I had tried a bit of the Black Lotus Goo. Although I was unable to swallow it, it was only because the Black Lotus Goo was too sticky, and not because of any special smell.”

“That’s right. I also tried to eat the Black Lotus Goo before too. Although it was extremely sticky, it was indeed not smelly,” Many people echoed in succession.

“Xian Yushi, what else do you have to say?” At that moment, Princess Lingyue became even angrier.

“It’s true. I am not lying. It might be that you all have only attempted to eat a small amount that you did not smell it. But this Black Lotus Goo here really does possess that smell. If you don’t trust me, you can give it a try yourself,” Xian Yushi said as he pointed to the Black Lotus Goo on the ground that he had just vomited.

“Xian Yushi, you actually want me to eat what you’ve vomited?! You are simply insulting me!” Princess Lingyue was truly angered. She loudly shouted, “Men, take this Xian Yushi to the Spirit Beasts Room. He is to clean the feces from the Spirit Beasts Room for thirty days. He is not allowed to use any special techniques or tools. He must use his hands to clean up the feces.”

“Yes,” After Princess Lingyue’s command was given, an aged figure appeared out of thin air and descended beside Xian Yushi.

Chu Feng’s eyes shone upon seeing this man. Wasn’t this the same old man that was standing at the front of the warship yesterday?

Rank five Martial Emperor. It turned out that this old man was actually a rank five Martial Emperor. He was an expert of the same

level as Zhang Tianyi's father Zhang Ming and Duan Jidao.

With how powerful he was, it was no wonder that he would act so proud and haughty. However... an expert this powerful was actually complying to Princess Lingyue's command like an attendant.

“Big sis Lingyue, I was wrong. Please spare me, please spare me.”

At that moment, Xian Yushi was begging for forgiveness nonstop. However, that old man simply ignored him. He grabbed him and then soared into the sky. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared. The only thing that remained was the echo of Xian Yushi's begging voice.

Unfortunately, his begging was unable to move anything.

At that moment, Chu Feng was sneering in his heart. Indeed, ordinary Black Lotus Goo did not have any smell. However, the one that Xian Yushi was eating earlier did possess a disgusting smell. As for the reason why, it was naturally because of Chu Feng. Chu Feng had altered the Black Lotus Goo.

“Xian Yushi was truly spoiled by his older brother. He actually wanted Princess Lingyue to...!!!” After Xian Yushi was taken away, the crowd that didn't know the truth sighed, then stepped forward and began to talk about it.

Even though it looked as if they were speaking the truth, Chu Feng was able to tell that they were adding details to their story. From this, it could be seen that Xian Yushi seemed to not have a good relationship with others.

“I have already given him the appropriate punishment. There is no need to mention this matter again,” Princess Lingyue waved her hand. At that moment, she no longer had an angry expression on her face.

‘This Princess Lingyue is quite remarkable,’ Chu Feng thought to himself. Earlier, Princess Lingyue was clearly so enraged that her

complexion turned deep red and she was emitting an ominous glint. At that time, she was truly terrifying.

However, in merely the blink of an eye, her complexion turned rosy, and she had become as undisturbed as before. It was as if nothing had happened. This meant that she was merely pretending to be angry earlier.

Princess Lingyue turned to Chu Feng and asked, “Chu Feng, you wish to obtain Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers?”

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“How many?” Princess Lingyue asked.

“A single one would suffice,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, follow me,” As Princess Lingyue spoke, she soared into the sky. Chu Feng hurriedly followed her.

Princess Lingyue brought Chu Feng to Xian Miaomiao’s palace. Upon seeing that extraordinary palace, even Chu Feng’s gaze started to shine with astonishment.

“Chu Feng, it is not up to me to decide whether or not you can obtain a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower. Instead, it will be decided by the person in that place,” Princess Lingyue smiled brilliantly at Chu Feng. Then, she turned around and left.

Chu Feng understood Princess Lingyue’s intentions. Thus, he arrived before the palace and knocked lightly on the gate. He said, “I am Chu Feng. I have come with a request.”

“Come on in,” An alluring female’s voice entered Chu Feng’s ears. This voice was truly enticing. Hearing that voice, Chu Feng started to have goose bumps. This caused Chu Feng to feel that the situation might be bad.

However, for the sake of the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, Chu Feng opened the entrance and entered the palace hall.

Right after Chu Feng entered the palace hall, the door closed by

itself.

At the moment when the entrance closed, a fragrance assailed Chu Feng's nose. All this pointed to something being amiss.

However, Chu Feng still turned his gaze toward the depths of the palace hall. The reason for that was because there was a crystal curtain at that place. Although the crystal curtain was able to obstruct one's line of sight, Chu Feng knew that there was someone there.

Chu Feng clasp his fist and said, "I am Chu Feng. I have come here for the sake of requesting a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower."

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, that crystal curtain suddenly opened. In the moment when that crystal curtain opened, Chu Feng's eyes immediately shone.

An Ancient Era's Elf appeared before Chu Feng. It was a female. A beauty, an extremely beautiful woman. She was someone with beauty on par with Princess Lingyue. Her sexy body and beautiful face were extremely alluring.

Especially her blonde hair, blue eyes, pointed ears and that special air which she emitted. She was completely different from humans, and that made her all the more enchanting.

Most importantly, this beautiful Ancient Era's Elf was actually naked. She was not wearing anything at all. She had completely exposed her sexy curves and fair skin to Chu Feng.

With such a beautiful woman before him, even Chu Feng was unable to stop his heartbeat from accelerating and his blood vessels from expanding. It was only because Chu Feng's tolerance was good. If it was any other man, they would have already spurted blood from their nose and lost control.

"Woah! What sort of situation is this?" At this moment, even

Eggy was unable to contain herself from crying out in alarm.

“You’re not afraid of me?” Seeing that Chu Feng’s gaze did not shift from her, and was instead earnestly sizing up her body, the Ancient Era’s Elf revealed an expression of surprise. She did not expect that Chu Feng would be this daring.

“What’s there to be afraid of?” Chu Feng’s lips lifted into a nefarious smile. Then, he gathered his courage and began to walk toward that Ancient Era’s Elf.

Seeing Chu Feng walking toward her, that Ancient Era’s Elf that was clearly enticing Chu Feng actually started to cower. As her eyes flickered, she turned around. It was as if she was trying to escape.

“Woosh~~~”

However, Chu Feng did not give her the opportunity to escape. He leapt, arrived before her and grabbed her fragrant shoulders.

At that moment, that Ancient Era’s Elf’s body shivered. She was staring at Chu Feng with her blue eyes. Once again, she asked, “You’re really not afraid of me?”

Chapter 1891 – It's You

“Scared? Why would I be scared of a mere spirit formation?”

Chu Feng smiled again. Then, the palm with which he was grabbing that beauty trembled slightly. Like sharp blades, his spirit power pierced into that beauty's body.

“Buzz~~~”

At that moment, that beauty's expression turned stiff. Then, her body started to become fuzzy. The very next moment, she turned into countless rays of light; and her body started to disappear.

When the light dissipated, that beauty had completely disappeared. However, a doll had appeared in Chu Feng's hand. That doll was extremely exquisite in appearance, and looked exactly the same as the beauty from before. Like her, that doll was also naked.

It turned out that, that naked beauty was simply not an Ancient Era's Elf at all. Rather, she was a doll created by spirit formation.

“So boring. It was actually seen through at a single glance,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao leapt out with her mouth pouting and a depressed expression on her face.

Upon seeing Xian Miaomiao, Chu Feng was shocked. Although this Xian Miaomiao was still only a young girl, she was even more beautiful than the doll.

The Ancient Era's Elves all possessed exceptional beauty. Their men were as beautiful as women, and their women were as beautiful as celestial fairies. Yet, Xian Miaomiao was definitely the most beautiful Ancient Era's Elf that Chu Feng had seen so far.

Her skin was white, yet rosy. It was as if it was made of jade. Her face was a standard oval shape. When combined with her delicate, ruby-lipped mouth and her perky little nose, she was truly exceptionally beautiful.

In addition to her own beauty, the dress that she was wearing was also extremely beautiful. It was a white short dress with pink laces. It looked both clean and natural, both noble and charming. Especially that pair of beautiful legs extending out from the dress's little skirt, one would inevitably feel endlessly aroused upon looking at them.

At that moment, Chu Feng faintly felt the same sort of stunned sensation that he had felt the first time he had met Her Lady Queen.

However, the two women were different. Although Her Lady Queen possessed a cute and charming oval-shaped face, she was exceptionally sexy. At the same time, she did not lose any of her innocent charm. When combined with her refined facial features, she was simply perfect. There was definitely no man that could remain unaroused after seeing Her Lady Queen.

The reason for that was because Her Lady Queen possessed what men were fond of. She was a natural beauty, a flawless, dream-like beauty.

However, as for the young girl before him, although she also possessed an oval-shaped face and an exceptional figure, she did not possess a trace of sexiness, nor did she possess the cold airs of being unobtainable. The feeling that she emitted could be described with two words — fresh and pure.

This was especially true for her beautiful eyes. They were filled with spirit and cleverness.

If Her Lady Queen's appearance could baffle all living things and make all men drool for her, then the young girl before Chu Feng was more like a beautiful pearl that one would want to hold in one's hands and carefully admire.

Thus, this Xian Miaomiao possessed a very distinguishing beauty. Even someone like Chu Feng who had seen countless beauties was unable to help his heartbeat from accelerating and his mind from

wandering the moment he saw Xian Miaomiao.

However, more than anything, Chu Feng was shocked by Xian Miaomiao's cultivation. She was actually a rank three Martial Emperor. However, judging from her appearance, she should only be fifteen or sixteen years old. To possess this cultivation at her age, that was simply too frightening.

“What a powerful girl. Could she be that Ancient Era's Elve's super genius?” At that moment, even Her Lady Queen was deeply affected by Xian Miaomiao.

Chu Feng clasped his fist and asked, “Excuse me, may I ask who you might be?”

“What's wrong, you don't recognize me?” Seeing Chu Feng looking at her with a curious expression, Xian Miaomiao revealed a brimming sweet smile on her previously-depressed face.

“We've met before?” Chu Feng started to frown. He began to carefully inspect Xian Miaomiao again, and ascertained that it was really the first time that he had met her. As such, they should not have met each other before.

That being said, Chu Feng felt a weird sense of familiarity from Xian Miaomiao. Although it was very faint, he still felt that he had met her before. Merely, he could not recall where he had met her.

“Cough, cough,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao stood there with a deadpan expression. Then, she suddenly turned around, pretended to have a male's voice and shouted, “Hey, little lady, you haven't told me your name yet.”

After she finished saying those words, Xian Miaomiao suddenly leapt several meters away. She turned around and exposed a sweet and slightly naughty smile. She said, “I'm not telling you.”

“It's you?” At that moment, Chu Feng's gaze shone, and he had a sudden realization.

He recalled how he had met a little girl in the Ancient Era's

Immortal Pond not long after arriving in the Holy Land of Martialism.

That little girl had stolen another's possessions and was being chased by them. It was Chu Feng who had acted to save her.

Before that girl left, Chu Feng had asked her about her name. Merely, she did not mention her name to Chu Feng. As for the dialogue between them, it was precisely the same as the one that this young girl before him had imitated.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled. At that moment, he was practically certain that this exceptionally beautiful and talented girl before his eye should be the Ancient Era's Elves' renowned little princess.

Merely, Chu Feng truly did not expect for this little princess to be the same little girl who was being chased by humans in the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond.

Chu Feng began to ponder. If those people that were chasing after the little princess were to know that the little girl that they were chasing that day was the Ancient Era's Elves' incomparably high and precious little princess, what sort of reaction would they have? Likely, they would faint from fear. Perhaps they might even piss their pants on the spot.

"Haha, you've finally remembered. Seems like your memory is not that bad either," Xian Miaomiao had her hands behind her back as she walked toward Chu Feng. After arriving before Chu Feng, she nodded in satisfaction.

"Of course I remember. Even though we've only met once, I have a very deep impression of you. Back then... you had the appearance of a human. It would seem that you had altered your true appearance," Chu Feng said.

"My appearance altering technique is amazing, no? Even you, a world spiritist who is able to see through my enticing beautiful doll

with a single glance was unable to see through my appearance altering technique,” Xian Miaomiao snatched the doll away from Chu Feng. However, suddenly, she said somewhat unhappily, “While the test ended up in a failure and you’ve managed to see through this doll of mine, it cannot prove that you are not lecherous, nor does it mean that you have no ulterior interest in our Ancient Era’s Elves’ women.”

“Oh you. Do I really look like a lecher?” Chu Feng said helplessly.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly looked to Chu Feng. Her pair of blue eyes began to carefully inspect Chu Feng. Then, with a serious expression on her face, she nodded and said, “You do.”

“Pff...”

At that moment, even Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and ended up bursting into laughter because of that Xian Miaomiao. Even though he knew that the young girl before him was the Ancient Era’s Elves’ most respected little princess, Chu Feng did not feel any sense of restraint before her. Instead, he felt an indescribable sort of closeness.

“Little Princess, you should be able to tell me your name now, no?” Chu Feng asked. He was actually extremely grateful toward this little princess.

Before, Chu Feng was confused as to why Princess Lingyue would help him. However, after meeting this little princess, he knew the reason why. Everything was all because of this girl before him.

Xian Miaomiao sighed. “Why do people all like to ask each other’s names? Are names really that important?” She seemed to not want to tell Chu Feng her name.

“Of course one’s name is important. A name will allow one to remember another person. Else, why would you ask my name

when you left back then?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s true. Very well then, I’ll tell you my name. However, you must remember that you absolutely cannot tell anyone else. Else, I will not let you get away with it,” Xian Miaomiao moved her little fists around and feigned a very vicious appearance as she said that. However, she was actually extremely adorable.

Chu Feng raised his hand and vowed, “I swear that I will not mention your name to anyone even if I am to be killed.”

“That’s more like it,” Xian Miaomiao smiled sweetly. Then, she said one word at a time, “Remember it, this Princess’s name is Xian... Miao... Miao.”

Chapter 1892 – Blood Devouring Armor

“Xian Miaomiao?” Chu Feng was stunned upon hearing that name. Then, with a suspicious expression on his face, he looked to Xian Miaomiao and asked, “You’re not lying to me, right?”

“Why would I lie to you? I’m not lying to you.”

“Wait, why would you think that I’m lying to you? Aiyah, are you looking down on my name?” Xian Miaomiao bulged her cheeks in anger.

“Haha, of course not, how could I dare?”

“Merely... the name Xian Miaomiao, it’s, eh... very good, very good.” Chu Feng waved his hand repeatedly. However, he truly felt that the name Xian Miaomiao was very interesting. Such a playful name, no matter how one looked at it, it did not resemble the name that a grand Ancient Era’s Elves’ Princess would have. However, Chu Feng trusted that Xian Miaomiao was not deceiving him.

“Seems like the two of you are getting along pretty well,” Right at that moment, Princess Lingyue opened the door and entered. That old rank five Martial Emperor was following behind her.

“Big sister, Uncle Yue, you’ve come. I have already prepared a banquet and have been waiting for you two,” Upon seeing Princess Lingyue and the old man, Xian Miaomiao clapped her hands excitedly. Then, she ran toward the inside of the palace hall.

“You little glutton,” Princess Lingyue shook her head with a smile. Then, she looked to Chu Feng and said, “Young master Chu Feng, please. It is rare for that girl Miaomiao to invite me to eat. For me to obtain such treatment, it is all because of your fortune.”

“Your Highness is being too courteous. You can just address me as Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“Even if I am being courteous, it’s only because young master

Chu Feng was courteous first,” Princess Lingyue said with a smile.

“Ahh...” At that moment, Chu Feng smiled. He did not say anything, and instead proceeded toward the inside of the palace hall.

Afterward, Chu Feng enjoyed a banquet in the palace hall. It was an extremely rich meal. After the banquet, Chu Feng was brought by that Uncle Yue to a palace set up for him to rest in.

At that moment, only Princess Lingyue and Xian Miaomiao remained in the tree palace.

“How was it? Did he pass your test?” Princess Lingyue asked.

“Barely,” Xian Miaomiao said carelessly.

“In that case, how many Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers do you plan to give him?” Princess Lingyue asked.

“He only barely passed. Thus, I naturally cannot give him too many. Just give him like a hundred,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“What?” Hearing that word, even the generally calm and collected Princess Lingyue was shocked.

“Miaomiao, what sort of nonsense are you talking about? In our entire Elf Kingdom, we only possess several thousand Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers.”

“When the Compass Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal came here to ask for Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers, we only presented them with one each. Even when the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the YinYang Immortal came to ask for them, we only gave them five each.”

“Even back when our royal father decided to thank the Immeasurable Immortal for helping us open an Ancient Era’s Remnant, he had only put ten Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers in the gift that he personally prepared.”

“Even though this Chu Feng possesses exceptional talent, his

status is much inferior to those Immortals. It is more than sufficient for you to gift him five Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers. Yet, you actually wanted to give him a hundred? If the elders are to learn about this, they will also not agree to it,” Princess Lingyue said in a very shocked manner.

“Aiyah, big sister, it is true that we do not have a lot of Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers, but don’t we still have several thousands of them? Furthermore, Chu Feng is going to use them to save someone. So what if we are to give him several more? Back then, he helped me. If he hadn’t helped me, your little sister, I, would have been beaten by others,” Xiao Miaomiao said.

“Nonsense! Although your cultivation back then was much inferior to your current cultivation, you were still not someone that group of people could do anything to. Furthermore, Uncle Qing was also with you. Not to mention a mere Cyanwood Domain, there was barely anyone in the entire Holy Land of Martialism that could touch you,” Princess Lingyue said.

“But, big sister, if my cultivation was as weak as that of an ordinary little girl, and if Uncle Qing had not secretly followed me to protect me?”

“If that was the case, then, if Chu Feng had not helped me back then, what do you think would’ve happened to me?” Xian Miaomiao said with a serious expression.

“This...” Princess Lingyue sighed, “Forget about it. A hundred it is then. I knew that you possessed special feelings for that Chu Feng. It’s no wonder you always mention him.”

“As for our royal father and the elders, I’ll go and help you talk to them,” In the end, Princess Lingyue gave in. The reason for that was because she knew that regardless of whether Xian Miaomiao possessed the strength to protect herself back then, she was someone without any strength to protect herself in the eyes of Chu Feng. Thus, Chu Feng had indeed helped her.

Princess Lingyue cared deeply about her younger sister. Since her younger sister wanted to gift Chu Feng a hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers as her repayment for his grace, she had no choice but to accept it unconditionally.

“I knew big sister was the best,” Xian Miaomiao grabbed onto Princess Lingyue’s arm extremely happily.

“Oh, that’s right. Miaomiao, the Blood Devouring Armor is completed,” Princess Lingyue asked.

“Really? How many?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“Two,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Aiyah, didn’t I say one would be enough? Why make so many?” Xian Miaomiao curled her lips in a dissatisfied manner.

“It’s naturally so that we can have someone protecting you,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Protect me? That Xian Yuyin? While it is true that his cultivation has greatly increased after he subdued an Imperial Armament, and he has become a rank three Martial Emperor like me, big sister, you should know that Xian Yuyin is no match for me.”

“As such, how could he possibly protect me? It would already be great if I don’t have to protect him instead. Furthermore, you also know that... I loathe him,” Xian Miaomiao said angrily.

“Your big sister also dislikes him. However, this matter was decided by father and the elders. After all, the Blood Devouring Armor is only something that the younger generation can wear. Furthermore, among our Ancient Era’s Elves’ younger generation, only Xian Yuyin is able to accompany you into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Younger generation?” Hearing the words ‘younger generation,’ Xian Miaomiao’s expression changed to one of joy. She said, “Big sister, I have a candidate that’s even more suitable than Xian

Yuyin.”

“You’re not talking about Chu Feng, right?” Princess Lingyue started to frown.

“Mn, mn, mn, mn,” Xian Miaomiao nodded her head repeatedly while smiling beamingly.

“Oh you. Chu Feng is not an Ancient Era’s Elf. How could he...?”

“Big sister, just help me with it. If I must be accompanied by Xian Yuyin, I’d rather not go,” Xian Miaomiao turned around angrily.

“Miaomiao, stop with your temper. You should know how important the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flower is to you. There’s most definitely an Ancient Era’s Immortal Flower in that Blood Devouring Killing Formation,” Princess Lingyue urged.

Xian Miaomiao suddenly turned around and grabbed the corner of Princess Lingyue’s clothes. She said in a pitiful manner, “Then, big sister, just help me talk to them and let them have Chu Feng accompany me.”

Seeing her little sister acting like this, Princess Lingyue was truly at a loss. She knew Xian Miaomiao’s temperament. If she refused to help her, Xian Miaomiao might really rather not go. Thus, with no other choice, Princess Lingyue sighed and said helplessly, “I truly cannot deal with you. I’ll try my best.”

“Haha, I knew big sister was the best,” Xian Miaomiao hugged Princess Lingyue’s arm again tightly and started to swing it back and forth in joy.

.....

Spirit Beasts, they were a sort of special organism from the Ancient Era. However, they were not fierce at all. Merely, their speed was extremely fast, and they had appearances similar to those of leopards. Generally, they would be around five meters long. Since very long ago, they had been domesticated by Ancient Era’s Elves.

The Ancient Era's Elves had used special methods to erase their intelligence and named them Spirit Beasts. Currently, they were a special means of transportation limited to the Elf Kingdom.

Inside the Spirit Beasts Room. Xian Yushi was in that place. His body was extremely stinky. Beside him stood a man. This man was also someone from the younger generation. However, he possessed the cultivation of a rank three Martial Emperor.

Xian Yuyin was originally a rank one Martial Emperor. After the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly held in the Gong Ba Plains, he reached a breakthrough to rank two Martial Emperor and was awarded an Imperial Armament. Then, using the Ancient Era's Spirit Formation in the Elf Kingdom, he successfully subdued the Imperial Armament. With that, his cultivation increased once again. That was how he became the rank three Martial Emperor he was today.

Before the emergence of Xian Miaomiao, he had always been the strongest member of the younger generation in the Elf Kingdom. He was Xian Yushi's own blood brother.

"Big brother, you must uphold justice for me. It is all because of that Chu Feng that I ended up suffering this sort of humiliation," Xian Yushi had told Xian Yuyin all that had happened today.

"Little brother, rest assured. I will definitely not let that Chu Feng get away with this. Merely, I still cannot go against Princess Lingyue yet. The reason for that is because your brother, I, have obtained a heavy responsibility. I'll be entering the Blood Devouring Killing Formation together with Princess Miaomiao to search for the Ancient Era's Immortal Flower," Xian Yuyin said.

"Big brother, is what you said for real?" Hearing those words, Xian Yushi was overjoyed. He seemed to have forgotten the grievances he had suffered today.

"Of course. You also know that due to the title of the strongest younger generation, I ended up in a disagreement with Princess

Miaomiao. Because of that, she dislikes me a lot. However, Princess Miaomiao is currently our Ancient Era's Elves' widely accepted successor to the King."

"Thus, I must improve my relationship with her. To accompany her in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation this time around will be a great opportunity for me to get closer to her."

"Not only must I improve my relationship with her, I will also use this opportunity to bring our relationship one step further. I am going to become her husband. As long as I become her man, even if she is to become the Queen, the person with the actual authority will be me."

"At that time, even if that bitch Lingyue is Miaomiao's older blood sister, she will also have to do as I say and be ordered by me."

"As for that Chu Feng, humph, he's a mere human. Whenever I want him to die, he shall die at that time. However I want him to die, he shall die in that manner," After saying those words, Xian Yuyin revealed a treacherous smile.

"Your little brother is willing to follow big brother for the rest of his life," At that moment, with a 'putt,' Xian Yushi knelt before his own older brother to show his loyalty. He also knew that this was no small matter. If his brother succeeded, he would also enjoy endless glory.

"Hahaha..." Seeing his younger brother acting like this, the smile on Xian Yuyin's face grew even denser. It was as if he could already see the scene of him becoming the King in the future.

Chapter 1893 – Mischievous Girl

That evening, Xian Miaomiao personally arrived at Chu Feng's palace to visit him. She had brought a hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers with her as her gift to Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that there were a total of a hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers, Chu Feng immediately felt extremely grateful. After all, back when the Compass Immortal came to the Elf Kingdom to request for Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers, he had only managed to receive a single flower.

Furthermore, it seemed that he would not be allowed to request another one for the rest of his life. This was also the reason why the Compass Immortal himself had not come here, and instead asked Chu Feng to go. The reason for that was because even if he were to go, he would not be able to successfully request a Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower.

From this, it could be seen that the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers were very precious even in the Elf Kingdom, and not something that they would casually gift to others.

For Xian Miaomiao to directly gift Chu Feng a hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers at once, it clearly illustrated her generosity.

“Princess Miaomiao, a single flower is all I need. These hundred flowers, they're a bit too numerous,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng knew that Xian Miaomiao might be feeling grateful toward him for what he had done back then. Thus, she was giving him a hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers in order to repay him. However, Chu Feng felt that it was truly too much.

Especially when the hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers were placed before him, Chu Feng was able to realize how valuable these flowers were from their peacock-tail-like beauty.

Indeed, they were extremely precious items. If one was to auction them, one would definitely be able to sell them for an extremely high price. Furthermore, they were the sort of item whose supply would not meet demand.

“To refuse what is given you, are you stupid?” Xian Miaomiao cast a side eye at Chu Feng after seeing that he was actually refusing them. However, she soon smiled sweetly and said, “Just accept them. I actually also have a request for you.”

“May I know what it might be?” Chu Feng asked.

“Accompany me to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Blood Devouring Killing Formation? Are you talking about one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Three Great Forbidden Areas, that Blood Devouring Killing Formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“Other than that, is there any other Blood Devouring Killing Formation?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“You really want me to accompany you there?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course. This princess has considered it carefully,” Xian Miaomiao nodded.

“Very well,” Chu Feng accepted straightforwardly.

“You’re actually not asking me why I want you to accompany me, or my purpose in having you accompany me there? You must know that, that place is no ordinary place; it’s one of the most dangerous locations in the Holy Land of Martialism,” Xian Miaomiao was shocked by how Chu Feng had accepted her request so frankly.

As for Chu Feng, he smiled lightly and said, “It’s precisely because that place is dangerous that the fact that you requested me to accompany you means that you trust me greatly. Since you have placed such trust in me, that means that you’ve considered me as your friend. As such, I will naturally consider you my friend too.

For friends, one should naturally give one's all to assist them, to the point of sacrificing oneself."

"Is that so? Very well, [I'll stab you twice first](#)," As Xian Miaomiao said this, she held her two little fists up, pretended to be holding blades, and stabbed at Chu Feng's two ribs.

"Oh you, it's merely an analogy. Yet, you're actually taking it literally," Chu Feng lightly flicked Xian Miaomiao's forehead. The reason for that was because this little girl's two fists actually kind of hurt when they suddenly landed on Chu Feng's ribs.

"Hahaha, are you afraid now? This princess is extremely powerful," Xian Miaomiao smiled complacently. Then, she began to give an account to Chu Feng of her purpose in going to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

Xian Miaomiao's body was somewhat special. She was extremely powerful the moment she was born, greatly surpassing the power that ordinary Ancient Era's Elves would be born with.

However, ordinary cultivation resources were useless for her. She could only increase her cultivation by relying on Natural Energies.

Upon discovering this, Chu Feng was extremely shocked. Just thinking about how Xian Miaomiao's frightening cultivation was all obtained by herself [through training](#) was truly too shocking.

However, that was actually not true. There was actually a type of cultivation resource that could help Xian Miaomiao increase her cultivation. As for that, it was the Ancient Era's Immortal Flower.

The Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were precious cultivation treasures from the Ancient Era. Merely, Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were colorless, odorless and even formless. It was practically impossible for ordinary people to discover them.

However, Xian Miaomiao possessed a special sort of detection ability. As long as a place contained an Ancient Era's Immortal

Flower, she would be able to detect it. Furthermore, within a certain range, she would be able to discover the Ancient Era's Immortal Flower.

Although the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were from the Ancient Era, there were quite a few in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

Over the years, Xian Miaomiao had been constantly on the move through various ancient lands and ruins all for the sake of finding Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers. As matters stood, she had practically traveled through all the places in the Holy Land of Martialism that she could travel to and searched through all the places that she could search. Although she had obtained quite a harvest, she was now faced with being unable to find any more Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers.

As of now, she was certain that there were Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers in the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Furthermore, they would be there in large quantity. If she was able to obtain them, it would definitely be an enormous harvest for her.

However, it was no joke that the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was known to be one of the Three Great Forbidden Areas. This was especially true for the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. That place contained enormous pressure. Furthermore, that pressure was extremely strange. It led to even the Elf Kingdom's Elf King being unable to enter that place.

However, in the depths of that Blood Devouring Killing Formation lived a special sort of insect. That insect was not afraid of the strange pressure. Due to the fact that, that insect was the only organism living in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, it was named the Blood Devouring Insect.

For the sake of entering the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation and obtaining the Ancient Era's Immortal

Flower, the Elf King, Xian Miaomiao's father, had sought the assistance of one of the Ten Immortals, the Immeasurable Immortal.

The Immeasurable Immortal was someone equally as famous as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. He was one of the most influential World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism.

If the strongest aspect of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was his weaponry refinement, then the strongest aspect of the Immeasurable Immortal would be in a wondrous spirit formation which he had grasped. He was able to use rare treasures to forge the strongest defensive armors.

Thus, the Elf King had requested for the Immeasurable Immortal to use the Blood Devouring Insects to form an armor that could resist that strange pressure so that one could enter the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

Currently, with the effort from the Immeasurable Immortal, he had finished forging the Blood Devouring Armor. Furthermore, he had made two suits of the armor.

However, due to the special characteristics of the Blood Devouring Insects, the Immeasurable Immortal had mentioned before he had even started forging the armor that even if he were to succeed, those who could enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation must be of the younger generation. That is, under a hundred years old. If they were over a hundred years old, even when wearing the armor, they would not be able to conceal their auras. As long as their own auras were exposed, they would be crushed to death by that strange pressure.

Thus, with the current situation, it must be two people from the younger generation who would don the Blood Devouring Armor and enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Originally, it had been decided that Xian Miaomiao and Xian Yuyin would be the ones to go in. However, Xian Miaomiao deeply detested Xian

Yuyin. Thus, she wanted Chu Feng to go with her instead.

“No problem,” After learning of the situation, Chu Feng nodded his head straightforwardly.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly wonderful,” Xian Miaomiao was extremely happy. After all, the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was a place where even the peak experts of the Holy Land of Martialism feared. To enter that place would mean that one would place one’s life in great danger. If ordinary people were to hear the words ‘Blood Devouring Killing Formation’, their expressions would immediately change to ones of fear.

Yet Chu Feng, even though he knew that it was a place filled with danger still agreed to accompany her without the slightest hesitation. This caused Xian Miaomiao to ineffably feel a sort of warmth.

“Merely, I have a condition,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“I have come to ask for Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers for the sake of saving someone. Thus, I must bring the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers back first. I will accompany you to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation afterward,” Chu Feng said.

“This...” Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao started to frown. Her mouth started to pout, and she revealed an expression of difficulty.

Seeing her appearance, Chu Feng started to worry. Chu Feng was able to tell that Xian Miaomiao possessed some hidden trouble that was hard to mention.

However, right at that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly started to grin from ear to ear. With a beaming smile, she said to Chu Feng, “No problem.”

“Oh you, you’re actually toying with me,” At that moment, Chu

Feng gave Xian Miaomiao an enormous side eye. Evidently, the difficult expression that she had earlier was feigned. She was deliberately fooling Chu Feng.

That being said, Chu Feng had to admire this girl's acting skills. It was truly too real. Even Chu Feng was unable to see through her act. He had been defeated by this mischievous little girl.

In chinese, to be able to sacrifice oneself for one's friend is said literally as 'pierced by blades from both sides,'

Remember, there's 2 ways for cultivators to increase their energy to level up. 1 is by gathering natural energies in their bodies, and the other is to get external energies through cultivation resources. Chu Feng is only capable of doing the latter since cultivators gather energy very slowly... so he will not be able to level up using the former, as he requires too much energy.

Chapter 1894 – Shocking Sentence

The next day, Chu Feng arrived at the Ancient Era's Elves' most respected palace hall, the Ancient Era's Palace, with Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue.

As its name implied, the Ancient Era's Palace was a palace that had existed since the Ancient Era.

Not only was this palace extremely gorgeous and magnificent, it was also one of the Elf Kingdom's very few perfectly preserved palaces from the Ancient Era. Thus, this palace emitted the aura of the Ancient Era from all over.

When one entered that palace, one would immediately feel a deep veneration for the palace itself.

At that moment, many people had arrived at this palace hall. They were all extremely influential grand characters in the Holy Land of Martialism.

The Elf King, the Four Grand Elders, and the Eight Protectors...

They were the most powerful battle power of the Elf Kingdom, and also the most frightening battle power in the Holy Land of Martialism right now. At that moment, they were all gathered in this Ancient Era's Palace.

Upon entering the palace, the first person who entered Chu Feng's line of sight was the person sitting on the master seat, the Elf King.

Upon seeing the Elf King, even Chu Feng's eyes started to shine, and his hair started to rise.

Powerful. Even though the Elf King had the appearance of a middle-aged man, was very handsome and appeared to be amiable, the ruler's aura that he emitted was able to penetrate through one's heart. From a single glance, one could tell how powerful of an existence he was.

Furthermore, his king's aura was even better manifested as he was wearing a crown on his head, golden clothes and a suit of soft green armor.

There was currently no Overlord in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, even in the eras with Overlords, those Overlords might not necessarily be the strongest person in the Holy Land of Martialism.

The reason for that was because, other than the Three Palaces, Four Clans and Nine Powers, as well as the various monstrous beast powers, there was still the unsurpassed Elf Kingdom.

Reportedly, of the Five Overlords, only Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian, had managed to actually defeat an Elf King.

From this, it could be seen how powerful the Elf Kingdom was. Perhaps the Elf King before Chu Feng might be the strongest individual in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

However, this strongest individual did not emit that air of arrogance of being high and above. Upon seeing that Chu Feng had entered the place, the other Ancient Era's Elves all revealed expressions of surprise. However, the Elf King, the person with the most precious status, was the only person to actually nod and smile at Chu Feng. This caused Chu Feng to feel a considerable amount of warmth.

As they say, dragons birth dragons, phoenixes birth phoenixes, and the son of a rat will know how to dig a hole. At that moment, Chu Feng was deeply experiencing that saying.

It was no wonder that Princess Lingyue and Xian Miaomiao were so amiable. It turned out that they actually possessed a great role model.

Other than the Elf King, the four aged Elders and the Elf Kingdom's Eight Protectors all revealed expressions of displeasure upon seeing Chu Feng. This was especially true for one among the

Protectors, a man with a scar on his left eye. After he saw Chu Feng, he did not even bother to cover the disgust and hatred in his eyes.

“That man over there with a scar over his left eye is Xian Yuyin’s father. As for that guy there, he’s Xian Yuyin,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was secretly pointing out Xian Yuyin and his father to Chu Feng.

Following the direction that Xian Miaomiao had indicated to him, Chu Feng saw a young man seated below. That was Xian Yuyin. Merely, after Xian Yuyin saw Chu Feng, the hatred and disgust that he revealed in his eyes was actually even more intense than his father’s. Not only that, there was also envy in his eyes.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled in his heart. Chu Feng was able to understand the envy that Xian Yuyin had toward him.

Without even thinking about it, Chu Feng knew for certain that Princess Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue were most definitely two of the most beautiful women in the Elf Kingdom, the sweethearts in the dreams of countless men.

And now, these two princesses appeared together with Chu Feng. Furthermore, Xian Miaomiao was whispering to Chu Feng in such an intimate manner. It would instead be strange if that Xian Yuyin was not jealous.

Chu Feng did not mind the peculiar gazes that were cast towards him. Those high and above would generally look down on others they perceived to be inferior to them. When even the humans were this way, how could the Ancient Era’s Elves, a race that had existed from the Ancient Era and possessed a noble lineage, possibly not act in such a manner? Let alone these people present, that were of the very best of the Elf Kingdom.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt their true might. Perhaps this might be the strongest battle power in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

This sort of sensation felt quite decent. Chu Feng was not afraid of this sort of pressure. Instead, he felt joy because of it.

When facing those that were strong, Chu Feng would feel as if his blood was boiling. It would drive him to become even stronger faster.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that Chu Feng was not the only human in this Ancient Era's Palace. Other than Chu Feng, there were two other humans.

They were two Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. One among them possessed a very powerful aura, so strong that Chu Feng was actually unable to see through his cultivation. Likely, that world spiritist should be the person who was equally as famous as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal.

When the Immeasurable Immortal saw Chu Feng, he also smiled and nodded. He had a very amiable appearance.

As for the other man, although he also appeared to be very amiable toward Chu Feng, Chu Feng was able to feel deep killing intent from him.

This person was someone that Chu Feng recognized. He was the most infamous Immortal in the Holy Land of Martialism, the Avaricious Immortal.

"Chu Feng, that Avaricious Immortal is the Immeasurable Immortal's junior brother. Although it is the Immeasurable Immortal who forged the Blood Devouring Armor, the Avaricious Immortal also helped," Seemingly knowing that Chu Feng was on bad terms with the Avaricious Immortal, Princess Lingyue spoke to Chu Feng through a voice transmission.

"It's no bother," Chu Feng smiled in reply. Although he possessed hatred toward the Avaricious Immortal, even if the two of them were absolutely irreconcilable, Chu Feng would still not

settle his debt with the Avaricious Immortal in the Elf Kingdom's territory.

At that moment, Xian Yuyin exploded. "Chu Feng, you are truly audacious! Is this a place that someone like you can enter? Scram immediately!" He spoke to drive Chu Feng out. Hearing those words, the guards outside the door started to move. They had the intention to arrest Chu Feng and drive him out.

"Chu Feng is my guest. I shall see who dares to drive him out," Xian Miaomiao said coldly. Her tone was extremely domineering.

After Xian Miaomiao spoke, the guards outside the door immediately returned to their original positions. Furthermore, they all revealed fear on their faces.

Compared to Xian Yuyin, the weight of Xian Miaomiao's words was much heavier.

"Miaomiao, this is the Ancient Era's Palace. How could humans be allowed in here?" Xian Yuyin said. Compared to how he spoke to Chu Feng, his attitude was much better when he spoke to Xian Miaomiao. In fact, he seemed to have an attitude of conceding to her.

However, Xian Miaomiao was still completely ruthless toward him. "Are you saying that the Immeasurable Immortal and the Avaricious Immortal are not humans?"

"How could this be compared? The two Immortals have done us a meritorious service by forging the Blood Devouring Armor. They were personally invited here by the King. How could Chu Feng possibly compare to the two Immortals?" Xian Yuyan said.

Right at that moment, Xian Yuyin's father suddenly said, "Enough. Yuyin, as a big brother, you should yield to your little sister,"

After hearing what his father said, Xian Yuyin seemed to have understood something. Not only did he not say anything anymore,

he instead revealed a slight smile.

“Miaomiao, you also spoke wrongly too. As your uncle, I should properly fix your attitude.”

“After all, Yuyin is your big brother. When speaking to him, you should show some respect. Furthermore, the two of you are about to be alone with one another for some time. If you are to act this way, as your uncle, I will not be at ease,” Xian Yuyin’s father said to Xian Miaomiao.

“That’s right. Miaomiao, in the entire Elf Kingdom, you and Yuyin match one another the best. As such, the two of you should get along with one another well. Stop quarreling all the time,” In response, another Protector spoke with a beaming smile. Although this man was also a Protector, he was Xian Yuyin’s father’s trusted aide. Naturally, he would be speaking for Xian Yuyin.

Hearing those words, some people revealed smiles on their faces, whereas others revealed expressions of discomfort. However, no one said anything. Regardless of whether or not they were fond of Xian Yuyin, in order to guarantee their purest Ancient Era’s Elf’s bloodline, Xian Miaomiao’s future husband must definitely be chosen from among the Ancient Era’s Elves.

Furthermore, among the entire Elf Kingdom, it was true that only Xian Yuyin would be suitable for Xian Miaomiao. Thus, Xian Yuyin being Xian Miaomiao’s future husband was something that many people accepted to be true.

This was also the reason why Xian Yuyin, although a person of the younger generation and not the Elf King’s son, possessed such great authority in the Elf Kingdom. As many people all understood that he would become the Elf King in the future, they naturally did not dare to provoke him.

“It just so happens that this matter is precisely what I want to talk about today. I do not plan to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation with Xian Yuyin,” Xian Miaomiao said.

Xian Miaomiao's words came like a sudden clap of thunder that resounded in the hearts of everyone present.

Chapter 1895 – Extraordinary Significance

“Miaomiao, what did you just say?” One of the Protectors asked in a very amazed manner.

At that moment, practically all of the Ancient Era’s Elves present were looking to Xian Miaomiao with astonished expressions. This was especially true for Xian Yuyin and his father. At that moment, their expressions were truly marvelous.

“I said I do not plan to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation with Xian Yuyin,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Are you to say that you’re planning to enter by yourself?” That Protector asked again.

“No, I’m going to have Chu Feng accompany me,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“What?” Hearing those words, not to mention the Ancient Era’s Elves, even the Immeasurable Immortal and the Avaricious Immortal were shocked.

As for Xian Yuyin and his father, they were so stunned that it was as if they had become petrified. Especially Xian Yuyin, he simply did not even dare to believe what he had just heard.

“Xian Miaomiao, what sort of joke is this? Chu Feng is a human. How could he possibly accompany you into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation?!” Xian Yuyin shouted. At that moment, he was extremely enraged, because he felt that his honor had been trampled upon.

“Heh, it is up to me to determine who shall accompany me. What makes you think you can decide?” Xian Miaomiao cast a side eye at Xian Yuyin. She simply did not place him in her eyes at all.

“Miaomiao, this matter is extremely important. How could you have a human like Chu Feng accompany you?” Xian Yuyin’s father added.

“I said, it is up to me to decide who shall accompany me. None of you have a say in this matter,” Faced with Xian Yuyin and his father, Xian Miaomiao was still as domineering as before.

“Your Majesty, this...” Feeling helpless, Xian Yuyin turned his gaze to the Elf King. He wanted to have the Elf King contain his daughter.

“Miaomiao, why do you want Chu Feng to accompany you?” The Elf King asked.

“Royal Father, compared to Xian Yuyin, I trust Chu Feng more,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“You...” Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin was so enraged that he nearly vomited blood. At that moment, he felt his vision become blurred, and his head dizzy. He was simply about to be angered to death.

Humiliation. This was an absolute humiliation. If this had been done privately, it would not be much. However, Xian Miaomiao had actually said those words without any concern before all those seniors. As such, how could Xian Yuyin possibly face the crowd? This was simply placing him in an awkward situation.

“Miaomiao, are you not being too excessive here?!” At that moment, Xian Yuyin’s father also had an angry expression on his face. To have his own son be humiliated in such a manner, he would naturally also be angered.

At that moment, a very skinny old man among the Four Grand Elders said, “Miaomiao, no matter what, Xian Yuyin is your older brother. As such, how could you say that about him? Moreover, the matter of entering the Blood Devouring Killing Formation is no small matter. For you to find a human to accompany you, we would also not feel reassured.”

“Lord Elder, Royal Father, it is not that I, Xian Miaomiao, am stubborn. Merely, the matter of finding Ancient Era’s Immortal

Flowers is my own personal matter to begin with.”

“I truly do not understand why I need you all to decide my own matters. In short... either Chu Feng accompanies me, or I will not go. You all can decide what to do,” Xian Miaomiao’s expression grew completely gloomy.

“This!!!” At that moment, even the Four Grand Elders’ expressions became ugly. The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao was simply not placing them in her eyes. Her behavior was truly unacceptable.

However, Xian Miaomiao was their Elf Kingdom’s future’s hope. Even though they were extremely imposing characters, extremely arrogant and domineering, they were unable to reveal any of their might, arrogance or dominance before her.

Right at that moment, Princess Lingyue suddenly said, “Royal Father, Lord Elders, Lord Protectors, although Miaomiao’s words might be somewhat excessive, I feel that her decision is correct.”

“Lingyue, what do you mean by that?” The Elf King asked.

“Royal Father, while Chu Feng is a human, he is outstanding all around.”

“There is no need to mention his battle power; it is extremely powerful. Although he is a rank nine Half Martial Emperor, he was able to kill the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief. I presume that even little brother Yuyin might not necessarily be able to accomplish such a thing, no?” As Princess Lingyue said those words, she took a glance at Xian Yuyin.

“How do you know that I can’t accomplish that? The Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief was merely a rank three Martial Emperor. If I wanted to kill him, I would naturally be able to kill him,” Xian Yuyin said in a very disapproving manner.

“Heh... the current you is naturally capable of accomplishing that. However, what I’m talking about is when you were a rank

nine Half Martial Emperor. Back when you were a rank nine Half Martial Emperor, you seemed to not even be able to defeat a rank one Martial Emperor. Thus, how could you possibly contend against a rank three Martial Emperor?” Princess Lingyue said.

“You!!!” Xian Yuyin was so enraged that his body started to tremble all over. However, he didn’t know how to counter what Princess Lingyue said, for it was true that he had been unable to even defeat a rank one Martial Emperor back when he was a rank nine Half Martial Emperor. As such, he had no way to disavow what was said.

Princess Lingyue had drawn blood with a single prick. She had directly attacked Xian Yuyin’s sore spot.

“Of course, in terms of battle power, my little sister Xian Miaomiao is likely even more powerful than Chu Feng. The reason why I mentioned Chu Feng’s battle power is merely to let everyone know that Chu Feng will not drag Miaomiao down in terms of battle power.”

“That said, there’s another aspect to consider. That is, Chu Feng is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, he is the only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist among the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation.”

“That is why I feel that if Chu Feng were to accompany Miaomiao, it would be better than having little brother Yuyin accompany Miaomiao,” Princess Lingyue said.

At that moment, the Immeasurable Immortal asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, you’re really a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Senior, Chu Feng is indeed a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve. “Roar,” a small golden dragon flew out from his sleeve.

That golden dragon was formed with spirit power. Furthermore,

the spirit power that was flowing through it was Dragon Mark spirit power. Chu Feng had released it to prove his status as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Very well, truly a young hero. Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly broadened my horizons,” The Immeasurable Immortal began to publicly applaud Chu Feng.

Seeing this scene, the Elf Kingdom’s Elders and Protectors’ eyes also shone. They were all slightly swayed.

The reason for that was because Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists were truly no small matter. At the very least, their Elf Kingdom did not possess a single one.

As for a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist as young as Chu Feng, they were simply akin to divine beings. It was the first time that a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist as young as Chu Feng had appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism.

This signified that Chu Feng possessed talent that was truly remarkable. Even though the Elf Kingdom was a power high and above which had stood at the apex of the Holy Land of Martialism since the very beginning, they still hoped to be able to get along with powerful humans. As for Chu Feng... he was someone that possessed that potential.

“What a joke. A mere human, no matter how strong, will not be able to surpass us Ancient Era’s Elves. Not to mention anything else, if he is able to trigger the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle, I will let him go,” Xian Yuyin’s father said.

“Heh... if it’s the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle, then I will have to disappoint you. Chu Feng is indeed capable of triggering the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle. The Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle in the Cyanwood Domain that was triggered back then was triggered by none other than Chu Feng,” Princess Lingyue said.

“What? He was the one who did that?” Hearing those words, the

expressions with which the Ancient Era's Elves looked to Chu Feng became extremely marvelous.

To trigger an Ancient Era's Immortal Needle was no small matter. This was especially true for a human triggering the Ancient Era's Immortal Needle. In the whole of history, only Qing Xuantian had managed to accomplish that.

"It is indeed Chu Feng. I was present back then. I can bear witness to it," Xian Miaomiao said.

"This..." At that moment, the expressions with which the Ancient Era's Elves in the palace hall looked to Chu Feng became even more complicated.

In fact, even the guards outside the palace were unable to contain themselves, and wanted to sneak a few peeks at Chu Feng. The reason for that was because a human triggering the Ancient Era's Immortal Needle was truly no small matter.

Speaking from a certain standpoint, Chu Feng might even become an expert as strong as Qing Xuantian.

As for Qing Xuantian, he was someone that possessed extraordinary significance to the Elf Kingdom.

Chapter 1896 – Stepping Stone

“What could the Cyanwood Domain’s Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle possibly amount to? It’s nothing more than the most ordinary Silver Needle. The number of Ancient Era’s Elves in our Elf Kingdom that are capable of triggering Silver Needles are simply too numerous to count.”

“If Chu Feng is able to trigger our Elf Kingdom’s Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle, I will have no objection,” Xian Yuyin’s father said.

“Princess Lingyue, you have mentioned a lot of Chu Feng’s strong points. Both openly and secretly, you’re just trying to say that Chu Feng is stronger than me, aren’t you?”

“Since that is the case, I shall use the truth to prove whether I or Chu Feng am stronger.”

“Today, I will compete with him in triggering the Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. I shall see who will be able to trigger more. If he is able to surpass the number that I can trigger, I will withdraw myself from journeying to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation,” Xian Yuyin said.

“That wouldn’t do. If you wish to compete, you can compete with battle power or world spirit power. Yet... you decided to compete in triggering Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles.”

“We all know that the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles are easily triggered by us Ancient Era’s Elves. However, to humans, they are so difficult to trigger that it is akin to scaling the heavens. Since the beginning of history, there has only been a single human capable of triggering the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle before Chu Feng. And that was Qing Xuantian.”

“Who is Qing Xuantian? He was the strongest person in the Holy Land of Martialism in his time.”

“In our Elf Kingdom, we possess numerous individuals who are capable of triggering the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. However, which one of them could possibly compare to that Qing Xuantian?” Xian Miaomiao said with a loud voice.

At that moment, even the various Ancient Era’s Elves’ grand characters grew silent. There were many Ancient Era’s Elves capable of triggering Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. However, not a single one among them could compare to Qing Xuantian.

“Thus, the fact that you can trigger an Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle simply does not amount to anything. Yet, Chu Feng being able to trigger the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle is no small matter.”

“Even if you are to be able to trigger all nine Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles, you would not be able to compare with Chu Feng triggering a single Silver Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle,” Xian Miaomiao continued.

“Chu Feng, stop hiding behind a woman. I am asking you. Do you dare to accept my challenge or not?” Xian Yuyin was so enraged by Xian Miaomiao that his complexion turned green. Feeling helpless, he ended up directly asking Chu Feng and ignoring Xian Miaomiao.

“I am willing to give it a try,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. His at-ease and confident expression was a clear-cut distinction from Xian Yuyin’s angry expression.

While ordinary people might not care about this sort of thing, the people present were all extraordinary people.

The Elf King, the Four Grand Elders, the Eight Protectors and the Immeasurable Immortal all had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng after noticing this minor detail.

“Chu Feng, you simply do not have to compete with him. This is truly too unfair,” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually planning to accept the challenge, Xian Miaomiao immediately spoke to stop

him.

“Chu Feng, it is true that this is very unfair. Furthermore, there is simply no need for you to compete with him to accompany Miaomiao. He simply has no say in this matter,” Even Princess Lingyue also started to urge Chu Feng against it.

“But, more than proving myself, I truly want to make him shut up,” Chu Feng smiled slightly. Then, he revealed a serious expression and looked to Xian Miaomiao, “Trust me. I will definitely accompany you.”

Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao’s little face immediately grew stiff. She was stunned and didn’t know what to say to stop Chu Feng. Thus, she could only nod her head obediently.

However, this ordinary scene was completely taken to heart by Xian Yuyin.

He thought about how Xian Miaomiao detested him, and how she acted like an obedient little kitten before Chu Feng. At that moment, he felt as if he could breathe fire just by opening his mouth. He was so enraged that he felt as if he was on the verge of exploding.

“Chu Feng, if you have the courage, then follow me. Today, I shall let you know the gap between you and me!” Xian Yuyin shouted at Chu Feng. Then, he flew out of the palace hall.

Chu Feng flew after him, following closely behind him. Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue also flew out after Chu Feng.

At that moment, the other people present in the Ancient Era’s Palace’s palace hall looked to one another. Then, they all turned into rays of light and flew out after them.

Even these grand characters were not willing to miss out on this great show.

“Chu Feng, what Xian Yuyin is planning to compete with you in is not the same sort of Silver Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle that

you triggered in the Cyanwood Domain. Instead, they're Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles."

"There is an enormous difference between Silver Ancient Era's Immortal Needles and Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. Although the method of triggering them is the same, the Ancient Era's Immortal Ponds that the Golden Needles reside in possess a pressure that the Silver Needles' Ancient Era's Immortal Ponds simply cannot compare with."

"Furthermore, Silver Needles can only be triggered on special days every year. Yet, the Golden Needles can be triggered at any time. Furthermore, one can trigger them many times in succession."

"The Ancient Era's Immortal Pond that we are proceeding toward is located at the centermost region of our Elf Kingdom. There are a total of nine Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles there. For ordinary Ancient Era's Elves, they would not be able to trigger even a single Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle. Those capable of triggering the Golden Needles are all deemed to be geniuses, and will be nurtured with focus."

"My big sister once triggered four Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. As for Xian Yuyin, he triggered five Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles," Xian Miaomiao compared her big sister to Xian Yuyin. This comparison was very practical, and clearly revealed how powerful Xian Yuyin was.

However, Chu Feng possessed no fear at all. Instead, he asked Xian Miaomiao, "In that case, how many did you trigger?"

"Nine," Princess Lingyue said.

"Nine?" Hearing that number, Chu Feng was startled.

"Indeed, it was nine. She has triggered four more Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles than Xian Yuyin, and five more Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles than me."

“Back when my little sister triggered the Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles, even the Elders were shocked. The reason for that was because she had created the abnormal sign of nine lightnings soaring into the sky,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Nine lightnings soaring into the sky?” Chu Feng revealed a curious gaze.

“Yes, nine streams of lightning soaring into the sky. Not only did they illuminate the entire region, they also appeared to have lives, and were extremely magnificent,” Princess Lingyue said.

“They were not magnificent. It was inferior to the sight of you triggering the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle back then,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, I’ve heard from Miaomiao that you gave rise to an unprecedented abnormal sign when you triggered the Immortal Needle. According to Miaomiao, it was even more magnificent than the nine lightnings soaring into the sky. Is that true?” Princess Lingyue asked curiously.

“That abnormal sign was caused by my breakthrough,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s true then. In that case, I truly wish to see what sort of abnormal sign you’ll cause when you reach a breakthrough,” Princess Lingyue had an expression of anticipation.

“In that case, I’ll inform you to let you come watch the next time I reach a breakthrough,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“It’s a deal!” Princess Lingyue said.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng nodded.

“I also want to watch,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Okay, okay, okay. I’ll bring you too,” Princess Lingyue said with a smile.

.....

At the moment when Chu Feng and the others were journeying to the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles, Xian Yuyin's father arrived beside Xian Yuyin and handed him a special medicinal pellet.

"Mn?" After secretly receiving the medicinal pellet from his father, Xian Yuyin revealed a puzzled expression.

As for Xian Yuyin's father, he sent a secret voice transmission to Xian Yuyin, "Back then, you were only a bit away from triggering six Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. That's why I requested for the Avaricious Immortal to refine this medicinal pellet for you. As long as you are to use it, you will definitely be able to trigger six Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles."

"The Avaricious Immortal spent a total of three years to concoct this medicinal pellet. He finally managed to successfully concoct it and deliver it to my hands. I truly never expected that you'd be able to use it this quickly."

"Thank you father," Hearing what his father said, Xian Yuyin's expression changed to one of joy. Originally, he was absolutely confident that he would be able to defeat Chu Feng.

However, with this medicinal pellet, he would be able to widen the disparity between them. Furthermore, he would be able to be held in greater value by the Elf Kingdom. As for Chu Feng, he would end up being despised by others.

He was certain that Chu Feng was destined to become his stepping stone.

Chapter 1897 – Capture All

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond.

Atop the multi-colored water's surface were nine golden pillars that soared straight into the sky. The nine golden pillars appeared to be extremely magnificent.

The nine pillars stood in an orderly manner like nine guards protecting the area. They were the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles.

“Chu Feng, watch carefully,” After Xian Yuyin finished saying those words to Chu Feng, he leapt directly into the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond.

He felt that he had to be the first one to enter the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond. The reason for that was because he would be able to bring an enormous pressure to Chu Feng after triggering six Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles.

Furthermore, he felt that Chu Feng was simply incapable of triggering the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. Even if he were able to, he would, at the very most, be able to trigger a single Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle. At that time, he would be able to form a clear contrast to show how incompetent Chu Feng was.

“Chu Feng, the nine Ancient Era's Immortal Needles here are indeed different from the ones in the Cyanwood Domain. What percentage of certainty do you have in successfully triggering them?” Eggy asked.

“If I said I could trigger all nine, would you trust me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Haha, it's precisely your confidence that I like,” Eggy said.

“I'm just joking. The Ancient Era's Immortal Needles here are

extremely extraordinary. They have caused the pressure in the depths of the pond to be extremely powerful. Even the current me, although my strength greatly surpasses my strength before, does not possess much certainty in being able to trigger all nine Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. However, since I've come here, I must do everything I can. If I am really able to trigger all nine of them..."

Chu Feng did not finish his words. The reason for that was because it was only a guess. Back when he triggered the Ancient Era's Immortal Needle in the Cyanwood Domain, he had obtained quite a harvest from it. It allowed him to break through to the Martial King realm on the spot.

If the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles in this place were also able to bring benefits to Chu Feng, then the harvest which he would obtain should be much better than that what he had been able to obtain from the Silver Ancient Era's Immortal Needles.

Chu Feng did not have any extravagant hope like being able to reach a breakthrough to Martial Emperor. However, he hoped that he would be able to make progress with his cultivation. At the very least, he hoped that the harvest here would serve as the foundation for his future breakthrough to Martial Emperor. As long As Chu Feng became an actual Martial Emperor, he would be able to save Yao'er in the Cyanwood Mountain.

At the moment when Chu Feng was pondering, the majority of the crowd had their eyes cast on the nine Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles.

The reason for that was because they knew that Xian Yuyin would definitely be able to trigger the Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. The only question was the time it would take and how many he could trigger.

"Buzz~~~"

Sure enough, not long afterward, a Golden Ancient Era's

Immortal Needle started to blossom with dazzling radiance. Merely, this was no silver light. Instead, it was a golden light. At the same time, countless runes and symbols began to scatter all over the place as if they were alive.

“This fast?”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes started to shine. He did not expect for Xian Yuyin to be able to trigger the first Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle this quickly.

“Rumble~~~”

Immediately afterward, an ear-piercing thunder exploded from the top of that Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle. The enormous rumble caused space itself to tremble. That sound was truly too ear-piercing. Not only that, it brought great intimidation to one’s heart. Practically everyone present was intimidated by that thunder.

“Zzzzz”

Right after the extremely imposing thunder sounded, a dazzling green bolt of lightning shot out from that Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle’s peak.

That green lightning was incomparably thick, and looked extremely magnificent, like an enormous dragon made of countless lightning bolts. With a impressive display of unparalleled power, it conquered everything before its path and covered the sky.

The densely packed lightning bolts formed an enormous net of lightning. Furthermore, that net was still increasing in size nonstop. It was as if it was planning to seal off the entire sky.

Wild and overbearing. At that moment, everyone was able to feel an incomparable might from that green lightning.

“Rumble”

Soon, another loud explosion was heard from another Ancient

Era's Immortal Needle, and another lightning bolt soared into the sky. When that second bolt of green lightning soared into the sky, the net of lighting in the sky became even more dazzling and imposing.

If ordinary people were to see this scene, they would definitely be filled with endless amazement and awe. However, the crowd present seemed to have all grown used to this sort of spectacle. Even though they possessed joyous smiles on their faces, they were not very shocked by it.

After the first two Golden Needles were triggered in succession, the third, fourth and fifth Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles were also triggered in succession. The speed at which they were being triggered could be said to be extremely fast.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Elves that knew Xian Yuyin's talent well all nodded in a satisfied manner, for Xian Yuyin had not disappointed them. Of course, they all knew that being able to trigger five Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles was Xian Yuyin's limit.

Suddenly, the Avaricious Immortal pointed to another Ancient Era's Immortal Needle and shouted in shock, "Quickly, look, another Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle is lighting up,"

In response, the crowd all turned their gazes over to that Ancient Era's Immortal Needle. At that moment, the eyes of practically all of the Ancient Era's Elves present started to shine with amazement.

The sixth Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle had been triggered. Xian Yuyin had broken his previous best record. As for this new record, it was also the best record that the current Elf Kingdom's Elf King had managed to obtain.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Elves' Elders and Protectors all involuntarily took a glance at the Elf King. It was as if they were indicating that Xian Yuyin's cultivation would be able to reach the

same height as the current Elf King.

“Damn it, that guy, how did he...” At the moment when the majority of the Ancient Era’s Elves were feeling joy over the matter, Xian Miaomiao and her sister Xiang Lingyue were frowning with expressions of unease.

Actually, the two sisters would not care about how many Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles Xian Yuyin would be able to trigger in ordinary times. However, today was different, as Xian Yuyin was competing with Chu Feng to see who would be able to trigger more of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles.

For Xian Yuyin to actually make progress at such a time and trigger six Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles was extremely bad for Chu Feng. As such, how could the two sisters possibly feel at ease?

However, the result had already been determined. Xian Yuyin had managed to trigger six Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. This was an unchangeable fact.

“Splash~~~”

While the green lightning that filled the sky was still present in the sky, Xian Yuyin flew back out from the Ancient Era’s Immortal Pond. He had a complacent smile on his face.

“Yuyin, you have truly given us a pleasant surprise,” At that moment, not to mention the Protectors, even the Four Great Elders had personally stepped forward to receive Xian Yuyin. To trigger six Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles indirectly meant that Xian Yuyin’s talent was even stronger than they had anticipated. As such, how could they not be in joy?

Showered with praise, the smile on Xian Yuyin’s face grew even wider. He took a glance at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, it’s your turn. However, I’d advise you to not try to show off and end up dying in there. While your death would not matter, I fear that your

corpse will dirty the water of our Ancient Era's Immortal Pond."

"I'm afraid I'll have to disappoint you."

Chu Feng smiled lightly. He did not become angry because of Xian Yuyin's provocation.

However, seeing how calm and collected Chu Feng was, Xian Yuyin revealed an angry expression in his eyes.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's expression made him feel as if Chu Feng had never placed him in his eyes the entire time. This sort of feeling was extremely unpleasant for him.

At that moment, Chu Feng was not in a rush to enter the water. Instead, he waited until the lightning in the sky dissipated, and the Ancient Era's Immortal Needles that were emitting the lightning returned to normal before leaping into the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond.

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered the water, Xian Miaomiao and her sister Xian Lingyue both revealed worried expressions.

After Chu Feng entered the water, he moved extremely quickly. Like a water dragon, he rapidly dived into the depths of the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond.

As Chu Feng dived deeper and deeper, the powerful pressure grew stronger and stronger. Fortunately, Chu Feng was yet to be affected by that pressure.

"That is?"

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped diving and turned his gaze to the nearby area.

At that place... was a special sort of organism.

That organism was only as large as a firefly. However, it was completely transparent, colorless and odorless. In fact, it did not even emit any aura. If it wasn't for the fact that he was using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to catch

sight of that organism either.

Chu Feng had met that organism before in the Cyanwood Domain's Ancient Era's Immortal Pond. They were a sort of cultivation resource.

“Pop~~~”

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng grabbed the organism and snapped it apart. Then, it turned into Natural Energy, entered through Chu Feng's palm and traveled into his dantian.

Right after that, Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression. “This energy, it's actually this dense?” Although this organism possessed the exact same appearance as the one in the Cyanwood Domain's Ancient Era's Immortal Pond, the Natural Energies which it contained were a world apart.

Upon closer inspection, Chu Feng discovered three more of the strange organisms nearby. After he captured them with his hand, they actually gave off the same sort of extremely dense Natural Energy.

“It would appear that my trip has truly not been made in vain,” At that moment, Chu Feng was overjoyed. Although a single one of such organisms might only possess a negligible amount of Natural Energy for Chu Feng, it appeared that this Ancient Era's Immortal Pond possessed countless such organisms.

If he was able to capture all of them and refine them, he would definitely obtain quite a large harvest. It might even be possible for him to reach a breakthrough to Martial Emperor.

“Woosh~~~”

Thinking about it, Chu Feng stopped diving deeper, and instead began to swim all around. He swam around the nine Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles as he gradually dove deeper, whilst searching for those astonishing organisms.

Chu Feng was planning to capture all of the strange organisms in

this Ancient Era's Immortal Pond and refine them.

Chapter 1898 – Golden Lightning Piercing Through The Skies

As if he were an inescapable net, Chu Feng began to carefully gather those astonishing organisms in the depths of the Immortal Pond.

He was planning to capture all of them in one go and not let a single one escape. After all, even if he were to let them remain, the Ancient Era's Elves would not be able to capture them. As such, rather than wasting them, it was better for him to use them.

However, Chu Feng's actions were taking a lot of time. While Xian Yuyin had managed to trigger six Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles in merely two hours, Chu Feng had been in the waters for a total of sixteen hours now. Yet, there was still no sound of activity from him.

At that moment, the sky had already darkened, and it was now deep into the night. Although it was night, not only did the multi-colored brilliance of the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond not decrease, it had instead increased.

However, when that brilliance shone on Xian Miaomiao's face, it revealed an expression filled with worry and unease.

"It's been so long, could Chu Feng have died in there?"

"Didn't I tell him to not try to show off? Yet he refused to listen. If he is to die there, he'll end up dirtying the water of our Ancient Era's Immortal Pond," Xian Yuyin said mockingly from the side.

Although Xian Miaomiao was angered by those words, she was more worried about Chu Feng. Thinking about that, her body actually began to move; she was planning to jump into the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond to search for Chu Feng.

"Miaomiao, what are you planning to do?" However, before Xian Miaomiao could approach the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond, a

figure arrived before her and stopped her. It was Xian Yuyin's father.

"Let me go. I cannot let anything happen to Chu Feng," Xian Miaomiao said coldly.

"I'm afraid that I cannot do that. This competition is something that Chu Feng personally agreed to. Even you cannot interfere with it."

"Furthermore, weren't you extremely confident in him? Why are you instead worried about him now? Rest assured, it remains that Chu Feng is someone who triggered an Ancient Era's Immortal Needle before. Nothing will happen to him," Xian Yuyin's father said with a beaming smile. His appearance was extremely vile.

"Royal Father," At that moment, Xian Miaomiao turned her gaze to her father, the Elf King.

"Miaomiao, it won't hurt to wait a bit longer," The Elf King said.

"But..." Although Xian Miaomiao was unwilling to accept that, as her father had spoken, she ended up having no choice but to obey.

"Miaomiao, what's wrong? Weren't you extremely confident in that Chu Feng? Why did you start to lose confidence now?" Xian Yuyin arrived before Xian Miaomiao and spoke with a very mocking tone.

"Xian Yuyin, you have merely triggered six Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. Do not act this complacently," Xian Miaomiao said coldly.

"Six Ancient Era's Immortal Needles is naturally very lacking when compared to you, Xian Miaomiao. However, compared to Chu Feng, I'm afraid that it'll force Chu Feng to become worthless," Xian Yuyin said complacently.

"What arrogance," Xian Miaomiao cast a ruthless side glance at Xian Yuyin. Her gaze was filled with disgust.

“Haha, whether this is arrogance or confidence, Miaomiao, you yourself know best,” Xian Yuyin said with laughter.

This time around, Xian Miaomiao did not even bother to glance at him. She ignored him completely.

However, Xian Yuyin was not angered either. As he felt that he had grasped victory, he continued to provoke Xian Miaomiao, “Miaomiao, didn’t you think that Chu Feng would be able to defeat me even in triggering Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles?”

“Of course,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Hahaha...” Xian Yuyin chuckled. Then, he said, “Since that’s the case, how about we make a bet?”

Xian Miaomiao did not bother to pay attention to Xian Yuyin. However, Xian Yuyin continued, “It was Chu Feng who agreed to compete in triggering the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. He possessed a certain level of confidence.”

“I know that you dislike me. How about this? Let’s gamble with all our bets on Chu Feng. If Chu Feng can defeat me, I will no longer bother you. From today onward, you’ll go your way and I’ll go mine.”

“However, if Chu Feng is to be defeated by me, you will definitely have me accompany you to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Do you dare to gamble?”

Xian Miaomiao cast a glance at Xian Yuyin. However, she merely cast him a ruthless side glance and did not answer him. At that moment, she was worried about Chu Feng’s safety, and possessed no mood to bother with this shameless fellow.

“Miaomiao, if you agree to gamble with me, we can set the limit for two hours. If Chu Feng still does not trigger an Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle in two hours’ time, even if he is to be defeated, I will personally enter the Immortal Pond and bring him out to prevent him dying in there,” Xian Yuyin seemed to know what

Xian Miaomiao was thinking, and actually used Chu Feng's safety as the wager.

"There's no need for you to go, I'll go," Xian Miaomiao said.

"In that case, it means that you've accepted my gamble?" Xian Yuyin asked.

"Humph," Although she was extremely unwilling, Xian Miaomiao ended up nodding in the end.

She had not gambled so that Xian Yuyin could distance himself from her. She merely wanted to be able to enter the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond and save Chu Feng after two hours had passed. She did not wish for anything to happen to Chu Feng because of her.

Princess Lingyue had seen and heard the entire conversation between Xian Yuyin and Xian Miaomiao. However, she did not stop them, for she was also extremely worried for Chu Feng. As of now, the outcome of the competition was no longer important. All she wished for was for Chu Feng to be able to return safely.

After Xian Miaomiao accepted the gamble, Xian Yuyin revealed an extremely proud smile on his face. The way he saw it, Chu Feng was destined to lose, and he would be able to win the opportunity to spend time together with Xian Miaomiao by themselves.

As long as he had the chance to spend time together with Xian Miaomiao by themselves, he would be able to use methods to make Xian Miaomiao fall in love with him. At such a crucial moment, he would not mind using despicable methods either.

"It would seem that humans are only humans after all. Even Chu Feng is unable to trigger the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needles."

At that moment, the Avaricious Immortal sighed and said, "Even though I also admit that little friend Chu Feng possesses outstanding talent, he is truly somewhat conceited. That is not a good quality to have," Although he appeared to be praising Chu

Feng, he was actually mocking Chu Feng for being too arrogant.

“It would seem that the outcome of the competition has been decided,” At that time, the various Elf Kingdom’s grand characters all felt that Chu Feng was unable to trigger the Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng would be defeated by Xian Yuyin, they all, to a greater or lesser degree, possessed some expectations of Chu Feng.

Thus, this conclusion had disappointed them.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, an Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle actually started to blossom with dazzling golden light.

“Quickly, look! Chu Feng succeeded!” Princess Lingyue was the first to notice this scene. She immediately cried out in alarm.

“Zzzzzzz~”

The next moment, a golden lightning bolt shot out from that Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle. Like a golden dragon, it faced the world with the might of a ruler and soared into the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

After it pierced through the sky, it let out a loud explosion. Then, that golden lightning bolt turned into an army of golden lightning. With an impressive display of power, it began to spread out in all directions. It was seizing control of the sky, turning the pitch black sky a dazzling golden color.

“This!!!” Seeing this scene, Xian Yuyin, his father and the Avaricious Immortal all started to frown. The scene that they did not wish to see the most had actually happened.

“Chu Feng actually succeeded! He succeeded! He has triggered a Golden Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle! Yay!!!” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao started to hop around in joy, and was shouting

cheers for Chu Feng unceasingly.

Even the Elf King, the Four Grand Elders, the Protectors and the many of the other Ancient Era's Elves' experts revealed light smiles on their faces. To them, the outcome of the competition did not matter anymore. As long as Chu Feng was able to trigger the Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle, it would prove how powerful he was. After all, he was only a human.

“What's going on? Could it be that a human has triggered the Ancient Era's Immortal Needle?”

When the golden lightning covered the night sky, all of the Ancient Era's Elves in the Elf Kingdom noticed that magnificent abnormal sign.

All those who saw the golden lightning had an enormous change in their expressions. They were all filled with shock, for they knew that golden lightning represented humans.

A human had triggered the Elf Kingdom's Golden Ancient Era's Immortal Needle.

Chapter 1899 – A Miracle

“Chu Feng, you’re truly amazing! I have not misjudged you!” Xian Miaomiao was still jumping up and down, shouting and screaming in excitement.

Although she was extremely happy because the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle had been triggered, she was even more happy because Chu Feng was safe and sound right now.

Xian Yuyin carefully observed the cheerful and happy expression that Xian Miaomiao had. He had taken it to heart. Although he did not say anything while standing there, he was emitting dense jealousy from head to toe.

Because of that jealousy, Xian Yuyin muttered, “So what?”

“Xian Yuyin, Chu Feng has already triggered the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle, what else do you have to say?” Xian Miaomiao said to Xian Yuyin complacently.

“Humph, it’s merely a single Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle. What could this possibly signify? Did you really think that Chu Feng would be able to trigger seven Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle to surpass me?”

“I’ll tell you this. He doesn’t even have to trigger seven Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles. As long as he can trigger six, the same amount that I have, I will consider it his victory,” Xian Yuyin said complacently.

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Xian Yuyin’s words left his mouth, five more Ancient

Era's Immortal Needles emitted dazzling golden light.

Five more Ancient Era's Immortal Needles were triggered. Chu Feng had triggered five more Ancient Era's Immortal Needles in succession. Adding on the one from before, he had triggered exactly six.

He had triggered the same amount of Ancient Era's Immortal Needles as Xian Yuyin.

“What? This... how could this be?”

At that moment, Xian Yuyin was stunned. He deeply wished for the scene before him to be fake.

“Zzzzz~”

The very next moment, five more golden bolts of lightning shot out from the five Ancient Era's Immortal needles, joining the army of lightning in the sky. In an instant, the golden lightning in the sky grew even brighter and more magnificent. As it swept across the horizon, it gave off an unparalleled power.

“Chu Feng, he actually managed to trigger six Ancient Era's Immortal Needles like Yuyin?”

At that moment, not to mention the others, even the grand characters present by the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond were stunned by the scene before them.

However, this was merely the beginning. When the six Ancient Era's Immortal Needles were triggered, the seventh and eighth Ancient Era's Immortal Needles were also triggered in succession.

“This... this is impossible! Absolutely impossible!” Xian Yuyin's gaze was flickering, and his expression became extremely dejected. He was unable to believe the scene before him.

A mere human actually managed to trigger eight Ancient Era's Immortal Needles. This was truly something that one could not dare to imagine.

At that moment, even Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue were stunned. Their bodies were trembling with excitement, and their breathing had become hurried. Truly, the two of them were completely awestruck.

A total of eight Ancient Era's Immortal Needles, this was truly too astonishing a feat. Even for Ancient Era's Elves, if one of them was able to trigger that many Ancient Era's Immortal Needles, that would cause the entire Elf Kingdom to flare up with excitement. As such, there was no need to mention how they were feeling to see a human accomplishing such a feat.

After a moment of being stunned with excitement, Princess Lingyue said, "One left, could Chu Feng be able to trigger all nine Ancient Era's Immortal Needles and recreate the scene of nine lightnings soaring into the skies?"

"Nine Ancient Era's Immortal Needles, would he?" Xian Miaomiao also revealed an expression of intense expectation.

Would he? This simple question was present in the hearts of everyone here. Would a human really be able to trigger the abnormal sign of nine lightnings soaring into the skies?

Although it was extremely unimaginable, the Elf King, the Four Grand Elders, the Protectors and even the Immeasurable Immortal revealed the same sort of expression of intense expectation like Xian Miaomiao.

Even though they knew that it would be extremely inconceivable for such a thing to happen, that such a thing occurring was simply impossible, they all hoped for it to happen, they all hoped to be able to bear witness to a miracle.

Thus, at that moment, the crowd did not turn their gazes to the night sky covered densely with the overwhelming golden lightnings. Instead, their gazes were all fixed onto that single Ancient Era's Immortal Needle yet to be triggered.

They all wanted to bear witness to the miracle as it happened.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that last Ancient Era’s Immortal Needle started to blossom with dazzling light. Then, a golden bolt of lightning soared into the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

After that lightning bolt soared into the sky and mixed with the lightnings that already filled the sky, all of the golden lightning that covered the sky started to move with extreme unrest. Earlier, they were like a magnificent army that was ordered to show off their might in the sky.

Yet, in that moment, it was as if life was given to them. They actually separated into nine enormous golden lightning armies and stood in the sky. They covered the entire sky as far as the eye could see. Their might was simply indescribable. They were not like nine ordinary bolts of lightning. Instead, they looked more like nine living beasts of lightning that emitted overwhelming dominance.

“It’s the nine lightning bolts soaring into the skies, nine lightning bolts soaring into the skies. Chu Feng has actually triggered all nine of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles and revealed this abnormal sign,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was so excited that even her voice started to tremble. Even back when she herself had triggered the nine lightnings soaring into the skies, she was not as excited as this.

“No, this is fake, absolutely fake!” At that moment, Xian Yuyin was completely dumbfounded. It was not only him, his father was also dumbfounded. How could a human possibly accomplish this sort of thing? Was he really a human?

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, a roar suddenly sounded from the Ancient Era’s Immortal Pond. When that roar was heard, the entire world

started to tremble violently. It actually surpassed the sound of the golden lightnings that covered the sky.

“What is that sound?” At that moment, the crowd all cast their eyes to the Ancient Era’s Immortal Pond. They had all heard that shocking roar.

“Roar~~~”

The very next moment, that roar sounded again. Merely, this time around, it was not a single roar. Rather, there were seven roars sounding together.

At the same time as those roars sounded, seven enormous lightning beasts covered, and flickering lightning shot out of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Pond and into the skies.

“Heavens, what are those?!”

Upon seeing those seven enormous lightning beasts, even the Ancient Era’s Elves’ grand characters started to panic.

As absolute experts, they all possessed exceptional perception that surpassed those of ordinary people. At that moment, they all felt unprecedented pressure from those seven enormous lightning beasts.

At that moment, not to mention the others, even the Elf King started to frown slightly.

Before those seven enormous lightning beasts, he was able to feel an unprecedented sensation. That sort of sensation could be described with one word: small.

When even the grand Elf King, the Elf King that was known to be the strongest expert in the Holy Land of Martialism, felt he was small before these seven enormous lightning beasts, there was no need to mention what the others were feeling.

“What is that?! I’ve never seen that sort of abnormal sign before! It doesn’t seem to have come from the Ancient Era’s Immortal

Needles, but instead come from the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond!" At that moment, cries of shock began to resound nonstop. Most importantly, those cries of shock were from those grand experts.

"It's an abnormal sign emitted by Chu Feng," Xian Miaomiao said.

"What? Miaomiao, what did you say? You're saying that abnormal sign was caused by Chu Feng?" Princess Lingyue was extremely shocked. She was also astonished by that abnormal sign. However, she did not expect that abnormal sign to be related to Chu Feng.

"That's indeed the case. It greatly resembles what happened in the Cyanwood Domain's Ancient Era's Immortal Pond. Merely, compared to back then, it's much more terrifying this time around," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Miaomiao, what sort of nonsense are you talking about?! That abnormal sign surpassed the nine lightning bolts in the sky! How could it possibly be something emitted by that Chu Feng?!" Xian Yuyin shouted loudly. At that moment, he was extremely nervous. The reason for that was because he was afraid. He feared that this abnormal sign was truly caused by Chu Feng.

That was why he had to deny, deny everything regarding Chu Feng. Else, it would truly be too shocking for him to handle. If this matter were to spread, there would likely not be a single person from the Holy Land of Martialism's younger generation who could surpass Chu Feng in terms of talent. Even Xian Miaomiao would not be able to.

"Chu Feng! Is it really Chu Feng?!!!" At the moment when Xian Yuyin was refusing to believe this, the other people started to associate the abnormal sign with Chu Feng.

They had all heard before that the reason the Four Great Imperial Clans wanted to kill Chu Feng was because they were scared by the abnormal sign that he had caused. If they were to consider that,

and consider the abnormal sign that caused even them, the grand experts, to feel scared, then it might really be caused by Chu Feng.

“No, that’s impossible! Absolutely impossible!” Xian Yuyin shook his head repeatedly. He did not dare to acknowledge this to be true.

At that time, Xian Yuyin’s father was also tightly clenching his fists. He was drenched in sweat and nervous to the extreme. Like his son, he also did not wish for all this to be related to Chu Feng.

“Splash~~~”

Right at that moment, the water of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Pond suddenly started to surge with waves. Like water dragons, the multi-colored waves reached the skies.

Then, a silhouette broke through the water dragons. He stood in midair before the gazes of the crowd.

This man possessed long hair that trailed over his shoulders and a bright gaze. He was none other than Chu Feng.

It was really Chu Feng. Merely, when the crowd looked to Chu Feng again, their expressions all changed. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was completely different from before.

Chapter 1900 – Rank One Martial Emperor

In the skies, seven enormous different colored lightning beasts were galloping about.

They looked extremely imposing, ferocious and simply incomparable. Before the seven enormous lightning beasts, even the nine golden lightnings that sealed off the sky had to step down gracefully.

However, at that moment, the crowd was in no mood to continue watching those frightening enormous lightning beasts. Instead, their gazes were all focused on Chu Feng.

At that moment, they felt as if the young man standing in midair was the sole ruler of the whole world. Even the ferocious and powerful enormous lightning beasts were only there to stand beside him.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the seven enormous lightning beasts in the sky began to roar again. Then, they flew down from the sky and toward the crowd.

Seeing this scene, even the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Grand Elders revealed expressions of fear. They hurriedly leapt up and flew into the distance. While they did that, they also brought Xian Miaomiao, Princess Lingyue and the others with them.

Seeing that, the other Ancient Era’s Elves, the Immeasurable Immortal and the Avaricious Immortal also hurriedly escaped.

Those lightning beasts were too frightening. Although they could not ascertain whether or not those lightning beasts were actual entities, merely the aura that they were emitting was sufficient to choke them. As such, they did not wish to take on the risk of standing before those enormous lightnings beasts and dying to them.

At that moment, only two people still stood at the Ancient Era's Immortal Pond. They were Chu Feng and the Elf King.

The Elf King did not leave. He seemed to want to experience for himself how frightening those enormous lightning beasts were.

As for Chu Feng, he would naturally not leave. After all, those seven enormous lightning beasts came from his body; they were the power of his Inherited Bloodline.

“Roar~~~”

As they continued to roar, the seven enormous lightning beasts had already arrived near the surface. However, they did not immediately enter Chu Feng's body. As if they were deliberately showing off their might, they actually began to gallop around Chu Feng.

Seeing this scene, it was as if the immeasurably powerful lightning beasts were Chu Feng's bodyguards.

They were letting everyone know that regardless of how powerful they might be, they were only Chu Feng's possessions.

Seeing this scene, the crowd all exclaimed in astonishment. They were no longer able to describe their state of mind.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Finally, the seven enormous lightning beasts turned into seven rays of lightning and entered Chu Feng's body. At that moment, Chu Feng's aura also increased from rank nine Half Martial Emperor to rank one Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough and become an actual Martial Emperor.

“He actually reached a breakthrough?! Could those frightening lightning beasts really be the power of Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline?!” Seeing Chu Feng reach a breakthrough with their own eyes, the crowd's expressions all changed again.

Facing the shocked expressions of the crowd, Chu Feng revealed a slight smile.

The reason for that was because he knew that the harvest that he had obtained this time around was most definitely not limited to reaching a breakthrough to rank one Martial Emperor.

Even though Chu Feng did not obtain any special ability to increase his cultivation like the Thunder Armor or the Thunder Wings, his battle power had increased once again.

Chu Feng's current battle power greatly surpassed that of Xian Miaomiao. He now possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

With his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng could increase his cultivation to rank three Martial Emperor. However, heaven-defying battle powers became a lot less valued once one reached the Martial Emperor realm. As all Martial Emperors possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, their heaven-defying battle power would cancel each other out.

However, even with that, Chu Feng would still have a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. As for that... it was something that other Martial Emperors lacked.

In other words, the current Chu Feng was able to fight against rank five Martial Emperors. Strictly speaking, it was likely that no one below rank six Martial Emperor would be a match for Chu Feng.

Not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders, even if it was that Ximen Baiyuan, Chu Feng would not feel any fear. The current Chu Feng was someone who truly stood among the Holy Land of Martialism's peak experts. And he... was still only a member of the younger generation.

“Chu Feng, you’re truly amazing! So very amazing!” Xian Miaomiao was the first to run over to Chu Feng. She grabbed Chu Feng’s clothes and smiled extremely beautifully. It was as if the person who had reached a breakthrough this time around was not Chu Feng, but her instead.

“Chu Feng, the abnormal sign you caused was truly too astonishing. You really do possess a special Inherited Bloodline stronger than even Imperial Bloodlines. Could it be that you’re not a human, but instead a monstrous beast? But, none of the monstrous beasts in the Holy Land of Martialism possess such a powerful Inherited Bloodline,” Princess Lingyue also ran over. She was also extremely pleasantly surprised.

If Xian Miaomiao possessed great expectations for Chu Feng since the very beginning, then Xian Lingyue had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng now.

In fact, it was not only Xian Lingyue who possessed a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. At that moment, even some of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Protectors arrived before Chu Feng, let go of their high status and began to greet Chu Feng. Furthermore, their tones were unimaginably friendly.

Even the Immeasurable Immortal, this expert who was equally famous as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, also went to greet around Chu Feng.

With the increase in Chu Feng’s cultivation, his perception had also increased. Even his Heaven’s Eye had become sharper.

Thus, at this time, he was able to sense the Immeasurable Immortal’s cultivation. He was a rank six Martial Emperor. He possessed a cultivation on par with Nangong Longjian.

As for the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Protectors, they all possessed treasures that hid their cultivations. Thus, even though Chu Feng’s perception had become much more powerful, he was still unable to see through their cultivations. However, Chu Feng

reckoned that they should also have cultivations around rank six Martial Emperor.

Rank six Martial Emperors, they possessed extremely high cultivations. From this, Chu Feng could infer that the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders most likely possessed even more frightening cultivations than these Protectors. As for the Elf King, his cultivation would be even stronger.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, many figures flew over from all different directions. They were all experts of the Elf Kingdom.

“We pay our respects to Your Majesty, the the four Grand Elders and the various Lord Protectors,” After approaching, they all kneeled in midair and began to courteously greet the people here.

It turned out that they had all arrived here to inspect what was going on, as they thought something might have happened after seeing the seven enormous lightning beasts overshadowing nine the lightning bolts in the sky. They did not expect this many grand characters to be present. It turned out that their worries were unnecessary.

However, from this, it could be seen that Chu Feng reaching a breakthrough in public like this had caused an enormous reaction; he had alarmed the entire Elf Kingdom, the huge monster at the top of the Holy Land of Martialism.

However... this was what Chu Feng wanted to do.

In the Elf Kingdom, there were people who liked him and people who disliked him. However, at the very least, the strongest Elf King did not hold any hostility toward him.

This led Chu Feng to believe that the Elf King was a wise person. As for those that were wise, they should be able to ascertain right from wrong.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that this was a great opportunity to reveal

his strength and let the Elf King have a whole new level of respect for him and think highly of him.

Back then, when the Nangong Imperial Clan saw Chu Feng's potential, they thought of Chu Feng as a threat and wholeheartedly wanted to eliminate him. This meant that Nangong Beidou was not a wise man.

For if he was wise, he would not have tried to eliminate Chu Feng. Instead, he would have tried to befriend Chu Feng. What Chu Feng wanted was precisely to become friends with the Elf Kingdom. At the very least, he wished to establish a good relationship with them.

Although Chu Feng was already very powerful, he was still not the most powerful expert in the entire Holy Land of Martialism. He needed the shelter of the Elf Kingdom, this enormously humongous giant tree. Even if they refused to shelter him, he needed them to at least not become his enemy.

At that moment, seeing the reactions from many of the Elf Kingdom's grand characters, it was clear that he had succeeded. His gamble had succeeded.

At this moment, many people in the Elf Kingdom possessed a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. This was especially true for the Elf King. From his gaze, Chu Feng could tell that he thought very highly of him.

Of course, there were exceptions to the rule. For example, there was Xian Yuyin and his father. Chu Feng knew that after today, he would become Xian Yuyin and his father's thorn.

However, so what? When he had obtained the good graces of even their Elf King, how could he possibly fear a mere Protector?

Chapter 1901 – Truly A Brilliant Plan

“Well then, it is quite late now. Everyone, let’s allow little friend Chu Feng to return and rest,” Seeing that the crowd was surrounding Chu Feng and chatting nonstop, the Elf King personally decided to help get Chu Feng out of the difficult situation.

“Right, right, right. To trigger nine Ancient Era’s Immortal Needles is a very exhausting thing to do. You should return and get some proper rest,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“What Miaomiao said is right. It’s better to return and rest,” Seeing that, the other people also echoed in agreement.

Even though they were telling Chu Feng to rest, they possessed expressions of not wanting Chu Feng to leave. To see a miracle happen with their very eyes, they were all feeling extremely excited. It was unable to describe what their current state of mind was. Likely, they would end up being unable to sleep tonight.

At that moment, Xian Yuyin muttered in displeasure, “He’s merely a human, is it worth acting like this?”

As the people present were all extraordinary individuals, they all possessed exceptional perception. Thus, they all managed to hear Xian Yuyin’s muttering.

Hearing Xian Yuyin’s mutter, the expressions on the crowd that surrounded Chu Feng all changed. They involuntarily cast a side eye at Xian Yuyin.

The great majority of them were all Xian Yuyin’s seniors, existences on par with his father. Yet, Xian Yuyin actually dared to say such a thing about them. Naturally, they would be extremely displeased.

However, although they were displeased, they did not bother to argue with Xian Yuyin. After all, Xian Yuyin was of the younger

generation. If they were to publicly argue with Xian Yuyin before the Elf King, they would make themselves look unbefitting of their status.

That said, while it was unsuitable for them to speak, there was nothing stopping Chu Feng from speaking. After all, he was also part of the younger generation.

Thus, at that moment, Chu Feng looked to Xian Yuyin. With a smile on his face, he asked, “Xian Yuyin, may I ask, did I win the match between us?”

“Humph,” Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin’s complexion turned black. He did not answer Chu Feng. Instead, he waved his sleeve and then flew away.

Xian Yuyin had left. To be exact, it appeared more like he had escaped. The reason for that was because he had utterly lost all face today. He had become worthless by competing with Chu Feng. At such a time, even he found himself to be unable to continue staying and arguing with Chu Feng.

“That child, he’s truly been spoiled by me,” Seeing that Xian Yuyin had left without even bidding farewell to the crowd, Xian Yuyin’s father revealed a difficult expression.

Even though he was also extremely enraged and unwilling to accept what had happened, he knew that it would be very humiliating should he reveal his anger and his irreconcilability at such a time.

Furthermore, as Xian Yuyin had already lost his cool, it was even more important that he keep his calm. Thus, Xian Yuyin’s father forced out a smile and said to Chu Feng, “I hope that little friend Chu Feng will not take offense to this.”

“It’s no bother. I merely wanted to know whether or not I have won the competition between Xian Yuyin and me,” Chu Feng asked again.

At that moment, the people from the Elf Kingdom all smiled slightly. However, no one said anything. The outcome of the match had been decided. That was something that Chu Feng knew very well too. For Chu Feng to ask such a question, he was simply deliberately making things difficult for Xian Yuyin and his father.

This was something that everyone present was able to tell. However, no one tried to speak for Xian Yuyin's father. It seemed as if they were deliberately waiting him to be embarrassed.

Seeing that his own clansmen were refusing to speak for him, and were instead standing on Chu Feng's side, Xian Yuyin's father felt extremely displeased.

Even though he did not want to admit it, in the end, he could only clench his teeth and force out another smile. He said, "Little friend Chu Feng is exceptionally talented. My son is no match for you."

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly said, "Since it's Chu Feng's victory, I will have to trouble uncle to inform Xian Yuyin,"

"Inform him of what?" Xian Yuyin's father asked in a confused manner.

"Inform him to stop bothering me," Xian Miaomiao said.

"....." Hearing those words, even though Xian Yuyin's father's endurance was extraordinary, he was still unable to contain himself. He did not say anything, and merely nodded. Then, he turned around and left immediately.

However, faced with the battered appearance of Xian Yuyin's father, the Elf Kingdom's Elves did not feel any sympathy for him. Instead, some among them actually sneered.

After all, Xian Yuyin and his father possessed no hatred or grievances with Chu Feng. Yet, they had deliberately tried to make things difficult for him from the very start. Furthermore, it was Xian Yuyin who had suggested the match in the first place. Thus,

they had merely courted their own humiliation today.

.....

After this matter was over, Chu Feng returned to his residence. Of course, Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue also accompanied Chu Feng to his residence. The two sisters did not plan to let Chu Feng slip by that easily. They still wished to ask him many more questions.

At the same time, in Xian Yuyin's father's residence. An unexpected guest had arrived to pay him a visit. It was the Avaricious Immortal.

“Avaricious Immortal, what has brought you here?”

“If you do not have anything important to say, please forgive me for not being able to attend to you.”

At that moment, Xian Yuyin's father was feeling extremely unwell. Today, he had become extremely depressed. He was not only depressed because his son was defeated by Chu Feng. In addition to that, he was depressed because the talent which Chu Feng had revealed was truly too astonishing. Even the Elf King had begun to think very highly of Chu Feng.

As for Xian Miaomiao, she seemed to have a very favorable impression of Chu Feng as well. The way he saw it, this situation was extremely bad.

If Chu Feng were to grow up and really become an Overlord in the future, it would not be impossible for the Elf King to marry Xian Miaomiao to Chu Feng. At that time, the plan that he and his son had would be completely ruined.

Thus, at this moment, Xian Yuyin and his father were extremely vexed. As such, how could they possibly have the heart to bother with the Avaricious Immortal?

“Haha...” Seeing the depressed appearances that Xian Yuyin and his father had, the Avaricious Immortal chuckled lightly. Then, he

said, “This Avaricious Immortal has come here for the sake of helping Milord and Young Master with your worries and difficulties.”

“Helping us with worries and difficulties? What could you possibly do?” Xian Yuyin’s father chuckled slightly. The tone with which he said those words was filled with contempt.

Although the Avaricious Immortal was a grand character in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would not amount to much before Xian Yuyin’s father.

“I know that what is vexing Milord and Young Master is that Chu Feng,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“Oh? And what of it?” Xian Yuyin’s father asked.

“Chu Feng possesses exceptional talent. Furthermore, he has managed to become a Martial Emperor from a Martial King in a short period of time. The speed of his growth is astonishing and simply unprecedented.”

“If what happened today is to spread out, it is likely everyone will think that the person that will become this era’s Overlord will be none other than Chu Feng,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“What you’re saying is simply rubbish,” The more Xian Yuyin’s father heard, the more annoyed he became. He actually revealed an expression of anger.

“Milord, don’t be so anxious. I have a way to stop that Chu Feng from emerging in power,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“Oh?” It was only when he heard those words that Xian Yuyin’s father’s expression changed slightly. In a dubious manner, he said, “Let’s hear it.”

“The Blood Devouring Armors have already been completed. Originally, my senior brother had planned to personally hand them over to Princess Miaomiao and Young Master Yuyin in the Ancient Era’s Palace today.”

“However, this ended up being delayed by the appearance of Chu Feng. Furthermore, as my senior brother had an urgent matter to take care of, he has already left. Currently, the Blood Devouring Armors are with me.”

“Tomorrow, I will have to hand the Blood Devouring Armors to Chu Feng and Princess Miaomiao. However... as my senior brother is not here, I am able to make some slight alterations to the Blood Devouring Armors. Then, tomorrow, using the reason that the Blood Devouring Armors were tailor-made, I will have Chu Feng be unable to don the Blood Devouring Armor.”

“Like that, Chu Feng would not be able to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation with Princess Miaomiao; she will have to go by herself.”

“However, I believe that with how dangerous the Blood Devouring Killing Formation is, even the Elf King will not be at ease having Princess Miaomiao enter it by herself. Thus, at that time, Young Master Yuyin will have to be the one to accompany Princess Miaomiao,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

After hearing what the Avaricious Immortal said, both Xian Yuyin and his father became spirited. However, Xian Yuyin’s father was still skeptical. He said, “Chu Feng is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. I’m afraid that he will be able to see through your scheme.”

“So what if he does? As long as the others cannot, there is nothing that he can do about it. Moreover, although I might now be inferior to that Chu Feng in terms of martial power, that Chu Feng is absolutely inferior to me in terms of world spirit techniques.”

“If he dares to question me publicly, I will personally request a match in world spirit techniques against him. I will bestow him a public humiliation,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“Haha, brilliant, what a truly brilliant plan,” Xian Yuyin’s father

suddenly stood up and began to clap his hands.

Xian Yuyin's father had been feeling vexed from the moment Chu Feng had triggered the first Ancient Era's Immortal Needle tonight. And now, he had finally managed to obtain a piece of good news.

“Perhaps he might even have the courage to compete with me in terms of world spirit techniques,” The Avaricious Immortal revealed a cold smile.

Chapter 1902 – Came Prepared

“Why’s that?” Xian Yuyin and his father asked simultaneously.

“Because if he dares to accept my challenge, I will bet my life against his. With our lives as the bet, how could he possibly dare?” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“Lives as the bet?” Hearing those words, the expressions of Xian Yuyin and his father both changed. Then, his father added, “Avaricious, how certain are you that you can defeat Chu Feng?”

“As I said, if I am to compete with Chu Feng with martial power, I am not a match for him. However, in terms of World Spirit Techniques, Chu Feng is definitely inferior to me,” The Avaricious Immortal said confidently.

“Avaricious Immortal, for you to help us like this, what is it that you might want from us?” Xian Yuyin knew that the Avaricious Immortal was never someone to conduct a losing transaction.

“Young Master, although I am avaricious, I also know the ways of the wise. The benefit that I want today is very simple; I merely wish to stand under the the giant tree that is Milord and Young Master so that I can have a place that will shelter me from the wind and rain,” The Avaricious Immortal said with a courteous bow.

Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin revealed an expression of confusion. The Avaricious Immortal was extremely greedy; this was something that everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism knew.

Yet, he actually wanted to help them unconditionally today. He truly did not understand what the Avaricious Immortal was planning.

“Very well. It is rare for you to come to such an enlightenment. Regardless of what happens tomorrow, you shall, from today

forward, be on the same boat as us father and son. We shall enjoy blessings and endure misfortunes together,” At that moment, Xian Yuyin’s father straightforwardly accepted the Avaricious Immortal’s plan.

Then, Xian Yuyin’s father took out a jade pendant and handed it to the Avaricious Immortal, saying, “This is our family heirloom that was given to me by my father. In order to show our good faith in cooperating with you, I will give this jade pendant to you.”

Seeing this jade pendant, Xian Yuyin’s expression changed once again. Although that jade pendant was not a priceless treasure, it possessed extraordinary significance. It was indeed something his grandfather had passed on to his father.

“Thank you Milord. This Avaricious Immortal will definitely not disappoint you. Milord and Young Master, you merely need to wait for the show tomorrow,” The Avaricious Immortal accepted the pendant and then turned to leave.

“Father, I don’t understand. The Avaricious Immortal has always been someone who values wealth and valuables as much as his own life. Today, he actually came to help us of his own accord without demanding anything. This doesn’t seem like his character,” Xian Yuyin said in a puzzled manner.

“Oh Yuyin, you don’t understand. Chu Feng and the Avaricious Immortal are absolutely irreconcilable enemies. Right now, Chu Feng is on the verge of rising in power. Seeing this, the Avaricious Immortal will naturally feel very uneasy. It could be said that he is more anxious and fearful than anyone else.”

“If Chu Feng is to emerge in power, the only thing awaiting the Avaricious Immortal will be death. Compared to us father and son, he is the one who is feeling the actual imminent danger.”

“Thus, to speak of it precisely, he is not helping us. Rather, he is helping himself,” Xian Yuyin’s father said.

“So that’s this case. I understand now,” At that moment, Xian Yuyin came to a sudden realization. Then, he revealed an extremely cold gaze and muttered, “Chu Feng, I shall see how you can continue to act complacent tomorrow.”

Xian Yuyin was extremely confident about what would happen tomorrow. No matter how talented Chu Feng might be, he remained a member of the younger generation. Even if Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Xian Yuyin believed that he would absolutely not be a match for the Avaricious Immortal.

The reason for that was because world spirit techniques were extremely different from martial techniques. World spirit techniques possessed all sorts of complicated spirit formations that required a lot of time to specially study. In other words, to learn world spirit techniques was even more difficult than learning martial cultivation. With how young Chu Feng was, he would naturally not have as much experience as an old monster like the Avaricious Immortal.

.....

The next day. Chu Feng and the others arrived at the Ancient Era’s Palace again.

Merely, this time around, not only was there no one that dared to lash out at Chu Feng, the crowd instead all took the initiative to greet and chat with Chu Feng. With smiles across their faces, they appeared to be extremely amiable.

In fact, even the four tall, short, fat and skinny Grand Elders that possessed extraordinary statuses smiled and nodded at Chu Feng. Although they did not say anything, they had demonstrated their acknowledgement of Chu Feng.

However, to the crowd’s surprise, Xian Yuyin and his father had also arrived at the Ancient Era’s Palace again.

This came as a great astonishment to the Ancient Era's Elves. With the temperaments of Xian Yuyin and his father, it should be impossible for them to return here. Could it be that their nature had finally changed for the better?

That was what the grand characters present were thinking. After all, that was the only way to explain their actions, as they could not think of another reason why that pair of father and son would let go of their dignity to come here again.

After everyone arrived, the Avaricious Immortal stepped forward, saluted the Elf King and said, "Your Majesty, due to having an important matter to take care of, my senior brother had to leave last night."

"I know. I believe the Immeasurable Immortal has entrusted some things to you, Avaricious Immortal. It is now up to you to do what you should," The Elf King said.

"Your Majesty, that is actually precisely what this Avaricious Immortal wanted to mention today," The Avaricious Immortal said.

"Avaricious Immortal, could there be something wrong?" The Elf King was very smart. From the Avaricious Immortal's tone, he had determined that something bad had happened.

"Your Majesty, when my senior brother and I were making the Blood Devouring Armors, we had tailor made them for Princess Miaomiao and Young Master Yuyin."

"But now, Princess Miaomiao wants to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation with Chu Feng. I'm afraid that that won't do, for the Blood Devouring Armor can only be donned by Young Master Yuyin and not Chu Feng," The Avaricious Immortal said.

"What? There's actually such a thing? Why did we not hear of this from the Immeasurable Immortal?" Once the Avaricious Immortal said those words, the crowd began to discuss the matter

spiritedly, and many were expressing their doubt.

“You’re lying,” As for Xian Miaomiao, she even directly lashed out at the Avaricious Immortal. She had a face of disbelief.

“This matter is absolutely true. This Avaricious Immortal does not have the boldness to lie to everyone here. If Milords do not believe me, I can take out the Blood Devouring Armor and have little friend Chu Feng personally inspect it. As little friend Chu Feng is also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, I believe he will be able to tell whether or not I’m lying,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“I can give it a try,” Chu Feng nodded calmly. Actually, the moment he saw Xian Yuyin’s arrival, he knew that something would happen today.

The reason for that was because everyone knew that they were gathered here again because Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao would be receiving the Blood Devouring Armor.

Logically, it should be impossible for Xian Yuyin to be willing to personally bear witness to that. When even ordinary people would not be willing to witness something like that, how could such a narrow-minded man like Xian Yuyin possibly be willing to?

However, not only had Xian Yuyin come, he also did not have any trace of anger or displeasure on his face. It was as if nothing had happened yesterday. Furthermore, the gaze with which he was looking at Chu Feng seemed to possess a bit of schadenfreude.

Chu Feng knew that they had come prepared. Furthermore, he had managed to guess that their plan would have something to do with the Avaricious Immortal. After all, he and the Avaricious Immortal were enemies. Thus, it would be reasonable for the Avaricious Immortal to join hands with Xian Yuyin and his father.

As for Chu Feng, what he needed to do now was destroy their scheme and turn their beautiful dream to nothingness.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please have a look,” The Avaricious Immortal took out the two Blood Devouring Armors.

The two Blood Devouring Armors were indeed very special. They were made entirely of deep red insects. As for those insects, they were all the same size; half a finger long and oval in shape.

Although those bugs had already been made into armor, they were actually all alive. Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to sense that the two Blood Devouring Armors were very extraordinary.

Chapter 1903 – The Avaricious Immortal's Provocation

“What the Avaricious Immortal said is correct. These two Blood Devouring Armors indeed already possess masters. Furthermore, they are, respectively, Princess Miaomiao and Young Master Yuyin,” After inspecting the two Blood Devouring Armors, Chu Feng spoke to the crowd.

“How could that be?” At that moment, many people revealed depressed expressions. As matters stood, they all wished for Chu Feng, and not Xian Yuyin, to accompany Xian Miaomiao into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

“Bastard! Who said that you can make your own decision to tailor-make those Blood Devouring Armors for Xian Yuyin and me? Did you get our consent?!” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was so enraged that her little face turned red with anger, and she flared out at the Avaricious Immortal on the spot.

“Miaomiao, do not be rude,” The Elf King said.

“Princess Miaomiao, please quell your anger. This matter is not at all related to me. It was a decision made by my senior brother.”

“However, Princess Miaomiao, please do not blame my senior brother either. Back then, none of us expected for little friend Chu Feng to suddenly appear. We all thought that you and Young Master Yuyin would be the ones going together. That’s why...” he sighed. “Anything I say would be useless. There is already nothing that I can change about this situation. If Princess Miaomiao wishes to blame someone, please blame me.”

With a ‘putt,’ the Avaricious Immortal half kneeled onto the ground. Although his action might seem righteous, many people felt that he was only acting pretentiously.

In fact, when Chu Feng declared that those two Blood Devouring

Armors were tailor made, the Avaricious Immortal was already bursting with joy. The reason for that was that this meant that his world spirit techniques were extremely powerful, and he had managed to deceive Chu Feng.

At that moment, although Xian Yuyin and his father did not have any physical reaction, they were also extremely overjoyed in their hearts.

Especially when they recalled how insufferably arrogant and awe-inspiring Chu Feng was last night, they felt even more refreshed. The reason for that was because they were finally able to see Chu Feng being defeated.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Miaomiao, do not worry. Although these two Blood Devouring Armors were indeed prepared for you and Young Master Yuyin, I merely need to slightly alter the one prepared for Young Master Yuyin to be able to don it.”

“Ah?” Once Chu Feng’s words were said, not to mention Xian Yuyin and his father, even Xian Miaomiao and the other Ancient Era’s Elves were all shocked.

“Chu Feng, is what you said for real?” Xian Miaomiao asked in an extremely excited manner.

“Of course. This is nothing difficult,” Chu Feng smiled and nodded.

However, the Avaricious Immortal immediately said, “Little friend Chu Feng, you must not act recklessly. These Blood Devouring Armors are items created by my senior brother through many days of effort. I know their characteristics the best. Now that they have been completed, if you are to alter them of your own initiative, you will make the Blood Devouring Armor lose its usefulness.”

“Even if you are able to successfully don it, the Blood Devouring

A armor will not be able to protect you in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. At that time, what use is there for you to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation? You would simply be throwing your life away.” It was as if he had already prepared for this.

Xian Miaomiao was stupefied upon hearing those words. Even though she wanted to be angry, she did not know how. The reason for that was because she was unable to ascertain whether what the Avaricious Immortal said was true or not.

It would be one thing if what the Avaricious Immortal said was false.

However, if what he said was the truth, wouldn't Chu Feng be courting death by entering the Blood Devouring Killing Formation while wearing the Blood Devouring Armor?

That was a responsibility that Xian Miaomiao was unable to bear, something that none of the people present were able to bear.

Thus, at that moment, this was already no longer an issue of worry for Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue. Instead... the Four Grand Elders, as well as the Protectors, were also very worried.

At that moment, only two people remained calm. They were Chu Feng and the Elf King. Chu Feng was extremely confident and not alarmed in the slightest.

As for the Elf King, he did not say a single word, and he also appeared very calm and collected. His relaxed appearance was as if he was enjoying a show.

Chu Feng smiled again and then said, “I think that, Avaricious Immortal, you are over-worrying. This Blood Devouring Armor is not as difficult to handle as you imagined it to be. There is no need for you to worry, I can handle it myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, do you not trust me?” The Avaricious Immortal asked.

“Trust you? How am I to trust you? It is true that the Blood Devouring Armors were tailor made for Princess Miaomiao and Young Master Yuyin. However they were not tailor made from the very beginning. Instead, they were altered last night,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what is the meaning of your words?” The Avaricious Immortal asked with a puzzled expression.

“What is the meaning? You should know best yourself. They were altered by you last night.”

“As for the purpose of your actions, I believe only you and Young Master Yuyin know, no?” Chu Feng smiled coldly as he took a glance at Xian Yuyin.

“Chu Feng, don’t you wrongly accuse me!” Xian Yuyin shouted.

“Chu Feng, I knew that you hold a prejudice toward me. However, you shouldn’t slander me like this, no? I, Avaricious, am always one who is straightforward and upright in my manner of conduct. How could I possibly do such a thing?” The Avaricious Immortal tried his best to defend himself.

“In that case, how about we go and find the Immeasurable Immortal and have him check it out?” Chu Feng said.

“That would naturally be the best. But, my senior brother had an important matter to take care of. He will not be able to return to the Elf Kingdom for the time being,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“The Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists of the Holy Land of Martialism are not only limited to you, myself and the Immeasurable Immortal. We can go and find another Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist to evaluate these Blood Devouring Armors,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng would naturally not really waste time to go to find someone else to evaluate the Blood Devouring Armors. He had only

said that for the sake of publicly unmasking the Avaricious Immortal.

The Avaricious Immortal looked to Chu Feng and said confidently, “Chu Feng, if you truly wish to find someone to evaluate them, I will naturally be able to accompany you to find someone.”

“However, it is not that I am arrogant, but even if you are able to find another world spiritist, they will not necessarily be able to determine if they have been altered better than me. After all, I, the Avaricious Immortal, have trained in world spirit techniques for over five thousand years.”

“And you... how long have you trained in world spirit techniques? What makes you qualified to question me? Do you really think that you can disregard everything just because you’re a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Let me tell you, even among Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, there will be differences in strength.”

“Of course there’s a difference in strength. However, I wish to remind you that your ranking among the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists is not high at all,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Chu Feng, you are truly impudent! As part of the younger generation, is this how you speak to your senior?!” The Avaricious Immortal shouted.

“That would have to depend on what sort of senior I am speaking with. For a senior that is willing to kill you, while you don’t possess any grievances or hatreds with him, all for the sake of his own personal benefits, let me ask you, what sort of attitude should I have when speaking with that kind of senior?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile and a mocking tone.

“Chu Feng, are you looking down on my world spirit techniques? Since you’re this arrogant, do you dare to compete against me?”

The Avaricious Immortal did not answer Chu Feng's question. Instead, he issued a challenge to Chu Feng. He did not answer Chu Feng's question because he was, after all, in the wrong.

“Compete? Compete again? Do you think you're even qualified to compete against Chu Feng? Take a mirror and look at yourself. Then ask yourself whether or not you are even qualified to compete against Chu Feng,” Xian Miaomiao pointed at the Avaricious Immortal and said one word at a time.

After Xian Miaomiao said those words, many of the people present all revealed an eased expression. She had said what they all wanted to say.

While it was true that the Avaricious Immortal was Chu Feng's senior, there was a heaven and earth difference in the moral character of the two of them.

The Avaricious Immortal was unworthy of being Chu Feng's senior.

Chapter 1904 – The Situation Turning Bad

“Chu Feng, do you dare to accept my challenge?” The Avaricious Immortal asked again.

“Avaricious Immortal, you are, no matter what, a senior. Please mind your words and actions so that you do not disgrace yourself,” Princess Lingyue said coldly.

“Princess Lingyue, you don’t understand. This old man is currently protecting his dignity as a world spiritist. Else, I will have no face to continue existing in the Holy Land of Martialism,” The Avaricious Immortal defended his actions.

“Face? Someone like you needs face? You should know your own conduct and deeds the best. I might as well tell you the truth. If it wasn’t for the fact that the Immeasurable Immortal insisted on bringing you to assist him with making the Blood Devouring Armor, our Elf Kingdom would never associate ourselves with someone like you,” Xian Miaomiao said without the slightest trace of politeness.

Regardless of how thick-skinned the Avaricious Immortal might be, he was on the verge of being unable to endure such open humiliation by Xian Miaomiao. His complexion turned ashen and his expression became extremely ugly.

Thus, he turned to Chu Feng and said again, “Chu Feng, are you a man or not?”

“Hahaha...” Chu Feng did not answer and instead burst into cold laughter.

“What are you laughing about?” The Avaricious Immortal asked loudly.

“Am I muddle-headed? Why is it that the things happening today resemble what happened yesterday that much?” As Chu Feng spoke, he took a glance at Xian Yuyin.

Yesterday, when Xian Yuyin was challenging Chu Feng, he had the exact same attitude as the Avaricious Immortal. However, in the end, he suffered a crushing defeat.

What Chu Feng meant by those words of his was that the Avaricious Immortal... would end up suffering the same conclusion as Xian Yuyin.

“Humph, I knew that you wouldn’t dare,” Seeing that Chu Feng had refused to accept his challenge even now, the Avaricious Immortal smiled coldly. Then, he took a glance at the crowd and said, “Princesses, Young Masters, Milords, you have all seen it. Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques are simply inferior to my own. His questioning my decision is simply slander to my name.”

“Avaricious, never did I mention that I wouldn’t,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you saying that you will compete with me?” The Avaricious Immortal asked.

“Compete, of course we must compete. If we do not compete, you wouldn’t know how weak you really are. However, if we must compete, then we must set some conditions. Merely, I fear that you will not dare to accept them,” Chu Feng said.

“What jest. What would I not dare to accept? What is the condition? Speak away,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“We shall bet our lives. Do you dare to accept?” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say? You wish to gamble your life with me?” The Avaricious Immortal was startled upon hearing those words. He was originally planning to use that to scare Chu Feng. Never had he thought that Chu Feng would use that condition to scare him instead.

In fact, at that moment, the crowd present was completely startled.

What sort of situation was this?

No matter how enormous the hatred between Chu Feng and the Avaricious Immortal might be, there shouldn't be a need to gamble their lives with world spirit techniques, no? With Chu Feng's current strength, he was simply capable of using his own martial cultivation to kill the Avaricious Immortal. There was simply no need for him to take that risk.

Or could it be that Chu Feng really possessed sufficient confidence in being able to surpass the Avaricious Immortal even in world spirit techniques?

The crowd began to have all sorts of speculations. However, at the same time, they all held a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. This young man's courage was simply too astonishing.

"Sure, let's compete. I shall see how you could possibly surpass me!" The Avaricious Immortal shouted. He accepted Chu Feng's condition.

"Very well. How do you want to compete? You decide." Chu Feng handed the responsibility of deciding the subject of the competition to the Avaricious Immortal.

"Heh, there's no need for you to tell me to decide. As your senior, it is only natural that I decide," The Avaricious Immortal did not appreciate Chu Feng's gesture.

However, his words caused the crowd to shake their heads repeatedly. He truly lacked the demeanor of a senior. When comparing him with Chu Feng, Chu Feng's conduct in every deed appeared better than the Avaricious Immortal all around.

"I'll set up a formation, and you shall attempt to break through it."

"You will do the same, and set up a formation for me to attempt to break through."

"No more than six hours can be used to set up the formation. No more than one hour can be used to break through the formation."

“If you cannot break through my formation, it’ll be your loss.”

“If I cannot break through your formation, it’ll be my loss,” The Avaricious Immortal said.

“What? Six hours to set up a formation and one hour to break through it? How could one possibly break through it?” Hearing what the Avaricious Immortal said, the crowd members were all astonished. The rules which he gave were truly too unreasonable.

However, compared to the others, Chu Feng only smiled lightly. With an indifferent expression on his face, he said, “What if I manage to break through your formation, but you cannot break through mine?”

“That would mean that I, Avaricious, am inferior to you. I will publicly kneel on the spot and call you granddaddy,” The Avaricious Immortal said resentfully. Even though he was surprised by Chu Feng deciding to bet with their lives, he was still absolutely confident in himself.

“Very well. Come,” Chu Feng smiled slightly and indicated to the Avaricious Immortal to start.

“The palace hall is too small. Let’s go outside,” The Avaricious Immortal snorted coldly and then began to fly outside.

Chu Feng followed closely behind him. The others in the palace hall also flew after them.

At that moment, the grand characters were all standing in the sky. Their gazes were bright and their expressions were serious.

Although they, the Ancient Era’s Elves, possessed extremely powerful battle power, their world spirit techniques were generally only average. For two Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists to compete, and in a life and death match on top of that, they all knew that it was a great show that was not to be missed.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Avaricious Immortal started to act. His hands began to move back and forth. As his hands gave birth to winds, golden-bright and dazzling Dragon Mark Royal-level world spirit power ended up being controlled by him.

He was setting up a formation, a very powerful grand spirit formation. While this grand spirit formation was a defensive formation, it was most definitely no ordinary defensive formation.

This grand formation was separated into eighty-one smaller formations. However, even for the smaller formations, they each covered several thousands of meters. With the eighty-one smaller formations crisscrossing one another, they created this enormous formation that covered several tens of thousands of meters.

The Avaricious Immortal was truly worthy of being a world spiritist ranked higher than the World Spiritist Immortal and the White-browed Immortal among the Ten Immortals. His world spirit techniques were indeed extremely profound.

However, even for him, a very powerful world spiritist, it still required a total of six hours to set up that enormous spirit formation. He finished his spirit formation right at the six hour mark.

“Chu Feng, go ahead and attempt to break it,” The Avaricious Immortal said as he pointed to the enormous spirit formation shining with golden light behind him. Confidence filled his aged face.

“This... how is one to break through that formation?” Seeing that formation, the Ancient Era’s Elves all started to frown.

Even though none of them were very proficient with world spirit techniques, they were able to tell that the Avaricious Immortal’s spirit formation was especially useful against world spirit techniques.

In other words, it would actually be extremely easy to break

through the formation with martial power. With Chu Feng's cultivation, it would be as simple as waving his sleeve.

However, if one were to use world spirit techniques, it would be extremely difficult, so difficult that it was simply impossible.

"Truly despicable," At this moment, the grand characters of the Ancient Era's Elves that were generally very calm were unable to contain themselves, and began to audibly despise the Avaricious Immortal.

The Avaricious Immortal declared that six hours would be the time limit to set up the formation. Furthermore, it just so happened that he had finished setting up his spirit formation in six hours. Evidently, he had already planned this beforehand.

"Chu Feng was too careless. He shouldn't have allowed that Avaricious Immortal to give his conditions. Look at it now, that Avaricious Immortal possesses an advantage all around," At that moment, Princess Lingyue's gaze was flickering. She had a worried expression on her face.

The way she saw it, the situation was extremely bad for Chu Feng.

Chapter 1905 – Shifting Heaven And Earth

“Big sister, what’s wrong? Is that spirit formation really that difficult to break through?” Seeing her own big sister acting in such a manner, Xian Miaomiao became even more worried.

“It’s difficult, extremely difficult.”

“Although I am nowhere as proficient with world spirit techniques as Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, I am able to tell how powerful that spirit formation is. Not to mention an hour, even if one was given twenty hours, one would not be able to break through it with world spirit techniques. That is simply an unbreakable spirit formation,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Ah? Big sister, what do we do then? Think of a way,” Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao immediately became extremely worried. The competition this time around was different from the one last night. If Chu Feng were to be defeated, he would have to die.

“This spirit formation is impossible to be broken through. It is simply impossible for Chu Feng to win against the Avaricious Immortal. The only thing that he can do is to set up a spirit formation that the Avaricious Immortal cannot break through and force a draw,” Princess Lingyue said.

“Can Chu Feng do that?” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao looked to Chu Feng. Although she was extremely confident in Chu Feng’s battle power, she did not know how strong his world spirit techniques were.

“With Chu Feng’s strength, that should be possible. Merely, I fear that after this matter ends in a draw, the Avaricious Immortal will not be willing to leave it at that, and will continue to insist on competing again,” Princess Lingyue said.

“I will not give him the opportunity to do so. If this match ends

in a tie, I will immediately drive that Avaricious Immortal from our Elf Kingdom,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Mn,” Princess Lingyue nodded. That was also what she was thinking.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you should quickly get to work. After all, you only have one hour to break that formation,” At that moment, seeing that Chu Feng was standing there motionlessly, an Elf Kingdom’s Protector was unable to contain himself and called out to Chu Feng.

It was only at that moment that the crowd noticed that the Avaricious Immortal had already begun to measure the time. Why was Chu Feng still not attempting to break the formation?

“Haha...” At that moment, the Avaricious Immortal laughed lightly. He said mockingly, “Did you give up because you know you cannot break the formation?”

“Wrong,” However, Chu Feng shook his head. He slowly walked over to the Avaricious Immortal and said, “This spirit formation of yours is something that I can break through in a split second. As such, why should I be impatient to break it?”

“What did you say? You... you are simply boasting shamelessly!” Hearing those words, the Avaricious Immortal was deeply enraged.

He possessed absolute confidence in his spirit formation. Not to mention Chu Feng, he would not fear even if he were to compete against his senior brother with this formation.

Yet, Chu Feng actually said such a thing. Chu Feng was simply insulting him. As such, how could he not be enraged?

In fact, it was not only the Avaricious Immortal. Even Xian Miaomiao and the others were stunned by Chu Feng’s words.

At such a time, how could Chu Feng be this calm and boast to the Avaricious Immortal instead of hurriedly attempting to break the formation? This was not the time to boast.

“Boast shamelessly? Haha...” Chu Feng smiled again. He said, “I shall let you see whether or not I am boasting.”

“Woosh~~~”

Once Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, he suddenly raised his hand. Then, a golden light flew out from Chu Feng’s palm. Like a sharp sword, it was shot directly into that vast spirit formation.

“Boom~~~”

Once that golden light pierced into the spirit formation, that vast, seemingly indestructible spirit formation instantly crumbled into countless dazzling golden lights that dissipated into the air.

“Heavens, exactly what happened?! Exactly what is going on here?!”

At that moment, not to mention the Avaricious Immortal, Xian Yuyin and his father, even Xian Miaomiao and the others were stunned.

“Interesting,” At that moment, the only person that was still able to remain calm and collected was the Elf King. However, he had revealed a rare surprised expression in his eyes.

“Chu Feng, you’ve broken through that spirit formation! But, that spirit formation was clearly extremely difficult to break through. How did you manage to do so?” Xian Miaomiao arrived before Chu Feng and asked with incomparable curiosity. She was extremely excited, for Chu Feng had surpassed her imagination.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, how did you manage to do that? That is simply too unbelievable,” Princess Lingyue also ran over.

In fact, the gazes of practically everyone were cast onto Chu Feng. They all wished to know the answer to that question.

Originally, they all felt that the situation was extremely bad for Chu Feng, that even the best ending would be a tie. They had truly never expected for Chu Feng to be able to so effortlessly break

through the Avaricious Immortal's spirit formation. This truly caused them to be enormously taken aback.

Chu Feng did not immediately answer them. Instead, he looked to the Avaricious Immortal. It was only then that he discovered...

...that the Avaricious Immortal's complexion had become paper pale, like a corpse. Furthermore, he was shaking his head nonstop and muttering to himself, "Impossible, this is impossible, impossible."

The crowd looked in the direction of Chu Feng's gaze, and saw the current expression of the Avaricious Immortal. At that time, they involuntarily revealed cold smiles on their faces.

The reason for that was because the Avaricious Immortal's current reaction was simply a heaven and earth difference from his previous proud and arrogant behavior. The crowd was able to take pleasure in this clear contrast.

"The spirit formation that the Avaricious Immortal set up earlier was from the Ancient Era. It is called the Spirit Techniques Blocking Chain Formation."

"As its name implies, the usage of that spirit formation is not to defend against attacks from martial power. Instead, it is especially used to protect against world spirit techniques. In other words, it is extremely difficult to use world spirit techniques to break that spirit formation."

"Furthermore, when the Avaricious Immortal was setting up the spirit formation, he used many pieces of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to increase the defensive ability of his spirit formation. This made that spirit formation even harder, nearly impossible, to break apart," Chu Feng said.

"If it was that hard, how did you manage to break it?" Xian Miaomiao asked curiously.

"Allow me to explain this," At that moment, the Elf King actually

interrupted.

Hearing those words, the crowd all turned their gazes to the Elf King.

“Although the Avaricious Immortal’s spirit formation is extremely rare, little friend Chu Feng managed to see through it with a single glance. Thus, when the Avaricious Immortal was wracking his brains to set up the spirit formation, little friend Chu Feng was already setting up the spirit formation to break through his spirit formation.”

“Furthermore, little friend Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques are truly amazing. Before the Avaricious Immortal had even finished setting up his spirit formation, little friend Chu Feng had already quietly finished setting up his own spirit formation and concealed it within his palm.”

“That is why the scene earlier happened,” The Elf King said.

“So that’s what happened. That’s truly unimaginable,” The crowd came to a sudden realization after hearing what the Elf King said.

Earlier, they had been focused on the Avaricious Immortal setting up his spirit formation the entire time, and simply had not paid attention to what Chu Feng was doing. No one ever imagined that the Avaricious Immortal was already destined to be defeated the moment he started setting up his spirit formation.

“But, the spirit formation that the Avaricious Immortal set up was so grand and vast. How could the spirit formation that Chu Feng set up break through his spirit formation while being low profile?” Xian Miaomiao asked in a confused manner.

“Mn, what Miaomiao said is correct. With such a powerful formation, even if one wished to break through it, one should be using a very vast and grand spirit formation. How did little friend Chu Feng manage to stealthily conceal his formation in his palm?”

Once Xian Miaomiao asked that question, the others also grew curious.

“That’s why I said little friend Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques are truly amazing,” When the Elf King said those words, he looked to Chu Feng and smiled.

Chu Feng returned the smile. He had set up his spirit formation extremely ingeniously. If one did not observe him carefully, one would not be able to discover him setting it up. Yet, the Elf King had discovered it. This meant that the Elf King had been paying close attention to him the entire time.

“Impossible! This spirit formation of mine originated from the Ancient Era. It is something that I obtained from an Ancient Era’s Remnant. Even my senior brother might not necessarily be able to break apart my spirit formation. How could you possibly accomplish that?!” At that moment, the Avaricious Immortal shook his head repeatedly. He was unable to accept this fact.

“I also believe that there are not a lot of people that know of that spirit formation. However, it is truly an unfortunate coincidence for you; I just so happen to be one of the few who do know of that spirit formation. Furthermore, I just so happen to know the method of breaking through it that even you do not know,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“How could that be?! You, with your young age, how could you possibly know that much? How could you possibly grasp such a powerful spirit formation?” The Avaricious Immortal had a dejected expression. He was deeply stunned. It took him an entire hundred years of training in order to grasp the spirit formation that he had set up. He had done so all for the sake of putting it to good use when competing against other world spiritists.

It was also because of that spirit formation that he had been so confident. The reason for that was because he only knew about how to set up that spirit formation, and not how to break through

it. Thus, he had thought that it was unbreakable.

Thus, how could Chu Feng, a young man only in his twenties, possibly know about his spirit formation, and even the spirit formation to break through his spirit formation that would be even more difficult to master?

Chapter 1906 – Kneel And Beg For Forgiveness

“Avaricious Immortal, there’s no need for you to gasp in surprise just yet. Next, it’s time for you to break my formation.”

Faced with the Avaricious Immortal’s panicky expression, Chu Feng’s smile did not decrease in the slightest. As he spoke, he sat down in midair, clasped his hands together and closed his eyes.

“What is Chu Feng doing? Isn’t he supposed to be setting up his spirit formation?”

Originally, a lot of people had thought that Chu Feng was going to set up his spirit formation, and were greatly looking forward to it.

However, after Chu Feng sat down, he became motionless.

Furthermore, once he started sitting, he sat for two entire hours. It was as if he had fallen asleep. This caused the crowd to be extremely puzzled and confused by what Chu Feng was doing.

Could he truly have fallen asleep?!!!

“Done.”

However, after two hours passed, Chu Feng not only opened his eyes, he also stood up with a slight smile on his face.

“Done? What’s done? Clearly nothing was done, no?” The crowd looked all around, but were unable to find any spirit formations. Exactly what had Chu Feng done?

He seemed to have not done anything other than sleep for two hours. Yet, since he didn’t do anything, why did he say ‘done?’

Could it be that Chu Feng was going to throw the competition and give the Avaricious Immortal a chance?

But, there shouldn’t be a reason for him to do that. The two of

them were enemies. Chu Feng should be itching to kill the Avaricious Immortal. Thus, how could he possibly be throwing the competition for the Avaricious Immortal?

“Chu Feng, are you deliberately wasting my time?” In fact, even the Avaricious Immortal was extremely confused.

Although he was extremely shocked by Chu Feng breaking through his spirit formation, he had not conceded to Chu Feng. After all, he also had the opportunity to break through Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

However, what sort of situation was this? Chu Feng had simply not set up any spirit formation. Thus, how was he supposed to break through the spirit formation?

That was why he said that Chu Feng was wasting his time.

“Wasting time? No, it is time for you to attempt to break my spirit formation,” As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his palms that were clasped together.

“Buzz~~~”

At that moment, a dazzling golden light appeared with a flicker.

It was a golden sphere. It was only the size of a goose egg. Yet, it was glistening with illuminating golden light like the bright sun.

“Could that be the spirit formation that Chu Feng set up? Why is it so small?”

Xian Miaomiao and the others were all bewildered. Compared to the spirit formation the Avaricious Immortal had set up, the one that Chu Feng had set up was simply too tiny in comparison.

“That is the spirit formation that Chu Feng set up? Heh, ridiculous. Although I do not know any world spirit techniques, I am still able to tell that that spirit formation is unable to withstand a single blow,” Xian Yuyin started to laugh coldly.

Xian Yuyin had been stunned by Chu Feng being able to break

apart the Avaricious Immortal's spirit formation. Even though he was still standing in midair, he felt as if he had dropped into an endless abyss, without a way to ever get out of this predicament.

However, at that moment, after seeing Chu Feng's spirit formation, he managed to see hope again.

However, after the Avaricious Immortal saw the golden sphere, he grew motionless, as if he had been petrified. He was completely stunned.

"Avaricious Immortal, what are you standing there for? Could it be that you are also able to break my spirit formation in an instant?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile. He was absolutely mocking the Avaricious Immortal. The reason for that was because he knew that the Avaricious Immortal would not be able to break his spirit formation.

"Avaricious Immortal, it's your turn," At that moment, it was instead Xian Yuyin who grew impatient, and actually called out to remind the Avaricious Immortal. The reason he did that was because he did not wish for the Avaricious Immortal to lose.

He had already lost to Chu Feng in a competition of talent. If the Avaricious Immortal were to also lose to Chu Feng in a competition of world spirit techniques, all that they had planned today would be ruined. Furthermore, they would instead demonstrate how powerful Chu Feng was once again.

"Humph, sure enough, they possess relations with one another," At that moment, Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue, as well as some of the Protectors all cast a side eye at Xian Yuyin.

At that moment, practically all the people from the Elf Kingdom wished for Chu Feng to win. The reason for that was because they deeply disliked the Avaricious Immortal.

Yet, at such a time, Xian Yuyin had a different reaction from all of them, and was actually standing on the side of the Avaricious

Immortal. This naturally caused the crowd's impression of Xian Yuyin to worsen.

“Avaricious Immortal, what are you thinking about?! Quickly, break that formation!!!”

At that moment, Xian Yuyin had no heart to be concerned with what the others were thinking about him. The reason for that was because even though he had reminded the Avaricious Immortal, the Avaricious Immortal was still standing there motionlessly. It was as if he had been stunned. This caused Xian Yuyin to feel extremely uneasy.

“Putt~~~”

Right at that moment, the Avaricious Immortal actually kneeled in midair and said to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, I’ve lost. I admit my defeat. Please spare my life, please spare my life.”

The crowd members were all stunned by that scene. What sort of situation was this? Chu Feng’s spirit formation was merely a little golden sphere; how could it possibly force the Avaricious Immortal to such a state, force him to actually admit his defeat?

As for Chu Feng, his expression remained unchanged. It was as if he had anticipated this to begin with.

Even though that spirit formation of his was only the size of a goose egg, it was even more difficult to break through than the spirit formation the Avaricious Immortal had previously set up.

Even Chu Feng, who knew the method to break his spirit formation, would still find it very difficult for him to actually break through his spirit formation. As such, there was no need to mention how difficult it would be for the Avaricious Immortal, who didn’t even know the method to break through his spirit formation.

“Avaricious Immortal, you are truly shameless. We agreed to bet our lives. You accepted that condition frankly back then.”

“Furthermore, earlier, I gave you the authority to decide the rules for the competition. I have already yielded to you enough.”

“Since you’ve been defeated, you should wholeheartedly accept it and honor your promise. Yet, what is the meaning of your actions right now?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I was truly in the wrong. I was thinking of nothing but personal gains before. I will never do that again.”

“These are all of the possessions that I’ve acquired in my lifetime. All of my riches are here. Little friend Chu Feng, please spare my life, please give me a chance to turn over a new leaf.”

As the Avaricious Immortal spoke, he took out three Cosmos Sacks. Furthermore, while still kneeling, he crawled over to Chu Feng, and with a petty and low appearance, presented the three Cosmos Sacks to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng bluntly accepted the Three Cosmos Sacks and began to inspect them.

He was truly shocked upon inspecting the three Cosmos Sacks. What was contained within those three Cosmos Sacks?

It was actually even more Cosmos Sacks. Each one of his three Cosmos Sacks contained several hundred Cosmos Sacks. Adding on all of the Cosmos Sacks, they actually numbered a total of a thousand eight hundred and thirty-six Cosmos Sacks.

The treasures contained in that many Cosmos Sacks was truly a dazzling lineup. It could be said that there was some of everything there.

There were even many Natural Oddities that Chu Feng needed.

Merely, those Natural Oddities did not contain a lot of Natural Energies. Thus, they were not very helpful to the current Chu Feng.

That said, other than the Natural Oddities, there were still a lot

of other treasures, including many Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

It must be said that the Avaricious Immortal had truly gathered a lot of treasures in the course of his life. Merely, even he did not expect that the treasures he had unscrupulously gathered through his lifetime, the treasures that he had disregarded his own reputation to gather, would actually all have been gathered for Chu Feng.

“These items are mine to begin with. After all, once you die, your possessions should naturally be mine,” Although Chu Feng had calmly accepted the three Cosmos Sacks, he did not plan to spare the Avaricious Immortal. Someone like the Avaricious Immortal was truly too hateful and could not be spared. Else, he would cause no end of trouble.

“Chu Feng, please spare me. I admit that I altered the Blood Devouring Armors. But, I did all that because I was forced to do so. I did not want to do it. It was all because of him, he was the one who forced me to do that,” As the Avaricious Immortal spoke, he pointed his finger at Xian Yuyin’s father.

“Avaricious, You... you... you, what nonsense are you talking about?” Seeing this scene, Xian Yuyin’s father started to panic. He truly did not expect for the Avaricious Immortal to be this despicable. Not only was he afraid of death, he even, for the sake of living, actually snitched on him.

“Xian Daofeng, don’t you act dumb! It was clearly you who instructed me to do all this. I only did this because you agreed to give me benefits.”

“You and your son are envious of little friend Chu Feng’s talent. And you, for the sake of helping your son, decided to have me entrap little friend Chu Feng. You are truly despicable and unworthy of being an Elf Kingdom’s Protector.”

However, the Avaricious Immortal was not afraid of Xian Yuyin’s

father at all. Not only that, he even took out the jade pendant that Xian Yuyin's father had presented to him last night.

The Avaricious Immortal held the jade pendant up high. Then, he swept his gaze over the crowd and said, "Milords, I am not lying. This is what that Xian Daofeng gave me. He promised me that as long as I managed to take care of Chu Feng, he would bestow me enormous benefits tonight."

Not only did the Avaricious Immortal snitch on Xian Yuyin's father, he even began to add details to the story. Whether it was real or not, he said it all. Furthermore, he placed all the responsibility onto Xian Yuyin's father.

Chapter 1907 – Angered To The State Of Vomiting Blood

“You, you, you!!!” At that moment, Xian Yuyin’s father was unable to even speak properly. He was truly about to be driven mad with rage.

He truly never expected for the Avaricious Immortal to be this shameless. It was clearly he, the Avaricious Immortal, who had come to him. Yet, he now pushed all of the blame onto him.

“Puuu~~~”

Under the effects of his raging anger, Xian Yuyin’s father actually vomited a mouthful of blood. He was actually angered by the Avaricious Immortal to the state of vomiting blood.

“Humph, you’re still pretending? You are truly a great actor. Although you might appear to be righteous, the person who’s actually the most treacherous is you,” However, not only was the Avaricious Immortal not affected by Xian Yuyin’s father vomiting blood, he even began to mock and ridicule him.

“You, you, you! Avaricious, you damned despicable bastard!”

At that moment, Xian Yuyin’s father was filled with regret. He regretted how foolish he was to be overwhelmed with emotion last night and actually give that jade pendant to the Avaricious Immortal.

“I’ll kill you!” In anger, Xian Yuyin’s father actually shot out an explosive palm strike at the Avaricious Immortal. Immediately, overwhelming martial power surged toward the Avaricious Immortal.

Seeing that the situation was bad, the Avaricious Immortal shouted, “Your Majesty, please save me!!!” He wanted to seek asylum from the Elf King.

However, the Elf King ignored him completely. In fact, no one present bothered with him. They were all watching him with cold gazes.

“Bang~~~”

Thus, following a muffled explosion, the Avaricious Immortal turned into blood that sprinkled down. He had been killed by Xian Yuyin’s father’s palm strike.

Not a single person present felt any pity for the Avaricious Immortal’s death. Instead, they all had relieved expressions on their faces. Someone like the Avaricious Immortal truly deserved to die, or he would only remain a scourge should he continue to live.

‘Rank six Martial Emperor. Sure enough, I guessed correctly,’ At that moment, Chu Feng had discovered that Xian Yuyin’s father’s cultivation was that of a rank six Martial Emperor. He had the same cultivation as Nangong Longjian.

However, Chu Feng was no longer the same person as he was before. Even when facing rank six Martial Emperors, he would not fear them. Even if he could not defeat them, he possessed the capability to fight against them. In short... it would not be that easy for rank six Martial Emperors to kill Chu Feng.

That aside, Chu Feng felt that Xian Yuyin’s father might not necessarily have the intention to do anything to him. After all, he was currently powerless to defend himself.

The Elf King turned to Xian Yuyin’s father and asked, “How are you to explain this matter?”

“My explanation will be useless. This matter is indeed related to me. However, it is unrelated to Yuyin,” Xian Yuyin’s father actually admitted to it calmly.

Actually, this was the best option that he could take. If he were to admit to his crime, he would, at the very most, be punished. The

Elf Kingdom would not kill him for the sake of an outsider like Chu Feng.

However, if he refused to admit his crime, then not only would he be mocked, looked down upon and pointed at by others, even his son Xian Yuyin would suffer the same fate.

“You have truly disappointed me. Your position of Protector shall be handed to Xian Long. As for you... go and enter closed-door training to repent for your actions. You are not allowed to exit for the next hundred years,” The Elf King said.

“.....” Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin’s father was stunned. To speak of it pleasantly, it would be a hundred years of closed-door training. To speak of it unpleasantly, it would be a hundred years of house arrest.

No one thought that the Elf King would give Xian Yuyin’s father such a severe punishment.

When the punishment was declared by the Elf King, even Xian Miaomiao and Xian Lingyue were stunned.

“Yes,” That said, Xian Yuyin’s father had no choice but to nod his head. Then he turned around and left.

The Elf King was not worried about him escaping, because he knew that Xian Yuyin’s father did not have the courage to do so. Furthermore, for the sake of his son, he would not escape. As such, he had no choice but to comply with the punishment bestowed by the Elf King.

.....

After this matter ended, the Elf King felt guilty for having Chu Feng suffer repeatedly at the hands of their Ancient Era’s Elves after coming to the Elf Kingdom.

Thus, he personally arranged a feast to entertain Chu Feng. Merely, there were no other people besides Chu Feng and the Elf King at this feast.

“Your Majesty, might you be willing to tell me about the matters of the Ancient Era?” Chu Feng asked. Chu Feng yearned for that era, the golden age of martial cultivation. It was also the era that he was the most curious about.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you are not the first one to ask me about the Ancient Era. Merely, I really cannot answer that question.”

“The Ancient Era is truly too distant. Although our Ancient Era’s Elves have existed since the Ancient Era, we do not remember the things of the Ancient Era, nor do we possess any information regarding the Ancient Era,” The Elf King said.

“So that’s the case. It would seem that the Ancient Era is truly a mystery,” Chu Feng sighed.

“Indeed, it is a mystery. However, all mysteries will one day be unraveled,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty, do you think all of the experts from the Ancient Era have truly died out?” Chu Feng asked.

“Not necessarily,” The Elf King shook his head. He then said, “The path of martial cultivation is never-ending. Although we might seem to be able to call upon the wind and summon the rain here, whenever I look to the night sky, I will feel myself viewing the vast sky from the bottom of a well.”

“The reason for that is because I know that there are more martial cultivation experts above that vast sky. Merely, they are experts that completely surpass our imagination.”

“If they were to be described as gods, then we would merely be mortals in comparison.”

“Think about it. When we mortals are able to live for ten thousand years through various means, it should not be impossible for gods to live for several tens or even hundreds of thousands of years,” The Elf King said.

After hearing what the Elf King said, Chu Feng had a whole new

level of respect for him. He was able to tell that the Elf King was truly a great visionary.

“Your Majesty, could it be that you feel that there are more martial cultivation experts in the Outer World?” Chu Feng asked in a probing manner.

“I don’t only feel that way. Rather, I am certain. Furthermore, there must be a lot. If the world we live in is the vast starry sky, then our Holy Land of Martialism’s place in this vast starry sky would be...”

As he spoke those words, the Elf King suddenly extended his finger and placed it before Chu Feng. Chu Feng looked carefully at his finger, and discovered that there was a single speck of dust on it.

“Dust?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. If we are to compare ourselves to the vast starry sky, our Holy Land of Martialism would only be a speck of dust,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty is truly a person of great notions,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, did you know that I thought of a single person when I saw you,” The Elf King said.

“Who?” Chu Feng asked.

“Qing Xuantian,” The Elf King said.

“Qing Xuantian?” Chu Feng was surprised.

“Indeed, Qing Xuantian. I met him before when I was a child.”

“At that time, I was only ten years old. Due to the fact that I possessed decent talent, I ended up learning martial cultivation sooner than the other children.”

“At that time, I possessed boundless expectations for martial cultivation. Furthermore, the person that I admired the most was the Elf King from that time.”

“He was the Elf King that was said to be the strongest Elf King in the history of our Ancient Era’s Elves,” The Elf King said.

“Strongest?” Chu Feng was shocked.

“That’s right, the strongest. However, your human race’s Qing Xuantian defeated my idol.”

“He defeated the strongest Elf King in the history of our Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“He defeated the person who was viewed to be an omnipotent god by us Ancient Era’s Elves,” The Elf King said.

“At that time, practically all of our Ancient Era’s Elves crumbled from shock. It was as if we had been cast from the altar of gods to the world of mortals.”

“It was as if we had lost all conviction in an instant, and entered a state of bewilderment.”

“However, I was the only one that did not. Do you know why?” The Elf King asked Chu Feng.

Chapter 1908 – From The Other World

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s because from that day on, my idol had changed to Qing Xuantian,” The Elf King said.

“This...” Chu Feng felt very surprised. He did not expect that the Ancient Era’s Elves’ King, the grand number one expert in the Holy Land of Martialism, would actually think of Qing Xuantian, a human, as his idol.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to imagine how world-shakingly powerful Qing Xuantian was back then. Else, how could he have possibly subdued the current Elf King?

“Qing Xuantian was an era’s Overlord. He is also the only true Overlord in my eyes.”

“Not only did he save the Holy Land of Martialism, he also saved us Ancient Era’s Elves. He is everyone’s benefactor. Even the later generation should not forget about the enormous grace that he bestowed upon us.”

“However, due to the fact that the Elf King back then had been defeated at Qing Xuantian’s hands, and our Ancient Era’s Elves would have to share our many Ancient Era’s Immortal Ponds with the various races as per the agreement made before the match, this caused many of our clansmen to feel deep enmity for Qing Xuantian.”

“However, there was also a portion of us Ancient Era’s Elves that greatly approved of Qing Xuantian. The reason for that was because it was true that us Ancient Era’s Elves were extremely arrogant and excessive in many ways. What Qing Xuantian did was only fair.”

“It was precisely because there were Ancient Era’s Elves among us that acknowledged Qing Xuantian, as well as those those that

held a deep enmity against him, that led to our Ancient Era's Elves from that time to have a friendly yet antagonistic relationship with him."

"And now, I see Qing Xuantian's shadow on you, little friend Chu Feng. And I... do not wish to have a relationship of being both friend and enemy with you. I wish to only be friend, and not an enemy, of little friend Chu Feng," The Elf King said.

"What Your Majesty said is precisely what this Chu Feng was thinking," Chu Feng held up his wine cup to toast.

The Elf King held up his own wine cup and toasted Chu Feng with a smile. The two men enjoyed a shared cup of wine. However, the Elf King was not satisfied. He said, "The cup's too small. It's not satisfying to drink out of it. Let's change to a larger bowl."

In response, Chu Feng directly picked up the wine jug and said, "Let's drink directly from this."

"Haha, what little friend Chu Feng says is correct. Good, let's drink from the wine jugs," The Elf King also picked up a wine jug.

Even though martial cultivators were very powerful, it remained that wines were capable of intoxicating them. The reason for that was because the wines in the world of martial cultivation were special.

However, the two men were both very capable of drinking. Over the course of the night, they drank several tens of jugs of wine and were still not intoxicated.

There was no need to mention Chu Feng. He was immune to poisons. When even poisons were unable to cause him to pass out, how could wine possibly be able to?

As for the Elf King, it didn't seem like he possessed a special constitution. Rather, he simply possessed a superb capacity for liquor.

The reason for that was because he was different from Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng was immune to poisons, he was not affected even after drinking all that wine. As for the Elf King, although he was not drunk, his complexion turned red, and he became more talkative. It was clear that he had been affected by the alcohol.

However, to Chu Feng, this was something good. The reason for that was because it would allow the Elf King to converse with him without any restrictions.

“Little friend Chu Feng, as for the Outer World... I will not be able to reach there. However, I know that you will definitely go there one day. If you are able to go there, can you help me find a person?” The Elf King asked.

“Find a person?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. Then, he asked, “Find who?”

“Miaomiao’s mother,” The Elf King said.

“Princess Miaomiao’s mother?” Chu Feng’s eyes shone upon hearing those words. He thought to himself that there must be a story behind this.

Thus, Chu Feng did not continue to ask. Instead, he looked to the Elf King; he was waiting for the Elf King to explain things to him. Since the Elf King had already mentioned it, he would definitely tell Chu Feng the entire story.

“Do you know why I am certain that there are martial cultivators in the Outer World? That’s because Miaomiao’s mother is from the Outer World,” The Elf King said.

“Princess Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue are not born of the same mother?” Chu Feng asked in a surprised manner.

“That is what everyone believes. However, that is actually not the case. As for this secret, it is something that only I and Lingyue’s mother know about. And now, you know about it too,” The Elf King said.

At that moment, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself and

asked, “Your Majesty, exactly what is going on?” He had to ask the Elf King. After all, the Outer World was the place where his future expedition would be.

The Elf King did not try to conceal anything, and began to narrate to Chu Feng what had happened back then.

It turned out that, back then, Princess Lingyue’s mother was pregnant with the Elf King’s child. However, after she was pregnant with that child for only a month, her pregnancy became extremely unstable. It was very possible that she would have a miscarriage.

At that time, the Elf Kingdom’s Grand Elders all advised the Elf King to let nature take its course. After all... if that child were to be born with such a weak body, they would not be able to become a capable person in the future. As such, it was better to let nature take its course.

However, the Elf King was stubborn. He was determined to save his child.

As such, he sought for several of the most powerful World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism. He wanted their assistance in helping him save his child.

Furthermore, for the sake of searching for a medicinal herb, he braved the dangers and charged into the Holy Land of Martialism’s number one forbidden area, the Realm of Gods.

“Realm of Gods? Your Majesty has been to the Realm of Gods?” Chu Feng was very shocked.

“Mn, I have indeed been there,” The Elf King nodded.

“However, didn’t they say that the Realm of Gods was a place that one could not enter, that one would undoubtedly be killed should one enter, and that even if one were to live, one would not be able to live for more than a month? Could it be that the rumors were false?” Chu Feng asked. The reason he asked that was because

the Realm of Gods was a place that he had always wanted to go. Yet, he had never had the opportunity to do so.

“The rumors are true. Inside the Realm of Gods is a special sort of pathogen. If one is to be affected by it, they will definitely die. Furthermore, all those who enter the Realm of Gods will be affected by that pathogen.”

“For this sort of pathogen, all those below the Martial Emperor level of cultivation will definitely be killed should they be affected by it. However, for Martial Emperors and above, there is a way to treat them. Of course, only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists are capable of treating that pathogen,” The Elf King said.

“So that’s the case. In that case, what happened afterward?” Chu Feng asked.

“I was unable to find the medicinal herb. However, I ran across the most unforgettable person in my entire life,” The Elf King said.

“Was that Princess Miaomiao’s biological mother?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn,” The Elf King nodded. He said, “This matter is a bit complicated. As such, I will skip the details. In short, while she became pregnant with my child, she was unwilling to stay here. Thus, she used her abilities to transfer the child in her womb to my wife’s womb. Furthermore, it was also her who named that child. As for that child, she was Miaomiao.”

At that moment, Chu Feng seemed to realize why Xian Miaomiao possessed such overwhelming talent. It turned out that she was also a child borne of someone from the Outer World too.

“How did you know that she was from the Outer World?” Chu Feng asked.

“She was the one who said it. Furthermore, her strength was unimaginably powerful. When she wanted to leave, I was simply unable to stop her at all,” When mentioning this matter, the Elf

King revealed a helpless expression.

At that moment, Chu Feng was surprised. When even the grand number one individual in the Holy Land of Martialism was feeling this powerless, it would appear that Xian Miaomiao's mother was most definitely no ordinary person.

Were the experts from the Outer World truly all that powerful? At that moment, Chu Feng started to increasingly look forward to the Outer World.

"In short, Miaomiao does not belong here. She belongs to the Outer World. Furthermore, if my guess is correct, you should be the same. The reason for that is because the strength that you possess is also not something that belongs to the Holy Land of Martialism," The Elf King said while looking at Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled. He was hesitating as to whether or not to reveal his origin to the Elf King.

Upon thinking about how the Elf King had mentioned such a secret to him, which meant that he trusted him enormously, Chu Feng determined that he would tell the Elf King his origin too.

"Chu Feng, I believe that your origin is your secret. Thus, there is no need for you to tell me about it. After all, I am not curious about it. All I know is that you are not someone from this pond. Sooner or later, you will be flying to the Outer World. As for my Miaomiao, she is the same as you."

"Although I have never been to the Outer World, I am able to imagine how dangerous of a place it is. Thus, I hope that you will be able to look after Miaomiao on my behalf, and help her search for her mother after entering the Outer World with her," The Elf King said.

"Does Princess Miaomiao also not know about this matter?" Chu Feng asked.

"She still doesn't know about it yet. However, she will sooner or

later know about it,” The Elf King said.

“In that case, do you know how to enter the Outer World?” Chu Feng asked.

Chapter 1909 – The Means To Become Conceited

“I am also uncertain as to how to enter the Outer World. However, I feel that whether or not one can enter the Outer World is not related to one’s cultivation. Rather, it is related to the Realm of Gods,” The Elf King said.

“The Realm of Gods?” At that moment, Chu Feng’s gaze started to flicker slightly. He then said, “It would seem that I will have to proceed to the Realm of Gods.”

“Chu Feng, it is better for you to not attempt to go there just yet,” The Elf King said.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng asked.

“The dangers of that place most certainly surpass your imagination. I know that you are very powerful. However, it is better that you do not go there yet.”

“When the opportunity presents itself, I will go together with you,” The Elf King said.

“In that case, I will have to trouble Your Majesty,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, there is another matter that you must take note of,” The Elf King said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“You must be careful of the Dark Hall,” The Elf King said.

“Dark Hall? Your Majesty, do you know exactly what the Dark Hall is?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not know who it is that created the Dark Hall. However, I am certain that the Dark Hall is a very dangerous power.”

“Right now, many of the Holy Land of Martialism’s experts have joined their camp. For example, there’s the Yin-Yang Immortal,”

The Elf King said.

“Yin-Yang Immortal?” Chu Feng had heard of the Yin-Yang Immortal’s famous name. However, he did not know much about that Yin-Yang Immortal. All he knew was that the Yin-Yang Immortal was an existence with strength surpassing that of the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you must still remember the Snow-haired Immortal, right?” The Elf King asked.

“Of course. The Snow-haired Immortal is my benefactor,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng is truly a person that remembers graces and kindness shown to you. While it is true that the Snow-haired Immortal helped you, she also harmed you, no? That is what she told me personally. She mentioned to me how she had pushed you into the Extremely Poisonous Sea of Clouds,” The Elf King said.

“Could it be that Your Majesty is acquainted with the Snow-haired Immortal?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Snow-haired Immortal possesses a very reclusive personality. She has very few friends. As for me, I am one of her few friends,” The Elf King nodded.

“Do you know why the Snow-haired Immortal suddenly declared that she would no longer interfere with the grudges between you and the Four Great Imperial Clans during the moment when you were faced with the greatest calamity? It is actually because of the interference of the Yin-Yang Immortal,” The Elf King continued.

“The Yin-Yang Immortal’s interference?” Chu Feng started to frown. However, he did not express too much surprise. After all, the Dark Hall was secretly helping the Four Great Imperial Clans take care of him. Merely, Chu Feng didn’t know what the relationship between the Yin-Yang Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal was. Thus, he asked, “Could it be that the Yin-Yang

Immortal possesses a very close relationship with the Snow-haired Immortal?”

“They can’t be said to be very close. Merely, when the Snow-haired Immortal was younger, she was helped by the Yin-Yang Immortal. Thus, even if she did not wish to help the Yin-Yang Immortal, she had no choice but to do so.”

“Furthermore, it was also the Snow-haired Immortal who told me that the Yin-Yang Immortal has joined the Dark Hall. The reason for that was because the Yin-Yang Immortal personally invited the Snow-haired Immortal to join the Dark Hall. However, she refused.”

“If my guess is correct, the rank six Martial Emperor who appeared at the Ximen Imperial Clan that day should be the Yin-Yang Immortal,” The Elf King said.

“No wonder,” Chu Feng suddenly recalled that the spirit formations that bound Baili Xuankong and the others were extremely powerful. Even he had been unable to rapidly undo them. At that time, Chu Feng knew that there was a powerful Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist helping the Four Great Imperial Clans.

Upon hearing what the Elf King said, everything made sense. It turned out that those were the actions of the Yin-Yang Immortal.

“The Yin-Yang Immortal is only one of them. There are still a lot of other experts in the Holy Land of Martialism. I presume that a lot of them have already joined the Dark Hall.”

“Merely, I still do not know exactly who has joined the Dark Hall. It is truly us who are in the light while they are in the dark.”

“However... as long as the Dark Hall decides to carry out a large scale operation, they will all be exposed. Merely, I’m afraid that everyone will be caught off guard at that time,” The Elf King said.

“The people of the Dark Hall once declared that they would rule

over the Holy Land of Martialism. Such a conquest will naturally bring about war. As for wars, they will definitely cause bloodshed. With the style of the Dark Hall, they might even throw the Holy Land of Martialism into a catastrophe,” Chu Feng lamented.

“Little friend Chu Feng seems to be quite knowledgeable of the Dark Hall. Could it be that you know something else about them?” The Elf King asked.

“The Dark Hall once invited the experts from the World Spiritist Alliance to join them. After they were refused, they dispatched people to exterminate the World Spiritist Alliance. Fortunately, I arrived right on time. Else, the World Spiritist Alliance would likely have suffered a calamity,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, how is the World Spiritist Alliance now?” The Elf King asked concernedly.

“They should be fine,” Chu Feng said.

“That would be great. The Dark Hall is going around inviting world spiritists. Most likely, they have some sort of scheme. However, I am also having my men search for the headquarters of the Dark Hall. Since they are a hidden danger, I must eliminate them as soon as possible,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty is planning to wage war against the Dark Hall?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is as you said. War will bring about bloodshed. As for a war to conquer the Holy Land of Martialism, that holds even more true.”

“As a person of the Holy Land of Martialism, I feel that we, Ancient Era’s Elves, have a responsibility to prevent this war,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty is a man of righteousness. To be willing to consider the common people of the Holy Land of Martialism, it is most definitely the Holy Land of Martialism’s great fortune,” At that moment, Chu Feng’s impression of the Elf King changed

slightly.

The rumors he heard earlier all said that the Ancient Era's Elves were very arrogant and conceited. Although that was the truth, the Elf King, at least, was different from the masses.

Chu Feng was not trying to flatter the Elf King by saying those words. Rather, he was telling the truth. It was the Holy Land of Martialism's great fortune to have such an Elf King.

Chu Feng felt that the capabilities of the Dark Hall were immeasurable. Else, how could they make even an expert like the Yin-Yang Immortal work for them? A power like them most likely possessed strength that was not inferior to the Three Palaces. In fact, they might even be stronger than the Three Palaces.

Currently, the only power in the Holy Land of Martialism that could suppress them would be the Ancient Era's Elves.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that the reason why the Dark Hall still hadn't acted was not because they were afraid of the Three Palaces, the Four Clans, the Nine Powers or the various monstrous beast races. Rather, it was the Ancient Era's Elves that they feared.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly overly flattering me. Actually, even I myself do not know for sure whether I will be able to take up the heavy responsibility of protecting the Holy Land of Martialism like senior Qing Xuantian."

"That said, you, on the other hand, will have to shoulder a heavy responsibility," The Elf King said.

"What is this heavy responsibility?" Chu Feng asked.

"To properly look after my Miaomiao," The Elf King said with a smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng also smiled. Then, he clasped his fist in a very serious manner and said, "Definitely."

Then, Chu Feng returned to the Purple Flames Blackmountain.

At the same time, he brought with him two items. They were the two Blood Devouring Armors.

As the two Blood Devouring Armors had been altered by the Avaricious Immortal, Chu Feng had to amend them.

Furthermore, even though the Blood Devouring Armors were created by the Immeasurable Immortal, Chu Feng still felt them to be imperfect. Thus, he was planning to properly improve upon them and bring them closer to perfection.

As for that, it was something that required time. Thus, Chu Feng decided to directly bring the two Blood Devouring Armors back with him. Furthermore, he set an appointment with Xian Miaomiao to meet up at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation's southeastern entrance.

After returning to the Purple Flames Blackmountain, Chu Feng discovered that everything was fine. After all, the Compass Immortal was one of the Ten Immortals. With him here, Nangong Longjian would not have any issues.

“Chu Feng, your cultivation?”

However, when Nangong Longjian, the Compass Immortal and the others saw Chu Feng, they were all extremely shocked. The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not attempt to conceal his cultivation. Thus, they were able to discover that Chu Feng had become a Martial Emperor.

“I happened to make a fortunate breakthrough,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Boy, you are truly a demon-level character. The speed at which you reach breakthroughs is simply godlike,” The Compass Immortal exclaimed in admiration repeatedly. Then, he said, “It would appear that this old man will not have the chance to take you as a disciple. You’re too much of a demon-level character. Even if you want me to become your master, I would not dare to accept

you as a disciple.”

Actually, the Compass Immortal had given up on having Chu Feng become his disciple the moment he found out that Chu Feng had obtained all of the spirit formations contained in the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.

“Senior, you are truly flattering me. If you are to continue to say something like that, I will become conceited,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Go ahead and become conceited. You have the means to be conceited,” Bai Suyan interrupted.

“Indeed,” Even the uncommunicative Nangong Longjian was nodding.

Being praised like this, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and he started to smile foolishly.

Chapter 1910 – Weeping Bitter Tears

At that moment when everyone was talking and laughing, Bai Ruochen asked, “Chu Feng, in that case... did you manage to successfully request the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers?” This was what she was most concerned about.

At that moment, the Compass Immortal, Bai Suyan and Nangong Longjian’s expressions all turned serious. This too was what they were the most concerned about.

“Senior Compass, these are the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers, right?” Chu Feng handed a Cosmos Sack to the Compass Immortal.

“Yes, yes, yes, that’s right. These are Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers,” The Compass Immortal was shocked once again. Then, he asked, “But... why would there be this many?”

At that moment, Nangong Longjian asked curiously, “Many? How many?”

“Look,” The Compass Immortal waved his sleeve and took out the one hundred Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers in the Cosmos Sack.

“There’s actually this many?” At that moment, not to mention Bai Ruochen and Bai Suyan, even Nangong Longjian revealed an expression of astonishment.

The reason for that was because they were able to tell that the Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flower was an extraordinary medicinal herb just by looking at it. It was most definitely a very precious treasure.

If it was a treasure from elsewhere, they would not be this shocked. However, Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers were treasures from the Elf Kingdom. Back then, the Compass Immortal was only allowed to request a single Ten Thousand

Leaves Sparrowtail Flower, and was deemed to never be able to request another. Yet, how did Chu Feng manage to obtain this many at once?

“Little friend Chu Feng, exactly how did you accomplish this? This old man truly feels inferior,” The Compass Immortal said in a joking manner.

“Chu Feng, exactly what happened there? Quickly, tell us about it. I am extremely curious as to what you did in the Elf Kingdom for you to be able to obtain this many Ten Thousand Leaves Sparrowtail Flowers,” Bai Ruochen asked with a curious expression on her face.

Then, Chu Feng gave a simple account of what had happened in the Elf Kingdom to the four of them. After hearing what had happened, even Nangong Longjian had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

It seemed to them that the Elf Kingdom was not only filled with arrogant and conceited individuals. There were also Ancient Era’s Elves that were capable of becoming their friends. Merely, it depended both on fate and one’s capability. As for the Elf King, he was willing to befriend Chu Feng because he thought highly of Chu Feng’s capabilities.

Afterwards, Chu Feng immediately began to set up the spirit formation so that they could treat Nangong Longjian’s illness.

This spirit formation was extremely difficult. However, with the assistance of the Compass Immortal, everything went very smoothly. They even managed to set up the spirit formation sooner than they had originally anticipated.

“This spirit formation is truly miraculous. The way I see it, instead of being only possible, this spirit formation will definitely treat Nangong Longjian’s illness.”

At that moment, seeing Nangong Longjian, who was being

tempered by the enormous power of the spirit formation while sitting within it, the Compass Immortal revealed an excited expression.

This incurable illness was actually being treated right now. Anyone would become excited should they see this.

“Chu Feng, I truly do not know how to thank you,” Bai Ruochen stood beside Chu Feng. Unspeakable joy covered her face. The gaze with which she looked at Chu Feng was filled with sincerity and gratefulness.

To her, her greatest desire was not reaching the apex of martial cultivation. Rather, she merely wished to reunite with her family.

However, that simple desire of hers had always been an extravagant hope because of Nangong Longjian’s illness.

At that moment, Nangong Longjian’s illness was actually being treated. As for this, it was all thanks to Chu Feng. Naturally, she would be feeling extremely grateful toward him.

“What sort of relationship do we have? We are friends who have gone through trials and tribulations of life and death, together.”

“Senior Longjian is your father. As such, he could be said to be equivalent to being my father too. Naturally, I must cure his illness,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

He was also very happy. The reason for that was very simple. He was feeling happy at being able to help his friend.

After all, Chu Feng had embarked on the path of martial cultivation and learned world spirit techniques all for the sake of protecting his relatives and friends, so that he could protect their safety and honor.

They all say that dragons possess a forbidden inverse scale. As for Chu Feng, his greatest forbidden inverse scale was the safety and honor of his friends and relatives being infringed upon.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Bai Ruochen said no more. Instead, she smiled even sweeter. Bai Suyan was also smiling beautifully beside her.

“Senior Compass, I need to go and amend the Blood Devouring Armors. I’ll have to trouble you with this spirit formation,” Chu Feng said to the Compass Immortal.

“Go ahead and take care of what you need to. Although I am unable to set up this spirit formation by myself, as it has now already been set up, this old man is capable of looking after it,” The Compass Immortal said with a smile.

The Compass Immortal smiled a lot. Originally, Chu Feng thought that he was a person with hidden intentions behind his smiles, and felt that he was a very cunning and treacherous individual. After all, he had been played for a fool by the Compass Immortal the first time they had met.

However, looking at the Compass Immortal’s smile now, Chu Feng felt a sense of warmth. The Compass Immortal’s smiles were actually all from the bottom of his heart. Likely, this was what it meant to be a person that was fond of smiling.

Afterward, Chu Feng began to amend the Blood Devouring Armors. Once he started, he did not stop for two entire days.

Actually, two days was extremely insignificant compared to the amount of time the Immeasurable Immortal and the Avaricious Immortal had spent on forging the two Blood Devouring Armors in the first place.

However, in those two days’ time, Chu Feng had brought the Blood Devouring Armors to a higher level of perfection. He was only a bit away from successfully accomplishing his task.

“Chu Feng, the situation’s bad!” Right at that moment, Bai Ruochen rushed over in a panic.

Chu Feng stood up and asked, “What happened?” At the same

time, he began to use his Heaven's Eyes to view the outside to investigate what was going on.

Originally, he thought that a problem might have occurred with the spirit formation that was treating Nangong Longjian. However, upon looking, he discovered that there was no problem with the spirit formation at all.

Although the spirit formation treating Nangong Longjian was completely fine, Chu Feng's expression still changed enormously. He immediately put down the Blood Devouring Armor that he was working on and flew toward the entrance of the cave.

Chu Feng saw two people at the entrance of the cave. One was a Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. As for the other person, it was actually Jiang Wushang.

Jiang Wushang should have returned to the World's Hidden Valley with Duan Jidao and the others. There shouldn't be a reason for him to appear here.

However, not only did he appear here, he had appeared together with a Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. Chu Feng felt that something bad must've happened.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you've reached a breakthrough?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, that Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder was immediately shocked.

He knew that Chu Feng was able to kill rank three Martial Emperors back when he was only a rank nine Half Martial Emperor. Now that Chu Feng had become a rank one Martial Emperor, he himself, a rank four Martial Emperor, would likely not be a match for Chu Feng anymore.

However, he didn't know that Chu Feng had not only reached a breakthrough, but his battle power had also increased by a tier. Not to mention him, a rank four Martial Emperor, Chu Feng would be able to defeat rank five Martial Emperors should he go all-out.

Merely, at that moment, Chu Feng was extremely worried about Jiang Wushang. Thus, he did not bother to pay attention to that Utmost Exalted Elder, and instead directly arrived before Jiang Wushang. He placed his hands on Jiang Wushang's shoulders and asked in a deeply concerned manner, "Little brother Wushang, what brought you here? Exactly what has happened?"

At that moment, Chu Feng was panicking slightly. Even though Jiang Wushang appeared to be fine, he was able to sense that Jiang Wushang's state of mind was extremely bad.

"Big brother Chu Feng, I am incompetent, I am incompetent," After seeing Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang's face started to twist. Then, he actually crumbled on the spot, and started to tear up. Before everyone, he started to weep bitter tears.

"Little brother Wushang, it's fine now. Tell me, exactly what happened?" Seeing Jiang Wushang acting like this, Chu Feng began to feel even more distressed. He knew that Jiang Wushang must have experienced something. Else, he who was always strong would not be acting this way.

Chapter 1911 – Forbidden Inverse Scale Triggered

“Exactly what happened?” As Chu Feng consoled Jiang Wushang, he raised his head and asked that Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder.

At this moment, Chu Feng’s gaze was slightly sharp and filled with coldness. It was like a sharp blade that flickered with cold light.

The reason why Chu Feng was looking at that Utmost Exalted Elder that fiercely was not because he felt that Jiang Wushang’s current state was related to that Utmost Exalted Elder.

Rather, it was because that Utmost Exalted Elder had tried to kill him before. Even though they had reconciled, Chu Feng still had an extremely bad impression of him. Especially now, when his mood was extremely bad, his attitude would naturally be bad too.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please don’t look at me like that. I really don’t know what happened. This little friend Jiang Wushang ran to our Nangong Imperial Clan and said that he wished to find you.”

“But, I didn’t know where you were. Thus, I could only bring him to find Longjian, as I thought that Longjian would know where you were.”

“However, Longjian has many different places that he uses to undergo closed-door training. I sought him in many places before finally managing to find him in this place. Never would I have expected for you to also be here. This has saved me a lot of trouble.”

“Merely... as for exactly what has happened, little friend Jiang Wushang was unwilling to say. Thus... I... I also do not know what has happened.”

“Thus, you... you should instead ask little friend Jiang

Wushang.”

Seeing the ominous glint that Chu Feng was revealing, that Utmost Exalted Elder's body trembled from fear.

He who had been high and above back then was now extremely frightened by Chu Feng. Even his speaking became timid and filled with stuttering.

“Big brother Chu Feng, this senior really doesn't know anything. You don't have to ask him anymore. I'll tell you what happened,” Jiang Wushang wiped away the tears across his face. Then, he began to narrate to Chu Feng what had happened.

Even though he was extremely sad, he knew that it was not the time to act timid and weak. He had to continue being strong.

After hearing Jiang Wushang's story, Chu Feng and the others came to know what had happened.

It turned out that after the battle against the Four Great Imperial Clans at the Ximen Imperial Clan, due to the fact that Duan Jidao had been seriously injured, he, alongside Yin Gongfu, Jiang Wushang and the others from the World's Hidden Valley, proceeded to return to the World's Hidden Valley first.

However, before they managed to return to the World's Hidden Valley, they were ambushed by people from the Dark Hall. Duan Jidao and Yin Gongfu were captured. The others from the World's Hidden Valley were all killed. Only Jiang Wushang managed to escape.

Upon thinking about it, it was very possible that they had deliberately allowed Jiang Wushang to escape. Else, with Jiang Wushang's cultivation, how could he possibly be able to escape?

At that time, Jiang Wushang had been thrown into a confused state of mind. The only thing in his mind was finding Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he didn't know who else other than Chu Feng that could help him.

Furthermore, as he had seen the Nangong Imperial Clan attempting to invite Chu Feng to be their guest, he knew that Nangong Longjian was also someone from the Nangong Imperial Clan and had been together with Chu Feng when they had left, he felt that it was very possible for Chu Feng to be in the Nangong Imperial Clan. Feeling helpless, he ran to the Nangong Imperial Clan to look for help.

Actually, he had also thought that it might be a disastrous action to go to the Nangong Imperial Clan. After all, the battle had just ended. If he were to go to the Nangong Imperial Clan, it was very possible that he would be throwing his life away.

However, at that time, he had been unable to think of anything else other than finding Chu Feng, and he had thus disregarded his own life.

Fortunately, the people from the Nangong Imperial Clan had been true in their desire to reconcile with Chu Feng. Thus, after Jiang Wushang arrived, not only did they not make things difficult for him. They had even dispatched an Utmost Exalted Elder to personally help Jiang Wushang search for Chu Feng.

“Elder, thank you very much for bringing Wushang here. I apologize for my vile attitude toward you earlier,” Chu Feng bowed to that Utmost Exalted Elder.

Chu Feng was a reasonable person. He was able to distinguish between gratitude and grudges. Although there were grudges between him and this Utmost Exalted Elder, he had also shown gratitude to him by bringing Wushang here. With both gratitude and grudges, they could cancel each other out. As Chu Feng’s attitude earlier was extremely bad, it was only natural that he apologize.

Although Chu Feng’s action might not be much, it was completely seen by the Compass Immortal. To be able to distinguish between gratitude and grudges was a quality of a man

of character.

“My, little friend Chu Feng, you are truly being too courteous here. Although there were grudges between us in the past, they are already things of the past. Right now, we are a family.”

As for that Utmost Exalted Elder, he was smiling very politely. The reason for that was because he was truly afraid of Chu Feng.

This was especially true upon thinking about how Chu Feng was only a peak Half Martial Emperor in the battle, but had become a rank one Martial Emperor now. The astonishing speed with which Chu Feng reached breakthroughs caused him to feel endless fear.

At that moment, he was truly rejoicing that Nangong Longjian had shown up on that day and demanded that they reconcile with Chu Feng. Else, Chu Feng would truly be no end of trouble for them.

“Little brother Wushang, senior Duan Jidao and senior Yin Gongfu were only captured. This does not mean that they have died. I think that the people of the Dark Hall captured them with something in mind. They should be fine for the time being. If anything, they might have done so to demand for them to join the Dark Hall.”

“Both senior Duan Jidao and senior Yin Gongfu are smart individuals. I believe they will know ways to delay,” Chu Feng consoled Jiang Wushang.

“Really?” Jiang Wushang’s expression changed. His expression that was filled with self blame eased a bit.

“Trust me, they should be fine,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Then, Bai Suyan personally prepared a location for Jiang Wushang to rest.

Although Jiang Wushang was not physically injured, the injury to his heart and mind was very serious. To look on helplessly as the people beside him were killed and captured was a very painful

thing. He really did need to have a proper rest.

“This Dark Hall...” After Jiang Wushang left, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed. His eyes that were originally calm were now filled with frost. He looked extremely frightening.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong?” Bai Ruochen was frightened by Chu Feng’s expression.

“If the Dark Hall wanted to, even if little brother Wushang wasn’t killed, he would not be able to escape from here.”

“His escape meant that the Dark Hall must’ve deliberately allowed him to escape. This is a provocation, the Dark Hall’s provocation toward me, Chu Feng,” Chu Feng clenched his fists tightly and spoke through clenched teeth.

“What do you plan to do then?” Bai Ruochen asked.

“I can endure anything that they throw at me. However, I absolutely will not allow them to harm those close to me. Regardless of whether the two seniors are safe or not, I will still make the Dark Hall pay in blood,” As Chu Feng said those words, he began to radiate killing intent. His killing intent caused the surrounding region’s air to become ice-cold. It was as if even the sky was going to be frozen.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Bai Ruochen’s body started to tremble slightly. Although she approved of the way Chu Feng handled things, she had to admit that the Chu Feng before her was somewhat frightening. He had been truly enraged.

Dragons possessed forbidden inverse scales. As for Chu Feng’s forbidden inverse scale, it had been triggered by the Dark Hall.

That said, although the current situation wasn’t good, although Chu Feng was extremely enraged, Duan Jidao and Yin Gongfu were not that easily capable of being saved.

Firstly, Chu Feng did not possess sufficient strength. Next, even if he did possess sufficient strength, he didn’t know where the

headquarters of the Dark Hall was. Thus, even if he wanted to save them, he wouldn't know where to go.

Thus, Chu Feng could only work on what he had to finish right now. That was, to wholeheartedly finish perfecting the Blood Devouring Armors, and then wholeheartedly control the spirit formation to help treat Nangong Longjian's illness.

All of this was observed by the Compass Immortal. He had also known all about what happened with Jiang Wushang and the others.

Although Chu Feng became extremely emotional from anger, he was able to adjust himself in the blink of an eye. This caused the Compass Immortal to feel deep admiration for Chu Feng, for it was something that even he did not think he would be able to accomplish.

With the effort from Chu Feng, Nangong Longjian's illness was finally treated. They had succeeded.

At that moment, everyone was overjoyed. This was especially true for Bai Ruochen and her mother Bai Suyan. They were crying in joy, and so excited that they didn't know what to do.

As for Chu Feng, he was also very happy. Merely, while being happy, a trace of worry was contained within his eyes.

Chapter 1912 – Blood Devouring Killing Formation

Nangong Longjian sensed that something in Chu Feng's mental state seemed to be amiss. Thus, he asked, "Little friend Chu Feng, do you have something on your mind?"

"Chu Feng, senior Duan Jidao and senior Yin Gongfu will not be that easily rescued. You must still consider this matter at length. Thus, it's best to not be overly impatient and hurt your health," Bai Ruochen thought that Chu Feng was worrying about Duan Jidao and Yin Gongfu.

However, Chu Feng shook his head. He said, "Senior Duan Jidao and senior Yin Gongfu must naturally be saved. Merely, right now, I am more worried about the safety of the Cyanwood Mountain."

At that moment, Nangong Longjian and the others came to a sudden realization. It turned out that Chu Feng was worried about the Cyanwood Mountain.

However, upon thinking about it, they felt that it was right for Chu Feng to be worried. When even Duan Jidao and the others had been ambushed, it was very hard to say that the people from the Cyanwood Mountain would not suffer the same fate.

At this moment, Nangong Longjian revealed an expression of self-blame. He knew that Chu Feng, with his temperament, must've already thought about this.

However, he had not directly proceeded to the Cyanwood Mountain, and instead stayed here for many days. Nangong Longjian knew that Chu Feng had done so because he was worried about his illness.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I, Nangong Longjian, will go and check the Cyanwood Mountain out right away. If the Cyanwood Mountain is to suffer an unexpected calamity too, even if I am to

dig three feet underground, I will still search out that Dark Hall and make them pay with blood,” Nangong Longjian said with an expression filled with seriousness.

Hearing what Nangong Longjian said, Chu Feng’s heart was moved. Immediately, his previously-tense mind felt a lot more at ease. It was as if an enormous stone weighing down on his heart had finally fallen to the ground.

Actually, Chu Feng had been able to immediately proceed for the Cyanwood Mountain after he finished curing Nangong Longjian’s illness. However, Chu Feng had not proceeded to the Cyanwood Mountain because his appointed date with Xian Miaomiao was approaching.

As he had said that he would help, he must be loyal to that promise. Furthermore, most importantly, the Blood Devouring Armors possessed a time limit during which they could be used. After that time limit, the insects would die. Once the insects died, the Blood Devouring Armors would also lose their effectiveness.

If Chu Feng were to proceed for the Cyanwood Mountain, it would take time for him to travel there and back. Although the time spent would not be enough to make the Blood Devouring Armors lose their effectiveness, there was no way to say that they would be able to journey into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation smoothly.

If they ended up having to stay in there for some time, and the Blood Devouring Armors ended up losing their effectiveness during their stay inside, then Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao would definitely end up dying in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Thus, Chu Feng did not wish to waste the limited time the Blood Devouring Armors had.

However, he was also worried about the safety of the Cyanwood Mountain. And now, with Nangong Longjian declaring that he would proceed for the Cyanwood Mountain on his behalf, Chu

Feng felt relieved. After all, Nangong Longjian was a rank six Martial Emperor, someone who was much more powerful than himself.

“Thank you senior Longjian,” Chu Feng clasped his fist courteously. He was expressing his thanks from the bottom of his heart.

“Little friend Chu Feng, do not say it like that. If it wasn’t for you, I would soon be dead.”

“It is all because of you that I am able to obtain a new lease on life.”

“It is all because of you that I am able to continue with my martial cultivation.”

“It is also thanks to you that I am able to reunite with my family.”

“Thus, this life of mine could be said to be given to me by you. The grace that you’ve shown me is something that I cannot repay in my entire life,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Senior, you are being too serious. Not only has senior saved me, even if you hadn’t saved me, merely through the relationship that I have with Ruochen, I ought to give my all to help cure your illness,” Chu Feng said.

“Enough, stop stirring up emotions. The top priority right now is to determine whether or not the Cyanwood Mountain is safe.”

“As little friend Chu Feng still has things he must do, you needn’t proceed to the Cyanwood Mountain. Just leave this matter in the hands of Nangong Longjian and I,” The Compass Immortal said. Furthermore, as he spoke, he took out an item and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, leave an imprint on this. If the Cyanwood Mountain is fine, I will inform you of it.”

Chu Feng looked to the item before him, and his eyes immediately shone. In surprise, he said, “Golden Flash Bird?” The

reason for his surprise was because what the Compass Immortal had handed to Chu Feng was the nearly extinct Golden Flash Bird.

“Indeed. That thing is something that I used a lot of treasures to purchase,” Seeing how shocked Chu Feng was, the Compass Immortal nodded in a very complacent manner.

Then, Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal left for the Cyanwood Mountain. They were planning to see whether or not the people from the Cyanwood Mountain had managed to return to the Cyanwood Mountain safely.

As for Bai Ruochen, Bai Suyan and Jiang Wushang, they continued to stay in the Purple Flames Blackmountain. Although the Purple Flames Blackmountain possessed an enormous pressure, the cave that they were in possessed a special spirit formation that nullified that pressure.

On top of that, this place was a place that practically no one bothered to visit. As such, it was a rather safe location. That said, in order to protect against the unexpected, Chu Feng set up spirit formations outside to hide the cave completely.

After he finished doing all that, Chu Feng directly proceeded for his appointed meeting with Xian Miaomiao.

One of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Three Great Forbidden Areas, the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

The Blood Devouring Killing Formation was a very vast spirit formation that originated from the Ancient Era. When looking at it from the outside, it looked like an enormous mountain covered with mist. It did not appear to be strange at all.

That said, in such a famous place, there was actually no sign of human habitation. In fact, not a single tree or blade of grass could be seen outside the mountain. As such, there was no need to mention buildings or living creatures.

Other than the whistling sound of the wind, this place was so

deathly silent that it was frightening.

Standing here, Chu Feng felt a trace of chilliness. This place was truly qualified to be known as a Forbidden Area.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, a pair of hands suddenly extended out from behind Chu Feng and covered his eyes.

At the same time, an incomparably soft and gentle voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ears, “Good sir, would you like a massage?”

“Sure, where do you want to start massaging from?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. The reason for that was because he had managed to guess that it was that girl Xian Miaomiao the moment that pair of soft little hands appeared.

“Aiya, you’re such a rogue,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Xian Miaomiao immediately removed her hands and started pouting her little mouth. She was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with disdain.

“How am I a rogue? It’s you who asked me whether or not I wanted a massage.”

“I journeyed all the way here and really do feel a bit tired. As such, so what if I want a massage?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. For some unknown reason, even though he was feeling extremely bad, his mood improved a lot after seeing Xian Miaomiao.

“I said you’re a rogue, so you’re a rogue. Why the heck are you asking all these questions?” Xian Miaomiao said with an unyielding yet lovable appearance.

“Oh you, you’re truly unreasonable,” Chu Feng felt helpless with Xian Miaomiao. Thus, he ended up taking out the Blood Devouring Armors and tossing one to her, “Here, put in on. Let’s go in.”

Due to the fact that the Blood Devouring Armors were special,

one did not have to change one's clothes to wear them. Thus, Xian Miaomiao directly donned the Blood Devouring Armor Chu Feng had handed her.

“Wow, it's actually this well-fitting?” After donning the Blood Devouring Armor, Xian Miaomiao cried out in surprise. She felt so happy that she began to spin around nonstop.

After Chu Feng's amendment of the Blood Devouring Armors, not only did they become very well-fitting, their appearances also became much more beautiful.

“I fixed it just for you. Thus, it will naturally be well-fitting,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he also donned his suit of Blood Devouring Armor.

“Amazing. As expected of this Princess's attendant,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Since when did I become your attendant?” Chu Feng revealed an expression of confusion.

“You weren't before, but you are now. Come, this Princess shall bring you along to experience the world and brave the dangers of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.”

“Wha!!!!” Xian Miaomiao began to run erratically into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. She had charged into the boundless mist that covered the mountain.

Seeing Xian Miaomiao acting like this, Chu Feng shook his head helplessly. Then, without any hesitation, he chased after her.

Although Xian Miaomiao possessed very powerful strength, it remained that she was not a world spiritist. As such, Chu Feng was worried that an accident might happen to her.

Chapter 1913 – The Weakening Of The Spirit Formation

After entering the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, Chu Feng was deeply shocked. Although the Blood Devouring Killing Formation seemed to be filled with mist when looking at it from the outside, the mist all disappeared the moment they entered it.

However, the ground, the mountain and even the rocks all became red. Looking high above, even the sky was red. The entire place was crimson red. It was truly dazzling to the eyes.

“Blood Devouring Killing Formation, its reputation is well deserved,” When Xian Miaomiao saw this scene, not only was she not afraid, she even looked extremely excited. She was running around as if he was enjoying a tour.

“Haha, that girl is quite to this Queen’s liking,” Seeing Xian Miaomiao acting in such a manner, not only was Her Lady Queen not annoyed, she instead revealed a rare gaze of appreciation.

“Don’t call her ‘girl’ all the time. It’s makes you sound like you’re way older than her,” Chu Feng snickered. Even though Chu Feng had already become a man after all these years, Her Lady Queen still possessed the appearance of a young girl.

Regardless of what sort of temperament she possessed, regardless of how ruthless she was in handling things, her young and tender face was still as perfect as before. It still gave off a sense of harmlessness. Even though Chu Feng had now seen her face for many years, he still deeply enjoyed it.

Her Lady Queen narrowed her eyes and feigned a sinister appearance as she said, “If this Queen were to mention her age, you would be scared to death.”

However, when those crescent shaped eyes of hers were placed on her beautiful face, no matter how one looked at it, one would

feel that she was extremely adorable and be charmed by her beauty.

“Yes, yes, yes, Milady Queen is the most amazing.”

“Oh, that’s right. Milady Queen, would you like to come out and enjoy this beautiful crimson scenery while holding hands with me?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“Pah! Who would want to hold hands with you? Go and walk around by yourself. This Queen will go to sleep,” After Her Lady Queen said those words, she went silent.

Although Chu Feng felt a bit disappointed that Her Lady Queen had decided to not talk to him anymore, he did not feel lonely. Afterall, beside him was Xian Miaomiao. That girl’s mouth was talking nonstop.

Xian Miaomiao looked to her surroundings. Then, with a curious expression, she asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, say, why would this place be this red? Did the person that set up this spirit formation do so deliberately to scare others?”

“Scare others?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to smile. Then, he said, “The red color of this place is all caused by blood; this entire place was dyed red by blood.”

“Who are you trying to deceive? If there’s all this blood, how come there’s no reeking smell of blood? Furthermore, blood will turn black after it dries. How could this place still remain this brightly red? Do you think that just because I am inexperienced you’d be able to deceive me,” Xian Miaomiao said with a disdainful expression.

“That’s why this place is amazing. The blood here does not dry out, nor does it reek of the smell of blood. Instead, it was all sealed in this place. If you do not trust me, I can let you have a look.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up a spirit formation on the spot. He managed to set up a spirit formation the size of a

finger nail. He placed the spirit formation onto a piece of rock and shouted, ‘Open!’

“Chii~~~:

In an instant, that spirit formation turned into a fountain’s mouth, and blood began to spray out of it. Furthermore, there was so much blood spraying out of it that it looked like a pillar.

After that spirit formation stopped spraying blood, the piece of rock that Chu Feng had placed his spirit formation on actually returned to its appearance of a normal rock. Merely, the ground which had been sprayed with blood turned an even brighter red. The reason for that was because the blood that had sprayed out of the rock had all been soaked into the ground.

“Heavens, it’s actually real,” After discovering that all the things in this place were dyed red with blood, Xian Miaomiao’s expression changed. She was not scared. Rather, she was extremely shocked.

Unable to contain herself, Xian Miaomiao asked, “How many people have died here?”

“A lot. Not only humans, but also monstrous beasts and even existences other than humans and monstrous beasts,” Chu Feng said.

“How do you know that?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“I am able to tell with my eyes. Although the blood is all red, I can tell that there are essential differences in the nature of the blood.”

“For some of the blood, I can see how powerful their owners were using merely my eyes. They were existences that transcended Martial Emperors,” Chu Feng said.

“Above Martial Emperors are Half Martial Ancestors. Could it be that there were Half Martial Ancestor experts in this place?” Xian Miaomiao asked in a shocked manner.

“Half Martial Ancestor?” Chu Feng naturally knew about Half Martial Ancestors. It was a realm of cultivation above Martial Emperors. Above Half Martial Ancestors were Martial Ancestors, existences even more powerful than them. Reportedly, Martial Ancestors were the limit that a human could reach with their mortal body. Upon becoming a Martial Ancestor, their flesh would become unimaginably tough.

Martial Ancestor was an extremely distant realm. It was said that people in the Holy Land of Martialism were unable to go farther than Half Martial Ancestor.

However, the blood here indeed surpassed that of Martial Emperors. Perhaps it was the blood of Half Martial Ancestors. However, Chu Feng was unable to be certain of it.

However, what he was capable of being certain of was that there were indeed experts that surpassed Martial Emperors that had died here.

Merely, he was unable to determine the time of their death. The reason for that was because the blood sealed within this place was all kept totally fresh.

Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen suddenly spoke. “The power of this spirit formation has weakened. It has weakened enormously. Otherwise, with the cultivations that the two of you possess, it would simply be impossible for you to be able to intrude into this spirit formation.”

“Eggy, how do you know that?” Chu Feng was astonished. Although his Heaven’s Eyes were extremely powerful, he was still unable to see the phenomenon that Her Lady Queen mentioned.

“If this spirit formation was not more powerful before, how could so many experts have died in here?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Furthermore, the sealing formation of this place is also very remarkable. Although you are capable of extracting the blood

sealed within this place, you are unable to take it away with you. Isn't that right?"

"Indeed," Chu Feng nodded. What Eggy said was the truth. While he was capable of using his own spirit formations to extract the sealed blood, he was unable to use his own spirit formations to bring away the sealed blood. The reason for that was because the blood in this region belonged to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. As for the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, it was a spirit formation that greatly surpassed the spirit formations that Chu Feng was capable of setting up. Thus, he would naturally not be able to bring the blood away from it.

"Eggy, what sort of existence do you think set up this spirit formation? Could it be an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's hard to say. As this spirit formation has weakened to this extent, I am unable to ascertain the strength of its creator," Her Lady Queen shook her head.

Right at that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly asked with a beaming smile on her face, "Chu Feng, Chu Feng, do you know about the matters concerning this Blood Devouring Killing formation?"

"I know a bit. I've heard that this Blood Devouring Killing Formation originated from the Ancient Era. Furthermore, hidden within it are treasures from the Ancient Era."

"For the sake of those Ancient Era's treasures, after the Ancient Era passed, countless experts attempted to charge into this place. However, none of them managed to return. Furthermore, it is said that the traps and mechanisms of this place are extremely frightening. If one is to trigger them, one's body will explode, and they will die. That is why this spirit formation is called the Blood Devouring Killing Formation," Chu Feng said.

"All that you've said is only general knowledge. Do you know

anything else?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“I do not. Could it be that you do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course,” Xian Miaomiao raised her head up high. Then, in a complacent manner, she said, “Let me tell you, the Blood Devouring Killing Formation used to be the number one Forbidden Area in the Holy Land of Martialism. Even the Realm of Gods and the Moonlight Maze were inferior to it. At that time, no one dared to enter the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. The reason for that was because this place was truly a place that one could enter but not leave.”

“However, with the passage of time, the power of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation has gradually weakened. As matters stand, not to mention the surroundings, even the most frightening region of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation can be entered as long as we are wearing the Blood Devouring Armors. Think about it, how much has the power of this place weakened?” Xian Miaomiao said.

“It seems that Her Lady Queen was correct,” Chu Feng became certain of Eggy’s opinion. The reason for that was because what Xian Miaomiao had just said had verified Eggy’s opinion.

Chapter 1914 – A Legend

“There’s more. Many people felt that what was hidden within the Blood Devouring Killing Formation were treasures. However, the reality is different. The Blood Devouring Killing Formation actually contains ferocious beasts from the Ancient Era sealed within it,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Ferocious beasts from the Ancient Era? Is what you said for real?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes, it is the truth. That is why we Ancient Era’s Elves were worried about the Blood Devouring Killing Formation’s power weakening the entire time. We were worried that it would not be able to continue keeping those Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts sealed. After all, if those Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts break through the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, they will bring about a catastrophe to the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“The reason for that is because the sealed Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are the same as our Holy Land of Martialism’s ferocious beasts. They do not possess any intelligence, and only know about killing. Blood-thirstiness is their nature. However, there is a big difference between the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts and the current Holy Land of Martialism’s ferocious beasts. That is, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are much more powerful. They are simply not something that the ferocious beasts that we have now can compare to,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“In that case, you’re saying that the Holy Land of Martialism will, sooner or later, be met with a catastrophe?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right, the Holy Land of Martialism is destined to be met with a catastrophe. However, I am looking forward to that day,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng started to frown slightly as he asked in a very confused manner.

“Think about it. How interesting of a thing would it be to kill an Ancient Era’s ferocious beast?” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Oh you. If the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are to appear, how many innocent people will die tragically?” Chu Feng said.

“Your words are incorrect. Those people are weak. As such, they can only fall prey to such a thing.”

“The world of martial cultivation is a world where the weak are prey to the strong. Even if there aren’t any ferocious beast to kill the weak, they will still end up suffering humiliation from their fellows,” Xian Miaomiao said.

Chu Feng did not refute her, because what Xian Miaomiao said was indeed the truth. Homicide was something that happened everyday in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“It’s okay, I was merely joking with you.”

“Rest assured. As we Ancient Era’s Elves know about this matter, we naturally have already made preparations for it.”

“Actually, there are Ancient Era’s Elves guarding the outside of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation the entire time. If the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are to break through the spirit formation, we Ancient Era’s Elves will immediately surround them and kill them,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“But those Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are sealed in this place. As such, how could they possibly be that easy to take care of?” Chu Feng asked.

“We possess special means to take care of them. You can rest assured,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Okay then,” Chu Feng smiled slightly. After hearing what Xian Miaomiao said, he indeed felt much more at ease.

Afterward, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao continued to journey deeper into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. While they

journeyed, they were talking and laughing.

This did not mean that the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was not dangerous. Rather, it was that Chu Feng's perception was simply too powerful. All the traps and mechanisms in this place were easily avoided by Chu Feng.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that even though Xian Miaomiao's world spirit techniques were not powerful, her perception was very strong. She was able to discover all of the dangers that Chu Feng had discovered.

Thus, even without Chu Feng here, all the traps and mechanisms of this place would likely not be able to harm Xian Miaomiao.

However, the most astonishing fact regarding the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was that there was clearly an innumerable amount of people from both the Ancient Era and after the Ancient Era that had died here. Yet, on their journey, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao had not encountered a single skeleton.

Chu Feng speculated that this was also related to the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. The Blood Devouring Killing Formation was a slaughtering formation that would not even leave the bones of the victims that it killed. It was truly a slaughtering formation.

After a period of traveling, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao finally arrived at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation's central region.

It was a vast spirit formation. One could distinguish this spirit formation using the naked eye. This spirit formation was so tall that it reached the clouds in the sky. It looked like a fort, yet not like a fort. In short, it was enormous. Furthermore, there were entrances to this spirit formation in all directions.

Most shockingly, as Chu Feng looked from outside the spirit formation, he discovered that the Blood Devouring Killing Formation's most dangerous location, the center, was actually

completely different from the outside.

The outside was covered with blood. Merely the scenery of this place was capable of causing enormous shock.

However, the inside actually contained flowers, plants, trees and everything else. There were enormous trees that reached the skies. There were flowers that were as big as a palace. All of them were present inside.

At a glance, the inside was like a paradise. How could it possibly look like the most dangerous place?

“Wow, it is truly extraordinary,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly removed her Blood Devouring Armor.

Chu Feng then came to a sudden realization, then also removed his Blood Devouring Armor. After he removed his Blood Devouring Armor, Chu Feng was able to feel an enormous pressure from the spirit formation, even though he was standing outside. The pressure was pounding against his body in waves.

The pressure caused one's hair to stand on end, and one's bones to make creaking noise. He felt as if he would be immediately annihilated the moment he entered that spirit formation.

“It seems that it is not only the Blood Devouring Insects that can exist in here. Those special plants are also capable of surviving in here,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

“That's true. Merely, we can use special means to lure the Blood Devouring Insects out and make use of them. As for those plants, there's nothing that we can do about them,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Well then, let's enter.” As Chu Feng spoke, he put the Blood Devouring Armor back on and stepped into the spirit formation. Xian Miaomiao also followed closely behind him.

“It seems that the center of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation is even more vast than I imagined it to be. This place is truly enormous,” After entering the central region, Chu Feng

gasped with admiration. This place was simply like an entire separate world.

“Miaomiao, how is it? Are you able to sense the location of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers?” Chu Feng asked.

Xian Miaomiao shook her head and then said with a determined expression, “I can’t. However, I’m certain that there are Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers in here.”

“Are you unable to sense anything at all right now?” Chu Feng asked again.

Xian Miaomiao shook her head again.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that this place was truly not as simple as he had imagined it to be. It was not a place where they could discover Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers the moment they entered.

“No rush. This place is very large. Let’s look around carefully,” Chu Feng said.

Afterward, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao began to carefully search the area around them. Originally, the two of them traveled extremely slowly. Later on, they began to speed up. The reason for that was because this place was truly too big. If they were to slowly search one step at a time, they would likely not be able to search through this entire place even after spending several decades searching. Thus, they had to accelerate their speed.

Suddenly, Xian Miaomiao said, “Chu Feng, I have a bad feeling. There are definitely Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers in this place. But... but, my innate response to the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers has been cut off. I am unable to sense them.”

“Miaomiao, you might be overthinking it. Even if there are Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers in this place, it is impossible for them to be everywhere. Let’s continue to search for them,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay,” Xian Miaomiao became low-spirited. This was the first time that Chu Feng had seen her behaving in such a manner. It could be seen that she deeply longed to find Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers.

That being said, this girl was truly optimistic. Even though Chu Feng did not try to console her, she managed to quickly adjust her frame of mind shortly afterward, and started to talk and laugh once again.

Furthermore, it was very easy to encounter Blood Devouring Insects in this place. All the Blood Devouring Insects that the girl managed to encounter were unable to escape her evil clutches.

However, that was something that Chu Feng could understand. After all, Blood Devouring Insects were capable of being manufactured into Blood Devouring Armors. If their special effect were to become known, they would definitely be able to fetch a very good price.

However, Chu Feng felt that there was simply no need to waste the energy to capture Blood Devouring Insects. The reason for that was because the plants and trees of this place were all capable of resisting that enormous, special pressure. Thus, the plants and trees of this place were all equivalent or even more valuable than the Blood Devouring Insects.

Chu Feng was planning to bring a some plants and trees with him before leaving this place. He planned to make armors that could withstand this place’s pressure in the future. He knew that those armors would definitely fetch a great price.

Suddenly, Xian Miaomiao asked, “Chu Feng, did you know that there’s actually a legend about the Blood Devouring Killing Formation?”

Chapter 1915 – Strange Creature

“What sort of legend?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to the legend, the Blood Devouring Insects are not the only living creature in the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. In addition to them, there is also a kind of very special, stupid and interesting creature,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Very stupid and interesting creature? What is it?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chu Feng felt that the creatures that could survive in this place would all be very extraordinary creatures. For Xian Miaomiao to describe that creature that mystically, it was even more evident that the creature was extraordinary.

“As for its exact appearance, I am also not certain. Merely, I’ve heard from my royal father that the creature originated from the Ancient Era. Then, for some unknown reason, it hid itself in the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.”

“Furthermore, my royal father said that that creature is very stupid. However, it possesses a special sort of power that seems to be extremely beneficial to world spiritists.”

“Furthermore, that creature is capable of speaking the moment it is born, and will consider the first creature that it sees to be its parent. Furthermore, it will wholeheartedly devote its life to that creature.”

“You just so happen to be a very powerful world spiritist. If you are to encounter that creature, you will be able to gain enormous benefits,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Hearing what you said, I also wish for that legend to be real,” Chu Feng smiled.

Afterward, in the following days, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao continued to search for the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers.

Chu Feng was using his Heaven's Eyes to carefully observe his surroundings, and Xian Miaomiao was using her special perception to search her surroundings too.

However, in the blink of an eye, three days passed. Yet, they were unable to obtain any harvest.

Due to the fact that they were using their perceptive abilities the entire time, Chu Feng discovered that Xian Miaomiao appeared to be somewhat exhausted. Thus, he suggested that they take a rest.

Right after Chu Feng suggested that they take a rest, Xian Miaomiao fell asleep on the large tree beside Chu Feng. It could be seen that the girl had truly exhausted herself.

Seeing Xian Miaomiao like this, Chu Feng felt a bit of heartache. Although she was always laughing and appeared to be very carefree, she was actually someone who worked very hard.

Over the course of the several days he had been with her, Chu Feng was able to determine that.

“Chu Feng, it won't do to continue like this, Is that girl truly certain that there are Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers here?” At that moment, Eggy started to worry.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao had searched for three days straight. However, over the course of those three days, the two of them had not even managed to travel five percent of the entire Blood Devouring Killing Formation's central region. From this, it could be seen how vast this place was.

Furthermore, although Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao were wearing Blood Devouring Armors, their abilities were still restricted in this place. As such, they were unable to unleash their maximum speed.

Thus, judging from the current state of affairs, even if Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao were to continue searching for the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers without stopping to sleep or rest, they

would still need tens of days in order to travel through this entire central region.

However, the Blood Devouring Armors could only be used for a limited time. Furthermore, Chu Feng was unable to immediately manufacture new Blood Devouring Armors.

Thus, if their Blood Devouring Armors were to lose their effectiveness, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao would end up dying in this place. This was what Her Lady Queen was worried about.

“I can sense that the Blood Devouring Armors are capable of persisting for at most thirty more days.”

“In order to prevent the unexpected, Xian Miaomiao and I can only stay here for at most twenty more days. We must save ten days of time to get out of here. If we are unable to find any Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers in twenty days, we will have no choice but to give up,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, you must put your own safety first,” Seeing that Chu Feng had already considered the matter, Eggy finally felt relieved.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng stood up and set up a concealment formation that covered Xian Miaomiao. Then, he left by himself.

Chu Feng was not planning to rest. He did not wish to waste time. Thus, he planned to search for the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flower by himself while Xian Miaomiao was asleep.

After searching for roughly two hours, Chu Feng’s speed suddenly slowed down, and he revealed a pleasantly surprised expression.

Although he had not managed to discover any Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers, he had managed to discover a creature. It was the first creature other than the Blood Devouring Insects that he had seen here.

It was a little red insect. Its length was about as long as one’s

index finger. However, it was extremely thin, and resembled a little earthworm.

However, with only a single glance, Chu Feng was able to sense that it was emitting an extraordinary aura. It was most definitely not an ordinary insect.

“Eggy look, that insect looks so stupid. Could it be that legendary creature that Miaomiao spoke of?” Chu Feng said in a very joyous manner.

“It’s very possible. Based on its appearance, it seems to have just been born, and still a larva. Chu Feng, quickly, get over there. See whether or not it will recognize you as its master,” Eggy said.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly accelerated. Like a flash of lightning, he leapt and immediately arrived on the giant tree which that insect was lying on.

The sudden gale caused that little red insect’s body to tremble. However, it did not try to escape. Instead, it turned its head around and used its large black eyes to stare at Chu Feng. It said, “Who are you?”

‘Holy, it actually really knows how to speak. It seemed that what Miaomiao said is true,’ Seeing that the insect was actually speaking, Chu Feng was overjoyed. Thus, he steadied himself and said with a very amiable face and a soft voice, “I am your mother.”

Hearing those words, the little red insect immediately shrunk back. Then it said, “You’re a male.”

‘Holy, it was actually able to see through my gender? It seems that it is not as stupid as I imagined it to be,’ Chu Feng was startled. However, he did not panic. Instead, he said, “I am your father.”

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the little red insect revealed a questioning gaze. It ignored Chu Feng and began to slowly crawl

away. Then, it stopped and curved its body.

At the moment when Chu Feng was carefully observing it, confused by what it was doing, the little insect suddenly turned around and revealed an insectoid smile, “I am your grandma.”

After it finished saying those words, the little insect suddenly leapt into the air. It turned into a ray of red light and shot toward the distance. It was so fast that even Chu Feng was startled by its speed.

“Trying to escape after scolding me? You little insect, see if I do not catch you,” After encountering such a strange creature, Chu Feng would naturally not let it escape. Chu Feng’s body shifted, and he directly unleashed his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique to chase after the insect.

Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate that insect. Although it was very small, it was extremely fast.

However, even though Chu Feng had unleashed the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he was still unable to catch up to that little red insect.

“Come, grandson, come chase after your grandma. Come, come, quickly, come,” The insect was extremely vile. Not only was it running away with great speed, it was also insulting Chu Feng nonstop.

“Damn bug, you actually dare to look down on me,” With a thought, Chu Feng immediately revealed his Thunder Armor. After his cultivation increased to rank two Martial Emperor, his speed also increased rapidly.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

However, after Chu Feng increased his speed, that red little insect’s speed actually also rose dramatically. It became many times faster than before. Even though Chu Feng had increased his cultivation, he was still only able to maintain his distance to that

insect, and remained incapable of catching up to it.

“Haha...”

“Trash...”

“Moron...”

“Idiot...”

“Retard...”

“You actually tried to deceive your grandma?”

“You’re destined to only be a grandson.”

“Come, chase after me, come catch me.”

“Lelelelelelelele...”

Seeing that Chu Feng was unable to catch up to it, that insect actually began to mock and ridicule Chu Feng. Chu Feng was even able to see that the little insect was actually sticking out its tongue at him and emitting a provocative sound with his tongue. It was mocking Chu Feng using all sorts of methods.

Chapter 1916 – Bravely Fighting Against A Lowly Insect

“Haha, that insect is truly vile. Chu Feng, it’ll be an enormous embarrassment if you are unable to catch it,” At that moment, Her Lady Queen’s body was convulsing with laughter. She was truly feeling delighted. No, to be exact, she was rejoicing in Chu Feng’s misfortune.

“If I catch it, I’ll definitely teach it a lesson,” Chu Feng was enraged by that insect. The lightning in his eyes grew even more violent. Then, two lightning wings began to spread out from his back like two sharp blades.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased to that of a rank three Martial Emperor. His speed once again increased by many times.

“Holy mother! Save me!!!” Seeing that Chu Feng’s speed had actually increased once again, the little red insect cried out in alarm. It was so frightened that it started to panic in disarray. At the same time, it continued to shout, “What sort of abnormal creature are you?! How are you able to increase your cultivation? Aiya, you’re making me piss myself in fear. Mom, save me!!!!”

It was clear that little insect’s speed was already at its limit. That was why it started to panic like that after Chu Feng increased his cultivation. The reason for that was because that little red insect knew that he would not be able to escape Chu Feng.

“Little thing, I shall see how you’re going to continue to act arrogant,” At that moment, Chu Feng was traveling like a flash of lightning. He arrived before the little red insect and grabbed it in his hand.

Once that little red insect was captured by Chu Feng, it immediately became extremely obedient. It did not try to struggle,

nor did it try to say anything. Instead, it looked to Chu Feng with a very pitiful appearance.

“Come, insult me again. Continue to insult me,” Chu Feng stared at the little red insect angrily.

“Granddaddy, please don’t kill me. I was merely joking with you,” The little red insect said in a very wronged manner.

“Pah!” At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if a hundred thousand divine beasts had burst out of his heart. He thought to himself that this little red insect was truly too shameless.

This red insect most definitely possessed intelligence. Furthermore, it was not a newborn. Else, it would not be able to amuse itself with Chu Feng like it had. Furthermore, it calling Chu Feng granddaddy right now was all an act.

“Do not call me granddaddy, call me ‘great sir,’” Chu Feng said.

“Yes, great sir. Great sir, I was merely playing around earlier. Can you please spare me?” The little red insect pleaded in a very pitiful manner.

“Did you take me to be a fool?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, of course not. I think great sir is extremely smart,” The little red insect said.

“Shut up, enough of your ass-kissing. You damned vile insect! You actually dared to insult me earlier; I’m going to feed you to the birds,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you serious? Are you really going to feed me to the birds?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the insect was immediately startled. Its gaze began to change.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng said in a very determined manner.

“Your grandma even begged you! You damned fool! I’ll bite you to death! Quickly, release me! Else, my parents will turn you into a fried dough twist. They’ll soak you with tea and then eat you like a

dessert!” Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to kill it, the little red insect immediately unmasked its true appearance and began to rain curses upon Chu Feng.

“You dare insult me again! I’ll teach you a lesson!” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to release electricity in his hand. Even though his opponent was merely an insect, it possessed a special body that was extremely strong.

However, as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng possessed countless means to torture it.

“Noooo!!!!!!”

At that moment, the scream of a little insect resonated through the forest in continuous waves.

“Eh, that’s strange. How do you know what birds are?” Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped tormenting the insect and questioned it curiously.

“Of course I know what birds are. Aren’t you looking down on me a bit too much? Even though we Royal Spirit Insect Race live in here, we possess an abundant amount of knowledge,” The little red insect said.

“Royal Spirit Insect Race? So you all are actually called Royal Spirit Insects?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right,” The little red insect nodded.

“In that case, do you know what sort of race I am from?” Chu Feng was carried away by a sudden impulse and began to ask the little insect curiously.

“Of course I do. I’ve heard that there are many different races outside of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.”

“Furthermore, the races possess different levels of strength. You belong to the weakest race,” The little red insect said.

“The weakest?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyes started to

shine. He started to ponder.

Although the humans were the strongest after the Ancient Era's Elves in the current Holy Land of Martialism, it was true that the humans were martial cultivators that were extremely weak compared to the other creatures in this world.

In fact, a little rock falling from the sky would be capable of smashing a human to death. Thus, upon thinking about it, what that little insect said could be considered to be correct.

"In that case, tell me, what sort of race am I?" Chu Feng asked.

"You're a pig," The little red insect said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's eyes opened wide. He glared at the little insect and said, "Say it again."

"You're a pig."

"Ahh!!! Nooo!!!"

"Was I wrong?"

"Could it be that you're not a pig?"

"What are you then? Ahh! Noo! Spare me!! I am still only a child!" The screams from the little red insect began to resonate through the forest once again. Chu Feng only stopped after torturing the little insect for quite some time.

Although he was tormenting the little insect, Chu Feng was actually using his world spirit techniques to test the little insect's body.

After his testing, Chu Feng discovered that little insect was truly miraculous. Although it was feeling pain from Chu Feng's torture, it would be extremely, extremely difficult for Chu Feng to kill it.

In other words, Chu Feng, with his current strength, was unable to kill that little insect. As such, one could see how strong that little insect's vitality was.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to feel a bit uneasy. When this little insect was already this strong, how strong would those mature Royal Spirit Insects be? This creature by the name of Royal Spirit Insect was truly too frightening.

Upon thinking about it, Chu Feng immediately grabbed that little insect tightly in his hand to make it unable to speak. Furthermore, he sealed away its aura. Then, he rapidly proceeded to the place where Xian Miaomiao was resting.

When Chu Feng returned, he discovered that Xian Miaomiao was actually gone. The spirit formation that he had set up had been destroyed by someone.

“Crap!” At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression took a huge change. He felt that the situation was bad.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, many sounds of rapid movement could be heard in the distance. They were growing closer. Soon, a silhouette appeared before Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed upon seeing this person. The reason for that was because it was none other than Xian Miaomiao.

“Miaomiao, where did you go?” Chu Feng asked.

“I should be the one asking you that. Where did you go? Why were you nowhere to be found after I woke up?” Xian Miaomiao asked angrily. This was the first time Chu Feng had ever seen her this angry. Her anger this time around was different from her anger in the past. She was angry because she was worried for Chu Feng’s safety.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to blame himself. Although he had gone to search for the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flower by himself with good intentions, he should have left behind some message in order to prevent Xian Miaomiao from becoming

worried for him. He had truly neglected that.

“Miaomiao, I...” Chu Feng wanted to apologize to her.

“Hey! Beauty!” Right at that moment, the little insect in Chu Feng’s hand suddenly spoke. This fellow actually broke apart the spirit formation that Chu Feng had bound it with.

Not only that, it currently had a very pitiful and harmless appearance as it looked to Xian Miaomiao with deep emotions in its eyes. That fellow was clearly trying to obtain Xian Miaomiao’s pity.

“Aiya, Chu Feng, what is that thing in your hand?” Sure enough, Xian Miaomiao noticed it. Not only that, she was also surprised and overjoyed. Her expression was as if a refugee had just discovered a new world.

“Eh... it’s a Royal Spirit Insect. If I am not mistaken, it should be... that legendary creature you spoke of,” Chu Feng said.

Chapter 1917 – The Witch Miaomiao

“Really? Quickly, let me have a look,” Xian Miaomiao extended her hand with the intent to receive the insect from Chu Feng.

“Be careful, this little thing here is quite remarkable. I exhausted a great amount of effort to capture it. Furthermore, it is very crafty,” Chu Feng warned.

“Rest assured, I got it. Quickly, give it to me, give it to me,” Xian Miaomiao said with an extremely impatient expression.

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng ended up handing the little red insect to Xian Miaomiao.

Chu Feng noticed that, at the moment when he handed the little red insect to Xian Miaomiao, the little red insect was looking at him with a complacent smile on its face. It was as if it was telling Chu Feng ‘Little guy, fight against me? You’re still too inexperienced.’

After receiving the little red insect, Xian Miaomiao asked curiously, “Chu Feng, did it recognize you as its father?”

“Recognize my ass. That little thing is not a newborn. I ended up being toyed with by it for a very long time,” Chu Feng complained.

“Haha, it’s this interesting?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Xian Miaomiao became even more excited. She then looked to the little red insect and said, “Are you male or female?”

“Beauty, I am a female,” The little red insect said in a slightly shy manner. Its tone was extremely soft and gentle.

“You’re a Royal Spirit Insect?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“Mn,” The little red insect nodded obediently.

“Continue to act. I shall see how long you can continue to act,” Seeing that the little red insect was actually that obedient in Xian Miaomiao’s hand, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from

feeling disdain toward it. He knew extremely well how vile that little thing was.

Fortunately, it was a female. If it was a male, Chu Feng would not have handed it to Xian Miaomiao. That shameless little thing, if it was a male, it might end up doing extremely shameless things.

“Then, do you have a name?” Xian Miaomiao continued to ask.

“I do,” The little red insect nodded.

“What’s your name?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“I am called [Shit](#),” The little red insect said in a very proud manner.

“Pff,” Hearing that word, Chu Feng who was drinking water directly sprayed out a mouthful of water. He looked to that little red bug with an astonished expression. He thought to himself that that name was truly crappy.

“Shit, who the heck gave it that name? Hahahaha. Aiya, I can’t, I’m dying from laughter.”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen was holding onto her stomach and bending her knees whilst laughing in Chu Feng’s world spirit space. She had the appearance of nearly dying from laughter.

“Shit?” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao started to frown. She started to have an uncomfortable expression.

“That’s right, my name’s Shit. It’s the Shit as in shitting out feces. Isn’t my name awesome? My dad said that my name is most definitely the most amazing name in the world,” The little red insect said in an extremely proud manner. It seemed to not have realized what was wrong with its name at all. Instead, it was extremely proud of its name.

“No, that name is extremely bad. I’ll give you a new name,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“New name? Are you saying that you’re able to give me a name

even more amazing than the one my dad gave me?” The little red insect asked.

“Chu Feng, you’re a world spiritist. Help me think of a name,” Xian Miaomiao said to Chu Feng.

“Just call it Lil’ Red,” Chu Feng said in an extremely casual manner.

“Mn, Lil’ Red, this name’s pretty good. It’s simple and easy to remember. At the same time, it suits you very well. Your name will be Lil’ Red,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“What? Lil’ Red? You’re actually giving me such a simple name? No, I’m not going to be Lil’ Red. My name will be Shit,” However, the little red insect strongly protested the name Chu Feng had thought of.

“No, you can’t be called Shit. You don’t know how vulgar that name is. It’s better that your name be Lil’ Red. C’mon, be obedient,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“No, my name is Shit, Shit is my name. I’m Shit, I’m Shit,” The little red insect began to shout hysterically.

“You actually dare to talk back to me? Watch as I teach you a lesson,” Xian Miaomiao curled her lips and then revealed an ill-intended smile. Then, she grabbed the little red insect with her hands. With one hand on its head and the other on its tail, she began to pull on its body.

“Woosh~~~” In an instant, that little red insect that was only a finger length long was pulled to over a meter long.

“Ahhh! Noo! Heavens, help me! You’re about to pull me into a thin noodle, even though I don’t know what noodles are!”

“Aiyah, I was wrong! I will not be Shit anymore! My name will be Lil’ Red, I’ll be Lil’ Red!” That little red insect was truly useless. After being tormented by Xian Miaomiao, it immediately accepted the name of Lil’ Red.

“Hahaha, Chu Feng, quickly, look, Lil’ Red is so flexible. No matter how hard I pull her, she will not break. This is truly amazing,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was in great joy as she played around with Lil’ Red. Even though Lil’ Red was begging for forgiveness, she still had no intention of stopping. She completely ignored Lil’ Red’s cries.

“Great sir, quickly save me! Save me from this witch’s grasp!” Powerless to do anything else, the little red insect actually began to cry to Chu Feng for help.

“Haha,” Faced with the little red insect’s cries for help, Chu Feng recalled the complacent expression it had when it managed to break away from his hand.

Thus, not only did Chu Feng not plead for leniency for it, he instead said to Xian Miaomiao, “Miaomiao, since you like Lil’ Red so much, I’ll give it to you.”

“Heavens, don’t!”

“I belong to great sir, I do not belong to the witch.”

“Great sir, I beg of you, do not give me to the witch. I still haven’t lived enough. I am still only a child,” Hearing those words, before Xian Miaomiao could reply, the little red insect began to voice its refusal.

“Chu Feng, are you serious?” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was extremely overjoyed.

“Of course. If you like it, then it’s yours,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Sure, sure! I like it a lot. This Lil’ Red is simply so fun to play with,” As Xian Miaomiao said those words, she pulled Lil’ Red again. She was truly planning to pull Lil’ Red apart.

“Mom, grandpa, uncles, aunts, come and save me!” Lil’ Red’s miserable voice resonated nonstop. Resonating with its voice was Xian Miaomiao’s delightful laughter.

Xian Miaomiao continued to play with Lil' Red for a long while before she finally began to search for Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers with Chu Feng again. However, even on their way to find the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers, she would continue to play with Lil' Red.

Seeing how tragically Xian Miaomiao was playing with Lil' Red, Chu Feng did not feel the slightest bit of sympathy for Lil' Red. Instead, he felt that she was truly suitable to be Lil' Red's master. At the very least, he felt her to be a much more fitting master than himself.

Suddenly, Lil' Red who was being tormented by Xian Miaomiao said, "Wait a moment, stop messing with me. As long as you stop messing with me, I'll help you two search for the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers,"

"Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers? You know of them?" Hearing those words, both Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao revealed dubious gazes. The two of them did not believe that crafty little thing.

"I do, I really do. I know where the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are. As long as you release me, I'll bring you two there to find them," Lil' Red said.

"Lil' Red, you know what the consequences will be should you lie to me, right?" Xian Miaomiao said with a beaming smile on her face. However, to Lil' Red, Xian Miaomiao's sweet smile was extremely frightening.

"I don't dare, I don't dare," At that moment, even though Lil' Red was an insect, it was sweating cold bullets out of fear of Xian Miaomiao.

Technically, its name is Lashi; aka. To shit.

Chapter 1918 – People From The Dark Hall

“In that case, I’ll ask you a couple of questions,” Then, Xian Miaomiao proceeded to ask Lil’ Red a couple of questions regarding the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flower’s distinctive features.

To Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao’s surprise, Lil’ Red actually managed to correctly answer all of the questions. Furthermore, it answered them immediately. It truly had the appearance of knowing where the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers were.

With this being the case, not to mention Xian Miaomiao, even Chu Feng was overjoyed. The reason for that was because they were finally able to see hope after searching for so long with no fruit to be found. They felt as if they were finally able to see light at the end of the tunnel.

Afterward, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao allowed Lil’ Red to lead the way, and began to rapidly proceed toward the location of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers.

After an entire day of traveling, Chu Feng’s expression suddenly changed, and his gaze became extremely complicated. Then, he suddenly stopped.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to Lil’ Red and asked, “Lil’ Red, tell me honestly, are you deceiving us?”

“Ah? Great sir, what are you talking about? I am obedient, how could I possibly deceive the two of you?” Hearing Chu Feng’s question, Lil’ Red started to panic slightly.

“The place ahead is simply not the location of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers. Instead, it’s the location of your race, isn’t it?” Chu Feng said.

Xian Miaomiao also narrowed her long, shapely eyebrows. In a rather angry manner, she asked, “Lil’ Red, is what Chu Feng said correct?” The reason for that was because this matter was

extremely important to her.

“Aiya, I was wrong, okay? I just wanted to go back home. I merely wanted to see my relatives before going to find the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers,” Seeing that his plan was exposed, Lil’ Red spoke in a very wronged manner.

“Lil’ Red, you little bastard! You actually dared to deceive me. Watch as I take care of you,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was planning to teach Lil’ Red a ruthless lesson.

“Miaomiao, stop,” However, this time around, Chu Feng actually stopped her.

At this moment, Xian Miaomiao was extremely shocked. She did not understand why Chu Feng would stop her. After all, Lil’ Red deceiving them was something extremely detrimental to the both of them.

As for Lil’ Red, it was even more astonished. With an extremely shocked expression, it looked to Chu Feng. There was confusion in its eyes. It also did not understand why Chu Feng would help it. After all, it even knew that it would be extremely dangerous should this matter be exposed.

“Lil’ Red, prepare yourself,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? Great sir, what are you talking about?” Lil Red was even more puzzled.

“Your relatives are no longer here,” Chu Feng said.

“What?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Xian Miaomiao’s eyes started to flicker. She seemed to have realized something.

“Great sir, what are you talking about? Why do I not understand?” Lil’ Red was still very confused.

“You can go and look for yourself,” Chu Feng rescued Lil’ Red from Xian Miaomiao’s grasp. Then, he let go of Lil’ Red. At that moment, he was not afraid of Lil’ Red running away.

After being freed, Lil' Red immediately flew ahead. Seeing that, Xian Miaomiao, who seemed to have realized something, immediately followed after it. As for Chu Feng, he also followed after them.

The three of them all possessed extremely fast speeds. As they traveled rapidly, they soon arrived at Lil' Red's home.

It was a small field. This should be the home of the Royal Spirit Insects.

Originally, there should have been many complicated caves in this place. The reason for that was because there had originally been several thousands of Royal Spirit Insects living here.

However, at that moment, the place had been left in utter destruction. It had been turned into an enormous crater.

Furthermore, inside the enormous crater as well as on the sides of the enormous crater, lay many dead insects. Those insects were all dried up. As such, it was simply impossible to see their original forms. However, Chu Feng was able to feel that they should have died not long ago.

“No! No! No!!!!!!”

Seeing this scene, Lil' Red started to become frantic and began to shout hysterically.

Looking at Lil' Red acting like this, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao both felt some pain in their hearts. Although they had only met Lil' Red not long ago, and they were both certain that Lil' Red was an extremely vile and shameless insect, and they had been brought here by Lil' Red with the intention to trap them, as they heard Lil' Red's screams and saw Lil' Red's current appearance, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao were unable to feel any anger or hatred for Lil' Red.

At that moment, not only was Lil' Red's voice hysterical, it was also filled with grief.

The pain of having one's clan exterminated was extremely painful to bear. Chu Feng had personally experienced it before. Thus, he knew very well what sort of pain Lil' Red was going through, and sympathized with him.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Lil' Red turned into a ray of red light and flew toward the area ahead.

“Miaomiao, follow her,” In response, Chu Feng grabbed Xian Miaomiao and began to chase after Lil' Red.

With Chu Feng's speed, he was completely capable of catching up to Lil' Red. However, he didn't do so. The reason for that was because he felt that Lil' Red must've sensed something.

That was indeed the case. Lil' Red had managed to detect the aura of its clansmen. Furthermore, it soon caught up to its clansmen. Merely, what appeared before Chu Feng, Lil' Red and Xian Miaomiao's line of sight was not only Lil' Red's clansmen. There were also ten figures.

They were humans. A total of ten humans. They were all rank four Martial Emperors. They were all wearing black cloaks, and the same strange mask. It was the outfit of the Dark Hall. They were actually people from the Dark Hall.

Even though it was extremely inconceivable, it remained that they were indeed people from the Dark Hall. People from the Dark Hall had actually also managed to enter this place safely. Furthermore, many of them had been able to enter.

Furthermore, all of these people from the Dark Hall were world spiritists. Although they were only Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they were currently controlling a grand formation.

It was an unsealing formation. The center of this formation was packed full with Royal Spirit Insects. The auras of those Royal Spirit Insects were still present. However, they were all dead. Like

the ones inside and by that enormous crater, they were all dried up and dead.

However, they had not been directly killed. Instead, they had been refined to death. It was that spirit formation that had taken their lives.

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!”

Lil’ Red was incomparably furious. As if mad, it charged towards the people from the Dark Hall.

“Bang.”

Lil’ Red’s speed was truly fast. Her extremely fast speed was able to turn into an extremely powerful impulse. Lil’ Red collided with one of the people from the Dark Hall, and directly knocked that person several meters away.

“What is it?”

Originally, the ten Dark Hall’s experts were all focused on the spirit formation. Thus, Lil’ Red’s collision came as an enormous shock to them.

“There’s actually another one that escaped. Catch it!”

After seeing Lil’ Red, five of the ten experts from the Dark Hall continued to control the spirit formation, while the other five stood up and began to join hands to capture Lil’ Red.

As for Lil’ Red, she was frantically colliding with the five Dark Hall’s experts, sending them rolling on the ground.

Feeling helpless, the five of them all began to set up spirit formations to seal off Lil’ Red’s movements. However, their spirit formations were simply unable to stop Lil’ Red at all. To Lil’ Red, their spirit formations were simply useless.

“That insect is somewhat special. Capture it. That insect must possess even stronger energies. If we are to throw it into the formation, it will be able to greatly reduce the time needed to undo

the spirit formation.”

After trying to seal Lil’ Red off with spirit formations, the people from the Dark Hall realized that Lil’ Red was very powerful. After the five let out their cries of alarm, the other five Dark Hall’s experts actually all stopped controlling the spirit formation and joined the rest to surround Lil’ Red.

Chapter 1919 – Interrogation

“I’m going to smash you all to death, I’m going to smash you all to death! You damned devils!!! Ahh!!!!”

As for Lil’ Red, she simply did not plan to escape. Else, with her speed, not to mention ten rank four Martial Emperors, even a hundred rank four Martial Emperors would not be able to capture her.

With her family wiped out, Lil’ Red was filled with fury, and frantically using its tiny little body and enormously fast speed to unceasingly collide with the ten Dark Hall’s experts.

Unfortunately, no matter how fast it was, no matter how strong its body was, it remained that its power was limited. To rely only on that bit of power to unceasingly collide with the ten Dark Hall’s experts, it was simply impossible to actually injure them.

In the end, out of a moment of carelessness, Lil’ Red was captured by one of the Dark Hall’s experts. Held in his hand, Lil’ Red was unable to escape.

“Haha, little thing, you know how to struggle quite well. You want to avenge your clansmen, right? Unfortunately for you, there’ll be no chance for you to do so.”

“That said, there’s something else that you can do. That is, you can accompany your clansmen in death,” The Dark Hall’s expert that had captured Lil’ Red smiled a strange smile.

At that moment, Lil’ Red gave up on resisting. It seemed as if Lil’ Red knew that she was no match for these men. Actually, Lil’ Red was already prepared to die with its clansmen.

“Release it,” However, right at that moment, an explosive voice sounded from behind the Dark Hall’s experts like a sudden clap of thunder.

The sudden voice startled all ten of the Dark Hall’s experts. They

turned around, and were immediately even more shocked.

The reason for that was because not only did they see Xian Miaomiao, they also saw Chu Feng. Furthermore, the one that had spoken earlier was Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng?!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the shocked expressions of the ten Dark Hall’s experts grew even stronger.

None of them expected Chu Feng to be here. Furthermore, accompanying him was the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Little Princess.

Xian Miaomiao had not concealed her aura. As they were all world spiritists, they were able to determine from Xian Miaomiao’s age and cultivation that she was that Ancient Era’s Elves’ renowned genius Little Princess.

“Chu Feng, why would you be here? Oh, it must be that armor you’re wearing, right?” The man that was holding Lil’ Red in his hand said.

“I said release it,” Chu Feng spoke again. His tone was filled with chilliness.

However, even though that man sensed the chilliness of Chu Feng’s tone, he was not afraid of Chu Feng. Instead, he burst into loud laughter and said, “I do not know where you got that courage from, to actually dare to order me around.”

After he finished saying those words, his gaze grew cold and gloomy. He added, “Chu Feng, could it be that you didn’t know that you have already entered the gates of hell?”

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s body suddenly moved. In a flash, he arrived before that man. Then, a crimson flash radiated all around. That man’s arm was actually sliced off by Chu Feng. Furthermore, what sliced off that man’s arm was not a blade or a sword. Instead, it was Chu Feng’s palm.

Chu Feng had held his hand in a blade shape and instantly hacked off his opponent's arm.

With the arm hacked off, Lil' Red was freed. Lil' Red turned into a red light and flew over to Xian Miaomiao.

As for Chu Feng, he did not stop. He pointed his other hand at that man's dantian area. Then, with a 'puu,' he pierced his hand into that man's dantian.

At that moment, not to mention that Dark Hall's expert with his dantian pierced, the other nine Dark Hall's experts were also all stunned. Although Chu Feng's cultivation was below theirs, his explosive battle power that had appeared in a flash was truly too stunning.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when the Dark Hall's experts were all stunned, Chu Feng's eyes flashed. He looked to his surroundings, and then golden world spirit power began to appear. The world spirit power turned into an airtight fort and completely sealed all of them within it.

“Indeed, this place is the gates of hell. However, the master of these gates is not you all. Instead, it's me.”

Chu Feng flung his arm, and shattered that Dark Hall's expert that he had pierced into countless pieces. Before he died, he did not even have the chance to scream.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation; you actually possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?”

At that moment, the other nine Dark Hall's experts all revealed extremely frightened expressions.

Evidently, none of them had expected Chu Feng's battle power to be that strong. A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation was already extremely

extraordinary. Currently, [only Chu Feng and the Ancient Era's Elves' Little Princess](#) possessed that level of heaven-defying battle power. As such, what was this heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?

At that moment, not to mention those Dark Hall's experts, even Xian Miaomiao revealed a gaze of surprise. She also did not expect that Chu Feng's battle power would be this powerful, for it to actually be capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

"I will ask you all some questions. You all are to answer them. Else, all of you will die," Chu Feng said coldly.

"Chu Feng, are you not underestimating our Dark Hall too much here? You wish to extort information from us? Heh, maybe in your next life," However, one of the nine Dark Hall's experts sneered at Chu Feng. A flash of determination shone through his eyes. He was planning to commit suicide.

"Buzz~~~"

Chu Feng snorted coldly at his actions. Then, a burst of boundless oppressive might began to spread out from Chu Feng's body. His oppressive might completely restricted the nine Dark Hall's experts, preventing them from even attempting to commit suicide.

"Did you really think you could stop us with your few techniques?" The man continued to mock Chu Feng.

"What do you think?" Chu Feng was very calm and unhurried.

"You!!!" At that moment, not to mention that Dark Hall's expert that was speaking out against Chu Feng, even the other eight Dark Hall's experts all started to panic. Chu Feng had really managed to restrict them, and made them incapable of killing themselves.

"It's that spirit formation! You've used your own oppressive might alongside that spirit formation! What a ruthless technique!" As all of the Dark Hall's experts were world spiritists, they soon

realized what had happened after seeing the spirit formation that had sealed them.

“All of you will die. Merely, it is no longer up to you all to decide how you will die. Instead, I shall be the one to decide how you will all die,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to form hand seals with his hands. Then, from the spirit formation that surrounded all of them, many hand-like objects appeared and pierced into the bodies of the nine Dark Hall’s experts.

“Ahh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The very next moment, the nine Dark Hall’s experts all began to let out extremely painful screams. They were currently suffering from Chu Feng’s torment, and were in so much pain that they wished they were dead.

“Sto, stop! Stop!!!” In this sort of situation, they began to beg for forgiveness.

“Speak, why are you all here?”

“What is your purpose in coming here?”

“Who is your leader?” Chu Feng asked these questions in succession.

However, faced with Chu Feng’s questions, the nine Dark Hall’s experts only continued to beg for forgiveness, and did not answer his questions.

Chu Feng later used many other methods of torture and made them suffer enormously. However, he was still unable to force an answer out of them.

“Quite tight mouths you all have. Very well, I shall have a look at your true identities and see exactly who it is that is willing to give their lives away for the Dark Hall.”

Chu Feng did not expect them to be this resolute. After obtaining no fruit from his interrogation, Chu Feng arrived before one of the

Dark Hall's experts and removed his mask.

However, that mask was extremely special, and was not something that could be removed easily. Even Chu Feng would have to use world spirit techniques to remove the mask.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng touched that strange mask with his world spirit technique, his expression immediately changed. Immediately afterward, he hurriedly stepped to the side.

“Boom~~~”

The very next moment, that man's body exploded. Chu Feng's world spirit technique had triggered something within that man's body that caused his body to explode.

“Chu... Chu Feng, ple, please spare us. We really have no way to tell you anything. In... In our bodies are-” Upon seeing that, another among them seemed to want to say something.

“Bang!!!” However, right at that moment, that man's body also exploded. It was not that he was trying to die. Rather, there was something in his body that ended up killing him the moment he said something that he shouldn't have.

“Chu Feng, I'll tell you, I'll tell you.”

In response, the others also began to speak. Merely, they were not truly planning to tell Chu Feng anything. Instead, they planned to, like the man before them, trigger the thing within their bodies and kill themselves.

The reason for that was because even Chu Feng was unable to stop the explosions from within their bodies.

In a blink of an eye, all nine of the Dark Hall's experts died from their bodies exploding.

There is also Leng Yue from the Heavenly Law Palace. But no one other than Chu Feng, as far as we know, knew about it.

Chapter 1920 – Falling Into A Trap

“Those guys, what happened to them?” Xian Miaomiao had an astonished expression.

As for Chu Feng, he had a very serious expression. As a world spiritist, he naturally knew what was going on.

The people from the Dark Hall all possessed a self detonation power within them. As long as anyone tried to forcibly remove their masks, or should they say something that they shouldn't, they would trigger the self detonation and die from the explosion of their bodies.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng had restricted their movements and that self detonation power using both his world spirit formation and his oppressive might, he was still powerless before that self detonation power.

This meant... that there was a world spiritist even more powerful than Chu Feng in the Dark Hall. Furthermore, that world spiritist was not only a little bit stronger than him.

“Chu Feng, what were they doing here?” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao walked toward Chu Feng with Lil Red in her hand.

As for Chu Feng, he began to carefully inspect their location. He wanted to find out exactly what sort of thing these fellows were trying to unseal with their unsealing formation that cost the lives of all the Royal Spirit Insects.

That said, even though Chu Feng was inspecting the surrounding area, he did not dare to use all of his strength to do so. The reason for that was because he knew that the Blood Devouring Killing Formation sealed Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. He was afraid that what was underneath this place would be the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

That was what came into Chu Feng's mind the first moment he

saw that unsealing formation. He believed that the people from the Dark Hall were trying to release the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

"This is bad," After inspecting the place, Chu Feng's frown deepened. He then turned to Xian Miaomiao and asked, "Miaomiao, do you know exactly where the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts are sealed?"

"No, I don't," Xian Miaomiao shook her head. Then, she asked, "Chu Feng, what's going on?"

"Below this formation is another formation's core. If I am not mistaken, the spirit formation below us is related to the spirit formation that sealed the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. The reason for that is because I am certain that the formation's core down below is that of a sealing formation."

"Thus, what you said is most likely true. There is indeed a frightening thing sealed here. It should be the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts."

"Merely, the formation's core is located too deep. I am unable to determine exactly where those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts are sealed."

"However, one thing is certain. Those people from the Dark Hall set up such a spirit formation here because they wanted to release whatever it is that is sealed in there," Chu Feng said.

"It must be the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. This place must be where the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts are sealed. What do we do? They're actually this wicked."

"I will immediately return to report this matter to the others," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Report? Didn't you say that your Ancient Era's Elves have people guarding this place all the time?" Chu Feng asked.

"That is indeed the case. However, my royal father has moved many troops recently. As such, the strength of the guards here are

much more inferior to before. If the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts are to be released at such a time, the Ancient Era's Elves stationed here will not be able to stop them," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Did your royal father transfer the troops for the sake of searching for the Dark Hall?" Chu Feng asked.

"Yes," Xian Miaomiao nodded.

"Crap, he fell for their trap," Chu Feng became alarmed. Evidently, the secret that the Ancient Era's Elves knew about was something that the Dark Hall knew too. All of this was deliberately done by the Dark Hall.

"This is bad, I must go and notify them right away," As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she prepared to leave.

"I'm afraid it's too late," Chu Feng grabbed Xian Miaomiao.

"Then... then what do we do?" Xian Miaomiao realized that if the people from the Dark Hall were truly prepared, it would truly be too late for her to return and notify the Elf Kingdom about this matter and then have them deploy their troops.

"Since it's too late, we must seize the moment and do what we should," Chu Feng said.

"You're saying that we should continue searching for the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers?" Xian Miaomiao asked.

"That's right. Else, we would've journeyed here in vain, no?" Chu Feng said.

"But the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are too hard to find. Furthermore, with the people from the Dark Hall here, this place is now extremely dangerous," Xian Miaomiao said.

What Xian Miaomiao said was actually also what Chu Feng was worried about. Without mentioning anything else, merely that formation the ten Dark Hall's experts were controlling was something set up by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

This meant that the Dark Hall had dispatched many experts. The ten rank four Martial Emperors Chu Feng had killed were already extremely powerful experts in the Holy Land of Martialism. After all, the Four Great Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders were all only rank four Martial Emperors.

They were super experts that could cause an entire region of the Holy Land of Martialism to tremble with a light tap of their feet.

However, Chu Feng felt that these ten rank four Martial Emperors were only small fry among the experts dispatched by the Dark Hall.

Right at that moment, Lil Red who had been silent for a very long time spoke, "I know where the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are. I'll bring you two there."

"You're still trying to deceive us?" Xian Miaomiao asked with a cold voice. Even though Lil Red's clan had been exterminated, Xian Miaomiao still possessed resentment toward Lil Red for deceiving her.

"I'm not deceiving you two. I really know where the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are. I can bring you two there. Merely... you two might not necessarily be able to obtain them," Although Lil Red was much calmer than before, it was instead still very low-spirited. Looking at Lil Red, one could only feel pity for it.

"Lil Red, if you truly know where the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are, then go ahead and lead the way," Chu Feng said.

"Mn," Lil Red turned into a ray of red light and began to fly into the distance.

"Wait," However, Chu Feng suddenly spoke to stop it.

"What's wrong? Great sir, I am truly not deceiving you two," Lil Red returned and revealed an expression of pleading for Chu Feng to believe it.

"I trust you. However, we cannot leave this place like this," The

corners of Chu Feng's mouth rose. He revealed a smile of trust in Lil Red. Then, he destroyed the spirit formation that the Dark Hall's experts had set up.

Even though the spirit formation underneath this place was merely one of many sealing formations, Chu Feng felt that it would be of some use should it remain sealed. Thus, he had to destroy the unsealing formation.

After Chu Feng destroyed the unsealing formation, he set up another spirit formation in its place. That spirit formation he set up was merely there to fool others.

When looking at it from the outside, the Dark Hall's unsealing formation would appear to still be present. Furthermore, it looked as if the ten Dark Hall experts who had died were still there controlling and maneuvering the spirit formation.

However, that was all because of Chu Feng's spirit formation. Those ten Dark Hall's experts were definitely all dead. They were all killed by Chu Feng. The unsealing formation was also destroyed, destroyed by Chu Feng.

After finishing that, Chu Feng said, "Lil Red, go ahead and lead the way."

"Gotcha," Lil Red turned into a ray of red light and began to guide Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao.

After seeing Lil Red's astonishingly fast speed, Chu Feng began to ponder. Lil Red was very powerful. At the very least, Lil Red was extremely special.

However, its race, no matter how Chu Feng looked at it, did not appear to be powerful at all. Else, how could they be that easily exterminated?

Furthermore, while Lil Red's clansmen were killed, Chu Feng was still able to tell from their corpses that there were differences between them and Lil Red.

Chu Feng had a thought. Lil Red was not a Royal Spirit Insect. Even if Lil Red was... it was very likely that it was a variant.

.....

Under Lil Red's guidance, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao traveled for an entire day before they finally arrived at a large mountain.

"We're here. That's it," Lil Red pointed at a very small crack in that large mountain.

"There are indeed Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers there. I am able to sense their aura. Let's go in," At this moment, Xian Miaomiao revealed an overjoyed expression because Lil Red had not deceived them this time around.

"See, I didn't deceive you all. Merely... the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers are not that easy to obtain. I can go in there, but cannot bring them out," Lil Red said.

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao started to frown. While the large mountain might not appear to be extraordinary, it was actually extremely tough. Even she was unable to carve a path through it.

As for that crack, it was extremely small. Only Lil Red was able to pass through it. That said, Xian Miaomiao was also able to sense that there was a power inside the mountain protecting the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers. As such, it was true that the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were very hard to obtain.

"If we could take them out, we would've already done so. How could the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers possibly remain there?" Lil Red added.

"Could it be that the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers that we painstakingly found cannot be obtained?" Xian Miaomiao revealed an expression of unwillingness. To not be able to get the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers after finding them was even more painful than not being able to find them.

Chapter 1921 – Eight Banners

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Let me have a look.”

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, Xian Miaomiao revealed a delighted expression. She was so depressed earlier that she actually forgot that Chu Feng was an extraordinary world spiritist.

“You?” However, after Chu Feng spoke, Lil Red revealed a disdainful gaze. Lil Red did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to do anything. After all, it was impossible for even Lil Red.

“The rock walls of this place are extremely solid because they actually possess a very special power. Although that power is not world spirit power, I can attempt to use my world spirit techniques to undo that power,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s the power of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers. The more Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers there are, the stronger that power will be. As this place contains a lot of Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers, the power that protects them is also exceptionally strong,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Leave it to me,” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he began to set up his spirit formation. Merely, Chu Feng’s action in setting up the spirit formation this time around was somewhat different from the past.

Before Chu Feng began to actually set up his spirit formation, he took out eight banners from his Cosmos Sack. The eight banners all possessed different colors. However, there were runes and symbols drawn on all eight of them. Contained within those runes and symbols was a special power.

Chu Feng inserted the eight banners into the ground around him. Then, using his world spirit power as a string, he linked the eight banners to one another.

Then, he sat down in the center of the eight banners and began to

set up his spirit formation.

Those eight banners were treasures for world spiritists. Chu Feng had obtained them from the possessions of the Avaricious Immortal.

To be honest, if he didn't have those eight banners, it would have been extremely difficult for Chu Feng to break through the defensive power of this place. However, with the eight banners, Chu Feng possessed an eighty percent certainty in being able to break through it.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng's hands began to move rapidly and turned into many blurs. At the same time, boundless world spirit power began to fly out from Chu Feng's body like many golden dragons. The golden dragons then entered the spirit formation that Chu Feng was setting up to form a grand spirit formation. Light began to radiate all around. It was a truly imposing sight to behold.

“Beauty, beauty, what is great sir doing? Are those world spirit techniques? Then, could he be a world spiritist?” Lil Red asked Xian Miaomiao curiously. The reason for that was because the spirit formation that Chu Feng was setting up right now was truly shocking to behold.

“That's right. Chu Feng is a world spiritist. Lil Red, you actually know about world spiritists?” Xian Miaomiao looked to Lil Red with a surprised expression. Even though Lil Red, living in this place, was cut off from the rest of the world, it seemed that it knew quite a lot of things.

“Of course. We Royal Spirit Insects are always very hardworking and eager to learn. Furthermore, I am the representative of being hardworking and eager to learn. Thus, I don't know about anything. No, no, no, I meant to say I know about everything.”

“I am extremely intelligent, extremely powerful,” Lil Red raised

its little head proudly.

“Break!”

At that moment, Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, one of the banners left the spirit formation and, carrying a boundless amount of power, began to fly toward the direction that Chu Feng had pointed at.

“Buzz~~~”

That banner struck the mountain. However, the wall that it struck did not break apart, nor did it explode. Instead, like a spirit, the banner passed through the wall.

At this moment, one could tell with one’s naked eyes that there were layers of power distorting and dissipating within that mountain’s wall.

“Break!”

Chu Feng shouted seven more times in succession. Then, the other seven banners also entered the mountain’s wall.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng, who had originally been sitting on the ground, suddenly stood up. As he stood up, the enormous spirit formation that was centered on him actually also rose up alongside him.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s long hair was drifting, and his clothes were fluttering. He appeared to be extremely extraordinary and imposing.

“Paa~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng clasped his palms together and crossed his fingers. With that, his spirit formation actually shrunk in size and entered his body.

The very next moment, Chu Feng pointed his crossed fingers at the direction where the eight banners had entered.

“Split!”

Once he said that word, a golden light shot out from his fingertips. Like a sharp sword, it pierced into that mountain’s wall.

“Rumble~~~~”

Explosions began to spring up everywhere. Crushed rocks were falling all over the place. That indestructible mountain wall was actually split apart by Chu Feng.

Not only was that mountain wall split apart by Chu Feng, Chu Feng also broke through the power that was protecting the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers.

At that moment, the mysterious Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers appeared before Chu Feng, Xian Miaomiao and Lil Red.

The Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers look like a lump of mist made of silk.

However, with merely a single glance, Chu Feng could tell that they were an extremely extraordinary sort of Natural Energy.

Like their names, they were truly quintessential treasures. Looking at the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers, Chu Feng felt a bit of temptation. If he were to be able to refine all of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers here, he might even be able to reach a breakthrough from rank one Martial Emperor to rank two Martial Emperor.

However, that was merely a thought. Chu Feng would not actually go and refine the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers because these Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers belonged to Xian Miaomiao.

“Wow! Great sir, your world spirit techniques are actually that powerful? You were actually able to even break apart the power of this place?” Lil Red’s mouth was wide open with shock. Disbelief filled its insect face.

As for Xian Miaomiao, she jumped into the mountain cave

happily and began to carefully pick away at those Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers.

Chu Feng did not enter. Instead, he watched as Xian Miaomiao harvested the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers that she had longed for day and night.

Suddenly, Xian Miaomiao stopped harvesting the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers. A distressed expression appeared on her previously smiling face.

Seeing that Xian Miaomiao's reaction was strange, Chu Feng stepped forward and asked, "Miaomiao, what's wrong?"

"I can only bring away a portion of the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers here. The other portion cannot be brought away by me," Xian Miaomiao pointed to the several tens of lumps of Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers in the distant.

"Aiya, they have already dissolved in this place. It's truly a pity," Lil Red also ran over.

Chu Feng also discovered that those Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers had, for some reason, dissolved. To put it in simpler terms, those Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were already damaged.

For example, if those Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers were fruits, then the ones that could be brought away would be the fruits that were in good condition. As for the ones that could not be brought away, they were the rotten fruits. At that moment, the ones that were rotten were even more numerous than the ones that were in good condition. It was no wonder Xian Miaomiao would have such a distressed expression.

"Miaomiao, although those Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers have already dissolved, I have a way to gather a portion of their energy so that you can refine them right now," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, is what you said for real?" Hearing those words, Xian

Miaomiao immediately became overjoyed. It was as if she had seen a light at the end of a dark tunnel.

“Why would I lie to you?” Chu Feng was afraid that Xian Miaomiao would not trust him. Thus, he began to set up his spirit formation as he spoke. He wanted to gather the dispersed energy of those Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers so that Xian Miaomiao could refine it.

“But, Chu Feng, there’s a lot of Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers here. Even if I am to refine them, it would take me some time. As this place is currently dangerous, are you sure...?” Seeing that Chu Feng had begun to set up his spirit formation, Xian Miaomiao was both moved and worried.

“It’s alright. Be at ease, and just start refining them. I will guard this place. I guarantee you that no one will disturb you before you finish refining all of the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Seeing the smile on Chu Feng’s face, Xian Miaomiao’s face grew stiff. She was moved, and felt a warm feeling running through her heart. However, that warm feeling caused her nose to stuff up slightly.

Chapter 1922 – Lil Red's Past

“Chu Feng, with how good you are to me, I... I truly do not know how to repay you,” Xian Miaomiao was extremely grateful to Chu Feng. Although she was feeling as if her body was covered with warmth, her starry, beautiful eyes were actually glistening with specks of tears.

“How about you devote yourself to me so that I can become your Ancient Era's Elves' son-in-law?” Chu Feng said jokingly.

Originally, Xian Miaomiao was very grateful toward Chu Feng. However, upon hearing what Chu Feng said, she curled her little lips and said, “Sure. However, it won't be me. Instead, I'll marry my big sister to you.”

“If it's your sister, then we can forget about it. I am not fond of older women,” Chu Feng said.

“You actually dare to turn your back on my big sister? Watch as I tell her about it,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Don't, don't, don't. Take into consideration that I've helped you and spare me once,” Chu Feng said.

“Fine. I'll take into consideration the effort you've put into helping me and spare you this one time,” Xian Miaomiao placed her hands on her hips and spoke with a very haughty attitude. However, she soon seemed to have recalled something. With a very serious expression, she said to Chu Feng, “Let's be serious. Chu Feng, I will not have you help me in vain. In the future, I will also help you.”

“It's okay, don't continue acting this way with me. This doesn't resemble your character.”

“No matter what, I am your good friend that has been stabbed twice by you. Is there a need for you to distinguish things this thoroughly?” Chu Feng said in a slightly annoyed manner. He

knew that Xian Miaomiao was grateful to him. However, it remained that he had helped her without the intention of reciprocation. Thus, he was not fond of Xian Miaomiao acting like this.

“Okay then. Since you do not like the emotional and corny me, I’ll stab you twice again,” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually very disapproving of her behavior, Xian Miaomiao revealed a vile smile. Then, she passed her little hands through Chu Feng’s Blood Devouring Armor to tickle him.

“Hey, hey, hey, stop fooling around,” Sensing the two soft and smooth hands touching his skin, Chu Feng immediately started to lose his cool.

“Hahaha, never would I expect that a grand Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist would be ticklish too,” Xian Miaomiao had a complacent expression on her face.

“I’m not ticklish. Merely, I’m afraid that you’ll get a reaction from me. If by chance I am unable to contain myself, I might finish you on the spot,” Chu Feng said.

“Finish me on the spot?” Xian Miaomiao’s beautiful eyes were flickering nonstop. Originally, she was slightly confused as to what Chu Feng meant by that. However, soon, her little face grew red and she shouted at Chu Feng, “Damned rogue!” Then, she swaggered off.

At that time, the vile and shameless Lil Red asked with a puzzled expression, “Hey, hey, hey, beauty, why is great sir a rogue? He clearly didn’t do anything to you, and it was you who was teasing him. Even if it’s harassment, shouldn’t the harasser be you?”

“I... I... I...” Being questioned in such a way by Lil Red, Xian Miaomiao wanted to explain. However, after thinking for a long time, she was unable to think of a way to explain herself.

Thus, Xian Miaomiao’s face grew redder and redder. In the end,

she actually grabbed Lil Red and started to pull on Lil Red while shouting, “Lil Red, you insolent thing! You actually dared to speak on his behalf. Do you want to live or not?”

“Aiyayayaya, beauty, spare me. I am with you.”

“Then why did you speak for him?”

“I was merely telling the truth. I was just being impartial.”

“I’ll let you continue to be impartial. I’ll let you continue to speak the truth.”

“Aiyayaya, I was wrong. Stop pulling me. I am not a rubber band. Ahhh~~~ Ohh~~~ Noo~~~”

.....

.....

.....

After Chu Feng gathered the dispersed energies, Xian Miaomiao did not waste any time. She immediately entered a serious state and began to refine the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers’ energies.

As for Chu Feng and Lil Red, they arrived outside of the cave. In order to guard against the unexpected, Chu Feng spent half a day setting up a very powerful concealing formation to conceal Xian Miaomiao and the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers in the cave.

It was as Xian Miaomiao had said. The people from the Dark Hall were planning to do vile things inside the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. As such, this place was indeed extremely dangerous.

However, precisely because it was dangerous, Chu Feng had to be extra cautious. Since he had promised the Elf King that he would take care of Xian Miaomiao, he must do so properly. Even if something were to happen to him, he must not allow anything to happen to Xian Miaomiao.

“Great sir, how come your world spirit techniques are so powerful? They’re simply omnipotent,” Lil Red was sitting beside

Chu Feng and praising him nonstop.

“Lil Red, are you trying to flatter me?” Chu Feng asked with a smile. He knew that Lil Red was extremely quick-witted.

Furthermore, after the series of things that had happened earlier, Lil Red seemed to no longer be on guard against Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao. Instead, Lil Red was determined to befriend the two of them.

“Of course not, of course not. I was merely speaking the truth,” As Lil Red said those words, its face actually grew red from embarrassment. Even though it possessed the appearance of an insect, its expressions were extremely abundant.

“Lil Red, do you wish to go to the Holy Land of Martialism to check out the monstrous beasts and spirit beasts, the sea and the mountains?” Chu Feng asked. He was able to tell that Lil Red longed for the outside world.

“I do, I do. Great sir, are you capable of taking me there?” Sure enough, after hearing what Chu Feng said, Lil Red became extremely excited.

“Of course I can. Miaomiao is currently your master, and I am Miaomiao’s good friend. As such, we are close friends, we are family.”

“If you have any desires, you can tell them to Miaomiao and I. We will do our best to help you achieve them.”

Chu Feng was speaking his true feelings. Although he had not known Lil Red for long, Chu Feng possessed deep sympathy for Lil Red, as its clan had been exterminated. As such, he did not wish for Lil Red to grieve too much, and wanted to help the little fellow walk out from the haze.

As for the best method of doing so, it would be having a family to love and take care of.

“Wuu~~~”

“I’m sorry, I’m sorry,” To Chu Feng’s surprise, after hearing what Chu Feng said, Lil Red actually started crying.

“Lil Red, what’s wrong?” Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly and carefully held Lil Red in his hand.

“Great sir is truly good to me. Yet, I cursed and insulted great sir before. I called great sir my grandson, an idiot and a pig. Lil Red is truly sorry,” Lil Red said with guilt.

“Haha, so it was actually that. Didn’t I also curse and insult you? Didn’t I also beat you up? However, it could be said that we only became friends after fighting. As such, I will not blame you and you should not blame me either,” Chu Feng said.

“Of course, of course. Great sir has treated me better than my father and mother. I will consider great sir as my relative,” Lil Red said.

“What? Your clansmen didn’t treat you well?” Hearing those word, Chu Feng seemed to have realized something.

Then, Lil Red opened its heart and began to tell Chu Feng many things about itself.

Even though Lil Red cared deeply about its clansmen, its clansmen had actually not been good to her. Even its so-called mother and father had only treated her like a slave.

The Royal Spirit Insects would never separate from one another. Regardless of whether they were searching for food or doing something, they all moved collectively, and never moved alone.

However, Lil Red had always been out by itself. The reason for that was because it had been pushed aside by the others. Strictly speaking, the Royal Spirit Insects simply never considered it to be their clansman.

Chapter 1923 – YinYang Immortal

Lil Red did not know why her clansmen treated her so badly. Furthermore, she was also very perplexed because she was indeed somewhat special when compared to her clansmen.

For example, her speed was something that none of her clansmen possessed. She was capable of passing through the energies that protected the Ancient Era's Immortal Flowers, whereas the rest of her clansmen were unable to do so.

In the same manner, her clansmen possessed cultivations, whereas Lil Red did not. Even though Lil Red possessed a speed that even her clan chief could not catch up to, she did not possess any cultivation.

After hearing what Lil Red said, the gaze with which Chu Feng looked to Lil Red became even more amiable. He felt that he wanted to protect Lil Red from the bottom of his heart. This was the feeling of being close to one another, being family.

The reason for that was because Lil Red's experiences resembled his own enormously. The only difference was that back when Chu Feng was in the Chu Family, he, at the very least, still possessed an adoptive father, an older brother, and his older sister Chu Yue, who were very good to him.

As for Lil Red, she simply didn't possess anyone that was good to her. Even her so-called parents had only been using her.

Thus, compared to Chu Feng from back then, Lil Red was even more pitiful. However, even though the Royal Spirit Insects treated Lil Red that badly, Lil Red still felt enormous affection toward them, and even wanted to die alongside them in order to avenge them.

This made Chu Feng feel that even though Lil Red possessed a very shameless and despicable personality, she was actually very

loyal and true.

After he finished listening to Lil Red's story, Chu Feng suddenly said, "Lil Red, I'm going to tell you something that might make you feel sad. However, I must still say it."

"Great sir, go ahead and say what you want to say. My endurance is extremely strong. After all, I have grown up being bullied," Lil Red said with a beaming smile. Her two little black eyes narrowed into two little crescents. Looking at it, although she was ugly in appearance, she appeared to be quite adorable at that time.

"In my opinion, you are not a Royal Spirit Insect. It is precisely because you are not a Royal Spirit Insect that you were pushed aside by your clansmen," Chu Feng said.

"Ah? Great sir, why do you say that?" Lil Red was surprised to hear what Chu Feng said. Evidently, she had never thought about that.

However, this cannot be blamed on her. After all, there were only two living creatures in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. The first was the Blood Devouring Insects. They were creatures that only possessed a low level of intelligence. As for the other one, they were the Royal Spirit Insects.

Although Lil Red was special, her appearance greatly resembled that of Royal Spirit Insects. As such, she would naturally believe that she was a Royal Spirit Insect without the slightest bit of doubt.

However, Chu Feng believed that Lil Red was most definitely not a Royal Spirit Insect. Thus, he said, "Didn't you mention all the differences that you had with your clansmen and that, other than you, all of the rest of your clansmen were the same? That is sufficient to illustrate that you are not a Royal Spirit Insect."

"Then what am I?" Lil Red asked. It did not feel sadness. Instead, it merely wanted to know exactly what it was.

“I am unable to ascertain what you are. However, you should be very powerful, much more powerful than Royal Spirit Insects,” Chu Feng said,

The reason Chu Feng said those words was because he wanted Lil Red to know that she was not a Royal Spirit Insect. As the Royal Spirit Insects had treated Lil Red badly, this would also alleviate some of the pain Lil Red was feeling from their deaths.

“Really?” Sure enough, after hearing what Chu Feng said, Lil Red immediately became spirited, and was no longer as depressed.

“Even though Lil Red is a big liar, I am not a liar,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Great sir, Lil Red will never lie to you again,” Lil Red said with a serious expression.

“You must keep your word then,” Chu Feng said.

“[Pinky swear](#),” Lil Red raised its little tail and actually wanted to pinky swear with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng extended his finger with a smile on his face and pinky swore with Lil Red’s tail.

Time passed rapidly. In the blink of an eye, three days time had passed. Over the course of those three days, Chu Feng could be said to... have been on edge the entire time.

The reason for that was because even if the people from the Dark Hall did not find them, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts could be released at any moment. If the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts were released, Chu Feng and the others would enter a crisis. After all, those were a bunch of beasts from the Ancient Era that only knew about killing.

Fortunately, there was Lil Red, this mischievous thing, with him. Lil Red had eased the tension of Chu Feng’s nervous mind greatly.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, space itself suddenly started to tremble. The enormous trees that reached the skies in the distance also started to sway back and forth violently.

All of a sudden, a very dangerous aura suddenly appeared out of nowhere. Chu Feng sensed that the situation was bad, and immediately held Lil Red in his hand. Then, with a nervous expression, he looked to the area ahead of him and shouted, “Who is it?!”

“Tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, and this old man was wondering who it was that actually killed my ten talented subordinates. Turns out it was actually you, little friend Chu Feng,” Right at that moment, a figure appeared out of thin air.

Upon seeing this person, Chu Feng immediately started to frown, and revealed an uneasy expression.

The reason for that was because this person was precisely the old man with the [black and white hair](#) that had tried to kill him back at the Ximen Imperial Clan.

“You are the YinYang Immortal?” Chu Feng asked.

“So you’ve managed to guess my identity?” The YinYang Immortal smiled strangely. He did not deny that he was the YinYang Immortal.

He began to carefully size Chu Feng up again. Then, he revealed an astonished expression and said, “You’ve become an actual rank one Martial Emperor now? I must admit, Chu Feng, you are truly a talent.”

“I am truly reluctant to kill a talent like you. Yet, you have insisted on becoming an enemy of our Dark Hall. As such, I must kill you.”

“It is not I who insisted on becoming enemies with your Dark Hall. Instead, it is your Dark Hall that decided to oppose me in all aspects,” Chu Feng said.

“Clearly a turtle in a jar, yet you still dare to act this arrogant?”

“Chu Feng, could it be that you think that you will be able to contend against this old man as a rank one Martial Emperor?” After saying those words, the YinYang Immortal’s eyes immediately shone with coldness. A boundless oppressive might swept toward Chu Feng. Instantly, his oppressive might covered the entire region.

“Zzzzzzz~”

Chu Feng immediately unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings to increase his cultivation to rank three Martial Emperor. Faced with the YinYang Immortal’s oppressive might, Chu Feng was forced back repeatedly.

A rank six Martial Emperor was truly too powerful. If Chu Feng were to truly fight against the YinYang Immortal, he would definitely not be able to defeat him.

“YinYang Immortal, as an Immortal, why did you decide to work for the Dark Hall? Exactly what benefits are there for you?” Chu Feng asked loudly.

“Benefits? Did you think that obtaining stronger power and being able to live for even longer are not benefits?” The YinYang Immortal said.

“Exactly who is the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, and what is he planning to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“Haha... you’re already at such a state, yet you still want to obtain answers from me?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly underestimating this old man. You should know that you are not even qualified to speak with me right now. The reason for that is because your little life is already in this old man’s grasp.”

As the YinYang Immortal spoke, thunder exploded in the sky above, and black clouds began to surge, covering the earth in pitch

blackness. At the same time, his fatal oppressive might grew even more powerful. From that oppressive might, Chu Feng felt a very strong aura of death.

At this moment, Chu Feng clenched his fists tightly. He could not resign himself to fate. Even though he knew that he was no match for the YinYang Immortal, he must still give his all to fight.

If he were to fight, there would still be hope. If he didn't fight, he would undoubtedly be killed.

"Sure enough, you're really weak," Seeing Chu Feng, who was shivering after being engulfed by his oppressive might, the YinYang Immortal revealed a very complacent gaze.

Pinky swear basically means 'pulling hooks,' in chinese. So... it doesn't especially means pinky but is generally used with pinky.

There we go, he's called YinYang Immortal because he has black and white hair. Most likely split down into two colors from the middle.

Chapter 1924 – Confrontation Of World Spirit Techniques

“However, if I am to kill you just like this, it would truly be too boring. I’ll give you a chance,” The YinYang Immortal suddenly removed his overwhelming oppressive might and spoke with a beaming smile.

“What do you want?” Chu Feng asked.

“Compete with me with world spirit techniques. If you are to be able to defeat me, I will release you. If you are to lose, your life will be mine to take care of. What do you think?” The YinYang Immortal said.

“What do you want to compete in?” Chu Feng asked.

“Very simple,” As the YinYang Immortal spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, an item flew out from his sleeve and landed on his palm.

That item was the size of his palm, with a shape similar to that of a lotus and completely transparent. If one did not carefully look at it, one would simply not be able to see it. Even if one were to carefully look at it, it would still only resemble a strange but ordinary-looking plant.

However, after Chu Feng saw that thing, his eyes immediately started to shine with surprise. The reason for that was because not only was that lotus flower alive, it also possessed awareness. Chu Feng was able to see a pair of eyes on that lotus flower. Its eyes were looking all over the place before finally landing on Chu Feng. It was sizing Chu Feng up.

“Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower,” Chu Feng said.

What the YinYang Immortal held in his hand was indeed the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower. Chu Feng had come to know of it from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram.

Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flowers were a sort of special living organism. They were formed with special flowers and world spirit techniques. In other words, they were special life forms created by world spiritists.

Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flowers possessed a special effect. That was, that they were capable of helping world spiritists find loopholes and flaws in world spirit formations. Of course, how many flaws and loopholes it could find would depend on the power of the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

For example, if a spirit formation was set up by an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, and the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower was created by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, that Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower would definitely not be able to find any flaws with the spirit formation. After all, there was too enormous of a difference in power.

If both the person who made the spirit formation and the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower were created by Royal-cloak World Spiritists, then it would depend on the strength of the Royal-cloak World Spiritist's world spirit techniques.

As Chu Feng was uncertain of the strength of the YinYang Immortal's world spirit techniques, he was unable to ascertain how strong the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower was.

That said, Chu Feng was still extremely shocked that the YinYang Immortal had actually managed to refine a Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew very well that Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flowers were very difficult to refine. Even the current Chu Feng did not possess absolute confidence in being able to refine a Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

"Not bad, you have quite the knowledge to be able to recognize this Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower right away," Seeing Chu Feng's shocked expression, the YinYang Immortal revealed an

even more complacent gaze.

“Chu Feng, since you recognize this Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower, you should be able to know of its usage.”

“However, you most definitely do not know that the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flowers are actually capable of releasing different colored lights based on the strength of the world spirit formation they encounter. In other words, the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flowers are able to determine how powerful a spirit formation is.”

“The two of us shall set up spirit formations at the same time. The time limit is two hours. After that, we will have this Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower distinguish whose spirit formation is stronger. The person with the stronger spirit formation shall be the victor. What do you think?” The YinYang Immortal purposed.

“I have no objection to this proposal,” Chu Feng said.

“Good. Let’s begin then,” the YinYang Immortal smiled confidently. Then, he waved his sleeve and many blurs began to appear. He had begun to set up his spirit formation.

As for Chu Feng, he hurriedly sat down in a cross-legged position, unleashed his world spirit power, and began to earnestly set up his spirit formation.

His opponent was the YinYang Immortal, and not someone of the Avaricious Immortal or the White-browed Immortal’s level. As such, Chu Feng had to compete against him seriously. In fact, he had to go all out.

The two men were both extremely masterful with their world spirit techniques. It could be said that their world spirit techniques were both exquisite and profound. Merely, the world spirit techniques that the two men were setting up were completely different.

The spirit formation that the YinYang Immortal was setting up

was neither an offensive nor a defensive formation. Instead, it was merely a spirit formation that was being set up for the sake of quality.

His spirit formation could be said to have no practical usage at all. However, its quality was extremely high. It was a spirit formation that was more akin to a work of art.

To be exact, the YinYang Immortal was not using his world spirit techniques to set up a spirit formation. Rather, he was using his world spirit techniques to create a work of art.

As for Chu Feng, the spirit formation that he was setting up was a slaughtering formation. However, his slaughtering formation was concealed. At least, if one were to look at it, one would not be able to tell that it was a slaughtering formation.

Chu Feng was setting up a slaughtering formation because he was distrustful of the YinYang Immortal. As such, he could not afford to waste any of the time given to him, especially when that time was as long as two hours. As such, he had to use these two hours to create something of use to him.

However, that was not something simple to do, especially when trying to conceal it from the YinYang Immortal, a fellow Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. In order to accomplish that, he needed to set up an extremely superb spirit formation. As such, the spirit formation that Chu Feng was setting up was also of an extremely high quality.

Two hours passed quickly. At that moment, the spirit formations the two men were setting up were both completed.

The two men used the same amount of time to set up their spirit formations; just right at the two hour mark.

This revealed that the two men both possessed a very strong concept of time. On the other hand, this also revealed how excellent their world spirit techniques were, to be able to perfectly

set up their spirit formations without wasting a single second, and without using a second more than the allotted time.

As for the two spirit formations, the YinYang Immortal's spirit formation was three feet wide and three feet tall. It looked like a flower vase that shone with brilliant brightness. It gave off an air of excellence. It was truly a work of art. If one were to auction it away, it would definitely fetch an extremely high price.

As for the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up, it was five meters tall, two meters wide and looked like an enormous water vat. However, carved on the water vat were dragons and phoenixes. It was truly refined and exquisite. Like the YinYang Immortal's flower vase, it too was a work of art.

"You've got some skills," The YinYang Immortal sized up Chu Feng's spirit formation and nodded his head in admiration. However, the confidence in his eyes did not decrease in the slightest. The way he saw it, although Chu Feng's spirit formation was very amazing, it was truly lacking when compared to his own.

"However, it will be up to it to determine whether or not you can win against me," As the YinYang Immortal spoke, he placed the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower onto his own spirit formation.

"Papapapa~~~~"

Right after the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower touched the YinYang Immortal's spirit formation, its many petals immediately slapped onto the spirit formation like suction pads.

The next moment, the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower started to shine with very dazzling light. That light was so dazzling that it overshadowed the YinYang Immortal's spirit formation.

Furthermore, from within the dazzling light appeared white clouds, blue skies and all sorts of beautiful illusions. It was truly a dazzling sight of beauty and aesthetics that could only be described with the word 'perfection.'

Seeing that, Chu Feng nodded his head in admiration. The YinYang Immortal's proficiency with world spirit techniques was truly strong. At the very least, he was someone that the Avaricious Immortal could not possibly compare with. In fact, his world spirit techniques surpassed even those of the Compass Immortal.

"Humph," Seeing that Chu Feng was nodding, the YinYang Immortal snorted lightly in complacency. That was his true strength, something that was capable of startling the people of the world and causing other world spiritists to feel themselves to be inferior and worthless.

"Snap~~~"

Right at that moment, the spirit formation which the YinYang Immortal had set up actually uttered a sharp and crisp shattering sound.

It sounded like a flower vase being smashed to bits.

At that moment, the expression of the YinYang Immortal changed to one of great shock.

As for Chu Feng, he smiled slightly.

Chu Feng knew that the location which the shattering sound originated from was the flaw, the weak point, in the YinYang Immortal's spirit formation.

Even though the spirit formation that the YinYang Immortal had set up was very exceptional, that Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower still managed to find a flaw in it.

Chapter 1925 – Going Back On One’s Word

After discovering the flaw, the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower, as if it had completed its mission, began to hop back to the YinYang Immortal. From its appearance, it could be seen that the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower was extremely happy. Its appearance was like a pet awaiting its master’s praise after accomplishing the task its master had given it.

However, the YinYang Immortal was not happy at all. For his own Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower to find a flaw in his own spirit formation was akin to him slapping himself. This caused him to feel extremely displeased.

Thus, he grabbed the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower ferociously. He did so with so much strength that the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower uttered a ‘jii’ sound.

“YinYang Immortal, it would seem that your world spirit formation is not perfect. Otherwise, your Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower would not have found a flaw with your spirit formation.”

“However, that sufficiently illustrates how powerful your Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower is. I feel that even if you are angry, you shouldn’t vent your anger on it,” Chu Feng said.

“Humph, the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower created by me would naturally be very powerful. There is no need for you to tell me that.”

“As for my spirit formation, humph, there is no perfection in anything in this world. My spirit formation only possessed a single flaw. This is already sufficient to show the high quality of my spirit formation,” YinYang Immortal said.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng asked. His question was filled with mockery.

“Chu Feng, since you are a part of the younger generation, I will not make things difficult on you.”

“If your spirit formation also only possess a single flaw, and the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower is to emit the same brilliance as it did with my formation, I will consider it your win,” YinYang Immortal said.

“Very well, come and judge my spirit formation then,” As Chu Feng spoke, he stretched out his hand and deliberately pushed the spirit formation he had set up toward the YinYang Immortal.

As for the YinYang Immortal, he waved his sleeve and threw the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower onto Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

His movements were extremely rough. It could be seen he still possessed a deep grudge toward the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower touched Chu Feng’s spirit formation, it immediately started to shine with light. The light was so dazzling that it was like a small-scale sun had been born in its place, illuminating everything.

Furthermore, not only did the blue sky and white clouds appear within that dazzling light, there was also a rainbow. It had revealed one more item when compared to the YinYang Immortal’s spirit formation.

“This...”

At that moment, the YinYang Immortal’s eyes were wide open. He was deeply shocked.

In fact, he was speechless. The reason for that was because the light emitted by the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower once it was placed on Chu Feng’s spirit formation surpassed his own. Furthermore, there was an extra rainbow. This meant that the

quality of Chu Feng's spirit formation surpassed his own.

Even though that was the case, he still perked his ears and fixed his eyes on Chu Feng's spirit formation. The YinYang Immortal was waiting for the sound of Chu Feng's spirit formation shattering. He was waiting to see the appearance of a flaw in Chu Feng's spirit formation.

However, the result was to his disappointment. His Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower separated itself from Chu Feng's spirit formation without being able to find any flaw in it. This meant that the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up possessed no flaws at all.

Or, at the very least, his Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower was incapable of finding a flaw with Chu Feng's spirit formation.

“Damn it!”

At that moment, the YinYang Immortal's gaze changed once again, and he even uttered a shout in anger that caused even heaven and earth to tremble. In fact, many of the surrounding trees even split apart from his voice. From this, it could be seen how furious the YinYang Immortal was.

It was not only him, even Chu Feng was stunned. The reason for that was because, after the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower removed itself from his spirit formation, it did not return to the YinYang Immortal. Instead, it flew toward Chu Feng.

Furthermore, after it approached Chu Feng, it jumped onto Chu Feng's body in a very intimate manner.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt very awkward.

The reason for that was because this sort of situation could be understood with a single glance. Due to the fact that Chu Feng possessed superb world spirit techniques, the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower had actually betrayed the YinYang Immortal and chosen Chu Feng to be its new master.

That said, the little fellow was quite adorable. Even though it was incapable of speaking, it did possess intelligence.

“Bastard!”

The YinYang Immortal shouted in anger. Then, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower was grasped by his power. Then, with a clench and a ‘puu’ sound, he actually crushed the Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower into pieces.

He had killed his own Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

Seeing that, Chu Feng narrowed his eyebrows, and coldness shone through his eyes. He said, “No matter what, it is a life. Is there a need for you to be that ruthless?”

“It is mine. If I want to kill it, then it dies. Those who are disloyal to me die,” the YinYang Immortal said coldly. He did not feel any trace of guilt for killing his Spirit Formation Flawfinder Flower.

“In that case, you are not planning to abide by your promise, right?” Chu Feng asked with a cold voice. He had already sensed that the YinYang Immortal would not honor his promise.

Even though the YinYang Immortal had been defeated, he did not plan to let Chu Feng escape.

“Hahahaha...” Sure enough, the YinYang Immortal burst into loud laughter. His laughter was exceptionally gloomy and cold; it caused the entire region to be filled with chilliness, and the surrounding plants to have a layer of frost covering them.

“Chu Feng, you are talented. Looking at it from the viewpoint of the Dark Hall, I should not kill you, and should instead make an enormous effort to invite you to join our Dark Hall.”

“However, when looking at things from my own viewpoint, someone like you absolutely cannot be allowed to join the Dark Hall, for there will absolutely be no benefits to me.”

“As such, you must die. However... if you are willing to hand that insect in your hand to me, I can leave you an intact corpse,” The YinYang Immortal said.

“Sure enough, you’ve come for Lil Red. If I’m not mistaken, you found me by tracking Lil Red’s aura, isn’t that right?” Chu Feng said.

“You’re right. The auras of the people from my Dark Hall were left on that little fellow. Merely, only I am able to detect that aura, whereas you are not,” The YinYang Immortal said.

“You’re right. I am indeed unable to detect that aura that you spoke of. However...” As Chu Feng spoke, he stroked Lil Red with his hand. Then, he raised his head and added, “Even you are unable to detect it now,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he hid Lil Red in his sleeve.

At that moment, the reddened eyes of the YinYang Immortal became even more murderous. The reason for that was because the aura on Lil Red’s body had disappeared. Chu Feng had erased it.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to detect the aura left on Lil Red’s body, he was able to completely remove it with some sort of technique.

“It would seem that you do not plan to die with your corpse intact,” The YinYang Immortal said coldly.

“That would depend on whether or not you are capable of killing me,” Chu Feng smiled slightly. Then, coldness shone through his eyes. “Boom!” His spirit formation that was only several meters away from the YinYang Immortal suddenly exploded.

After that spirit formation exploded, a myriad of sharp blades shot out from it. They were all aimed at the YinYang Immortal.

At the same time, waves of powerful oppressive might began to engulf the YinYang Immortal, forcing even him to fall back repeatedly.

Chapter 1926 – To Attack First

Chu Feng's slaughtering formation was a success. Even though he was unable to instantly kill the YinYang Immortal, or even injure him, he was able to hinder him.

At that moment, Chu Feng was completely capable of escaping. However, Chu Feng did not escape. The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao was still here. Chu Feng could not abandon her.

Thus, not only did Chu Feng not escape, he instead unleashed his Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise, his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

“Roar~~~~”

The Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

The Vermillion Bird Revival Technique.

The Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

At that moment, Chu Feng did not try to conceal his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills in the slightest. Taking on the form of giant beasts, they appeared around Chu Feng. It was as if there were four Divine Beasts protecting Chu Feng.

With the increase in Chu Feng's cultivation, the strength of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills had also increased. Furthermore, as Chu Feng had fully unleashed them, their true might was released. They emitted overwhelming dominance and exceptionally dreadful might.

“This...”

“You...”

After seeing Chu Feng's Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, the YinYang Immortal's eyes were filled with astonishment. He was so

shocked that he became speechless.

“Those seem to be Emperor Qing’s four guardian beasts. Why do you have them? Could it be... you are Emperor Qing’s successor?” After a long while, the YinYang Immortal asked with a voice filled with shock.

The reason for that was because this was absolutely not a small matter.

Emperor Qing was the strongest of the Five Emperors, the Five Overlords. Countless people wanted to obtain his inheritance. Yet, they were simply incapable of finding any clues leading to him. Emperor Qing was like a mystery.

And now, the four guardian beasts that accompanied Emperor Qing during his domineering days had actually appeared beside Chu Feng.

Even though the four guardian beasts surrounding Chu Feng did not possess actual bodies, and were instead in the form of secret skills, that only made things even more shocking. For this meant that Chu Feng had obtained Emperor Qing’s inheritance.

Furthermore, this also meant that Chu Feng knew about the secrets regarding Emperor Qing. At that moment, the YinYang Immortal seemed to realized why Chu Feng was so powerful. It was all because of Emperor Qing. Chu Feng was Emperor Qing’s successor.

“You currently do not have... the qualifications to ask me questions.”

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng unleashed his attack. With the power of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, the perfect combination of offense, defense, speed and healing, Chu Feng took the initiative to attack the YinYang Immortal.

“A mere rank three Martial Emperor, what makes you think you

can defeat me? All that you possess shall be mine.”

The YinYang Immortal snorted disdainfully. His voice was filled with greed.

Emperor Qing’s inheritance was something that countless people yearned for day and night. And now, that inheritance had been placed right before him. Just thinking about it caused the YinYang Immortal to feel exceptionally excited.

At the same time he spoke those words, the YinYang Immortal’s hands began to move nonstop. He was clawing his hands at Chu Feng wildly.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, martial power began to surge. Then, several golden-bright and dazzling large hands, like eagle claws, shot toward Chu Feng. From their appearance, it seemed as if they were simply planning to tear Chu Feng to pieces.

What the YinYang Immortal used was no ordinary attack. Instead, he had used a martial skill. Even though it was only a rank nine martial skill, it was still extremely powerful. After all, the person who had unleashed that rank nine martial skill was the YinYang Immortal, a rank six Martial Emperor.

The YinYang Immortal felt that a rank nine martial skill was more than sufficient to kill a Martial Emperor of Chu Feng’s level on the spot.

However, Chu Feng shot forth his hands explosively. Then, his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique advanced bravely. Following a roar, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique completely shattered the YinYang Immortal’s rank nine martial skill.

Yes, the YinYang Immortal’s rank nine martial skill was destroyed with only a roar.

The very next moment, Chu Feng relied on the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique’s astonishing speed to arrive before the

YinYang Immortal. Then, using the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique as his main offensive method, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique as his defensive methods and the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique for support, he began to attack the YinYang Immortal nonstop.

“How could this be? You... you... you actually possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?”

At that moment, the YinYang Immortal was filled with astonishment. He had already realized that Chu Feng’s battle power was no longer only capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Instead, it had become capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

In other words, Chu Feng’s battle power was two entire levels higher than that of ordinary Martial Emperors.

Although Chu Feng’s cultivation was only that of a rank three Martial Emperor after using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, and although rank three Martial Emperors would absolutely be no match for rank six Martial Emperors due to the three level difference, ordinary Martial Emperors only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

Yet, Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. In other words, when compared to ordinary Martial Emperors, Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power that could provide him with the strength of two additional levels of cultivation.

Adding on those two additional levels of cultivation, Chu Feng’s actual strength was on par with rank five Martial Emperors.

In other words, although the YinYang Immortal was a rank six Martial Emperor, the actual difference between him and Chu Feng was only a single level of cultivation.

“It would seem that you absolutely cannot be left alive,” After experiencing that overwhelming astonishment, the YinYang Immortal revealed an even stronger killing intent.

After Chu Feng sensed his even stronger killing intent, he flipped his palm and revealed the Heavenly Immortal Sword in his hand. With the appearance of the Incomplete Imperial Armament, Chu Feng’s battle power surged once again. That said, what was most frightening would be Chu Feng’s superb sword technique.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In Chu Feng’s hand, the Heavenly Immortal Sword turned into an outstanding killing instrument. The sword rays that it shot forth not only sliced through the air, they even sliced through space itself.

Furthermore, Chu Feng’s speed was astonishingly fast and simply impossible to guard against. At that moment, the YinYang Immortal, a rank six Martial Emperor, was actually being suppressed by Chu Feng, a rank three Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng knew that it would be practically impossible for him to kill the YinYang Immortal. However, he had to stall for time so that Xian Miaomiao could finish refining the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers. He would then escape with Xian Miaomiao.

However, in order to stall for time, he had to suppress the YinYang Immortal. Chu Feng was taking advantage of the fact that the YinYang Immortal had yet to go all-out to go all-out himself and suppress the YinYang Immortal and not allow him the chance to unleash his full power.

In other words, he was trying to gain the initiative by striking first!!!

“Boy, your techniques are quite amazing. However, don’t you look down on this old man,” the YinYang Immortal shouted loudly. Then, a vast oppressive might began to sweep forth from

his body. His oppressive might actually managed to beat Chu Feng back.

The YinYang Immortal's strength increased enormously. At that time, a water-green rod appeared in his hand. Runes and symbols were flowing through the rod, and the rod itself was glimmering with light. It was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. The YinYang Immortal had managed to beat Chu Feng back by increasing his battle power using an Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Allow me to see exactly how proficient you are with your Incomplete Imperial Armament.”

As the YinYang Immortal spoke, he began to brandish the Incomplete Imperial Armament in his hand. Then, his rod began to enlarge by many times. Then, it swept toward Chu Feng.

The movement of the rod was extremely fierce. It was not only the rod itself. Even the many hurricanes caused by the YinYang Immortal's oppressive might began to wreak havoc through their surroundings.

At that moment, the surrounding plants were all destroyed. Earth was being blown all over the place. Everything was left in utter destruction. Only the cave behind Chu Feng remained undamaged. The reason for that was because Chu Feng gave his all to protect that cave.

“So that's why you didn't escape. So there's actually something behind you. Allow this old man to see exactly what it is that made you protect it so painstakingly.”

Chu Feng's whole-hearted protection of the cave behind him caught the attention of the YinYang Immortal. He had realized that Chu Feng was protecting something.

Truly a cunning old fox, after the YinYang Immortal realized that, he began to unleash even more ferocious attacks at Chu Feng. At the same time he did that, he began to devise various means to

unleash attacks at the cave behind Chu Feng.

His methods were truly despicable.

Chapter 1927 – The Birth Of The Evil God

“If you have the skills, then come at me,” As Chu Feng gave his all to defend against the YinYang Immortal’s attacks, he shouted at the YinYang Immortal.

“Hahaha, if I wish to kill you, I can do so at any time. But I insist on toying with you,” the YinYang Immortal said with a strange smile.

Earlier, the YinYang Immortal had been utterly disgraced in his match of world spirit techniques against Chu Feng. As such, he felt extremely depressed.

However, now, the YinYang Immortal had regained absolute confidence and his sense of superiority with his martial power and martial cultivation. This sort of sensation made him feel very rejuvenated.

“You’re shameless and despicable! You are simply unqualified to be a senior! So much for being an Immortal! You are simply dog shit!” Chu Feng insulted him.

“Senior? Is being a senior capable of feeding you? Immortal? Is being an immortal capable of really giving you immortality?”

“Those are merely false reputations. This old man never cared about them to begin with. What I care about is strength and power.”

“Truth be told, toying with other people is utterly boring.”

“However, when toying with a genius, especially a demon-level genius like yourself, I feel extremely refreshed. It is truly a great pleasure of my life. Hahahaha!!!” The YinYang Immortal burst into loud laughter. His laughter was truly shameless.

“I’ll kill you! I’ll pierce your heart with ten thousand arrows! I’ll shatter your soul and destroy your body!” Chu Feng was angered by the YinYang Immortal. His Heavenly Immortal Sword

Technique grew fiercer and fiercer. However, his aura grew very unstable.

Although Chu Feng's attacks were growing more and more ferocious, and he was gradually closing in on the YinYang Immortal, the YinYang Immortal felt that Chu Feng, when acting like this, was even less of a threat, for he had lost his ability to reason.

"Hahaha, you are my plaything now. I can toy with you however I wish," Seeing that Chu Feng had lost his reasoning, the YinYang Immortal's laughter grew even louder.

"Heh..." Suddenly, a cold smile emerged on Chu Feng's face that was covered with anger. Then, his eyes grew blood-red, and he shouted, "Profound Firmament Annihilation!!!"

"Buzz~~~"

"Woosh~~~"

Once Chu Feng shouted those words, a vast crimson gaseous substance started to be emit from Chu Feng's body. In an instant, it sealed off this region of space. The YinYang Immortal was sealed within it.

"Crap!" At that moment, the YinYang Immortal's expression changed. He had already sensed that he was in fatal danger.

At that moment, his previous carefreeness, his arrogance and conceit all disappeared. The reason for that was because he felt as if he was treading on very dangerous ground. The dangerous aura that Chu Feng was emitting caused even his breathing to become hurried.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted, "Die!!!" Then, his Profound Firmament Annihilation unleashed its enormous killing intent. As if capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas, that frightening killing intent began to sweep toward the YinYang Immortal from all directions. Chu Feng was planning to kill the

YinYang Immortal.

It turned out that the anger Chu Feng had revealed earlier was all merely a disguise. He had done so precisely so that the YinYang Immortal would become careless and he could catch him off-guard.

Right at that moment, the YinYang Immortal shouted, “Break for me!!!” and an item was held up high in his hand.

That item radiated with brilliant light and unleashed intense emperor’s might, like a volcanic eruption, which began to spread all around. In the end, like the descent of a divine weapon, the golden-bright and dazzling emperor’s might actually managed to forcibly disperse Chu Feng’s Profound Firmament Annihilation.

“Damn it!” At that moment, Chu Feng clenched his fists in anger. He had nearly managed to succeed.

Imperial Armament! The YinYang Immortal had been saved by that Imperial Armament.

“That Imperial Armament,” After seeing that Imperial Armament, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. The reason for that was because that Imperial Armament possessed a very particular appearance.

It was a large blade. The body of the blade was like that of an alligator. From the open mouth of the alligator extended a sharp blade. That was the Ximen Imperial Clan’s, Ximen Baiyuan’s, Imperial Armament, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

‘Why would Ximen Baiyuan’s Imperial Armament be with him?’ Chu Feng pondered in his heart.

Even though the YinYang Immortal had managed to withstand Chu Feng’s attack with the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, his current state was not very optimal at all.

Not only was he panting for air and covered in sweat, there was also blood running down the corners of his mouth, his nose and his ears. Even though he had managed to withstand Chu Feng’s attack,

he had still been injured in the process.

“Brat, you are truly powerful. I really cannot afford to be careless,” the YinYang Immortal said.

Even though the killing intent in the YinYang Immortal’s eyes did not decrease in the slightest, the gaze that he looked to Chu Feng with had changed. He now possessed admiration for Chu Feng.

A member of the younger generation, a rank three Martial Emperor, had nearly managed to kill him. Most importantly, Chu Feng’s cultivation of rank three Martial Emperor had been obtained by increasing his cultivation temporarily through a special technique. His true cultivation was only that of a rank one Martial Emperor.

Thus, to be more precise, the YinYang Immortal, as a rank six Martial Emperor, had been forced to such a state by Chu Feng, a mere rank one Martial Emperor. This caused him to have no choice but to feel admiration for Chu Feng.

“If we were of the same cultivation, no... there’s no need for us to have the same cultivation. If your actual cultivation right now were that of a rank two Martial Emperor, then, after you unleashed all of your abilities, I would be no match for you. I’ll admit... that I am inferior to you. It is not only me; instead, even if we include everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism, there would not be anyone alive who possesses abilities on par with you.”

“However, it is precisely because of that that I must kill you. Chu Feng, if you continue to live, you will become the greatest hidden danger to our Dark Hall.”

“Clank~~~”

Once the YinYang Immortal said those words, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade in his hand began to emit an overwhelming oppressive might once again. Suddenly, this region

was no longer surging with black clouds. Instead, golden light filled the entire area. Within that dazzling light appeared a faintly visible yet enormous alligator. That alligator possessed a humongous golden body, and gave off the sensation of a ruler overlooking the world with contempt.

Abnormal sign! It was an abnormal sign created by that Imperial Armament's overwhelming power.

"I will no longer hold back against you. I will be going all-out to kill you," the YinYang Immortal pointed the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade at Chu Feng as he said those words. He had truly become serious.

"Since that's the case, then let us fight to our hearts' content," Chu Feng put his Heavenly Immortal Sword away. Then, following a flash of crimson light, another long sword appeared in his hand.

It was a crimson long sword that seemed to have been cast from countless amounts of blood.

Once that sword appeared, ghost-like wailing sounds and wolf-like howling sounds immediately rang out. Furthermore, a crimson vortex appeared in the golden sky.

Ghosts with lingering grievances filled that crimson vortex. Those ghosts were screaming miserably, and uttering and emitting overwhelming evil tendencies. The evil tendencies which they emitted caused even the abnormal sign, the enormous golden alligator, created by the Imperial Armament to become affected.

The might of that crimson vortex was even more frightening than Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation. It was as if an Evil God was about to be born.

Evil God Sword. It was the legendary demon sword, the Evil God Sword.

The Evil God Sword possessed a demonic nature, and would attempt to devour Chu Feng's life. Normally, Chu Feng could not

use it, nor did he dare to use it.

However, in this moment of life and death crisis, Chu Feng had no time to consider that anymore. Even though the Evil God Sword was a taboo, he still had to use that taboo to save himself.

“Evil God Sword, is that the legendary Evil God Sword?”

“It is surely extraordinary, and truly outstanding,” Upon seeing the Evil God Sword, the YinYang Immortal’s eyes shone.

The reason for that was because the might of the Evil God Sword was truly not something that ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments could compare with. The might revealed by Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword was actually on par with the might revealed by his Imperial Armament.

Chapter 1928 – The Might Of A Demon Armament

“However, Chu Feng, an Incomplete Imperial Armament will always remain an Incomplete Imperial Armament. No matter how powerful your Evil God Sword might be, it will not be a match for my Imperial Armament, let alone with me having a cultivation above yours.”

After the YinYang Immortal said those words, he slashed at Chu Feng. The moment he attacked with the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, golden light surged forth alongside a strange roar that made the surroundings tremble. It was a roar from the Ancient Alligator. That Ancient Alligator seemed to want to consume all living things.

“We’ll have to fight it out first in order to determine which is actually stronger,” Chu Feng was not at all afraid of the YinYang Immortal’s attack. Holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, he charged to face the YinYang Immortal.

“Zzzzzzzzzzz~~~~”

Chu Feng waved his Evil God Sword. Immediately, a crimson blade ray that carried ghost-like wails and wolf-like howls with it swept across the sky. As it sliced through the sky, many bloody crimson clouds appeared in the sky. Those bloody clouds were very unstable, and shooting off lightning all around. Those crimson lightning bolts began to hack down from the sky and into the golden alligator in the sky.

Faced with the many crimson lightning bolts striking down on it, the golden alligator could only allow itself to be thrashed without the ability to unleash a counterattack.

“How could this be?”

“Exactly what is going on?”

At that moment, the YinYang Immortal was completely stunned. Chu Feng's crimson slash was extremely powerful. It was so powerful that it could contend against his own attack.

That by itself was already an extremely astonishing feat. After all, what Chu Feng possessed was an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Logically, it should not be able to contend against his Imperial Armament.

Yet, exactly what was going on with the scene before him? The abnormal sign created by the Evil God Sword was actually capable of suppressing the abnormal sign created by the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

Weapons were, when all was said and done, weapons. They needed others to use them. However, Chu Feng's Evil God Sword was different. It seemed as if it possessed its own awareness. It seemed that it could, without needing Chu Feng's control, attack its opponent by itself.

"This is not the time to daydream," Chu Feng unleashed another attack at the YinYang Immortal. Furthermore, this attack was even more ferocious than his previous attack.

Since Chu Feng had already unleashed the Evil God Sword, he did not care about the consequences anymore. It was either victory or death. There was already no other choice now.

"Come, come, come! I refuse to believe that I, a grand rank six Martial Emperor, will not be able to defeat you, a mere rank one Martial Emperor; that my grand Ancient Era's Imperial Armament would not be able to defeat your mere Incomplete Imperial Armament!"

The YinYang Immortal was unconvinced that he would lose. He grasped his Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade and once again confronted Chu Feng.

"Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~"

The Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade and the crimson Evil God Sword collided nonstop. The two of them could be said to be equally matched. Even though the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade held the upper hand in their clashes, it was not by much.

However, although the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade possessed a slight superiority over the Evil God Sword in the fight between Chu Feng and the YinYang Immortal, the battle in the sky was completely different. The abnormal sign created by the Evil God Sword grew more and more ferocious. Not only were the blood clouds and crimson lightning that filled the sky growing larger and larger in size, they even completely overshadowed the abnormal sign created by the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

In fact, an enormous crimson hand had actually stretched out from the blood clouds. This crimson hand was shaped like bones. Its crimson color seemed to indicate that it had been stained by countless amounts of blood. Especially those sharp fingernails; they were like blades. The hand grabbed onto the enormous golden alligator's head and pierced its nails into the alligator's eyes.

The crimson skeletal hand actually impaled the golden alligator's eyes.

“Roar~~~~”

Although it was only an abnormal sign, and did not possess any intelligence, the golden alligator actually let out a miserable roar.

“Damn it! Exactly what is that? Exactly what is that?!!!”

Even though the YinYang Immortal was equally matched with, and even possessed a slight advantage over, Chu Feng, he grew more and more nervous. What Chu Feng was using simply did not resemble a weapon. Rather, it resembled a demon.

In fact, it was not only the YinYang Immortal; even Chu Feng himself was trembling with fear. Even though Chu Feng had

already known that the Evil God Sword was a nefarious weapon after experiencing the pain of backlash from it before, he did not expect the Evil God Sword's nefariousness to be this extreme.

Even though it was clearly only an Incomplete Imperial Armament, everything that it had shown thus far was extremely abnormal. It was most definitely not an ordinary weapon. Rather, it was a very frightening demon. Chu Feng was currently using a demon to fight.

After being shocked, Chu Feng gripped the Evil God Sword tightly and shouted, "Come. Regardless of what you are, I hope that you will lend me a hand and help me kill that despicable and shameless Immortal!"

"Zzzzzzzz~~~~"

Following a slash from Chu Feng, the many crimson lightning bolts in the sky actually suddenly struck down from above. They were aimed at the YinYang Immortal.

"Damn it!"

In the moment of crisis, the YinYang Immortal unleashed his world spirit power to ward off the incoming crimson lightning bolts.

"Rumble~~~"

However, the crimson lightning bolts were even more ferocious than he had imagined. They actually directly blew apart his spirit power and continued to attack him.

"Damn it! Exactly what the hell is that?! Exactly what the hell is that?!!!"

With no other choice, the YinYang Immortal ended up having to withstand both Chu Feng's incoming sword strike and the crimson bolts of lightning hacking down from above.

However, the descent of the crimson lightning bolts was no mere

coincidence. With every slash from Chu Feng's Evil God Sword, the YinYang Immortal would have to suffer attacks from the crimson lightning bolts as well.

In an instant, the YinYang Immortal, who had previously held the upper hand in the fight against Chu Feng, was forced into a disadvantageous situation. Furthermore, he was forced to retreat repeatedly.

As for all this, it was all because of the Evil God Sword. The power of the Evil God Sword was truly too enormous. It managed to completely suppress the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Sword with absolute dominance.

"Damn it! Damn it!!! I refuse to believe this! I refuse to believe this!!!"

The YinYang Immortal was forced so far into a corner that he was nearly driven mad. He began to shout in disbelief nonstop. However, his shouting was of no use. It was incapable of changing anything at all.

"Roar~~~"

Suddenly, another miserable scream sounded from the skies. This time around, that miserable scream was even more ear-piercing, and sounded even more heart-tearing and lung-splitting.

Turning their heads up to look, not only was the YinYang Immortal deeply shocked, even Chu Feng was deeply shocked. At that moment, another enormous crimson skeletal hand had appeared amidst the bloody clouds and crimson lightning.

At that time, there were two enormous crimson hands in the middle of the sky. They were like the hands of god.

No, that was most definitely not a god's hands, for a god's hands would not give off such a ferocious and nefarious sensation. They were a demon's hands, the devil's hands.

Suddenly, the two enormous crimson skeletal hands grabbed the

golden alligator by its head and tail. They were pulling that golden alligator apart.

Their pulling shattered even the void itself. As for the golden alligator, it was emitting miserable screams nonstop. It was as if it were begging for forgiveness. However, when before a demon, would begging for forgiveness be of use?

“Snap~~~”

Suddenly, a sound several times louder than a thunderclap exploded in the sky. Then, the sky started to tremble violently. Even the earth itself started to tremble.

That enormous golden alligator whose body had covered the entire sky was actually ripped apart. Its body was forcibly torn to shreds by the two enormous crimson skeletal hands.

“This!!!” upon witnessing that scene, the YinYang Immortal was completely stunned. The reason for that was because this was simply too extraordinary, unbelievable and strange.

However, this was reality. After the enormous golden alligator’s body was ripped to shreds, the golden light that covered the sky began to slowly dissipate. In fact, the ferocious emperor’s might emitted by the YinYang Immortal’s Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Sword had weakened greatly. It was no longer as overbearing as before.

Chapter 1929 – Protecting One’s Master With One’s Life

“Heeaahh~~~”

At the moment when the YinYang Immortal was distracted, Chu Feng threw another slash at him.

The YinYang Immortal reacted immediately. He hurriedly raised his hand to block Chu Feng’s incoming slash. Merely... although he had managed to block Chu Feng’s incoming slash, he did not have the time to react to the incoming crimson lightning that hacked down from the sky.

“Rumble~~~~”

Ear-piercing explosions sounded and the entire region was utterly destroyed and the YinYang Immortal was struck by the crimson lightning. Not only did he lose his hold of the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, he was also knocked to the ground several meters away.

Having obtained superiority in the fight, how could Chu Feng possibly stop with just that? He raised his legs and planned to give chase and kill the YinYang Immortal.

“Wuu~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s body trembled. Then, he grabbed onto the Evil God Sword tightly with one hand and tightly grabbed onto his own dantian with the other.

In merely an instant, cold sweat filled Chu Feng’s entire body. Chu Feng’s complexion turned deathly pale. He was unable to sustain the pain that was spreading throughout his body. With such enormous pain, even Chu Feng, someone who possessed a very high tolerance for pain, revealed an expression distorted by pain.

“Persevere for a moment longer! Persevere for a moment longer! A bit more and this battle will be over!”

“Let me kill him! Let me kill him! As long as I can kill him, even if you are to take my life, I will have no complaints!” Chu Feng shouted with his weak voice. Those words were spoken to the Evil God Sword. Chu Feng was speaking to the Evil God Sword because he knew that the Evil God Sword was a weapon that possessed life.

Chu Feng knew that as long as the Evil God Sword was willing to help him, he would definitely be able to kill the YinYang Immortal. Furthermore, with the situation as it was, he had to kill the YinYang Immortal. Else, not only would he be killed by the YinYang Immortal, Lil Red and Xian Miaomiao would also be killed.

Compared to that, Chu Feng would rather give away his own life.

However, the Evil God Sword appeared to be unable to hear what Chu Feng was saying at all. Not only did the pain of the backlash that originated from Chu Feng’s dantian not decrease in the slightest, it instead grew stronger and stronger. It had become so strong that Chu Feng was unable to endure the pain anymore.

Not to mention brandishing the Evil God Sword to battle again, Chu Feng was unable to even take another step forward.

“Roar~~~~”

Right at that moment, the sounds of ghosts wailing and wolves howling from the sky grew even more violent.

The pair of enormous crimson skeletal hands began to extend from the sky. They were moving toward the YinYang Immortal to grab him.

At that moment, the YinYang Immortal, who was only lightly injured, was actually unable to move at all. Suddenly, he felt an unprecedented life-threatening danger.

He was able to sense that the enormous crimson skeletal hands

would smash him to death. The reason for that was because the oppressive might from those crimson skeletal hands was truly too powerful. They simply surpassed the limit of his comprehension. He knew that before the hands could even reach him, that oppressive might would have crushed him to death.

“No, this is not real! This is not real!!!”

“Exactly why is this happening?!!!”

The YinYang Immortal started to shout hysterically. He truly felt as if he was dreaming.

If he had the option to choose, he would have hoped to be able to immediately wake up from this nightmare, this frightening nightmare that he no longer wished to be in.

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng vomited out a mouthful of blood. Then his eyes closed, and he passed into unconsciousness. From the middle of the sky, he fell ruthlessly onto the ground.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng lost consciousness, the enormous crimson skeletal hands in the sky began to turn into many crimson gaseous flames.

Furthermore, the violent bloody clouds and crimson bolts of lightning also turned into crimson gaseous flames. The crimson flames returned to the form of a crimson vortex that spiraled around in the sky.

At that moment, it was as if doomsday had arrived in this region. The scene was exceptionally devastating.

Finally, the spiraling crimson gaseous flames turned into a crimson ray of light and descended into the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s hand.

the sky at that moment was completely crimson before it began

to gradually return to normal. The shattered void started to reform. Soon, the sky returned to its former appearance.

It had become peaceful once again.

As for the YinYang Immortal, he heaved a long sigh of relief. The reason for that was because the fatal danger had finally disappeared.

Even though the fatal danger had disappeared and the sky had returned to normal, the YinYang Immortal's heart remained uneasy.

The YinYang Immortal lay on the ground for quite a while before slowly standing up. He extended his hand and made a grabbing motion, and the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade returned to his hand.

Only after that did he turn his gaze to Chu Feng.

“Brat, are you a human or a demon?”

“Could it be that you're the son of a demon? Exactly what was all that that happened earlier?”

Even though Chu Feng had lost consciousness, the YinYang Immortal was still trembling, and his eyes were filled with fear.

He hesitated for a very long time before slowly walking toward Chu Feng with the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade in his hand.

His speed was extremely slow and filled with cautiousness. He did not dare to be careless in the slightest.

After walking for an entire hour, he finally arrived at a location a hundred meters away from Chu Feng. He did not dare to continue to approach Chu Feng. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng with an extremely cautious gaze.

“Chu Feng, are you feigning death?” The YinYang Immortal shouted at Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng did not respond.

“Do you think this is funny?! You are toying with me, isn’t that right?!” The YinYang Immortal shouted loudly. However, Chu Feng still did not respond.

“Chu Feng, stop feigning death! Stand back up! Come and kill me!” The YinYang Immortal was still shouting loudly. However, Chu Feng still did not respond.

“Heh...” After shouting like this for a long while, the YinYang Immortal’s incomparably nervous gaze finally started to ease up. Finally, a laugh sounded from that strange mask once again.

“It seems that you’ve really lost consciousness. It seems that it is not you that is powerful. Instead, it’s that Evil God Sword.”

After verifying that Chu Feng had lost consciousness, the YinYang Immortal finally dared to continue to approach Chu Feng. After arriving before Chu Feng, his laughter became even more vile. At the same time, his laughter gave off the sense of being fortunate.

“Evil God Sword, a legendary Demon Armament, your reputation is truly not for nothing.”

The YinYang Immortal extended his hand toward the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s hand. However, right when he was about to come into contact with the Evil God Sword, he hesitated, then pulled back his extended hand.

He did not wish to touch the Evil God Sword. Even though the Evil God Sword was only a weapon, it had caused him enormous trauma, and made him feel deeply frightened of it.

“Chu Feng, the victor is the king and the loser is the bandit. Although I should not kill you after you’ve lost consciousness, I must kill you!!!”

Killing intent was emitted by the YinYang Immortal once again. He began to raise his Ancient Alligator’s Body Piercing Blade and planned to hack it down at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at that moment, a crimson light flew out from Chu Feng’s sleeve. It was aimed at the YinYang Immortal.

“Damn it!”

Seeing that crimson light, the YinYang Immortal was deeply frightened. He hurriedly retreated several meters into the sky.

“Mn?” Originally, he had thought that the Evil God Sword was acting up again. However, after looking at it carefully, his nervous state of mind began to ease up. He first took a long sigh of relief before saying with a slight smile, “So it’s actually you, little thing, that was causing mischief.”

It turned out that crimson light was Lil Red. Lil Red had jumped out after seeing that Chu Feng’s life was in danger. It was trying to protect Chu Feng.

However, even though Lil Red’s speed was extremely fast, the person it faced was the YinYang Immortal. Thus, its surprise attack was dodged by the YinYang Immortal.

Chapter 1930 – Moment Of Crisis

“Little fellow, while you’re not large, your speed is quite fast. You are not a Royal Spirit Insect. Exactly what are you? Could you also be a treasure that Chu Feng obtained from somewhere?” the YinYang Immortal asked Lil Red.

“You are not allowed to harm great sir. Else, I will bite you to death.”

“I am poisonous. Merely my saliva itself would be capable of killing you and destroying your soul,” Lil Red said with a ferocious expression.

“Hahahahaha...” the YinYang Immortal burst into loud laughter. From the beginning, he had found it ridiculous that a little insect dared to speak to him in such a manner.

However, soon, his laughter became one of anger. In the end, it became one filled with fury. Even the weather was altered by his state of mind.

Suddenly, he aimed his Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade at Lil Red and shouted angrily, “A mere little insect actually dares to boast so shamelessly to me. Did you really consider me, the YinYang Immortal, to be a fool?”

“I don’t care. If you dare to harm great sir, I will bite you to death even if I am to die doing so,” However, Lil Red was not at all afraid of the YinYang Immortal. Instead, it was extremely unyielding. It was as if Lil Red had already seen through life and death.

“Very well, I’ll kill you too. I’ll let the two of you die together,” Filled with anger, the YinYang Immortal planned to kill both Lil Red and Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion suddenly sounded from the cave nearby.

“Mn?” the YinYang Immortal hurriedly turned his gaze toward the noise, and discovered that an enormous crack had appeared in the cave nearby. Countless crushed rocks were falling down. Furthermore, he was able to sense a special sort of aura from within the cave. Merely, even though he was carefully inspecting the cave, he was unable to discover anyone or anything inside.

Suddenly, a voice sounded from below. “YinYang Immortal, was it you who injured Chu Feng?”

The YinYang Immortal turned his gaze below. At that moment, his eyes started to shine with shock.

The reason for that was because below him was not only the unconscious Chu Feng and the furious Lil Red, there was also a young girl.

This girl possessed a head of blonde hair and a beautiful appearance. Especially her pair of eyes; they were simply the pinnacle of beauty. However, incomparable rage and dense killing intent was being emitted from her eyes at that moment.

“Princess Miaomiao, why would you be here?” The YinYang Immortal was shocked to see Xian Miaomiao. Not only did he know who Miaomiao was, he had also met her several times. As such, the two of them could be considered to be acquaintances.

“It was you who injured Chu Feng, right?” Xian Miaomiao asked again. Her eyes were filled with murderous intent.

“Haha...” Suddenly, the YinYang Immortal chuckled. Sensing the killing intent in Xian Miaomiao’s eyes that was growing stronger and stronger, he found it to be extremely funny.

“It seems like you have some dealings with that Chu Feng. Do even the Ancient Era’s Elves want to ride on the tailwind vessel that is Chu Feng, hug onto the enormous tree that could reach the sky, but has yet to mature?”

“Hahahaha, truly amusing,” The YinYang Immortal mocked and

ridiculed.

“I’ll ask you again. Was it you who injured Chu Feng?” Xian Miaomiao asked again. Her tone was extremely sharp.

“Princess Miaomiao, the speed of your cultivation progress is truly fast. How did you already become a rank five Martial Emperor?”

“Unfortunately, even if you are a rank five Martial Emperor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, you will still not be able to do anything to me.”

“For I am a rank six Martial Emperor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Thus, do not give me that arrogant behavior as if you are capable of killing me at any moment should you wish it,” the YinYang Immortal said.

“Woosh~~~”

In an instant, Xian Miaomiao suddenly raised her hand, and a cold ray swept forth. “Puchi,” the arm with which the YinYang Immortal was holding the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade was actually sliced off.

“Ahhh~~~~”

The pain of having his arm sliced off caused the YinYang Immortal to scream miserably. Shock! incomparable shock filled his eyes. When he looked to Xian Miaomiao again, he was filled with disbelief.

“Who told you that I possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?” Xian Miaomiao asked with a cold voice.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, you actually also possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?!” After verifying this matter, the YinYang Immortal grew even more

astonished.

If Xian Miaomiao possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he would be able to fight against her. However, Xian Miaomiao's battle power was capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. This meant that he no longer possessed the capability to fight against her.

Although the YinYang Immortal was a rank six Martial Emperor, he, like most Martial Emperors, only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. However, when compared to Xian Miaomiao's heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, she still possessed two additional levels of cultivation that she could surmount, whereas all of his advantages would be gone.

With a cultivation of rank five Martial Emperor and a battle power capable of surmounting two additional levels of cultivation at the Martial Emperor realm, it meant that Xian Miaomiao was capable of fighting on par against rank seven Martial Emperors. Naturally, he, a rank six Martial Emperor, would be no match for Xian Miaomiao.

"You've injured Chu Feng. As such, I'll take your life," Xian Miaomiao said coldly.

"No, Princess Miaomiao, please wait. I was not the one who injured Chu Feng. He lost consciousness by himself," The YinYang Immortal hurriedly tried to explain. He even looked to Lil Red and added, "If you don't believe me, go and ask that earthworm."

"You are the earthworm! Your entire family are earthworms!" Lil Red cursed.

Xian Miaomiao looked to Lil Red and asked, "Lil Red, is what he said true?"

"This..." Lil Red's little eyes started to spin around in circles, as if it was pondering something. After pondering for some time, Lil

Red said, “Yes, that is the truth.”

“Look, I didn’t lie,” The YinYang Immortal hurriedly interrupted.

“Even if that is the case, Chu Feng’s injury is related to you. As such, your life cannot be spared,” As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she extended a lily-white hand and grabbed at the empty space before her. “Snap!” Many cracks began to appear in the space around the YinYang Immortal like a bunch of spiderwebs. Then, those cracks turned into an enormous net and sealed the YinYang Immortal within them.

As if he had been placed into a sack created by the void and space itself, the YinYang Immortal fell to the ground.

What Xian Miaomiao had used was no ordinary technique. Instead, it was a Taboo Martial Skill.

“Wuu~~~”

Even though the YinYang Immortal struggled violently, he was unable to do anything to the net that Xian Miaomiao had made to capture him. In fact, he was unable to even speak. Simply put, his life was in Xian Miaomiao’s hands.

“You dared bully great sir, you dared bully great sir. I’ll ram you to death, I’ll ram you to death.”

Little Red immediately ran over and began to rapidly ram its little body into the YinYang Immortal.

As the YinYang Immortal was restricted, he was unable to dodge Lil Red’s rammings. However, Lil Red was simply unable to injure the YinYang Immortal with the strength that she possessed.

However, even with that being the case, the YinYang Immortal was still incomparably angry. He, the grand YinYang Immortal, had actually been imprisoned. Furthermore, a little insect was ramming itself into him nonstop. Oh how humiliating this was. If this matter were to spread, his grand reputation would be

completely ruined.

Although the YinYang Immortal had declared that he only cared about strength and not his reputation, he actually... cared deeply about his reputation.

“His injuries are actually this serious. It seems like the result of a backlash. Could it be that it’s because of that sword?”

Xian Miaomiao was squatting beside Chu Feng and carefully observing the condition of his injuries. Even though she was not a world spiritist, she possessed an extremely powerful perception. In terms of perception, she was not inferior to ordinary world spiritists.

As she saw Chu Feng lying on the ground with serious injuries the moment she woke up, she did not know what had happened at all. All she knew was that the YinYang Immortal had wanted to kill Chu Feng.

However, she was able to sense that the injuries to Chu Feng’s dantian were extremely serious. Furthermore, she noticed that it was related to the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s right hand.

Chapter 1931 – Interrogating YinYang

“These injuries are too serious. No choice but to use this then,” After carefully inspecting Chu Feng’s injuries, Xian Miaomiao removed her necklace and opened the pendant on it. After the pendant was opened, there was actually a fingernail-sized pearl within it.

“Wow, wow, wow, what is that?” Lil Red’s eyes began to shine with light the moment it saw the pearl. Attracted by it, Lil Red immediately ran over to Xian Miaomiao.

It was not that Lil Red was unsophisticated and ignorant. Rather, that pearl was truly too special. Although the pearl was very small, about the size of a fingernail, it was flickering with light and sparkles. If one were to look carefully at the pearl, one would discover that it was as if the magnificent starry sky was contained within the pearl.

Most importantly, within that pearl were nine motes of light that emitted different colors. They were extremely dazzling.

Upon seeing those nine motes of light, even if one did not use any special perceptive power, one would still feel astonished and excited by the pearl.

“Shh, don’t talk,” Xian Miaomiao said to Lil Red.

She then placed the pearl onto Chu Feng’s dantian. Suddenly, the pearl started to blossom with light. At the same time, Xian Miaomiao’s eyes became the same as that pearl.

Then, one of the nine motes of light from within the pearl flew out of the pearl and entered Chu Feng’s dantian.

“Huuu~~~”

Shortly after, Xian Miaomiao’s complexion turned pale and she started sweating profusely.

“Beauty, what happened to you?” Lil Red asked worriedly.

“I’m fine,” Even though it was clear that Xian Miaomiao was not fine, she had a very joyous expression on her face. She wiped away the cold sweat on her forehead in an unconcerned manner. Then, she looked to Lil Red, “Your great sir’s life is saved. Merely, I do not know how long it will take for him to regain consciousness.”

“Then, let’s bring great sir somewhere safe first. I know of a place that’s very hidden and safe,” Lil Red said.

“That would definitely be for the best. Let’s go,” As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she carried Chu Feng on her back.

Even though Xian Miaomiao was very powerful, her stature was very petite. Thus, one would feel that it was very strenuous to have a girl like her carry a grown man like Chu Feng on her back.

That said, if this scene were to be seen by others, they would definitely feel endless envy for Chu Feng.

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao looked to Chu Feng’s right hand again. Even though Chu Feng was unconscious, he was still holding on tightly to the Evil God Sword. Seeing that, Xian Miaomiao started to frown. She sighed and said, “That sword, it’s truly nefarious.”

.....

Chu Feng was unconscious for a very long time. During the time when Chu Feng was unconscious, Chu Feng’s awareness entered that place with a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood.

Even though this was not the first time that he had been here, Chu Feng still felt as if his blood was running cold and his hair was standing on end. He was trembling with fear.

Chu Feng was in enormous pain and suffering. It was extremely difficult for him to endure that pain. However, suddenly, an energy arrived from his dantian. That energy lessened the pain and suffering that he was feeling by a lot.

However, even with that being the case, with his consciousness in this world, it was still like a nightmare to him. As such, Chu Feng began to feel extremely uncomfortable.

Finally, Chu Feng regained consciousness. Right after he woke up, he immediately saw Xian Miaomiao and Lil Red.

“Chu Feng, you’re finally awake again. I thought that you would continue to sleep for an entire year,” After seeing that Chu Feng had awoken, Xian Miaomiao finally heaved a sigh of relief and began to joke with him.

“Great sir, I thought you were dead,” As for Lil Red, it started to cry emotionally. However, there were only crying sounds and no tears. The little fellow was exaggerating.

“Miaomiao, you reached a breakthrough? Furthermore, you actually directly broke through to rank five Martial Emperor? Girl, you are truly extraordinary,” After waking up, Chu Feng was worried about Xian Miaomiao and Lil Red’s safety the most. Seeing that the two of them were both fine, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief. After he discovered Xian Miaomiao’s current cultivation, he was overjoyed.

Xian Miaomiao had succeeded. In that case, the pain and suffering that he had endured was all worth it.

“I was only able to break through to rank five Martial Emperor because of your assistance. However, next time, do not try to show off by yourself. If I had come out of my closed-door training just a moment later, you would have been killed by that scoundrel old man,” Xian Miaomiao pointed to a nearby location.

“YinYang Immortal?” Chu Feng looked to the direction Xian Miaomiao was pointing to. Right away, overflowing killing intent filled his eyes. The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao was pointing at the YinYang Immortal.

Even though the YinYang Immortal was bound by Xian

Miaomiao's martial technique, Chu Feng was still able to tell with a single glance that the person trapped in that web was none other than the YinYang Immortal.

“Heh. Chu Feng, it would seem that even though your Evil God Sword is very powerful, it possesses an enormous side effect too. If it wasn't for Xian Miaomiao, even if you managed to survive, you would be unconscious for a long time. It would have been impossible for you to be able to regain consciousness this quickly,” The YinYang Immortal said with a beaming smile. Seemingly knowing that he would definitely be killed, he did not show any fear. Instead, he started to mock Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, go ahead and kill him. I've only kept him alive this long so that you can settle things with him personally,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng stood up. While carrying the Evil God Sword in his right hand, he began to walk toward the YinYang Immortal.

The Evil God Sword possessed a demonic nature. It would give a backlash to its user. However, if Chu Feng didn't use its strength, it would not give him any backlash.

It was similar to the Heavenly Immortal Sword. The Heavenly Immortal Sword possessed an overwhelming righteous aura. Only by having that overwhelming righteous aura would Chu Feng be able to unleash the Heavenly Immortal Sword Techniques.

As for the Evil God Sword, its power was much more frightening than that of the Heavenly Immortal Sword. However, as long as Chu Feng didn't use its power, it would only be an ordinary weapon that would not cause him any harm.

It was because Chu Feng knew about that that he dared to hold the Evil God Sword again right after suffering from its backlash.

Truth be told, if one did not use the power of the Evil God Sword,

the Evil God Sword was actually not frightening at all. Against the YinYang Immortal, the normal Evil God Sword would not be any threat.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell that the YinYang Immortal's power was sealed off, and his movements were restricted by Xian Miaomiao's ability. Not to mention the Evil God Sword, even if Chu Feng were to pick up a random scrap metal, he would still be able to, with his strength, easily behead the YinYang Immortal.

However, Chu Feng did not immediately kill the YinYang Immortal.

Instead, he pointed his Evil God Sword at the YinYang Immortal's dantian. Then, he asked, "Where did you bring Duan Jidao and Yin Gongfu to? Exactly what is the aim of your Dark Hall?"

"What? They were captured?" Hearing those words, the YinYang Immortal revealed a surprised expression.

"Don't play dumb with me. That was clearly the doing of your your Dark Hall," Chu Feng aimed his Evil God Sword at the YinYang Immortal.

"The Dark Hall is enormous. We possess countless people working at once. Even if it was done by our Dark Hall, I would not necessarily know about it."

"Chu Feng, you shouldn't bother to threaten me with death. If I were truly afraid of death, I would not have joined the Dark Hall. Ever since I stepped onto the Dark Hall's ship, I knew that what awaited me would be two paths; life or death."

"I have only lived till this long because I was waiting for you to wake up. I have something that I wish to tell you," The YinYang Immortal said.

"Speak away," Chu Feng decided to not continue to ask anymore. He was also able to tell that the YinYang Immortal had already

accepted death. Faced with someone like him, he would not be able to obtain any information through interrogation.

He could only hope that the YinYang Immortal would find his conscience and voluntarily give him useful information.

Chapter 1932 – Nefarious Sword

“I have said that you will become an enormous threat to our Dark Hall should you continue to live. However, I’ll tell you this: although you might be the greatest threat, you are no match for the Dark Hall. You wish to know who the master of the Dark Hall is? I’d urge you that it’s best you never know, for the day you know who it is shall be the day of your death. Hahahahaha!!!”

After he finished saying those words, the YinYang Immortal burst into frantic and extremely abnormal laughter.

“Puchi~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng pierced his Evil God Sword into the YinYang Immortal’s dantian.

“You!!!” Being pierced by Chu Feng’s sword out of nowhere, not only did the YinYang Immortal stop laughing, he also looked at Chu Feng with amazement. He had not expected Chu Feng to act this soon.

“I know that you wish to kill yourself. However, your life and death is not something for you to decide. Even if you are to die, you will die by my hands,” As Chu Feng spoke, the Evil God Sword in his hand started to tremble. Then, a burst of boundless oppressive might entered the YinYang Immortal’s body and shattered all his internal organs.

Even though the YinYang Immortal’s corpse appeared to be undamaged on the surface, he was actually utterly dead.

“Eggy, what do you think about the taste of this rank six Martial Emperor?” Chu Feng asked Eggy.

The reason why Chu Feng needed to personally kill the YinYang Immortal was all for Eggy’s sake.

All those killed by Chu Feng would have their source energies absorbed by Eggy before their deaths.

However, when facing those that killed themselves through self denotation, and not by his hand, like those ten Dark Hall's experts Chu Feng had captured before, he was unable to have Eggy absorb their source energies before their deaths.

If the YinYang Immortal were to self-detonate, Chu Feng would not be able to have Eggy absorb his source energy.

As the YinYang Immortal's source energy was that of a rank six Martial Emperor, how could he possibly afford to waste it? Thus, he had to personally kill the YinYang Immortal so that Eggy could absorb his source energy.

"A rank six Martial Emperor's source energy is pretty good. Unfortunately, this Queen's cultivation still didn't manage to make any huge progress," Eggy said with her lips curled.

"There's actually still no progress?" Chu Feng was also startled to hear those words. Ever since Eggy woke back up, Chu Feng had killed many experts. Among them were many Martial Emperors.

All those killed by Chu Feng, regardless of whether he left them an intact corpse or not, would have their source energies absorbed and refined by Eggy before their deaths.

However, even though Eggy had refined the source energies of that many Martial Emperor-level experts, her cultivation had still made no progress.

Before, Chu Feng had thought the entire time that the amount of source energy that Eggy needed was enormous. The reason for that was because Eggy was like him. The quantity of source energy she needed in order to reach a breakthrough in cultivation was extremely enormous.

However, Chu Feng felt that the YinYang Immortal's rank six Martial Emperor's source energy should be helpful toward Eggy's cultivation. After all, she had already refined the source energies of so many experts. Even if she didn't manage to make a

breakthrough, they should have left her a good foundation to make a breakthrough with. Thus, with the addition of the YinYang Immortal's source energy, she should have reached a breakthrough by now.

Yet, it was actually useless. This meant that it was not an issue of there not being enough source energy. Instead, it was some other problem.

"It seems that it's useless. The seal your mother placed on me is truly too strong. I reckon it's that seal that has restricted my cultivation. I feel that my own body is not the reason why I need more source energy than others. Rather, it must be that seal. It is that spirit formation that sealed me that takes the greater amount of the source energies," Eggy said helplessly.

"How could it be like this?" Chu Feng also felt extremely shocked. He had never suspected that the seal on Eggy was capable of engulfing source energies.

"I reckon that it's because your mother is distrusting of me. That's why she deliberately used that spirit formation seal to limit my growth," Eggy smiled sweetly. With a very indifferent expression, she added, "However, it doesn't matter anymore. The speed at which you grow is extremely fast. Even if my cultivation is to progress somewhat, I will still not be able to provide with you anymore assistance."

"You already no longer need the protection of this Queen. From today onward, you shall be the one to protect this Queen," Eggy smiled very sweetly. It was so sweet that one would feel as if their heart would melt just by looking at her smile.

However, Chu Feng's heart was feeling extremely sour. Even though his mother had sealed Eggy for the sake of protecting him, he felt as if he had let Eggy down enormously.

'Eggy, rest assured. Sooner or later, I will remove that seal from you. I am already preparing for it. I'll definitely succeed.'

Chu Feng said those words from the bottom of his heart. He did not speak them out loud. The reason for that was because the seal on Eggy was truly too powerful. After all, it was his mother's technique. Chu Feng simply did not know what level of world spiritist his mother was.

Thus, Chu Feng did not have too great of a certainty that he would be able to undo Eggy's seal. Even though he was already making preparations to do so, he knew that it would be a very long process to actually undo Eggy's seal.

At the very least, the materials that he had gathered so far were greatly insufficient. He still needed to gather many, many more materials.

Xian Miaomiao gathered all of the possessions from the YinYang Immortal's corpse. Then, she walked up to Chu Feng and asked, "Chu Feng, why did you leave him an intact corpse? That man's death is well-justified. He should be dismembered into ten thousand pieces."

"If you are unable to do it yourself, this princess can help you hack him up."

"I am going to use his death to warn the people of the Dark Hall," Chu Feng said.

"So that's the case. I understand now," Xian Miaomiao was very intelligent. She already understood Chu Feng's intentions. Then, she opened her hand and handed several Cosmos Sacks to Chu Feng, "Here, they're all from the YinYang Immortal. It must be said that that fellow truly obtained a lot of treasures. As you're a world spiritist, these things are useful to you."

"It is all thanks to you that I was able to kill him. I would be embarrassed to accept all of them. How about this? Let's share them fifty-fifty," Chu Feng did not take the Cosmos Sacks.

"Fifty-fifty? Fifty-fifty your head."

“The majority of the things here are treasures for world spiritists. What use do I have for them? Furthermore, no matter what, I am still the Elf Kingdom’s little princess. Did you think I would lack those things?”

“What I lack the most are the Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers. However, with your assistance, I have already found them. With these here that I’ll be bringing back to refine, I might even be able to reach another breakthrough. It would not be unrealistic for me to become a rank six Martial Emperor,” Xian Miaomiao slapped at the pink Cosmos Sack on her waist with a beaming smile. The only things contained in that Cosmos Sack were Ancient Era’s Immortal Flowers.

“Since that’s the case, I’ll accept them then,” Chu Feng accepted the Cosmos Sacks and put them away. The YinYang Immortal possessed even more treasures than the Avaricious Immortal. They were truly very useful to Chu Feng.

“However, on a different subject, while the things for world spiritists might be useless for you, this should be useful, right?” As Chu Feng spoke, he picked up that Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade. He planned to hand the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade to Xian Miaomiao.

“No, no, no. I possess my own Imperial Armament, whereas you do not.”

“The YinYang Immortal is now dead. As such, this Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade is a masterless weapon. It would be perfect for you to use it,” Xian Miaomiao refused. In order to prevent Chu Feng from handing the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade to her, she pushed Chu Feng away with a soft martial power and prevented him from getting close to her.

Being pushed back by Xian Miaomiao’s martial power, the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s right hand happened to come into contact with the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade in his left

hand.

“Buzz~~~”

The moment the Evil God Sword came into contact with the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, an enormous suction power originated from within the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

That suction power was truly frightening. It was as if it was trying to suck away Chu Feng’s soul. In panic, Chu Feng hurriedly released the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade in his left hand.

“Chu Feng, that sword, that sword!!!”

In the instant Chu Feng let go of the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, Xian Miaomiao began to shout at him in astonishment. She was so shocked that she was unable to speak clearly.

Upon looking at it, Chu Feng was also extremely shocked. As an Imperial Armament, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade should be indestructible. Yet, at that moment, it was dissolving into muddy water and being assimilated into the Evil God Sword.

It turned out that the frightening suction power was not actually being emitted by the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade itself. Rather, it was caused by the Evil God Sword. The Evil God Sword was currently devouring the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade.

Furthermore, the speed at which the Evil God Sword devoured the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade was extremely fast. In merely a short moment, the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade was completely devoured by the Evil God Sword.

The Evil God Sword’s appearance remained completely unchanged. As for the Ancient Alligator Body Piercing Blade, it had completely disappeared. It had been refined by the Evil God Sword.

Chapter 1933 – News From Far Away

“Why would this happen?”

Chu Feng was still holding onto the Evil God Sword. As he looked at the sword, the shock that Chu Feng felt increased even further.

As matters stood, Chu Feng was already certain that the Evil God Sword was most definitely not an Incomplete Imperial Armament, for its power was even more frightening than Imperial Armaments. That was something that Chu Feng had personally experienced when using the Evil God Sword to fight against the YinYang Immortal.

“Paa~~~”

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, Xian Miaomiao suddenly rushed over and swatted the Evil God Sword out of Chu Feng’s hand.

“Miaomiao, what are you doing?” Chu Feng had a confused expression.

“Chu Feng, that sword is too nefarious. You cannot use it. While all of the other Demon Armaments were fake, that sword is a real Demon Armament. It was even capable of devouring an Imperial Armament. Sooner or later, it will also devour you completely,” Xian Miaomiao shouted loudly. She was worried for Chu Feng because she was also deeply frightened by the Evil God Sword.

“It’s alright. I was only using it as an ordinary weapon, and did not unleash any of the sword’s actual power. As such, it will not cause any harm to me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he proceeded to move toward the Evil God Sword to pick it up.

“That still won’t do! Aren’t you unable to see how dangerous it is?!” Xian Miaomiao pulled Chu Feng back.

“Miaomiao, I know that it’s very dangerous. However, it remains

that it is my sword, that it is a weapon that has recognized me as its master,” Chu Feng said.

“But it is a sword capable of devouring its master; even if it has recognized you as its master, it is still extremely dangerous,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“The people of the world all did not dare to touch it because they feared how dangerous it was.”

“If I am to act the same way, how would I be any different from the others? If I am to do that, I will really not be qualified to be its master,” Chu Feng still picked up the Evil God Sword.

The danger of the Evil God Sword had completely surpassed Chu Feng’s imagination. The Evil God Sword was a Demon Armament that Chu Feng was still incapable of controlling.

However, it was precisely because it was a Demon Armament that Chu Feng became eager to win against it and dominate it.

In fact, Chu Feng even felt that only a Demon Armament like the Evil God Sword was qualified to be his weapon.

“There’s truly nothing that I can do about you. However, it’s still better that you do not use it before you have sufficient strength. You are not allowed to use it again before you reach Half Martial Ancestor,” Xian miaomiao warned.

“Okay, okay, okay. I’ll keep that in mind,” Faced with the stubborn Xian Miaomiao, Chu Feng could only put the Evil God Sword away with a laugh. He also knew that Xian Miaomiao was thinking for his sake.

In fact, he was even able to guess that it was most definitely because of Xian Miaomiao’s assistance that he was able to feel better in the nightmare. The reason why he knew that was because he had felt a trace of Xian Miaomiao’s aura in the energy that he had felt in his dream.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a golden ray of light sudden flew over. The speed of that golden ray of light was so fast that it caught both Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao off guard.

By the time the two of them managed to react, the golden ray of light had already arrived before them. Furthermore, it was now slowly revolving around Chu Feng.

“Golden Flash Bird. Chu Feng, that’s a Golden Flash Bird! It should be here for you, no?” Xian Miaomiao was truly very knowledgeable. She actually recognized the Golden Flash Bird with a single glance.

“It should be,” Chu Feng knew that this golden flash bird must have been dispatched by the Compass Immortal to bring him news. Thus, he placed his finger on the Golden Flash Bird.

“Buzz~~~”

Once he did so, Chu Feng immediately received the information the Golden Flash Bird carried. Although they were only a couple short sentences, they were sufficient to allow a boulder weighing down on Chu Feng’s heart to fall away.

“The people of the Cyanwood Mountain are safe and sound. They were not attacked by the Dark Hall. Nangong Longjian and I will guard the Cyanwood Mountain for an extended period of time. Do not worry. If you’re planning to return to the Cyanwood Mountain, bring Longjian’s wife and daughter with you so that they can reunite there.”

“It’s great that nothing happened,” After receiving this information, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief.

Furthermore, it seemed that Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal were both planning to stay in the Cyanwood Mountain for an extended period of time to protect it. Chu Feng was extremely thankful for that.

“It flew away. That thing is so fast that I can’t catch it,” Xian

Miaomiao returned from the outside.

It turned out that the Golden Flash Bird had flown away right after passing on the information to Chu Feng. Xian Miaomiao had gone after it to catch it. Unfortunately, she was unable to catch it.

“Chu Feng, exactly what information did the Golden Flash Bird bring?” Xian Miaomiao asked curiously.

“Earlier, my friends were attacked by the Dark Hall. I was worried that something would happen to the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, I asked two seniors of mine to go and examine the situation at the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“That Golden Flash Bird brought news from them that the Cyanwood Mountain is safe and sound,” Chu Feng did not conceal anything.

“It’s great that nothing happened. The Dark Hall is truly too hateful. We Ancient Era’s Elves will definitely not let them get away,” Xian Miaomiao said as she clenched her little fists. However, she soon looked toward the direction where the Golden Flash Bird disappeared to and said, “The Golden Flash Birds are truly powerful. It was actually able to disregard the pressure of this place.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed. Alarmed, he asked, “Miaomiao, could it be that we are still in the depths of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation?”

“That’s right. I was worried about you, so I did not leave the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Thus, Lil Red helped me find a safe place to wait for you to awaken,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Crap,” Chu Feng started to tightly frown. Immediately after, he hurriedly walked over to the YinYang Immortal’s corpse and put it away.

At the same time, he removed the YinYang Immortal’s gown. He knew that the gown possessed the same usage as their Blood

Devouring Armors, being able to withstand the pressure of this place. That was why the people from the Dark Hall were able to enter this place as well.

Chu Feng placed the gown on Xian Miaomiao. Then, using world spirit techniques, he made the gown fit Xian Miaomiao perfectly. After the gown had completely covered Xian Miaomiao, Chu Feng turned to Lil Red and asked, "Lil Red, do you know the quickest path to leave this place?"

"I do. I know everything. I am most familiar with this place," Lil Red said complacently.

"Lead the way," Chu Feng said.

"Sure thing," Lil Red turned into a ray of red light and began to fly toward the horizon. Pulling Xian Miaomiao with him, Chu Feng began to closely follow Lil Red.

"Chu Feng, could it be that the effect of the Blood Devouring Armor is soon to disappear?" Xian Miaomiao was very smart. She was able to guess from how worried Chu Feng was.

"It's alright, there's still enough time," Chu Feng said with a smile. He did not wish for Xian Miaomiao to be worried too.

However, seeing Chu Feng acting in such a way, Xian Miaomiao started to bite her lips. She felt very upset in her heart.

If it was really fine as Chu Feng had said, he would not have been so anxious earlier, nor would he have had her wear the YinYang Immortal's gown.

Thus, she knew that the current situation was extremely dangerous. Although she would be fine, it was extremely dangerous for Chu Feng. As long as the Blood Devouring Armors reached their time limit, Chu Feng would be exposed to the pressure here, and would undoubtedly be killed.

Xian Miaomiao was feeling guilty and ashamed. Even though her perception was very strong, it was greatly inferior to Chu Feng's.

She was unable to determine the time limit of the Blood Devouring Armors. That was why she had caused this disaster.

“Paa~~~”

Suddenly, Xian Miaomiao grabbed Chu Feng’s hand and began to accelerate. With her other hand, she grabbed Lil Red and said to it, “Lil Red, give me directions, I’ll fly.”

“Righto,” Lil Red nodded. Then, it said excitedly, “Take the left, take the left. Go right, go right. Yep, yep, yep. Just like this. Go straight, go straight.” Lil Red was taking great pleasure in ordering Xian Miaomiao around. Evidently, Lil Red was not aware of the crisis.

“This girl,” Seeing how serious Xian Miaomiao was, Chu Feng revealed a slight smile on his face.

While Xian Miaomiao might appear to be very carefree, weird and unserious, she was someone who could be relied on in a moment of crisis.

Chapter 1934 – Break Through The Seal

Xian Miaomiao moved through the Blood Devouring Killing Formation with a speed so fast that she looked like a ray of light.

In order to quickly leave this place, she had unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill-level movement martial skill.

That said, to use a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill for an extended period of time placed an enormous burden on her body. Right now, she was gasping for breath, and her complexion had turned pale. However, she was still moving forward persistently.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. The space around them started to tremble, and a boundless amount of atmospheric pressure burst forth from underneath the ground. It was like a volcanic eruption. However, it was much more ferocious than a volcanic eruption.

That atmospheric pressure affected even Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao. Suddenly, they were unable to steady their bodies.

“This!! What’s happening?!” When Xian Miaomiao looked down, her expression immediately changed.

Thick smoke was surging down below. The earth was crumbling as enormous cracks thousands of meters wide began to spread on the ground. Those cracks were so deep that they led directly underground. Looking at them, one could only see endless darkness.

When they looked further, Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao discovered that this phenomenon was happening everywhere that they could see. It was as if the land of the entire Blood Devouring Killing Formation was subsiding and tearing apart.

“This is truly bad,” Compared to Xian Miaomiao, Chu Feng’s expression was even more uneasy.

“Chu Feng, what’s happening?” Xian Miaomiao asked Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng did not answer Xian Miaomiao. Instead, he suddenly waved his sleeve. Then, a layer of spirit power covered both of them.

Chu Feng sat in the middle of the spirit formation and took out several spirit formation treasures from his Cosmos Sack. Then, he began to move his hands in rapid succession. Runes and seals were borne of his hand movements.

They entered the treasures, and continued until the treasures were assimilated into the spirit formation. It was only then that Chu Feng stopped.

When everything stopped, Chu Feng, Xian Miaomiao and Lil Red all disappeared. They were hidden in the void itself.

What Chu Feng had set up was a concealing formation. Not only was it capable of concealing their bodies, it was also capable of completely concealing their auras.

“Chu Feng, could it be...” Seeing Chu Feng’s movements, Xian Miaomiao seemed to have thought of something.

“There’s good news and bad news.”

“The good news is that the formation seal on this place has been broken. Thus, the pressure of this place will also disappear alongside it. As such, I am safe.”

“The bad news is that because the formation seal has been broken, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts that were sealed here are about to emerge,” Chu Feng said.

“Damn it! They managed to succeed. That damned Dark Hall!” Xian Miaomiao started to gnash her teeth in anger. After all, the release of the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts was not good news at all.

“Roar, roar, roar, roar, roar~~~~”

Right at this moment, roars began to sound from the cracks in the ground down below. Soon, many ferocious auras soared into the sky.

At that moment, black clouds filled the previously sunny and cloudless sky. The area was covered in pitch-black darkness. On the ground, other than the devastation that filled the region, only unceasing roars could be heard.

On the ground, huge monsters were making their way out of the enormous cracks that led underground.

They were enormous. Each and every one of them was hundreds of meters long. They were like small mountains.

They were extremely powerful. All of them gave off the auras of Martial Emperors. The weakest among them were rank one Martial Emperors. Of those that were within Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao's line of sight, the strongest were rank five Martial Emperors.

They possessed extremely frightening appearances. Although their shapes were all different, they all seemed to possess formidable powers. Their crimson eyes were like crimson suns. Murderous intentions filled those eyes. It was as if they wanted to kill everything in their line of sight.

However... they would not kill their fellows. These were the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, the ferocious beasts that had lived since the Ancient Era.

“Roar~~~”

The Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were truly wild. After they crawled out from underground, they began to cause destruction all over the place. It was as if they were venting the anger and resentment in their hearts.

With a smash of their enormous claws, a huge area of land before

them would cave in. The ground that was already devastated became even more ruined after their destruction.

If these ferocious beasts were to arrive at locations where humans and others lived, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“This is extremely bad. Their numbers are greater than I expected.”

Chu Feng surveyed the area below. His gaze grew more and more uneasy. Not only were the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts crawling out from the enormous cracks below, the cracks themselves were spreading outward.

Earlier, Chu Feng had wondered where the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts were sealed. Now, he had gotten his answer. It turned out that the entire central region of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was filled with sealed Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts.

Their number was simply innumerable. It was too frightening. If all of these ferocious beasts were released, it was likely even the Ancient Era’s Elves would not be able to contain all of them. A calamity would soon befall the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Chu Feng, are you able to determine where we are? We need to go toward the direction we came from. The greatest number of our Ancient Era’s Elf troops were stationed there,” Xian Miaomiao said to Chu Feng.

Earlier, the only thing on their minds had been to get out of the central region of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation as quickly as possible. That was why they had had Lil Red lead the way. However, as the Blood Devouring Killing Formation itself had now been destroyed, the pressure was no longer present. As such, there was no need for them to fear the pressure anymore. Therefore, it would be fine for Chu Feng to lead the way now.

“Very well,” Chu Feng did not hesitate. He hurriedly started to lead them in the direction of where they had come from.

Even though the situation was extremely bad, Chu Feng still had to protect himself and Xian Miaomiao. To quickly converge with the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts would be the most optimal method.

After all, other than the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts, there were also experts from the Dark Hall here. While his concealing formation might be able to conceal them from the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts, it might not necessarily be able to conceal them from the Dark Hall’s experts.

Chu Feng was giving directions, while Xian Miaomiao was the one doing the actual flying. For the sake of getting there sooner, Xian Miaomiao unleashed her Heaven Taboo Martial Skill movement technique once again. Their traveling speed became extremely fast.

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

After Xian Miaomiao had traveled for some time, ear-piercing tolling began to sound from ahead. After they heard that tolling, some of the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts that were running outward started to scream miserably.

From the direction where the tolling was coming from, many dazzling golden rays began to appear. The closer those golden rays came, the more dazzling they appeared. Before those golden rays, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts retreated in fear and began to run back toward the central region.

“This is great, it’s our Ancient Era’s Elves,” Seeing that scene, Xian Miaomiao was overjoyed, and began to accelerate.

Chu Feng saw that behind the golden rays were green armored soldiers. It was indeed the Ancient Era's Elves' army.

There were not many soldiers. From what Chu Feng could see, he could see that there were only about a thousand or so Ancient Era's Elves.

However, every tenth Ancient Era's Elf was holding a giant bell. Those giant bells were filled with an Ancient Era's aura. With every toll of the giant bell, a golden ray would appear.

"Is that the way Ancient Era's Elves restrain the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts? Truly, everything has a weakness."

Chu Feng was able to sense that although those giant golden bells were very ear-piercing, they did not pose any threat to martial cultivators. However, to those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, they were deadly. If that hadn't been the case, those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts would not be that scared.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that the Ancient Era's Elves were coming from all directions. It was as if they had formed a containment circle to seal off the entire Blood Devouring Killing Formation. At that moment, their containment circle was growing smaller. They should be sealing off the escape of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

The below was written by Kindhearted Bee on 6-25-2015

PS:

This is for the brothers of the Asura Hall. However, I wish for all readers to have a look. This relates to the voting results.

Firstly, the Asura Hall is not limited to only the readers that entered the Asura Hall. The way I see it, all the readers that enjoy Martial God Asura are brothers of the Asura Hall. That said, I will be entering the main topic now.

Today is Thursday. However, I feel that the voting does not have

to continue anymore.

The reason for that is because eighty-nine percent of the book review area's readers voted that I do not have to make up for the missed chapters.

As for my Wechat platform, ninety-three percent of the readers voted that [I do not have to make up for the missed chapters](#).

This overwhelming superiority is enough to show that everyone is wise and farsighted. Indeed, all you brothers are very smart.

Although not having to make up for missed chapters might appear to be great on me, I know that everyone knows that it is actually even more difficult for me to do.

If I am to not make up for the missed chapters, [I will only have to make up for the remaining chapters](#). If I do not count the explosive releases every month based on the monthly tickets Martial God Asura receives, I will only have to release an average of thirty chapters a month. Oh how easy that would be.

However, if I do not need to make up for the missed chapters, then, when not counting the monthly explosive releases, I will have to write at least seventy chapters every month. Remember, that's every month. I truly cannot even afford to relax. In other words, each month I will have to write at least 150,000 characters. Remember, it's 150,000 characters.

However, everyone can rest assured. With this many brothers supporting me, I will definitely do my best. I have said it before, I was only able to continue writing because of your support. I am writing this book of mine for the sake of all you supporters.

I still remember the YY event where one of my readers managed to snatch the mic. At that time, the host asked him what he wished to ask me. He said that he had no questions and merely wanted to tell me that I do not have to care about what others say about me, that he will always support me.

I was truly moved when I heard those words. I was about to burst into tears. Actually... there are a lot of readers that tell me those things. Every day, when I open my messages, if ten percent of those messages are cursing me, then the other ninety percent are from my supporters.

To the readers that care about me: brothers, rest assured. I am not that weak. I was cursed at four years ago, and have continued to write while being cursed at. If you all are interested, you can listen to this story.

Four years ago, when my first book, War God Asura, just managed to obtain some achievements, I had people attack me. They said my writing was extremely bad, said that my writing was trash. When I do not write enough chapters, people complained about my moral quality, my character. When I decided to charge a fee for my book, people cursed me for scamming money.

If they were truly my readers, I wouldn't mind if they cursed me. At the very least, that would mean that they liked my writing. That would mean that they, at the very least, acknowledged me. When my readers curse at me, I will not complain. That remains true even now.

However, I discovered at that time that that small portion of people that were cursing at me everyday with fake accounts were actually my fellow writers.

In fact, one even found me and demanded money from me. He said that if I didn't give him money, he'd curse my writing for being bad everyday so that no one would read it.

As I was a newcomer back then, it was inevitable that I would be puzzled by all this. Later on, I had a senior tell me that writing web novels is also not a Pure Land. If your performance is good and you receive the support of the readers, it will be inevitable for others to be jealous of you. Without you even knowing, you'll have offended others. You'll get used to it eventually. If you're good, you'll get

popular. However, if others don't curse you, you will never get popular.

He told me two things:

Those who are popular will have a lot of scandals.

Those who are not envied by others are only mediocre.

I remembered those two sentences and continued to persist with my writing. However, I did not persist because of those two sentences. Rather, it was because of the readers that supported me. In other words, you all, the brothers of the Asura Hall.

When I finished writing my first book, it was accompanied by curses and scoldings. That being said, as the first book from a new writer, War God Asura's performance was most definitely dazzling.

When my second book, that is my current book, Martial God Asura, was serialized, that group of people that cursed me also appeared.

Right at the first ten chapters, there were people who said that my writing was inferior to War God Asura, that it would definitely fail.

When I wrote several hundred thousands of characters for Martial God Asura, there were people that said that my writing was growing worse and worse, that the more I wrote, the more trash it became, that it would definitely fail.

And now, I have written more than four million words for Martial God Asura. Yet, I am still seeing those comments everyday.

However, the clicks on Martial God Asura have now surpassed three hundred million, and there are several hundred thousand readers waiting for new releases of Martial God Asura everyday.

If you are to say that my writing is bad, I won't judge. Everyone likes different things. If you don't like something, I cannot force

you to like it.

However, there are over a million readers that like Martial God Asura. As a writer, that is already enough for me.

However, if you are to say that Martial God Asura will fail, I can only say that there's a problem with your eyes.

As for those that say that there will be no one to read Martial God Asura in the future, I can only smile at that. The reason for that is because the actual answer will make them want to cry.

Well then, that story I wanted to tell everyone is done. I said all these things because I wanted the readers who are concerned about me to be at ease. I will not be crushed by those that are throwing rocks at me, for I became who I am today with rocks coming at me the entire way.

The reason why I can persist even with the rocks being thrown my way is because I have you all supporting me the entire time.

Today is Thursday. It is still not Sunday. However, I have released five chapters in succession. Those were five chapters I wrote after staying up late into the night. From last night all the way till six in the morning today.

This are my repayment to you brothers. I did that because I care for you all. I also thank you all for caring about me.

The number of people cursing me will not decrease.

The number of people who dislike Martial God Asura will not decrease.

However, everyone, please believe me. The performance of Martial God Asura will get better and better.

The reason for that is because I possess the best brothers with me. As for those, they are all from a single place, the Asura Hall!!!

Bee was ~90 chapters behind due to his health problems and events where he releases a massive amount of chapters depending

on what rank MGA gets on 17k every month.

Bee removed the flower events and other additional chapter events because he was so far behind.

Chapter 1935 – Confronting Enemies Together

‘The Ancient Era’s Elves are truly powerful,’ After seeing the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army, Chu Feng felt admiration from the bottom of his heart.

They should have been guarding this place for many years. In fact, it should have been several generations since they started guarding this place.

To guard this place for so long without the emergence of the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts would inevitably cause one to lower one’s guard. Yet, the Ancient Era’s Elves had not lowered their guard at all. From this, it could be seen how well-trained and disciplined the Ancient Era’s Elves were.

The Ancient Era’s Elves were like celestial soldiers that descended upon the mortal world to punish demons. Furthermore, these celestial soldiers were all composed of experts.

Chu Feng felt that, in the entire Holy Land of Martialism, the Ancient Era’s Elves should be the only power capable of doing this sort of righteous thing.

“Miaomiao, are you alright?”

At that moment, a blonde-haired old man that emitted airs of immortality arrived before Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao.

Although this Ancient Era’s Elf was not one of the Protectors, his aura was extremely powerful, and actually surpassed that of the YinYang Immortal. If Chu Feng guessed correctly, he should be a rank seven Martial Emperor.

That man was not one of the Ancient Era’s Elves who was guarding this place. Instead, he was Xian Miaomiao’s bodyguard. He was someone who would follow Xian Miaomiao everywhere. He had been hiding within the void the entire time. It was also the

first time that Chu Feng was meeting him.

Due to the fact that only the younger generation were capable of entering the central region of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, he had had no choice but to wait outside of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation regardless of how strong he might be.

“Uncle, I am fine. Merely, the current situation is very bad,” Xian Miaomiao said impatiently.

“Indeed, the situation is very bad. I never would’ve expected that the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts that had been sealed for so long would suddenly break through the spirit formation seal. The time is much sooner than His Majesty had anticipated,” In that moment, two more burly middle-aged men wearing green armor flew over to Xian Miaomiao and Chu Feng.

Although the two of them both had appearances of middle-aged burly men, they had actually lived for thousands of years. The two of them both possessed extremely powerful cultivations. Like the YinYang Immortal, they were both rank six Martial Emperors.

They were Ancient Era’s Elves tasked with guarding this place. However, Chu Feng felt that they should not be the only two rank six Martial Emperors tasked with guarding this place. With how enormous this Blood Devouring Killing Formation was, and the fact that there were Ancient Era’s Elves stationed all around it, the number of experts that were stationed here should be numerous.

After seeing Xian Miaomiao, several more of the Ancient Era’s Elves flew over. Even though their cultivations were all at different levels, the weakest among them were rank four Martial Emperors; they were all extremely powerful individuals.

It was in that moment, that Chu Feng finally realized why the Ancient Era’s Elves were the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism. It turned out that their forces were not only limited to the Four Grand Elders and the Eight Protectors; they possessed

many more peak experts. Merely, those experts were tasked with important responsibilities.

“However, do not worry, Your Highness. Although His Majesty just transferred some of the troops stationed here, those that remain are sufficient to handle the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. At the moment when the Blood Devouring Killing Formation was destroyed, we immediately sealed this entire region. No matter how numerous the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts might be, not a single one of them will be able to escape,” The other middle-aged burly man said.

“No, it’s not that simple. You absolutely cannot lower your guard,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Your Highness, could it be that you know something?” Hearing this Xian Miaomiao’s bodyguard and the two middle-aged burly men looked to one another. They seemed to have realized something.

“Allow me to explain,” Chu Feng stepped forward and told them about the Dark Hall.

“So it’s actually the Dark Hall that did this. How did they know that the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts were sealed here?” After hearing about what had happened, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts were all extremely shocked.

It would be one thing if it was the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts breaking through the seal themselves. However, if it was done by the people from the Dark Hall, the situation would be much more complicated, and much more dangerous.

Suddenly, Xiao Miaomiao’s bodyguard said to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, I’ll have to trouble you with one thing. Please take Miaomiao back to our Elf Kingdom safely,”

“Uncle, you’re not returning with me?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“Miaomiao, my duty is to protect you. However, all of our

Ancient Era's Elves here might encounter fatal danger. I cannot disregard them. This time around, I'm afraid that I will not be able to be by your side to protect you," The old man said with a smile on his face. However, self blame was evident in his eyes.

He was blaming himself for being unable to protect Xian Miaomiao. However, he knew what was more important.

If the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were to escape, countless living things in the Holy Land of Martialism would suffer a calamity. In this sort of situation, he had to choose to stay here and suppress the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts with all his strength.

"If uncle is not leaving, I am also not leaving. Not only am I an Ancient Era's Elf, I am also the Elf Princess. I am going to confront these enemies together with you all, and eliminate the Dark Hall."

Xian Miaomiao said those words while patting her chest. Even though the situation right now was very bad, excitement filled Xian Miaomiao's face. She had the appearance of a newborn calf that was not afraid of a tiger.

"Miaomiao, this is not the time to act headstrong," Hearing those words, her bodyguard was immediately made anxious.

"That's right, Your Highness, it's better that you leave. This place is too dangerous," The other Ancient Era's Elves' experts also started to panic. The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao could be said to be the greatest treasure of their Ancient Era's Elves. While they could lose everything else, they absolutely could not lose Xian Miaomiao.

"Uncle, you know my temperament. I said that I'm staying, so I'm staying. Right now, even if you left, I would still stay. I must properly teach those scoundrels of the Dark Hall a lesson. They are truly too hateful," Xian Miaomiao said.

"But, if you stay, little friend Chu Feng will also not leave. You cannot involve little friend Chu Feng in this," The old man looked

to Chu Feng.

“Actually, I never planned to leave. The reason for that is because there is already an enormous hatred and grudge of blood between the Dark Hall and I,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

What Chu Feng said was what he really thought. If the numerous Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts were not here, he would definitely choose to escape. He was not someone who would attempt to strike a stone with an egg.

However, the current situation was different. All of these Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts were staying here to fight to protect the safety of the Holy Land of Martialism. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly escape by himself?

“Haha, Uncle, there’s nothing you can do now, right?” Xian Miaomiao laughed. Then, she flew over to a golden bell and struck it hard.

“I must also help out,” After Chu Feng said those words, he also ran over to help strike the bell. The reason for that was because only the sound of those bells was capable of deterring the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts.

“Milord, this...” The Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts were at a loss as to what to do. They all looked to the blonde old man.

“Although you all might not know Miaomiao’s temperament well, I know it very well.”

“Since she is determined, no one will be able to take her away. If we insist on taking her away, she will even threaten you with her own life,” The old man said helplessly.

“Ah?” The Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts all opened their mouths wide in shock. At that moment, they started to panic even more.

“Think of a way to transfer all of the experts that are rank four Martial Emperor and above over here. Gather our strongest forces to protect Her Highness the Princess and little friend Chu Feng,”

The old man said.

“Yes!” After receiving that order, the experts all scattered.

Later on, more and more Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts began to gather in that location.

Chu Feng noticed this happening. He knew that this was a measure the Ancient Era’s Elves were taking in order to protect Xian Miaomiao.

Merely, when there were several tens of rank five Martial Emperors and over a dozen rank six Martial Emperors gathered there with them, Chu Feng was unable to help himself from being astonished.

Furthermore, this was the strength of the troops stationed here after troops had already been transferred to other places by the Elf King. If those troops had not been transferred away, how many experts would be stationed here?

If all of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ military strength were to be gathered here, how powerful would they be? The strength of the Ancient Era’s Elves was truly enormous. It was so enormous that it was simply beyond measure.

Not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clans, it was likely even the strongest human powers, the Three Palaces, would be greatly inferior to the Ancient Era’s Elves.

At that moment, even Her Lady Queen started to commend the Ancient Era’s Elves’ strength. “The Ancient Era’s Elves are quite powerful. With their strength, they are fully deserving of being declared as the strongest in the Holy Land of Martialism. It is no wonder that the Dark Hall fears them.”

“Yet, there are actually humans that think that the Three Palaces are the strongest powers in the Holy Land of Martialism. It could only be said that they are simply too ignorant,”

“Mn, right now, the only ones capable of and willing to contend

with the Dark Hall would be the Ancient Era's Elves."

"Before all this, I truly never imagined that the Ancient Era's Elves would be the ones that would protect the Holy Land of Martialism," Chu Feng was also gasping with admiration.

"Merely, Chu Feng, it is clear that the Dark Hall has done all this with a plan in mind. The YinYang Immortal was merely one of their many experts. Even though there are many Ancient Era's Elves' experts guarding this place, it does not mean that they will have much of a chance at victory."

"Do you really plan to stay here and fight till the end?" Her Lady Queen was worried about Chu Feng's safety.

Chapter 1936 – The Dangerous Woman

“Humans have the highest population of all living beings in the Holy Land of Martialism. If the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are released, the humans will suffer the greatest casualties.”

“The Ancient Era’s Elves are totally capable of not doing anything, or withdrawing from this place after learning that people from the Dark Hall are here. However, they have not done so.”

“For these Ancient Era’s Elves, I am truly unable to abandon them and escape by myself,” As Chu Feng said those words, he took a glance at Xian Miaomiao who was putting great effort into striking the bell. He added, “It would be even more impossible for me to abandon Miaomiao.”

“Since that’s the case, then you can let this Queen out. Even though this Queen’s strength is greatly inferior to yours right now, I am still capable of being some help,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Milady Queen, the thing that I am unable to do the most is put you in danger. With the situation like it is, do you think I will possibly allow you to come out?” Chu Feng said.

“Hey hey hey, if you are to die, I will not be able to live anymore either. Do not forget that I am sealed in your body, and that our lives are linked together.”

“For you to put yourself in danger is equivalent to you putting this Queen in danger. Thus, do not bother with those superfluous words and release this Queen,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That still won’t do,” Chu Feng refused decisively. There was something that Chu Feng did not tell Eggy. Right now, he was capable of killing himself and letting Eggy survive in a moment of crisis.

Merely, that was something that he could not tell her, for if he

were to tell her, he feared that, with Her Lady Queen's temperament, she would become angry with him.

.....

The Ancient Era's Elves' army continued onward. Their troops moved from the outer perimeter into the inner perimeter and continued to advance further. They had contained all of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation's central region.

However, this was not the end. The Ancient Era's Elves were still pushing further inward. They were planning to firmly contain the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. Then, they would be able to kill all of them.

So far not a single Ancient Era's ferocious beast had managed to escape.

Regardless of what the cultivation of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts might be, they were still fleeing in terror.

Seeing that, not only did the Ancient Era's Elves not feel any exhaustion, their spirits instead soared even further. Their fighting spirit and morale were extremely high.

"Eggy, I keep feeling that something's wrong," Just then, when the Ancient Era's Elves were cheering excitedly, when they were planning to kill all of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, Chu Feng was feeling uneasy.

"Indeed, this is fishy. The Dark Hall clearly came prepared. Thus, why would they allow the Ancient Era's Elves to contain the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts without interfering?" Her Lady Queen also realized that the situation was amiss.

The reason for that was because the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were simply unable to contend against the Ancient Era's Elves. Yet, not a single person from the Dark Hall had been seen. Thus, this battle had become a one-sided battle.

However, all of this only showed that the situation was abnormal. After all, no matter how one looked at it, this battle had truly been won too easily.

It was precisely because it had been won so easily that one would feel uneasy.

Chu Feng knew that it was not only him and Eggy that felt the situation to be bad. Many of the Ancient Era's Elves' experts were feeling the same way.

This could be seen through how they were surveying their surroundings and did not have smiles on their faces even though victory was right before their eyes.

However, even though they felt that the situation was amiss, there was nothing they could do other than continue with the plan.

“Woosh, swoosh, clank, clank~~~”

Suddenly many shackles appeared out of thin air. Like dragons, they traveled through the sky.

Those chains were ten meters thick, with a length that could connect the sky to the earth. At this moment, from all directions, enormous chains were densely packed in the air. As the chains interweaved with one another, they began to form an inescapable net that would seal all of the Ancient Era's Elves inside.

“Clank, clank, clank, clank, clank~~~”

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Seeing that the situation was bad, the Ancient Era's Elves began to unleash attacks at the chains. However, regardless of how powerful they were, regardless of what sorts of attacks they used, the Ancient Era's Elves were actually unable to do anything to those chains.

Those chains were actually indestructible.

“Quickly, escape! Get out of here! We cannot be trapped in here!”

Seeing that the situation was bad, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts began to order their troops to give up on surrounding and killing the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts to protect their own lives first.

The reason for that was because those chains contained a special power capable of causing the Ancient Era’s Elves’ golden bells to lose their effectiveness.

As matters stood, they were no longer capable of containing the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. As such, their only option was to escape.

Right after the order to escape was given, several experts arrived before Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao. With their fastest speed, they brought Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao out of the chains’ encirclement.

At that moment, the other Ancient Era’s Elves were all frantically trying to escape. However, the speed of the chains was simply too fast. In the blink of an eye, they were completely covered by the chains. At least one tenth of the Ancient Era’s Elves were unable to escape in time.

“Ahhh~~~~~”

“Noo~~~~~”

In that moment, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ miserable screams and the roars of the ferocious beasts began to sound from within the chains. Even the sound of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ bodies being torn apart could be heard.

“Damn it! Damn it!!!”

“Noo! This can’t be happening, this can’t be happening!!!”

At this moment, there were Ancient Era’s Elves that were gnashing their teeth in anger, and there were also Ancient Era’s

Elves that were muttering with tearful voices. Some even rushed toward the chains to attack them.

After all, the elves that were being torn apart by the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts on the other side of the chains were their clansmen.

However, the majority of the Ancient Era's Elves were solemnly surveying their surroundings.

They all knew that this was a trap left by the Dark Hall, and that they had fallen for that trap.

“Get the hell out here!!!”

At that moment, that blonde old rank seven Martial Emperor that had taken command of the army shouted angrily at the sky above.

Once his voice sounded, space itself started to violently tremble.

He seemed to have sensed that there was someone there.

“Hehe...”

Sure enough, a strange laugh sounded from the direction where the blonde old man had shouted.

Then, that region of space started to distort. Then, over a hundred figures appeared.

They were all people from the Dark Hall. Each and every one of them possessed extremely powerful cultivations. The weakest among them were rank four Martial Emperors. However, at this moment, three people among them caught the most attention.

Those three people were the most dangerous existences among the Dark Hall's crowd.

The person standing on the right was a woman, a very beautiful and alluring woman.

She was wearing a very revealing outfit. Although her black skirt

was not short, it was open on one side. Even without her moving her legs, one could see her fair, lustrous and beautiful leg from the split on the side of her skirt.

It was beautiful, truly beautiful. Even though Chu Feng had seen countless women, he felt that woman's leg to be the most beautiful leg he had seen. If her legs were any longer or any shorter, they would give off a completely different sensation. Yet, her legs were just the right length; they were simply perfect.

Not only was her beautiful leg exposed, her shoulders were also exposed. With her supple black hair scattered over her fair and beautiful shoulders, she truly looked charming.

That woman's figure was exceptionally beautiful. However, her face was not at all inferior to her perfect curves.

She possessed a standard oval face with a high nose-bridge and ample and captivating lips. They looked like nothing less than tasty fruit. When one looked at them, one would feel the urge to bite them.

However, the most captivating aspect of this woman were her eyes. She possessed a pair of walnut-sized eyes and long, black eyelashes. Her eyes greatly resembled the eyes of foxes. Yet, there were some differences.

More precisely, her eyes looked more like the eyes of an alluring female spirit. Even though they were extremely charming, one would feel enormous danger when looking at them.

Chapter 1937 – The Dark Hall's Hall Master

Dangerous, it was truly very dangerous. Chu Feng was unable to see through the age of that alluring woman, nor was he able to see through her cultivation. However, with a single glance, he was able to sense the incomparably malicious and nefarious aura that she emitted.

This was different from Eggy. Although Her Lady Queen also emitted a nefarious aura, it was only something that one could sense when Her Lady Queen was angered. In normal times, Her Lady Queen was only a mischievous little beauty.

As for that woman, she was different. One could sense how dangerous she was with a single glance. She was extremely dangerous.

However, that dangerous aura she emitted caused her beauty and her figure to become even more alluring.

The reason for that was because people would always feel that what they could not obtain was the best. For a woman like her, who would dare to say that they would be able to obtain her? Who would dare to approach her?

Not to mention the others, even Chu Feng felt that way after seeing that woman.

Chu Feng felt that a woman like her would be destined to not have any relationship with him. After all, it was determined that she would be Chu Feng's enemy the moment she stood alongside the people of the Dark Hall.

“World Devastator Immortal, you... you're actually also working for the Dark Hall?”

At that moment, the blonde-haired old man uttered those words in an extremely astonished voice. Disbelief was present in both his gaze and the tone of his voice.

“World Devastator Immortal?”

After hearing what the blonde-haired old man said, the rest of the Ancient Era’s Elves present all turned their gazes to that World Devastator Immortal. Chu Feng was also no exception.

As for the World Devastator Immortal that the blonde-haired old man spoke of, he was the person standing to the left of the three people that led the Dark Hall’s crowd.

He was a man, a very handsome man. It could be said that he was the man with the most perfect appearance of all the men that Chu Feng had seen so far.

He was someone that could cause countless women to faint with merely his face.

However, that man, like that woman, also emitted a sinister aura that made others feel that he was very dangerous.

Furthermore, like that woman, Chu Feng was unable to see through that man’s cultivation or age.

However, Chu Feng had heard of the World Devastator Immortal before.

The World Devastator Immortal was ranked second among the Holy Land of Martialism’s Ten Immortals.

Furthermore, he was a Divine Body. Reportedly, when he was born, a doomsday-like abnormal sign appeared, and it looked as if the entire world would perish. That was why people named him the World Devastator Immortal.

Before the World Devastator Immortal, not to mention the Avaricious Immortal, even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal would be not be able to compare to him. They were all greatly inferior to him.

Not only was the World Devastator Immortal one of the strongest world spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism, he was

also one of the strongest martial cultivators in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Since you’ve already seen me, why bother asking?” The World Devastator Immortal said.

Chu Feng was immediately startled by his voice. This extremely, unbelievably handsome man, this World Devastator Immortal whose fame had reached every corner of the Holy Land of Martialism, was actually a sissy.

That’s right. His voice was very high pitched, like that of a woman. However, it only resembled a female’s voice, and was not an actual female’s voice. It was as if an eunuch was speaking. Hearing that voice, one would feel extremely uncomfortable.

“This is bad. Why would the World Devastator Immortal be working for the Dark Hall?” At that moment, many of the Ancient Era’s Elves revealed ugly expressions. The blonde-haired old man also had that same expression.

After all, the World Devastator Immortal was extremely powerful. Even if the Dark Hall did not have that many people here, the World Devastator Immortal himself would already make the situation extremely bad for them.

At the moment when the Ancient Era’s Elves were alarmed by the World Devastator Immortal, Chu Feng was paying close attention to the man standing between the World Devastator Immortal and that sinister woman.

That man wore a black cloak and a mask. His long blue hair actually reached his feet. On top of his head was a headdress with the character ‘Ying’ on it. Other than that, his outfit was practically the same as the rest of the Dark Hall’s experts.

However, Chu Feng knew that this person was the most dangerous among the three people. Even that woman that emitted a nefarious aura all around and the renowned World Devastator

Immortal were unable to compare to him.

If Chu Feng's guess was correct, that man should be the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Right at that moment, that blue-haired man slowly said, "The Ancient Era's Elves truly possess a well-deserved reputation. You are all very well trained. Your display has surpassed my imagination. You all are truly excellent."

"Today, I wish to thank all of you Ancient Era's Elves for helping me. If it hadn't been for you all, it would be difficult for us to capture all of those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts."

"Bastard, you actually dared to exploit us!" Hearing those words, the Ancient Era's Elves were enraged. Several of the Ancient Era's Elves' experts flew toward that blue-haired man to attack him.

"Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~"

However, before they could even approach the blue-haired man, their bodies all exploded. They turned into blood that sprinkled onto the ground.

They had been killed. However, no one had done anything. It was as if there was no sign of anyone causing their deaths at all, as if they had died from the explosions of their own bodies.

However, everyone knew that they had been killed. They should have been killed by that blue-haired man.

After killing many of the Ancient Era's Elves' experts without even lifting a finger, the blue-haired man said indifferently, "The only person among your Ancient Era's Elves who is capable of fighting against me is your Elf King."

"Could it be that you are that Dark Hall's Hall Master?" The blonde-haired old man asked.

"Precisely," The man nodded.

"Boom~~~"

Right after that man verified his status, the blonde-haired old man's body suddenly let out a loud explosion. Then, green gaseous flames began to emit from his body.

With a flip of his palm, a curved green blade appeared in his hand. Once that curved blade appeared, the weather changed as black clouds and thunder filled the sky.

Imperial Armament. Not only did the blonde-haired old man reveal his Imperial Armament, he had also unleashed the special power of the Ancient Era's Elves' bloodline. Otherwise, it would be impossible for his aura to be this imposing.

At that moment, not to mention the people from the Dark Hall, even Chu Feng felt enormous pressure from the blonde-haired old man.

“You wish to fight against me with only this bit of strength?”

However, faced with the blonde-haired old man's imposing aura, that Dark Hall's Hall Master only laughed. Contempt filled his laughter.

“How would I know if I don't try?” As the blonde-haired old man spoke, another explosion sounded. He had charged forth.

He simply did not look like an Ancient Era's Elf. Instead, it was like a continuous mountain range was flying toward the Dark Hall's Hall Master to attack him.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when the blonde-haired old man's Imperial Armament was about to reach the Dark Hall's Hall Master, the Dark Hall's Hall Master suddenly extended his finger.

His finger collided with the Imperial Armaments' curved blade edge. As they collided, the old man's curved blade was like an elephant in a quagmire. He was unable to unleash his strength. He had been bound.

“Snap~”

At that moment, Chu Feng was clenching his fist tightly. This was the first time that Chu Feng was clenching his fist like this out of nervousness.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master was truly too powerful. No matter how strong the blonde-haired old man might be, he would not be a match for the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Yet, at that moment, Chu Feng deeply wished for the blonde-haired old man to win. The reason for that was because only by him winning would Chu Feng and the others have a chance at surviving. If the blonde-haired old man was defeated, Chu Feng and the others would undoubtedly be killed.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master. No one had expected that the Dark Hall's movements this time around would bring about the appearance of such a character.

They were truly prepared beforehand.

Chinese people are not very PC at all. Then again, eunuchs are very commonly seen in Chinese historical TV shows. They generally have high pitched voices and will always extend their pinkies. In history, people would send their children to become eunuchs for the king/emperor so that they could have a better life (generally). Some eunuchs gained so much power that they were basically the de facto ruler of China at certain points.

Chapter 1938 – Same Bloodline?

After blocking the blonde old man's attack, the Dark Hall's Hall Master said, "Old fool, did you know that your rude actions would cause all of your Ancient Era's Elves to be killed alongside you?"

"What did you say?" The blonde old man was confused.

"Zzzzzzzzz~::~~::~~"

Right at that moment, lightning flashed through the eyes of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Then, a thick bolt of lightning, like a dragon, surged out of that Dark Hall's Hall Master.

After that lightning appeared, it began to extend rapidly. Like a sharp blade, it pierced through many of the Ancient Era's Elves.

Everything happened too quickly. Other than Chu Feng and a few of the Ancient Era's Elves' experts, the rest of the Ancient Era's Elves were all struck by that bolt of lightning.

All those that were struck by the lightning were killed on the spot without a corpse remaining. They were killed so quickly that they did not even have the time to scream before their deaths.

In merely an instant, thousands of Ancient Era's Elves were killed.

At this moment when thousands of Ancient Era's Elves had been killed by the Dark Hall's Hall Master, Chu Feng's expression took a huge change. He revealed an extremely shocked gaze. He looked to that Dark Hall's Hall Master with an expression of disbelief.

"Nooo!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

Just then, the blonde-haired old man let out a sorrowful and heartbroken roar. Then, overwhelming anger and killing intent surged forth from within his body.

"Woosh~::~~::~"

With the sudden explosion of power, the curved blade in his hand

managed to bypass the Dark Hall's Hall Master's finger and thrust towards his dantian.

“ZZZZZZZZZZ~”

Right at the moment when the curved blade of his Imperial Armament was about to reach his dantian, lightning surged from within the Dark Hall Hall Master's body.

Not only did that lightning block the blonde-haired old man's attack, it also revolved around the Dark Hall's Hall Master and formed an armor of lightning that covered his entire body.

At that moment, it was not only Chu Feng who felt enormously shocked. Even Xian Miaomiao was feeling the same sort of shock. She involuntarily looked to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because that Dark Hall Hall Master's Thunder Armor was exactly the same as Chu Feng's Thunder Armor.

Not only that, the lightning that he unleashed earlier possessed many different colors. Those colors were actually exactly the same as the colors of the lightning that Chu Feng possessed.

All of this meant one thing. That, in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng was not the only person that possessed the power of the enormous lightning beasts, not the only person that possessed that powerful Inherited Bloodline.

This Dark Hall's Hall Master before them was also a possessor of the enormous lightning beasts.

He... was someone who possessed the same Inherited Bloodline as Chu Feng.

“Haha, Chu Feng, I deliberately revealed my Thunder Armor to you so that I could see your current expression.”

That Dark Hall's Hall Master looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. From his gaze, Chu Feng could tell that he was ridiculing

him.

“As for you, I can easily kill you even without using my Thunder Armor,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master suddenly looked to the blonde old man. Then, suddenly, he thrust his hand forward like a sharp blade. “Puu,” his hand pierced through the blonde old man’s dantian.

One must know that the blonde old man was wearing special clothing that possessed an extremely powerful defense. Yet, before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, it was unable to withstand a single blow.

“Scram! Someone as weak as you actually dared to attack me?” Then, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master waved his sleeve and threw the blonde old man to Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng extended his hand to catch the blond old man.

“Uncle.”

“Milord.”

At that moment, the surviving Ancient Era’s Elves all hurriedly ran over to the blond old man’s side. One of the experts nervously received the blonde old man from Chu Feng.

“Who are you?” Chu Feng raised his head up and looked to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Who am I? That’s not important. What’s important is that I am the same as you. We both possess the same sort of power,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

Right at that moment, that nefarious woman suddenly said, “It’s about time, we can leave now.”

“Mn, let’s go then,” The Dark Hall’s Hall master nodded and began to turn around to leave.

“Wait, exactly who are you? How did you get here?” Chu Feng

shouted.

However, the Dark Hall's Hall Master simply ignored Chu Feng. He raised his palms toward the chains that sealed off the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts in midair. Then, the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts began to gradually disappear. They were being pulled into the void.

Not only were they planning to leave, they were going to take the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts with them.

"Bastard! Answer me! Exactly what is your intention in capturing those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts?! Exactly what is your aim?!" Chu Feng grew anxious. He soared into the sky and flew toward the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

The reason for that was because, to Chu Feng, that man was not only the Dark Hall's Hall Master; he was also someone who possessed the same Inherited Bloodline as him.

However, before Chu Feng could approach him, the World Devastator Immortal suddenly shouted, "Scram." Then, Chu Feng felt a very powerful yet invisible energy appear out of nowhere. It smashed ruthlessly into his chest and knocked Chu Feng into the ground from the sky.

Not only did the impulse of Chu Feng's collision create an enormous crater in the ground, it also caused Chu Feng to vomit out a mouthful of blood onto his Blood Devouring Armor.

"Chu Feng, you are truly unqualified to fight against me right now. You... are too weak. You are so weak that... you are unqualified to possess the power that you have."

"However, this cannot be blamed on you. After all, a place like the Holy Land of Martialism is filled with trash. Regardless of how rubbish your talent might be, you will still be a genius here."

"In such a place, it is inevitable that someone like you will become conceited and arrogant. Naturally, it would be difficult for

you to make progress.”

“However... I can help you. I’ll let you experience pain. Perhaps, with extreme pain and suffering, you might be able to unleash new potential.”

“However, the precondition for that would be that these people present have sufficient weight in your heart,” After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master finished saying those words to Chu Feng, he looked to the World Devastator Immortal and said, “World Devastator, you should know what to do. However, you must not kill him. This trash must be left for me to personally kill.”

“Lord Hall Master, please rest assured. This World Devastator will definitely accomplish this task,” The World Devastator Immortal, one of the most powerful World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism, actually bowed respectfully to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Mn,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master nodded in satisfaction. Then, he planned to leave.

“Wait, don’t go! Tell me how you managed to get here! Why are you doing all this?!” Chu Feng shouted again. The fact that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed the same sort of power as him meant that it was very possible for him to be Chu Feng’s clansman from the Outer World.

However, as someone from the Outer World, why would he run to this place? Why would he, someone who was high and above, do such a thing? Chu Feng did not understand.

“Chu Feng, don’t be anxious. We will meet again. However, you should prepare yourself. For the next time we meet, I will make you suffer even more miserably.”

“Hahahaha...” After that man finished saying those words to Chu Feng, he burst into loud laughter.

While his laughter continued, he and the various experts of the

Dark Hall stepped into the void.

They were gone. Other than the World Devastator Immortal, the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that nefarious woman, and all the other experts of the Dark Hall had all left.

However, that laughter was still present. It was still echoing...

After that laughter died out, in this region, other than the Blood Devouring Killing Formation that had become useless and the devastation that filled this area, only Chu Feng, a few Ancient Era's Elves and that World Devastator Immortal remained.

Chapter 1939 – Torment

“Exceptional genius, an era’s demon level genius, haha...”

The World Devastator Immortal looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. His gaze was filled with mockery.

“Chu Feng, not only are you a pile of dog shit in the eyes of the Hall Master, you are also a pile of dog shit in my eyes,” The World Devastator Immortal said as he looked to Chu Feng.

“World Devastator, exactly what is it that you’re planning to do?” The blonde old man shouted. The reason for that was because the World Devastator Immortal’s oppressive might had enveloped them. His oppressive might caused them to feel extremely uneasy.

“What am I planning to do? I’m going to have you all die here,” The World Devastator Immortal smiled strangely. Then, he turned to the empty space next to him and made a grabbing motion. Instantly, the martial power within that space immediately entered his palm.

Then, he spread open his palm and pushed it lightly toward the space before him. As the martial power scattered, nine golden-bright and dazzling daggers formed. They began to float in midair.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the World Devastator Immortal pointed below, and one of the nine daggers flew downward. It was aimed at an Ancient Era’s Elf’s dantian.

The speed of that dagger was extremely slow. It was so slow that it was even slower than the normal speed at which an object would fall from above.

That sort of speed was something that Chu Feng and the others, with their cultivations, should be able to easily dodge.

However, the World Devastator Immortal’s oppressive might had

not only enveloped them, it had also restricted their movements. As such, they could only watch as the dagger fell from above.

“Putt~~~”

Finally, that dagger pierced into that Ancient Era’s Elf’s dantian. As blood spilled from his dantian, that Ancient Era’s Elf clenched his teeth tightly and did not even utter a single scream of pain.

“Quite a good endurance you have there. I shall see how long you can endure.”

The World Devastator Immortal smiled coldly. Then, he lightly revolved his finger. Following his finger, that dagger actually began to spin around while still pierced into that Ancient Era’s Elf’s dantian.

“Ahh~~~~”

Being tormented in such a manner by the World Devastator Immortal, that Ancient Era’s Elf was finally unable to endure it anymore, and began to scream in miserable pain.

The pain that he was feeling was most definitely not limited to having a dagger pierced through him and spinning around in his wound. Else, his veins would not be bulging due to the pain, and his complexion would not have turned deathly pale.

“That’s more like it. What I want is precisely for you to scream. Only after screaming are you allowed to die,” Seeing that Ancient Era’s Elf screaming in miserable pain, the World Devastator Immortal smiled in satisfaction. Then, with a hook of his finger, ‘bang,’ that Ancient Era’s Elf exploded.

“Noo!!!”

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao and the other Ancient Era’s Elves all shouted hysterically. Their voices were filled with anger and irreconciliation.

They, the Ancient Era’s Elves, were existences that stood at the

top of the Holy Land of Martialism. Yet, right now, they were like fishes on a chopping block. They were unable to do anything even when one of their clansmen was being tortured and killed before their very eyes. To them, this was an intolerable torment.

“If you dare, then come at me. Come, kill me. Don’t harm them. Come, come kill me!” Chu Feng shouted angrily.

However, the World Devastator Immortal completely ignored Chu Feng. Instead, he gathered the Cosmos Sack and treasures from that dead Ancient Era’s Elf. After he finished gathering them, he turned to Chu Feng with a smile on his face and said, “No, no, no. If you are to die, it’ll become boring. I’m doing this precisely so that you will be in so much pain that you’ll wish to die.”

“Woosh~~~”

Right after he said those words, another dagger shot forth. This time around, it was actually aimed at the blonde old man.

“Uncle!!!” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was already tearing up. She was crying so hard that her petite body was twitching.

However, her cries were unable to change anything. As blood splattered around and sprinkled down like rain, the blond old man was killed before their eyes.

After that, the World Devastator Immortal continued to attack. Six daggers were shot forth in succession. With each dagger, an Ancient Era’s Elf died.

Now, only a single dagger remained. Furthermore, only a single person remained beside Chu Feng. As for that person, it was the Ancient Era’s Elf’s Little Princess... Xian Miaomiao.

“Aiyoyo, Princess Miaomiao, I truly find it somewhat difficult to kill a girl as beautiful as you.”

“However, the order of the Hall Master is something that I must comply with. Thus, Miaomiao, don’t blame this uncle for being ruthless,” The World Devastator Immortal said to Xian Miaomiao.

“No, Nooooooooooooo!”

“Don’t do it!” Seeing that the World Devastator Immortal was actually planning to kill Xian Miaomiao, Chu Feng became extremely worried.

“Don’t do it! Kill me! Kill me instead! Don’t kill her!”

“I will do anything you want me to do! Just don’t kill her, just don’t kill her!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was truly in so much pain that he wished to die. His eyes were bloodshot. Even though he was filled with overflowing anger, he could only speak pleading words. The reason for that was because he truly did not wish for more people to die because of him, especially not Xian Miaomiao.

“Really? You’ll do whatever I want you to do?” A trace of despicable light flashed through the World Devastator Immortal’s eyes.

“No, Chu Feng, don’t let him toy with you. He will definitely not let me live. You must absolutely not throw your dignity away for my sake,” Xian Miaomiao hurriedly said.

“Miaomiao, are you truly not afraid of death? You know, this uncle could reluctantly spare your life,” The World Devastator Immortal said.

“Pah! Your age is clearly even older than that of my father, yet you actually have the nerve to declare yourself as uncle. You damned sissy. Don’t you continue to disgust this Princess,” Xian Miaomiao cursed angrily.

“What the fuck did you just say? Say it one more time!” After hearing those words, the World Devastator Immortal’s expression immediately changed. He actually swore at Xian Miaomiao.

“I said that you’re a sissy. You damned eunuch. You’re a pervert that’s neither a man nor a woman. You are simply a transvestite,” Xian Miaomiao cursed.

“I... I’m going to fucking kill you!” The World Devastator Immortal was extremely angered by Xian Miaomiao. While fuming with rage, that final dagger started to fly downward. It directly pierced into Xian Miaomiao’s dantian.

“Bang!!!” Xian Miaomiao’s body exploded.

Everything happened too quickly. The others were all slowly tormented and then killed by him. It was only Xian Miaomiao who died instantly.

In fact, his attack was done with so much force that not even Xian Miaomiao’s Cosmos Sack or treasures remained. All of them had exploded and disappeared alongside the dagger.

“I’m going to kill you, I’m going to kill you!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was shouting like a wild beast. His roars caused everything around him to tremble nonstop. In fact, the ground was even starting to tear apart.

At the same time, the lightning within Chu Feng’s blood was scuttling out from his body.

The lightning soon covered his entire body, and was moving about in all directions. Like sharp claws, they were trying to break free from his body.

From the might of that lightning, the weather in this region started to change.

Faced with such a Chu Feng, the World Devastator Immortal’s expression also changed slightly. A trace of fear actually flashed through his arrogant eyes.

However, that fear only lasted for an instant. It seemed that he was not truly afraid of Chu Feng. Soon, a shameless smile filled his face. He said to Chu Feng, “Haha, are you trying to frighten me?”

“You saw with your eyes how the people around you were killed one by one. Yet, you were unable to do anything. And now, you

actually have the nerve to flaunt your might here?”

“I admit that your bloodline’s power is extremely strong. Unfortunately, you are too weak. You are truly unworthy of your bloodline. If I were to possess that bloodline of yours, tsk tsk...”

“Chu Feng, you are nothing more than trash. From head to toe, you are trash. If I wished to kill you, I would not even have to use my hands,” After the World Devastator Immortal said those words, chilliness flashed through his eyes.

In an instant, Chu Feng felt his entire body’s blood and aura boiling over. Then, ‘puu,’ Chu Feng vomited a mouthful of blood.

Chapter 1940 – In So Much Pain That One Wished To Die

“What is it that you’re wearing? Is it an armor made of Blood Devouring Insects? Is that how you all managed to charge into the Blood Devouring Killing Formation?”

“Were you the one who killed the YinYang Immortal? No, no, no, I doubt it was you. It should have been Xian Miaomiao instead. Truth be told, Xian Miaomiao was much more powerful than you. Even though you possess the same power as Lord Hall Master, you are inferior to even Xian Miaomiao. As such, how could you possibly compare to Lord Hall Master?” The World Devastator Immortal landed from the sky and arrived beside Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was silent. He was only staring ferociously at the World Devastator Immortal. His gaze was so frightening that it caused the World Devastator Immortal to feel very uncomfortable.

“What are you looking at? You’re not allowed to look,” The World Devastator Immortal’s foot landed ruthlessly on Chu Feng’s left arm. He ruthlessly crushed Chu Feng’s bones with his stomp.

However, Chu Feng refused to remove his gaze from the World Devastator Immortal. Just like that, he stared at the World Devastator Immortal in an extremely fierce manner. He was planning to remember this man. As long as he didn’t die, he would definitely make him pay for his actions and deeds today.

“Continue to look, this is what you get for looking at me!” The World Devastator Immortal began to trample Chu Feng’s body nonstop with his foot. He shattered all of the bones in Chu Feng’s body. Yet, even with that, he was unable to shift Chu Feng’s gaze away from him.

“Humph, useless trash. The current you is who you truly are,”

The World Devastator Immortal snorted coldly. Then, he floated into the air and swiftly left.

At that moment, only Chu Feng remained there. All of his bones had been shattered by the World Devastator Immortal's stomping. His internal organs and the surface of his body were also badly damaged.

Chu Feng truly looked like nothing more than a bloody piece of flesh. His entire body was covered in blood. His shattered bones could be seen amidst the blood and viscera.

Painful. Naturally, this would be very painful. However, the pain from his body was much inferior to the pain Chu Feng was feeling in his heart.

To see that many people die before him without being able to do anything, that sort of feeling truly gripped the heart.

"Chu Feng, if you are a man, then stand back up. Do not let their scheme succeed. Do not allow yourself to be beaten down by them."

"It is true that you are inferior to them right now. However, that's only because you have yet to mature. They have all trained in martial cultivation for thousands of years, or even tens of thousands of years. Yet, what about you? You've only trained for over a dozen years."

"If they cannot suppress you even after training for so long, they would truly be humiliating themselves."

"By the same account, if you were to train for as long as they have, they will definitely not be able to suppress you," At this moment, Her Lady Queen's voice sounded. The tone of her voice was very stern. However, more than the sternness was encouragement.

"Eggy, rest assured. I can be beaten down to the floor. However, I will definitely stand back up. The dignity that they have snatched

from me, I will, sooner or later, seize it back. As for the pain and suffering that they have bestowed upon me, I will return it tenfold, a hundredfold and even a thousandfold.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to unleash his spirit power. At the same time, the Vermillion Bird Resurrection Technique enveloped his entire body. With the combination of the two, Chu Feng’s body was instantly healed.

Chu Feng stood up and looked to the surrounding area. The more he looked, the more pain he felt. However, he still insisted on looking. He needed to remember this pain. He was going to carve this pain into his bones and engrave it into his heart.

“Sooner or later, I’ll have them know that humiliating me without killing me today was their greatest mistake,” Killing intent was overflowing in Chu Feng’s eyes. He swore that he would return the humiliation he had suffered today with interest.

Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, crushed rocks suddenly moved about in the distance. Then, a red light soared into the sky.

It was Lil Red!!!

“Great sir, great sir,” Lil Red ran directly toward Chu Feng. Tears filled its two little eyes.

“Lil Red, how did you manage to survive?” Chu Feng was very surprised. Lil Red was clearly on Xian Miaomiao. As Xian Miaomiao had been killed, Lil Red should have been killed alongside her.

“She naturally would have to live,” Right at that moment, a familiar voice sounded.

Chu Feng’s body trembled upon hearing that voice. The reason for that was because that was Xian Miaomiao’s voice.

At that moment, Chu Feng hurriedly turned his head around. It

was only then that he discovered that Xian Miaomiao was actually standing not far away from him. She was walking toward him.

At this moment, other than a change in dress, Xian Miaomiao's appearance was exactly the same as before. She was indeed alive and not dead.

"Miaomiao, you're alive? How could this be?" Chu Feng ran over to Xian Miaomiao excitedly. Astonishment filled his heart.

"You're very surprised, right? I'm not that easily killed. Let me tell you a secret. [I possess a total of nine lives](#)," Xian Miaomiao said.

"Nine lives?" Chu Feng was very confused.

"That's right. It's this. You can have a look if you don't believe me," As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she removed the necklace on her neck and opened the pendant that was on it.

"This..." Upon seeing the pearl in the pendant, Chu Feng's eyes immediately started to shine with astonishment.

"Wow! Chu Feng, that girl actually possesses such a treasure. That is most definitely the most powerful treasure this Queen has seen so far." Even Her Lady Queen was incomparably shocked.

It was a treasure, most definitely a treasure. One could tell that it was a treasure just by looking at it.

"Amazing, no? My lives are not with me. Instead, they're all in that pearl. That's why, even if my body and soul are destroyed, I will still not die, because this pearl will revive me."

"Not only that, the pearl was also able to teleport me to another location during the moment of my life and death crisis."

"This would cause others to think that I had been shattered to bits from their attack. However, I would have actually escaped with all my treasures. It is precisely because of that that Lil Red is also still alive," Xian Miaomiao said with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng felt extremely pained in his heart as he looked to Xian Miaomiao acting in such a manner. This girl before him had just suffered the pain of losing her clansmen, her relatives. She was feeling even more unbearable pain than him.

Yet, she was actually able to smile in this sort of situation. Chu Feng could tell that she was doing so deliberately because she was afraid that she would burden him. That was why she was forcing herself to smile and pretending that she was happy.

“But, you have still lost a life, right?” Chu Feng looked to the pearl and saw that there were only seven rays of light within it. As such, he knew that Xian Miaomiao now only had seven lives remaining. If she really did possess nine lives, she had already lost two lives now.

“It’s alright. Even if I have lost a life, I will still be able to die seven more times. Merely that is not something that others can compare with,” Xian Miaomiao said complacently.

“Yayaya, beauty, in that case, you used one of your lives to save great sir earlier?” Lil Red asked in an extremely shocked manner.

“Lil Red, shut up!” Xian Miaomiao immediately shouted at Lil Red.

“Lil Red, what did you say?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked. He was able to determine that something was amiss.

“Great sir, when you were unconscious and seriously injured, this beauty used that pearl to save you. I saw with my own eyes that a strand of light left the pearl and entered your body. That is how you managed to recover from your injuries.”

“If the strands of light represent the beauty’s lives, then she used one of her lives to save you,” Lil Red ignored Xian Miaomiao and told Chu Feng what had happened.

“Miaomiao, you actually-!!!” After hearing this, Chu Feng felt as if his entire body was numb. He didn’t know what to say to her.

Xian Miaomiao had actually used one of her lives in order to save him from the Evil God Sword's backlash.

Cats have nine lives lol. Her name is Meowmeow.

Chapter 1941 – Undoing The Seal?

“Aiya, this Princess has a lot of lives. Thus, don’t worry too much about it,” Xian Miaomiao said indifferently.

However, Chu Feng was feeling an unspeakable sensation in his heart.

If Xian Miaomiao did not have nine lives, if she only had one life, she would be dead right now.

Thus, Chu Feng could not just pretend that nothing happened just because Xian Miaomiao possessed nine lives. The reason for that was because she had already died twice.

She had killed herself the first time. She had killed herself for his sake.

She had been killed the second time. She had been killed because of Chu Feng.

The two lives that Xian Miaomiao had lost were both related to Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng truly could not pretend that nothing had happened.

However, how long had they known one another? Why would Xian Miaomiao be helping him to this extent?

It was precisely because Xian Miaomiao had done those things, even though there was no reason for her to do so, that Chu Feng felt extremely grateful and indebted to her.

“Miaomiao, from today on, my life is yours,” Chu Feng said to Xian Miaomiao.

“What nonsense are you talking about? This Princess is not interested in your life. I don’t want it,” Xian Miaomiao curled her lips. However, she soon said, “Chu Feng, let me tell you something: this Blood Devouring Killing Formation was not only here to seal the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. There is actually a treasure

hidden here too.”

“Treasure?” Hearing that word, Chu Feng’s heart was moved.

“Really. Merely, the hidden treasure is very special, and useless to ordinary people. However, I felt that it might be of use to you. In short, just follow me,” As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she entered the place where Lil Red had come from earlier.

Chu Feng followed after her.

After entering the tunnel that Lil Red had dug, Chu Feng discovered that tunnel was very deep, truly unimaginably deep.

After they reached the bottom of the tunnel, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously as joy filled his face.

Hidden in the depths of the earth was a vast amount of dazzling golden-bright water. The water seemed to be made of old gold. There was enough water here that it could be called a small lake.

However, it was not molten gold. Instead, it was a special sort of water, a treasure for world spiritists.

“Chu Feng, do you know what that is?”

“Even though I am not a world spiritist, I am still able to tell that this water is very important. The spirit formation seal of this place should have been maintained using this water,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Indeed, the spirit formation seal was indeed maintained by this water.”

“It is fortunate that it was hidden deep underground, and was not discovered by the people from the Dark Hall.”

As Chu Feng was a world spiritist, he was naturally capable of telling that the water here had been the core of the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

“Miaomiao, you have truly helped me enormously this time around,” Chu Feng said to Xian Miaomiao in a very thankful

manner.

“It’s all because my life pearl teleported me here. Else, I would not have discovered it either.”

“That said, is this water truly useful?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“Useful, extremely useful,” It was not without reason that Chu Feng would be this excited after just experiencing such a painful thing.

Chu Feng currently possessed a way to help Her Lady Queen break free from the seal that his mother had placed on her. However, he did not possess enough strength himself, nor did he possess treasures that could provide the energy that he needed. That was the reason why Chu Feng felt that undoing the seal on Her Lady Queen would be something that would have to happen far in the indefinite future.

However, now, this vast amount of unknown golden water had managed to solve the issue that Chu Feng had thought to be impossible to solve.

Contained within the golden water was extremely powerful world spirit energy. Even if Chu Feng was unable to completely undo the seal his mother had placed on Eggy using this energy, he would still be able to, with the help of the golden water, undo a portion of Eggy’s sealed cultivation.

“Exactly what use does this water have?” Xian Miaomiao asked curiously. Originally, she had only planned to show Chu Feng the golden water to console him. After all, even if the water was a treasure, there shouldn’t be much use for it other than to use it to set up spirit formations. As such, it couldn’t be considered an actual treasure.

Xian Miaomiao had never expected for Chu Feng to be this overjoyed upon seeing the golden water. This made Xian Miaomiao very curious as to exactly what the water was, and exactly how it

could help Chu Feng.

“It can help me release a little demon,” Chu Feng said.

“Little demon?” Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao became even more confused. However, anticipation filled her face.

Actually, at that moment, Eggy was also as confused as Xian Miaomiao. She too did not understand what Chu Feng meant by those words.

“To be exact, it is an Asura,” Chu Feng added. As he spoke, he opened his World Spirit Gate.

After the World Spirit Gate opened, Lil Red and Xian Miaomiao both turned their gazes to it.

Before the gazes of the two of them, Her Lady Queen flew out from the World Spirit Gate and arrived before Chu Feng.

“Wow! Beauty, beauty, that beauty is truly too beautiful,” After seeing Her Lady Queen, Lil Red immediately cried out in alarm.

It was not that Lil Red had an exaggerated reaction. In fact, upon seeing Her Lady Queen, even Xian Miaomiao revealed an astonished expression. She reacted this way because of Her Lady Queen’s beauty.

“Chu Feng, could she be your world spirit? That legendary Asura World Spirit?” Xian Miaomiao asked curiously.

“Mn, she is Her Lady Queen,” Chu Feng said by way of introduction.

“Miaomiao, if you are willing to allow me to call you lil sis Miaomiao, this Queen is willing for you to address me as big sis Eggy,” Eggy said to Xian Miaomiao.

Before Xian Miaomiao could say anything, Lil Red shouted happily. “Gotcha, Big sis Eggy,”

“No, you’re not allowed to call me Eggy,” Eggy shook her head.

“Then what should I call you, beauty?” Lil Red asked.

“You can only address me as Milady Queen,” Eggy said.

“Gotcha, Milady Queen,” The shameless Lil Red called Eggy Milady Queen without the slightest hesitation.

“Mn,” Eggy nodded in satisfaction. Then, she looked to Xian Miaomiao and said with a smile, “Lil sis Miaomiao, come on, call me big sis Eggy.”

“Okay, lil sis Eggy,” Xian Miaomiao said without any hesitation.

“Wrong, it’s big sis, not lil sis,” Eggy corrected.

“But you’re clearly younger than me. You should be the lil sis, no?” Xian Miaomiao said with contempt.

“What? This Queen is clearly much older than you,” Eggy said.

“Liar. Your young and tender appearance has already betrayed you,” Xian Miaomiao had an expression of disbelief.

“Doesn’t matter, I’m more mature than you,” Eggy said.

“How are you more mature than me? It’s clearly me who’s more mature,” Xian Miaomiao refuted her.

Seeing these two young girls arguing with one another and declaring themselves to be more mature, black lines began to crease Chu Feng’s forehead.

That said, although the two girls were arguing, they appeared to be getting along very well. This was the first time that Chu Feng had seen Eggy acting this friendly towards someone other than himself. It seemed that Eggy had truly grown fond of that girl Xian Miaomiao.

Her Lady Queen and Xian Miaomiao argued the issue of who would be the big sis and who would be the lil sis for a very long time. Neither girl was willing to back down.

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng spoke to stop them. “Milady Queen,

my Princess Miaomiao, it's enough. Let's stop arguing so we can talk about some serious matters,"

"Chu Feng, could you be implying that that golden water would be capable of helping me undo my seal?" After hearing what Chu Feng said, Eggy ran over to Chu Feng.

When Chu Feng had said 'little demon,' she had been confused by what he meant. However, when he said 'Asura,' she realized Chu Feng's intentions.

Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao asked curiously, "Undo her seal? What's going on?"

"That's right, that's right, tell us," Lil Red was incomparably curious.

Chapter 1942 – Setting up the Formation

“Milady Queen is extremely powerful. Merely, her cultivation has been sealed.”

“However, this golden water might be able to help me unseal Milady Queen’s cultivation,” Chu Feng said to Xian Miaomiao.

“Ah? Then how powerful is lil sis Eggy? Is she as powerful as me?” Xian Miaomiao asked.

“I’m not certain myself. However, I feel that she might be more powerful than you,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng did not know what Her Lady Queen’s cultivation really was. However, he was certain of one thing. That is, Her Lady Queen was a Martial Emperor stronger than the Asura Evil Spirit that he had released before.

The current situation was extremely bad. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master had already targeted Chu Feng. Even though he had not killed Chu Feng, Chu Feng knew that he had considered him to be a threat. Sooner or later, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master would kill him.

If he were able to unseal Her Lady Queen’s cultivation at that time, it would be enormously beneficial to his predicament.

“Aiyaya, I had originally planned to look after lil sis Eggy. Am I to be looked after by my lil sis now?” After finding out that Her Lady Queen’s cultivation was very strong, Xian Miaomiao revealed a depressed expression. However, soon after, she looked to Eggy and said, “However, it’s alright. After all, you’re the lil sis. Even if you are to be looking after your big sis, it would only be a matter of course.”

“Hehe, very well. After I regain my cultivation, I will make sure to properly do my duty as the big sis and properly discipline you,” A sinister smile appeared on Her Lady Queen’s face.

“Eh...” Xian Miaomiao was startled to see that smile. Feeling helpless, she turned to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, properly manage your Eggy. She’s planning to bully me.”

“Hahaha, Chu Feng is merely this Queen’s servant. Did you think that he could control me?” Her Lady Queen placed her hands on her waist as she laughed loudly. However, her appearance was truly adorable.

“Chu Feng, tell me that what she said is not the truth,” Xian Miaomiao looked to Chu Feng.

“No, Miaomiao, what Her Lady Queen said is the truth,” Chu Feng said helplessly.

“Oh, nooooo!!!!” Xian Miaomiao shouted in depression.

However, soon, Xian Miaomiao’s gaze shifted, and her expression changed. It was as if she had thought of something.

With a beaming smile, she looked to Eggy and said, “Big sis Eggy, please look after me in the future. Let’s bully Chu Feng together. Big sis, just don’t bully me, okay?”

“The hell!” Chu Feng was speechless upon hearing those words. That girl was truly too shameless. She actually admitted defeat right away. However, it was one thing for her to admit defeat. Yet, she actually involved him in this matter. He was merely a bystander!

“Chu Feng, are you really able to help me undo the seal?” Her Lady Queen was still hesitant. As the spirit formation seal had accompanied her for so long, she was fully aware of how strong that seal was.

“I have a fifty percent certainty of being able to do so. However, that fifty percent certainty is only of being able to unseal a portion of your cultivation. I am unable to completely undo my mother’s seal,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, when do you plan to attempt it?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“This matter should be not be delayed. Let’s do it now,” Chu Feng said.

“Now?” Both Her Lady Queen and Xian Miaomiao were surprised by Chu Feng’s words.

“Rest assured, the people from the Dark Hall have already left. Else, they would’ve already shown themselves by now.”

“Furthermore, I am unable to take this golden water away from here. Thus, regardless of when we attempt to undo the seal, we can only do it here.”

“Furthermore, as the Blood Devouring Killing Formation has been destroyed, if this matter were to spread, countless experts would come here to search for treasures.”

“Thus, it is not safe to keep the golden water here. If we wish to use it, we must do so immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, what should I do?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I need to face you when undoing your seal. Thus, when attempting to do so, I will need you to be out here.”

“Furthermore, after I finish setting up the formation, you will enter a half unconscious state. Although you will be aware, and can continue to see and hear what is happening through me, you will unable to speak. It is only after the formation is completed that you will be able to regain your freedom.”

“Furthermore, I will only know whether or not we can successfully remove your seal after that spirit formation is completed,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, how long will it take?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I’m not sure,” Chu Feng said.

“Doesn’t matter then. Since we’ve decided, let’s begin,” Her Lady Queen said.

Then, Chu Feng had Her Lady Queen sit on the golden water.

Then, using the golden water as the core, Chu Feng began to set up his spirit formation.

Even though the golden water was the most important part of the spirit formation, Chu Feng, for the sake of setting up this spirit formation, took out all of his most precious treasures and materials.

Furthermore, Chu Feng spent over an entire month setting up that spirit formation. Chu Feng had never spent this much time setting up a spirit formation before. This was the longest he had ever taken.

During this period of time, Xian Miaomiao and Lil Red guarded the cave the entire time. Furthermore, they did not say a single word.

It was only when Chu Feng stood back up and heaved a long sigh that Xian Miaomiao ran over to him.

As Xian Miaomiao looked to Her Lady Queen, she asked Chu Feng, “Succeeded?”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen was still sitting cross-legged in midair. Merely, her body was emitting a dazzling golden-bright light. It was as if she had turned into a golden statue.

The reason for that was because all of that golden water, without a single drop remaining, had been condensed onto Eggy by Chu Feng.

Not only had that golden water completely covered Eggy, it was also being assimilated into Eggy’s body. At this moment, it was undoing Eggy’s seal. Merely, no one knew how long it would take.

“The spirit formation has been successfully set up. However, I do not know whether or not it will be able to successfully undo Eggy’s seal,” As Chu Feng spoke, he reopened the World Spirit Gate and placed Eggy back into his World Spirit Space.

“Chu Feng, I can tell that you’ve exhausted yourself. Here, eat

this,” As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she extended her palm, revealing ten special medicinal pellets which she handed to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that those ten medicinal pellets were treasures to restore one’s martial and spirit power.

Indeed, Chu Feng had truly exhausted his strength to set up the spirit formation for Eggy. It was only because he possessed extremely strong spirit power that he was able to continue using it for so long.

However, for the sake of setting up that spirit formation, Chu Feng had nearly exhausted all of his world spirit power.

Even if he recovered, it would take some time.

Thus, even though those ten medicinal pellets were extremely precious, Chu Feng did not refuse them. Instead, he swallowed all ten medicinal pellets.

The reason for that was because he did not possess any medicinal pellet that could restore his spirit power as well, as the ones that Xian Miaomiao handed him.

“Miaomiao, thanks,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s no need to be modest with me,” Xian Miaomiao said with a smile.

“Come, let’s return to the Elf Kingdom,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s no need,” Xian Miaomiao shook her head.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng asked in a confused manner.

“They have come to receive me already,” As Xian Miaomiao spoke, she flew toward the exit. Chu Feng followed closely behind her.

After exiting the cave, Chu Feng discovered that there was already an army from the Elf Kingdom standing outside the cave in an orderly manner.

They were the elite soldiers of the Elf Kingdom. Not to mention the other experts, there were even four Protectors and two Grand Elders present.

The person leading them emitted an extremely powerful aura. He was wearing green battle armor with a red mantle draped across his shoulder. This person... was actually the Ancient Era's Elves' Elf King.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it seems that you've succeeded?” Seeing that Chu Feng had come out of the cave, the Elf King walked over to Chu Feng.

Chapter 1943 – Things Have Changed

It turned out that the Ancient Era's Elves had requested reinforcements the moment the Blood Devouring Killing Formation had been destroyed.

After the Elf King received that cry for reinforcements, he personally led the Ancient Era's Elves' army and hurried over. The request he had received did not mention the Dark Hall. However, he had a faint feeling that this matter was related to the Dark Hall.

Thus, even though they had rushed over immediately with all the speed they could muster, they were still too late.

Fortunately... Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao were still alive.

After they found Xian Miaomiao, the Ancient Era's Elves' army came to know about Chu Feng setting up the spirit formation to undo Eggy's seal. Thus, they did not try to disturb Chu Feng, and instead guarded this place the entire time.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I already know about what had happened here."

"I hope that you do not burden yourself with what has happened here. After all, wars are always cruel."

"Furthermore, this is not your fault. Instead, this is the fault of the Dark Hall," The Elf King said to Chu Feng.

"But, Elf King, that Dark Hall's Hall Master, he..." Chu Feng wanted to say that the Dark Hall's Hall Master possessed the same Inherited Bloodline as his own, that it was very possible that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was someone from his clan, and that this matter was ultimately related to him.

"Chu Feng, I already know about everything. Each person possesses their own thoughts. You are not required to take responsibility for the faults of others."

“However, the Dark Hall’s actions this time around are clearly a declaration of war against us Ancient Era’s Elves. As such, I will definitely not leave this matter be.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you should be standing on our side, right?” The Elf King asked.

At that moment, all of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

“The hatred between the Dark Hall and I is absolutely irreconcilable. If possible, I want to personally kill the Dark Hall’s Hall Master,” Chu Feng said those words while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Very well,” The Elf King smiled. Then, he asked, “What do you plan to do now?”

“I plan to make a trip to the Cyanwood Mountain,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” The Elf King nodded. Then, he said to a very tall yet very thin Grand Elder behind him, “Lord Lianghua, I’ll trouble you with protecting the Cyanwood Mountain for me.”

“Yes, Your Majesty,” That Grand Elder said.

“Your Majesty, this is?” Chu Feng was extremely shocked.

“Chu Feng, I have already heard about the things relating to you. The people closest to you are gathered in the Cyanwood Mountain. That place will become your weak spot.”

“Even though Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal are there, I believe you already know how strong the Dark Hall is.”

“When even the World Devastator Immortal is willing to work for the Dark Hall, Nangong Longjian is simply unable to protect the Cyanwood Mountain by himself. If something were to happen to the Cyanwood Mountain, I believe you would become extremely worried and troubled.”

“As for Lord Lianghua, he is a rank eight Martial Emperor.”

“Even if it is the World Devastator Immortal, he would not dare to act too impudent before Lord Lianghua. With Lord Lianghua protecting the Cyanwood Mountain, I will also be able to feel more relieved,” The Elf King said.

“I, Chu Feng, will definitely not forget this assistance Your Majesty has given me,” Chu Feng said gratefully.

He did not refuse, for he was unable to find any reason to refuse the help. What the Elf King said was very reasonable. The Cyanwood Mountain was indeed one of the locations Chu Feng was most concerned about. Furthermore, it was also Chu Feng’s weak spot.

However, the Ancient Era’s Elves were currently facing the Dark Hall, and had a battle to fight. Yet, at such a time, the Elf King was actually dispatching Lord Lianghua to protect the Cyanwood Mountain. This was truly a favor that Chu Feng could not show enough gratitude for.

“Little friend Chu Feng, let’s go,” Lord Lianghua said.

Even though Lord Lianghua was a person that was high and above everyone else, a Grand Elder that even the other Ancient Era’s Elves would tremble with fear upon seeing, he did not display an attitude of arrogance toward Chu Feng.

“Lord Lianghua, I’ll have to trouble you then,” Chu Feng said respectfully.

Then, Chu Feng and Lord Lianghua proceeded for the Purple Flames Blackmountain together. Even though they were planning to proceed for the Cyanwood Mountain, Chu Feng needed to bring Bai Ruochen, her mother Bai Suyan and Jiang Wushang to the Cyanwood Mountain as well.

“Royal father.”

After Chu Feng left, Xian Miaomiao suddenly threw herself into

the Elf Kingdom's bosom and began to cry loudly.

"Uncle died. Uncle was killed by the World Devastator Immortal."

"I will avenge him! I'll definitely kill the World Devastator Immortal," Xian Miaomiao was feeling extremely pained. Sparkling teardrops rolled down her beautiful cheeks.

Chu Feng had guessed correctly. Xian Miaomiao had been pretending to be strong and forcing herself to smile so that he would not feel burdened.

However, she was actually feeling enormous pain. After all, that blonde old man was someone that had looked after her, ever since she was a child. She possessed a very deep affection for the blonde old man. As such, how could she not be feeling pain?

Merely, the pain that she felt could only be revealed after Chu Feng left.

"It's okay. Uncle will not have died in vain. Not a single one of our Ancient Era's Elves will have died in vain. I will make the Dark Hall pay for their actions in blood."

While embracing his daughter, the Elf King was also feeling extremely pained. At the same time... he was also feeling an endless amount of rage. With so many of his clansmen having been killed, he, as the Clan Chief, was suffering from a greater pain than anyone else.

.....

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and Lord Lianghua successfully retrieved Bai Ruochen, her mother Bai Suyan and Jiang Wushang.

Currently, they had finally arrived at the Cyanwood Domain and reached the Cyanwood Mountain.

"Wow, the current Cyanwood Mountain is truly bustling with

noise and excitement,” Bai Ruochen was very surprised upon seeing the current Cyanwood Mountain.

The reason for that was because the current Cyanwood Mountain was truly different from before. There were people both in the sky and on the ground. It was extremely lively.

The Cyanwood Mountain was now most definitely many times livelier than it had been when Chu Feng had first arrived.

Currently, the Cyanwood Mountain was not only a place that the people from the Cyanwood Domain wished to join, it had also become a place that people from all over the Holy Land of Martialism wished to join.

The reason for that was because news had spread of Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal had becoming guest elders of the Cyanwood Mountain.

Furthermore, the news of the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts becoming the Cyanwood Mountain’s ally had also spread.

Currently, to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, not only was the Cyanwood Mountain the leader of the Nine Powers, it had become an enormous power that surpassed even the Four Great Imperial Clans.

For such a huge monster, even though it would only accept outstanding talents as disciples, there were countless people that wished to become its disciples.

“Not to mention Nangong Longjian and the others joining the Cyanwood Mountain, merely little friend Chu Feng’s reputation itself would be sufficient to make the Cyanwood Mountain reach the peak of prosperity,” Lord Lianghua said.

“Indeed, Chu Feng’s current reputation surpasses even that of Nangong Longjian and the Compass Immortal.”

“However... if the people of the world were to know that the Ancient Era’s Elves are also allied with Chu Feng, and that even

Lord Lianghua was sent forth to personally protect the Cyanwood Mountain, I wonder how shocked they would be,” Bai Ruochen said with an expression of anticipation.

“This matter of me being here cannot be known by others. We cannot allow others to know that I’m guarding the Cyanwood Mountain,” Lord Lianghua said.

“Why’s that?” Jiang Wushang asked in a confused manner, “Wouldn’t there be even more people that would want to join the Cyanwood Mountain should they know that Lord Lianghua is also here? Wouldn’t that allow the Cyanwood Mountain to become even more powerful?”

“The current enemy of the Cyanwood Mountain is not the other Nine Powers, the Four Great Imperial Clans or the Three Palaces. Instead, it is the Dark Hall.”

“The Dark Hall is a power that the Cyanwood Mountain, regardless of how much it expands, cannot surpass.”

“That is why we cannot allow the people of the Dark Hall to know that Lord Lianghua is here.”

“If they were to know, they would be prepared should they decide to attack the Cyanwood Mountain in the future. That would be detrimental to both the Cyanwood Mountain and Lord Lianghua,” Chu Feng explained.

“So that’s the case,” Hearing those words, both Jiang Wushang and Bai Ruochen came to a sudden realization.

“What little friend Chu Feng said is very correct,” Lord Lianghua nodded satisfiedly.

As for Bai Suyan, she was looking at Chu Feng with a smile on her face.

She felt that it was no mere coincidence that Chu Feng had matured to the point that he now had. He truly possessed capabilities that surpassed others.

Chapter 1944 – Enjoying Both Fortune And Misfortune Together

Just then, the core disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain were all rapidly proceeding toward the Cyanwood Mountain's main lecture hall.

To a greater or lesser degree, they all had expressions of excitement on their faces. There were some among them that were so emotional that they actually started to cry.

The reason why the core disciples were acting in such a manner was because the person who was giving a lecture today was one of the grand characters of the Holy Land of Martialism, the Compass Immortal.

“Li Qing, Zhao Xue, quickly, move faster. The Compass Immortal is going to start his lecture soon,” A robustly built youth shouted eagerly at a young man and woman behind him.

“Ma Hu, why are you in a rush? Even though the Compass Immortal is extremely powerful, I am not a world spiritist. Rather than his lecture, I am looking forward to Lord Nangong Longjian's lecture even more.”

As that young woman by the name of Zhao Xue spoke, she looked to the young man beside her, “Li Qing, what do you think? Am I correct?” As for that young man by the name of Li Qing, not only did he possess a handsome appearance, his cultivation was also very decent. Although he was very young, he was already a rank seven Martial King. His cultivation could be considered to be extremely powerful even amongst all of the Cyanwood Mountain's disciples.

“Zhao Xue, you're wrong. Even though we are not world spiritists, it remains that the Compass Immortal is a greatly renowned individual in the Holy Land of Martialism. In normal

times, it would be impossible for us to even meet his great self. For us to be able to listen to his lecture now is simply our honor,” Li Qing said.

“That’s true. Merely, I wonder, exactly what sort of price did our Cyanwood Mountain pay to be able to invite the Compass Immortal and Lord Nangong Longjian, those two grand characters, to come here?” Zhao Xue asked in a very puzzled manner.

“These two grand characters are not people that our Cyanwood Mountain could invite over regardless of what we offered,” Li Qing said.

“Ah? In that case, why would the Compass Immortal and Lord Nangong Longjian be our Cyanwood Mountain’s guest elders?” Zhao Xue became even more curious.

“You are truly slow. Is there even a need to ask that question? It’s naturally because of Chu Feng,” Li Qing said.

“Chu Feng? It’s Chu Feng? Chu Feng truly possesses such a great amount of face?” Hearing what Li Qing said, Zhao Xue became emotional.

“Of course. Did you think that the battle at the Ximen Imperial Clan was fake?”

“Furthermore, didn’t the three of us all travel so far to join the Cyanwood Mountain because of Chu Feng?” Li Qing said.

“Right, right, right. Chu Feng is my idol,” At that moment, Zhao Xue had a love-stricken expression on her face.

“Oh you...” Li Qing smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Chu Feng is not only your idol, he’s the idol of countless members of the younger generation.”

After he finished saying those words, Li Qing swept his gaze over the many people that were also rushing to the lecture hall beside them.

The majority of them were foreign faces. They were all people that had just joined the Cyanwood Mountain.

However, without exception, they all possessed outstanding talent. With the acceptance of these disciples, the overall quality of the Cyanwood Mountain's core disciples became higher.

As for these disciples, at least half of them had joined the Cyanwood Mountain because of Chu Feng's reputation.

Suddenly, Ma Hu who was leading the way ran back to Li Qing and Zhao Xue excitedly. "Li Qing, Zhao Xue, quickly, look over there. Those are people from the Asura Division."

Following the direction that Ma Hu indicated, a group of people appeared in Li Qing and Zhao Xue's line of sight. After those people appeared, the surrounding crowd all revealed envious and respectful gazes.

In fact, some of the disciples' reaction simply did not appear like the reaction of someone seeing a fellow disciple. Rather, it was as if they were seeing gods. Reverence and adoration filled their faces.

The Asura Division was currently the most popular division in the Cyanwood Mountain. It was also the strongest division in the Cyanwood Mountain. Practically all of the disciples on the Cyanwood Succession List were in the Asura Division.

For example, Jiang Furong, Bai Yuxiao and the others had all renounced their original divisions and joined the Asura Division.

In fact, the members of the Asura Division enjoyed a great amount of privilege in the Cyanwood Mountain. Those were orders given personally by the Cyanwood Mountain's headmaster. Reportedly... the order was something that the Cyanwood Mountain's ancestor-level character, Baili Xuankong, had approved.

As for the reason why the Asura Division was so powerful, it was all because of a single person, the Asura Division's founder, Chu

Feng.

Thus, the current Asura Division was a place that all the disciples wished to join. Merely, it was not that simple to join the Asura Division now. Other than the elites among the core disciples, it was simply hopeless for others to join the Asura Division.

“Strange, didn’t they say that the Asura Division created by Chu Feng is filled with the Cyanwood Mountain’s core disciples’ elites?”

“Look at those two, they’re so weak. With their weak cultivations, how were they able to obtain the mark of the Asura Division?”

“Furthermore, those people beside them... those Asura Division’s members with very strong cultivations, why would they be so respectful toward those two? Exactly what is going on here?” Zhao Xue was extremely confused after she saw the leading man and woman among the Asura Division’s people.

“That’s true. What’s going on here? With their cultivations, it should simply be impossible for them to enter the Asura Division, no?” Li Qing and Ma Hu were also confused.

Suddenly, a voice sounded from behind them, “Junior brothers and sister, you all must be new here, right?”

“Senior... senior sister Jiang?” Li Qing, Zhao Xue and Ma Hu were all shocked upon seeing the beauty behind them.

The surrounding crowd also revealed extremely respectful expressions.

The reason for that was because the person that had appeared before them was one of the strongest disciples in the Cyanwood Mountain, the second ranked disciple on the Cyanwood Succession List, Jiang Furong. As for the disciple that was ranked first, it would naturally be Chu Feng.

Even though Ma Hu, Zhao Xue and Li Qing were all pretty strong

among the new disciples, they were still extremely excited upon seeing Jiang Furong. Not only did Jiang Furong possess a very high status in the Cyanwood Mountain, her own strength was also very strong. Currently, she was already a Half Martial Emperor.

Among the disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain, she was the second strongest after Chu Feng.

“Senior sister Jiang, we are indeed new. We all wished to join the Asura Division.”

“However, we heard that we must pass exams in order to join the Asura Division, and that those exams are very difficult.”

“Thus, why is it that that senior brother and sister were able to become members of the Asura Division even though their cultivations are so weak?” Li Qing asked in a very curious manner.

“That’s a long story. The story would have to begin on the day when Chu Feng created the Asura Division. When Chu Feng created the Asura Division, he was also a new disciple to the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Right after entering the Cyanwood Mountain, he made countless enemies. Many people even wanted to kill him because they were envious of his talent.”

“Afterward, the several strongest divisions in the Cyanwood Mountain even joined hands to attack... the still-new Asura Division.”

“At that time, the Asura Division was like a sheet of loose sand. Before the invaders, countless members fled.”

“However, during that moment of crisis, there were still members that were willing to stay and endure the crisis alongside Chu Feng. Even when Chu Feng tried to force them away, they refused to go.”

“Thus, those original Asura Division members, even though their cultivations might be very weak, they are worthy of our respect,”

Jiang Furong explained.

“So that’s the case,” After learning of what happened, when Li Qing and the others looked to that two senior brother and sister again, they all revealed expressions of reverence.

“Senior sister Jiang, may I know the names of that senior brother and that senior sister?” Zhao Xue asked.

“The man’s name is Fang Tuohai. The woman’s name is Wang Wei. They were the true original members of the Asura Division. It is said that the two of them were with the Asura Division since the day it was created,” Jiang Furong said.

“Wow, they’re actually that amazing?” After finding out about that, the gazes with which Li Qing and the others looked to Wang Wei and Fang Tuohai became even more respectful. Not only that, they also felt very envious of them.

They were truly envious of these people that had fought alongside Chu Feng before he grew stronger.

Even though their cultivations were very weak, they were people that no one dared to offend in the Cyanwood Mountain right now. As for that... it was all because of the fact that they possessed great vision and decided to share Chu Feng’s trials and tribulations without fearing his powerful enemies.

Thus, Li Qing and the others knew that it was impossible for one to obtain the status which Fang Tuohai, Wang Wei and the others possessed right now. The reason for that was because... back when Chu Feng was still weak, very few people were willing to stand by his side during that moment of crisis.

Even though they were not present during that time, they were able to imagine the suffering that Fang Tuohai, Wang Wei and the others had experienced alongside Chu Feng back then. However, with everything that they possessed now, it was all worth it.

In the past, they had endured trials and tribulations alongside

Chu Feng. And now, they were finally able to obtain fortune because of Chu Feng.

They had both fortune and misfortune together. Thus, they truly deserved all that they possessed right now.

Chapter 1945 – Let Me Try

“Actually, before Chu Feng dissolved the Asura Division, the Asura Division already had close to ten thousand members. When he dissolved the Asura Division, he mentioned that all of its members were allowed to return to the Asura Division without having to go through any exams should it be reestablished.”

“After the Asura Division was reestablished, many people chose to return. However, there were also people that were too ashamed to return. That being said, only a hundred and eighty-seven people were actually able to obtain the respect of others like those two.”

“Those hundred and eighty-seven people were the ones that refused to leave the Asura Division during its moment of crisis,” Jiang Furong added.

“They truly possessed great vision. When so many people chose to abandon Chu Feng, they were actually willing to follow him with their lives,” Even though he knew that their status was not something that one could obtain through envy, Ma Hu still had an extremely envious gaze.

As for Li Qing and Zhao Xue, the two of them felt even greater respect for those hundred and eighty-seven individuals.

Afterward, Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue all followed Jiang Furong into the main lecture hall. They began to ask Jiang Furong who those hundred and eighty-seven individuals were.

As for Jiang Furong, she was truly miraculous. She actually remembered the names of those hundred and eighty-seven individuals. One by one, she mentioned their names to Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue.

Due to the fact that Jiang Furong was someone that was there during those events, someone who saw the scene of Chu Feng’s Asura Division being forced into a corner by Bai Yunxiao, Tao

Xiangyu and the others, she also felt a lot of respect for those hundred and eighty-seven individuals that stood alongside Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Li Qing asked, "Senior sister Jiang, may I know who Chu Feng's enemies back then were?"

"There were a lot of people. Bai Yunxiao, Tao Xiangyu, Ben Leihu and Qi Yanyu were all Chu Feng's enemies back then," Jiang Furong said.

"Them? Aren't they members of the Asura Division now?" Ma Hu was very shocked.

"Isn't that obvious? They decided to enter Chu Feng's camp after he rose in power."

"Chu Feng is truly magnanimous. Not only did he not bicker with them about the past, he instead offered them shelter," Zhao Xue said angrily. She deeply loathed the people that had attacked Chu Feng in the past and then decided to rely on Chu Feng afterward.

"No, that is not the reason why. They did not join the Asura Division because Chu Feng emerged in power. Rather, it is because Chu Feng had saved their lives. He also saved my life. We joined the Asura Division due to our gratefulness toward Chu Feng," Jiang Furong said.

"What?" Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue were extremely shocked to hear those words. None of them expected that Chu Feng would, after being bullied by Bai Yunxiao and the others, save them instead of retaliating

"Very surprising, isn't it? I was also very surprised back then. However, I suppose this is what is meant by placing the most importance on the greater good. Junior brother Chu Feng said that it didn't matter how fellow disciples fought with one another. In the end, they would still be fellow disciples. When facing foreign enemies, they must work together," Jiang Furong said.

Hearing those words, Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue looked to one another. Some things, they were still unable to understand. However, Right now, they felt even more admiration for Chu Feng. At the very least, his broad-mindedness was something that none of them possessed.

“Senior sister Jiang, I’ve heard that Chu Feng was originally a disciple of the Southern Cyanwood Forest, right? I want to know how the Southern Cyanwood Forest is now,” Zhao Xue asked.

Currently, practically anyone related to Chu Feng was receiving enormous benefits. Zhao Xue had heard that Chu Feng was from the Southern Cyanwood Forest. Yet, as a subsidiary power to the Cyanwood Mountain, nothing good could be said about the Southern Cyanwood Forest before. Thus, she wanted to know how the Southern Cyanwood Forest fared now.

“Southern Cyanwood Forest? The Southern Cyanwood Forest no longer exists,” Jiang Furong said.

“No longer exists?” The three were extremely shocked upon hearing those words.

“The entire Southern Cyanwood Forest has moved to the Cyanwood Mountain. Regardless of their cultivation, the elders of the Southern Cyanwood Forest became elders in the Cyanwood Mountain. As for their disciples, they too became the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples,” Jiang Furong said with a smile.

“Wow, they actually directly became part of the Cyanwood Mountain from being a subsidiary power?” After hearing about that, Li Qing and the others all exclaimed in surprise. They knew that the Southern Cyanwood Forest was only able to obtain all of this because of Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Jiang Furong and the others were about to arrive at the main lecture hall, a figure suddenly

descended from the sky. “Boom,” it landed on the ground.

The powerful impulse caused the rocks that were formed with special materials to shatter.

“Bai Yunxiao?” Upon seeing who the person that had crashed into the ground was, the disciples were all shocked. The reason for that was because it was none other than Bai Yunxiao.

At that moment, Bai Yunxiao was vomiting blood with a pale complexion. He had been seriously injured.

Who was it that had dared to injure Bai Yunxiao? Not only was Bai Yunxiao himself very strong, he was also an officer-level character in the Asura Division. Yet, there was actually someone that dared to injure him? Wasn't this a clear provocation against the Asura Division?

Not to mention disciples, something like that was something that not even elders dared to do.

Filled with confusion, the crowd turned their gazes toward the sky. Fives silhouettes were standing in the sky. They were the people that had injured Bai Yunxiao.

“Does the Cyanwood Mountain not even possess a disciple that can fight?” The bald headed man that lead the five people in the sky swept his gaze at the crowd disdainfully.

“It's them?” After seeing the five people in the sky, Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue were all shocked.

“You all know them?” Jiang Furong asked.

“We do. They are core disciples of the Heavenly Law Palace. Why would they... why would they also come over to the Cyanwood Mountain? Furthermore, they even attacked a Cyanwood Mountain's disciple?” Li Qing, Ma Hu and Zhao Xue were from the Overlord Domain. By chance, they had seen those five individuals from the Heavenly Law Palace before.

After hearing what Li Qing and the others said, Jiang Furong started to frown. Those five individuals were all strangers that she had never seen before; they were all people that had just joined the Cyanwood Mountain today.

As for their cultivations, they were all very strong. Even though Jiang Furong was a rank one Half Martial Emperor, she was still unable to see through their cultivations. This meant that they possessed cultivations above her own.

“Have you all come to stir up trouble?” Jiang Furong shouted at them angrily. The way she saw it, those five people most definitely possessed malicious intentions in leaving the Heavenly Law Palace and joining the Cyanwood Mountain.

After all, there were all sorts of people in such a huge, wide world.

Although many of their fellow members of the younger generation would feel adoration for Chu Feng after hearing about his past achievements and view him as their idol, there would always be that small portion of people that would be skeptical of Chu Feng’s achievements. In disbelief, they would come to the Cyanwood Mountain to stir up trouble.

Thus, people like them were a common occurrence. Merely, the majority of them were ruthlessly taught lessons by the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples and then kicked out.

Merely, the current situation was different. Jiang Furong was frowning deeply. The reason for that was because the ones that had come to stir up trouble this time around were different from the ones before. The five people standing in the sky were very strong.

“Stir up trouble? No, no, no, we have not come to stir up trouble.”

“Merely, we heard that this place is the power that Chu Feng

belonged to. Furthermore, Chu Feng is extremely renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism. It seems that there are even people saying that he is the strongest member of the younger generation, even though he withdrew from the Strongest Younger Generation Battle Assembly at the Gong Ba Plains.”

“Even with that, many people still feel him to be the strongest member of the younger generation.”

“As there are so many rumors regarding that Chu Feng, it made me think that the disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain should be very powerful. Else, how could such a person appear in the Cyanwood Mountain?”

“That’s why I came to have a look. However, upon arriving, I was extremely shocked. This result... is truly a disappointment.”

“It would seem that the Cyanwood Mountain is merely so-so.”

“As for that Chu Feng, I bet his various achievements are only rumors. Hahaha...” The leading baldy mocked.

“Bastard! You dare to mock and ridicule senior brother Chu Feng! You have definitely come here to stir up trouble!” At that moment, many disciples started to curse at that baldy.

In fact, even many elders had run out. However, the current situation made it difficult for them to interfere.

Firstly, conflicts between disciples were a common occurrence. This was especially true when disciples fought for the rankings on the Cyanwood Succession List; their battles would be very fierce. As such, it was difficult for the elders to interfere to begin with.

Furthermore, the overall strength of the Cyanwood Mountain’s elders was not very strong.

It would be one thing if their Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples were defeated by those that came to stirring up trouble. However, if they, the elders, were also defeated by those that had come stirring up trouble, it would truly be humiliating for the Cyanwood

Mountain.

As such, it was difficult for them to interfere. They could only watch with folded arms and wait for the Cyanwood Mountain's experts to appear and help them out of this mess.

"While you can insult us disciples and our Cyanwood Mountain, I will not allow you to insult Chu Feng," At that moment, Jiang Furong was angered. She suddenly took out her Incomplete Imperial Armament and soared into the sky. With ferocious attacks, she charged at the five people in the sky.

"Paa~~~"

However, with a grab of his hand, that baldy grabbed Jiang Furong's Incomplete Imperial Armament. Then, his oppressive might swept forth and restricted her.

"Rank four Half Martial Emperor? He's actually a rank four Half Martial Emperor?!" At that moment, the crowd were all shocked. None of them expected for that person to be a rank four Half Martial Emperor. After all, a rank four Half Martial Emperor was very powerful among the younger generation.

Upon sensing the cultivation of that baldy, the expressions of the Cyanwood Mountain's elders and disciples all sunk.

Their opponent was too strong. It was true that there was no one among the Cyanwood Mountain's current disciples that were capable of contending against that baldy. Could the Cyanwood Mountain really be slapped in the face today?

"Damned bitch, let me tell you this. Your Cyanwood Mountain's disciples are inadequate to teach me a lesson," The baldy said coldly.

"Is that so? In that case, let me try," Right at that moment, a voice suddenly exploded out of nowhere.

Chapter 1946 – Chu Feng’s Return

At the same time as that voice exploded out, a figure appeared in the sky. He walked over to Jiang Furong’s side.

After seeing this person, the people present, regardless of whether they were disciples or elders, were all shocked.

At that moment, it was as if everyone had been petrified.

“Chu Feng! Quickly, look! It’s Chu Feng!!!”

“Chu Feng has returned!!!”

It was only after a long while that the crowd managed to react. Instantly, the air was filled with noises of incomparable excitement.

Chu Feng.

He was a key figure to the Cyanwood Mountain.

Chu Feng.

He was a legend to the Cyanwood Mountain.

Chu Feng.

He was the pride of the Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples and elders.

The reason for that was because everyone knew that the Cyanwood Mountain was only able to obtain their current prosperity because of Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng? You... you are Chu Feng?”

At that moment, that baldy and the four individuals standing behind him all became nervous upon seeing Chu Feng. In fact, the baldy that had spoken those provocative words earlier actually began to involuntarily step back.

Even though they were unable to determine what Chu Feng’s cultivation was, they were able to tell that Chu Feng was

extraordinary merely by looking at him.

The imposing aura that he emitted was something that ordinary people did not possess. Even for their Heavenly Law Palace, it was something that only their most excellent, their peak disciples possessed. In fact, when compared to Chu Feng, their Heavenly Law Palace's most excellent disciples were still much inferior.

"I am indeed Chu Feng. Didn't you say that there was no one in the Cyanwood Mountain to fight against you? In that case, you wouldn't mind me sparring with you, right?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Come at me then! I might as well tell you this. We have traveled so far to this place all for the sake of shattering all those rumors regarding you so that the people of the world will know that all of those rumors about you are fake."

As the baldy spoke, he released Jiang Furong's Incomplete Imperial Armament and took out his own Incomplete Imperial Armament. He was planning to fight Chu Feng.

At the same time, the four people behind him also took out their respective Incomplete Imperial Armaments and emitted very ferocious oppressive might. It turned out that those four were also rank four Half Martial Emperors. These disciples from the Heavenly Law Palace had truly come prepared.

Unfortunately, the person they were facing was Chu Feng, a rank one Martial Emperor.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes flashed. Then, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might swept forth and covered the entire region.

Once his oppressive might appeared, the five Heavenly Law Palace's disciples' oppressive might's were instantly swallowed like five little brooks drifting into a vast sea.

In fact, even the weather had changed. From a sunny and

cloudless sky, violent winds now blew, and black clouds filled the sky. As for those five Heavenly Law Palaces' disciples, they stood there unable to move. It was as if they have been petrified.

Not to mention moving, the five of them were unable to even breathe. They were completely suppressed by Chu Feng.

“That aura, it's so terrifying. Exactly what level of cultivation is junior brother Chu Feng at now?” Jiang Furong and the other disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain were also extremely astonished.

Even though they were unable to determine Chu Feng's current cultivation, they were able to sense how terrifying and powerful Chu Feng's oppressive might was.

Before Chu Feng, those five Heavenly Law Palaces' disciples were simply unqualified to even attack him.

Suddenly, a man spoke. “Rank one Martial Emperor. That is the aura of a rank one Martial Emperor. Chu Feng, he is already a rank one Martial Emperor!”

Upon seeing that person, the Cyanwood Mountain's disciples were shocked again. The reason for that was because the person that had spoken was the Cyanwood Mountain's headmaster, Dugu Xingfeng.

“Rank one Martial Emperor? Lord Headmaster personally declared that Chu Feng is actually a rank one Martial Emperor?! Heavens! Wouldn't that mean that Chu Feng is as powerful as Lord Headmaster?!”

“Are you stupid? Chu Feng is someone that fought against the Four Great Imperial Clans' Clan Chiefs by himself, and killed the Ximen Imperial Clan's Clan Chief.”

“Chu Feng has already surpassed Lord Headmaster. Likely, right now, not to mention the Four Great Imperial Clan's Clan Chiefs, even their Utmost Exalted Elders would not be a match for Chu

Feng.”

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment when the crowd was astonished by how powerful Chu Feng was, Chu Feng removed his oppressive might with a thought.

The unstable weather and sky instantly returned to normal. Chu Feng was actually able to change the weather with a single thought.

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

Right after Chu Feng removed his oppressive might, the five Heavenly Law Palaces’ disciples led by that baldy all kneeled before Chu Feng.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, we were wrong, we were wrong. We were foolish to have actually doubted your strength. Please, please give us a chance. Please take into consideration that we are now disciples of the Cyanwood Mountain to give us a chance to turn over a new leaf.”

Those five disciples began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness nonstop. Even though Chu Feng had yet to attack them, they had already sensed how powerful Chu Feng was earlier. He was a super expert that was capable of taking their lives with a single thought.

The gap between them and Chu Feng was as enormous as the gap between the heavens and the earth. Not to mention them, even their Heavenly Law Palace’s strongest disciple would absolutely not be a match for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng’s reputation as the strongest member of the younger

generation was fully well-deserved.

“You all actually have the shame to declare yourselves to be our Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples?”

“Scram!!!”

As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve. Immediately, a gale swept forth.

“Ahhh~~~~”

Before that gale, those five Heavenly Law Palace’s disciples were blown thousands of miles away. The only thing remaining were the echoes of their screams.

“Wooahhhh!!!!!!!!!!”

“Long live junior brother Chu Feng!”

“Junior brother Chu Feng, you are too amazing!”

“Kicking them out was great! You have truly alleviated our anger. I shall see who else will dare to stir up troubles in our Cyanwood Mountain.”

In but an instant, the crowd were all in an uproar. As the saying goes, seeing once is better than hearing a hundred times. Today, after seeing Chu Feng, they finally became aware of how powerful Chu Feng was.

At the moment when the majority of the crowd were cheering excitedly for Chu Feng after seeing how powerful he was, a small portion of the crowd revealed ugly and unnatural expressions. They were all people that had previously deliberately made things difficult for Chu Feng, people that had humiliated and looked down on Chu Feng before.

Upon recalling what they had done back then, they finally realized how foolish they were.

Even without others saying it, they themselves already knew how foolish and stupid their actions back then were.

“Senior sister Jiang, are you alright?” Chu Feng asked Jiang Furong.

“I’m fine. If I’d known that you’d returned, I wouldn’t have done anything,” Jiang Furong said with a smile.

“Senior sister Jiang, do you still remember me?” Right at that moment, out of nowhere, Bai Ruochen appeared beside Chu Feng.

“Junior sister Bai, you’ve also returned? This is truly two happy occasions happening simultaneously,” After seeing Bai Ruochen, Jiang Furong revealed a joyous expression. Even though she had not had many interactions with Bai Ruochen, she still knew her. After all, Bai Ruochen was the person that had actually fought alongside Chu Feng back then.

“It seems that Ruochen is quite well-received. Merely, I wonder if there’s anyone to welcome me?” Immediately after Bai Ruochen appeared, Bai Suyan also appeared.

“It’s actually that pair of mother and daughter?” At that moment, many elders and disciples recognized Bai Ruochen and Bai Suyan.

Back then, Bai Suyan had charged into the Cyanwood Mountain to take Bai Ruochen and Chu Feng away. It was an enormous sensation back then. Even now, many people would still mention that matter.

“Welcome. Of course, welcome,” At that moment, Dugu Xingfeng personally stepped forward to welcome Bai Suyan.

“Madam, Elder Nangong Longjian has been waiting for you the entire time,” Dugu Xingfeng said with a smile.

Even though he was the Cyanwood Mountain’s headmaster, he did not dare to neglect Bai Suyan and her daughter. After all, he knew their true identity.

“Let’s go then,” Bai Suyan nodded.

Afterward, Dugu Xingfeng, Chu Feng and the others all disappeared into the void. They had left for the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly.

“Heavens, could it be... that Bai Ruochen is really Lord Nangong Longjian’s daughter?”

After hearing what Dugu Xingfeng said, the elders and disciples that knew Bai Ruochen and her mother all revealed stunned expressions.

It turned out that they had not only failed to recognize the Mount Tai that was Chu Feng.

They had also failed to Recognize the Mount Tai that was Bai Ruochen.

Chapter 1947 – Meeting Long Lin Again

After Chu Feng and the others arrived at the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly, they directly proceeded toward the location where Baili Xuankong was resting.

At that moment, other than the Compass Immortal, who was giving a lecture outside, all of the Cyanwood Mountain's important characters were gathered here.

Chu Feng mentioned to them what had happened in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. He was informing them of how powerful and dangerous the Dark Hall was.

“What? The Dark Hall's Hall Master actually possesses the same sort of Inherited Bloodline as you?”

“The World Devastator Immortal joined the Dark Hall?”

After learning of everything that had happened, none of the people present were able to remain calm. Even Nangong Longjian was frowning deeply.

With how powerful the Dark Hall was, if they were to attack the Cyanwood Mountain, even they would not be able to withstand them.

Merely, even though they were worried, they could not mention it. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was bearing enough burdens. They could not allow themselves to burden Chu Feng even more.

“Ancestor, the Ancient Era's Elves and His Majesty the Elf King has already become allies with our Cyanwood Mountain. Furthermore, for the sake of preventing the people from the Dark Hall from attacking our Cyanwood Mountain, he has especially sent one of their Elf Kingdom's Grand Elder, Lord Lianghua, to aid our Cyanwood Mountain,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing those words, Nangong Longjian's eyes shone. He

hurriedly asked, “Lord Lianghua? Chu Feng, is what you said the truth?”

“Absolutely,” Chu Feng nodded.

“When is Lord Lianghua coming?” Nangong Longjian asked.

The person that was the most experienced among the people here was Nangong Longjian. Thus, he knew about the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Lord Lianghua.

Lord Lianghua was extremely powerful. Nangong Longjian felt that if Lord Lianghua were to come to aid the Cyanwood Mountain, even the Dark Hall would not dare to rashly attack the Cyanwood Mountain. He would be able to ensure the Cyanwood Mountain’s safety.

“This old man is already here,” Right at that moment, Lord Lianghua suddenly walked out from the void.

“Heavens, sir!!!” After seeing Lord Lianghua, other than Chu Feng, Bai Ruochen, Bai Suyan and Jiang Wushang, all the other people were stunned. Even Nangong Longjian reacted in such a manner.

It must be said that Lord Lianghua’s appearance came as an enormously pleasant surprise to them. He had caused their uneasy hearts to become much more at ease.

Lord Lianghua’s appearance, Chu Feng’s return and the reunion of Nangong Longjian’s family were all successive happy occasions. As such, the crowd present were all very happy.

Originally, Baili Xuankong had planned to prepare a feast of celebration.

However, Chu Feng was unable to sit by for even a single moment. The reason for that was because the reason why he had returned to the Cyanwood Mountain this urgently was actually because of Yao’er.

After finding out what Chu Feng planned to do, Baili Xuankong made the prompt decision to re-enter the Ancient Era's Remnants with Chu Feng and meet that fellow by the name of Long Lin again.

Moreover, this time around, even Lord Lianghua decided to accompany them.

As Lord Lianghua was a grand rank eight Martial Emperor, an existence close to becoming a peak Martial Emperor, his company caused the others to feel confident even when facing Long Lin.

After passing through the spirit formation, Chu Feng re-entered the Ancient Era's Remnants very smoothly.

Soon, Chu Feng and the others appeared in Long Lin's territory again.

When Chu Feng saw Yao'er, his depressed state of mind immediately felt much better.

The reason for that was because not only was Yao'er unharmed, her cultivation had also increased. She was no longer a rank one Martial Emperor, and had become a rank two Martial Emperor.

"Chu Feng, Lord Baili!!!" Yao'er was overjoyed upon seeing Chu Feng and the others. She immediately dashed toward Chu Feng.

To Chu Feng's surprise, that Long Lin fellow actually did not stop Yao'er this time around. Instead, he allowed her to run over to Chu Feng's side.

"Not bad. The speed of your breakthrough is even faster than I had anticipated. It seems that you will be able to help me," At that moment, Long Lin was also extremely happy. His gaze was fixed upon Chu Feng the entire time.

Long Lin's gaze caused Nangong Longjian and the others to feel extremely uncomfortable and even displeased.

The reason for that was because Long Lin only placed Chu Feng

in his gaze. Nangong Longjian, Baili Xuankong and even Lord Lianghua, these experts, were all ignored by him.

That's right. They were ignored. They were truly ignored. Even though they were within his line of sight, he pretended that they were invisible. Long Lin had simply not placed them in his eyes at all.

At this moment, Nangong Longjian felt extremely dissatisfied. He had originally wanted to say something.

“Paa~~~”

However, right when Nangong Longjian wanted to say something, an aged yet strong hand grabbed his arm.

He turned around to look. It was actually Lord Lianghua.

Lord Lianghua looked to Nangong Longjian without saying anything. He merely shook his head at Nangong Longjian.

“!!!!”

However, that simple action of his caused Nangong Longjian to feel enormous shock.

Lord Lianghua's intention was very clear. He was telling Nangong Longjian to not act recklessly, because their opponent was very dangerous.

When even Lord Lianghua felt that Long Lin to be dangerous, how could he, Nangong Longjian, possibly have the capability to bicker with him?

Thus, even though he was unwilling, Nangong Longjian decided to keep silent. When he looked to Long Lin again, there was an additional cautiousness in his gaze.

“Senior, I have returned as per our promise. Are you able to release Yao'er now?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course. However, that's only on the condition that you'll help me do one thing,” Long Lin said.

“Senior, please tell me what it is,” Chu Feng said. He did not dare to neglect this Long Lin fellow.

Even though he was already a Martial Emperor and had met the Elf King, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, Lord Lianghua, the World Devastator Immortal and many other peak experts in the Holy Land of Martialism, the dangerous sensation that Long Lin emitted was still intensely strong.

That Long Lin was truly too dangerous, much more dangerous than even the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. As such, Chu Feng did not dare to neglect him.

“It’s very simple,” As Long Lin spoke, he took out two items.

They were a gate and a sword.

The gate was transparent in color. It seemed as if it was formed from glass. It was two meters tall and a meter wide.

The sword was emitting red, flickering light and waves of heat. It was forged from fiery iron. It was a fiery seven foot long sword.

“These are!!!”

After seeing the gate and the sword, the eyes of everyone present started to shine with astonishment.

Neither that gate nor that sword were Incomplete Imperial Armaments, nor were they Imperial Armaments.

However, they were things even more precious than Imperial Armaments. They... seemed to not be possessions of the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for that Long Lin, he seemed to have already anticipated that Chu Feng and the others would be shocked.

Thus, he did not bother with Chu Feng and the others. Instead, he walked directly over to the giant tree and placed the gate on it.

Then, he began to form hand seals and mutter a special chant nonstop.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the gate and the tree fused together. The previously transparent gate actually started to glimmer with light and a distorted space appeared within it.

“Clank~~~”

Then, Long Lin turned the sword in his hand. Holding the blade of the sword, he pointed the hilt toward Chu Feng and said, “Hold this sword and go in there. After you cut off all of the vines that bind me, you will be able to take that Yao’er girl away.”

“The vines that bind you?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyes shone.

“Yes, vines that bind me,” Long Lin smiled. He did not try to conceal anything.

“Rest assured, as long as you can accomplish this, I will definitely keep my promise,” Long Lin added.

“I hope you will be able to keep your promise,” Chu Feng walked forward. He grabbed the hilt of the sword and began to walk toward that entrance.

“Chu Feng!!!” At that moment, Baili Xuankong shouted Chu Feng’s name. He was very worried. He felt that what Long Lin wanted Chu Feng to do was not that simple. Else, he would not have Chu Feng return here only after he became a Martial Emperor.

“Seniors, please rest assured. I will return safely,” Chu Feng turned around and smiled lightly. Then, with sword in hand, he entered the gate.

Chapter 1948 – Heavenly Bloodline

After Chu Feng passed through that gate, his line of sight became blurry.

When his sight returned to normal, Chu Feng discovered that he had arrived at another space.

This place was an isolated world. It was vast; much bigger than Chu Feng had anticipated it to be.

Merely, this vast space was filled with vines. The vines had completely covered Chu Feng's path.

Furthermore, talismans filled the area beneath the vines. Those talismans were currently glimmering with flickering light.

Those talismans made the vines even more extraordinary and even stronger.

Most importantly, the moment Chu Feng stepped foot into this place, he felt an extremely powerful pressure.

Not only was that pressure stressing his body, it was even stressing his dantian and soul. Before that pressure, even breathing became very difficult for Chu Feng. Being in this place, Chu Feng's strength was greatly restricted. Not only was he unable to fly, even walking became extremely difficult.

“Could this be a sealing formation? What is it sealing here?”

“That Long Lin said to cut off all of the vines that bound him... could it be that he is the one who is sealed here?”

As Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he was able to tell with a single glance that this place was an extraordinary sealing formation.

“So that Long Lin actually wants to use me to undo his seal.”

“But, why would he be sealed here? Isn't this place an Ancient Era's Remnant? Exactly how long has he been here?”

“Could it be that he is not that enormous tree, and is instead only sealed in that enormous tree?”

“Exactly what is going on? Exactly what happened in this place?” At that moment, Chu Feng started to ponder. He kept feeling that he was being exploited by that Long Lin.

In the end, he sighed, “Can’t think too much about it. For the sake of saving Yao’er, I’ll have to put my all into this task.”

Even though Chu Feng had seen through Long Lin’s intentions, even though he was filled with questions in his heart, Chu Feng had no other choice but to do what Long Lin wanted him to do. Even though he knew that Long Lin was using him to undo his seal, Chu Feng had no choice but to allow himself to be taken advantage of.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng began to swing the sword in his hand. Using that sword, he began to cut away the vines before him.

Merely, those vines were truly too powerful. The sword’s aura was useless. Chu Feng was only capable of cutting through the vines by putting all his strength into the sword itself.

However, this place was so vast, and Chu Feng was under enormous pressure that made each step difficult to take. Thus, to cut the vines here was a very strenuous task.

However, Chu Feng had no choice but to continue onward. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell that even though there were a lot of vines here, they were all pointed toward one direction.

Chu Feng felt that if he were to follow that direction, he would be able to discover what Long Lin wanted him to unseal.

.....

To Chu Feng’s helplessness, once he started, he continued to cut

vines for an entire year.

To the current Chu Feng, an entire year's worth of time was truly too long. After all, he was facing the Dark Hall, that extremely powerful enemy. In this period of a year, a lot of unforeseen events could have happened.

However, there was nothing he could do. He had to succeed. If he were to fail, he would not be able to save Yao'er. Thus, he decided to wholeheartedly continue to proceed onward.

Finally, after a year and two months passed, Chu Feng finally saw Long Lin.

Long Lin was in an enormous cage. The outside of that cage was the place where all of the vines were connected to.

“Finally found you,”

Chu Feng had cut vines for a year and two months straight. In this period of time, he did not drink a single drop of water or eat a single granule of rice. In fact, he did not even sleep for a single moment. As for the sword in his hand, it did not stop for a single instant.

It was no surprise then that Chu Feng was extremely exhausted and was on the verge of collapse.

However, after seeing that Long Lin was sealed in the cage, strength suddenly entered Chu Feng. The sword in his hand continued onward without stopping for a single instant.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The sword in Chu Feng's hand became extremely fast. The speed at which it came slicing down was even faster than the time when Chu Feng first entered this place. As Chu Feng slashed and slashed, all of the vines were soon cut off.

“Boom!” Finally, that enormous cage that was originally suspended in midair by the vines fell to the ground.

Merely, at that moment, the Long Lin inside that cage was still sitting there in a cross-legged position with his eyes tightly closed. There was not the slightest bit of reaction from him. It was as if he was a corpse.

“It seems that I will have to cut that cage apart too,” Chu Feng brandished the sword in his hand and hacked at the cage. He wanted to free Long Ling completely.

“Clank~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng’s sword was about to reach Long Lin’s cage, the cage actually started to change. Several vines separated themselves from the cage and turned into an enormous hand that grabbed Chu Feng’s sword.

“Heeaaahh!!!!”

In response, Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on him simultaneously. When Chu Feng’s cultivation increased, his power also increased enormously.

Even though the hand that the vines had formed was gigantic, it was unable to stop the current Chu Feng.

Suddenly, the cage actually spoke. “Heavenly Bloodline? Who are you? Why are you here?”

Upon looking closely, Chu Feng was surprised. Not only had that cage formed an enormous hand to stop him, there was also a pair of eyes looking at him from above the cage.

“Heavenly Bloodline? You said that I possess a Heavenly bloodline?” Chu Feng was shocked upon hearing those words. He hurriedly asked, “Who are you? How did you know that I possess a Heavenly Bloodline?”

“Do not save him. Else, you will regret your actions.”

“Do not save him. Else, you will regret your actions.”

“Do not save him. Else, you will regret your actions.”

.....

.....

.....

However, that cage ignored Chu Feng's questions. Instead, it repeated those words.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt that his heart was distracted and his thoughts were in turmoil. He felt as if his head were about to explode. He had actually been affected by those words.

Those words were no ordinary words. Rather, they possessed a special power. If Chu Feng were to continue to listen, he would likely end up being driven mad and then dying here.

"My apologies, I must save him."

As Chu Feng said those words, he grabbed tightly onto the sword hilt with both hands and slashed downward. "Snap," the sword in his hand pierced into that cage.

"Snap~~~"

"Snap~~~"

.....

When Chu Feng's sword penetrated the cage, countless cracks began to extend from the location where the sword struck. The cracks grew larger and larger. Soon, they covered the entire cage.

"Woosh~~~"

At that moment, the Long Lin who was sitting cross-legged in the cage with his eyes tightly closed suddenly opened his eyes.

"Roar~~~~"

When his eyes opened, it was like the awakening of a fierce dragon that had been asleep for a very long time. An indescribable aura soon swept forth.

"Rumble~~~"

Facing that aura, the cage that was filled with cracks shattered in an instant, and bits of the cage were blown all over the place.

Seeing that, Chu Feng cautiously called out, “Senior?”

That was clearly Long Lin. Yet, his aura was even more frightening than the other Long Lin’s aura. Chu Feng was feeling a fatal danger from that Long Lin.

Even though he did not deliberately release any killing intent, Chu Feng felt an extremely strong killing intent. It was as if he was an existence born to kill.

Truth be told, facing such a Long Lin, even Chu Feng grew fearful, not knowing whether or not this Long Lin knew who he was. If he didn’t, it would be very possible for him to end up killing him.

However, when that Long Lin slowly stood up, he did not even bother to take a glance at Chu Feng. With a leap, he disappeared. The only thing that remained was the violent burst of air, his oppressive aura and the distorted space.

Chu Feng knew that Long Lin had flown towards the direction where he had come from. Likely, he was planning to leave this place.

“Is that Long Lin? Or is he... merely Long Lin’s power that was sealed?” As Chu Feng looked to the direction that Long Lin had disappeared to, he began to ponder.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt that the pressure that had been suppressing his movements was beginning to rapidly disappear.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng’s power began to return. He... was finally no longer restricted by this place.

Chapter 1949 – Fusion

“Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.”

At that moment, Chu Feng attempted to use the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

It was actually a success this time around. After the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique was successfully unleashed, Chu Feng stepped onto the Azure Dragon and began to rapidly fly towards the direction from which he had entered this place .

At this moment, Chu Feng was feeling very joyous. After spending an entire year and two months, he had finally succeeded. This sort of feeling was something that only Chu Feng could know.

“Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~”

However, at this time when Chu Feng was feeling extremely happy, strange explosions began to sound from all directions.

“Crap! This place is about to collapse! I must leave here before it collapses.”

Chu Feng realized how dire the situation was. He gritted his teeth and concentrated all of his power to hasten the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique so that he could escape this place with the fastest speed possible.

This place was an isolated space. Even though Chu Feng did not know who had created this space, Chu Feng knew that its creator was very powerful.

Most importantly, if Chu Feng failed to escape this space before it collapsed, he would be attacked by the power of the spatial collapse.

Furthermore, the more powerful the creator of the space was, the stronger the power from its collapse would be. Thus, not to mention injuries, even death was possible.

Fortunately, after putting forth great effort to rapidly escape, Chu Feng finally arrived at the gate that he had passed through to enter this place.

Chu Feng felt extremely complicated when he saw that gate again. The reason for that was because he had deeply longed to see that gate again.

Without the slightest hesitation, Chu Feng charged through the gate.

When Chu Feng rushed out from that collapsing space, and saw the familiar scene and familiar faces in front of him, he felt as if everything before him had become clear.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?”

Chu Feng’s return caused the expressions of Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian and the others to change. One by one, they rushed over to Chu Feng and began to carefully inspect him with worried expressions on their faces. Lord Lianghua even handed Chu Feng an injury-recovering medicinal pellet.

As for Chu Feng, when he saw those familiar faces, he was startled.

After an entire year and two months had passed, why was there no change to these people from the time when he entered the gate?

In fact, the scenery was also exactly the same. Yet, an entire year and two months had passed. How could there be no change at all?

No, something was wrong. During the year and two months he had spent in that other place, a beard had grown on Chu Feng’s face, and his hair had become very messy.

However, although his hair was still messy right now, he felt no beard when he touched his chin.

His beard had already grown in that other place, and he had not shaved. As such, how could it have disappeared?

Therefore, there was absolutely something fishy regarding this, Could it be that all Chu Feng had experienced had merely been an illusion?

After sensing that the situation was amiss, Chu Feng asked the crowd, “How long was I in there?”

“Ah?” When Chu Feng asked that question, Nangong Longjian and the others were confused.

“You don’t have to question it anymore. You were not in there for long. It’s merely been a split second,” Long Lin said.

“A split second?” Chu Feng was startled to hear that.

As Chu Feng looked to Long Lin, he was startled once again.

Although Long Lin appeared to be the same on the surface, his gaze, his state of mind and his entire aura had changed.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt the aura of the Long Lin he had seen in that space in the current Long Lin.

Chu Feng knew that the two Long Lin’s had fused.

To be exact, the current Long Lin was the complete Long Lin, the real Long Lin.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng smiled. He truly understood what had happened.

It turned out that the space he was in before was even more powerful than he had imagined it to be.

Not only was it an isolated world, it was also capable of changing time.

Even though Chu Feng had spent a total of a year and two months inside, he had only been in there for a split second. As for that year and two months, it had only happened in that isolated space, and was not at all related to the real world.

As such, even though Chu Feng did not understand the principle

behind that space, did not understand whether he had entered there with his awareness or his actual self, it was still an enormously stunning thing.

A space that could alter time, oh how powerful was that?

Someone could train in that space for hundreds or thousands of years.

Then, after coming out, only a few years or a few days would have passed.

That would truly be too powerful. That space was truly too extraordinary. Not to mention for ordinary people, it would be extremely useful for even Chu Feng. Chu Feng would be able to enter that space and train his martial skills there. With his talent, even if he were to spend several years in that space to master a martial skill, only a split second would have passed in the real world after he returned.

If one could master a martial skill that would normally take several years to master in a split second, oh how powerful would that be?

“What’s going on? Why is that tree wilting? It was perfectly fine earlier,” Suddenly, Yao’er spoke with astonishment. She even gently caressed that giant tree in a very loving manner.

It turned out that the giant tree was currently withering.

“Uncle Long Lin, quickly, you must do something. That tree is about to die,” Yao’er was so anxious that she actually started to tear up. Her cultivation had only been able to make progress because of that giant tree’s power. Thus, she possessed a very deep affection for the giant tree.

“Yao’er, I am unable to save it. Not only am I incapable of saving it, no one can save it,” Long Lin said. He did not feel the slightest bit of regret for the death of that tree.

“Is it really destroyed?” Seeing that, Chu Feng started to faintly

frown.

It was over. Chu Feng's thoughts of entering that space again to train were destined to be impossible to accomplish.

That space seemed to have been linked with that giant tree. After the space collapsed, the giant tree started to wilt.

It seemed that the giant tree would inevitably die, and that space would inevitably be destroyed. With the death of the tree, the space would also be gone.

Most importantly, even Long Lin was unable to prevent the destruction of that space. This meant that what Chu Feng had thought of earlier, the idea of training in that space, was unachievable.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng felt some regret, he was not feeling sadness. The reason for that was because while that space was fine, it possessed enormous pressure.

Upon thinking about it, it was very possible that others would die upon entering that space.

In short, that space should not be a place that people could easily enter. Else, why would Long Lin ignore all those experts before him and instead insist on Chu Feng's help?

"Senior, it seems that I have successfully accomplished your task," Chu Feng said to Long Lin.

"What? Accomplished? Didn't Chu Feng come out right after entering? Exactly what did he do?"

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Baili Xuankong and the others all revealed puzzled expressions.

Even though Chu Feng had spent a total of a year and two months in that space, the actual amount of time that had passed in the real world was only a split second.

Thus, to Baili Xuankong and the others, Chu Feng had just

entered that gate and come right back out. When Chu Feng came out, his hair was in a mess, and his complexion was pale. It was as if he had experienced an enormous trial. That was why they were worried about Chu Feng.

However, they never expected that Chu Feng would have accomplished the task Long Lin gave him in a split second after entering the gate. Did he really accomplish that task? Baili Xuankong and the others were all extremely shocked.

“Yes, you’ve accomplished it. Not only did you accomplish it, you accomplished the task beautifully. Yao’er is free now,” Long Lin said with a nod. As he spoke, he took out a book and handed it to Chu Feng.

“You’ve helped me. I will not have you help me for free. This here is a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. It suits the current you very well,” Long Lin said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng did not refuse the book. A Heaven Taboo Martial Skill was an item of considerable value.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill Long Lin had handed to him was a complete one. Not only was he able to learn it, the others from the Cyanwood Mountain were also able to learn it. A Heaven Taboo Martial Skill like that would be even more valuable.

Since Long Lin was willing to give it to him, there was no reason for Chu Feng to refuse it. After all, Chu Feng had indeed gone through a lot to help Long Lin obtain his freedom.

Chapter 1950 – Challenging The Qilin

“Chu Feng, I’ll be leaving. This farewell will likely last forever. Is there any request that you have of me?”

“If you do, I can help you. However, as my time is limited, I can only help you with some small matters.”

“If you want me to help you eliminate your great enemy in the Holy Land of Martialism, or do anything like that, you do not have to mention it.”

“I will not help you with something like that. The reason for that is because I believe that a man should take care of his own enemies himself,” Long Lin said with a beaming smile.

His intention was very clear. He would help Chu Feng with one thing. However, it would only be a small matter. If it was something major, he would not help Chu Feng.

“Senior, are you able to take out that palace again and allow me to challenge it one more time?” Chu Feng asked.

“You wish to challenge it again?” Long Lin was very surprised. Then, he asked, “You’re planning to challenge the Third Level Hall?”

“Precisely. I wish to challenge that Qilin,” Chu Feng said.

“That Qilin is not simple at all. With your cultivation, I’m afraid it will be a bit difficult...” Long Lin said.

“Senior, please allow me to challenge it,” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

“Very well. Since you are this courageous, I’ll grant you your wish.”

“However, as my time is limited, you will only have an hour. If you can successfully defeat it, then that will be great. If you cannot, you must come back out right away. Otherwise, I will not

bother with you even if you are to die in there,” Long Lin said.

“That will not be an issue,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. His face was brimming with confidence.

“Very well, let’s begin then,” As Long Lin spoke, he took out the golden palace. Then, he began to form hand seals with his left hand while holding the palace up high with his right hand while muttering some sort of bizarre chant.

With the hand seals and chanting, the golden palace in Long Lin’s right hand started to tremble slightly. The trembling grew more and more intense. Then, waves of oppressive might began to emit from the palace.

“Go,” Suddenly, Long Lin raised his hand up high, and the golden palace shot into the sky. After it shot up, it began to rapidly expand in size. In a blink of an eye, it became an enormous palace a hundred and fifty meters tall and a thousand five hundred meters wide. The palace was floating in midair.

After the palace grew bigger, everything regarding it became more distinctive. It was radiating a golden luster and emitting an incomparably majestic and imposing aura.

“That is?!!!!”

Seeing the palace before them, Nangong Longjian and Lord Lianghua were both deeply shocked.

It was the first time that they had seen a treasure this miraculous.

The very next moment, they were attacked with even greater shock. Their reactions were the same as the reactions that Chu Feng and the others had when they first saw the golden palace.

The reason for that was because after the gate to that golden palace opened, a total of a thousand spear-wielding soldiers in golden armor walked out of the palace. They were all Martial Emperors. It was an army of Martial Emperors.

“Kill!!!”

When the golden-armored army appeared, they pointed their spears forward and formed a formation to protect the golden palace's entrance.

All of this was exactly the same as the first time Long Lin had opened the palace.

“What sort of treasure is that?”

Even someone like Nangong Longjian was unable to contain himself from gasping in surprise. Everything before him was truly too miraculous.

He, Nangong Longjian, was a very well-known individual in the Holy Land of Martialism. He had challenged countless Ancient Era's Remnants and experienced innumerable things. Yet, he had never seen a treasure as miraculous as the one before him right now.

As for Chu Feng, he had a calm expression, as he had already anticipated all of this. With a flip of his palm, he took out a title plate. It was the title plate that Long Lin gave him last time around.

After seeing that title plate, the hostility that those golden armored soldiers had revealed instantly vanished and they began to make way for Chu Feng. As for Chu Feng, he once again entered the golden palace.

The sensation Chu Feng felt upon entering the golden palace was exactly the same as when he had entered it the first time.

Chu Feng continued onward. The First Level Hall and the Second Level Hall still gave Chu Feng a very powerful oppressive sensation. However, Chu Feng was able to withstand them. It was no longer as unendurable as before.

Finally, Chu Feng arrived at the Third Level Hall's entrance. When the Third Level Hall's entrance slowly opened before him,

that Qilin appeared before Chu Feng again.

That Qilin was still as handsome and domineering as it was before. Merely, the gaze with which it looked to Chu Feng had changed. It no longer looked at Chu Feng with the contempt that it had before. As expected, that Qilin possessed awareness.

As for Chu Feng, he was still unable to see through that Qilin's cultivation. However, Chu Feng was confident that he would be able to fight against that Qilin.

"I said that I would return to play with you after I became a Martial Emperor. Little fellow, are you ready?" Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

"Roar~~~"

The Qilin snarled. It seemed to be responding to Chu Feng. However, more than that, it seemed to be provoking Chu Feng.

"ZZZZZZZZ~~~"

With a thought, Chu Feng directly unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. After Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank one Martial Emperor to rank three Martial Emperor, he leapt forward and entered the Third Level Hall.

Chu Feng immediately felt a powerful pressure after entering the Third Level Hall. This pressure was different from the ones from the First Level Hall and the Second Level Hall.

This pressure was not from the Third Level Hall itself. Instead, it was from the Qilin. The pressure that Chu Feng was feeling was brought forth by the Qilin.

"Rank four Martial Emperor?"

Chu Feng started to frown. At that moment, he was finally able to sense that Qilin's cultivation.

It was a rank four Martial Emperor, with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surpassing four levels of cultivation, one above

ordinary Martial Emperors.

Thus, strictly speaking, that Qilin was simply incomparable to rank four Martial Emperors. Instead, it possessed the same power as a rank five Martial Emperor.

On top of that, the pressure that it brought upon Chu Feng caused Chu Feng's power to decrease. Thus, this Qilin was the strongest rank five Martial Emperor Chu Feng had met so far.

“Roar~~~”

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered the Third Palace Hall, the Qilin did not immediately attack Chu Feng. Instead, it let out a low roar. It was as if it was telling Chu Feng to prepare himself because it was going to attack.

“You're quite polite,” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“Clank~~~~”

Chu Feng's palm streaked across his Cosmos Sack. A cold light flashed. Then, the Heavenly Immortal Sword appeared in Chu Feng's hand.

“Come, let me experience your strength,” Chu Feng said as he hefted the Heavenly Immortal Sword.

“Roar~~~”

Another roar. The Qilin had made its move. Its body began to flicker with light. Then, each and every scale that it possessed shot a golden ray toward Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The many golden rays were all shot forth simultaneously. Like densely packed golden arrows, they pierced through the air as they flew toward Chu Feng. With the large area the attack covered, it was simply impossible for Chu Feng to dodge it.

“Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique.”

However, Chu Feng was not flustered. He unleashed his Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique. Then, countless sword silhouettes appeared out of thin air.

The sword silhouettes collided with the golden rays and causing sparks to swirl in the air as dazzling light radiated all around.

“Woosh~~~”

When all of the golden rays were blocked, Chu Feng stretched his arm forward. Then, a cold light flashed past which was aimed at the Qilin’s throat.

“Roar~~~”

The Qilin roared. As it opened its mouth, it shot out a golden sphere of light in midair.

That golden sphere of light was extremely fast. In a blink of an eye, it had arrived before Chu Feng.

“Crap.”

Chu Feng started to frown. He was able to sense how frightening that golden sphere of light was. He could not block it with his sword, and had to avoid it.

However, at the moment when Chu Feng planned to dodge the golden sphere of light, a loud ‘boom’ was heard. The golden sphere of light actually exploded.

The explosion of the golden sphere of light created surging waves of flames. The flames were so strong that even space itself was being melted away by it. As for Chu Feng, he had been engulfed by the flames.

“Ahhh!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s miserable screams sounded from the sea of flames.

“Roar~~~”

“Roar~~~”

“Roar~~~”

“Roar~~~”

The Qilin did not stop there. It roared four more times, and shot out four more golden spheres of light toward the sea of flames in succession. Those golden spheres of lights exploded in the sea of flames and, with their explosion, the intensity of the flames grew even stronger. The flames had completely filled the Third Level Hall.

However, no matter how strong the flames were, the Qilin remained uninjured.

As for Chu Feng, after a series of screams, there was no sound of activity from him at all.

Chapter 1951 – The Path To Heaven

“Roar~~~~”

Seeing that there was no response from Chu Feng after a long time, the Qilin revealed a slightly relaxed expression. Then, it let out a different sort of roar. It was as if it were announcing its victory.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, a cold flash suddenly shot out from the sea of flames.

The Qilin was surprised upon seeing that. It opened its mouth again, planning to shoot out another golden sphere of light.

However, the golden flash was too fast. In merely the blink of an eye, it arrived at the Qilin’s throat and sealed the Qilin’s movements. The Qilin was denied the opportunity to shoot out another sphere of golden light.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had broken out of the sea of flames with his Heavenly Immortal Sword in hand. His Heavenly Immortal Sword was now pointed at the Qilin’s throat.

Chu Feng was not injured in the slightest. He had achieved this through the use of his two Supreme Secret Skills, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique and the Vermillion Bird Revival Technique.

It turned out that Chu Feng had deliberately let out that miserable scream from earlier. His intention was for the Qilin would lower its guard.

“Little fellow, there can never be too much deception in war. Next time, remember that,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile., Even though he had suppressed the Qilin, he did not kill it.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was truly reluctant to

kill that Qilin. He had actually only come to this place with the intent to challenge the Qilin, and not to actually kill it.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the Qilin let out a low roar. Then, its body began to blossom with light. Then, it began to shrink. In merely the blink of an eye, the Qilin had turned into an arrow.

That arrow was filled with scale-like veined patterns. It also possessed the same sort of aura as the Qilin had. The Qilin was actually also formed from an arrow.

“So you were also an arrow?”

Chu Feng was shocked. He had thought that the Qilin might be the same as those golden armored soldiers. Even though it possessed awareness, it was not an actual Divine Beast.

However, Chu Feng did not expect for that Qilin to actually be an arrow. In simpler terms, that Qilin was none other than a treasure; it was not an actual living thing. Yet... it was able to conceal that from Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes.

“Exactly what sort of individual was capable of creating a treasure like you?”

“It should be the same person that created this golden palace, right?” At that moment, Chu Feng was gasping in admiration.

Even though he was already someone capable of calling the wind and summoning the rain in the Holy Land of Martialism, he felt himself to be extremely small in the golden palace. All of his techniques and abilities were useless here.

“Rumble~~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was gasping in admiration, the tightly shut entrance to the Fourth Level Hall started to open with a rumble.

When the Fourth Level Hall opened, Chu Feng started to frown.

Cautiously, he moved back; away from that Fourth Level Hall's entrance.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt an extremely dangerous aura from the Fourth Level Hall. Different from the First, Second and Third Level Halls, the Fourth Level Hall emitted a very intense, a very terrifying, killing intent.

After the Fourth Level Hall's entrance opened completely, the frown on Chu Feng's face became even more wrinkled.

In the Fourth Level Hall was a dense amount of gray mist. More accurately, it was dark gray in color.

Most importantly, even Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were unable to see through the dark gray mist. As such, he did not know exactly what might be contained in the Fourth Level Hall.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

.....

Right at that moment, crimson eyes appeared in the dark gray mist. Those crimson eyes were not very large; only about the size of a human's eyes. However, their number was extremely large. Densely packed, they covered practically the entire Fourth Level Hall.

Upon seeing the thousands, no, the tens of thousands of crimson eyes, Chu Feng's heart started to tighten. He felt as if his hair was standing on end.

Monster. Chu Feng felt that what was contained within the Fourth Level Hall must be a true monster.

That monster did not utter any ear-piercing roars or frightening oppressive might. Yet, merely by looking at Chu Feng, Chu Feng

felt as if his blood was running cold. Chu Feng was able to realize how dangerous that monster was.

Chu Feng did not continue forward. He did not plan to enter the Fourth Level Hall. It was not that Chu Feng was afraid. Rather, Chu Feng felt that, with his current cultivation, he would definitely be killed should he enter the Fourth Level Hall.

Thus, Chu Feng grabbed the Qilin Arrow and left the golden palace.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it seems that you’ve succeeded.”

“Not bad, not bad,” After Chu Feng walked out of the golden palace, Long Lin began to clap his hands upon seeing the Qilin Arrow in Chu Feng’s hand.

“Senior,” Chu Feng handed the Qilin Arrow to Long Lin.

“No, since you’ve conquered it, it is yours now. The way to use this Qilin Arrow is the same as the arrows you’ve obtained before. However, its might is capable of killing ordinary rank seven Martial Emperors. It might be of use to you,” Long Lin said.

“Rank seven Martial Emperor? Merely with that arrow?” The crowd all looked to that Qilin Arrow in shock upon hearing what Long Lin said.

Nangong Longjian and Lord Lianghua began to recall the rumor of Chu Feng killing Martial Emperors on the Gong Ba Plains with arrows. Upon thinking of that, they came to a sudden realization.

They began to believe what Long Lin had said to be true. At the same time, they came to know where Chu Feng’s arrows had been obtained. Likely, they were also from that miraculous golden palace.

“Senior Long Lin, I have a question that I wish to ask you,” Chu Feng said.

“If it’s only a question, ask away,” Long Lin said.

“You must’ve known from the very beginning that my Inherited Bloodline is a Heavenly Bloodline, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course. If you didn’t possess a Heavenly Bloodline, you would not have been able to help me break free and destroy that tree,” As Long Lin said those words, he looked to the giant tree.

Chu Feng followed his gaze and discovered that the giant tree had withered completely. It no longer possessed a trace of life left; it had completely died.

Seeing such a tree dying, Chu Feng’s heart was filled with regret.

“However, Chu Feng, I must tell you this. Even for those who possess Heavenly Bloodlines, not all of them would have been able to walk out from the space within that tree alive. Furthermore, not all of them would have been capable of helping me.”

“You are stronger than ordinary descendants of a Heavenly Bloodline. Perhaps, you might be able to play a role in the Outer World in the future.”

“However, I shall warn you of this. If you are to really enter the Outer World in the future, you must absolutely not mention our relationship to anyone, for it will only be detrimental to you.”

“Pretend that we have never met before. Our destiny shall split at this point forth,” After Long Lin finished saying those words, he suddenly threw the golden palace into the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, black clouds and thunder began to surge about. As for that golden palace, it turned into a golden ray of light that charged straight into the sky. It was as if it was going to reach the end of the sky.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, other than the golden ray of light that was still present, everything else in the sky turned into an enormous vortex. That

vortex slowly revolved around the end of the golden ray of light.

A path to heaven. That golden ray of light appeared like a path to heaven.

It was different from the Eastern Sea Region's Heavenly Road that connected to the Holy Land of Martialism. It was an actual path to the heavens. Through that path, one could enter the [Outer World](#).

Outer World is actually written as "Heavens Outside"; aka, the world outside of the world you know.

Chapter 1952 – Spatial Crack

“Chu Feng, you must not follow me. With your current cultivation, you are unable to withstand the pressure here. If you follow after me, you will undoubtedly die.”

“Remember, if you wish to enter the Outer World, you will have to find another method,” Long Lin said to Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

As he said those words, he soared into the sky and over the horizon on that path to heaven established by the golden palace.

Even though Long Lin had left, the golden palace’s path to heaven still remained for quite some time before finally dissipating.

However... even after the path to heaven completely disappeared and the sky returned to normal, everybody in the crowd present was incapable of remaining calm.

“Outer World. There are indeed martial cultivators in the Outer World. That Long Lin was a cultivator from the Outer World,” Lord Lianghua said in amazement. At that moment, he who was always calm was actually so emotional that his aged palms were shaking.

“Lord Lianghua, you’re saying... that there are cultivators in the vast starry sky?” Baili Xuankong asked in a very shocked manner. The reason for that was because this matter was extremely important, extremely significant.

“Mn, of course there are. Didn’t you all see that Long Lin entering the Outer World just now? He was a martial cultivator from the Outer World.”

“Martial Cultivators are not limited to our Holy Land of Martialism. There are more martial cultivators in the vast starry sky.” It could be seen that Lord Lianghua was extremely

emotional. Even his tone was extremely emotional.

“In that case, Chu Feng, he...” At that moment, everyone turned their gazes to Chu Feng. They seemed to want to learn more about things pertaining to the Outer World from Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because regardless of how high they stood in the Holy Land of Martialism, they still felt the sensation of being frogs at the bottom of a well the moment Long Lin opened the path to heaven, the path to the Outer World.

Even though they were unable to see anything through that path to heaven, they were all able to see the boundless sky and the vast amount of stars. They knew how magnificent that vast world above them was.

“Seniors, I am indeed from the Outer World. However, I do not know anything regarding the Outer World at all. Ever since I was able to form memories, the only thing I remember is this world. As for my childhood, it was spent entirely in the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said.

“So that’s the case,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Nangong Longjian and the others no longer tried to question him. However, to a greater or lesser degree, they all revealed disappointed expressions. They deeply wished to be able to know more about the Outer World.

Suddenly, Lord Lianghua said, “Chu Feng is from the Outer World; in that case, wouldn’t it mean the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is also a martial cultivator from the Outer World?”

After hearing that, everyone other than Chu Feng grew silent. At that moment, they all realized how powerful the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was.

“Forget about it. We must still consider this matter regarding the Dark Hall at length. For now, Yao’er has been successfully saved. As such, it is a happy occasion.”

“I feel that we should hold a celebration. Moreover, Lord Lianghua has come over from far away, and our Cyanwood Mountain has yet to show the hospitality of a host,” Baili Xuankong said.

“My, there’s no need for such extravagance,” Lord Lianghua shook his head with a smile. However, it could be seen that he was very happy to be valued this highly by the Cyanwood Mountain.

“What Ancestor said is correct. No matter what, Lord Lianghua has traveled very far to get here. As such, we must hold a welcoming dinner to wash away the dirt of the journey for Lord Lianghua,” Chu Feng said in agreement. Then, the others also began to express their endorsement.

Being showered by this great hospitality, it was unsuitable for Lord Lianghua to decline. Furthermore, he did not plan to actually decline their good intentions either.

Chu Feng then looked to Yao’er. He discovered that Yao’er had a somewhat lonely expression on her face after Long Lin left.

This was understandable. Even though Long Lin had held her captive for a long while, he had treated her very well. This could be seen by how Yao’er’s cultivation had increased.

“Yao’er,” Suddenly, Chu Feng grabbed Yao’er’s hand.

Upon sensing the warmth of Chu Feng’s palm, Yao’er was startled. Then, in a slightly embarrassed manner, she looked to Chu Feng.

“Come, let’s go home,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” Hearing those words, Yao’er revealed a brilliant smile on her face.

Afterward, Baili Xuankong gave a personal order to hold a grand feast. From head to toe, everyone in the Cyanwood Mountain was celebrating.

However, the reason given for this celebration was Chu Feng's return.

The reason given for this celebration was to show how important Chu Feng was to the Cyanwood Mountain.

However, the most important reason was because Lord Lianghua's protection over the Cyanwood Mountain was something that they had to keep secret from the Dark Hall.

During the celebration feast, Chu Feng suddenly asked, "Seniors, do you all know of a way to return to the Eastern Sea Region from the Holy Land of Martialism?"

This was a question Chu Feng had wished to know the answer to for a very long time.

He had to return to the Eastern Sea Region. Firstly, he missed his family and friends in the Eastern Sea Region. Secondly, it was because Qing Xuantian's Emperor's Tomb was located in the Nine Provinces Continent.

Chu Feng had yet to completely open Qing Xuantian's Emperor's Tomb. At the very least, that Imperial Armament was still there. Chu Feng felt that it was about time for him to return to that Emperor's Tomb. After all, he was currently a Martial Emperor. If he were to return to that Emperor's Tomb, he would have at least a fifty percent chance of successfully obtaining the Imperial Armament there.

Furthermore, as he was now faced with the great enemy of the Dark Hall, Chu Feng felt that he had to quickly increase his strength.

That said, Chu Feng knew that the Heavenly Roads were only one-way. One could only enter the Holy Land of Martialism from the Four Sea Regions, and not go from the Holy Land of Martialism to the Four Sea Regions.

Actually, that was understandable. Else, if the people from the

Holy Land of Martialism were able to enter the Four Sea Regions at will, those Four Sea Regions would be in complete chaos. After all, the average strength of the individuals in the Holy Land of Martialism greatly surpassed that of the Four Sea Regions.

That said, the problem remained that Chu Feng must return to the Eastern Sea Region.

For that, Chu Feng had especially asked Tantai Xue about how she, along with those disciples from the Cursed Soil Sect, had managed to reach the Eastern Sea Region.

However, the answer he had obtained from her was that she didn't know how she had managed to reach the Eastern Sea Region.

All she told Chu Feng was that she was being chased by the Cursed Soil Sect's disciples, and came across a spatial crack when she was forced to a dead end. As such, she jumped into that spatial crack.

To her surprise, when she exited that spatial crack, she was in the Eastern Sea Region. If she wished to return to the Holy Land of Martialism, she could only do so through the Heavenly Road.

As for that spatial crack, she had tried searching for it again. However, she was unable to find it.

Thus, Chu Feng knew that it would not be simple for him to return to the Eastern Sea Region. As the people present were all grand experts in the Holy Land of Martialism, people that possessed a great amount of experience and knowledge, Chu Feng decided to ask them whether there was a way for him to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

“As far as I know, the Heavenly Roads are one-way. Only the people from the Four Sea Regions can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, and not the other way around.”

“The Heavenly Roads are very powerful spirit formations. They

greatly resemble the Boundary Energy that separated the Holy Land of Martialism before. They are things that we cannot oppose with our strength.”

“However, as long as it’s a spirit formation, there will definitely be a flaw, a gap. As the Boundary Energy possessed flaws that we could take advantage of, the Heavenly Roads most definitely possess flaws too.”

“Merely, the flaws of the Boundary Energy were something that one could cut open as long as one possessed sufficient strength. It was rather simple.”

“As for the Heavenly Roads, their flaws are innate. One can only search for them, and not create them,” The Compass Immortal said.

“Senior Compass, are the flaws that you mentioned spatial cracks?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. The flaws of the Heavenly Roads are their spatial cracks. For example, if you wished to enter the Eastern Sea Region, you would have to find a spatial crack at the exit of the Eastern Sea Region’s Heavenly Road. As long as you find a spatial crack, you would be able to reach the Eastern Sea Region upon entering it,” the Compass Immortal said.

“Merely, spatial cracks are things that one can only encounter, and cannot be sought after. It is very difficult to find them,” The Compass Immortal said.

Chapter 1953 – Must Return

“Not only is it difficult to find spatial cracks, the spatial cracks themselves can also be separated into those that are good and those that are bad. The good ones, are able to take you to where you want to go to. However, if you were to enter a bad one, you will be killed,” Lord Lianghua said.

“There is indeed that saying,” The Compass Immortal nodded in agreement.

“Chu Feng, why are you insistent on going to the Eastern Sea Region?” Baili Xuankong asked. He was already able to tell from the conversation how dangerous it was to return to the Eastern Sea Region. Thus, he deeply wanted to advise Chu Feng against braving the dangers to go there should it not be absolutely necessary for him to do so.

“Seniors, I will not conceal this from you all. The Eastern Sea Region is the place where I must go to. Although I am from the Outer World, I grew up in the Eastern Sea Region. My family and friends are there. I cannot disregard them and leave them there,” Chu Feng said.

The Compass Immortal sighed. “Chu Feng, I am not finding fault with you. Merely, a man should aspire to travel far and make his mark. As such, how could one be bound by one’s family and friends?”

“Furthermore, if your friends and family are to know that you decided to brave danger for their sake, I believe they would not agree to it either.”

“What the Compass Immortal said is very reasonable,” Baili Xuankong and the others also voiced their agreement. Actually... they were all against it for Chu Feng’s sake.

“That is only one of the reasons. There is also another reason,”

Chu Feng said.

“Another reason? You have another reason?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“What sort of reason would make you be willing to brave that sort of danger?” Lord Lianghua asked.

“Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian’s remnants,” Chu Feng said.

“What?!!!” Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd present all changed enormously. In fact, they even stood up from their seats very emotionally.

“Chu Feng, what did you just say? You said Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian’s remnants?” Nangong Longjian asked. At this moment, everyone was looking at Chu Feng. They were all unable to believe their ears.

After all, Qing Xuantian’s reputation was truly too enormous. Furthermore, the location of his remnants had been a mystery in the Holy Land of Martialism the entire time.

Countless people had tried to search for this remnants. Even Nangong Longjian, Lord Lianghua and the Compass Immortal had attempted to search for them before. Yet, no one had managed to find it.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng actually declared that he knew the location of Qing Xuantian’s remnants? As such, how could they not be shocked?

“Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian’s remnants are located in the Eastern Sea Region’s Nine Provinces Continent. That was the place of his birth. In other words, senior Qing Xuantian and I are from the same hometown,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng felt that there was already no need for him to conceal this fact from the crowd present anymore. After all, all of these

people present were worthy of his trust.

“Ah?!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd became even more shocked. The exceptional geniuses of two separate eras were actually from the same hometown?

What sort of place was the Nine Provinces Continent? Could it be a place that was filled with geniuses?

“Seniors, these are... the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he revealed all four of his Great Supreme Secret Skills. He had revealed them completely, and allowed them to take form in their most complete form.

“Those are Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts. There’s no mistake about it. Even though they’ve turned into secret skills, those are definitely their auras.”

“Chu Feng, so you were actually Qing Xuantian’s successor?” Lord Lianghua was a very old person. He had lived for over ten thousand years, and had personally met Qing Xuantian, as well as his four guardian beasts.

Thus, he recognized right away that Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills were Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts.

“I am not really senior Qing Xuantian’s successor. Merely, I managed to obtain his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills by coincidence,” Chu Feng said.

“Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts have turned into secret skills. In that case, Qing Xuantian is really dead?” At that moment, for some ineffable reason, the crowd felt sorrow.

Even though Qing Xuantian has disappeared for many years, and the crowd all felt that he had died, they all possessed a glimmer of hope, a delusion, that he was still alive.

“I do not know whether or not senior Qing Xuantian is dead or

alive. All that he left behind was a remnant, and not a grave,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, it means that Qing Xuantian might still be alive?” Hearing those words, Nangong Longjian and the others became spirited again.

“I don’t know. All I know is that senior Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts are not really dead.”

“I possess the means to revive them. Merely... I will have to return to the Eastern Sea Region’s Nine Provinces Continent,” Chu Feng said.

“The revival of Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts? Those four guardian beasts were very powerful. If they were able to be revived-!!!” As Lord Lianghua said this, he gasped and said, “It would seem that little friend Chu Feng must return to the Eastern Sea Region after all.”

“Lord Lianghua, were Lord Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts really that powerful?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“Not to mention the four guardian beasts, any one of them possessed strength that surpassed my own,” Lord Lianghua said.

“Above Lord Lianghua?!!!” Hearing that, the crowd was astonished once again.

When the four guardian beasts were already this powerful, how enormously powerful was Qing Xuantian himself?

At that moment, the crowd seemed to be able to imagine the strength that Qing Xuantian had possessed back then.

If Qing Xuantian were still alive, the Dark Hall would likely not be able to behave this atrociously in the Holy Land of Martialism.

After being shocked, the crowd all grew silent. Since the four guardian beasts were that powerful, they were unable to find a reason to reject the second reason that Chu Feng had provided for

his need to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

This was especially true in their current situation where they were faced with a great enemy in the form of the Dark Hall. If they were able to revive Qing Xuantian's legendary four guardian beasts, it would undoubtedly be an enormous assistance to them. In fact, they might even be able to reverse the situation of the battle!!!

“Little friend Chu Feng, even though returning to the Eastern Sea Region is very difficult, it is not impossible.”

“This old man is, after all, a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Just leave this matter to me,” The Compass Immortal said.

“Compass Immortal, your intention is?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“I will go to the Heavenly Road's exit and stand guard there. If I am to discover a spatial crack, I will use my abilities to maintain it and prolong the time that it remains in effect. Then, I will inform little friend Chu Feng,” The Compass Immortal said.

“That may be the only way,” As Lord Lianghua spoke, he took out a golden flash bird and said to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, leave your imprint on it.”

Chu Feng understood Lord Lianghua's intentions. Not only did Chu Feng leave his imprint on the Golden Flash Bird, he also personally handed it to the Compass Immortal, “Senior Compass, I'll have to trouble you.”

Trouble. Indeed, it would be a very troubling task. He would have to wait at the Heavenly Road's exit and wait for the appearance of spatial cracks that would only appear rarely and completely at random.

Everyone knew how dull, boring and extremely unendurable that task would be.

To have someone like the Compass Immortal go and do

something like that would truly be putting him at an enormous inconvenience unworthy of his status.

“My, Chu Feng, you are regarding me as an outsider with those words. If we can eliminate the Dark Hall, I would not mind guarding the Heavenly Road’s exit until the day I die. Hahaha,” The Compass Immortal burst into loud laughter. His laughter was filled with indifference. His laughter was very unrestrained.

However, hearing his laughter, the crowd present all felt admiration for him.

Even though the Compass Immortal was someone who loved to laugh, he was actually someone who cared deeply about the people of the world.

There were many people in the Holy Land of Martialism known to be Immortals. However, only someone like the Compass Immortal was actually worthy of the title of ‘Immortal.’

As for the World Devastator Immortal, the Avaricious Immortal and the like, they were simply smearing the title of ‘Immortal.’

Chapter 1954 – Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade

As such, this issue was determined. Originally, it was decided that the Compass Immortal would set off for the Heavenly Road's exit after some time.

However, no one expected that the Compass Immortal was extremely impatient, and left for the Eastern Sea Region's Heavenly Road's exit to wait for the appearance of the spatial crack right after the banquet. Before he left, he had only mentioned that he was leaving to Baili Xuankong.

Chu Feng did not just sit around after the Compass Immortal left. He planned to enter closed-door training to master the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill that Long Lin had given him.

Long Lin was someone from the Outer World. Even if the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill which he had given was not extremely good, it remained that it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill from the Outer World. As such, Chu Feng felt that it would most definitely be a quality Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

As for the truth, it was exactly as Chu Feng had anticipated. That Heaven Taboo Martial Skill was extremely powerful. In fact... it was even more powerful than Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation. It was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill of the highest quality.

That Heaven Taboo Martial Skill's name was the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade. Once the blade was unleashed, it would split through the void and destroy all living things.

Merely by looking at its introduction and the method of learning it, Chu Feng was able to feel how powerful that Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade was.

To Chu Feng's greatest surprise, the creator of that Void Splitting

Blade was actually Long Lin.

However, there was a flaw to that Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. That was that its true power could only be unleashed through Imperial Armaments.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still felt that he had to grasp that Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. If he didn't, it would simply be a waste. Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that he would sooner or later be able to obtain an Imperial Armament.

Afterward, Chu Feng immersed himself in learning the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade.

The Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade was extremely hard to learn, and even unsuitable for the majority of people. This was especially true when one didn't possess an Imperial Armament. In that situation, learning that Void Splitting Blade was simply akin to trying to scale the heavens.

However, such a thing was unable to hinder Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng had obtained a completely new understanding of martial skills through that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip.

However, even with that being the case, it still took Chu Feng an entire month to grasp the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade.

However, over the course of that month, Chu Feng had not only grasped the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade; he had also managed to create a method to learn the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade without the possession of Imperial Armaments. With that method, it would be much easier for others to learn that Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade.

“Ancestor.”

After Chu Feng left his closed-door training, he immediately went to search for Baili Xuankong.

“Chu Feng, you've left your closed-door training? Could it be that you've succeeded?” Baili Xuankong was very surprised to see Chu

Feng, and even more surprised to see how joyful Chu Feng was. The reason for that was because it very likely meant that Chu Feng had succeeded.

That said, for Chu Feng to be able to master a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill in a month's time came as both a shock and a delight to Baili Xuankong.

“I’ve succeeded. This Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade is truly worthy of being a martial skill from the Outer World. It is extremely powerful. I believe... there would rarely be any martial skill in the Holy Land of Martialism that could contend against it. With this martial skill in hand, I will have one more hidden trump card when fighting against others.”

“However...”

“However?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“However, this martial skill required the possession an Imperial Armament in order to fully unleash its might. Else... the might of this Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade would even be inferior to that of my Profound Firmament Annihilation,” Chu Feng said.

“If that’s the case, you really will have to make for the Eastern Sea Region as soon as possible. After all, the Imperial Armaments in the Holy Land of Martialism are limited in quantity. Practically all of the Imperial Armaments already possess owners.”

Baili Xuankong already knew that the Eastern Sea Region’s Nine Provinces Continent not only possessed Qing Xuantian’s remnant, it also possessed the Imperial Armament Qing Xuantian had left behind.

“If it’s only an Imperial Armament, I do not necessarily have to return to the Eastern Sea Region to obtain one,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Why’s that? Could it be that you planned to snatch someone else’s Imperial Armament?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Baili

Xuankong immediately urged against it, “Not a single one of those who possess Imperial Armaments are easy to handle. With your current strength, it is best that you do not go and provoke them.”

“Ancestor, have you forgotten that I’ve obtained the inheritance of the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King? Even though he did not pass his strength to me, I was given all that he had acquired throughout his lifetime. Not only were there cultivation resources, there’s also an Imperial Armament.”

“Thus, before returning to the Eastern Sea Region, I could make a trip to the Moonlight Maze first,” Chu Feng said.

“Will of the heavens! This is the will of the heavens!” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Baili Xuankong suddenly started laughing.

“Ancestor, what’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“This is most definitely the will of the heavens,” Baili Xuankong said through his laughter.

Later on, Baili Xuankong informed Chu Feng of what had happened. It turned out that not long after Chu Feng entered closed-door training, news of someone spreading a map of the Moonlight Maze had arrived.

Currently, practically all of the major powers and experts in the Holy Land of Martialism had received that map.

Currently, a large group of people were hurrying for the Moonlight Maze. They wanted to rely on that map to charge into the Moonlight Maze. After all, the Moonlight Maze was a place that was filled with treasures.

However, that was only one piece of news. Just yesterday, Baili Xuankong had received another news. As for that news, it was related to Chu Feng.

One of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ geniuses, Xian Yuyin, had actually found Zhang Tianyi and challenged him for his title of the

strongest younger generation.

Furthermore, he had successfully defeated Zhang Tianyi. And right now... Xian Yuyin had announced that he would openly challenge Chu Feng. He announced that he would wait for Chu Feng outside of the Moonlight Maze, and would compete with him for the title of the strongest younger generation there.

He wanted to let the people of the Holy Land of Martialism know that only their Ancient Era's Elves were qualified to hold the title of the strongest younger generation.

"Xian Yuyin, he is truly a stubborn one," After hearing about this matter, Chu Feng was immediately angered.

He knew that, with Xian Yuyin's strength, he would have been able to easily defeat Zhang Tianyi long ago should he have wanted to do so.

However, he only challenged Zhang Tianyi now. It was clear that he had done so not because of Zhang Tianyi, nor was it for the title of the Holy Land of Martialism's strongest younger generation.

Rather, his target was Chu Feng. He had done this to challenge Chu Feng.

Xian Yuyin knew that Zhang Tianyi was Chu Feng's brother. That was the reason why he had defeated Zhang Tianyi. He had done so for the sake of enraging Chu Feng and forcing Chu Feng to fight against him.

"Ancestor, does Lord Lianghua know about this matter concerning Xian Yuyin?" Chu Feng asked.

"He already knows. Lord Lianghua has said that Xian Yuyin is in the wrong, and hopes that you will be able to teach Xian Yuyin a lesson," Baili Xuankong said with a smile. He was very happy that Lord Lianghua was standing on Chu Feng's side.

"In that case, I really do have to teach him a lesson," Chu Feng narrowed his eyes.

Back in the Elf Kingdom, Xian Yuyin had deliberately tried to make things difficult for Chu Feng on more than one occasion. Chu Feng had not done anything to him back then because he had been giving the Ancient Era's Elves face.

However, never would Chu Feng have thought that Xian Yuyin would be this unreasonable. Even after his father had been forced to enter closed-door training, forced into a house arrest, Xian Yuyin actually still had the nerve to cause trouble.

As such, Chu Feng absolutely could not ignore Xian Yuyin anymore. He had to teach that Xian Yuyin a lesson. Else, he would most definitely continue to do this sort of thing in the future.

Not to mention Lord Lianghua supporting him, even if Lord Lianghua had been against it, Chu Feng would still teach Xian Yuyin a lesson.

As for that, it was for no reason other than the fact that Zhang Tianyi was Chu Feng's friend, Chu Feng's brother. As such, Chu Feng had to teach Xian Yuyin a lesson.

"Chu Feng, merely... the map of the Moonlight Maze would not have been spread for no reason or cause."

"We think that it is most definitely the actions of the Dark Hall. We do not know what sort of scheme the Dark Hall has in mind. If you are to go, I'm afraid..." Even though Baili Xuankong also hoped for Chu Feng to teach Xian Yuyin a lesson, he was worried for Chu Feng's safety at the same time.

"If it's the Dark Hall, Ancestor, you can rest assured. If they wanted to kill me, they would've already done so," Chu Feng said.

"But... it remains that they possess the intention to kill you," Baili Xuankong said.

"Ancestor, do you think that I am a fish on a chopping block, someone that can be trampled upon at any opportunity?" Chu Feng asked.

“No. While that might be possible for anyone else, you, boy, are definitely not someone to be taken advantage of,” Baili Xuankong understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Chu Feng possessed a cautious temperament. As such, it was very difficult for him to end up being taken advantage of again should he be taken advantage of once already.

Chapter 1955 – Moonlight Maze

“Ancestor, you really do not have to worry. Don’t forget, I have this,” Chu Feng took out the Qilin Arrow.

“In that case, you can go ahead. You do not have to worry about the Cyanwood Mountain. With Lord Lianghua watching over us, we will definitely be fine,” Upon seeing that Qilin Arrow, Baili Xuankong felt a lot more at ease. After all... that arrow was capable of killing rank seven Martial Emperors.

“Chu Feng, this is what the Compass Immortal had me hand to you before he left. I do not know what it is. However, I feel this item to be extraordinary,” Baili Xuankong handed a scroll to Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that scroll, Chu Feng’s eyes shone.

Wasn’t that the scroll that the Snow-haired Immortal had him safekeep, the scroll which had then ended up being swindled away by the Compass Immortal?

Upon opening the scroll, Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed. He did not expect that what that scroll recorded was actually information regarding the Moonlight Maze.

It... was a treasure map. Not only did it record the shortcut to a treasure deposit, the map itself was also a key that could be used to open a gate.

“The heavens are truly helping me,” Chu Feng put the scroll away.

“Chu Feng, what is on that scroll?” Baili Xuankong asked.

“It is a map relating to the Moonlight Maze,” Chu Feng said.

“That is truly a coincidence. A map left behind by the Compass Immortal is most definitely of considerable value,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded in agreement. He did not doubt the authenticity of the map at all. After all, if the map was a fake, the Snow-haired Immortal and the Compass Immortal would not have fought over it like so.

“Chu Feng, in that case, do you still need the map of the Moonlight Maze that is being spread throughout the Holy Land of Martialism?” Baili Xuankong took out another map. It was the map of the Moonlight Maze that was being spread around.

Chu Feng received the map and inspected it. However, he was unable to tell anything from the map. After all, he had never been to the Moonlight Maze before. As such, how could he know whether the map was real or fake? Thus... Chu Feng decided to put that map away too. He said, “I’ll keep it with me. Perhaps it might be of use.”

“Very well,” Baili Xuankong said.

“Ancestor, as far as I’m concerned, this is of no use to me. Thus, you should safekeep it.”

“If you are to find suitable candidates, you can have them learn it. In the future, it will be our Cyanwood Mountain’s Sect Protection Martial Skill,” Chu Feng handed the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade’s book to Baili Xuankong.

“Chu Feng, you absolutely cannot do this. After all, this is a treasure that Long Lin gave you,” Baili Xuankong hurriedly refused.

“Ancestor, I have already grasped this Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade. Even if I were to keep it, it would be useless to me.”

“Furthermore, I am a disciple of the Cyanwood Mountain. My possessions are the possessions of the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Thus, please do not refuse it. Even if senior Long Lin were to know about this, I believe that he would not disallow it. After all, he has already given it to me. As such, I am the one who possesses

the ability to decide what to do with it,” Chu Feng said.

“I am truly unable to win against you. Very well, I will accept it,” After Baili Xuankong accepted the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade, he was unable to contain his happiness, and began to grin from ear to ear.

How precious were Heaven Taboo Martial Skills? Their Cyanwood Mountain had been in existence for a very long time. Yet, they did not possess a single Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. And now, they had obtained one. As such, how could Baili Xuankong not be filled with joy?

Even though that Heaven Taboo Martial Skill could only reveal its true strength with Imperial Armaments, it remained that it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill created by an expert from the Outer World.

The value of the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade was likely above every one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Heaven Taboo Martial Skills. As for this, it was all thanks to Chu Feng.

Afterward, Chu Feng told Baili Xuankong the method to learning that Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade. This made the already joyous Baili Xuankong even more overjoyed.

After Baili Xuankong memorized the method to learn the Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade, Chu Feng set off to journey to the Moonlight Maze.

.....

The Moonlight Maze was the second strongest Forbidden Area in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, the Moonlight Maze was different from the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

The reason why the Moonlight Maze was called that was because it possessed two distinctive characteristics.

First, it was a maze. The majority of the people who entered it would not be able to come back out, and would end up dying in

there. Furthermore, the majority of them would die without leaving corpses or even skeletal remains behind.

It was said that even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not dare to trespass into the Moonlight Maze.

Secondly, above the Moonlight Maze was an enormous bright moon. That bright moon flickered with silvery light, and remained in the sky in both daytime and nighttime.

It was extremely beautiful, extremely magnificent.

Thus, the Moonlight Maze was said to be one of the most peculiar scenic spots in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Due to its famous reputation, there were people who came to the Moonlight Maze to watch the scenery all year round. Over time, cities were formed surrounding the Moonlight Maze to provide the tourists with food, drink and a resting place.

However, those cities were not cities that anyone could build. The cities surrounding the Moonlight Maze were controlled by three powers. As for them, they were the Heavenly Law Palace, the Underworld Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

The Three Palaces all took control of several cities. Together, they guarded the area surrounding the Moonlight Maze. However, it was only limited to the area outside the Moonlight Maze. The reason for that was because they were unable to interfere with the things that happened within the Moonlight Maze.

It was not that the Three Palaces were not selfish, and did not have intentions to seize the Moonlight Maze for themselves. Rather, it was that the Ancient Era's Elves refused to allow them to do so.

As for right now, the already lively Moonlight Maze reached an unprecedented height of liveliness.

With the influx of countless people, the cities controlled by the Three Palaces were all overcrowded. As such, many people were

only able to stay outside of the cities.

However, in terms of liveliness, it would have to be the northwestern city, which went by the name of Heavenly Law First City, that was the liveliest.

This city gathered the most people. Why were there so many people here? It was because this was the place where Xian Yuyin had challenged Chu Feng to fight.

At that moment, Xian Yuyin was standing outside of the Heavenly Law First City's city gate. Holding an Imperial Armament in his hand, he stood there motionlessly.

He had already been standing there for a total of thirteen days. He had stood there ever since he had arrived at the city. As he waited for Chu Feng's arrival, he had now clearly become a part of the scenery.

“Wow, so handsome. As expected of the Ancient Era's Elves' number one genius.”

“What nonsense are you talking about? Everyone knows that the Ancient Era's Elves' number one genius is the Little Elf Princess.”

“The Little Elf Princess is a female, whereas Xian Yuyin is a male. Xian Yuyin is the number one genius among the Ancient Era's Elves' men. Am I wrong?”

“.....”

Xian Yuyin had a very handsome appearance, and his cultivation was very strong. Even though he was only a member of the younger generation, he possessed the cultivation of a rank three Martial Emperor. Furthermore, the long green sword that he held was not only very exquisite and refined, it was also an Imperial Armament. Holding that Imperial Armament, he appeared to be very awe-inspiring.

At this point, Xian Yuyin had already become the prince charming of countless females. A large group of love-struck

females were staring at him. They had stared at him for thirteen days straight.

“Will Chu Feng be coming?”

“He definitely will. Has there ever been anyone who Chu Feng was afraid of? Look at the Four Great Imperial Clans. They wanted to kill Chu Feng that badly. Yet, in the end, weren’t they all forced to reconcile with Chu Feng? Don’t forget that Chu Feng is a member of the younger generation who fought against the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs by himself, and even killed the Ximen Imperial Clan’s Clan Chief. Among the current younger generation, who could possibly accomplish that? Who could possibly be a match for Chu Feng?”

“That’s not a certainty. No matter how strong Chu Feng might be, his strength will only count amongst the humans. As for that Xian Yuyin, he is an Ancient Era’s Elf. Furthermore, it is said that he possesses the cultivation of a rank three Martial Emperor, and possesses an Imperial Armament on top of that. His overall strength, no matter how one looks at it, would not be something that the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs could match, no?”

“While Chu Feng was able to defeat the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Clan Chiefs, he might not necessarily be able to defeat Xian Yuyin.”

“That’s true, that’s true.”

.....

.....

At that moment when a bunch of love-struck women surrounded Xian Yuyin, the majority of the crowd were more concerned with whether or not Chu Feng would come.

That said, regardless of whether they were part of the group that felt that Chu Feng would come or part of the group that felt that Chu Feng would not come, they all wished for Chu Feng to come.

The reason for that was because they all wished to witness a confrontation between two of the strongest individuals among the younger generation. Compared to the competition held on the Gong Ba Plains, this showdown was even more worth seeing.

Chapter 1956 – Disparity In Strength

“Xian Yuyin, you truly have balls.”

Suddenly, a figure appeared out of nowhere. He stood in the middle of the sky overlooking Xian Yuyin.

“Chu Feng! Quickly, look, it’s Chu Feng! Chu Feng came!!!”

“Who said that Chu Feng would not dare to come? Exactly who was it earlier that said Chu Feng would not dare to come?”

“I shall see who dares to say that Chu Feng will not dare to come again. If anyone dares to say that, I’ll slap them to death.”

Chu Feng’s arrival caused the entire crowd to burst into an uproar. This was especially true for those individuals who felt that Chu Feng would show up, just then, they were hooting incessantly.

Being questioned like this by those that felt Chu Feng would show up, those who felt that Chu Feng would not show up earlier were unable to say anything. They now understood the meaning of ‘seeing once is better than hearing a hundred times.’ They had truly never expected Chu Feng to really be this courageous.

Chu Feng dared to even accept the challenge from Xian Yuyin.

One must know that his opponent, Xian Yuyin, was a rank three Martial Emperor.

Yet, what about Chu Feng?

It was said that Chu Feng was only a rank nine Half Martial Emperor. Even if he were to use his techniques to temporarily increase his cultivation, he would only be a rank two Martial Emperor.

Would Chu Feng be able to defeat Xian Yuyin?

At that moment, that was the question in the minds of the crowd. At the same time, they were all filled with anticipation for the battle.

“Chu Feng, I should be the one saying those words, no?” Xian Yuyin slowly raised his head. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was filled with killing intent.

Xian Yuyin... truly detested Chu Feng enormously. The way he saw it, he had originally possessed a bright future. He was someone who would become the future Elf King.

Yet, all of that was ruined by Chu Feng.

“What makes you qualified to say those words to me?” Chu Feng had a slight smile on his face as he looked to Xian Yuyin disdainfully.

A cultivation of rank three Martial Emperor and an actual Imperial Armament in hand.

That sort of strength was very strong. Very few people among the younger generation would be able to contend against Xian Yuyin. It was reasonable for Zhang Tianyi to be defeated by him.

However, to Chu Feng, such a Xian Yuyin was simply no match for him. As such, Chu Feng did not place him in his eyes at all.

Being looked upon with such contempt by Chu Feng caused Xian Yuyin to become even more enraged. However, he thought about it, and did not burst into a fury. Instead, he smiled slightly and said, “That Zhang Tianyi said words similar to what you said before he fought against me. However, do you know what ended up happening to him?”

“In the end, he could only allow himself to be trampled upon by my foot, and allow my sword to pierce into his body repeatedly. I have left his body full of holes.”

“Furthermore, I told him that the reason why he ended up having to suffer all that is because of his brother Chu Feng.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression did not change much. However, his gaze sunk.

He knew that what Xian Yuyin said was most likely the truth. Upon thinking of how Zhang Tianyi suffered that sort of torment because of him, Chu Feng felt an enormous amount of heartache.

“What? There is actually animosity between that Xian Yuyin and Chu Feng? He challenged Zhang Tianyi because of Chu Feng?”

“One’s own conflicts should not involve the other party’s relatives or friends. For Xian Yuyin to do such a thing, isn’t it a bit too excessive?”

At that moment, the surrounding crowd were able to guess that there was a previous conflict between Xian Yuyin and Chu Feng. However, the majority of them disapproved of Xian Yuyin’s actions.

“Chu Feng, did you know? I told Zhang Tianyi that as long as he was willing to renounce you as his brother, I would spare him.”

“However, he was quite stubborn. Not only did he refuse to renounce his relationship with you, he instead cursed at me. Thus, in the end, I had no choice but to cut his tongue off,” As Xian Yuyin spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

Seeing that item, Chu Feng’s expression changed, and his fists clenched tightly. They were clenched so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard.

Chu Feng felt as if his blood was boiling and about to explode. He was on the verge of being unable to contain himself.

The reason for that was because what Xian Yuyin held in his hand was a tongue.

Xian Yuyin had really sliced off Zhang Tianyi’s tongue.

“Xian Yuyin, you’re trying to make me kill you, is that right?” Chu Feng asked with a cold voice. At this moment, the tone of his voice had changed completely. It was extremely sunken, yet powerful. Chu Feng’s killing intent was evident.

“Hahahahaha...”

Xian Yuyin burst into loud laughter. Then, his complexion instantly turned cold. He said, “Once again, that is what I should be saying to you.”

“Boom~~~”

Right after he finished saying those words, Xian Yuyin immediately brandished his Imperial Armament and unleashed an attack at Chu Feng.

Once the Imperial Armament was unleashed, its oppressive might filled the surrounding area. Many of the bystanders that were close by were blown away by that oppressive might. All those that were struck by the oppressive might ended up vomiting blood. Some among them even died on the spot.

“What ruthlessness.”

Seeing Xian Yuyin’s ferocious attack that paid no attention to the lives of the bystanders, seeing how Xian Yuyin had willfully slaughtered the innocent, the hatred in Chu Feng’s eyes grew even more intense.

Regardless of where one might be, there would always be scum. As for that Xian Yuyin, he was most definitely scum.

“Zzzzz~”

Lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased from rank one Martial Emperor to rank three Martial Emperor. His current cultivation was the same as Xian Yuyin’s.

Even though the two of them possessed the same level of cultivation, their battle power was completely different. Even though Xian Yuyin held an Imperial Armament, Chu Feng was not afraid of him in the slightest.

Chu Feng's body shifted to the side and dodged Xian Yuyin's slash. Then, like a thunder strike, Chu Feng descended from the sky. "Bang," he arrived before Xian Yuyin.

The powerful impulse of his descent caused the surrounding rocks to fly about and the earth to rip apart.

"You!!!" Seeing how Chu Feng had arrived before him in an instant, Xian Yuyin's expression changed enormously. At that moment, he finally realized the disparity between him and Chu Feng.

A heaven defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. Chu Feng actually possessed a heaven defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, something even more powerful than what Xian Miaomiao possessed.

"You damned scum. Today, I shall cripple you," Chu Feng did not give Xian Yuyin any opportunity. As he spoke, his hand formed a blade. Then, with a 'puu,' his hand pierced into Xian Yuyin's body and cut open Xian Yuyin's dantian.

"Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!"

At that moment, Xian Yuyin uttered a heart-tearing and lung-splitting scream and dropped the Imperial Armament that he was holding in his hand.

"Heavens!!!"

At that moment, the crowd was looking at Chu Feng and Xian Yuyin again. Merely, upon seeing the scene before them, their expressions all changed enormously and they were filled with shock.

Chu Feng stood before Xian Yuyin with the same cultivation as him. However, his hand was thrust into Xian Yuyin's dantian. As for Xian Yuyin, he was screaming miserably without the strength to resist Chu Feng at all.

Chu Feng had defeated Xian Yuyin with merely a single attack.

His strength truly broadened the crowd's horizons. In fact, the crowd were all feeling disbelief right now.

Wasn't Chu Feng a rank nine Half Martial Emperor? Even if he were to use his special techniques to temporarily increase his cultivation, shouldn't he be a rank two Martial Emperor?

Why would he suddenly become a rank three Martial Emperor? Furthermore, how did he defeat Xian Yuyin, a fellow rank three Martial Emperor, with only a single strike?

One must know that Xian Yuyin was holding an actual Imperial Armament in his hand. As for Chu Feng, he was not using any weapon at all. With his naked hand, he pierced into Xian Yuyin's dantian.

The disparity in strength between the two of them was actually that enormous?!!!!!!

Chapter 1957 – Must Kill!

“Stop!!!”

Right at that moment, an angry shout suddenly sounded from above the skies. Following that voice, a figure appeared.

It was an Ancient Era’s Elf. He possessed white hair and an aged appearance. With wrinkles covering his face, he appeared to be extremely old.

However, his cultivation was very strong. He was a rank six Martial Emperor. Furthermore, his gaze was extremely fierce and filled with killing intent as he looked to Chu Feng.

Upon seeing this man, Chu Feng’s gaze grew colder. The anger on his face increased.

Chu Feng had never met that Ancient Era’s Elf before. However, he knew for certain that he was related to Xian Yuyin. Else, he would not be helping Xian Yuyin.

The reason why Chu Feng grew even angrier was because that Ancient Era’s Elf held a man in either hand. They were his good brother Zhang Tianyi and Zhang Tianyi’s father, Zhang Ming.

At that moment, both Zhang Tianyi and Zhang Ming were covered in blood and their auras were extremely weak. It was as if they might die at any moment.

Not only did Xian Yuyin defeat Zhang Tianyi, he had also really tormented Zhang Tianyi. In fact, even Zhang Tianyi’s father Zhang Ming was implicated.

“What insolence!”

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng was filled with overflowing anger. The hand which he had pierced into Xian Yuyin suddenly clenched. His martial power began to ravage Xian Yuyin from within.

“Ahh!!!!!!”

“Uncle, save me, save me!!!” Xian Yuyin started to shout.

“Chu Feng, stop immediately. Otherwise, I will kill Zhang Tianyi and his father,” Xian Yuyin’s uncle shouted.

“What? They are Zhang Tianyi and his father?”

“After defeating Zhang Tianyi, Xian Yuyin even captured Zhang Tianyi after? Isn’t this too excessive?”

“Wasn’t it only sparring? Why would they be tormented to such a state? Furthermore, he even involved his father?”

After knowing that Ancient Era’s Elf was holding Zhang Tianyi and his father, many people began to feel disgusted with Xian Yuyin.

In fact, when Xian Yuyin had killed many innocent people with his slash, he had already lost the favor of the people.

“Release them. Otherwise, I will kill Xian Yuyin on the spot,” Chu Feng said coldly. His each and every word was said with fuming rage between gritted teeth.

“Kill Yuyin? You dare?! Yuyin is our Ancient Era’s Elves’ Young Master. You dare kill him?! If you kill him, not even ten thousand of you would be enough to make up for his death!”

“However, I dare to guarantee you that if you do not release Yuyin right now, I will immediately make Zhang Tianyi and his father meet miserable deaths,” That old man said with a ferocious appearance.

“Puu~~~”

Chu Feng suddenly pulled out his palm. Then, he ruthlessly pierced it back into Xian Yuyin’s dantian. He said, “I do not know whether or not you will kill them. However, if you do not do as I say, I will definitely kill Xian Yuyin.”

“Uncle! Release them! Release them!!!”

“He really will kill me! I don’t want to die!!”

Shockingly, Xian Yuyin was crying. He was crying not only because of the pain from Chu Feng’s torment. Most importantly, it was because he felt that his cultivation was rapidly fleeing away. He felt as if his heart was bleeding.

That was his cultivation that he had painstakingly trained.

“I’ll release them, I’ll release them,” Seeing that Chu Feng had started to torment Xian Yuyin, that Ancient Era’s Elf started to panic. He ended up having no choice but to throw Zhang Tianyi and his father to Chu Feng.

“Senior brother Zhang, senior Zhang, are you two okay?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“Chu Feng, we are fine,” Zhang Tianyi’s father said with a weak voice.

As for Zhang Tianyi, he smiled. However, he did not say anything.

However, that action from him caused Chu Feng’s heart to tighten. Chu Feng felt enormous pain.

He knew that it was not that Zhang Tianyi did not wish to say anything. Rather, he was unable to speak. His tongue had truly been cut off by Xian Yuyin.

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng turned to the sky and shouted angrily. That voice of his was so ear-piercing that not only did the ground start to quake, even the void itself began to tremble.

Chu Feng was truly enraged. However, he knew that he could not kill Xian Yuyin. No matter what, Xian Yuyin was still an Ancient Era’s Elf.

Finally, Chu Feng stopped his shouting. He forced a smile onto his face and said to Zhang Tianyi, “Senior brother Zhang, senior

Zhang, I will not have you two suffer in vain.”

After he finished saying those words, ruthlessness flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, with sudden strength in his arm, he thrust his entire arm through Xian Yuyin’s body.

“Puuu~~~”

At this moment, Xian Yuyin’s mouth opened wide, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood. Then, with a ‘putt,’ he crashed to the ground. He no longer possessed any breath.

Dead. Xian Yuyin was dead.

Killed. He had been killed by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew that he possessed a lot of reasons as to why he could not kill Xian Yuyin.

However, when he saw his own brother and senior being tormented to such a state by Xian Yuyin, Chu Feng was unable to find any reason not to kill him.

Thus, today, he had to kill Xian Yuyin.

“Noo!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Seeing Xian Yuyin being killed by Chu Feng, that Ancient Era’s Elf let out a snarl filled with incomparable anger.

“Catch,” As for Chu Feng, he suddenly lifted his leg and kicked both Xian Yuyin’s corpse as well as the Imperial Armament he had been holding to that Ancient Era’s Elf.

Then, holding Zhang Tianyi with one hand and Zhang Ming with his other, he unleashed his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and began to escape.

“Chu Feng, I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces today!!!” After catching Xian Yuyin’s corpse and the Imperial Armament, that Ancient Era’s Elf did not plan to let Chu Feng get away. Instead, he began to chase after Chu Feng.

Not only did he unleash all of his strength, he also unleashed their Ancient Era's Elves' special bloodline's power. He was determined to kill Chu Feng.

Actually, if Chu Feng wanted to kill him, he was totally capable of doing so. Even though a rank six Martial Emperor was very strong, Chu Feng possessed the Qilin Arrow that was capable of killing even rank seven Martial Emperors.

However, as he had already killed Xian Yuyin, Chu Feng did not wish to kill another Ancient Era's Elf. After all... the Ancient Era's Elves had treated him very well. Even if they had done something unforgivable, Chu Feng knew that Xian Yuyin was the main offender.

Thus, to Chu Feng, killing Xian Yuyin was already sufficient. He did not have the need to kill this Ancient Era's Elf too.

As for why Chu Feng did not reveal his Qilin Arrow to scare that Ancient Era's Elf, it was because he felt that that Ancient Era's Elf had already been driven mad with Xian Yuyin's death. Thus, he would not be able to scare him with his Qilin Arrow. As Chu Feng did not wish to kill him, the only thing he could do was run away.

“Chu Feng, you've done nothing wrong. Thus, why flee?”

Right at this moment, a silhouette suddenly appeared before Chu Feng.

Upon seeing this person, Chu Feng immediately revealed a joyous expression. This person... was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had a smile on his face. He walked over to Chu Feng's back and stopped the Ancient Era's Elf who was chasing after him.

“Scram!!!” That Ancient Era's Elf was most definitely someone that knew the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. However, as he had already lost his ability to reason, he did not care about the

Weaponry Refinement Immortal at all.

“Scram!!!” However, when that Ancient Era’s Elf reached the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal waved his sleeve and brought forth a strong gale. That gale directly blew that Ancient Era’s Elf away.

Before the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, that rank six Martial Emperor Ancient Era’s Elf was actually unable to withstand a single attack.

“Rank seven Martial Emperor?”

Chu Feng was shocked upon sensing the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s aura. He had never expected that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would actually be stronger than even the YinYang Immortal. He was actually a rank seven Martial Emperor.

Chapter 1958 – [Demonic Genius Immortal](#)

“I only just reached a breakthrough,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said to Chu Feng with a smile, “Let me treat them with you.”

“Okay,” Chu Feng nodded. At that moment, Zhang Tianyi and his father were both seriously injured. Thus, Chu Feng did not have the time to care about the current situation, and decided to join hands with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to heal Zhang Tianyi and his father’s injuries on the spot.

After healing Zhang Tianyi and his father’s injuries, Chu Feng said shamefully, “Senior brother Zhang, senior Zhang, I have implicated the two of you again.”

“My, what are you talking about? It is us who caused you to kill that Xian Yuyin... It seems that we have caused you enormous trouble,” At that moment, Zhang Ming was extremely ashamed and guilty.

“Junior brother Chu Feng, I am useless. I only know how to implicate you, and do not know how to help you with anything else,” Zhang Tianyi was also very ashamed.

The two of them both knew how powerful the Ancient Era’s Elves were. The Ancient Era’s Elves were the most frightening power in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Thus, the way they saw it, Chu Feng’s killing of Xian Yuyin would definitely create enormous trouble for him. Furthermore, Chu Feng had done all of that because of them.

“It might not necessarily be a misfortune,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled lightly. He had said those words through voice transmission. As such, only Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi and Zhang Ming heard it.

“Mn?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi and Zhang

Ming were all startled.

Zhang Tianyi and his father were confused by what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal meant. As for Chu Feng, he seemed to have realized something.

“Follow me,” As the Weaponry Refinement Immortal Spoke, he planned to bring Chu Feng and the others away.

“Demonic Genius Immortal!”

“Demonic Genius Immortal!”

“Demonic Genius Immortal!”

.....

.....

Right at that moment, thunderous shouting was heard from down below. Those shouting voices pierced through the skies and resonated through the heavenly dome.

It turned out that those bystanders had all caught up to them when Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were treating Zhang Tianyi and Zhang Ming’s injuries. At that moment, they were all shouting in celebration for Chu Feng.

They were celebrating Chu Feng’s victory over Zhang Tianyi, and how he had obtained the title of the strongest member of the Holy Land of Martialism’s younger generation.

Even though they had personally witnessed Chu Feng’s killing of Xian Yuyin, no one blamed him. At the very least, the overwhelming majority supported Chu Feng’s decision.

After all, the crowd all witnessed what had happened. How Xian Yuyin had treated Chu Feng’s brother with torment. He was the one in the wrong first. For the sake of his brother, Chu Feng had killed Xian Yuyin. As such, he was not too excessive in his actions.

In fact, Chu Feng’s decisiveness in killing Xian Yuyin caused a lot of people to feel respect for Chu Feng.

Only someone as loyal and affectionate to his family and friends like Chu Feng was worthy of their respect.

“Demonic Genius Immortal?” Chu Feng was startled and slightly confused.

Indeed, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was present in this place. But, why would they be shouting ‘Demonic Genius Immortal’ instead?

“You still don’t know?” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled.

“Senior, what’s happening?” Chu Feng asked.

“You are a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. It is only natural for you to have the title of ‘Immortal.’”

“As you have not decided what to call yourself, others have decided for you. As such, many titles that others gave you began to spread through the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“And now, that Demonic Genius Immortal became a title that many people acknowledged. Thus, you are not only Chu Feng now, you are also the Demonic Genius Immortal,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said with a smile.

“Demonic Genius Immortal? My title?” Chu Feng didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry. Unknowingly, he was given a title by others. Furthermore, his title was the Demonic Genius Immortal.

By demonic, it meant that it was something different from normal, that it was a bad omen. It meant things like demons and ghosts. It meant people or things that were evil in nature.

By immortal, it meant a very capable person that upheld virtue and condemned evil. They were great scholars respected by others. ‘Immortal’ meant people whom others should worship and aim to become.

The two parts of his title were completely incompatible with one

another. They should not be placed together.

However, when using the term ‘Demonic Genius Immortal’ to describe Chu Feng, it appeared to be extremely well-fitting.

Suddenly, Chu Feng smiled. “Very well. In that case, from today on, I shall be known as the Demonic Genius Immortal in the Holy Land of Martialism.” He had acknowledged that title.

Afterwards, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng and the others stepped into the void. They continued to travel. It was only when they reached a place without anyone present that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, what happened this time around was caused by the Dark Hall.”

“So it was the Dark Hall,” Chu Feng sighed. He had already suspected that this might be the case.

“Dark Hall?” Zhang Ming and Zhang Tianyi were confused.

Naturally, they knew of the Dark Hall. However, their knowledge was only limited to the Dark Hall’s appearance at the Ximen Imperial Clan. They did not know anything else regarding the Dark Hall.

In fact, for the majority of the people in the Holy Land of Martialism, they only knew the Dark Hall from their appearance at the Ximen Imperial Clan, and did not know how dangerous the Dark Hall really was.

“Senior brother Zhang, senior Zhang, the Dark Hall is extremely dangerous,” Chu Feng roughly mentioned what had happened with the Dark Hall to Zhang Tianyi and Zhang Ming.

“That Dark Hall is actually that powerful?” After hearing about the Dark Hall, Zhang Tianyi and his father were both extremely shocked.

“Indeed, they’re extremely powerful. They were afraid of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ involvement in what’s happening here, and actually launched attacks at many of the Ancient Era’s Elves’

powerhouses. In this sort of situation, the Elf King had no choice but to oversee the Ancient Era's Elves and direct the many Ancient Era's Elves experts to fight against the Dark Hall."

"Even the Dark Hall's Hall Master has shown himself repeatedly," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"The Dark Hall actually declared war on the Ancient Era's Elves? Furthermore, the Dark Hall's Hall Master has shown himself repeatedly?" After hearing about what was happening, Zhang Ming was extremely shocked. After living in the Holy Land of Martialism for so long, he knew how powerful the Ancient Era's Elves were. Even after finding out that the Dark Hall was very dangerous, he did not believe that the Dark Hall would be capable of contending against the Ancient Era's Elves.

"The Dark Hall will naturally not be a match for the Ancient Era's Elves should they fight openly. However, the crucial aspect remains that they are in the shadows, while the Ancient Era's Elves are in the light. The Dark Hall has been repeatedly sending their elites to sneak attack the Ancient Era's Elves' branches. As such, it is impossible for the Ancient Era's Elves to completely contain the Dark Hall," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"Truly despicable," Chu Feng said.

"Indeed, they're very despicable. However, the Dark Hall has underestimated the Ancient Era's Elves," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"Senior, you mean...?" Chu Feng thought of something.

"The Elf King fought against the Dark Hall's Hall Master once," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"What was the outcome of that battle?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Dark Hall's Hall Master fled," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"His Majesty is truly amazing," After hearing that, Chu Feng was

immediately overjoyed.

What the Dark Hall feared the most were the Ancient Era's Elves. Since the Dark Hall's Hall Master had fought against the Elf King, if he were able to kill the Elf King, he would've definitely killed him.

However, he had instead escaped. This meant that he was still no match for the Elf King. This was a piece of good news, absolutely good news.

"Not only that, even though the Dark Hall has tried their best to contain the Ancient Era's Elves, the Ancient Era's Elves have still dispatched a group of their elites here," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"The Ancient Era's Elves actually sent a group of elites here at such a time?" After hearing about this matter, Zhang Ming was even more shocked.

Logically, after being attacked repeatedly, the Ancient Era's Elves should have dispatched experts from the Elf Kingdom to support their various branches.

After all, no matter what sort of conspiracy the Dark Hall might be planning here, they would be causing harm to others, and not the Ancient Era's Elves.

It was precisely because the people that would be harmed in this place were unrelated to the Ancient Era's Elves that Zhang Ming had a whole new level of respect for the Ancient Era's Elves upon knowing that they had dispatched their elites here.

It turned out that the people who cared the most for the people of the Holy Land of Martialism were the Ancient Era's Elves.

"The reason for that is because the Ancient Era's Elves thought of a possibility. If that possibility were to occur, it would be even more dreadful than what happened at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. As such, they must prevent that from happening," The

Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“What is the Dark Hall planning now?” Chu Feng asked.

“Actually, it’s better for Lord Luokong to explain this to you,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said with a smile. Then, he continued to lead the way.

Lord Luokong?

Upon hearing that name, Chu Feng’s heart moved. He knew who Lord Luokong was. He was someone on par with Lord Lianghua, one of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Elf Kingdom’s Four Grand Elders.

Even though the Elf King was entangled with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and unable to personally come, the fact that Lord Luokong came caused Chu Feng to feel much more at ease.

After all, Lord Luokong was a Grand Elder. His strength would most likely not be inferior to Lord Lianghua’s. Likely, he would also be a rank eight Martial Emperor. With him overseeing the situation, not to mention the Dark Hall’s other experts, even the World Devastator Immortal would likely have to suffer consequences should he face him.

As in the demon-level character term used to describe absolute geniuses. The actual chinese word is Yaonie. Not a great word to use really... the meaning is very vague.

it could mean...

1. an abnormal phenomenon/ usually a bad omen
2. ghosts/demons
3. something or someone evil/wicked
4. female sexuality/charm. Sometimes used to describe acting homo.
5. pervert/abnormal person

However.,,, those are the ‘normal’ meanings of the word. There’s

also the internet modern slang...

6. used to describe someone being so amazing that they surpassed everyone else

7. used to describe exceptional beauty (female)

There might be more that I do not know of.

However, it is clear that the term being used by bee is definition #6.

I had been translating it to demon-level character the entire time since the term genius was already taken.

Chapter 1959 – Moon Immortal, Moon Demon

Afterwards, under the guidance of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng and the others arrived at an uninhabited and remote location. Although this place was uninhabited, a world spirit gate was opened with a point of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's finger.

After passing through the world spirit gate, Chu Feng immediately revealed an overjoyed expression.

Sure enough, the Ancient Era's Elves had dispatched their elites this time around. Although they were disguised as humans, Chu Feng was still able to recognize them. This was especially true for that Lord Luokong.

However, that was not what gave him the pleasant surprise. What he was pleasantly surprised by was the fact that Su Rou and Su Mei, the two sisters, were actually also here.

“Big brother Chu Feng,” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Su Mei directly threw herself into Chu Feng's bosom.

As for Su Rou, even though she did not act like Su Mei, she was also smiling. Her smile was truly enchanting. From her smile, it could be seen how enormously happy she was to see Chu Feng again.

“Hey, hey, hey. I am also here, shouldn't you all at least greet me?” Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi spoke with a disapproving expression.

“Senior brother Zhang,” In response, Su Rou and Su Mei greeted Zhang Tianyi.

Zhang Tianyi sighed. “Forget about it. You two girls simply value your lover more than your friends. Upon seeing my junior brother Chu Feng, you no longer have me, this senior brother, in your eyes

at all,” Zhang Tianyi said jokingly.

“That’s right. After I saw big brother Chu Feng, I no longer had anyone else in my eyes. Even though he used to be very stupid, foolish and slow,” Su Mei said with a beaming smile.

Even now, Su Mei was unwilling to let go of Chu Feng, and continued to hug him tightly with no regard for the various seniors’ gazes. Even though this girl was no longer a young girl, she still had the same temperament of a young girl.

“Very stupid, foolish and slow? I used to be like that?” Chu Feng had a questioning expression.

“Eh? When I didn’t know you, that was what I saw you as,” Su Mei said.

“After knowing him, your heart was completely captured by him. Right now, you will immediately call him ‘big brother Chu Feng, big brother Chu Feng’ whenever you see him. You’ve become even more intimate with him than with me, your own older sister,” Su Rou rolled her eyes.

“I am already big brother Chu Feng’s woman. If I don’t call him big brother Chu Feng, am I to call him husband instead? That will have to wait until he marries me,” Su Mei said sweetly.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt a tart sensation in his heart. Indeed, both Su Rou and Su Mei were already his women.

Merely, Chu Feng had yet to take them as his wives. Actually, Chu Feng had his own plans. To marry Su Rou and Su Mei was something that he would do sooner or later.

However, he wanted his parents to be present during that wedding ceremony.

“Cough, cough...” At that moment, Lord Luokong, who had been ignored the entire time, coughed.

“Enough, you all can continue to flirt later. Right now, we must

talk business,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Lord Luokong, do you know of the Dark Hall’s scheme this time around?” Chu Feng took the initiative to ask.

“I do. The Dark Hall is planning to release the Moon Demon,” Lord Luokong said.

“Moon Demon? What is the Moon Demon?” Not only did Chu Feng reveal a curious expression, even Zhang Ming revealed a curious expression.

“Everyone knows that the Moonlight Maze contains a lot of treasures. However, very few people know that there is also a Moon Demon in the Moonlight Maze.”

“Actually, our Ancient Era’s Elves did not know of that Moon Demon before either. It was Qing Xuantian who told us about it,” Lord Luokong said.

“Senior Qing Xuantian?” Chu Feng was surprised. He did not expect for this matter to be related to Qing Xuantian.

“Since ancient times, only a single person, Qing Xuantian, has managed to reach the deepest region of the Moonlight Maze. It was there that he discovered the Moon Demon.”

“In other words, Qing Xuantian was the one who undid the Moon Demon’s seal and released it,” Lord Luokong said.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng asked, “A demon released by senior Qing Xuantian? Exactly what happened?”

Afterward, Lord Luokong began to explain what had happened to Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng came to possess a rough understanding of what had happened.

The Moon Demon was indeed released by Qing Xuantian. Furthermore, he had deliberately released it.

When the Moon Demon was released, it was not released in a complete form. However, it was still extremely strong.

Furthermore, it possessed an overflowing vicious nature and was incomparably ruthless. If it were to achieve its complete form, not even Qing Xuantian would be a match for it.

After the Moon Demon was released, it began to condense its body. Reportedly, the Fire and Ice Pearls were crucial to it forming its body.

Qing Xuantian had destroyed the spirit formation that it was using to condense its body and snatched away the two pearls. With that, he prevented the Moon Demon from achieving its complete form.

However, Qing Xuantian did not seize the opportunity to eliminate the Moon Demon. Instead, using world spirit formations, he dissolved the Moon Demon's vicious nature.

The reason why Qing Xuantian did such a thing was because he knew that the Moon Demon's nature was not evil. On the contrary... the Moon Demon's original form was that of an Immortal.

Originally, Qing Xuantian had wanted to release the Moon Immortal. However, to his surprise, he had released the Moon Demon instead.

As for the reason why the Moon Immortal had ended up becoming the Moon Demon, it was because, since ancient times, there had been too many people who had tried to charge into the Moonlight Maze only to die in there. With their dense bloody aura and lingering evil tendencies, they had altered the Moon Immortal and turned it into the Moon Demon.

Qing Xuantian had left a very powerful spirit formation on the Moon Demon's body, making it so that it would not be affected by the bloody aura or the lingering evil tendencies of the Moonlight Maze, and making the evil tendencies that were already gathered in the Moon Demon disappear.

Qing Xuantian said that the Moon Demon would turn into the Moon Immortal should the Fire and Ice Pearls be returned to it after ten thousand years.

Originally, Qing Xuantian had wanted to hand the Fire and Ice Pearls to the Ancient Era's Elves and have them keep them safe. However, he suddenly changed his mind and took the two pearls away with him.

"Fire and Ice Pearls, could they be?!!!" At this moment, Chu Feng looked to Su Rou and Su Mei. His gaze was slightly complicated.

He finally realized that it was no coincidence that Su Rou and Su Mei were here. They had come for the Moonlight Maze.

It would seem that Su Rou and Su Mei had already mentioned their possession of the Fire and Ice Pearls to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, he should have mentioned it to the Ancient Era's Elves. It was already no longer a secret.

The Fire and Ice Pearls in Su Rou and Su Mei's body were crucial to the Moon Immortal obtaining his complete form.

"Big brother Chu Feng, the Fire and Ice Pearls in big sister and my body were discovered in Lord Qing Xuantian's Emperor's Tomb. We felt that the pearls in our bodies should be the Fire and Ice Pearls needed to turn that Moon Demon into the Moon Immortal," Su Mei said.

"But, if the two pearls are to be removed from your bodies, your cultivation will suffer. Even your bodies themselves..." Chu Feng said.

Actually, with Chu Feng's current world spirit techniques, he was actually capable of removing the Fire and Ice Pearls from Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies. However, the Fire and Ice Pearls were already assimilated by the two of them. If they were to be removed, it would not be beneficial at all. Instead, it would cause

their cultivations to suffer damage, and might even cause permanent injuries to their bodies.

“Little friend Chu Feng, Qing Xuantian especially stated to us that even though the bloody auras and evil tendencies of the Moonlight Maze will no longer be able to affect the Moon Demon, if the bloody auras and evil tendencies were to increase to a frightening level, they would still end up affecting the Moon Demon.”

“For example, the current situation of so many people gathered at the Moonlight Maze is simply unprecedented. If they were to all die in the Moonlight Maze, the bloody auras and evil tendencies they would leave in the Moonlight Maze would be unimaginable.”

“Furthermore, ten thousand years have already passed. It is now the crucial moment for the Moon Demon to become the [Moon Immortal](#).”

“For the Dark Hall to spread the Moonlight Maze’s map at such a time, it’s obvious that they want to lure people in and then have them die inside the Moonlight Maze.”

“As for their true purpose, it would be to use those innocent lives to return the Moon Demon to its demonic nature. They’re planning to take control of the Moon Demon,” Lord Luokong said.

“Wouldn’t that be easily solved? We can stop people from entering the Moonlight Maze before it is opened, no?”

“As long as there are not that many people dying in there, even the Dark Hall would not be able to do anything, no?” Chu Feng asked.

The Moonlight Maze opened once every month. However, it would only open on a special day. Other than those special days, no one could enter the Moonlight Maze.

That was also the reason why there were so many people gathered outside the Moonlight Maze right now. Thus, if they

wanted to prevent the crowd from entering, it was completely possible to accomplish this with the current strength of the Ancient Era's Elves.

In the end, unless there was no other choice, Chu Feng did not wish to bring harm to Su Rou and Su Mei.

The 'Immortal' used in 'Moon Immortal' has a different meaning from the Immortal used in the title of the Ten Immortals (including Chu Feng's new title). Moon Immortal's Immortal only contains the character Immortal. i.e., he/she would be an actual celestial Immortal. As for Chu Feng and the other Ten Immortals, their titles are literally 'Immortal Person.' This gives the sensation that they are still mortals. For example, when Chu Feng was called 'God' by the people in the Poison Demon's Valley, he was addressed as 'God Person.' Thus, still a mortal. It's hard to describe, I hope you all can understand...

Chapter 1960 – The Unavoidable Battle

“But, little friend Chu Feng, even if we manage to prevent it this once, it will be difficult to prevent it again. As long as the Moon Demon is still in the Moonlight Maze, the Dark Hall can use other methods to awaken its demonic nature.”

“Thus...”

“Thus, you all want to use the Fire and Ice Pearls to turn the Moon Demon into the Moon Immortal, and then have the Moon Immortal work for you all, is that right?” Chu Feng said.

“That is indeed what we have in mind. It is also the best option. After all, the Dark Hall, that dangerous and troubling power, should be eliminated as quickly as possible. Otherwise, there will be no peace in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“You also know that the Dark Hall has captured all of the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts from the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. However, they have not released those Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts upon the world. We do not know exactly what they’re planning to do, exactly what sort of conspiracy they have in mind. However, one thing is certain: the Dark Hall is extremely dangerous,” Lord Luokong said.

At that moment, Chu Feng grew silent. It was true that the Dark Hall was very dangerous. Not only did they know about a lot of the Holy Land of Martialism’s secrets, they might even know things that the other residents of the Holy Land of Martialism did not.

No one knew exactly what the Dark Hall was planning to do. However, whatever it was they planned to do would definitely be extremely dangerous and detrimental to the lives of those in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Big brother Chu Feng, we already know about the matters concerning you and the Dark Hall. Allow us to help you out. If we

could save the people of the world by giving up our cultivation, if we could help you, it would truly be worth it,” Su Mei said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, think of the greater good,” Su Rou also spoke.

In fact, Chu Feng was unable to find any reason to refuse them either.

Merely... as he saw his two beloved women willing to sacrifice their cultivations and bring harm to their own bodies to help him, Chu Feng felt enormous pain.

In the end, it was because he was not strong enough. Else, there would be no need for them to go to such means.

“In that case, what’s the plan?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to our understanding of the Moonlight Maze, the map that the Dark Hall has spread will successfully lead the crowd to the [Immortality Peach Tree](#),” Lord Luokong said.

“Immortality Peach Tree?” Chu Feng’s eyes brightened.

“The Immortality Peach Tree is one of the most famous treasures in the Moonlight Maze. By eating an Immortality Peach, one can extend one’s lifespan by a hundred years,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“It’s actually that miraculous? Does that Immortality Peach Tree really exist?” Chu Feng asked.

If such a treasure really did exist, it would truly be a treasure to prolong one’s life. Many of the people that Chu Feng knew were already near the limits of their lifespan. If he could obtain Immortality Peaches, he would be able to assist those people.

“Actually, that’s a question I’d like to ask too,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal looked to Lord Luokong.

“There is indeed an Immortality Peach Tree. However, as for the people that have actually seen the Immortality Peach Tree, it is

likely only we Ancient Era's Elves and the Five Emperors who have seen it after the end of the Ancient Era," Lord Luokong said.

"It really exists?" After hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal revealed a smile of anticipation. He said, "It is no wonder that your Ancient Era's Elves were able to live for so long."

"Cough cough..." Lord Luokong coughed twice. Evidently, what the Weaponry Refinement said was correct. Thus, Lord Luokong blushed slightly in embarrassment.

"Actually, the harvest that our Ancient Era's Elves obtained was not as much as you all might be thinking. Although the Immortality Peach Tree is very large, the time at which its fruits mature are all different. Thus, our Ancient Era's Elves would only enter the Moonlight Maze once every five hundred years. Furthermore, we would only be able to harvest several hundred peaches each time," Lord Luokong said.

"Several hundred? And you all still consider that to not be a lot?" The Weaponry Refinement Immortal revealed an expression of disdain. He added, "It is not good for you all to monopolize the Immortality Peach Tree."

"Well, with the situation now, it would appear to be impossible for them to monopolize the Immortality Peach Tree anymore. After all, the destination of that map is the location of the Immortality Peach Tree," Chu Feng said as he took out the map that had been spread by the Dark Hall.

"But, didn't the Dark Hall want to kill people in the Moonlight Maze? Could it be... that they plan to set up an ambush there?" Chu Feng asked.

"No... the location where the Immortality Peach Tree is located is a killing formation to begin with. If that killing formation were to be activated, all of the people inside would be killed."

“Furthermore, I believe that the people from the Dark Hall should know the method to activate the killing formation. That is why they spread the map to lead the crowd there,” Lord Luokong said.

“You mean to say that the location where the Immortality Peach Tree is located is a slaughterhouse? By entering it, people will be killed?” Chu Feng asked.

“Then, what about the Immortality Peach Tree? Wouldn’t that Immortality Peach Tree be destroyed?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal seemed to care more about the Immortality Peach Tree.

“No, that killing formation only kills people, and will not injure the Immortality Peach Tree.”

“Actually, there are a lot of killing formations in the Moonlight Maze. However, they all only kill people, and will not harm any of the treasures inside the Moonlight Maze,” Lord Luokong said.

“Then, how are we to prevent that from happening?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s the troubling aspect,” Lord Luokong sighed. He added, “I know where the core of the Immortality Peach Tree’s killing formation is located. As long as it is destroyed, the Immortality Peach Tree’s killing formation will also be destroyed.”

“Merely, due to our greed, we did not destroy that killing formation. And now, if we want to destroy the core, the people of the Dark Hall should have already made preparations for us. As such, it will be impossible to avoid a fierce battle,” Lord Luokong said.

“How did you all come to know about that formation’s core? Did Qing Xuantian tell you all?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng asked that question because he discovered that it was not the Ancient Era’s Elves that knew the most about the Moonlight Maze. Instead, Qing Xuantian knew about it more than

them. As such, he felt that the location of that formation's core should also have been told to the Ancient Era's Elves by Qing Xuantian.

“We are truly ashamed to mention it. However, it was indeed Qing Xuantian who told us about it. After Qing Xuantian defeated our then Majesty and forced us to share our Ancient Era's Immortal Ponds, he also felt that he owed us. As such, he told us about the matter regarding the Immortality Peach Tree.”

“As for that formation's core, it was also Qing Xuantian who discovered it. Merely, he was unable to destroy it back then. He would have needed to use a spirit formation to destroy the defenses of that formation's core. However, to destroy those defenses would have taken at least a thousand years.”

“That's why Qing Xuantian told us about that core. He wanted us to destroy that formation's core and that killing formation after a thousand years passed,” Lord Luokong did not conceal this fact.

“However, due to selfishness, you all did not do as senior Qing Xuantian advised,” Su Mei said frankly and criticized the Ancient Era's Elves.

“Indeed, it was because we were selfish. It truly is a shameful thing,” Lord Luokong smiled bitterly.

“Enough about that. We shouldn't mention the things of the past anymore. Right now, our top priority is to prevent the Dark Hall from harming the innocent.”

“Lord Luokong, do you have a detailed plan in mind?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do,” Lord Luokong nodded.

Then, Lord Luokong spoke of his plan.

It turned out that the killing formation's core was not located in the same place as the killing formation itself. As such, Lord Luokong planned to separate the people here into two groups.

He wanted Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to proceed for the Immortality Peach Tree with the ignorant masses and try to use their world spirit techniques to prevent the activation of the killing formation.

As for the Ancient Era's Elves, they would lead their army to the location where the killing formation's core was located. As long as they destroyed the core, the killing formation would be destroyed too. As such, there would no longer be any danger.

Merely, although this matter seemed to be easy to do, everyone knew that it would not be easy at all.

After all, based on what had happened earlier in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, they knew that the Dark Hall's strength could not be looked down upon. This time around, they had created such a major commotion. As such, they would most definitely be prepared.

The people from the Dark Hall would definitely guard that killing formation's core. The reason for that was because the location to activate the killing formation was in the same location as the killing formation's core.

In short... a fierce battle was unavoidable.

Technically, Saturn Peach Tree. However, Saturn Peach are peaches of immortality kept by the Queen Mother of the West, a goddess in Chinese mythology.

Chapter 1961 – Emperor Chi’s Successor

“Are Lil Rou and Lil Mei going to follow the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and I?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, they’ll be following us. We will protect their safety,” Lord Luokong said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. Lord Luokong and the others were going to go and fight against the Dark Hall. Following them would be safe?

Would it really be safe to follow them?

But, if Su Rou and Su Mei were to follow him and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng would not be able to guarantee their safety either.

In comparison, it was safer to send Su Rou and Su Mei to follow Lord Luokong and the Ancient Era’s Elves’ elites.

But... Chu Feng was still extremely worried.

“Little friend Chu Feng, rest assured. We will protect them with all of our strength,” Lord Luokong seemed to have realized Chu Feng’s worry and he spoke to guarantee their safety.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Actually, I know of a shortcut to the Immortality Peach Tree,”

“Shortcut?” Hearing those words, the crowd were all startled.

“Mn. Thus, if that killing formation is easy to contain, there will not be a need for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to journey alongside me. I will use the shortcut to arrive at the Immortality Peach Tree first and set up the spirit formation. With that, I should be able to prevent that killing formation’s activation,” Chu Feng said.

“Really?” Lord Luokong asked. After all, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was a rank seven Martial Emperor. If the

Weaponry Refinement Immortal were to proceed to the formation's core with them, then even if they were to start fighting against the Dark Hall, he would be an enormous assistance in the battle.

In the end, Lord Luokong wanted the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to go with them too.

The best way to solve this issue would be to fight against the Dark Hall in a battle to the death at the formation's core. As for proceeding to the Immortality Peach Tree and setting up a formation to prevent the activation of the killing formation, it was only to guard against the unexpected.

"It is true that I know of a shortcut. If I am to take that shortcut, I will be able to reach the Immortality Peach Tree much faster than the others," Chu Feng nodded.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. The map that the Compass Immortal had given him also led to the Immortality Peach Tree. Merely, the route shown on the map that the Compass Immortal had given him was a shortcut.

Furthermore, to Chu Feng's pleasant surprise, that shortcut would also bring him to the location where the Beast Emperor's treasures were hidden. It could be said that he would be hitting two birds with one stone.

In other words, regardless of the situation, Chu Feng would have to take that shortcut. After all, Chu Feng's original intention in coming to the Moonlight Maze was to obtain the Beast Emperor's treasures.

Furthermore, if Chu Feng were to take that shortcut, his speed would indeed be much faster than the map spread to the crowd by the Dark Hall. Thus, Chu Feng was not worried that he would not be able to make it to the Immortality Peach Tree in time.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that he would have sufficient time to obtain

the Beast Emperor's treasures on the way, and still make it to the Immortality Peach Tree first.

Furthermore, he felt that he would still have sufficient time to set up a spirit formation to prevent the activation of the killing formation.

As long as that killing formation could be stopped, Chu Feng, with his world spirit techniques, would definitely be able to stop it.

If that killing formation could not be stopped, then, even if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were to join him, it would still be useless.

However, the most important aspect in regards to Chu Feng's decision was that he was worried for Su Rou and Su Mei's safety. He wanted the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to journey with Lord Luokong to ensure Su Rou and Su Mei's safety.

"Little friend Chu Feng, how did you come to know about that shortcut? Are you able to ascertain that that shortcut is real?" The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked. As this matter was of the utmost importance, he was worried.

"Senior, look at this map. Do you think it's real?" Chu Feng directly took out the Compass Immortal's scroll.

"Actually, we also know of a shortcut. Merely, that shortcut can only be opened with a key. Little friend Chu Feng, might that shortcut you're talking about be the same shortcut that we know of?" Lord Luokong asked.

"Lord Luokong, have a look," Chu Feng handed the map to Lord Luokong.

"Indeed, that is the one," After seeing the map, Lord Luokong smiled in a relieved manner. He said, "This was the shortcut left behind by Qing Xuantian. That map itself is the key. It is real."

"With that map in hand, little friend Chu Feng will be able to reach the Immortality Peach Tree very quickly. If you are to set up

a spirit formation there to prevent the activation of the killing formation, the effect would be even better,” At that moment, Lord Luokong was overjoyed. After all, this situation meant that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would be able to travel with them.

“But... what if the people from the Dark Hall decide to guard against the unexpected, and also dispatch people to the Immortality Peach Tree?” Su Mei said worriedly. Compared to the overall situation, she was more worried about Chu Feng’s safety.

“I don’t think they will dispatch people there. After all, when the killing formation is successfully activated, everyone in the Immortality Peach Tree’s vicinity will die. I don’t think they will dispatch their own people there just to die. Furthermore, I doubt people would be willing to throw their lives away like that,” Lord Luokong said.

“I think what Lil Mei said is not without reason. As the saying goes, better safe than sorry,” Su Rou added. She was also worried about Chu Feng’s safety.

“Rest assured, not even rank seven Martial Emperors can cause me harm. I possess a treasure that can kill rank seven Martial Emperors,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, both Su Rou and Su Mei grew quiet. The implication of Chu Feng’s words were clear. Rank seven Martial Emperors could not harm him; only rank eight Martial Emperors could harm him.

As for rank eight Martial Emperors, what level of experts were they? They were people on par with Lord Luokong. If an expert of that level was at the Peach Immortality Tree, even if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were to accompany Chu Feng, he would not be able to do anything anyway.

“If that’s the case, then little friend Chu Feng, you carry an enormous responsibility. Make sure to be careful.”

“Remember, at the crucial moment, you must save yourself first,” Lord Luokong said.

Lord Luokong knew how important of a character Chu Feng was. He was a young man that could potentially become the second Qing Xuantian. Chu Feng’s safety was actually his greatest concern.

“Lord Luokong, do not worry about me. I merely have one request. If you all are to encounter the Dark Hall, please do not act leniently toward them,” Chu Feng said.

“Even if you didn’t tell us that, we would not act leniently toward them. I guarantee you that we will kill every one of them that we encounter,” Lord Luokong said.

“Dark Hall, this time, I will definitely make you all suffer the consequences,” At that moment, Chu Feng’s fighting spirit was very strong. The reason for that was because this was the first actual confrontation between him and the Dark Hall.

Before, he had suffered enormously from them.

This time, he was planning to make them suffer.

After this matter was decided, Chu Feng went his separate way from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others as he snuck into the crowd by himself, .

Merely, this time around, Chu Feng did not reveal his true appearance. Instead, he had disguised himself.

“Did you all see what Chu Feng did? He killed Xian Yuyin with a single strike.”

“I’ve heard of it. I just didn’t see it. It’s truly a pity.”

“Sigh, Xian Yuyin was truly a disgrace. It’s great that Chu Feng killed him.”

Just then, the people around him were all discussing the matter concerning Chu Feng and Xian Yuyin. Even though that event

ended not long ago, it had already spread through this entire region.

“Look, look. That’s a shameless fellow declaring himself to be Emperor Chi’s successor. Furthermore, he even said that he had fought against Chu Feng before and defeated him.”

“For real? Quickly, let’s go and have a look. Exactly who is it that’s this shameless?” Suddenly, the crowd burst into an uproar. They all began to proceed toward the place indicated by that fellow.

After hearing what the crowd was talking about, Chu Feng also grew curious. As there was still some time before the opening of the Moonlight Maze, and he had nothing to do in the meantime, Chu Feng decided to join the crowd and see what was going on. Mainly, he was interested in knowing exactly who it was that was so shameless as to boast about defeating him.

Emperor Chi’s successor?

Defeated him?

Whoever it was was truly shameless.

As Chu Feng arrived within the crowd, he saw a silhouette. Upon seeing that person, Chu Feng’s eyes shone, and then, unable to contain himself, he burst into laughter.

It was a man. His age was about the same as Chu Feng’s. Merely, his appearance was truly peculiar.

He had a head of hedgehog-like super pointy hair. Although he was as thin as a match, his torso was actually bare naked.

In fact, he was actually only wearing underpants, as well as a pair of straw sandals.

Furthermore, his underpants were covered with flowery embroidery. It was truly flowery.

As for his star sandals, they were actually colored. Furthermore,

their colors were different. One was red, and the other was green.

Truly, his appearance was that of an enormous weirdo, extremely ridiculous.

Furthermore, that man spoke with a stutter. Yet, he was currently boasting before all these people.

This man was someone that Chu Feng had met before. His name was Wang Qiang.

After seeing Wang Qiang, Chu Feng felt a burst of delight. Although that Wang Qiang was a weirdo, his nature wasn't bad, and Chu Feng's impression of him was pretty decent.

Chu Feng had never expected to be able to see Wang Qiang here after separating for so long. This was truly fate.

“Mn?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes shone. Even with his current strength, he was actually unable to see through Wang Qiang's cultivation!!!

Chapter 1962 – Entering The Maze

Wang Qiang was still the same as always; he was still bragging about how powerful he was.

However, as Chu Feng saw the reactions of the surrounding crowd, he felt them to be quite amusing. The reason for that was because no one believed in Wang Qiang. Many of the people thought Wang Qiang to be a shameless lunatic, and were merely watching this show for enjoyment.

In fact, there were even people who insulted him on the spot. From this, it could be seen that Chu Feng possessed a very high status in the hearts of the crowd. Else, there would be no reason for them to insult Wang Qiang.

However, with how thick-skinned Wang Qiang was, how could he possibly care about the insults being thrown at him? Not only did he not care about them, he instead spoke back to them mockingly.

As for Chu Feng, he did not reveal his true appearance, nor did he call out to Wang Qiang. After all, Chu Feng did not know whether or not there were people from the Dark Hall amongst the crowd. Even though he knew that the people from the Dark Hall did not plan to kill him, this was only limited to the time being. Sooner or later, they would aim to kill him.

In order to guard against the unexpected, even if Chu Feng were to reveal himself, he would only do so after entering the Moonlight Maze.

Just like that, Chu Feng concealed his identity the entire time until the day the Moonlight Maze was opened. Then, Chu Feng followed the crowd and entered the Moonlight Maze.

The Moonlight Maze was truly an extraordinary place. Countless legends swirled around it. Furthermore, the majority of those

legends were concerning treasures.

Several tens of millions of people had arrived at the Moonlight Maze. As such, the first group of people to enter the Moonlight Maze also numbered extremely high; there were actually over a million individuals.

These million-plus people were of all different cultivations. Not to mention Martial Kings, there were even Martial Lords who came to get in on the action.

Many of the people who came were dreaming of becoming lucky and striking it rich. Even though they knew that their cultivations were very weak, they still wanted to test their luck.

Of course, other than just those people, the majority of the people who dared to enter the Moonlight Maze were prepared. Not only were the people from the Three Palaces, Four Clans, Nine Powers and the many monstrous beast races present, there were also old monsters who had hidden themselves in seclusion for a long time present as well.

In fact, some among those old monsters were people whose fame was widespread throughout the Holy Land of Martialism, people who even the Three Palaces wanted to rope into their powers.

However, they were all people who were about to die from old age. They had all come for the sake of that legendary Immortality Peach Tree. Merely... they did not know that the map's destination was actually the Immortality Peach Tree. The reason for that was because even though the Dark Hall had scattered the maps all over, they had not indicated what was at the destination of the map.

Chu Feng was among the first group to enter the Moonlight Maze. After all, he possessed the important mission of preventing the death of the crowd. In the beginning, everything was fine. However, as the crowd moved forward, someone accidentally triggered a spirit formation. Although that spirit formation did not cause any harm to the crowd, it sealed the path ahead.

“Damn it, that’s a world spirit formation. It’s impossible to destroy it. What do we do now?”

“Who triggered that trap? Get out here!”

At that moment, the crowd started to become agitated. They were planning to condemn the person that had triggered the trap.

Naturally, in this sort of situation, no one would be willing to admit that it was them. After all, none of them were stupid. If they were to admit to it, they would simply be courting death from a beating. In fact, their corpse might not even be left whole.

Suddenly, a Heavenly Law Palace’s elder spoke. “Everyone, don’t panic. Based on this old man’s judgement, although that spirit formation is very powerful, it will disappear by itself after seventy-two hours.”

“Since we cannot break through it, let’s wait patiently.”

That elder’s name was Yue Ling. His cultivation was pretty decent; he was a rank six Martial Emperor. Furthermore, he was a Snake Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, and one of the Heavenly Law Palace’s management elders.

Thus, this Elder Yue Ling possessed quite a large amount fame in the Holy Land of Martialism. As such, his words held authority, and many people began to believe him.

“Elder Yue, you’re a world spiritist. Could it be that even you are unable to do anything to that spirit formation?” Someone asked.

“There’s nothing I can do,” Elder Yue Ling shook his head.

“Then, won’t we have to wait seventy-two hours? After seventy-two hours, how many more people from behind us will have entered the Moonlight Maze?”

At this moment, many people were frowning. Those that were able to be in the first group’s vanguard were all people with decent cultivations; they were all experts above rank eight Half Martial

Emperor.

To put it simply, the first group's vanguard were mainly composed of Martial Emperors and peak Half Martial Emperors. They were the elite among the million plus people.

As everyone possessed selfish desires, those from the vanguard who rushed to be the first to enter the Moonlight Maze did so for the sake of shaking off the people behind them. They did not wish to share the rewards with the people after them.

If they were forced to stay here for seventy-two hours, all of the people from behind them would've caught up to them. In that case, their effort to be the vanguard would be all in vain. Evidently, they did not wish for such a thing to happen.

"Apart from that, there is nothing else we can do," Elder Yue Ling said.

Right at this moment, Wang Qiang stuttered, "Ol, old, old fart, yo, you, you're wr, wr, wrong."

"What did you say?" Hearing those words, Elder Yue Ling's sword-like eyebrows narrowed. He was angered. He was not only angry because Wang Qiang was questioning his decision. Most importantly, it was because Wang Qiang rudely called him 'old fart.'

"I sa, said that yo, you're wr, wrong. Ac, ac, actually, th, th, th, there is a way. Dra, dragon Mark Ro,royal-cloak World Spi,spiritsts will be able to br, bre, break thro, through that obs, obstruction," Wang Qiang said.

"Dragon mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? You speak of it that casually, why don't you go and find one?" Elder Yue Ling said in a displeased manner.

"I, I, I, I kn, kn, kn, know a person. He, he's a Dra, dra, dra, dragon Mark Royal-cloak Wo, wo, world Spiritist. I be, be, believe he is he, he, here righ, right now," Wang Qiang said.

“Are you talking about the Weaponry Refinement Immortal?” Someone asked.

“No, no, no, it, it, it’s not o, o, o, only the Weaponry Refinement Immortal that ca, cam, came here,” Wang Qiang said.

“You’re talking about the Demonic Genius Immortal Chu Feng?” Someone thought of Chu Feng.

Not only was Chu Feng a demon-level character, he was also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, many people had seen Chu Feng arriving at the Moonlight Maze. Thus, they knew that there was actually a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist here.

“Th, th, th, th, th, that’s right,” Wang Qiang nodded with a smile.

“Chu Feng? Demonic Genius Immortal? Heh...” At that moment, Elder Yue Ling laughed lightly. However, his laughter was filled with mockery. He added, “Chu Feng was already scared away by the Ancient Era’s Elves after killing Xian Yuyin. He simply does not dare to show up here.”

“Furthermore, even if he came, with his world spirit techniques, how could he possibly be able to break apart that spirit formation?”

“Although this old man is not a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, I know that there exists a difference in strength between Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“The spirit formation here is extremely powerful. It is impossible to break through it even if all of us were to attack it with all our combined strength. As such, how could a mere brat possibly be able to undo that spirit formation?”

“Regardless, I do not care whether or not you all believe that Chu Feng is capable of doing that or not. However, this old man absolutely will not believe it,” Elder Yue Ling mocked.

From his words, it could be seen that he seemed to despise Chu Feng enormously. In other words, he possessed quite a bit of hostility toward Chu Feng.

“If I were able to undo the spirit formation, Elder, what would you do?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng revealed his true appearance and walked out of the crowd.

He had shown himself. Chu Feng had carefully inspected the crowd after entering this place, and discovered that there didn’t seem to be people among the Dark Hall here. As such, he decided that there would be no harm in him revealing himself.

Furthermore, Chu Feng urgently wished to obtain the Beast Emperor’s treasures. Thus, he did not plan to waste time here anyways. He had already planned to reveal himself.

And now, there was actually someone that was questioning his ability and even mocking him. As such, Chu Feng must teach him a lesson, and show him what kind of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist he was.

Chapter 1963 – Apologize By Eating Feces

“Chu Feng?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd immediately became excited. Many among them even began to cheer his name. Some were so excited that their eyes started to tear up. Others were so excited that they were trembling in excitement.

Chu Feng was the most famous person in the Holy Land of Martialism right now.

After witnessing or hearing about all the various events concerning Chu Feng, many people felt that Chu Feng was the person who had the greatest possibility of becoming this era’s overlord.

As such, Chu Feng’s popularity in the Holy Land of Martialism was extremely fiery.

Seeing this scene, the people from the Four Great Imperial Clans revealed unpleasant expressions. However, in terms of unpleasant expressions, the ones with the most unpleasant expressions would be the ones from the Heavenly Law Palace. As one of the human race’s strongest powers, they deeply detested others seizing their limelight.

“Ol, old br, bro Chu, Chu, Chu Feng, I mi, mi, missed you to, to, to, to death,” At that moment, Wang Qiang rushed forward to Chu Feng’s side. He extended his arms and gave Chu Feng a bear hug.

Chu Feng did not evade his bear hug. Instead, he allowed Wang Qiang to hug him.

Why didn’t he avoid the hug? It was because Chu Feng also missed Wang Qiang after not seeing him for so long.

In Chu Feng’s heart, Wang Qiang was his brother. It is only natural to hug a brother after seeing him again after so long.

“Come, come, come, giv, giv, give me a kiss,” However, that Wang Qiang was truly disgusting. He actually puckered his saliva-

filled giant donkey-like lips toward Chu Feng's cheek.

“Scram!” While smiling, Chu Feng unleashed a slap at Wang Qiang's face and forced him away.

“Old bro Chu Feng, why, why, why, why are yo, yo, you treating me li, like this?” Wang Qiang covered his cheek with his palm. He had a depressed expression on his face. However, he was not actually angered, Instead, he appeared a bit shy. This caused Chu Feng to have black lines running down his forehead.

“Who was it who said that he defeated me at the Sealing Ancient Village?” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang with a beaming smile on his face.

That fellow had boasted a lot. His boasting included inverting right from wrong. He had turned the truth of Chu Feng defeating him to him defeating Chu Feng.

“Hehe...”

“I mi, mi, missed you. Tha, tha, that's why I jo, joked around. It, it, it was so that I could lur, lure you out,” Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laughter.

Hearing those words, the crowd were unable to contain themselves, and started to curse out at Wang Qiang. Sure enough, Wang Qiang's claim of defeating Chu Feng was merely boasting.

Even though they already knew that that should be the case, Wang Qiang had actually admitted to it with such indifference. As such, the crowd were truly unable to tolerate his thick skin and shamelessness. If they were to not curse out at Wang Qiang, they would instead feel uncomfortable.

However, from Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's appearance, it seemed that the two of them really did know one another. Furthermore, they were actually friends? Why would Chu Feng have a friend like him?

The crowd felt confused. They were all wondering why Chu Feng

would befriend such a person.

Wang Qiang completely ignored the cursing from the others. He arrived before Chu Feng again and asked with a low voice, “Ol, old bro Chu Feng, are, are you certain that yo, you can bre, break open that spi, spirit formation?”

“About ninety percent certain,” Chu Feng said.

“Goo, goo, good!” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang was overjoyed. Then, he turned his gaze to that Heavenly Law Palace’s Elder Yue Ling and spoke loudly, “Ol, ol, old fart, ea, ear, earlier you dar,dared to boast sh, shamelessly that my ol, old bro Chu, Chu Feng w, would b, b, be unable to br, br, break through that sp, spirit formation.”

“Ho, however, if he ca, can break thr, through that sp, spi, spir, spirit formation, wh, wh, what are you go, going to do? Shoul, shouldn’t you ap, ap, apo, apol, apologize?”

Once Wang Qiang said those words, the crowd started to frown. No matter what, Elder Yue Ling was a grand character in the Holy Land of Martialism. Yet, this unknown fellow actually dared to speak to him like this? Could it be that he had grown tired of living?

“Watch the way you speak! Are you trying to die?!” Sure enough, the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace all drew their weapons. They had the appearance of planning to attack Wang Qiang.

However that Elder Yue Ling stopped the Heavenly Law Palace’s crowd. With a beaming smile, he asked Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, is that ignorant little bastard really your friend?”

His intention was very clear. If Wang Qiang was Chu Feng’s friend, he would give Chu Feng face and not bicker with Wang Qiang. However, if he wasn’t, he would teach Wang Qiang a lesson.

Merely, even though he was planning to give Chu Feng face, he was very unwilling in doing so. The words ‘little bastard’ had

already betrayed him.

“Ol, old bro Chu, Chu Feng, I, I, I’m not afraid of that o, o, old fart. No, no, no ma, ma, matter what, I am Em, Emperor Chi’s suc, successor.”

“Bu, but, in my, my heart, you, Chu Feng, are my br, br, bro, bro, brother. I wonder, wh, what do you con, consider me to be in yo, your heart? You can ju, just tell the tr, truth.”

Even though Wang Qiang said that he was not afraid of Elder Yue Ling, he had a pitiful expression when he said those words to Chu Feng. Furthermore, there were actually glistening tears in his eyes. He was simply on the verge of crying.

It was evident that he wanted Chu Feng to admit that he was his friend.

Seeing Wang Qiang acting like this, Chu Feng shook his head with a smile. Even though he had not seen Wang Qiang for quite some time, Wang Qiang remained completely the same. Thus, Chu Feng said to Elder Yue Ling, “It is true, Wang Qiang is my friend.”

“Since that’s the case, this old man will not bicker with him about how rude he was toward me. However, little friend Chu Feng, since he is your friend, you should teach him some manners. If he continues to act like that, sooner or later, he will end up suffering.”

“After all, not everyone is as broad-hearted as me, who is choosing not to bicker with a little bastard like him,” Elder Yue Ling said.

“It is true that Wang Qiang is my friend. However, his manner of conduct is his own matter. I, Chu Feng, will not control him, nor do I have the ability to do so,” Chu Feng said.

Even though that Elder Yue Ling was acting like the good guy now, he had indeed spoken ill of Chu Feng before Chu Feng had revealed himself. Chu Feng actually deeply detested people like

him.

“Well spoken. Little friend Chu Feng, what you said is truly well spoken,” At that moment, a yellow-haired Underworld Palace’s Elder began to applaud Chu Feng.

Even though this old man’s appearance was very fierce and tough, his strength was very strong. Like Elder Yue Ling, he was also a rank six Martial Emperor. Without even thinking too much about it, Chu Feng knew that this man was definitely an Underworld Palace’s management elder.

From the sounds of discussion from the crowd, Chu Feng found out that the yellow-haired Underworld Palace’s elder’s name was Huang Guan. Furthermore, he was indeed one of the Underworld Palace’s management elders. However, he possessed a nickname: the Yellow-haired Demon.

“Humph,” Seeing that the Underworld Palace’s Elder Huang Guan had begun to applaud Chu Feng, that Elder Yue Ling snorted coldly. Without concealing anything, he revealed an extremely displeased expression.

At that moment, Wang Qiang asked again. “Ol, old fa, fart! I’m ask, asking you here! If my old br, bro Chu Feng is ab, ab, able to bre, break tha, that spirit formation, are you wi, willing to eat shit as an ap, ap, apology?”

“Have you grown tired of living?” Seeing that Wang Qiang actually dared to speak to him in such a manner, Elder Yue Ling was immediately enraged.

“Yue Ling, even though that little friend Wang Qiang’s words might be a bit vulgar, I do not feel that they are without justification.”

“Earlier, you had indeed declared that little friend Chu Feng would not be able to undo that spirit formation. Everyone present heard it, right?” Elder Huang Guan said.

“Right!” The crowd from the Underworld Palace was the first to respond. Other than the people from the Underworld Palace, many others also voiced their agreement.

Currently, Chu Feng’s reputation in the Holy Land of Martialism was superb. He could be said to be extremely popular with the masses. As such, those that were fearless would naturally stand up and speak on his behalf.

Chapter 1964 – Breaking Apart The Formation With A Single Move

“Look, this many people can bear witness to it. You cannot refuse to admit what you said. Thus... if little friend Chu Feng is really able to break apart that spirit formation, even if you are not to eat feces, you should still apologize.”

“Everyone, am I right?” Elder Huang Guang asked the crowd.

“Right!” The crowd shouted in unison. Their voices were even more resounding than before.

Seeing this scene, Elder Yue Ling’s expression turned green and ugly.

No matter what, he was still a grand management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace. As for Chu Feng, no matter how talented he was, he was still only a member of the younger generation.

To apologize to Chu Feng for a mere remark, it would be unacceptable and impossible for him to accomplish.

“El, el, elder Huang Gu, Guan’s reasoning is the more reasonable one. Yo, you are mu, much be, be, better than tha, that ol, old fa, fa, fart,” As for Wang Qiang, he ran over to Elder Huang Guan and began to praise him. As he praised Elder Huang Guan, he did not forget to mock Elder Yue Ling.

Hearing Wang Qiang addressing him as ‘old fart’ the entire time while addressing the Underworld Palace’s Huang Guan as ‘Elder,’ Elder Yue Ling felt even more displeased.

“Very well. If little friend Chu Feng is able to break that spirit formation, this old man will publicly apologize to little friend Chu Feng,” For the sake of his face and reputation, Elder Yue Ling agreed to the demand.

However, right after he finished saying those words, he added

while pointing at Wang Qiang, “However, if little friend Chu Feng is unable to break this spirit formation, I insist on that little bastard kneeling and apologizing to me.”

“S, su, sure! I, I, I’ll apologize. It’s no, no, not like I’m af, af, af, afraid of you,” Wang Qiang was completely indifferent to the demand.

“Elder Yue Ling, you do not have to apologize to me. However, if I am able to accomplish this task, you must apologize to my friend,” Chu Feng said.

“Why should I?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Elder Yue Ling started to frown deeply.

It was not only him. Many of the other people present were also confused. Earlier, Elder Yue Ling had indeed spoken ill remarks of Chu Feng. As such, if he were to apologize, it should be to Chu Feng. However, why would Chu Feng suddenly make a request for him to apologize to Wang Qiang?

“Wang Qiang is still only a member of the younger generation. He is still very young. Even if he blabs nonsense, you, as a senior, should be able to reach an understanding and overlook it.”

“Yet, you, a Heavenly Law Palace’s elder, actually addressed a member of the younger generation as ‘little bastard.’ I feel that you should not have done so, for that is an insult to the younger generation. Your actions are truly unbefitting of a senior,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization. At the same time, the admiration which they felt for Chu Feng increased even more. They did not expect Chu Feng to be someone who cared about his friends so much.

As for Wang Qiang, he was so moved that he was on the verge of crying. At this moment, he was acting as if he was wiping away the his tears and snot with great force. However, he did not actually

cry, nor did he have a runny nose. This fellow was merely putting on an act as usual.

“Well spoken. What little friend Chu Feng said is very true,” Elder Huang Guan began to clap his hand in applause once again. After he said those words, many other people also began to clap for Chu Feng too. From Chu Feng’s actions, they felt a whole new level of respect for him.

At that moment, Elder Yue Ling’s complexion turned ashen, and his expression became extremely ugly. He truly did not expect a member of the younger generation like Chu Feng to possess such enormous rallying power.

Normally, there would be countless people trying to flatter him wherever he went. As long as he said one thing, no one would dare to say another.

Yet, today, he had actually lost to Chu Feng in terms of the support of the masses. This made him feel extremely unreconciled.

“Little friend Chu Feng, since you wish to stick up for your friend, I will give you face and do as you say.”

“Merely... I fear that you will not be able to accomplish it, and instead cause your friend to suffer.” In the end, Elder Yue Ling accepted the conditions. However, he accepted them in a very fierce and ruthless manner.

Actually, the reason he had refused to accept earlier was because he had not wished to yield to a person of the younger generation. He felt that it would be a very shameful thing to do.

However, he truly looked down on Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques. Thus, in the end, he had decided to accept the conditions. He did so because he wanted to humiliate Chu Feng and make those who thought highly of Chu Feng know that Chu Feng was not as strong as they had envisioned.

Furthermore, he also wanted Wang Qiang to kneel and apologize

to him before the crowd. He wanted to let the crowd know that Wang Qiang's kneeling and apology to him was all caused by Chu Feng's conceit.

"It would seem that... I will have to disappoint Elder Yue Ling," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a flip of his palm and a 'woosh', a ray of light shot into the spirit formation ahead like a sharp arrow.

"Buzz~~~"

That indestructible world spirit formation started to shake violently. Then, it began to dissipate. In the blink of an eye, it had disappeared from before the crowd.

Success. Even though many people felt that Chu Feng would be able to successfully undo that spirit formation, they did not expect that Chu Feng would be able to do so instantly.

Not to mention Elder Yue Ling, practically everyone present was stunned.

They had all personally experienced how powerful that world spirit formation was. It was simply indestructible.

Yet, before Chu Feng, he merely needed to raise his hand to undo that spirit formation. Could this be the strength of a world spiritist?

"Woooahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

After a moment of shock, cheering noises began to rise from the crowd. The younger generation from the Underworld Palace all rushed out. They gathered around Chu Feng and began to throw him into the air while cheering.

"Chu Feng!"

"Chu Feng!"

"Chu Feng!"

.....

At the same time, the others also joined in the cheering. At that moment, the name 'Chu Feng' began to resonate in this region of the Moonlight Maze.

The crowd were overjoyed. After all, to them, being able to break apart that spirit formation was only beneficial and not detrimental.

It must be said that Chu Feng had presented them with an enormously pleasant surprise.

At this moment, Chu Feng was the only one who knew how he was able to undo that seal.

At the moment when Wang Qiang was bickering with Elder Yue Ling, Chu Feng was already setting up his spirit formation to undo that spirit formation within his palm. That was how he was able to accomplish the magnificent feat of undoing that spirit formation simply by raising his hand.

After a series of cheering, Chu Feng said to Elder Yue Ling, "Elder Yue Ling, you should honor your promise, no?"

Suddenly, the several million gazes of the crowd were all fixed onto Elder Yue Ling.

In that moment, Elder Yue Ling felt an enormous pressure. Even though he was very unwilling, in the end, he still said with a soft voice, "Little friend Wang Qiang, I'm sorry."

"Wh, wh, what di, did you say? I can't he, hear you," Wang Qiang cupped his ear and spoke loudly.

"You... you are being too excessive here!" Elder Yue Ling immediately stared at Wang Qiang with glaring eyes. He was on the verge of erupting from anger. It was true that his apology had been spoken very softly. However, he dared to guarantee that Wang Qiang had heard it.

"Elder Yue Ling, you spoke too softly earlier. Not to mention Wang Qiang not hearing it, even I was unable to hear it."

“Since it’s an apology, I feel that Elder Yue Ling should put forth some sincerity. Everyone, what do you all think?” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right!” The crowd responded with resonating voices.

After Chu Feng had undone the spirit formation, practically all of the crowd, other than those from the Heavenly Law Palace, were standing on Chu Feng’s side.

Even the old monsters who had secluded themselves in the Holy Land of Martialism for years began to cheer for and support Chu Feng.

“You!!!” Elder Yue Ling was so enraged that his hands were shaking in anger.

No matter what, he was a management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace. How could the crowd treat him like this?

How could they possibly have the nerve to make him yield to a person of the younger generation?

Chapter 1965 – Situation Turning Bad

“Yue Ling, what little friend Chu Feng said is very reasonable. Since you have agreed to it earlier, you should apologize now.”

“Since it is still an apology, what harm is there in saying it with a louder voice?” Suddenly, another person spoke.

When this man spoke, not to mention Chu Feng, many of the bystanders were also very surprised.

This person who had spoken was not Chu Feng, nor was it Elder Huang Guang, nor was he a grand character from some other power.

Instead, he was an elder from the Heavenly Law Palace. Like Elder Yue Ling, he possessed the cultivation of a rank six Martial Emperor. Furthermore, his status was also on par with Elder Yue Ling’s.

This person’s name was Zhao Yu.

Compared to Elder Yue Ling, Elder Zhao Yu’s reputation was very well-respected. He was someone who was known to have done countless good deeds.

After Elder Zhao Yu spoke, the situation became very awkward for Elder Yue Ling. After hesitating for some time, he spoke loudly, “Little friend Wang Qiang, this old man was indeed in the wrong earlier. I hope you do not take offense.”

Even though he spoke those words very reluctantly, he had, nevertheless, apologized.

“Haha, I, I, I am a per, per, person of great mo, mo, moral stature. I will not ta, tak, tak, take offense to som, som, something com, com, committed by a per, person of low, low stature,” Wang Qiang said while laughing.

At this moment, not only was Elder Yue Ling extremely furious,

the others from the Heavenly Law Palace were also filled with rage. A member of the younger generation actually dared to make things this difficult on their management elder; this was truly too excessive.

As for that Elder Zhao Yu, not only did he had an indifferent expression to all that, he also walked over to Chu Feng with a smile on his face. “As the saying goes, seeing once is better than hearing a hundred times. They all say that little friend Chu Feng’s talent is outstanding. Seeing it for myself today, your reputation is truly well-deserved.”

“Elder Zhao Yu, you are being too courteous,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and smiled at Elder Zhao Yu.

However, that was all that he did. Then, he turned to Wang Qiang and said, “Come, let’s go. There’s still a long journey ahead.”

Even though Elder Zhao Yu was someone who possessed a great reputation and appeared to be very good-natured, he did not speak to stop Elder Yue Ling when he was insulting Chu Feng. Furthermore, when they were pledging to apologize to one another, he did not say anything either.

Instead, it was only after Chu Feng broke through the spirit formation and obtained the will of the people present that he stood forth to speak on Chu Feng’s behalf.

From that sort of behavior, Chu Feng felt that Elder Zhao Yu was merely a fake good person. In the end, he was still an accomplice of Elder Yue Ling.

Compared to Elder Yue Ling, Chu Feng felt that someone like Elder Zhao Yu was much more dangerous. While he was not afraid of those who bared their fangs at him, he was on guard against those who hid daggers in their smiles.

“Haha...”

Sure enough, facing Chu Feng’s indifferent appearance, Elder

Zhao Yu chuckled lightly. However, a trace of ruthless anger flashed through his seemingly indifferent laughter.

Afterward, Chu Feng and the others continued to proceed onward. Many rare plants and herbs appeared in their path. All of those rare herbs contained treasures.

Some were treasures that could be extremely beneficial to one's cultivation should they be refined. Some were special metals that could be used to refine weaponry.

In short, all kinds of treasures were present in this place. They truly surpassed the crowd's imaginations and undermined their understanding of plants.

However, without any exception, none of those rare plants and herbs could be easily obtained. They were extremely powerful. Even for Chu Feng, it was the first time he was seeing such powerful rare plants and herbs.

Furthermore, whenever those rare plants and herbs were encountered, there would always be people that would rush toward them to scramble for them. However, none of them were that easily obtained. In order to obtain them, one would have to pass through all kinds of difficulties.

Thus, this led to people like Chu Feng, the experts, not being willing to go and scramble for anything that was not extremely precious. Instead, they continued to proceed onward. The reason for that was because they all understood a single thing. That was, the more precious something was, the further in the maze it would be.

As they continued to travel onward... ten different paths appeared.

According to the map, the crowd should all be taking the third path. Furthermore, that path was a correct path that would lead to the Immortality Peach Tree.

Merely, in this place, Chu Feng decided to go against the crowd. He had decided to take the seventh path.

“Little friend Chu Feng, why are you taking that path? That path appears to be extremely dangerous. I’d suggest that you not take that path,” At this moment, the Underworld Palace’s Elder Huang Guan said in a very puzzled manner.

He had spoken those words for Chu Feng’s good. What he had said was the truth. Among all the paths, the seventh path gave off the most dangerous sensation. Even without the indication of the map, the crowd would still not choose the seventh path.

However, the crowd did not know that the seventh path was actually a shortcut to the Immortality Peach Tree. And, most importantly, the seventh path would lead to the treasures left behind by the Beast Emperor.

As such, Chu Feng must take the seventh path.

“Senior, thank you for your warning. However, I feel that this path is the one that is the most challenging. Thus, I wish to attempt to go through it.”

“As for you all, it would be better for you to take the third path. Compared to this one, the third path is indeed much safer,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

The crowd were even more puzzled by Chu Feng’s words. Since he knew that the third path was safe, why did he insist on taking the seventh path instead of the third path?

However, at the same time, there were those that were astute and circumspect that revealed different expressions in their gazes.

“Heh, little friend Chu Feng, although we obtained that map very easily, what is recorded on it is true.”

“On our way here, you should have seen that we have managed to avoid numerous killing formations.”

“So many people, all of different cultivations, have entered. Yet, not a single person has died. If this was the past, something like this would be impossible. Thus, this means that the map that was spread is definitely reliable.”

“At such a time, I suggest you not think yourself to be clever and go according to the map,” Elder Yue Ling said. His words were filled with mockery toward Chu Feng.

“I have my choice, whereas you have your own choice. As for my choice, I do not need you to worry about it,” Chu Feng responded bluntly.

“You are truly unable to differentiate good from bad,” Elder Yue Ling spoke with a cold voice. After what had happened earlier, his impression of Chu Feng was growing worse and worse.

Afterwards, some of the crowd entered the third path. However, there were still others that were still worried about Chu Feng, and who continued to urge him to take the third path. However, none of them were able to make Chu Feng change his mind.

Right at this moment, that Elder Zhao Yu suddenly spoke with a smile on his face. “Little friend Chu Feng, I know that you are very strong. However, it remains that your cultivation is limited. Even though your world spirit techniques are very strong, this old man is truly unable to feel reassured in you taking the seventh path yourself.”

“In order to prevent the Holy Land of Martialism from losing a young genius, how about this old man accompany you through the seventh path?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. His impression of that Elder Zhao Yu was very bad. He did not feel that Elder Zhao Yu was planning to help him.

Furthermore, he was going to take the seventh path for the sake of the treasures. If this Elder Zhao Yu were to follow him, it would

only be detrimental to him.

However, if Chu Feng were to refuse him at such a time, he would definitely not be able to stop him. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was certain that Zhao Yu wanted to follow him because he had realized something. Sure enough, that man was a cunning old fox.

In fact, Zhao Yu was not the only cunning old fox present. Chu Feng was able to notice that, other than the experts from the Three Palaces, there were also many hermetical old monsters hidden among the crowd. Those old monsters did not directly enter the third path.

Likely, those people were also skeptical of Chu Feng knowing something. They felt that Chu Feng's decision to take the seventh path would lead to even more treasures.

Currently, they were all observing from the sidelines.

Thus, if Chu Feng were to refuse Elder Zhao Yu on the spot, he would have verified their guesses. At that time, not only would he not be able to refuse Elder Zhao Yu, those cunning old foxes would also want to follow him.

At that time, the situation would be even worse.

Chapter 1966 – Unmasking

“Since Elder Zhao Yu is willing to accompany this Chu Feng, it would naturally be great,” Thus, Chu Feng did not refuse, and instead straightforwardly agreed to it.

Seeing how Chu Feng had agreed to it this straightforwardly, Elder Zhao Yu’s expression changed. He felt as if he had guessed wrong.

At this moment, those old monsters also began to enter the third path. They also felt that they had guessed wrong. As such, there was no reason for them to linger here. It was better that they hasten their journey along the third path.

Even though Elder Zhao Yu regretted his decision, he could not go back upon his word. As matters stood, he could only brace himself and accompany Chu Feng into the seventh path.

“El, el, el, elder Zhao Yu, goo, goo, goo, good lu, luck,” With a smile on his face, Wang Qiang clasped his fist at Elder Zhao Yu.

Many people were baffled by Wang Qiang’s words. That said, Chu Feng already had a whole new level of respect for Wang Qiang.

At the moment when everyone was unable to urge Chu Feng against choosing the seventh path, Wang Qiang, he who had been standing beside Chu Feng the entire time, was the only person who did not try to urge Chu Feng against it.

Furthermore, at this moment, he was saying those sorts of words to Elder Zhao Yu. Furthermore, he had said them with a mischievous smile on his face. It made him appear to be even more profound.

That Wang Qiang, it seemed that he knew.

Afterward, everyone entered the third path. As for Chu Feng, he entered the seventh path with Elder Zhao Yu.

After entering the seventh path, Elder Zhao Yu appeared extremely cautious. He was afraid of encountering dangers on the seventh path. After all, the Moonlight Maze's reputation as the second most dangerous Forbidden Area in the Holy Land of Martialism was not without reason. Indeed, it was very dangerous.

However, when he discovered that even the dangerous aura of the seventh path was growing stronger and stronger, even though he had yet to encounter any real danger, he seemed to have realized something.

This seventh path was not actually dangerous. It was only a scam.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a boundless killing intent surged toward Chu Feng and completely engulfed him.

Chu Feng turned around. It was Elder Zhao Yu. That enormous killing intent was emitted by Elder Zhao Yu. Not only had he emitted his killing intent, he had also emitted his oppressive might. As such, he had sealed Chu Feng's escape.

“You've finally revealed your true appearance?” Chu Feng had already anticipated such a thing happening. Thus, he appeared very calm, and even had a smile on his face.

“Chu Feng, it seems that you had managed to guess my intentions. You are truly quite smart.”

“However, not only are you smart, you are also extremely arrogant. Even though you knew the reason why I followed you, you still dared to journey together with me. You are truly courageous. Are you not afraid of death?” Elder Zhao Yu spoke with a cold voice.

Chu Feng's neglect toward him earlier had caused him to feel extremely displeased. As there was currently no one else here, he would no longer act courteously toward Chu Feng.

“No, it’s not arrogance. Instead, it’s confidence,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Enough rubbish. Tell me exactly what sort of treasure is here. If you do, I can spare your life,” Elder Zhao Yu said.

“Do you take me to be a three-year-old child? Do you think that I am that easily deceived?” Chu Feng sneered and refused.

“You are truly one who doesn’t shed tears until you see your own coffin.”

Suddenly, Elder Zhao Yu unleashed his attack. As a rank six Martial Emperor, he immediately used an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. The might of his attack was truly shocking. It was clear that he planned to kill Chu Feng.

“You are not qualified to declare yourself to be my coffin.”

As for Chu Feng, he was not afraid in the slightest. He unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, and his aura instantly increased from rank one Martial Emperor to rank three Martial Emperor.

After his cultivation increased, Chu Feng directly unleashed his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash. The nine slashes were all shot forth in succession.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Chu Feng’s Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash was stronger than Elder Zhao Yu’s Earthen Taboo Martial Skill to begin with. Furthermore, Chu Feng’s comprehension of martial skills caused his Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash’s might to increase even further.

In this confrontation of two Earthen Taboo Martial Skills, not only was Chu Feng not at a disadvantage, he even forced Elder Zhao Yu back repeatedly.

“Brat, you actually possess a heaven-defying battle power capable

of surmounting five levels of cultivation?!” At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu was extremely shocked.

The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had displayed was truly unbelievable. Ordinary Martial Emperors only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. In the Holy Land of Martialism, there were currently only two people that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. As for them, they were Chu Feng and the [Ancient Era's Elves' Little Princess](#).

Yet, at this moment, Chu Feng actually revealed that he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. This was truly too extraordinary. After Chu Feng revealed his extraordinary strength, even Elder Zhao Yu revealed a frightened expression on his aged face.

“Do you know whether I’m confident or arrogant now?” Chu Feng asked with a smile on his face.

After the earlier confrontation, Chu Feng had discovered that even though this Elder Zhao Yu was also a rank six Martial Emperor like the YinYang Immortal, his strength was not as powerful as the YinYang Immortal.

Originally, Chu Feng had planned to use his Qilin Arrow to kill this Elder Zhao Yu at the crucial moment. However, looking at it now, he might not have to use the Qilin Arrow to defeat this fellow after all.

“Even if that is the case, your actual battle power is only on par with rank five Martial Emperors. This old man is a rank six Martial Emperor. What makes you think that you can contend against me?”

Even though Elder Zhao Yu spoke those words arrogantly, he had taken out his Incomplete Imperial Armament, and began to unleash a flurry of violent attacks at Chu Feng with it. After the

confrontation against Chu Feng earlier, he did not dare to underestimate Chu Feng anymore.

“In that case, give it a try.”

As for Chu Feng, not only did he take out his Incomplete Imperial Armament, the Heavenly Immortal Sword, he had also unleashed the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills all at once.

“Rooarr~~~”

Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills were all fully unleashed. Accompanying the overwhelming righteous aura of the Heavenly Immortal Sword, Chu Feng’s might was truly unparalleled.

“Brat, you?!”

At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu was shocked once again. He was not only shocked by how skillful Chu Feng’s Heavenly Immortal Sword Technique was, but more importantly, upon seeing those four huge Divine Beast-like monsters, he was extremely shocked. Those four Divine Beasts were truly too frightening.

Secret Skill. Those four Divine Beasts were all Secret Skills. But, why would those Secret Skills be that powerful? And, why would their appearance be that familiar?

At the moment when Elder Zhao Yu was shocked by Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s attack arrived in front of him. The two fighters collided with their Incomplete Imperial Armaments, and were equally matched in the fight.

“Could it be, those are Emperor Qing’s four guardian beasts?” After a series of blows, Elder Zhao Yu came to a sudden realization. He recalled the legendary appearance of Emperor Qing’s four guardian beasts. Their appearance seemed to be the same as the appearance of Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

“You have quite a keen observation,” Chu Feng sneered and indirectly admitted to it.

“Exactly who are you? Could it be that... you are Emperor Qing’s successor?” Elder Zhao Yu asked. At this moment, his voice had become slightly hoarse. Evidently, he was unable to accept this.

“What you should concerned about right now should not be this. Instead, you should be concerned about your life,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“What did you say?” Elder Zhao Yu revealed a puzzled expression. He was confused by Chu Feng’s words.

Right at this moment, a crimson aura suddenly emitted from Chu Feng’s body. He pointed his Heavenly Immortal Sword at Elder Zhao Yu. With a cold voice, he uttered, “Profound Firmament Annihilation.”

“Boom~~~~~”

Once the Profound Firmament Annihilation was unleashed, a dangerous aura immediately enveloped Elder Zhao Yu.

“Darn!” Elder Zhao Yu realized that the situation was bad. However, Chu Feng did not present him the opportunity to escape.

“Die!!!” As Chu Feng said that word, all of the killing intent contained within that crimson aura rushed at Elder Zhao Yu.

Keep in mind, no one knows that Leng Yue possesses that too.

Chapter 1967 – Furious Coiling Dragon

Beheader

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded. Even the indestructible passageway trembled violently.

When the surging crimson gaseous flames began to dissipate, Elder Zhao Yu appeared in a badly mutilated state. He was beyond recognition, and had turned into nothing more than a humanoid-shaped blood-covered person.

He had been struck by Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation, and was seriously injured. He no longer possessed the strength to continue fighting against Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's surprise attack had been a success. There were two reasons why it had succeeded.

Firstly, although this Elder Zhao Yu was a rank six Martial Emperor, his overall strength was inferior to the YinYang Immortal's.

Secondly, although this Elder Zhao Yu was a Heavenly Law Palace's management elder, he did not possess an Imperial Armament.

This was why he was unable to cut through Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation.

However, Elder Zhao Yu had managed to survive. It was not because he was a rank six Martial Emperor that he had survived.

Rather, he possessed a defensive treasure on him. That treasure was meant to protect his life by sacrificing itself at the most crucial moment.

However, even with that being the case, his life was currently completely in the hands of Chu Feng. If Chu Feng wanted to take

it, he would be able to do so easily.

Merely, it remained that Elder Zhao Yu was a Heavenly Law Palace's management elder. Furthermore, he had entered this passageway together with Chu Feng, and had been seen to do so by a lot of people.

If he were to die just like that, Chu Feng would likely not be able to escape responsibility.

Even though the Heavenly Law Palace had been malicious towards Chu Feng the entire time, Chu Feng was still not yet capable of openly going against the Heavenly Law Palace. As such, he could not kill this Elder Zhao Yu.

After pondering for a moment, Chu Feng's lips suddenly rose into a strange curve. He said, "You can't die yet. At least, you can't die by my hands."

Then, Chu Feng began to use his world spirit techniques to disguise that Elder Zhao Yu.

That's right, he was disguising him, and not healing his injuries. Even though Zhao Yu now appeared to be completely fine and without any injuries, his injuries were still extremely serious.

Not only were his injuries very serious, he was also unable to cure them. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had used his techniques to forbid him from healing his injuries, forcing him to continue in a state of serious injury.

In other words, while he appeared to be completely unharmed right now, Chu Feng was actually able to kill him at any time. Not only Chu Feng, any random rank one Martial Emperor would be able to easily kill him.

"You... you... what do you plan to do to me?" Elder Zhao Yu asked Chu Feng with a weak voice after being tormented by Chu Feng in such a manner, yet not killed. He didn't know exactly what Chu Feng was planning to do to him.

“Don’t be so anxious, you’ll come to know soon,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. However, to Elder Zhao Yu, Chu Feng’s smile was very frightening.

“Don’t you do anything to me. Else... else, our Heavenly Law Palace will not let you get away with it,” Elder Zhao Yu threatened Chu Feng. This was the only thing that he could do right now.

“Haha...” As for Chu Feng, he laughed lightly, and did not answer him.

However, Chu Feng’s indifferent laughter caused Elder Zhao Yu to regret following Chu Feng into this place.

He realized that not only was Chu Feng someone who possessed outstanding talent and strength, he was also someone who was not afraid of consequences or death. Being captured by Chu Feng, he knew that what awaited him would not be good.

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng finally stopped.

After Chu Feng stopped, Elder Zhao Yu was startled. He discovered that there was nothing abnormal about the place where Chu Feng had stopped.

At this moment, he started to panic. He thought that Chu Feng was going to kill him. Thus, he immediately gathered all of his remaining strength to loudly shout, “Chu Feng, if you dare to kill me, our Heavenly Law Palace will not let you get away with it! You should consider your actions carefully!”

“Look at your craven and cowardly appearance. Are all the Heavenly Law Palace’s elders cowards like you?” Chu Feng said mockingly.

Then, Chu Feng began to carefully feel the walls.

This passageway was very special. The surrounding walls were not made out of ordinary stone. Instead, they looked more like dazzling crystals. Although they were dazzling, those crystals were indestructible.

Not to mention Chu Feng pressing his hands against the walls, even if Chu Feng were to ferociously attack the wall, he would only make them tremble, and not cause any damage.

“Snap~~~”

However, after pressing the walls for some time, Chu Feng’s palm actually managed to press into a small section of the wall.

“Mn?” That Elder Zhao Yu saw all this happening. His eyes started to shine. It seemed as if he had managed to guess something.

As for Chu Feng, he had a smile on his face. Then, he took out a special title plate from his Cosmos Sack. That was the title plate that he had obtained from the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King.

After Chu Feng took out the title plate, he said to Elder Zhao Yu, “You wanted to know what sort of treasure is contained here? I’ll let you know what is contained here,” Then, he placed that title plate into the empty location on the wall.

“Snap~~~”

Although that section of the wall did not fit his hand, it fit that title plate perfectly.

After that title plate entered the notch in the wall, a world spirit gate appeared above the passageway. Not only did Chu Feng enter that world spirit gate, he also tossed Elder Zhao Yu in with him.

After entering that world spirit gate, Chu Feng discovered that he had reached a separate space. Although that space was not huge, it was packed full with treasures.

There were cultivation resources, rare treasures, Incomplete Imperial Armaments, Natural Oddities, and countless extremely valuable Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones that were piled up in a small mountain.

This place was truly a treasure deposit. As Elder Zhao Yu looked at all these treasures, he was dazzled by the sight before him. He asked, “What sort of place is this? There’s this many treasures?! Heavens! Many of the treasures here are already extinct! They’re likely unable to be found again in the Holy Land of Martialism!”

“There are actually that many Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones? Where did all of them come from?” Elder Zhao Yu was filled with excitement. However, at the same time, he was feeling extremely bitter.

He blamed himself for not having sufficient strength. If he had been just a bit stronger, he would have been able to subdue Chu Feng and interrogate the location of this place from him. At that time, all of these treasures would have been his.

Yet, right now, all he could do was to watch the dazzling treasures and crave them without being able to actually obtain them. The reason for that was because these treasures were going to become Chu Feng’s possessions.

“You want to know who left all these treasures? In that case, have a look at this.”

Chu Feng walked to the most eye-catching location in this separate space. There was a rectangular red-colored treasure chest there. That treasure chest itself was an extremely precious treasure. However, Chu Feng knew that contained within that treasure chest was an even more precious treasure.

“Paa~~”

Chu Feng opened the treasure chest. After the treasure chest was opened, a silvery light immediately filled their surroundings. The light was so dazzling that it even blinded Chu Feng momentarily.

After a while, the dazzling silvery light began to dissipate. When the silvery light disappeared completely, a sharp weapon appeared before Chu Feng and Elder Zhao Yu.

That weapon was four meters long. It was a silver rod. However, on either end of the rod were two cold blades. [One was aimed forward, the other backward.](#)

Furthermore, on the rod itself was a coiling silver dragon. That dragon was very vivid and lifelike and extremely domineering.

Imperial Armament. It was an Imperial Armament. Furthermore, it was much more powerful than ordinary Imperial Armaments.

“Heavens, that... that Imperial Armament, could it, could it be...?”

“Could it be the legendary Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King’s Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?!” At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu was filled with astonishment. He was so emotional that he began to even stutter.

It’s a dual edged scythe...

Chapter 1968 – Rank Two Martial Emperor

The Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader was extremely famous. It was a weapon used by the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King, a weapon that had killed countless experts.

Furthermore, according to legend, the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King, had used that Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to slice apart another expert's Imperial Armament. Furthermore, it just so happened that that expert had been someone from the Heavenly Law Palace.

Thus, as an elder of the Heavenly Law Palace, although Zhao Yu had never seen the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader before, he knew its appearance by heart.

“That's right. This is the Beast Emperor's, the Black Dragon King's Imperial Armament, Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Ever since the Beast Emperor disappeared from the world, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader had also disappeared. As of now, it has been several tens of thousands of years. So it was actually hidden here.”

“Exactly what sort of place is this? Could it be... could it be that this is the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King's place of burial?” Zhao Yu asked.

“Your guess is only half correct. Although senior Black Dragon King's treasures that he obtained throughout his life are all hidden here, he is not buried here.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he grabbed that Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader and instilled his own aura into it.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a violent wind began to surge and many lightning strikes filled this relatively small space.

“Roar~~~”

In fact, many ear-piercing dragon roars could also be heard. At this moment, the seriously injured Zhao Yu was actually unable to withstand their might, and was blown away. He began to crawl on the ground, and was struck by many lightning bolts that left many wounds on his body and caused him to vomit mouthfuls of blood. His appearance was truly miserable.

Feeling helpless, Zhao Yu shouted, “Stop, stop, quickly, stop. I’ll die if this is to continue,”

However, Chu Feng completely ignored him. It was not that Chu Feng did not hear his shouting. Rather, Chu Feng was busy conquering the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, and did not have any time to be concerned about that old bastard’s fate.

Finally, the surroundings calmed down. When Zhao Yu, who was ravaged by the scene, opened his weak eyes and looked to Chu Feng again, he was immediately shocked. Envy and jealousy filled his eyes.

Success. Chu Feng had successfully subdued the legendary Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

“Absolute Submission. You actually managed to make such an Imperial Armament enter Absolute Submission?!” At this time when Zhao Yu was filled with envy and jealousy toward Chu Feng, he was also revealing an expression of disbelief all across his face.

It was already a very remarkable task should one be able to subdue an Imperial Armament. As for making an Imperial Armament enter Absolute Submission, that was something that was practically never accomplished. However, Chu Feng had accomplished this feat.

However, upon thinking about it, it was also reasonable for such a thing to happen. After all, Chu Feng was someone that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels

of cultivation. With merely that, Chu Feng was already someone that surpassed all ordinary people. Even if an Imperial Armament entered Absolute Submission toward him, it would not be too strange.

However, even with that being the case, Zhao Yu still felt as if there were seas and rivers overturning in his heart. He was unable to calm himself in the slightest. The reason for that was because that Imperial Armament was not any ordinary Imperial Armament, but the legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

“Indeed, it has entered Absolute Submission. This Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader’s power is very strong. Unfortunately, it is still insufficient for me to reach a breakthrough,” Chu Feng said with his lips curled.

“Not reach a breakthrough? How could that be? The domineering might of the scene earlier was definitely that of Absolute Submission. How did you not reach a breakthrough?” Zhao Yu possessed a face of confusion.

When an Imperial Armament entered Absolute Submission, it would share a portion of its strength with its master. As for that portion, it was generally sufficient to allow one to reach a breakthrough.

As Chu Feng was only a rank one Martial Emperor; even if he didn’t break through to rank three Martial Emperor directly, the power from that Imperial Armament should have been more than enough to allow him to break through to rank two Martial Emperor. As such, why was he still a rank one Martial Emperor? This was truly unreasonable.

As for Chu Feng, he ignored Zhao Yu and turned his gaze to the cultivation resources and Natural Oddities that filled the ground.

Even though the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader had not managed to help him reach a breakthrough, Chu Feng felt that he would definitely be able to reach a breakthrough after refining all

of the cultivation resources and Natural Oddities in this place.

Thus, Chu Feng sat down in a cross-legged manner and opened his mouth wide. Right in front of Elder Zhao Yu, he began to refine the cultivation resources in this place.

“Heavens! This guy?!!!”

As Elder Zhao Yu saw Chu Feng eating those cultivation resources with an appearance akin to eating rice and with enormous speed, his aged expression began to change. He was stunned, because what Chu Feng was doing was practically impossible for ordinary people.

“You, you... you, exactly what are you? Are you a monster?!!!!”

Then, when he saw that Chu Feng was beginning to refine the Natural Oddities in this place in the same manner, he was completely stunned, and overwhelmed with fear.

Natural Oddities were items that possessed very berserk energies. They were simply impossible to refine. If one were to forcibly refine them, one would end up dying.

Yet, Chu Feng was refining them in the same manner as he had refined the ordinary cultivation resources. He was not affected by their berserk energies in the slightest. This was truly something that Elder Zhao Yu was unable to accept.

At the moment before Chu Feng managed to completely refine all of the Natural Oddities, his aura suddenly started to rise sharply. He had reached a breakthrough. Finally, Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough from rank one Martial Emperor, and became a rank two Martial Emperor.

“Breakthrough? Even after refining all that stuff, he only just reached a breakthrough?”

“That guy, he refined all those Natural Oddities. Yet, not only did he not die, he even reached a breakthrough?”

“He really refined those Natural Oddities and absorbed their Natural Energy,” At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu was overwhelmed with shock.

As for Chu Feng, he did not care about what Elder Zhao Yu was feeling at all. Instead, with a spurt of energy, Chu Feng completely refined all of the Natural Oddities in this place.

Even though those Natural Oddities were unable to help Chu Feng reach a breakthrough, they provided a very good foundation for his next breakthrough.

The treasures left behind by the Beast Emperor had truly helped Chu Feng enormously.

“Senior Beast Emperor is truly good to me. Eggy, you’ve also seen it right? We have obtained an enormous harvest this time around,” With a smile on his face, Chu Feng spoke to Eggy.

Chu Feng knew that even though Eggy was unable to speak or respond to him, she was actually awake. He knew that she had seen all the things he had experienced thus far.

Afterward, Chu Feng stood up and began to collect the treasures in this place without any restraint.

There were truly a lot of treasures here. Even though there was only a single Imperial Armament, and all of the things that could be refined had already been refined, the things that remained were still mostly treasures.

Furthermore, like Zhao Yu had said, many of the treasures here were extinct in the Holy Land of Martialism. They were priceless. Any one of these treasures would be able to cause a bloody scramble.

“How was it? Jealous? Hehe...” As Chu Feng was collecting the treasures, he deliberately tried to enrage Zhao Yu.

“Little friend Chu Feng, as the saying goes, when one finds things together, one should share half. I do not wish for half, but you

should be able to spare me a bit, no?” This Zhao Yu was actually also a shameless fellow. He actually made this sort of request of Chu Feng.

“Hehe, what do you think I’ll do?” Chu Feng laughed mischievously. Then, he continued to collect the treasures in this place. It was only after he had collected all of the treasures here that he turned to Zhao Yu with a smile on his face. He said, “I’m almost done collecting all of the treasures here. After that, I’ll be able to bring you away.”

“Haven’t you already collected all of the treasures here?” Zhao Yu looked to the empty space before him and frowned. The only thing that Chu Feng had not collected was the air in this place. Other than that, not even a speck of hair remained. As such, what did he mean by ‘almost done?’ What else could he collect?

“You’re wrong, there’s still more,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Zhao Yu’s Cosmos Sack entered Chu Feng’s palm.

Zhao Yu’s expression changed. Angrily, he shouted, “Chu Feng, that is mine! You are robbing me here!!!” This Zhao Yu was a famous miser. He was someone that had never given any of his treasures to others. Yet, at this moment, that Cosmos Sack that contained all the treasures he had gathered throughout his life was snatched away by Chu Feng. As such, how could he possibly tolerate that?

Chapter 1969 – Immortality Peach Tree

“That’s right. I am snatching your possessions. What are you going to do about it?” Chu Feng said with a disapproving expression.

“Karma will get you. Our Heavenly Law Palace will definitely not let you get away with this,” Zhao Yu threatened ferociously.

“Are you implying that your Heavenly Law Palace will let me get away should I not do this?”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that my strength surpassed your own, the current me would’ve most likely been killed by you, no?” Chu Feng asked with a smile on his face.

Hearing those words, Zhao Yu grew quiet. What Chu Feng had said was the truth.

“Furthermore, your Heavenly Law Palace already possesses such deep hostility towards me, Chu Feng. Even if you didn’t kill me, there would be others that would try to kill me. Isn’t that right?”

“While I do not know how I managed to offend your Heavenly Law Palace, I am able to tell that your Heavenly Law Palace views me as a threat,” As he said those words, Chu Feng suddenly grabbed Elder Zhao Yu by the lapel and lifted him up.

At this moment, Chu Feng lost his smile. With a cold glint in his eyes, he fixed his gaze onto Zhao Yu, “Thus, do not speak threatening words like that to me. The reason for that is because regardless of whether or not your Heavenly Law Palace will let me off, I will not let you all off.”

“Bang~~~”

After saying those words, Chu Feng threw Elder Zhao Yu to the floor.

Although Chu Feng’s throw did not cause Elder Zhao Yu much

pain, Elder Zhao Yu felt as if a chilly sensation had filled his entire body, and he started to shiver.

He was able to sense that Chu Feng was not joking when he said those things. It was true that Chu Feng would not let their Heavenly Law Palace off.

Afterwards, Chu Feng left the hidden space. Following the seventh path, Chu Feng soon reached the end.

“Chu Feng, it’s a dead end. Let’s go back.”

“Spare me and I’ll pretend that nothing happened. I guarantee that I will not mention what happened here to anyone,” At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu no longer dared to threaten Chu Feng anymore. Instead, he began to try to reconcile with Chu Feng.

“Why are you in such a rush to leave? There are still more treasures. Do you not wish to see them?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“More treasures?” Elder Zhao Yu was startled by those words. He immediately revealed a marvelous gaze.

Even though this Elder Zhao Yu possessed a decent reputation of being kind and charitable, those that knew him well all knew that he was actually a true cheapskate. When it came to actual treasures, he was extremely stingy.

Furthermore, he was someone whose eyes would open wide at the sight of profit. Upon hearing the word ‘treasure,’ he immediately forgot about his current situation.

Being viewed by Elder Zhao Yu’s extremely curious gaze, Chu Feng took out the map that the Compass Immortal had given him.

He placed that map on the wall of the dead end. Then, the map actually started to emit a bright light. Next, a gate opened.

Chu Feng passed through that gate with Zhao Yu. After passing through it, the gate quickly closed back up. The area returned to

the dead end from before. However, at this moment, Zhao Yu's eyes were fixed ahead motionlessly in a very stunned manner.

It was not only him, Chu Feng also had a pleasantly surprised expression on his face. He then revealed a joyous smile on his face.

At this moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Yu were in a very vast area. How vast was this place? It was simply capable of containing several hundred million people.

Not only was this place vast, it was also filled with beautiful scenery. Green grass that sparkled and glimmered covered the ground.

However, there was not a single flower to be seen. The reason for that was because all of the green grass in this place was only here to set off a single item. As for that item, it was the Immortality Peach Tree.

The Immortality Peach Tree was emitting a brilliant light. Its appearance was very similar to that enormous tree in the Cyanwood Mountain's Ancient Era's Remnants. Just by looking at it, one could tell right away that it was an extraordinary item.

Merely, the tree before him was emitting a pink brilliance. The pink light was not emitted by the tree. Rather, it was coming from the flowers blossoming on the tree.

Other than the peach flowers, there were also fruits on the tree. The size of those fruits was about that of a palm. They were the legendary Immortality Peaches.

"Immortality Peaches, they're the legendary Immortality Peaches!"

"Eating a single one will be able to increase one's lifespan by a hundred years. Moreover... there are a total of five hundred and forty-eight ripe Immortality Peaches."

"We've struck it rich! We've struck it rich! A single Immortality Peach would be extremely valuable. Yet, there are this many here."

We've definitely struck it rich!" Elder Zhao Yu shouted with a loud voice. He was extremely excited. His appearance simply did not appear like the appearance of an old man.

"You're mistaken. It's not that we've struck it rich. Rather, it is I who has struck it rich," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng's words immediately jolted Elder Zhao Yu from his dreams. From paradise, Elder Zhao Yu was thrown into the underworld. His extremely splendid expression turned into one of endless despair and grief.

"Putt~~~"

Suddenly, Zhao Yu kneeled before Chu Feng. He grabbed Chu Feng's thigh and began to plead, "Little friend Chu Feng, I was wrong. It was all my fault earlier. Please, please give me another chance. Please, can you give me a chance to turn over a new leaf?"

"From today onward, I will follow you. I will withdraw from the Heavenly Law Palace and become your attendant. If you are to say one thing, I will definitely not dare to say another."

"Please, I beg of you. Share some of those Immortality Peaches with me. I don't want a lot. A hundred, a hundred would be enough."

"No, no, no, I don't need a hundred. Ten.. ten would be enough."

"Please, I beg of you, I have lived for close to ten thousand years now. I am close to the limit of my lifespan, and will not be able to live for much longer."

"But, but those Immortality Peaches would be able to save my life. I beg of you, please give me a chance, please, please save me."

At this moment, aged tears filled Zhao Yu's face. His appearance was truly pitiful. If it were someone else, Chu Feng might feel sympathy and give them ten Immortality Peaches.

However, this Zhao Yu was someone that had wanted to kill him

earlier. If Chu Feng were to feel sympathy for him, it would mean that something was wrong with Chu Feng's mind.

Thus, Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked. "Bang," Zhao Yu was kicked flying. Then, he said, "Scram, scram as far as you can."

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to harvest the Immortality Peaches. After Chu Feng finished plucking the Immortality Peaches, he discovered that Zhao Yu was actually quite amazing. He had actually managed to accurately count all of the Immortality Peaches in this blink of an eye.

Five hundred and forty-eight. Not one more, not one less.

Merely, at this moment, all of those Immortality Peaches had ended up in Chu Feng's hands.

Actually, other than these ripe Immortality Peaches, there were also some unripe Immortality Peaches. As those unripe Immortality Peaches had already become fruits, they were actually also capable of increasing one's lifespan should they be eaten.

However, even though Chu Feng wanted to pluck them, he discovered that he was unable to do so. No matter what sort of method he tried to use to pluck them, he was still unable to pluck them.

Perhaps that was the profoundness of the Immortality Peach Tree. Only the ripe Immortality Peaches were capable of being plucked. As for the unripe ones... they were simply impossible to be plucked.

If anyone thought about moving the Immortality Peach Tree itself, they would be indulging in an even wilder fantasy.

"Enough. What you're doing right now is simply tormenting me. It's better that you kill me."

At this moment, Elder Zhao Yu's face was filled with his aged tears. His appearance was truly one of grief. This time around, he was not pretending. Rather, he was truly heartbroken with grief.

He had not lied to Chu Feng earlier. He was near the end of his lifespan and would, at the very most, be able to live for two hundred more years. After those two hundred years, he would definitely die. None of the treasures in the Holy Land of martialism would be able to save him. The only things capable of prolonging his life were the Immortality Peaches.

However, even with all these Immortality Peaches before him, Zhao Yu was unable to obtain a single one. As such, he was torn with grief and in so much pain that he wished to die.

“Seeing how pitiful you are, I’ll give you one,” Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s voice suddenly sounded.

Hearing those words, Zhao Yu was startled. Then, he raised his head and saw that Chu Feng was standing before him. Not only was Chu Feng standing before him, he was also holding a massive Immortality Peach in his hand. Furthermore, he had placed that massive Immortality Peach before him.

Chapter 1970 – A Great Show

“Chu Feng, you, you, you...” Zhao Yu did not dare to believe his eyes when he saw Chu Feng holding that massive Immortality Peach in front of him.

Earlier, he had clearly tried to kill Chu Feng. Yet, Chu Feng was actually willing to give him a single Immortality Peach?

“Go ahead, take it,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Thank, thank you. Chu Feng, rest assured. From today onward, I will follow you. I will do whatever you say, and absolutely not disobey you. That old bastard Yue Ling is unable to differentiate good from bad. I will help you kill him,” After Zhao Yu received the Immortality Peach from Chu Feng, he was so emotional that the rims of his eyes started to tear up. He was feeling enormously grateful toward Chu Feng, and even made this sort of oath to Chu Feng.

However, in reality, he currently had an extremely cold and gloomy sneer in his heart. He thought to himself, ‘Chu Feng, you are still too inexperienced. You were actually deceived by my pretense. Thus... the only thing that awaits you will be death.’

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng began to wave his sleeve in succession. Then, like rope, his world spirit power began to envelope Zhao Yu. They completely covered Zhao Yu and tied him up.

“Chu Feng, wha, wha, what are you doing?” Zhao Yu, who was incomparably overjoyed earlier, became extremely alarmed.

Not only had Chu Feng restricted his power with his world spirit power, he had also restricted his movements. Zhao Yu was extremely startled by this, and started to feel very uneasy.

Wasn’t Chu Feng planning to spare him?

Wasn't Chu Feng deceived by him?

Then, what was with the situation now?

At this moment when Zhao Yu was feeling uneasy and confused, Chu Feng continued to set up world spirit formations nonstop.

Not only was Zhao Yu unable to move at all, in the end, he was unable to even speak.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had concealed his spirit formation within Zhao Yu's body. He had concealed it so well that it was simply undetectable. No one would be able to tell that he had been bounded by Chu Feng's spirit formation.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to tell Zhao Yu what he was planning to do. Instead, he carried Zhao Yu to the Immortality Peach Tree and made him sit below it.

Of course, the massive Immortality Peach Chu Feng gave Zhao Yu was still held in his hand.

Afterward, Chu Feng did not bother to pay attention to Zhao Yu anymore. Instead, he left to set up a massive spirit formation. That spirit formation was naturally set up to prevent the activation of the killing formation that was already here.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng did not know exactly how powerful that killing formation was, he set up two great layers of spirit formations. The first layer was a defensive spirit formation meant to withstand the killing formation's attack. Its purpose was to save the people's lives at the crucial moment.

As for the other spirit formation, it was a spirit formation meant to destroy the killing formation. That spirit formation was much more difficult to set up compared to the defensive spirit formation. The amount of time and the spirit power it required was also very significant.

Fortunately, Chu Feng had obtained a small mountain's worth of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones from the Beast Emperor's

treasures. Chu Feng was able to use those many Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones at will.

With the assistance of the massive amount of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones and the many rare treasures, Chu Feng was able to greatly decrease the amount of time he needed to set up his spirit formations. After some time, Chu Feng finished setting up the two spirit formations.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had set those two spirit formations up so flawlessly and concealed them perfectly. Unless a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist inspected the area carefully, it would simply be impossible for one to detect the two spirit formations with their naked eyes.

“Huu... it’s finally done,” After Chu Feng finished all that, he wiped the sweat on his forehead away. At this moment, his entire body was drenched in sweat, his complexion was very pale, and his lips were completely dry. Chu Feng had exhausted a lot of energy to set up those two spirit formations.

Not only had Chu Feng exhausted a great amount of Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones and rare treasures, he had also nearly exhausted all of his world spirit energy.

The reason for that was because his two spirit formations were not only meant to protect the lives of the people that were going to enter this place, it also concerned the lives of all living things in the Holy Land of Martialism. Chu Feng truly did not dare to be careless, and had to go all-out.

After Chu Feng finished setting up his spirit formation, he looked to Zhao Yu. Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze started to shine. Then, Zhao Yu raised his hands and ‘paa, paa,’ ruthlessly slapped his aged cheeks twice.

At this moment, Zhao Yu started to panic. He clearly had not moved. So, why had his body suddenly moved? Furthermore, he even gave himself two ruthless slaps to his face?

“Don’t think about it anymore. I was the one who did that. I am able to control your body with my thoughts,” Chu Feng said to Zhao Yu. His narrowed eyes were filled with a desire to toy with Zhao Yu.

“What?” Hearing those words, Zhao Yu’s heart started to tighten, ‘That brat’s world spirit techniques are actually that powerful? He was able to control my body with his thoughts?’

“You really want to know what I’m doing here, right?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

Even though Zhao Yu was unable to speak, his gaze was fixed on Chu Feng the entire time. His gaze was extremely pitiful, and filled with unease, panic and fear.

It was as if he was saying with his gaze ‘Chu Feng, what are you planning to do? Stop toying with me and spare me, please.’

Chu Feng smiled lightly. He said, “Don’t be so anxious. It’s just a bit longer.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up spirit formations again. They were two spirit formations. Those two spirit formations were linked to one another. However, when Chu Feng finished setting them up, they turned into two bodies of light.

Chu Feng placed the first body of light into his own heart. As for the other body of light, he forced it down Zhao Yu’s mouth. Then, Chu Feng began to form hand seals and lightly shouted, “Fuse.”

Then, that body of light fused with Zhao Yu’s mouth and throat.

“You want to know what I plan to do, right? Here, I’ll demonstrate it for you right now,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he suddenly said, “Zhao Yu is an old bastard.”

Once those words were heard, Zhao Yu was immediately drenched in cold sweat.

Those words were clearly said by Chu Feng. Yet, Chu Feng’s

mouth had not moved at all.

Instead, it was Zhao Yu's mouth that had moved. Not only had his mouth moved, his voice had also emitted from his mouth.

In other words, that 'Zhao Yu is an old bastard,' was said by Chu Feng, but came from Zhao Yu's mouth, with Zhao Yu's voice.

'Crap! Not only is that little bastard able to control my movements, he is also able to control my speech. Exactly what is he planning to do?!'

At this moment, Zhao Yu was completely panicking. Chu Feng was able to control his entire body without even moving, whereas he was unable to move his body. It was as if he had become Chu Feng's puppet.

If Chu Feng were to use his body to provoke others, it would definitely be thought to have been done by him. At that time, he would suffer enormously.

That said, even though Zhao Yu realized that the situation was very bad, he did not know exactly how enormously bad it actually was.

As for Chu Feng, after he finished tormenting Zhao Yu, he began to disguise himself. He disguised himself to be someone who was filled with wounds and tied up by a special rope. Then, he lay underneath Zhao Yu's feet.

'Fuck! Exactly what is this little bastard trying to do?!' Zhao Yu was truly unable to guess what Chu Feng was planning. However, he was feeling more and more uneasy.

He was simply akin to Chu Feng's puppet right now. Both his movements and speech were restrained by Chu Feng.

'Exactly what is Chu Feng planning to do? Why did he make me sit here holding the Immortality Peach in my hand? Why did he disguise himself to the appearance of an injured victim? Could it be that he's planning to put on a show?'

Zhao Yu had managed to successfully guess half of it. He thought that Chu Feng was planning to put on a show for someone. However, the truth was that Chu Feng was planning to put on a great show for everyone.

Chapter 1971 – Using Others To Kill

At the moment when a gate was suddenly opened and several million people rushed into this place like a tide, Zhao Yu was overjoyed.

The people that were entering this place were not only the people from the first group. There were also people from the second and third group. All of them were actually here.

Although it was unknown why all of them would be entering this area at the same time, one thing was certain; the peak experts of the Three Palaces, Four Clans, Nine Powers and the many Monstrous Beast Races were all gathered here.

In fact, the overall cultivation of these several million people were stronger than even that of the first group of people. There were no longer any Martial Lords among them. The weakest among them were Martial Kings.

As for the reason why Zhao Yu was so overjoyed, it was because the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were the ones standing at the very front of the group of several million.

‘Save me! Quickly, save me! That little bastard Chu Feng wants to kill me!’

Zhao Yu shouted loudly. However, his voice could only be heard by himself. The reason for that was because he was simply unable to utter any sound at all. It was only when Zhao Yu realized he was unable to utter a sound while the crowd were all standing there with stunned expressions, that he realized how bad the situation was.

He was no longer capable of controlling his body.

Furthermore, he appeared to be completely uninjured at this moment, while Chu Feng appeared to be the seriously injured victim.

Not only that, Chu Feng had plucked all of the Immortality Peaches. The only one that he had left was currently in Zhao Yu's hand.

Even though he knew the truth, the crowd that had just arrived did not. As such, they would definitely think...

...that he was the one that had tied up Chu Feng.

...that he was the one that had plucked all of the Immortality Peaches.

Chu Feng had pinned all of his crimes onto him.

Most importantly, even if he wanted to defend himself, he was unable to. The reason for that was because he was simply unable to speak.

At this moment, Zhao Yu felt a chill flowing through his heart. He had finally realized Chu Feng's scheme.

Chu Feng's plan was to set him up and use others to kill him.

"What's going on? Isn't that Elder Zhao Yu and little friend Chu Feng?"

"Why is little friend Chu Feng tied up? Why is he that seriously injured? Did Elder Zhao Yu do that?"

"Everyone, look! What is that in Elder Zhao Yu's hand? That peach! That peach tree behind him!"

"Heavens! It's the legendary Immortality Peach that can increase one's lifespan by a hundred years! This is great! The legendary Immortality Peach actually exists! We've struck it rich! We've struck it rich!"

"No, something's wrong. Why is it that only the peach in Elder Zhao Yu's hands is large? Why is it that only the Immortality Peach in his hands appears to be delicious?"

"They say that only ripe Immortality Peaches can be eaten. Could it be that Zhao Yu has plucked all of the ripe Immortality

Peaches?”

Sure enough, after a short moment of surprise, the crowd burst into an uproar. The reason for that was because the two things that had appeared before them had made them enormously astonished.

The grand Heavenly Law Palace’s management elder, the reputed Elder Zhao Yu, had actually tied Chu Feng up. Not only that, he had beaten Chu Feng to such a miserable appearance.

Didn’t he say that he wanted to accompany Chu Feng to the seventh path to protect him? As such, why did he tie Chu Feng up? Why did he beat Chu Feng to such a state?

Could it be that the kind and charitable Elder Zhao Yu they knew was actually all a disguise? Could it be that Elder Zhao Yu had followed Chu Feng with malicious intentions to begin with? Could it be that Elder Zhao Yu was actually a hypocrite?!

Furthermore, that Immortality Peach Tree was before them. As such, why were all of the ripe peaches gone? Could it be that Zhao Yu had truly plucked all of them? That must be the case! After all, he had been the first to arrive in this place. Furthermore, that Immortality Peach he was holding in his hands was a ripe fruit. That was the evidence!

These two matters were placed before the crowd like ironclad evidence. Before Zhao Yu could even say a single word, he had already managed to invoke the hatred of many people and become their enemy.

“Elder Zhao Yu, what are you doing?” At this moment, the first person to speak to Elder Zhao Yu was actually that Heavenly Law Palace’s Elder Yue Ling.

As Elder Yue Ling was no fool, he naturally knew how bad the situation before them was. He truly did not understand why Elder Zhao Yu would do such a stupid thing.

Even if he planned to kill Chu Feng, he should kill Chu Feng secretly. Why must he allow everyone to see him trampling upon Chu Feng?

Even if he had plucked all of the Immortality Peaches, he should have done so secretly. Why had he not left this place after plucking the Immortality Peaches, and instead decided to stay with an Immortality Peach in his hand? His actions were simply those of someone showing off, a naked flaunting.

Generally, Elder Zhao Yu was a relatively smart man. As such, why would he do such a stupid thing today? Was he a fool or what? Why would he be this stupid?

“Hahahaha!!!”

Right at this moment, Zhao Yu laughed loudly. It was a crazy and wild laughter.

In reality though, Zhao Yu was actually crying in his heart. The reason for that was because it was simply not him who had laughed like that. Instead, it was Chu Feng that had laughed like that. He had become nothing more than Chu Feng’s puppet now. There was nothing he could do; he could only allow himself to be toyed with by Chu Feng.

Furthermore, Zhao Yu had realized that Chu Feng was planning to play him to death. He truly had not expected that brat to be so sinister.

It turned out that Chu Feng had never planned to kill him to begin with. Rather, he had planned for the blades of others to kill him. If this were to continue, he would, sooner or later, be killed.

“Zhao Yu, what are you laughing about? Release little friend Chu Feng immediately!” At this moment, the Underworld Palace’s Elder Huang Guang shouted angrily.

“That’s right, release Chu Feng immediately!!!” Following that, the crowd also began to shout loudly.

“Haha, a bunch of ignorant fools actually want me to release this little bastard? What makes you all qualified to speak to me in such a manner?” Zhao Yu said with a cold voice.

“What? You... what did you say?” The crowd did not expect that Zhao Yu would suddenly say that sort of thing. Not only did he admit to tying Chu Feng up, he had also spoken to insult everyone present.

“You, you, you damn, damn, damned old fa, fart. Re, release Chu Feng im, immediately. El, el, el, else I’ll kill you,” Wang Qiang stood out from the crowd. Although he spoke with a stutter, anger filled his face.

Wang Qiang was really angry. Even Chu Feng was able to sense his intense anger. Evidently, he had been deceived by the scene before him. It was not because Wang Qiang was stupid. Rather, the show that Chu Feng had put on was simply too perfect.

“Another little bastard. Do you also wish to die?” Zhao Yu spoke coldly. However, everything he was saying was actually being said by Chu Feng, who was lying on the ground beneath him. As for the actual Zhao Yu, he was unable to even utter a single word.

“Elder Zhao Yu, what are you doing? Quickly, release little friend Chu Feng,” At this moment, Elder Yue Ling spoke.

Even though he also detested Chu Feng and wanted to kill him, he knew that he must do that sort of thing in the shadows.

With the current situation, if Elder Zhao Yu were to continue to act this stubbornly, not only would his reputation be completely ruined, he would also become the target of the crowd’s attack. He would definitely be killed. Furthermore, their Heavenly Law Palace would also be implicated. After all, he’s a management elder of their Heavenly Law Palace.

“Yue Ling, you old fool. Since when were you qualified to order me around? Even though we are both management elders of the

Heavenly Law Palace, you are nothing more than a dog in my eyes; a dog that I can toy with however I want,” Elder Zhao Yu said.

“Zhao Yu, what did you say? Say it again!” Yue Ling did not expect that his good-intended advice would be met with Zhao Yu’s insults.

Chapter 1972 – Toyed To Death

“I said, you are nothing more than a dog,” Zhao Yu said once more.

“You, you, you!!!” Elder Yue Ling was stunned. He pointed at Zhao Yu with a shivering finger. He was actually so enraged that he became unable to speak.

“Forget about it. No matter what, we are both elders of the Heavenly Law Palace. I’ll take you, dog, into consideration and spare this little bastard Chu Feng,” As Zhao Yu spoke, he abruptly stood up, grabbed Chu Feng and threw him to Wang Qiang.

After Wang Qiang caught Chu Feng, he immediately untied the rope that had held Chu Feng and removed the cloth that had been tied over his mouth. In fact, he even took out an extremely precious medicinal pellet to feed to Chu Feng so as to help him heal his injuries.

Chu Feng had truly never expected Wang Qiang to be someone that could be counted on this well during crucial moments.

In fact, it was not only Wang Qiang that took out a medicinal pellet to heal Chu feng’s injuries. Elder Huang Guan, the many other Underworld Palace’s elders, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders, the many elders of the Nine Powers, and the various Monstrous Beast Races’ elders, as well as many unknown experts, also took out healing medicinal pellets to hand to Chu Feng.

From this, it could be seen that Chu Feng possessed quite a decent relationship with many people. Even though a portion of the people present were most definitely pretentious individuals, it remained that many of them, like Elder Huang Guan and the Nangong Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders, as well as the Nine Powers’ experts, were truly concerned for Chu Feng’s well-being.

“Everyone, there’s no need for that. My injuries are not that serious. I do not have to take healing medicinal pellets,” Even though Chu Feng spoke bravely, blood was flowing from his mouth. He was deliberately continuing his performance.

“Lo, lo, lo, loo, look at your ap, app, appearance. Sto, sto, sto, stop trying to sho, show off,” Wang Qiang forcibly fed Chu Feng his precious medicinal pellet.

“Little friend Chu Feng, your injuries are extremely serious. This can help you, eat it quickly,” Elder Huang Guan and the others also began to forcibly push their medicinal pellets into Chu Feng’s hands.

After receiving the medicinal pellets from the crowd, Chu Feng revealed a grateful expression. Then, he turned to Elder Zhao Yu, who was still standing beneath the Immortality Peach Tree, and shouted angrily, “Zhao Yu, I considered you to be my senior. Yet, never would I have imagined that you were actually so despicable. You actually poisoned the water. Do you not even have the courage to face me head-on?”

“Hahahahaha!!!” Zhao Yu laughed loudly. His laughter was one of disapproval. Then, he said, “As the saying goes, a great man has to be ruthless like poison. This is what is meant by tricks. Chu Feng, you are still too inexperienced. You should take your time and learn from me.”

The crowd were startled by those words. Then, they revealed angry gazes toward Elder Zhao Yu. None of them expected that Zhao Yu had actually not only attacked Chu Feng, but had even used such a despicable method to subdue Chu Feng.

At this moment, the impression that the crowd had of Zhao Yu took a complete reversal. The reason for that was because the crowd hated despicable people like Zhao Yu the most.

However... they did not know that it was actually not Zhao Yu that had said those words. Instead, his every movement, his every

word, were all manipulated by Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, exactly what happened?

“Why did Zhao Yu attack you? How did you all manage to reach this place? What happened to those ripe Immortality Peaches?” At this moment, the crowd turned to question Chu Feng out of curiosity. They all wished to know what had happened.

Chu Feng began to narrate to the crowd what had happened. Elder Zhao Yu and him had entered the seventh path together. Elder Zhao Yu demanded that he lead the way. Thus, Chu Feng ended up walking in the front. Surprisingly, they discovered a treasure map. Furthermore, they discovered that the treasure map led directly to the Immortality Peach Tree.

Originally, Chu Feng had been overjoyed. He had agreed to share the Immortality Peaches there together with Elder Zhao Yu. However, to his surprise, Elder Zhao Yu was extremely greedy, and had actually poisoned Chu Feng’s water on their way here. After Chu Feng became dizzy from the poison, he had snatched away the treasure map, tied him up and even gave him a beating.

Afterward, Elder Zhao Yu arrived at this place and discovered that there were over a thousand Immortality Peaches here. For the sake of angering Chu Feng, he did not kill him. Instead, he plucked the thousand-plus Immortality Peaches right before Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, he began to eat them with big mouthfuls right before Chu Feng’s eyes.

“What? You’re saying that Zhao Yu ate all of the ripe Immortality Peaches?”

After hearing Chu Feng’s story, some of the old monsters that were about to reach the end of their lifespan immediately revealed glowering gazes. They were so enraged that they were simply about to shoot flames from their eyes.

They had not come here for any treasures. Rather, their goal had

only been to prolong their lifespan; their goal had only been to obtain the legendary Immortality Peaches.

To their enormously pleasant surprise, they had actually managed to discover the Immortality Peach Tree. However, unfortunately, all of the ripe fruits, all of the edible Immortality Peaches that could be used to prolong their lives, had been eaten by Zhao Yu. What were they to do about this?!

“That’s right. Zhao Yu ate all of the Immortality Peaches,” Chu Feng nodded.

Hearing those words, the actual Zhao Yu was on the verge of crying. All of the Immortality Peaches were clearly plucked and then put away by Chu Feng. Even though he was holding an Immortality Peach, he had not even managed to take a single bite of it.

Yet, Chu Feng was actually saying that he had eaten all of the Immortality Peaches. How was he to reason with that? Thus, he felt extremely wronged.

Even though he felt extremely wronged in his heart, Zhao Yu was unable to express his actual state of mind with his body. The expression that he actually had on his face right now was a smile of complacency. It was a smile that drove the crowd mad and caused them to want to tear him apart alive.

“But, didn’t they say that one could only eat ten Immortality Peaches, that one would die should one eat more than ten?” Someone suddenly asked. There was indeed such a legend regarding the Immortality Peaches.

“The map that we obtained from the seventh path not only lead to this place, it also stated that one could eat as many Immortality Peaches as they liked after dissolving the map in water and drinking said map. One would only be able to increase one’s lifespan, and not die from being poisoned due to eating too many Immortality Peaches.”

“However, it is clear that eating too many Immortality Peaches still possesses a side effect. Everyone, look at how stimulated Zhao Yu is right now. It should be a consequence from eating over a thousand Immortality Peaches,” Chu Feng said.

“Wahahahaha, a bunch of ants actually dare to look upon my Immortality Peach?” At this moment, Zhao Yu was laughing loudly. As he spoke, he proceeded to take a bite of the Immortality Peach in his hand.

“That peach is mine!!!!” Seeing this scene, an old monster revealed his aura explosively and flew toward Zhao Yu. He planned to snatch the Immortality Peach from Zhao Yu’s hand. A rank five Martial Emperor; he was actually a rank five Martial Emperor.

“The Immortality Peach is mine!!!!” Following that, all of the experts present rushed forth. Some rushed directly to the Immortality Peach Tree with the intention of plucking the unripened peaches. Others rushed to snatch the Immortality Peach in Zhao Yu’s hand.

“A group of ants dare to attempt to snatch my Immortality Peach? Watch as I crush you all to death,” Faced with the incoming crowd, Zhao Yu was not afraid in the slightest, and even made a provocative gesture.

However, Zhao Yu was actually completely powerless. He did not even have the strength to truss a chicken. As the scramble for the Immortality Peach continued, not only was Zhao Yu unable to keep his Immortality Peach, his face was also struck by a fist. The strength of that fist was no small matter. It left Zhao Yu with a bloody nose, and knocked him flying several meters away. Furthermore, it had also knocked out three of his teeth.

“Motherfucker! You dare hit me!? Watch as I kill you,” Zhao Yu got back up and charged into the crowd.

However, Zhao Yu’s actions were actually all being manipulated by Chu Feng. The actual Zhao Yu was currently weeping in his

heart. He knew that he would undoubtedly be killed today, that he would be toyed to death by Chu Feng.

“Zhao Yu, you actually dared to eat over a thousand Immortality Peaches by yourself. Your sins are beyond repair. Immediately vomit those Immortality Peaches out for me!”

“That’s right, beat that Zhao Yu up. He has most definitely hidden more Immortality Peaches on him. Everyone, search his body for the Immortality Peaches.”

When the crowd discovered that it was impossible to pluck the Immortality Peaches on the Immortality Peach Tree, they all turned their gazes to Zhao Yu. Zhao Yu simply did not have to rush into the crowd at all, as he was already drowned by the crowd.

“A bunch of ants dare to scramble for my Immortality Peach? Watch as I suffocate you all to death with my fart,” Zhao Yu shouted loudly and cursed at the crowd.

Of course, all of this was done by Chu Feng’s manipulation. Suddenly, Chu Feng discovered that he was unable to control Zhao Yu anymore.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng was not nervous at all. Instead, he revealed a cold smile. He knew that it was not that the spirit formation that he had placed onto Zhao Yu had failed. Instead, it was because Zhao Yu had been killed by the crowd.

Chapter 1973 – I Am Going To Kill You

“Hualalala~~~”

Sure enough, the crowd that had ganged up upon Zhao Yu to beat him to death suddenly started to rapidly disperse like a crowd of startled birds.

When the crowd dispersed, many people revealed expressions of fear.

Upon closer inspection, the people who didn't know what had happened were all startled.

At this moment, Zhao Yu was lying on the floor. His clothes were all gone; he was completely naked. He had a swollen face, a bloody nose and a body filled with blood. Zhao Yu had died.

“Why would this happen? Why, why... why would he die like that?”

At this moment, many of the people that were beating Zhao Yu up were deeply frightened. They had clearly not used much strength to beat up Zhao Yu. Thus, why would Zhao Yu, a rank six Martial Emperor, die just like that?

However, they didn't know that although Zhao Yu appeared to be completely fine, he was actually filled with serious injuries. He was already in a state where he would not be able to withstand the beating of a rank one Martial Emperor. As such, when his attackers were rank three, rank four, rank five and even rank six Martial Emperors, how could he possibly withstanding their beatings?

It would instead be strange if he hadn't died.

At this moment, Chu Feng was sneering. He had actually completely controlled Zhao Yu and had totally been capable of making Zhao Yu commit suicide. However, Chu Feng did not do that. The reason for that was because he wanted Zhao Yu to be beaten to death by others.

For Zhao Yu to be beaten to death before all these people, not only would this cast all responsibility away from Chu Feng, it would also establish enemies for the Heavenly Law Palace. After all, the bunch of old monsters who had attacked Zhao Yu earlier were not people with strength that could be neglected.

They were people with a lot of personal strength, and lifespans close to their end. As such, as they were people who were about to die anyways, they would not fear many things.

What sort of people were the scariest? That would have to be those that were not afraid of death.

At this moment, an Heavenly Law Palace's elder suddenly shouted, "Who was it? Who killed our Heavenly Law Palace's Elder Zhao Yu?!!!!"

No matter what, Zhao Yu was their Heavenly Law Palace's management elder. To have their management elder beaten to death by others, it was impossible for them to not be concerned about it.

However, of the Heavenly Law Palace's experts present, the strongest expert, Elder Yue Ling, did not say anything. He was still harboring hard feelings toward the insults that Zhao Yu had said to him earlier.

Of course... he didn't know that those words were actually not spoken by Zhao Yu, and were instead spoken by Chu Feng.

If he were to know that, he would likely become even more enraged. Unfortunately, he would never come to know the truth.

"Humph, with how greedy he is, with how he consumed over a thousand Immortality Peaches himself, even his death will not be able to wipe away his crimes."

"That's right. Ordinary people will die after consuming ten Immortality Peaches. Yet he consumed over a thousand by himself. It would instead be strange if he didn't die. The way I see it, he

didn't die from the beating. Instead, he died from the poison from eating too many Immortality Peaches."

"That's right. Even if he possessed the map, it would be impossible for a single person to consume over a thousand Immortality peaches and be fine. We have all seen it with our own eyes. From that Zhao Yu's arrogant, conceited, delirious and abnormal behavior, it is clear that he was already poisoned. At that point, he was just waiting to die."

At that moment, the people who were beating Zhao Yu earlier all began to shift responsibility from themselves. They had decided to place the blame of Zhao Yu's death onto his overconsumption of Immortality Peaches.

At that moment, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were at a loss as to what to do. Practically all of the grand characters present had attacked Zhao Yu. As such, even if they wanted to look into the matter of who killed Zhao Yu, there was no way for them to determine it. Instead, they would end up offending those old monsters. Was there really a need for them to offend all those old monsters for a single person who was already dead?

At that moment, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace didn't know what to do.

"Ser, ser, serves him ri, ri, right. His de, de, dea, dea, death is well justified," Wang Qiang spit out a mouthful of saliva. He was joyous over Zhao Yu's death.

"What did you say?" Hearing those words, the depressed people from the Heavenly Law Palace immediately turned their furious gazes to Wang Qiang.

"Is what he said not correct? Such a despicable person, if he were to continue to live, he would only bring harm to the world."

"You all saw what he did to me earlier. However, your Heavenly Law Palace, not only did you not plan to punish him, you instead

want to avenge him now that he has died. Is this the way that the renowned Heavenly Law Palace that is said to act on behalf of the heavens does things? Pah!!!” Chu Feng said. He aimed his attacks at the Heavenly Law Palace.

“That’s right. We all saw what Zhao Yu did to little friend Chu Feng with our very own eyes. Someone like him deserved to die to begin with. For your Heavenly Law Palace to refuse to kill him and instead want to avenge him; you all have truly disappointed us,” The others also began to attack the Heavenly Law Palace.

Chu Feng was very popular with the crowd, whereas Zhao Yu’s reputation had been completely ruined. Thus, many people were extremely angry, though they didn’t have a way to unleash their anger before. But now, they had found a source, the Heavenly Law Palace, to unleash their anger at.

“You, you, you!!!” At this moment, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were at a loss as to what to do too. The reason for that was because they were indeed in the wrong here.

“Chu Feng, it is not a pity that Zhao Yu did not manage to kill you. The reason for that was because this old man will personally kill you.”

Right at this moment, a boundless surge of killing intent suddenly swept forth from the crowd. That killing intent was so powerful that it forcibly dispersed the crowd composed of many experts. In the end, it completely covered this vast area.

At that moment, a person appeared. When they saw that person, many people started to frown and immediately move aside. They withdrew themselves from that person as far as possible.

However, at that moment, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace began to reveal smiles of taking joy in someone else’s misfortune.

The reason for that was because that person that had appeared

was an Ancient Era's Elf. Furthermore, he was none other than Xian Yuyin's uncle, that rank six Martial Emperor.

"Cra, cra, cra, crap," Wang Qiang also managed to guess the identity of that Ancient Era's Elf. Immediately, panic covered his face.

In fact, even the Underworld Palace's elders that wanted to assist Chu Feng started to reveal uneasy expressions.

How powerful were the Ancient Era's Elves? When even the Underworld Palace did not dare to provoke them, who would possibly dare to provoke them?

If it were the Heavenly Law Palace that wanted to attack Chu Feng, many people would stand up for him. However, if it was this Ancient Era's Immortal Elf that wanted to attack Chu Feng, the crowd would not be able to help Chu Feng even though they possessed the will to do so.

"Today, I'll kill this Chu Feng. If anyone dares to obstruct me, that person will be killed alongside Chu Feng," Sure enough, Xian Yuyin's uncle also knew that there were a lot of people here that wanted to help Chu Feng. Thus, he started by threatening them.

As he said those words, he cast his gaze filled with murderous intentions at the crowd. Not a single person dared to face his gaze.

"Heh..." Seeing that, the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace started to reveal cold smiles.

They thought to themselves, 'As they say, there's always a curb to everything. That Chu Feng is truly arrogant, and has made us suffer repeatedly. And now... there is finally someone that will take care of Chu Feng for us.'

Surprisingly, right in the moment when everyone felt that a calamity was about to befall Chu Feng, Chu Feng spoke with a smile on his face. "I spared your life once. Yet, never would I expect for you to not treasure your life, but instead actually dare to

come here to throw it away.”

“Since you’ve come, I will no longer spare you this time around. You can go and accompany your disappointing nephew, Xian Yuyin.”

“What did you say?! Say it again?!!!!” Not to mention the others, even Xian Yuyin’s uncle was extremely shocked by Chu Feng’s words.

Originally, he had thought that Chu Feng would reveal an expression filled with fear after he appeared. The reason for that was because Chu Feng would not be able to escape in this place. As such, he would undoubtedly be killed.

However, that brat was actually not scared, and even said that he would kill him. Could he have misheard?

“I said that I am going to kill you,” Chu Feng repeated.

Chapter 1974 – Absolute Suppression

“I said that I am going to kill you,” Chu Feng repeated.

Chu Feng said those words without much emphasis. However, when the crowd heard those words, their bodies trembled, and their expressions grew stiff.

Even though many people had not managed to personally see Chu Feng killing Xian Yuyin, they heard about what had happened. After Chu Feng killed Xian Yuyin, he had clearly fled the scene immediately. He fled in terror from Xian Yuyin’s uncle and was only alive because he was saved by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

Yet, what was going on right now? Chu Feng actually declared that he had spared Xian Yuyin’s uncle? Was that not boasting shamelessly?

“Chu Feng, are you stupid or what? You actually said those words to me?”

“Earlier, if it hadn’t been for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal saving you, you would’ve already been killed by me. You’re going to kill me? Do you even think you’re qualified?” Xian Yuyin’s uncle said with a loud voice.

“Whether or not I’m qualified, won’t you know when you fight me?” Chu Feng said with a disapproving expression. The gaze with which he looked to Xian Yuyin’s uncle was actually filled with disdain.

“Bastard! If I do not dismember your body into ten thousand pieces today, I am not an Ancient Era’s Elf.”

Suddenly, Xian Yuyin’s uncle unleashed his attack. With a thought, he controlled his surging martial power. With earth-shattering might, it began to engulf Chu Feng.

Everything had happened too quickly. At that moment, apart

from the rank six Martial Emperors present, the majority of the others were unable able to react to Xian Yuyin's uncle's attack. At that moment, there were still a lot of people standing beside Chu Feng. Those people all felt an intense killing intent surrounding them.

At that moment, if Xian Yuyin's uncle's attack were to land successfully, it would not only be Chu Feng who would die. Many others would also accompany him in death. The reason for that was because even though Elder Huang Guan and the others possessed the strength to block that attack, none of them dared to act against the Ancient Era's Elves. As such, they could only escape by themselves.

"Disperse," instantly lightning flashed through Chu Feng's eyes, and his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared together.

Chu Feng had not moved. He had only shouted. However, that shout of his had turned Xian Yuyin's uncle's attack into energy ripples. They rumbled before Chu Feng, but were unable to approach him.

Blocked. Xian Yuyin's uncle's attack was blocked by Chu Feng.

At that moment, everyone revealed stunned expressions. They were all startled because they had all discovered that Chu Feng's current aura was that of a rank four Martial Emperor.

They had heard that Chu Feng's Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were capable of increasing his cultivation by two levels. Thus, judging from that, Chu Feng's actual cultivation was already no longer that of the rank one Martial Emperor that others said he was. Instead, he was a rank two Martial Emperor.

However, even if Chu Feng was a rank two Martial Emperor who had managed to temporarily increase his cultivation to rank four Martial Emperor through a special method, it should still be impossible for him to be a match for a rank six Martial Emperor.

However, at the moment when Chu Feng unleashed his oppressive might, the crowd all felt that Chu Feng's oppressive might was even more frightening than Xian Yuyin's uncle's oppressive might.

Exactly what was going on?

At that moment, Elder Huang Guan was the one who asked, "A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation? Little friend Chu Feng, could it be that you possess a battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?"

"That's right. It is as senior suspected, I possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivations," Chu Feng nodded.

"What? A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation? Chu Feng's battle power is capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation?"

Hearing those words, the crowd that was already extremely shocked became completely stunned. It was not that they were ignorant. Rather, a battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivations was truly too frightening.

Ordinary Martial Emperors only possessed battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. For those capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, they were simply legends. Yet, Chu Feng was actually capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation? That was simply unparalleled.

Not to mention the others, even the gaze with which Xian Yuyin's uncle looked to Chu Feng had changed.

He was a rank six Martial Emperor with a battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

As for Chu Feng, he was a rank four Martial Emperor with a battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

Even though there appeared to be an enormous gap in strength

between the two of them, Chu Feng's heaven-defying battle power had made up for the gap in their martial cultivation. Currently, the two of them possessed the same level of battle power.

“No wonder you're that arrogant. However, you killed my nephew. As such, I must return the debt in blood,” However, even with that being the case, Xian Yuyin's uncle was still unwilling to give up. Instead, he unleashed another ferocious attack at Chu Feng.

But regardless of how he attacked Chu Feng, he was unable to injure Chu Feng in the slightest. Regardless of how fierce his attacks were, they all ended up being blocked by Chu Feng.

In the end, Xian Yuyin's uncle even used an Incomplete Imperial Armament. However, he was still unable to suppress Chu Feng.

“Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted and unleashed the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash's nine slashes in rapid succession. As for that ninth slash, not only did it manage to slice through Xian Yuyin's uncle's attack, it had even sliced off one of his arms.

“Heavens, that!!!” Everyone was stunned by that scene. They were at a complete loss as boundless astonishment filled their hearts.

Even if Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, his actual battle power should only be equal to that of Xian Yuyin's uncle. However, as the two men fought, Chu Feng held absolute superiority in their battle. In fact, even after Xian Yuyin's uncle unleashed his Incomplete Imperial Armament, Chu Feng still fought him without any weapon.

However, it was precisely such a weaponless Chu Feng that had sliced off one of Xian Yuyin's uncle's arms. Not only was his arm sliced off, the Incomplete Imperial Armament that he had held in

that hand also fell to the ground.

“Ahhhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Suddenly, Xian Yuyin's uncle started to shout. He was not shouting from the pain of losing his arm. Rather, he was shouting due to his overwhelming anger.

After shouting, he flipped his remaining palm. Immediately, heaven and earth started to tremble as a golden-bright and dazzling giant ax appeared in his hand.

Imperial Armament. That was an actual Imperial Armament that emitted an incomparable amount of Emperor's Might. When that Imperial Armament appeared, Xian Yuyin's uncle's aura instantly increased enormously. His aura had actually begun to suppress Chu Feng's.

“Chu Feng, so what if you possess overwhelming power? I possess an Imperial Armament. Your measly little life is destined to be mine,” Ever since the fight begun, Xian Yuyin's uncle had been oppressed by Chu Feng the entire time.

The reason why he had not used his Imperial Armament after fighting for so long was because he had not wanted to publicly shame himself. After all, even if he managed to defeat Chu Feng through the use of his Imperial Armament, he would only appear to have won through an unfair advantage.

However, as matters stood, he no longer possessed any other choice. Regardless of whether he was willing to or not, he had to admit that Chu Feng was very powerful, and had surpassed him. If he still held back on using his Imperial Armament, the person that would end up dying would be him.

And now since he had revealed his Imperial Armament, Xian Yuyin's uncle was once again filled with confidence. He was finally able to explosively release the feeling of being oppressed the entire time.

“This is truly bad!!!”

At that moment, Elder Huang Guan and the others that wished for Chu Feng’s victory all started to frown. The reason for that was because an Imperial Armament’s strength was not something that could be looked down upon.

If two people of equal strength were fighting, and one of them possessed an Imperial Armament, that Imperial Armament would be capable of reversing the entire fight.

‘Chu Feng, you are doomed this time,’ The crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace began to sneer in their hearts. They all wished for Chu Feng’s death. However, the performance Chu Feng displayed earlier caused even them to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng, and feel that Chu Feng would not be killed. Originally, they had been extremely disappointed. However, they now managed to see hope again.

“Imperial Armament? You’re not the only one with one,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly flipped his palm. As silvery light flickered, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader appeared in his hand.

Chapter 1975 – You’re Truly Ridiculous

“Roar~~~”

Once the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader appeared, a dragon’s roar immediately resonated through heaven and earth, and a boundless oppressive might surged from Chu Feng’s body. That oppressive might instantly turned the situation of the battle around; it had completely overturned the oppressive might that was suppressing Chu Feng, and even began to oppress Xian Yuyin’s uncle instead.

“Heavens, that is?!”

“Could it be.... That that is also an Imperial Armament?”

“Chu Feng, he actually also possesses an Imperial Armament?!”

At that moment, the expressions from the crowd were truly marvelous. Chu Feng’s weapon was emitting an Emperor’s might. There was no mistake; that unparalleled sensation that they were feeling was definitely that of an Imperial Armament.

However, no one had expected that Chu Feng would actually possess an Imperial Armament. This was especially true of the Heavenly Law Palace’s Elder Yue Ling. At that moment, he was feeling extremely complicated.

He was someone that had managed to become a rank six Martial Emperor and a management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace after training for thousands of years. Yet, he did not possess a single Imperial Armament.

However, that Chu Feng, that brat who had only trained for just over a dozen years, actually already possessed an Imperial Armament. This caused Elder Yue Ling to feel extremely envious and jealous of Chu Feng.

Suddenly, someone from the Heavenly Law Palace shouted, “Furious Coiling Dragon Behader! Milord, look, Chu Feng’s

Imperial Armament seems to be the legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader!”

Upon closer inspection, Elder Yue Ling’s face nearly turned green. Wasn’t the appearance of that silver Imperial Armament that Chu Feng was holding in his hand exactly the same as that legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?

In fact, many people heard the cry of shock from that person of the Heavenly Law Palace. They had also heard of the renowned Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. At that moment, they too had expressions of disbelief covering their faces.

The Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader was a weapon renowned for its might. It was the legendary Imperial Armament of the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King.

Thus, how could such an Imperial Armament end up in Chu Feng’s hands? The might being revealed by the Imperial Armament Chu Feng was holding in his hand was definitely real. But, was that weapon really the legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?

As such, it was inevitable that there would be people who were skeptical of whether or not the Imperial Armament in Chu Feng’s hand was really the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. After all, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader was too famous. It had never appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism since the death of the Beast Emperor. For it to suddenly appear now, it was inevitable that people would find it hard to believe.

“Roar~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd was shocked, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in Chu Feng’s hand uttered another roar.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

After that roar sounded, the Imperial Armament which Xian Yuyin’s uncle was holding began to tremble, as if it were afraid.

At that moment, Xian Yuyin's uncle tried his hardest to conceal his Imperial Armament's trembling. After all, he could not allow himself to lose to Chu Feng in terms of battle deposition before the confrontation had even begun.

However, with only one hand left, how could he possibly conceal the trembling of his Imperial Armament? In fact, even the hand that he was holding his Imperial Armament with started to subsequently tremble.

“Heavens, quickly, look over there! That man's Imperial Armament is actually trembling. It is afraid! Could it be that it's intimidated by the Imperial Armament in Chu Feng's hand?”

“Chu Feng's Imperial Armament is actually capable of intimidating other Imperial Armaments? It is most definitely no ordinary Imperial Armament! Heavens! Could it be that Chu Feng's Imperial Armament really is that legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?!” At that moment, the crowd exclaimed in succession.

“Fuck! I refuse to believe this!!!”

Seeing that everyone was starting to lean toward Chu Feng and ignore him, Xian Yuyin's uncle shouted furiously. As he spoke, he brandished the giant Imperial Armament axe in his hand.

“Snap~~~”

With the slash of his axe, an enormous crack appeared in the void. His frightening slash caused the expressions of everyone present to stiffen.

The aura of death had never been so close to them before. At that moment, even grand characters like Elder Huang Guan felt that a great catastrophe was about to befall them.

As for all this, it was caused by Xian Yuyin's uncle. That axe of his was truly too powerful. Not only was he planning to kill Chu Feng with that slash, he would also destroy everything and

everyone within a ten thousand meter radius of Chu Feng.

“Break!!!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand. “Snap~~~,” another enormous spatial crack appeared.

“Boom~~~”

The two attacks collided with one another and created an enormous explosion. At that moment, this region turned completely black. And everyone’s line of sight was covered.

It was the shattering of space and the void itself. The space and void in this region were shattered by the confrontation between Chu Feng and Xian Yuyin’s uncle.

It was only when the shattered space returned to normal that the crowd’s line of sight managed to see clearly again. When they discovered that they had come out unscathed, the crowd was wild with joy.

No one on Chu Feng’s side was injured. Chu Feng had successfully blocked Xian Yuyin’s uncle’s attack.

“Cough, cough~~~”

However, suddenly ear-piercing coughing noises were heard. They were emitted from the direction of Xian Yuyin’s uncle.

Turning toward the direction of the coughs, the crowd were stunned once again. They had discovered that Xian Yuyin’s uncle had fallen to the ground.

Not only that, his body was also badly mutilated. As he coughed, he continuously vomited out mouthfuls of blood. He was so weak that he simply looked like someone who was on the verge of death.

Defeated. Xian Yuyin’s uncle had been defeated. In the confrontation of Imperial Armaments, Xian Yuyin’s uncle had been defeated by Chu Feng in a single bout.

That said, even though Xian Yuyin's uncle had a very miserable appearance right now, no one other than the people from the Heavenly Law Palace felt any sympathy for him.

The reason for that was because even though he was an incomparably noble Ancient Era's Elf, he was an extremely ruthless individual. When he fought against Chu Feng earlier, he had unleashed many ruthless attacks with no concern for the surrounding people. Had it not been for Chu Feng blocking all of those attacks, countless innocent bystanders would've been killed by him.

Someone like him, someone who would disregard the lives of others for his own purpose, would only be a scourge should he be kept alive. At that moment, many people wished for the death of that Ancient Era's Elf.

"Step, step, step..."

Holding the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, Chu Feng began to walk toward Xian Yuyin's uncle one step at a time. After arriving before him, Chu Feng asked, "Is there anything you wish to say before your death?"

"Chu Feng, you must not kill me. I am an Ancient Era's Elf. If you are to kill me, you will have gone against all of us Ancient Era's Elves."

"While you were able to contend against the Four Great Imperial Clans, I'd advise you to think twice before going against us Ancient Era's Elves. In this Holy Land of Martialism, no one dares to go against us. Even the Three Palaces do not dare to do so. If you dare to go against us, you will not only be sealing your own doom, those with you will also be killed. Even if you escape to the ends of the earth, we will still catch you and kill you," Xian Yuyin's uncle spoke in an extremely fierce manner.

Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words. He truly did not expect that Xian Yuyin's uncle, with how overflowing his

murderous intentions were earlier, was actually also a coward that feared death. It must be said that Chu Feng was truly disappointed in him.

However, Chu Feng's startled look caused the crowd to think that he was scared. Indeed, they were the Ancient Era's Elves. How could anyone possibly not be afraid of them?

While others might not know, the people from the Three Palaces knew very well that Xian Yuyin's uncle was not boasting at all when he made those threats. The capabilities of the Ancient Era's Elves were truly that powerful. If Chu Feng were to offend the Ancient Era's Elves, he would definitely be killed.

'Heh, are you scared now? Come, kill him. I shall see whether or not you dare to kill him. If you kill him, you'll definitely die. If you don't kill him, you'll also die. This is what you get for offending the Ancient Era's Elves,' Seeing Chu Feng's hesitation, many of the people from the Heavenly Law Palace started to sneer in their hearts.

What Xian Yuyin's uncle had said earlier suddenly made the Heavenly Law Palace's crowd realize that Chu Feng had offended the Ancient Era's Elves. No matter what, he would undoubtedly be killed. And they were very willing to see Chu Feng suffer this sort of fate.

"Chu Feng, if you kneel to me, beg for forgiveness and apologize to my dead nephew, I will consider sparing your life," Xian Yuyin's uncle added. Evidently, he also thought that Chu Feng had grown afraid. Thus, when he said those words, he was no longer scared and actually filled with confidence.

"Hahahaha..." At that moment, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter.

"What are you laughing about?" Xian Yuyin's uncle was completely confused by Chu Feng's sudden laughter.

Wasn't Chu Feng afraid?

Why would he be laughing like this at such a time?

Exactly what was he thinking?

"I am laughing at how truly ridiculous you are," Chu Feng said.

Chapter 1976 – Must Kill

“I am ridiculous?” Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin’s uncle was startled. From his expression, it could be seen that he truly did not understand what Chu Feng meant by those words.

It was only after a moment that he realized that it was most likely because Chu Feng did not know the strength of their Ancient Era’s Elves, and thus did not believe his threats.

Thus, he added, “Chu Feng, you must not look down upon us Ancient Era’s Elves. The strength of our Ancient Era’s Elves absolutely surpasses your imagination.”

“Heh...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng laughed once again. Then, he said, “I know the strength of the Ancient Era’s Elves extremely well. However, there is one thing that you seem to definitely not know about.”

“Wha... what is it?” Xian Yuyin’s uncle asked with a voice trembling with fear. From Chu Feng’s confident appearance, he was able to realize that something was wrong. As such, he began to feel worry and unease from the bottom of his heart.

“I have already acted on behalf of the Cyanwood Mountain and entered an alliance with your Ancient Era’s Elves. Furthermore, the alliance is something that your Ancient Era’s Elves’ Majesty, the Elf King, personally suggested,” Chu Feng said.

“Wha... what did you say?!” Hearing those words, Xian Yuyin was immediately alarmed. He was so shocked that he did not dare to believe his own ears.

When even he was acting in such a manner, the expressions of the others present were even more marvelous.

Chu Feng had actually entered into an alliance with the Ancient Era’s Elves? Furthermore, the one who suggested the alliance was the Elf King?!!!

Was that for real? If it was real, it would truly be unimaginable. Chu Feng himself was already this powerful. If the Ancient Era's Elves were to stand behind him, who would dare to oppose Chu Feng in the Holy Land of Martialism?

“Furthermore, before entering the Moonlight Maze, I met with your Ancient Era's Elves' Lord Luokong.”

“Not only does he know that I killed Xian Yuyin, he also told me that if I were to encounter you again, I was authorized to act on behalf of the Ancient Era's Elves and kill you,” Chu Feng said.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. Before he left for the Moonlight Maze, Lord Luokong had especially mentioned to Chu Feng that they would not look into Xian Yuyin's death. He told Chu Feng to not take that matter to heart.

Furthermore, he mentioned that they would assassinate Xian Yuyin's uncle in the future.

The reason for that was because Xian Yuyin's uncle was a sinner to their Ancient Era's Elves. He had been fleeing from them for years. The only reason why he was still alive was because the Elf King was merciful, and had not deliberately tried to kill him.

Else, with the capabilities that they, the Ancient Era's Elves, possessed, how could they possibly not capture Xian Yuyin's uncle? However, the Elf King had personally mentioned to Lord Luokong that Chu Feng's importance was greater than the lives of their Ancient Era's Elves. As such, now that Xian Yuyin's uncle had actually attempted to kill Chu Feng, Lord Luokong had made the prompt decision to eliminate him.

As Lord Luokong was one of the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders, he possessed the authority to make such a decision.

Chu Feng had personally asked Lord Luokong whether or not he could kill Xian Yuyin's uncle should he encounter him. The answer he received from Lord Luokong was ‘Absolutely.’

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng was truly planning to kill Xian Yuyin's uncle. He was not joking around.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng wanted to demonstrate his might before the crowd. He wanted to let everyone know that, regardless of who they were, he would not spare them should they go against him.

“Wha, what kind joke are you playing here?! You are merely a human, why would our Ancient Era's Elves allow you to kill me?!” Xian Yuyin's uncle spoke those words with a very unyielding tone. However, he was actually panicking.

Firstly, he had managed to sense an enormous killing intent from Chu Feng's gaze. Chu Feng was determined to kill him. He knew that he would not be able to escape death.

Furthermore, he also knew his own status very well. Although he might appear to be a grand Ancient Era's Elf, he was actually a sinner to the Ancient Era's Elves.

He had been fleeing from the pursuit by the Ancient Era's Elves the entire time. To speak it plainly, he could no longer be considered to be a real member of the Ancient Era's Elves anymore.

However, even with all that, he truly did not believe Chu Feng's words. No matter what, he was still an Ancient Era's Elf. Even if he would be punished should he be captured, his crimes should not be enough to be punished with death.

As such, what made Chu Feng, a mere human, qualified to kill him? Furthermore, the Ancient Era's Elves had allowed him to do so? How could that possibly be true?

Chu Feng was the person who had killed Xian Yuyin. There were a lot of people that saw him doing that. There was irrefutable evidence of him killing Xian Yuyin.

Even if he was a sinner, Xian Yuyin was not a sinner. Instead, he

was one of the future pillars of the Ancient Era's Elves. Before Xian Miaomiao had appeared, he used to be the strongest among the Ancient Era's Elves' younger generation. Furthermore, the Four Grand Elders had even deduced that Xian Yuyin's future accomplishments would likely not be inferior to those of the Elf King.

Xian Yuyin was an outstanding talent that the Ancient Era's Elves had originally planned to nurture emphatically. In fact, he had helped Xian Yuyin take care of Zhang Tianyi and his father because he thought highly of Xian Yuyin's status among the Ancient Era's Elves. He had wanted to have Xian Yuyin help him remove his pursuit by the Ancient Era's Elves after he emerged in power in the future. As such, he would be able to regain his status.

However, Xian Yuyin was killed by Chu Feng, a mere human. As such, it would already be merciful should the Ancient Era's Elves not dismember Chu Feng's body into ten thousand pieces; how could they possibly spare him, and even give him permission to kill Xian Yuyin's uncle?

Xian Yuyin's uncle did not believe Chu Feng. He really did not believe Chu Feng. Even if he were to be beaten to death, he would absolutely refuse to believe that sort of thing.

"As far as I'm concerned, it doesn't matter if you believe me or not. After all, I insist on killing you."

"Puu~~~"

As Chu Feng spoke, he suddenly waved the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader that he held in his hand. As a silvery light streaked through the air, a ray of blood began to spray forth. Chu Feng had sliced through Xian Yuyin's uncle's dantian.

"Woosh~~~"

Then, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader that Chu Feng held in his hand was waved once more. Another silvery light streaked

across, and another ray of blood surged forth, forming an arc in the air.

The very next moment, everybody present was completely stunned. Even the extremely talkative Wang Qiang had his mouth wide open as he stood there petrified.

Xian Yuyin's uncle had died. He had been killed by Chu Feng. Not only did Chu Feng take his life, he even hacked him in half through the middle. He had died without an intact corpse.

After being stunned momentarily, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Feng all changed. Chu Feng had truly killed Xian Yuyin's uncle, killed a rank six Martial Emperor. Could it be that Chu Feng had gone mad?

Chu Feng was truly too daring. Could it be that he really planned to go against the Ancient Era's Elves?

The reason why the crowd thought this way was because they, like Xian Yuyin's uncle, did not believe what Chu Feng had said. They all felt that Chu Feng had provoked an enormous disaster by killing Xian Yuyin's uncle.

“This!!!”

However, upon closer inspection, the crowd were all startled. Chu Feng's expression actually did not change in the slightest after killing Xian Yuyin's uncle. It was as if he had only done what he should do.

This youth's nature was truly too vicious.

“Say, say, Chu, Chu Feng, aren't you a, a bit too dar, dar, daring? He is an An, An, Ancient Era's Elf. You rea, really killed him like that?” Wang Qiang walked over to Chu Feng.

“He wanted to kill me. Why am I not allowed to kill him?” Chu Feng asked instead of answering.

“Ye, yea, yeah, he de, de, deserves to die. Bu, bu, but, he is an An,

Ancient Er, Era's Elf, and a ran, rank six Ma, Martial Emperor on to, top of that. His st, sta, sta, status should be pretty h, high," Wang Qiang said.

Chu Feng did not immediately answer Wang Qiang. Instead, he surveyed his surroundings, and discovered that the crowd mostly possessed the same sort of reaction as Wang Qiang. In fact, their expressions were even more exaggerated than Wang Qiang's. It was as if they were saying that it would be fine for Xian Yuyin's uncle to kill Chu Feng, but it would definitely not be fine for Chu Feng to kill Xian Yuyin's uncle.

"Everyone, could it be that you all felt that I should not have killed him?" Chu Feng asked the crowd.

"Eh..." No one answered Chu Feng. Even though the Ancient Era's Elves should not be provoked, it was clear that Chu Feng was not someone to be provoked either. As such, they did not wish to offend Chu Feng.

"You should not be asking us that question. Instead, you should be asking yourself," At this moment, Elder Yue Ling spoke. He spoke those words with a tone filled with mockery.

Chapter 1977 – The Descent Of The Crisis

“Ask myself?” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I will not say much, and will only present you with a bit of advice. When doing things, one should consider the severity of a matter. When conducting oneself, one should know what one is capable of,” Elder Yue Ling added.

After he said those words, many of the Heavenly Law Palace’s elders began to nod to express their approval. As for the others, they grew quiet. However, Chu Feng knew that those people were most likely thinking along the same lines in their hearts.

“Although I, Chu Feng, am of the younger generation, I am not a fish on a chopping block. I will definitely not allow myself to be taken advantage of. Thus, regardless of who it might be, as long as it’s someone who tried to kill me, I will definitely not let that person get away with it.”

As Chu Feng spoke those words, coldness began to radiate all over. Instantly, the temperature in this region dropped by several degrees.

Furthermore, due to the fact that Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were still on him, the coldness he emitted was not only frigid, but also extremely frightening.

Not to mention the others, even Elder Yue Ling, a rank six Martial Emperor, revealed a frown upon feeling Chu Feng’s cold aura.

At that moment, he felt as if he had been woken up from his dream. When even Xian Yuyin’s uncle was no match for Chu Feng, he would naturally not be a match for Chu Feng either.

When even Elder Yue Ling was acting in such a manner, the others were all drenched in cold sweat. At that time, they all realized how terrifying Chu Feng really was.

Earlier, the only thing on their minds was how powerful Xian Yuyin's uncle's backing was, and they had actually forgotten the frightening strength that Chu Feng himself possessed. Chu Feng was no ordinary member of the younger generation. Instead, he was a member of the younger generation who was capable of killing a rank six Martial Emperor.

Thus, after sensing the coldness emitted by Chu Feng, even Elder Yue Ling did not dare to say another word.

“Actually, I also know that everyone feels that I should not have killed Xian Yuyin's uncle. As for the reason why everyone feels that way, it is only because you all feel that the Ancient Era's Elves should not be trifled with.”

“However, if that is what everyone thinks, then it would mean that everyone feels from the bottom of your hearts that what I, Chu Feng, had said earlier, how the Ancient Era's Elves were my allies and how Lord Luokong personally told me that I could kill Xian Yuyin's uncle, were only lies. You all feel that I, Chu Feng, was lying.” Chu Feng swept his gaze over the crowd once again.

This time around, no one dared to meet Chu Feng's gaze. Even though that was what they were thinking, none of them were daring enough to admit to it.

“Facts speak louder than words. Whether or not I, Chu Feng, was lying, everyone will come to know in the future,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the crowd all felt startled. Chu Feng had spoken those words so effortlessly. It did not seem like he was lying. Could it be that what Chu Feng said was the truth? However, if all that Chu Feng said was true, then it would truly be too frightening.

At that moment, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Feng contained more than fear. There was also a completely different sort of emotion. Even those experienced old monsters that were about to reach the ends of their lifespan revealed such an

expression in their gazes.

Chu Feng had forced them to have a whole new level of respect for him.

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng no longer bothered to pay attention to the crowd. Instead, he collected Xian Yuyin's uncle's Cosmos Sack and his Imperial Armament.

Those were all things that belonged to the Ancient Era's Elves. Even if Chu Feng didn't plan to keep them himself, he could not ignore them. Chu Feng was planning to return them to the Ancient Era's Elves.

Chu Feng also collected Xian Yuyin's uncle's corpse. No matter what, he was still an Ancient Era's Elf. Thus, Chu Feng planned to return his corpse to the Ancient Era's Elves and have them take care of it.

If the Ancient Era's Elves were to declare that Chu Feng could do as he wished to Xian Yuyin's uncle's corpse, it would naturally be even better. No matter what, Xian Yuyin's uncle was a rank six Martial Emperor. As such, the source energy contained within his corpse was most definitely pretty decent. Therefore, Chu Feng would wait till Eggy awakened and have her refine his source energy.

In short, his body was very useful and valuable.

At that moment, the Underworld Palace's Elder Huang Guan walked toward Chu Feng; he pointed at Chu Feng's Imperial Armament and asked, "Little friend Chu Feng, that Imperial Armament in your hand, could it be the legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?"

He did so firstly to lift the tension of this awkward situation, and secondly, because he really wanted to know.

"Senior, truth be told, this is indeed the Imperial Armament senior Beast Emperor used when he was alive, the Furious Coiling

Dragon Beheader,” Chu Feng nodded.

Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd all changed.

“Sss...” Even Elder Huang Guan was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Then, he asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, could it be that you’re the Beast Emperor’s successor?”

“I am not the Beast Emperor’s successor. I merely managed to obtain the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader,” Chu Feng explained.

Once Chu Feng said those words, Yue Ling, who already felt enormous envy for Chu Feng, nearly vomited blood.

He had clearly obtained the Beast Emperor’s Imperial Armament. Yet, he still declared himself to not be the Beast Emperor’s successor?

Furthermore, he even used the word ‘merely,’ to describe the Imperial Armament. That was truly too anger-inducing for Yue Ling, who did not even possess an ordinary Imperial Armament.

Chu Feng had received such an enormous fortunate opportunity to obtain the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. Yet, he made it appear to be so insignificant. It was truly too anger-inducing.

“Little friend Chu Feng, not only do you possess exceptional talent, you are also someone blessed with great fortune. The way I see it, the Holy Land of Martialism’s next overlord is most definitely going to be you,” Elder Huang Guang said.

“Tha, tha, that’s not fo, for certain,” However, at that moment, Wang Qiang refuted him. Then, with an extremely confident expression, he said, “Al, al, al, although Chu, Chu, Chu Feng is my go, good brother, bu, bu, but this er, era’s overlo, overlord will be m, me, me, Wang Qiang.”

Upon hearing those words, the crowd all began to hiss at him. In fact, some people even began to ridicule Wang Qiang for being shameless.

“You, you, you bunch ar, are tru, truly people who po, possess dog ey, eyes and can’t jud, judge. No ma, matter what, I am sti, still Emp, Emperor Chi’s suc, suc, successor,” Wang Qiang said.

“Who are you trying to deceive?” The crowd did not believe Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang sighed. “Fa, facts speaks loud, louder than words. Wh, wh, whether or not I, Wan, Wang Qiang was ly, ly, lying, you all wi, will know later on,” Wang Qiang used what Chu Feng had said earlier.

However, when Chu Feng said those words, he had spoken with enormous confidence and gave off a very domineering aura. He had caused the crowd to feel deep veneration and fear for him.

Yet, when Wang Qiang said those words, even though they were exactly the same as Chu Feng’s, the crowd burst into loud laughter. They had to admit, even though that Wang Qiang was shameless, he was ridiculously funny.

“Rumble~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was laughing at Wang Qiang and arguing with him, the gate through which the crowd had entered this region suddenly closed.

Seeing that scene, the crowd were immediately stunned. They were at a complete loss.

As for Chu Feng, he started to frown.

That gate had originally been open the entire time. Thus, more and more people began to arrive in this place. Currently, there were not only several million people here. Instead, there were now more than a dozen million people here.

The fact that the gate was open the entire time earlier meant that it was meant to be open. Yet, it had now suddenly closed. This meant that something was wrong. Likely, someone was controlling the gate. As for that, it was very likely to be movement from the

Dark Hall.

Suddenly, someone pointed at Wang Qiang and said, “Look, see how you continued to boast. Even the door shut itself because of your shameless boasting,”

“Hahaha!!!” After that person spoke, the crowd all burst into loud laughter.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Everyone, now is not the time to laugh. It is very likely that a crisis will descend upon this place.”

Once Chu Feng said that, the crowd’s expressions immediately grew tense. The reason for that was because not only did Chu Feng speak those words very loudly, he also said them with an extremely serious tone.

However, the crowd were all confused. Why would a crisis descend upon them out of nowhere?

Elder Huang Guan asked Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, what do you mean by that?”

“I’ll ask you all this first. Has everyone heard of the Dark Hall?” Chu Feng asked.

Chapter 1978 – Plan Failure

“Dark Hall? I’ve heard of them before.”

“It’s that mysterious power that appeared in the Ximen Imperial Clan before, right?”

The crowd began to voice their understanding of the Dark Hall. Even though the Dark Hall had always conducted their business in the shadows, everyone knew of the matter concerning the Ximen Imperial Clan. As such, practically everyone knew of the Dark Hall.

“As this matter is extremely important, I will make a long story short.”

“It is possible that the map of the Moonlight Maze that everyone possesses was spread by the Dark Hall. They spread the map with the intention of luring everyone to this place.”

“As for why they did that, it is because they possess a clear-cut purpose. As for their purpose, it is for everyone to die here,” Chu Feng said.

“For real?” At that moment, the crowd burst into an uproar. Panic covered the faces of certain people, while the others revealed dubious expressions. However, regardless, it remained that what Chu Feng had revealed was no small matter.

Death was forever the keenest subject. This was especially true when that death concerned their own lives.

“I am not lying to everyone. There is a killing formation in this place. That killing formation could activate at any moment. If that killing formation is to activate, all of us will die here,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, how did you come to know about this?” Elder Huang Guan asked.

“As matters stand, I might well as tell the truth as it is. The Ancient Era’s Elves already knew of this matter, and I was entrusted by the Ancient Era’s Elves to come to this place and assist everyone in making it through this crisis.”

“Thus, I took the seventh path precisely for this purpose. The gate of the seventh path, even without the map, I would be able to open it.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out an enormous world spirit key and inserted it into the seventh path’s gate. “Snap,” the seventh path’s gate opened for Chu Feng.

“It actually opened?!!!” Seeing that, the crowd revealed expressions of disbelief. Then, many among them began to believe what Chu Feng was saying.

After all, it was true that Chu Feng had insisted on taking the seventh path earlier, and it was also true that Chu Feng had managed to open the seventh path’s gate.

However, the crowd didn’t know that enormous key was actually able to open the seventh path’s gate because Chu Feng had hidden his map within the key. Thus, in the end, Chu Feng was only able to open the gate because of the map’s power.

The reason why Chu Feng had opened the seventh path’s gate was to prevent against the unexpected. As the killing formation could only be activated in this area, Chu Feng determined that the killing formation would be useless should the people here be brought away.

Earlier, he had not thought of this because he didn’t know how he was going to leave. However, since the seventh path’s gate could be opened at any time, he would naturally have to use this surefire way to save everyone.

“Little friend Chu Feng would not deceive us. There’s no time to lose. Everyone, quickly, let’s get out of here,” Elder Huang Guan

said.

“Le, le, let me go fir, first,” Worrying about his life enormously, Wang Qiang was the first to rush out the seventh path’s gate.

Seeing that, the crowd began to rush through the seventh path’s gate. They did not wish to die here in vain.

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded, “Everyone, wait a moment.”

It was Elder Yue Ling. He spoke with an extremely loud voice and stopped the fleeing crowd. Then, he added, “Everyone, I urge you all to calm yourselves and not be deceived by that Chu Feng.”

“Elder Yue Ling, wh, wh, what are you talking about?” Those that entered the seventh path all stood there stunned. Those that had yet to enter the seventh path also stopped their footsteps.

“Everyone, could it be that you all do not feel this to be extremely skeptical?”

“Since this place is so dangerous, why did Chu Feng not mention it to us before we entered? Why did he instead mention it to us now?” Elder Yue Ling asked.

“That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, why did you not warn us sooner?” The crowd asked.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s gaze flashed slightly. His lips were raised into a light curve. He did not answer immediately. Instead, with a smile on his face, he looked to Elder Yue Ling.

“Furthermore, Chu Feng was the first one to enter this place. Evidently, he knew how to get here. In that case, it meant that he already knew that the Immortality Peach Tree was here before he even got here.”

“Since he already knew that the Immortality Peach Tree was here, it is completely understandable that he should know about the other secrets of this place.”

“For Chu Feng to insist on having us leave this place, he must be doing so to deceive us. He wishes to make us leave this place through his deception, and then hog all the treasures in this place for himself,” Elder Yue Ling added.

“This...” Hearing what Elder Yue Ling said, the crowd did not express their approval. However, other than the people from the Underworld Palace and Wang Qiang, many of those people who had already entered the seventh path quietly walked back out from the seventh path and returned to this place with the Immortality Peach Tree.

Even though they did not express their agreement with Elder Yue Ling, their actions already showed that they were thinking the same thing as Elder Yue Ling.

“Chu Feng, you are speechless now, no?” Elder Yue Ling looked to Chu Feng. When he looked to Chu Feng, he revealed a complacent expression. From the very beginning, the crowd had been standing behind Chu Feng and speaking out for him the entire time. And now, he had finally managed to tilt the crowd toward his side.

“Speechless? Why would I be speechless?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Firstly, at the time when you all came into this place, I would not have been able to prove anything. If I were to tell everyone to not enter this place because there was a killing formation here, who would have believed me? Ask yourselves, would any of you have believed me if I had mentioned that to you all back then? If there is anyone who would have believed me then, please raise your hand.”

After Chu Feng said those words, there were indeed people who raised their hands. However, there were only about a thousand individuals who did so out of the over ten million people here.

None of those people who kept their hands down said anything. The reason for that was because they knew deep down in their

hearts that they would not have believed in Chu Feng should he have mentioned the killing formation to them before they entered this place.

“Humph,” Seeing that even Elder Yue Ling did not raise his hand, Chu Feng smiled. Then, he continued, “At that time, you all would not have trusted me. If I were to tell you all to accompany me into the seventh path, would any of you have done so?”

At that moment, even those thousand plus individuals who had raised their hands lowered their hands in succession. At that moment, there was not a single raised hand.

The reason for that was because they had all managed to sense how frightening the seventh path was from the entrance of the seventh path. They had all felt that they would undoubtedly die should they enter the seventh path. As none of them wanted to toy with their lives, none of them would have accompanied Chu Feng on the seventh path.

“In that case, let me ask you all this. How was I supposed to urge everyone to leave at that time?”

“Since I knew that I would not be able to successfully urge everyone to leave, why would I attempt to do so?”

“Why would I not wait to prove myself to everyone, wait until a time when I could do so?” Chu Feng asked.

The crowd did not answer. The reason for that was because they also knew that it would have been useless for Chu Feng to have advised them at that time.

At that moment, the people who had entered the seventh path earlier and then stepped right back out revealed expressions of self-blame.

“In that case, are you all willing to follow me out of here now?” Chu Feng asked.

Right after Chu Feng said those words, Elder Yue Ling added,

“Everyone, you must carefully think this over. This Moonlight Maze is a place filled with countless treasures,”

Originally, a lot of people were tempted to leave after Chu Feng finished asking his question. However, after Elder Yue Ling said those words, many of the people who were tempted to leave began to hesitate.

In the end, only over ten thousand people stood forth. Although ten thousand people was not a small amount, it was very few when compared to over ten million people.

It would appear that Chu Feng’s surefire method of saving the crowd would be destined to fail.

Chapter 1979 – Meaning Of Brother

“Very well. I thank all the friends that believe in me. Since you have all believed in me, I will absolutely guarantee your safety,” Chu Feng said to the people who had entered the seventh path.

Then, he turned to Elder Huang Guan and Wang Qiang, “Elder Huang Guan, brother Wang Qiang, please bring those people out of the Moonlight Maze for me. You merely need to return via the same path you came in. Even though this seventh path gives off an extremely dangerous aura, it is actually completely safe.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, do you not plan to leave with us?” Elder Huang Guan asked.

“Even though they do not believe me, I cannot ignore them and let them die,” Chu Feng said.

“But, if that killing formation really exists, it would be useless even if you are to remain,” Elder Huang Guan said.

“I have another way to deal with it. Merely, I do not dare to guarantee whether or not that method will work for certain. However, it remains that I must give it a try,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu, Chu Feng, they all do, do no, not believe in you. Th, there is sim, simply no an, antidote for th, their foo, foolishness. Ev, even if they are to di, die, it w, would on, only be w, what they deserve.”

“Yo, you sh, should just le, let them die. Wh, why bother with them?” Wang Qiang said. He spoke those words extremely loudly. He did so deliberately to insult those that had decided to stay.

At that moment, the people who remained revealed very ugly expressions. They also felt that they were letting down Chu Feng’s good intentions by refusing to listen to him. However, there was nothing they could do about it, as they did not wish to return empty-handed. After all, all of them were people that possessed

selfish desires.

“It is fine for them to not believe in me. However, I absolutely cannot abandon them. The reason for that is because that is my responsibility,” Chu Feng said with a smile. He was not angry. It was as if this was something that he already anticipated happening.

Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction, the crowd grew even more ashamed...

“Responsibility? What a joke. You have clearly been caught red-handed by me. That’s why you decided to stay instead of leaving. You are still unwilling to part with the treasures here.”

“Thus, everyone, do not be deceived by that Chu Feng,” Seeing that the crowd were feeling ashamed, Elder Yue Ling began to sow dissension again.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right after Elder Yue Ling finished saying those words, a bolt of lightning suddenly flashed through the air. Like a ghost, Chu Feng appeared before Elder Yue Ling. Both Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were on display. At that moment, Chu Feng was covered in lightning.

Not only that, Chu Feng was emitting a very fierce oppressive might. His oppressive might caused Elder Yue Ling to back away from him repeatedly.

Sensing Chu Feng’s killing intent, Elder Yue Ling flipped his palm and took out an Incomplete Imperial Armament. He was planning to take the initiative by striking first. As such, he unleashed an attack at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

“Clank~~~”

However, right after Elder Yue Ling raised his Incomplete

Imperial Armament, a silvery light flashed past him. Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon beheader had hacked Elder Yue Ling's Incomplete Imperial Armament in two. After the pieces of Elder Yue Ling's Incomplete Imperial Armament rapidly spun through the air, they fell to the ground.

Suddenly, Elder Yue Ling had a completely ashen expression on his face. He stood there in a stunned, petrified manner. He was completely motionless, with cold sweat rushing forth from his body and down from his aged face.

From the instant clash earlier, he had sensed how enormous the gap between him and Chu Feng was. If Chu Feng wanted to kill him, he would definitely die. He simply did not even possess the strength to resist Chu Feng.

“Impudent! You dare act this rude toward Lord Elder! Are you planning to go against our Heavenly Law Palace?!” The crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace immediately drew their weapons and aimed them toward Chu Feng.

“And what if I am?” Chu Feng swept his gaze across them and said with a cold voice.

After seeing Chu Feng's gaze, those people from the Heavenly Law Palace who had been eager to attack Chu Feng began to back away from him. In fact, many among them even started to shiver, with cold sweat rolling down their faces. There were even some among them who were so terrified of Chu Feng that they ended up sitting down on the ground in a paralyzed manner.

Killing intent. Before Chu Feng's intense killing intent, they suddenly felt themselves to be ridiculous.

When even their strongest Elder Yue Ling was no match for Chu Feng, what could they possibly do? If they were to attack Chu Feng, they would only be throwing their lives away.

After all, they all understood the logic that before an actual

expert, regardless of how many people you had, it would all be useless. As for Chu Feng, he was one such expert.

“Chu Feng, if you are to kill me, it would prove that you possess a guilty conscience. Even if I am to die, our Heavenly Law Palace would not let you get away with it,” Elder Yue Ling threatened Chu Feng.

“Did you think that I would not dare to kill you?” Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. He was not afraid in the slightest. At the same time, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in Chu Feng’s hand grew closer and closer to Elder Yue Ling.

“You, you, you...” Elder Yue Ling grew so nervous that he became unable to speak properly. At that moment, his entire body was drenched in sweat. He was truly afraid of death.

“If I wanted to kill you, it would be as easy as a single slash of my weapon. However, I will not kill you, because killing you will only dirty my hand.”

“As for what we both said to the crowd, the truth will come to light as to which one of us was speaking the truth and which one was lying. As I possess a clear conscience, I am not afraid of waiting.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he removed his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, walked over to the Immortality Peach Tree, sat down in a cross-legged manner and closed his eyes.

As for Elder Yue Ling, he was panting for breath and started to wipe away the cold sweat on his face nonstop. He felt as if he had just escaped from the gates of hell. However, at that moment, he was extremely exhausted and on the verge of collapse.

“Putt~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng opened his eyes. The reason for that was because someone had sat beside him. Upon looking, he discovered that Wang Qiang was actually smiling foolishly at him with his

teeth widely shown.

A mouthful of bad breath assailed Chu Feng's face.

"Why did you come back?" Chu Feng asked.

"You're n, not going. So I, I'm not g, go, going either. Af, after all, we, we're brothers," Wang Qiang said with a smile on his face.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to smile too. He did not say anything. Wang Qiang's mention of the word 'brothers' was already enough for him.

What did he mean by brothers? A brother was someone willing to undergo trials and tribulations together with you during moments of crisis!!!

"Little friend Chu Feng, as you're not leaving, this old man will also stay," Right at this moment, the Underworld Palace's Elder Huang Guan also returned. Following him, the others from the Underworld Palace also returned. They all sat around Chu Feng.

In the end, everyone returned. However, those people who returned all sat beside Chu Feng like the people from the Underworld Palace.

Soon, the seventh path's gate closed up. At that moment, the crowd that remained in this place were separated into two groups.

The first group were people who believed in Chu Feng.

The other group were people who didn't believe in Chu Feng.

This sort of scene caused those who did not believe in Chu Feng to possess an even greater guilty conscience and feel even more ashamed.

"Everyone, if you feel that there are treasures here, you can go right ahead and carefully look around to search for the treasures. There is no need to act this restrained," Elder Huang Guan said with a smile. He was unable to continue watching the way those who did not believe in Chu Feng acted. Thus, he spoke those words

to mock them.

Suddenly, a white-haired old man said to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, if what you said is the truth, this old man will kneel to you and admit his mistake before his death.”

This old man’s face was covered with scars. On his back was a giant blade wrapped in cloth. That blade was called the Snow Blade. It was an Incomplete Imperial Armament that that old man had reached a superb level of achievement with.

This old man was known as the Snow Blade Mad Demon. This Snow Blade Mad Demon was a rank six Martial Emperor, an old monster.

His name was even more renowned than that of Elder Yue Ling and Elder Huang Guan. He was someone who possessed a lot of prestige. Merely... he was near the end of his lifespan.

After the Snow Blade Mad Demon, many other people began to express their apologies to Chu Feng.

At the beginning, it was only the old monsters who expressed their apologies to Chu Feng, but later on, close to half of the ten million plus people had voiced their apologies to Chu Feng.

“Elder Yue Ling, as the person who distrusted little friend Chu Feng the most, you should make an apology yourself, no?” Elder Huang Guan said to Elder Yue Ling.

“Sure, I’ll express myself. If I have wrongly accused little friend Chu Feng, I will definitely compensate little friend Chu Feng accordingly,” Elder Yue Ling vowed. Even though he said those words unwillingly, he was actually admitting defeat to Chu Feng.

He did not dare to not do so. When Chu Feng had attacked him earlier, Chu Feng had made him realize the disparity between them. He was truly afraid that Chu Feng would kill him.

“Haha...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng chuckled.

Elder Yue Ling wiped away his cold sweat and then asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, what are you laughing about?” At this moment, he was truly terrified of Chu Feng.

“Compensation? What sort of compensation could you possibly provide? Are you capable of taking out anything more precious than this?” Chu Feng raised his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

“I...” Elder Yue Ling became speechless.

“If, if you ha, ha, have wr, wrongly acc, accused Chu Feng, you sh, should apologize wi, with your life,” Wang Qiang interrupted.

“What?” Hearing those words, Elder Yue Ling’s mind grew tense, and his expression changed.

“You d, don’t dare? In th, that case, it means that you po, possess a guilty conscience. Yo, you’ve in, in, indirectly ad, admitted that you were wr, wrongly accusing Chu, Chu Feng,” Wang Qiang said.

After Wang Qiang said those words, the gazes of over ten million individuals turned to Elder Yue Ling. Among them, many of the gazes were incomparably ice-cold.

The reason why the crowd felt that guilty and ashamed toward Chu Feng was all because of Elder Yue Ling. If Elder Yue Ling had truly wrongly accused Chu Feng, then, without even Chu Feng doing anything, those people would tear him apart on the spot.

Being faced with this sort of oppression, Elder Yue Ling felt that his hairs were all standing on end. With a heart filled with terror, he could only brace himself to say, “If what little friend Chu Feng said was true, I will kill myself on the spot. I will return little friend Chu Feng’s innocence with my death.”

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Elder Yue Ling said those words, the area they were in started to shake violently.

As the violent quakes began to fill the place, the surrounding

walls started to emit crimson rays. The crimson rays criss-crossed with one another and formed an enormous net.

At that moment, other than Chu Feng, the expressions of everyone present changed.

The reason for that was because they sensed a fatal killing intent from the crimson net.

Chapter 1980 – Breaking Through The Killing Formation

“Killing formation, could this be the killing formation?”

At that moment, the crowd all started to panic. The reason for that was because killing intent was emerging from all around them, and that crimson net was flickering with crimson light.

At that moment, they were like turtles trapped in a jar with no way to escape.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it would seem that this old man has indeed wronged you. This old man will apologize to you here,” As the Snow Blade Mad Demon spoke, he planned to kneel to Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

However, before he could kneel, Chu Feng arrived before him like a phantom and helped him up, stopping him from kneeling.

“Senior Snow Blade, there’s no need for this. I said that I possessed another method,” Chu Feng said.

“Another method?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the rest of the crowd present all revealed joyous expressions.

They were all able to sense the strength of that killing formation. If the crimson net were to engulf them, they would definitely be killed.

Originally, they all felt that they would lose their lives in this place, and were feeling remorseful for not having trusted Chu Feng. However, to their great surprise, Chu feng actually said that he possessed another method to save them. Furthermore, based on Chu Feng’s appearance, he did not appear to be joking around.

Thus, the crowd all felt as if they had seen the dawn of life when

they had reached the place of absolute death. Everyone turned their gazes to Chu Feng. Contained within their gazes was anticipation. Over a dozen million people had placed their lives in Chu Feng's hands.

In fact, as matters stood, they had no choice but to believe in Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng's hands began to change rapidly. Then, his palms clasped with one another and he shouted, “Open!”

“Buzz~~~”

In an instant, golden light filled the ground below the crowd's feet. As the golden light shone, a golden defensive barrier rapidly formed and enveloped the crowd.

“This is great! We're saved!!!”

At the moment when the golden defensive barrier appeared, the crowd was overjoyed. The reason for that was because when the golden defensive barrier appeared, the frightening aura that the killing formation was emitting disappeared in a flash. This meant that the defensive spirit formation was useful.

“Little friend Chu Feng, so you had already set up a spirit formation here,” Elder Huang Guan said. He was also a world spiritist. Even though he was not a very high level world spiritist, he was still capable of telling that Chu Feng's spirit formation should have just been set up not long ago.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly amazing. You are our savior!” The crowd began to express their gratitude to Chu Feng.

“While this spirit formation of mine is capable of withstanding the killing formation temporarily, it is unable to resist it forever. Everyone, if we wish to escape this place alive, we must break through that killing formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Break through the killing formation?” Upon hearing those words, the extremely emotional crowd started to frown. That killing formation was very frightening. It was already unimaginable for Chu Feng to be able to stop it. Would they really be able to break through it?

At the moment when everyone started to express doubt, Chu Feng’s hands began to rapidly change again. Then, boundlessly majestic golden light began to appear outside the golden defensive barrier.

After the golden light appeared, it did not form another defensive barrier. Instead, it turned into many golden blades and began to slice and hack at the enormous crimson net.

“Clank, clank, clank, clank, clank~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s spirit formation collided with the killing formation.

“Heavens! Little friend Chu Feng is amazing!” Seeing this scene, the crowd was overjoyed once again. They did not expect that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques would be so powerful, and that he was actually capable of cutting through the ancient killing formation.

That said, that killing formation was even stronger than Chu Feng had anticipated. Furthermore, as Chu Feng had exhausted a lot of his spirit power to set up the two grand spirit formations, his spirit power was currently somewhat insufficient.

If Chu Feng were to only rely on his own strength, he would only be able to control his spirit formation to contend against the killing formation, and would not be able to cut through the killing formation in a short period of time.

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng ended up opening his Cosmos Sack, and began to refine the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones inside. He was using the power of the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones to

increase the strength of his own world spirit techniques so that they could contend against that killing formation.

Sure enough, after Chu Feng utilized the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, the strength of his spirit formation became more powerful. It started to destroy the enormous crimson net created by the killing formation. However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng was only able to cause slight damage, and not complete destruction.

At that moment, Chu Feng became very worried and anxious. He started to sweat profusely. In fact, even his lips started to turn blue. Even though he had utilized the Dragon Mark World Spirit Stones, the consumption of his world spirit power was still too enormous.

Chu Feng wanted to break through the killing formation as quickly as possible. The reason for that was because he felt that something must have happened on the Ancient Era's Elves' side for this killing formation to have activated.

This was a situation that Chu Feng did not wish to see. Thus, he must quickly take care of the problem over here and then go and help the Ancient Era's Elves.

Merely, the current Chu Feng was truly unable to do what he wanted to do. If this were to continue, not only would he not be able to break through the killing formation, he himself might also end up dying here.

Seeing Chu Feng becoming this exhausted by controlling the spirit formation by himself, the bystanders began to feel major heartache.

At that moment, the gratefulness they had toward Chu Feng was something that only they understood.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang asked, "Chu Feng, t, th, this is n, not going to, to work. Can you cr, create an, another for,

formation core so th, that I can hel, hel, help you?”

“Unless they are a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, no one will be able to help me,” Chu Feng said.

“Hehehe...” Wang Qiang laughed complacently. He flipped his palm, and a strand of golden world spirit energy hovered over it like a little snake.

Seeing Wang Qiang’s world spirit power, not only Chu Feng, everyone else present was shocked. What Wang Qiang had revealed was no ordinary world spirit power. Instead, it was Dragon Mark Royal-level world spirit power.

Wang Qiang was actually also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Haha, great,” Chu Feng was overjoyed upon discovering that Wang Qiang was also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. The reason for that was because he really did need the help of another Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist at that moment.

Thus, Chu Feng created another formation core beside him. Then he said to Wang Qiang, “Just pour your world spirit power into it. You will be able to assist me that way.”

“N, no, no pro, problem,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he jumped into that spirit formation core and began to pour his world spirit power into it.

When Wang Qiang’s world spirit power entered the formation’s core, Chu Feng’s heart was startled.

At that moment, he felt an enormous power pushing him from behind like a large, vigorous hand.

He knew that sensation was caused by Wang Qiang. Wang Qiang’s world spirit power was actually that powerful. His world spirit power was so powerful that it was on par with his own.

With Wang Qiang’s assistance, Chu Feng was certain that he’d be

able to break through the killing formation.

Sure enough, after Wang Qiang began to help Chu Feng, the strength of Chu Feng's spirit formation increased enormously in an instant. The golden blades which Chu Feng's spirit formation had created became even more ferocious. They began to shatter the killing formation in a large-scale manner. In the end, they completely destroyed the enormous crimson net.

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang successfully broke through the killing formation.

“Success?”

When the crowd saw the enormous crimson net being sliced apart by the golden blades, they did not dare to believe this to be real.

After all, that was a Moonlight Maze's killing formation. Chu Feng had really managed to break through it, he had really managed to break through a killing formation in the Moonlight Maze?

Chu Feng's world spirit technique was really that powerful?

Chapter 1981 – Well Deserved Death

“Everyone, we’re safe now,” Chu Feng said after sensing that the crowd was in disbelief over what had happened.

As Chu Feng said those words, he removed the defensive formation he had set up. Then, he walked over to the seventh path’s gate and opened it once more.

“Wooahhh!!!!”

Seeing that the seventh path’s gate was successfully opened, Chu Feng had come out uninjured and they were no longer able to sense that killing formation’s frightening aura, the crowd was overjoyed after a brief moment of silence passed.

They knew that the killing formation really had been destroyed. Even though they found it to be extremely unbelievable, they knew that Chu Feng had succeeded.

After a series of loud cheers, the crowd began to frantically rush toward the seventh path’s gate. Even though there were a lot of them, their speed was extremely fast. In merely a blink of an eye, all twelve million people entered the seventh path.

“Long live Chu Feng, long live Chu Feng!!!”

In excitement, some people began to shout Chu Feng’s name. Following that, more and more people began to shout Chu Feng’s name. Originally, they were members of the younger generation, but later on, even those from the older generation began to loudly shout Chu Feng’s name.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s name resonated throughout the seventh path like thunder.

Suddenly, Snow Blade Mad Demon pointed at a person and shouted, “Hey, Yue Ling, you actually still have the shame to enter the seventh path? Have you forgotten what you said earlier?” His voice was so loud and clear that it overshadowed everyone’s

cheering.

At that moment, the crowd all noticed that the Heavenly Law Palace's crowd had actually also entered the seventh path. As for the person leading them, it was precisely that Elder Yue Ling who had wrongly accused Chu Feng earlier.

At that moment, the crowd were not only looking at Elder Yue Ling with cold gazes, their gazes were also murderous.

It was precisely because this old man had sowed dissension that they were nearly killed. If it wasn't for Chu Feng, they would all be mutilated corpses now.

Thus, at that moment, the crowd all felt enormous hatred for Elder Yue Ling.

"Little friend Chu Feng, it was this old man who was in the wrong earlier. Please, I hope that you will have the magnanimity of a great man and forgive me this one time," Elder Yue Ling said to Chu Feng in a very embarrassed manner.

Even though he knew that his actions were very unbecoming of his status, he really didn't wish to die. As such, he could only throw away his aged face and act shamelessly.

"Haha..." However, Chu Feng merely lightly smiled at Elder Yue Ling's apology, and simply did not even bother to respond to him. At that moment, Chu Feng did not even bother to speak with Elder Yue Ling.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that, even without him doing anything, Elder Yue Ling would undoubtedly die today, for he had enraged everyone here.

As for Chu Feng, he only wished to be an observer right now. He wanted to see how Yue Ling would be hounded to death by the crowd.

"Yue Ling, have you forgotten what you said earlier? You said that if it were proven that you had wrongly accused little friend

Chu Feng, you would apologize with your life,” Snow Blade Mad Demon said.

“That’s right. No matter what, you are a management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace. You couldn’t possibly be someone who would go back on his word, right?” Elder Huang Guan added.

After that, more and more people began to criticize Elder Yue Ling. In the end, even many of the people from the younger generation began to criticize Elder Yue Ling. As Chu Feng had expected, the crowd began to hound Yue Ling to death.

“Insolent disciples! Who did you think you are to dare criticize our Lord Elder?!” When the younger generation began to criticize Elder Yue Ling, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace were finally unable to bear it any further.

It was one thing for those grand characters to criticize Elder Yue Ling. However, as they were one of the strongest human powers, the Heavenly Law Palace, they would absolutely not allow those of the younger generation to behave atrociously toward them.

“Snap~~~”

Right after that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder reprimanded the younger generation, a cold light suddenly shone. As blood swirled in the air, that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder was chopped in two.

It was the Snow Blade Mad Demon. He had unsheathed his cloth-covered Snow Blade. Not only that, he had killed that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder who had reprimanded the younger generation with a single slash.

“Snow Blade Mad Demon, you, you, you...” Another Heavenly Law Palace’s elder pointed at the Snow Blade Mad Demon with glaring eyes.

Originally, he had wanted to reprimand the Snow Blade Mad Demon. However, he suddenly did not dare to say anything. The reason for that was because the Snow Blade Mad Demon was

emitting an enormous killing intent right now. He was extremely frightening. That Heavenly Law Palace's elder feared that he would also be killed should he reprimand the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

“Heavenly Law Palace, do not bother to threaten me. If I, Snow Blade Mad Demon, feared death, I would not have killed your Heavenly Law Palace's elder.”

“As little friend Chu Feng has saved me, he is my benefactor. Earlier, Yue Ling wrongly accused little friend Chu Feng. This is a matter that I will absolutely not leave as-is. Today... if Yue Ling is to commit suicide, everything will be settled. However, if he doesn't kill himself, I will personally end him. Not only that, I will also make all of the people from the Heavenly Law Palace here accompany him in death,” The Snow Blade Mad Demon said fiercely.

Hearing those words, the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace grew extremely nervous. Many among them turned pale and shivered from fear.

The Snow Blade Mad Demon had always been someone who would do whatever he said. Since he said those words, it was clear that he was prepared to carry them out.

At that moment, no one bothered to speak for Elder Yue Ling anymore. In fact, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace also began to urge their Elder Yue Ling, “Lord Elder, even though we should not say these sorts of words as we are your subordinates, it remains that you are a management elder. As such, you should do what you declared you'd do. Else, you'll only bring shame upon the reputation of our Heavenly Law Palace.”

“Insolent bastard!!!” Hearing those words, Elder Yue Ling nearly vomited blood from anger. Bring shame upon the reputation of the Heavenly Law Palace? It was clear that they feared being implicated by him, and wished for him to kill himself because of

that.

“Good, good, good, you all, great,” Elder Yue Ling pointed to the people from the Heavenly Law Palace with a shaking arm. He truly did not expect that, during the life and death crisis of his life, these people who followed him would actually want him to die.

However, in the end, he did not do anything to his subordinates. After all, it was him who had said that he would kill himself. Furthermore, he knew that he would likely not be able to get out of the Moonlight Maze alive.

However, even so, he was still feeling very unwilling to die. He was unreconciled that he, a management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace, would be hounded to death by Chu Feng, a person from the younger generation.

Thus, he turned his ferocious gaze toward Chu Feng. He pointed at Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng... remember this, I, Yue Ling, was hounded to death by you today. Even if I am to become a ghost, I will not let you get away with it.”

“Sure, I’ll wait for you to come get me,” Chu Feng smiled disdainfully at Yue Ling’s threat.

Hearing what Chu Feng said and seeing his disdainful smile, Yue Ling’s expression immediately changed. It was as if he had woken up from a dream.

Whether or not he would become a ghost after death was one thing. However, as he was no match for Chu Feng when he was alive, even if he were to become a ghost after death, how could he possibly be a match for Chu Feng?

Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. As for world spiritists, they were generally the nemeses of evil spirits and other such things.

Chu Feng was capable of breaking through even the Moonlight Maze’s killing formation. It was sufficient to show how powerful

his world spirit techniques were. As such, even if he were to search for Chu Feng after successfully becoming a ghost, he would only be destined to be tormented by Chu Feng.

At that moment, even he felt himself to be ridiculous. As matters stood, he started to regret. He felt that he should not have tried to deliberately make things difficult on Chu Feng. If he hadn't done that, he would not have been forced to such a state by Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Yue Ling sighed. "Fate, this is fate," After he finished saying those words, 'bang,' Yue Ling's body exploded. He had killed himself.

This Heavenly Law Palace's management elder had died. He had been hounded to death by the crowd.

Even though he was hounded to death by the crowd today, everyone knew very well that his death was all due to Chu Feng.

However, other than the people from the Heavenly Law Palace, there was not a single person who felt sympathy for his death. To the crowd, his death was well deserved.

Chapter 1982 – [Sending Charcoal In Snowy Weather](#)

Even though Yue Ling had committed suicide, the Snow Blade Mad Demon was still very angry. Thus, he shouted, “Trash from the Heavenly Law Palace, get out of my sight immediately. I am disgusted just by looking at you all!”

At that moment, how could the people from the Heavenly Law Palace possibly dare to continue staying here? Like rats, they immediately fled with their tails between their legs.

No one felt any sympathy for the people from the arrogant and proud Heavenly Law Palace acting in such a manner. Instead, they felt very emotionally unrestrained, they all felt that the Heavenly Law Palace’s crowd deserved it.

“Putt~~~”

After the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace left, the Snow Blade Mad Demon suddenly turned around and kneeled to Chu Feng. He said, “Little friend Chu Feng, even though it is Yue Ling who instigated the false accusation against you, I still wrongly accused you. As such, this old man must apologize to you.”

“Chu Feng, please forgive us,” After the Snow Blade Mad Demon knelt, the crowd of twelve million all half kneeled to Chu Feng and requested his forgiveness.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt warmth in his heart. Even though these people had indeed doubted him, Chu Feng only saw it as a pardonable misunderstanding. The fact that they were thankful towards him right now meant that their nature wasn’t bad.

“Everyone, quickly rise. Even though we’re currently safe, the same cannot necessarily be said for the Ancient Era’s Elves,” Chu Feng said.

“The Ancient Era’s Elves? What is going on with them?” Elder

Huang Guan and the others asked.

“The activation of the killing formation means that the people from the Dark Hall are in the Moonlight Maze. The Ancient Era’s Elves have actually also entered the Moonlight Maze. Merely, they did not enter through the same entrance as us.”

“Right now, the Ancient Era’s Elves are likely fighting against the people from the Dark Hall. They are doing so to protect our safety.”

“Thus, at this place, I wish to ask all the seniors who are Martial Emperors whether or not you all might be willing to accompany me to fight against the people of the Dark Hall?” Chu Feng asked.

“Most definitely!!!” The Snow Blade Mad Demon and several other old monsters were the first to respond.

Following closely behind them, Elder Huang Guan and the Underworld Palace’s experts that he led also responded to Chu Feng’s call. Even the Monstrous Beasts responded to Chu Feng’s call.

Chu Feng’s request had been accepted en masse. In the end, practically all of the Martial Emperors present decided to accompany Chu Feng to fight against the people of the Dark Hall.

Seeing the raised arms and the thunder-like voices from the Martial Emperors that responded to his call, Chu Feng felt very gratified. Looking at it now, his decision to put his life on the line earlier had not been in vain.

“Very well, let’s go.”

Thus, Chu Feng led a total of a thousand two hundred and thirty-nine Martial Emperors, an army of Martial Emperors, to provide assistance to the Ancient Era’s Elves.

.....

The Moonlight Maze possessed many entrances. Chu Feng and

the others had all entered by the same entrance. The reason for that was because that was the entrance on the map provided by the Dark Hall.

As for the Ancient Era's Elves and the people from the Dark Hall, they had entered the Moonlight Maze through another entrance. Chu Feng led the army of Martial Emperors into that entrance.

Like all the other entrances, this entrance was also filled with layer upon layer of traps and mechanisms. However, with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, two Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, among them, the crowd was confident, and continued to proceed onwards without being stopped by anything.

Even though nothing had stopped them so far, Chu Feng was feeling more and more uneasy. He felt that the Ancient Era's Elves were most definitely fighting against the Dark Hall.

Finally, a world spirit gate appeared before Chu Feng and the others. After Chu Feng and the others entered that world spirit gate, they arrived in a very vast space.

This place was boundlessly vast. Chu Feng knew that this should be a separate, isolated space. Like the Blood Devouring Killing Formation, this place was enormous.

Furthermore, there was a special sort of power in this place that could interfere with Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes and perception. As such, Chu Feng could only see the things present in his line of sight.

However, after entering this place, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. The reason for that was because a very intense reek of blood immediately assaulted his nostrils upon entering.

As they continued onward towards the source of the bloody smell, Chu Feng soon discovered bloodstains. There were a lot of bloodstains. They practically covered the entire surrounding area. Even though no corpses were found, those bloodstains were

sufficient to show that an intense battle had occurred here.

“Crap!” After seeing those bloodstains personally, Chu Feng grew even more anxious.

They were clearly only at the entrance still. Yet, a battle had already happened here. This meant that the people from the Dark Hall had been prepared. It was very possible that they had been lying in wait for the Ancient Era’s Elves to ambush them.

Furthermore, after the first sign of bloodstains was discovered, the following bloodstains became more and more numerous. Later on, corpses that were met with a violent death began to be found. Not only were there corpses of Ancient Era’s Elves, there were also corpses from the people of the Dark Hall.

After seeing those corpses, Chu Feng’s restless heart grew even more restless. The reason for that was because the corpses of the Ancient Era’s Elves greatly surpassed the number of corpses from the people of the Dark Hall.

In other words, more Ancient Era’s Elves had been killed compared to people from the Dark Hall.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Finally, Chu Feng heard rumbling in the distance. After approaching the source of the rumbling, they discovered Ancient Era’s Elves fighting against the people from the Dark Hall.

Merely, although the number of people from the Dark Hall were not as numerous as the Ancient Era’s Elves, they possessed a very frightening helper.

The Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts.

More than a dozen Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts were with the people from the Dark Hall. They all possessed cultivations of Martial Emperors, and ranged from rank three to rank four Martial Emperor.

Those dozen-plus frightening Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were currently being used by the people of the Dark Hall, and were attacking the Ancient Era's Elves.

Originally, the Ancient Era's Elves had possessed a greater overall strength than that of the Dark Hall, as they had possessed greater numbers.

However, due to the assistance of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, the Ancient Era's Elves were at an absolute disadvantage, and had suffered disastrous casualties.

"All of you, die!"

Upon seeing the people from the Dark Hall, Chu Feng flared with rage. He brandished his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader and attacked. At the same time, Elder Huang Guan, Snow Blade Mad Demon and the other experts also unleashed their attacks.

Even though the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were very strong, the strongest of them were only rank four Martial Emperors. As such, how could they possibly be a match for Chu Feng and the others? In merely a short instant, all of the people from the Dark Hall had been killed.

Everything had happened too quickly. Before the Ancient Era's Elves could respond, they discovered that the people from the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were all killed.

When they noticed what had happened, they were immediately struck dumb. They discovered that Chu Feng had saved them. Furthermore, there were actually so many human and monstrous beast experts in addition to Chu Feng. They were all Martial Emperors; there were over a thousand Martial Emperors.

These thousand plus Martial Emperors all followed behind Chu Feng like his subordinates. Among them were renowned individuals like the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

This scene truly came as an enormous shock to the Ancient Era's

Elves. For a moment, they were completely stunned and confused as to what was happening.

“Seniors, where are Lord Luokong and the others?” Chu Feng asked two old men. These two old men both possessed a cultivation of rank four Martial Emperor. They were the two strongest individuals among this group of Ancient Era’s Elves.

Chu Feng had met them when he met with Lord Luokong earlier. Thus, he felt that they should know the whereabouts of Lord Luokong and the others.

“Little friend Chu Feng, if you are to continue onwards toward this direction, you will be able to find Lord Luokong and the others,” An old man with a scar on the left side of his face said.

“Thank you,” Chu Feng clasped his fist to express his thanks. He did not bother with superfluous words, and immediately turned to leave. The thousand-plus Martial Emperors followed after Chu Feng and left too.

As they looked to Chu Feng leading all those Martial Emperors away, the two old rank four Martial Emperor stood there stunned. At that moment, their hearts were feeling extremely complicated.

The names of these two old men were Mo Xu and Mo Wen. They had been tasked with guarding Xian Yuyin before. They had accompanied Xian Yuyin and seen Chu Feng at the Gong Ba Plains.

Actually, when they heard that Chu Feng had killed Xian Yuyin, the two of them had possessed some resentment towards Chu Feng. Regardless of how much of a scoundrel Xian Yuyin was, it remained that he was an Ancient Era’s Elf. Furthermore, the two of them had protected Xian Yuyin the entire time before. Thus, they possessed at least some special sentiment toward him.

However, at that moment, the resentment they felt for Chu Feng was being uncontrollably erased from their hearts.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had saved them

earlier. Furthermore, they could tell that Chu Feng had most likely also saved the crowd that had been tricked into the Moonlight Maze by the Dark Hall in addition to them. In fact, he had even managed to convince those people to help them fight against the Dark Hall.

All of those accomplishments surpassed their imaginations. If Xian Yuyin were to be compared with Chu Feng, he would end up being worth nothing before Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because every aspect of Chu Feng surpassed Xian Yuyin.

Even though they possessed special sentiments toward Xian Yuyin, they both knew that they must let go of their prejudice against Chu Feng in the current situation. They, the Ancient Era's Elves, needed Chu Feng.

In fact, the battle today would very likely be reversed because of Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng had only brought a thousand-plus individuals with him, those thousand-plus individuals were all Martial Emperors. With that many Martial Emperors, what Chu Feng was doing was most definitely akin to sending charcoal in snowy weather to the Ancient Era's Elves here.

Providing help in times of need.

Chapter 1983 – Complete Annihilation?

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Flames reached the skies and rumbling echoed out from all directions in the Moonlight Maze. From time to time, screams would be heard. Then, someone would fall to the ground.

The main army of the Ancient Era’s Elves was gathered in this place.

They were fighting against the Dark Hall here. However, just like the small squadron that was separated from the main army, their main army was also suffering disastrous casualties.

It was not that the Ancient Era’s Elves were weaker than the Dark Hall. Rather, it was that the people of the Dark Hall possessed the assistance of several hundred Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. These several hundred ferocious beasts ranged from rank three Martial Emperor to rank six Martial Emperor. Existences as powerful as them were truly too frightening.

However, even with that being the case, the Ancient Era’s Elves were still fighting with their all. The reason for that was because they would only be able to survive should they fight. If they didn’t fight, their casualties would be even more disastrous.

“Hahahaha, Luokong, you’re not up to much either.”

At that moment, the person who was fighting against Lord Luokong was an eccentric-sounding yet charming-looking man. This person... was none other than the World Devastator Immortal.

The two men both held Imperial Armaments and were fighting each other intensely. The two of them were fighting far away from the rest of the people.

The reason for that was because their strength was truly too strong, and surpassed everyone by far. The aftermath of their

battle, those energy ripples, would bring fatal harm to anyone from either side that got too close.

Thus, they distanced themselves from the others. Only by doing so would they be able to guarantee the safety of the others.

“World Devastator, don’t you act arrogant. Today, it is either your death or mine,” Lord Luokong had an angry expression on his face. He was filled with the will to battle.

The reason for that was because the Ancient Era’s Elves had been ambushed by the people of the Dark Hall right after entering this place. Furthermore, the people from the Dark Hall possessed the assistance of the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. Even though the number of Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts was not numerous, only several hundred, they were all extremely powerful.

Thus, from the very beginning, the Ancient Era’s Elves were in a disadvantaged situation, thus causing the formation’s core which they had wanted to protect to be seized by the people of the Dark Hall from the very beginning. As such, they had failed to prevent the people from the Dark Hall from activating the killing formation.

Not only had they failed to keep the people from the Dark Hall from activating the killing formation, there were also indications that they’d end up being completely annihilated by the Dark Hall.

“No, no, no, you’re wrong. There is only a single possible outcome today. Other than the people from our Dark Hall, everyone else will die. Tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk...”

The World Devastator Immortal was extremely arrogant. He felt that since he had successfully activated the killing formation, all those people who were lured into the Moonlight Maze would have already died.

And now, as long as the Ancient Era’s Elves were eliminated, they would have successfully accomplished their goal.

As for eliminating the Ancient Era's Elves, the World Devastator Immortal was absolutely confident in being able to do so.

"You're boasting shamelessly," Lord Luokong shouted angrily. Then, he increased the intensity of his attacks towards the World Devastator Immortal.

"Boasting shamelessly? Look at your surroundings. How long can your Ancient Era's Elves continue to last?" The World Devastator Immortal mocked.

Hearing those words, Lord Luokong rapidly distanced himself from the World Devastator Immortal. Then, he cast his gaze to the surrounding battlefield. Upon seeing the condition his people were in, his aged face started to twitch. Even his heart began to tremble.

Devastation. Disastrous devastation. Even though he had not led the most elite of the Ancient Era's Elves with him here, he had brought a very powerful army with him.

Yet, over ninety-five percent of that army of Ancient Era's Elves had been killed. Practically all those below the Martial Emperor level of cultivation had been killed.

As for the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, their casualties numbered less than half. Currently, the disparity between the two forces was growing wider and wider. There was truly no way for them to emerge from this victorious.

"Bastard, this old man will definitely destroy you today!" Lord Luokong shouted furiously. His surging killing intent shattered space itself.

Then, Lord Luokong's clothes fluttered in the air as layers of deep green light began to emit from him. The Imperial Armament that he held in his hand grew even more powerful. Layer upon layer of visible martial power swept forth toward the World Devastator Immortal.

He knew that he was the only person capable of reversing the

situation on the battlefield right now. As long as he could defeat the World Devastator Immortal, he would be able to bring victory to the Ancient Era's Elves.

Thinking these thoughts, Lord Luokong's attacks grew increasingly ferocious.

He hacked downward at the World Devastator Immortal repeatedly, and caused the sky to darken. The might of his attacks was truly heaven-defying.

However, even with that being the case, Lord Luokong was simply unable to injure the World Devastator Immortal.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk, even if you tire yourself to death, you will not be able to defeat me," A mocking smile appeared on the World Devastator Immortal's face.

His appearance seemed as if he was toying with Lord Luokong. It was as if he could defeat Lord Luokong whenever he wanted.

The reason why he hadn't done so was precisely because he wanted to torment Lord Luokong. He wanted Lord Luokong to watch as each and every one of his clansmen were killed before him; he wanted him to feel so much pain that he wished that he was dead instead.

"Father, this is fun, so fun, so very fun! Hahahaha!" Right at that moment, a shout sounded from afar.

Hearing that shout, the World Devastator Immortal cast his gaze toward its source. Then, a satisfied smile appeared on his face. The reason for that was because another battle was being waged in the direction of that voice.

Although that battle was nowhere on par with his battle against Lord Luokong, it was definitely the most intense battle apart from his own.

There were three figures in that battle.

One of them was an Ancient Era's Elves' Protector. That Elf Protector was very strong, and most definitely one of the strongest Elf Protectors. He possessed a cultivation of rank seven Martial Emperor.

As for the other person, he was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. As for the third person, he was wearing clothes from the Dark Hall while not wearing a mask.

That fellow was two meters tall, and possessed a body covered in muscles. He was more robust than an ox, more robust than a tiger.

However, on that terrifyingly robust body was a soft, tender and fair-skinned youth's face. His disproportionate body was extremely uncomfortable to look at. At a glance, he looked like a monster transformed into a monstrous beast.

As for this monster-like fellow, he was the World Devastator Immortal's son. His name was [Luan Jie](#).

Although this Luan Jie was not as old as his father, he was also an old monster who had already lived for several thousand years.

He was extremely strong. Even though he was clearly also just a rank seven Martial Emperor, he was able to contend against that Elf Protector and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal by himself. Furthermore, he held an absolute superiority over them.

"Hahahaha, the Ancient Era's Elves are all trash. They're simply unable to withstand a single blow."

"The Weaponry Refinement Immortal is also trash. Two trash Martial Emperors are no match against me even when fighting two on one. You are all trash. Hahaha!"

The World Devastator Immortal's son was mocking and ridiculing the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector as he fought against them. His absolute superiority against his opponents was vividly evident.

"Luan Jie, play slowly. It'll be too boring if you are play them to

death too quickly,” The World Devastator Immortal said.

“Bastard!” Hearing those words, Lord Luokong started to gnash his teeth in anger. His veins were bulging all over his aged body. His berserk-like killing intent had shattered the surrounding space.

However, even with that being the case, he was still unable to do anything to the World Devastator Immortal. He was shocked to discover that as he increased his strength, the World Devastator Immortal would subsequently increase his strength too. Forever, the two men were at a standstill. Lord Luokong was simply unable to defeat the World Devastator Immortal.

This caused Luo Luokong to become extremely furious and uneasy. The reason for that was because this was sufficient to prove that the World Devastator Immortal was not fighting against him with his actual strength. Like his son, he was merely toying with him.

This sort of conclusion caused Lord Luokong to become discouraged. He thought to himself, ‘Could it be that all of our Ancient Era’s Elves are going to die in this place today? Are we to die at the hands of the people from the Dark Hall again?’

Luan Jie -> Chaotic World.

Chapter 1984 – The Reversal Of The Battle

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Lord Luokong was about to despair, the sound of a strong wind sounded from afar. Black clouds surged forth. Contained within the black clouds was a majestic and boundless oppressive might. Furthermore, that oppressive might was rapidly approaching them.

Practically everyone fighting sensed that oppressive might. Upon turning their gazes towards the direction of the oppressive might, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously. They were all stunned.

That black cloud was composed of Martial Emperors, over a thousand Martial Emperors. They were Martial Emperors of all different levels of cultivation.

Not to mention rank one, rank two, rank three and rank four Martial Emperors, there were even many rarely-seen rank five and rank six Martial Emperors.

In fact, some among them were people that even Lord Luokong knew. They were grand characters whose names were already renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism, they were old monsters who had long distanced themselves from matters of the Holy Land of Martialism.

Most shockingly, at that moment, the person that stood at the forefront of that group of Martial Emperors was a young man. His appearance was one that everyone recognized. He was Chu Feng.

Upon seeing Chu Feng and those Martial Emperors, regardless of whether it was the Ancient Era’s Elves or the people from the Dark Hall, they were all incomparably shocked.

‘Chu Feng? Why would he be here? Furthermore, he has brought so many Martial Emperors with him? Weren’t those old monsters

the ones that entered the Moonlight Maze earlier? How did they all get into this place? Exactly what is going on?’

‘Could it be that we failed to successfully activate the killing formation? No, that shouldn’t be the case. We clearly activated the killing formation.’

After a moment of shock, the World Devastator Immortal turned his gaze towards the distance. Upon seeing what was approaching, his expression immediately changed. He started to gnash his teeth in anger. Then, he shouted, “The killing formation has been broken through?! Who did that?!”

Hearing those words, everyone turned their gaze to the formation’s core. It was only then that they discovered that there were changes to that formation’s core. It currently looked like nothing more than a pile of stagnant water. This phenomenon could only mean one thing — that the killing formation had been destroyed, and that the formation’s core had already lost its effectiveness.

“Hahahaha, Da, Da, Da, Dark Hall’s tra, trash, shi, shiver in fear. Your kill, kill, killing formation has been broken thr, through by I, your da, da, daddy,” At that moment, Wang Qiang who stood beside Chu Feng stepped forward.

“What? That young man was the one who did that? Who is that young man? Why am I unable to see through his cultivation?” Everyone turned to Wang Qiang.

“Cough, cough...” At that moment, both the Snow Blade Mad Demon and Elder Huang Guan coughed and took fierce glances at Wang Qiang.

Suddenly, someone among the crowd said with a loud voice, “It is little friend Chu Feng who broke through the killing formation and saved our lives. Dark Hall, you all are truly ruthless. You actually wanted to massacre us. If it wasn’t for little friend Chu Feng, we would all be at the [Yellow Springs](#) now.”

“That’s right. Dark Hall, you all are simply devoid of conscience, worse than pigs and dogs!” Following that, practically everyone started to rain curses upon the Dark Hall.

The words spoken by these Martial Emperors caused Lord Luokong, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others to be wild with joy. Sure enough, they had not misjudged Chu Feng. Chu Feng had actually accomplished it.

Furthermore, what Chu Feng had accomplished was even better than they had anticipated. Not only did he rescue the crowd, he had also managed to bring those experts here to provide assistance to them. This was truly too amazing. Even Lord Luokong would not necessarily be able to rally this many supporters.

“Brat, it’s actually you who meddled in my matter?” The World Devastator Immortal’s mouth was raised into an ice-cold smile.

“I have come here precisely to take revenge for last time,” Chu Feng said in a very calm manner.

“Revenge?” The World Devastator Immortal smiled disdainfully. Then, he looked to the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others, “Since you all managed to escape, I will give you all a chance. As long as you choose to join our Dark Hall, I will guarantee you all glory and splen...”

“Pah! You damned sissy. You tried to kill us earlier. Yet now, you want to win us over with bribes? Do you take us for fools?” However, before the World Devastator Immortal could finish his words, the Snow Blade Mad Demon interrupted him with an insult.

As the Snow Blade Mad Demon held great seniority in the Holy Land of Martialism, he naturally knew the World Devastator Immortal. However, at the same time, he was not afraid of the World Devastator Immortal.

“World Devastator Immortal, so you were also someone from the

Dark Hall. Your title of Immortal is truly in vain. You have truly disappointed us.”

“That’s right. After leaving this place, I will definitely spread this matter about, and have your reputation become completely ruined. I will make you go down in history for your infamy,” Following that, more and more people began to insult the World Devastator Immortal.

“You bunch of trash! You all are simply courting death!”

“Did you really think that you mob of trash would be able to contend against me?”

“I am able to completely destroy all of you using only one hand,” Being insulted by the crowd, the World Devastator Immortal’s complexion turned green. Then, he raised his hand, and the Imperial Armament that he held immediately started to overflow with golden light. He swept his Immortal Armament and unleashed a slash toward Chu Feng and the others.

At the moment when the World Devastator Immortal unleashed his attack, everyone started to frown. Their expressions all changed. Even Chu Feng reacted in such a manner.

The World Devastator Immortal was a rank eight Martial Emperor, and truly powerful. Indeed, he possessed the strength to massacre all of them in an instant.

Although Chu Feng was capable of easily killing a rank six Martial Emperor, he could not contend against a rank seven Martial Emperor, much less a rank eight Martial Emperor.

“Woosh~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

However, another slash appeared the moment right after the World Devastator Immortal’s slash shot forth. That slash actually managed to block the World Devastator Immortal’s slash.

It was Lord Luokong. He had intercepted the World Devastator Immortal's slash.

“World Devastator, now is not the time for you to be distracted.”

Lord Luokong smiled coldly. Not only did he manage to intercept the slash that the World Devastator Immortal had sent towards the crowd, he had also seized the opportunity to unleash several ferocious attacks at the World Devastator Immortal. Each and every one of his attacks were fatal.

In this sort of situation, the World Devastator Immortal started to frown. He did not dare to act carelessly. He hurriedly wielded his Imperial Armament and confronted Lord Luokong's attacks with all his strength. He simply did not have the peace of mind to bother with Chu Feng and the others.

At that moment, the World Devastator Immortal wanted to break free from Lord Luokong as quickly as possible. As such, he was going all out. The reason for that was because he knew that the appearance of Chu Feng and the others was not a good sign for them.

After all, Chu Feng's side possessed several rank six Martial Emperors. As for those below rank six Martial Emperor, they were numerous. All of those fellows were old monsters. They were people who would not bother with the affairs of the Holy Land of Martialism, and had only been attracted to the Moonlight Maze by the Immortality Peaches. However, without a doubt, all of them possessed strength that one could not look down upon.

With the assistance of those old monsters, the Dark Hall also ended up feeling enormous pressure. Even though they possessed the assistance of several hundred Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, they would not necessarily be able to hold a superior position against the reinforcements Chu Feng had brought with him.

However, when Lord Luokong and the others saw the appearance of Chu Feng's thousand-plus Martial Emperors, their morale

increased enormously. In this sort of situation, Lord Luokong's strength actually increased. As such, it had become impossible for the World Devastator Immortal to defeat Lord Luokong in a short amount of time.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, "Everyone, there should be no need for me to say this. Spare no one from the Dark Hall!"

"Kill!!!!"

Once Chu Feng shouted those words, the thousand-plus Martial Emperors behind him unleashed their killing intent explosively and charged towards the people from the Dark Hall and those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

These thousand-plus Martial Emperors were all very clever. Not only did they possess strong power, they were also very experienced in battle. As such, they knew how to fight in a melee.

Even though they were fighting together, they did not attack blindly. Instead, they went to search for those with strength equal to their own to attack, for only by doing so would they be able to reduce the pressure on the Ancient Era's Elves and their own casualties in the most efficient manner.

In fact, they accomplished that feat flawlessly.

The Yellow Springs is the Chinese equivalent of the underworld.

Chapter 1985 – Emergence Of The Moon Demon

As for Chu Feng, he specifically targeted the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. The reason for that was because he knew that the people from the Dark Hall were only able to suppress the Ancient Era's Elves because of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

As for those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, they were very powerful. Especially those rank six Martial Emperor Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, ordinary rank six Martial Emperors were no match for them. However, Chu Feng possessed confidence in being able to kill them.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng collided against that bunch of fierce Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. Furthermore, he was fighting against many by himself.

“Little friend Chu Feng, be careful. Those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts are exceptionally fierce,” Seeing that Chu Feng had challenged that many Ancient Era's ferocious beasts by himself, the Ancient Era's Elves started to worry about Chu Feng's safety. The reason for that was because they had suffered numerous casualties from those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

The Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were different from the ferocious beasts in the Holy Land of Martialism. Although they did not possess any intelligence, they were equipped with fighting techniques and special powers. They were simply akin to natural born wild fighting demons and were extremely difficult to take care of.

“Roar~~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng began fighting against the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, several Ancient Era's ferocious beasts began

to emit miserable cries as they were killed by Chu Feng.

Suddenly, not to mention the people from the Dark Hall, even the Ancient Era's Elves who were worried for Chu Feng were struck dumb.

It was one thing for Chu Feng to easily kill rank four and rank five Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. However, of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts that he had just killed, one was a rank six Martial Emperor.

At that moment, Chu Feng did not hold back his strength, and had instead gone all-out. Thus, everyone managed to sense Chu Feng's actual cultivation and his heaven-defying battle power.

Furthermore, the weapon in Chu Feng's hand was an Imperial Armament. However, that Imperial Armament was exceptionally powerful. Furthermore, why was its shape so familiar?

"Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. That Imperial Armament little friend Chu Feng holds in his hand, could it be that legendary Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader?" After observing Chu Feng's weapon, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal cried out in shock.

"Weaponry Refinement Immortal, you are correct. What little friend Chu Feng holds in his hand is indeed the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader used by the Beast Emperor," The Snow Blade Mad Demon said with a loud voice.

"Heavens!" After hearing what the Snow Blade Mad Demon said, many people sucked in a mouthful of cold air uncontrollably. They did not expect that Chu Feng would actually possess a legendary Imperial Armament.

Suddenly, no one was worried for Chu Feng's safety anymore. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's strength had increased. He was currently a rank two Martial Emperor. Using his special lightning power, he had increased his cultivation to rank four Martial Emperor. Adding on his heaven-defying battle power

capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, Chu Feng was extremely frightening.

Furthermore, he actually possessed a legendary Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. With that, Chu Feng's strength was simply overwhelmingly heaven-defying.

Likely, there would not be anyone underneath rank seven Martial Emperor who could defeat Chu Feng. Not to mention bringing over a thousand Martial Emperors with him, it was likely that Chu Feng himself would be able to turn the battle around.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk. That little bastard Chu Feng is quite interesting," At that moment, the World Devastator Immortal's son was also focused on Chu Feng. A cold smile appeared on his face.

"Kill Chu Feng!" Seeing that Chu Feng was wantonly killing the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts, the people from the Dark Hall grew anxious. Those rank seven Martial Emperors and rank six Martial Emperors among them all began to think of ways to escape their own battles to kill Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, the Ancient Era's Elves' peak experts refused to give them a chance to break free. Earlier, it was them who had been curbing the Ancient Era's Elves' peak experts the entire time. This was what led to the others from the Dark Hall being able to massacre the rest of the Ancient Era's Elves with the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

And now, it was finally their turn to massacre the crowd from the Dark Hall. Yet, these Dark Hall's experts actually wanted to rescue the others? Naturally, the Ancient Era's Elves' experts would not give them the chance to do so.

Suddenly, Luan Jie shouted excitedly, "All of you, stand down. That Chu Feng is mine. I'll take care of him myself." Then, he turned into a ray of light and flew toward Chu Feng.

"Where are you escaping to?!" Seeing that, the Weaponry

Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector hurriedly charged forth to stop Luan Jie with their Imperial Armaments.

The two of them knew very well how strong Luan Jie was. Even though Chu Feng had become extremely powerful, he was still definitely not a match for Luan Jie. They could not allow Luan Jie to approach Chu Feng.

“Two persistent fellows. Did the two of you really think that you could stop me? I’ll kill you two first,” Luan Jie revealed a ferocious gaze. He shouted, and then purple light began to emit from his body. In an instant, violent wind began to surge with lightning striking about. Soon, a purple spear appeared in the sky.

That spear came striking down from above the moment it appeared and brought an enormous amount of pressure to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector. It turned out that Luan Jie was actually a Divine Body. Furthermore, his Divine Power was extremely frightening.

It could be said that his Divine Power was the most frightening one that Chu Feng had seen so far.

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

However, right at that moment, from the sky, from all around and even from deep underground, an ear-piercing snarl was heard.

Once that voice was heard, everyone’s bodies started to shiver. They felt as if their hair was standing on end. It was truly too frightening. That voice was truly too frightening. It sounded like the snarl of a malicious spirit, and brought a great sense of intimidation to the crowd.

“Moon Demon, the Moon Demon is awake!” Suddenly, the World Devastator Immortal cried out in alarm and revealed an overjoyed expression.

“Moon Demon? Why would the Moon Demon be awake? The killing formation was clearly broken through and destroyed.”

“No, even if the people that entered the killing formation escaped, a lot of Ancient Era’s Elves and people from the Dark Hall have died. The aura of blood from those people was sufficient to draw out the Moon Demon.”

“Crap! The Moon Demon has emerged. This is bad!” At that moment, Lord Luokong began to frown deeply.

Even Chu Feng revealed an expression of unease. The reason for that was because that snarl sounded like a ferocious spirit’s snarl, and was filled with killing intent. That was the most frightening sound that Chu Feng had ever heard.

Chu Feng felt a premonition that the appearance of the Moon Demon likely signified that all of them would have to suffer a calamity, for that Moon Demon was a very frightening existence.

“Luan Jie, what are you standing there for? Quickly, go,” Right at that moment, the World Devastation Immortal spoke to his son with a stern voice.

“Rest assured father, when have I ever disappointed you?” Luan Jie smiled complacently. At that moment, he was feeling extremely excited.

As purple light flickered in his eyes, that enormous purple spear turned into two spears that swept respectively at the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector did not dare to be careless. They both clenched tightly onto the Imperial Armaments which they held and unleashed devastating Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to receive Luan Jie’s attack.

It was not that the two of them were making a big fuss over a minor issue. Rather, Luan Jie was truly not someone to be looked down upon. If they were to be careless, they would be the ones killed by the spears formed by Luan Jie’s Divine Power.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills used with Imperial Armaments collided with the two spears formed with Divine Power. Violet energy ripples surged violently from their collision. Many people that were very far away from them were also implicated.

“Crap!” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s expression took a huge change.

He was shocked to discover that Luan Jie had disappeared after they blocked his attacks. It turned out that Luan Jie’s attack from earlier was only bait. His intention was precisely to cast them off of him.

After discovering that Luan Jie had disappeared, the first thing that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector did was rush to Chu Feng. They were most afraid of Luan Jie attacking Chu Feng.

However, after they arrived beside Chu Feng, they were surprised to discover that Luan Jie had not attacked Chu Feng. Instead, he had disappeared just like that.

Chapter 1986 – Dying Together

“Senior, Luan Jie has most likely gone to find the Moon Demon,” Chu Feng said.

“Find the Moon Demon? Could it be that they really have a way to control the Moon Demon and make the Moon Demon be of use to them?” Hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal revealed an expression of disbelief.

“Even though it is very unbelievable, I’m afraid that would most likely be the case. I am able to faintly sense the direction of the Moon Demon. Earlier, I noticed that the direction in which Luan Jie’s aura disappeared is also the same direction in which the Moon Demon is at.”

“He has most definitely gone to find the Moon Demon. Furthermore, don’t forget, they have managed to even control the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts that do not possess any intelligence,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. The Dark Hall knows a lot of the Holy Land of Martialism’s secrets. Their knowledge is even greater than the Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“Furthermore, Luan Jie is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist like his father. He is also one of the most exceptional geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“It was only because his father ended up hiding him away that no one knows exactly how powerful he has become now.”

“Today, he reappeared again, and his cultivation is already capable of contending against the two of us. I’m afraid that his world spirit techniques will have already surpassed my own,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I’m afraid that we’ll have to trouble you with leading us there. We absolutely cannot allow that Luan Jie to

have his way,” The Elf Protector said.

As for Chu Feng, he swept his gaze over the current situation of the battlefield. After discovering that although the Ancient Era’s Elves had not obtained an absolute superiority, they were no longer in a disadvantageous state against the Dark Hall, and were even holding a certain superiority over them. Chu Feng felt relieved.

Thus, Chu Feng’s body shifted, and he began to fly towards the direction that Luan Jie had headed to.

In response, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector also followed closely after Chu Feng.

“Ahhhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

At that moment, the Moon Demon’s savage, malicious-spirit-like roars were continuously resonating from all around. It was as if the Moon Demon was present all over the Moonlight Maze. However, Chu Feng was able to accurately determine the location of the Moon Demon.

Although there appeared to be three people chasing after Luan Jie, it was actually five people. The reason for that was because Su Rou and Su Mei had been behind the Weaponry Refinement Immortal the entire time. They were protected by a defensive barrier created with many treasures.

That defensive formation barrier was very powerful. Even if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was injured, that defensive barrier would still remain undamaged. From that, it could be seen how concerned for Su Rou and Su Mei the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was.

“Wuuu~~~”

Suddenly, Su Rou and Su Mei’s expressions turned ugly, and they revealed painful expressions.

“Lil Rou, Lil Mei, what happened?”

Even though Chu Feng was leading the group, after he heard Su Rou and Su Mei's pained voices, he immediately turned around and arrived behind the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to Su Rou and Su Mei's side.

"Chu Feng, we, we are fine," Su Rou said as she resisted the pain. However, she was clearly drenched in cold sweat from the pain, and her complexion had also turned pale.

At that moment, Chu Feng discovered that a blue light and a red light were shining from Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies respectively. It was the Fire and Ice Pearls that were causing their grievance.

"With how you are now, how could you two be fine?" Chu Feng realized that it was the Fire and Ice Pearls that were tormenting Su Rou and Su Mei. They were starting to lose control over the Fire and Ice Pearls.

"Crap! The Fire and Ice Pearls are the possessions of the Moon Demon. It is most definitely the appearance of the Moon Demon that has caused the Fire and Ice Pearls to become unstable. Little friend Chu Feng, we must extract the Fire and Ice Pearls immediately. Otherwise, I fear that Su Rou and Su Mei might be met with fatal danger," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said in a very worried manner.

As he spoke, he released his defensive barrier around Su Rou and Su Mei and released them.

"Seniors, the location of the Moon Demon is still the same. If you continue straight in this direction, you should be able to find the Moon Demon," Chu Feng pointed ahead.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you're planning to stay behind by yourself?" The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked in surprise.

"This matter is extremely urgent. We cannot disregard Luan Jie. Even though we do not know what sort of method he might have, he most definitely came prepared."

“Right now, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts have been controlled by them. If even the Moon Demon is controlled by them, even the Ancient Era’s Elves would not be a match for the Dark Hall. Thus, we absolutely cannot allow them to have their way,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Little friend Chu Feng, in that case, we’ll hand this place to you,” The Ancient Era’s Elves’ Protector knew how serious the situation was. Thus, he did not hesitate and immediately chased after Luan Jie.

“Little friend Chu Feng, these items will be able to help you,” As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, he handed a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng. Contained within that Cosmos Sack were all sorts of precious materials and treasures for world spirit techniques.

Furthermore, before the Weaponry Refinement Immortal left, he sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, the strength of the Fire and Ice Pearls is boundless. Su Rou and Su Mei have been unable to unleash the true strength of the two pearls this entire time.”

“From the influence of the Moon Demon, they have already lost control of the Fire and Ice Pearls. As such, extracting them will not be that easy, and might even implicate you.”

“Although there are some words that this old man should not say, when considering the general situation, I hope that you can save yourself during a critical moment.”

“The reason for that is because the Holy Land of Martialism needs you right now,” When those words entered Chu Feng’s ears, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had already disappeared.

His intention was very clear. The Fire and Ice Pearls could go out of control at any moment. Should they really go out of control, they would unleash their true power, a power capable of bringing about destruction to the world. Not to mention Su Rou and Su Mei, even Chu Feng would be killed by their powers.

However, as Chu Feng was an outstanding Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he would be able to detect the moment before the Fire and Ice Pearls went out of control. Thus, what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal wanted to tell Chu Feng was to give up on Su Rou and Su Mei and escape by himself should he discover that the Fire and Ice Pearls were about to go out of control.

However, how could Chu Feng possibly give up on his lovers? Even though he knew that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had told him those words with good intentions, he decided to completely ignore those words.

“Chu Feng, I am able to sense that the pearl in me is extremely unstable. An uncontrollable power is bubbling out. We will not be able to contain the pearls anymore. Quickly, leave us. Do not worry about us,” Su Rou grabbed Chu Feng’s hand and said in a very reluctant manner.

“Big brother Chu Feng, listen to big sister. Quickly, leave us,” Su Mei also urged Chu Feng to leave. When she said those words, she was unable to control herself as tears began to form in her eyes.

Evidently, these two girls were both able to tell that the Fire and Ice Pearls were about to go out of control. Thus, they wanted Chu Feng to leave.

“Don’t say nonsense like that. When the Fire and Ice Pearls appeared, I was unable to protect you two. I hope that I will be able to do so this time around,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he disregarded everything that Su Rou and Su Mei tried to tell him.

Right now, Chu Feng only wanted to accomplish one thing. That was to wholeheartedly devote himself to setting up his spirit formation so that he could extract the Fire and Ice Pearls from Su Rou and Su Mei safely.

With Chu Feng’s current world spirit techniques, it was actually a very simple task for him to remove the Fire and Ice Pearls from

Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies.

Merely, due to the fact that the Fire and Ice Pearls were on the verge of going berserk, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless in the slightest. He had to proceed with extreme caution.

“Buzz~~~”

However, even with that being the case, the Fire and Ice Pearls suddenly emitted dazzling fiery and icy radiances. Following that, they began to emit a fatal aura.

Chu Feng had already managed to detect that the Fire and Ice Pearls were on the verge of going out of control and their powers were about to explode. Once that happened, everyone within a perimeter of a thousand miles, including even Martial Emperor-level experts, would likely be killed. Those within ten thousand miles would definitely suffer injuries.

With Chu Feng's current speed, he was able to escape from the perimeter of the Fire and Ice Pearl's eruption. However, how could he possibly escape? How could he possibly disregard his lovers?

Chapter 1987 – Virtuous Thought, Evil Thought

“Eggy, I’m sorry. Due to my stubbornness, you’ll be forced to die with me.”

“Merely, I truly cannot abandon Lil Rou and Lil Mei,” Chu Feng did not escape. Instead, he hugged Su Rou and Su Mei tightly.

As for Su Rou and Su Mei, the two of them also managed to sense the changes in the Fire and Ice Pearls. Seeing that Chu Feng did not leave, they stopped urging him to leave. Instead, like him, they also tightly hugged Chu Feng. As silent tears were shed, they buried their little faces into Chu Feng’s bosom.

To them, if they were to die like this, it would be worth it.

It was the same for Chu Feng. He was willing to die together with his lovers.

Merely, at this moment, Chu Feng was still feeling very complicated. His heart was filled with the sensation of falling short and letting down someone.

After all, Chu Feng was not alone. Contained within his world spirit space was Eggy. He possessed the means to release Eggy from his body.

However, as Eggy was currently asleep, even if Chu Feng were to release her, Eggy would not be able to escape. Thus, Eggy was destined to die together with them. That was the reason why Chu Feng felt very guilty and ashamed.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt that his awareness started to grow fuzzy. When he looked to his surroundings, he was shocked to discover that, even though he remained where he previously was, Su Rou and Su Mei who he’d been hugging had

disappeared. Furthermore, a vast white mist covered his surroundings and blocked his line of sight. He was unable to see more than a distance of ten meters.

“You’re actually not afraid of death?” Right at that moment, a woman’s voice sounded from the thick mist.

Turning toward the voice, Chu Feng saw a woman slowly walking toward him from the vast mist. That woman was wearing a snow-white skirt, and had a very beautiful appearance. Furthermore, she gave off an extremely extraordinary aura. A celestial fairy. From merely a single glance, Chu Feng had the sensation that the woman before him not only appeared like a celestial fairy, rather, her incomparable aura was simply that of a celestial fairy.

“Are you the Moon Immortal?” Chu Feng asked. Chu Feng felt that the person before him was very likely the Moon Immortal. In other words, the legendary Moon Demon.

“Answer my question. Are you not afraid of death?” That woman asked. Even though she looked like a celestial fairy, her tone was extremely ice-cold and without a trace of emotion.

“I am. Who wouldn’t be afraid of death? I still have a lot of things that I need to finish. I naturally do not wish to die,” Chu Feng said with a smile. What he said was the truth.

Upon hearing Chu Feng’s words, that woman’s long, shapely eyebrows narrowed slightly. A trace of misgiving flashed through her eyes. She asked, “Since you’re afraid of death, why didn’t you escape?”

“Even though I’m afraid of death, I cannot disregard my lovers. Since I cannot protect them, I can only accompany them in death,” The smile on Chu Feng’s face did not decrease. However, when he said those words, he revealed an expression of ease.

Even though Chu Feng did not wish to die, he was delighted to

die alongside his lovers.

Chu Feng's words caused that woman's expression to turn slightly stiff. Then, she gently lifted her snow-white sleeve.

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, the earth started to quake violently and a crimson gate rose from the ground. That gate appeared before Chu Feng.

That gate was a hundred meters tall. After it opened up, overflowing crimson light filled the gate. Anguished wailing sounded from within the gate nonstop. There were countless silhouettes being tormented within that gate. It was an appalling sight of devastation.

“Since you treasure your lovers so much, I'll give you a chance. As long as you enter that gate, your soul will be subjected to torment. You will die after your soul is completely refined by me. However, that process will bring you so much pain that you will wish you were dead.”

“However, as for the two of them, they will be able to continue living because of you,” That woman pointed to the purgatory-like gate.

“Are you serious about this?” Chu Feng asked.

“Other than trusting me, you possess no other choice,” The woman said.

“In that case, senior, thank you,” Chu Feng said.

“Why thank me?” The woman was confused by Chu Feng thanking her.

“Originally, we were all going to die. However, senior is willing to spare my lovers' lives. Naturally, I have to thank you,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Then, his feet started to move. Soon, he leapt forward. Like an arrow that was just shot from a bow, he jumped into that purgatory gate.

For his lovers, Chu Feng had chosen the path of no return without the slightest hesitation.

“Buzz~~~”

However, after Chu Feng entered that gate, he was surprised to discover that he had returned to reality. Su Rou and Su Mei were still in his bosom. The vast mist that had surrounded him and blocked his sight had also disappeared.

However, compared to before, this place had changed slightly. That is, the Fire and Ice Pearls that were on the verge of eruption had calmed down.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly continued to set up his spirit formation. He wished to seize this opportunity to remove the Fire and Ice Pearls from Su Rou and Su Mei. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had discovered that the two pearls were time bombs. He absolutely could not allow them to remain in Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies.

“Big brother Chu Feng, wait a moment,” However, right when Chu Feng was about to remove the two pearls, Su Mei suddenly spoke to stop him and grabbed his arm.

“Lil Mei, don't be scared. I guarantee that it will not hurt,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“No, don't extract it,” Su Rou and Su Mei said in unison.

“Why?” Chu Feng was surprised.

“Big sister, you too?”

“Little sister, you too?”

At that moment, Su Rou and Su Mei looked to one another.

Chu Feng sensed that something was wrong. Thus, he asked, “Exactly what happened?”

“It would seem that I am the same as little sister. In that case, let me explain,” Su Rou smiled. Then, she said, “Contained within the

Fire and Ice Pearls was a voice. That voice doesn't seem to be from the Fire and Ice Pearls. Rather, it seems to be from their actual owner, the Moon Demon."

"Moon Demon?" Chu Feng was startled. He had already met that Moon Demon earlier. Thus, he trusted what Su Rou said completely.

"The Moon Demon said that her virtuous thought had remained in the Fire and Ice Pearls the entire time. Merely, her evil thoughts still remained in the Moonlight Maze."

"As long as you are capable of subduing her evil thoughts, she is willing to bestow her power to us sisters," Su Rou said.

"I understand now," As Chu Feng spoke, he stood up. Then, he set up a very powerful spirit formation that covered Su Rou and Su Mei. After that, he proceeded toward the location of the Moon Demon while bringing Su Rou and Su Mei with him.

He had truly understood. It turned out that the so-called Moon Immortal and Moon Demon were merely the virtuous thoughts and evil thoughts of the same person. The virtuous thoughts were the Immortal part, whereas the evil thoughts were the Demon part.

Currently, the virtuous thoughts were with them inside the Fire and Ice Pearls. It was that celestial fairy-like woman that Chu Feng had met earlier.

As for the evil thoughts, they were the Moon Demon that was currently letting out those frightening snarls.

Originally, Chu Feng had no idea how to contain the Moon Demon. He merely wanted to prevent the Dark Hall from controlling the Moon Demon.

However, the situation had now changed. With the assistance of the virtuous thoughts, Chu Feng knew that there must be a way to contain the Moon Demon.

After all, Qing Xuantian had said that the Fire and Ice Pearls were capable of turning the Moon Demon into the Moon Immortal. And now, he finally realized why the Fire and Ice Pearls possessed that usage.

Most importantly, if the virtuous thought were capable of honoring its promise, Su Rou and Su Mei would be able to make unprecedented progress in their strength.

It might even be possible for the two of them to surpass him, and enter a whole new realm of cultivation. Not only would that be a blessing to Su Rou and Su Mei, it would be a blessing to the entire Holy Land of Martialism. As long as they obtained the Moon Immortal's power, even the Dark Hall would have to fear them.

Furthermore, even if the virtuous thoughts did not keep her promise, as long as Chu Feng assisted her, she would still become the Moon Immortal. Out of gratefulness from eliminating the Moon Demon, she should be willing to help him. In short... this would be a matter with only benefits and no harm.

Chapter 1988 – Stellar Key

Chu Feng sped forth. Enroute, he heard many explosions. Later on... he finally saw the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, as well as that Elf Protector.

However, at the same time, he also saw Luan Jie. Luan Jie was currently fighting against the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector. Furthermore, this time around, Luan Jie was serious. He had become exceptionally fierce. To a greater or lesser degree, both the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector were injured by Luan Jie. If this were to continue, the two of them would undoubtedly be defeated by Luan Jie.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng's gaze was fixed onto the sky above the location where the three men were fighting. There was an enormous silhouette in the sky. She had a snow white skirt and long fluttering hair. Her appearance was exactly the same as the Moon Immortal that Chu Feng had seen.

Merely, her face was exceptionally sinister, and her eyes were emitting a crimson, murderous shine. It was as if she wanted to kill all the living things in the world. In fact, the killing intent that she emitted was many times more frightening than that of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

Most importantly, her aura was extremely frightening. She was an existence even more powerful than the Elf King.

That frightening silhouette covered that entire region of the sky. It was a truly frightening sight.

Moon Demon. That was most likely that so-called evil thoughts, that Moon Demon.

Merely, that Moon Demon was trapped in the sky. Even though she was struggling violently, she was unable to break free.

It turned out that seven keys had trapped the Moon Demon in the

sky. Upon seeing those seven keys, Chu Feng's expression changed.

Those seven keys were like the starry sky. They were extremely special. They were the Stellar Keys.

Chu Feng also possessed one such Stellar Key. He had obtained it from the Beast Emperor, the Black Dragon King's inheritance.

Originally, Chu Feng had been curious the entire time as to what use that Stellar Key possessed. And now, he finally realized what its use was.

"Chu Feng, get away from here! Those Stellar Keys are actually capable of controlling the Moon Demon! If this is to continue, the Stellar Keys will end up completely controlling the Moon Demon!"

"Quickly, get away from the Moonlight Maze! Have everyone else escape from the Moonlight Maze too!" Upon seeing Chu Feng's arrival, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector began to shout at Chu Feng.

"Hahaha, you won't be able to escape. All of you will die. Even if you manage to escape today, you will not be able to escape tomorrow," Luan Jie laughed loud and sinisterly.

"That's not for certain," As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his deep blue treasured bow and aimed it at Luan Jie.

"What are you trying to do? You couldn't possibly be thinking about shooting me with that bow, right?!"

"You damned fool. Even if you used that Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, you would still not be a match for me. Yet you actually want to shoot me dead with an Incomplete Imperial Armament? Chu Feng, have you gone retarded or what? Hahahaha!" Upon seeing Chu Feng's deep blue bow, Luan Jie laughed even more wildly. His laughter was filled with mockery.

He truly found Chu Feng to be ridiculous. Especially after he saw how confident Chu Feng was, as if he could really shoot him dead, Luan Jie was unable to contain himself from wanting to ridicule

Chu Feng.

“That, could it be?!!!”

However, upon seeing the deep blue bow that Chu Feng took out, both the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector’s expression changed. They seemed to have thought of something. Immediately, the two of them revealed joyous expressions.

The very next moment, Chu Feng’s right hand streaked across his Cosmos Sack. Then, the Qilin Arrow appeared in his hand. He placed the arrow onto the deep blue bow and pulled the bowstring fully back.

“That... that arrow?” Upon seeing the Qilin Arrow in Chu Feng’s hand, Luan Jie was startled. Fear emerged in his previously complacent face. Evidently, he realized that that Qilin Arrow was a remarkable item.

The very next moment, Chu Feng shouted, “Rank seven Martial Emperor, Luan Jie, die!!!!”

“Whoosh~~~”

Once Chu Feng shouted those words, the Qilin Arrow shot forth from the bow. As golden light streaked across the sky, it instantly arrived before Luan Jie.

Everything happened too quickly. “Boom!” That Qilin Arrow pierced Luan Jie and completely shattered his body.

“That arrow is actually that powerful?”

After personally seeing Chu Feng shoot Luan Jie to death with a single arrow, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector were feeling both fear and joy.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng leapt forth. He waved his sleeve at the empty space before him. Then, a layer of boundless world spirit power turned into an enormous net and enveloped over half

the sky.

“Condense!” Chu Feng shouted. Then, that enormous net began to condense in size. After condensing, the net formed a silhouette in the space before him that was originally without a single soul.

“Still not revealing yourself?” Chu Feng looked to the humanoid-shaped silhouette and sneered.

“Chu Feng, if you dare to kill me, my father will definitely not let you get away with it,” Right after Chu Feng spoke, Luan Jie’s voice was actually heard. Soon, Luan Jie appeared in the net. Merely, the current Luan Jie already no longer had an actual corporeal body. Instead, he had turned into an awareness. In other words, he was in his spirit form.

Furthermore, his cultivation was greatly inferior to before. He was no longer a rank seven Martial Emperor, and had become a rank five Martial Emperor. With such a cultivation, he would naturally not be a match for Chu Feng.

The reason why his cultivation had decreased this much after he turned into a spirit was actually also because of that Qilin Arrow. The fact that he had managed to escape in spirit form before the Qilin Arrow hit him was already very remarkable.

Unfortunately, his plan to escape in spirit form was unable to bypass Chu Feng’s eyes. In the end, he was captured by Chu Feng.

“My ass!” Seeing how Luan Jie actually dared to threaten him in such a state, Chu Feng raised his leg and ruthlessly and repeatedly kicked Luan Jie, who was contained in the net.

“Stop, stop,” Luan Jie was currently in spirit form. Thus, he was unable to vomit any blood. However, to be kicked repeatedly by Chu Feng caused him to vomit out green gaseous substances nonstop. His state was truly miserable.

“Remember, even if I don’t kill you, your father will not have planned to spare me anyways. Thus, do not use your bastard father

to threaten me. I am not someone who's afraid of threats," Chu Feng pointed at the shivering Luan Jie who he had just ruthlessly beaten.

"Yes, yes, yes," While shivering nonstop, Luan Jie nodded his head. At that moment, he no longer possessed any arrogance. He was like a timid little mouse. The reason for that was because he did not wish to die, as Chu Feng was someone who dared to kill him.

Afterward, Chu Feng did not bother with Luan Jie anymore. Instead, he turned his gaze to the Moon Demon. He discovered that while the Moon Demon had been fixed to the sky by those seven Stellar Keys, those seven Stellar Keys would not be able to control the Moon Demon for an extended period of time.

"Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?" The Elf Protector asked.

"I am going to contain the Moon Demon," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, Luan Jie used those seven Stellar Keys to capture the Moon Demon. Likely, he was planning to use those seven Stellar Keys to contain the Moon Demon."

"However, even after all this time has passed, the Moon Demon's strength had not weakened in the slightest. Furthermore, it does not seem to have the intention to obey those seven Stellar Keys."

"The way I see it, those seven Stellar Keys are simply unable to subdue that Moon Demon. How about we think of a way to eliminate the Moon Demon's resentment? We should use the Fire and Ice Pearls in Lil' Rou and Lil' Mei's bodies to turn the Moon Demon into the Moon Immortal," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said. As for that... it had been their plan from the very beginning.

"No, I have another method," Chu Feng said.

As matters stood, Chu Feng no longer planned to remove the Fire

and Ice Pearls from Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies. He had an even better plan.

"Hehe..." Hearing what Chu Feng said, Luan Jie laughed mockingly. He had laughed very secretly, and actually did not emit any sound of laughter.

However, his laughter was still heard by Chu Feng. Thus, Chu Feng turned to him and asked, "What are you laughing about?"

"I didn't laugh," Luan Jie shook his head repeatedly.

"Thump~~~"

Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked Luan Jie in the face, causing him to grimace in pain. Even though he was currently a spirit, Luan Jie was still able to feel pain.

After that kick, Chu Feng asked again, "Did you laugh or not?"

"I laughed, I laughed," Luan Jie nodded his head repeatedly.

"What are you laughing about? Are you laughing at how I'm unable to control that Moon Demon?" Chu Feng asked.

"No, no," Luan Jie shook his head repeatedly.

"Thump~~~"

Chu Feng raised his leg and unleashed another kick. Once again, the kick landed on Luan Jie's face. Then, he asked, "Is it?"

"Yes, yes, yes," Luan Jie nodded repeatedly. However, immediately afterward, he shook his head repeatedly. He said, "What the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said is actually very correct. Those seven Stellar Keys have been unable to weaken that Moon Demon's strength even after so long. This means that it is impossible to contain her with only those seven Stellar Keys. You will not be able to subdue that Moon Demon, much less control her."

"Oh? What if I use this?" As Chu Feng spoke, he took out an item.

“That... how could that be?!!!” Upon seeing the item in Chu Feng’s hand, Luan Jie was struck dumb. Even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Elf Protector, Su Rou and Su Mei were also stunned.

The reason for that was because, according to the legends, there were only seven Stellar Keys. Three were scattered throughout the Holy Land of Martialism, and the Four Great Imperial Clans each possessed one for a total of seven.

It was already a very miraculous feat for the Dark Hall to be able to gather all seven Stellar Keys.

Yet now... Chu Feng actually took out an eighth Stellar Key.

Chapter 1989 – Sealing The Moon Demon

“An eighth Stellar Key? How could that be? According to the records, the Moonlight Maze should only have seven Stellar Keys,” Upon seeing Chu Feng’s eighth Stellar Key, Luan Jie spoke in utter disbelief.

What Luan Jie had just said was actually also what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector wanted to say.

After all, according to rumors, there were only seven Stellar Keys to the Moonlight Maze. As such, how did Chu Feng obtain an eighth Stellar Key?

Most importantly, the Stellar Key in Chu Feng’s hand appeared to be real. It was clearly not a fake.

As for Chu Feng, he had a smile on his face as he faced the crowd’s astonished gazes. He did not immediately answer them. Instead, he put a strand of his aura into his Stellar Key and then shot it toward the Moon Demon in the sky.

Chu Feng knew very well that the Moon Demon was the most important thing to take care of right at that moment.

“Roarr~”

When the eighth Stellar Key entered the Moon Demon’s body, the Moon Demon immediately let out an incomparably mournful scream. She looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with anger and resentment. Her gaze caused Chu Feng to feel his hair stand on end.

However, everyone was able to sense that the Moon Demon’s power had greatly decreased at the exact moment the eighth Stellar Key had pinned her body. Her frightening aura was gradually dissipating.

“Lil’ Rou, Lil’ Mei, does the Moon Immortal have any instructions?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng was currently capable of subduing the Moon Demon. However, he was still unable to control the Moon Demon. In fact, if Chu Feng wanted to control the Moon Demon right now, he would have no way to do so.

Merely, Chu Feng felt that he would only be able to temporarily seal the Moon Demon with the power of the eight Stellar Keys. If the power of the Stellar Keys were to decrease one day, the seal on the Moon Demon would be lifted. At that time, the person that the Moon Demon would want to kill the most would be Chu Feng.

Furthermore, it would not only be Chu Feng who would suffer a calamity. Likely, at that time, all those who were with Chu Feng would end up suffering a calamity.

That would be too dangerous. Thus, considering the long term, Chu Feng still wished for help from the Moon Immortal. The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that the Moon Immortal who was originally one with the Moon Demon must have a way to subdue the Moon Demon.

After all, she had said those sort of words earlier.

“Chu Feng, the Moon Immortal said that she will teach you a spirit formation. With that spirit formation, you will be able to increase the power of the Stellar Keys to the maximum and completely seal away the demonic nature of the Moon Demon.”

“Then, you must use spirit formations to separate the sealed Moon Demon’s power into two parts, and instill them respectively into my and Lil Mei’s Fire and Ice Pearls. At that time, she will have a way to take care of the Moon Demon,” Su Rou said. After she finished saying those words, she placed her mouth beside Chu Feng’s ear and began to tell him how to set up that spirit formation.

Su Rou was simply unable to understand what was so amazing about that spirit formation. She was merely passing on the words from the Moon Immortal. However, the more Chu Feng listened,

the more astonished he became. Before he even began to set up the spirit formation, he already knew that this spirit formation would be extremely powerful. Likely, it was from the Ancient Era.

After Su Rou finished telling Chu Feng what the Moon Immortal wanted her to say, she asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, did... you understand all of that?”

At that moment, Su Mei was also looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of expression. While the Moon Immortal was telling Su Rou how to set up the spirit formation, Su Mei was also able to hear her.

It was precisely because they knew what she said that Su Rou and Su Mei felt worried for Chu Feng. The reason for that was because what the Moon Immortal told Chu Feng simply did not seem like a spirit formation at all.

Even though their world spirit techniques were greatly inferior to Chu Feng’s, it remained that the two of them were world spiritists. It shouldn’t be that they were unable to make sense of what they heard at all.

When the two of them were unable to make sense of the method of setting up that spirit formation, was Chu Feng... really able to make sense of it?

Chu Feng thought that it was the Moon Immortal that was asking him Su Rou’s question. Thus, he said confidently, “Tell the Moon Immortal to rest assured. I am capable of setting up that spirit formation,”

“Wow! Big brother Chu Feng, you are truly too amazing!” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually able to understand how to set up the spirit formation, Su Mei opened her little mouth wide in shock. As for Su Rou, she had the same sort of reaction. The two of them truly did not expect that the disparity between them and Chu Feng would be this enormous.

At the same time, the two beauties revealed joyous smiles on their faces. They were truly happy. After all, Chu Feng was their man. When their own man was that powerful, who wouldn't be happy?

"Lil Rou, help me ask the Moon Immortal a question," Chu Feng said.

"What is it?" Su Rou asked.

"Why does she want to help us?" Chu Feng said.

"She said... it is fate," Su Rou said.

"Understood," Chu Feng did not ask anymore questions. After saying those words, Chu Feng began to set up the spirit formation according to the Moon Immortal's instructions.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that it would be useless even if he were to ask further. As such, he could only choose to believe in the Moon Immortal.

"Lil Rou, Lil Mei, exactly what is going on? What exactly did you all talk about?" Suddenly, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal walked over with confusion written all over his face. The Elf Protector was acting the same as him.

They had heard the conversation between Chu Feng, Su Rou and Su Mei, and discovered that the contents of their conversation were very fishy. Chu Feng was clearly speaking with Su Rou. Yet, it seemed like he was speaking to someone else. The two of them were very confused by it.

In response, Su Rou and Su Mei did not try to conceal anything. Instead, they told the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector the truth.

After all, the two of them possessed a very good relationship with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Furthermore, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was equivalent to being their master. Even though this sort of thing was inconvenient to talk about, it was

also unsuitable for them to conceal it.

After learning of what happened, even the experienced Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector opened their mouths wide in shock. They both sucked in a mouthful of cold air before asking again, “Is that true?”

“Seniors, this is all absolutely true,” Su Rou and Su Mei said together.

“A great fortune! This is truly a great and fortune-changing opportunity! Little friend Chu Feng is truly outstanding!” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal spoke in a very excited manner. As for the Elf Protector, even though he did not say anything, he also had an extremely excited expression on his face.

The Moon Immortal, the legendary Moon Immortal was actually willing to help them. This was much better than controlling the Moon Demon.

However, as for that Luan Jie, he was completely stunned. Exactly what had happened here? Weren’t the Moon Immortal and the Moon Demon the same existence? Why would there be another Moon Immortal in those two girls’ bodies?

Furthermore, that Moon Immortal was helping Chu Feng and the others subdue the Moon Demon? Furthermore, she was going to pass on her power to those two girls? Exactly what was going on here? How could there be such a wonderful thing in this world?

While extremely astonished, Luan Jie was also extremely skeptical.

Thus, he began to fix his gaze onto Chu Feng. He planned to see exactly what sort of spirit formation Chu Feng was going to set up.

One must know that Luan Jie had actually come prepared to subdue the Moon Demon. Not only did he possess the seven Stellar Keys, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had also personally taught him a powerful spirit formation, a taboo demonic formation.

Although that formation was evil, it was indeed capable of controlling the Moon Demon.

When Luan Jie saw that spirit formation for the first time, he was unable to help himself from exclaiming in astonishment. He had never expected such a spirit formation to exist in this world. Furthermore, he spent a total of half a year in order to master that spirit formation.

With his attainments in world spirit techniques, to spend half a year to learn a single spirit formation could be said to be an extremely long time.

And now, Chu Feng was actually going to use a spirit formation to completely control that Moon Demon. Thus, he wished to see whether or not Chu Feng's spirit formation would be as amazing as the one that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had taught him.

Furthermore, if what they said was true, Luan Jie was also skeptical as to how Chu Feng could possibly grasp a spirit formation that he had just been taught. Luan Jie was truly skeptical.

Chapter 1990 – Wang Qiang Displaying His Might

“This!!!”

After continuing to look at Chu Feng, Luan Jie was stupefied. Although the spirit formation that Chu Feng was setting up was completely different from the one which the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had taught him, the profoundness of Chu Feng’s spirit formation, as well as how powerful it was, were both superior to the one that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had taught him.

Astonished, Luan Jie muttered, “Is it really true that he just learned how to set up that spirit formation?”

The reason for that was because he could not believe that someone would be able to set up such a powerful spirit formation right after hearing about the method to do so. This was simply an impossibility.

It was not only Luan Jie who was this astonished. The Weaponry Refinement Immortal, a fellow Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, also revealed a grave expression. His aged eyes were flickering nonstop. The reason for that was because even he was unable to grasp such a powerful spirit formation in such a short period of time.

At the moment when Luan Jie and the others were astonished, Chu Feng had finished setting up that spirit formation. Furthermore, the spirit formation had assimilated into the Moon Demon’s body.

“Roarr~”

At that moment, the already weakened Moon Demon emitted a roar in even greater pain than before. In the same moment in which she roared, her body started to assimilate into that spirit formation.

In the end, after the sky had grown peaceful once again, the Moon Demon and the eight Stellar Keys had all disappeared. They had all entered that bowl-sized spirit formation.

Even though the Moon Demon had been successfully subdued, Chu Feng did not stop at that. Instead, he did as the Moon Immortal had instructed, and split the Moon Demon's sealed power into two. Then, he sent those two halves of its power to the Fire Pearl and Ice Pearl.

Such a spirit formation was very easy to make for a world spiritist like Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was worried that the Fire and Ice Pearl would go out of control again. Thus, he was very cautious when he instilled the Moon Demon's power into them. Fortunately, neither the Fire nor the Ice Pearl had any abnormal reactions. Likely, the Moon Immortal was controlling the Fire and Ice Pearls.

In the end, Chu Feng successfully instilled the power of the Moon Demon into the Fire and Ice Pearls.

“Wuuu~~~”

The very next moment after Chu Feng succeeded, Su Rou and Su Mei's expressions abruptly changed.

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately became nervous, and asked, “Lil Rou, Lil Mei, are you two okay?”

“We're fine. We were just a bit dizzy. Apart from that, we're completely fine,” Su Mei said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, don't worry about it. The Moon Immortal said that she is currently absorbing the strength of the Moon Demon so that she can have the Moon Demon disappear completely. Then, she will keep her promise and hand the complete ownership of the Fire and Ice Pearls to the two of us.”

“However, during that period of time, we will have to sleep for some time. When we wake up, everything will be done,” Su Rou

said.

“You two are really fine?” Chu Feng was still worried. After all, this was no small matter. He had instilled the extremely dangerous Moon Demon into his lovers’ bodies.

Even though the Moon Immortal was contained within their bodies, it remained that the Moon Demon was an incomparably frightening existence.

“We are really fine. Don’t worry about us,” Su Rou narrowed her eyes. Then, she used her fair-skinned hand to gently caress Chu Feng’s face. Her movement was extremely gentle. As for Su Mei, she was smiling sweetly at the side.

Sensing Su Rou’s warm and soft hand, as well as Su Mei’s brilliant smile, Chu Feng felt much more at ease.

Sure enough, not long afterward, Su Rou and Su Mei lost consciousness. They had entered a coma-like state.

“Let’s return,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, let’s go,” The Elf Protector and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were filled with confidence.

The Moon Demon had fallen into their hands, and Luan Jie had lost his ability to battle. When the three of them returned to the battlefield again, the Dark Hall would likely be powerless to reverse the situation. This battle was destined to be the Dark Hall’s loss.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

At that moment, rumbles were sounding from that battlefield nonstop. The energy ripples from the many ferocious martial skills were devastating the entire region. Each and every one of those martial skills was capable of causing enormous destruction.

Even though Chu Feng had left, a figure had caused the crowd to be taken greatly aback.

That person was Wang Qiang.

Every since Wang Qiang appeared, he had declared himself to be Emperor Chi's successor.

The crowd had all rolled their eyes at him and insulted him for being shameless. However now, he had finally revealed his strength to them.

It turned out that he was not only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, but also a rank six Martial Emperor.

Although Chu Feng was capable of killing rank six Martial Emperors through the use of his various abilities, his actual cultivation was only that of a rank two Martial Emperor.

However, Wang Qiang's cultivation of rank six Martial Emperor was his actual cultivation. Inevitably, the crowd were astonished by his strength.

"Wayayaya, a b-b-b-bunch of l-l-l-little trash, w-w-w-w-watch as your gr-gr-gr-granddaddy ta-ta-takes care of you all," Wang Qiang brandished the weapon in his hand and attacked nonstop. His every blade strike was incomparably ruthless.

"Never would I have imagined that Wang Qiang was this powerful. If Chu Feng is the fully deserving number one member of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism, then this Wang Qiang is definitely the fully deserving number two member of the Holy Land of Martialism's younger generation."

"My, that is truly the case. Not only is he a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, his martial cultivation is actually also so powerful. Although his battle power is not as frighteningly heaven-defying as Chu Feng's, it remains that he is an actual rank six Martial Emperor."

"For me to have insulted him earlier, I have truly failed to recognize Mount Tai."

When Wang Qiang revealed himself to be a Dragon Mark Royal-

cloak World Spiritist earlier, many people had a whole new level of respect for Wang Qiang.

And now, the crowd's treatment of Wang Qiang had changed completely. Even though the person that they admired the most in their hearts was still Chu Feng, Wang Qiang had become the member of the younger generation with the highest standing in their hearts besides Chu Feng.

Merely, they did not know that the Ancient Era's Elves' Little Princess Xian Miaomiao possessed a heaven-defying battle power on par with Chu Feng.

“Merely, since he's Emperor Chi's successor, why is his weapon a [cleaver](#)?”

Although their hearts were filled with admiration for Wang Qiang, there were also people that were confused. The reason for that was because Wang Qiang's weapon was truly too strange. It was a rusty cleaver.

That's right, the shape of Wang Qiang's weapon was precisely that of a kitchen cleaver, the sort of thing that people used for cooking.

However, Wang Qiang's cleaver was most definitely no ordinary cleaver. It emitted a very intense Emperor's might. That cleaver was an actual Imperial Armament.

Merely, who was Emperor Chi? He was the first person to become an Overlord after the Ancient Era.

Even though the person publicly recognized to be the strongest among the Five Emperors, the five overlords, was Emperor Qing, in terms of seniority, Emperor Chi would be the true head of the Five Emperors.

How could such a powerful existence use a cleaver as his Imperial Armament?

“But, exactly what sort of weapon did Emperor Chi use?”

Someone asked.

“This!!!” The crowd were unable to answer that question. The era where Emperor Chi existed was truly too distant. There were a lot of legends regarding him. However, no one was able to determine whether they were true or false.

Even his legendary Imperial Armament possessed several tens of different appearances according to the different sorts of legends. Thus, no one was able to determine exactly what sort of Imperial Armament Emperor Chi used.

As such, no one could declare that Emperor Chi's Imperial Armament was not a cleaver.

Technically, it is a chinese chef knife. Same appearance as a cleaver, just much thinner. The most versatile cooking utensil for chinese people.

Chapter 1991 – Killing Your Son

Regardless, at that moment, the crowd had already determined Wang Qiang to be Emperor Chi's successor.

There was no need for Wang Qiang to take out any proof. Merely his strength was sufficient to make the crowd believe him to be Emperor Chi's successor.

After Chu Feng left, at least half of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were killed by Wang Qiang. As for the people from the Dark Hall that died by his hands, they were simply too many to count.

Wang Qiang had actually contributed greatly to helping the Ancient Era's Elves obtain superiority in this battle.

"Old P-P-Pervert W-W-World Devastator, j-j-j-just you wait. Once y-y-y-your gran-gran-granddaddy mast-mast-ers his d-d-divine attack, I'll t-t-turn you into a me-meat bun."

"Bu-But, res-rest assured, I am n-n-n-not planning to eat you. I'm ju-ju-just going to feed you t-t-to the dogs," Not only was Wang Qiang killing the Dark Hall's army, he was also publicly insulting the World Devastator Immortal.

"Damned stuttering brat, I'll make you shut up!" The World Devastator Immortal was deeply enraged by Wang Qiang. Wang Qiang had been insulting him nonstop ever since Chu Feng had left. His heart and mind were both distracted by Wang Qiang's insults. After all, Wang Qiang was quite excellent with his insults.

"Old Pervert W-W-World D-D-Devastator, do you kn-kn-know why I won't ea-ea-eat you? It's be-be-because your gr-gr-granddaddy is a ma-ma-macho man wh-who d-doesn't eat eunuchs. Hehe," As if he couldn't hear the World Devastator Immortal's threats, Wang Qiang continued to insult him.

Wang Qiang's insults caused the World Devastator Immortal's complexion to turn red with anger. He gnashed his teeth and

wanted to bite Wang Qiang, that stutterer, to death.

“World Devastator, even Emperor Chi’s successor has come to assist us. It would appear that your defeat is inevitable,” Lord Luokong said with a smile on his face.

“What a joke. Luokong, have you gone senile? Do not forget the true purpose that we have come here for. It is that Moon Demon.”

“As long as the Moon Demon enters our grasp, how could you all possibly have any hope of victory?” The World Devastator Immortal disapproved of what Lord Luokong had said. Even though they had entered a state of absolute disadvantage, even though the people from the Dark Hall were being killed nonstop, the World Devastator Immortal was still confident.

“Don’t forget that little friend Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal have gone after Luan Jie. Are you that certain that your son will be able to control the Moon Demon?” Lord Luokong asked.

“What? Chu Feng? You said Chu Feng? Hahahaha!!!” After hearing what Lord Luokong said, the World Devastator Immortal burst into loud and frantic laughter.

As he possessed a very eccentric voice to begin with, everyone noticed his laughter. Even though they were still fighting, the crowd still turned their focus toward the World Devastator Immortal.

The World Devastator Immortal continued to laugh for some time. Then, he said, “That trash Chu Feng? I know exactly how strong he is. He is only capable of being trampled underneath my foot. Him, against my son? He is also only capable of being trampled underneath my son’s foot.”

“As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and that Elf Protector of yours, they are only on par with Chu Feng. Even if they join hands, they are still nowhere near my son.”

“Is that so?” Right after the World Devastator Immortal’s voice landed, a voice sounded explosively from afar.

It was Chu Feng. When Chu Feng appeared, everyone turned their gazes toward him. Upon seeing him, the crowd all revealed astonished expressions.

Chu Feng, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector were all completely unscathed.

Not only that, there was also a giant net in Chu Feng’s hand. Contained within that net was a spirit body. As for that spirit body, it was none other than the World Devastator Immortal’s son, Luan Jie.

Upon seeing the World Devastator Immortal, Luan Jie reacted as if he had seen his savior. He immediately shouted, “Father, save me!!!”

“!!!” Suddenly the World Devastator Immortal’s complexion turned ashen. In fact... he was so stunned that he became speechless.

Irony. What an irony this was. Earlier, he had bragged of how amazing his son was, and how Chu Feng, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Elf Protector combined would not be a match for his son.

Yet, what was this now? The son that he had believed to be so amazing had actually been imprisoned. Furthermore, even his corporeal body had been destroyed. All that remained of him was his soul, his spirit body.

Like an animal, he had been captured by Chu Feng within a net that was held in his hand.

“Damn it!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” At that moment, the World Devastator Immortal was both shocked and enraged. He was shocked that his son had been defeated. He was enraged that his son had shamed him by losing.

However, even with this being the case, it remained that Luan Jie was his treasured son. For the sake of nurturing the growth of that son, he had exhausted a great amount of meticulous care and effort. He would absolutely not allow his son to die just like that.

Thus, the World Devastator Immortal pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, "Release my son! Else, I'll dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!"

The World Devastator Immortal was an extremely awe-inspiring individual. He was ranked second among the Holy Land of Martialism's Ten Immortals. Anyone who heard those sorts of words coming out of his mouth would be frightened. In fact, they might even be scared to death.

However, when those words entered Chu Feng's ears, Chu Feng started to laugh. Then, he asked, "What makes you think that you're qualified to say those words to me?"

"Enough of your nonsense! I said, release my son! Are you deaf or what?!" The World Devastator Immortal shouted again.

At that moment, he was truly furious. When he first saw his son in such a state, he had immediately unleashed an extremely frightening power to break away from Lord Luokong and rescue his son.

However, Lord Luokong had refused to give him the opportunity to do so. Thus, this vexed him enormously.

"World Devastator, do you still remember how you treated me that day?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?" Hearing those words, the World Devastator Immortal's mind tensed up. He would naturally not forget the humiliation that he gave Chu Feng that day.

It was precisely because he had humiliated Chu Feng like that that day that he was scared right now. After all, his own son was

now in Chu Feng's hands.

Chu Feng did not immediately answer him. Instead, he reached into the net and grabbed Luan Jie's neck. Like grabbing a chicken's neck, he pulled Luan Jie out of the net.

Then, with a beaming smile on his face, he said to the World Devastator Immortal, "The only reason why I kept him alive till now is so that you could personally see how your son dies."

After Chu Feng said those words, a flash of ruthlessness shone through Chu Feng's narrowed eyes. Then, his hand tightened. "Bang!" Luan Jie's soul was destroyed before the crowd.

"Nooo!!!!!"

Seeing his son being killed before him, the World Devastator Immortal let out an incomparably painful roar.

However, Chu Feng did not have the slightest bit of sympathy toward such a World Devastator Immortal.

What Chu Feng could not tolerate the most was being humiliated by others. That World Devastator had relied on the fact that he had cultivated for a very long time, and his martial cultivation was very strong, to humiliate Chu Feng. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly tolerate that humiliation? After all, a warrior could be killed, but not humiliated.

Thus, ever since Chu Feng had survived the hands of the World Devastator Immortal, he swore that he would return the suffering that the World Devastator Immortal had inflicted on him two-fold.

As for the World Devastator Immortal's son, he was exactly like his father. He had relied on the fact that his cultivation was stronger than Chu Feng's to look down on him.

However, this was the consequence. The World Devastator Immortal's son, Luan Jie, could only die by Chu Feng's hands.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had killed him right in front of his

father.

Luan Jie had become the means for Chu Feng's revenge against the World Devastator Immortal.

Chapter 1992 – The End Of The Battle

Overwhelmed with pain, the World Devastator Immortal roared, “Chu Feng, I really should have killed you then, you little bastard!!!!” His killing intent was overflowing, and caused even the sky to turn pitch-black. Black clouds surged in the skies like countless savage demons gathered in one place.

His killing intent was truly terrifying.

At that moment, many people felt their hair stand on end. They were feeling very uneasy.

However, Chu Feng did not show the slightest bit of fear. With a smile still on his face, he said, “Back then, you wanted to kill me. Merely, you didn’t dare to do so.”

What Chu Feng said was the truth. Back then, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had personally given the order telling the World Devastator Immortal that he was not allowed to kill Chu Feng.

Even though the World Devastator Immortal was very strong, he did not have the courage to go against the orders of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“I will definitely kill you! I will definitely kill you!!!”

The World Devastator Immortal roared once more. He truly regretted that he had not killed Chu Feng. If he knew this sort of thing would happen, he would have killed Chu Feng without the slightest bit of hesitation.

Merely, he also knew that there was no way for him to repeat the past. Even if he regretted his decision, there was nothing he could do about it.

“Ahhhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” Overwhelmed with incomparable anger, the World Devastator Immortal turned his face to the sky and shouted.

This time around, an even stronger power surged from his body.

In this sort of situation, Lord Luokong did not dare to lower his guard. He closely guarded where Chu Feng stood in fear that the World Devastator Immortal would attack Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Sure enough, after snarling at the sky, the World Devastator Immortal unleashed an extremely frightening explosive power. This was the most frightening power that the World Devastator Immortal had unleashed since fighting against Lord Luokong.

He had placed all of his power into his speed.

Merely, he did not fly toward Chu Feng. Instead, he flew in the opposite direction from Chu Feng.

The World Devastator Immortal was actually escaping. After his son was killed, he knew that he was destined to be defeated. Thus, in the end, he chose to escape.

“Chu Feng, remember this! I will absolutely not let you get away with this! Not only you, but all of your relatives, all of your acquaintances, I will kill every single one of them! I will make you regret your actions today for the rest of your life!”

While the World Devastator Immortal had escaped, he had left threatening words. Everyone was able to tell that those words of his didn't seem to be said jokingly.

“You won't escape!” Lord Luokong shouted angrily. He started to chase after the World Devastator Immortal. He was not willing to give the World Devastator Immortal the chance to escape.

Unfortunately, of all the Ancient Era's Elves present, only Lord Luokong chased after the World Devastator Immortal. After all, only Lord Luokong possessed the strength to fight against the World Devastator Immortal.

“It's time to clear up the battlefield,” After Lord Luokong left to chase after the World Devastator Immortal, Chu Feng took out his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd from the Dark Hall started to shiver. They were not afraid when Lord Luokong spoke those sorts of words toward them before. However, when Chu Feng said those words now, they were afraid. The reason for that was because they knew that a great catastrophe was about to befall them.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng would not spare them just because they were afraid. Holding the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand, Chu Feng began to ruthlessly massacre the people from the Dark Hall.

Chu Feng loathed the people from the Dark Hall enormously. He did not understand why these experts would be willing to serve the Dark Hall. However, he knew that these people that were willing to serve the Dark Hall were people that were willing to harm the innocent. As such, they absolutely could not be spared.

After some time, the people from the Dark Hall and the remaining Ancient Era's ferocious beasts that were with him were all massacred by Chu Feng and the others.

Finally, those malicious individuals from the Dark Hall paid for their actions with blood.

Not long after everyone from the Dark Hall was eliminated, Lord Luokong returned. From his appearance, it could be seen that he had not managed to successfully catch up to the World Devastator Immortal.

In other words, Lord Luokong had not dared to chase after the World Devastator Immortal too far. After all, the Dark Hall possessed an unfathomable strength. If he were to chase too far, he would be worried about the situation on this side. Thus, he had no choice but to give up on chasing after the World Devastator Immortal.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is all thanks to your prompt arrival. Else, with the situation here today, it would not only have been a

disaster. Rather, we would all have been killed.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, please accept this old man’s salute,” After Lord Luokong returned, he led the Ancient Era’s Elves and bowed to Chu Feng.

“Lord Luokong, quickly stand up. We are allies. There is no need for you to be this courteous.”

“Furthermore, with your seniority, this junior is truly unable to bear you acting in such a way,” Chu Feng hurriedly lent Lord Luokong an arm to help him back up.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this old man also understands that. Merely, if I do not do this, I will feel uneasy in my heart,” Lord Luokong said with a smile.

He had always been an individual that was high and above everyone else. When had he ever bowed this respectfully to someone? Even to His Majesty the Elf King, he would not have to bow due to his seniority. As such, there was no need to mention a member of the younger generation. Yet today, he had bowed to Chu Feng. Furthermore, he had done so in a very undisturbed manner. In fact, he felt better after bowing to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. There was nothing he could say. After all, he knew that he had indeed indirectly saved the lives of everyone here. Thus, Lord Luokong and the others were grateful to him, and wanted to use this sort of method to express their thanks, as only by doing this would they feel more comfortable.

Seeing how the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Lord Luokong had actually led the other Ancient Era’s Elves to bow respectfully to Chu Feng, Snow Blade Mad Demon and the other experts were shocked. At the same time, they were feeling even more uncomfortable.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had not lied to them. He had really formed an alliance with the Ancient Era’s Elves. Else,

as one of the Ancient Era's Elves' Four Grand Elders, how could Lord Luokong possibly bow to Chu Feng like this?

Yet, they had actually been skeptical of Chu Feng's claims earlier. As such, they truly felt ashamed of themselves.

Suddenly, an old man stepped forth and spoke. "Little friend Chu Feng, if you don't mind, I would like to become a nominal elder of the Cyanwood Mountain," This old man was wearing black clothes, and possessed the same level of cultivation as the Snow Blade Mad Demon. He was a rank six Martial Emperor.

He was also one of the many people that had been skeptical of Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had saved him. Thus, he was feeling ashamed in his heart, and wanted to use this sort of method to reciprocate with Chu Feng.

"If senior is willing, our Cyanwood Mountain will absolutely welcome you," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I also wish to become a nominal elder of the Cyanwood Mountain," Following him, all the people that did not belong to any sect or school began to ask if they could also become nominal elders of the Cyanwood Mountain.

As for Chu Feng, he accepted all of their requests. Firstly, the weakest among them were Martial Emperors. Should they join the Cyanwood Mountain, each and every one of them would be able to increase the overall strength of the Cyanwood Mountain.

Next and most importantly, all of these people were people that had fought with Chu Feng. They were people who had killed members of the Dark Hall together with Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng trusted them.

In the end, the Snow Blade Mad Demon stood forward and said, "Little friend Chu Feng, as this old man has killed that elder of the Heavenly Law Palace, I will not be joining the Cyanwood Mountain."

“However, if little friend Chu Feng needs my assistance in the future, I am available at any time. Remember, little friend Chu Feng, your enemies are also this Snow Blade Mad Demon’s enemies.”

“As long as this old man is still alive, I will absolutely not let anyone make things difficult for you, little friend Chu Feng.”

“Seniors, those words of yours are sufficient for me,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Even though the Snow Blade Mad Demon had questioned him before, he had discovered that the Snow Blade Mad Demon was a hot-tempered and honest man. As such, Chu Feng possessed an excellent impression of the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

Chapter 1993 – Telling The Truth

The battle in the Moonlight Maze ended with the Dark Hall's crushing defeat. Everyone present knew that the crucial person that had turned the battle around was not the Ancient Era's Elves' Lord Luokong, Rather, it was Chu Feng.

Even though this battle had ended in Chu Feng's victory, the Ancient Era's Elves did not dare to relax. They immediately returned to the Elf Kingdom. After all, the Dark Hall could be said to be completely at war against the Ancient Era's Elves right now.

Thus, the Ancient Era's Elves had to return as quickly as possible. Likely, they would have no time to rest after their return. Instead, they would have to battle against the Dark Hall again.

However, the Ancient Era's Elves were not the first to leave. The first one to leave was Wang Qiang. Wang Qiang had slipped away without anyone noticing. He did not even bother to bid farewell to anyone.

After the Ancient Era's Elves left, the various human and monstrous beast experts also began to leave in succession. Those that were planning to join the Cyanwood Mountain left directly for the Cyanwood Mountain. As for the others, they too left this dangerous location as quickly as possible.

After this event, they had experienced how powerful the Dark Hall was. They were also afraid that reinforcements from the Dark Hall would arrive. As such, they decided to leave the Moonlight Maze as quickly as possible.

Just as the crowd were all leaving, a somewhat timid voice sounded. "Y-Young hero Chu Feng."

Turning toward the source of the voice, Chu Feng discovered that it was a Ximen Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder. It was not only him; there were also Utmost Exalted Elders from the Nangong

Imperial Clan, the Beitang Imperial Clan and the Dongfang Imperial Clan.

Originally, they had come to the Moonlight Maze to search for treasures while representing their respective Imperial Clans. Like the others, they had failed to obtain any treasures, and nearly died in the area with the Immortality Peach Tree. They had been saved by Chu Feng, and then later accompanied the crowd to this place to fight against the people from the Dark Hall.

Originally, it was only natural for them to do these things, as they were grateful after being saved by Chu Feng. After the battle was over, they should be happy.

However, at that moment, other than the Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder, the Utmost Exalted Elders from the other three Imperial Clans all possessed somewhat of an abnormal expression on their faces. To put it simply, they were scared.

The reason for that was because they had experienced for themselves how powerful Chu Feng was today.

Back then, they had been high and above, and had not placed Chu Feng in their eyes. They felt that they were capable of drowning Chu Feng, a nobody, with only a mouthful of spit.

However, looking back now, they discovered how foolish they had been before. With Chu Feng's current strength, he was already someone who could completely erase their Four Great Imperial Clans by himself. They would be lying if they declared that they were not afraid of Chu Feng. They were truly afraid that Chu Feng would retaliate against them.

Chu Feng knew what these Utmost Exalted Elders were thinking. Thus, he smiled and said, "Seniors, there's no need to mention things from the past again. Right now, we only have a single enemy, the Dark Hall. As for us, we are allies."

The Nangong Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder said, "Little

friend Chu Feng is truly a great person of great stature. Back then, this old man was truly blind and narrow-minded. I..." he sighed, "I am truly ashamed." He revealed an ashamed expression on his face.

The other three Great Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders revealed the same sort of expression. They had merely reconciled with Chu Feng before because they had been forced to by Nangong Longjian. As such, they did not feel that they had wronged Chu Feng.

But now, Chu Feng clearly possessed the strength to erase their entire clans. Yet, Chu Feng was standing before them in such a calm manner. Not only was he not hostile toward them, he instead treated them as his allies.

Chu Feng's actions had won them over completely. As such, they were unable to help themselves from feeling ashamed of their previous actions.

"Seniors, you all should return quickly. The Dark Hall is vicious and merciless. I think it is best for you all to be on guard against them," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Thank you, little friend Chu Feng, for your warning. In that case, we will take our leave," After hearing what Chu Feng said, the Utmost Exalted Elders came to a sudden realization.

Today, they had gone against the Dark Hall. If the Dark Hall was unwilling to let things go, they would most likely attack them. As such, they had to be on guard against the Dark Hall's attack. At least, they had to make sure that their clansmen were safe.

As the Dark Hall was powerful enough to contend against the Ancient Era's Elves, it would absolutely not be a small matter should they attack them. Thus, they needed to immediately return to their respective Imperial Clans first.

After the Four Great Imperial Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders left,

only Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal remained.

“Chu Feng, you are truly a person of great stature. With how broad-minded you are, this old man has truly not misjudged you.”

“Merely, even with this being the case, the speed of your growth still has me taken aback,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal walked toward Chu Feng with a smile on his face.

“Senior, you are flattering me. This junior is even blushing now,” Chu Feng pretended to be embarrassed and covered his face. As Chu Feng was an old acquaintance of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng did not act reserved toward him.

“Oh, you. You’re clearly one of the peak experts of the Holy Land of Martialism. Yet, you’re still acting this haughty? If those girls who worship you were to hear of this, I truly do not know how they would react,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal laughed.

He began to recall the first time he met Chu Feng. At that time, Chu Feng had been so small and weak. Countless people in the Holy Land of Martialism would have been able to kill him.

However, Chu Feng had now not only become a grand character known by everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism, he also possessed the strength of a peak expert.

From Chu Feng’s techniques earlier, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal knew that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques had already surpassed his own. With Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques, it would not be impossible for Chu Feng to refine an Imperial Armament.

As for martial cultivation, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal knew that Chu Feng would soon surpass him.

This era was an era with countless geniuses rising from the younger generation. If an overlord were to truly emerge from among them, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal felt that it would definitely be Chu Feng.

Suddenly, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's expression turned unnatural. "Chu Feng, there is one matter that I wish to ask you about. It is merely a casual question of mine. You do not have to overthink it."

"Senior, might you be wanting to ask about Baili Xinghe's death?" Chu Feng managed to guess what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal wanted to ask from his expression.

"Precisely," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal hesitated for a moment before nodding. He asked, "Did you kill him?" When he asked that question, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's eyes were fixed onto Chu Feng's the entire time. Even though he did not have any hostility in his eyes, he longed for the truth.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart felt extremely complicated. In the end, he decided to not conceal anything, and to tell the Weaponry Refinement Immortal the truth. "Baili Xinghe was not killed by me. However, his death is related to me. Senior, I..."

Chu Feng wanted to apologize. Even though he did not feel that causing Baili Xinghe's death was wrong, he still felt guilt toward the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Chu Feng was able to tell that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal possessed a very deep affection for his disciple Baili Xinghe.

"Chu Feng, thank you. This old man feels very relieved that you were able to tell me the truth."

"However, you absolutely must not apologize," Before Chu Feng could apologize, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal interrupted him. He continued, "I actually knew very well what sort of character that disciple of mine had. He was fond of Zi Ling and Su Rou, and had bothered them repeatedly, only to be rejected in the end. From these repeated rejections, he started to detest you. I knew about all that."

"Thus, even if his death is related to you, I know that it was definitely not your fault."

“Senior, if I may speak frankly, Baili Xinghe sought for his death himself,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s true. Thus, I have gotten over it, and decided to not avenge his death,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng knew that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal possessed the desire to avenge Baili Xinghe. However, he was struggling in his heart. As for Chu Feng, he did not know what to tell the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

Chu Feng actually did not wish for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to avenge scum like Baili Xinghe. This was especially true because the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would have to kill Leng Yue to avenge Baili Xinghe. As for Leng Yue, she was the number one disciple of the Heavenly Law Palace. The Heavenly Law Palace was nurturing her as if she would be their future pillar. As such, if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal were to kill Leng Yue, the Heavenly Law Palace would definitely not leave the matter at that.

Truly, the gains would not make up for the losses.

Chapter 1994 – Physical Bodies Seized

“Wuuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies shivered. Simultaneously, the two of them let out a light groan.

Upon seeing that, both Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal revealed worried expressions, and hurriedly stepped forward to check on Su Rou and Su Mei.

After carefully inspecting Su Rou and Su Mei, and discovering that both of them were fine, Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal heaved a sigh of relief.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Senior, where is Zi Ling right now?”

Su Rou and Su Mei were still unconscious. Thus, even though Chu Feng was not very worried, he was still worried. However, apart from the two of them, Chu Feng was also equally concerned about Zi Ling.

Actually, compared to Su Rou and Su Mei, Chu Feng’s feelings for Zi Ling were actually a bit deeper. After all, Chu Feng and Zi Ling had experienced more things together.

Merely, after leaving the Nine Provinces Continent, due to various reasons, Chu Feng had not accompanied Zi Ling for much time. As such, his guilt toward Zi Ling became even deeper.

“Zi Ling was taken away by that great sir. Beside him, Zi Ling should be absolutely safe. Thus, Chu Feng, you do not have to worry about Zi Ling,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said to Chu Feng.

“Taken away?” Chu Feng was startled. He asked, “Why was she taken away?”

“He didn’t say. He only said that it was a good thing,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said. Seemingly worried that Chu

Feng would be worried, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal added, “Rest assured, the way I see it, that great sir’s strength is not inferior to the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Thus, it is very safe for Zi Ling to be with him. You do not have to worry about her.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled.

The Elf King was an extremely powerful individual. Chu Feng had felt that he should be the fully-deserving number one expert in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Yet now, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had actually compared that senior, as well as the number one Immortal of the Ten Immortals, the Heaven Reaching Immortal, to the Elf King.

Could it be that the Holy Land of Martialism really did possess existences on par with the Elf King? In other words, they were peak Martial Emperors, existences infinitely close to Half Martial Ancestors.

“Could it be that the Elf King is not the only peak Martial Emperor in the Holy Land of Martialism?” Chu Feng asked.

During the time when he was with Xian Miaomiao, he came to know the Elf King’s cultivation. He was a rank nine Martial Emperor, a peak Martial Emperor.

If that Heaven Reaching Immortal and that mysterious blind old man possessed the same cultivation as the Elf King, it would mean that they were also rank nine Martial Emperors.

“As far as I know, the Heaven Reaching Immortal is indeed a peak Martial Emperor. As for that great sir, truth be told, I do not know what his cultivation is,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“In that case, senior, you also do not know much about that senior?” Chu Feng asked.

“Indeed, I have been acquainted with him for a long time.

However, I do not know much about him. In fact, I do not even know his name,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal shook his head with a wry smile.

“That senior is truly mysterious. However, never would I have expected the Heaven Reaching Immortal to also be that powerful, to have strength that is actually on par with the Elf King.”

Chu Feng was shocked by the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s cultivation. Originally, he had thought that the Heaven Reaching Immortal was a rank eight Martial Emperor like the World Devastator Immortal. To his surprise, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was actually a peak Martial Emperor.

“The Heaven Reaching Immortal has been a renowned expert since the time of Emperor Qing. Merely, he is not someone who fights for fame and personal profit. As for his strength, he is extremely powerful,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“In that case, how is the character of the Heaven Reaching Immortal? Would he end up joining the Dark Hall too?” Chu Feng asked worriedly.

The strength which the Dark Hall had revealed right now was truly too frightening. They already possessed many experts who had joined them. As such, Chu Feng was truly afraid that the Heaven Reaching Immortal would also join the Dark Hall.

After all, hearing what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said, the Heaven Reaching Immortal should be over ten thousand years old. As a human, living for that long was already inconceivable. Likely, he was near the limit of his lifespan.

As the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was from the Outer World, he knew a lot of things that the people in the Holy Land of Martialism did not. Thus, if he were to declare that he possessed a method to extend one’s lifespan, the Heaven Reaching Immortal might also end up serving the Dark Hall.

“Regarding that, you can rest assured. The Heaven Reaching Immortal will not serve anyone,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said with certainty.

“That would be best,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt a lot more relieved.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the unconscious Su Rou and Su Mei suddenly opened their eyes and stood up.

“Lil Rou, Lil Mei, you’ve woken up?” Seeing that his lovers had regained consciousness, Chu Feng was overjoyed. He hurriedly walked toward them and hugged them.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes suddenly shrank back. His expression took a huge change. Then, he abruptly pushed Su Rou and Su Mei aside. Then, with a stern voice, he shouted, “Who are you?”

“Mn?” Seeing Chu Feng asking who Su Rou and Su Mei were, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was startled. He hurriedly walked over to them and discovered that it was truly Su Rou and Su Mei who stood beside Chu Feng.

Thus, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked Chu Feng in a very confused manner, “Chu Feng, what’s wrong? Aren’t they Lil Rou and Lil Mei?”

“No, they’re not,” Chu Feng shook his head. Then, he shouted with a stern voice again, “Who exactly are you? Quickly, speak!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was panicking. Su Rou and Su Mei’s physical appearance remained the same. However, he was able to determine that something was wrong with them with a single glance. Even though he was clearly standing before Su Rou and Su Mei, he felt that they were incomparably distant from him.

“You are called Chu Feng, right?” Suddenly, Su Rou and Su Mei uttered the same voice from their mouths at the same time. Not

only were their sentences exactly the same, even their voices were exactly the same.

“Who are you?” Hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was deeply alarmed. He also realized that it was not the actual Su Rou and Su Mei before them.

“Apologies. I will have to borrow your lovers’ bodies for a while,” Su Rou and Su Mei said.

Right after the two of them said those words, they soared into the sky and turned into a gale that rapidly flew away.

“Stop!!!”

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to thoroughly panic. He did not dare to hesitate, and immediately unleashed all of his strength to chase after Su Rou and Su Mei.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal also chased after them.

It was very clear that Su Rou and Su Mei’s physical bodies had been seized. It was uncertain whether their souls were still alive or dead.

“Stop! Are you the Moon Immortal?!”

“You have deceived me! You clearly said that you would bestow your powers to them. Yet, you decided to seize their bodies. I have trusted you in vain!” Chu Feng shouted with incomparable anger.

Chu Feng knew that it should either be the Moon Immortal or the Moon Demon who had seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies. Furthermore, based on their reaction, it was very likely to be the Moon Immortal. The reason for that was because the voice that Su Rou and Su Mei had spoken with was exactly the same as the Moon Immortal’s voice Chu Feng had heard in his dreams.

“You do not have to continue to chase after me. I said that I will only borrow their bodies for a while. The two of them are still alive. After I finish what I want to do, I will return them to you,”

That person said.

After leaving those words, that person began to accelerate. As Su Rou's and Su Mei's dresses fluttered in the wind, they disappeared from Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's line of sight. Their speed was simply speechlessly fast.

“No, no, nooooooooo!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

After Su Rou and Su Mei disappeared, Chu Feng started to roar frantically. Without slowing down in the slightest, he continued to chase after them. Unfortunately, no matter how frantically he chased after them, he was unable to catch sight of Su Rou and Su Mei's silhouettes.

“Chu Feng, don't chase anymore. Our opponent is too strong. They're at the very least a peak Martial Emperor. We are not able to catch up to them,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal urged.

“No, no, I cannot abandon Lil Rou and Lil Mei, I cannot!!!” Chu Feng did not slow down in the slightest.

Soon, they flew out of the Moonlight Maze. However, he was still unable to catch sight of Su Rou and Su Mei. Chu Feng began to fly aimlessly. His eyes were blood red. He was simply on the verge of being driven mad.

Seeing that, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal grabbed Chu Feng and forcibly stopped him. He said, “Chu Feng, calm yourself. This won't do. You will not be able to catch up to them.”

“The way I see it, the Moon Immortal should not have any malicious intentions in seizing Lil Rou and Lil Mei's bodies. Else, with her strength, she would be totally capable of killing us. There would be no need for her to bother explaining her intentions to you,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal urged. Chu Feng's current state of mind was truly too much of a mess.

In the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's impression, Chu Feng was someone that would not be scared, no matter how enormous

the incoming wave was. Even if the heavens were to collapse, he would still be able to confront it with calmness.

However, the current Chu Feng was not only panicking, he even appeared to be nearly driven mad. If this were to continue, he did not know what sort of thing Chu Feng would end up doing.

Chapter 1995 – The Public’s Will

After being advised by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Chu Feng did not continue chasing after Su Rou and Su Mei. However, at the same time, he had also not said anything.

Chu Feng’s current frame of mind was extremely unstable. After all, they were his beloved women, Su Rou and Su Mei.

Most importantly, he was the one who had personally instilled that Moon Demon into Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies. Thus, Chu Feng blamed himself enormously. He felt that he was the one who had brought this upon Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal continued to urge.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng had rushed out, he had not conceal himself within the void. Furthermore, as they were outside of the Moonlight Maze, the two of them were noticed by countless individuals. At that moment, the bystanders were spiritedly discussing the two of them. In fact, there were even people that were waving to them with smiles on their faces. Those were people that were trying to worm their way into befriending Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

After all, regardless of whether it was the Weaponry Refinement Immortal or Chu Feng, they were both truly grand individuals in the Holy Land of Martialism.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal was urging Chu Feng to leave not because he was afraid of the bystanders. Rather, it was because he was worried for Chu Feng.

He had never seen Chu Feng’s mind this unstable, and did not know what sort of effect this would have. Thus, in order to prevent against anything unexpected happening, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal felt that it was better to distance themselves

from places with a lot of people.

“Chu Feng, I’ve finally found you.”

Right at that moment, an angry, thunder-like shout exploded from within the crowd.

Following that, a group of people majestically walked through the crowd and arrived before Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. They had actually surrounded Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

They were people from the Heavenly Law Palace. A portion of them were people that Chu Feng was familiar with. They were people that had entered the Moonlight Maze together with Chu Feng and the others.

However, there was also a portion of people that Chu Feng had never met before. They were most likely reinforcements from the Heavenly Law Palace. The reason for that was because the person leading them right now was a black-faced old man with long sideburns.

That old man had a fiendish appearance. Furthermore, his cultivation was that of a rank six Martial Emperor. He was also a Heavenly Law Palace’s management elder. His name was Kuang Kui.

As for this Kuang Kui, he had possessed an exceptionally good relationship with Elder Yue Ling. Rumor had it that the two men started in the Heavenly Law Palace as disciples together. Furthermore, it was said that they were sworn brothers.

Thus, at this moment, Kuang Kui had an extremely furious expression on his face. He seemed to want to stare Chu Feng to death with his furious gaze. Evidently, he had come to know that Elder Yue Ling had been hounded to death, and he had come to cause trouble for Chu Feng.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal discovered that Kuang

Kui's behavior was abnormal. Thus, he said coldly, "Kuang Kui, I'd urge you to not cause trouble."

Furthermore, he not only spoke with words, he also emitted very strong coldness as he spoke. He had an attitude of attacking the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace should Kuang Kui continue to tangle with them.

It was not only Chu Feng who was in an extremely bad mood right now. In fact, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was also in an extremely bad mood. After all, Su Rou and Su Mei had stayed in his place for quite some time. As such, he possessed affection for them.

And now, Su Rou and Su Mei's physical bodies had been seized; it was impossible for him to not be worried.

"....."

Upon hearing those words spoken by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, that Elder Kuang Kui started to frown. However, he did not cower. After all, if he were to cower, he would not only shame himself, he would also shame the Heavenly Law Palace, and would be punished upon his return.

Thus, not only did he brace himself, he even pretended to be powerful as he said to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, "Weaponry Refinement Immortal, I respect you as an Immortal. However, this matter is between Chu Feng and our Heavenly Law Palace. I hope that you will not interfere."

"Little friend Chu Feng's business is my business," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said, unyielding.

"You!!!" Elder Kuang Kui did not expect the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to be this stubborn. Evidently, he was planning to stand up for Chu Feng regardless of what the situation might be.

"Weaponry Refinement Immortal, not only did that Chu Feng

indirectly cause the death of our Heavenly Law Palace's Elder Zhao Yu, he also hounded our Heavenly Law Palace's Elder Yue Ling to death. Are you certain you wish to interfere in this matter?" Elder Kuang Kui knew that they were no match for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. Thus, he could only bring up the Heavenly Law Palace to scare the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

"What? Chu Feng caused the death of Elder Zhao Yu and hounded Elder Yue Ling to death? Aren't those two elders both rank six Martial Emperors? How could their deaths both be related to Chu Feng? Exactly what happened in the Moonlight Maze?" At that moment, the people who didn't know what had happened were all confused.

Right at that moment, a loud shout was heard from the crowd. "Heavenly Law Palace, do not lie through your teeth. Back in the Moonlight Palace, little friend Chu Feng wanted to bring us away the moment he discovered that there were dangers. It was that Elder Yue Ling who insisted on saying that little friend Chu Feng was deceiving us because he coveted the treasures in the Moonlight Palace all for himself. He was the one who insisted that we stay."

"Later on, he swore that if he had wrongly accused Chu Feng, he would publicly kill himself."

"After that, a killing formation appeared in the Moonlight Maze. It was little friend Chu Feng who saved our lives. As for Elder Yue Ling, he found it difficult to go back on his word and committed suicide."

"As for that Zhao Yu, he was overcome by greed for the Moonlight Maze's Immortality Peaches and rendered little friend Chu Feng unconscious with poison. If it were not for the fact that we came promptly, it would likely be little friend Chu Feng who would have encountered mishaps."

"As for Zhao Yu's death, he died from poison from eating over a thousand Immortality Peaches by himself. His death is not related

to anyone.”

“Heavenly Law Palace, you all proclaim yourself to be righteous people who uphold the heavenly law, but in the Moonlight Maze, you all performed absolutely no righteous deeds whatsoever.”

“Not only did you all not do anything righteous, you all instead did malicious deeds, and nearly caused the deaths of all the people there. Yet now, you all actually want to frame little friend Chu Feng, who saved us? How much more shameless can you get?!”

Turning toward the source of the voice, the crowd saw that it was not a human who had shouted those words. Rather, it was a lizard-like monstrous beast. Although he only possessed a cultivation of peak Half Martial Emperor, he dared to refute the Heavenly Law Palace. Evidently, he was someone who was in the Moonlight Maze earlier, and experienced what had happened in there.

“You dare frame our Heavenly Law Palace? Lizard Monstrous Race, are you trying to go against our Heavenly Law Palace?!” Elder Kuang Kui narrowed his sword-like eyebrows and shouted angrily.

Once those words were spoken, the sky started to change. The coldness of his aura caused all those below rank six Martial Emperor to shiver. This was especially true for that lizard monstrous beast. At that moment, he was pushed back repeatedly by that oppressive might.

Evidently, this Elder Kuang Kui was planning to use the strength of their Heavenly Law Palace to suppress the crowd. He was planning to forcibly invert right and wrong.

At that moment, that lizard monstrous beast who spoke out against the Heavenly Law Palace earlier started to hesitate. While he was not afraid of death, he could not disregard the fate of his Lizard Monstrous Race.

Suddenly, a thick-browed and large eyed burly man shouted

among the crowd. “Facts speak louder than words. What happened in the Moonlight Maze earlier was seen and experienced by countless people. It is not something that your Heavenly Law Palace can forcibly change.”

“Brothers who were saved by little friend Chu Feng in the Moonlight Maze earlier, we all owe little friend Chu Feng our lives! While little friend Chu Feng declared that he would not need us to pay him back, this Heavenly Law Palace is actually trying to invert right and wrong to wrongly accuse little friend Chu Feng. At this sort of time, we should speak out for little friend Chu Feng, no?!”

“If we are afraid of even speaking out for our benefactor, we would be people with no moral integrity at all! As such, it would have been better if we had died in that Moonlight Maze!”

He was also someone who was saved by Chu Feng in the Moonlight Maze. He had questioned Chu Feng’s intentions in the Moonlight Maze. However, Chu Feng did not blame him for that, and instead saved the lives of everyone in the Moonlight Maze.

Afterward, Chu Feng had called for the help of the crowd to fight against the Dark Hall. Due to the fact that he was not strong enough, the large burly man had been unable to join the crowd.

This caused him to feel enormous guilt toward Chu Feng.

And now, the Heavenly Law Palace was actually wrongly accusing Chu Feng. As such, he could not sit by and remain indifferent.

Chapter 1996 – Killing With One Strike

“That’s right. Facts speak louder than words. We have all seen for ourselves what happened in the Moonlight Maze.”

“It is your Heavenly Law Palace that is in the wrong with regards to everything. Yet, not only are you all not planning to apologize to little friend Chu Feng, you actually want to invert right and wrong to frame little friend Chu Feng. Heavenly Law Palace, you all are truly shameless, truly unqualified to proclaim yourself to be a righteous sect that upholds the heavenly law!!!!”

“The Heavenly Law Palace is despicable and shameless, unworthy of being upright. Get the hell out of our Holy Land of Martialism!!!”

.....

All of a sudden, countless people stood forth. Not only were they speaking out for Chu Feng, they also began to insult the Heavenly Law Palace.

This scene completely stunned all those who did not know what happened in the Moonlight Maze. None of them expected Chu Feng to have such enormous crowd-rallying power.

One must know that all those people who spoke for Chu Feng were people that were unrelated to Chu Feng.

Yet now, they actually dared to go against the Heavenly Law Palace for Chu Feng. In fact, they were even insulting the Heavenly Law Palace. This was clearly an attitude of becoming enemies with the Heavenly Law Palace.

“You all!!!”

“You all!!!” Elder Kuang Kui was so enraged that his face turned red. He was gnashing his teeth and his body was shivering.

It was one thing for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal to go

against their Heavenly Law Palace. Yet, this trash actually also dared to go against their Heavenly Law Palace. This was extremely humiliating for them.

“All of you, you’re truly courting death here!!!” Sure enough, Elder Kuang Kui was unable to endure the humiliation. After a shout of anger, he suddenly lifted his right hand and spread open his palm. Immediately, a violent gale began to form.

His majestic oppressive might turned into an enormous vortex. As that vortex surged, it covered this region of space. Then, killing intent began to engulf the people who were cursing at their Heavenly Law Palace.

He was not only planning to threaten the crowd. Rather, he was planning to massacre them. He was planning to publicly kill those who dared to go against their Heavenly Law Palace so as to establish their might.

“Zzzzzzz~~~~”

However, right at that moment, a figure suddenly flashed through the sky. Like a phantom, that figure arrived beside Elder Kuang Kui.

It was Chu Feng. Not only did Chu Feng arrive before Elder Kuang Kui, he also possessed a murderous-looking gaze. Without saying a word, he suddenly waved the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand. “Snap!” Blood bubbled out. Elder Kuang Kui had been hacked in two.

Silence... everything became deathly quiet. Even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal stood there in a stunned manner.

Astonished. They were all incomparably astonished. Those who did not know how powerful Chu Feng was simply did not dare to believe what had just happened.

Chu Feng, a member of the younger generation, had actually killed a management elder of the Heavenly Law Palace, a renowned

rank six Martial Emperor, with only a single strike.

When ignoring one's cultivation, the crowd also did not expect that Chu Feng would dare to kill a Heavenly Law Palace's management elder before all these people.

“Chu Feng, you are truly bold! You actually dared to kill our Heavenly Law Palace's management elder, you...” Suddenly, a Heavenly Law Palace's elder managed to react to what had just happened. He pointed at Chu Feng and started to curse at Chu Feng.

If he was facing Chu Feng alone, he would absolutely not dare to say those sorts of words to Chu Feng. However, at that moment, they were in front of this many people, and their Heavenly Law Palace was a place that possessed impressive fame and power. Furthermore, it was also Chu Feng who was in the wrong for killing Kuang Kui. As such, he became confident and lashed out at Chu Feng without any fear.

“Puu~~~”

However, before he could finish his speech, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in Chu Feng's hand was waved once again. As a silvery light streaked across the sky, the void itself started to shiver. Like Elder Kuang Kui, that elder was also hacked in two. He was dead, killed by Chu Feng.

“Those who wish to die can continue to speak,” At this moment, Chu Feng's voice was incomparably cold. It was as if there was not the slightest trace of emotion in his voice. Instead, contained within his voice was only killing intent.

Sensing Chu Feng's dense killing intent, and seeing how Chu Feng had killed two of their Heavenly Law's Elders before their eyes, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace hurriedly shut their mouths. One by one, they possessed flustered appearances. They were all clearly deeply afraid. In fact, no one dared to even look at Chu Feng.

The people from the Heavenly Law Palace that had tried to create trouble for Chu Feng earlier all lowered their heads, afraid to even speak.

It was not only the people from the Heavenly Law Palace. The bystanders were also terrified. Even though they had heard about how renowned and powerful Chu Feng was, they had not expected the rumored Chu Feng to be this ruthless and fierce.

While anything could be fake, the strength which Chu Feng had revealed was definitely not fake; the killing intent that the crowd was feeling was definitely not fake.

“All of you, listen carefully. Regardless of whether you are the Heavenly Law Palace or the Dark Hall, if you want to make me, Chu Feng, an enemy, then feel free to come and find me. I, Chu Feng, am absolutely not one that is afraid. If you send one, I will kill one. If you send two, I will kill two. However many people come for me, I will kill that many people.”

Chu Feng’s voice was like thunder as it resonated through heaven and earth. His voice caused space and the void itself to tremble intensely. It was as if the firmament itself was scared of Chu Feng’s declaration.

When even the firmament was acting in such a way, there was no need to mention what the crowd was feeling. Not to mention those that had not been present in the Moonlight Maze, even the people that were defending Chu Feng were terrified by Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, after he finished saying those words, he walked off without a second thought. He was truly in no mood to bother speaking with the crowd anymore.

“Heavenly Law Palace, I urge you all to act tactfully. Although Chu Feng is only a member of the younger generation, he is not someone that you all can bully.”

“I urge you all to not make Chu Feng your enemy. Else, you all

will end up regretting it,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal warned in a serious manner.

He was telling the truth. The current Chu Feng dared to make the Dark Hall his enemy and possessed the Ancient Era’s Elves as his ally.

While the Heavenly Law Palace was indeed one of the human race’s three strongest powers, they were much inferior when compared to the Ancient Era’s Elves.

If the Heavenly Law Palace insisted on making Chu Feng an enemy, they would only be courting disaster.

However, the Heavenly Law Palace remained a power that had continued for countless years, one of the Holy Land of Martialism’s oldest powers. As someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal also did not wish for the destruction of the Heavenly Law Palace.

However, if the Heavenly Law Palace ignored his advice and insisted on making Chu Feng their enemy, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would also not spare the Heavenly Law Palace.

“Chu Feng, have you managed to calm yourself?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked after catching up to Chu Feng.

“I am fine. I am merely afraid that something will happen to Lil Rou and Lil Mei,” Chu Feng had calmed down a lot. However, his worry for Su Rou and Su Mei had not decreased in the slightest. Likewise, his self-blame had not decreased in the slightest. Instead, it had increased. Furthermore, he had a very serious expression on his face.

Seeing Chu Feng acting in such a manner, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal heaved a long sigh. He knew that it was useless for him to say anything to Chu Feng at such a time, because Chu Feng was a wise person that knew what to do. Thus, he did

not try to console Chu Feng. Instead, he asked, “What’s your plan now?”

“Return to the Cyanwood Mountain,” Chu Feng said.

“Return to the Cyanwood Mountain?” Hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal’s expression changed. He said, “Chu Feng, the Cyanwood Mountain is the place that you should not go to the most right now.”

“Right now, we have made the Dark Hall our absolute enemy, and the World Devastator Immortal has escaped. Likely, after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master comes to find out that it was I who ruined his plan, he absolutely will not spare me.”

“If they wish to find me, they will definitely come to the Cyanwood Mountain,” Chu Feng said.

“Since you know all that, then why do you want to return to the Cyanwood Mountain?” The Weaponry Refinement asked.

“What else should I do then? Am I to go to the Elf Kingdom and have the Elf Kingdom protect me while exposing all my friends in the Cyanwood Mountain to the Dark Hall so that they can slaughter them willingly?” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, that is not what I meant. Merely, one must consider the greater good. The greater one’s capability, the greater one’s responsibility. And you...” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal continued to advise Chu Feng.

“Senior Weaponry Refinement Immortal, if your kinsmen were in trouble, would you ignore them?” Chu Feng asked.

“I...” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal started to hesitate.

“I know that senior would not. I, Chu Feng, am the same. I will also not ignore them,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well then,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal sighed, but had nothing more to say. He knew that Chu Feng was very

stubborn. In the most crucial moment, Chu Feng was someone who would value his friends with loyalty and righteousness.

When asking himself honestly, it was also because of Chu Feng's loyalty and righteousness that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal admired and appreciated Chu Feng. Thus, he said, "Since you insist on returning, I will accompany you to the Cyanwood Mountain."

Chapter 1997 – Chu Feng Entering Closed Door Training

After Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal left, the curtains dropped completely on the Moonlight Maze's battle.

Although the great majority of the people that had entered the Moonlight Maze had returned empty-handed, there were also many that had obtained treasures in the Moonlight Maze.

The treasures from the Moonlight Maze were no ordinary items; they were all invaluable and priceless treasures. Some among them were even capable of starting wars.

However, to the people, the matter that was the most inconceivable were not the treasures that had been obtained from the Moonlight Maze. Rather, it was the major events that had occurred in the Moonlight Maze.

The first major event was the battle between the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's Elves. Even though those experts that fought against the Dark Hall all left after the battle, it remained that there was no wall in the world that didn't leak air. As such, news of the battle would eventually be spread. Furthermore, once it started, it spread like a wildfire.

When the crowd found out that the Dark Hall was a power capable of contending against the Ancient Era's Elves, and that the map of the Moonlight Maze was spread by them with the intention of killing all those that entered in order to summon the Moon Demon, the crowd all began to feel enormous fear of the Dark Hall.

They all realized that the mysterious power that had suddenly emerged was an extremely dangerous power.

The Dark Hall had declared themselves to be the power that would rule over the Holy Land of Martialism. And now, they actually did this sort of thing. As such, the crowd could not help

but feel fear toward the Dark Hall.

As for the second major event, it was the resentment between Chu Feng and the Heavenly Law Palace. Even though the Heavenly Law Palace's Elder Yue Ling and Elder Zhao Yu had indeed wronged Chu Feng in the Moonlight Maze, it remained that Chu Feng had killed Elder Kuang Kui without bothering to say a single word to him when he questioned Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's action was absolutely looking down on the Heavenly Law Palace.

Although there were people declaring that the Ancient Era's Elves were allies with Chu Feng, to many humans, the Heavenly Law Palace was not an existence inferior to the Ancient Era's Elves. Thus, they felt that a great catastrophe would befall Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because, with the nature of the Heavenly Law Palace, they would absolutely not leave the matter at that.

At the moment when this news was rapidly spreading throughout the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had arrived at the Cyanwood Mountain.

After returning to the Cyanwood Mountain, Chu Feng entered closed-door training. He was going to use his world spirit techniques to study a grand spirit formation that not even peak Martial Emperors could break through.

That grand spirit formation was extremely difficult. Furthermore, with Chu Feng's world spirit techniques, it was even more difficult to successfully set up that spirit formation.

However, Chu Feng still had to study it. The reason for that was because the Cyanwood Mountain was no longer the same as before. After what had happened in the Moonlight Maze, even Zhang Tianyi and his father had arrived at the Cyanwood Mountain.

It could be said that all the people related to Chu Feng were

practically all gathered in the Cyanwood Mountain right now. As the battle against the Dark Hall had already begun, Chu Feng had to put forth all of his strength to protect the people important to him.

During this time when Chu Feng was in closed-door training, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian, Zhang Tianyi and his father Zhang Ming, Bai Ruochen, Jiang Wushang and the others were all closely guarding the gate of Chu Feng's closed-door training location.

They were all worried for Chu Feng. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had looked like a completely different person ever since he had returned. They all knew that Chu Feng was acting like this because of Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Has little friend Chu Feng still not left his closed-door training?” An old man walked over to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and asked worriedly.

Not only did this old man possess the same powerful cultivation as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, his reputation was also on par with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. That old man was the Immeasurable Immortal.

“Why is that boy Chu Feng so stubborn? It would be one thing to protect one person. But he wants to protect the entire Cyanwood Mountain. The Cyanwood Mountain is such an enormous place. Yet, he wants to set up a spirit formation capable of withstanding peak Martial Emperors? Isn't that simply indulging in fantasy?”

“If he continues on with this, he might go haywire and become possessed by a devil,” A snow-haired woman said.

This person was also one of the Holy Land of Martialism's Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. She was the person that had wanted to make Chu Feng her disciple, the Snow-haired Immortal.

Both the Immeasurable Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal possessed a decent relationship with the Ancient Era's Elves. After finding out about the battle between the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall, they had immediately proceeded to the Elf Kingdom to assist them.

However, they were instead asked by the Elf King to come to the Cyanwood Mountain. Furthermore, they brought back news upon their arrival to the Cyanwood Mountain.

As the Dark Hall had suffered enormously in the Moonlight Maze, those Dark Hall's forces that were attacking the various strategic locations held by the Ancient Era's Elves had all retreated.

However, the Ancient Era's Elves did not relax just because of that. Instead, they were increasing the defenses at all these strategic locations so that they could face the Dark Hall's next assault.

At the same time, the Ancient Era's Elves were worried for the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, this time around, they had not only requested that the Immeasurable Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal go to assist the Cyanwood Mountain, they had also dispatched a lot of their own forces to the Cyanwood Mountain as well.

"Snow-hair, you can't say it like that. Little friend Chu Feng's world spirit techniques have surpassed our own. Likely, in the Holy Land of Martialism, only the Heaven Reaching Immortal possesses world spirit techniques comparable to little friend Chu Feng," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

After personally seeing Chu Feng grasping the spirit formation capable of sealing the Moon Demon in an instant, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was fully aware of how powerful Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were.

"Little friend Chu Feng's talent is truly exceptional. Furthermore world spirit techniques are the strongest defensive method in this

world. In fact, there are even rumors that say that world spiritists are actually the strongest experts in the world.”

“Merely, no one was capable of using only world spirit techniques. This is why the people in the Holy Land of Martialism ended up choosing, without the slightest hesitation, to master martial cultivation instead of world spirit techniques.”

“However, little friend Chu Feng’s attainments in world spirit techniques are greatly superior to our own,” The Immeasurable Immortal also praised Chu Feng.

“Isn’t that evaluation a bit too high?” Hearing those words, the Snow-haired Immortal revealed a disbelieving expression.

Even though she held great appreciation and admiration for Chu Feng, she did not feel that only the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s world spirit techniques would be comparable to Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques.

The reason for that was because she knew very well that the World Devastator Immortal was capable of ranking second amongst the Ten Immortals not only because of his martial cultivation. Most importantly, his world spirit techniques were exceptionally powerful.

However, based on what the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had said, Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques had already surpassed those of the World Devastator Immortal. She felt very skeptical of that.

“Snow-hair, don’t forget that little friend Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist. Without mentioning anything else, merely the fact that he could make Asura World Spirits serve him is already something that no one can compare with,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Indeed. Chu Feng’s strength back then cannot be compared to his current strength.”

“Back then, Chu Feng was merely a rank one Half Martial Emperor. However, he released a rank one Martial Emperor-level Asura Evil Spirit in the Nangong Imperial Clan.”

“Although that Asura Evil Spirit was only a rank one Martial Emperor, it nearly razed our Nangong Imperial Clan to the ground. Even though I managed to beat it back afterwards, I was also injured in the process.”

“Furthermore, I felt that Asura Evil Spirit’s strength to not have been completely revealed. Else, even I would not have been a match for it.”

“And that, that is the potential that little friend Chu Feng possesses,” Nangong Longjian said.

“.....” At that moment, the Snow-haired Immortal grew silent. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s past accomplishments were truly astonishing and unbelievable.

In fact, after hearing what Nangong Longjian said, it was not only the Snow-haired Immortal that was astonished. All the other grand characters present sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

There were not many people that knew exactly what had happened in the Nangong Imperial Clan with the Asura Evil Spirit. This was also the first time that they had heard that story.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng was very powerful, what Chu Feng had revealed was only his heaven-defying battle power, as well as his powerful Inherited Bloodline. Thus, the crowd was focused mostly upon the martial aspect of Chu Feng’s cultivation. By comparison, they did not focus as much on Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques.

Yet now, the crowd finally realized that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were actually his most frightening aspect.

Chapter 1998 – Completing The Spirit Formation

This time around, Chu Feng was in closed-door training for a very long time. Since he started his closed-door training, two months had already passed. Yet, Chu Feng had yet to come out of his closed-door training.

With Chu Feng not coming out of his closed-door training, this caused an increase instead of a decrease of the people standing guard outside the gates to his closed-door training location. Some among them had even let go of their work to stand outside the gate.

Even though the crowd all knew that Chu Feng possessed outstanding talent, they were still very worried for Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng's goal this time around was truly too difficult.

To create a spirit formation that not even peak Martial Emperors could break through was something that none of the World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism dared to think about. Yet, Chu Feng was actually attempting it.

It was not that the crowd wished for Chu Feng's failure. Rather, they were worried that Chu Feng would make things difficult for himself and hurt himself in the process.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Two months and three days since the day Chu Feng entered closed-door training, rumbles slowly sounded.

Then, the tightly shut gate was finally opened.

“Chu Feng.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd were all extremely emotional. Immediately, they swarmed around Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?” After seeing Chu Feng, the crowd

became extremely nervous.

At that moment, Chu Feng's complexion was deathly pale. He appeared to have become much weaker. Compared to when he had entered closed door training, he was three sizes skinnier. At that moment, he looked like skin on bones without any flesh. Even his appearance had changed.

However, although the crowd were all extremely worried for Chu Feng, Chu Feng had a smile on his face. He looked to them and said, "Seniors, I-I succeeded."

After Chu Feng said those words with a weak voice, his eyes closed, and his body shifted. He had fainted before the crowd.

"Chu Feng!!!" Seeing Chu Feng fainting before them, the crowd were extremely worried.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other world spiritists immediately caught Chu Feng to prevent him from falling. Then they began to inspect Chu Feng for injuries.

Furthermore, as they began to inspect Chu Feng for injuries, they took out countless rare treasures and medicinal herbs that could heal injuries. For the sake of saving Chu Feng, not to mention those treasures, they would even be willing to use their own cultivations without the slightest hesitation.

To them, Chu Feng was simply too important.

Unable to contain themselves, Nangong Longjian and the others asked, "Exactly what's going on with Chu Feng?"

"There's no fatal danger."

"Merely..." The Weaponry Refinement Immortal started to frown. A pained expression appeared on his aged face.

"Merely?" The crowd asked. They were so worried that their hearts were about to jump out from their bodies. They truly feared that something had happened to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng’s body is too weak. It is as if he has exhausted himself completely. He has injured his core. As such, he will likely not be able to recover within a short period of time,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Why would Chu Feng be like this?” The crowd were both confused and worried.

“Most likely, for the sake of researching that spirit formation, Chu Feng disregarded his own health, and overloaded himself in using his spirit energy to communicate with world spirit power. This child, he has truly disregarded consequences,” Zhang Tianyi’s father Zhang Ming said.

Although Zhang Ming was not one of the Ten Immortals, he was also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. His world spirit techniques were very powerful. Thus, he was able to tell what had caused Chu Feng’s current state.

Hearing those words, Baili Xuankong and the others from the Cyanwood Mountain, as well as Chu Feng’s good brothers Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi all lowered their heads.

They knew that Chu Feng had done that for their sake, he had done it all in order to protect them. Chu Feng had decided to study that spirit formation precisely so that he could protect the Cyanwood Mountain’s elders and disciples, as well as his brothers.

Currently, the several strongest Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Holy Land of Martialism were gathered in the Cyanwood Mountain. Their healing abilities were very exceptional.

However, even with this being the case, the several Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists unanimously believed that it would take at least a month for Chu Feng to regain consciousness and half a year to recover. If things were bad, this might even end up affecting Chu Feng’s future prospects.

However, Chu Feng had caused them to feel disbelief once again. In merely a short two days, Chu Feng regained consciousness.

After waking up, although Chu Feng was still weak in health, his health was much better than the crowd had anticipated. His core that was injured earlier had completely recovered. As such, there would be no effects to his world spirit techniques or martial cultivation in the future.

Furthermore, judging from Chu Feng's appearance, there was simply no need for half a year to recover. With the assistance of the various medicines, Chu Feng would be able to completely recover in only several days' worth of time.

Most importantly, after Chu Feng woke up, even though his health was still weak, he was extremely excited.

"Seniors, I've succeeded. I've truly succeeded. As long as seniors are willing to help me, I will definitely be able to set up a grand spirit formation that is capable of protect everyone in the Cyanwood Mountain. That spirit formation will be sufficient to accommodate everyone in the Cyanwood Mountain," Chu Feng said excitedly.

"Chu Feng, did you really?" Hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others did not dare to believe their ears.

Even though they were confident in Chu Feng, it remained too inconceivable for Chu Feng to be able to successfully research a grand formation that could withstand peak Martial Emperors within a period of only two months.

"Seniors, please look," Chu Feng did not bother with superfluous words. Instead, he got up from his bed and arrived at the palace hall.

"Chu Feng," At that moment, a lot of people were gathered in the vast hall. These were all Chu Feng's acquaintances and friends.

Due to being worried for Chu Feng, they had all rushed over.

Merely, the current Chu Feng did not greet the crowd. Instead, he rolled up his sleeves and then began to use his hand as the writing brush and his world spirit power as the ink to draw the formation diagram for his spirit formation.

His golden-bright and dazzling Royal level spirit power soon filled the entire palace hall. It was like a golden, dazzling starry sky.

Not to mention the world spiritists present, even those who didn't understand any world spirit techniques and those with low levels of accomplishment in world spirit techniques were fascinated by the scene before them.

Merely by looking, they were able to tell how miraculous and exceptional the formation diagram that Chu Feng was outlining was.

“Amazing, truly amazing. Chu Feng, he really succeeded.”

“If it wasn't for him outlining it, I truly would not dare to believe that world spirit power could be used in this sort of manner. This sort of method of setting up world spirit formations is simply something that I had never before imagined,” The Snow-haired Immortal was exceptionally emotional upon seeing Chu Feng's outline.

She was the world spiritist that had doubted Chu Feng the most earlier. However, the world spiritist that was most emotionally moved right now was also her. She who was always cold and ruthless when facing others was actually brimming with tears of excitement right now.

However, her reaction could not be blamed on her. Merely, the formation diagram that Chu Feng had outlined was truly too amazing.

At that moment, the Snow-haired Immortal felt as if she had

obtained something that she had formerly only yearned for in her dreams, something that she should not have been able to obtain.

Even though Chu Feng was merely outlining a formation diagram, it was simply akin to a piece of art to the Snow-haired Immortal, a piece of art which she could not create herself.

“This spirit formation’s complexity greatly surpasses my imagination. For Chu Feng to be able to create it is truly unimaginable.”

“Yet, Chu Feng was actually able to demonstrate it for us in such a concise manner so that we can understand it just by looking at it. Chu Feng, you are truly a genius, a genius that surpasses my imagination.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly made me feel ashamed of being inferior,” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was also praising Chu Feng nonstop. Not only did Chu Feng manage to create an impossible spirit formation through research and study, the formation diagram which he had outlined was equally exceptional. It was something that they were unable of outlining themselves.

“Indeed, I also feel ashamed of being inferior,” The Immeasurable Immortal and Zhang Ming also expressed their views while exclaiming with admiration and excitement.

Chapter 1999 – Settlement

“In that case, Chu Feng really succeeded? He is now capable of setting up a spirit formation that not even peak Martial Emperors can break through?” Baili Xuankong asked with excitement.

After Baili Xuankong asked that, everyone present grew silent. At this moment, the palace hall became so quiet that the crowd’s heartbeats could be heard.

“Yes, we are capable of that now,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists nodded in unison.

“Woooahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Hearing those words, explosive cheering sounds burst forth from the quiet palace hall. Everyone was endlessly moved. In fact, some people even started to brim with tears of excitement.

Through the various events that had happened, they already realized how frightening the Dark Hall was. Originally, they felt that they would definitely meet a tragic death should the Dark Hall attack them.

However, now that they possessed that grand spirit formation, they were safe. As such, how could they not be excited?

Overwhelmed with excitement, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang began to lift Chu Feng up high. Compared to the experts from the older generation, the two of them were even more excited. As Chu Feng was their brother, they felt even more proud of Chu Feng.

“Hey, what are you all doing? Chu Feng’s body is still very weak. Quickly, put him back down.”

However, upon seeing that scene, the Snow-haired Immortal shouted at them angrily. In fact, she even directly snatched Chu Feng away from Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi.

Even though she had already snatched Chu Feng away from them, she still stared ferociously at Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi, “Have you all gone crazy? Chu Feng has finally woken up. If he becomes unconscious again because of you, I’ll slaughter you all.”

The Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes were deep red. She appeared extremely ferocious and murderous-looking. Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang were so stunned with fear that they didn’t know what to do.

At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others started to snicker up their sleeves. When Chu Feng was in his closed-door training, the Snow-haired Immortal had spoken in doubt of Chu Feng. Yet, after she saw his injured health, she was more worried for him than anyone else. She was truly a sharp-tongued but soft-hearted person.

No, she was a genuine stone-hearted, vicious, and merciless demon.

However, when it came to Chu Feng, she became very tenderhearted.

“Senior Snow-hair, I am fine,” Chu Feng smiled in an embarrassed manner.

“You’re really fine?” The Snow-haired Immortal was skeptical.

“Really,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a healing medicinal herb and swallowed it. Then, with a thought, his Supreme Secret Skill, the Vermilion Bird Resurrection Technique, was activated.

Once the Vermilion Bird Resurrection Technique was activated, Chu Feng’s complexion began to become much better. In merely an instant, his appearance and complexion returned to normal.

“Chu Feng, what is that technique? It’s truly magical,” The Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes were wide open. She had an expression of amazement on her face.

At that moment, the others were also astonished by Chu Feng's technique that he had revealed. However, they all had joyous expressions on their faces. They were overjoyed by Chu Feng being able to completely recover from his injuries.

“Lord Assembly Master, this is bad!” Right at that moment, a Cyanwood Sacred Assembly's elder rushed into the palace hall in panic.

“For you to panic and shout like this, what has happened?” Originally, Baili Xuankong had been in a superb mood. However, the sudden shouting from this person caused him to become extremely displeased.

“The Heavenly Law Palace's army has entered the Cyanwood Domain. They are currently coming to attack our Cyanwood Mountain,” That elder said.

“Humph, so they've actually come. They truly have the nerve,” After hearing those words, Lord Lianghua started to narrow his sword-like eyebrows, and a burst of chilly air began to pervade his surroundings.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal, Nangong Longjian and the many other grand characters were also reacting in the same manner.

They did not feel surprised by that news. Instead, they appeared to be ready to face the incoming enemies.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng asked, “Heavenly Law Palace's army? Could it be that something happened during the time I was in closed-door training?”

Even though Chu Feng had publicly killed Kuang Kui outside of the Moonlight Maze in a burst of rage, and already knew that the Heavenly Law Palace would come to retaliate against him, it remained unnatural for the people here to react as if they already

knew of the Heavenly Law Palace's arrival.

For them to be this prepared, Chu Feng knew that something must've happened during the time he was in closed-door training.

"Chu Feng, the Heavenly Law Palace is truly shameless. Since they dared to come, we must teach them a lesson."

"Else, they'll think that their Heavenly Law Palace is the ruler of the Holy Land of Martialism," Lord Lianghua said.

After that, Chu Feng came to know about what had happened during his closed-door training...

It turned out that news of Chu Feng's killing of Kuang Kui spread like wildfire throughout the Holy Land of Martialism. As the Heavenly Law Palace cared deeply about their face, they would naturally not leave the matter at that.

Thus, the Heavenly Law Palace declared to the world that Chu Feng had a time limit of a month to proceed to their Heavenly Law Palace and give an account of his actions.

If Chu Feng were to fail to show up, their Heavenly Law Palace's army would flatten the Cyanwood Mountain.

When that news was spread, the entire Holy Land of Martialism burst into an outrage.

However, the Cyanwood Mountain was very calm to the whole threat, and simply did not even bother to respond to the Heavenly Law Palace.

The reason for that was because the current Cyanwood Mountain was completely different from before. Countless experts were now gathered in the Cyanwood Mountain.

Furthermore, Lord Lianghua, this rank eight Martial Emperor, was overseeing the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, even though the Cyanwood Mountain remained one of the Nine Powers, their strength already surpassed that of the Four Great Imperial Clans.

Furthermore, they possessed the backing of the Ancient Era's Elves. As such, how could they possibly fear the Heavenly Law Palace?

In fact, for the current Cyanwood Mountain, not only were they not afraid of the Heavenly Law Palace, they instead wished for the Heavenly Law Palace to attack them. They wanted to show the people of the world what sort of strength their Cyanwood Mountain possessed right now.

That battle would not only be for their Cyanwood Mountain's honor, most importantly, it was a battle to defend Chu Feng's dignity.

"Lord Lianghua, your intention is to face the Heavenly Law Palace?" Chu Feng asked.

"What else? We're not scared of them. Thus... it's only natural that we must face them in battle," Lord Lianghua said with a smile.

"I understand," Chu Feng also smiled. With those words from Lord Lianghua, Chu Feng became confident.

Thus, Chu Feng's body shifted and turned into a ray of light. He flew out from the palace hall and soared high into the sky. He was flying toward the main entrance of the Cyanwood Mountain.

Following Chu Feng, the many experts also soared into the sky. Like reverse meteors, they followed after Chu Feng.

"Little friend Chu Feng!!!"

When Chu Feng flew out from the Cyanwood Sacred Assembly and reached the main entrance of the Cyanwood Mountain, several powerful figures flew towards him and began to greet him.

These people were all Martial Emperors. They were people that Chu Feng had saved in the Moonlight Maze. They abided by their promise and had become nominal elders of the Cyanwood Mountain. Currently, all the experts from the Cyanwood Mountain were gathered here to face the incoming Heavenly Law Palace.

“Senior Snow Blade, you’ve also come?” Chu Feng was delighted by the appearance of an old man among the crowd. That old man was none other than the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

Snow Blade Mad Demon did not join the Cyanwood Mountain. Evidently, he had rushed to the Cyanwood Mountain after finding out that the Heavenly Law Palace planned to attack the Cyanwood Mountain.

“I’ve said it before. Your business is my business. The Heavenly Law Palace waging war against you is equivalent to them waging war against me. I will definitely not leave this matter be,” said the Snow Blade Mad Demon as he patted his chest.

There was not the slightest trace of fear in this old man. Contained within him was a dense amount of excitement. He was prepared to fight against the Heavenly Law Palace.

“Very well, today, together with everyone here, we shall face that so-called righteous and upright sect,” Chu Feng spoke with a loud voice.

“Hahahaha!!!” Hearing those words, the crowd burst into loud laughter. Chu Feng’s ‘righteous and upright sect’ was spoken with such mockery.

As Chu Feng spoke, he reached the front of the crowd.

After carefully inspecting the scene before him, Chu Feng discovered that the current Cyanwood Mountain was truly bustling with noise and excitement.

In the distance, regardless of whether it was the sky, the ground or even the void of space itself, countless silhouettes were gathered. None of those people were from the Cyanwood Mountain, nor were they people from the Cyanwood Domain. Rather, they were from all over the Holy Land of Martialism.

Evidently, after the news of the Heavenly Law Palace planning to attack the Cyanwood Mountain spread, these people had come to

watch the excitement.

However, having people come to watch the battle was precisely what Chu Feng wanted.

He wanted to let everyone know that he, Chu Feng, was no longer that weak boy from back then, that he was not someone who could be easily bullied.

Not even the renowned Heavenly Law Palace that had existed for tens of thousands of years would be able to bully him.

Today, he would reach a settlement with the Heavenly Law Palace before all these people.

Chapter 2000 – Duanmu Feiyu

Chu Feng and the others were prepared to face the Heavenly Law Palace head-on.

However, the bystanders that came from all over the Holy Land of Martialism were unable to see Chu Feng and the others at all.

The reason for that was because the Cyanwood Mountain was currently a place with countless experts. These experts had already set up a spirit formation that covered the entire Cyanwood Mountain.

Although the people from the Cyanwood Mountain were able to see everything outside through the spirit formation, the people outside of the spirit formation were simply unable to see the battle formation of the Cyanwood Mountain.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, roars were heard from the distant sky. Those were the sounds of ferocious beasts. Like rolling thunder, they echoed from afar.

As the crowd turned their gazes toward the direction of the sound, their eyes all started to shine. A vast amount of white clouds were arriving from far away. It was like a white wave moving about in the clear sky.

After the vast white clouds approached, banners could be seen within the surging white clouds. Those banners were fluttering with the wind. They were the banners of the Heavenly Law Palace.

Soon, the troops of the Heavenly Law Palace appeared. It was an orderly army. Each and every one of them was holding a weapon. Not only were they equipped for battle, they gave off a soaring air of arrogance. It was as if celestial troops and generals had descended upon the mortal realm.

However, along with the appearance of the Heavenly Law

Palace's troops was an innumerable amount of powerful monstrous beasts. Those monstrous beasts had also arrived on the clouds.

Those monstrous beasts were not only ferocious in appearance; their bodies were also several tens of meters long. The largest ones were several hundred meters long. As they galloped in the sky and above the clouds, they truly appeared to be earth-shattering beings. The roars from those monstrous beasts were capable of shaking heaven and earth, and bringing fear to the hearts of countless individuals.

However, those ferocious and enormous monstrous beasts were nothing more than mounts. Not only were they ridden by the Heavenly Law Palace's experts, they were also pulling enormous war chariots.

On those war chariots was the army of the Heavenly Law Palace.

"Sure enough, the Heavenly Law Palace has come. Everyone, quickly, look. The person leading the Heavenly Law Palace, his aura is truly frightening. It's as if he can kill me with merely a glance."

"I-I-Isn't that the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master?"

The Heavenly Law Palace's troops were emitting a majestic and imposing vigor. As for the person leading them, he caused the crowd to become extremely excited. At the same time they felt their blood boiling with excitement, the crowd's hair was also standing on end.

He was an old man wearing snow-white clothes. His long white hair looked like a snow white waterfall that sprinkled gracefully down from the sky.

Apart from his tidy outfit, that old man also possessed an extremely handsome appearance. Although he was clearly an old man, there were no wrinkles to be seen on his face. His skin was

akin to that of an infant.

With that sort of infant-like skin being matched with his thick, snow-white brows, he looked like a handsome old man that could cause one's hackles to rise.

As for that old man, he was greatly renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism. He was the Palace Master of the Heavenly Law Palace. His name was Duanmu Feiyu.

Standing to either side of Duanmu Feiyu were two old men wearing headdresses. Their headdresses had the characters 'heaven' and 'law' on them. They were the two most powerful individuals in the Heavenly Law Palace apart from Duanmu Feiyu.

They were, respectively, the Heaven Palace Master and the Law Palace Master. They were the Heavenly Law Palace's two Deputy Palace Masters.

"Heavens, it's one thing for those powerful Heavenly Law Palace's management elders to be present."

"That the Heaven Palace Master and the Law Palace Master, the two Deputy Palace Masters, have also come is truly unexpected.."

"Even the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master, Duanmu Feiyu himself, has come. Practically all of the strongest Heavenly Law Palace's experts have arrived."

"Isn't this simply mustering up an enormous force? Will the Cyanwood Mountain be able to withstand them?" Seeing the battle formation of the Heavenly Law Palace, the crowd became worried for the Cyanwood Mountain.

Even though the Cyanwood Mountain had been increasing in strength in recent days, the crowd felt that it had not been long enough since the Cyanwood Mountain had started to emerge in strength. Thus, no matter what, they would not be able to contend against the Heavenly Law Palace, a power that had continued for tens of thousands of years and was deemed to be one of the

strongest human powers.

It would be one thing if the Heavenly Law Palace had only dispatched their management elders and the two Deputy Palace Masters. Yet, even their Palace Master, Duanmu Feiyu, had come. It was evident that they planned to completely eradicate the Cyanwood Mountain. As such, the crowd all felt that the Cyanwood Mountain would not be able to withstand them.

After all, the Heavenly Law Palace's two Deputy Palace Masters were already rank six Martial Emperors. As for their Palace Master, Duanmu Feiyu, he was a rank eight Martial Emperor, someone incredibly close to becoming a peak Martial Emperor.

Against such powerful existences, even if the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Nangong Longjian, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and all the other experts were all in the Cyanwood Mountain now, they would still be no match for them.

After all, Duanmu Feiyu was one of the utmost experts of the Holy Land of Martialism. He was a true peak expert.

In an era without an overlord, who could possibly contend against Duanmu Feiyu? Likely, it would only be the Mortal Prince Palace's Palace Master, the Underworld Palace's Palace Master, and the Ancient Era's Elves' Elf King.

"Chu Feng, I know that you're in the Cyanwood Mountain. If you don't wish for the Cyanwood Mountain to be exterminated alongside you, get out here and receive your death."

"Else... today, I shall flatten the Cyanwood Mountain," Duanmu Feiyu spoke with a cold voice.

"Flatten the Cyanwood Mountain? What arrogance."

At that moment, Chu Feng's voice suddenly sounded. Following closely behind him, countless silhouettes began to fly out from the Cyanwood Mountain's spirit formation.

"Look, the Cyanwood Mountain's army is coming out. Sure

enough, they are prepared for battle.”

Seeing the Cyanwood Mountain’s elders and disciples flying out from the Cyanwood Mountain in an orderly manner holding the banners of the Cyanwood Mountain, the excited crowd became even more fired up.

The reason for that was because the Cyanwood Mountain’s strength surpassed their imagination. Merely their Martial Emperors numbered more than a thousand. Furthermore, it seemed that they were all renowned experts. However, at that moment, those Martial Emperors all possessed one distinctive feature. That was, they were all wearing the outfits of the Cyanwood Mountain.

The person leading this group of experts was Chu Feng. At that moment, Chu Feng had already unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. Furthermore, he was holding the Coiling Dragon Furious Beheader in his hand. His majestic aura was spread far and wide. As such, everyone was able to sense how powerful this member of the younger generation was.

Furthermore, standing to either side of Chu Feng were the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, Nangong Longjian, the Snow Blade Mad Demon, the Snow-haired Immortal and many other renowned experts. As such, Chu Feng appeared to be even more imposing, even more domineering.

“Never would I have expected that so many people would join the Cyanwood Mountain. We have underestimated the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Could it be that the rumors are all true? That those people have all joined the Cyanwood Mountain because they were saved by Chu Feng? Chu Feng’s rallying power is truly too frightening, no? One must know that those people are all extremely stubborn old fellows that were unphased by any power’s invitation before.”

After seeing the experts that were standing to either side of Chu

Feng, the crowd was unable to contain themselves, and gasped in admiration. Chu Feng's battle formation was truly too frightening.

To the crowd, they felt that there were only four powers that could contend against this battle formation. They were the Heavenly Law Palace, the Mortal King Palace, the Underworld Palace and the Ancient Era's Elves.

Not even the many monstrous beast races and the Four Great Imperial Clans would be a match for Chu Feng.

Even though the strength revealed by the Cyanwood Mountain had caused the crowd to become speechless, and many of the Heavenly Law Palace's elders to frown, the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master, Duanmu Feiyu, still possessed an expression of disdain on his face.

He snorted coldly, then looked to Chu Feng, "You are that Chu Feng?"

Chapter 2001 – Two Armies Joining Hands

“Since you know, why bother asking?” Chu Feng said.

“Did you truly think that you’d be able to stop this Palace Master with only those people?” As Duanmu Feiyu said those words, he took another look at the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others. Then, he shouted, “Did you all truly think that you can stop me?”

His shout brought forth a strong wind. Not only did his ferocious power sweep through the region, he had also created an upheaval in the hearts of the crowd.

Their opponent was a rank eight Martial Emperor, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master, Duanmu Feiyu. He was a super expert whose fame had been renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism for many years.

Although a lot of experts were gathered in the Cyanwood Mountain now, in terms of their reputation and strength, none of them were comparable to Duanmu Feiyu.

Would the Cyanwood Mountain really be able to withstand the Heavenly Law Palace?

In fact, it was not only the bystanders who were thinking that way. Even the people from the Cyanwood Mountain had that question in their minds.

With the Cyanwood Mountain’s strength, they would not be able to withstand the Heavenly Law Palace.

“What if you add this old man? What do you think then?” Suddenly, a figure flew out from the spirit formation that covered the Cyanwood Mountain.

It was one of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Four Grand Elders, Lord Lianghua.

“That person is?!”

Once Lord Lianghua appeared, the crowd’s expressions all changed. The reason for that was because they were all able to tell from Lord Lianghua’s appearance that he was an Ancient Era’s Elf.

Furthermore, most importantly, Lord Lianghua did not conceal his aura, and instead revealed his strength. Thus, everyone was able to sense that Lord Lianghua’s aura was not inferior to Duanmu Feiyu’s.

“Rank eight Martial Emperor. His aura is identical to Duanmu Feiyu’s. He’s a rank eight Martial Emperor!”

“Who is that person? How could he be that powerful? Could he be the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Elf King?”

Many people did not know Lord Lianghua, nor did they know the Ancient Era’s Elves’ true strength. Seeing how powerful Lord Lianghua was, the crowd all felt that he should be the strongest amongst the Ancient Era’s Elves, their Majesty, the Elf King.

In fact, even Duanmu Feiyu started to frown upon seeing Lord Lianghua.

While others might not recognize Lord Lianghua, he knew who Lord Lianghua was. Thus, he knew that Lord Lianghua was not inferior to him.

“Duanmu Feiyu, what’s wrong? Could it be that you don’t recognize this old man?” Lord Lianghua asked with a loud voice. The gaze with which he looked to Duanmu Feiyu contained a trace of disdain.

“Haha...”

“How could I possibly forget one of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Four Grand Elders, Lianghua?” Duanmu Feiyu said with a smile.

“One of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Four Grand Elders, Lianghua?”

“I’ve heard of that person before. However, I’ve never seen him

before.”

“Could that Ancient Era’s Elf there really be Lord Lianghua? But, if Lord Lianghua, one of the Four Grand Elders, already possesses this level of strength, how powerful would the Elf King be?”

The crowd all heard what Duanmu Feiyu said. At that moment, they were extremely shocked and terrified. They suddenly realized that the Ancient Era’s Elves seemed to be more powerful than the Heavenly Law Palace.

“Since you know who I am, why are you not retreating? Could it be that your Heavenly Law Palace wishes to make an enemy of our Ancient Era’s Elves?” Lord Lianghua spoke coldly.

“Lianghua, it seems that your Ancient Era’s Elves are truly planning to shield that Chu Feng?” Duanmu Feiyu asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng has already entered into an alliance with our Ancient Era’s Elves. If you dare to touch little friend Chu Feng, you will be making an enemy of our Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“I believe you know very well the strength that we Ancient Era’s Elves possess. Not to mention your Heavenly Law Palace, even if the Mortal King Palace and the Underworld Palace were to join hands with you, you all would still not be a match for us Ancient Era’s Elves,” Lord Lianghua said.

Once those words were spoken, the crowd that did not know about how powerful the Ancient Era’s Elves truly were began to have a whole new level of respect for the Ancient Era’s Elves.

The reason for that was because someone of Lord Lianghua’s status would absolutely not be one to boast. Furthermore, Duanmu Feiyu did not refute Lord Lianghua. Thus, this led the crowd to feel that what Lord Lianghua had said was the truth.

The Ancient Era’s Elves possessed a frightening power that not even the Three Palaces could take on even if they were to join hands.

They suddenly realized that their former beliefs that the Three Palaces could compare to the Ancient Era's Elves was simply a foolish thought.

It turned out that the Ancient Era's Elves were the true strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Hahahaha...” However, after hearing what Lord Lianghua said, not only did Duanmu Feiyu not show signs of fear, he instead burst into loud laughter.

His laughter could be said to be filled with provocation. This came as a surprise to Lord Lianghua. Had it been before, Duanmu Feiyu was someone that would have acted reserved upon seeing him. Yet, what had happened to him today?

Thus, Lord Lianghua asked with a cold voice, “Duanmu Feiyu, are you trying to court death?”

“Lianghua, truth be told, if it was before, I would definitely have given you face should you have wished to protect that Chu Feng.”

“However, the current situation is different. Your Ancient Era's Elves are powerless to defend yourselves. And yet, you still dare to come and involve yourself in the grudges between our Heavenly Law Palace and Chu Feng. The way I see it... the ones courting death are not our Heavenly Law Palace. Instead, it is you Ancient Era's Elves,” Duanmu Feiyu said.

Hearing those words, Lord Lianghua was immediately enraged. He began to tightly clench his fists. He finally knew why Duanmu Feiyu dared to act this arrogant toward him. It turned out that he already knew that their Ancient Era's Elves were fighting against the Dark Hall. That was why he dared to act this arrogant.

“In that case, you all are working together with the Dark Hall then?” Lord Lianghua asked.

“No no no, it is beneath our Heavenly Law Palace's dignity to work together with that sort of power. However, I must admit that

the Dark Hall has helped me enormously. At the very least, our Heavenly Law Palace no longer has to fear your Ancient Era's Elves."

"Duanmu Feiyu, even if our Ancient Era's Elves are fighting against the Dark Hall, it would still be an easy task for us to eradicate your Heavenly Law Palace," Lord Lianghua was angered. He refused to let anyone look down on them, the Ancient Era's Elves.

As he spoke, he stepped in front of the Cyanwood Mountain's army. His earth-shattering and boundlessly powerful oppressive might swept forth to engulf the Heavenly Law Palace's army.

"Rumble~~~~"

However, before his oppressive might could reach the Heavenly Law Palace, it suddenly exploded in midair. The energy ripples from the explosion only wreaked havoc through the Cyanwood Mountain's region, and were simply unable to approach the Heavenly Law Palace's army.

It was as if there was an invisible wall that had blocked everything.

At that moment, Lord Lianghua shouted angrily, "Who is it that is hiding sneakily? Get out here!" He knew that the person that had blocked his attack was not the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master. Instead, it was someone else.

"Hehe, Lord Lianghua, I had always thought you to be amazing before. It is only today that I have discovered... that you are only of this level," Sure enough, after Lord Lianghua's angry shout, a figure appeared before that invisible wall.

This man possessed a head of black hair that trailed over his shoulders, and the clothes he wore were fluttering in the wind.

Although he had the appearance of a middle-aged man, everyone felt enormous shock upon seeing him.

The reason for that was because he was the Palace Master of the Mortal King Palace, Xuan Fengyang.

Furthermore, that was not all. After the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master appeared, white clouds began to surge around the Heavenly Law Palace's army. Banners became visible in the vast white clouds.

It was the Mortal King Palace's army. Not only did the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master show up, they had actually, like the Heavenly Law Palace, dispatched all of their experts here.

Chapter 2002 – Battle Begin

“Xun Fengyang, are you planning to join hands with Duanmu Feiyu?” Lord Lianghua started to frown.

If it were only a single Heavenly Law Palace, he, with his strength, would not be afraid of them. However, there was now the addition of the Mortal King Palace. As such, even he felt enormous pressure.

“I’ll borrow what little friend Chu Feng said. Since you can already tell, why bother asking?” Xun Fengyang said with a beaming smile.

“What sort of grudge do you have against Chu Feng? Why have you also come to attack Chu Feng?” Lord Lianghua asked.

“Neither I nor our Mortal King Palace possess any grudges with Chu Feng. But, Lord Lianghua, don’t you also have no grudges with the Heavenly Law Palace? In that case, why are you helping little friend Chu Feng? Why are you helping the Cyanwood Mountain?” Xun Fengyang said with a smile on his face.

“In that case, your Mortal King Palace and Heavenly Law Palace are determined to battle our Cyanwood Mountain today?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what you said is correct. However, it is not all correct,” Xun Fengyang said with a smile. Then, he added, “I have come here with the same intention as the Heavenly Law Palace. It is not to battle the Cyanwood Mountain. Rather, I have come just so that I can take your life.”

“Boom~~~”

After saying those words, Xun Fengyang suddenly attacked. He extended his hand and pointed at Chu Feng. Immediately, a strand of martial power turned into a golden ray and shot forth like a golden arrow.

It was not aimed at Lord Lianghua. Rather, it was aimed at Chu Feng.

If that attack was to land, Chu Feng would undoubtedly be killed. After all, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, he was absolutely no match for a rank eight Martial Emperor.

However, before Xun Fengyang's attack could even reach Chu Feng, it was blocked. With Lord Lianghua present, Xun Fengyang's attack would naturally not be able to injure Chu Feng.

“Courting death!”

At that moment, Lord Lianghua did not bother with superfluous words. He revealed his Imperial Armament and charged to attack Xun Fengyang.

Had it been before, neither Xun Fengyang nor Duanmu Feiyu would have dared to act in this sort of manner.

However now, not only were they daring to do such a thing, they actually did it. It was all because they, the Ancient Era's Elves, were curbed by the Dark Hall. That had led to Xun Fengyang and Duanmu Feiyu finding the opportunity to attack them, the Ancient Era's Elves.

As such, Lord Lianghua had seen through the characters of Xun Fengyang and Duanmu Feiyu. Even though they had not yet joined hands with the Dark Hall, they would sooner or later join hands with the Dark Hall. The reason for that was because they had always wanted to eliminate the Ancient Era's Elves.

Upon thinking of how they acted so timid towards the Ancient Era's Elves before, yet dared to act in this manner now, Lord Lianghua became extremely furious.

“Come, allow me to experience exactly what abilities the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elder, Lord Lianghua, possesses,” Xun Fengyang was not afraid. With a flip of his palm, he also took out an Imperial Armament. Then, he collided with Lord Lianghua.

As the two men were both rank eight Martial Emperors, they both possessed overwhelming power. As such, the energy ripples created by their battle were extremely ferocious.

Upon seeing the battle between the two of them, many of the bystanders hurriedly ran far away. They were deeply afraid that they might be hit by the energy ripples and be turned into dust.

After all, that was a battle between two of the most powerful experts in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Lianghua, I am determined to kill Chu Feng today. Those who dare to block my path shall be killed. Even you, an Ancient Era’s Elf, will not be spared.”

Right at that moment, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master Duanmu Feiyu also revealed his Imperial Armament. Then, he joined the battle.

“Kill!!!!!!!!!!”

After the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master joined the battle, a rallying shout sounded from the Heavenly Law Palace’s army. They started their attack. Even though they appeared to be righteous and just individuals, they were acting like a pack of wolves and tigers. They planned to kill everyone related to the Cyanwood Mountain.

“Kill!!!!!!” At that moment, Chu Feng also shouted and rushed to face the incoming Heavenly Law Palace’s army.

In response, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, Nangong Longjian, the Snow-haired Immortal, and the numerous other experts all set off to battle against the Heavenly Law Palace’s army.

Even though the Heavenly Law Palace possessed overwhelming fame for their fighting prowess, the current Cyanwood Mountain was no longer the same as before. The thousand-plus Martial Emperors of the Cyanwood Mountain were not something that

could easily be taken care of by the Heavenly Law Palace's ten million-plus fighters.

Although they possessed fewer numbers, the Cyanwood Mountain was faintly holding the upper hand in the battle.

“Kill!!!!”

Right at that moment, the Mortal King Palace's army also joined the battle.

Once the Mortal King Palace's army joined the battle, the Cyanwood Mountain that was originally winning against the Heavenly Law palace immediately entered a state of being suppressed.

“Sure enough, this won't do. No matter how powerful the Cyanwood Mountain might be, they are no match for the combined forces of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.”

“That's not all there is. That Ancient Era's Elves' Lord Lianghua is fighting one against two. He is also at a disadvantage. After all, his opponents are no ordinary Martial Emperors. Instead, they are the two Palace Masters of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.”

The battle had just begun. Yet, one side already held an overwhelming advantage in the battle. This caused the crowd to become worried for the Cyanwood Mountain.

Even though they had originally come here to watch the show, they had all heard about the grudges between Chu Feng and the Heavenly Law Palace.

Deep in their hearts, they all felt that Chu Feng did nothing wrong. Instead, it was the Heavenly Law Palace that had deliberately made things difficult for Chu Feng.

Thus, they did not wish for Chu Feng's defeat. After all, he was the person, the young sapling, with the greatest possibility of

becoming this era's overlord.

Furthermore, there were even people that felt that the Heavenly Law Palace's deliberate provocation of Chu Feng had only been made because they wished to eliminate Chu Feng.

They were afraid that Chu Feng would become the next Qing Xuantian and threaten their position as one of humanity's strongest powers.

In fact, before Chu Feng even became an overlord, his rallying power was already exceptionally astonishing. At the very least, he had caused the current Cyanwood Mountain to not be inferior to the Heavenly Law Palace by much.

Suddenly, a shout sounded from afar, "To bully few with many is simply no ability at all. If you're truly men, then you should fight an equal battle." Then, a black blaze surged forth. Like a shooting star, it entered the battlefield.

Anywhere it passed, the people from the Cyanwood Mountain would be fine. However, the experts from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace would end up in a complete mess. Those with light injuries would end up vomiting blood. Those with serious injuries would explode and die on the spot.

Finally, that lump of black blaze shot toward the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace master, Duanmu Feiyu.

"Clank~~~"

Duanmu Feiyu hurriedly used his Imperial Armament to slash down at the incoming black blaze. He wanted to use his Imperial Armament's power to hack that black blaze in two.

"Boom~~~"

Sure enough, his slash was extremely ferocious. It caused the black blaze to flutter about everywhere.

"Heavens, that is?!!!"

However, when the black blaze scattered and dispersed, those who were able to see what was contained within the black blaze all revealed a huge change in expression.

The reason for that was because a figure had appeared in the location where the black blaze had dissipated. It was a middle-aged man.

However, that middle-aged man not only emitted maturity, he was also emitting a dense amount of nefarious nature. He wore black clothes, had red phoenix eyes that were searing with killing intent, and black lips that were curved into a mischievous smile. He was simply and purely nefarious in appearance.

Many people in the Holy Land of Martialism recognized that man. He was the Underworld Palace's Palace Master, Hun Jingtian.

"Senior Lianghua, junior Hun Jintian shall provide senior with a helping hand," After the Underworld Palace's Palace Master appeared, he first smiled at Lord Lianghua with a benevolent smile. Then, he took out a long, black sword and unleashed ferocious attacks at the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master.

"Haha, Hun Jintian, you've arrived at the perfect time," Lord Lianghua had originally been feeling extremely gloomy. However, after seeing Hun Jintian, he started to laugh heartily.

By himself, he was indeed no match for both the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master. However, after the Underworld Palace's Palace Master appeared, it was now a two-on-two. If it was a two-on-two, the pressure on him would be reduced enormously.

Chapter 2003 – Chu Feng’s Massacre Show

“Hun Jingtian, you actually also came to involve yourself in this matter? Are you planning to use this opportunity to kiss the Ancient Era’s Elves’ ass?”

“Or, could it be that you’re planning to use this opportunity to win favor from that boy Chu Feng?” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master asked coldly.

Clearly, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master felt extremely displeased. Originally, he had grasped victory in his palm. However, with the addition of the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master, their battle would enter a stalemate once again.

“I merely think that this is the best opportunity to get rid of your Heavenly Law Palace,” Hun Jingtian had a smile on him the entire time. However, the Imperial Armament that he held in his hand grew more and more ferocious. He simply wanted to take the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master’s life.

“Today, it’s not our Heavenly Law Palace, but rather your Underworld Palace that will be eradicated!” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master shouted. His each and every attack was also extremely ferocious.

There had been grievances between the Heavenly Law Palace and the Underworld Palace for many years now. Today, they would finally fight a battle to the death. It must be said, after the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master joined the battle, the battle became even more intense.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when the four rank eight Martial Emperors were fighting one another, many blasts of wind began to echo continuously. Countless black flames were surging forth from the distant horizon like a black meteor shower.

In the end, those black flames landed on the battlefield.

Upon entering the battlefield, those black flames turned into black-clothed individuals. Ruthlessly, those people began to attack and kill the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

They were the Underworld Palace’s army. It turned out that the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master Hun Jingtian was not the only person that had come. Hun Jingtian had also arrived with the Underworld Palace’s army.

“Little friend Chu Feng, per the order from our Palace Master, we have come to provide you with assistance.”

Right at that moment, an old man appeared beside Chu Feng. This person was the Underworld Palace’s management elder that had helped Chu Feng many times in the Moonlight Maze, Elder Huang Guan.

“Seniors, you all have come at the perfect time,” At that moment, Chu Feng was overjoyed by the appearance of the Underworld Palace’s army. This was something that he and the great majority of the people present had not expected.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not possess a familiarity with the Underworld Palace.

However, regardless, the arrival of the Underworld Palace’s army was akin to sending charcoal in snowy weather.

With the addition of the Underworld Palace’s army, the

Cyanwood Mountain that had been in an absolutely disadvantaged state against the Mortal King Palace and the Heavenly Law Palace's armies was able to once again seize dominance in the battle.

“Rooarrr~~~”

Not long after the Underworld Palace joined the battle, dragon-like roars suddenly sounded from afar. Then, enormous black monstrous dragons came galloping towards the Cyanwood Mountain, killing their way onto the battlefield.

Their enormous bodies created a complete mess out of the places where they passed!!!

“Little friend Chu Feng, we are sorry to have come late.”

It was the King Monstrous Dragon Race. The King Monstrous Dragon Race's Clan Chief had led the King Monstrous Dragon Race army to assist Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was overjoyed to see the King Monstrous Dragon Race. After all, he possessed a deep relationship with the King Monstrous Dragon Race and was allied with them.

The King Monstrous Dragon Race had dispatched all of their elites here to assist Chu Feng. Chu Feng could tell that the King Monstrous Dragon Race were sincerely trying to help him.

“Kill! Even if our Four Great Imperial Clans merely possess the splendor of fireflies, we must still assist little friend Chu Feng today and fight alongside the Cyanwood Mountain.”

To Chu Feng's surprise, after the arrival of the King Monstrous Dragon Race, the Four Great Imperial Clans' Utmost Exalted Elders personally led a group of elites from the Four Great Imperial Clans and killed their way onto the battlefield.

Although it was only a group of elites, and only a single Utmost Exalted Elder had been dispatched from each of the clans, it remained that both Chu Feng and the bystanders were shocked by their arrival to help Chu Feng. After all, they had been insistent on

killing Chu Feng before.

Some of the crowd even began to rub their eyes nonstop, not daring to believe what they were seeing.

Even though the crowd were all very shocked by the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace joining hands, they were even more shocked by this many powers coming to assist Chu Feng.

They truly managed to experience what it meant by ‘a hundred answers to a single call.’ Furthermore, Chu Feng had not even called for those people. Instead, those powers had come to help Chu Feng of their own accord.

Although Chu Feng was very shocked by this, he soon smiled a relieved smile.

No matter what, the Four Great Imperial Clans’ Utmost Exalted Elders had personally experienced Chu Feng’s strength in the Moonlight Maze. They also knew that Chu Feng possessed a deep relationship with the Ancient Era’s Elves.

Likely, they had carefully considered their actions, and ultimately decided to stand with Chu Feng. They wished to seize this opportunity to board the Ancient Era’s Elves’ great vessel in order to obtain steadiness for their future.

However, regardless, it remained that they had acted upon their beliefs, and had dispatched elites to help Chu Feng. Thus, Chu Feng felt equally grateful toward the Four Great Imperial Clans.

It could be said that the grudges between Chu Feng and the Four Great Imperial Clans were completely settled as of that moment. From today hence, they would be true allies.

What did it mean to be allies? They were people or powers that would come to assist one another at their most critical moments.

“Mere King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and Four Great Imperial Clans actually dared to come contend against our Heavenly Law

Palace and Mortal King Palace? After this battle is over, the next to be exterminated will be you all!”

The people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace were already furious because of the participation of the Underworld Palace. When the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts also arrived to help Chu Feng, they became filled with anger.

Even though the King Monstrous Dragon Beasts and the Four Great Imperial Clans possessed strength greatly inferior to their own, it remained that they were great powers.

This was especially true now that they were fighting the Cyanwood Mountain and the Underworld Palace. They were already caught in a disadvantaged state. And now, the appearance of the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race would only cause their battles to become even more difficult. As such, how could they not become enraged?

After all, both the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race were afraid of them before, and would not dare to cause trouble for them.

The fact that they dared to do so now was only because they were borrowing the imposing power of the Cyanwood Mountain and the Ancient Era’s Elves. Because of that, the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace were all filled with endless rage.

“Puu...”

“Ahh~~~”

Right after the threatening words aimed at the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race were spoken by that Heavenly Law Palace’s elder, a silvery light suddenly flashed through the air. Then, that man started to scream in pain. His blood swirled in the air as his physical body was destroyed by

Chu Feng.

As for that man, he was already the thousandth person to die after threatening the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was the one that had ended up killing them.

“You dare to boast shamelessly when you’re powerless to defend yourself?” After killing a thousand individuals in the blink of an eye, Chu Feng turned his chilly gaze to his surroundings.

Upon hearing what Chu Feng said and seeing his gaze, the troops from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace started to shiver. At that moment, no one dared to speak any more threats.

The reason for that was because those with cultivations above rank six Martial Emperor were all contained by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal and the Underworld Palace’s experts.

As for those below the cultivation of rank six Martial Emperor, there was simply no one capable of being Chu Feng’s opponent. Thus, to the current Chu Feng, he felt as if he was like a fish released back into the water in the battlefield.

The existence of Chu Feng was simply a nightmare to the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

“Humph,” Even though the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace had both grown afraid of him, Chu Feng did not stop his attacks.

With a cold smile, Chu Feng unleashed his attacks again. With each attack, a crimson light would flash through the air.

In order to bring about absolute superiority in this battle, Chu Feng did not fight with rank six Martial Emperors. Instead, he was killing those below rank six Martial Emperor without any restraint. With Chu Feng’s strength, those below rank six Martial

Emperor simply did not even possess the power to fight back against him. Thus, this was most definitely a massacre.

Chapter 2004 – Angrily Fighting Three Evildoers

“That guy!!!”

At that moment, the crowd whose gazes were focused on Lord Lianghua and the three Palace Masters’ battle all turned their gaze to Chu Feng.

Those four rank eight Martial Emperors were truly too powerful. As such, the crowd were simply unable to see their battle clearly. At the very most, they could only enjoy the excitement of the battle. However, Chu Feng was different. They were able to clearly see a portion of his attacks and movements.

“Chu Feng, isn’t he too ferocious? Those Martial Emperor-level experts are actually being sliced apart like watermelons. They simply have no way to fight back.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s massacre with their very own eyes, the crowd started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, let us assist you too.”

In this sort of situation, there were actually people among the bystanders joining the battlefield unceasingly. They joined to assist Chu Feng and the others in their battle against the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

Some of these people were those whom Chu Feng had met in the Moonlight Maze. Others were strangers who had never met Chu Feng before.

However, regardless of whom they might be, it remained that their decision to join the battle on Chu Feng’s side meant that they stood with Chu Feng.

Regardless of what sort of intentions these people might have, the fact that they were willing to fight with him and create a threat

to the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace meant Chu Feng would welcome them.

Of course, since there were people that chose to assist Chu Feng, there were also people that chose to assist the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace. Merely, the ones that chose to assist Chu Feng greatly outnumbered the ones that chose to assist the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

Right at that moment, a shout sounded from afar, “Chu Feng, do you dare to fight against us?”

Turning towards the direction of that shout, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. In that direction were three fiendish-looking old men. Not only did those three old men possess cultivations of rank six Martial Emperors, they were each holding an Imperial Armament and wantonly killing the people from the Cyanwood Mountain.

Most importantly, those three old men all reeked very strongly of blood. This meant that they had killed countless people, that they were true fiends.

Suddenly, someone shouted from the crowd, “It’s them, the Holy Land of Martialism’s Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong!”

Furthermore, upon seeing those three old men, many people began to express overwhelming anger. They were itching to kill those three old men themselves.

After all, the Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong were people who had done all sorts of malicious deeds. Many people possessed deep hatred and grudges towards them. They were the most notorious existences in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“This is strange, how did they become this powerful? Even the strongest of the three, Evildoer Jin, was only a rank four Martial Emperor before. How did the three of them suddenly become rank six Martial Emperors?”

“Furthermore, they are all holding an Imperial Armament. None

of them had an Imperial Armament before. Exactly where did they obtain their Imperial Armaments?”

At that moment, some of the people that knew about the Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong began to express confusion. They had disappeared for some time. Their reappearance with their new strength shocked the crowd.

“Come, let me, Snow Blade, take on you three Evildoers.”

Right at that moment, the Snow Blade Mad Demon charged toward Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong. With each slash of his Snow Blade, cold rays would radiate all around, and snowflakes would dance in the air.

With each slash, a slaughter within snowflakes.

The Snow Blade Mad Demon’s reputation was well-justified. Among the rank six Martial Emperors, he could be considered to be a mid-to-upper ranked expert.

The reason why he dared to fight against the three Evildoers by himself was because he despised the Three Great Evildoers from the bottom of his heart.

He knew that the current cultivations of Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong were not obtained by themselves through martial cultivation. Else, it would be impossible for their cultivations to increase this quickly. Snow Blade Mad Demon was planning to personally experience exactly what shenanigans the three Evildoers’ cultivations possessed.

He wished to see whether or not they had obtained some treasures or used some special method to gain their current cultivations.

“Puchi~~~”

“Ahhh~~~~”

However, not long after the Snow Blade Mad Demon began to

battle against Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong, his arm was hacked off.

One against three, he was absolutely no match for Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong.

“Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong are actually this powerful? The old Senior Snow Blade Mad Demon is actually no match for them?” Personally seeing the Snow Blade Mad Demon’s arm hacked off by the three Evildoers in a blink of an eye, the crowd were all astonished.

Even though the crowd all felt that the Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong had obtained their cultivations unnaturally, and that there was something strange with their Imperial Armaments too, it remained that they had shown the crowd that they possessed the strength of rank six Martial Emperors with their skills, and had completely unleashed the strength of their Imperial Armaments.

“Snow Blade Mad Demon, what did you think you were? You actually dared to bring your lousy blade to fight against the three of us, who possess Imperial Armaments? Today, we’ll send you to your death,” The Three Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong seemed to be furious from the contempt that the Snow Blade Mad Demon had shown for them. At that moment, after having obtained absolute dominance over the Snow Blade Mad Demon, they were planning to kill him.

After alternating their attacks at the Snow Blade Mad Demon, Evildoer Jin raised his enormous Imperial Armament blade and swept it at the Snow Blade Mad Demon. If that attack were to land, the Snow Blade Mad Demon would be cut in half on the spot. Most importantly, the Snow Blade Mad Demon was unable to dodge the incoming attack.

“Clank~~~”

However, at the moment of imminent peril, a silvery light suddenly flashed through. As sparks formed from the collision, the silvery light knocked back Evildoer Jin’s Imperial Armament.

Following that, two more silvery lights shot forth and knocked back both Evildoer Yin and Evildoer Tong.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had promptly arrived to save the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

“Chu Feng!!!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong all revealed overflowing hatred in their eyes. At that moment, one could even hear the sound of them grinding their teeth in anger.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, three of the Underworld Palace’s management elders all left their own locations and flew to Chu Feng’s side. It was Elder Huang Guang and the others.

“Little friend Chu Feng, leave those three to our Underworld Palace,” Elder Huang Guang said.

“Senior Huang Guan, there are already grudges between me and those three Evildoers. Allow me to settle this grudge today. I will take care of them myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” Elder Huang Guan knew very well how powerful Chu Feng was. Thus, he did not hesitate, and led the two other Underworld Palace’s management elders to return to the battlefield to kill the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

“Chu Feng, you have killed our disciples. Today, we shall have our vengeance,” Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong all brandished their respective Imperial Armaments and charged toward Chu Feng.

“Ever since the day I killed those three, I knew that such a day would come. Merely, aren’t the three of you far too cowardly? I’ve waited for you three for so long,” Chu Feng had a smile on his face as he effortlessly received his enemies while mocking them.

“Where’s Zhan Cangtian? That so-called leader of the Five Great Evildoers? I have also killed his disciple, Zhan Qiankun. Why did he not come to take revenge against me here?”

“Heh, a bullshit leader of the Five Great Evildoers. Turns out that he’s a coward too,” Not only was Chu Feng insulting the three Evildoers, he was also insulting Zhan Cangtian, the leader of the Five Great Evildoers.

Truth be told, if it was back then, if these notorious Evildoers were to come create trouble for Chu Feng back then, Chu Feng would have been afraid of them. However, now, he simply did not place them in his eyes anymore.

Not to mention Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong, Chu Feng wouldn’t even fear their leader, the person with strength that surpassed these three Evildoers, Zhan Cangtian.

Chapter 2005 – Emperor Qing’s Successor

“The three of us are more than enough to take care of you. There’s simply no need for Lord Zhan Cangtian.”

Even though they were all known as Evildoers, Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong were extremely respectful towards the leader of the Five Great Evildoers, Zhan Cangtian.

“So you all actually have someone you’re afraid of? It would appear that I have underestimated you all. Not only are you all cowards, you’re utter cowards. Even in here, you’re still flattering Zhan Cangtian. Could it be that Zhan Cangtian is actually your daddy?”

Chu Feng continued to mock them. As these three Evildoers had done all sorts of malicious things, it was greatly insufficient for him to just kill them. As such, Chu Feng was determined to insult and humiliate them.

“Chu Feng, you little brat. Continue to talk, I’ll take care of you!”

“Chu Feng, regardless of what sort of ability you might have, you are only able to increase your cultivation to rank four Martial Emperor.”

“You, with your strength of a mere rank four Martial Emperor, did you really think that you would be able to contend against us? Brat, you are truly too arrogant.”

“Today, we shall let you know how high the sky is, and how vast the earth is,” At that moment, Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong were all filled with confidence. They felt that they would absolutely be able to kill Chu Feng. Thus, their attacks grew more and more ferocious, and they began to mock Chu Feng back.

“It seems like the three of you have simply not determined the situation before you.”

Chu Feng sneered. Indeed, Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong now

possessed the strength of rank six Martial Emperors. Furthermore, they were able to unleash the might of their Imperial Armaments.

However, to Chu Feng, none of these three Evildoers possessed strength comparable to the YinYang Immortal.

Furthermore, even if the YinYang Immortal were still alive, he would not be a match for Chu Feng. As such, how could these three Evildoers possibly be a match for Chu Feng?

“Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng continuously slashed with the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand. With each slash, a crimson light shot forth. Chu Feng had unleashed an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill.

— the Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

.....

The nine slashes were all shot forth in succession. As the nine crimson slashes were finished, Evildoers Jin, Yin and Tong’s bodies were dead with their bodies badly mutilated.

They had been defeated. When fighting against them, there was simply no need for Chu Feng to use any Heaven Taboo Martial Skills. With merely an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill, he had managed to easily defeat them and take their lives.

“Those are quite decent Imperial Armaments. Merely, when used by you all, they are simply being wasted,” After Chu Feng killed the three Evildoers, he placed their Imperial Armaments into his own Cosmos Sack. It was not only their Imperial Armaments, even their Cosmos Sacks and all the treasures they held on them were

seized by Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, he... he actually managed to kill Evildoers Jin, Yin, and Tong so easily?”

Even though Chu Feng had already returned to the battlefield to kill the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace and had completely disregarded the matter concerning the three Evildoers, the surrounding crowd were filled with endless astonishment.

No matter what, when the Evildoers Jin, Yin, and Tong had fought against the Snow Blade Mad Demon, they had already exhibited their strength to the crowd.

That said, it was precisely because of that that Chu Feng’s killing of the Evildoers Jin, Yin, and Tong demonstrated how much more powerful he was.

That said, even if Chu Feng had already revealed his renowned ability, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, it remained that his cultivation had only increased to that of a rank four Martial Emperor.

A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. Chu Feng possessed a battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. That child was, without a doubt, a demon-level character.

Earlier, regardless of what the rumors of Chu Feng might be, they had remained only rumors, since only a portion of the people present had seen Chu Feng’s strength.

However, today, there were countless bystanders present. When these people finally saw that Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, all of them were astonished.

“Rumble~~~”

In the moment when the crowd was filled with astonishment,

Chu Feng began to massacre his enemies ruthlessly.

Not only was he slaughtering his foes himself, he had also unleashed his two Supreme Secret Skills, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

“The two Supreme Secret Skills are actually both with him?”

“According to rumors, the Five Elements Secret Skills cannot coexist in the same host because one’s body cannot withstand them.”

“However, Chu Feng, he... he accomplished that. He’s actually that heaven-defying. That child is truly too frightening,” Upon seeing the two Supreme Secret Skills, the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, the crowd became even more amazed by Chu Feng.

“Roar~~~~”

However, that was merely the beginning. After revealing the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and the Water Immortal Profound Technique, Chu Feng unleashed...

... the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, the Vermilion Bird Resurrection Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, his Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

Furthermore, those Four Great Supreme Secret Skills were all unleashed in their complete form, their Divine Beast appearance. Their roars were capable of shaking the heavenly dome. They were filled with dominance.

“Heavens, what are those?! This sensation, could they also be secret skills?!” Sure enough, at the moment when the crowd were all astonished by the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, the appearance of four more Supreme Secret Skills caused the crowd to be so astonished that they became stunned.

No matter how they looked at it, those four Supreme Secret Skills Chu Feng had unleashed were existences even more frightening than the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and the Water Immortal Profound Technique.

“Those four Divine Beasts look exactly the same as Lord Emperor Qing’s legendary four guardian beasts. Could it be... Chu Feng is Emperor Qing’s successor?!”

“What?!!!!!!”

Many experts from the Holy Land of Martialism were present to witness this battle. There were many among them that were experienced and knowledgeable. They managed to recognize that Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills were Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts.

After the first person spoke out, another person spoke out as well. Gradually, practically everyone felt that Chu Feng’s Four Great Supreme Secret Skills were Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts.

“And I wondered how Chu Feng was so heaven-defying. It turns out that he’s Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian’s successor.”

At that moment, the crowd were all astonished by this news.

If it were someone else that was declared to be Emperor Qing’s successor, the crowd would all be skeptical of it. In fact, they would simply not believe it.

However, when it was Chu Feng, the people were simply not skeptical at all. After all, Chu Feng was truly heaven-defying. There were people who had felt that Chu Feng might be some great almighty being’s successor to begin with. Some had even felt that that great almighty person would be Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian.

After all, Chu Feng’s heaven-defying manner was exactly the same as how heaven-defying Qing Xuantian was.

And now, when the crowd personally saw the Azure Dragon, the White Tiger, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise, they were certain that Chu Feng was Emperor Qing, Qing Xuantian's successor.

"That brat is truly filled with surprises," Not to mention the bystanders, even the Underworld Palace's Palace Master took notice of this.

Evidently, he also felt that Chu Feng was Qing Xuantian's successor. Thus, a smile of ease appeared on his face.

He had decided to help Chu Feng as a gamble. And now, he knew that his gamble was a success. Even disregarding currying favors from the Ancient Era's Elves, merely Chu Feng's own strength was sufficient for them, the Underworld Palace, to provide him their full assistance.

"Damn it!" However, this news that caused the Underworld Palace's Palace Master to burst with joy caused both the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master to frown deeply.

The complacency they had earlier had disappeared completely. It was clear that the two of them were both regretting their decision.

Qing Xuantian's influence was enormous. Even though ten thousand years had passed, Qing Xuantian's name still remained as a fear to countless people.

This was especially true for the huge monsters like the Three Palaces. They knew very well how frightening Qing Xuantian was. He had been a true overlord, an existence that surpassed all others in the Holy Land of Martialism back then.

As for that Chu Feng, he was actually Qing Xuantian's successor? It was no wonder Chu Feng possessed such heaven-defying strength.

Truth be told, if they had known that Chu Feng was Qing

Xuantian's successor, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace might not have joined hands to attack the Cyanwood Mountain.

Chapter 2006 – The Arrival Of Reinforcements

“Heavenly Law Palace, Mortal King Palace, you all truly have enormous dog’s guts!!!”

Right at that moment, a loud shout exploded from the distant horizon.

When that voice was heard, the expressions of practically everyone changed enormously. The reason for that was because they were all able to feel the power behind that voice. It was a rank eight Martial Emperor that had shouted.

Unexpectedly, another rank eight Martial Emperor had appeared.

Sure enough, soon an old man appeared. It was another Grand Elder of the Ancient Era’s Elves, Lord Luokong.

Not long after Lord Luokong appeared, several hundred thousand soldiers in green armor arrived in the sky in an orderly manner.

They were the elites of the Ancient Era’s Elves. Lord Luokong had led an army of elite Ancient Era’s Elves here.

“Heavens!!!”

At that moment, not only were the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace stunned, even the bystanders were stunned. At that moment, they did not know how to describe their current state of mind.

They were all stunned by the scene before them. Although the army of hundreds of thousands from the Ancient Era’s Elves were greatly inferior to the Three Palaces’ armies of millions in terms in numbers, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army of hundreds of thousands were their true elites.

Their overwhelming might immediately suppressed the Three

Palaces' armies the moment they appeared on the scene.

At that moment, the crowd was finally able to realize how powerful the Ancient Era's Elves were.

Sure enough, the Ancient Era's Elves were the strongest power in the Holy Land of Martialism. They were an existence that the Three Palaces could not compare with.

Not to mention the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace, even if the Underworld Palace were to join hands with them, they would likely not be a match for the Ancient Era's Elves.

"It's over. The Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's decision this time around was truly a mistake."

"Making Chu Feng an enemy was their greatest mistake. Likely, they will suffer a calamity today."

After the Underworld Palace joined the battle, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace had already entered a disadvantaged state. And now, the Ancient Era's Elves had arrived with a large force to assist the Cyanwood Mountain. Without a doubt, this would force the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace into desperate straits.

Not to mention the others, even the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters had dejected expressions on their faces. They both knew that they were powerless to reverse this battle now.

Suddenly, the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master shouted, "Stop!!!"

He turned to his subordinates and spoke with a loud voice. "Everyone from the Heavenly Law Palace, cease your attacks."

"Everyone from the Mortal King Palace, cease fighting," In response, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master also ordered his subordinates to stop fighting.

Not only were they ordering their subordinates to stop fighting, they themselves did not dare to continue fighting against Lord Lianghua and the Underworld Palace's Palace Master. Instead, the two of them began to withdraw.

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

Although the two of them did not dare to fight back, Lord Lianghua and the Underworld Palace's Palace Master did not act leniently toward them at all. As the two of them continued to attack the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters, they both managed to find gaps in their defenses. Ruthlessly, they managed to slash the bodies of their opponents.

Lord Lianghua directly hacked off the Mortal King Palace Master's arm.

As for the Underworld Palace's Palace Master, he was even more ruthless. Not only did he managed to hack off one of the Heavenly Law Palace Master's arms, he had also hacked off his shoulder.

That said, even though they were feeling pain from having their arms hacked off, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master merely bit down on their teeth to endure the pain without uttering a sound.

“Well then, let's stop.”

At that moment, the Underworld Palace's Palace Master and Lord Lianghua had originally wanted to continue attacking them. However, Lord Luokong suddenly arrived beside them and stopped them.

“They dared to look down on us Ancient Era's Elves. They should be killed,” Lord Lianghua said.

“Lord Luokong, what Lord Lianghua says is entirely correct,” The Underworld Palace's Palace Master began to add oil to fire.

“I am under orders from His Majesty that we must not eliminate the Heavenly Law Palace,” Lord Luokong said to Lord Lianghua through voice transmission.

Lord Lianghua was startled upon hearing those words. Then, still angry, he said via voice transmission, “Then we’ll eliminate the Mortal King Palace.”

“Lianghua, calm yourself. Do not forget what we Ancient Era’s Elves promised Lord Qing Xuantian,” Lord Luokong urged against it.

Lord Lianghua started to gnash his teeth in anger. His fists were clenched so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard. Originally, someone like Lord Lianghua would have great control over his state of mind.

However, this time around, he was unable to control his state of mind. He was truly enraged by the actions and conduct of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace. However, he was not allowed to eliminate them. This caused him to feel extremely sullen.

“Everyone from the Underworld Palace, stop attacking,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master was an intelligent individual. He was able to tell that the Ancient Era’s Elves did not plan to eradicate the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace. Thus, he ordered his men to stop.

In fact, after the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace ceased their attacks, Chu Feng had already ordered the Cyanwood Mountain’s people to stop attacking. At that moment, the battle was halted.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please come over here,” Lord Luokong waved at Chu Feng with a smile on his face.

He knew that while the Cyanwood Mountain’s leader was actually Baili Xuankong, the person that actually possessed the

authority to speak was Chu Feng.

“Lord Luokong,” After Chu Feng arrived, he courteously greeted Lord Luokong.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I know that your mood is extremely bad right now. Truth be told, I have come here with the orders from His Majesty that we must not eliminate the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.”

“It is not that His Majesty is being lenient and merciful toward them. Rather, there is a reason behind it. To put it simply, Qing Xuantian asked our Ancient Era’s Elves to, regardless of how excessive the human powers might act, not eradicate those human powers that had existed for tens of thousands of years, and only to teach them a lesson.”

“You are a very smart individual. I believe you should understand what I mean,” Lord Luokong said to Chu Feng in a very apologetic manner. Of course, he spoke to Chu Feng through voice transmission. Thus, only Chu Feng heard him.

“Junior understands,” Chu Feng replied through voice transmission. Then, Chu Feng said openly, “Lord Luokong, today, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace have not only attacked our Cyanwood Mountain, they have also looked down upon the Ancient Era’s Elves. If it wasn’t for the assistance from the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master, they might really have dared to kill Lord Lianghua.”

“As you are the senior, I will not concern myself with that matter. You and Lord Lianghua can handle it,” Chu Feng said.

“Two dogs, why are you still standing there? Immediately kneel down and apologize to little friend Chu Feng and Lord Lianghua,” Lord Luokong pointed at the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace’s Palace Masters.

At that moment, in order to survive, the Heavenly Law Palace

and the Mortal King Palace's Palace master knelt in midair toward Chu Feng and Lord Lianghua without the slightest hesitation.

This scene was visible to all the crowd. It was also because of this scene that the crowd realized how powerful the Ancient Era's Elves really were.

The Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters were akin to gods in the minds of the people of the world.

However, these two gods were now kneeling and apologizing. They knew that this was not due to Chu Feng, nor was it due to Lord Lianghua. Rather, it was due to the strength of the Ancient Era's Elves.

Chapter 2007 – Compensation

“You all truly have enormous nerves. Speak honestly, are you all colluding with the Dark Hall?” Lord Lianghua asked coldly.

Earlier, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master were really trying to kill him. Thus, the fury in Lord Lianghua’s heart was not something that would decrease with merely their fake apologies.

“Milord, we truly haven’t colluded with the Dark Hall. Although we were momentarily foolish, we truly did not collude with the Dark Hall.”

“Lord Luokong, Lord Lianghua, please give us another chance,” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master said in unison.

Even though the two of them were Palace Masters, they were actually cowards who were afraid of dying. Furthermore, they knew that if they were to die, their Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace would be ruined too. Thus, even while at death’s door, they still had to struggle to survive.

As long as they survived, there would still be hope. In the end, people would only remember your glories, and not your shameful past.

“We Ancient Era’s Elves are a benevolent race. We will not eradicate you.”

“However, today, you all were trying to kill little friend Chu Feng and eradicate the Cyanwood Mountain. As such, whether or not you all will be spared should not be determined by we Ancient Era’s Elves. Instead, it should be up for little friend Chu Feng to determine it,” Lord Luokong said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I apologize for how I wronged you earlier. Moreover, I truly did not know that you were Lord Qing

Xuantian's successor.”

“If I knew that you were Lord Qing Xuantian's successor, I would have taken Lord Qing Xuantian's contributions to our human race into consideration, and would absolutely not have attacked you.”

“But, regardless of what I say now, it's already too late. I am the one in the wrong. Little friend Chu Feng, you can punish or kill me. However, little friend Chu Feng, please spare my Heavenly Law Palace's elders and disciples. They have only come here on my orders. It is not because they wanted to come and attack you,” The Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master said.

Afterwards, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master also said similar words to Chu Feng.

They were very smart. In front of the Ancient Era's Elves, they acted in an absolutely petty and inferior manner because they were afraid of the Ancient Era's Elves.

However, when before Chu Feng, although they were apologizing to Chu Feng, they still acted with the boldness and integrity that Palace Masters should possess.

The reason for that was very simple. Even though they had been humiliated, they could not allow themselves to be utterly humiliated. Before the Ancient Era's Elves, they had no choice but to act low and petty. However, Chu Feng remained a member of the younger generation. As such, they could not achieve the same sort of pettiness and lowness when facing Chu Feng. Else, if this matter were to spread, they would have no face to face the people of the world.

In fact, the words spoken by the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters managed to obtain some sympathy from the crowd. This was especially true because the two of them were seriously injured right now. But, although they were injured, they did not try to tend to their wounds. This caused the crowd to have some sympathy for them.

After all, the two of them were the strongest experts among the humans. If they were to truly die, it would be a loss for all of humanity.

As for Chu Feng, he knew very well what sort of character the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master have. If he had the choice, he would have definitely killed them without the slightest hesitation.

However, Lord Luokong had spoken to Chu Feng earlier through voice transmission because he didn't want Chu Feng to act too excessively and kill them. As for Chu Feng, he had to give Lord Luokong and the Ancient Era's Elves face.

"Even if there are ten thousand reasons why you all have attacked our Cyanwood Mountain, the people from our Cyanwood Mountain that died in battle were all innocent," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, your intention is?" The two men looked to Chu Feng.

"While you can be spared death, you must be punished for your crimes. As such, your Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace must compensate our Cyanwood Mountain," Chu Feng said.

"That's no issue. We will definitely compensate your Cyanwood Mountain for its losses in double," The Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters nodded and accepted Chu Feng's condition without any hesitation.

This was the best resolution for them. As their Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace had existed for thousands of years, they possessed robust foundations. If it was only compensation, it would be extremely easy for them to do.

"I will be the one to determine the compensation," Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, both the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters started to frown. However,

the two of them still accepted without the slightest hesitation, “No problem, tell us what you want.”

“Firstly, if it hadn’t been for the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans’ arrival today, our Cyanwood Mountain might really have ended up being trampled to the ground by your Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace. All the people in our Cyanwood Mountain would have ended up being killed by you all.”

“Thus, their appearance has not only saved our Cyanwood Mountain, they have also saved the lives of countless innocents.”

“However, for the sake of helping our Cyanwood Mountain, those powers have paid bitterly.”

“As such, while you all can refuse to compensate us our Cyanwood Mountain’s losses, you must compensate them for their losses.”

“As such, I demand that your Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace compensate the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and Four Great Imperial Clans in the form of an Imperial Armament and twenty Incomplete Imperial Armaments each,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the nerves of the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace all tightened.

It was one thing to compensate with Incomplete Imperial Armaments. But, Imperial Armaments were extremely precious. Not even all of the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace’s management elders possessed an Imperial Armament. From that, it could be seen how sparse their Imperial Armaments were.

Yet now, Chu Feng demanded that they compensate the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans, a total of six powers, with an Imperial Armament each. In other words, Chu Feng wanted the Heavenly

Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace to hand over six Imperial Armaments as compensation. This was most definitely an extravagant demand.

“Very well. Little friend Chu Feng’s demand is reasonable and fair. We are willing to compensate,” Even though the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace’s Palace Masters were also very unwilling, they still accepted Chu Feng’s demand without the slightest hesitation.

“Remember, the compensation that I demand is for both the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace. It is not to be made jointly,” Chu Feng added.

“What?” Hearing those words, both the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace’s Palace Masters were startled.

Respectively? Not to be compensated jointly? In other words, both the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace must hand over six Imperial Armaments and a hundred and twenty Incomplete Imperial Armaments. When added together, this was a staggering amount of twelve Imperial Armaments and two hundred and forty Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

At that moment, it was not only the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace who were stunned. Even the bystanders were stunned. Their eyes were wide open and their tongues tied. Their current expressions were truly marvelous. They had truly never expected Chu Feng to be this ruthless.

The reason for that was because after surveying the entire battlefield and adding the Imperial Armament that their Palace Master held, it seemed the Mortal King Palace only possessed six Imperial Armaments in total.

As for the Heavenly Law Palace, they were a bit better. Adding the Imperial Armament that their Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master held, they totaled seven.

However, if they were to hand over six Imperial Armaments each, the Heavenly Law Palace would only have a single Imperial Armament left, and the Mortal King Palace would not have a single Imperial Armament.

How could this possibly be considered to be an extravagant demand anymore? Chu Feng was simply planning to bite the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace to their deaths.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’ll be forcing us to our deaths here. In that case, it is better that you kill us,” The Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master smiled wryly.

“You’re the one who said that. If you’re unwilling to hand over the Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments, I will extinguish your Mortal King Palace,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. I am the one who made this decision today. You can kill me. However, please spare my Mortal King Palace’s elders and disciples, for they are innocent,” The Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master suddenly spoke with a loud voice.

Was he truly not afraid of death? No, not at all. He was merely trying to use the will of the people to force Chu Feng to be lenient toward them.

Chapter 2008 – Deliberately Making Things Difficult

“Are you implying that while your Mortal King Palace’s people are innocent, our Cyanwood Mountain’s people are not? That your lives are valuable, whereas our lives have no value? That you all can kill us as you wish?”

“If it wasn’t for the Ancient Era’s Elves, the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans coming to assist us today, our Cyanwood Mountain would have been razed to the ground by your Mortal King Palace. All the people of our Cyanwood Mountain would have been killed by you all.”

“At that time, who would have felt sympathy for us?” Chu Feng asked in succession. He appeared to be very emotional. If possible, he truly wished to kill the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master, this shameless old bastard.

“What little friend Chu Feng says is correct. The way I see it, there is simply no need for compensation. We should just directly eliminate them,” Elder Huang Guan from the Underworld Palace said loudly.

“That’s right, we don’t need any compensation. No matter how much you compensate us, you will not be able to bring back our brothers who died at your hands. What use is compensation? We merely want the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace to pay this debt of blood with blood.”

Following that, the crowd from the Underworld Palace, King Monstrous Dragon Race, Four Great Imperial Clans and Cyanwood Mountain all began to loudly shout in unison.

Their voices were like thunder, and their killing intent was overflowing. They were not joking around. They truly wanted the

death and destruction of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

Faced with this sort of situation, the expressions of the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace became very ugly. Many among them were shivering in fear. They truly did not wish to die, and were deeply afraid of death.

“.....” This sort of situation left the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master speechless. He had not expected Chu Feng to be this powerful. He had not expected Chu Feng to be able to stir up the will of the crowd even more skillfully than him.

The current situation was simply akin to being the will of the crowd. Even if Chu Feng were to order the eradication of their Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace, no one would blame Chu Feng for it.

Thus, the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master ended up gritting his teeth. Feeling enormous pain and unwillingness, he said, “Fine. I agree to little friend Chu Feng’s demand. I will compensate them.”

Chu Feng smiled coldly at the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master’s compliance. He had already seen through the nature of the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master, and knew that he was a coward that was afraid of death. Thus, Chu Feng already knew that he would have this sort of response. Thus, Chu Feng did not bother much with the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master. Instead, he turned directly to the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master and asked, “What about the Heavenly Law Palace?”

“Our Heavenly Law Palace also accepts little friend Chu Feng’s demand,” With the prior case of the Mortal King Palace, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master naturally would not dare to go against Chu Feng’s demand.

The winner was the king and the loser was the thief. And now, he could only admit his defeat and suffer the consequences.

“Since there are no objections, you all can fulfill your promise now,” Chu Feng said.

“Right now?” Hearing those words, the two Palace Masters’ expressions stiffened again.

“Do you have any complaints?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments are all mastered items right now. If we are to hand them over now, even if they are to obtain them, they would not be able to master them,” The two Palace Masters said in unison.

“Do you not know how to sever the connection? It’s alright if you don’t. I am able to help you all. Merely, I might be a bit harsh, and might even kill someone through severing their connection to their weapons,” Chu Feng said.

“Snap~~~”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the two Palace Masters clenched their fists tightly.

Threatening. Chu Feng was openly threatening them. However, even when faced with this sort of threat, they had no choice but comply.

“Very well, we’ll do as little friend Chu Feng said,” In the end, the two of them decided to comply with Chu Feng’s demand.

Thus, the experts from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace began to publicly sever their connections with their weapons. This was the most disastrous for the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master. Due to the fact that the Mortal King Palace only possessed six Imperial Armaments altogether, they had to hand over all six of their Imperial Armaments. As such, even the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master had to sever his connection with his weapon. At the moment when he handed over his Imperial Armament, he truly felt as if his heart was bleeding.

While the reaction from the Underworld Palace’s crowd was still

calm, when the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans all received two Imperial Armaments and forty Incomplete Imperial Armaments each, they felt extremely excited.

The Incomplete Imperial Armaments that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace possessed were all of extremely high quality. They were all top quality weapons.

It was not that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace did not want to hand over low quality Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Rather, it was Chu Feng who had refused the low quality Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

As for the Imperial Armaments, they were incomparably precious to the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race. For them to suddenly obtain two Imperial Armaments each, they were truly overjoyed.

Merely those two Imperial Armaments and forty Incomplete Imperial Armaments had made their assistance to the Cyanwood Mountain completely worth it.

At the moment when the six powers were feeling joy, many people from the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace were crying. Yes, they were truly crying with tears.

By handing over those weapons, they had completely emptied their foundations. Likely, they would never again be able to obtain their former heights.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, “Next, it should be time for you all to compensate our Cyanwood Mountain,”

‘What? More compensation? Didn’t you say that it would do to just compensate the six powers? That the Cyanwood Mountain doesn’t need compensation? Why are you requesting compensation now?’

Hearing those words, the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace’s Palace Masters were terrified. However, regardless of what

they thought in their hearts, they could not say it out loud. As such, they could only smile wryly.

“What’s wrong? Do you all not wish to compensate us? Are you implying that the casualties that our Cyanwood Mountain suffered should be disregarded?” Chu Feng asked with a stern voice.

“No, that’s not our intention at all. Little friend Chu Feng, what do you wish in compensation?” The two Palace Masters asked with bitter smiles on their faces. If it wasn’t for the fact that they would have to consider their status, the two of them would have cried with tears at this time.

“It’s very simple, just compensate our Cyanwood Mountain with the same compensation you gave the six powers,” Chu Feng said.

“What? Little friend Chu Feng, you’re... you’re making things difficult for us. We have already handed over all that we can as compensation.”

“You want the same sort of compensation? Not only are we unable to offer that sort of compensation now, we will not be able to offer that sort of compensation in the future either.”

“After all, what we had handed over as compensation earlier were things that we accumulated through several tens of thousands of years. Right now, we have already handed all of them over,” The Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master said.

“You can’t hand over the compensation? That’s fine, you can do it slowly.”

“However, you all must write a certificate of indebtedness,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out two bamboo slips. He wrote some things on them and then said, “Done. You all can sign them now.”

At that moment, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Masters were speechless. Chu Feng had done all these things in a very natural and flowing manner. Evidently, he had prepared this to begin with.

At that moment, they truly regretted their decisions. If they knew that Chu Feng would deliberately make things difficult for them in such a manner, they would have chosen their deaths instead.

Of course, this was merely what they thought. If they could survive, they would naturally do everything to survive. As such, before the eyes of countless individuals, they signed Chu Feng's certificates of indebtedness and imprinted them with their fingerprints.

"That's strange," Chu Feng said.

"What's strange? We have already signed the certificate of indebtedness according to your demands. What else do you demand from us?" The two Palace Masters said in an annoyed manner.

"You two have written your own names, and not the names of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace. If the two of you are to die without paying off the debt, who am I supposed to find to collect the debt?" Chu Feng asked.

At that moment, the two Palace Masters were so angry that their faces turned ashen. They did not expect for Chu Feng to be such a cautious individual. However, to them, Chu Feng's cautiousness was simply deliberately making things difficult for them.

Chapter 2009 – Vomiting Blood From Anger

Although they felt extremely displeased, they had no choice but to comply. As such, they added the names of their Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace to the certificates of indebtedness.

With that, it was no longer they who owed Chu Feng. Instead, it was the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace that owed Chu Feng. As long as the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace remained, they had to pay the debt.

“Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master, while it is true that the Mortal King Palace doesn’t have any more Imperial Armaments, don’t you have one in your hand?”

“Why are you not handing that over?” said Chu Feng as he looked to the Heavenly Law Palace Palace Master’s Imperial Armament.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I still need this Imperial Armament. Would you mind waiting until later when I find another Imperial Armament to hand to you?” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master pleaded. He was truly reluctant to part with his Imperial Armament.

After all, Imperial Armaments possessed awareness. As he had used that Imperial Armament for so long, he already gained feelings for it.

“To refuse to hand over an Imperial Armament when you have one, what sort of logic is that?”

“Everyone, tell me, isn’t this considered a refusal to pay one’s debt?” Chu Feng asked with a loud voice.

“Yes!” The crowd responded in unison.

“Heavenly Law Palace Palace Master, I have heard of a phrase. Refusal to pay one’s debt, your anus faces the south. Refusal to return one’s money, your anus faces the north.”

“Which side do you plan to have your anus face?” Chu Feng asked.

“I-I-I-I’ll give it to you” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master started to shiver with anger. Without saying anything further, he immediately severed his relationship with his Imperial Armament and tossed it to Chu Feng.

“Puu~~~”

After that, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master vomited out a mouthful of blood. This was not only caused by his injuries from the connection with his Imperial Armament being severed, but rather, it was mainly because of his anger.

“Let’s go,” After that, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master turned to leave.

“Wait a moment,” However, Chu Feng spoke to stop him once again.

“What else do you want? I have compensated you with all that I can and written you a certificate of indebtedness for what I cannot compensate. What else do you want from me?”

“If that is still not enough, you might as well just kill us!” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master shouted in a very displeased manner.

Even his last bits of patience had been grinded off by Chu Feng. Chu Feng was truly too ruthless. Although Chu Feng did not kill any of them, he had snatched away all of their most valuable Imperial Armaments. Furthermore, he had left them with an enormous debt.

Although their Heavenly Law Palace had escaped from extermination, they had been completely curbed by Chu Feng. At that moment, Duanmu Feiyu felt as if he wished he was dead.

“You all still haven’t handed over the Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Gold Immortal Profound Technique,” Chu Feng

said with a beaming smile.

“What? Hand over the Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Gold Immortal Profound Technique? Chu Feng, what kind of joke is this? You did not mention those two in the compensation that you wanted earlier,” The two Palace Masters said in unison.

The Three Palaces had existed for a very long time. Apart from Imperial Armaments, their most precious possessions were the three Supreme Secret Skills that they possessed.

They were already extremely unwilling to hand over the Imperial Armaments. And now, Chu Feng wanted them to hand over their Supreme Secret Skills too? How could they possibly be willing to agree to it? Furthermore, Chu Feng had indeed not mentioned any secret skills in the compensation he had requested before.

Thus, they would definitely not hand over their secret skills. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was the one being unreasonable here. Even if they were to dispute with him, even if they were to find people to determine who was wrong, they would not be afraid of Chu Feng.

“Indeed, I did not mention it in the compensation earlier. However, they were clearly written on your certificates of indebtedness.”

“Everyone, have a look, have a look. See and judge for yourselves,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the two certificates of indebtedness that the two Palace Masters had signed. Using his world spirit techniques, he had enlarged the words written on them. As such, everyone was able to see their contents.

After carefully reading the two certificates of indebtedness, the crowd was shocked to discover that, sure enough, there was a clause stating that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace could use their Wood Immortal Profound Technique and Gold Immortal Profound Technique as a replacement for two weapons. However, they had to hand over the two secret skills to

Chu Feng on the spot. Otherwise, they would be breaching the contract.

However, the matter that caused the crowd to not know whether to laugh or cry was that it was written on the contract that the two weapons that the two secret skills could replace were not Imperial Armaments, but rather Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

In other words, both the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace could give Chu Feng one less Incomplete Imperial Armament. However, they must use their Supreme Secret Skills as a replacement.

It would be one thing if they were to replace Imperial Armaments. However, they were actually only able to replace Incomplete Imperial Armaments. This caused the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace to become completely speechless.

“Bastard, Chu Feng, you are simply scamming people here!” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master felt as if he was going to be angered to death by Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, your actions are simply unreasonable!” The Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master was shivering with anger.

Due to their carelessness, they had not carefully read over the so-called certificate of indebtedness. However, they had not expected Chu Feng to scam them like this.

“Ah? Scam? This condition was clearly written on the certificates of indebtedness before the two of you signed them. It was your mistake to not carefully read them over. Yet now, you are actually blaming me for it?”

“Lord Luokong, Lord Lianghua, please preside over this matter. How could they refuse to admit their debt?” Chu Feng looked to the two Ancient Era’s Elves’ Grand Elders.

“We should not spare the lives of vile and lowly characters who

refuse to recognize their losses,” Lord Lianghua said with a cold voice.

“The two of you should just admit to what you’ve signed. After all, little friend Chu Feng is already extremely tolerant to be willing to spare your lives,” Lord Luokong added.

“But, the secret skills’ original owners are already dead. Right now...” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master wanted to provide an excuse.

“Although I do not know who the previous owners of the two secret skills are, if my guess is correct, the two secret skills should be with the two Palace Masters, no?”

“It is best that you two do not deny it. Else, I have the means to make your secret skills reveal themselves. At that time, it would be extremely embarrassing for you all,” Chu Feng interrupted before the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master could finish.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the faces of the two Palace Masters immediately turned ashen. Chu Feng had hit the bullseye. The two secret skills were indeed with them right now.

“Hand them over. Although your bodies might suffer some damage from a forced removal of the secret skills, you can have confidence in my world spirit techniques.”

“I am able to make it so that the two of you will suffer the least amount of damage from the removing of the secret skills,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Take them,” The two Palace Masters said while gnashing their teeth. Today, they had truly suffered at the hands of Chu Feng.

Afterward, Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation on the spot and removed the two secret skills from the two Palace Masters’ bodies.

Merely, after the two secret skills were removed, the two Palace Masters’ bodies started to tremble uncontrollably. Their

complexions turned blue, and their lips turned green. They needed to be supported, or else they would not be able to even stand.

At that moment, the two men's vitality were deeply injured. Likely, they would not be able to recover in a short period of time.

Seeing that scene, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming, these Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, all started to snicker up their sleeves.

They who were proficient with World Spirit Techniques all knew that it was not impossible to remove secret skills from one's body. Mainly, it would depend on the strength of one's world spirit techniques.

Actually, with their abilities as Dragon mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, all of them were capable of accomplishing that.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's mastery of World Spirit Techniques surpassed their own. Thus, even if the two Palace Masters were to be injured from the removal of the secret techniques, they should not be injured to such a degree. In fact, even if they were to be the ones removing the secret skills, the two Palace Masters would not have been injured to such a degree.

Yet now, the two Palace Masters had been so deeply injured. It was clear that there was only a single possibility as to why; Chu Feng had made a fool of them.

Chapter 2010 – Releasing Tigers, Pulling Out Teeth

After Chu Feng sealed the two Supreme Secret Skills with his world spirit formations, he spoke to the two Palace Masters with a beaming smile, “Seems like you two are still capable of complying with your promises.”

However, the two Palace Masters had no heart to answer Chu Feng. At that moment, they were still feeling enormous pain, as if their hearts were bleeding.

Especially when they saw Chu Feng’s beaming smile. They truly wanted to use their own hands to tear Chu Feng’s face apart. The reason for that was because they felt that Chu Feng was a truly vile and low person.

“Oh, that’s right. I have something else to tell you,” Chu Feng said again.

“What is it?” The two Palace Masters asked.

“I actually did not have the means to determine whether or not you two possessed secret skills. Thus, if you were to refuse to acknowledge that you had the secret skills, there would have been nothing that I could do about it,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, the two Palace Master’s’ eyes were wide open with rage. Their faces started to distort. It was as if their hearts, livers, lungs and spleens were about to explode.

“Let’s go,” In the end, the two Palace Masters angrily shouted toward the sky. Then, they led their respective armies and left.

When they had arrived, they had been overwhelmingly imposing. However, when they left, they were completely spiritless.

Not long after the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace left, when they were still not far into the distance, Chu Feng spoke with a loud voice. “Everyone, the curtain has dropped on this battle. However, there is no need to leave this urgently.”

“Our Cyanwood Mountain wishes to invite everyone to a feast,”

“Very well!!!” Hearing those words, the crowd was overjoyed. One by one, they started to cheer frantically.

The crowd present had all attained a great experience. Not only did they find out that Chu Feng was overwhelmingly heaven-defying, they also found out that he possessed the backing of the Ancient Era’s Elves, an unparalleled matter.

As such, they all wished for an opportunity to befriend Chu Feng. And now, Chu Feng had actually invited them to a feast. Naturally, they would be overjoyed.

However, when this sort of cheering sound reached the ears of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace, it was undoubtedly an enormous attack at them.

“Puu!!!” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master coughed up a mouthful of blood again.

If his previous vomiting of blood could be excused with the severance of his connection with his Imperial Armament, then his current vomiting of blood was completely because of being enraged by Chu Feng.

“Humph,” Chu Feng was observing the crowd from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace’s with his Heaven’s Eyes. When he saw the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master vomiting blood, there was not the slightest trace of sympathy in his eyes. Instead, the coldness in his eyes increased.

The hatred he had towards the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master was something that he would remember for the rest of his life.

Even though he had obtained complete victory today, it remained that their Cyanwood Mountain, the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race, and the Four Great Imperial Clans had all suffered casualties.

It was a bitter battle. However, this battle was one that did not have to happen.

However, because the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace felt that Chu Feng was a threat, they decided to create all kinds of difficulties for him. In fact, they even found an excuse to kill him.

Today, if it wasn't for the assistance from various powers, the Cyanwood Mountain would definitely have been razed to the ground. Regardless of whether it was the experts that had lived for close to ten thousand years, or the kids that had just embarked upon the path of martial cultivation, those who were related to Chu Feng would all have been killed by the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's armies.

This was the cruelty of war. The victor was king and the loser was the thief. The victor would forever not sympathize with the loser.

In fact, if possible, even if he didn't eradicate the entire Heavenly law Palace and Mortal King Palace, Chu Feng would eliminate all of their elites.

The seed of resentment had already been sown. This was something that would be very difficult to remove. The result of cutting down weeds, but not pulling out their roots, would be facing retaliation in the future.

This was just like how the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace had been suppressed by the Ancient Era's Elves for so long. On the surface, they appeared submissive and did not dare to disrespect the Ancient Era's Elves.

However, once the opportunity presented itself, such as now, they immediately started to attack Lord Lianghua. This was their ambition. From that, it could be seen that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace were most definitely not trustworthy powers.

Thus, if it wasn't for the fact the Ancient Era's Elves had promised Qing Xuantian that they would not extinguish human powers that had existed for tens of thousands of years, Chu Feng would definitely not have spared the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

In fact, Chu Feng did not agree with Qing Xuantian. So what if it was an old power that had existed for tens of thousands of years? If its existence would only bring harm to the world, why let it continue to exist?

Without being ruthless, one would not be able to stand steadily. This was especially true for the world of martial cultivators. If one did not try to kill others, they would instead become the fish on the chopping block for others to kill.

However, it remained that Qing Xuantian was a senior. When even the Ancient Era's Elves decided to comply with that promise, Chu Feng should also show respect for Qing Xuantian and spare the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace.

However, if Chu Feng were to just let the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace go like this, he felt that they would one day return for retaliation.

That was why Chu Feng had seized their Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments. Furthermore, by using the excuse of taking away their secret skills, Chu Feng had heavily damaged the two Palace Masters so that they would not be able to recover in a short period of time.

Furthermore, with what he had done, the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace would find it very difficult to regain their

former strength unless they were given assistance by some sort of grand expert.

Perhaps what Chu Feng had done might appear to be despicable in the eyes of some people. However, Chu Feng must avenge those who were killed. At the same time, he must also consider those who were still alive.

At this moment, Lord Lianghua walked over to Chu Feng. “Little friend Chu Feng, your talent in martial cultivation has already left me speechless. However, your conduct today has truly made this old man gain a whole new level of respect for you yet again.”

“Lord Lianghua, what do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“In the past, Duanmu Feiyu and Xun Fengyang were both extremely respectful towards me. This caused me to think that they truly respected me with sincerity, that they truly respected us, the Ancient Era’s Elves.”

“However, what happened today came like a club to my head. I was beaten awake by it.”

“It turned out that they both possessed ambitions. They were unwilling to be suppressed by my Ancient Era’s Elves forever.”

“Truth be told, I am very worried that they will join hands with the Dark Hall. In fact, I am unable to ascertain whether or not they have come here today under the directions of the Dark Hall.”

“Today, we have done an extremely frightening thing — we have released two fierce tigers back into the mountain, tigers that dream of biting us to death.”

“Fortunately, you have taken care of things beautifully. You have pulled out several of the two fierce tigers’ sharpest teeth. Like this, even if they were to bite us again in the future, it would not hurt that much,” Lord Lianghua said. He was feeling admiration for Chu Feng from the bottom of his heart.

“Chu Feng, what Lord Lianghua said is correct. You have taken

care of this beautifully,” Lord Luokong also walked over.

“Indeed. Although it is said to only be compensation, you have managed to rattle the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace’s foundation. Like this, even if they were to attack us again in the future, they will not be as fierce as they were today,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master also nodded his head repeatedly.

Although what Chu Feng had done today might be seen as excessive for some people, to these wise men, Chu Feng had done everything perfectly.

With the situation today, they must release the people from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace alive even though they had killed a lot of innocent people.

However, Chu Feng had not left them leave in peace. Even if they were to be allowed to leave, Chu Feng made sure that they would pay the consequences for their actions. He had made sure that he would make up for the deaths of those innocents.

Two Supreme Secret Skills, thirteen Imperial Armaments and two hundred and forty Incomplete Imperial Armaments.

Although this compensation appeared to be a great amount, it was merely a small amount to them.

For certain people, Imperial Armaments surpassed everything. For a single treasure, they were willing to kill millions and millions of people. In this world of martial cultivation, this was what the great majority of people thought. Before one’s own interest, people’s lives were akin to grass.

However, to others, people’s lives were the most important. If one’s close kin were to be killed, so what if one possessed countless treasures?

Why Chu Feng wanted all those Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments today was not because of greed.

He didn't really care about compensation. Like Lord Lianghua had said, he merely did not want to release the tigers back into the mountain like that. He was merely pulling out their sharp teeth before releasing them back into the mountain.

Chapter 2011 – Only You

Today, these tigers must be released. Even though they were unwilling to do so, they had no choice but to release them.

As Chu Feng had pulled out the fierce tigers' sharp teeth, the crowd felt a whole new level of respect for him.

However, at the moment when all the grand characters were praising him, Chu Feng was unable to smile at all. Standing high in the sky, he looked to his surroundings.

He looked to the people with broken arms, broken legs, mutilated bodies or open wounds. Looking at them, Chu Feng felt as if his heart was bleeding.

These people didn't have to be injured. They were injured and left in this state all because of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

However, when compared to those who had died in this battle, these people who were only injured were extremely fortunate.

“Even though I have managed to obtain compensation and pulled out the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's sharp teeth, I am unable to bring those who died back to life. I am unable to comfort their relatives through the pain of losing their loved ones.”

“If I had the choice, I would definitely personally avenge them, and kill all those from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace that came to invade us today.”

“Unfortunately, I am incompetent...”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he flew down from the sky and began to help heal the injured.

At that moment, the crowd was completely startled. The word ‘incompetent,’ caused their hearts to twitch.

Seeing Chu Feng saving the crowd, seeing him letting go of his status and healing even the unremarkable Martial Kings, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Immeasurable Immortal, Snow-haired Immortal and the others looked to one another.

Then, one by one, they descended to the surface and began to help heal the people injured in the battle.

Actually, healing the injured from a battle was not something that they, the grand characters, should be doing. Merely, as Chu Feng was doing so, they could not find any reason not to do so with him.

Afterwards, Chu Feng invited everyone to a feast. However, the crowd from the Cyanwood Mountain did not immediately start to celebrate.

Instead, under Chu Feng's guidance, they first attended a memorial service for those who had died in this battle. In fact, Chu Feng was simply in no mood to celebrate.

However, it remained that they had obtained a great victory. As such, he could not appear to be spiritless. For the sake of boosting the crowd's morale, the Cyanwood Mountain not only invited the outsiders to a feast, they themselves also hosted a feast.

With the experts from the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans, they jointly celebrated their victory in this battle.

"Little friend Chu Feng, these Imperial Armaments are too precious. We cannot accept them." At the feast, the King Monstrous Dragon Race's Clan Chief tried to hand the two Imperial Armaments and the many Incomplete Imperial Armaments to Chu Feng.

"Lord Clan Chief, for you all to have come here to assist us today, I, Chu Feng, am truly grateful. I do not know how to thank you all. As such, those are things that you all deserve, that you all should

keep.”

Chu Feng would naturally not accept the Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments. While the people from the Cyanwood Mountain did not deserve to die, this was even more the case for the people from the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans.

They had suffered casualties in order to assist Chu Feng. Thus, Chu Feng was determined to hand those Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments to them. Only by doing that would Chu Feng feel a bit more at ease.

“Everyone, let’s stop with this back and forth. I have a proposal,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

“Lord Palace Master, what sort of proposal might you have?” The Dongfang Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder asked.

“If we are to try to hand all of the Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments to little friend Chu Feng, he would definitely refuse. But, we can each hand an Imperial Armament and twenty Incomplete Imperial Armaments to the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Like this, we would be enjoying the profits together.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you must not refuse this. We came to help you out of camaraderie. There is no need to consider compensation in such a case.”

“As for the reason why we are returning a portion of the Imperial Armaments and Incomplete Imperial Armaments, it is not because we find it difficult to accept them. Rather, it is because we want to share the profits. We were able to seize total victory this time around mainly because of you. As such, you should naturally receive a share of the gains from this battle,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

“What Lord Palace Master says is very correct. Little friend Chu

Feng, you must not refuse this,” The King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief said.

“That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, you must accept them. If we cannot even share the gains from a battle, how are we an alliance?” The Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders added.

They spoke those words willingly. The reason for that was because they had not sent a lot of troops to assist Chu Feng in this battle. As such, if they were to take away that many Imperial Armaments, they would feel distressed about it. However, it would be different if they were to share a portion of their profits with Chu Feng.

“Very well. Since everyone insists, I, Chu Feng, will also not refuse it anymore. We managed to win this battle today all because of you all. As such, in the future, we shall share both our prosperity and our difficulties,” Chu Feng raised his wine cup.

The crowd raised their wine cups in response. Merrily, they shared a cup of wine.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have another gift that I wish to present you. You must accept it,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

“Palace Master, what is it that you wish to gift me?” Chu feng asked with a smile.

“You will definitely be interested in this gift,” As the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack. It was a cube-shaped box that emitted flickering light. It was a spirit formation.

Upon seeing that spirit formation, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately shone. Contained within that spirit formation was a secret skill.

To be exact, it was one of the Five Elements Secret Skills, the Earth Immortal Profound Technique!!!

“This gift is too precious. I absolutely cannot accept it,” Upon seeing the Earth Immortal Profound Technique, Chu Feng felt as if his blood was boiling.

Currently, he had already obtained the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and Water Immortal Profound Technique. Although he had yet to grasp the Gold Immortal Profound Technique and Wood Immortal Profound Technique, they remained in his possession. If he were to obtain the Earth Immortal Profound Technique too, he would have obtained all five of the Five Elements Secret Skills.

If Chu Feng were to grasp all five of the Five Elements Secret Skills, he would be able to obtain the treasure left behind by the Five Elements Old Ancestor.

No one knew exactly what that treasure was. However, as it was a treasure, Chu Feng naturally wanted to obtain it.

Merely, it was one thing to obtain the two secret skills from the Mortal King Palace and the Heavenly Law Palace. But, as for the Underworld Palace, they did not owe him anything. As such, Chu Feng found it improper to accept the Earth Immortal Profound Technique, an extremely precious treasure.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have wanted to become allies with the Cyanwood Mountain for a long time now. Today, this Earth Immortal Profound Technique shall be used to express my good faith. I hope that little friend Chu Feng will accept it,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master seemed to know that Chu Feng would be reluctant to accept the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. Thus, he gave a reason to make Chu Feng accept it.

“If it wasn’t for senior’s prompt arrival with the Underworld Palace’s army, our Cyanwood Mountain would truly have been in imminent peril. From that moment, we were already allies.”

“Since we are allies, there is no need for this. Senior, please take back the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. I will not accept it,” Chu Feng still found it difficult to accept the Earth Immortal

Profound Technique.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is my sincerity. If you are to refuse to accept it, you would be refusing my request to become allies,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

At that moment, Lord Lianghua also added, “Chu Feng, the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master only possesses good intentions. You should just accept it.”

“What Lord Lianghua says is correct,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master smiled and nodded.

“Little friend Chu Feng, the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master is already saying it like that. Thus, you should stop refusing it.”

Following that, many of the people present all began to urge Chu Feng to accept the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. They were able to tell that the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master truly wanted to gift that secret skill to Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng smiled and shook his head. Even though he deeply wanted the Earth Immortal Profound Technique, he did not plan to accept it.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I will tell you the truth today. Although this Earth Immortal Profound Technique has been with our Underworld Palace for many years, our Underworld Palace is simply unable to unleash its full strength.”

“I believe everyone knows of the strength of the Five Elements Secret Skills. When they are unleashed, they come out as a body with a cultivation one level higher than that of their owner.”

“However, the people that are truly capable of accomplishing that feat are extremely few. Over the tens of thousands of years, only six individuals have been capable of accomplishing that feat. And now, in the Holy Land of Martialism, only little friend Chu Feng is capable of it,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

“Only me?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled.

“Of course. Otherwise, why would Duanmu Feiyu and Xun Fengyang, those two fellows, not use the secret skills when they possessed them?” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

Chapter 2012 – A Grand Gift

“That’s true. Why didn’t they use them?” Many people were surprised. Both Duanmu Feiyu and Xun Fengyang were rank eight Martial Emperors. If they were to use the Gold Immortal Profound Technique and the Wood Immortal Profound Technique, they would be able to unleash two rank nine Martial Emperors to assist them. As such, Lord Luokong’s arrival with the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army would not have been able to stop them either.

“It’s not that they didn’t use them. Rather, it’s that the two of them are simply unable to use them. Else, why would they wait until the Dark Hall’s appearance, wait for the Dark Hall to pin down us Ancient Era’s Elves to finally fall out with us? If they were able to use them, they would’ve fallen out with us long ago.”

“After all, the two of them have possessed the secret skills since long ago,” Lord Lianghua said with a sneer. His tone was filled with contempt.

“Indeed, they are unable to use them. The Five Elements Secret Skills are extremely extraordinary. The stronger their master is, the more difficult it will be to unleash them.”

“In fact, for little friend Chu Feng to be able to so effortlessly unleash the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique, those two secret skills, could be said to be truly miraculous,” Lord Luokong added.

“That is why after the previous owner of the Earth Immortal Profound Technique, Lord Zhan Jing, died, I merely kept the Earth Immortal Profound Technique with me, and did not attempt to learn it. The reason for that is because I knew when Duanmu Feiyu and Xun Fengyang were unable to unleash their respective secret skills, I too would not be able to unleash the Earth Immortal Profound Technique,” The Underworld Palace’s Palace Master said.

He had a smile on his face and walked toward Chu Feng as he spoke. He forcibly opened Chu Feng's palm and placed the sealed Earth Immortal Profound Technique in Chu Feng's hand. He said, "Little friend Chu Feng, it is not that I do not value this secret skill. Rather, the Five Elements Secret Skills should be yours exclusively."

"This..." At that moment, Chu Feng did not know how to react.

"Little friend Chu Feng, just accept it. Else, this treasured secret skill will have been wasted," The crowd began to urge Chu Feng to accept it.

"Very well. However, I will not accept this grand gift for free," Chu Feng accepted the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. Then, he said to the crowd, "Today, I, Chu Feng, will also give each and every senior here a grand gift."

"Chu Feng, in terms of seniority, all of us here are your seniors. I wonder, what sort of grand gift are you planning to give us?" Lord Lianghua said jokingly.

Although all of the people enjoying the feast with Chu Feng here were all the people with the greatest status and strength, they numbered quite a few, totalling thirty-five.

Since Chu Feng said 'grand gift,' it meant that what Chu Feng planned to give them should be something extraordinary. If he were to give a gift to each of the thirty-five people, it would be something that no ordinary person could afford to do.

Thus, Lord Lianghua's intention was very clear. He wished to see whether or not Chu Feng's grand gift was actually a grand gift.

In fact, many of the people present were all looking at Chu Feng with beaming smiles. They did not have too enormous of a hope. After all, there were too many people here. Furthermore, they were all extraordinary individuals. Very few things could be pleasing to their eyes. While they knew that Chu Feng possessed

things that could please their eyes, they did not feel that Chu Feng would be able to take out so many of such things.

“It’s this. Seniors, are you all interested?” As Chu Feng spoke, his palm was extended from his sleeve. Then, a massive peach appeared before the crowd’s eyes.

“Heavens! That peach!!!”

Upon seeing that peach, everyone’s eyes started to shine. Even though many people did not know that that peach was the Immortality Peach, they were able to sense dense power from the peach.

Especially for Baili Xuankong, the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others who were near the end of their lifespan, they felt as if their nearly dried-up bodies were moistening upon smelling the fragrance of the peach.

“Exactly what sort of peach is that? Why would I...?”

At this moment, other than the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Lord Lianghua and Lord Luokong, practically everyone else stood up excitedly.

While countless people had contributed to the battle today, the people who were gathered here were the representatives of the various major powers, and those that Chu Feng had carefully chosen. They were all people who had lived for a very long time, and were near the ends of their lifespans. In fact, there were many like the Snow Blade Mad Demon who would not live for ten more years, people who had one foot in the coffin already.

Chu Feng had chosen them because he wanted to share a portion of his Immortality Peaches with them so that they could extend their lifespan.

Thus, they were all attracted by the Immortality Peach, for the attraction that the Immortality Peach had for them was truly

enormous.

“Everyone, it would seem that little friend Chu Feng is truly going to present you all with a grand gift today. That peach he’s holding is the Immortality Peach that can increase one’s lifespan by a hundred years after eating it,” Lord Lianghua said with a smile. As a Grand Elder of the Ancient Era’s Elves, he naturally recognized the Immortality Peach.

Merely, even he had not expected Chu Feng to be willing to share such precious Immortality Peaches with the crowd. One must know... that even for them, the Ancient Era’s Elves, the Immortality Peaches remained extremely precious items. Items that not just anyone could enjoy the benefits of. Apart from the Ancient Era’s Elves, there was no one else that was able to enjoy the benefits of the Immortality Peaches.

“They’re really the Immortality Peaches. But... little friend Chu Feng, how did you manage to obtain that many Immortality Peaches? Didn’t...”

At that moment, the Snow Blade Mad Demon, the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders and the other experts that had entered the Moonlight Maze that day were all unable to keep their calm.

On the one hand, it was because they were extremely excited upon verifying that what Chu Feng possessed was an Immortality Peach. On the other hand, they had been in the Moonlight Maze and seen the Immortality Peaches. Merely, they did not dare to ascertain whether or not what Chu Feng held was really an Immortality Peach.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had said that all of the Immortality Peaches were eaten by the Heavenly Law Palace’s Elder Zhao Yu.

“Seniors, I actually lied when we were in the Moonlight Maze. Zhao Yu did not eat all of the Immortality Peaches. Instead, they

were all with me.”

“Merely, there were also not over a thousand Immortality Peaches either. They only numbered over five hundred.”

“As for why I lied, it is because I wanted to borrow your hands to eliminate that Zhao Yu.”

“After all, I was not very familiar with the seniors here. Thus, I hope that seniors can be understanding of me not being honest,” Chu Feng said to the crowd apologetically.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what sorts of words are those? The fact that you’re willing to act forthcoming with us now means that you trust us,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others would naturally not blame Chu Feng. They were all intelligent people. Thus, they knew that Zhao Yu must have been schemed against by Chu Feng.

“Seniors, catch,” At that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Then, Immortality Peaches began to fly toward the crowd. They landed into Baili Xuankong, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others’ hands.

Everyone present received a share of the Immortality Peaches. For Nangong Longjian and the others who were still capable of living for a very long time, they received an Immortality Peach each.

For the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders, whose lifespans were nearing their end and Chu Feng did not have too good of a relationship with, they received two Immortality Peaches each.

As for Baili Xuankong, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others whose lifespans were nearing their end and also possessed an excellent relationship with Chu Feng, they received three Immortality Peaches each

Everyone present, other than Lord Lianghua and Lord Luokong,

all received Immortality Peaches from Chu Feng.

They knew that it was unsuitable for them to accept such a grand gift from Chu Feng. However, they truly did not wish to miss out on it. The reason for that was because the Immortality Peaches were items capable of extending their lifespan.

In this world, what could possibly be more precious than one's life? Especially for them, people who were about to die, although a single Immortality Peach would only be able to extend their life for a hundred years, they were more precious than Imperial Armaments to them.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we will deeply remember your enormous grace in our hearts,” At that moment, the Snow Blade Mad Demon and the others were truly endlessly grateful toward Chu Feng. In fact, there were even some people who were tearing up.

They had originally thought that they would not be able to continue to live for long. Thus, when Chu Feng gifted them Immortality Peaches, he had simply allowed them to have a rebirth. That sort of sensation was something that only they understood.

“I, Chu Feng, shall offer a toast to the seniors present,” Chu Feng raised his wine cup.

“Cheers,” The crowd raised their wine cups to toast.

Chapter 2013 – The Unfavorable Battle Situation

After the banquet, the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans all began to leave in succession. After all, apart from the Four Great Imperial Clans, both the Underworld Palace and the King Monstrous Dragon Race had dispatched all of their troops to assist the Cyanwood Mountain. As such, they were afraid of retaliations from the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace, and had to return in order to guard their homes.

At that moment, Lord Luokong called for Lord Lianghua and Chu Feng.

“Lord Luokong, might something have happened?” Chu Feng asked. He was already able to tell that Lord Luokong seemed to be occupied with something in his mind. For Lord Luokong to call for Lord Lianghua and him, Chu Feng knew that something must’ve happened.

“Actually, it’s hard for me to say this. However, when considering the general situation, I must say it”

“Little friend Chu Feng, I must bring Lianghua away with me,” Lord Luokong said.

“Could it be that the battle between the Ancient Era’s Elves and the Dark Hall has become unfavorable?” Chu Feng asked.

“Before the Moonlight Maze, the Dark Hall was merely trying to pin us Ancient Era’s Elves down. However, after that battle in the Moonlight Maze, they have unleashed their true strength against us.”

“The Dark Hall is very powerful; so powerful that they have surpassed our imagination. Furthermore, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts are being thrown onto the battlefield nonstop. As

such, we urgently need Lianghua's return to assist with the defense," Lord Luokong said.

"Didn't the Ancient Era's Elves possess a method to curb the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts? Are they not effective anymore?" Chu Feng asked.

The Ancient Era's Elves had suffered at the hands of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts in the Moonlight Maze. Chu Feng felt that it was mainly because they did not expect the appearance of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

However, the Dark Hall had now unleashed an all-out attack against the Ancient Era's Elves, and were attacking various strategic locations nonstop.

Furthermore, after the events in the Moonlight Maze, they had begun to widely utilize the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts in their attacks. In that sort of situation, the Ancient Era's Elves should have already started to use the golden bells that could contain the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

Yet now, the battle was still extremely unfavorable for them. This could only mean one thing — that the golden bells were no longer effective against the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

"They're no longer effective. We don't know what the Dark Hall has done to the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. Right now, we Ancient Era's Elves no longer possess any way to contain them. As such, we can only fight them head-on," Lord Luokong shook his head and sighed.

"It turns out that we have underestimated the Dark Hall," Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown.

In the past, they had thought the entire time that the Dark Hall was afraid of the Ancient Era's Elves. However now, it was the Dark Hall that was attacking the Ancient Era's Elves.

If even the Ancient Era's Elves could not withstand the Dark

Hall, how could anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism possibly be able to withstand the Dark Hall?

Seeing Chu Feng's sullen expression, Lord Luokong thought that what Chu Feng was worried about was there not being anyone to protect the Cyanwood Mountain after Lord Lianghua left.

Thus, he said to Chu Feng, "Little friend Chu Feng, I have led all these people here because I was ordered by His Majesty to bring everyone from the Cyanwood Mountain into our Elf Kingdom. There is a grand formation from the Ancient Era in our Elf Kingdom. In there, you all will be absolutely safe."

"Lord Luokong, there's no need for that. While the Ancient Era's Elves could protect our Cyanwood Mountain temporarily, they cannot protect us forever. You can take Lord Lianghua with you without worrying about us. As for the Cyanwood Mountain, I will be able to protect this place," Chu Feng said.

"You can protect the Cyanwood Mountain?" Hearing those words, Lord Luokong was startled.

Although Chu Feng's current strength was very strong, Lord Luokong knew the strength of the Dark Hall after having fought them several times. Not to mention Chu Feng, if the Dark Hall's Hall Master were to attack the Cyanwood Mountain, even Lord Lianghua would not be a match for him.

They were currently in a passive state, and did not even know the location of the Dark Hall's headquarters.

Yet, the various strategic locations of the Ancient Era's Elves were all openly known.

The Dark Hall was able to attack them at any time they wished. They could attack any one of those many locations they wished.

As such, the Ancient Era's Elves could only act passively, and allow themselves to be attacked without actually being able to attack the Dark Hall.

Therefore... if the Dark Hall's Hall Master were to personally attack the Cyanwood Mountain, the Cyanwood Mountain would definitely be extinguished.

“Lord Luokong, I have managed to create a spirit formation. That spirit formation is capable of withstanding attacks from peak Martial Emperors.”

“And now, with seniors Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Immeasurable Immortal, Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming here to assist me, I am ninety percent certain that I will be able to successfully set up that spirit formation.”

“Thus, you can bring Lord Lianghua back without worrying about our Cyanwood Mountain,” Chu Feng said.

“Truly? You've managed to create such a powerful spirit formation?” Hearing those words, Lord Luokong was astonished.

“Absolutely. Why would I joke with Senior Luokong about something like this?” Chu Feng nodded.

“Little friend Chu Feng, exactly how many more abilities do you have that I do not know of?” Lord Luokong gasped in admiration. He was able to tell that Chu Feng was not joking. However, it was precisely because Chu Feng wasn't joking with him that he exclaimed in admiration at Chu Feng's talent.

A spirit formation capable of withstanding attacks from peak Martial Emperors. While their Elf Kingdom possessed such a spirit formation, it was something that only their Elf Kingdom possessed.

That spirit formation was set up by the ancestors of the Ancient Era's Elves, and was said to have originated from the Ancient Era. However, Chu Feng had actually managed to create such a spirit formation. This was truly an unimaginable feat.

“If that spirit formation is successfully set up, our Cyanwood Mountain will also do what an ally should do. We will go and assist

the Ancient Era's Elves," Chu Feng said.

As the battle had already started, although Chu Feng was worried for his friends' safety, he knew that they could not turtle up in here. As allies, they should go and fight alongside the Ancient Era's Elves.

Although there would be casualties by joining the battle, and those who were close to Chu Feng might even be killed, Chu Feng had to participate in this battle.

Furthermore, as long as Chu Feng joined the battle, those who were related to him would also join the battle.

This was an unavoidable battle, for this battle would determine the life and death of all beings in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chu Feng knew very well that if the Dark Hall wasn't eliminated, there would be many more people dying in the Holy Land of Martialism.

If the Dark Hall were to win the battle, it was likely that a calamity would engulf the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

"Little friend Chu Feng, then we Ancient Era's Elves shall await your arrival," Lord Luokong patted Chu Feng's shoulder. He was moved from the bottom of his heart.

He had come to the Cyanwood Mountain straight from the battlefield. Thus, he knew very well what sort of situation they, the Ancient Era's Elves, were in.

Although the Cyanwood Mountain was incomparable to the Ancient Era's Elves, it was still a place filled with experts. If the Cyanwood Mountain's experts were capable of joining the battle, it would be of great assistance to the current Ancient Era's Elves.

After this matter was decided, Lord Luokong and Lord Lianghua left with the Ancient Era's Elves' army.

After all, they were currently in a critical battle against the Dark

Hall. Thus, they did not wish to delay their return.

After Lord Luokong and Lord Lianghua left, it was already very late into the night. However, Chu Feng was unable to sleep. He was still worrying about Su Rou and Su Mei.

With his heart distracted and his thoughts in turmoil, Chu Feng walked to the outside of the Cyanwood Mountain to find a peaceful place to calm his heart.

When Chu Feng arrived at a lakeside, he discovered a familiar silhouette. It was the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

“Senior Snow Blade?” Upon seeing the Snow Blade Mad Demon, Chu Feng’s expression changed slightly.

The reason for that was because not only was the Snow Blade Mad Demon standing by the lakeside, he also had several memorial tablets placed before him. Before the memorial tablets were many offerings.

Evidently, the Snow Blade Mad Demon was holding an offering to some people.

But... that was not the important aspect. Most importantly, Chu Feng discovered that the Snow Blade Mad Demon, this old man who had lived for thousands of years, actually had tears streaming down his cheeks.

Chapter 2014 – Snow Blade Mad Demon's Past

“Chu Feng?”

Chu Feng had not wanted to disturb the Snow Blade Mad Demon. However, right at the moment when Chu Feng planned to leave, the Snow Blade Mad Demon suddenly noticed him.

In response, Chu Feng immediately descended beside Snow Blade Mad Demon and asked, “Senior, you are...?”

“These are all for my family. Today is the anniversary of their deaths. Thus, I am holding an offering to them here,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon wiped his tears away and forced a smile.

“The anniversary of their deaths?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed.

With this many memorial tablets, it was clear that it was an entire family, a clan. The Snow Blade Mad Demon said that it was the anniversary of their deaths. This meant that his family had all died on the same day.

There could only be one possibility for why this many people had died on the same day– they were killed.

“Senior, who killed them?” Chu Feng asked in a serious manner.

“It was Zhan Cangtian,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon responded.

“Zhan Cangtian? Are you talking about the leader of the Five Great Evildoers, that Zhan Cangtian?” Chu Feng asked to confirm.

“Other than him, who else would do something so cruel?” the Snow Blade Mad Demon asked.

“Senior, exactly what happened?” Chu Feng asked.

“Back then, Zhan Cangtian was yet to be infamous throughout the world. I was also young. As I traveled the world, I accidentally

came across Zhan Cangtian doing an evil deed. He was trying to massacre a family. Seeing that the family was not full of malicious people, I acted to prevent Zhan Cangtian from ruthlessly killing them.”

“As we fought, he was no match for me. After being injured by me, he suddenly asked whether or not I dared to declare my name to him.”

“At that time, I thought that since he was no match for me, and that I would be killing him on the spot, even if I were to tell him where my family was, I would still not have anything to worry about.”

“As such, I ended up telling him my name. However, never did I expect that Zhan Cangtian was actually a world spiritist, and possessed a treasure on him. Using that treasure’s power, he managed to escape from me.”

“After he escaped, I did not concern myself about it too much. However, when I returned home, I discovered that all the people in my family had been killed.”

“That day, my oldest son was only four and a half years old,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon gently caressed a memorial tablet with shaking hands.

“As for my younger son,” Then, Snow Blade Mad Demon looked to another memorial tablet. Glistening teardrops appeared in his aged eyes once again. With a trembling voice, he said, “he was only a month old newborn. I did not even have the chance to see him since he was born.”

“Yet, my first meeting with him would be his corpse that was hacked into eight pieces. Not even an intact corpse remained.”

“Furthermore, all of my family’s young women, before they were killed, they were all raped by Zhan Cangtian. Especially my wife and my little sister, they...” the Snow Blade Mad Demon started to

choke with emotions.

“Damn it!” Hearing those words, coldness filled Chu Feng’s eyes. Even though Snow Blade Mad Demon had not finished his words, Chu Feng was able to guess that not only were his wife and little sister raped, they had most certainly also met miserable deaths.

Chu Feng detested those who bullied women, children and the elderly the most. That Zhan Cangtian could be said to have killed all that he shouldn’t have. Furthermore, he killed them in such a cruel manner.

Furthermore, that was only what Zhan Cangtian did to the Snow Blade Mad Demon. Over the years, the people that Zhan Cangtian had killed were innumerable. One could very well imagine how numerous his malicious deeds were.

Evildoer, he was most definitely an enormous evildoer. His crimes could not be forgiven.

“Senior, did you search for Zhan Cangtian later?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have; how could I not? Ever since that day, I have remained unmarried, and did not bother to come into dealings with others. Other than training, the only thing I did was search for Zhan Cangtian.”

“However, never would I have expected for my search to be this long. It has been thousands of years, but I have yet to find Zhan Cangtian,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon said.

“How could this be? Isn’t Zhan Cangtian the leader of the Five Great Evildoers? He should have done countless malicious deeds over the years. Furthermore, he also has a disciple. How could there be no trace leading to him?” Chu Feng found it very unbelievable.

The Snow Blade Mad Demon was a very old man. Furthermore, his family being massacred by Zhan Cangtian had happened when

he was young. This meant that he had searched for Zhan Cangtian his entire life, yet was unable to find him. Furthermore, in this period of time, Zhan Cangtian had continued to do malicious deeds in the Holy Land of Martialism. This was truly unbelievable.

“He has appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism countless times. With every single appearance, he would do something so evil that it would cause people’s hair to stand up in anger. After he finished his malicious deeds, he would leave his name behind. However, he would never leave any clues that would lead to him.”

“When I first met him, he was still a nameless and obscure individual. However, he has now become extremely notorious, the leader of the Five Great Evildoers, whose infamy is known throughout the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“The innocents that were killed by him are simply too many to count. Even the family that I saved from Zhan Cangtian the first time I encountered him ended up being killed by him later. Furthermore, their deaths were like...”

“That is why I detest myself for being incompetent,” Resentment filled the Snow Blade Mad Demon’s eyes. It was not only hatred toward Zhan Cangtian. There was an equal amount of hatred for himself.

“Since you’ve met him, you should know his appearance, right? You can tell me his appearance, I’ll help you search for him,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing about what Zhan Cangtian had done, Chu Feng felt that he absolutely could not be forgiven. As long as Chu Feng knew of his appearance, even if that was his appearance when he was young, Chu Feng would be able to recognize Zhan Cangtian when he saw him.

“No, I don’t. When I first met him, he was wearing a mask. I simply do not know what he looks like.”

“In fact, simply no one knows what Zhan Cangtian looks like,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon said.

“How could this be?” Chu Feng was extremely shocked. Then, he sighed in his heart, ‘It would appear that Zhan Cangtian is a very cautious person. He conceals his appearance when he plans to do malicious deeds. This is indeed hard to deal with.’

“However, little friend Chu Feng, as long as I am still alive, there will be a chance for me to find that Zhan Cangtian. There is still hope in my heart.”

“Originally, I was someone who was soon to die. It is all thanks to you that I am able to continue to live. Thus, I am truly grateful.”

“If you do not mind, I am willing to join the Cyanwood Mountain. I wish to join the Cyanwood Mountain, not as a nominal elder, but rather an actual elder,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon said.

He had not joined the Cyanwood Mountain before because he had publicly killed an elder from the Heavenly Law Palace. Thus, he was afraid that he would implicate the Cyanwood Mountain should the Heavenly Law Palace seek vengeance against him.

And now, with how the relationship between the Cyanwood Mountain and the Heavenly Law Palace has changed, there was no need for him to worry about that anymore. Thus, he could join the Cyanwood Mountain without any apprehensions.

“If senior Snow Blade is willing to join our Cyanwood Mountain, it would be our Cyanwood Mountain’s blessing. How could I possibly mind?” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng is thinking too highly of me. However, as I am now a part of the Cyanwood Mountain, I will definitely guard the Cyanwood Mountain’s dignity. I will not allow anyone to do anything to the Cyanwood Mountain.”

“Merely... I still need to search for Zhan Cangtian. Thus, even

though I've joined the Cyanwood Mountain, I will likely not be able to remain in the Cyanwood Mountain forever. I hope little friend Chu Feng can excuse me on this," Snow Blade Mad Demon said.

"Zhan Cangtian has done all sorts of evil. His continued existence is only a harm to everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism. If he is to be eliminated, it would be a blessing for the people of the Holy Land of Martialism."

"Thus, senior Snow Blade, you do not have to stay in the Cyanwood Mountain. You can go ahead and continue with your search for Zhan Cangtian. That is your most important mission."

"I have two more Immortality Peaches here. Please consume them," Chu Feng took out two more Immortality Peaches and handed them to the Snow Blade Mad Demon.

Chapter 2015 – Merging With The Three Immortal Profound Techniques

“Little friend Chu Feng, you absolutely cannot do this. The Immortality Peaches are extremely precious. Earlier, you already gave me three. I already can’t thank you enough for that. As such, I absolutely cannot accept these two Immortality Peaches,” the Snow Blade Mad Demon refused repeatedly.

“Senior, I am not giving you these two Immortality Peaches because I feel sympathy for you. Rather, I am doing so to express my thanks,” Chu Feng said.

“Express your thanks?” Snow Blade Mad Demon was confused.

“If you didn’t uphold virtue and condemn evil by saving a family that was unrelated to you, your family would not have met their tragic deaths.”

“You are a kindhearted man. Else, you would not have courted that disaster. I am thanking you on behalf of the people of the world,” Chu Feng forcibly pushed the two Immortality Peaches into the Snow Blade Mad Demon’s hands.

Then, Chu Feng turned around to leave. He was afraid that the Snow Blade Mad Demon would refuse again.

After Chu Feng left, Snow Blade Mad Demon held the two Immortality Peaches in his hands and stood there motionlessly for a very long time. Then, he wiped away the tears on his face and looked to the many memorial tablets behind him. He said, “I will definitely avenge you all.”

The next morning, Chu Feng called for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming, the several Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Cyanwood Mountain.

“What? Chu Feng... you plan to merge the Gold Immortal

Profound Technique, Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique into your body all at once?" At that moment, the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists present were all startled.

"The Five Elements Secret Skills contains a treasure. I need to obtain it," Chu Feng said.

"But, the Five Elements Secret Skills cannot coexist in one body," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

"It is not that they cannot coexist. Rather, they have a relatively high requirement for a person's soul."

"I wish to give it a try. The reason why I called seniors here is because I wanted seniors to help me with one thing," Chu Feng said.

"What is it?" The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked.

"If I am to fail, seniors, please help me set up that protective barrier around the Cyanwood Mountain so as to ensure the safety of our Cyanwood Mountain," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, why must you put yourself through this? Even if you wish to fight against the Dark Hall, there is no need for you to be this impatient," The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others tried to urge Chu Feng against it. None of them wished for Chu Feng to take this risk.

The reason for that was because this was truly too dangerous. Even though Chu Feng had successfully managed to have the Water Immortal Profound Technique and the Fire Immortal Profound Technique coexist in his body, it did not mean that he would be able to have all Five Elements Secret Skills coexist in his body.

Since ancient times, many people had attempted to assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills into their bodies. However, even for the person who had managed to accomplish the best result, he had

only managed to contain three of the Five Elements Secret Skills. Furthermore, not long after he succeeded, his body exploded and he died. As such, in the end, he had still failed.

Right at that moment, the Immeasurable Immortal said, “Everyone, since little friend Chu Feng is already determined, it is useless for us to continue urging him against it. Rather than pressuring him, it’s better that we support him and give him some motivation,”

“Immeasurable, you can’t say it like that. Naturally, we will support Chu Feng. However, we couldn’t possibly support him with everything regardless of what it might be, no?”

“We clearly know that this is an extremely dangerous matter. If we still allow Chu Feng to do it, wouldn’t it be us harming him?” The Snow-haired Immortal was insistent on not having Chu Feng merge with the other Secret Skills. In fact, when the Immeasurable Immortal voiced his support for Chu Feng, she even displayed a displeased expression toward the Immeasurable Immortal.

As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others, they were not as emotional as the Snow-haired Immortal. However, it remained that their expressions were slightly ugly. Like the Snow-haired Immortal, they also did not wish for Chu Feng to do such a dangerous thing.

“While others cannot accomplish it, that doesn’t mean that it would be impossible for little friend Chu Feng. Before this, has there ever been anyone capable of creating a spirit formation that could safeguard against attacks from peak Martial Emperors? No one was able to accomplish that. However, little friend Chu Feng accomplished it!!!”

“Furthermore, why did the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master insist on giving little friend Chu Feng the Earth Immortal Profound Technique? It’s because he wanted Chu Feng to undo the mystery of the Five Elements Secret Skill,” The Immeasurable

Immortal said.

“The hell do you know,” The Snow-haired Immortal was so angered that she actually cursed out at the Immeasurable Immortal.

“You are beyond redemption,” The Immeasurable Immortal snorted coldly. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, this old man supports you.”

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the Immeasurable Immortal. Then, he turned to clasp his fists toward the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and the other Dragon Mark World Spiritists, “Seniors, if I am to fail, I will have to depend on you all for that spirit formation.”

Then, Chu Feng did not bother with their reactions. He took out the outline of that grand defensive spirit formation, and began to explain the various essential aspects of that spirit formation to the several Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists present.

In response, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal and the others began to carefully listen to Chu Feng’s explanation. Even though Chu Feng’s outline diagram had already simplified the grand spirit formation enormously, it was still extremely difficult for them to set it up.

However, after listening to Chu Feng’s explanation, everything became clear to them. Soon, they understood the various aspects of the spirit formation that they were unable to understand before.

The reason why they listened to Chu Feng’s explanation so earnestly was not only because they wanted to grasp that spirit formation. In addition to that, it was because they knew that Chu Feng was determined, and they would not be able to stop him.

They were truly afraid that Chu Feng would fail. As such, they did not wish for the Cyanwood Mountain to be unprotected after Chu Feng’s death.

Thus, although they did not accept Chu Feng's request, if something were to happen to Chu Feng, they would still set up that grand defensive spirit formation over the Cyanwood Mountain to protect the people of the Cyanwood Mountain.

After two entire days and nights, Chu Feng finally finished explaining the essential aspects of that grand defensive spirit formation to the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others.

The reason why Chu Feng did this was merely because he wanted to guard against the unexpected. He did not really think that he would definitely die should he attempt to assimilate with the remaining three secret skills. In fact, Chu Feng felt a great certainty of success.

After all, when Chu Feng assimilated the Fire Immortal Profound Technique into him, he did not feel any pressure whatsoever. This led him to know that his spirit and soul were extremely powerful. He was certain that they would be able to withstand the pressure from the Five Elements Secret Skills.

After the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others left, Chu Feng did not hesitate. He immediately closed the doors to the room and took out the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

However, Chu Feng used a special method to remove Her Lady Queen from his world spirit space.

This was also because Chu Feng wished to prevent against the unexpected. If he were truly unfortunate enough to fail, then he would die.

Chu Feng did not wish for Her Lady Queen to die together with him.

“Milady Queen, if I am to truly die, I hope that you will not blame me.”

“It is not that I am shortsighted and only seeking instant benefits. It is merely that the current situation is truly bad. If the Ancient Era’s Elves are unable to hold back the Dark Hall, even if I am able to set up a spirit formation that could defend against peak Martial Emperors, it would not be able to defend against the Dark Hall forever.”

“I must increase my strength quickly so that I can help the Ancient Era’s Elves defeat the Dark Hall. This is my responsibility. After all, that Dark Hall’s Hall Master is my fellow clansman.”

“And now, these Five Elements Secret Skills are the greatest opportunity for me to increase my strength. I cannot miss out on this opportunity,” Chu Feng looked to the sleeping Lady Queen and spoke with a beaming smile on his face.

Then, before Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng removed the seals on the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

“Hualalala~~~”

The unsealing of the three Supreme Secret Skills in unison caused the palace hall that Chu Feng was in to tremble, and boundless might to appear out of nowhere.

Soon, three boundlessly imposing figures appeared before Chu Feng.

These three silhouettes were all emitting ample auras of immortality. They were the Gold Immortal, Wood Immortal and Earth Immortal.

Chapter 2016 – Assimilation Failure

“Boy, are you planning to challenge us Five Immortals?”

After the three Immortal Profound Techniques were revealed, they looked to Chu Feng without much surprise. It seemed as if they all knew that they had fallen into Chu Feng’s possession. Furthermore, they knew what Chu Feng was planning to do.

“Seniors, please lend this junior your strength,” Chu Feng clasped his fist. Although the three figures before him were all secret skills, they were seniors in Chu Feng’s eyes.

After all, they were beings that had existed since the Ancient Era.

“Boy, this Immortal will not bother with superfluous words. That said, I do admire your courage.”

“Since you are determined, and have already assimilated the Water Immortal and Fire Immortal, you possess the qualifications to challenge us Five Immortals.”

“Thus, if you truly wish to attempt the challenge, you can start with this Immortal. I also wish to see exactly how qualified you are, and whether or not you will be able to withstand the pressure of three secret skills,” The Gold Immortal Profound Technique said. It wanted Chu Feng to attempt to merge with it first.

“Seniors, I plan to assimilate all three of you at the same time,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” Hearing those words, the three great secret skills were all startled.

“After all, there are two possibilities. Either I succeed, or I fail.”

“I do not wish to waste time. Seniors, you can all come do it together,” Chu Feng said.

“Boy? What are you talking about? This sort of thing cannot be joked around with!!!” At that moment, the three great secret skills

were astonished.

If they were to assimilate with Chu Feng in succession, Chu Feng would have the chance to give up midway. However, if the three of them were to assimilate with Chu Feng together, Chu Feng would be betting everything in one go. It was truly dangerous.

“Seniors, it has been tens of thousands of years since the Ancient Era. Do you all not want to know exactly what sort of secret the Five Elements Old Ancestor left in your bodies?”

“I am certain that you all wish to know. And I... wish to know even more. I plan to undo this mystery. As such, I need seniors’ assistance.”

“Seniors, please,” As Chu Feng spoke, he closed his eyes.

“Very well. Since you are this courageous, we shall help you accomplish your aim.”

At that moment, determined gazes appeared in the eyes of the three great secret skills. Then, the three of them turned into three rays of light and entered Chu Feng’s body at the same time.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s closed eyes suddenly opened.

Chu Feng felt as if his body were undergoing a chaotic storm. Five boundlessly powerful energies were now gathered in his body.

The power emitted by the fusion of these five energies was extremely frightening. They were flowing through Chu Feng’s entire body, and had even entered Chu Feng’s dantian.

It was as if the five energies could cause Chu Feng’s body to explode, and shatter his soul at any moment.

Chu Feng clenched his teeth tightly. He was unwilling to give up. He knew that success or failure would be determined by this test.

There were two reasons why Chu Feng continued to stubbornly persist.

Firstly, he deeply wished to succeed.

Secondly, he was absolutely confident in himself.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded from Chu Feng's body. Following that, an enormous body of energy formed with the different powers of gold, wood, water, fire and earth instantly engulfed the palace that Chu Feng was in.

The materials used to construct the palace were very special. Furthermore, they were reinforced with spirit formations. As such, the palace was extremely sturdy. However, before the five elemental energies, the building was extremely weak. Like a bubble, it was turned to dust in an instant.

Furthermore, the five elemental energies were still spreading and devastating everything in their path.

Fortunately, the place where Chu Feng lived was a large isolated territory.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's mood was not good. Thus, he did not have any servants in his palace.

All the buildings in Chu Feng's territory were destroyed. However, fortunately, there were no deaths caused by the five elemental energies.

“What's going on?”

Suddenly, a boundless body of energy soared into the sky. This scene astonished all of the people in the Cyanwood Mountain. They were afraid that they were being attacked.

After all, the battle between them and the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace had just ended. No one could be certain whether or not the armies of the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace had truly left.

At that moment, everyone started to panic. Some elders were

even shivering in fear.

This could not be blamed on them. Rather, the five elemental energies were truly too frightening.

“Crap!” However, when the grand characters such as the Weaponry Refinement Immortal saw this scene, they immediately started to fly toward the five elemental energies without the slightest hesitation.

They all guessed that this was most definitely caused by Chu Feng’s assimilation of the Five Elements Secret Skills. However, the current state of affairs appeared to be extremely bad.

Unfortunately, when the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others approached Chu Feng’s territory, they were unable to enter the five elemental energies. The five elemental energies blocked heaven and earth. They turned into an enormous vortex that spun around through heaven and earth.

The five elemental energies were fatal. Even for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others, they were unable to charge their way into them. If they were to forcibly enter, they would undoubtedly die.

“What’s going on? Could it be-?!”

Soon, Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian and the others also arrived. Although Chu Feng did not mention his plan to assimilate with the Five Elements Secret Skills to them, they managed to guess what had happened from the frightening energies before them.

“Indeed, it’s Chu Feng. Chu Feng had just told us that he would assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills. Furthermore, before that, he also explained the method of setting that grand defensive formation up to us.”

“He wanted us to set up the grand defensive spirit formation to protect the Cyanwood Mountain should he fail in the

assimilation,” the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“Chu Feng, he actually did not mention such an important matter to me, that child...” After verifying what had happened, Baili Xuankong felt extremely pained.

“Chu Feng didn’t tell you all because he was worried that you would all attempt to stop him out of worry. After all, what he’s trying to do is extremely dangerous,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“But...” Baili Xuankong did not continue. He knew very well what Chu Feng had in mind. Merely, Chu Feng had still considered the safety of their Cyanwood Mountain even when attempting to do such a dangerous thing. As the person in charge of the Cyanwood Mountain, this caused him to feel extremely ashamed, extremely guilty.

“It’s enough. Let’s not talk about it anymore. Right now, what’s most important is Chu Feng’s safety,” The Snow-haired Immortal shouted.

At that moment, everyone turned quiet. They all focused on the frightening five elemental energies.

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other world spiritists began to use their various observation methods to search for Chu Feng’s silhouette within the frightening energy.

As for Nangong Longjian and the other martial cultivation experts, they were using their special perception abilities to try and sense Chu Feng’s existence.

Merely, the more they tried to find Chu Feng, the more uneasy the crowd became. The reason for that was because, other than the frightening five elemental energies, they were unable to sense anything else. They were simply unable to find Chu Feng’s aura.

In this sort of situation, they ended up having no other choice but to wait for the dissipation of the five elemental energies.

Finally, after persisting for an entire day and night, the five elemental energies began to dissipate.

They dissipated very fast. It took only a short moment for them to dissipate completely.

“This!!!”

“.....”

Merely, when the five elemental energies dissipated, the crowd present all revealed dejected expressions. Despair filled their eyes.

For Baili Xuankong and the others with superb relations with Chu Feng, they suddenly fell to their butts in midair with stunned expressions on their faces.

After the five elemental energies dissipated, an enormous crater was left in the ground.

Although heat was surging from the depths of the crater, they were simply unable to see Chu Feng’s silhouette.

Not only did they fail to find traces of Chu Feng, they were unable to even sense Chu Feng’s aura.

This conclusion was something that they were unable to accept. For this only meant one thing...

Chu Feng had failed!!!

Chapter 2017 – Undying And Indestructible

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when everyone felt that Chu Feng had failed in his assimilation of the Five Elements Secret Skills and died, a violent gale suddenly appeared.

The gale was so strong that even the many experts present were feeling enormous pressure. Those with lower levels of cultivation were blown back repeatedly by the wind.

Furthermore, soon, five energies appeared within the violent gale. They began to mix with the wind. It was extremely domineering.

They were the five elemental energies of gold, wood, water, fire and earth.

Like a vortex, the five energies gathered in one location. Soon, they turned into the form of a person. As the facial appearance of that person began to appear before the crowd, they were all astonished.

The reason for that was because that person was Chu Feng!!!

“Chu Feng, it’s truly you?”

“You didn’t die?!!!!”

The crowd were overjoyed to see Chu Feng. One by one, they rushed toward him and began to carefully inspect him. They didn’t believe their eyes. After all, Chu Feng had indeed disappeared earlier. It was not only his physical body that had disappeared, his aura had also disappeared without a trace.

“Seniors, I’ve made you all worry. However, it’s all fine now,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Exactly what happened? Didn’t you disappear earlier? Furthermore, your physical body...” The Weaponry Refinement

Immortal wanted to ask why Chu Feng's physical body would be formed through the condensation of the five elemental energies of gold, wood, water, fire and earth.

“Senior, you meant... this?” As Chu Feng spoke, his body suddenly split into the five elemental energies of gold, wood, water, fire and earth. Soon, the five elemental energies took humanoid forms.

They were the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique, the Water Immortal Profound Technique, the Fire Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique; the Five Elements Secret Skills.

“Woosh~~~”

Soon, the Five Elements Secret Skills fused with one another and returned to the appearance of Chu Feng.

“This!!!” The crowd were even more astonished to see this with their own eyes.

Exactly what was going on here? How could Chu Feng turn into the Five Elements Secret Skills?

Most importantly, Chu Feng had managed to unleash Gold, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth, all five of the Five Elements Secret Skills. Could it be that Chu Feng had successfully assimilated the Five Elements Secret Skills?!

“I think that the Five Elements Secret Skills have been upgraded. As long as I wish for it, I am able to change into the Five Elements Secret Skills. Likewise, I am also able to coexist with the Five Elements Secret Skills.”

“In other words, the Five Elements Secret Skills are not just offensive abilities; they are also an ability to protect me. Unless I am up against someone with a cultivation much higher than my own, my body is now like the Five Elements Secret Skills, undying and indestructible,” Chu Feng said.

“Heavens, they’re actually this amazing?!” Hearing those words, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and Baili Xuankong revealed even greater astonishment and joy.

“Wait a moment,” Right at this moment, the Immeasurable Immortal suddenly spoke. He asked, “In that case, you have successfully assimilated the Five Elements Secret Skills?”

“Mn,” Chu Feng smiled and nodded. He had indeed succeeded. That was why his current mood was extremely good.

“My god! Chu Feng, you brat, you have truly made this Immortal have a whole new level of respect for you,” Hearing those words, the Snow-haired Immortal hugged Chu Feng. As for the others, they were also overjoyed.

The Five Elements Secret Skills had existed in the Holy Land of Martialism since the Ancient Era. There had never been anyone who had managed to contain all five of the Five Elements Secret Skills even after so much time had passed. Even the Five Emperors, the five overlords that ruled over five different eras, were unable to accomplish that feat.

Yet now, Chu Feng had actually succeeded. As such, how could they not be overjoyed?

“Chu Feng, you are truly my pride,” At that moment, Baili Xuankong, this man who had lived for close to ten thousand years, was actually so emotionally moved that glistening teardrops appeared in his eyes.

Back then, before Chu Feng had matured, before Chu Feng became strong, he had viewed Chu Feng as their Cyanwood Mountain’s hope, and staked his all to support Chu Feng. In fact, he had not even feared making enemies of the Four Great Imperial Clans.

And now, not only had Chu Feng not disappointed him, he had even surpassed his expectations by far. That sort of sensation was

something that only he understood. He was truly feeling proud of Chu Feng.

In fact, it was not only him. Practically everyone present felt proud of Chu Feng. They were feeling proud of having helped Chu Feng before.

“Chu Feng, in that case, exactly what sort of secret is contained in the Five Elements Secret Skills? Exactly what sort of treasure is it?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“I am also uncertain to what sort of treasure there is for now,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“How could that be? Could it be that the legend of the Five Elements Secret Skills was only a scam?” Hearing those words, the crowd were all shocked.

“It’s very possible. After all, a lot of the Holy Land of Martialism’s legends are fake,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“The fact that the Five Elements Secret Skills cannot coexist in a single body is true. For that treasure, countless people braved the dangers of the Five Elements Secret Skills only to end up losing their lives. Exactly who is it that spread that false rumor? They have simply caused harm and deaths,” The Snow-haired Immortal said angrily.

“No, it is absolutely not fake. The legend of the Five Elements Secret Skill must be real. Chu Feng, carefully think again. Did you really not manage to obtain any new information?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

In response, the others said, “That’s right. Chu Feng, carefully arrange the information in your mind. See if you missed anything.”

Even though Chu Feng had successfully assimilated the Five Elements Secret Skills, it remained that he had braved fatal

danger. As such, none of them wished for Chu Feng to come out of this empty-handed.

“Seniors, it is as I said. I do not know about it right now. However, I believe that I will soon know what the treasures are,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he added, “Seniors, follow me.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to proceed toward the Cyanwood Mountain’s Ancient Era’s Remnants, and the others followed him.

After entering the Ancient Era’s Remnants, Chu Feng set up a spirit formation. That spirit formation was very simple. Not to mention Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, even Gold-cloak World Spiritists would be able to easily set up that spirit formation.

However, after such a simple spirit formation was set up, it formed a giant wave in the Ancient Era’s Remnants.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At that moment, many bodies of energies visible to the naked eye began to gather from all around the Ancient Era’s Remnants and into that spirit formation.

This scene stunned everyone present. Even though the bodies of energy did not possess berserk offensive natures, they were still no small matter.

Furthermore, after the bodies of energies stopped gathering, a symbol-like item appeared in the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up.

Upon seeing that symbol, everyone started to hold their breath. No one recognized that symbol. Although the symbol appeared to be very unremarkable, it contained a dense amount of ancient aura.

Chu Feng took the symbol out and said to the crowd, “After obtaining four more of such symbols, I will be able to solve the mystery contained in the Five Elements Secret Skills.”

“That... that symbol is actually able to solve the Five Elements Secret Skills’ mysteries? But... why would it appear in our Cyanwood Mountain?” Baili Xuankong was very shocked.

The Cyanwood Mountain have had control over this Ancient Era’s Remnant since the founding of the Cyanwood Mountain. Yet, they had never noticed anything related to the Five Elements Secret Skills here.

“Chu Feng, in that case, do you know where the other four symbols are located?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“I do,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he said the locations of four places:

“Golden Armor City!”

“Jadewater Temple!”

“Firerain Hall!”

“[Cursed Soil Sect](#)!”

Soil and Earth use the same character.

Chapter 2018 – A Whole New Level Of Respect

“What?”

“It’s actually the Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect?”

After hearing those four powers’ names, everyone was shocked.

“Those four powers...”

“I understand now,” Baili Xuankong was stunned for quite some time. Then, after he managed to calm himself, he sighed and said, “While I do not know about the Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect...”

“...I have heard my master mention that the founder of our Cyanwood Mountain had named this place the Cyanwood Mountain for a special reason.”

“Furthermore, as far as I know, of the Nine Powers, only our Cyanwood Mountain and those four other powers possess Ancient Era’s Remnants.”

“Merely, I did not expect for all of this to not be a coincidence, that five of our Nine Powers hid an Ancient Era’s treasure deposit,” At that moment, Baili Xuankong was extremely excited. All of this truly surpassed his imagination. However, after coming to know about it, he came to a sudden realization.

“That’s true. No one would have thought that the Nine Powers would be related to the Five Elements Secret Skills. Moreover, the Nine Powers are so far away from one another,” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others were also extremely astonished.

“Chu Feng, how are we to acquire those four symbols?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“It’s simple. Seniors, did you all manage to remember that spirit formation that I set up earlier?” Chu Feng asked.

“That spirit formation is truly simple. I have remembered it just by seeing it once,” the Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Chu Feng, is it like this?” Nangong Longjian set up a spirit formation. It was exactly the same as the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up earlier. Even though his world spirit techniques were inferior to those of Chu Feng and the others, and he was not a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it remained that he was also a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. As such, that spirit formation Chu Feng set up would not cause him any difficulty.

“That’s right. That is the spirit formation,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s no need for anything else? Merely this, is enough?” Nangong Longjian asked.

“There’s no need for anything else. As long as one enters the Ancient Era’s Remnant and sets up that spirit formation, the Ancient Era’s Remnant will condense a symbol,” Chu Feng said.

“That is quite simple. In that case, let’s move about separately and proceed for Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect respectively,” the Immeasurable Immortal said.

“But, the Ancient Era’s Remnants are forbidden areas. We cannot just enter them, no?” the Snow Blade Mad Demon said. Even though he acted very aggressively, he was actually a very reasonable person.

“It’s actually very simple. The relationship the Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and Cursed Soil Sect have with our Cyanwood Mountain is already different from before. As such, our Cyanwood Mountain possesses some authority over them.”

“As long as I write a letter to them, they should be willing to

allow us to enter their Ancient Era's Remnants," Baili Xuankong said.

"Then you should write the letters now," The Snow-haired Immortal said.

In response, Baili Xuankong started to write the letters. Furthermore, he prepared special Cyanwood Mountain title plates.

After that, it was decided that Nangong Longjian, the Snow Blade Mad Demon, Baili Xuankong and Dugu Xingfeng would proceed for Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect respectively to obtain the special symbols.

As for why Chu Feng, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others did not go, it was because the journey was very far, and would require some time. Chu Feng did not wish to waste time, as he needed to quickly set up the defensive spirit formation capable of withstanding attacks from peak Martial Emperors around the Cyanwood Mountain to protect it.

Before leaving, Nangong Longjian asked one last time, "Chu Feng, do we really only need to set up that spirit formation in the Ancient Era's Remnants to obtain the symbols?"

"That is correct," Chu Feng verified.

"In that case, does that mean that the secret of the Five Elements Secret Skills would be solved upon gathering those five symbols?" The Snow-haired Immortal asked.

"It would only be solved after those symbols assimilate with my body," Chu Feng said.

"So that's the case," The crowd nodded in ease.

If one could solve the mystery merely by obtaining the five symbols, it would be too undependable.

After all, Chu Feng only possessed the Cyanwood Mountain's symbol in his hand, and not the other four.

They felt much more at ease after knowing that only Chu Feng could solve the secret to the Five Elements Secret Skills. After all... even if an accident were to happen that caused the other four symbols to end up in the hands of others, they would not be able to solve the secret of the Five Elements Secret Skills. As such, those symbols would be useless to them.

“Since that’s the case, let’s set off,” Nangong Longjian said.

“Senior Nangong, please wait a moment,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out four Imperial Armaments. Those four Imperial Armaments were the spoils of war he had obtained from the Heavenly Law Palace.

That day, the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace had handed over a total of thirteen Imperial Armaments. Originally, twelve of them had belonged to the Underworld Palace and the other five powers that had come to assist Chu Feng and the Cyanwood Mountain. However, they insisted on sharing them with Chu Feng, and had each handed Chu Feng an Imperial Armament. Thus, Chu Feng had six additional Imperial Armaments.

Of those six Imperial Armaments Imperial Armaments, Chu Feng gave one to Baili Xuankong and one to Dugu Xingfeng. After all... neither of them possessed Imperial Armaments.

As for the remaining four Imperial Armaments, they were all with Chu Feng.

Now, Chu Feng gave the four remaining Imperial Armaments to Nangong Longjian, Snow Blade Mad Demon, Baili Xuankong and Dugu Xingfeng respectively.

“Chu Feng, what is your intention with this?” Nangong Longjian asked in a confused manner.

“Those four symbols belong to Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect respectively.”

“Although you would not be able to obtain those symbols, and would not be able to have any use for them even if you did, I still do not wish to take them for free.”

“These Imperial Armaments could be considered my compensation for them,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, is there really a need for that? With how small and weak Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect are, they would give us the symbols should we ask for them. As such, is there really a need to use such precious Imperial Armaments in exchange?”

“That is simply too unworthy, no?” The Snow-haired Immortal shook her head repeatedly.

The Imperial Armaments were extremely precious things that none of the Nine Powers possessed.

In fact, even for the grand characters present, Imperial Armaments were also extremely precious items. After all, not all of them possessed an Imperial Armament.

“Senior, we are not bandits. As such, how could we threaten others to hand things to us? Just give it to them. Only by doing this would I feel at ease,” Chu Feng said.

“What little friend Chu Feng says is very true. I agree with him,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“As do I,” Baili Xuankong also voiced his opinion. Afterward, practically everyone other than the Snow-haired Immortal expressed their approval of Chu Feng’s action.

They also knew that what the Snow-haired Immortal had said was a fact. After all, the Cyanwood Mountain was currently much more powerful than Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect. Before the Cyanwood Mountain, they were existences akin to shrimps, small fry. They simply did not even possess any authority to speak of. If the

Cyanwood Mountain wanted anything from them, they could just take it from them directly.

However, what Chu Feng said was even more true. If they were to snatch the symbols from them, they would be akin to bandits. As such, what difference would there be between them and the Dark Hall?

Therefore, they all approved of Chu Feng's way of handling things. Furthermore, when Chu Feng was willing to use such precious Imperial Armaments to compensate Golden Armor City, Jadewater Temple, Firerain Hall and the Cursed Soil Sect, those powers that were currently extremely small in their eyes, the crowd felt a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

This time around, their respect towards Chu Feng was not towards his talent. Rather, it was towards his manner of conduct; his personal character.

Before Chu Feng grew in strength, countless people had tried to beat down on him. The Cursed Soil Sect had been one of them.

Yet now, after Chu Feng had matured in strength, which power in the Holy Land of Martialism would dare to not give Chu Feng face?

Yet, Chu Feng did not use his strength to bully others. That was something very rarely seen in this world of martialism, where the strong ruled.

Likewise... this was something extremely praiseworthy.

Chapter 2019 – Plan Success

After it was decided, Nangong Longjian and the others set off for the four powers on the same day.

As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others, they began to prepare the materials needed to set up the grand defensive formation.

Furthermore, due to the fact that Chu Feng had just assimilated the Five Elements Secret Skills and was the main force in setting up the defensive spirit formation, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others did not wish for Chu Feng to become too exhausted. Thus, they decided to take the task of gathering the materials needed entirely upon themselves.

At that moment, Chu Feng was finally able to enjoy some leisure time. He turned his awareness into his world spirit space and looked to the still-sleeping Eggy. Then, Chu Feng smiled a relieved smile and turned to leave.

“It would seem that the harvest this time around is destined to be large,” After Chu Feng cast his awareness back into his body, the smile on his face grew wider.

The enormous power of those five elemental energies had destroyed Chu Feng’s territory completely. It was not Chu Feng who had willed that to happen. Rather, it was caused by the Five Elements Secret Skills.

Although Chu Feng had obtained a new understanding of the usage of the Five Elements Secret Skills after they were all assimilated into him, Chu Feng’s cultivation had not increased. Thus, that frightening energy that caused the destruction of his territory was indeed caused by the Five Elements Secret Skills.

Indirectly, it demonstrated the frightening power of the Five Elements Secret Skills. Merely, Chu Feng had yet to completely

grasp their strength.

However, one thing worthy of mention was that, although the five elemental energies were so frightening and had destroyed Chu Feng's entire territory, they did not harm Eggy. Instead, they brought Eggy into Chu Feng's body. That was truly miraculous and unbelievable.

After all, Chu Feng's world spirit gate needed to open for Eggy to enter his world spirit space. Logically, this should be impossible for anyone other than Chu Feng to accomplish. However, the energies that the Five Elements Secret Skills turned into had managed to accomplish it.

Furthermore, they had brought Eggy into Chu Feng's world spirit space while wreaking destruction all over. It was as if they were deliberately protecting Eggy.

It was precisely because of all of this that Chu Feng felt that the Five Elements Secret Skills themselves were an enormous treasure. The reason for that was because they contained immeasurable power.

However, if the five symbols were gathered, he would be able to open another treasure. In other words, Chu Feng would obtain two treasures.

That was why Chu Feng felt that he had profited enormously this time around.

After the materials were gathered, Chu Feng began to set up that spirit formation capable of defending against attacks from peak Martial Emperors together with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others.

That grand formation was too complicated. Even though Chu Feng and the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists were working together to set it up, they still took quite some time to set it up.

.....

Time shuttled past. In a flash, two months had passed.

At that moment, a shocking scene appeared in a forbidden area of the Heavenly Law Palace.

Not only was the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master in this forbidden area, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master was also here.

However, at that moment, those two peak experts of humanity were half kneeling on the ground in a petty and low manner.

Before them stood three individuals. The person to the left was the World Devastator Immortal. The person to the right was that mysterious woman. As for the person in the middle, he was the man that possessed the same Inherited Bloodline as Chu Feng... the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Lord Hall Master, we are incompetent. We have failed in our attack on the Cyanwood Mountain. We have failed to kill Chu Feng. Lord Hall Master, please bestow us our punishment," The two Palace Masters seemed to have already consulted with one another as to what to say, as the two of them were both saying the same words.

"If you all had managed to successfully raze the Cyanwood Mountain to the ground, my plan would have failed," The Dark Hall's Hall Master started to laugh from behind his mask.

Hearing those words, the two Palace Masters' bodies started to shiver. Then, their expressions changed greatly. It was as if they had just suffered an enormous injury. However, in the end, they restrained their emotions and asked servilely, "Lord Hall Master, this subordinate does not understand what you mean."

"It's fine if you two do not understand. However, do not ask about it," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"But..." At that moment, the two Palace Masters' expressions

grew more and more ugly. After all, the two of them had suffered disastrous losses from attacking the Cyanwood Mountain.

“Rest assured. In the future, I will return everything you have lost to the Cyanwood Mountain twofold,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Lord Hall Master, I have another request,” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master said.

“Speak,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“That Chu Feng, would you mind leaving him to me? I wish to personally kill him,” The Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master said in a very fierce manner. He truly loathed Chu Feng to the bones. Even in his dreams, he would dream about killing Chu Feng.

“I’m afraid that will not be possible. His life belongs to me. Only I am allowed to kill him,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“.....” Hearing those words, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master took a glance at the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master. They were both at a loss as to what to say. They were truly confused. Since the Dark Hall’s Hall Master did not wish to kill Chu Feng, why did he have them attack the Cyanwood Mountain?

With that, wouldn’t it mean that he had wasted his military strength in vain?

“If there’s nothing else, the two of you can withdraw,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master waved his sleeve.

At that moment, the expressions of the two Palace Masters did not improve. After all, they were grand characters. Yet, they were being toyed around with by someone, round and round. As such, the two of them felt extremely unreconciled.

“Did you not hear what I just said?” Seeing that the two Palace Masters were still here, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s voice sounded once again. Merely, this time around, there was a faint coldness in his voice.

At that moment, the bodies of the two Palace Masters shivered once more. Being stimulated by the coldness they felt, the two of them recalled how powerful this Dark Hall's Hall Master before them was. Thus, the two of them bowed to the Dark Hall's Hall Master while kneeling and then got up, "Lord Hall Master, Milord, Milady, we shall take our leave."

After the two Palace Masters left, the World Devastator Immortal's womanly voice sounded, "Lord Hall Master, I have received a secret letter." Then, he handed a letter to the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master opened the letter. There was not a single word written on it. However, he was not flustered by that. Instead, he began to form a spirit formation. As the spirit formation enveloped the letter, a strand of gaseous substance flowed out from the letter and entered his mask.

"Hahahaha..."

The very next moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master suddenly stood up from his seat and started to laugh. It was a resounding laughter that echoed throughout the vast palace hall that they were in.

At that moment, the mysterious woman remained completely composed. There was not a single trace of change to her expression. However, the World Devastator Immortal looked to the Dark Hall's Hall Master with a shocked expression, seemingly as if he wanted to know what the contents of the letter were.

After his wild laughter, the Dark Hall's Hall Master said, "Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, as expected of a person from the Outer World. You have surpassed my expectations, and given me a pleasant surprise."

"Lord Hall Master, could it be... it's a success?" The World Devastator Immortal asked.

“Mn, Chu Feng had successfully assimilated the Five Elements Secret Skills. Our plan is a success.”

“Not long from now, we will be able to know exactly what the treasure hidden in the Five Elements Secret Skills is,” said the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with a nod. Even though he was wearing a mask, his joy could still be felt.

“Chu Feng is actually that surprisingly valiant?” Hearing those words, the World Devastator Immortal revealed an ugly expression. His own son was killed by Chu Feng. Thus, he detested Chu Feng to the bones. Yet, Chu Feng had actually managed to assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills. To him, this was not good news at all.

The reason for that was because he knew very well that this Lord Hall Master before him had attempted to assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills too. For that, he had even killed the previous owners of the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, the Wood Immortal Profound Technique and the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.¹

Although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master succeeded in assimilating two of the secret skills, his body was unable to contain a third secret skill.

However, in the heart of the World Devastator Immortal, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was an existence akin to a god.

Yet, Chu Feng had accomplished what was impossible for even the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. This caused the World Devastator Immortal to feel extremely uneasy.

After all, after encountering Chu Feng several times, he now had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. He feared that Chu Feng would surpass him sooner or later if this were to continue. At that time, not only would he not be able to kill Chu Feng, he would instead be killed by Chu Feng.

Chapter 2020 – Eternal Pride

“World Devastator, what’s wrong? Could it be that you’ve grown afraid?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked.

“Lord Hall Master, that Chu Feng is hard to deal with. If we are to ignore him like this, this subordinate is afraid that we will invite a calamity on ourselves in the future,” The World Devastator Immortal said.

“There’s no need to be afraid. Chu Feng has been within my grasp all along. If I wish to kill him, I can do so at any time.”

“Furthermore, he will not be able to live for long. At that time, I will allow you to kill him for me so that you can avenge your son,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Thank you, Lord Hall Master.”

Hearing those words, the World Devastator Immortal was overjoyed. He truly wished to kill Chu Feng himself. Merely, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had said that only he was allowed to kill Chu Feng. This caused the World Devastator Immortal to feel very depressed.

The reason for that was because the World Devastator Immortal was determined to kill Chu Feng himself. Only by doing so would he be able to avenge his son. However, he was afraid that he would be punished by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master should he kill Chu Feng. As such, the matter of killing Chu Feng had been in his mind, tormenting him the entire time.

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had now allowed him to kill Chu Feng. As such, he was finally unshackled from that worry. He was now able to torture and kill Chu Feng without worrying about anything. To him, this was a truly joyous matter.

“Lord Hall Master, this subordinate has one more thing that I don’t understand,” The World Devastator Immortal said.

“What is it?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked.

“It is one thing for the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace to hand their secret skills to Chu Feng. After all, they were defeated and forced to do so.”

“But, how are you so certain that the Underworld Palace would hand the Earth Immortal Profound Technique to Chu Feng?” The World Devastator Immortal asked in a confused manner.

The World Devastator Immortal knew that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace would be defeated in their invasion of the Cyanwood Mountain. The reason for that was because it was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master that had ordered their attack.

Before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had ordered his attack, he already knew that the Underworld Palace and the Ancient Era’s Elves would proceed for the Cyanwood Mountain. In addition to that, Lord Lianghua was in the Cyanwood Mountain. Thus, it was destined that the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace would be defeated.

The very premise of this plan was so that Chu Feng could obtain the Five Elements Secret Skills and assimilate them into his body.

However, there was one question regarding this plan that the World Devastator Immortal did not understand. That question concerned the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. Why would the Underworld Palace present the Earth Immortal Profound Technique to Chu Feng without any reason to do so?

“It’s actually very simple. It’s useless for the Underworld Palace to keep the Earth Immortal Profound Technique. Furthermore, Chu Feng has already obtained the other four of the Five Elements Secret Skills. As such, since the Underworld Palace wishes to become allies with the Cyanwood Mountain and the Ancient Era’s Elves, they will naturally present the Earth Immortal Profound Technique to Chu Feng so that all five of the secret skills would be

in his possession,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Hall Master is truly a person with deep plans and distant thoughts. This subordinate is filled with admiration. Merely... how did you know that Chu Feng would be able to assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills?” The World Devastator Immortal asked.

“I didn’t know whether or not he’d succeed.”

“Merely, it remains that he is from the Outer World. As such, he is stronger than the people from the Holy Land of Martialism. Therefore, there was a trace of hope that he would be able to successfully assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills. I didn’t expect that he would truly be able to accomplish that,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“So even Lord Hall Master was uncertain as to whether or not Chu Feng would succeed. But, if Chu Feng were to fail, wouldn’t he...?” The World Devastator Immortal was extremely astonished.

“Failure would only mean death. But he will die sooner or later in any case. As such, why would I fear his death?”

“Hahaha...” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master burst into loud laughter. As he laughed, he began to enter the void and left the palace.

Following behind him, that mysterious woman also left.

At that moment, only the World Devastator Immortal remained. He had a somewhat complicated expression on his face.

Suddenly, he felt that he was increasingly unable to see through the thoughts of this Lord Hall Master. However, because of that, he felt even more delighted to serve him. He felt that only someone like the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was worthy of his servitude.

.....

Time passed quickly. In the blink of an eye, half a month passed.

After spending two and a half months, Dugu Xingfeng finally

returned from the Cursed Soil Sect.

Actually, the Cursed Soil Sect was very close to the Cyanwood Mountain. The reason why Dugu Xingfeng was tasked with going to the Cursed Soil Sect, the closest of the four powers, was also because his cultivation was the weakest.

Merely, due to the fact that Dugu Xingfeng was the person with the lowest cultivation among the four that were tasked with obtaining the symbols, things happened on the journey, and he was delayed. However, he eventually managed to successfully obtain the symbol and return to the Cyanwood Mountain.

After returning to the Cyanwood Mountain, Dugu Xingfeng rushed straight for the Cyanwood Mountain's core region. However, before he even approached it, he suddenly stopped flying. As if petrified, he stood in midair.

At that moment, a dense expression of admiration appeared on his previously anxious face.

Before him was a place that used to be a vast plaza. However, it had been turned into an enormous fort.

Not only did that fort cover the vast plaza, it also shot straight into the clouds, and looked very extravagant.

The fort was completely golden in color, and enormous dragon-veined patterns were moving about through the fort. It was as if there were countless enormous dragons sealed in the fort. At the same time, it looked like countless enormous dragons were protecting the fort.

As far as the eye could see, that fort looked like a divine shrine.

Most importantly, as he stood before the fort, Dugu Xingfeng seemed to have realized what was meant by 'truly impregnable.'

Actually, as the Cyanwood Mountain had existed for so long, they also possessed a very powerful defensive formation. Merely, when compared to the spirit formation before him, that spirit formation

they had was simply inferior in all aspects other than size.

And this... it was the grand defensive spirit formation that Chu Feng and the others had set up.

“Xingfeng, you’ve finally returned. If you were any later, I would’ve gone out to find you.”

Suddenly, several figures soared into the sky and stood before Dugu Xingfeng. The person leading them was Baili Xuankong. Other than Baili Xuankong, the others that had left to obtain the symbols were all present.

“My apologies. A small inconvenience appeared on the journey. I have made everyone wait,” Dugu Xingfeng said in a self-blaming manner.

After all, the crowd had been considerate of him, and deliberately sent him to the Cursed Soil Sect that was closest to the Cyanwood Mountain. However... he was still the last one to return. This caused him to feel very ashamed.

“Headmaster Dugu, did you succeed?” Nangong Longjian asked.

“Yes, I did” Dugu Xingfeng took out an extremely exquisite box from his Cosmos Sack. After opening the box, a symbol appeared. That symbol’s shape was different from the one that Chu Feng had obtained from the Cyanwood Mountain. However, it was emitting the same sort of dense ancient aura.

“This is great,” Seeing that Dugu Xingfeng had also succeeded, the crowd present all started to smile in joy.

“Ancestor, is that the grand spirit formation that Chu Feng and the other Immortals worked together to set up?” Dugu Xingfeng asked.

“That’s right. Xingfeng, this grand spirit formation could be said to be the most extraordinary spirit formation that I’ve ever seen.”

“Not only is it capable of withstanding attacks from peak Martial

Emperors, it also possess thirty-eight different offensive formations. It is capable of both attacking and defending. It is truly powerful.”

“Most importantly, it was created by one of our Cyanwood Mountain’s disciples, Chu Feng,” When Baili Xuankong introduced the grand defensive spirit formation to Dugu Xingfeng, both his manner and tone were extremely excited.

The reason for that was because he knew that not even the Heavenly Law Palace, the Mortal King Palace or the Underworld Palace had a spirit formation like that one. As for all of this, it had all been bestowed to them by Chu Feng. Like Chu Feng, this grand spirit formation would become the Cyanwood Mountain’s eternal pride.

Chapter 2021 – Wonderstone Dao Ground

“It is truly our Cyanwood Mountain’s blessing to have Chu Feng as our disciple,” At that moment, Dugu Xingfeng was also extremely excited. At the same time, he was gasping with admiration.

Back then, when Chu Feng had first entered their Cyanwood Mountain, he had been so small and weak. Not to mention the huge monsters outside of the Cyanwood Mountain, even the many elders within the Cyanwood Mountain would have easily been able to kill Chu Feng.

At that time, even though he had been attracted by Chu Feng’s talent, he did not imagine that Chu Feng would grow up this much and become this powerful in a period of a few short years.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Dugu Xingfeng’s expression changed. As the grand spirit formation had already been set up, and even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others were here, why was Chu Feng nowhere to be seen?

Puzzled, Dugu Xingfeng asked the crowd, “Milords, where’s Chu Feng?”

“Little friend Chu Feng exhausted practically all of his spirit power in order to set up this spirit formation. His health is very weak right now. Likely, he will have to rest for some time in order to recover,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

When the Weaponry Refinement Immortal said those words, the Immeasurable Immortal and Zhang Ming revealed ashamed expressions.

In terms of seniority, they were both Chu Feng’s seniors.

In terms of qualifications, they had become famous thousands of years ago.

Yet, they knew very well that they had completely relied on Chu

Feng to set up that grand defensive spirit formation.

Even with all of their contributions combined, it was still inferior to what Chu Feng had done for the spirit formation. It was all due to Chu Feng's contributions that they had managed to successfully set up that grand spirit formation.

That was why Chu Feng's health became extremely weak, and his spirit power nearly completely exhausted after they finished setting up the grand formation.

"May I go check on Chu Feng?" Dugu Xingfeng asked.

"Of course. Little friend Chu Feng was also worried about you the entire time. If you had not returned, we would've really gone out to search for you," Nangong Longjian said.

"Milords, please," Hearing those words, Dugu Xingfeng's expression turned serious. He held tightly to the symbol he had procured and began to fly toward Chu Feng's residence. He wanted to personally hand the symbol to Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Nangong Longjian, Baili Xuankong and the others also followed after him. They were also worried about Chu Feng. However, more than that, as the five symbols were all gathered, they wanted to know exactly what the treasure hidden by the Five Elements Secret Skills was.

Merely, when they arrived at Chu Feng's palace, they were all shocked.

Chu Feng was chatting with the Snow-haired Immortal like a lively dragon, an animated tiger. How could he possibly appear like a person in extremely weak health?

"Lord Headmaster, you've returned? I had thought about going to the Cursed Soil Sect to receive you," Chu Feng was overjoyed to see Dugu Xingfeng.

When he had found out that Dugu Xingfeng had yet to return, he had become very worried. After his health improved, he had

planned to go find Dugu Xingfeng. Merely, he was stopped by the Snow-haired Immortal. He was just explaining to the Snow-haired Immortal that he was fine and could go to search for Dugu Xingfeng when Dugu Xingfeng arrived.

“Chu Feng, you... you’re fine now?” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others all walked over. They were looking at Chu Feng like they were looking at a monster.

Chu Feng had finished setting up the grand defensive spirit formation two days ago. After that, he had directly fainted from nearly exhausting all of his spirit power.

It was a major taboo for world spiritists to completely exhaust their spirit power, because they would not be able to recover in a short period of time, and it might even cause permanent damage that stopped the progress of their world spirit techniques. In the most serious cases, their spirit power might not be able to recover at all. Even if other world spiritists were to forcibly instill their spirit power into them, it would still be useless.

However, what was this with Chu Feng? Not only was there no harm, he had even recovered so quickly and thoroughly?

“Seniors, you don’t have to worry about me. I am fine now.”

“If you don’t believe me, look at this,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Fearing that they would not believe him, Chu Feng began to unleash his own world spirit power.

Upon seeing Chu Feng’s fluent command over the abundant Dragon Mark Royal-level spirit power, the crowd all came to believe that Chu Feng had recovered.

It was true that Chu Feng had exhausted his spirit power. If he were an ordinary person, he would have indeed needed a long time to recuperate.

However, Chu Feng’s spirit power recovered extremely fast.

Furthermore, with the recovery of his spirit power, Chu Feng's health also recovered.

“Demon-level character, truly a demon-level character,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal muttered. He mocked Chu Feng's astonishing composition.

That being said, everyone was smiling. They were all feeling happy for Chu Feng.

In fact, even Chu Feng himself was very surprised by what had happened. This time around, he had truly exhausted his spirit power, and had not expected that he would be able to recover so fast.

In other words, after what had happened, Chu Feng discovered that not only was his Inherited Bloodline powerful, his spirit power seemed to be even more powerful than his Inherited Bloodline.

“Chu Feng, since you're fine, then should we solve the mystery of the Five Elements Secret Skills?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“Chu Feng,” In response, Dugu Xingfeng handed the symbol he held to Chu Feng.

Following that, Baili Xuankong, Nangong Longjian and the Snow Blade Mad Demon also handed their respective symbols to Chu Feng.

“Very well,” After receiving the symbols, Chu Feng took out the symbol that he already had. Then, he began to form hand seals with one hand and spoke some incantations. The five symbols began to fuse with one another.

After the five symbols fused completely with one another, they turned into a firefly-sized body of light.

Although that body of light was very small, everyone could tell that it was amazing.

Although the five symbols had disappeared, countless characters that the crowd were unable to understand were hovering within that body of light.

The crowd present were all able to tell that the characters present in that body of light were characters from the Ancient Era.

Each single character possessed a special meaning and extraordinary power.

When looking at those characters, one would feel delighted in one's heart. It was as if the more they looked at them and the more they understood, the more their cultivation would be able to make progress.

Right at the moment when everyone was about to be fascinated by the characters, Chu Feng spoke another incantation. Then, he shouted lightly, "In!"

"Woosh~~~"

That body of light was beckoned by Chu Feng's incantation. It turned into a ray of light that shot into the area between Chu Feng's eyebrows.

At that moment, the crowd began to hold their breaths. They were extremely tense, and unable to take their eyes off Chu Feng.

They knew that it was very possible that Chu Feng now knew about the secret of the treasure left behind by the Five Elements Old Ancestor.

"Chu Feng, how was it?" The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

"It's a success. Sure enough, Five Elements Old Ancestor did leave items behind," Chu Feng said.

"What are they?" At this moment, the crowd asked in unison.

"I'm not sure. But I'll know once I reach the [Wonderstone Dao Ground](#)," Chu Feng said.

"Wonderstone Dao Ground?" The crowd were all startled upon

hearing those words.

“Seniors, do you all know where the Wonderstone Dao Ground is located?” Chu Feng asked. He did not know anything about the Wonderstone Dao Ground.

“We do. Merely, that place has been abandoned for a very long time. Furthermore...” The Immeasurable Immortal did not finish his sentence.

Dao Ground is literally the same word as the japanese ‘dojo.’ It is a place for enlightenment of the dao.

Chapter 2022 – Act Separately

“Furthermore?” Chu Feng asked.

“Furthermore, that place has been pillaged. Practically all of the treasures there were snatched away. If the Five Elements Old Ancestor left his treasures there, they might have already been pillaged by others,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal interrupted.

“What? What happened?” Chu Feng asked. He was already able to tell that the Wonderstone Dao Ground was an extraordinary place.

“The Wonderstone Dao Ground is known for its various wonderstones. However, the reason why it was famous was because, many years ago, there was a power called the ‘Wonder Sect’ in that place.”

“During its peak, the Wonder Sect was capable of contending against the Three Palaces. In fact, for a short duration, the Wonder Sect surpassed the Three Palaces, and became the number one power in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Unfortunately, the glorious days of the Wonder Sect were short lived. Due to the fact that the first Sect Master of the Wonder Sect had offended too many people and there was no expert capable of contending against the Three Palaces’ Palace Masters after him — all of the Wonder Sect’s other experts were inferior to the Four Great Imperial Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders — the Wonder Sect suffered a sudden, devastating decline after the death of the Wonder Sect’s first Sect Master.”

“Countless enemies came to take revenge on them.”

“Not only was the Wonder Sect eradicated, the people even dug ten thousand meters underground to search for the treasures in the Wonder Sect. They completely turned the Wonder Sect upside

down.”

“After the pillaging, not only was the Wonder Sect in an utter mess, countless corpses were also scattered all over to be exposed to the scorching sun.”

“Later, a monk was unable to put up with the scene of devastation. He buried all of the deceased from the Wonder Sect and filled up the Wonder Sect’s land that was dug up by the pillagers.”

“With that, even though the Wonder Sect no longer exists, the Wonderstone Dao Ground was, at the very least, not that frightening and sorrowful to look at.”

“Furthermore, the Wonderstone Dao Ground did possess a special sort of power that protected it. That place could be said to be a blessed land.”

“Thus, after many years had passed, many people tried to set up sects and schools in the Wonderstone Dao Ground. However, whenever night arrives, anguished wailing would sound from underneath the Wonderstone Dao Ground. This caused those who tried to start sects and schools there to feel their hair stand on end and their blood run cold. In fact, strange things would often take place in the Wonderstone Dao Ground too.”

“The people all felt that it was caused by the lingering ghosts of the Wonder Sect that had died tragically; they felt that all of the strange occurrences were caused by the lingering ghosts.”

“Most importantly, there was no way to solve those strange happenings. Even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists were unable to do anything about it.”

“Gradually, no one bothered to go to the Wonderstone Dao Ground. The Wonderstone Dao Ground ended up being abandoned. From the time it was abandoned till now, a hundred thousand years have passed,” The Immeasurable Immortal said.

“It’s actually been that long?”

“For something from so long ago, are we sure that it’s true?” Chu Feng asked. After all, a hundred thousand years was a very long time. There could be a lot of false rumors after so much time passed.

“The major rumors might be fake. However, the matters regarding the Wonderstone Dao Ground are definitely true. The reason for that is because those strange phenomenon are still present even now,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said.

“I have also been to the Wonderstone Dao Ground to check things out before, and returned with no harvest. However, I can ascertain one thing. That is, that those strange phenomenon do exist,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng looked to the Immeasurable Immortal and Zhang Ming, the two other powerful world spiritists present.

“Indeed, I’ve been there too. The Wonderstone Dao Ground is a mystical place. All world spiritists wish to solve the mystery of that place. If someone manages to solve the mystery of that place, they will become famous overnight with their name spread through the entire world.”

“Actually, even if you did not mention the Wonderstone Dao Ground, I would have recommended that you check that place out,” Zhang Ming said.

“It’s actually that mystical?” After learning about the Wonderstone Dao Ground, Chu Feng was very surprised by it. At the same time, he started to yearn for that Wonderstone Dao Ground even more. Thus, he said, “In that case, the Wonderstone Dao Ground is truly a place that I must go to. Furthermore, I feel that the secret of Five Elements Secret Skills is definitely still hidden there.”

“That’s true. After all, those five symbols were that well-hidden. The true treasure must be even more hidden. Even though the Wonderstone Dao Ground has already been upturned by others, the treasures the Five Elements Old Ancestor left behind might not necessarily have already been taken,” said the Weaponry Refinement Immortal with a nod.

“Chu Feng, in that case, when do you plan to proceed for the Wonderstone Dao Ground?” The Snow-haired Immortal asked.

“Right now,” Chu Feng said.

“This soon?” The crowd were all surprised.

“I believe that seniors are all like me, impatient to know what sort of treasures the Five Elements Old Ancestor left behind, no?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Indeed,” The crowd smiled and nodded. Although they were surprised by Chu Feng wanting to go right now, that was actually also what they wanted to do.

“Since that’s the case, let’s go,” The Snow-haired Immortal said.

“Senior, I can go alone this time around. I would not have to inconvenience everyone,” Chu Feng said.

“Going alone?” The crowd were all startled to hear that.

“The battle between the Ancient Era’s Elves and the Dark Hall is certain to be even more intense than before. As allies, we cannot stand by and watch with folded arms.”

“Thus, I wish to ask seniors to assist the Ancient Era’s Elves. As for the treasures, I can go and obtain them myself. After I have obtained them, I will meet with everyone in the Elf Kingdom,” Chu Feng requested earnestly. Although the Cyanwood Mountain was safe, Chu Feng was worried for the Ancient Era’s Elves.

“The Cyanwood Mountain’s grand defensive formation is already complete. There is no longer a need to fear being invaded

anymore. Indeed, it is time for us to join the battle between the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall."

"But, if little friend Chu Feng is to go to the Wonderstone Dao Ground alone, we will be worried for your safety. How about this, little friend Chu Feng, I'll accompany you there," The Immeasurable Immortal said.

"That's right. Chu Feng, have the Immeasurable Immortal accompany you," Baili Xuankong said.

Even though Chu Feng was already extremely powerful right now, Chu Feng remained a child in the eyes of Baili Xuankong. Thus, he would be unable to feel at ease if Chu Feng were to go alone.

Merely... the current him no longer possessed the capability to protect Chu Feng. If he were to accompany Chu Feng, he would only become Chu Feng's burden should something really happen.

However, the Immeasurable Immortal was different. Not only was he a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he was also a rank seven Martial Emperor. With his strength, he would be able to protect Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, the Immeasurable Immortal is familiar with the Wonderstone Dao Ground. It would be good for him to accompany you," At this moment, Nangong Longjian and the others also voiced their approval.

"Very well. In that case, senior Immeasurable, let's set off," Chu Feng said.

"Sure, let's go," The Immeasurable Immortal nodded.

After this matter was decided, Chu Feng immediately left for the Wonderstone Dao Ground with the Immeasurable Immortal.

As for the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal, the Snow Blade Mad Demon, Nangong Longjian and the other grand characters, they led the thousand-plus Martial

Emperors, the nominal elders of the Cyanwood Mountain, and proceeded for the battlefield where the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall were fighting to reinforce the Ancient Era's Elves.

After those experts left, Baili Xuankong and the others immediately called for all of the Cyanwood Mountain's elders and disciples to enter the grand defensive formation.

It was currently a time of war. Even the Ancient Era's Elves were engulfed in the chaos of war. Thus, it was destined that the Cyanwood Mountain would not be able to live peacefully.

After all those experts left, the battle power of the Cyanwood Mountain had suffered enormously. The people that remained were simply unable to protect the Cyanwood Mountain.

In this sort of situation, the best solution would be to have all of the elders and disciples hide in the grand defensive formation.

Chapter 2023 – Acquiring the Scroll

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the Immeasurable Immortal finally arrived at the Wonderstone Dao Ground.

“This is the Wonderstone Dao Ground? It is truly extraordinary.”

Seeing the scene before him, Chu Feng’s expression changed. The corners of his mouth raised into a slight smile.

Before him was a vast plain. However, on the plain were stones of varying sizes. Those stones were all different shapes. Some looked like humans, and some looked like beasts. Even though there were a lot of wonderstones in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng had a special feeling from merely a single glance at the wonderstones in this place.

These stones were most definitely not ordinary stones.

These sorts of stones covered the entire vast plain. They numbered several hundred thousand. It was truly a magnificent sight.

“Indeed, they are extraordinary. The reason why the stones of this place are known to be wonderstones is because they are indestructible. Furthermore, none of them can be moved,” The Immeasurable Immortal said.

“They’re actually this miraculous? Could it be that those stones are treasures?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was also very surprised.

“No, they’re not treasures. Since the Ancient Era, there have been many people who have researched the stones here. Even I myself have researched them.”

“Although the stones here give off a very special sensation and are indestructible, they are actually only ordinary stones, and not treasures,” The Immeasurable Immortal said.

“Ordinary stones? How could ordinary stones be indestructible and unable to be moved?” Chu Feng was even more shocked.

“According to my master, the reason why this Wonderstone Dao Ground was known as a Dao Ground was because there is a special sort of power in this place. It is that power that protects the wonderstones in this place.”

“Although no one knows why that special power would protect these stones, it remains that it exists for those stones. Perhaps it is because of that that this place became the Wonderstone Dao Ground,” The Immeasurable Immortal explained.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Chu Feng, now that we’ve arrived at the Wonderstone Dao Ground, have you managed to sense the treasures?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“No, I am unable to sense anything. I would have to set up a spirit formation. After that spirit formation is formed, it would form a treasure map. As for that treasure map... it records the location of that treasure,” Chu Feng said.

“So this place only contains a treasure map, and the treasures themselves are hidden elsewhere?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“That should be the case,” Chu Feng said.

“The Five Elements Old Ancestor is truly cautious. Originally, I thought that the secret to his treasure would be solved should one assimilate the Five Elements Secret Skills. Never would I have expected it to be this troublesome,” The Immeasurable Immortal said.

“However, since we’ve already arrived, we should still give it a try. Chu Feng, go ahead and set up your spirit formation. I will protect you here,” The Immeasurable Immortal said.

“Senior, thank you,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, without

hesitation, he proceeded toward the center of that Wonderstone Dao Ground and started to set up a spirit formation in midair.

Chu Feng set up the spirit formation very quickly. However, watching Chu Feng setting up the spirit formation, the Immeasurable Immortal exclaimed in astonishment. The spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up was too complicated.

If Chu Feng were to explain the spirit formation to him, then perhaps he would understand it. However, Chu Feng did not bother to explain the spirit formation. Thus, he was unable to make sense of what Chu Feng was doing.

Although he was unable to make sense of it, he was able to sense the frightening power contained within the spirit formation.

It was precisely because that spirit formation was so frightening and complicated that the Immeasurable Immortal exclaimed in admiration. He was pondering how Chu Feng had managed to accomplish that. If it were him, it would simply be impossible.

“That child’s talent is truly frightening. He might even become the first Immortal-cloak World Spiritist since the Ancient Era,” Looking at the majestic grand spirit formation in mid-air, the Immeasurable Immortal was unable to contain himself from praising Chu Feng.

The way he saw it, Chu Feng’s world spirit technique had not only surpassed them, he might even be the number one world spiritist in the entire Holy Land of Martialism, above all world spiritists.

The way he saw it, even the first among the Ten Immortals, the remarkable Heaven Reaching Immortal, might not necessarily be able to compare with Chu Feng.

However, how old was Chu Feng? He was already able to attain such a level of accomplishment at such a young age; how frightening would his accomplishments be in the future?

Upon thinking about it, the Immeasurable Immortal felt a deep amount of disbelief. Truly, he had no choice but to feel admiration for Chu Feng.

In truth, the spirit formation that Chu Feng was setting up was indeed extremely complicated; it had completely surpassed the Immeasurable Immortal's imagination. Even for Chu Feng, it took him an entire month to finish setting up that spirit formation.

"Huu..." At that moment, Chu Feng finally arrived beside the Immeasurable Immortal. He was dripping with sweat and his complexion was also slightly unwell. However, he had a smile on his face as he said, "Senior, I've succeeded."

"Succeeded? Then, what about the map? Where is the map?" The Immeasurable Immortal inspected the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up. He carefully inspected it from top to bottom. He was searching for the whereabouts of the map.

"Senior, please look," The corners of Chu Feng's mouth rose into a light smile again. Then, he began to form hand seals with one hand and spoke a special incantation.

"Rumble, rumble~~~"

The earth started to tremble. Then, energies visible to the naked eye began to fly out from the surface of the Wonderstone Dao Ground and entered the spirit formation in midair.

In this sort of situation, that spirit formation in midair started to shine with increasingly brighter light. In the end, its bright light was like that of a full moon, illuminating their surroundings. It was a truly magnificent sight.

"Chu Feng, that spirit formation, it... it is actually the power of this place," Seeing this scene, the Immeasurable Immortal became increasingly astonished.

Although the special power of the Wonderstone Dao Ground was said to be there to protect the stones in this area, it had always

been a mystery. The reason for that was because no one had been able to successfully capture that power. As such, they were unable to confirm whether or not that power really existed.

However, Chu Feng had now verified its existence. Not only had he verified the existence of that power, he had also used his spirit formation to gather the special, powerful and mysterious energy.

In other words, Chu Feng had managed to undo the mystery of the Wonderstone Dao Ground that no one else had managed to do.

It turned out that mystery was related to the Five Elements Old Ancestor.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, all of the mysterious power that was protecting the enormous Wonderstone Dao Ground was sucked dry.

The Wonderstone Dao Ground no longer possessed any special power. Although the stones of this place remained extremely fantastic with all kinds of different stones, they had become very ordinary.

This place... had become an ordinary field.

However, the Immeasurable Immortal's heart was unable to calm down. His gaze was fixed upon the grand spirit formation floating in midair like the bright moon.

After it finished absorbing all of the special power contained in the Wonderstone Dao Ground, that grand spirit formation that was emitting silvery light became even more frightening. It was as if there was an explosive power rolling about within it. As for that explosive power, it could explode at any moment.

However, the silvery light that was illuminating their surrounding was dissipating. As the dazzling silvery light dissipated, the Immeasurable Immortal was able to clearly see that there was a scroll in the center of that grand spirit formation.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng continued to form hand seals with one hand. Then, he extended his other hand toward the grand spirit formation and made a grabbing motion. Then, that scroll flew out from the spirit formation and entered Chu Feng’s hand.

Chapter 2024 – Two Identities

“Success?” The Immeasurable Immortal exclaimed in astonishment as he looked at the scroll in Chu Feng’s hand.

“Success,” Chu Feng handed the scroll to the Immeasurable Immortal.

The Immeasurable Immortal did not open the scroll. Instead, he asked Chu Feng, “The location of the treasure is recorded on this scroll?”

“Mn, the scroll recorded the location of the treasure,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Is there still a need for the Five Elements Secret Skills?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked.

“No. With that map, anyone can search for the treasure,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Hahaha, great, this is great,” At that moment, the Immeasurable Immortal burst into loud laughter. This was the first time Chu Feng had heard him laugh so happily. He had already forgotten himself in joy, and revealed an image that was different from how he always conducted himself.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Immeasurable Immortal shot out a palm strike at Chu Feng’s dantian.

“Zzzzz~”

However, Chu Feng seemed to have already expected the Immeasurable Immortal to attack him. His Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings both appeared. He had managed to dodge the Immeasurable Immortal’s palm strike.

“You’re actually on guard against me?” Upon seeing this, the Immeasurable Immortal’s eyes narrowed. Deep surprise emerged

in his eyes.

“Heh... I’ve doubted you since long ago,” Chu Feng smiled. His smile was filled with contempt.

“Long ago... since when?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked in a very surprised manner.

“Your reactions earlier were all very normal. However, you were especially concerned about the treasure of the Five Elements Secret Skills. This let me realize that you deeply longed for that treasure.”

“Normally, it would be fine if you longed for the treasure. However, it was precisely because of the fact that you’ve conducted yourself so righteously that it seemed strange.”

“Truth be told, I was unable to ascertain whether or not you wanted to obtain the treasure. Thus, I decided to test it out.”

“In other words, I deliberately told the others to not follow me. The reason for that was because you would only reveal your true identity should you follow after me alone,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the Immeasurable Immortal stood there in a startled manner. He did not dare to believe all that he had heard.

After some time had passed, the Immeasurable Immortal finally managed to alleviate his heart. With a wry smile, he said, “I must admit, you are truly intelligent. You are the first person to see through me.”

“That’s true. No one would have expected that the renowned Immeasurable Immortal would be nothing more than a fake, a hypocrite. Truth be told, someone like you is even more vile and repulsive than your junior brother, the Avaricious Immortal.”

“Although the Avaricious Immortal is bad, he is at the very least openly bad. As for you... you display yourself as righteous while doing all sorts of despicable things behind people’s backs,” Chu Feng said.

“Despicable things? How do you know that I’ve done despicable things?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked with a beaming smile on his face.

“All crows are equally black. Furthermore, with how good of a disguise you’ve given yourself, it means that you are not just ordinarily evil. Thus, when even ordinary evildoers have done tons of evils, someone like you would have naturally done a whole lot more,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. You’ve guessed correctly. I have indeed done a whole lot of evil. I could be said to have done every sort of evil known to man.”

“I might as well tell you the truth. In the Holy Land of Martialism, I have another identity,” The Immeasurable Immortal said in a rather proud manner. When he spoke those words, he stuck up his chest. It was as if he was immensely proud of his other identity.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He asked, “Who are you?”

“Zhan.”

“Cang.”

“Tian.”

The Immeasurable Immortal spoke out his name one word at a time.

“What?!”

“You are Zhan Cangtian?!”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed to one of shock.

Even though Chu Feng’s impression of the Immeasurable Immortal had decreased enormously ever since the moment he suspected the Immeasurable Immortal, and he had determined

that the Immeasurable Immortal was not a righteous person, but instead a vile and repulsive one the moment he determined that the Immeasurable Immortal wanted to seize the treasures of the Five Elements Secret Skills...

... Chu Feng had never suspected that the Immeasurable Immortal was actually Zhan Cangtian.

Who was Zhan Cangtian? He was the leader of the Holy Land of Martialism's Five Great Evildoers, the most notorious existence in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Countless innocent lives had died tragically at his hand. The Snow Blade Mad Demon's family were all killed by him.

"You said you are Zhan Cangtian? Then, do you know how senior Snow Blade's family died?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt a bit of disbelief at the Immeasurable Immortal's words. Thus, he wanted to verify that the Immeasurable Immortal was Zhan Cangtian. If he was, then this Immeasurable Immortal's significance in Chu Feng's eyes would be completely different.

"Snow Blade Mad Demon, was it? That nosy fellow, yeah? That's right, I killed his family. I left not a single person alive."

"As for him, he is truly a fool. He has searched for me in the Holy Land of Martialism for so long and still hasn't managed to find me."

"Furthermore, the funniest aspect of all this is that he has seen me many times over the years. Yet, he did not attempt to do anything to me, and was instead very respectful toward me."

"Hahahaha..." The Immeasurable Immortal laughed crazily. His laughter was truly repulsive.

Then, he added, "However, this is not his fault. After all, my disguise is too perfect. No one would have expected that the benevolent Immeasurable Immortal would be the malicious evildoer Zhan Cangtian."

“You damned animal! I will kill you to avenge senior Snow Blade’s family!” At that moment, dense killing intent appeared in Chu Feng’s eyes.

Affected by the killing intent, the region of space around him suddenly grew colder explosively. Black clouds rolled about, and thunder boomed in the sky. Even the weather was affected.

After verifying that the Immeasurable Immortal was Zhan Cangtian, Chu Feng was unable to control his state of mind. Originally, he had wanted to spare the Immeasurable Immortal’s life and hand him over to the Elf King to take care of.

However, he now decided that there was no need for that. Zhan Cangtian’s crimes were countless. He truly could not be pardoned. Chu Feng would absolutely not let such an animal get away.

“Clank~~~”

As Chu Feng spoke, his Furious Coiling Dragon beheader appeared. It turned into a silvery light as it slashed at the Immeasurable Immortal.

“Woosh~~~”

However, the Immeasurable Immortal was also prepared. After Chu Feng unleashed his attack, he flipped his palm and took out an enormous black axe.

Even though the axe was clearly black in color, it was emitting an intense reek of blood. This meant that countless people had died by that axe. Furthermore, those that had died by that axe were mostly people with low levels of cultivation, or people who were not even martial cultivators.

As for that axe, it was not the Imperial Armament that the Immeasurable Immortal normally used. Rather, it was Zhan Cangtian’s Imperial Armament.

“It is you! Today, I shall dismember your body into ten thousand pieces so as to appease the hatred in my heart!”

Upon seeing the enormous black axe, overflowing killing intent filled Chu Feng's eyes. The Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand began to move about in rapid succession as it unleashed continuous fatal attacks at the Immeasurable Immortal.

As for the Immeasurable Immortal, he brandished his enormous black axe domineeringly. Furthermore, the killing intent which his black axe emitted was not at all weaker or inferior to Chu Feng's. In fact, it even surpassed Chu Feng.

Faced with Chu Feng's ferocious attacks, he was completely composed and calm.

With confidence, he said, "My my my, quite imposing eh? No wonder you're daring enough to lure me out to reveal my true identity by yourself."

"However, Chu Feng, who did you take me, Zhan Cangtian, to be? Countless people in the Holy Land of Martialism want to kill me, but are unable to do so. Did you really think that you could kill me?"

Chapter 2025 – Lamentable

“Enough rubbish. Today, I shall avenge the innocent!” Chu Feng possessed enormous hatred for Zhan Cangtian to begin with. Regardless of how notorious Zhan Cangtian might be, regardless of how much he deserved to die, it remained that none of the crimes that Zhan Cangtian had committed affected Chu Feng.

Thus, if it was before, Chu Feng would kill Zhan Cangtian upon his encounter, but would not feel this enormous amount of bitter hatred for him.

However, after hearing the tragic story of the family of Snow Blade Mad Demon, after finding out that Zhan Cangtian killed even a child that was just born, how he would tarnish even a little girl, Chu Feng felt enormous hatred for that animal Zhan Cangtian.

He was unable to tolerate such an animal. Being a person of this world, he must eliminate evil for the people of this world.

“Hahaha, good, good courage. Come.”

“Today, I shall end the Holy Land of Martialism’s strongest genius.”

The Immeasurable Immortal laughed loudly. To him, fighting against Chu Feng wasn’t anything dangerous at all. Instead, it was a very happy matter.

That said... while the Immeasurable Immortal was laughing, he did not show any leniency with his enormous axe.

He would unleash a martial skill with each and every slash of his axe. Furthermore, they were not ordinary Martial Skills. Instead, they were Taboo Martial Skills.

Furthermore, he was able to unleash thousands of swings in an instant. In other words, in a split second, he unleashed thousands of Taboo Martial Skills to attack Chu Feng.

Faced with such a ferocious barrage of attacks, Chu Feng was forced to retreat little by little. Even though he had unleashed the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, to assist him, he had still ended up at an absolute disadvantage.

At that moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. Unable to contain himself, he cursed, "Damn it!"

Chu Feng's actual cultivation was that of a rank two Martial Emperor. With his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his cultivation had increased to that of a rank four Martial Emperor.

Adding on Chu Feng's heaven-defying battle power, ordinary rank six Martial Emperors would simply be no match for him. Even against rank seven Martial Emperors, Chu Feng could fight against them after utilizing his various techniques.

This was also the reason why Chu Feng had dared to lure out the true Immeasurable Immortal by himself when he was already skeptical of him.

However, it was obvious that the Immeasurable Immortal was no ordinary rank seven Martial Emperor. Before him, Chu Feng felt the same sort of pressure he had felt when he had fought against the YinYang Immortal.

"Not bad, not bad. You're clearly only a rank two Martial Emperor, but are actually able to fight against me, a grand rank seven Martial Emperor, for so long. I must admit, Chu Feng, you're very powerful. Other than Lord Hall Master, I have truly never met someone as powerful as you. Sure enough, those from the Outer World are different from us," Although the Immeasurable Immortal's words seemed to be praising Chu Feng, they were actually filled with mockery.

"Lord Hall Master? You actually serve the Dark Hall's Hall Master?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed again.

“Hahaha, Chu Feng, did you really think that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace would come to present their secret skills to you of their own initiative?”

“I might as well tell you the truth. All of this was planned by Lord Hall Master. Lord Hall Master was using you to solve the treasure of the Five Elements Secret Skills.”

“Do you know how small and weak you are now? Although you are indeed a genius blessed by the heavens when compared to the others in the Holy Land of Martialism, you are nothing more than a minor character when compared to Lord Hall Master. You were clearly being toyed with by Lord Hall Master, yet you still thought yourself to be amazing. Truly lamentable, truly lamentable.”

“The most lamentable thing is not the fact that you are mediocre and useless.”

“Rather, it is that you possess extraordinary strength that ordinary people cannot compare with. Yet, you are still being suppressed wholly by another, and are completely in the grasp of their palm.”

“Chu Feng, do you know how pitiful you are now?”

As the Immeasurable Immortal suppressed Chu Feng with his ferocious attacks, he began to humiliate Chu Feng with words.

“No wonder he didn’t kill me. So he had planned to use me to begin with,” Chu Feng gnashed his teeth in anger. His complexion turned deep red. He was simply about to go mad with anger.

“Woosh~~~”

“Puchi~~~”

Right at that moment, one of the Immeasurable Immortal’s slashes swiped by Chu Feng’s left shoulder. The enormous black axe hacked out a large piece of Chu Feng’s flesh, and left him drenched with blood.

“Ahhh!!!!”

That axe was too ferocious. Even Chu Feng shouted in pain. He moved back explosively and turned to escape.

“Woosh~~~”

However, at that moment, light flashed underneath the Immeasurable Immortal’s feet. Like a phantom, he arrived before Chu Feng and blocked his path.

“Heaven Taboo: Black Axe Soulbinder.”

The Immeasurable Immortal raised the enormous black axe he held in his hand, and a formless power immediately enveloped Chu Feng, restricting his movements.

“Bastard, what did you do to me?” Chu Feng started to panic and shout.

“What did I do? Humph, this here is my Imperial Armament, the Black Axe’s special Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Its name is Heaven Taboo: Soulbinder. However, I’ve named it the Black Axe Soulbinder instead.”

“Within a certain distance, as long as you are hit with my Black Axe Soulbinder, you will not be able to escape and move. You can only allow yourself to be trampled upon by me.”

“Thinking about it, it is truly a pity. If the people of the world were to know that the exceptional genius Chu Feng died by my hands, oh how pleasant that would feel.”

“Unfortunately, I cannot mention this matter, since I will have to return to the Ancient Era’s Elves after killing you. I will stand beside the Elf King and watch personally as the Ancient Era’s Elves slowly walk toward their destruction.”

“Hahahahaha!!!!!!” The Immeasurable Immortal laughed crazily.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression grew even uglier. He finally knew why the Ancient Era’s Elves were also a move behind

the Dark Hall, why they were also pinned down by the Dark Hall.

It turned out that the Immeasurable Immortal, this fellow who possessed a deep relationship with the Ancient Era's Elves, was actually a spy from the Dark Hall.

If he were truly allowed to return to the Ancient Era's Elves, it would be extremely detrimental to the Ancient Era's Elves.

Seeing that Chu Feng had no response to his mocking laughter, the Immeasurable Immortal asked, "Chu Feng, do you have anything that you wish to say?"

"The victor is the king and loser is the thief. I have nothing to say," Chu Feng said.

"Although you have nothing to say, I have things to say. Did you know... that the person you killed on the Gong Ba Plains was not only my disciple, he was also the only son I've ever had?" Suddenly, the Immeasurable Immortal stopped laughing. Dense killing intent emerged in his aged eyes.

"Hahahahahaha!!!!!!" In response, not only was Chu Feng not afraid, Chu Feng who had had an ugly expression earlier actually burst into loud laughter. He was truly laughing in joy. It was as if he was the one who was holding absolute superiority in this battle.

"What are you laughing about?" The Immeasurable Immortal asked with a frown. He did not know what Chu Feng was doing.

"I had originally thought that I'd only killed your disciple, But it turns out that I've actually killed your son. This is truly satisfying."

"Oh, that's right. Before your son died, he tried to use your name to threaten me. Unfortunately, he was still killed by me. Furthermore... he met a miserable death," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Chapter 2026 – Confidence

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the Immeasurable Immortal started to tremble, and his gaze began to flicker nonstop. It was as if he was seeing the sight of his son being killed by Chu Feng. The more he imagined that scene, the more furious he felt.

Nearly driven insane by anger, he shouted, “You little bastard! You truly deserve to die!!!”

After he said those words, the enormous black axe that was raised high up in the air hacked down toward Chu Feng with overwhelming destructive power.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, a black crescent slash landed on Chu Feng’s body, splitting him into pieces.

However, Chu Feng’s split body did not shed blood. Instead, it turned into bodies of energy that shot toward the Immeasurable Immortal.

Everything happened too suddenly. By the time the Immeasurable Immortal, who had thought that he had grasped victory, managed to react, the five elemental energies had gathered in one place and fused together into a body that stood behind him. It was none other than Chu Feng.

“Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade.”

Chu Feng suddenly brandished the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand and unleashed a slash.

Although that slash appeared to only be an ordinary slash, the region of space around it immediately turned pitch black the moment that slash was unleashed.

Suddenly, from the pitch black sky, a dazzling silver body of light streaked across that pitch black sky like a meteor.

However... it was not a meteor. Rather, it was an incomparably ferocious strike.

Its might was even stronger than Chu Feng's Profound Firmament Annihilation.

Finally, the pitch black sky returned to normal. Chu Feng was still standing in the sky, However he was not injured in the slightest. The location where he was injured by the Immeasurable Immortal earlier had already completely recovered. Not only was his body healed, even his clothes were restored.

At that moment, Chu Feng was looking down at a boulder below expressionlessly.

On top of that boulder was a person. To be exact, it was a spirit body. That spirit body was the Immeasurable Immortal.

The Immeasurable Immortal had not died. At the crucial moment, he had used special methods to escape Chu Feng's fatal attack.

However, not only was his physical body destroyed, he was also incomparably weak. Not to mention Chu Feng, any random rank one Martial Emperor would be able to easily kill him.

"You're quite devoted," Seeing the state of the Immeasurable Immortal, who had abandoned his physical body, his Cosmos Sack and his Imperial Armament Black Axe, but was still holding onto the scroll that recorded the location of the treasures, Chu Feng felt that he was very loyal and devoted to the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Why would this happen? Why would I be defeated by you?" The Immeasurable Immortal looked to Chu Feng in disbelief. Even now, he did not believe what had happened earlier. He could not accept that he was defeated by Chu Feng.

As he already knew how powerful Chu Feng was, he had not underestimated Chu Feng at all. He had used his Imperial Armament and his strongest offensive attacks from the very start.

He had even used his strongest fatal attack to kill Chu Feng.

Victory should have been completely within his grasp. How was it that he was defeated by Chu Feng? After all, there was such an enormous gap between their true cultivation levels.

“If I did not have certainty in being able to defeat you, did you think I would have lured you out to reveal your true self by myself?” Chu Feng smiled coldly.

That’s right, Chu Feng had dared to come alone because he possessed absolute certainty in being able to defeat the Immeasurable Immortal.

Although the assimilation of the Five Elements Secret Skills had not increased Chu Feng’s cultivation, they had bestowed Chu Feng with an unkillable body.

Unless Chu Feng’s opponent possessed a strength capable of suppressing him completely, unless his opponent was so powerful that it was simply impossible for Chu Feng to contend against them, no one could kill Chu Feng.

Chu Feng... was undying and indestructible.

Evidently... the Immeasurable Immortal belonged to the ranks of people that were unable to kill Chu Feng.

“But... earlier, I...”

“You’re trying to say that you injured me earlier, isn’t that right?”

“I deliberately allowed you to injure me. Otherwise, how would you lower your guard? How would I be able to defeat you with one strike?” Chu Feng sneered.

“You’ve deceived me! So all of this was a disguise! You despicable little bastard!” After hearing the truth, the Immeasurable Immortal was extremely furious.

“No, the killing intent that I displayed earlier was not a disguise,”

After saying those words, killing intent emerged in Chu Feng's eyes once again. Then, he unleashed a slash with his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, and a silvery light descended from the sky. It targeted the Immeasurable Immortal.

Facing that slash, the Immeasurable Immortal closed his eyes. He knew that Chu Feng's slash was only an ordinary slash, that he had not used any martial skills with it.

However, the current Immeasurable Immortal was simply too weak and unable to withstand that flash. Chu Feng's ordinary slash was more than sufficient to take his life.

Even though he knew that he would definitely be killed, and that he would not be able to resist, the Immeasurable Immortal still clenched his fists tightly. He was unreconciled, unwilling to die by Chu Feng's hands like this.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared before the Immeasurable Immortal. That person waved his sleeve and unleashed a stream of ordinary Emperor-level martial power.

“Boom!” Following a loud explosion, that ordinary Emperor-level martial power forcibly blocked Chu Feng's slash.

It was the World Devastator Immortal. He was standing before the Immeasurable Immortal.

“Chu Feng, you'd never expect for us to meet one another this soon, no?”

After the World Devastator Immortal appeared, he fixed his gaze onto Chu Feng. His expression was extremely malevolent. It was completely different from his usual handsome appearance. He currently looked like a demon.

The World Devastator Immortal wanted to kill Chu Feng even in his dreams. He possessed extreme hatred for Chu Feng.

And now... Chu Feng was before him. Finally, he was able to achieve what he had dreamed of doing. Finally, his hatred and killing intent that he had held back for a very long time was able to be unleashed.

“World Devastator Immortal?” Chu Feng started to frown upon seeing the World Devastator Immortal.

“Hahaha, Chu Feng, so what if you’ve destroyed my physical body?”

“Before I came here, I had already reported this matter to Lord Hall Master. With the World Devastator Immortal here, how are you able to kill me now?”

“Today, the one that’ll die in the end is you,” The Immeasurable Immortal laughed loudly and viciously.

“Oh, you’re talking about the first night after we set off?” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the Immeasurable Immortal’s expression stiffened. Then, he said, “You know that I let out news at that time?”

“Although Golden Flash Birds are extremely fast, they are not so fast that I cannot see them,” Chu Feng said.

“Since you already knew, why did you still dare to come here alone? Could it be that you’ve already notified the Ancient Era’s Elves?!” At that moment, not only was the Immeasurable Immortal panicky, even the World Devastator Immortal started to panic. The two of them started to look all around.

For Chu Feng to be this confident, it was clear that he had come prepared. However, he, the World Devastator Immortal... had come here by himself.

It would be one thing if others came as reinforcements. However, if the Elf King were to come, he would undoubtedly be killed.

After all, the Elf King was so powerful that even the Dark Hall's Hall Master would have to be wary of him for now.

“Don't look anymore. I have not notified the Cyanwood Mountain or the Ancient Era's Elves.”

“They are all fighting against the people from your Dark Hall right now,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Chapter 2027 – Five Elements Treasures

Although Chu Feng had not informed the experts of the Cyanwood Mountain or the Ancient Era's Elves, he was still filled with confidence.

This caused the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal to feel even more uneasy. Even though the World Devastator Immortal was stronger than Chu Feng, and it would be very easy for him to kill Chu Feng, Chu Feng was currently looking at him with a gaze that held no fear.

Instead, Chu Feng's eyes were filled with disdain. It was as if Chu Feng was the tiger and he was the sheep, that Chu Feng could kill him at any moment.

Feeling extremely uneasy, the World Devastator Immortal shouted at Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, exactly what are you planning?"

"Hehe..." Chu Feng laughed lightly. He leapt forward and arrived at the grand spirit formation in the sky. His hands began to interweave with one another as he formed a special hand seal. Then, he said, "You two wish to know? Very well, I'll let you know right now."

"Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh ~~~"

Suddenly, that grand spirit formation started to emit bright silvery light. At that moment, silver bodies of light shot out from the spirit formation like a meteor shower.

Those silver bodies of lights all descended onto the wonderstones.

"Crack, snap~~~"

Soon, those wonderstones started to shatter. Merely, it was only the surfaces of the wonderstones that shattered. The insides were still intact. Not only that, many different beings were revealed from within the shattered wonderstones.

Some possessed humanoid appearances, whereas others possessed beast-like appearances. Although their bodies were all made of stone, all of them possessed a pair of ferocious crimson eyes.

Most importantly, those stone monsters were not only all alive, they all possessed Martial Emperor-level cultivations.

Furthermore, the amount of stone monsters that Chu Feng had awoken with the spirit formation numbered several tens of thousands.

“This... this... this!!!”

At that moment, not to mention the Immeasurable Immortal, even the World Devastator Immortal was shocked speechless.

There were no less than a hundred thousand stone monsters with cultivations of Martial Emperors. The weakest among them were rank one Martial Emperors. The great majority of them were between rank three and rank six Martial Emperors.

Although there were not a lot of stone monsters above rank six Martial Emperor, there were still quite a bit. Among them, the strongest possessed the same level of cultivation as the World Devastator Immortal; they were rank eight Martial Emperors.

“How could this be? How could this be?! Exactly what is going on? What the hell are these things?!!!”

The World Devastator Immortal did not dare to believe the scene before him.

This was truly too shocking. Even though all of the wonderstones here had existed since the Ancient Era, no one had ever thought that the wonderstones would be such powerful existences.

“Didn’t you all want to know what sort of secret was contained in the Five Elements Old Ancestor’s Five Elements Secret Skills?”

“I shall allow you all to experience the secret contained in the

Five Elements Secret Skills.”

“Kill them,” Chu Feng pointed to the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

“Rooarrr~~~~”

Once Chu Feng’s order was given, the hundred thousand stone monsters immediately emitted ear-piercing roars.

Following that, like an army following a command, the hundred thousand stone monsters began to surround the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

Among them, the two stone monsters with the cultivation of rank eight Martial Emperor bore the brunt of the attack. In a flash, they arrived before the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

These two stone monsters were both a hundred meters tall. They were like two small mountains. Not only were they humanoid in appearance, they were also donned in armor like two generals.

Standing before the World Devastator Immortal, the two of them were truly giants.

Furthermore, although their weapons were only stones, they would always emit dazzling sparks when they collided with the World Devastator Immortal’s Imperial Armament. They were extremely powerful.

In this sort of situation, the World Devastator Immortal did not dare to fight against them at close range. Instead, he escaped into the sky, and began to unleash martial skills to fight against the two stone monsters.

However, not only were those two stone monsters very ferocious in terms of close range combat, their long range attacks were also extremely strong. They opened their mouths and shot out clouds and mists. Furthermore, they possessed full control over the power of the five elements. In fact, during the times when they released

their most frightening attacks, their attacks were able to reach the level of Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The World Devastator Immortal collided with the two stone monsters.

One thing worthy of being mentioned was that the stone monsters with weaker strength stopped attempting to fight and instead stood to the side the moment the battle between the World Devastator Immortal and the two rank eight Martial Emperor stone monsters started fighting.

Actually, if they were to attempt to join the battle, they would only cause trouble for themselves. After all, it was impossible for them, with their strength, to kill the World Devastator Immortal.

Thus, it was most sensible for them to move to the side and simply spectate.

All of this was seen by the Immeasurable Immortal. Then, he looked to Chu Feng who was standing in the sky.

He thought to himself that, if all of this was controlled by Chu Feng, it would be understandable. However, if those stone monsters acted that way by themselves, it would be too frightening.

A total of a hundred thousand stone monsters, with the weakest among them being rank one Martial Emperors. If they were to join the battle between the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's Elves, the Dark Hall's superiority in the battle would be obliterated completely. Furthermore, they would definitely enter a disadvantaged state.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Right at that moment, the World Devastator Immortal suddenly vomited a mouthful of blood.

He was injured. The World Devastator Immortal, a grand rank eight Martial Emperor, was injured by those two rank eight Martial Emperor stone monsters.

“Let’s go.”

Sensing that the situation was bad, the World Devastator Immortal did not dare to stay any longer. He grabbed the Immeasurable Immortal and began to escape.

“After them.”

How could Chu Feng possibly allow them to escape? He gave the order, and the two armored stone monsters began to pursue them relentlessly on foot.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

With each step, they caused the heaven and earth to tremble. Their speed was extremely fast.

Unfortunately, although the World Devastator Immortal was no match for the two armored stone monsters head-on, his speed when fleeing was truly not to be reckoned with. Even though the two stone monsters were extremely fast, they were still unable to catch up to the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

Seeing that, Chu Feng had no choice but to order the two stone monsters to return.

Even though the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal had escaped and taken that scroll with them, Chu Feng did not feel any trace of sadness other than a bit of regret. Instead, he was feeling extremely joyous.

“The true treasures of the Five Elements Secret Skills are here.”

As Chu Feng looked to the hundred thousand stone monsters, he was truly unable to contain his happiness.

The strength of those stone monsters were truly not weak. In

fact, they could even be said to be extremely strong.

Earlier, Chu Feng had merely given a single order telling them to attack. They complied with Chu Feng's order without Chu Feng having to control them the entire time.

In other words, it was the stone monsters' own decision to not interfere in the battle between the World Devastator Immortal and the two rank eight Martial Emperor-level stone monsters.

Although they were not actual living beings, and were only weapons formed by the Five Elements Old Ancestor through special methods, they were extremely high-level and truly frightening.

Treasures. Who would dare to say that they were not treasures? As long as one gained control of those stone monsters, even the Three Palaces would have to submit to them.

And now, Chu Feng was the ruler of these treasures.

“Follow me into battle.”

“Roar~~~~~”

Once Chu Feng gave the order, the hundred thousand stone monsters let out a roar. Then, they followed Chu Feng in the direction of the Ancient Era's Elves.

After Chu Feng left leading the majestic army of a hundred thousand stone monsters, the sky in the distance suddenly started to distort. Soon, a figure appeared from that place.

That person... had a naked upper body, and only wore a large pair of underpants on his lower body. On his feet were two different-colored straw sandals. It was none other than Wang Qiang.

Merely, at that moment, Wang Qiang had a serious expression on his face. He smiled lightly, then said, “I-It w-w-w-would appear that my decision to f-f-follow him h-here was n-not required.”

After he finished saying those words, Wang Qiang started to laugh. He placed his hands into his underpants and, while still in midair, swaggered off into the distance.

Although his each and every step appeared to be very slow, he actually traveled a distance of a thousand miles with a single step.

Chapter 2028 – Unfavorable Battle Situation

The Ancient Era's Elves, that huge monster, possessed territories all over the Holy Land of Martialism.

Other than the Elf Kingdom itself, there were a total of twenty-one important territories.

Currently, the Ancient Era's Elves had dispatched their top experts from the Elf Kingdom to guard the twenty-one territories.

However, even with that being the case, they were still forced to an extremely passive and a very hopeless state against the occasional attacks from the Dark Hall.

Although the Cyanwood Mountain's army of Martial Emperors led by the Weaponry Refinement Immortal had joined the battle and alleviated a lot of the pressure from the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts that the Dark Hall had deployed grew stronger and stronger.

In fact, many of the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were no longer the same as they had been when they were unsealed from the Blood Devouring Killing Formation — they had evolved. Not only had their outward appearance become more ferocious, their strength had also increased.

Thus, in the battle between the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era's Elves were still in a disadvantaged state.

In this sort of situation, the Little Elf Princess Xian Miaomiao was unable to sit tight and do nothing. She requested to go and guard a territory closest to the Elf Kingdom herself.

Originally, the Elf King did not accept her request. However, Xian Miaomiao continued to insist. In the end, the Elf King agreed to her request.

However, it was as if the Dark Hall knew about this beforehand. Right after Xian Miaomiao arrived at that territory, the Dark Hall launched an attack against that territory with their army. This was the most ferocious of all the Dark Hall's attacks.

“Damn it! It's clear that the Dark Hall were prepared, and have come for Your Highness.”

At this moment, the Elf Lord of that territory was standing inside a grand formation on top of the city wall. He looked to the experts from the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts that were attacking the grand formation. His brows were furrowed tightly, and he was feeling extremely uneasy.

They had fought with the Dark Hall tens of times since the war against them had started. Although they were mostly defeated in the tens of battles, they would always face the Dark Hall head-on.

The reason for that was because they needed to defend their Ancient Era's Elves' honor. As such, they had to confront their enemies without cowering.

However, this time around, the Dark Hall had truly dispatched an enormous amount of Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. There were even ten rank seven Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era's ferocious beasts among them.

As for the Ancient Era's Elves here, the strongest among them was an Elf Protector. This Lord Elf Protector was dispatched to protect Xian Miaomiao.

However, even that Lord Elf Protector was only a rank seven Martial Emperor. By himself, it was clear that he would not be able to contend against ten rank seven Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

Thus, this time around, it could be said to be the most ferocious offensive the Dark Hall had dispatched against them. It was simply impossible for them to contend against the Dark Hall. The only

thing they could do was guard against the attacks.

As for that grand formation, it was the final line of defense for the Ancient Era's Elves here. If that grand spirit formation was breached, they would be met with a disaster.

It would be one thing if the territory were to fall. However, if Xian Miaomiao was killed, this would not be something that the Elf Lord of this territory could shoulder.

The Elf Lord of this territory suddenly kneeled to the Elf Protector beside him. With a very sincere expression, he requested, "Lord Protector, if the grand formation is to be breached later, please do not concern yourself with us, and escape with Her Highness."

"What are you..." Seeing that Elf Lord kneeling before him, the Lord Protector felt sour to his heart. However, in the end, he nodded. The reason for that was because he also knew how important Xian Miaomiao was to the Ancient Era's Elves.

However, right at that moment, a sweet-sounding yet very powerful voice sounded. "Open the entrance to the grand formation. I will go out and kill that bunch of animals!"

Turning their eyes toward the source of the voice, the Ancient Era's Elves on the city wall all revealed expressions of shock. The person who had appeared before them was a beautiful young girl. Her blue eyes were clear like water and were extremely charming.

However, those clear eyes were filled with fiery rage.

This person was the Ancient Era's Elves' Little Princess, Xian Miaomiao.

"Your Highness, you absolutely must not do that," Seeing that Xian Miaomiao wanted to go out, the Elf Lord of this territory was so scared that his complexion turned green. Feeling helpless, he turned his gaze to the Elf Protector.

Although he was the Elf Lord of this territory, there was an

enormous gap in status between him and Xian Miaomiao. As such, he simply did not possess the qualifications to speak to Xian Miaomiao. Only that Lord Elf Protector was qualified to urge Xian Miaomiao against it.

The Elf Protector understood tactily. Like the Elf Lord, he also did not wish for Xian Miaomiao to go out. Thus, he urged, “Miaomiao, don’t mess around now. This is not the time to...”

However, before that Elf Protector could finish, Xian Miaomiao interrupted him. “Uncle, why did we come here? We have come to protect this territory. But, what are we doing now? We are actually being protected by the territory’s grand formation!”

“Miaomiao, I know that you detest the Dark Hall. I am like you, I also detest them. However, His Majesty has ordered that your safety surpasses everything else. I absolutely cannot allow anything to happen to you,” The Elf Protector said.

“I’ll say it again, let me out.”

“Else, this grand formation will not be able to stop me,” As Xian Miaomiao said those words, her eyes flashed. Immediately, her blonde hair started to flutter wildly.

At that moment, not to mention the Elf Lord and the soldiers here, even that rank seven Martial Emperor Elf Protector was knocked back.

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao had unleashed her aura. A rank six Martial Emperor. Even though Xian Miaomiao was clearly only a young girl, she possessed the cultivation of a rank six Martial Emperor.

“Miaomiao, you’ve reached a breakthrough?”

Sensing Xian Miaomiao’s current cultivation, the Elf Protector was startled.

“Uncle, let me out. I have come here in order to teach those people from the Dark Hall a lesson. You cannot make me travel so

far to this place just to turtle inside the grand formation and resign us to fate.”

Seeing how determined Xian Miaomiao was, the Elf Protector felt awkward. After hesitating for some time, he said to the Elf Lord, “Open the gate.”

“Open the gate! We shall battle against the Dark Hall!!!” The Elf Lord did not dare to hesitate. However, he was also unwilling to have Xian Miaomiao go out by herself.

Thus, he prepared to lead the Ancient Era’s Elves here to battle against the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts together with Xian Miaomiao.

After his order was given, an opening appeared in that grand formation.

It was a gate, the only gate in that grand formation. They were prepared to go all-out to fight the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right after that opening appeared, a figure charged out. It was Xian Miaomiao.

Not only was Xian Miaomiao the first to rush out, she waved her sleeve the moment she rushed out. Then, a ray of golden light landed on that grand formation’s exit.

“Your Highness, you!!!”

Seeing this scene, the Ancient Era’s Elves were both shocked and frightened.

It turned out that that ray of golden light was an enormous golden bell. That golden bell was extremely large, and had sealed off the exit, forcing all of the Ancient Era’s Elves within the grand formation to stay inside.

No matter how hard the Ancient Era’s Elves tried to attack the enormous golden bell, they were unable to cause any damage to it.

That golden bell was even sturdier than the grand formation.

At that moment, the Elf Lord of this place started to panic. Due to the fact that this grand formation was the final line of defense for this territory, there was only a single exit. Now that the exit was blocked, they were unable to go out.

However, Xian Miaomiao had already gone out. How could he allow Xian Miaomiao to fight against so many experts from the Dark Hall alone?

Chapter 2029 – Dangerous Woman

“Lord Protector, what are we to do now? Please think of something. We cannot expose Princess Miaomiao to the Dark Hall’s army by herself,” In panic, the Elf Lord looked to the Protector.

“It’s useless. That bell is something that His Majesty bestowed to Princess Miaomiao so that she could use it to protect herself at a crucial moment.”

“Never would I expect that Princess Miaomiao would use that bell to block us in here.”

“It would seem that girl does not wish for us to sacrifice our lives in vain. She wants to take care of the Dark Hall’s army by herself,” The Protector said.

“What? Her Highness actually wants to-?!!!” Hearing those words, the expressions of the Ancient Era’s Elves all took a huge change.

Regardless of how powerful Xian Miaomiao might be, they all felt that it would be absolutely impossible for her to take care of several tens of thousands of Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts and the Dark Hall’s army by herself.

After all, no matter what, Xian Miaomiao was only a rank six Martial Emperor. However, the ones outside were rank seven Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. Furthermore, there were a total of ten of them.

“Wuuuahh~~~”

“Eeaahhh~~~”

At the moment when the Ancient Era’s Elves were worried, wave upon wave of screams could be heard from outside the grand formation.

When they turned their gaze's toward the direction of the screams, all of the Ancient Era's Elves, including even that Elf Lord, were stunned.

At that moment, the Dark Hall's army of elites and the many Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were being trampled upon. Dead and injured filled their ranks.

As for the person that was causing all those casualties, it was none other than the Elf Princess, Her Highness Xian Miaomiao that they were so worried about.

At that moment, Xian Miaomiao was holding a sword in her hand. With each wave of her sword, she would cause a vast massacre.

Not to mention those with low levels of strength, even those ten rank seven Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were absolutely no match for Xian Miaomiao.

In merely an instant, two of the ten Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were killed by Xian Miaomiao's Imperial Armament.

“Her Highness is actually this powerful?”

“Even rank seven Martial Emperors are no match for her? But her cultivation is clearly only that of a rank six Martial Emperor. What's going on here?”

“Could it be that Her Highness's battle power is actually capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation instead of four?” The Ancient Era's Elves were all very skeptical at first. However, after watching Xian Miaomiao's battle, they verified it to be true.

Although Xian Miaomiao was only a petite young girl, the strength that she displayed was truly valiant. As she moved back and forth within the Dark Hall's army, there was no one capable of stopping her.

Not to mention the people from the Dark Hall, even those enormous Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were unable to withstand

a single blow from her.

“We’re saved. We have been saved from this crisis! Never would I have expected Her Highness to be this powerful. Likely, she will be able to take care of the entire Dark Hall’s army by herself.”

Seeing how ferocious Xian Miaomiao was, the Ancient Era’s Elves that were deeply worried for her earlier started to have a whole new level of respect toward her. In fact, they even began to beat their war drums to cheer for Xian Miaomiao.

“Roar~~~”

Unfortunately, good things do not last for long. Right after Xian Miaomiao began to massacre the Dark Hall’s army, an ear-piercing roar was heard.

Following that, an enormous black dragon appeared in the distance. It was flying toward Xian Miaomiao with its fangs bared and its claws brandished.

That enormous black dragon was formed of black gaseous flames. It did not possess a physical body. However, it possessed a pair of bloody eyes.

From the moment that black dragon appeared, the Ancient Era’s Elves became extremely nervous. Even though they were within the grand formation, they were still able to sense how frightening that black dragon was.

“Earthen Taboo: Chaotic Leaf Sword.”

Xian Miaomiao had also realized that the black dragon was no ordinary being. She did not show any carelessness, and instead brandished the Imperial Armament in her hand to unleash an attack at the black dragon.

Once the sword attack was unleashed, chaotic leaves began to swirl about in the wind. Those leaves were no ordinary leaves, as they managed to pierce countless holes through the black dragon.

However, after the black dragon was beaten back, it turned into black gaseous flames and disappeared into thin air.

It turned out that black dragon was not an actual beast. Rather, it was only a martial skill.

“Girl, you’re pretty good.”

After that black dragon was defeated, a beautiful woman appeared out of thin air. She stood far across from Xian Miaomiao.

After that woman appeared, even the Ancient Era’s Elves’ expression took a huge change. That woman was truly alluringly beautiful. Most importantly, they were unable to fathom that woman’s cultivation.

Furthermore, after that woman appeared, both the Dark Hall’s army and the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts all retreated behind that woman in an orderly manner and revealed extremely respectful appearances.

It was clear that that woman was the leader of the Dark Hall’s army.

After seeing that woman, the expression on the Elf Protector’s face became extremely frantic. He had not revealed such an uneasy expression even when Xian Miaomiao rushed out to fight against the Dark Hall’s army by herself and sealed them within the grand formation.

The reason why he reacted like this was because this was the first time since he had started fighting against the Dark Hall that he saw those Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts acting so respectfully. They did not act that way even when before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

However, that woman had accomplished that feat. Furthermore, he was unable to determine that woman’s cultivation at all. Yet, he was able to sense that that woman was extremely dangerous.

All of this allowed him to know that that woman was someone extraordinary.

If he was still at ease when Xian Miaomiao faced the Dark Hall's army by herself earlier, then he was extremely worried right now.

"It's you!!!" After Xian Miaomiao saw that woman, the killing intent in her eyes immediately increased explosively.

The reason for that was because Xian Miaomiao had seen that woman before. She was that mysterious woman who had appeared beside the Dark Hall's Hall Master together with the World Devastator Immortal at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.

"You recognize me? Your memory's quite good," The woman said with a light smile. Even though her voice was pleasant to hear, it was also extremely strange.

"Even if you are to turn to ash, I will still recognize you," Xian Miaomiao said while gnashing her teeth.

After hearing Xian Miaomiao's words, not only was that woman not angry, the smile on her face grew even stronger. Her smile was truly charming. She was truly a person of bearing. After smiling, she said to Xian Miaomiao, "Girl, you should have died in the Blood Devouring Killing Formation last time around. Yet, you are still alive."

"Thus, our Hall Master is interested in finding out how you managed to survive."

"He wanted me to bring you back. Are you going to follow me yourself, or must I capture you and take you back?"

"Oh, I forgot to tell you this: if you follow me yourself, I can spare those Ancient Era's Elves. However, if you fight against me, they shall die," That mysterious woman looked to the Ancient Era's Elves in the grand formation behind Xian Miaomiao.

Although she said those words with a smile on her face, the Ancient Era's Elves all trembled upon hearing her words. Even that Lord Elf Protector's body also trembled.

In merely an instant, cold sweat filled their faces.

For some unknown reason, they felt as if that woman's words were not an empty threat. Instead, she was actually capable of doing it.

The reason for that was because that woman emitted too powerful of a dangerous aura. The more one interacted with her, the more one would become afraid of her.

“To boast shamelessly, you are courting death!” Coldness flashed through Xian Miaomiao's eyes. Then she slashed out with the Imperial Armament sword she held in her hand.

“Roar~~~”

However, right after that slash was shot forth, an ear-piercing roar sounded from the space before her. Soon, a huge monster appeared out of thin air. It opened its gigantic mouth and brought forth violent wind.

That wind was extremely powerful. It turned into wind blades that blocked Xian Miaomiao's attack.

After that huge monster appeared, Xian Miaomiao started to frown. That monster was also an Ancient Era's ferocious beast. However, it possessed the cultivation of rank eight Martial Emperor.

Most importantly, that Ancient Era's ferocious beast gave off a completely different sort of sensation when compared to the other Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. The sensation it gave off had nothing to do with its strength. Rather, it was as if that Ancient Era's ferocious beast had undergone a special sort of transformation.

“Little girl, you are not qualified to fight against me.”

“This slave of mine is more than sufficient to take care of you,” The corners of the mysterious woman's lips lifted into a fascinating yet dangerous smile.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, she pointed her finger at the Ancient Era's ferocious beast, and a strand of black gaseous flames entered that Ancient Era's ferocious beast's body.

“Roar~~~”

The very next moment, black gaseous flames emerged from all over that Ancient Era's ferocious beast. It appeared like a black demon.

Being engulfed by black gaseous flames, that Ancient Era's ferocious beast appeared even more imposing, even more vicious. With intense killing intent, it began to unleash ruthless attacks at Xian Miaomiao.

“Humph.”

Xian Miaomiao snorted coldly. She did not fear that huge monster. Instead, she brandished the sword in her hand and began to collide with that Ancient Era's ferocious beast.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The battle between the two of them was extremely intense. It was as if they were the sole rulers of this region, and could bring about the destruction of the entire region.

Chapter 2030 – Powerful Reinforcement

“Crap, that Ancient Era’s ferocious beast is too powerful. If this is to continue, Her Highness will not be able to withstand it.”

After fighting for some time, the expressions of the Ancient Era’s Elves grew increasingly ugly. Even though Xian Miaomiao was very powerful, that Ancient Era’s ferocious beast was growing increasingly fierce.

At that moment, that Ancient Era’s ferocious beast had taken the advantage in the battle. Furthermore, its dominance was growing larger and larger. It had begun to completely suppress Xian Miaomiao and trample upon her.

Sure enough, that Ancient Era’s ferocious beast was different from all the others. Its attacks were not made absent-mindedly. Instead, it was more like an intelligent being, filled with battle experience. Otherwise, with Xian Miaomiao’s strength, it would be impossible for her to be beaten to such a degree.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, that Ancient Era’s ferocious beast unleashed a fist explosively. Xian Miaomiao hurriedly lifted up her sword to block its fist.

“Wuaah~~”

However, the might of that fist was truly too powerful. Even though Xian Miaomiao had blocked it with her sword, she was still knocked several meters back. By the time she managed to steady herself, blood was already flowing out the corners of her mouth.

“Damn it! Think of a way to get me out there!” Seeing Xian Miaomiao injured, the Elf Protector started to panic.

“Lord Elf Protector, there is simply nothing we can do,” At that moment, the Elf Lord revealed an expression of helplessness.

There was only a single exit to that grand formation. However, it was blocked by Xian Miaomiao's golden bell. As such, they were simply unable to leave.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, that Ancient Era's ferocious beast let out a roar again. Then, its attacks grew even fiercer.

After being injured, Xian Miaomiao was evidently weaker than before. This time around, she was forced into an absolutely passive state against the ruthless onslaught of that Ancient Era's ferocious beast.

“What do we do now?!”

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Elves were truly panicking. Some among them were on the verge of collapse.

The reason for that was because if this were to continue, Xian Miaomiao would definitely be killed.

However... they, the Ancient Era's Elves, absolutely could not lose their genius, Xian Miaomiao.

“Girl, I urge you to concede. It is still not too late for you to admit defeat now,” The mysterious woman said with a light smile.

She was like a spectator watching a show with a calm and composed expression on her face.

“You wish for me to go with you? In your dreams!” Xian Miaomiao shouted stubbornly.

“You're quite stubborn,” Hearing those words, that woman smiled once more. Then, she said, “In that case, I must teach you a lesson.”

After saying those words, ruthlessness flashed through the eyes of that mysterious woman. She shouted, “Cripple her!”

“Rooarrrr~~~”

Once those words were said, that Ancient Era's ferocious beast appeared as if it had received a command. It began to roar. Then, its attacks grew even more ferocious. Each and every attack became fatal. It seemed to be trying to kill Xian Miaomiao.

"I'm afraid that you'll be disappointed. Today, you will not be able to kill anyone."

Right at this moment of imminent peril, a man's voice sounded from the sky.

"Boom~~~"

"Boom~~~"

After that voice was heard, two enormous stone humanoids appeared out of thin air. They descended from the sky and ruthlessly stomped that Ancient Era's ferocious beast deep into the ground. Then, they brandished their stone weapons and began to hack that Ancient Era's ferocious beast to death.

"Wh-What are those?"

Everything happened too quickly. Not to mention the people from the Dark Hall, even the Ancient Era's Elves turned pale with fright.

The reason for that was because those two stone giants were truly too frightening. Even though they were also emitting the aura of rank eight Martial Emperors, they managed to kill that Ancient Era's ferocious beast in merely a couple strikes.

Even though they had sneak attacked that Ancient Era's ferocious beast when it was distracted with attacking Xian Miaomiao to kill it instantly, it remained that what they did was impossible to accomplish unless they possessed absolute strength.

Most importantly, where did those two stone giants appear from? Could they be monstrous beasts? But, there had never been any record of this sort of monstrous beast in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Step~~~”

Just when everyone was astonished by the two stone giants, a figure suddenly descended from the sky and landed beside Xian Miaomiao. He placed his palm on Xian Miaomiao's shoulder and transmitted a gentle energy into her body and began healing her injuries.

Xian Miaomiao was also focused on the two enormous stone giants that had appeared out of nowhere when the sudden gentle energy entered her body. That energy caused the pain she felt from her wounds to immediately lessen by a lot. She turned her head and discovered that Chu Feng was standing beside her.

“Chu Feng,” When she saw Chu Feng, Xian Miaomiao reacted as if she had seen a close relative. Immediately, a brilliant smile blossomed on her little face.

“My apologies. I've come late,” Chu Feng said.

“.....” Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao was startled. She had come a realization. Regardless of where those two stone monsters came from, they were definitely related to Chu Feng and were brought here by Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you're actually alive?” However, upon seeing Chu Feng, that mysterious woman revealed a shocked expression.

“Are you very disappointed that I am alive?” Chu Feng asked.

“I won't say disappointed. Merely, I'm a bit surprised,” The mysterious woman smiled sweetly. It was as if Chu Feng's life and death was truly unrelated to her.

“The fact that I am alive will mean that you all will be the ones to die,” Chu Feng narrowed his eyes.

“It seems to me that it has not been long since we last met. Your strength has not increased by much. Since when did you learn how to boast?” The mysterious woman mocked.

“Hehe...” Chu Feng was not angered by the mysterious woman’s mockery. Instead, he laughed lightly.

The Ancient Era’s Elves were confused by Chu Feng’s confident laughter.

Even though the two stone giants Chu Feng had brought with him were very powerful, it remained that there were only two of them.

But, the sensation that mysterious woman gave off was truly unfathomable. They felt that those two stone giants would likely not be able to defeat her.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

.....

.....

However, right at that moment, rumbles sounded from far away. Following that, the earth started to tremble violently. It was as if there was an earthquake.

In that sort of situation, more and more enormous stone monsters began to appear in the crowd’s line of sight.

“Heavens! Those are all stone monstrous beasts. How could there be that many?!!!!”

Seeing the several thousands of enormous stone monsters walking over like a well-trained army, the Ancient Era’s Elves were all astonished.

As for the people from the Dark Hall, they were all deeply frightened.

After all, those thousands of enormous stone monsters were all

Martial Emperors. If those stone monsters were to join the battle, the superiority of their Ancient Era's ferocious beasts would be completely obliterated.

“Lady Xue Ji, I-let's leave.”

In a panic, someone spoke to that mysterious woman.

However, that mysterious woman ignored that suggestion. At the same time, there was not the slightest trace of fear in her eyes.

Instead, she spoke to Chu Feng in a profound manner. “Not bad. It seems that you have truly obtained a good harvest from the Five Elements Secret Skills. Could it be that World Devastator and Immeasurable, those two trash, have already died?”

“Forget about it, their lives and deaths are unrelated to me.”

“That said, I must admit, your arrival today has saved the lives of those Ancient Era's Elves.”

“Chu Feng... let us meet again.”

After saying those words, the mysterious woman's body shifted, and she disappeared into thin air.

“Lady Xue Ji, please don't abandon us!!!”

In response, the people from the Dark Hall started to panic.

They had come here and attacked aggressively because they were relying on the backing of that mysterious woman. Now that mysterious woman had left, how could these people possibly be a match for the Ancient Era's Elves and that army of stone monsters?

If that mysterious woman were to abandon them, only death would await them.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng ordered, “Kill them all. Leave none alive.”

“Roar~~~”

Chu Feng's words caused the people from the Dark Hall to act as if they were petrified. They stood there stunned. Deep fear covered their previously ferocious gazes.

When Chu Feng's order was given, the thousands of stone monsters began to surround and attack them.

Especially those two rank eight Martial Emperor stone giants. In merely the blink of an eye, they arrived within the Dark Hall's army, massacring them.

Chapter 2031 – Must Be Taught A Lesson

After a violent battle, all of the people from the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were killed.

Massacre. It was a massacre. The army of stone monsters that Chu Feng led had defeated the Dark Hall's army with zero deaths or injuries.

"Guard!" Chu Feng shouted.

After his command was given, those stone monsters surrounded the Elf territory. Like guards, they began to defend this place.

Seeing this scene, the Ancient Era's Elves all revealed shocked expressions. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng were filled with admiration.

The army of stone monsters all followed Chu Feng's command. It was an extremely unimaginable matter.

"Chu Feng, where did you obtain these stone monsters? They're actually this powerful?"

At that moment, not to mention the other Ancient Era's Elves, even the Little Princess Xian Miaomiao was startled.

"It's a long story. I've solved the mystery of the Five Elements Secret Skills. The treasures contained within it was this stone army," Chu Feng said.

"You've really solved the mystery of the Five Elements Secret Skills?! Heavens! You are too amazing!" Hearing those words, Xian Miaomiao revealed an astonished expression.

"Miaomiao, hear me out. Currently, this entire stone army listens to my orders. However, I've created seventeen title plates. As long as one conducts a blood oath to have a title plate recognize them as its master, one would be able to command a portion of the stone army."

“Before I came, I had already handed fifteen of the title plates to fifteen Elf Lords of different territories.”

“Later, hand this title plate to the Elf Lord of this territory. Have him make a blood oath with it. Then, he will be able to, like me, command the stone army. With the stone army guarding this place, even if the Dark Hall is to come again, they would not have to fear them,” Chu Feng handed a title plate to Xian Miaomiao.

“It’s actually this miraculous?!” As Xian Miaomiao looked to the title plate handed to her by Chu Feng, Xian Miaomiao revealed an expression of amazement, and began to fondle it admiringly. It was like a playful child had obtained a beloved toy.

“Wait, Chu Feng, you said there’s a total of seventeen title plates. In that case, this stone army here is not all that you’ve obtained? There’s more of them?” Xian Miaomiao asked in astonishment.

“Mn, the stone army numbered a total of a hundred and thirty-eight thousand nine hundred and eighty-one stone monsters. I have split them into sixteen groups.”

“Currently, fifteen of the groups are guarding fifteen of your Ancient Era’s Elves’ important territories,” Chu Feng said with a nod.

“Wow, that’s truly amazing. With that many powerful stone monsters, even if the Dark Hall is to mount a sneak attack against us again, we would not have to fear them,” Xian Miaomiao was overjoyed.

After all, she had personally experienced the might of the stone monsters. Upon thinking of how there were that many more powerful stone monsters, she knew that they would definitely be an enormous assistance to them, the Ancient Era’s Elves.

Even the weakest among them were Martial Emperors. This meant that there were over a hundred thousand Martial Emperors. What sort of concept was this? It was truly unimaginable.

Perhaps the battle between the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall might have a reversal because of the addition of the stone army.

Even if the Ancient Era's Elves had to continue to remain passive, their casualties would not be that severe.

"However, only two of them are the strongest. From today on, they belong to you," Chu Feng took out another title plate and handed it to Xian Miaomiao. As he spoke, he looked to the two rank eight Martial Emperor-level stone giants behind him.

Indeed, Chu Feng had prepared those two stone giants for Xian Miaomiao. Chu Feng had heard of Xian Miaomiao guarding this territory on his way here. He was worried for Xian Miaomiao's safety, and had deliberately rushed over to find her so that he could bring her back to the Elf Kingdom.

He had created that title plate in order to guard against the unexpected. He wanted Xian Miaomiao to protect herself by gaining control over the two strongest stone monsters.

However, Chu Feng did not expect that Xian Miaomiao's cultivation had increased again. She was already a rank six Martial Emperor. She... was currently able to fight against rank eight Martial Emperors herself.

However, from the battle between Xian Miaomiao and that rank eight Martial Emperor-level Ancient Era's ferocious beast, Chu Feng determined that Xian Miaomiao's battle experience was lacking. While she would be fine against ordinary rank eight Martial Emperors, she would not be able to defeat rank eight Martial Emperors that were stronger than ordinary ones.

As for those two stone giants, they could be said to be extremely powerful existences among rank eight Martial Emperors. After all, even the World Devastator Immortal was defeated by them. Thus, Chu Feng felt very reassured to have them protect Xian Miaomiao.

“You must not refuse this. Come, take it,” Seemingly fearing that Xian Miaomiao would refuse, Chu Feng forcibly pushed the title plate into Xian Miaomiao’s hand.

“What about you then?” Xian Miaomiao looked to Chu Feng worriedly. From the words spoken by that mysterious woman earlier, she was able to tell that the Dark Hall wanted to kill Chu Feng now. Chu Feng was also in a very dangerous situation right now.

“Don’t forget that I’m a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Even if I am unable to defeat rank eight Martial Emperors, it would not be that easy for them to kill me.”

“Furthermore, those stone giants are too enormous. If they are to follow me all the time, it would be inconvenient for me too.”

“Furthermore, as long as they are beside me, even if I do not have a title plate, I would still be able to order them,” Chu Feng explained with a smile. He was urging Xian Miaomiao to accept his kind intentions.

“Okay then,” Seeing how insistent Chu Feng was, Xian Miaomiao accepted the title plate. She was actually very happy. As Xian Miaomiao was a young girl with a child’s temperament, she felt that it was much more liberating to be able to control two experts at the level of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ Grand Elders than having Ancient Era’s Elves protect her.

“Wow, great sir, you are too amazing! Those enormous fellows actually all listen to your commands!”

At that moment, a little red insect appeared from within Xian Miaomiao’s sleeve and directly landed onto Chu Feng. That little fellow was Lil Red.

“Lil Red, it’s been a while, have you missed your great sir?” Chu Feng held Lil Red in his hand and asked with a smile.

“I do, I even dreamed of great sir,” Lil Red said.

“Oh? You actually have dreams?” Chu Feng was startled.

“That’s right. I dream of great sir and Miaomiao all the time,” Lil Red said.

“Yoh, you’re calling her Miaomiao instead of ‘beauty’ now? Seems like you’re doing pretty well,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you think?” Lil Red raised its little head proudly.

“In that case, tell me what you dream of,” Chu Feng asked.

“I dream of great sir touching Miaomiao’s body,” Lil Red said.

“Touching Miaomiao’s body?” Chu Feng started to frown. He asked, “Why would I be touching Miaomiao’s body?”

Chu Feng heard that some dreams are oftentimes prophecies. Lil Red was evidently a mysterious being. It was strange for it to have dreams to begin with. It was even more unbelievable for its dream to oftentimes be of him and Xian Miaomiao.

Chu Feng wanted to know exactly what was with Lil Red’s dreams. If it was an ill omen, then he wanted to know what he could do to prevent it.

“That’s right. Lil Red, why is Chu Feng touching my body? Was I injured?” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao asked curiously. Evidently, she was thinking the same thing as Chu Feng.

“I also don’t know why great sir is touching your body. In any case, not only did he touch it, he even kissed you. Then, without wearing anything, the two of you started to roll around in the bed. It was truly lively,” Lil Red said with a mischievous smile.

“.....” Hearing those words, Chu Feng grew speechless. It turned out that he had been played for a fool by Lil Red. Dream? No, Lil Red was clearly toying with him and Xian Miaomiao.

“Lil Red, you’re courting death here,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao’s face instantly turned red. She grabbed Lil Red and began to pull it. She was simply trying to pull Lil Red apart.

“Aiyo, Your Highness Miaomiao, Lil Red knows its mistake. Please spare me.”

“Great sir, save me.”

Lil Red’s anguished wailing began to be heard. However, Chu Feng did not try to plead for it. The reason for that was because even if Xian Miaomiao had not planned to teach Lil Red a lesson, he would have done so. That Lil Red was truly too shameless, too lowly, and had to be taught a lesson.

Chapter 2032 – Endless Admiration

Right at that moment, the Elf Lord of this place suddenly shouted, “Your Highness, little friend Chu Feng, could you two let us out?”

Turning towards the grand formation, although the Ancient Era’s Elves inside were mostly beaming with happiness for Chu Feng’s defeat of the Dark Hall’s army, they also had helpless expressions on their faces.

The reason for that was because they were all still trapped in the grand formation, and were unable to come out to celebrate. As such, they could only cheer inside the grand formation. It was quite an awkward situation for them.

“Miaomiao, what’s going on here?” As Chu Feng had arrived somewhat late, he didn’t know how the Ancient Era’s Elves had been trapped inside that spirit formation. That said, he was able to tell that they were trapped because of that golden bell.

“It was caused by Miss Miaomiao. Aiyo, stop pulling me. I’ve even called you ‘miss,’” Lil Red shouted in pain.

“Hehe, I got so happy after seeing you that I nearly forgot about them,” At that moment, Xian Miaomiao scratched her head awkwardly. Then, she shouted to the golden bell, “Come back!”

The golden bell started to rapidly decrease in size. In the end, it then turned into the size of a fingernail and landed on Xian Miaomiao’s hand. Then, Xian Miaomiao put it away in her sleeve.

Seeing that golden bell, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Likely, even rank eight Martial Emperors would not be able to destroy that golden bell. It might even be able to defend against attacks from peak Martial Emperors. It was most definitely a treasure.

The treasures that the Ancient Era’s Elves possessed were truly miraculous.

“Little friend Chu Feng, that stone army is actually under your control. You are truly amazing.”

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s Elves flocked to Chu Feng. They had seen Chu Feng commanding the stone army to massacre the Dark Hall’s army earlier. Thus, they currently felt endless admiration for Chu Feng.

“Senior, these people from the Dark Hall have left behind quite a lot of belongings. It’s unsuitable to leave them there. It’s better that you all collect them,” Chu Feng said to the Elf Lord with a smile on his face.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’re planning to leave all of those treasures to us?” Hearing those words, that Elf Lord was secretly delighted.

Originally, he felt that since the Dark Hall’s army was eliminated by Chu Feng, the treasures they left behind should naturally belong to Chu Feng.

However, with what Chu Feng said, it was clear that he wanted to give those treasures to them.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng nodded.

“But... but, how could we...?” The Elf Lord of this territory said embarrassedly.

“Chu Feng said he’s giving them to you, so just accept them. Don’t refuse his kindness,” Xian Miaomiao cast a side eye at that Elf Lord.

“I wouldn’t dare, I wouldn’t dare. How could I possibly refuse his kindness?” The Elf Lord nodded his head repeatedly. Then, he ordered his men to gather the treasures left behind by the Dark Hall. All of the treasures were extremely valuable goods.

“It’s truly lively here,” Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared out of thin air.

Upon seeing this person, the Ancient Era's Elves' expressions all stiffened. Then, other than Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao, all of the Ancient Era's Elves knelt on the ground and shouted in unison, "We pay our respects to Your Majesty."

"Royal father, what brought you here?" Xian Miaomiao revealed a pleasantly surprised expression upon seeing her father.

"I obtained news that the Dark Hall would likely try to harm you. Thus, I hurried over. Never would I have expected that my presence was not required," As the Elf King said those words, he looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. Contained within his gaze was a trace of gratefulness.

Indeed, he had come too late. If it hadn't been for Chu Feng's prompt arrival, his Xian Miaomiao would likely have been met with an accident.

"Chu Feng pays his respects to Your Majesty," Seeing the Elf King, Chu Feng also bowed to him courteously.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please get up. We are allies. As such, we should stand on equal footing. I am unable to bear you acting like this," The Elf King said.

"You are my senior. How could this junior possibly dare to stand on equal footing as you?" Chu Feng shook his head.

"With your talent, your cultivation will sooner or later surpass mine. Your stage is not here. Instead, it's the Outer World."

"Actually, it is my fortune to be able to stand on equal footing with you," The Elf King said.

"Senior, you will always be my senior. This is something unrelated to cultivation," Chu Feng said very respectfully. He was speaking his true feelings.

Hearing those words, the Elf King's heart was moved.

Even though he already knew that Chu Feng was a very modest

individual, it remained that the world of cultivators was a world where one's seniority and status was determined by one's strength. A person as outstanding and as thoughtful as Chu Feng was truly rare.

“An army of over a hundred thousand stone monsters with Martial Emperor-level cultivation are protecting our Ancient Era's Elves' various territories.”

After that, the Elf King looked to the stone army and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly bestowed us Ancient Era's Elves an enormous gift,” Evidently, he already knew about the stone army being posted to defend the various locations.

“Your Majesty, you are flattering me. We are allies. This is only something that I, Chu Feng, should do,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, dare I ask, was the stone army obtained from the Wonderstone Dao Ground?” The Elf King asked.

“Your Majesty, how did you know?” Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing those words..

“Actually, we Ancient Era's Elves have already suspected that the several tens of thousands of wonderstones in the Wonderstone Dao Ground are extraordinary objects.”

“We have attempted to figure out how to use them for a long time. Merely, even though we tried all sorts of methods over the years, they all ended in failure.”

“Never would I have expected for the wonderstones to be related to the treasures left behind by the Five Elements Old Ancestor. In the end, little friend Chu Feng ended up obtaining them,” After saying those words, the Elf King started to look at Chu Feng with admiration.

After hearing what the Elf King said, the Ancient Era's Elves that did not know how the stone monsters came to be all came to a realization.

It turned out that the stone army was made up of the wonderstones from the Wonderstone Dao Ground. The reason why Chu Feng was able to control them was because Chu Feng had solved the secret to the Five Elements Secret Skills that no one else had managed to accomplish.

Upon thinking about it, all of the Ancient Era's Elves present, regardless of whether they were powerful experts or weaker members of the younger generation, all looked to Chu Feng with admiration in their eyes.

The thing that countless people had attempted to accomplish since the Ancient Era, only to fail, was accomplished by Chu Feng. As such, even if they didn't wish to admire Chu Feng, they would have to.

"That's not all there is to it. Not only is Chu Feng able to control the stone army, he also created all those title plates. Holding a title plate, one would be able to control a portion of the stone army."

"Here! With this title plate, one would be able to control all of the stone monsters other than the two enormous stone giants."

"Elf Lord, catch," Xian Miaomiao threw the title plate to the Elf Lord of this territory.

"No, I absolutely cannot accept this. I am extremely weak, how could I accept such an enormous gift?" At that moment, that Elf Lord was overwhelmed and began to act humbly.

Some of the stone monsters in the stone army possessed higher cultivations than his. He truly did not possess the confidence to command that stone army.

Especially when before the Elf King, he truly did not dare to accept such an enormous gift. The way he saw it, even if the title plate would allow one to command the stone army, the one to command the stone army should be the Elf King, and not him, a mere territory's Elf Lord.

Chapter 2033 – Begin The Counterattack

“Little friend Chu Feng is giving it to you. Thus, just accept it. Don’t forget, it is your responsibility to guard the safety of this place,” The Elf King said.

“Yes, Your Majesty. Little friend Chu Feng, thank you for your enormous gift,” The Elf Lord cautiously accepted the title plate. Smiles completely filled his aged face.

Even though he did not dare to accept it, he actually deeply wanted it, as it would allow him to be able to command that stone army. Without a doubt, with the stone army, their battle power here would increase enormously.

“Your Majesty, for the Dark Hall to attack your Ancient Era’s Elves’ various territories this frequently, they most definitely have camps where they station their troops.”

“Have you not managed to find those locations?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had been to over a dozen of the Ancient Era’s Elves’ territories before coming to this territory.

He knew from them that the Ancient Era’s Elves were forced into an extremely passive state ever since the battle against the Dark Hall had started.

The reason why they had to act so passively was because they could only defend against the Dark Hall’s attacks, and not fight back. As for why that was the case, it was because they did not know where the Dark Hall’s camps were.

“The Dark Hall is extremely cunning. Furthermore, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possesses brilliant world spirit techniques. Not to mention knowing where their camps are, they disappear rapidly after every attack,” The Elf King said.

“That’s indeed the case. While His Majesty is still able to chase

after them, we, on the other hand, are simply unable to even catch up to them.”

“This time around, it was that woman by the name of Xue Ji that decided to give up on the Dark Hall’s army that came to attack us. Else, they would likely have been able to escape unscathed,” The Elf Protector said.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng pondered for a moment. Then, he said to the Elf King, “Your Majesty, could you help me get in contact with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and senior Zhang Ming?”

Chu Feng knew that the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming were special among the reinforcements that had come to help the Ancient Era’s Elves. Other than being powerful, they were also Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists.

Thus, after they joined the battle, they were not dispatched to help protect the Ancient Era’s Elves’ territories. Instead, they were tasked to discover the whereabouts of the Dark Hall.

“I can.”

“However, little friend Chu Feng, I cannot leave the Elf Kingdom for too long. My coming to this place was also done secretly. We will likely have to return to the Elf Kingdom immediately,” The Elf King said.

“That’s fine,” Chu Feng nodded.

As the matter could not be delayed, they began their journey to return to the Elf Kingdom immediately. Merely, before Chu Feng left, he turned his head around and to take a glance at the battlefield behind him. His gaze was rather complicated.

“Xue Ji?”

Chu Feng started to ponder after saying those two words. Even though that Xue Ji had escaped from the battle and Chu Feng could

be said to have seized total victory, Chu Feng kept feeling that that woman by the name of Xue Ji was even more dangerous than the World Devastator Immortal.

The reason for that was because even after Chu Feng arrived leading the stone army, that Xue Ji did not reveal the slightest bit of fear in her eyes.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt a faint trace of that Xue Ji's aura from those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

Chu Feng had seen the Dark Hall's Hall Master before. He was extremely powerful and capable of fighting against the Elf King. However, Chu Feng did not sense the Dark Hall's Hall Master's aura on those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts.

As Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he guessed that the Dark Hall's ability to control those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts was definitely related to that woman called Xue Ji.

In short, the existence of that woman caused Chu Feng to feel extremely uneasy.

However, as that woman had already escaped, what Chu Feng must do now was to return to the Elf Kingdom quickly to meet up with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others.

After some time passed, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming, the three Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, arrived at the Elf Kingdom in succession.

At that moment, the Elf King, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming were all gathered.

They still did not know what it was that Chu Feng wanted to tell them. Although Chu Feng was the first to arrive at the Elf Kingdom, he had entered closed-door training right after arriving.

Calculating the time, Chu Feng had already been in closed-door

training for some days now.

Finally, after they waited for a long while, Chu Feng finally emerged from his closed-door training.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly broadened our horizons.”

“Never would I have expected for the treasures of the Five Elements Secret Skills to be the stone army. To our current situation, they could be said to be the most useful,” At that moment, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal was extremely cheerful. He had heard about the matter regarding the stone army from the Elf King. However, after he carefully looked to Chu Feng, he asked, “Hm, where’s the Immeasurable Immortal? Where did he go?”

“Seniors, I have called you all here mainly because I have two things that I wish to tell you all,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd present all turned serious. They were able to tell that what Chu Feng planned to tell them was something important.

“For the first matter, the Immeasurable Immortal is a part of the Dark Hall. Furthermore, he possesses another identity by the name of Zhan Cangtian.”

“He completely revealed himself at the Wonderstone Dao Ground. He admitted to everything, and even tried to kill me together with the World Devastator Immortal. Fortunately, I was prepared. That was why I managed to escape the calamity,” Chu Feng said.

“What? The Immeasurable Immortal is Zhan Cangtian?”

After learning of this matter, it was not only the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and Zhang Ming were shocked, even the Elf King started to frown. Evidently, none of them had expected the Immeasurable Immortal to possess such a dangerous identity.

“Damn it. No wonder no one could find Zhan Cangtian even though he possessed countless enemies. So he actually had another identity as the Immeasurable Immortal.”

“And I, I actually knew that guy for so long. This is truly disgusting!” At that moment, the Snow-haired Immortal started to voice her complaints. It could be seen that the Snow-haired Immortal also deeply loathed Zhan Cangtian.

“Truth be told, I was only able to obtain the Five Elements Secret Skills because of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s deliberate planning. The Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace have submitted to the Dark Hall. They deliberately attacked the Cyanwood Mountain on their orders.”

“Their attack on the Cyanwood Mountain was so that I could obtain the Five Elements Secret Skills and attempt to assimilate them,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s actually such a thing? Then what about the Underworld Palace? Could the Underworld Palace also have submitted to the Dark Hall?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal asked.

“The Underworld Palace did not submit to the Dark Hall. They should be truly planning to become our allies. Back then, I had already obtained four of the Five Elements Secret Skills. The only one that I lacked was that Underworld Palace’s one. As such, it was reasonable for them to gift me the secret skill.”

“I believe the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had also considered that,” Chu Feng said.

“The Dark Hall is truly treacherous,” After knowing the truth, the crowd all started to frown. The various methods of the Dark Hall had all surpassed their imagination.

This time around, Chu Feng had already been prepared. If Chu Feng had also been deceived by the Immeasurable Immortal, the Dark Hall would’ve gotten away with their schemes.

The people that controlled the stone army would not have been them. Instead, it would've been the Dark Hall instead.

That was something that they did not dare to imagine.

“We must announce the Immeasurable Immortal's identity to the world. We cannot allow him to exploit his identity to endanger others,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” The Elf King nodded. Then, he asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, what about the other matter?”

“The other matter is that we cannot continue to act this passively anymore.”

“We must find all of the Dark Hall's camps and eradicate them. We must start our counterattack,” Chu Feng said in a serious manner.

Chapter 2034 – Breaching The Camps

“Sigh...” When mentioning this matter, Zhang Ming started to sigh.

“Little friend Chu Feng, that matter is truly difficult,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said as he shook his head. As for the Snow-haired Immortal, she lowered her head silently.

They had begun to search for the Dark Hall’s camps ever since they had arrived at this place. However, even now, their search had come up empty-handed.

“Seniors, truth be told, I was in closed-door training the entire time before you all arrived so that I could prepare some things.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out four masks. Those were all masks that the people from the Dark Hall wore.

“Those are!!!”

Upon seeing the masks, the three Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists’ eyes all shone as they revealed expressions of shock. Unable to contain themselves, they took the masks from Chu Feng and began to inspect them carefully. After a careful inspection, the shocked expressions on the faces of the three Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists grew even denser.

“Unbelievable, truly unbelievable!!!”

“Little friend Chu Feng, your abilities have reached a godly level!!!” At that moment, Zhang Ming praised Chu Feng without holding anything back.

“And I even thought about taking Chu Feng as my disciple before. Looking back at it now, I was truly overestimating my capabilities. Chu Feng, I should instead ask you to become my master. Please accept me as your disciple,” The Snow-haired Immortal was overjoyed. She who possessed an honest nature actually started to joke around with Chu Feng, requesting him to take her as his

disciple.

“It would seem that the Dark Hall will likely end up suffering now,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal stroked his beard. A smile filled his face.

“Everyone, exactly what use do those masks have?” At that moment, it was the Elf King who was completely confused.

Although he was extremely powerful, he was not a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, even though he possessed many detection methods, he was unable to discover what was so fantastic about the masks.

“These masks were deliberately left behind by me when I was massacring the Dark Hall’s army that day.”

“The reason why I was in closed-door training for the past days was to work on these masks. Right now, as long as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist is urging it, one could discover the people from the Dark Hall through the use of those masks,” Chu Feng explained.

“It’s not ‘could’. Rather, it’s absolutely able to. Upon finding the people from the Dark Hall, no matter how well-hidden their camps might be, they will still be exposed.”

“Your Majesty, little friend Chu Feng is truly your lucky star. Not only did he bring back the stone army that greatly increased our battle power, he has also found the method for us to strike back at the Dark Hall,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal said happily.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it would appear that the person that will determine victory or defeat in the battle against the Dark Hall will be you instead of me,” At that moment, the Elf King was also overjoyed.

He had to stay in the Elf Kingdom to protect it because he was worried that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master would mount an attack against it. As such, there were very few things that he could do to

contribute to the battle.

Even though they were forced into a passive state when fighting against the Dark Hall, there was nothing he could do. Other than worrying about it, the only other thing he could do was worry more.

However, today, Chu Feng had brought enormously great news to him. As such, how could he not be overjoyed?

His bellyful of fury was finally able to be released.

After that, Chu Feng and the three other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists began to move about separately. By relying on the masks, they began to search for the Dark Hall's camps around the various Elf territories.

Sure enough, the masks were useful. One after another, they managed to scope out the Dark Hall's base camps. All those base camps that were discovered would be met with ruthless attacks by them. Even if there were people from the Dark Hall that managed to escape, their numbers were not very large.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Elves obtained absolute dominance in the battle against the Dark Hall.

With no other option, the Dark Hall's armies all started to retreat. However, they suffered disastrous casualties even in retreat.

.....

At that moment. In a pitch-black location. Only several torches were burning.

Although the light from the torches was dim, it managed to roughly illuminate the general composition of the area.

It was an enormous area. It looked like a palace hall, yet also like an underground tomb. However, one thing was certain; this was an extremely well-hidden location.

As the torches burned, crackling sounds began to be heard nonstop. This caused this dimly lit place to appear somewhat eerie.

However, the eerie sound of the burning torches fell short to the voices that occasionally sounded from below. Although those sounds sounded like yelling, they resembled anguished wailing even more. Those anguished wails contained endless rage and dense killing intent. It was as if demonic chanting were sounding from below. Hearing those sounds, one could feel one's hair stand on end.

At that moment, there were several people in that place. One was the Dark Hall's Hall Master. He was currently sitting on an extremely imposing seat and looking at two people down below. Standing beside him was a beautiful woman. That woman was the mysterious woman by the name of Xue Ji.

As for the two people that the Dark Hall's Hall Master were looking at, they were currently kneeling on the ground and shivering in fear. Upon closer inspection, they were the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

"I had thought that the two of you had died. It turns out that you're still alive. If I were you, I would have definitely not dared to show my face again," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said to the two men.

"Lord Hall Master, please listen to me, please listen to me."

"You really cannot blame this matter on us. I never expected Chu Feng to be that cunning. He had already seen through my identity before we set off for the Wonderstone Dao Ground. His bringing me to the Wonderstone Dao Ground was a trap to begin with."

"Fortunately, Lord World Devastator arrived promptly. Otherwise, I would definitely have been killed," The Immeasurable Immortal said.

"Rumble~~~"

Right at that moment, coldness flashed through the Dark Hall's Hall Master's eyes. Then, chilliness began to sweep across the ground. That burst of chilliness blew the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal away, sending them rolling and crawling on the ground. They were ruthlessly blown tens of thousands of meters away, only stopping after they crashed into a wall.

At that moment, that Dark Hall's Hall Master left his seat. He slowly descended from mid air and stood before the two men.

He said, "Chu Feng led the stone army to many of my Dark Hall's camps. The battlefield that was completely controlled by us was reversed because of a single Chu Feng."

"The reason why this happened is because the two of you did not promptly notify me of what had happened. I am able to understand your defeats. But, since you had successfully escaped, why did you not promptly come back to report what had happened to me, so that I could guard against what was to come?"

"Lord Hall Master, this is all my fault. The stones from the Wonderstone Dao Ground were truly too powerful. That day, I was injured by the stones, and was simply unable to journey nonstop. I was forced to quickly heal my injuries. Otherwise, it would end up being detrimental to my future cultivation."

"As for Immeasurable, his physical body was destroyed by Chu Feng. Only his spirit remained. His situation was even worse than mine."

"After I healed my injuries, I ended up creating a new physical body for him, and tried my hardest so that he could retain his cultivation."

"That was why we ended up being delayed for some days. But, we truly never expected so many things to happen in such a short period of time," The World Devastator Immortal explained.

“That’s right. Lord Hall Master, even if Chu Feng had obtained those Wonderstone Dao Ground’s stones, he should have only been able to increase the Ancient Era’s Elves’ battle power.”

“As for those camps that we constructed around the various Ancient Era’s Elves’ territories, they were personally constructed by you. No matter what, they shouldn’t have been able to discover them. Thus, how was it that those camps were attacked?” The Immeasurable Immortal asked in a very puzzled manner.

He had attempted to search for the camps before with his world spirit techniques. However, even though the camps were clearly nearby, he had been unable to sense anything.

Camps like that should have been impossible to be discovered. Yet now, they were all attacked. How did that come to be?

“The camps are hidden because of world spirit techniques. The fact that the camps were discovered naturally means that someone broke through my world spirit techniques.”

“I, to a greater or lesser degree, know the abilities of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others. With their abilities, it’s definitely impossible for them to break through my world spirit techniques,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Could it be... the Heaven Reaching Immortal? Could the Heaven Reaching Immortal be helping the Ancient Era’s Elves?” The World Devastator Immortal asked.

Upon thinking closely, he felt that the only person in the Holy Land of Martialism with world spirit techniques comparable to their Lord Hall Master would be the person who was ranked first among the Ten Immortals, the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

Although he was ranked second, and the Heaven Reaching Immortal was only a single rank above him, he knew that the difference between him and the Heaven Reaching Immortal was akin to the difference between heaven and earth; they were simply

at two different levels.

Chapter 2035 – Being Struck

“Apart from this, there’s another possibility. That would be Chu Feng,” Xue Ji said.

“Chu Feng!!!” Hearing those words, surprised expressions flashed through the eyes of the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal. However, soon, their surprise disappeared.

Not only that, the Immeasurable Immortal even said, “It’s possible, it’s extremely possible.”

“Chu Feng was capable of setting up a formation that could withstand attacks from peak Martial Emperors. It is true, his world spirit techniques cannot be looked down upon.”

“Lord Hall Master, that Chu Feng absolutely cannot be left alive,” The World Devastator Immortal added.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s gaze changed slightly.

After a short while, he said, “I have toyed enough with that plaything Chu Feng. It’s time to destroy him.”

Deep confidence filled the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes when he said those words. Plaything; to him, Chu Feng was nothing more than a plaything, something that he could toy with as he wished. When he was done toying with Chu Feng, he could kill Chu Feng anytime he wished.

However, afterward, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master turned his ruthless gaze toward the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal. “No matter how hard dealing with Chu Feng might be, it remains that he’s a brat. The two of you have lived for thousands of years. Yet, you were toyed with by him. No matter what, you two must be punished.”

Hearing those words, the World Devastator Immortal and the

Immeasurable Immortal started to shiver. Immediately, the World Devastator Immortal said, “Lord Hall Master, we have not returned empty handed from the Wonderstone Dao Ground. We managed to obtain the true treasure to the Five Elements Secret Skills.”

“What a joke! That stone army is under Chu Feng’s control. Are you implying that you two can seize control of the stone army from Chu Feng?” At that moment, Xue Ji, who had been silent for some time, spoke mockingly.

“No, those stones from the Wonderstone Dao Ground are only a portion of the treasures. The actual treasure is with us.” The World Devastator took out a scroll as he spoke and handed it to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes shone. After receiving the scroll, he did not open it immediately. Instead, he began to inspect it carefully. Then, a light smile emerged on his face. He said, “If the scroll truly contains treasures, I will not punish the two of you, and will instead reward you.”

“Thank you, Lord Hall Master,” Hearing those words, both the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal were overjoyed.

The World Devastator Immortal even began to ingratiate himself. With a beaming smile, he said, “Lord Hall Master, that scroll is sealed. You will have to undo the seal in order to see the contents.”

“I did not dare to unseal it myself. This subordinate felt that only Lord Hall Master was qualified to see the contents of the scroll. Thus, Lord Hall Master, please unseal it.”

“You’re quite sensible,” Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s laughter was heard from underneath his mask. Then, he extended his hand and began to form a spirit formation. He stroked his hand across the scroll and dispelled the power

lingering around it. Then, he opened the scroll.

“Puu~~~”

However, right after the scroll was opened, a liquid suddenly sprayed out from the scroll. Everything happened too quickly. Even though the Dark Hall’s Hall Master dodged it immediately, he was still hit by a portion of the liquid.

Not only did the liquid spray onto his body, it also sprayed onto his face.

“This!!!”

Both the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal were greatly alarmed upon seeing this scene. Even Xue Ji, who was always calm and collected, was slightly surprised.

“Lord Hall Master, are you alright? We truly did not know that there was a mechanism to that scroll,” After the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal managed to react to what had just happened, they hurriedly rushed forward to set up spirit formations to clean up the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Scram!” However, before they could even approach him, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted at them angrily. With a wave of his sleeve, the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal were sent flying once more. When they fell to the ground, they were bleeding from their seven apertures. Not to mention their meridians and veins, even their skulls were completely shattered.

“Lord Hall Master, we did not mean any disrespect, we merely wanted to help...” The Immeasurable Immortal tried to explain in a weak voice.

“Help my ass! This is fucking piss here!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted furiously. As his voice sounded, the entire region that they were in started to tremble. It could be seen that he was truly enraged.

“Buzz~~~”

The very next moment, the scroll began to flicker with radiance, and writing began to emerge from the scroll.

Although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had suffered from the scroll, he was still unable to help himself from turning his gaze toward the scroll. However, right after looking at it, he became even more furious.

“Is this the treasure that you two spoke of?!”

In a furious rage, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master threw the scroll toward the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal.

The scroll was thrown with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s martial power. After it reached the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal, that martial power exploded, destroying half of their physical bodies.

However, even with this being the case, the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal did not dare to heal their injuries. Enduring the pain, they opened the scroll.

Upon looking at the scroll, the two men’s expressions changed enormously.

There was a single sentence written on the scroll.

‘Did you enjoy your granddaddy Chu Feng’s piss?’

Piss. It was indeed piss.

Not only was it piss, it was Chu Feng’s piss on top of that. Furthermore, that piss had landed on the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s body and face.

What sort of existence was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master? He was a genius blessed by the heavens from the Outer World. Even though Chu Feng was also from the Outer World, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had never placed Chu Feng in his eyes. He had felt Chu

Feng to be a plaything that he could destroy at any time.

Yet now, Chu Feng had actually sprayed his piss all over the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

As such, how could the Dark Hall's Hall Master tolerate that? How could he not be angry?

Most importantly, Chu Feng's piss was supposed to spray on them.

It was they who had thought themselves to be clever, thus they had not dared to unseal the scroll and open it. Therefore, this disaster was all caused because of them. It was no surprise that at that moment, they were extremely afraid.

"Lord Hall Master, we were wrong, we were wrong."

"Please forgive us, please give us another chance."

At that moment, the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal disregarded the pain that they felt and hurriedly kneeled on the ground to kowtow and beg for forgiveness.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master's methods were something that the two of them knew very well. The reason why they had submitted to the Dark Hall's Hall Master was because he was so extremely ruthless that they did not dare to disobey him.

"You useless trash actually still dare to beg for forgiveness?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal were lifted into the air. Then, he threw them to Xue Ji's feet and said, "Xue Ji, they are yours to handle. Make sure to punish them properly so that they remember this."

"Understood," Xue Ji turned around and left as she spoke. Strangely, the World Devastator Immortal and the Immeasurable Immortal's bodies began to float, following after Xue Ji.

After hearing from the Dark Hall's Hall Master that they would be given to Xue Ji to be punished, the two men's expression turned extremely ugly. It was as if they were experiencing an enormous terror. They began to beg the Dark Hall's Hall Master for forgiveness nonstop. However, the Dark Hall's Hall Master did not even bother to take another glance at them.

Not long afterward, Xue Ji returned. The Dark Hall's Hall Master had yet to wipe away the piss on his body. Instead, he grabbed his clothes and was smelling it.

"Never would I have thought that Lord Hall Master would have such an indulgence," Seeing this scene, Xue Ji was unable to contain herself from laughing lightly.

"It's not an indulgence. Merely, I wished to remember this smell," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"Remember the smell?" Xue Ji asked curiously.

"The smell of humiliation. As far as I'm concerned, this is an enormous humiliation. This smell will remind me to make sure that I make Chu Feng wish that he was dead," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said those words one word at a time. Overflowing hatred filled his words.

"Lord Hall Master, do not worry. As long as you wish for it, not to mention Chu Feng, we would be able to eliminate even the Ancient Era's Elves," Xue Ji said with a beaming smile.

"Xue Ji, could it be that you've succeeded?" Hearing those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was overjoyed. He forgot the displeasure he had been feeling earlier, and instead revealed great excitement.

Evidently, something major had succeeded.

"Yes, I've succeeded," Xue Ji nodded.

"Hahaha, great," After it was confirmed, the Dark Hall's Hall Master laughed heartily. After laughing, he walked over to Xue Ji's

side. With a rare gentle tone, he said, “Xue Ji, you are the only person who is actually capable of sharing this Hall Master’s worries.”

After saying those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master extended his arms. He wanted to embrace Xue Ji.

However, Xue Ji only smiled charmingly at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s incoming embrace. Her body floated into the sky and dodged the embrace. With a smile on her face, she said, “Lord Hall Master, that is piss and not wine. There’s no reason for you to get drunk over it.”

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes narrowed, seemingly somewhat displeased. However, the displeasure soon disappeared, and he suddenly laughed, “Hahaha, I was silly.”

As for Xue Ji, she also laughed lightly. Then, her body floated into the air again and she disappeared.

Now only the Dark Hall’s Hall Master remained in that place. He closed his eyes and sucked in a long breath. It was as if he was smelling Xue Ji’s aroma.

When he opened his eyes again, he said, “There are no women that can escape me. That is already the case in the Outer World. As such, you will be no exception.”

“One day, I will make you serve me in delight.”

After saying those words, his eyes shone.

It was the light of confidence.

Chapter 2036 – Spreading False News

Relying on the masks created by Chu Feng that could track down the people from the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era's Elves unleashed an all-out counterattack against the Dark Hall.

The Dark Hall's camps that were gathered outside the various Ancient Era's Elves' territories were mostly breached by the Ancient Era's Elves. Those that managed to defend themselves from being breached would also immediately flee quickly.

At that moment, the people from the Dark Hall all went into hiding.

However, the Ancient Era's Elves did not stop their attacks on the Dark Hall. After fighting those battles and reversing their fortunes, they turned their focus to the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace.

While it was true that the Ancient Era's Elves had promised Qing Xuantian that they would not exterminate the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace, the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace were actually working with the Dark Hall. As such, even if they were to not eliminate them, they must still crack down on them.

Merely, when the Ancient Era's Elves' army reached the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace, they discovered that all of the elites had left.

Only a group of elders and disciples that did not know the truth remained.

The Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace had become two empty shells. As for the Ancient Era's Elves, they would naturally not attack those innocent people. As such, they could only drop the matter.

However, in order to prevent their allies from being attacked by

the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era's Elves began to provide reinforcement troops to the Four Great Imperial Clans and the King Monstrous Dragon Race. Only the Underworld Palace, which possessed the strength to defend themselves, did not receive assistance.

However, surprisingly, the Dark Hall was extremely well-behaved. After their massive defeat, they did not show themselves again.

This caused everyone to feel that the Dark Hall had grown afraid. This also allowed the Ancient Era's Elves to retrieve the sensation of being being absolutely superior, absolutely unrivaled.

However, Chu Feng did not dare to act carelessly. He kept feeling that the Dark Hall had not unleashed their full strength. They had only managed to eliminate the Dark Hall's camps and kill some Ancient Era's ferocious beasts and a small portion of the Dark Hall's experts. They had yet to be able to actually cause harm to the Dark Hall's strength.

At that moment...

At a location several tens of millions of miles away from the border of the Elf Kingdom was a person. That person fell weakly to the ground. He was a Martial Emperor. Furthermore, his cultivation was not weak. He was a rank three Martial Emperor.

However, he was seriously injured. He was wearing a black cloak and a mask. His outfit had revealed his identity. He was someone from the Dark Hall.

Beside that injured Martial Emperor from the Dark Hall were two other people.

One was sitting on the ground, resting his eyes.

As for the other, she was squatting before that Dark Hall's Martial Emperor and saying something to him.

As for those two people, they were Chu Feng and the Snow-

haired Immortal.

Chu Feng felt that the Dark Hall would definitely not leave the matters as they were. Thus, he had been relying on the masks to search for people from the Dark Hall the entire time. Today, he finally found one.

Merely, after catching this person from the Dark Hall, Chu Feng did not do anything to him. Instead, he handed him to the Snow-haired Immortal to take care of.

As for Chu Feng, he was sitting cross-legged on the ground with his awareness cast into his world spirit space.

In his world spirit space, Chu Feng was also sitting cross-legged on the ground. Merely, he was sitting before Eggy.

“Milady Queen, when will you wake up? Even though we appear to be holding superiority in the battle against the Dark Hall, I keep having the feeling that it will not be that simple.”

“If you were here now, it would truly be great. You would be able to analyze things with me and give me suggestions,” Chu Feng said those words not only because he was longing for Eggy. Additionally, he was also feeling uneasy.

They had to win this battle. If they lost, it would definitely be a calamity for the Holy Land of Martialism.

Furthermore, as that Dark Hall’s Hall Master was likely Chu Feng’s fellow clansman, he felt that he had an enormous responsibility in this matter. As such, the pressure on Chu Feng’s heart was enormous right now.

In fact, the pressure that he felt surpassed the pressure the Elf King felt.

“Master, I’ve succeeded. Quickly, come look. I’ve succeeded in unsealing his mask.”

Right at that moment, a joyous voice suddenly sounded. Chu

Feng hurriedly cast his awareness back into his body. It was then that he discovered that the Snow-haired Immortal was looking at him with a beaming smile on her face.

This woman who was always grim, unfeeling and deemed to be a witch by others actually had a childlike smile on her face. It was also her who had called out ‘master’ earlier.

“Senior Snow-hair, please don’t call me that. I am unqualified to be your master,” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

Ever since she had experienced Chu Feng’s various world spirit techniques, the Snow-haired Immortal, that witch who had wholeheartedly wanted to make Chu Feng her disciple, now wholeheartedly wanted to become Chu Feng’s disciple.

She insisted on following Chu Feng wherever he went. Today, the two of them had finally managed to obtain some results and capture a person from the Dark Hall.

With Chu Feng’s current level of world spirit techniques, he was capable of unsealing the self-detonation formation contained within the bodies of the people from the Dark Hall and remove their masks.

And that... was precisely what the Snow-haired Immortal wanted to learn from Chu Feng. Chu Feng had taught it to her. And now... the Snow-haired Immortal had managed to grasp it successfully.

“Okay, I’ll do as you say. After all, you’re already my master in my heart. Regardless of whether you will allow me to call you that, you will still remain my master,” The Snow-haired Immortal smiled again. Then, she moved to remove that Dark Hall’s expert’s mask.

Seeing the Snow-haired Immortal acting like this, Chu Feng sighed in his heart. Back then, she had nearly tormented him to death. In Chu Feng’s heart, the Snow-haired Immortal was an enormous witch to the core.

Yet now, not only was she calling him master on and on, she was also following his every order obediently like a well-behaved girl. The contrast was truly enormous.

“It’s actually someone from the Heavenly Law Palace. Indeed, the Heavenly Law Palace has joined the Dark Hall,” After removing that Dark Hall’s expert’s mask, the Snow-haired Immortal revealed a disgusted expression. The reason for that was because the old man before them was an elder from the Heavenly Law Palace. He had possessed quite a decent status in the Heavenly Law Palace, and had thus met with the Snow-haired Immortal before.

“Speak, what is your purpose in coming here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Wuu~~~” The old man started to shake his head repeatedly. He did not dare to say anything.

“Rest assured, we have already removed the self-detonation formation you have in your body. You can speak the truth now,” Chu Feng said.

“If I am to tell you the truth, will you spare my life?” That old man asked while trembling with fear.

“If you turn a new leaf, I will spare your life. If you are able to provide meritorious service to assist us in defeating the Dark Hall in the future, I will also reward you,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, my life and death actually don’t matter to me. I merely wish that you can agree to a condition of mine. As long as you agree to it, I will tell you all that I know,” The old man said.

“Speak,” Chu Feng said.

“Please save my family from the Dark Hall,” As he said those words, the old man’s eyes grew moist.

“Very well, I’ll agree to it. If possible, I will definitely save your family,” Chu Feng nodded.

“In that case, I’ll tell you. Little friend Chu Feng, I was originally going to definitely die by coming here. The reason for that was because I planned to pass news to you,” That man said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am here to tell you all that an ambush lies in wait at the Dark Hall’s headquarters. You all must absolutely not go there,” That old man said.

“What sort of ambush?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am uncertain. My status is very petty and low. I have never even been to their headquarters before. Even the fact that there’s an ambush there is something that I have only heard from others by accident.”

“I have come here with the intention of dying to begin with. The reason for that is because my family are all in the hands of the Palace Master. If I do not die, they will definitely be killed.”

“However, since little friend Chu Feng saved my life, I am willing to turn a new leaf and work for you. But, little friend Chu Feng, you must save my family,” As the old man said those words, he was already weeping bitter tears. He did not appear to be lying. It could be seen that he was deeply worried for his family.

Chapter 2037 – Moving Toward The Tiger’s Mountain

“Rest assured, your family will definitely be saved. Do you know anything else?” The Snow-haired Immortal asked.

“Both the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace have joined the Dark Hall,” After that, the old man spoke more about the Dark Hall. However, it was all information that Chu Feng and the others already knew.

“That’s it?” The Snow-haired Immortal asked with narrowed eyes.

“That’s it. That’s all I know,” The old man nodded.

Hearing those words, a flash of coldness shone through the Snow-haired Immortal’s eyes. She then smashed her palm forward with the intention of killing the old man.

“Paaa~~~”

However, before the Snow-haired Immortal’s palm could land, Chu Feng grabbed her wrist. He said, “Senior Snow-hair, we must keep our promise. Since he has already turned a new leaf, we should give him another chance.”

“But...” The Snow-haired Immortal seemed to want to say something. However, in the end, she said nothing and only smiled. “We’ll do as you say.”

Had it been before, the Snow-haired Immortal would have definitely insisted on her own standpoint. She was vicious and merciless, and would definitely not keep her promise to forgive her enemy. Else, how could she have the reputation of a witch?

However, she now felt enormous admiration and respect for Chu Feng. Thus, she did not dare to refuse Chu Feng’s suggestion.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a golden light flew past. It was a Golden Flash Bird.

“It’s His Majesty. He wants us to return immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” The Snow-haired Immortal nodded.

After that, Chu Feng and the Snow-haired Immortal brought that old man with them and returned to the Elf Kingdom.

After Chu Feng finished settling the old man down, he hurried to the Elf King. Chu Feng felt that the Elf King must have something important to tell him.

After entering the Elf King’s palace, Chu Feng discovered that the Elf King, the Four Grand Elders and Eight Great Protectors were all present. Even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others were also present.

This caused Chu Feng’s mind to tense up. These experts had originally all been stationed to guard various locations. Yet, they were now all gathered in the Elf Kingdom. Evidently, something had happened.

“Little friend Chu Feng, Snow-haired Immortal, you two have returned at just the right time. I have good news,” Seeing Chu Feng and the Snow-haired Immortal’s return, the Elf King spoke with a smile, “We have discovered the location of the Dark Hall’s headquarters. We finally have the chance to eliminate them completely.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and the Snow-haired Immortal looked to one another and started to frown. Then, Chu Feng asked, “Did you obtain that information from the people of the Dark Hall?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you already knew?” The Elf King asked.

“We also captured a person from the Dark Hall. He came here risking his life. As for his purpose, it was not to scout out

information. Rather, he wanted to sacrifice himself to transmit news to us.”

“However, we removed the self-detonation formation on his body and removed his mask so that he could speak the truth.”

“After he was able to speak the truth, we found out from him that the location of the Dark Hall’s headquarters that they let us know about is actually a trap,” Chu Feng said.

“So it really was a trap?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd began to discuss it spiritedly.

It would appear that they had also managed to guess that it might be a trap set by the Dark Hall after obtaining that piece of information.

“Little friend Chu Feng, even if that’s the case, we must still go. This time around, we must willfully go towards the mountain even though we know that there are tigers in it,” The Elf King said.

“Since we know that a trap awaits us there, we must consider things carefully in advance. Else, if this is to lure us away, we will likely suffer disastrously,” Chu Feng said.

“I have already ordered all of our Ancient Era’s Elves’ elites that can be maneuvered to set out for the Dark Hall’s headquarters together with me.”

“During the period of time that I am away, the Elf Kingdom will activate our Ancient Era’s grand formation. Thus, nothing will happen to our Elf Kingdom in the short term,” The Elf King said.

“Then, what about the other Elf territories?” Chu Feng asked.

“As matters stand, we have no choice but to abandon some of them. We must settle this battle as quickly as possible,” The Elf King said.

“But...” Chu Feng was still worried.

“Little friend Chu Feng, that Dark Hall’s Hall Master resembles

you greatly. Although he is not a peak Martial Emperor, he was able to fight against me. Do you know why that is the case?”

“He possessed the same lightning armor and lightning wings as you do. Furthermore... he also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

“Thus, although his actual cultivation is only that of a rank five Martial Emperor, he is able to fight against me, a rank nine Martial Emperor.”

“You should know how long I’ve stayed a rank nine Martial Emperor. Even now, I am unable to break through into the Half Martial Ancestor realm. Likely, it will be impossible in the near future as well.”

“However, what about him? Perhaps he might reach a breakthrough to rank six Martial Emperor in a short period of time. At that time, I will be no match for him. Even our Elf Kingdom’s grand formation, as well as the grand formation you’ve set up in the Cyanwood Mountain, would not be able to stop him.”

“At that time, only death would await us.”

“Thus, it’s not that I do not wish to make sure that we will absolutely succeed by waiting to fight them after we have grasped an absolute certainty of victory.”

“Rather, we truly do not have the time for that,” The Elf King said with a serious expression.

Hearing what the Elf King said, Chu Feng grew silent. Indeed... the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed the same sort of power Chu Feng did. Not only had he grasped all the techniques Chu Feng had, he also possessed the same sort of heaven-defying battle power as Chu Feng.

Being only a rank five Martial Emperor, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed the same strength as a peak Martial Emperor. If he were to become a rank six Martial Emperor, he would obtain

strength approaching that of a Half Martial Ancestor. At that time, it was likely that no one in the Holy Land of Martialism would be able to contend against him.

And, if he were to become a rank seven, rank eight or even a rank nine Martial Emperor? That would be something truly unimaginable.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we have gone through careful deliberations in order to come to this decision. Apart from this, we have no alternatives.”

“It is truly that we are too short on time, and our opponent is too powerful. As matters stand, we can only stake our all on this fight,” Lord Lianghua said.

“Since that’s the case, then I will listen to Your Majesty’s orders,” Seeing that the crowd was determined, Chu Feng could only nod and comply with their decision. After all, apart from this, he was unable to think of any better method either.

Although everyone was able to see that it might be a trap, this was the only way to defeat the Dark Hall that they could think of.

Thus, after the elite soldiers were gathered, the Ancient Era’s Elves led their elite army of Martial Emperors toward the headquarters of the Dark Hall.

The location of the Dark Hall’s headquarters that they had spread was a very remote location. It was at a very desolate place in the Holy Land of Martialism.

After traveling, they finally arrived at their destination. Furthermore, after searching, they managed to find the Dark Hall’s headquarters.

Merely, it was completely different from what they had anticipated. The Dark Hall’s army and the countless Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts were all present before their line of sight.

There were slaughtering formations placed all over their various

camps. It was as if they were already prepared, and were just waiting for the Ancient Era's Elves' army and the stone army to reach this place so that they could battle them.

Chapter 2038 – Bearing Dangers To Save People

Seeing this scene, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal smiled. “It would appear that they have indeed deliberately spread the information of their headquarters’ location. They plan to conduct a final battle with us,”

Hearing what he said, the other people also revealed relaxed smiles on their faces.

It turned out that the Dark Hall had not set a trap for them, unlike what they had thought. Instead, they had decided to face them head-on. To them, this was something that they wished for.

“Something’s amiss!” Right at this moment, Chu Feng started to shout.

“What’s wrong?” Hearing Chu Feng’s shout, the Elf King hurriedly looked over.

“Everything before us is an illusion formed by a spirit formation. There is actually nothing before us,” Chu Feng said.

“What?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, are you certain?” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other world spiritists asked.

No matter what, they were also Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Thus, they all possessed special and exceptional observation abilities. However, they had not noticed anything wrong.

In their eyes, regardless of whether it was the buildings, those slaughtering formations or the Dark Hall’s army and the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts, they were all really before them.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, an explosion sounded from above. As the crowd turned to the sky, they were shocked to discover that a torrential rain had suddenly started.

The rainwater was green. It sprinkled lightly down toward them. Not only was the Ancient Era's Elves' army covered, the rainwater covered a range of a thousand miles around them.

“Use world spirit techniques,” In response, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal, Zhang Ming and Chu Feng all unleashed their world spirit techniques, instantly forming spirit formations. They covered the sky with the intention to block the green rainwater.

The reason for that was because the rainwater was emitting a suffocating stink. Merely by looking at it, one could tell that it was no ordinary rain water. Instead, it was liquid poison.

However, the liquid poison was too powerful. It surpassed everyone's imagination, and pierced through the many layers of spirit formations Chu Feng and the others set up. Then, they landed on the crowd.

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

“Nooo!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

“Damn it! What the hell is this?!”

At this moment, all sorts of screams could be heard. Practically everyone was corroded by the poison.

Their clothes started to melt, and their skins started to burn. Blood and flesh started to become indistinct. Those that were struck by the poison rain were all left in tragic states.

At that moment, the only people that were fine was Chu Feng and the Elf King. Even the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other world spiritists were being tormented by the poison. Even though they used all of their abilities, they were only able to slow down the corrosion of their bodies from the poison, and were

unable to remove it completely.

Chu Feng was fine because he possessed a body that was immune to poisons. As for the Elf King, he was forcibly blocking the attacks of the poison by relying on his peak Martial Emperor's strength.

However, others were unable to accomplish the same thing. Those with high levels of cultivation like the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Four Grand Elders were relatively fine. Although they were being corroded by the poison, they were still able to tolerate and resist the poison with their abilities.

However, the situation was worse for those with weaker strength.

For some people, their bodies had already melted completely and only their white bones remained.

Not to mention the army of flesh and bone, even the stone army was uttering howls of grief.

The poison was actually able to corrode even stones. There was simply nothing that could stop it.

At that moment, the Elf King shouted angrily, "Dark Hall's Hall Master, do you dare to come out and fight against me honorably?" Space itself shattered as his shout rang out. It could be seen that he was extremely furious right now.

Even though he already knew that a trap awaited them here, he had not expected the trap to be this powerful. It had managed to directly erase all of their battle power apart from him and Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Elf King was filled with regret. If he had known that the trap in this place would be this powerful, he would definitely not have led the Ancient Era's Elves' elites here. How could this possibly be a battle to determine the outcome? No, this was simply throwing their lives away.

"You wish to fight against the Hall Master? I'm afraid you'll have

to be disappointed. Lord Hall Master has simply never been here.”

A mocking voice sounded. It was a female’s voice. It was that Xue Ji’s voice.

Merely, it was only Xue Ji’s voice that was heard. She had not revealed herself.

“Boom~~~”

Right after that voice was heard, the Elf King shot out a fist. Immediately, a blaze filled the area where his fist strike passed, and the space there started to shatter into pitch darkness.

The Elf King had determined Xue Ji’s location through the sound of her voice, and unleashed an attack in that direction.

“Yoh, you’re actually throwing a sneak attack at me? Truly despicable,” However, that Xue Ji’s voice soon sounded again. It was filled with mockery. It was clear that the Elf King’s attack had not managed to hit Xue Ji.

“Damn it!” At that moment, the Elf King was gnashing his teeth in anger. He who was always calm was unable to remain calm anymore.

His subordinates, his clansmen and his friends were all suffering.

The reason for all of this was his mistaken judgement. In fact, even though he was fine now, he was actually also being slowly corroded by that poison rain. If this were to continue, even he would end up sustaining injuries.

He did not care about his own death. However, he did not wish for his clansmen to die. Most importantly, if they were to suffer a complete wipeout here, the people remaining in the Elf Kingdom would die sooner or later too. They would truly be devastated.

That was why he was so anxious. However, regardless of how anxious he was, there was nothing he could do. In this sort of situation, no one would be able to remain calm.

“Go on, be angry. However, your anger will be useless. You will only be able to watch as all those you care about are corroded and killed by the poison.”

“Then, you yourself will be seriously injured. Your cultivation will be damaged. In the end, you will only be able to watch as your Elf Kingdom is wiped out and your beloved daughters are killed.”

“You wished to save the people of the world. However, you’ll only end up dying yourself.”

“Hero? It’s not that easy to become one,” Xue Ji’s mocking voice sounded in succession. It held the air of having an absolute certainty of victory.

“That’s not for certain.”

However, at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded. It was at that moment that the crowd noticed that Chu Feng was standing in midair with golden light emitting from his body.

It was world spirit power. Furthermore, Chu Feng had a light smile on his face.

It was... a smile of confidence.

“Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?”

The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others were all startled by Chu Feng’s appearance; they were all able to tell that Chu Feng had sealed himself with world spirit techniques. Even though they were unable to know what Chu Feng’s intention was, they all knew that Chu Feng planned to do something.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled explosion sounded from Chu Feng’s body. Then, his body actually exploded. Blood began to sprinkle down from the sky like rain.

“Chu Feng!!!”

Seeing this scene, the Elf King and the others all revealed

extremely shocked expressions.

However, when Chu Feng's blood sprinkled down and landed on the army, they were shocked to discover that the poison that came into contact with Chu Feng's blood actually started to dissipate.

Chu Feng's blood was actually capable of detoxifying the poison!!

Chu feng was using his blood to detoxify the poison for the crowd. Merely, there was too much poisonous liquid, and Chu Feng's blood was limited. Thus, the amount of poison that his blood was capable of detoxifying was pathetically minute.

“Chu Feng, he actually...” After finding out Chu Feng's intention, the Elf King felt endless pain in his heart. For the sake of saving everyone, Chu Feng had sacrificed himself.

Chapter 2039 – Truly Foolish

“My my my, this is truly worthy of the greatest admiration. He actually sacrificed himself to save others.”

“Unfortunately, he remains only a mortal. Even if he did use his world spirit techniques to reproduce more blood, it is still limited. The amount of people that he can save is truly few,” Xue Ji said mockingly.

“Are you certain of that?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice was heard.

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng’s voice sounded, light began to shine from the place where Chu Feng had been standing. Soon, Chu Feng’s body began to form anew. He had actually recovered.

Chu Feng’s body had recovered completely. Even his clothes were exactly the same as before. Merely, his complexion had become a bit pale. It could be seen that he had damaged his health by exploding and using his blood to save the crowd.

“Bang~~~”

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng once again made his body explode. Another rain of blood began to sprinkle down with his explosion. He had saved another portion of the army.

Just like this, Chu Feng continued to make his body explode repeatedly. He blew up his body thirty-nine times. When his body recovered after the thirty-ninth explosion, his complexion was ashen, and his eyes were somewhat dim.

Even though Chu Feng possessed an undying and indestructible body, it was very taxing on his spirit power to reproduce his blood repeatedly with world spirit techniques.

After all, he had not just reproduced more blood, he had also reproduced the property of his blood that rendered him immune to poisons.

Thus, this led to his spirit power growing weaker and weaker. Even his soul and source energy were damaged in the process.

Seeing Chu Feng's current state, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal shouted, "Chu Feng, stop! If this is to continue, your body and spirit will not be able to endure it!!!"

However, Chu Feng only smiled lightly at the Weaponry Refinement Immortal's shout. How could he not know that this would be detrimental to his health? However, he could not allow himself to watch and not do anything as the people around him were corroded by poison.

He had to do this. Only by doing this would he be able to save everyone.

"Little friend Chu Feng!!!"

At that moment, the Elf King also wanted to stop Chu Feng. However, he was unable to say it.

After all, he was powerless facing the current situation. The only person capable of saving everyone right now was Chu Feng.

Merely, he deeply detested himself for being useless. As the king of the Ancient Era's Elves, he could only watch as his clansmen were wounded by the poison without being able to do anything to assist them. Instead, he had to place all of his hopes on Chu Feng, a member of the younger generation. This caused him to hate himself bitterly.

"Foolishness," That Xue Ji laughed mockingly at Chu Feng's actions. The way she saw it, it was unworthy for Chu Feng to sacrifice himself to save others.

Besides, even if Chu Feng were to sacrifice himself, he would not be able to save the people present. The reason for that was because

Xue Ji possessed a method to obtain certain victory.

“Since you are this ignorant, I shall let you know what it means to despair,” As Xue Ji spoke, a loud sound was heard.

“Rumble~~~”

Following that sound, a large amount of green rain began to rain down from the sky again. Once again, the rain drenched the crowd.

The portion of people that were saved by Chu Feng were once again covered by the poison rain, once again being corroded by the poisonous liquid.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Following that, successive explosions sounded in the sky. With each explosion, a large amount of poison would rain down, showering everyone.

After the continuous downpour of poison rain, Chu Feng’s blood that had covered a portion of the crowd was completely engulfed by the poison rain. All of Chu Feng’s efforts were in vain.

“Noo!!!!!!”

Seeing this scene, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts were unable to contain themselves and started to shout hysterically.

Despair. At that moment, despair was visible on their aged faces and in their experienced eyes.

If this were to continue, not to mention a single Chu Feng, even if there were ten more Chu Fengs, they would still not be able to save them.

The reason for that was because the poison rain was coming in cycles. It seemed as if it would continue to rain nonstop. As for

them, there was simply no way for them to resist the poison.

Despair. They were in despair. Everyone's faces were covered with despair.

The elites of the Ancient Era's Elves, the numerous experts from the Holy Land of Martialism, the Cyanwood Mountain's nominal elders and the stone army from the Ancient Era...

... they were all being corroded by the poison right now. Furthermore, they were powerless against the poison. All they could do was wait for death.

"Chu Feng, you can continue to attempt to use your blood to save them. I shall see whether you have more blood or I have more poison," Xue Ji's voice sounded. Her tone was filled with mockery.

"Haha..." However, at that moment, the extremely weak Chu Feng actually started to laugh. "Truly foolish."

Hearing those words, Xue Ji asked, "What did you say?" She was truly confused by what Chu Feng meant.

It was not only her. All of the people present were confused by Chu Feng's words.

As matters stood, they were in a completely passive state. It was clearly them who had been foolish. Thus, why would Chu Feng say that Xue Ji was foolish?

Or, could it be that Chu Feng was calling himself foolish? Could it be that Chu Feng was mocking himself?

"I said, you're very foolish," At the moment when everyone was pondering what Chu Feng meant, Chu Feng gave them an answer.

He was not mocking himself. He was indeed insulting Xue Ji.

"It is true that I continuously self detonated to use my blood to save the people here."

"However, I do not only plan to save a portion of the people but rather all of them," As Chu Feng said those words, a flash of

determination shone in Chu Feng's eyes.

Then, with one hand, he began to form hand seals, and an invisible ripple began to spread.

Following that, all of the people whose bodies had been covered by Chu Feng's blood started to emit a special sort of light.

As that light shone, nothing special happened. However, a very dense aura began to spread.

It was Chu Feng's aura. Furthermore... Chu Feng's aura was currently fusing with the poisonous liquid.

“What is Chu Feng planning to do?” At that moment, the crowd were still puzzled.

Indeed, that spirit formation was emitting Chu Feng's aura. However, what could that possibly do?

Could it be that Chu Feng planned to use his own aura to neutralize the poison? But... that was evidently impossible.

At the moment the crowd was most puzzled, Chu Feng shouted, “Du Wanwu, are you still not going to wake up?”

“What?” When Chu Feng's words were heard, everyone was startled. They did not understand what Chu Feng meant by those words.

“Chu Feng, is it you?” However, to the crowd's surprise, after Chu Feng's voice sounded, another voice sounded in response.

Most shockingly, that voice sounded from the poisonous liquid. That's right... all of the poisonous liquid was emitting the same voice at the same time.

Hearing that voice, the minds of the crowd tightened, and their bodies trembled.

At that moment, at that time...

... it seemed that they had all realized something!!!

Chapter 2040 – Reversal

“Wake up now. Don’t allow yourself to be manipulated by others,” Chu Feng said.

“I... I... I...” That voice started to hesitate.

“You are you. You shouldn’t be manipulated by anyone.”

“Come, wake up. My brother, do not forget about your clansmen. They are still waiting for you.”

“If you are to continue on like this, not only will the innocent be killed because of you, your clansmen will also one day be killed by you,” Chu Feng continued.

“No... I cannot kill my clansmen. I absolutely cannot.”

“I cannot!!!!!!”

The voice from the poisonous liquid grew more and more distinct. Then, a struggling intention filled the voice. In the end, that voice started to shout and snarl.

“Buzz, hum, hum, hum~~~”

Following the final shout, the poisonous liquid that covered the crowd started to tremble fiercely.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the poisonous liquid that was corroding the crowd flew away rapidly. It was not only from the crowd; a seemingly infinite amount of the poisonous liquid was flying from the sky too.

It all began to condense in a location not far away from Chu Feng.

Soon, the poisonous liquid turned into an enormous giant. That giant was even larger than the stone giants. However, it was extremely nauseating to look at.

It was formed completely out of the green and gooey poisonous liquid. No organs or face could be seen. Only the poisonous fluid flowing through it. It was emitting a nauseating stench.

However, Chu Feng was able to recognize that it was Du Wanwu.

Seeing Du Wanwu, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, “Brother, you’ve finally woken up.”

“I’m sorry Chu Feng. I... I unintentionally caused harm to your friends. I’ll heal them right away.”

As Du Wanwu spoke, his enormous hand waved. Immediately, a gale sprung forth. However, most importantly, as he waved his hand, poisonous liquid was once again emitted from all over his body. In a blink of an eye, it covered the bodies of the crowd.

“Noo!!!!”

Seeing this scene, the hearts of the crowd all tightened. Their complexions turned pale.

However, the very next moment, the panicking crowd all stood there stunned.

They were no longer being corroded by the poison. Instead, their bodies that had been covered by the poisonous liquid were being healed.

“Truly miraculous,” Seeing this scene, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others all gasped in admiration.

As the saying goes, whoever started the trouble should end it. However, they truly did not expect that the monster covered with poison was not only capable of harming others with poison, but was also capable of saving others with poison.

Neutralized. No one expected that, at the moment when they were all close to despair, Chu Feng would manage to neutralize the crisis by himself.

At that moment, the crowd finally realized what Chu Feng meant

when he said ‘truly foolish.’

It turned out that Chu Feng had already held certainty of victory, he had already thought of a way to save the crowd.

At that moment, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Feng became even more complicated.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had saved them during a time when even the Elf King had been powerless to do anything.

“So that’s the case,” in the moment when the crowd were all overjoyed, Xue Ji’s voice sounded again.

“I truly never expected you to know that brat. Furthermore, you were certain that it was him the moment you saw the poisonous liquid.”

“You were using your blood to neutralize the poison rain not so that you could save the crowd with your blood. Rather, you wanted to use your blood to fuse with the poison so that you could use your aura to awaken him.”

“Chu Feng, I have underestimated you again,” Xue Ji’s voice was actually filled with admiration.

However, that voice was growing more and more distant. It meant that Xue Ji was already escaping the moment she said those words. However, no one knew where she had escaped to.

“Damned demonic woman, I will definitely turn you into a puddle of blood,” At that moment, Du Wanwu let out a furious snarl. It could be seen that he possessed enormous hatred for Xue Ji.

However, when Du Wanwu let out that snarl filled with overflowing killing intent, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army started to frown. They revealed expressions of fear.

Earlier, Du Wanwu had nearly killed them. Even though Chu Feng addressed Du Wanwu as ‘brother,’ they still felt enormous

fear of Du Wanwu.

“Brother, your appearance is a bit frightening. Let me help you recover your physical body,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he began to form a spirit formation that covered the massive form that Du Wanwu currently held.

After that spirit formation was set in motion, the enormous Du Wanwu started to shrink in size. Soon, he regained the appearance of a man. It was Du Wanwu’s actual appearance.

Merely, the current Du Wanwu was naked. Thus, Chu Feng used his world spirit techniques to create clothes for Du Wanwu, and directly covered his naked body.

“Chu Feng, you’ve helped me again,” Du Wanwu looked to his physical body and started to shiver emotionally.

“We’re brothers, do not mention this sort of thing. Helping you... is only what I am supposed to do.”

“Let alone, you will have to help me too,” Chu Feng said with a smile. He was very happy to see Du Wanwu. It was fortunate... that that poison rain had been caused by Du Wanwu. Otherwise, Chu Feng would also have had no way to solve this predicament.

“You don’t know. To be able to regain this appearance is something that I did not even dare to imagine to be possible,” As Du Wanwu said those words, his eyes were already moist.

Without having Du Wanwu tell him, Chu Feng was able to guess that something must’ve happened to Du Wanwu. However, regardless of what had happened, it would definitely be a terrible memory.

“You must’ve been taken advantage of by the people of the Dark Hall when you were refining that Inherited Gu, right?” Chu Feng said.

When Du Wanwu parted ways with Chu Feng, he did so to refine the Inherited Gu that his ancestor had left behind. At that time, Du

Wanwu already knew that that Inherited Gu was very hard to control and he might end up becoming a monster.

Indeed, Du Wanwu had become a monster earlier. Furthermore, he had become a monster controlled by the Dark Hall. Thus, Chu Feng felt that a mishap must've happened to him when he was refining that Inherited Gu.

“That is the case. I traveled far away to this place so that I could refine the Inherited Gu and not cause harm to others should I fail.”

“However, never did I anticipate that I would end up being taken advantage of by that demonic woman,” When mentioning this matter, Du Wanwu revealed a face filled with hatred.

“It was only that demonic woman and no one else?” Chu Feng asked.

“There was also that Dark Hall's Hall Master. He set up the spirit formations here, along with some other tricks.”

“However, the actual manipulator was that demonic woman. That woman knows how to use extremely vicious sorcery. She used that to control me,” Du Wanwu said.

“Sorcery?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. From Du Wanwu's words, Chu Feng was able to tell that that woman's so-called sorcery seemed to be even more powerful than the Dark Hall's Hall Master's world spirit techniques.

“Chu Feng, this little friend is?” At that moment, the Elf King and the others walked over.

They were extremely curious as to who Du Wanwu was. Not only did he unleash that extremely frightening poison earlier, his cultivation was actually that of a rank nine Martial Emperor, the same level as the Elf King, a peak Martial Emperor.

Du Wanwu's strength, made it so that they had to take note of him.

Chapter 2041 – Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain

“Seniors, this person is Du Wanwu’s descendant. His name is also Du Wanwu,” Then, Chu Feng began to tell the story of how he and Du Wanwu got to know one another, as well as why Du Wanwu had turned into his current state.

“Haha, in that case, it would seem that it was all because of me that you came to know this Du Wanwu and obtained a body immune to poison,” The Snow-haired Immortal said proudly after hearing about what had happened.

“Eh... I guess you could consider it that way,” Chu Feng smiled wryly. Even though what the Snow-haired Immortal did had ended up becoming a good deed, it remained that her original intention back then had been to experiment with Chu Feng.

Furthermore, if it wasn’t for the fact that Chu Feng was very tough himself, he would’ve already died back then. How could he possibly be alive today?

Yet, the Snow-haired Immortal was so immensely proud of herself. This caused Chu Feng to feel truly speechless.

“Everyone, although I was taken advantage of by the Dark Hall this entire time and was unable to control myself, my consciousness was not in chaos. I know what has happened in this period of time.”

“Thus, not only do I know of the battle between you all and the Dark Hall, I also know that you all have come here today to search for the Dark Hall’s headquarters.”

“And I... just so happen to know the actual location of the Dark Hall’s headquarters,” Du Wanwu said.

“Truly?” Hearing those words, the crowd all revealed pleasantly surprised expressions.

They had come here with the intention of staking their all to fight a battle to the death against the Dark Hall. However, they had not expected to end up falling for such a trap.

But now, not only had Chu Feng managed to neutralize the calamity, he had also brought Du Wanwu, a peak Martial Emperor, to join them.

This could truly be said to be a profit from a disaster. If they were to be able to find the Dark Hall's headquarters at this time too, it would truly be great.

"The Dark Hall's headquarters is located in the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain," Du Wanwu said.

"Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain?" Hearing those words, the crowd's expressions all changed. Their overjoyed expressions immediately stiffened.

However, at that moment, the person feeling the most perplexed by this was none other than Chu Feng. The reason for that was because it was not the first time he had heard of the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. He possessed quite a thorough understanding of the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. He knew that it was an extremely remote place in the Holy Land of Martialism.

That place was also one of the most well-known forbidden areas in the Holy Land of Martialism. The reason for that was because there was an extremely ferocious type of monstrous beast there by the name of the Ice-snow Phoenix. The Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain was the territory of the Ice-snow Phoenixes. Thus, anyone that encountered an Ice-snow Phoenix in the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain would end up being killed by it.

The reason why Chu Feng knew about the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain was because his friend Tantai Xue had left for the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain after they had unsealed the secret of the Coldsnow Dagger years ago. Furthermore, Tantai Xue's purpose in going to the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain

had been precisely to find the Ice-snow Phoenixes.

Recalling that, it had been a very long time since Chu Feng had been separated from Tantai Xue back then.

In this period of time, Chu Feng had shaken heaven and earth, causing numerous major sensations throughout the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, he had received no news of Tantai Xue. She had never once appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism after their separation. Thus, Chu Feng had been worried for her the entire time.

Originally, Chu Feng had planned to go to the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain to search for Tantai Xue when he had time to do so.

However, unexpectedly, things kept happening in rapid succession. As such, he was unable to move about freely.

Thus, he had not had the chance to go and search for Tantai Xue.

“They’ve actually hidden themselves in the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. No wonder we were unable to find them,” At that moment, an extremely surprised expression appeared in the Elf King’s eyes.

“The Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain is a bit difficult to deal with. Although there aren’t a lot of Ice-snow Phoenixes, they are the most mysterious and most difficult to deal with monstrous beasts in the Holy Land of Martialism,” At that moment, even Lord Lianghua, a rank eight Martial Emperor, revealed a somewhat complicated expression.

In fact, when Lord Lianghua mentioned the name Ice-snow Phoenix, the grand characters present all revealed abnormal expressions. They appeared to have been frightened by the mention of something fearful.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng asked, “The Ice-snow

Phoenixes really exist?" After all, the Ice-snow Phoenixes were related to Tantai Xue.

"Not only do they exist, they are extremely dangerous. The Dark Hall is truly bold to have actually hidden themselves there. Could it be... that they have eliminated the Ice-snow Phoenixes?"

"Impossible. With the Dark Hall's strength, it is impossible for them to eliminate the Ice-snow Phoenixes."

"Merely... why is it that they are able to set up camp in the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain? Why would the Ice-snow Phoenixes allow them to do so?" The Elf King's eyes narrowed. He started to ponder.

"They used some sort of method to come to an agreement with the Ice-snow Phoenixes. Right now, they are allied with the Ice-snow Phoenixes," Du Wanwu said.

"What? The Dark Hall is allied with the Ice-snow Phoenixes? This is bad," After hearing this, everyone, including the Elf King, started to frown.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng realized that the Ice-snow Phoenixes were extraordinary beings.

The reason for that was because when the Ancient Era's Elves had discovered that the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace had allied themselves with the Dark Hall, they were only furious. After all, from the beginning, they had never placed the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace in their eyes.

However... after finding out that the Ice-snow Phoenixes had allied themselves with the Dark Hall, they actually reacted in such a manner. It was as if they were confronted with a major enemy. It was clear... that the Ice-snow Phoenixes was a group of thorny existences. They were so thorny that even the Ancient Era's Elves had to face them earnestly.

"Could it be that there is also a peak Martial Emperor among the

Ice-snow Phoenixes?” Chu Feng asked.

The way he saw it, the Elf King was a peak Martial Emperor. Unless his opponent was also a peak Martial Emperor, there was no way he would react in such a manner.

“It is not that the Ice-snow Phoenixes possess a peak Martial Emperor. Rather, they possess a special treasure. That treasure is capable of unleashing a peak Martial Emperor-level expert.”

“Furthermore, because it is unleashed by that treasure, that peak Martial Emperor is unkillable and indestructible.”

“Fortunately, the Ice-snow Phoenixes only care about their own territory, and only guard the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. Else... the true ruler of the Holy Land of Martialism might not necessarily be us Ancient Era’s Elves,” The Elf King said with a wry smile.

“The Ice-snow Phoenixes are actually that powerful?” Chu Feng was startled upon hearing that. An unkillable and indestructible peak Martial Emperor. That would truly be frightening.

“Most importantly, the Ice-snow Phoenixes are an independent group. They looked down upon even us Ancient Era’s Elves. As such, why would they end up forming an alliance with the Dark Hall?” Lord Lianghua, Lord Luokong and the other two Grand Elders all revealed puzzled expressions.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master is from the Outer World. No matter how conceited the Ice-snow Phoenixes might be, they are only beings of the Holy Land of Martialism. Perhaps the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was truly capable of presenting something that made the Ice-snow Phoenixes willingly form an alliance with them?” The Elf King said.

Hearing those words, the crowd involuntarily looked to Chu Feng.

They all felt relieved.

No matter how noble they, the Ancient Era's Elves, were, they knew that when compared to Chu Feng, who was from the Outer World, they would simply be incomparable to him. As for the Dark Hall's Master, he was the same as Chu Feng.

"What do we do then?" The crowd all looked to the Elf King.

"As matters stand, there are no alternatives. Even if the Ice-snow Phoenixes have become the Dark Hall's allies, we must still fight that battle," The Elf King said.

"This matter should not be delayed. Everyone, let's set off for the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain immediately. It would be best if we manage to catch them off guard. We cannot allow them time to prepare," Chu Feng said.

"What little friend Chu Feng says is extremely correct," The Elf King nodded. Then, he looked to Du Wanwu and said, "Little friend, thank you for your troubles."

"I did what I was supposed to do. Even if you all do not fight against the Dark Hall, I would still not let that demonic woman get away," Coldness flashed through Du Wanwu's eyes. Then, he began to lead the way for the crowd.

The Ancient Era's Elves' army began to proceed toward the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain majestically.

Chapter 2042 – Icesnow Phoenix

In the same pitch-black palace hall. The Dark Hall's Hall Master was still there. He was sitting on that imposing and domineering seat.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master was still wearing a mask. However, it could be seen from his two eyes that he was very happy.

He placed a lot of trust in Xue Ji. Thus, the way he saw it, as long as the Ancient Era's Elves took the bait, they would definitely be digging their own grave.

The enemies that he feared the most in the Holy Land of Martialism had finally been eliminated.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a beautiful figure entered the palace hall. Like a celestial fairy, she slowly descended before the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

That woman was extremely beautiful. Her beauty surpassed that of celestial fairies. However, she emitted a demon-like dangerous aura from all over. This woman was Xue Ji.

“My Xue Ji, you've finally returned. If you still hadn't returned, I would have gone out to find you,” Seeing Xue Ji's return, the Dark Hall's Hall Master smiled extremely attentively. This side of him was something that he would only reveal to Xue Ji.

“It's a failure,” Xue Ji said.

“Failure?!” Hearing those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master immediately stood up. He simply did not dare to believe in his own ears. After calming himself down, he asked, “Exactly what happened? How did it end up being a failure?”

“Originally, everything was going according to plan. The Ancient Era's Elves' army was about to be killed by that Poisonous

Substance. However, never would I have expected that Chu Feng actually knew that Poisonous Substance. He used his world spirit techniques to awaken the Poisonous Substance, and helped it recover its physical body. Now, that Poisonous Substance is no longer under my control. Furthermore, it is standing with Chu Feng,” Xue Ji spoke the truth.

“What did you say?”

“That Poisonous Substance actually knew Chu Feng? Furthermore, it managed to regain consciousness, and is now standing on Chu Feng’s side? What’s going on with this? Didn’t you say that you’d managed to control it completely?” After hearing what had happened, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely angry.

The reason for that was because he also knew very well how frightening that Poisonous Substance was. If that Poisonous Substance were to regain its rationality, it would definitely make their Dark Hall its enemy.

Right now, a single Ancient Era’s Elves’ Elf King was already enough to cause him a headache. If a ferocious Poisonous Substance were to be added to that, it would definitely become a thorny problem.

“I had indeed gained control over it. Merely, I never expected that Chu Feng would be capable of awakening it.”

“It could only be said that Chu Feng has surpassed our imagination. This, this matter cannot be blamed on me. After all, I had indeed successfully managed to control that Poisonous Substance,” Xue Ji said.

“If you aren’t the one to be blamed, am I to be blamed then? You had me put forth all my resources to stabilize that monster’s cultivation, to allow it to obtain a cultivation of rank nine Martial Emperor from that poison Gu. In the end, it actually went off to help Chu Feng. I have spent all that effort, but in the end, it was all

for that Chu Feng's benefit.”

At that moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was truly enraged. He was only holding back because the person standing before him was Xue Ji; if it were anyone else, he would've definitely smashed them to death with a palm strike.

It was truly too infuriating. The person he hated the most right now was Chu Feng. Yet, his plan was actually ruined by Chu Feng again. This was truly intolerable for him.

“What use is there in being angry? I am also extremely angry. But, can that change what has happened?”

“That Poisonous Substance seemed to know that we are located here. Right now, it is leading Chu Feng and the others here.”

“The location where we set up the trap is not far away from the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. They will soon arrive.”

“Thus, Lord Hall Master, rather than being angry, you should be thinking about how to take care of them.”

“You should know that you are not only facing the Elf King now. In addition to him, there's another rank nine Martial Emperor by the name of Du Wanwu,” Xue Ji said.

“Damn it!” Hearing those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was so enraged that he shot out a fist strike. An explosion sounded, and the vast space they were in started to tremble violently.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, ear-piercing roars sounded from below them. Those roars sounded like the voices of demons as they filled the area.

At that moment, the trembling became even more intense. It was as if this place could collapse at any moment.

“Lord Hall Master, I urge you to calm yourself. Do not have your pet eat you before the Ancient Era's Elves arrive,” Xue Ji said with

narrowed eyes.

“You only managed to refine this thing after using so many Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. Exactly how much longer must I wait to be able to use it?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked.

“It’ll be soon. As long as we can buy enough time, a month, I will be able to make you the strongest expert in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“At that time, not only will you become the strongest expert in the Holy Land of Martialism, you will also be able to obtain power that your clansmen in the Outer World do not possess. At that time, you can return to the Outer World impressively,” Xue Ji said.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes shone. He seemed to have thought of something, and actually managed to calm down from his state of extreme fury. He said, “As matters stand, there is no other way. We can only have our allies block them for us.”

“Those Icesnow Phoenixes are hard to handle. Are you sure they will be willing to help you?” Xue Ji asked.

“Tell them this. As long as they help me, I will definitely heal that girl’s illness.”

“However, if something unexpected is to happen to me, no one in this Holy Land of Martialism will be able to save that girl,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Very well,” As Xue Ji spoke, she turned to leave.

After Xue Ji left, only the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and the demon-like existence deep underground remained in that place.

“Chu Feng, after I successfully master the demonic technique, I will definitely make you know the consequences of offending me,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master looked to the thing below that was emitting roars nonstop. Deep killing intent filled his eyes.

As the Dark Hall's Hall Master looked downward, his gaze started to change. From anger, joy appeared in his eyes. Furthermore, the more he looked, the stronger he smiled.

Suddenly, the Dark Hall's Hall Master put his hand on his mask. After he removed his mask, a crude face was revealed.

It turned out that this Dark Hall's Hall Master was only a middle-aged man. He had most definitely lived for longer than Chu Feng. However, according to his age, he could still be considered part of the younger generation in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, his face appeared extremely ferocious and ruthless. Even though he was smiling, his smile only made his treachery and ruthlessness appear even clearer.

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, people all feel that you are this era's overlord. However... they don't know that this era's overlord is destined to be me.”

“Not only am I going to become this era's overlord, I will also become the strongest overlord in the history of the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“As for you, so what if you possess some talent? In the end, you will only become my stepping stone.”

.....

Several days passed. The Ancient Era's Elves' army had set foot into the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain. Furthermore, they were rapidly approaching the Dark Hall's headquarters.

However, at that moment, their path was blocked by many enormous birds of ice and snow.

The smallest among those enormous birds were over thirty meters tall. The several largest ones were over a hundred meters tall. Their bodies were composed of ice and snow, and they emitted threatening coldness.

With each movement of their wings, a gale shot forth, creating explosive snowstorms.

As for these enormous birds of ice and snow, they were the most mysterious monstrous beasts of the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain, the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Chapter 2043 – Asking About One’s Friend

Even though these birds were known as the Icesnow Phoenixes, Chu Feng felt that they possessed an enormous difference when compared to the legendary Phoenixes.

To be exact, they looked more like enormous birds covered with ice and snow. However, their strength was definitely not something to be looked down upon.

Most importantly, people from the Dark Hall and the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts that they controlled had appeared alongside the Icesnow Phoenixes.

“Icesnow Phoenixes, I never expected you all to be in cahoots with the Dark Hall. We Ancient Era’s Elves have truly thought too highly of you all before,” The Elf King looked to a white-haired old man among the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Although that old man had the appearance of a human, his body was covered with a layer of frost. The coldness that he emitted from his core was not something that could be concealed.

Judging by his appearance, he should be the leader of the Icesnow Phoenixes. Merely, his cultivation was inferior to that of the Elf King; he was only a rank eight Martial Emperor.

“This is not a place where you all should step foot in. If you are to leave now, we can spare your lives,” That leader of the Icesnow Phoenixes said with an ice-cold tone. From his attitude, it could be seen that the Icesnow Phoenixes seemed to not place the Ancient Era’s Elves in their eyes at all.

However, if one were to carefully think about it, the Icesnow Phoenixes would kill anyone else that intruded upon their territory.

However, from their attitude, it seemed that they were willing to release the Ancient Era’s Elves. Likely, they might also be afraid of

the Ancient Era's Elves.

However, right after that Icesnow Phoenixes' leader finished saying his words, someone from the Dark Hall said, "No, you cannot release them."

"Who are you to interrupt when our Clan Chief is speaking?" However, right after that person from the Dark Hall spoke, the Icesnow Phoenixes present all turned their cold gazes toward that person.

That place was a place of ice and snow, a place that was bone-chillingly cold. But, at that moment, everyone felt that the temperature had decreased by tens of degrees.

Furthermore, at that moment, everyone could see that the body of the person from the Dark Hall that interrupted earlier shivered. Then, he did not dare to say anything anymore.

"The Dark Hall is an organization that has done all sorts of evils. For the sake of obtaining their goals, they are willing to sacrifice innocent lives. Today, we, the Ancient Era's Elves, insist that we shall eradicate the Dark Hall on behalf of the heavens."

"If you Icesnow Phoenixes insist on blocking our path, battle today will be unavoidable," The Elf King said.

"Buzz~~~"

Right after the Elf King finished saying those words, light began to shine from that old man's ring. Then, a cold ray of light shot out from that ring and toward the sky.

"Rooooaarr~"

An ear-piercing bird's roar was heard. Then, a two hundred-plus-meter tall Icesnow Phoenix appeared out of thin air.

It was larger than all of the other Icesnow Phoenixes. Merely, it did not possess a physical body. Its body was flickering like a spirit body would. That said, that Icesnow Phoenix was emitting the

aura of a rank nine Martial Emperor.

At that moment, it was running its two enormous eyes over the crowd. Its eyes were filled with killing intent. It was as if it would immediately unleash fatal attacks should the Ancient Era's Elves move.

"If you insist on fighting, we Icesnow Phoenixes do not fear you," That Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief said.

"Rumble~~~"

Right at that moment, a loud explosion sounded from Du Wanwu. Then, his body burst apart and shot toward the sky. There, he turned into a poisonous humanoid larger than even that Icesnow Phoenix.

Poisonous liquid flowed through his entire body. Du Wanwu's current appearance was most definitely much more frightening than that Icesnow Phoenix.

"Did you think that we would be afraid of you?" Du Wanwu's coarse and ferocious voice sounded from the sky.

After Du Wanwu said those words, Chu Feng noticed that the Icesnow Phoenixes' gazes also changed slightly.

Even though they concealed it very well, Chu Feng was still able to tell that they were scared after Du Wanwu revealed his strength.

"Since that's the case, I am able to let you all experience the might of us Icesnow Phoenixes."

Even though they were already a bit scared, the Icesnow Phoenixes still unleashed overwhelming killing intent the moment their Clan Chief spoke those words.

Sensing their overwhelming killing intent, the Ancient Era's Elves started to frown. Even though the Icesnow Phoenixes numbered extremely few, they were all elites. At the very least, the several hundred Icesnow Phoenixes standing before them right

now were all Martial Emperors.

Even though they possessed a lot more Martial Emperors than the Icesnow Phoenixes, if they were to truly battle the Icesnow Phoenixes, there would definitely be casualties on their side too. In fact, the casualties might even be disastrous in number.

After all, the Icesnow Phoenix that Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief unleashed with his ring was not only a rank nine Martial Emperor. In addition to that, it possessed an undying and indestructible body. That was a real thorny problem.

In that sort of situation, neither the Ancient Era's Elves nor the Icesnow Phoenixes took the lead to attack.

They seemed to know that both sides would suffer disastrous casualties should they start fighting. Furthermore, they would not be able to stop even if they wanted to.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke, "Before we fight, I have a question that I wish to ask. Lord Clan Chief, might you be willing to answer my question?"

"If you wish to fight, then fight. Why bother with superfluous words?" An Icesnow Phoenix shouted angrily. It seemed that they were prepared to fight. No matter what, they would not allow Chu Feng and the others to pass through them.

However, Chu Feng did not give up on asking his question. Instead, he directly asked, "Has a young lady by the name Tantai Xue come to find you all before?"

"Mn?" To the crowd's surprise, the moment Chu Feng mentioned the name 'Tantai Xue,' the Icesnow Phoenixes' expressions all changed. They were even more shocked than when Du Wanwu revealed his strength.

At that moment, the Icesnow Phoenixes all turned their gazes to Chu Feng. As for their Clan Chief, he asked in a serious manner, "How did you know about this?"

“Not only do I know that Tantai Xue went to find you all, I also know that she held a Coldsnow Dagger. Although I do not know why she went to find you all, but if she had, could you all tell me of her whereabouts?” From the Icesnow Phoenixes’ reactions, Chu Feng had determined that Tantai Xue had indeed gone to find them.

“What is your relationship with her?” That Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief asked.

“I am her friend,” Chu Feng said.

“What is your name?” That Clan Chief continued to ask.

“Junior is called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

“You are Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, that Clan Chief was startled. However, soon, his aged eyes revealed an alert expression. He narrowed his eyes and said, “You said you’re Chu Feng? You are deceiving us then.”

“Deceiving? Senior, what do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have heard of this Chu Feng before. However, your cultivation is much higher than his,” That Clan Chief said.

“Utterly ridiculous. There are this many people from the Holy Land of Martialism here. Who among us do not know that he is Chu Feng?” However, once that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief said those words, the Ancient Era’s Elves and the experts from the Holy Land of Materialism started to ridicule him.

The current Chu Feng was renowned through the Holy Land of Martialism. Furthermore, his portrait had long since spread throughout the entire Holy Land of Martialism. There were extremely few people in the Holy Land of Martialism that didn’t know Chu Feng.

Yet, these renowned Icesnow Phoenixes were actually saying that Chu Feng was a fake. To them, this was truly ridiculous.

Chapter 2044 – The Course Of Events

“Senior, to you, I am supposed to be a peak Martial King or, at the very most, a Half Martial Emperor instead of a Martial Emperor. Is that right?” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief narrowed his eyes again. He seemed to be pondering something. In the end, he nodded.

“If I am not mistaken, Tantai Xue must’ve mentioned me to you. In fact, several years ago, this junior’s cultivation was indeed not even that of a Half Martial Emperor.”

“However, the person standing before you is the actual me. Furthermore, I believe Tantai Xue should only have a single friend by the name of Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“If you say you are Chu Feng, then you should know Tantai Xue very well,” That Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief said.

“You can ask me about things concerning Tantai Xue. If I am able to answer them, then I should really be Chu Feng. If I cannot answer them, then I am a fake,” Chu Feng said.

Sensing that the situation was amiss, a person from the Dark Hall hurriedly urged, “Clan Chief Icesnow, do not bother with him. That child is extremely cunning. He is stalling for time right now. He must be plotting some...”

“Shut up!!!”

However, before that man could finish his words, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief shouted angrily at him. His angry shout contained his Emperor’s might. His Emperor’s might knocked that person from the Dark Hall several steps back and made him fall onto his butt powerlessly.

That Clan Chief did not pay any attention to the miserable condition of that man from the Dark Hall. Instead, with a smile on

his face, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Then, listen carefully.”

After that, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief began to ask Chu Feng many questions regarding Tantai Xue. Among them were questions about the experiences that Chu Feng and Tantai Xue had experienced together. As for Chu Feng, he was able to answer all of them easily.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it’s really you!!!”

When the final question was answered, that Clan Chief revealed an overjoyed expression. His body shifted, and he arrived before Chu Feng. He placed his hands onto Chu Feng’s shoulders and smiled joyfully.

Seeing the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief entering their camp and placing his hands on Chu Feng, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts started to frown. They were planning to attack.

However, the attentive Elf King hurriedly sent a voice transmission to stop them. As matters stood, he seemed to be able to tell that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief possessed a special sort of relationship with that young lady by the name of Tantai Xue. Furthermore, after he verified Chu Feng’s identity, he possessed no hostility toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Elf King had a premonition that perhaps Chu Feng might be able to take care of the Icesnow Phoenixes, this thorny opponent.

“This is truly what they mean by [surging waters flooding the Dragon King’s temple, and one’s family failing to recognize one another](#),” Sure enough, that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief was extremely excited. Not only was he looking at Chu Feng without any of his previous hostility, he even had an expression as if he was looking at a close relative. He appeared extremely amiable toward Chu Feng.

“Senior, it seems that Tantai Xue is within your Icesnow Phoenix

Race?” Chu Feng was also extremely happy.

From the previous dialogue, he was certain that Tantai Xue had not only come, she should possess a very good relationship with the Icesnow Phoenixes. Else, she would not have told this old man this many things concerning herself.

“She’s here. Do you plan to go and see her?” That Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief asked.

“That would naturally be the best,” Chu Feng said.

“Wait a moment,” As that Clan Chief spoke, he removed his ring and handed it to a rank eight Martial Emperor-level expert beside him. Then, with a low voice, he said, “If they do anything, kill them.”

After he finished saying those words, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, follow me,” Then, he turned around to leave.

“Chu Feng,” Seeing that Chu Feng actually really began to follow him, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others were very worried.

“Seniors, please rest assured. I will return immediately,” Chu Feng made a gesture to tell them that he would be fine. Then, without looking back, he followed that old man.

Being lead by that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief, Chu Feng arrived at the Icesnow Phoenixes’ clan territory. It was a bunch of buildings located in a snowy mountain.

As for the place where Tantai Xue was, it was a tightly guarded and extremely gorgeous castle of ice and snow.

Chu Feng felt that the castle that Tantai Xue was in should be the best castle in the Icesnow Phoenixes’ clan territory.

However, after Chu Feng entered the castle and saw Tantai Xue, he started to frown, and his gaze became very unstable.

The reason for that was because Tantai Xue was lying on top of a bed of ice and snow.

While that bed of ice and snow emitted extreme coldness, it was also flowing with light. One could tell from a single glance that it was a treasure.

If one were to sleep on that bed, not only would one not be affected by frostbite, it would instead provide a great effect for tempering one's body. Not only would one be able to strengthen one's body, one could also increase one's cultivation.

The reason why Chu Feng was so worried was because, even though Tantai Xue was lying on top of that bed, she was sleeping.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that Tantai Xue was not just sleeping. Instead, it seemed more like she had been poisoned.

“What’s going on here?” Chu Feng asked in a very serious manner.

“Little friend Chu Feng, since you are a friend of our Lady Chieftain, I will not conceal this matter from you,” The Clan Chief said.

“Lady Chieftain?” Chu Feng was extremely shocked to hear those words.

Even though he had already guessed that Tantai Xue possessed a decent relationship with the Icesnow Phoenixes, he had not expected her to hold such a status among the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Lady Chieftain? Didn’t that mean that Tantai Xue was the leader of these Icesnow Phoenixes?

“That’s right, Tantai Xue is our Icesnow Phoenix race’s actual ruler,” Seemingly knowing what Chu Feng was wondering about, the Clan Chief spoke to confirm it.

“Ssss~~~”

At that moment, even Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Chu Feng rarely felt this astonished. However, this matter had truly surpassed his imagination.

Afterwards, the Clan Chief began to explain things to Chu Feng. From that, Chu Feng came to know a bit of the Icesnow Phoenixes' past.

It turned out that there was actually a special reason why the Icesnow Phoenixes, this group of mysterious monstrous beast, were this powerful in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Like the Ancient Era's Elves, the Icesnow Phoenixes were a race that had existed since the Ancient Era. They were products of the Ancient Era.

Although the Ancient Era was extremely far in the past, the records left behind by the Icesnow Phoenixes allowed them to know that they were not peak existences back then.

On the contrary, they were extremely weak and small in the Ancient Era. They were a small race that would frequently be bullied by others.

One day, the Icesnow Phoenixes offended an extremely powerful race in the Ancient Era, and nearly suffered the destruction of their entire race.

In the end, it was a human expert that saved them. Not only did that human expert save them, that expert had also taken upon himself the identity of an Icesnow Phoenix. That person began to stay with the Icesnow Phoenixes, and started to lead them on a path of conquest. That person allowed the Icesnow Phoenixes, a race that used to be bullied, to play a role in the Ancient Era.

Even though that person was a human, the Icesnow Phoenixes accepted that person as their Chief, and addressed that person as Chief the entire time.

However, one day, their human Chieftain suddenly left. Before leaving, that person took one of the Icesnow Phoenixes' treasures, the Coldsnow Dagger, with him.

Furthermore, that person said to the Icesnow Phoenixes, "If someone is to come here with this Coldsnow Dagger and is surnamed Tantai, that person will be my descendant. Icesnow Phoenixes, you all must treat my descendant well."

After many years had passed, that human Chieftain never reappeared, and his descendants never appeared either. However, the Icesnow Phoenixes remembered this matter the entire time. It was something that they remembered firmly, something that was passed down from their records.

By the words of their ancestors, they said, "Regardless of what cultivation that human Chieftain's descendant might have, regardless of what sort of moral conduct his descendant might have, as long as his descendant is to come find us Icesnow Phoenixes with the Coldsnow Dagger, his descendant shall be our Chief and we shall obediently follow their every order."

In fact, the reason why the Icesnow Phoenixes had guarded the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain the entire time was also because of their ancestors' instructions.

According to legend, long ago, there was a Dragon King's temple in the East China Sea. Several miles away from the Dragon King's temple was a vegetable field. The field was near another temple. The old monk in the temple was good friends with the old man who owned the field. One day, the old man told the old monk that his field was being watered without him watering it. The old monk decided to check it out, and saw that there was a goose-like monster watering the field every day for the 3 days that he surveyed the field. Then, on the fourth day, the monk decided to get his sword to fight the goose monster. He attacked the goose monster and angered it, causing it to flood the region and even the Dragon King's temple several miles away. The Dragon King was

angered by the flood and dispatched his troops to attack the goose monster. The goose monster fought with the troops dispatched by the Dragon King for three days and three nights. In the end, it was no match for them, and ended up revealing its true form. It turned out to be the Dragon King's third son, the Third Prince. The Third Prince had been kicked out of the Eastern Sea because he had broken the law. His punishment had been set to three years. For the sake of providing meritorious service, the Third Prince had decided to do good deeds for mortals. However, after being attacked by the old monk, he ended up causing a flood. Furthermore, he had not dared to reveal himself when fighting against the Dragon King's troops. This was why this misunderstanding came to be. Basically... family fighting family because they failed to recognize them.

Chapter 2045 – Removing Poison

Before Tantai Xue arrived here, she had not known that the Icesnow Phoenixes would actually have such an instruction from their ancestors. The reason for that was because the news she had obtained from the Coldsnow Dagger only said that she would be given assistance as long as she could find the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Thus, when Tantai Xue got to this place, and was given the title of Chieftain by the Icesnow Phoenixes, she was extremely surprised, and was a bit unable to get accustomed to it.

However, after some insistence by the Icesnow Phoenixes, she ended up accepting it. Furthermore, she even planned to lead the Icesnow Phoenixes into the Holy Land of Martialism's Overlord Domain to help Chu Feng.

This was also the reason why the Icesnow Phoenixes knew about Chu Feng.

However, good things do not last forever. During the process where the Icesnow Phoenixes were using their special methods to assist Tantai Xue in rapidly gaining cultivation, they actually ended up failing. Because of that, Tantai Xue ended up entering a deep sleep.

However, this sort of thing was something that had happened to the Icesnow Phoenixes before. Thus, they also had a method to handle it.

Thus, at that time, the Icesnow Phoenixes did not panic, and only laid Tantai Xue onto their treasure, the Coldsnow Bed.

They had thought that as long as Tantai Xue recuperated on the Coldsnow Bed, she would one day awaken.

Furthermore, due to the fact that Tantai Xue was asleep, and the Icesnow Phoenixes wanted to wait until she woke up so that she could personally lead them to find Chu Feng, they did not leave to

find Chu Feng.

However, as time passed, Tantai Xue remained asleep. Furthermore, her health became worse and worse. The situation already surpassed what the Icesnow Phoenixes had expected.

Feeling helpless, the Icesnow Phoenixes that had not left the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain for tens of thousands of years decided to leave to find powerful world spiritists to help Tantai Xue recover.

The strongest world spiritist in the Holy Land of Martialism was the Heaven Reaching Immortal. However, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was someone that was in closed-door training all year round. Furthermore, he did not have a fixed residence. And, most importantly, he did not concern himself with the matters of the world. Thus, it was simply impossible to find him.

in this sort of situation, the Icesnow Phoenixes decided to settle for the second best, and had gone to search for the World Devastator Immortal's assistance.

However, after the World Devastator Immortal arrived, he was powerless against Tantai Xue's illness.

At the moment when the Icesnow Phoenixes were nearly driven to despair, the World Devastator Immortal recommended the Dark Hall's Hall Master to them.

After the Dark Hall's Hall Master arrived, he managed to stabilize Tantai Xue's deteriorating illness. However, he was unable to wake Tantai Xue.

He said that Tantai Xue's illness was fine. Merely, they would need to slowly nurse her back to health in order to wake her up. Furthermore, he said that he could heal her on one condition — he demanded that the Dark Hall be established in the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain.

Seeing that Tantai Xue's illness had made a change for the better,

the Icesnow Phoenixes were extremely grateful. At that time, they reacted as if they had seen their savior. Thus, they agreed to the Dark Hall's Hall Master's request.

Later on, the Dark Hall's Hall Master requested to become allies with the Icesnow Phoenixes. As for that, the Icesnow Phoenixes accepted without the slightest hesitation either.

However, from there, the Dark Hall's Hall Master's demands had grown more and more excessive. In the end, he had even requested for the Icesnow Phoenixes to assist them in taking care of the Ancient Era's Elves.

Naturally, the Icesnow Phoenixes refused this sort of demand. As for the Dark Hall's Hall Master, he was also very tactful. From that point onward, he never requested it again.

However, several days ago, the Dark Hall's Hall Master once again dispatched his men to the Icesnow Phoenixes, stating that the Ancient Era's Elves would come to attack the Dark Hall, and demanded that Icesnow Phoenixes assist in holding them back.

Originally, the Icesnow Phoenixes were planning to refuse his request. After all, no matter how strong the Icesnow Phoenixes might be, they still knew how powerful the Ancient Era's Elves were. As such, they did not wish to become enemies with the Ancient Era's Elves because of the Dark Hall.

However, the Dark Hall began to threaten them with Tantai Xue's health. As Tantai Xue was the Icesnow Phoenixes' weak spot, upon consideration that there might not be anyone capable of saving Tantai Xue should the Dark Hall be defeated and the Dark Hall's Hall Master be killed, the Icesnow Phoenixes ended up agreeing to their request.

◦

That was the reason why the Icesnow Phoenixes had blocked the Ancient Era's Elves' army earlier.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master is truly despicable,” After hearing what had happened, Chu Feng cursed out.

“Little friend Chu Feng, why do you say that?” Hearing those words, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief’s expression changed.

“While it might true that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master alleviated Tantai Xue’s illness, Tantai Xue should have awakened by now.”

“However, the reason why she did not wake up is because there is a kind of poison in her body. It is that poison that makes her unable to wake up.”

“As for that poison, it should have been placed there by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. As senior said, even if you all failed to increase Tantai Xue’s cultivation, it should only lead to damage to her body and definitely not to her being poisoned,” Chu Feng said.

“No, not poisoned, definitely not poisoned,” The Clan Chief nodded.

“There we go. The poison in Tantai Xue’s body was most definitely put there by that Dark Hall’s Hall Master. The reason why he did not wake up Tantai Xue was precisely so that he could use her to control you all,” Chu Feng said.

“Control? Why must he control us?”

“We asked him here to treat our Lady Chieftain’s illness. How could he do this sort of thing?” The Clan Chief revealed an expression of anger.

“If he is to completely cure Tantai Xue’s illness and wake her up, then even if you all are to go back on your words and kick them out of the Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain, there would be nothing that he could do about it.”

“But, if Tantai Xue’s illness could not be cured, you all would have to rely on him. Thus... he would definitely have to hold a tight grasp on Tantai Xue, his bargaining chip,” Chu Feng explained.

“Damn it. I’ve truly grown more muddled in my old age. I have lived for over ten thousand years, yet I was actually exploited by a member of the younger generation.”

“Not only was I myself taken advantage of, I even harmed Lady Chieftain, and ended up getting her poisoned. I am truly foolish,” After hearing about this, the Clan Chief was extremely furious. At the same time, he started to blame himself.

“Senior, please don’t worry. Although that poison is very strong, it is only capable of keeping Tantai Xue asleep. It will not harm her.”

“After I remove the poison, Tantai Xue will wake up,” Chu Feng said.

“Truly?” Hearing those words, the Clan Chief revealed a shocked expression. Then, he asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, you know world spirit techniques?”

“Junior is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Truly?” The Clan Chief asked again.

“Junior would not dare to deceive senior,” Chu Feng said with a smile again.

“Then, little friend Chu Feng, how certain are you in being able to remove Lady Chieftain’s poison?” The Clan Chief asked.

“I am ninety-nine percent certain,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“Since that’s the case, I will trouble little friend Chu Feng then. Please remove the poison from Lady Chieftain as quickly as possible,” The Clan Chief urged. He felt extremely uneasy just knowing that Tantai Xue had been poisoned.

However, even though he was urging Chu Feng to quickly remove Tantai Xue’s poison, there were still misgivings in the gaze with which he looked at Chu Feng.

No matter what, he was certain that Tantai Xue's illness was not simple. Else, she would've already woken up.

As for Chu Feng, he was so young. Would he truly be able to wake up Tantai Xue? To put it frankly, he was not confident in Chu Feng.

It was not that he did not trust Chu Feng. Rather, he did not believe that Chu Feng would truly be able to help Tantai Xue regain consciousness.

Thus, even though he was the one who was telling Chu Feng to help Tantai Xue, he only did so as an attempt to try out their luck.

In actuality, he did not possess much hope that Chu Feng would succeed.

Chapter 2046 – Overflowing Killing Intent

Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation to remove Tantai Xue's poison on the spot.

Merely, the poison was very remarkable and well-hidden. It was actually hidden in her dantian.

Fortunately, it was Chu Feng. If it were any other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, they would have likely not been able to discover the poison at all.

Due to the poison being so well-hidden, it was very hard to remove. Thus, even for Chu Feng, it took him an entire day to remove the poison.

“This is the poison.”

Chu Feng showed a dust-sized substance to the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief.

The Clan Chief possessed superb eyesight. Even though that substance was extremely small, he was able to tell with a single glance that it was indeed a sort of poison.

“Dark Hall, oh Dark Hall, you are truly wretched!” After personally seeing the poison, Chu Feng was able to see overwhelming killing intent in the eyes of the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief.

Chu Feng understood his killing intent completely. It would be one thing if they had only been deceived. However, at the same time they had been deceived, harm had actually been wrought to their most important person. This was something that they would not be able to tolerate.

“Wuu~~” Right at that moment, a female's voice was suddenly heard.

After that female's voice was heard, Chu Feng and the Clan Chief

immediately trembled. It was as if they had been struck by lightning.

After all, other than the two of them, both men, the only other person here, a woman, was the sleeping Tantai Xue.

Awakened. Tantai Xue who had been asleep for a very long time had awakened.

The two of them looked to Tantai Xue. Sure enough, she had awakened. Not only that, she had also propped her body up, and was now sitting up in the bed and rubbing her eyes.

When she opened her eyes and saw Chu Feng, she immediately revealed a disappointed expression.

Chu Feng was startled and confused by her expression.

The Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief was the same. Neither of them understood why Tantai Xue would have a disappointed expression on her face. She should be pleasantly surprised to see Chu Feng.

At the moment when Chu Feng and the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief were confused, Tantai Xue lowered her head and muttered, "Another dream."

Dream. It turned out that Tantai Xue had considered the scene before her to be a dream. That was why she was disappointed.

"It seems you've had a lot of dreams," Seeing that, Chu Feng walked over to the bed and looked to Tantai Xue in a heartfelt manner. He said, "However, this is not a dream. Tantai Xue, it's me, Chu Feng. I have come to find you."

"Chu Feng?" Hearing those words, Tantai Xue immediately raised her head and grabbed Chu Feng tightly. She began to carefully inspect Chu Feng with her eyes.

After inspecting Chu Feng, she became certain that the person before her was indeed Chu Feng, and that she was not dreaming,

for the Chu Feng in her dreams would not be this realistic.

“Chu Feng!!!”

After verifying that Chu Feng was before her, Tantai Xue’s eyes started to grow moist. This girl who was always strong actually started to cry.

Seeing Tantai Xue crying, Chu Feng’s heart started to ache. He realized that the poison that she had been given might have had a hallucinatory effect. Thus, even though Tantai Xue had been sleeping the whole time, her days had most likely not been very well either.

While she had been asleep, Tantai Xue had been dreaming the entire time. Tantai Xue was a very smart individual. She knew clearly that she was dreaming. However, she had been unable to break free from those dreams. Likely... that would be an extremely painful experience for her.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng held Tantai Xue in his bosom. He knew that what she needed right now was a warm hug.

Chu Feng, as Tantai Xue’s closest friend, should give Tantai Xue that warm hug so that she could entrust herself to him.

Sure enough, Tantai Xue did not refuse Chu Feng’s hug. Instead, she lay herself on Chu Feng’s bosom. It was as if a lost child had finally returned home.

Furthermore, she was tightly grabbing onto Chu Feng’s clothes, seemingly afraid that Chu Feng would leave.

“I’m sorry. I’ve come late. If I had come sooner, you might not have had to sleep for so long,” Chu Feng said in a very apologetic manner.

Seeing that scene, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief showed a beaming smile across his face. He was extremely happy because of Tantai Xue’s awakening, and wanted to say a lot of things to her. However, he did not say anything at that moment. Instead, he

quietly walked out of the room and closed the door.

He first wiped the corners of his eyes dry. There were two droplets of tears. They were tears of joy. He felt joy from the bottom of his heart to see Tantai Xue waking up.

However, after he wiped the tears from his eyes, the Clan Chief's eyes shone with light. Overwhelming killing intent once again appeared in his eyes.

With a low voice, he muttered, "Dark Hall, I am definitely going to make you all pay."

.....

An entire day had passed since Chu Feng had left, yet there was still no news from Chu Feng.

This caused the Ancient Era's Elves to become worried for Chu Feng's safety.

Even though Chu Feng had left smiling, they were distrusting of the Icesnow Phoenixes. After all, the Icesnow Phoenixes were allied with the Dark Hall.

"Step aside, or hand little friend Chu Feng over right now. Choose one!"

"Else, you all shall suffer the consequences!"

Right at that moment, an angry shout was heard. That shout caused the earth to tremble and the snowflakes in the sky to freeze in place.

It was the Elf King. He had been attempting to negotiate with the Icesnow Phoenixes the entire time. However, the Icesnow Phoenixes had refused to give him a clear-cut answer. Being extremely worried for Chu Feng, he finally spoke threatening words.

"Elf King, I think you are mistaken here. Did you really think that we Icesnow Phoenixes would be afraid of you just because you

brought such a huge mob with you?”

“I’ll tell you the same thing as before. If you wish to fight, go ahead and attack us. However, it’ll be as you say, you shall suffer the consequences,” The Icesnow Phoenix with the cultivation of rank eight Martial Emperor spoke confidently.

Compared to the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief, that Icesnow Phoenix was even more unafraid of the Ancient Era’s Elves. Thus, when he spoke, he took a deliberate glance at the enormous rank nine Martial Emperor-level Icesnow Phoenix in the sky.

“Roar~~~”

Seemingly under his control, that enormous Icesnow Phoenix suddenly let out an ear-piercing bird’s roar. Following that, its two enormous wings started to flutter, bringing forth a strong wind.

Blown by that strong wind, overflowing snowflakes and bone-chilling coldness immediately swept the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army left and right.

Fortunately, the Elf King used his own strength to block the wind. Else, merely the wind itself was capable of utterly defeating their army.

“Are you planning to start a war here?” The Elf King asked with a heavy tone. With how much the Icesnow Phoenixes did not place them in their eyes, he would’ve already attacked them had Chu Feng not been in their hands. After all, they had already been prepared to fight against the Icesnow Phoenixes before they came here.

“Think what you wish,” That Icesnow Phoenix with the ring in his hand was still smiling with a disdainful expression on his face.

“Hehehe...”

“We had thought that the Ancient Era’s Elves were bold. Turns out, they’re only this much. Hahaha,” Seeing that the Icesnow Phoenixes were looking down on the Ancient Era’s Elves this

much, but the Ancient Era's Elves still didn't attack, the people from the Dark Hall started to loudly mock the Ancient Era's Elves.

Chapter 2047 – From Enemy To Friend

“You bunch of damned animals!” Seeing that the people from the Dark Hall actually dared to mock them, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ experts all drew their weapons. They were planning to attack.

“Stop!”

“Calm yourselves!” At that moment, the Elf King stopped them with a deep shout.

Before Chu Feng’s return, he could not be certain if any mishap had happened. However, he knew that Chu Feng was in their hands. In this sort of situation, he truly could not attack them willfully.

If the Icesnow Phoenixes truly did something to Chu Feng, battling with them would be fine.

However, if nothing happened to Chu Feng, yet they decided to fight it out on this side and kill the Icesnow Phoenixes, even if Chu Feng was fine now, he would definitely not be fine later.

“Hahaha, come, attack. After all this time, and even after bringing all those stone monsters, turns out all you have is nothing more than false bravado,” The people from the Dark hall continued to mock and laugh.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly descended from the air. When that person descended to the ground, the crowd discovered that it was the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief.

“We pay our respects to Lord Clan Chief,” When the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief appeared, all of the Icesnow Phoenixes bowed to greet him. It could be seen that this Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief possessed an extremely high status among the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Seeing that the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief returned with Chu Feng nowhere to be seen, the Elf King was unable to contain himself, and asked, "Clan Chief Icesnow, where is Chu Feng?"

As for the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief, he did not immediately answer the Elf King. Instead, he retrieved the ring from the Rank 8 Martial Emperor Icesnow Phoenix holding it. After he put the ring on his finger, he pointed to the sky.

"Buzz~~~"

The ring shone with a bright light. As the light enveloped the sky, the enormous Icesnow Phoenix turned into a ray of light and returned into the ring.

When that enormous Icesnow Phoenix disappeared, the bone-chilling sensation and overwhelming oppressive might also disappeared.

Then, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief shouted to his clansmen, "Make way."

Even though the Icesnow Phoenixes were confused as to their Clan Chief's intentions, they did not dare to speak against him. Thus, they immediately moved aside and revealed a wide path.

When even the Icesnow Phoenixes did not understand the intentions of their Clan Chief, the Elf King and the others would naturally be even more puzzled.

"Everyone, little friend Chu Feng is currently waiting for you all in our Icesnow Phoenix clan. Right now, as the Icesnow Phoenix race's Clan Chief, I wish to invite you all as guests to our Icesnow Phoenix clan," The Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief said to the Elf King.

"!!!!"

Hearing those words, the people from the Ancient Era's Elves' allied army were all startled.

What was going on? Weren't they extremely hostile toward one another earlier, to the point where they were going to fight a battle to the death? Why would he be inviting them to be guests now?

This change was too fast, no?!!!

Even though they were very surprised, it remained that the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief had retrieved that enormous Icesnow Phoenix, the only thing capable of being a threat to them. Thus, they were able to tell how sincere that Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief was.

"Thank you for your trouble."

In response, the Elf King began to lead the Ancient Era's Elves' army toward the Icesnow Phoenixes' territory.

"Hey!!!"

"What's going on with you all?! Lord Hall Master told you all to come here to stop them! Why are you letting them pass?!" Seeing this scene, the people from the Dark Hall were all unable to contain themselves.

"Icesnow Phoenixes, listen up," At that moment, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief shouted again. He then turned his ice-cold gaze toward the people from the Dark Hall and ordered, "Kill all of these people from the Dark Hall."

Hearing those words, not to mention the people from the Dark Hall, even the Ancient Era's Elves and the others were stunned. In fact, even the Icesnow Phoenixes themselves were stunned.

What was going on? Not only did they convert an enemy into a friend, they were actually going to kill the people from the Dark Hall, their former allies? This wouldn't be a joke, right?

Could it be that this was a conspiracy?

The Ancient Era's Elves began to ponder.

"Kill!!!!!!!"

Even though the Icesnow Phoenixes were extremely puzzled, they still complied with their Clan Chief's order.

One by one, they took out their weapons and began to massacre the people from the Dark Hall.

“You unfaithful bas...”

“No!!!!”

How could the people from the Dark Hall possibly be a match for the Icesnow Phoenixes? At that moment, other than screaming and crying for help, the only thing they could do was curse at the Icesnow Phoenixes.

However, none of that could change the reality before them. Before absolute power, the people from the Dark Hall and those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts were soon massacred by the Icesnow Phoenixes.

In fact, not even a single intact corpse remained. The only thing that remained was blood frozen atop the ice glaciers.

“Gulp.”

After personally seeing the methods of the Icesnow Phoenixes, the experts from the Ancient Era's Elves' army involuntarily gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

As the saying goes, ‘take what you hear to be false, only believe it when you see it’. Just then, they had seen for themselves exactly how powerful and fierce the Icesnow Phoenixes were.

At that moment, they all felt traces of rejoice in their hearts.

They were glad that they had not waged war against the Icesnow Phoenixes earlier. Else, with the strength of the Icesnow Phoenixes, even if they were able to defeat them, they would definitely have suffered a disastrous amount of casualties.

“Everyone, please.”

At that moment, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief walked to the

front of the crowd and began to personally lead the way for the Elf King and the others.

“Your Majesty, this...” Everything had happened too quickly. The crowd was still unable to react to it. Thus, they all looked to the Elf King.

“Haha...” At that moment, the Elf King smiled brilliantly. Then, he said, “It’s definitely our little friend Chu Feng. He once again changed the battle situation by himself. He has once again helped us win another battle.”

“The way I see it, the Icesnow Phoenixes will no longer be our great enemy. Likely, they will instead become our allies.”

“.....”

Hearing those words, the crowd all came to a sudden realization. Upon thinking about it, it was only Chu Feng who could create such an enormous change in such a short period of time.

After confirming that Chu Feng had reversed the battle situation and converted their great enemy, the Icesnow Phoenixes, into their allies, the crowd was pleased beyond expectation, and also endlessly astonished.

Just like that, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army entered the Icesnow Phoenixes’ territory.

Due to the fact that the Icesnow Phoenixes’ territory was not very large, the army stationed themselves outside. However, the Icesnow Phoenixes treated them like important guests. They prepared top-notch food and wine for the Ancient Era’s Elves’ alliance army.

Neither the food nor the wine were ordinary. Instead, they were capable of replenishing one’s spirit power and martial power. In fact, they were treasures capable of temporarily increasing one’s battle power.

At the moment when the Ancient Era’s Elves’ army was being

entertained, the top experts like the Elf King, the Four Grand Elders, the Eight Great Protectors, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and some others were invited into the Icesnow Phoenixes' territory.

In the Icesnow Phoenixes' territory was a vast plaza. All of the Icesnow Phoenixes' upper echelons were gathered in the plaza.

It seemed the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief had an important announcement to make.

Chapter 2048 – Exceptional Treasure

“Everyone, I am truly sorry. I was incompetent, and ended up being exploited by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master,” After everyone was gathered, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief used a very resounding voice to explain to the crowd how the people from the Dark Hall had exploited them, and what had happened in the process.

Due to the fact that the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief’s voice was extremely resounding, not only did all of the Icesnow Phoenixes hear it, even the Ancient Era’s Elves’ allied army outside the Icesnow Phoenixes’ territory heard it.

“Sure enough, it’s little friend Chu Feng.”

After the Icesnow Phoenixes learned the truth, they were extremely furious. However, as for the Ancient Era’s Elves, they were not only furious. At the same time, they were also feeling great admiration.

Of course, they were not admiring the Icesnow Phoenixes, nor were they admiring the Dark Hall. Rather, they were admiring Chu Feng.

As matters stood, they were absolutely certain that such a dramatic change had happened because of Chu Feng.

It would be one thing if it was in the past. However, Chu Feng had actually managed to convert enemies into friends at such a crucial time. As such, the significance of his actions was completely different.

“Never would I have expected that little friend Chu Feng not only possesses a lot of friends, his friends are all extraordinary people too,” At that moment, Zhang Ming spoke with a beaming smile.

“Indeed,” The Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others also nodded to express their approval. Like Zhang Ming, they also

had beaming smiles on their faces.

First it was Du Wanwu, a frightening existence that nearly brought about the complete annihilation of the Ancient Era's Elves' army. Yet... he was Chu Feng's friend.

And now, another of Chu Feng's friends had appeared. This friend of his seemed even more exceptional. This friend was actually the Chieftain of the strongest and most mysterious monstrous beasts in the Holy Land of Martialism.

To have this many friends, and for his friends to be this exceptional, the crowd all felt endless admiration for Chu Feng.

.....

After he finished his announcement, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief began to organize the army of Icesnow Phoenixes. He was determined to join hands with the Ancient Era's Elves to eradicate the Dark Hall for taking advantage of them.

After the troops were organized, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief arrived at the castle that Tantai Xue lived in.

After he entered Tantai Xue's room, he discovered that Chu Feng was still chatting with Tantai Xue. The two of them had smiles on their faces and were chatting very joyously. There was no longer any trace of the sentimental feelings they had revealed earlier.

Upon seeing the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief, Chu Feng walked forward and said, "Lord Clan Chief, let's set off right away."

Even though Chu Feng was here, he knew what had happened outside. He knew... that they must quickly take care of the Dark Hall, that they could not allow the Dark Hall time to prepare.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I actually wanted to tell you to stay here to accompany our Lady Chieftain. You can leave the Dark Hall to us," The Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief said to Chu Feng.

The way he saw it, Chu Feng's strength was limited. Rather than

following them into battle, it would be safer for him to stay here.

However, Chu Feng shook his head. He said, "This matter concerns me deeply. No matter what, I must go. Even if my strength might be limited, I must still personally see to the death of that Dark Hall's Hall Master."

"This..." Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief appeared to have been placed in a difficult situation. However, in the end, he smiled and said, "Very well then."

"Chu Feng, wait a moment," However, right at the moment when the two of them were about to leave, Tantai Xue suddenly spoke to stop them. Then, she said to the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief, "Senior, I have one thing I would like to request of you. I hope that you will agree to it."

"Lady Chieftain, you are our Chieftain. Whatever it is, you can just command me. As long as I am able to accomplish it, I will definitely do it. Even if it is impossible for me to accomplish, I will also do my best to attempt to accomplish it. I will definitely not go against your orders," The Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief said in a very serious manner. It could be seen that he was completely devoted to Tantai Xue.

Hearing those words, Tantai Xue revealed a relaxed expression. Then, she took an exquisite case from her Cosmos Sack.

"Lady Chieftain, you couldn't possibly be..." Seeing that case, the expression of the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief immediately changed.

"Senior, please allow me," Tantai Xue raised the case up high and abruptly knelt before the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief.

However, before Tantai Xue's knees could hit the ground, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief supported her with his arms. At that moment, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief had an expression of helplessness across his face. He had a wry smile on his face as he

said, “That belongs to you. Regardless of what you wish to do with it, I will not stop you.”

“Thank you senior,” Hearing those words, Tantai Xue smiled brilliantly. Then, she opened the case and handed it to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, take a look. Are you capable of refining it?”

A burst of coldness immediately emitted from the opened case.

After the coldness spread out, Chu Feng was able to see that there was a walnut-sized pearl in the case.

At first glance, that pearl appeared like a glass pearl. There didn’t seem to be anything special about it.

However, upon closer inspection, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously, and intense shock appeared in his eyes.

Chu Feng saw a world of ice and snow in that pearl. Contained within that world of ice and snow were countless amounts of Icesnow Phoenixes. They were spiraling around in that world.

After seeing all that, Chu Feng felt an incomparably strong Natural Energy being emitted from that pearl. That natural energy assailed Chu Feng directly in the face.

Furthermore, that Natural Energy was incomparably pure. It did not possess any berserk nature. Not to mention Chu Feng, even ordinary people would be able to absorb and refine it.

The Natural Energy was truly too dense. It was so unimaginably dense. It could be said to be the densest amount of Natural Energy Chu Feng had ever encountered so far. Most importantly, such a dense amount of Natural Energy was actually not berserk in the slightest.

That was most definitely a treasure, an exceptional treasure, a priceless treasure. Even the Imperial Armaments that everyone wanted to obtain in the Holy Land of Martialism would be greatly inferior to that pearl’s preciousness.

“This is?!!!!” Overwhelmed with shock, Chu Feng wanted to ask about the pearl’s origin.

“That is our Icesnow Phoenix Race’s Clan Protection Treasure. It has been passed on from the Ancient Era, and kept safe by our successive Clan Chiefs. It is a cultivation resource that only our Clan Chiefs use,” The Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief said.

“It’s actually that precious?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. He knew he would be able to obtain enormous power should he refine that pearl. Furthermore, what he needed the most right now was to increase his cultivation. In other words, that pearl was what Chu Feng needed the most.

After sensing the Natural Energy contained within the pearl, the first thing that came to Chu Feng’s mind was that his cultivation would be able to increase again.

But, after he discovered the origin of that pearl, Chu Feng started to hesitate. The reason for that was because that pearl was extremely significant to the Icesnow Phoenixes.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I have heard from Lady Chieftain that you possess a special method that could allow you to refine Natural Energies all at once. Furthermore, you are able to perfectly absorb all of the Natural Energy.”

“The purpose of this pearl’s existence is to increase the cultivation of our Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chiefs. However, the method with which our Icesnow Phoenixes increase our cultivation is by relying on our own Bloodline’s power and training with it.”

“To us, that pearl is actually not extremely effective in assisting with our cultivation. As of now, it is nothing more than a souvenir.”

“If little friend Chu feng is truly capable of utilizing that pearl to perfection and completely refining all of the Natural Energy

contained within it, it would be a good thing.”

“Furthermore, Lady Chieftain has already determined to give it to you. Thus, it already no longer belongs to our Icesnow Phoenix Race. Instead, it is yours now.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, you must definitely not decline it. If you’re truly able to refine it, then go ahead and refine it,” The Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief said with a beaming smile. Although he was reluctant to part with the pearl, he still respected Tantai Xue’s decision.

Chapter 2049 – Rank Four Martial Emperor

“Chu Feng, it has always been you helping me. If it wasn’t for you... I would’ve never been able to come here and meet these seniors who have treated me like their relatives. You allowed me to find a home again.”

“Chu Feng, let me help you this one time. As you always say, if you consider me as your friend, don’t act this modest,” Tantai Xue looked at Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

Tantai Xue was someone who rarely smiled. However, today, she had smiled a lot. Today was probably the day that Chu Feng had seen the most smiles from Tantai Xue since the day he had met her.

Seeing Tantai Xue saying it like this, Chu Feng also smiled. He was an understanding person. Thus, he merely smiled, and did not even say thank you to Tantai Xue.

After Chu Feng smiled, he suddenly opened his mouth and directly swallowed the pearl.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what are you doing? Quickly, spit it out.”

“Even if the Natural Energy contained in that pearl is extremely pure, you still can’t do this.”

“Regardless of how pure the Natural Energy might be, if you are to consume too much of it, it will still cause side-effects.”

“Quick, you must spit it out and refine it slowly,” The Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief was greatly alarmed upon seeing this scene.

However, Chu Feng only smiled. Then, he sat cross-legged on the ground, clasped his palms together and closed his eyes.

Chu Feng actually ignored the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief’s advice and began to refine the pearl.

“Senior, let him be. Chu Feng is different from us. He possesses

his own method of cultivation,” Tantai Xue said.

“But, even if that is the case, to cultivate like this, is it really fine? Isn’t it too risky?” After Tantai Xue spoke, that Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief no longer tried to stop Chu Feng. Merely, he continued to look at Chu Feng with a skeptical gaze. He still did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to refine that much, pure Natural Energy at once.

However, Chu Feng’s body was extremely special. Thus, after that pearl entered Chu Feng’s body, even the rank eight Martial Emperor-level Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief was unable to see the situation within Chu Feng’s body.

Time passed quickly. Chu Feng had sat for an entire hour now. After an entire hour had passed, Tantai Xue also became slightly worried.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was frowning deeply. Furthermore, his frown was growing more and more creased. This sort of situation persisted for an entire hour.

Fortunately, after that hour passed, Chu Feng’s creased brows started to unfold. Furthermore, a relaxed smile appeared on his face. Soon, he opened his eyes.

“Tantai Xue, you have truly helped me enormously,” After Chu Feng opened his eyes, he immediately got up. He first expressed his thanks to Tantai Xue, and then clasped his fist at the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief, “Senior, thank you for this great gift. Junior will definitely repay senior’s kindness.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, could it be that you’ve succeeded? You managed to completely refine the Natural Energy contained in that pearl?” The Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief looked to Chu Feng with an astonished expression.

Even though he was unable to see through Chu Feng’s cultivation, Chu Feng’s complexion was a lot rosier. This sort of

reaction was extremely unusual. At the very least, it meant that Chu Feng had not received any backlash from the pearl.

However, this came as an astonishment for him. Even if Chu Feng could refine that pearl, it shouldn't be this fast, no?

“Senior, please have a look. This is the power bestowed to me by that pearl.”

As Chu Feng spoke, his clothes suddenly fluttered. Then, a boundless aura swept forth.

Upon sensing Chu Feng's aura, not to mention the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief, even Tantai Xue revealed an astonished expression.

Chu Feng's aura was no longer that of a rank two Martial Emperor. Instead, it was that of a rank four Martial Emperor.

Through that pearl, Chu Feng had increased two entire levels of cultivation, and directly became an actual rank four Martial Emperor.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you only managed to increase your cultivation by two levels after completely refining that pearl?” However, after being astonished, the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief was surprised.

The way he saw it, Chu Feng had most definitely completely refined that pearl. However, with how dense the Natural Energy contained in that pearl was, it should not have been difficult for Chu Feng to directly reach peak Martial Emperor. However, Chu Feng's cultivation had only increased by two levels. This made him feel extremely puzzled.

“Senior, my Inherited Bloodline is a bit special. I need a lot of Natural Energy to reach a breakthrough in my cultivation.”

“For ordinary people, they will generally train with mysterious techniques to absorb Natural Energy in order to achieve enlightenment and reach a breakthrough. For them, cultivation

resources are only complementary items that can allow them to reach a breakthrough sooner. The reason for that is because, if they cannot achieve enlightenment and sense the opportunity to break through, regardless of how concentrated the Natural Energy contained in their bodies might be, they will still be unable to reach a breakthrough.”

“As for my Inherited Bloodline, its strength is that I will very rarely encounter any bottlenecks during my breakthroughs. Ever since my Inherited Bloodline awoke, I have only rarely reached a wall when attempting to break through. Even when I do, I will easily be able to obtain enlightenment. Thus, as long as I possess sufficient amounts of Natural Energy in my dantian, I will be able to increase my cultivation.”

“However, the disadvantage of my Inherited Bloodline is that I require a frightening amount of Natural Energy to break through. Thus, this leads to me being unable to use mysterious techniques to absorb Natural Energy. Ever since my Inherited Bloodline awakened, I have been searching for external sources of Natural Energy the entire time.”

“Not long after I arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism, ordinary Martial Beads ended up being completely useless to me. I ended up only being able to reach a breakthrough through refining Natural Oddities. However, as matters stand, I am rarely able to find cultivation resources that can increase my cultivation in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“For the Icesnow Phoenix Race’s pearl that was passed on from the Ancient Era to be able to increase my cultivation by two entire levels is something that even I would not have dared imagine to be possible,” Chu Feng explained to the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief.

“Never would I have thought that little friend Chu Feng would possess such a special Inherited Bloodline. However, the way I see it, that is not a bad thing at all. Instead, it’s a very good thing. For

you to not need to comprehend the Natural Energy and the opportunity to reach a breakthrough, it is something that countless people yearn for in their dreams,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief actually revealed a trace of envy in his eyes.

“Tantai Xue, Lord Clan Chief.”

“I am not being pretentious here. You all have truly helped me enormously.”

“Thus, please accept this gesture of respect from me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to bow to the two of them.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Is there really a need for this?” Tantai Xue was a bit displeased by Chu Feng expressing his thanks again.

Chu Feng laughed and said, “It is not that I am being overly courteous. Rather, I am too excited. You see, not only did I managed to obtain Natural Energy from that pearl, I also obtained a Taboo Martial Skill.”

“Taboo Martial Skill?” Both Tantai Xue and the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief were startled upon hearing those words.

“When we encounter the people from the Dark Hall, I can display it to Lord Clan Chief,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Let us set off then,” The Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief said happily.

Then, the Icesnow Phoenixes’ Clan Chief, the Elf King, Chu Feng and the allied army began to majestically proceed toward the Dark Hall’s headquarters.

At that moment. In that frightening palace in the Dark Hall’s headquarters. Xue Ji appeared before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“What did you say?! Chu Feng actually knew that Icesnow Phoenix Race’s girl? Furthermore, the Icesnow Phoenix Race has

become allies of the Ancient Era's Elves now?!" At that moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master revealed an extremely marvelous expression.

He was angry, furious, shocked, and panicky.

He had trusted the Icesnow Phoenixes deeply. He felt that the Icesnow Phoenixes definitely possessed the strength to be able to stop the Ancient Era's Elves for him.

However, he had not expected Xue Ji to bring him this sort of news upon her return.

Chapter 2050 – Have Committed All Sorts Of Evil

“That’s not all. I think that Chu Feng has already woken up that girl. Else, that Icesnow Phoenix old man would not have immediately eliminated the people from our Dark Hall upon his return,” Xue Ji said.

“Chu Feng, it’s Chu Feng again. If I knew this was going to happen, I would’ve crippled him at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was so furious that his complexion turned blue. His veins were all bulging and raging flames filled his heart. He was nearly on the verge of exploding.

Back then, he had simply not placed Chu Feng in his eyes at all. He had felt that the only obstacle in the Holy Land of Martialism that was capable of getting in his way were the Ancient Era’s Elves, that his only opponents were the Ancient Era’s Elves.

As for Chu Feng, a person who was also from the Outer World like him, he had not placed him in his eyes at all. He had not worried about Chu Feng, and had merely considered him to be a plaything.

However, his many plans had now all been ruined because of Chu Feng. If it hadn’t been for Chu Feng, he might have already eliminated the Ancient Era’s Elves, and turned the Dark Hall into the ruler of the Holy Land of Martialism.

“You’re not the only one that underestimated Chu Feng. Thus, you don’t have to blame yourself.”

“The problem we have at hand is that the Icesnow Phoenixes will definitely come to attack us should they find out the truth.”

“Likely, the newly formed Alliance Army will also arrive soon. With our current strength, we will likely not be able to withstand

them.”

“Thus... we must withdraw from this place. If we are to withdraw now, if it is only you and I, we will be able to get away,” Xue Ji said to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Withdraw? How could we withdraw? If we are to withdraw now, wouldn’t all of our efforts go to waste?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master looked down below him. His eyes were filled with reluctance.

“Xue Ji, if I were to forcibly refine that thing right now, what would happen?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked.

“I’m not certain. However, at the very least, you will not die. Merely, it will be imperfect,” Xue Ji said.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master narrowed his eyes. He began to enter deep contemplation. After a long while, he said, “Release World Devastator and Immeasurable. Give the order to all the people of our Dark Hall.”

“Tell them, prepare for battle!!!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master came to that decision. Xue Ji smiled faintly. Then, without any hesitation, she said, “Got it.”

.....

Soon, the Alliance Army had arrived at the Dark Hall’s headquarters. It was a vast snowy valley.

Merely, countless Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts and people from the Dark Hall were densely packed over the top of the snowy valley.

Some of the people from the Dark Hall were not wearing masks. All those that weren’t wearing masks were familiar faces.

They were the World Devastator Immortal, the Immeasurable Immortal, the Heavenly Law Palace’s Palace Master, the Mortal King Palace’s Palace Master and some of the management elders

from the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace.

One thing worthy of being mentioned was that the leader of this group of people was a person who was also not wearing a mask. That man did not conceal his cultivation. He was a rank five Martial Emperor. At that moment, he was standing at the position of the boss. Evidently... he was the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“What a show. You were originally my allies. Yet, you all are now standing against me with my enemies.”

“Chu Feng, I've heard that it's all because of your good deed.” The Dark Hall's Hall Master looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. However, his smiling gaze was filled with killing intent.

Hatred. He felt enormously deep hatred for Chu Feng.

“”What I've done was naturally a good deed. As for you, what you've done are only malicious deeds,” Chu Feng said.

“Malicious deeds? Very well. Since you feel that I've done all sorts of malicious deeds, I might as well do one more malicious deed today,”

The Dark Hall's Hall Master smiled strangely. As he spoke, he waved his sleeve, and a spirit formation flashed through his surroundings. After that spirit formation flashed, a figure appeared before the crowd.

Upon seeing that person, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because that person was Emperor Huang's successor, Duan Jidao.

Duan Jidao was extremely thin. Being extremely old already... he appeared completely withered right now. He had the appearance of someone on the verge of dying.

“Chu Feng?!”

When Duan Jidao saw Chu Feng, the Ancient Era's Elves, the Icesnow Phoenixes and the army composed of experts from all over

the Holy Land of Martialism, his expression changed.

Suddenly, Duan Jidao started to smile. He looked to the Dark Hall's Hall Master and said, "It would seem that your days are numbered. People have come to avenge this old man."

Upon hearing what Duan Jidao said, Chu Feng's heart immediately tightened. Back then, Duan Jidao had been captured by the Dark Hall together with Yin Gongfu. However, now, only Duan Jidao appeared before them. Furthermore, he said those words. It was evident that Yin Gongfu was no longer here.

"Avenge you? Will that pile of trash really be able to do that?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master smiled mockingly at Duan Jidao's words. After saying those words, he made a grabbing motion with his hand, and Duan Jidao began to fly toward him. Then, he straightened his hand into a blade and pierced it into Duan Jidao's body and grabbed his dantian.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng immediately shouted, "Release him!"

"Release him? Me, as someone who has committed all sorts of evil, do you really think I will release him?"

"Chu Feng, you must've considered yourself a hero, and considered saving that bunch of trash as your duty, right?"

"Today, I'll let you know how tiny and insignificant you really are. You are simply unable to save anyone I wish to kill," After saying those words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master's hand tightened abruptly. "Bang," he had crushed Duan Jidao's dantian.

However, Duan Jidao did not even utter a single scream, even though his dantian had been destroyed. Instead, he opened his mouth and started to laugh. Then, with an extremely weak voice, he said to Chu Feng, "Little friend Chu Feng, I am someone who was soon to die anyway. Even without having him kill me, I would still have died."

"Merely, Gongfu and the others, they should not have died. Kill

that animal and avenge th...”

“Bang~~~”

However, before Duan Jidao could finish his words, his body exploded.

It was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Not only had the Dark Hall’s Hall Master crushed Duan Jidao’s dantian, he had also destroyed his body. He had killed Duan Jidao.

“Trash, come and take your revenge. I shall see what you can possibly do,” After killing Duan Jidao, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master started to provoke Chu Feng.

“Kill!!!”

Right at that moment, a furious snarl was heard. Following that, a figure instantly arrived before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and began to attack him. It was Du Wanwu. Being a rank nine Martial Emperor now, Du Wanwu had taken the initiative to attack the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Perfect timing.”

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master seemed to have already prepared for Du Wanwu’s attack. At the moment Du Wanwu approached him, his body began to flicker with lightning. Then, his Thunder Wings and Thunder Armor appeared on his body.

Not only that, his body also shifted to the side and dodged Du Wanwu’s attack. Then, he raised his leg and kicked Du Wanwu. He had actually managed to kick Du Wanwu, a rank nine Martial Emperor, and send him flying.

“Sure enough, he possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation,” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed. Seriousness appeared in his gaze.

Even if the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s cultivation had increased to that of a rank seven Martial Emperor after using his Thunder

Armor and Thunder Wings, he should not be able to contend against a rank nine Martial Emperor.

However, not only had he accomplished that, he was also holding superiority over Du Wanwu. This meant that he was the same as Chu Feng, and possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

Ordinary Martial Emperors only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. As for him, his heaven-defying battle power was two entire levels of cultivations above that of ordinary Martial Emperors. Naturally, that ended up making up for the difference in their martial cultivations.

Chapter 2051 – Not Needing Help

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, another loud sound was heard. As that sound was heard, a magnificent spark began to fly about in all directions like a torrential storm.

It was the Elf King. He had attacked. The Elf King held an Imperial Armament blade in his hand as he hacked down at the head of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

However, his attack was blocked by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with a dagger. That dagger was silver in color. Even though it was not shining brightly with light, it was extremely exquisite and emitted a dense Emperor’s might. From that, everyone was able to tell that it was no ordinary Imperial Armament. Instead, it was a top quality Imperial Armament.

“Did you really think that you could defeat me? Earlier, I was only fooling with you. If I become serious, you will not necessarily be a match for me,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master smiled coldly.

Then, he continued to attack. The dagger in his hand turned into many cold rays as he hacked at the Elf King nonstop.

“Humph,” However, the Elf King snorted coldly at the ferocious attacks of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. He had an extremely mocking smile on his face.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, the Elf King brandished his blade and collided with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, fighting blade against dagger.

At that moment, cold rays shot out all over. Their oppressive might was overwhelming. The reason for that was because the two men were not only using Imperial Armaments to fight. In addition to their Imperial Armaments, they were unleashing Martial Skills in continuous succession. Furthermore, all of their Martial Skills

were Taboo Martial Skills that contained overwhelming power.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, another loud explosion was heard. As that explosion sounded, a vast and mighty Emperor’s might spread forth.

The body of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master moved back explosively. He was knocked away by the Elf King.

At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had a very unsightly expression on his face. Even though he had been boasting earlier, everyone was able to tell that the Elf King held the upper hand in their fight.

“Come, again.”

After taking the upper hand in their battle, the Elf King unleashed his attacks once more. The blade in his hand looked like a ferocious beast. Every time it streaked across the sky, ear-piercing whistles would be heard, and fatal attacks would be unleashed.

“Damn it!”

Sensing that the situation was bad, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master hurriedly turned around. Light flashed under his feet. He was trying to escape.

“Roar~~~”

However, before he could get far, a bird’s cry sounded from the direction in which he was escaping. Then, a strong wind filled with snowflakes descended upon him as a two hundred meter-tall Icesnow Phoenix flew toward him with its giant mouth wide open.

“Damned bastards, you all are truly bullying me intolerably.”

“Today, this Hall Master shall let you all know that I am not someone that you, a bunch of trash from the lower realm, can contend against.”

Seeing that his path for retreat had been blocked, the Dark Hall’s

Hall Master no longer continued to flee. Instead, he flew into a rage out of humiliation and shouted angrily. Then, he flipped his wrist and took out another Imperial Armament dagger. He was actually using two identical Imperial Armaments simultaneously.

These two Imperial Armaments were capable of communicating with one another. Thus, after the second Imperial Armament dagger appeared, the strength of the Dark Hall's Hall Master increased greatly. He actually managed to contend against both the Elf King and the enormous Icesnow Phoenix by himself.

In the end, that enormous Icesnow Phoenix was only the embodiment of a treasure. Although it was undying and indestructible, it was no match for the Dark Hall's Hall Master, and would oftentimes be beaten back by him.

On the other hand, the Elf King's strength was outstanding. With him here, even though the Dark Hall's Hall Master had increased his battle power, he was still left in a disadvantaged state.

“As expected of the Elf King. He is truly the fully-deserving... Holy Land of Martialism's number one expert.”

Seeing this match between peak Martial Emperors with their own eyes, the crowd all felt deeply impressed, and began to exclaim in admiration for the Elf King. Even though they were all rank nine Martial Emperors, the Elf King's strength clearly surpassed the strength of others at the same cultivation level as him.

“You all, have you come here to kill us or have you come here to enjoy the show?”

Suddenly, when the crowd was attracted by the battle between the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Elf King, a mocking laugh suddenly sounded. It was Xue Ji. Xue Ji was standing extremely close to the Alliance Army.

“We have naturally come to eliminate you!!!”

At that moment, Du Wanwu attacked again. The person that he wished to kill the most was not the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Instead, it was that Xue Ji.

“Not bad, that's more like it.”

However, when faced with Du Wanwu's attack, that Xue Ji was smiling. Then, her body shifted and, like the wind, she dodged Du Wanwu's attack.

“That woman!!!”

Seeing that Xue Ji was actually able to dodge Du Wanwu's attack, the expressions of the crowd all changed. Even though she had not revealed her cultivation yet, the fact that she had managed to dodge Du Wanwu's attack was enough to show that she was a peak Martial Emperor.

“If she's a peak Martial Emperor, why did she escape from the territory of the Ancient Era's Elves that day?”

“Could it be that she had already detected that the Elf King was arriving?”

At that moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. He was unable to understand why Xue Ji, with how powerful she was, would decide to escape when he had led the stone army to provide assistance to Xian Miaomiao.

After all, no matter how powerful his stone army was, they would still be no match for a peak Martial Emperor.

“Roar~~~”

The very next moment, the Icesnow Phoenixes unleashed their attacks. They were followed closely by the Ancient Era's Elves and the others. Together, they surrounded the people from the Dark Hall to kill them.

As for the Dark Hall, they possessed the greatest amount of Ancient Era's ferocious beasts at their headquarters. Furthermore,

all of them possessed very high levels of cultivation. There were even several that were at the level of rank eight Martial Emperors.

Those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts advanced bravely. They charged toward the incoming Alliance Army and began to battle them. They had managed to block all of the top experts among the Alliance Army.

However, the Alliance Army possessed a numerous amount of people. Furthermore, there were the Icesnow Phoenixes. Even though their numbers were not great, each and every one of them possessed powerful strength. They charged into the Dark Hall's army and began to rain death upon them.

At that moment, battle erupted everywhere. Blade rays and sword silhouettes were all covered by violently surging energy ripples. War cries and anguished wailings were interweaved together. Following that, an overwhelming amount of blood began to splatter from the sky.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we meet again.”

Right at that moment, a cold and dark laugh sounded from behind Chu Feng.

Turning his head, two figures appeared behind Chu Feng.

They were the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master. These two rank eight Martial Emperor-level experts had actually not gone to fight against the Alliance Army, and instead came to attack Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you have nowhere to escape to today.”

Right at that moment, another cold and dark voice sounded. At the same moment as that voice was heard, an extremely strong killing intent assailed Chu Feng.

Chu Feng turned around once again. This time, he discovered that it was actually the World Devastator Immortal.

The Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master and the World Devastator Immortal, these three rank eight Martial Emperors had actually joined hands to come and take care of Chu Feng.

It could be seen that they had planned this in advance. They all knew how important Chu Feng was to the Alliance Army. Thus, they planned to capture Chu Feng, and then use Chu Feng to threaten them.

“Damn it!!!”

“Bastards!!!”

Right at that moment, angry shouts sounded from the fighting armies.

They were from the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the Ancient Era's Elves' Four Grand Elders. They all noticed that the situation for Chu Feng was bad. Thus, they wanted to rush toward Chu Feng to help him.

However, it was clear that the Dark Hall was prepared. Those Ancient Era's ferocious beasts that they were tangled with simply did not allow them the chance to break free. Overwhelmed with anger, they ended up cursing out loud.

“Chu Feng, do you see this? There's no one to save you now,” The Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master stared at Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

At the same time, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master and the World Devastator Immortal also revealed ugly smiles on their faces. They were looking at Chu Feng like he was an ant that they could crush to death at anytime.

After hearing what the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master said, Chu Feng also revealed a slight smile. Then, he said, “Who said I needed help?”

Chapter 2052 – Settlement

“.....”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, and seeing Chu Feng’s confident expression, the three rank eight Martial Emperors’ expressions all turned sluggish. Involuntarily, a burst of chilliness rose from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Zzzzz~”

Right at that moment, a flash of lightning shone in Chu Feng’s eyes.

As the lightning flashed past, Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings emerged simultaneously.

At that moment, Chu Feng revealed a cultivation of rank six Martial Emperor.

As Chu Feng stood in the sky, he gave off a powerful sensation, the feeling of a supreme ruler.

“You!!!”

Sensing Chu Feng’s cultivation of rank six Martial Emperor and his boundless aura, the three men’s expressions immediately changed enormously. At that moment, they were actually panicking and at a loss as to what to do.

They knew of the matters concerning Chu Feng extremely well. When he was a rank two Martial Emperor, he was able to increase his cultivation to rank four Martial Emperor through a special method, and even managed to seriously injure the Immeasurable Immortal, a rank seven Martial Emperor.

And now, Chu Feng had increased his cultivation to rank six Martial Emperor. As such, even though they were rank eight Martial Emperors, they would still be no match for Chu Feng.

“Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal!!!”

Sensing that the situation was bad, the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master actually began to move backwards. At the same time, his body started to shine with golden light. Then, a square-shaped golden seal appeared on his palm.

Immediately after he formed the seal, he smashed his palm toward Chu Feng and shot that golden seal at him.

“Boom~~~”

After that golden seal left his hand, it began to rapidly increase in size. In a blink of an eye, it became as large as a palace. As that golden seal shot forth, it shattered even space itself, leaving it a complete mess.

Chu Feng recognized that martial skill. When he had fought against the Heavenly Law Palace's number one disciple, Leng Yue, she had also used that same Heaven Taboo: Dao Light Seal. Merely, the one unleashed by the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master was many times more powerful than the one Leng Yue had used.

“Heaven Taboo: Mortal King Slash!!!”

At the same time as the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master unleashed his attack, the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master also unleashed his attack at Chu Feng. It was also an extremely powerful Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

These two of humanity's strongest experts unleashed their attacks together. Furthermore, they used Heaven Taboo Martial Skills from the get-go. This caught the attention of many people. They all wished to know how Chu Feng was going to block those attacks.

“Roar~~~”

At the moment when the two Heaven Taboo Martial Skill containing devastating power were about to reach Chu Feng, a bird's cry sounded from Chu Feng's body. It was a special sort of bird's cry that belonged to the Icesnow Phoenixes.

Following that bird's cry, a special sort of coldness swept forth from Chu Feng's body and covered Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills landed on Chu Feng and exploded. However, the energy ripples from their explosions were instantly frozen by the chilliness Chu Feng emitted. They were unable to unleash their actual power, unable to cause the slightest bit of harm to Chu Feng.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly shouted.

“Heaven Taboo.”

“Icesnow Phoenix Breaker!!!”

Then, the coldness that Chu Feng emitted started to tremble violently.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the ear-piercing bird's cry sounded once again. Merely, this time around, it was no longer just a single cry. Instead, countless cries sounded in unison.

At the same time as the bird's cries sounded, cold rays shot forth from Chu Feng's body in succession. As they left his body, they rapidly increased in size.

Those were... Icesnow Phoenixes. Even though they were only images, they were all a hundred meters tall, and contained frightening might. At that moment, several thousands of Icesnow Phoenixes were flying toward the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King's Palace's Palace Master.

“Crap!”

Seeing this scene, the expressions of the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master changed enormously. The two of them flipped their palms and both took

out Imperial Armaments.

This was the first time that anyone had seen those two Imperial Armaments. However, they contained extremely frightening ancient auras. Likely, the two of them should've just obtained those two Imperial Armaments. It was very possible that they had been given to them by the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Once those Imperial Armaments were taken out, the two men's battle power increased greatly. However, they didn't unleash counterattacks at Chu Feng. Instead, they began to hurriedly use defensive Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to block Chu Feng's attack.

Like many forts, the two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills completely covered the two men. Their defenses were extremely strong.

It would seem that the two of them had realized that Chu Feng's attack was so strong that it was simply impossible for them to meet it head-on, and it was also impossible for them to escape from it. In that sort of situation, the only thing they could do was withstand it with all their might.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

When the thousands of Icesnow Phoenix images shot into the two defensive martial skills in succession, they emitted ear-piercing rumbles and dazzling energy ripples. When all of that was done, the crowd were shocked to discover that not only had the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace Palace Master's martial skills shattered, the two of them were also nowhere to be found.

There was not even a single bit of the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's Palace Masters remaining. Even their auras were completely gone.

However, they had most definitely not escaped. Instead, they had been killed. The reason for that was because their Imperial Armaments were still floating in midair.

Furthermore, their Cosmos Sacks were also floating in midair.

Dead. They were most definitely dead. They had been killed by Chu Feng. As for the reason why their Imperial Armaments and Cosmos Sacks remained unscathed from all that, it was because Chu Feng had deliberately kept them intact.

With merely a single attack, Chu Feng had killed both the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master.

"Heavens! What happened earlier?! Those were Icesnow Phoenixes!"

At that moment, the crowd were filled with astonishment. Everyone was able to tell that Chu Feng had unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, they were able to sense that Chu Feng's current battle power should only be that of a rank eight Martial Emperor, the same as the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King's Palace's Palace Master.

However, Chu Feng had killed the two Palace Masters with his Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

Most importantly, Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo Martial Skill was evidently a technique of the Icesnow Phoenixes. Chu Feng had actually managed to learn an Icesnow Phoenixes' Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. As such, how could the crowd not be astonished?

"Could that be what little friend Chu Feng meant...?" At that moment, not to mention the others that didn't know the truth, even the Icesnow Phoenixes' Clan Chief revealed a shocked appearance.

Even though Chu Feng had already mentioned to him that he had managed to learn a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill from that pearl, even he had not expected Chu Feng to have learned a martial skill that even the people of his Icesnow Phoenix Race didn't know.

The way he saw it, the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng had

unleashed earlier was stronger than all the Heaven Taboo Martial Skills that their Icesnow Phoenix Race possessed right now.

Most importantly, merely by looking at it, he was able to tell that the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng had used should have been extremely difficult to learn, even for him.

Yet Chu Feng had managed to master it in merely two hours. This made him have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

However, the person that was feeling the most complicated right now was none other than the World Devastator Immortal.

The World Devastator Immortal had realized how powerful Chu Feng was. When even the Heavenly Law Palace's Palace Master and the Mortal King Palace's Palace Master were killed by Chu Feng with a single attack, how could he possibly have certainty in being able to defeat Chu Feng?

Truth be told, he had no certainty of victory at all. However, he could not just give up like this, for he must avenge his son. If he didn't avenge his son now, there would be even less of a chance for him to be able to avenge his son in the future.

Thus, the World Devastator Immortal mustered up his courage and said, "Chu Feng, let us settle our grudges." In fact, the normally sissy-sounding World Devastator Immortal actually spoke with a manly voice when he said those words.

As for Chu Feng, he was calmly putting the two Imperial Armaments and Cosmos Sacks away.

Then, he turned around and looked to the World Devastator Immortal, "Indeed, it's time to settle this," After saying those words, intense coldness and overwhelming killing intent appeared in Chu Feng's eyes.

"You!!!!"

When the World Devastator Immortal's eyes met Chu Feng's, his expression suddenly took a huge change. His face turned ashen; it

was as if he had received a great terror.

This was not the first time he had seen that gaze. Chu Feng had revealed the same gaze at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation when he had killed the experts of the Ancient Era's Elves before Chu Feng, when he had killed Xian Miaomiao before Chu Feng, and when he had begun to torment and insult Chu Feng.

At that time, he felt it ridiculous that Chu Feng looked at him with that sort of gaze.

However, now, being looked at by that sort of gaze again, he felt his heart trembling with fear.

At that very moment, he realized that he would be no match for Chu Feng, absolutely no match.

Chapter 2053 – Torturing World Devastator

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the World Devastator Immortal turned around. His footsteps moved in rapid succession. With each step, he would leave a flickering imprint of golden light behind in the sky.

Those golden imprints were extremely dazzling. However, they soon disappeared. However, those golden imprints were capable of increasing the World Devastator Immortal’s speed, and allow him to run as if he were flying. In a flash, he had traveled ten thousand miles.

It was a Heaven Taboo Movement Martial Skill.

“This...” At that moment, many people were struck dumb.

The World Devastator Immortal had insisted over and over again that he would kill Chu Feng to avenge his son. Yet now, he was actually escaping. Furthermore, he was using a Heaven Taboo Movement Martial Skill to escape. This scene truly came as an enormous shock to the crowd.

“Heh...”

As for Chu Feng, he chuckled coldly at the rapidly escaping World Devastator Immortal. With a smile on his face, he began to chase after him.

Chu Feng was chasing after the World Devastator Immortal one step at a time. He had a very composed appearance. His steps were neither fast nor slow, and looked extremely graceful. However, his speed was extremely fast. He was so fast that even though the World Devastator Immortal was escaping with a Heaven Taboo Movement Martial Skill, he was unable to increase the distance between him and Chu Feng. Just like that, Chu Feng continued to follow behind the World Devastator Immortal.

This sort of situation caused the World Devastator Immortal to

panic more and more. causing sweat to cover his handsome face. In fact, even his special clothes were soaked in sweat.

The two men moved further and further away. Currently they had already separated themselves from the battlefield. After leaving the crowd's line of sight, the World Devastator Immortal revealed a difficult expression. It was as if he was making some sort of resolve.

“Paaa~~~”

Suddenly, the World Devastator Immortal stopped moving. Not only that, he even turned around and faced Chu Feng. Just like that, he knelt in midair.

“Chu Feng, I only tortured and humiliated you at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation.”

“But you, you killed my only son that I had painstakingly nurtured. And now you have strangled my hope for living. You have already taken revenge for what I did to you that day.”

“However, if you feel that that is still not enough to satisfy your hatred, I will apologize to you right now. Please, please spare me. Please let me live. I am willing to serve you all and help you all take care of the Dark Hall.”

Surrender. The World Devastator Immortal had actually decided to surrender to Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng smiled coldly at the World Devastator Immortal. He said, “You’ve only tormented me and humiliated me? If that were the case, then it would be true that my killing of your son would’ve sufficed as revenge.”

“However, could you have forgotten about all the Ancient Era’s Elves you killed at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation? You even killed the Little Princess of the Ancient Era’s Elves, Xian Miaomiao. If she didn’t have the means to protect her life, she would’ve already been erased from this world.”

“Yet now, you actually have the nerve to say that you only tormented and humiliated me? You’ve actually completely disregarded all those that you’ve killed. It would seem that you do not consider them to be people at all. Even though they were killed by you, you do not even put that matter to heart at all.”

“However, I might as well tell you this. To me, those people were extremely important. Since you killed them, I will definitely not spare you.”

As Chu Feng said those words, the coldness in his eyes increased explosively. Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted; he arrived before the World Devastator Immortal. At that moment, violently whistling wind could be heard as Chu Feng’s fist smashed onto the World Devastator Immortal’s face like a meteor. It did not stop with a single fist. Each one of Chu Feng’s fists landed straight onto the World Devastator Immortal’s face. In a flash, many fist strikes had landed.

When Chu Feng’s final fist landed, the World Devastator Immortal was already submerged deep into the ground. Chu Feng had actually punched him directly from the sky all the way to the ground.

When Chu Feng retracted his fists, the World Devastator Immortal’s face was not only badly battered, it had changed beyond recognition. Even his skull had been shattered by Chu Feng’s fists. In other words, it was not only his handsome face, his entire head had been destroyed.

“Buzz~~~”

However, a stream of world spirit power suddenly condensed from the World Devastator Immortal’s body. It formed a new head with the same exact appearance as the World Devastator Immortal’s destroyed head.

No matter what, the World Devastator Immortal was someone with renowned world spirit techniques. To him, instantly

recovering a portion of his body was only a trifling task.

However, at that moment, the World Devastator Immortal was still grimacing in pain, and his face distorted. It was not because he had failed to recover his face and head. Rather, the pain from Chu Feng's beating was still vivid in his mind.

Chu Feng's fists were no ordinary fists. With each fist, he not only destroyed the World Devastator Immortal's face and shattered his skull, but also inflicted serious damage to the World Devastator Immortal's soul. Thus, even though the World Devastator Immortal had condensed a new head, the pain of his shattered bones was still vivid in his mind.

However, even though he was in so much pain that his face grew extremely distorted, the World Devastator Immortal still squeezed out a smile. He said to Chu Feng, "Have you managed to alleviate your anger?"

"Alleviate my anger?"

"Even if I am to kill you ten thousand times, it would not suffice to eliminate the hatred in my heart."

"However, before killing you, I must make you suffer," As Chu Feng spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack. It was an invisible spirit formation. Contained within that spirit formation was a pile of sesame seed-like objects. However, they were crimson in color, and emitted fiery light.

"Blazing Heart Poisoning Insect! What are you planning to do with those?!!"

Upon seeing the insects, the World Devastator Immortal immediately started to panic. As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he naturally knew how frightening the Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects were. If one were to be bitten by a single Blazing Heart Poisoning Insect, one would feel a blazing pain at the location where one was bitten. Even if one were to turn

incorporeal, the pain would not disappear.

Like its name implied, the pain from the Blazing Heart Poisoning Insect reached one's heart and soul. It was a pain that could not be erased.

It would be alright if one were to be bitten once by a single Blazing Heart Poisoning Insect. After all, martial cultivators were able to endure small wounds and pains.

However, the pain brought forth by the Blazing Heart Poisoning Insect was a pain that would increase exponentially the more one was bitten.

At that moment, there were over ten thousand Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects in Chu Feng's spirit formation. The increased pain from over ten thousand Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects was simply something unimaginable and definitely intolerable.

"I created these Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects especially for you."

As Chu Feng spoke, he grabbed that spirit formation and pushed it into the World Devastator Immortal's body. As that spirit formation collided with his body, it immediately shattered and released the over ten thousand Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects. The insects began to crawl all over the World Devastator Immortal's body, biting everywhere.

"Ahh!!!"

Unable to endure the pain, the World Devastator Immortal soon started to scream. His screams grew more and more miserable. As the number of places he was bitten by the Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects increased, the pain that he felt also grew more and more unbearable.

Soon, his flesh started to split open. It was a very frightening sight. However, other than screaming, there was nothing the World Devastator Immortal could do. As such, he did not possess

the heart to recover his body.

As for Chu Feng, he stood there watching the World Devastator Immortal being tormented by pain.

One's ability to endure something would always be limited. The pain brought forth by all those Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects was unimaginably frightening. Even if they did not cause the World Devastator Immortal to die from the shock of being overwhelmed by pain, they would still cause him to have a nervous breakdown. That was precisely what Chu Feng wanted to do to him.

“Chu Feng, you ruthless little bastard! Even if I am to become a ghost, I will not let you get away with this!!!”

Overwhelmed with pain, the World Devastator Immortal started to rain curses upon Chu Feng. The way he saw it, he had killed countless people throughout his life. However, he had never used such a ruthless method to torment them. Yet, Chu Feng had done so. Not only had he done so, he had done it to him.

“Ruthless?” Chu Feng snorted lightly. Then, he said, “I only use my ruthlessness on ruthless individuals.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng clenched a fist, and a golden sword appeared in his hand.

That sword was very long. Yet, it was also very thin, needle thin. That sword... was formed with world spirit power.

“Pu, pu, pu, pu, pu~~~”

Then, Chu Feng began to use that sword to pierce the World Devastator Immortal's body all over.

With each pierce, the World Devastator Immortal would let out an even more miserable scream.

At that moment, Chu Feng began to recall the Ancient Era's Elves the World Devastator Immortal had killed one by one at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. He also recalled the scene where the

World Devastator Immortal killed Xian Miaomiao.

Chu Feng grew more and more angry. The speed with which he pierced the needle-thin sword grew faster and faster, more and more ruthless.

Chapter 2054 – Such An End

“I’ll kill you! I’ll kill you!! Ahhh!!!”

“You damned bastard! If I survive today, I will definitely make everyone related to you meet a miserable death by my hands!!!”

Suffering from pain that was growing more and more intolerable, the World Devastator Immortal started to rain more and more curses upon Chu Feng. He felt that he would definitely die today. However, he did not wish to be tormented to death. Since it would be death anyways, he’d rather anger Chu Feng so that Chu Feng would kill him and end his suffering.

“You wish to make me kill you?”

“Haha...”

“Rest assured, I will definitely kill you. However, I will definitely not kill you now.”

Chu Feng had seen through the World Devastator Immortal’s thoughts. As he spoke, he put away the world spirit sword, and then began to form hand seals with one hand. At that moment, dazzling light began to shine from the places pierced by Chu Feng’s world spirit sword.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Following the light, the Blazing Poison Heart Insects that were biting the World Devastator Immortal’s body soon entered the light. They reached the insides of the World Devastator Immortal’s body, as well as his bones and organs, and began to continue to bite him.

“Ahh~~~”

“Noo~~~”

“You damned animal!!!”

“No! You’re a demon!!”

“You damned demon!!!”

The World Devastator Immortal who had finally realized Chu Feng’s intentions let out screams of despair.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the ground started to tremble violently, as if an earthquake had struck the region. Even the frost and ice that covered the ground started to shatter.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. He subconsciously turned his gaze to the snowy valley where the Dark Hall’s headquarters was located. He was able to tell that the trembling had originated from the Dark Hall’s headquarters.

However, they were truly too far away. As such, Chu Feng was unable to see what was happening over there, and ended up having to use his Heaven’s Eyes.

“Oh no,” After using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. An uneasy gaze involuntarily appeared.

His Heaven’s Eyes were fixed onto the summit of the snowy valley, on the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

An enormous change had actually occurred to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. At that moment, dark black organisms covered his entire body. They were actually fusing with his body. As the dark black organisms fused with his body, his power began to rapidly increase.

Most frighteningly, from the depths of the snowy valley, countless such black organisms were flying out and fusing with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Faced with that situation, not to mention the Alliance Army, even the Elf King was unable to stop the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. They could only watch as that scene continued to unfold.

At that moment, everyone from the Alliance Army that saw this

scene revealed alarmed expressions.

The reason for that was because the Dark Hall's Hall Master's aura had already surpassed that of the Elf King. Furthermore, it was still increasing. If this were to continue, he would likely reach the legendary Half Martial Ancestor realm. At that time, there would likely not be anyone capable of stopping him in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

“Why is this happening?”

“Could it be that that guy trained in some demonic technique?”

At that moment, Chu Feng also felt extremely uneasy. The reason for that was because it was not only the Elf King and the others that were powerless to do anything to stop this, even Chu Feng was powerless. He did not know how he could change the current situation.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall's Hall Master uttered a demon-like snarl. That voice was most definitely not the voice of a human, nor should it be emitted from the mouth of a human.

However, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had clearly uttered that sort of roar.

Most importantly, after that snarl was heard, the black organisms coming from the depths of the snowy valley grew more and more numerous. In merely the blink of an eye, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had turned into a several hundred meter-tall giant monster.

Monster. He was most definitely a monster now. His entire body was black. He possessed countless hands, countless legs and even countless enormous eyes.

His original body was long gone. It had been buried deeply by the monster that now covered him. In other words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was simply a monster now.

“You shall all die!!!”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master let out a hoarse voice. Even his voice had changed. It had become more frightening than the voices of monstrous beasts. Not only was it hoarse, it was also emitting dense killing intent.

After his voice sounded, a powerful oppressive might swept forth. Not to mention the Alliance Army that was close to him, even Chu Feng who was far away from him was enveloped by that oppressive might.

“This oppressive might, could it be that he....”

After being enveloped by that oppressive might, even Chu Feng started to panic. The reason for that was because his body was actually unable to move. Furthermore, his cultivation had been bound. In fact, for Chu Feng and the others, they all felt as if they were suffocating.

In fact, it was not only Chu Feng and the others. Even the Elf King, a peak Martial Emperor, was restricted by that oppressive might.

Most frighteningly, it was only the people from the Alliance Army that were bound by that oppressive might. All the people from the Dark Hall were completely fine.

In other words, they who had held superiority in this battle were powerless to fight back now. They were like fishes atop the chopping block, waiting to be trampled upon by the people from the Dark Hall.

Such powerful oppressive might most definitely could not have been unleashed by a Martial Emperor. This meant that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s current cultivation had reached the level of Half Martial Ancestor.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s reaction was relatively better when compared to the others. The reason for that was because the other

people possessed dejected expressions. They all felt that they were going to undoubtedly be killed.

“A bunch of trash dared to come and fight against me? Do you all finally realize what it means to strike a stone with an egg?”

“Very good. This is precisely the expression I wanted to see. Go ahead and despair. To dare become my opponent, you all are destined to despair.”

Seeing the expressions of panic and despair on the faces of the Alliance Army, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master uttered a complacent laugh. His laugh resounded through heaven and earth, seeping into the hearts of the crowd.

“Wuu~~~”

However, suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s expression changed. He actually uttered an anguished wail. Then, enormous hands began to grab his ugly head as he continued to let out painful snarls.

Even though he had obtained a power comparable to that of Half Martial Emperor after being covered with the black organisms, he didn’t seem to have absolute control over that power. That was the reason why he was suffering a backlash right now.

In that sort of situation, the oppressive might that he emitted started to fluctuate in strength repeatedly. However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng and the others were still unable to move.

“Chu Feng, you must’ve never expected this sort of ending, right?”

Right at that moment, a cold and gloomy voice sounded. Chu Feng knew that it was most definitely the World Devastator Immortal.

Chu Feng put forth great effort to turn his head around. He discovered that the World Devastator Immortal was actually

managing to endure the pain from the Blazing Heart Poisoning Insects, and was walking toward him one step at a time. Furthermore, he held an Imperial Armament in his hand.

“Damn it!” At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown. Even though he was able to turn his body around, he was simply unable to unleash any of his strength. If this were to continue, he would only be waiting for death.

As for the World Devastator Immortal, it seemed that he feared that something unexpected would happen. As he endured the pain, his footsteps grew faster and faster. In the blink of an eye, he had arrived at a distance only ten meters away from Chu Feng.

Chapter 2055 – It's You

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the World Devastator Immortal raised the Imperial Armament in his hand. His face, which was still mutilated beyond recognition, revealed a malevolent gaze. Like a smile, yet not a smile. He looked to Chu Feng and shouted, “Chu Feng, in the end, you still lost to me. I am going to kill you to avenge my son!”

“Die!!!”

After he finished saying those words, the World Devastator Immortal hacked his Imperial Armament down at Chu Feng. He was planning to hack Chu Feng in two.

“Puu~~~”

Blood splattered all over, drenching Chu Feng's face.

Sensing the warm blood, Chu Feng revealed a shocked expression.

The reason for that was because he was unharmed. However, the World Devastator Immortal's arms were gone. They had fallen to the ground not far from where he stood. Together with his arms, his Imperial Armament had also fallen to the ground.

It turned out that the blood was not Chu Feng's blood. Rather, it was the World Devastator Immortal's blood. The World Devastator Immortal's arms had been instantly sliced off by someone the moment he had planned to hack Chu Feng to death.

At that moment, it was not only Chu Feng who revealed an expression of shock. The World Devastator Immortal also revealed an expression of even greater shock. He stood there as if he was petrified. It was as if he had forgotten about the pain of the insects biting his body.

Stunned. The World Devastator Immortal was completely

stunned. He was stunned by the scene before him.

“Chu Feng is not someone that you can kill.”

At the moment when the two men were extremely shocked and puzzled, a sweet-sounding voice was heard. Following that, a beautiful woman appeared between the World Devastator Immortal and Chu Feng.

“It’s you?!”

This woman was extremely and alluringly beautiful. However, it was precisely this woman who had caused Chu Feng’s eyes to open wide in even greater shock.

The reason for that was because this woman wearing a black dress was one of the trusted aides of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, Xue Ji.

“Xue Ji, why are you helping him?”

“You!!!!”

When the World Devastator Immortal discovered that the person who had sliced off his arms and prevented him from killing Chu Feng was actually Xue Ji, the shock in his eyes grew many times stronger. At the same time, he also felt endless fury.

Evidently, this sort of ending was not something that he had anticipated.

“You are not qualified to ask me that question,” However, Xue Ji merely smiled coldly at the World Devastator Immortal’s question. Then, coldness flashed through her eyes as she suddenly waved her sleeve. Following that, black gaseous flames appeared.

After the black gaseous flames appeared, they turned into a black sickle. The black sickle streaked across the World Devastator Immortal’s body and instantly hacked him in two.

When the World Devastator Immortal’s body that was hacked in two fell down to the ground, he no longer possessed any aura. He

had died. With merely a single strike, Xue Ji had killed the World Devastator Immortal, a rank eight Martial Emperor.

When the World Devastator Immortal died, his eyes had remained open. He had truly died with remaining grievances.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was frowning, and his eyes narrowed. When Xue Ji had killed the World Devastator Immortal earlier, he had finally sensed her cultivation. She was a rank five Martial Emperor.

Xue Ji's cultivation was only that of a rank five Martial Emperor. However, Xue Ji, a rank five Martial Emperor, had managed to kill the World Devastator Immortal, a rank eight Martial Emperor, with only a single attack.

This meant that Xue Ji possessed a heaven-defying battle power even more frightening than Chu Feng's. She should possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting seven levels of cultivation.

Ordinary Martial Emperors possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

Chu Feng and Xian Miaomiao only possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

However, this mysterious woman by the name of Xue Ji actually possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting seven levels of cultivation. That was truly too frightening.

"Exactly who are you?" Chu Feng stared at Xue Ji and asked very seriously. At this moment, all of the unease that he had felt before was confirmed. This woman by the name of Xue Ji was no ordinary character.

"My, my, my..."

"No matter what, we've known each other for years. I could be said to have watched you grow up. How could you not recognize me this quickly?"

Xue Ji then walked toward Chu Feng with a beaming smile on her face. She extended her lily-white hands in a teasing manner and lifted Chu Feng's chin.

To meet such a beauty face-to-face at such close range was something that would cause ordinary people to blush and their heartbeat to accelerate. However, Chu Feng, on the other hand, had a huge change in expression.

“It's you?!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng thought of something. After reaching that conclusion, Chu Feng's heart felt as if it were surging.

The reason for that was because the answer that Chu Feng thought of was truly too astonishing. That answer...

Was that Xue Ji was Chu Feng's other Asura World Spirit.

In other words, she was the Asura Evil Spirit that he had released at the Nangong Imperial Clan.

“You've finally remembered? But, to only recognize me now even after we've seen each other this many times, you have truly and bitterly disappointed me,” Xue Ji released Chu Feng and sighed with feigned disappointment.

However, her sigh caused Chu Feng's body to shiver. Xue Ji had confirmed Chu Feng's speculation. Indeed, she was the other Asura World Spirit in his body.

“You actually managed to take human form?”

“But, you were clearly an Evil Spirit. How did you manage to imitate a human this perfectly?” Chu Feng was extremely puzzled.

The way he saw it, Xue Ji's appearance was extremely human-like. There was not the slightest trace of a world spirit's aura at all, much less an evil spirit's aura.

“Did you really think that servant girl by the name of Eggy was stronger than me?”

“You were mistaken. When the two of us are compared, I am evidently the stronger one.”

“Thus, do not compare me to that Eggy. Furthermore, do not compare me to other world spirits. They are at a completely different level from me,” Xue Ji said.

“Exactly what do you want?” Chu Feng asked with a frown. Even though Xue Ji had saved him, he still felt a great amount of danger from her.

“What do I want? Great question.”

“However, what you should be worried about right now is not me. Rather, it’s that guy from the Dark Hall with the same Inherited Bloodline as you.”

“Right now... he has fused with the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts. Even though he has yet to completely grasp that power, it is only a question of time.”

“I’m afraid that you will all undoubtedly be killed today. However, if you are willing to beg me, I am willing to save your life so that you can die a bit later,” A strange gaze appeared in Xue Ji’s beautiful eyes.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. When Xue Ji had been in his body, Chu Feng had already been able to sense the dense killing intent that she had toward him.

When she had been released from his body, she had felt enormous hatred for him. In fact, she had wanted to kill him back in the Nangong Imperial Clan.

Yet, what sort of situation was this? Chu Feng was right before Xue Ji. Yet, not only was she not planning to kill him, she had instead saved him. Chu Feng was truly confused as to her purpose.

“All of you will die!!!”

Right at that moment, the frightening voice of the Dark Hall’s

Hall Master sounded again. Following that, boundless killing intent surged forth.

“As I said, you should not be worrying about me, but instead be worrying about that guy right now,” Xue Ji said with a beaming smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng hurriedly turned his gaze back to the direction of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. He discovered that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master seemed to have managed to gain control over his power again.

Not only did the oppressive might that suppressed the Alliance Army grow stronger, the suffocating sensation also grew stronger and stronger. In fact, the aura of death could clearly be felt now. It was as if they would be killed the very next moment.

Chapter 2056 – Arrival Of The Moon Immortal

“Moonlight Illumination!!!”

Right at that moment, two female voices sounded.

Immediately following that, a burst of oppressive might descended from the sky and covered the entire region.

Once that oppressive might appeared, Chu Feng and the others were immediately overjoyed. The reason for that was because after that oppressive might appeared, it restricted the movements of everyone from the Dark Hall. As for Chu Feng and the others, they actually managed to regain their ability to move.

Chu Feng and the others were able to break free from the frightening oppressive might of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master because of the oppressive might that suddenly descended from the sky.

It was that oppressive might that had rescued the Alliance Army.

“Could it be?!!!”

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that the oppressive might that had saved them originated from an enormous moon.

That moon had appeared in the sky out of the blue. Not only did it emit powerful oppressive might, it was also emitting dazzling light. That light possessed extremely powerful offensive capabilities. At this moment, the light was attacking the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Most importantly, that enormous moon greatly resembled the moon at the Moonlight Maze. This caused Chu Feng to think of a possibility. He felt that it was very possible that the person that had saved them was the Moon Immortal who had seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies.

“Who is it that dares to stop me?!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master let out a shout of anger. Then, countless enormous dark black hands shot forth toward the bright moon in the sky.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

The might of a Half Martial Ancestor was truly powerful. Being bombarded with attacks, lights began to radiate all around. The peerlessly mighty bright moon actually started to form many cracks. Then, it turned into tens of thousands of light pieces and shattered.

At this moment, two familiar figures appeared from the shattered moon. They were Su Rou and Su Mei.

Not only did Su Rou and Su Mei speak together, their voices were also the same. However, their voices did not belong to them.

Furthermore, the two of them were wearing the same clothes and had the same sort of hairstyle.

Their fluttering long skirts and high bun hairstyles made Su Rou and Su Mei appear to be overflowing with the airs of Immortals and magnificent beings.

When combined with their already beautiful faces and extraordinary temperaments, the two of them looked like actual celestial fairies.

To be exact, they were celestial fairies.

However, that was not the important part. Most importantly, Su Rou and Su Mei were each holding a strange object that looked like a half-moon. Those objects were very beautiful. However, they were weapons, and top quality Imperial Armaments on top of that.

The two top quality Imperial Armaments were not at all inferior to the Hall Master’s two Imperial Armament daggers. In fact, they were even more powerful, and emitted the domineering aura of a supreme ruler.

“An evildoer dares to act this arrogantly? Prepare to die.”

Suddenly, Su Rou and Su Mei unleashed their attacks together. Their Imperial Armaments turned into two silvery lights as they shot toward the Dark Hall’s Hall Master to cut him down.

Once they were unleashed, the two Imperial Armaments rapidly increased in size. From half-moons the size of a meter long, they became enormous weapons tens of meters long.

As they spun, not only did they unleash incomparable might, they were also emitting auras of righteousness. It was as if they were planning to cut down all of the evil and malicious things in the world.

“Evildoer? Mere trash from the lower realm actually dares to speak to me in such a manner? You are simply courting death.”

The enormous hands of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master charged toward Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Clank, clank, clank, clank, clank~~~”

At this moment, they collided with one another. The outcome of the battle was actually hard to determine.

However, the energy ripples from the collision of their attacks were extremely frightening. With earth-shattering power, the energy ripples were like enormous waves.

Not to mention ordinary Martial Emperors, even peak Martial Emperors like the Elf King and Du Wanwu were forced back repeatedly.

In fact, those below the Martial Emperor level of cultivation, regardless of whether they were from the Dark Hall or the Alliance Army, were shattered into nothingness by the vibration of the energy ripples. Only piles of bloody mist remained in the air. The bloody mist dissolved into the cold frost of the region.

In this sort of situation, even experts like the Elf King started to

retreat from the battlefield. At this moment, the troops from both parties in the battle were hurriedly retreating.

It was not that they were afraid of dying. Rather, it was that Half Martial Ancestors were truly too powerful. It was as if the entire region would not be able to withstand the power that they had unleashed.

“Those are Half Martial Ancestors. When Half Martial Ancestors are already this powerful, how powerful would Martial Ancestors that possess actual Ancestor-level martial power, be?”

Even though Chu Feng appeared to be calm, a violent rage was surging in his heart. He was deeply awed by the strength of the Moon Immortal and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Everyone said that the Outer World was the actual paradise for martial cultivators. However, exactly how powerful were the experts in the Outer World? At this moment, Chu Feng seemed to have an idea of their strength.

Right at this moment, Xue Ji said, “Aren’t those two your little lovers? However, it seems like their bodies are being controlled by someone. From their appearance and techniques, the person controlling them should be that Moonlight Maze’s Moon Demon, no?”

Chu Feng ignored her and continued to wholeheartedly focus on the battle.

Due to the fact that he was not powerful enough, he could only be a spectator in such a crucial battle. Even though Chu Feng felt deep hatred for the Moon Immortal going back on her promise and seizing Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, it remained that she was the only person that could contend against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master right now.

Even though they were unwilling to do so, Chu Feng and the Alliance Army had no choice but to place all their hopes onto the

Moon Immortal.

“It’s useless. Even for the Moon Demon, it will still be impossible for it to defeat the Dark Hall’s Hall Master,” Xue Ji seemed to know what Chu Feng was thinking.

“That’s not for certain. Are you unable to see the situation of the battle right now?” Chu Feng refuted.

Chu Feng had been paying close attention to the battle between the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and the Moon Immortal the entire time. At this moment, the Imperial Armaments held by Su Rou and Su Mei had actually fused together and formed a full moon.

After the new full moon-shaped Imperial Armament had been formed, their might had increased greatly. They were no longer existences that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master could contend with. At this moment, the enormous and powerful hands of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master were as weak as tofu. Any hand that encountered the full moon-shaped Imperial Armament would be cut in two.

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master remained as powerful as before. It was as if he was undying and indestructible. Whenever a hand was chopped off, another hand would immediately appear to take its place. His hands continued to grow and multiply without end.

Suddenly, the Moon Immortal shouted, “You can’t stop me.” The full moon Imperial Armament blossomed with a ring of silvery light. That light was no ordinary light. It was like an unstoppable blade.

At this moment, there was simply no need for that full moon Imperial Armament to come into contact with the hands itself. Instead, as long as the hands came into contact with that ring of light, those enormous hands would be sliced off instantly.

In this sort of situation, even though the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed a monster-like body with an ability to continue to

regenerate, he was still unable to withstand the Moon Immortal's attacks.

“Did you see that?” At this moment, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself. He turned his head around and looked to Xue Ji provokingly.

Even though Xue Ji had saved him, Chu Feng would not forget that Xue Ji was part of the Dark Hall. Furthermore, Chu Feng still didn't know what Xue Ji's intentions were. However, there was one thing that Chu Feng knew — Xue Ji was a very dangerous woman.

Xue Ji smiled coldly. “Oh? Are you certain that Moon Demon will be able to subdue that fellow?”

That smile contained deep significance. It was as if she had already seen through the ending of the battle today. As for that ending, it would definitely not be one where the Dark Hall's Hall Master was defeated.

Chapter 2057 – Heart Sunk

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked with a frown. Subconsciously, he felt that Xue Ji was not joking with him.

As for Xue Ji, she did not answer Chu Feng’s question. Instead, she smiled lightly. It was a very charming smile. However, it was also an extremely unfathomable smile.

“Xue Ji, where are you?! Quickly, get over here!!!”

Right at that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master let out a ear-deafening snarl. He was calling out for Xue Ji.

At that moment, Chu Feng was even more shocked. The reason for that was because Xue Ji was clearly before Chu Feng. Since the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was able to lock onto Chu Feng’s location, how could he not know where Xue Ji was?

Furthermore, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master almost possessed the might of a Half Martial Ancestor now. As such, why would he not be able to determine Xue Ji’s location?

After being surprised, Chu Feng looked to Xue Ji, and discovered that Xue Ji was looking at him with a smile on her face. Merely, her charming smile felt extremely dangerous to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, seeing that we have been acquaintances with one another for years, I’ll tell you a secret.”

“That so-called Dark Hall’s Hall Master has trained in a kind of demonic technique. As long as that demonic technique devours living things, its strength will increase. Furthermore, the cultivation of the living things it devours does not matter. It would suffice as long as they’re alive. However, the speed at which his cultivation increases will be determined by the quantity of living things he devours.”

“To put it simply, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master plans to devour all living things in the Holy Land of Martialism. The more he devours,

the faster his cultivation will increase. That will become the way through which he increases his cultivation in the future.”

“If you wish to stop him, there are two methods to do so. The first method is to prevent living things from appearing before him.”

“As for the second method, it would be to kill him quickly. The reason for that is because the longer he is kept alive, the stronger he will become. Right now, he is still not yet an actual Half Martial Ancestor. However, if he becomes able to completely control that demonic technique, as well as the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts within his body, then, with his world spirit techniques, it would be very easy for him to find out where all the living things in the Holy Land of Martialism are. At that time, there would likely not be anyone that could stop him,” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

“Why are you telling me this?” Chu Feng asked.

Xue Ji smiled at Chu Feng’s question. Then, her body shifted, and she disappeared.

At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze toward the battle between the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and the Moon Immortal.

That battlefield had become an area where even the Elf King, the number one expert in the Holy Land of Martialism, did not dare approach.

However, at that moment, a lump of majestic black gaseous flames actually managed to withstand the Half Martial Ancestor’s might and forcibly arrive beside the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“What is that?”

Upon seeing the black gaseous flames, the crowd present were all startled. The reason for that was because they were all able to sense that those black gaseous flames contained a lifeform. Merely, they were unable to tell what sort of lifeform it was for it to be able to withstand such powerful energy ripples and approach the Dark

Hall's Hall Master.

When the black gaseous flames dissipated into the air, the already shocked crowd were immediately struck dumb. Even the Elf King started to frown. His expression turned even more uneasy.

The reason for that was because those black gaseous flames contained none other than Xue Ji, who had just been beside Chu Feng.

At that moment, it was no longer only Chu Feng; practically everyone present realized that that woman by the name of Xue Ji was even stronger, even more frightening than they had anticipated.

“Moon Immortal, remember this. The next time we meet, I'll have you in my stomach.”

Right at that moment, a strange light emitted from the body of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. It started to spread, and soon covered his entire enormous body.

Strangely, even though the Dark Hall's Hall Master was emitting an overwhelming demonic aura, that light was emitting a vast amount of righteous aura. They were simply incompatible. However, at that moment, that vast amount of righteous aura was protecting the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Regardless of what sort of attack the Moon Immortal threw at him, she was unable to break through that vast light covering the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Suddenly, the light intensified. It was so dazzling that one could not even open one's eyes. It was as if the sun had descended onto the surface as a burning sensation arrived alongside the dazzling light.

However, that sensation lasted only an instant.

When the crowd managed to open their eyes again, they discovered that the vast amount of righteous light had

disappeared, along with the Dark Hall's Hall Master and Xue Ji.

Not even a trace of their aura remained. It was as if they were never there to begin with. No one knew where they had gone to.

“He actually possessed such a protective treasure?” At that moment, shocked expressions appeared on Su Rou and Su Mei's faces. To be exact, it was the Moon Immortal who revealed that shocked expression.

At that moment, the Elf King and the others were also frowning. Evidently, none of them had expected the Dark Hall's Hall Master to have such a trick up his sleeve.

Today, they had experienced the techniques of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Even though the current Dark Hall was in a complete mess, they all knew that if the Dark Hall's Hall Master were to make a comeback, he himself would be able to bring about true terror, true catastrophe, upon the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, compared to the Alliance Army, it was the people from the Dark Hall that were in greater despair. They did not expect that their Hall Master would escape by himself at such a time.

No, he hadn't escaped by himself. Their Lord Hall Master had taken one person with him. That person was Xue Ji. However... that already didn't concern them anymore. The reason for that was because they were all left behind.

Suddenly, the Elf King ordered, “Kill all the people from the Dark Hall. Leave none alive.”

Once his order was given, the Alliance Army all started to attack. They began to ruthlessly massacre the remainder of the Dark Hall.

Due to the fact that the disparity between the strength of the two groups was so enormous, there was no need for the Elf King to do anything. At that moment, he turned his gaze to Su Rou and Su Mei. He clasped his fist and said, “Thank you, Moon Immortal, for your assistance.”

However, the Moon Immortal completely ignored the Elf King's courteous action. The bodies of Su Rou and Su Mei shifted and disappeared.

When Su Rou and Su Mei reappeared, they were before Chu Feng.

Upon seeing the familiar Su Rou and Su Mei, Chu Feng felt pained in his heart. However, he was no longer as emotional as he was back then. After all, the Moon Immortal had saved them.

"My apologies," The Moon Immortal said to Chu Feng in a very apologetic manner.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed. He revealed a very complicated expression.

"I don't know why you did this. However, I know that you possessed your own justification. I only have one request. Please spare them," Chu Feng said to the Moon Immortal.

"Rest assured, I know that they are very important to you. I also do not wish to continue seeing you lovers being separated like this."

"I promise you that I will guarantee their safety. In the future, I will personally repay them for lending me their bodies," The Moon Immortal said.

Chu Feng reluctantly nodded his head. He was able to tell that the Moon Immortal didn't seem to be lying. Although she had seized Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies, she really didn't appear to be evil. Likely, she possessed some sort of hidden trouble.

However, it remained that Chu Feng's nod was done very reluctantly. Actually, had it been his body that was seized, he would have nodded his head without the slightest hesitation. However, the Moon Immortal had seized the bodies of Su Rou and Su Mei. Chu Feng was unable to make decisions on their behalf, nor was he willing to see their bodies being controlled by someone

else.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, “If possible, may I request one thing?”

“You want me to eliminate that monster?” The Moon Immortal asked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded his head again. Actually, he found it embarrassing to ask that. After all, he had viewed the Moon Immortal as an enemy before. However, there was now no other choice.

“Even without you requesting that of me, I would’ve done so. Else, I would not have come here today. However, there is one thing that I must remind you of.”

“I was able to beat that monster today. However, next time around, even I do not have certainty in being able to defeat him,” The Moon Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart immediately sunk.

Chapter 2058 – Transmogrification Gate

“However, you can rest assured. I will definitely go all-out to find that monster and take care of him. Consider that as my compensation for taking control of your lover’s bodies,” After the Moon Immortal finished saying those words, she disappeared.

Likely, she had gone to search for the Dark Hall’s Hall Master as she had declared she would.

Merely, seeing Su Rou and Su Mei disappearing before his eyes caused Chu Feng to feel extremely complicated in his heart.

Suddenly, the Elf King’s voice sounded, “It would seem that the Moon Immortal is not evil. Your lovers should be fine.” Chu Feng turned around and discovered that the Elf King was standing not far away from him. It would seem that he had heard the conversation Chu Feng had with the Moon Immortal.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked into the distance. He discovered that the massacre of the Dark Hall’s headquarters had already entered its ending phase.

Regardless of whether they were the people from the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era’s ferocious beasts or the elders and elites of the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace that had submitted to the Dark Hall, they were practically all killed by the Alliance Army.

The curtain had dropped for this battle. However, Chu Feng’s heart was unable to be at ease. Instead, it grew even more heavy.

Likely, it was not only him. Instead, everyone from the Alliance Army should be feeling this way. After all, they had all experienced the frightening power of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Your Majesty, I’m afraid that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master will be difficult to deal with. We must make preparations,” Chu Feng said.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master should have cultivated a demonic

technique. His demonic technique is related to the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. Indeed, it is difficult to deal with. Little friend Chu Feng, if you have any suggestions, speak away," The Elf King said to Chu Feng.

"The demonic technique that the Dark Hall's Hall Master cultivated is not only related to the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts. In fact, it concerns all living things in the Holy Land of Martialism," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, what do you mean by that?" The Elf King asked.

"The fusion of the Dark Hall's Hall Master with the Ancient Era's ferocious beasts is only a part of it. What he planned to do next is the most frightening. That is, he planned to use the lives of all the living things in this world to increase his cultivation."

"He is planning to refine all of the living things in the Holy Land of Martialism. He does not care about the quality, and instead only cares about the quantity. The reason for that is because the demonic technique that he trained in only cares about the quantity of lives refined," Chu Feng told the Elf King what Xue Ji had said to him.

"Little friend Chu Feng, is what you said for certain? How do you know about this?" The Elf King asked with a frown. He also realized that the situation was bad.

Ten thousand years ago, the calamity brought forth by the Magma Emperor was already an extremely frightening one. However, if what Chu Feng said was true, then another calamity would befall them now.

Living things? That would not only include the humans, monstrous beasts and Ancient Era's Elves. Living things also included plants, flowers, and trees, as well as birds and animals.

Ten thousand years ago, the Magma Emperor had wanted to rule

over the Holy Land of Martialism. However, today, that Dark Hall's Hall Master wanted to completely eliminate all living things in the Holy Land of Martialism. He planned to turn the Holy Land of Martialism into a land of death.

Compared to the appearance of the Magma Emperor, the appearance of the Dark Hall's Hall Master was, without a doubt, the true calamity.

"Senior, truth be told, that Dark Hall's Xue Ji is the Asura World Spirit that I released at the Nangong Imperial Clan. She was the one that told me all that," Chu Feng said.

"She's your World Spirit? But, shouldn't she have become an Evil Spirit after you released her? Why am I unable to sense any Evil Spirit's aura from her?" After hearing this, the Elf King was astonished.

"I am also very confused by it. To be honest, I did not know much about that Evil Spirit to begin with. However, it remains that she saved my life earlier. Even though I do not know what she plans to do, and I also feel that she is very dangerous, I feel that what she said was definitely not to deceive me," Chu Feng said.

"It would seem that we must think of a way to handle this matter then," At that moment, the Elf King was frowning deeply. He appeared to have entered deep into his thoughts.

"That's it!! There's a place that could shelter the people of the Holy Land of Martialism."

"Merely, although the Dark Hall's Hall Master is still unable to gain complete control over his power, I feel that he will soon be able to do so. The time that we have to evacuate everyone is truly too short," The Elf King said with a frown.

"There really is a place that could shelter all the living things in the Holy Land of Martialism?" Chu Feng asked.

"There's nothing we can do about the plants and animals.

However, we can evacuate the human and monstrous beast elites.”

“Before the great calamity, if we are unable to stop it, we can only think of a way to lower the damage to its minimum,” The Elf King said.

Chu Feng approved of the Elf King’s opinion. If they really could not stop the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, then decreasing the damage would be the only thing they could do.

“Is the place that you spoke of in the Elf Kingdom?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, it’s not in our Elf Kingdom. The grand formation in our Elf Kingdom is also unable to withstand the assault from a Half Martial Ancestor,” The Elf King said.

“Then... exactly where is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“The place is called the Transmogrification Gate. The Transmogrification Gate is something from the Ancient Era. Unless its master opens the gate, no one will be able to find it. As such, how could one possibly enter it? Thus, that place is definitely safe because the Dark Hall’s Hall Master will also not be able to find it,” The Elf King said.

“There’s actually such a place? Then, exactly where is that Transmogrification Gate? Who is its master?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not know about the exact location of the Transmogrification Gate. The reason for that is because the Transmogrification Gate has been wandering through the Holy Land of Martialism the entire time.”

“However, I am able to find its general location. As for the owner of the Transmogrification Gate, it is the head of the Holy Land of Martialism’s Ten Immortals, the Heaven Reaching Immortal,” The Elf King said.

“The Heaven Reaching Immortal?” Chu Feng was astonished.

“Indeed, it’s the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Did you know that although the Heaven Reaching Immortal is extremely renowned right now, he was only a Gold-cloak World Spiritist before he reached two thousand years of age? Furthermore, his cultivation was also very limited.”

“Thus, the reason why he was able to live for over ten thousand years and reach his current level of strength is because he had managed to obtain a great fortunate encounter.”

“As for his fortunate encounter, he coincidentally saved the previous master of the Transmogrification Gate. That person was at the end of his life. He saw that although the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s talent was not that good, his moral conduct was very good. Thus, he dubbed the Heaven Reaching Immortal the new master of the Transmogrification Gate.”

“It is precisely by relying on the power of the Transmogrification Gate that the Heaven Reaching Immortal reached his current level of strength.”

“Merely, only a very few people know about this matter. Likely, only three people in the Holy Land of Martialism know about it right now.”

“They are the Heaven Reaching Immortal, me and now you,” The Elf King said.

“Never would I have expected the Heaven Reaching Immortal to have such a secret. No wonder no one was capable of finding him,” Chu Feng finally realized why the Heaven Reaching Immortal was so mysterious.

“Your Majesty, since you knew about this, you must be close friends with the Heaven Reaching Immortal, right? In that case, it would seem that the people of the world can be saved,” The way Chu Feng saw it, it was most likely the Heaven Reaching Immortal who had told the Elf King about this secret and the general location of the Transmogrification Gate. As such, their relationship must be

special.

Chapter 2059 – Total Evacuation

“The Heaven Reaching Immortal has a very odd temperament. Even though he possesses a decent relationship with me, this is ‘decent’ only when compared to his relationships with others. Thus, in the end, the relationship that I have with him is only at that level.”

“If I have something to request of him, he might decide to help me if he’s in a good mood. However, if I am to bring all these people to find him, I fear that he will not agree to help.”

“However, there is nothing that can be done about this. We have no choice but to test our luck. If he is to decide to ignore the deaths of all the living things in the world, then it could only be said to be a tribulation that we have to go through,” After saying those words, the Elf King revealed a helpless expression.

Even though he had been cracking down on the Dark Hall not long after they had appeared, the current situation had already surpassed the range of his ability. At that moment, he had become powerless.

“Merely, the population of the Holy Land of Martialism is too enormous. There are definitely over a hundred quintillion beings here. It is impossible to move all of them at such short notice.”

“As such, only the elites can be saved. However, even if we only save the people from the major powers, we might still not necessarily be able to make it in time,” After saying those words, the Elf King revealed a sentimental gaze.

At that moment, Chu Feng also felt very unwell. It was not his desire to be unable to save everyone. However, with the situation at hand, it was the only thing they could do.

They all say that the greater the strength one possesses, the greater the responsibility one possessed. Unwittingly, Chu Feng

and the Elf King were tasked with the heavy responsibility of saving all living things in the world. The pressure from that was something that only they understood.

“I was unable to do much regarding the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. However, now... perhaps I might be able to do something.”

“I have a method we can try,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Elf King was overjoyed.

“To create spatial warships that can travel back and forth through the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formations,” Chu Feng said.

“Spatial warships?” The Elf King was surprised to hear that. However, he also revealed an anticipating gaze. He was able to tell that the ‘spatial warships’ that Chu Feng spoke of would be extremely remarkable.

Chu Feng continued, “The amount of people that we wish to evacuate right now is too numerous. Furthermore, they must be moved to the location of the Transmogrification Gate in a short period of time. As such, we must create spatial warships that the Holy Land of Martialism currently lacks.”

“Spatial warships are actually very simple. When steered by Martial Emperor-level experts, they will possess the speed of the Martial Emperors steering them. Furthermore, they can sail through the Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formations. Most importantly, spatial warships use a spatial formation to create an isolated space in the warship. With that, more people can enter them, and we will be able to evacuate more people in a short period of time.”

“That’s a great idea. Merely, these spatial warships must require a lot of time to create, right? We might not necessarily have enough time for them,” The Elf King said.

“Due to the fact that the speed of the spatial warships will be determined by the person steering it, it would be fine to make a single steering formation. That is a very easy task.”

“As for the isolated space, it also does not need to be enormous. It would do as long as it was capable of accommodating a sufficient amount of people. Thus, that is also relatively simple. I am able to create ten such spatial warships in a day,” Chu Feng said.

“Ten a day?” Hearing those words, the Elf King was even more shocked. However, he knew that Chu Feng was not someone that would boast. Thus, at the same time as he was shocked, he was more overjoyed.

“That’s great. If it is truly possible, we would be able to save more people,” Even though a catastrophe was about to befall them, the Elf King still revealed an overjoyed expression on his face.

Then, after the Alliance Army finished sweeping up the battlefield, they began to move toward the Elf Kingdom. As for Chu Feng, he began to form the spatial warships with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists.

With the assistance of the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others, Chu Feng managed to create a total of fifteen spatial warships in a day.

Whenever a spatial warship was completed, many high level Martial Emperors would personally board the spatial warships to steer them. They would immediately leave to evacuate elites from all over the Holy Land of Martialism.

Their first destinations were the Underworld Palace, the Cyanwood Mountain, the Four Great Imperial Clans, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Ancient Era’s Elves’ various territories.

Following that, they went to move the various other monstrous

beast races and the Nine Powers.

After that, it was the unknown powers. In short... they would attempt to save as many people as they could. They planned to put forth their greatest strength to help others.

Even though the Heavenly Law Palace and the Mortal King Palace had submitted to the Dark Hall, the Ancient Era's Elves still dispatched two spatial warships to save them. After all, the ones that had submitted to the Dark Hall were the elites, whereas the Heavenly Law Palace and Mortal King Palace's elders and disciples that remained were innocent.

However, even with this being the case, they must prevent there being spies from the Dark Hall notifying the Dark Hall's Hall Master that everyone had left for the so-called Transmogrification Gate.

Thus, all of the spatial warships possessed powerful isolation effects. Upon entering them, one would definitely not be able to send any news outside.

Currently, the mission to save the living things of the world was in full operation. Furthermore, the speed of the operation could be said to be lightning fast. However, it was not all smooth sailing.

It was fine for the Cyanwood Mountain, the Underworld Palace, the King Monstrous Dragon Race and the Four Great Imperial Clans, in other words, the powers allied with the Ancient Era's Elves, as they knew the terror of the Dark Hall and believed in the Ancient Era's Elves. Thus, even though they found it very difficult to accept, they still ended up abandoning their respective powers that had existed for tens of thousands of years and gathered up all of their treasures and people from their powers to enter the spatial warships.

However, for the other powers, they did not fully trust the Ancient Era's Elves' words of an imminent calamity.

Chapter 2060 – Refused

At that moment, Chu Feng was steering the spatial warship and moving toward the direction of the Transmogrification Gate. The rescue operation was winding down right now. All of the spatial warships had completed their rescue missions and begun to proceed toward the direction of the Transmogrification Gate.

The reason for that was because it was reported from an Ancient Era's Elves' territory that tracks from the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been found. Fortunately, the Ancient Era's Elves there had already been evacuated. Else, they would have suffered enormously.

The reason for that was because that Ancient Era's Elves' territory had already been turned into ruins. Not only had it been ruined, there was also an appalling scene of devastation left behind.

Thus, it was currently certain that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had begun to attack. Even though there were a lot of powers and a lot of people to be saved still, they had to give up on them.

The reason for that was because all of the spatial warships had received orders from the Elf King. As such, all of the spatial warships were proceeding toward the location of the Transmogrification Gate.

When unleashing his full power, Chu Feng possessed the strength of a rank eight Martial Emperor. Thus, the spatial warship that he steered was extremely fast.

At that moment, the World Spiritist Immortal, the World Spiritist Alliance's Alliance Master and the others that possessed close relationships with Chu Feng were all stunned.

Firstly, they had not expected that during the time when they started the grand formation to isolate themselves from the Holy

Land of Martialism till now, so many things would have happened in the Holy Land of Martialism. In fact, it had reached a point where a calamity was about to befall the Holy Land of Martialism.

That being said, they were even more shocked by Chu Feng's strength. None of them had expected Chu Feng to become this much more powerful in such a short period of time.

“Milord, what level of cultivation does little friend Chu Feng possess now?” Feeling curious, the World Spiritist Alliance's Alliance Master turned to ask the World Spiritist Immortal.

Hearing that question, Sima Ying and the others all turned their gazes over. As Chu Feng was steering the warship, it was unsuitable for them to bother him. However, they also wished to know what Chu Feng's current cultivation was. Thus, they could only turn their hopes to the World Spiritist Immortal. After all, he was one of the Ten Immortals, and the strongest person in their World Spiritist Alliance.

“I'm not sure. However, the way I see it, there are less than ten people in the current Holy Land of Martialism that would be able to contend against little friend Chu Feng,” The World Spiritist Immortal said.

“Sssss~~~”

instantly the crowd all sucked in a mouthful of cold air as they looked to Chu Feng again.

While this came as a shock for all of them, for Sima Ying and the others who had known Chu Feng personally back when he was still very weak, they were feeling extremely complicated right now.

Although they had all progressed, it remained that they were of the younger generation, and could not compare with people from the older generations.

However, Chu Feng, someone who used to possess the same level of strength as them, someone who used to be weaker than them,

had grown to become so powerful that even their World Spiritist Immortal could not fathom his strength.

Laughing happily, Sima Ying asked Miao Renlong, who was beside her, “Grandpa Miao, say, could this be considered to be witnessing the rise of an overlord?”

“I don’t think so,” Miao Renlong shook his head with a smile.

“Why’s that? Could it be that Chu Feng, even with his strength, is still unable to become an overlord?” Sima Ying asked in a confused manner.

“No,” Miao Renlong shook his head again, “What I meant is that it was not only you who has witnessed the rise of an overlord, but rather all of us.”

“Haha, Grandpa Miao, you’re so bad. You’re actually teasing me,” Hearing those words, Sima Ying burst into loud laughter. Her laughter was very brilliant, and was exactly the same as it had been years ago.

However, she suddenly looked to Chu Feng again. As she looked to Chu Feng’s back view, her laughter suddenly froze.

Even though she had considered Chu Feng to be her best friend, she suddenly felt unfamiliarity from Chu Feng.

It was not that Chu Feng had done something to her. Rather, she felt that sort of sensation herself.

The current Chu Feng was someone even the World Spiritist Immortal was very respectful toward. For a nobody like herself, could she still remain Chu Feng’s friend?

Thinking about it, Sima Ying suddenly felt heartache, and involuntarily lowered her head in a dispirited manner.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded. “Hey, what are you blanking out for?”

Hearing that voice, Sima Ying’s petite body immediately

trembled. She raised her head, and discovered that Chu Feng, who was still steering the warship, was currently looking at her with a beaming smile on his face.

That smile was so very familiar.

Suddenly Sima Ying suddenly felt warmth in her heart. She was so emotional that the corners of her eyes started to grow moist.

It turned out that Chu Feng was still the same Chu Feng. He had not distanced himself because he had become more powerful. It turned out that she had been overthinking things.

“Why aren’t you coming over here to chat with me? It’s very lonely for me to steer the warship myself,” Chu Feng said with another smile.

“Haha, I just didn’t want to disturb you,” At that moment, Sima Ying also smiled brilliantly. As she spoke, she secretly wiped away the tears at the corners of her eyes. Then, she happily ran over to Chu Feng’s side.

Jumping and hopping, she still looked like a little girl. However, she did not notice that there were countless gazes looking at her from behind. Those gazes were all filled with deep admiration and envy.

To be able to be this intimate with Chu Feng was something that countless people could only dream of now.

However, Sima Ying had achieved such a thing. It was not that Sima Ying was lucky. Rather, it was because she had become Chu Feng’s friend during the time when he needed friends the most. She had helped him during the time when he needed help the most.

.....

After continuing on with their journey, the spatial warship that Chu Feng was piloting finally arrived at an uninhabited location.

This was truly an uninhabited land devoid of human habitation. In other words, this place was completely overgrown with vegetation, and simply uninhabited.

However, at that moment, over a hundred spatial warships had appeared in this uninhabited land. Furthermore, all of the spatial warships contained at least several tens of millions of humans or monstrous beasts. The spatial warships that contained the most people contained over a hundred million people.

However, when compared to the population of the Holy Land of Martialism, this was still a very small amount. Thus, when Chu Feng saw that many spatial warships were gathered here, and there were still more spatial warships incoming after they landed, Chu Feng felt grieved in his heart.

Even though he had already known this was going to happen, when all of this actually happened, when he thought of how so many people would end up dying at the hands of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, Chu Feng still ended up blaming himself endlessly.

It was because he was not strong enough; he was unable to protect the lives of the living things in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’ve finally arrived.”

At that moment, Lord Lianghua, Lord Luokong, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the others appeared. They were awaiting Chu Feng's arrival.

Chu Feng hurriedly descended from the spatial warship and arrived before Lord Lianghua and the others.

“Those people over there, they seem to be the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders, no?”

“Heavens, little friend Chu Feng has become so powerful now. Even the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders are this intimate with him?”

Seeing how the grand characters of the Ancient Era's Elves were being this friendly with Chu Feng, the experts from the World Spiritist Alliance that were still in the warship's isolated space all felt their hearts tremble.

In fact, it was not only them. All of the people from the various other warships were acting the same way.

The reason for that was because even though they were all in their respective warships' isolated spaces, they were able to see everything that was happening outside.

"What's the situation? Is that Transmogrification Gate here?" Chu Feng asked.

"Yes, it's in the vicinity. Furthermore, His Majesty has already taken Princess Miaomiao to go through and contact the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Whether or not we will succeed will all depend on this," Lord Luokong said.

"There shouldn't be any mishap, I hope," Chu Feng said with a slightly worried tone.

"There shouldn't be. After all, countless lives are gathered here. I refuse to believe that the Heaven Reaching Immortal would be so heartless as to refuse to see us," Lord Lianghua said.

"Chu Feng."

Right at that moment, the Elf King's voice sounded. Following that, the space beside Chu Feng started to tremble. Then, two figures appeared. They were the Elf King and Xian Miaomiao.

Merely, this time around, the two of them possessed unsightly expressions on their faces. Especially Xian Miaomiao. She had a face filled with complaints.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to frown. However, he still walked forward and asked, "Your Majesty, how was it?"

At that moment, the Elf King did not say anything. However, he

lightly shook his head.

At this moment, the expressions of Chu Feng and the others all changed enormously.

They knew that they have been refused admission.

Chapter 2061 – Paving The Road

Unable to contain himself, Lord Lianghua asked, “Your Majesty, has the Heaven Reaching Immortal actually refused us?”

“I am incompetent. I was unable to persuade him. It’s all my fault,” The Elf King was filled with self-blame.

At this moment, Princess Lingyue stepped forward. “Father, we cannot sit and wait for death. How about we gather all of the people from the spatial warships and have them all ask the Heaven Reaching Immortal with us? I refuse to believe that he would be so heartless to really refuse to save us.”

“Your Majesty, we feel that Princess Lingyue’s idea is feasible,” Lord Lianghua said.

“It is indeed worth a try. After all, we cannot resign ourselves to fate,” Lord Luokong and the other Grand Elders and Elf Protectors also voiced their agreement.

At this moment, the Elf King looked to the surroundings. He looked to the hundred and twenty three spatial warships that were gathered here, as well as the incoming spatial warships in the distance. His gaze started to change. In the end, he nodded.

As matters stood, he had no other methods either. This was the only thing they could do. Hopefully, by using the power of the people gathered here, they would be able to soften the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s heart.

Thus, Chu Feng, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other world spiritists set up a grand isolation formation ten thousand miles away. They were afraid that there would be people signaling their location to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. After all, one must always be on guard against others.

After they finished setting up the isolation spirit formation, the numerous crowds began to exit the spatial warships. At this

moment, people filled this vast uninhabited land. It had truly turned into a sea of people.

At this moment, the people that were confused as to what was happening began to walk toward Chu Feng and the others.

The leaders of the various powers even began to politely greet the Elf King, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal and the other grand characters present. Naturally, many people were greeting Chu Feng and attempting to court favors from him too.

Merely, Chu Feng was in no mood to pay attention to them. At the very most, he merely greeted them with a smile, and was disinclined to bother chatting with them.

Seeing that more and more people were attempting to come over, the Ancient Era's Elves' guards set up a blockade with a cordon around the area. Unless they were actual grand characters, no one was allowed to enter.

Suddenly, Chu Feng heard a familiar voice. "Hey, let us in. We know Chu Feng."

"Chili Pepper, stop messing around. Let's go back. Even the elders are unable to enter, how could we possibly be able to enter?"

He turned toward the direction of the voice, and discovered three familiar faces there. They were being blocked outside of the cordon.

They were the three Underworld Palace's disciples he had encountered at the Gong Ba Plains. They were the brothers Big Radish and Little Radish, as well as the woman by the name of Chili Pepper.

Merely, at this moment, the three of them were being prevented from entering by the Ancient Era's Elves experts.

Chili Pepper had a furious expression on her face and was shouting, while Big Radish was trying to calm her down. As for Little Radish, he was looking around, seemingly trying to find Chu

Feng from among the crowd.

At this moment, even though a lot of people wanted to meet Chu Feng, none of them dared to make a big fuss about it. Especially when faced with the Ancient Era's Elves' experts, many people kept a respectful distance from them. Thus, at this moment, Chili Pepper and the others had become the focus of the crowd.

“What a bunch of country bumpkins. You should look at your own status first before proclaiming to know Chu Feng.”

“Who is Chu Feng? He is a grand character that can stand alongside people like the Elf King, the Underworld Palace's Palace Master and the Weaponry Refinement Immortal. How could they possibly know Chu Feng?”

“Don't say it like that. Perhaps they really do know Chu Feng. Merely, Chu Feng doesn't know them.”

“That's true, hahahaha!!!”

At this moment, many people began to mock Chili Pepper and the others. Faced with the mockery from the crowd, not only did Big Radish and Little Radish reveal embarrassed expressions, even Chili Pepper became slightly embarrassed.

Indeed, Chu Feng could now be considered to be someone who stood on equal footing as their Underworld Palace's Palace Master. How could he still consider them his friends?

“Scram immediately. Else, do not blame me for being rude,” Seeing that the crowd were all rebuking Chili Pepper and the others, the Ancient Era's Elf that blocked them was infused with boldness and confidence. As he spoke, he drew his Incomplete Imperial Armament. He had the attitude of attacking Chili Pepper and the others should they not move away.

At this moment, Chili Pepper started to cower. It was not that she was afraid of that Elf Guard. Rather, she was afraid that Chu Feng would refuse to recognize them.

Disappointment. The three of them all revealed disappointed expressions.

However, right at this moment, a stern shout was heard. “Who dares to touch my friends?”

Hearing that voice, everyone’s expressions changed. When the crowd saw the figure behind that Elf Guard, they all felt deep veneration, and revealed emotional expressions. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was the person standing behind the Elf Guard.

“Chu Feng!!!” At this moment, Chili Pepper was overjoyed. She hurriedly charged through the blockade and arrived at Chu Feng’s side.

Following closely behind Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish also rushed over. That Elf Guard did not dare to stop them anymore.

“Lord Chu Feng, I-I-I truly didn’t know that they were your friends,” Not only did he not dare to stop them, that Ancient Era’s Elf was so scared that he started to shiver in fear.

As matters stood, the Ancient Era’s Elves knew better than anyone else what sort of status Chu Feng possessed.

Yet, he had actually planned to attack Chu Feng’s friends. He knew that he had made an enormous mistake.

“You who lacked eyes, scram,” At this moment, Lord Lianghua shouted angrily. If the situation wasn’t so unstable, he would definitely have punished that guard.

In this sort of situation, that Elf Guard first apologized, and then hurriedly withdrew. He was replaced with another Ancient Era’s Elf guard.

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all stunned. Firstly, they did not expect that nobodies like Chili Pepper and the others would really be Chu Feng’s friends.

More than that, they were even more surprised that not only had Chu Feng admitted to knowing nobodies like them, he was also even that enthusiastic toward them.

At this moment, the ones feeling the most warmth in their hearts were none other than Chili Pepper, Big Radish and Little Radish. They were extremely happy to be Chu Feng's friends. Especially when being looked on by countless gazes of envy, they felt extremely honored.

"It's been a long time since we last met. Big Radish, Little Radish, the two of you have grown much bigger. Chili Pepper, you've also grown more beautiful," Chu Feng smiled as he surveyed the three.

At this moment, countless people were gathered here. However, to Chu Feng, there was nothing more joyous than seeing people he knew.

"None of us could compare to you. You are now a grand character that could stand on equal footing with our Lord Palace Master," Chili Pepper was more bold than the others. As she spoke, she deliberately took a glance at the Underworld Palace's Palace Master.

"You have truly thought too highly of your Palace Master. The current me would need to be under little friend Chu Feng's protection. How could I possibly be able to stand on equal footing with him?" The Underworld Palace's Palace Master said with a smile.

Even though he did not say those words with a very loud voice, it was very vigorous. As such, practically everyone present heard his voice. After hearing it, the crowd were all shocked.

In response, the Elf King said, "When fighting against the Dark Hall, little friend Chu Feng reversed the battle situation many times. The stone army here is also commanded by little friend Chu Feng. His outstanding service in this war is greater than any one of us here."

His words were spoken in the same manner as the Underworld Palace's Palace Master. Although his voice was not resounding, everyone present was able to hear it.

Their intentions were the same. They wanted to announce Chu Feng's service so that everyone would feel deep respect toward Chu Feng. They were planning to help Chu Feng gain prestige in the hearts of the crowd. They were paving the road for Chu Feng to become the overlord.

Chapter 2062 – Temperament Worsened

The Underworld Palace's Palace Master and the Elf King's words came like many thunderclaps that exploded in the hearts of the crowd.

The crowd had already noticed that the stone army guarding the various warships were all Martial Emperors. Merely, the stone army was made up of a lot of stone monsters.

Originally, they had thought that those stone monsters were some hidden power from the Ancient Era's Elves. However, never would they have thought that the stone army was actually commanded by Chu Feng.

“Truly? That stone army is actually commanded by Chu Feng?”

“Chu Feng's battle contributions actually surpassed everyone else in the war between the Ancient Era's Elves and the Dark Hall?”

“Heavens! Chu Feng is actually that powerful now?!”

“Overlord, Chu Feng is most definitely going to become this era's overlord. Sure enough, I was not mistaken.”

“That's right. Countless people have questioned Chu Feng's ability before. However, I firmly believed that Chu Feng would become this era's overlord. Look now, I was correct, wasn't I?”

Sure enough, after hearing about this, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar. Praises toward Chu Feng began to be heard from all around.

At this time, no one talked ill of Chu Feng. At this moment, they only hated that they did not have enough words to praise Chu Feng with.

Even though there were a lot of people here, the amount of grand characters present was actually very limited. The great majority of them were nobodies, people without any reputation.

For nobodies like them, they all wished that they would be able to obtain unexpected success and encounter great fortune. They wished that they would be able to obtain Chu Feng's appreciation by praising him. Like that, they would be able to enjoy a meteoric rise in status and power.

However, at this moment when the hundreds of millions of people present were all praising Chu Feng, there were also quite a few people feeling very complicated.

For example, there was Grandpa Luo's oldest granddaughter, Luo Lian. She could be said to have been one of the earliest people to know Chu Feng in the Holy Land of Martialism. She should have had a very intimate relationship with Chu Feng.

Merely, when she had first met Chu Feng, she had felt disdain toward him, and even insulted him. She had deeply looked down on Chu Feng.

However, she now remained a nobody, whereas Chu Feng had become the mightiest figure in the Holy Land of Martialism, the man that countless women yearned to make their husband.

Regret. She was filled with regret.

Chu Feng had disregarded her enmity and brought her, her grandfather and her little sister Lil Ru to the Southern Cyanwood Forest. Then, following the people from the Southern Cyanwood Forest, they had entered the Cyanwood Mountain. Furthermore, due to their relationship with Chu Feng, they were deeply respected by countless people in the Cyanwood Mountain.

However, she continued to feel that she would never be able to become Chu Feng's actual friend. It was not that Chu Feng looked down on her. Rather, it was because she had looked down on Chu Feng from the bottom of her heart.

In fact, among the vast amount of people present, there were a lot of individuals like Luo Lian.

They were all filled with hatred for themselves for looking down on Chu Feng with their dogs' eyes. Even though they were clearly nobodies themselves, they had looked down on Chu Feng because of their relatively stronger status that they possessed back then.

However, in the end, Chu Feng had become one of the people with the greatest statuses in the Holy Land of Martialism, whereas they remained nobodies. Even if they had managed to obtain some fame, it was all because of Chu Feng's influence.

However, they didn't know that it was only they themselves who were unable to undo the knot in their hearts. As long as they were willing, they would still be able to become close friends with Chu Feng.

When everyone had descended from the spatial warships, the Elf King began to make a serious announcement. "Everyone, I have a matter that I must tell you all about."

"Firstly, it's about the Dark Hall's Hall Master. That man has trained in a demonic technique. The demonic technique that he has trained in requires the refinement of living things in order to increase his cultivation. All of us here are targets that he wishes to kill."

"In other words, we are cultivation resources for him to increase his cultivation with."

"He can actually increase his cultivation by refining our lives?! That Dark Hall's Hall Master is truly reprehensible. Isn't his method too malicious?! How could he still be considered a human?!" After knowing about this matter, the crowd were both astonished and frightened. Then, they began to curse the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Most importantly, the Dark Hall's Hall Master possessed the cultivation of a Half Martial Ancestor. All of us here are no match for him. If he is to find this place, all of us will undoubtedly be killed," The Elf King added.

“What?! Half Martial Ancestor?!”

Hearing those words, none of the crowd were able to remain calm. Earlier, they had only rained curses at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master because they felt a sense of security with the Elf King, the Underworld Palace’s Palace Master and the other experts here.

However, upon hearing that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master actually possessed the cultivation of a Half Martial Ancestor, none of the crowd were able to remain calm. At this moment, a disturbance began to run amok through the vast crowd.

“Everyone, please calm down!” Seeing the crowd starting to panic, the Elf King shouted. His voice caused space itself to tremble.

After his loud voice was heard, the panicking crowd managed to calm down. After all, the Elf King was an extremely imposing character.

“Even though the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is very powerful, we are not sitting ducks. We have brought everyone here because there is a person here that is capable of saving everyone. That person is the Heaven Reaching Immortal,” Then, the Elf King began to explain the Heaven Reaching Immortal and his Transmogrification Gate.

He also mentioned to the crowd how his request for the Heaven Reaching Immortal to shelter them had been refused.

Right now, the Elf King wanted everyone to join hands to plead at the Heaven Reaching Immortal together. He hoped that they would be able to move the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, we beg of you, please let us in.”

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, please have mercy on us, please shelter us.”

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, I don’t want to die!!!!”

“Immortal, I can die, but please shelter my children. They are not even ten years old.”

.....

.....

At this moment, hundreds of millions of people began to plead to the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Their requests were all different from one another. At this moment, this place had turned extremely noisy, and a cacophony sounded in all directions.

This... was precisely what the Elf King wanted. Only by doing this would they be able to get the attention of the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Only by doing this would the Heaven Reaching Immortal possibly open the Transmogrification Gate for them.

However, no one expected that their pleas would last for three entire days and nights. Over the course of three days and three nights, all one hundred and fifty spatial warships arrived.

Many people had pleaded so loudly over the course of those three days and three nights that their voices grew hoarse. Merely, the Transmogrification Gate was still closed.

No, to be exact, no one even knew where the Transmogrification Gate was right now.

Despair. After those three days and nights, the crowd's hopes had all disappeared. At this moment, all that remained was despair. Even though they were still pleading, they were no longer as vigorous as they were three days ago.

Suddenly, a thunderclap-like curse sounded. It covered the pleading voices of the hundreds of millions of people. “Heaven Reaching Immortal, you are truly a disappointment!”

“There's this many people here; there are elderly and children here. All of them are living and alive. It could be said that they are the future hope of the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Right now, they have all disregarded their dignities in the hopes of you offering them shelter. Yet, you refused to even let out a fart.”

“You are simply unworthy of being an Immortal. In fact, you’re not even worthy of being a human.”

It was Chu Feng. After waiting for so long with no response from the Heaven Reaching Immortal, Chu Feng was finally unable to contain himself.

Chu Feng’s words came as an enormous surprise to the crowd. Even the Elf King was startled.

At this moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was their only hope. For Chu Feng to curse at the Heaven Reaching Immortal like this, wouldn’t he be bringing about their destruction?

At this moment, the crowd all started to panic. Before, even though they were in despair, they still had a trace of hope in the bottoms of their hearts. However, at this moment when Chu Feng cursed at the Heaven Reaching Immortal, they felt that that trace of hope had been extinguished.

At this moment, many of the people present revealed ashen and dejected expressions.

At the same time, there were also a lot of people that felt hatred for Chu Feng in their hearts. Even though their pleading had been useless, they still felt that it was Chu Feng who had ruined their only way to survive.

“Hahahahaha...”

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, it’s been many years since we last met, but not only has your cultivation increased, your temperament has also worsened.”

Right at the moment when the crowd were all panicking, aged laughter suddenly sounded from above.

Chapter 2063 – Make An Exception

When that laughter sounded, practically everyone's bodies jolted. They all subconsciously felt that the person that had spoken was the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

But... they had pleaded with the Heaven Reaching Immortal for so long without any response from him. Yet, when Chu Feng cursed at him, he actually responded?

At this moment, some intelligent individuals turned their gazes to Chu Feng. They had all managed to determine the hidden intentions behind the Heaven Reaching Immortal's words. Evidently, that grand character knew Chu Feng.

Faced with the gazes from the crowd, Chu Feng was also very surprised. Although he did know a lot of people, he had never met the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

Confused, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the sky. He knew that the Heaven Reaching Immortal is there.

“Buzz~~~”

Sure enough, the space in the sky started to tremble. Then, a figure appeared.

It was an old man. He was wearing a Royal World Spiritist Cloak. After he appeared, he turned his gaze to Chu Feng and said with a beaming smile, “Little friend Chu Feng, do you still recognize me?”

“Senior, it's really you?! You're still alive?!” Upon seeing the Heaven Reaching Immortal, Chu Feng's expression changed enormously. He was greatly surprised.

Astonishment. He was truly astonished. The reason for that was because Chu Feng really did know that Heaven Reaching Immortal. Merely, Chu Feng had truly never expected the Heaven Reaching Immortal to be someone that he already knew.

If one were to ask who the Heaven Reaching Immortal was, then Chu Feng would have to reference the Nine Provinces Continent.

Back then, Chu Feng had still been a disciple of the Nine Province Continent's Azure Dragon School. Forced against his will, Chu Feng had no choice but to leave the Azure Dragon School. After that, Chu Feng had proceeded toward the Prestigious Villa to participate in the Marriage Gathering. It was in that place that Chu Feng had encountered Zi Ling again.

During the time of the Marriage Gathering, Chu Feng, Zi Ling and everyone else had gone to the Ten Thousand Monsters Mountain. In the Ten Thousand Monsters Mountain, Chu Feng and Zi Ling had intruded into a remnant. The master of that remnant was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

To be exact, that Gold-cloak World Spiritist had merely been a remnant thought. However, he had still been so powerful that he could have killed both Chu Feng and Zi Ling back then.

However, that Gold-cloak World Spiritist did not kill Chu Feng and Zi Ling. Instead, he had put Chu Feng through a trial. In the end, Chu Feng had managed to move that Gold-cloak World Spiritist with his passion. At the same time, he had managed to move Zi Ling. That was how Chu Feng and Zi Ling had fallen in love with one another.

Merely, Chu Feng truly had not expected that Gold-cloak World Spiritist to still be alive. Furthermore, he was actually in the Holy Land of Martialism.

The reason for that was because the Heaven Reaching Immortal that stood before Chu Feng was precisely the remnant thought that Chu Feng had encountered in the Nine Provinces Continent's Ten Thousand Monsters Mountain.

"What's wrong? Are you that surprised? Should I be dead instead?" The Heaven Reaching Immortal laughed. Then, he asked, "Why are you the only one here? What happened to your

little lover? Weren't the two of you deeply in love with one another?"

"No, she's also here. Merely, she's elsewhere, and is currently unable to be with me," Chu Feng replied honestly.

Upon seeing the Heaven Reaching Immortal, the scene of what had happened back then began to appear in Chu Feng's mind nonstop. Earlier, Chu Feng had possessed hatred for the Heaven Reaching Immortal. However now, he felt an indescribable sort of familiarity toward him.

After so many years had passed, Chu Feng had experienced a whole lot. He was no longer the youngster he was back then. However, he still cherished the memory of the him from back then.

The appearance of the Heaven Reaching Immortal had truly evoked countless memories from Chu Feng. In fact, at this time, Chu Feng began to long for his lover Zi Ling again.

After all, Zi Ling was his lover who had experienced life and death tribulations together with him.

"That's good," The Heaven Reaching Immortal smiled and nodded. Then, he said, "You wish to save those people, right?"

"Senior, may you please help us?" Chu Feng asked.

"I cannot. The Transmogrification Gate possesses its own rules. I cannot allow those mortals to enter," The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart tightened, and the expressions of the other people turned ashen. Originally, upon seeing Chu Feng and the Heaven Reaching Immortal talking to one another cheerfully, they thought that the two of them possessed a superb relationship with one another, and that there was hope for them. However, they did not expect that even Chu Feng was unable to make the Heaven Reaching Immortal make an exception.

“However, if you are willing, I can make an exception this one time and give them an opportunity. However, that opportunity must be seized by you,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“What is that opportunity?” Chu Feng asked.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Heaven Reaching Immortal moved his sleeves. Then, waves of vast mist started to appear from his sleeves nonstop. Although it appeared to be mist, it was actually a special sort of cold air. However, it was no ordinary cold air, and looked more like it had been formed from some sort of treasure.

After the cold air was released, they began to fuse with one another in midair. In the end, they formed a grand formation. Countless fragment-like objects were drifting about in the grand formation.

“Enter the formation and restore the fragments in the formation into a complete picture scroll. If you succeed in doing so, you would’ve seized the opportunity for me to make an exception. I will then allow everyone to enter the Transmogrification Gate,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Senior, isn’t this a bit too excessive? When you posed that trial for me back then, you at least allowed me to see the picture first so that I knew how to reassemble the fragments.”

“But, this time around, you’re not even allowing me to see the picture, and are instead giving me the fragments of the picture scroll to begin with. To have me restore the fragments to create a picture scroll, aren’t you deliberately making things difficult for me?” Chu Feng laughed bitterly. The Heaven Reaching Immortal was giving him the same test as last time with slight changes.

Back then, Chu Feng had undergone the test in order to save Zi Ling. Yet now... he was going to undergo this task in order to save the hundreds of millions of lives present here.

“What level of skill did you possess back then, and what level do you possess now? Your world spirit techniques are already this excellent now. Naturally, I cannot present to you such a simple test.”

“Chu Feng, I’ll warn you first. That spirit formation is not something I’ve created. Instead, it is from the Ancient Era. Upon entering it, you will have an hour. If you do not come out within an hour’s time, you will definitely die.”

“However, even if you come out within an hour, your dantian will still be damaged by it. Likely, you will never be able to recover in your lifetime, and your cultivation will not be able to increase.”

“To put it simply, should you enter that spirit formation, you will forever be damaged,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said with a beaming smile.

“What? That spirit formation is actually that powerful?” After hearing those words, everyone was alarmed. That spirit formation was truly frightening. Not only might one die upon entering it, even if one survived, one’s future would be ruined.

At that moment, the crowd all felt extremely complicated. Even though they wished to survive, they did not wish for an exceptional genius like Chu Feng, someone who possessed the potential to become this era’s overlord, to ruin his future because of them.

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, if you’re going to help, then do it. If you’re not going to help, then don’t do it. There is no need for you to deliberately make things difficult for little friend Chu Feng like this!” The Elf King spoke very angrily.

He was not angered by the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s refusal. However, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was actually using Chu Feng’s future to threaten him. This caused him to be extremely furious.

“I’m talking to Chu Feng, and not you. Little friend Chu Feng did not say anything about it, so what are you acting all emotional for?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal was not angered by the Elf King’s shout of anger. Instead, he lightly smiled. Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, I’ll ask you this only once. Are you willing to enter that spirit formation for the sake of the lives of the people of the world?”

Chapter 2064 – Why Thank?

Currently, Chu Feng was also frowning deeply and feeling very complicated.

The reason for that was because he had used his Heaven's Eyes to carefully examine that grand formation after hearing what the Heaven Reaching Immortal said. He was not examining the fragments of the picture scroll scattered around the formation, but rather the cold air that the formation contained.

Thus, he had already discovered that the cold air contained within that grand formation was extremely powerful, and truly not to be looked down upon. It was extremely dangerous. Thus, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was not joking around when he said those words.

At that moment, Chu Feng also started to hesitate. After all, if he were to enter that spirit formation, he might really end up ruining his future. However, if he didn't enter it, then the hundreds of millions of people here might end up dying.

In the end, Chu Feng said, "I'll give it a try." When comparing his own future with the lives of hundreds of millions, he had decided to sacrifice himself.

When Chu Feng's words left his mouth, the hearts of everyone present tightened. Not to mention those with a close relationship with Chu Feng, even those that were strangers to Chu Feng felt extremely complicated in their hearts.

Chu Feng was actually going to sacrifice himself for them, people completely unrelated to him!!!

"Chu Feng, have you gone mad?! Don't forget there's still the Moon Immortal! The Moon Immortal might be able to kill the Dark Hall's Hall Master! Thus, there is simply no need for you to ruin your future and endanger your life!"

“Even if that old fart Heaven Reaching Immortal doesn’t open the gate, we would not necessarily die!” Xian Miaomiao shouted loudly.

Voices similar to that began to sound and fall in succession. Practically all of the people that possessed close relationships with Chu Feng were urging him not to do it.

“Lord Chu Feng, we... we appreciate your kind intentions. But, you really shouldn’t brave such dangers for us.”

In fact, some of the people that were strangers to Chu Feng also began to urge him against it. It was not that these people were not afraid of death. Rather, they didn’t want to ruin Chu Feng’s future in order to save themselves. If that was the case, they would rather die.

This was especially true for those people that felt hatred for Chu Feng because they were afraid that Chu Feng had ruined them after he cursed at the Heaven Reaching Immortal. At this moment, those people were filled with guilt and self-blame.

Chu Feng was willing to sacrifice himself for their sake. Yet, they, out of their own selfish desires, felt hatred for Chu Feng. They truly felt themselves to be inhumane, to be a disgrace.

“Everyone, thank you all for your kind intentions. However, with the situation at hand, there is a calamity that is descending upon the Holy Land of Martialism. Even though that calamity might be prevented, it remains that that is only a possibility.”

“I do not wish to bear the risk of gambling on that possibility, for if I am to lose that gamble, everyone might end up losing their lives. Thus, I have decided that I will seize the opportunity the Heaven Reaching Immortal has given me this time around,” Chu Feng said.

“Lord Chu Feng, we truly appreciate your kind intentions. But, you are neither our relative nor our friend. As such, you do not

owe us anything. There really is no need for you to ruin your future for our sake.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, more and more people began to try to persuade Chu Feng. In fact, those that were older and had children were shedding tears.

In their eyes, no matter how powerful Chu Feng might be, he remained only a child. If their own children were to throw their lives away like this, how could they not feel heartache?

Upon thinking of Chu Feng’s parents, they were even more distressed, and began to feel that it was unworthy for Chu Feng to do such a thing.

“As they say, the greater one’s strength, the greater one’s responsibility. I, Chu Feng, am not someone with enormous strength. However, at this time, this responsibility has landed on my shoulders. As such, I must lift it up.”

“It is for no other reason than the fact that I, Chu Feng, am a man.”

“I am merely doing what I should be doing,” Chu Feng smiled.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Feng’s body shifted. Without looking back, he leapt into the grand formation.

“Chu Feng!!!” Seeing Chu Feng entering that formation, Xian Miaomiao and the others all let out sorrowful shouts.

Although that was only a spirit formation, it was akin to the gates of hell to them. Upon entering it, one would die. Even if one managed to come out alive, one would become a cripple.

Chu Feng entering that place was akin to him crippling himself, ruining his own future.

The hundreds of millions of people present were all shouting sorrowfully. Some among them even started to cry in grief. The

voices of weeping, wailing, shouting and gratitude were resonating throughout the region.

Some people even started to kneel on the ground to kowtow to Chu Feng.

They were thinking the same thing as Xian Miaomiao. Chu Feng's entering of that spirit formation meant that he might not be able to come out alive.

As for the reason why Chu Feng did that, it was for them!!!

Suddenly the Elf King shouted, "All of you, quiet down! Do not distract Chu Feng!"

The Elf King's shout came like a thunderclap. It startled everyone.

Even though everything pointed to disaster for Chu Feng should he enter that spirit formation, since he had already entered, they must not cause troubles for him. Even if Chu Feng's cultivation would decrease should he come out, he would, at least, be able to come out alive.

Thus, at that moment, all the shouting and weeping noises stopped. This place where hundreds of million of people were gathered became extremely quiet. The only sound that could be heard was the sound from the grand formation in the middle of the sky.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was rapidly assembling the fragments of the picture scroll. He was doing his best to restore that picture scroll.

Not only did Chu Feng not have a lot of time, he was also being assaulted by the frightening cold air the moment he entered the grand formation.

At that moment, not only had the chilly cold air already invaded

Chu Feng's body, it was also entering Chu Feng's dantian. Furthermore, more and more was invading him.

Most importantly, when the cold air entered Chu Feng's dantian, the enormous lightning beasts within his dantian and his blood actually had no response to them. It was as if nothing had happened.

That caused Chu Feng's heart to sink, for it meant that the cold air was so extremely powerful that even his Inherited Bloodline was unable to contend against it. It would appear that his cultivation would truly be damaged.

The reason for that was because the current Chu Feng truly felt that it was extremely difficult to withstand the cold air. He felt as if he could freeze to death at any moment, and then be frozen into a humanoid statue before shattering into pieces.

"Even if I am to die, I must still complete the picture scroll. Else, I would've come here in vain," Chu Feng clenched his teeth and continued to do his best to assemble the picture scroll.

In that moment, Chu Feng had forgotten the pain from the invasion of the cold air. In fact, he had even forgotten about his own body. Before him was only that picture scroll.

Conviction. The current Chu Feng was not relying on his powerful body, nor was he relying on his Inherited Bloodline. Instead, he was relying completely on his resolution, his conviction, to all this.

"Strange."

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes flashed. An expression of disbelief emerged in his eyes. Then, as if he had obtained enlightenment, the speed at which Chu Feng assembled the fragment pieces grew faster and faster. Furthermore, his assembly was extremely accurate.

Suddenly, someone was unable to contain themselves and

shouted, “Everyone, look! Chu Feng is about to successfully restore that picture scroll.”

The reason for that was because they saw that Chu Feng had managed to assemble half of the picture scroll in that grand formation. Furthermore, the area of the assembled picture scroll was still rapidly increasing.

“That picture, it’s strange,” Upon seeing the picture scroll that was rapidly being completed, the eyes of the Elf King and the other experts all flashed.

They all discovered that there was something strange about it. The reason for that was because it simply did not appear to be a picture. Rather, it looked more like a special sort of diagram.

However, if it was a technique’s diagram, it would appear too simple. Yet, it did not appear to be a treasure map.

“Done.”

Right at that moment, the final pieces of the picture scroll were put in place by Chu Feng. At that moment, a completed picture scroll appeared.

“That is definitely strange. That is definitely not an ordinary picture scroll,” Upon seeing the completed picture scroll, the Elf King spoke with certainty.

“Senior Heaven Reaching Immortal, thank you,” Right at this moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded from that grand formation. From that voice, not only could the crowd hear Chu Feng’s gratefulness, they were also able to hear Chu Feng’s laughter.

At that moment, all the crowd was confused.

Thank you? Why was Chu Feng saying thank you?

Chapter 2065 – I Wish To Go Out

“Thank you? Why thank you?”

At that moment, the crowd were all confused by Chu Feng’s words of thanks.

Right at that moment, with a smile on his face, Chu Feng closed his eyes. He gathered the martial power in his body and began to move it through his body following a special route.

As for the route, it was according to the diagram that Chu Feng had managed to reassemble.

Merely, that cultivation diagram was not something that just anyone could comprehend. However, Chu Feng had managed to comprehend it.

Chu Feng began to cultivate according to the cultivation diagram. Then, a vortex appeared in his dantian.

As the vortex spun, the cold air in Chu Feng’s body began to surge toward the vortex. In fact, even the cold air in the grand formation was being rapidly sucked into that vortex in Chu Feng’s dantian.

In merely an instant, all of the cold air in the grand formation was sucked into that vortex. At that moment, the vortex began to change. It turned into a crystal, covered with frost and emitting an extremely threatening cold aura. However, the crystal also contained an extremely dense amount of Natural Energy.

“Roar~~~”

Seemingly sensing the Natural Energy’s odor, the enormous sleeping lightning beasts in Chu Feng’s dantian abruptly opened their eyes. Then, with mouths wide open, they devoured the crystal.

The very next moment, Chu Feng felt a monumental amount of

Natural Energy surging through his body. Then, it entered his dantian and was completely assimilated into it.

It turned out the cold air in the spirit formation was actually Natural Energy. Although it was a sort of very berserk Natural Energy, one would be able to absorb and refine the Natural Energy should one cultivate it according to a special cultivation diagram. As for that... Chu Feng had accomplished it.

Furthermore, it was true that the Natural Energy was extremely rich. Chu Feng was now only a bit away from being able to reach another breakthrough. Even though Chu Feng had failed to reach a breakthrough, the Natural Energy contained in the crystal had provided a great foundation for Chu Feng.

That was why Chu Feng was thanking the Heaven Reaching Immortal. The reason for that was because when he had seen through the cultivation diagram, Chu Feng had realized that the so-called grand formation that would definitely kill or cripple someone should they enter was actually another trial given to him by the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

Not only would his cultivation not be damaged by that grand formation, he would also not die in there. Instead, he would only obtain great benefits from it.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you were actually unable to reach a breakthrough even after refining such a dense amount of Natural Energy?” At that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal looked to Chu Feng with astonishment.

“My Inherited Bloodline has always possessed an extremely large appetite. As of now, their appetites are unbelievably enormous.”

“That said, the cold air in senior’s grand formation truly possessed an extremely dense amount of Natural Energy. I am actually only a bit away from reaching a breakthrough.”

“Thus, thank you senior. If it wasn’t for your assistance, it would

likely have been extremely difficult for me to find such a dense amount of Natural Energy in the Holy Land of Martialism,” Chu Feng respectfully clasped his fist at the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

“To sacrifice oneself for others. Very few people are capable of doing that. However, when it is for relatives, some people are able to accomplish that.”

“But, to be able to sacrifice yourself for those that are unrelated to you is simply something that I’ve never seen before. However, little friend Chu Feng, you’ve accomplished that.”

“You possess a heart filled with universal love. It is not only the Holy Land of Martialism that needs you. Instead, the entire world needs you. Only when someone like you manages to gain strength could it benefit the people of the world.”

“Thus... that cold air was something that only you deserved.”

“Furthermore, other than you, there would likely not have been anyone else in the entire Holy Land of Martialism that could have refined it.”

“No, I’ve nearly forgotten. That Dark Hall’s Hall Master also seemed to be capable of doing it. However, I would not have presented such a precious thing to that sort of fellow,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said with a beaming smile.

After hearing what the Heaven Reaching Immortal said, the crowd’s hearts were all fluctuating. They were shocked to discover that all the things earlier were only a trial for Chu Feng. After Chu Feng passed the trial, not only was he fine, he had also obtained quite a benefit.

However, for people like the Elf King and Chu Feng, they were not shocked because of that. Rather, from what the Heaven Reaching Immortal had said, they were able to tell that even though the Heaven Reaching Immortal had been in closed-door

training year-round, he seemed to be extremely knowledgeable of the situation in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Else, how could he know that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was also capable of refining that cold air?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, a key appeared in the Heaven Reaching Immortal's hand. He pointed that key at the empty space behind him. Immediately, a golden light began to envelop the area ahead in a circular form.

Being enveloped by the golden light, an enormous gate appeared.

That gate was transparent, and seemed to be forged of crystals and glass. However, without a doubt, the gate was extremely sturdy. It was an indestructible gate.

The space surrounding the gate was being distorted nonstop. It was extremely strange in appearance.

However, when the people present saw the gate, they were all overjoyed. The reason for that was because they all saw the words on top of the gate.

Transmogrification Gate!!!

After the Heaven Reaching Immortal summoned the Transmogrification Gate, he looked to his surroundings and said loudly, “Everyone, look carefully. Look clearly, and remember this moment.”

“Not only is that the Transmogrification Gate, it is also the gate that can save you all.”

“However, this opportunity was fought for by Chu Feng. It is because of Chu Feng that you all will have the chance to enter that gate.”

At that moment, the crowd all turned their gazes to Chu Feng. Even though the crowd did not say anything, gratefulness toward

Chu Feng filled their gazes.

Though the Elf King and the others had been trying to establish Chu Feng's prestige to the crowd earlier, they would definitely not do that anymore.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's conduct and deeds were most definitely engraved in the hearts of the hundreds of millions of people present.

To them, regardless of whether or not Chu Feng became the overlord in the future, they would all treat Chu Feng with the utmost respect. It was not because of how powerful Chu Feng was. Rather, it was because Chu Feng had saved all of their lives.

Chu Feng had used his actions to move the hearts of everyone here.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the key in the Heaven Reaching Immortal's hand shone with light again. Then, the Transmogrification Gate began to slowly open before the crowd's eyes.

“Little friend Chu Feng, go ahead and enter,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said to Chu Feng. His intention was very clear. He wanted Chu Feng to be the first to enter the Transmogrification Gate.

As the Transmogrification Gate opened, the largest stone in Chu Feng's heart dropped. Thus, he did not try to act courteous, and took the lead to enter the Transmogrification Gate.

Upon entering the Transmogrification Gate, Chu Feng discovered that the inside of the Transmogrification Gate was truly a different world. It was an extremely vast space, with a blue sky, white clouds, green hills and clear waters. There were strange and precious herbs here, as well as the most ordinary little animals. This place could truly be considered to be a paradise in the Holy Land of Martialism.

The reason for that was because the peacefulness of this place had not been ruined by human habitation.

Following Chu Feng, the Elf King, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Xian Miaomiao and the others entered the Transmogrification Gate in succession.

As for the hundreds of million of other people there, they were monitored by the Ancient Era's Elves, and all entered the Transmogrification Gate in an orderly manner.

At the moment when the Transmogrification Gate closed, the suspended hearts of the crowd were finally relaxed. They all felt an unprecedented sense of security in this place.

“Senior, could you open the gate? I wish to go out,” At that moment when the people were all settling down, Chu Feng found the Heaven Reaching Immortal and made such a request.

Chapter 2066 – Significant

“Little friend Chu Feng, the only person that can handle the Dark Hall’s Hall Master in the Holy Land of Martialism right now is the Moon Immortal. If the Moon Immortal is defeated, no one in the entire Holy Land of Martialism will be able to contain him. Other than this Transmogrification Gate, there will not be any safe place in the Holy Land of Martialism.”

“Unless that Dark Hall’s Hall Master leaves by himself, we absolutely cannot leave the Transmogrification Gate. You should understand that too. Thus, why do you want to leave now? What do you plan to do?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked in a very puzzled manner.

“I have a senior that is still guarding the Heavenly Road’s exit from the Eastern Sea Region. I cannot disregard him,” Chu Feng would naturally not forget about the Compass Immortal that had gone to the Heavenly Road’s exit from the Eastern Sea Region to wait for the appearance of spatial cracks.

“So that’s the case,” Hearing those words, the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s gaze flickered slightly. He was still hesitant on whether or not to let Chu Feng out.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a golden flash of light appeared in the distance. Soon, that golden flash of light arrived before Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that golden light, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately shone. The reason for that was because that golden light was a Golden Flash Bird. Furthermore, that Golden Flash Bird was flying around Chu Feng.

That meant that the Golden Flash Bird had come to find Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that Golden Flash Bird, Chu Feng’s gaze

immediately turned into one of joy. The reason for that was because practically all of the people related to him that could let out something as precious as a Golden Flash Bird were all in this Transmogrification Gate.

However, there was another person with a Golden Flash Bird that Chu Feng had left his imprint on. That person was the Compass Immortal.

Chu Feng received the Golden Flash Bird. When Chu Feng placed his finger on its forehead, a piece of news immediately entered Chu Feng's mind.

“Little friend Chu Feng, a spatial crack that could lead to the Eastern Sea Region has appeared. Come quickly!”

When that news entered Chu Feng's mind, Chu Feng immediately revealed a brilliant smile.

The Compass Immortal had managed to successfully wait for the arrival of the spatial crack. Merely, Chu Feng had not expected the spatial crack to appear at such a crucial moment.

The appearance of the spatial crack meant that Chu Feng would have the opportunity to return to the Eastern Sea Region, return to the Nine Provinces Continent to undo the Emperor's Tomb and the secret left behind by Qing Xuantian.

“The Heavens are truly helping me,” At this moment, Chu Feng who did not believe in the Heavens was unable to contain himself from exclaiming in admiration and thanking the Heavens.

Originally, Chu Feng had felt that they could only sit and wait for death when faced with the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

It would be great if the Moon Immortal were able to defeat the Dark Hall's Hall Master. However, if she was unable to defeat the Dark Hall's Hall Master, then, it would be as the Heaven Reaching Immortal had said, and all of them would have to stay in the Transmogrification Gate for an extended period of time until the

Dark Hall's Hall Master left the Holy Land of Martialism after killing all the living things there. Only then could they return to the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, after the spatial crack appeared, Chu Feng had another choice, another opportunity.

Not mentioning whether or not Chu Feng would be able to obtain anything from Qing Xuantian's Emperor's Tomb, he would be able to awaken the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Divine Beasts, should he be able to open the Emperor's Tomb.

If Chu Feng was able to find their physical bodies, then he would be able to restore them to being Divine Beasts.

Back then, the Four Great Divine Beasts had contributed greatly to Qing Xuantian being able to defeat the Magma Emperor.

Thus, although Chu Feng did not know what their cultivations were, he felt that it would not be impossible for them to be Half Martial Ancestors. After all, Qing Xuantian was already extremely powerful.

The reason for that was because no one knew what level of cultivation Qing Xuantian had achieved.

"Little friend Chu Feng, what is the happy occasion that could cause you to smile so joyously?" The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked curiously. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had on an extremely serious expression earlier, but revealed a joyous expression upon seeing the Golden Flash Bird. And now, he was unable to contain his smiles. This let the Heaven Reaching Immortal realize that the Golden Flash Bird must've transmitted great news for Chu Feng.

"Long story short, as long as I can return to the Eastern Sea Region, I will have a chance to uncover senior Qing Xuantian's remnants. I will also have the chance to awaken his four Guardian

Beasts.”

“Thus, I had asked senior Compass Immortal to wait for the appearance of a spatial crack in the Eastern Sea Region’s Heavenly Road. The reason for that is because I am only able to return to the Eastern Sea Region through such a spatial crack.”

“The Golden Flash Bird earlier was sent to me by senior, the Compass Immortal. He had managed to successfully wait for the appearance of a spatial crack. I am now able to return to the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng spoke the truth.

“In that case, it is truly great news,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“That’s right. Thus, senior, I’m afraid that you must open the Transmogrification Gate for me and let me out,” Chu Feng said.

“Take this. With it, you’ll be able to enter and exit my Transmogrification Gate. After leaving this place, you will also be able to accurately determine the location of my Transmogrification Gate,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal handed a key to Chu Feng.

That key was very peculiar. It greatly resembled the key that the Heaven Reaching Immortal had used to open the Transmogrification Gate. The only difference was that the key used by the Heaven Reaching Immortal was extremely large, whereas the one he gave to Chu Feng was very small, being only the size of a little finger.

Evidently, there was more than a single key to the Transmogrification Gate. And now, the Heaven Reaching Immortal had handed such a precious key to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, senior. In that case, junior shall take his leave now. As for the matter regarding my return to the Eastern Sea Region, senior, please inform His Majesty and the others for me,” Chu Feng did not wish to waste any time, and planned to leave right away.

“Very well, I’ll see you off,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said with a smile.

Then, the Heaven Reaching Immortal personally saw Chu Feng to the entrance of the Transmogrification Gate.

Using that small key, Chu Feng opened a small door at the lower left corner of the Transmogrification Gate.

That door was very small. It was three meters tall. When compared to the main gate of the Transmogrification Gate, it was extremely small. However, it was large enough for one to pass through.

“Senior, I have a question that I am very puzzled by.”

“This Transmogrification Gate is hidden within the space and void. No one could find out where it is. Even if one were to discover its location, one would also not be able to enter. Thus, how did the Golden Flash Bird manage to find me, and even enter it?” Chu Feng asked in a very puzzled manner.

As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, he could sense how powerful the Transmogrification Gate was. Although Half Martial Ancestors were very powerful, the Transmogrification Gate was still capable of withstanding them.

However, it was precisely such a place that was capable of stopping Half Martial Ancestors that had failed to stop a Golden Flash Bird.

It was the same thing with the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. Like the Transmogrification Gate, it had also been unable to stop the Golden Flash Bird.

Thus, Chu Feng was filled with curiosity toward that mysterious creature.

“The Transmogrification Gate is from the Ancient Era. The Golden Flash Birds are also from the Ancient Era. Both of them possess their own miraculous qualities. However, if you are to ask

me about it, I would have no answer for you either.”

“If you wish to know, then you should focus on your cultivation. After entering the Outer World and gaining more knowledge, you might be able to explain these various mysteries. However, for that to happen, you must first continue to survive,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said with significance.

Chapter 2067 – Spatial Crack

“Thank you senior for your advice. Junior shall take his leave now.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. He understood the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s intentions. The meaning behind the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s words were actually very simple. No matter how powerful he might be, he remained only be a peak Martial Emperor. There were many things in the Holy Land of Martialism for which he had no answers.

To the Heaven Reaching Immortal, he felt that those mysteries could be solved in the Outer World. After all, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master who was from the Outer World knew many things that the people in the Holy Land of Martialism did not.

However, it was impossible for him to enter the Outer World. Thus, he had placed his hopes on Chu Feng. As such, he wanted Chu Feng to put his own safety first, for only by living would he be able to enter the Outer World.

After that, Chu Feng directly proceeded toward the Compass Immortal’s location.

The journey was very far. However, as Chu Feng was extremely excited, he was filled with inexhaustible energy.

His big brother Chu Guyu, his cousin Chu Yue, his masters Qiu Canfeng and Zhuge Liuyun were all in the Eastern Sea Region.

Then there was Huangfu Haoyue, Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, the Azure Dragon Founder, and his big brother, the Monstrous Monkey King.

Chu Feng was finally able to meet all those people that had assisted him before. The more he thought about it, the more excited he became.

Thus, once Chu Feng exited the teleportation formation, he

began to journey without resting. He did not wish to waste even a single second.

However, suddenly, Chu Feng stopped his footsteps. As if petrified, he stood in the air.

Below him was a place that had once been the territory of a monstrous beast power. Even though this monstrous beast power had not been a race of the strongest monstrous beasts, it had been an existence that could have been on par with the Nine Powers.

At this moment, the entire territory occupied by that monstrous beast race, an enormous mountain range tens of millions of miles long, was completely leveled.

Furthermore, this place was pitch-black in color, with surging black smoke that emitted a nauseating stench.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

At that moment, Chu Feng clenched his fists tightly. He detected the aura of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master here.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been here. He was the one who had massacred all the living things in this place. Not only had he killed all of the monstrous beasts from that monstrous beast power, all of the plants and trees, as well as the rare treasures and Natural Oddities hidden deep in the mountain, were gone.

Even though Chu Feng was only seeing the aftermath of the massacre, Chu Feng was able to imagine the scene of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s descent, and his subsequent massacre of this place, after he closed his eyes.

The elderly and the young, including even newborns, and the monstrous beast experts that had given their lives to protect their clansmen, had all let out snarls of despair and anguished wailing when they faced the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master did not show the slightest trace of sympathy. He completely massacred all of them so that he

could use their lives to increase his cultivation.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. He continued onward toward the Eastern Sea Region’s exit.

Even though Chu Feng had been going all-out from the very beginning, he was now even faster than he had been before.

It was anger. The anger in Chu Feng’s heart had given him strength.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master could not be forgiven. Chu Feng would absolutely not let him get away with what he was doing. However, right now, Chu Feng first had to increase his strength. As for that, his only hope in doing so was to proceed for the Eastern Sea Region.

After several more days and nights of traveling, Chu Feng finally saw a familiar figure in the distance. It was the Compass Immortal.

Merely, the Compass Immortal appeared to be extremely weary. Compared to before, he had become extremely thin and pallid.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart grew sour. Merely seeing the Compass Immortal’s current appearance was enough to let Chu Feng know how much he had exhausted himself in this period of time.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally come.”

Although the Compass Immortal was haggard, he was carefully observing his surroundings. Before Chu Feng had even approached him, he had already discovered Chu Feng. At that moment, a joyous smile appeared on his withered face.

After Chu Feng approached, he said in a very ashamed manner, “Senior Compass, I have made you suffer.”

“My, what are you talking about? I was merely guarding this area without eating, drinking or sleeping. It’s merely a trivial matter.

There's no need to mention it," The Compass Immortal smiled indifferently.

However, after hearing those words, Chu Feng felt even greater pain in his heart. As a martial cultivator himself, how could he not know that someone at the Compass Immortal's level would not end up in such a weary state after several months or even several years of not eating, drinking or sleeping.

The reason why the Compass Immortal was in such a haggard state was because he had greatly exhausted his spirit power over this period of time. Right now, his spirit power was practically empty. That was why he was in such a state.

"Chu Feng, what's the situation now? Did you successfully set up that grand spirit formation?" The Compass Immortal asked. Even though he was here, the Compass Immortal was worried about the safety of the people from the Cyanwood Mountain.

"I've successfully set up the spirit formation. Merely, the Dark Hall's Hall Master has trained in a demonic technique that increased his cultivation to that of a Half Martial Ancestor. Even that grand formation would not be able to stop him," Chu Feng said.

"A Half Martial Ancestor? What sort of demonic technique would be that powerful?" Hearing those words, the Compass Immortal revealed an expression of shock. Then, he asked, "In that case, doesn't that mean that there is no one in the Holy Land of Martialism capable of stopping the Dark Hall's Hall Master?"

"No, there's still the Moon Immortal. The Moon Immortal is a powerful existence from the Moonlight Maze. She also possesses a Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivation. Although she ended up seizing Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies, her nature is not evil. Right now, she is willing to help us take care of the Dark Hall's Hall Master."

"Merely, the Dark Hall's Hall Master appears and disappears

unpredictably. Furthermore, he is going around and killing the people and living things in the Holy Land of Martialism to refine them and increase his cultivation. If this is to continue, I fear that even the Moon Immortal will not be able to suppress him,” Chu Feng said.

“Then what about the people from the Cyanwood Mountain, and the Ancient Era’s Elves? What are they to do?” The Compass Immortal asked.

“Regarding that, senior can rest assured. There is a miraculous place in the Holy Land of Martialism by the name of the Transmogrification Gate. The Transmogrification Gate’s location is indefinite. Unless one possesses the key, no one would be able to enter it.”

“The master of the Transmogrification Gate is the Heaven Reaching Immortal. Right now, the Heaven Reaching Immortal has opened the Transmogrification Gate and allowed us to take shelter within.”

“Right now, everyone is safe. Furthermore, we’ve managed to save a lot of people too. Merely... the Holy Land of Martialism is too enormous, and its population is too great. As we have limited time, the people we ended up being able to save was also limited in number,” Chu Feng said.

“Others don’t concern me. Their lives and deaths are unrelated to me. As long as our friends are safe, it would be fine with me,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Compass Immortal heaved a sigh of relief. Then, he began to form hand seals. After he finished, he waved his sleeve, and his world spirit power formed a golden raindrop that scattered behind him.

Soon, a spatial crack appeared.

It turned out that the spatial crack was directly behind the Compass Immortal. Fearing that someone would discovered it, the Compass Immortal had concealed the spatial crack with his world

spirit techniques.

Upon seeing the spatial crack, Chu feng started to frown.

The spatial crack was letting out rumbling noises nonstop. It seemed to possess violent energy capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas. Furthermore, there were tens of thousands of lightning bolts striking within it. In short, before even entering the spatial crack, Chu Feng already felt extreme danger from it.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to admire Tantai Xue's ability to willingly enter such a dangerous thing.

Chapter 2068 – Desire To Return Home

“Chu Feng, this spatial crack is not safe at all. It is extremely dangerous. If you are to enter it, you might be able to return to the Eastern Sea Region. However, you might also end up dying.”

“However, I know that you will definitely choose to enter it. Thus, I will not urge you against it. However, I must be the one to open the path for that spatial crack,” After saying those words, the Compass Immortal turned around. He planned to enter that spatial crack.

He was planning to lead the way ahead of Chu Feng, so that if something unexpected were to happen, he would be the one that will die, giving Chu Feng a chance to escape.

“Woosh~~~”

However, at the moment when the Compass Immortal was about to enter the spatial crack, a figure flew into the spatial crack before him.

It was Chu Feng. Not only had Chu Feng flown into the spatial crack, he had also closed off the spatial crack with world spirit techniques in order to prevent the Compass Immortal from following him.

“Chu Feng, stop immediately!!!”

Seeing that the spatial crack was closing, the Compass Immortal tried his best to approach it while shouting at Chu Feng hysterically.

However, it was already too late. Chu Feng seemed to have already prepared for it. His world spirit techniques closed the spatial crack in the blink of an eye. By the time the Compass Immortal managed to reach the spatial crack, it had disappeared completely, and Chu Feng had disappeared with it.

“Idiot, an utter idiot!”

“What you’re doing will simply harm yourself!!!”

At that moment, the Compass Immortal shouted nonstop. The change in his mood even affected the weather.

Black clouds rolled about as violent winds surged and that region had darkened completely.

After all, spatial cracks were separated into benign ones and vicious ones. For benign ones, one would be able to successfully pass through them. However, for the vicious spatial cracks, one would undoubtedly die after entering them.

Chu Feng’s previous actions were equivalent to him cutting off his own way out. If it had been a benign spatial crack, then it would have been fine. However, it had been a vicious spatial crack, and thus, Chu Feng would have no way to return alive.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, the Compass Immortal suddenly noticed that a faint light was shining behind him. In this darkened region, that faint light appeared especially dazzling.

After approaching it, the Compass Immortal noticed that the light was a spirit formation. The Compass Immortal began to form hand seals with one hand. Only then did he dare to touch the light.

“Buzz~~~”

Upon touching the light, the light immediately scattered in all directions. It was extremely dazzling. At that instant, a piece of information also entered the Compass Immortal’s mind.

“Senior Compass, this key will lead you to the Transmogrification Gate. With it, you will be able to enter the Transmogrification Gate. You must absolutely proceed for the Transmogrification Gate. Only by entering that place will junior feel reassured. As for me... I will definitely return safely.”

After receiving that piece of information, the Compass Immortal

noticed that there was a key when he looked at the light again. As for that key, it was the key the Heaven Reaching Immortal had handed Chu Feng, the key that was able to find the Transmogrification Gate and allow one to enter it.

“Chu Feng, you...” Holding that key, the Compass Immortal sighed, and was speechless after being overwhelmed with emotions.

It turned out that Chu Feng had already planned everything out. He had never planned to let him brave the dangers of spatial crack from the very beginning. The reason for that was because regardless of whether it was the key’s spirit formation or the spirit formation that had closed the spatial crack, neither of those could be formed instantly. This meant that Chu Feng had already prepared them beforehand.

Even though he was feeling very uncomfortable, the Compass Immortal did not wish to disregard Chu Feng’s kind intentions. Thus, he grabbed that key and entered the void. He began to search for the Transmogrification Gate as per the indication from the key.

.....

As for Chu Feng, he was currently surrounded by pitch-black darkness. He was within a violent storm.

The lightning here was no ordinary lightning. They were black, extremely ear-piercing, and contained boundless might. It was as if they could split open everything.

The winds here were no ordinary winds. They were golden, and their whistles would rip space itself apart. It was as if they could slice apart everything.

Chu Feng was a rank four Martial Emperor. And, after using his various techniques, possessed a body that was stronger than even rank eight Martial Emperors.

However, if he were to come in contact with the black lightning or the golden winds, he would be annihilated instantly.

At that moment, Chu Feng was certain that the spatial crack that Tantai Xue had entered before was definitely not as dangerous as this one.

The reason for that was because the black lightning and golden winds in this place were simply too frightening. Even for Chu Feng, he must be extremely cautious when moving about among them.

With the cultivations that Tantai Xue, Jiang Qisha and the others had at that time, this sort of place would most definitely be impossible for them to pass through. In fact, not to mention passing through it, they would likely have instantly died upon entering the spatial crack.

Thus, Chu Feng knew that he was very unlucky; the spatial crack that he had entered was an extremely berserk one. However, even with this being the case, he still had to advance bravely.

At this moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was massacring the innocents in the Holy Land of Martialism. As such, Chu Feng did not have the time to wait for the next relatively safer spatial crack.

This was the only opportunity that he could grasp right now.

At that moment, not only had Chu Feng activated his Heaven's Eyes, he had also mobilized all of his spirit power to carefully observe his surroundings.

Truly, this was what they meant by listening in the eight directions with six paths before one's eyes. Chu Feng did not dare to relax in the slightest. The reason for that was because he would really be killed should he be struck by the black lightning or golden winds. After all, the spatial crack he had entered was a vicious one.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng forgot about time, forgot about his friends and relatives, forgot about everything. The only

thing in his mind was to continue onward as he dodged the dangers all around.

He didn't know how much time had passed and how many days and nights he had spent traveling in the spatial crack, when a long-awaited light finally appeared in the distance. It was an exit.

Upon seeing that exit, Chu Feng felt his blood racing, his heart and mind surging. In fact, he felt like shouting.

However, he did not do so. The reason for that was because he knew that the more crucial a time was, the more he must not relax. He most definitely could not ruin everything by relaxing his guard at this most important time.

Thus, in an extremely cautious manner, Chu Feng finally walked out of the spatial crack. When he saw light again, he felt completely liberated.

Chu Feng first closed his eyes in celebration for successfully passing through that frightening spatial crack.

At that moment, Chu Feng truly felt as if he had just walked through the gates of hell.

After alleviating his heart and mind for a long while, Chu Feng gradually opened his eyes. He looked to the familiar blue sky and white clouds. He looked to the surging ocean waves, as well as the sea breeze that was blowing through his clothes and long hair. While doing all that, Chu Feng felt a single sensation, only a single sensation — comfort. Everything felt so very comfortable.

Suddenly, a smile that had not been seen for a very long time emerged on Chu Feng's face. It was a smile of joy of returning home.

“Eastern Sea Region, I've returned.”

“My relatives and friends, I've returned.”

“I've returned. I, Chu Feng, has finally returned. Everyone, how

are you all doing?”

Even though Chu Feng was not someone from the Eastern Sea Region, to him, the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent were his home.

After being away for so many years, he was finally able to return home. That sort of excitement was something that Chu Feng was unable to contain.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng turned around and set up a world spirit formation to hide the spatial crack.

Firstly, it would still be a long time till the Heavenly Road opened. As such, the spatial crack would be the only way for Chu Feng to return to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Secondly, the spatial crack was too dangerous. For it to be left there, it would be inevitable that there would be curious individuals who would attempt to enter it. However, with the cultivation of the people from the Eastern Sea Region, they would most definitely be throwing away their lives should they enter the spatial crack.

As such, Chu Feng had to seal off the spatial crack.

As for the spatial crack in the Holy Land of Martialism that Chu Feng had closed, that had actually been a trick to fool the Compass Immortal.

The entrance was not sealed. As such, Chu Feng could still return to the Holy Land of Martialism through it. After all, Chu Feng had planned everything since the very beginning.

“Everyone, are you all doing fine? Wait a moment, I will come and find you all right away.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng took a step forward. With that step, Chu Feng completely disappeared.

With Chu Feng's current level of cultivation, even though the Eastern Sea Region was enormous, he was able to reach any place within it in a very short period of time.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast because he was extremely impatient...

...Impatient to return home.

Chapter 2069 – Chu Feng's Return

If one were to ask what place was most sacred in the Eastern Sea Region, then people would definitely answer the Misty Peak.

Not only was the Misty Peak a place that originated from the Ancient Era, with a current master, called Qiushui Fuyan, who was very powerful, most importantly, a major battle had occurred there several years ago.

Even now, that battle was still fresh in the memories of the crowd.

The reason for that was because not only did that battle assemble the Eastern Sea Region's several more powerful powers, it was reported that experts from the Holy Land of Martialism were also among the participants.

What sort of place was the Holy Land of Martialism? That was a place of legends. Yet, several existences from the Holy Land of Martialism had appeared in the Eastern Sea Region not long ago.

Although they were, according to the rumors, only members of the younger generation, they had possessed overwhelming power capable of mass devastation. Fortunately, the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Sect Master Chu Feng had killed them with his heaven-defying power. Else... the Misty Peak would likely have ended up being occupied by the Holy Land of Martialism.

Most importantly, it had been reported that those members of the Holy Land of Martialism's younger generation were vicious and merciless. If they had been the ones that ended up winning that battle, everyone in the Eastern Sea Region might have ended up suffering.

As rumors continued to spread and the truth became more and more distorted, people made those several members of the younger generation from the Holy Land of Martialism into absolute

evildoers that could not be considered humans at all. They were simply akin to demons. It was reported that they had even planned to tarnish old grannies, that they were simply worse than beasts.

Even though many years had passed, that battle remained the most controversial topic for the people in the Eastern Sea Region for the past several years.

Thus, even now, people were still enthusiastically discussing the matters from back then. However, the Misty Peak remained a place that ordinary people were not allowed to set foot upon.

That said, there still remained a lot of people that wished to become disciples of the Misty Peak. Thus, there would always be a lot of people gathered outside the Misty Peak every day with the hopes of being able to enter it.

“Move aside immediately. Else, you shall suffer the consequences.”

Suddenly, a stern shout was heard. Looking toward the direction of the voice, four beauties were seen at the Misty Peak’s entrance.

Upon seeing those four beauties, the bodies of the people gathered here all trembled. To a greater or lesser degree, they all revealed alarmed expressions.

Not only were these four beauties extremely beautiful, they were also extremely renowned. It was precisely their fame that frightened the crowd.

The reason for that was because the four beauties were the four disciples of the Misty Peak’s previous master, Lady Piaomiao. They were, respectively, [Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu and Dong Xue](#).

Thus, practically no one in the Eastern Sea Region dared to offend the four of them, much less here in the Misty Peak’s territory.

Right at this moment, a mocking voice sounded from the crowd. “Four senior sisters, it’s been many years since we last met, your

temperaments have all grown.”

“Who is it?! Who dares to be this audacious?! Have you grown tired of living?!”

“That’s right! Who dares to harass our four goddesses?! You are simply courting death!”

Hearing that voice, before the Four Seasons Beauties could respond, people from the crowd immediately shouted.

In fact, the expressions of the Four Seasons Beauties were quite unsightly right now. They turned their angry gazes toward the crowd, seemingly wanting to find the culprit.

In this sort of situation, no one dared to take the blame. Thus, the crowd immediately spread aside. At this moment, only a single person stood there motionlessly.

Not only was he not moving, he was also looking at the Four Seasons Beauties with a smile on his face. His expression was simply that of someone asking to be killed.

“Holy! That brother is truly outrageously bold with lust!”

Seeing Chu Feng standing there motionlessly and looking at the Four Seasons Beauties with that sort of gaze, the crowd were all stunned.

At this moment, there were many people that felt admiration for Chu Feng. They admired his courage, for he was simply using his life to look at the beauties.

However, for the great majority of them, they revealed expressions of people rejoicing in other people’s misfortune. Although they had withdrawn themselves to the side, they did not plan to leave. The reason for that was because what the crowd enjoyed seeing the most was lively excitement.

Especially when there was someone who was so foolish as to provoke the Four Seasons Beauties. As such, they needed to watch

that exciting show even more.

After all, the Four Seasons Beauties were not to be looked down upon. Especially that Chun Wu, she was famous for her violent temperament. Last time, there had been a reckless monstrous beast that had spoken words to slightly harass her, and she had ripped his penis off on the spot. She was absolutely violent.

As for this reckless brat, he had actually dared to harass all four of the Four Seasons Beauties at once. As such, the crowd present all wished to see how that brat would die.

Right at this moment, a shocking scene happened. Not only did the Four Seasons Beauties not get angry, they instead stood there as if petrified. In fact, they revealed expressions of disbelief.

After their moment of disbelief, the four of them all smiled. Their smiles were truly beautiful. Never had the people present ever seen the four of them smile in such a manner. However, without a doubt, their beautiful smiles had already charmed all of the men present.

Chun Wu even started to rapidly run toward that man. Then, she leapt directly into that man's embrace and tightly hugged him.

Following her, the other three beauties also ran over. Even though they were not as frantic as Chun Wu, they were also standing beside that man like obedient little animals and looking at him with love-struck gazes.

‘Holy fuck! What the hell is going on?!!!’

This was what everyone present was thinking. Regardless of whether they were men or women, that was what they were all thinking.

Who were the Four Seasons Beauties? They were existences akin to goddesses in the Misty Peak.

Countless men would always be before them, trying to gain their fancy, but they would not even bother to look at them. It was as if

no men could enter their eyes.

Yet now, the four goddesses were actually completely captivated by that man. This truly came as an enormous shock to the crowd, making them feel disbelief.

‘Who is that guy?’ At this moment, that was the question in the minds of all the crowd.

Chun Wu was so excited that the sockets of her eyes grew red. As she rubbed her eyes, she asked, “Junior brother Chu Feng, it’s really you? Heavens, am I dreaming?” She did not dare to believe all of this to be real.

“Would the me in your dreams pinch your face like this?” Chu Feng joked around. He extended his hand and placed it on Chun Wu’s fair and elastic cheek, and then pinched it lightly.

“Aiya, it hurts,” Chun Wu moved her face back in pain. However, she was soon smiling even more brilliantly.

“Bastard, it’s really you. And here I thought that you wouldn’t return,” Chun Wu was convinced that the Chu Feng before her was indeed the same Chu Feng she knew. After being convinced, she hugged Chu Feng even more tightly.

“Chun Wu, that’s enough. Junior brother Chu Feng has doubtless returned with great difficulty. The journey must have been exhausting for him. Let’s bring him in to rest first,” Qiu Zhu stepped forward and suggested.

“Mn, that’s right. Quickly, quickly, follow me inside. Master and the others will definitely be extremely extremely happy to know that you’ve returned,” As Chun Wu spoke, she pulled Chu Feng toward the Misty Peak. Her cheerful and lively nature was exactly the same as how she had been back then. There was no change to her because she had grown older.

After Chu Feng and the Four Seasons Beauties entered the Misty Peak, the bystanders all stood there stunned.

It was only after a long while that they managed to alleviate their shock.

“Holy! I did not mishear, right?! Earlier, they called that man Chu Feng?!”

“That’s right! I’ve also heard that. It’s Chu Feng, that man is actually Chu Feng!”

“Heavens! Chu Feng! Chu Feng has returned! I actually managed to see Chu Feng!”

“I am truly enormously fortunate to have been able to see Chu Feng! I can boast about this for the rest of my life!”

Suddenly, the crowd burst into an uproar. Chu Feng’s reputation was truly too enormous. After he stepped into the Heavenly Path, he had become a legend.

In the hearts of countless individuals in the Eastern Sea Region, there was no one that could compare to Chu Feng. Especially among the younger generation, Chu Feng was an existence akin to god, their absolute idol.

That was why the crowd was this excited.

Chun Wu → Spring Dance, Xia Yu → Summer Rain, Qiu Zhu → Autumn Bamboo, Dong Xue → Winter Snow. The four seasons are actual chinese surnames too.

Chapter 2070 – Endlessly Excited

Qiu Zhu and the others planned to first bring Chu Feng to a place to rest, and then inform the others of his return.

However, Chun Wu possessed a very anxious temperament. She pulled Chu Feng and began to lead him toward the place where Lady Piaomiao rested.

That place was a forbidden area. Actually, even they, the Four Seasons Sisters, were not allowed to willfully intrude into that place. The reason for that was because this was currently a special time for the Misty Peak.

“Miss Chun Wu, Lady Piaomiao, she...” Seeing Chun Wu and the others rushing over, the two elders that guarded this place had originally wanted to stop them from entering.

“Don’t stop me. I have an important matter that I must see master for,” However, this time around, Chun Wu did not listen to them and directly charged in.

Normally, the two elders that guarded this place would definitely have stopped her. However, this time around, they did not do so.

It was not that they did not wish to stop her. Rather, when they saw the man behind Chun Wu, they were stunned on the spot.

That elder did not dare to believe what he had seen, and asked the other elder, “That man, is he Lord Chu Feng?”

“It’s Chu Feng. Lord Chu Feng has returned,” The other elder nodded repeatedly. His aged body started to tremble nonstop. From this, it could be seen how excited he was.

“Master, master, quickly, come see who has returned!!!” However, in terms of being excited, the one that was the most excited would remain Chun Wu. Right after entering the palace hall, she began to shout nonstop. From that, one could tell how deeply excited she was.

Being led by Chun Wu and the others, Chu Feng arrived at a side palace hall. At this moment, there were three people in the side palace hall. They were two men and a woman. All of them were people that Chu Feng was familiar with.

These three people were Lady Piaomiao, Taikou and their daughter, the current master of the Misty Peak, Qiushui Fuyan.

“Chun Wu, what are you making a fuss about? Furthermore... didn't I say to you all many times that if there's nothing serious, do not come...”

Lady Piaomiao seemed to be feeling displeased. Thus, her tone was not very pleasing. Upon seeing Chun Wu and the others' arrival, she had planned to lash out at them.

However, when Lady Piaomiao turned around and turned her gaze to Chun Wu, she immediately stood up from her seat. The anger on her face immediately froze, and then changed to joy. In shock, she exclaimed, “Chu Feng?!”

“Chu Feng?” Hearing that name, Taikou and Qiushui Fuyan were also startled. They hurriedly turned their gazes over. When the two of them saw Chu Feng, they also stood up from their seats. Then, taking the same action without prior consultation, they began to walk toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Lady Piaomiao, Senior Taikou and Big Sister Fuyan.”

Upon seeing the three people, Chu Feng bowed and clasped his fist with one hand. He greeted them courteously. The three of them were all people that had helped Chu Feng before. They could be considered to be Chu Feng's great benefactors.

Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng had become, Chu Feng still viewed the three of them as his benefactors, his seniors, people that were very important to him.

“Heavens! Chu Feng, it's really you! You've really returned!”

After verifying that it was indeed Chu Feng, the three of them were unable to contain their happiness, and smiled joyfully. In fact, overwhelmed with excitement, Lady Piaomiao, a person who was always unflustered, actually had reddened eyes.

“Chu Feng, quickly, get back up, get back up. It’s great that you’ve returned, it’s great that you’ve returned,” Lady Piaomiao hurriedly used her shivering hand to lift Chu Feng back up. At this moment, tears began to roll from her eyes.

Those were tears of longing. From that, one could tell how much Lady Piaomiao had missed Chu Feng.

Even though Lady Piaomiao had always been cold and detached toward others, and was a grand character capable of calling the winds and summoning the rains in the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng possessed a special position in her heart.

When Chu Feng had first entered the Eastern Sea Region, he had possessed a heavy responsibility but a weak cultivation. Lady Piaomiao could be said to have been someone who had watched Chu Feng grow up. Thus, to her, Chu Feng was like a son.

“Mother, you’re a bit biased, no? When I returned from my distant journey, you didn’t cry for me,” Qiushui Fuyan feigned to be jealous as she spoke with a smile on her face.

“My, I’ve grown old and disappointing,” Lady Piaomiao wiped away her tears in an embarrassed manner. Even though her cultivation was gone, it remained that she was a grand character. For her to cry in public like this, she would naturally feel embarrassed.

“That’s right. Don’t cry. Little friend Chu Feng’s return is an extremely joyous thing. We should be celebrating this.”

“Wait here, I’ll go and tell everyone this great news.”

“Chu Feng, it just so happens that your master and the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect are all at our Misty Peak.

They will definitely be extremely happy to know of your return.”

Taikou had a smile across his face, covering his face with wrinkles like a steamed bun. As he continued to smile, he hurriedly left.

“I’ll go and help spread the news too.”

“Me too.”

The Four Seasons Sisters also left following Taikou.

“Taikou, if you dared to deceive this old man, this old man will definitely not let you get away with it!!!”

Not long after Taikou and the others left, a threatening voice echoed outside of the palace hall. Soon, a strong wind arrived. Following the wind, a figure descended on the side palace hall.

For the sake of coming to see Chu Feng, this person had even used a movement martial skill.

When that voice sounded, before that man had even entered, Chu Feng already knew who he was.

Rank six Martial King. That was a cultivation not many people in the Eastern Sea Region were capable of achieving. On top of that, that person had spoken with such a domineering voice. Thus, it was definitely Chu Feng’s master, Qiu Canfeng.

“Heavens! Chu Feng, you, you...” Sure enough, it was Qiu Canfeng. After Qiu Canfeng entered the side palace hall and saw Chu Feng, he was so overwhelmed with excitement that he became unable to speak properly.

Originally, he had thought that Taikou was deceiving him. However, even though he knew that he might be deceived, he had still rushed over. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was an extremely important person to him. To his enormous surprise, Chu Feng actually had really returned.

“Boy, you’ve really returned?” After a long while, Qiu Canfeng

finally managed to calm himself. He walked over to Chu Feng and grabbed his shoulders.

Through the hands that were on his shoulders, Chu Feng was able to sense how excited Qiu Canfeng was, as well as how deeply he had missed him.

Although Qiu Canfeng had been trapped in the Emperor's Tomb for many years, which caused Chu Feng to have very few interactions with him, Qiu Canfeng, like Zhuge Liuyun, would forever remain Chu Feng's master in his heart.

“Master, please accept disciple's respect.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved a step back and half kneeled onto the ground to bow to Qiu Canfeng.

If the people from the Holy Land of Martialism were to see this scene, they would definitely be feeling disbelief.

What sort of cultivation did Qiu Canfeng possess? He was merely a rank six Martial King. While he might be a peak expert in the Eastern Sea Region, he would be akin to a fart in the Holy Land of Martialism.

But, what about Chu Feng? He was a grand rank four Martial Emperor. Countless grand characters and Martial Emperor-level experts in the Holy Land of Martialism would have to nod their heads, bow and attempt to court Chu Feng's favor upon seeing him. Who would possibly be able to make Chu Feng kneel and bow to them?

However, Chu Feng was actually kneeling and bowing to Qiu Canfeng. As such, how could they not be shocked?!

Merely, Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan and the others didn't know that Chu Feng's current level of cultivation was already that frightening, nor did they know about Chu Feng's status in the Holy Land of Martialism being that exceptional.

Thus, they only felt that Chu Feng kneeling and bowing to Qiu

Canfeng was something natural. Not only did they not reveal expressions of shock, they were instead smiling.

Chapter 2071 – Insufficient Knowledge

“Quickly, get up so that your master can have a proper look at you,” Qiu Canfeng hurriedly helped Chu Feng to get back up. At this moment, a pained expression appeared on his face. From that, it could be seen how much he pampered Chu Feng.

Even though Qiu Canfeng did not tear up like Lady Piaomiao, Chu Feng was able to see that Qiu Canfeng’s aged eyes had also gotten red as he started to look Chu Feng up and down.

Qiu Canfeng, one of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Great Protectors, was the current Acting Sect Master. Who could possibly make him tear up? When had he ever cried?

However, at this time, there were glistening teardrops in his eyes merely because he had managed to see Chu Feng again. From this, it could be seen how important Chu Feng was in Qiu Canfeng’s heart.

“Look, Old Qiu, I didn’t deceive you, right?” At this moment, Taikou rushed back.

“Taikou, I will definitely give you the benefits that I promised.”

“But right now, I must first reminisce with my disciple,” Qiu Canfeng grabbed Chu Feng’s hand. He was unwilling to let go.

“Enough. Say, senior Qiu Canfeng, there’s no need for you to continue to stir up emotions.”

“It must have been difficult for Chu Feng to be able to return. All of us should be celebrating this,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

“Right, right, right. Men! Transmit the order to set up a grand banquet to celebrate Chu Feng’s return!” Taikou shouted.

Due to his relationship with Lady Piaomiao, Taikou possessed a very prestigious status in the Misty Peak. Practically no one dared to refuse to comply with his orders.

“Senior Taikou, there’s no need to be too extravagant. It would do if you are to call for some familiar faces,” Chu Feng said.

Over the years, Chu Feng had experienced a lot of festive banquets. As such, he had already grown tired of them. As such, he merely wished to be able to reminisce with the people that he missed the most.

“Rest assured, they will all be familiar faces. Those that you do not know will not be allowed to enter,” Taikou said with a smile. Then, he walked out. From his appearance, it seemed that he planned to go and personally watch over the preparation of the banquet.

Following him, Qiushui Fuyan also walked out. From that, it could be seen that they held great importance for Chu Feng as, even for a banquet, the father and daughter had actually both left to personally prepare it.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, there’s a matter I must tell you about. Your family, the Azure Dragon School, and the people from the Jiang Royal Dynasty have all returned to the Nine Provinces Continent,” Lady Piaomiao said to Chu Feng.

“Why did they leave?” Chu Feng asked.

“They said that the Nine Provinces Continent was their home, that they felt that they would be letting their ancestors down should they not return.”

“However, the way I see it, I think they felt that we would be inconvenienced should they continue to stay here. Thus, they found an excuse to leave.”

“However, you can rest assured. We have been in contact them entire time. As such, everything has been well for them in the Nine Provinces Continent,” Lady Piaomiao added, seemingly afraid that Chu Feng would be worried.

“There’s no harm to it. After all, I must return to the Nine

Provinces Continent anyways. It would be fine to meet with them after I've returned," Chu Feng was relieved to know that his family and friends were all fine.

After that, the banquet's preparations were done. All of the people from the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect that Chu Feng knew were seated at the banquet.

Xue Xiyue, First Immortal Ya Zhongyun, and many other familiar faces appeared in Chu Feng's line of sight.

The reactions of the crowd were generally all about the same. They were all very happy to see Chu Feng. Different from the people from the Holy Land of Martialism, these familiar faces did not reveal the slightest trace of unfamiliarity when they saw Chu Feng. They did not reveal excessive reverence toward Chu Feng because he had become stronger. Instead, they were very amiable, like family, a true family.

"Chu Feng, did you successfully manage to reach the Holy Land of Martialism? Exactly what sort of place is that legendary Holy Land of Martialism?"

"Did you manage to see Zi Ling and the others? Not long after you left, they all left for the Holy Land of Martialism too."

On the banquet, all sorts of different questions assailed Chu Feng. Although the crowd were all very curious about the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng was able to tell that they were actually all very concerned for him. They wanted to know whether or not he had managed to do well in the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Chu Feng, he did not refuse any question, and answered each and every single one of them.

However, Chu Feng did not brag about his achievements in the Holy Land of Martialism. Instead, he only explained the things concerning the Holy Land of Martialism to the crowd.

"As expected, my disciple is truly powerful. He actually managed

to successfully enter the Holy Land of Martialism. Come, your master shall toast you with a cup of wine,” After knowing that Chu Feng had actually entered the Holy Land of Martialism and managed to return, Qiu Canfeng revealed pride all over his face.

However, although he said he would toast Chu Feng with a cup of wine, he was actually holding a jug of wine. Qiu Canfeng’s forthright attitude remained completely the same.

“Master, this disciple shall offer you a toast of wine too,” In response, Chu Feng put his wine cup away and picked up a wine jug. He stood up and drank the wine with one gulp.

“Good!!!” Seeing that, the crowd began to applaud and cheer. The smiles on their faces grew even denser.

At that moment, the crowd reacted as if they had forgotten their worries. One by one, they were all smiling brilliantly and from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Big sister Fuyan, why do I not see senior Huangfu Haoyue here?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Huangfu Haoyue was not only a senior that had left an extremely deep impression in Chu Feng’s mind, he was also the senior that had determined Chu Feng’s fate.

If it wasn’t for Huangfu Haoyue bringing him out from the Heavenly Road and bringing him to the Nine Provinces Continent, Chu Feng would not have become a part of the Chu Family.

Perhaps, everything would be completely different now. Thus, Huangfu Haoyue was one of the people that he felt the most grateful toward.

Before Chu Feng had left the Eastern Sea Region, Huangfu Haoyue had married Qiushui Fuyan here. Thus, he should be living in the Misty Peak. However, although a banquet had been prepared, Huangfu Haoyue was nowhere to be seen. As such, Chu Feng was very puzzled.

“Haoyue is in closed-door training right now. However, judging by the time, he should be coming out from his closed-door training soon,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Closed-door training again? Senior Haoyue is truly diligent. Oh, that’s right. Big sister Fuyan, what is senior Haoyue’s cultivation now?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Back then, Huangfu Haoyue had been the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Although Huangfu Haoyue had been defeated by Chu Feng, he was most definitely the most talented individual in the Eastern Sea Region. As such, Chu Feng was very curious as to what level of cultivation Huangfu Haoyue possess now.

“Haha, mentioning Huangfu Haoyue, he’s extremely amazing. He has long since became a rank nine Martial King. Right now, he is attempting to break through into Martial Emperor realm.”

“If he is to succeed, he will no longer be a Martial King, but will instead become a Martial Emperor,” Qiu Canfeng said with a smile.

“Senior Huangfu Haoyue is truly amazing,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed slightly. He was feeling happy for Huangfu Haoyue. Merely, he knew that what was after Martial King was Half Martial Emperor, and not Martial Emperor.

However, it remained that there had never been a Half Martial Emperor in the Eastern Sea Region for many years now. To them, after Martial King would be Martial Emperor. They did not know anything about the Half Martial Emperor realm.

At that moment, as the crowd were all feeling joyous, Chu Feng found it unsuitable to mention this matter. He was afraid that he would affect everyone’s mood. After all, this would indirectly show that the knowledge of the people from the Eastern Sea Region was insufficient.

Chapter 2072 – Ya Fei’s Mishap

“It is truly amazing. If Huangfu Haoyue is to break through, I’m afraid that even you, Chu Feng, would not be a match for Huangfu Haoyue,” Someone said with a beaming smile. His words were indirectly prying into Chu Feng’s cultivation.

As for Chu Feng, he did not wish to appear too arrogant. Thus, he did not brag about how exceptionally powerful he was now, and how Huangfu Haoyue would be greatly inferior to him even if he managed to successfully reach a breakthrough. Thus, Chu Feng only smiled and said, “I naturally cannot compare to senior Huangfu Haoyue.”

“Alas, Chu Feng, you’re still young. Your days are still very long. There’s no need to rush, no need to rush. In the future, the world will be yours,” Taikou began to mediate. He did not wish to ruin the excellent atmosphere here from that sort of topic.

“That’s right, that’s right. Come, let’s drink,” The others also began to toast and drink. They wished to shift from the topic.

“Senior First Immortal, where is Ya Fei?” Chu Feng asked the First Immortal who sat at the edge of the banquet.

The First Immortal was Ya Fei’s grandfather. Originally, he had been a super expert from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Due to his granddaughter, he had ended up joining the Misty Peak.

It was also precisely because he joined the Misty Peak that he managed to escape from the calamity. Not only did he manage to come out unscathed when all of the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were killed, he also ended up staying in the Misty Peak, becoming a part of it.

Most importantly, after all these years, a matter has been in Chu Feng’s mind the entire time. That was, to help Ya Fei regain a physical body.

Even though Chu Feng was not the one that had destroyed Ya Fei's physical body, it was related to him.

Before leaving the Eastern Sea Region, he had promised the First Immortal that he would find a way to help Ya Fei regain her body.

With Chu Feng's current world spirit techniques, it would be extremely easy for him to restore Ya Fei's body. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to quickly help Ya Fei restore her body. Not only would he have helped the First Immortal attain his cherished desire, he would also be able to undo a knot in his own heart.

Chu Feng had thought about it. Back then, he had been young and frivolous. Out of impulse, he had done many excessive things.

It wasn't only Ya Fei. There was also Murong Wan and Yan Ruyu.

Those three women were not Chu Feng's lovers. However, they had all been tarnished by Chu Feng due to his impulses.

Their purity had been seized by Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng could not disregard them.

If they were willing, Chu Feng was willing to marry them. If they were not willing, Chu Feng was going to do his best to make things up to them.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I thank you for still remembering Ya Fei. Merely, Ya Fei, she..."

At that moment, the First Immortal stood up. Before he could finish his words, he started to choke with emotions.

Seeing that, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the others. However, at that moment, the crowd were all lowering their heads silently, unwilling to face Chu Feng.

"Big sister Fuyan, where's Ya Fei?" Chu Feng turned his gaze to Qiushui Fuyan. He was certain that something must've happened to Ya Fei. Furthermore, he was certain that all the people present knew about it.

“Chu Feng, you must remain calm,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“I am very calm. Please tell me what happened to Ya Fei,” Chu Feng asked. He realized from the crowd’s reaction that something had happened to Ya Fei. Furthermore, it seemed to be extremely severe.

“Okay then,” Qiushui Fuyan sucked in a mouthful of air to calm her thoughts. Then, she said, “A year ago, a gate suddenly appeared in the Misty Peak. We are certain that what was behind that gate was the Misty Peak’s most mysterious Immortalization Road.”

“Immortalization Road? Hadn’t the Misty Peak’s Immortalization Road already been discovered?” Chu Feng asked in surprise. He knew quite a bit about the secrets concerning the Misty Peak.

The so-called Immortalization Road was the Misty Peak’s most mysterious and most powerful location. The reason for that was because the Misty Peak recorded that one could become an Immortal upon entering the Immortalization Road.

It could be said... that the Immortalization Road was the core of the Misty Peak, the Misty Peak’s most precious treasure.

However, hearing what Qiushui Fuyan said, it seemed that the Immortalization Road that they knew about wasn’t the actual Immortalization Road. They now possessed a new discovery.

“No, the one before was not the actual Immortalization Road. After all, we had only guessed it to be the Immortalization Road.”

“However, the one that appeared a year ago had the words ‘Immortalization Road’ clearly written on it. Furthermore, it emitted a dense amount of the Ancient Era’s aura. It was most definitely the actual Immortalization Road,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Then, what happened?” Chu Feng asked.

“After the actual Immortalization Road appeared, we were

overjoyed. After we opened its gates, we were even more pleased.”

“Although we were unable to reach the end of the Immortalization Road, we managed to obtain a lot of gains from it. That Immortalization Road was a sacred place for cultivation.”

“It was also because of that Immortalization Road that Haoyue was able to reach a breakthrough to rank nine Martial King so quickly, and able to attempt to breakthrough to the Martial Emperor realm.”

“However, the accident happened half a year ago. Ya Fei, Yan Ruyu and Murong Wan disappeared when they were training in the Immortalization Road. No matter how we searched for them, we were unable to find them,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. It was not only Ya Fei who had disappeared. In addition to her, Yan Ruyu and Murong Wan had also disappeared.

Originally, Chu Feng had thought that Yan Ruyu and Murong Wan had not attended this banquet because they were not in the Misty Peak. However, he did not expect that they had actually disappeared alongside Ya Fei.

The three women Chu Feng felt the most guilt toward, the three women that he wanted to make up to, had actually disappeared together. How was Chu Feng to make up to them now? He would not even have the chance to do so anymore.

“Why would they suddenly disappear? Are there dangers in the Immortalization Road?” Chu Feng asked. This matter was of great importance. As such, he must deeply investigate it.

“We were unable to find them. Thus, we can only consider it to be a disappearance. There wasn’t any danger at the place we provided them to train in. However, the depths of the Immortalization Road, in other words, the places that we are unable to explore, are extremely dangerous.”

“We felt that it was very possible that the three of them decided to explore the depths and met with an accident while doing so,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Ya Fei is only a spirit body right now. How could she be allowed to go train too?” Chu Feng asked in confusion.

“Although we were unable to recover her body, after our efforts, we were able to let her live ordinarily like us with a spirit body. Furthermore, the Immortalization Road possessed a special sort of power that could provide comfort to her,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“So that’s the case.”

“Then, big sister Fuyan, where is that Immortalization Path? It is possible to open it now?” Chu Feng asked.

“While it is possible, merely, Chu Feng, we have already searched all of the places that we could. The places that we cannot search are truly too dangerous. Furthermore, it has already been half a year. I fear that they’re already...” Qiushui Fuyan knew what Chu Feng was thinking. However, she did not wish to have Chu Feng enter the Immortalization Road because, she herself had been to it many times, and knew how dangerous the depths of the Immortalization Road were.

“Big sister Fuyan, please help me. The three of them are extremely important to me. I cannot allow myself to do nothing after something has happened to them,” Chu Feng said to Qiushui Fuyan with a pleading gaze.

Chapter 2073 – Immortalization Road

At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan was placed in a difficult situation. She knew Chu Feng's personality extremely well. As such, she was afraid that Chu Feng would put himself into danger.

However, it was precisely because she knew Chu Feng's personality that she knew that she would not be able to make Chu Feng change his mind. Thus, she said to Chu Feng, "Follow me."

After Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan left, the others present all stood up and followed after them.

Being led by Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng soon arrived at the so-called Immortalization Road.

It was a special gate. Even though the gate appeared to be constructed of carved stones, it was actually formed with a very powerful spirit technique.

Most importantly, although the gate did not appear to be special, it gave off a dense amount of the Ancient Era's aura like Qiushui Fuyan had said.

The moment Chu Feng saw the Immortalization Road, Chu Feng started to frown deeply.

Even though it was only a spirit formation gate, Chu Feng was able to tell how powerful the creator of the spirit formation gate was merely by looking at the spirit formation gate.

Chu Feng's strength had advanced by leaps and bounds after this many years had passed. Not only had Chu Feng become a Martial Emperor-level expert, he had also become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist and was a major character in the Holy Land of Martialism. But even Chu Feng felt a sensation when he stood before the Immortalization Road's entrance gate. That was, the sensation of being small.

"Chu Feng, let me accompany you in there," Qiushui Fuyan said

to Chu Feng.

“There’s no need for that. It would do for me to go in there alone. Everyone, do not follow me in,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he stepped onto the Immortalization Road.

At that moment, the expressions of the crowd all turned stiff. They were worried about Chu Feng and wanted to follow him in. Merely, they didn’t want to go against Chu Feng’s desire either. That was why they were hesitating right now.

After a moment of hesitation, Lady Piaomiao said, “Ya Fei and them possessed a special relationship with Chu Feng. He possesses a knot in his heart that was originally capable of being undone by Ya Fei and the others that disappeared. However, now, he can only rely on himself. As such, it might be better that he enter alone.”

“But, inside the Immortalization Road is...” Qiushui Fuyan as well as the others present were still very worried.

“Everyone, have you all forgotten about little friend Chu Feng’s talent? It has been many years now. You all have managed to make improvements to your strength. As such, how could he have not?”

“It might even be possible that the current little friend Chu Feng is already a Martial Emperor,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“I think it’s possible that Chu Feng is a rank nine Martial King. As for Martial Emperor, that’s a bit too far-fetched.”

“After all, even Huangfu Haoyue said that it was very difficult to reach a breakthrough to the Martial Emperor realm. If it wasn’t for the treasures that had been discovered on the Immortalization Road, he would not have had the opportunity to attempt the breakthrough either.”

“Although Chu Feng’s talent is extremely high, it remains that he’s very young,” Qiu Canfeng and the others said. They all felt that Chu Feng was most definitely stronger than them. However, they did not believe him to be a Martial Emperor.

Although it has been several years since Chu Feng had left, to people that had cultivated for hundreds of years like them, several years simply could not amount to much at all. At Chu Feng's level, to be able to reach peak Martial King in several years would already be a miracle. As for becoming a Martial Emperor, that was simply impossible.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had personally said that he would be no match for Huangfu Haoyue if Huangfu Haoyue were to successfully reach a breakthrough.

Thus, from those words, the crowd was able to deduce Chu Feng's cultivation to be still at the Martial King level.

"That's also precisely the reason why he should enter the Immortalization Road. Perhaps he might be able to obtain benefits from it. It might even be possible for his cultivation to increase. Thus, we should let him enter," Lady Piaomiao said.

"That's true," At that moment, the crowd's nervousness was eased. Although the depths of the Immortalization Road were extremely dangerous, they possessed a special sort of power. As they all knew how strong Chu Feng's comprehension was, they felt that Chu Feng might really be able to obtain a harvest from entering the Immortalization Road.

"Boom~~~"

Right at that moment, a loud explosion sounded from afar. Following that, a dazzling blaze soared into the sky.

When that blaze appeared, an enormous oppressive sensation followed suit. That sort of oppressive sensation was something that the people present had never felt before.

After sensing that oppressive sensation and seeing that dazzling blaze, the people present all revealed overjoyed expressions.

One by one, they soared into the sky and began to fly toward that blaze.

Soon, the blaze and that oppressive might started to dissipate. Then, a man appeared in their midst.

That man was Huangfu Haoyue.

At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan was wild with joy. Unable to contain herself, she asked, “Haoyue, you’ve succeeded?”

“Mn, this is Emperor-level martial power. I have successfully broken through to the Martial Emperor realm.”

“But...” Huangfu Haoyue started to hesitate.

“What’s wrong?” Qiushui Fuyan and the others all asked in a deeply concerned manner.

“I am able to sense Emperor-level martial power now. Merely, the amount that I can make use of is extremely limited. I keep feeling that I am unable to make use of the most concentrated and pure Emperor-level power.”

“In other words, although I am able to use Emperor-level martial power, I am unable to use the actual Emperor-level martial power,” Huangfu Haoyue said with a frown.

“Although you’ve broken through to Martial Emperor realm, it remains that you’re only a rank one Martial Emperor. It is normal that you are unable to completely grasp Emperor-level martial power,” Taikou said.

“That’s right. The most important thing is that you’ve become a Martial Emperor. Now, we no longer have to be afraid of that bunch of Blood Qilins,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

Upon mentioning the Blood Qilins, the crowd present all revealed expressions of hatred. They were impatient to have Huangfu Haoyue teach that bunch a lesson.

Merely, at that moment, Qiu Canfeng’s expression changed. He involuntarily looked to Xue Xiyue who stood beside him.

“Everyone, although Huangfu Haoyue has become a Martial

Emperor, the Blood Qilins still cannot be looked down upon.”

“Earlier, I went to the Everlasting Sea of Blood to scout things out. At that place, I felt an extremely frightening oppressive might. Although I was unable to ascertain things at that time, I am able to do so now. I am sure that the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief has also broken through to the Martial Emperor realm. The reason for that is because that oppressive might felt exactly the same as the one that you brought us,” Xue Xiyue said sternly.

“What? The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief also broke through to the Martial Emperor realm? It is no wonder the Blood Qilins are acting so arrogantly. In the letter they sent us yesterday, they demanded that we leave the Misty Peak immediately. Else, they would come and kill all of us with their army,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a frown.

Yesterday, Qiushui Fuyan had received a letter. After seeing the contents of the letter, she had thought the Blood Qilins to be extremely arrogant and conceited. However, after hearing what Xue Xiyue said, and considering the time when Xue Xiyue had returned to the Misty Peak and the timing of the letter, she felt that it was very likely that the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief had managed to break through to the Martial Emperor realm, and that they had sent the letter after he had reached a breakthrough.

Now that she thought about it, that was simply no letter. Instead, it was a written challenge.

“What’s there to fear? Haoyue has also become a Marital Emperor now. Even if that Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief is also a Martial Emperor, he would only have the same level of cultivation as Haoyue.”

“If they wish to come, then let them come. This would serve as a perfect opportunity to settle them. I’ll give the order to have our Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army gather here,” Qiu Canfeng said.

“That’s right. We not only have the Martial Emperor senior Huangfu Haoyue here, there’s also junior brother Chu Feng.”

“My junior brother Chu Feng was able to defeat even those fellows from the Holy Land of Martialism back then. How could he possibly fear a bunch of fish that overestimates themselves?” Chun Wu said in an immensely proud manner.

Even though the crowd all felt that Chu Feng was not a Martial Emperor, Chun Wu was still extremely confident in Chu Feng.

Chapter 2074 – Keep Chu Feng In The Dark

“Chun Wu, what did you just say? You said that Chu Feng has returned?” Hearing what Chun Wu said, Huangfu Haoyue’s expression took a huge change. Overwhelmed with excitement, he grabbed Chun Wu.

“Haoyue, I nearly forgot to mention this to you. Chu Feng has indeed returned. He just returned today,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

“That’s great. Where is Chu Feng now?” I’ll go see him,” After verifying that Chu Feng had returned, Huangfu Haoyue revealed an overjoyed expression. His appearance was even more excited than when he had reached a breakthrough in his cultivation.

“Little friend Chu Feng found out about what happened to Ya Fei and the others. Thus, he has entered the Immortalization Road to search for clues regarding Ya Fei and the others,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“That, it’s understandable,” After hearing that, Huangfu Haoyue’s smile turned stiff. Not only did he stop smiling, he revealed an expression of worry. He said, “If it is determined that Ya Fei and the others are no longer in this world, little friend Chu Feng will definitely be feeling extremely hurt.”

Hearing those words, many of the crowd all grew silent. They all know that Chu Feng possessed a special relationship with those three women. Furthermore, they were all able to tell that Chu Feng felt guilt toward them.

“Haoyue, this is perfect timing. The banquet that we held for Chu Feng’s return is still here. We’ll go and replenish it so that we can celebrate your breakthrough to Martial Emperor,” Qiu Canfeng said. The other people present also expressed their approval of Qiu Canfeng’s idea.

To them, today could be said to have brought happiness twofold. If they did not enjoy themselves with wine, they would truly have wasted this happy day.

“Everyone, Haoyue just reached a breakthrough. Even though his cultivation has greatly increased, it remains that if the situation is truly as Xue Xiyue said, that the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief has already broken through to the Martial Emperor realm, they could arrive at our Misty Peak at any moment now.”

“If we were all drunk at that time, it would be very inappropriate,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“What mother says is very true. Furthermore, Haoyue just reached a breakthrough. As such, he must properly rest,” Qiushui Fuyan added.

“That’s true. It would not be too late for us to celebrate after we take care of the Blood Qilins,” Qiu Canfeng and the others nodded.

Thus, the crowd scattered. Although the crowd had scattered, Qiu Canfeng and many others remained. They stood guarding the entrance to the Immortalization Road.

They all had a lot of things that they wished to tell Chu Feng. Furthermore, they were extremely worried for Chu Feng’s safety and state of mind.

However, as they did not wish to disturb Chu Feng, they could only guard the entrance and wait for Chu Feng’s return.

Originally, Huangfu Haoyue had wanted to go there to wait for Chu Feng’s return too. However, as there were already so many people waiting for Chu Feng, and Qiushui Fuyan had told him to rest, he ended up returning to his and Qiushui Fuyan’s residence.

“Haoyue, although you’ve become a Martial Emperor, I am still worried should you fight against that Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief,” Just then, Qiushui Fuyan discarded her usual image and laid herself on Huangfu Haoyue’s bosom lovingly.

Although she was the current master of the Misty Peak and held enormous power, she remained only Huangfu Haoyue's wife when before him. As such, the only thing in her mind was worry for her husband.

"Truth be told, if the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief has also broken through to Martial Emperor, it will truly be hard for me to attain certain victory when fighting against him."

"After all, when I fought against him before, I was unable to attain any superiority in the battle. However, as matters stand, we have no other option. We must fight with our backs to the river," Huangfu Haoyue said.

"How about we go and call Chu Feng out? With how powerful Chu Feng's talent is, and how he managed to return from the Holy Land of Martialism, he might also be a Martial Emperor. If the two of you were to join hands, then, regardless of how powerful that Blood Qilins' Clan Chief might be, he would still be no match for the two of you," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Fuyan, you've just said it yourself. Chu Feng might be a Martial Emperor. However, it's also possible that he might not be a Martial Emperor."

"If Chu Feng is a Martial Emperor, then it would be great. However, if he isn't a Martial Emperor, we would be throwing him into this battle that did not originally concern him for no reason," Huangfu Haoyue said.

"But, Chu Feng is no stranger," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Indeed. Chu Feng treats us like relatives. However, that is precisely why we shouldn't involve him. If he knew about this matter concerning the Blood Qilins, he would definitely not leave things be. Instead, he would fight alongside us against the Blood Qilins."

"But, you should know about Chu Feng's true identity. His

identity is extremely exceptional. If something were to really happen to him, and his father were to find out about it, none of us would be able to escape the blame,” Huangfu Haoyue said solemnly.

“If something were to happen to Chu Feng, it would mean that the Blood Qilins would have defeated us. At that time, we would not be alive. When we’re already dead, what responsibility is there to fear?”

“I know that you just do not wish to involve Chu Feng. You are worried about him, no?” Qiushui Fuyan said.

At that moment, Huangfu Haoyue nodded his head. Then, he said, “Chu Feng has already done enough for us. Chu Feng’s contribution cannot go unnoticed in how we were able to defeat the Immortal Execution Archipelago back then and obtain the status of being the overlords of the Eastern Sea Region.”

“And now, Chu Feng has just returned. If he were to find out that our status as overlords was in imminent danger, what would he think of us? Wouldn’t we, his seniors, be too useless?”

“Haoyue, I understand,” At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan finally truly understood what Huangfu Haoyue had in mind. It turned out that while it was true that Huangfu Haoyue was worried for Chu Feng, he felt ashamed to ask for Chu Feng’s assistance right after his return.

After all, this was the Eastern Sea Region. Huangfu Haoyue was the strongest individual in the Eastern Sea Region. As such, he should be the one to personally take care of this matter. He could not rely on Chu Feng since, after all, Chu Feng was only a member of the younger generation.

“It’s all the fault of that bunch of damned Blood Qilins. Exactly where did they obtain that treasure that allowed them to become this powerful in a short few years? Even when our Misty Peak joined hands with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, we are still

unable to take care of them,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a frown.

“Their treasure is extremely powerful. It is precisely because of that that we cannot delay this matter. Sooner or later, their strength will surpass our own,” Huangfu Haoyue said.

“But, judging by the time, if the Blood Qilins truly plan to attack our Misty Peak, they should be arriving very soon. Even if we wish to conceal this matter from Chu Feng, we may not be able to do so,” Qiushui Fuyan said worriedly.

“Indeed. Soon, the Misty Peak will become a battlefield. Thus, Fuyan, there is a matter that I wish to request of you,” Huangfu Haoyue grabbed Qiushui Fuyan’s arms. With a very serious tone, he said, “After Chu Feng comes out of the Immortalization Road, regardless of what sort of excuse you must use, you must bring Chu Feng away from here. While we can die, Chu Feng absolutely cannot.”

“But...” Hearing those words, Qiushui Fuyan’s eyes turned moist. Before imminent battle, how could she have the heart to have her husband and relatives go and fight with their lives while she herself survived?

Right at that moment, worried shouts from a Misty Peak’s elder sounded from outside. “Milord, Milady, the situation’s bad!!!”

“Blood Qilins have appeared and surrounded our Misty Peak from all directions. We are unable to determine their numbers. However, it’s an enormous amount.”

“We fear... we fear...”

“We fear that the Blood Qilin’s entire army has arrived to attack us!!!”

Chapter 2075 – Stairway To Heaven

Hearing what the elder outside said, Qiushui Fuyan's petite body trembled. What she didn't wish for the most had happened. Furthermore, it had happened so quickly.

"They actually arrived this fast?" Huangfu Haoyue abruptly stood up. He dressed himself and began to walk outside. However, when he arrived before the door, he stopped. He turned around and looked to Qiushui Fuyan with a serious expression.

"Fuyan, you cannot let Chu Feng know that the Blood Qilins are attacking us. If Chu Feng is to leave the Immortalization Road, you must bring him away using the teleportation formation."

After saying those words, Huangfu Haoyue revealed a pleading expression. He added, "Absolutely nothing must be allowed to happen to Chu Feng. His battlefield is the Holy Land of Martialism. He can no longer participate in the matters of the eastern Sea Region. Fuyan, I know that having you do this will be extremely painful for you. But.... please!"

After saying those words, Huangfu Haoyue revealed reluctance to part. However, he did not allow Qiushui Fuyan to see that reluctance. Instead, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

Currently, the entire Misty Peak was in an utter mess. They had been caught unprepared by the sudden arrival of the Blood Qilin's army.

However, although that was the case, the military strength gathered in the Misty Peak all started to rush outward. They were prepared to guard the Misty Peak with their lives.

However, at such a time, not only did the master of the Misty Peak, Qiushui Fuyan, not rush out first, she instead proceeded toward the Immortalization Road.

She did not wish to go against Huangfu Haoyue's desires. At the

same time, she also did not wish for anything to happen to Chu Feng. Thus, she decided that she would guard the Immortalization Road during this time when the others were fighting with their lives on the line. After Chu Feng exited the Immortalization Road, she planned to bring him away using the teleportation formation.

Chu Feng was inside the Immortalization Road.

The Immortalization Road was very peculiar. After one entered through the gate, one would arrive at a very vast and expansive road. The road itself was formed with crystals that emitted a dazzling golden light.

Furthermore, it was not only just a vast and expansive road. On either side of the road were different sceneries.

Merely, that scenery was somewhat strange. They were very beautiful, stunningly and fascinatingly dazzling.

Furthermore, the further in one proceeded, the more beautiful the scenery became. The reason why it was strange was because there were countless bones of the dead on either side in addition to the beautiful scenery. Those were not only human bones; there were also many different monstrous beast bones.

The number of bones was too numerous. In some places, they piled up to a small mountain.

Most importantly, the scenery on either side was actually all fake. It was simply impossible to set foot into those places. The only actual thing here was the Immortalization Road.

Chu Feng felt that there was some sort of special message in the strange scenery on either side of the road. He felt that it was implying that the Immortalization Road was formed through piling up countless bones, that it was very difficult to become an Immortal, and one would die should one take a wrong step.

However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that the Immortalization Road did contain a special sort of power. It was as

Qiushui Fuyan said, that power was not only helpful towards martial cultivation, it also possessed a special sort of nourishment property for one's spirit power. Merely, to the current Chu Feng, the beneficial effects were very insignificant.

Thus, Chu Feng had already arrived at the Immortalization Road's depths. In other words, he had arrived at the place where Qiushui Fuyan and the others did not dare to enter.

Why was he certain that he reached the place where Qiushui Fuyan and the others did not dare to enter? That was because enormous heaven-reaching trees had appeared to either side of the Immortalization Road. There were vines on the trees that dangled downward, decreasing the size of the Immortalization Road.

Most importantly, not only were the vines indestructible, they were also poisonous. Furthermore, the vines would move about irregularly. As long as one came into contact with the sharp thorns on the vines, one would undoubtedly be killed.

However, Chu Feng possessed a body immune to poisons. Thus, the vines' poison would naturally not stop Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng continued to rapidly move onward. Ignoring his body's immunity to poisons, those vines were simply unable to even reach Chu Feng after Chu Feng covered his body with a layer of spirit formations.

“Ya Fei, Yan Ruyu, Murong Wan, the three of you must be alive.”

However, the further Chu Feng went, the more uneasy he felt. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had been probing his surroundings with his spirit power the entire time. However, not only did he not discover any remains from Ya Fei and the others, he was unable to sense the auras of the three women either.

If Ya Fei and the others were to truly have disappeared from the Immortalization Road, then it would mean that they had yet to die. Even if they were dead, it was only possible that they had died in

the depths of the Immortalization Road.

Chu Feng truly did not wish for Ya Fei and the others to die.

Furthermore, the three of them were not hot-headed people. There would be no reason for them to charge into a place as dangerous as the Immortalization Road's depths.

Finally, Chu Feng walked out of the area filled with tree vines. At that moment, the Immortalization Road became wider. However, Chu Feng started to frown.

Although the sides of the Immortalization Road were no longer covered with the enormous heaven-reaching poisonous trees, enormous sculptures appeared on either sides of the Immortalization Road.

These sculptures were wearing armor and holding weapons. Each and every one of them reached a hundred meters tall. They looked extremely domineering.

At the moment when Chu Feng appeared, all of those sculptures actually turned their heads toward him. They looked at him with fiendish eyes. Those sculptures actually possessed intelligence.

Most importantly was the auras that those sculptures emitted. They were actually all peak Martial Emperors.

“What is this?”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to panic. He was panicking not because he was afraid of those sculptures. Rather, it was because he still found no trace of Ya Fei and the others even after reaching this place.

With the strength that Ya Fei, Yan Ruyu and Murong Wan possessed, it was impossible for them to pass through those sculptures. In other words, even if the three of them had managed to pass through the poisonous trees, this would be the furthest they could go.

However, there was no trace of Ya Fei and the others here either. Not even their remains could be found. This made Chu Feng extremely puzzled. Exactly where had the three of them gone to?

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. At the beginning, the sculptures had been looking at Chu Feng with fierce gazes. It was as if they would execute Chu Feng should he take another step forward.

However, now, not only were those sculptures no longer looking at Chu Feng with fiendish gazes, they had also turned their heads around. Although they still emitted the auras of peak Martial Emperors, they did not reveal any traces of hostility toward Chu Feng.

“What is this? Could it be a trap?!”

Chu Feng started to frown. He was confused as to what was happening. However, he still continued to proceed onward. Since he had arrived here, Chu Feng was determined to thoroughly investigate this place.

Furthermore, even if these sculptures were peak Martial Emperors, Chu Feng, with his current level of strength, might not necessarily be destined to be killed. While he would not be able to defeat them, he might still be capable of fleeing from them.

As he continued onward, Chu Feng discovered that those sculptures did not make any other movements at all. It seemed that they really did not plan to attack him.

Although Chu Feng did not know what was going on with those sculptures, Chu Feng’s originally cautious footsteps soon started to increase in speed.

The reason for that was because the Immortalization Road was extremely long. If he wished to investigate it, he had to hasten his pace. Else, if he were to proceed at the speed of ordinary people, he

would not be able to reach the end even after walking for several tens of years.

Once Chu Feng increased his speed, he started to travel like light. In a flash, he traveled ten thousand miles!!!

Finally, Chu Feng saw the end of the Immortalization Road. Even though he was still very far away from the end, he was able to see an altar-like item at the end of the Immortalization Road.

“Stairway To Heaven?”

After Chu Feng arrived before the altar, he began to inspect the altar carefully. He discovered that there was nothing special about the altar. It seemed to be composed of ordinary stones. There were many cracks in the stones. However, the altar emitted a dense amount of Ancient Era’s aura. Furthermore, there was an stele erected on top of the altar. On the stele were the words ‘Stairway To Heaven.’

Chapter 2076 – Chu Feng's Fury

“This is the end of the Immortalization Road?”

While the name Stairway To Heaven did sound very domineering, after Chu Feng inspected it carefully, he was unable to discover anything special about this Stairway To Heaven.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt a bit disappointed. Originally, he had thought that there would be something extraordinary at the end of the Immortalization Road. However, this altar by the name of ‘Stairway To Heaven’ that appeared before him did not satisfy Chu Feng’s anticipation at all.

“Exactly where have Ya Fei and the others gone to?”

“Or, could it be that this place is not the end of the Immortalization Road?”

Although Chu Feng was disappointed after reaching the end of the Immortalization Road, he was also very worried for Ya Fei and the others.

If Chu Feng was really at the end of the Immortalization Road, then why was he unable to find Ya Fei and the others?

It should be impossible for them to have disappeared like this.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a stream of a special sort of energy was suddenly emitted from the center of the altar.

Sensing that energy, Chu Feng hurriedly moved back. The reason for that was because that energy was extremely powerful, and simply something that Chu Feng had never sensed before.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a golden ray of light shot forth straight from the center of the altar and toward the sky. In an instant, it pierced through layers of clouds and reached deep into the

heavens.

“Heavens!!!”

At that moment, even Chu Feng was stunned. Deep shock filled his eyes.

The reason for that was because not only was that golden ray of light piercing the skies. Chu Feng felt that it was also penetrating space itself, breaking through the boundaries and entering a new world.

Most importantly, through using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to clearly see what was within the golden light. They were crystal stairs.

That's right, they were stairs. The stairs extended all the way into the depths of the skies.

The name Stairway To Heaven was not an undeserved reputation. It was truly a stairway to heaven.

“Could it be that these stairs lead to the Outer World?”

At that moment, Chu Feng felt extremely excited. He could sense that his blood was racing. It was as if his blood had been ignited.

Where was the place that Chu Feng had always wanted to go? It was the Outer World.

The reason for that was because the Outer World was where his clan was from. Chu Feng always felt that the Outer World was his actual battlefield.

He must retrieve his father's honor. He must retrieve his lost dignity. He must let his clan know that their decision to abandon his father and him was their greatest mistake.

Merely, the Outer World was only a legend even in the Holy Land of Martialism. The people that knew of the Outer World were extremely few. As for a method to enter the Outer World, no one knew about it.

However, the place which the Stairway To Heaven lead was a place which Chu Feng could not see. Chu Feng felt that it was very possible for this Stairway To Heaven to be a divine artifact that lead to the Outer World.

After all, this place was known as the Immortalization Road. What was an Immortal? If one were to leave this world and enter a better world, wouldn't one enter a world of Immortals?

To ordinary people, wouldn't the so-called Outer World be a world of Immortals?

“Ya Fei, Yan Ruyu and Murong Wan, they couldn't have possible ascended the Stairway To Heaven, right?”

At that moment, a speculation appeared in Chu Feng's mind. Ya Fei and the others had disappeared for no reason at all. Furthermore, there was no trace of them on the Immortalization Road. Thus, the only explanation available right now was that the three of them had entered the Outer World through the Stairway To Heaven.

However, Chu Feng did not dare to ascertain his speculation. After all, if Ya Fei and the others had truly arrived here, there would be no reason for them to directly step onto the Stairway To Heaven. Instead, they should have returned to inform Qiushui Fuyan and the others about it.

Even if they were afraid of the vines and felt that they would not be able to return safely, they should have left a letter or some sort of indication before ascending the Stairway To Heaven.

There was no reason why the three of them would leave like this without leaving any hint behind, for this would only cause everyone to be worried for them.

“Perhaps the answer to all this can only be discovered at the end of the Stairway To Heaven.”

At that moment, Chu Feng truly had an urge to ascend the

Stairway To Heaven. He wanted to investigate the Stairway To Heaven. It was not only because he wanted to search for Ya Fei and the others. It was also for the sake of entering the Outer World.

However, Chu Feng did not do that. Instead, he turned around to leave. The reason for that was because there was still a lot of things that he had to do. Even if he would enter the Outer World, he must first take care of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

As such, Chu Feng could only end his investigation of what has happened to Ya Fei and the others here.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng moved a certain distance away from the Stairway To Heaven, the light that lead directly to the Outer World completely disappeared.

“Truly miraculous.”

At that moment, Chu Feng was certain that the Stairway To Heaven had only been triggered after he had approached it.

Most importantly, when the Stairway To Heaven was not triggered, it looked just like an ordinary stone altar. Even Chu Feng was unable to detect any peculiarity. However, that altar was actually a divine artifact that lead to the Outer World.

Even though Chu Feng was currently a person capable of calling upon the wind and summoning the rain in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng still felt himself to be extremely small when standing before the Stairway To Heaven.

Afterwards, Chu Feng began to return using the same route he had used to get here. As Chu Feng no longer needed to carefully inspect his surroundings with his spirit power, the speed at which Chu Feng traveled to return became much faster.

However, at the moment when Chu Feng walked out of the Immortalization Road, his eyes shone.

With Chu Feng's current level of cultivation, his perception was extremely sharp. Thus, even though there was a spirit formation in the way, he was able to clearly hear all of the war cries, energy ripples wreaking havoc, and the explosions emitted by martial skills outside of the Misty Peak.

Then, upon using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng saw that there were energy ripples and surging smoke all over. The outside of the Misty Peak had turned into a battlefield.

Qiu Canfeng, Taikou, Xue Xiyue and many of his familiar seniors were all fighting outside.

As for their opponents, it should be a monstrous beast race.

Chu Feng had never seen that race of monstrous beast before. Their entire bodies were blood-red in color, and covered in scales. They should be a sort of sea monstrous beast.

Furthermore, their number was not a lot; they numbered less than the experts from the Misty peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

However, the overall strength of this group of monstrous beasts was very strong. At that moment, they were suppressing the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect's armies.

Furthermore, one of those monstrous beasts had taken on human form. Even though he had taken human form, his body was still covered with crimson scales. He looked extremely disgusting.

Most importantly, that monstrous beast actually possessed the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Emperor. In the Eastern Sea Region, that cultivation was most definitely capable of ruling above everyone else.

Fortunately, he was pinned down by Huangfu Haoyue, a fellow rank one Half Martial Emperor. Else, the casualties for the Misty Peak would likely be even more severe.

However, regardless of how powerful Huangfu Haoyue might be,

regardless of how he was deemed to be the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region back then, he was still in a disadvantaged position when fighting against the monstrous beast.

“They actually came here to create trouble?! Truly courting death!”

After discovering the situation outside, fury erupted in Chu Feng’s heart. He did not care about where those monstrous beasts came from. However, the fact that they actually dared to bring harm to those that were close to him meant that Chu Feng would absolutely not forgive them.

“Chu Feng,” Right at the moment when Chu Feng was prepared to go out, a figure suddenly arrived before him and stopped him.

It was Qiushui Fuyan. After she appeared, she immediately grabbed Chu Feng’s wrist and said to him with a joyous smile on her face, “Chu Feng, quickly, come with me. I managed to find Ya Fei and the others.”

After saying those words, Qiushui Fuyan began to pull Chu Feng toward the teleportation formation in the Misty Peak.

However, she was simply unable to even move Chu Feng. Confused, Qiushui Fuyan turned around and asked, “Chu Feng, what’s wrong?”

“Big sister Fuyan, that is what I should be asking you. Someone is attacking our Misty Peak. Yet, not only did you not tell me that, you instead tried to deceive me and lead me away, saying that you had found out where Ya Fei and the others were. Exactly what is it that you’re planning?” Chu Feng narrowed his eyebrows and asked in a somewhat angry manner.

Chapter 2077 – Truly Ridiculous

“Chu Feng, you...”

“I...”

At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan started to panic. She did not expect for Chu Feng to already know about what was happening outside even though he had just returned from the Immortalization Road.

However, that was not the important aspect. Most importantly, she discovered that Chu Feng was angry. She had known Chu Feng for so long, but had practically never seen him angry at his friends before. Thus, at that moment, she was startled.

“Big sister Fuyan, I have merely left for several years. Are you all treating me as an outsider already?” Chu Feng asked sternly. He was truly angry.

Chu Feng knew Qiushui Fuyan well. Thus, he naturally knew what Qiushui Fuyan planned to do. Actually, Qiushui Fuyan was thinking for his sake. She was afraid that he would be in danger. Thus, she did not wish to involve Chu Feng, and planned to deceive him and lead him away.

However, Chu Feng was still unable to contain his anger. The reason for that was because if he did not come out at the right time to discover the situation outside, he would’ve been deceived by Qiushui Fuyan. If he were truly to have left this place, then the people from the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect would very likely be done for.

Even though Chu Feng was able to tell that the battle seemed to have just began, the outcome of the battle was already decided. Even with the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect joining hands, they would still be no match for that bunch of monstrous beasts.

If Chu Feng didn't do anything, the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect's joint army, those people that were extremely close to Chu Feng, would likely end up dying today.

"Chu Feng, it's not like that. We were just worried about your safety and didn't want you to..." Qiushui Fuyan hurriedly tried to explain.

"There's no need to explain," However, before Qiushui Fuyan could finish her words, Chu Feng interrupted her. He said, "Big sister Fuyan, in my eyes, you are my relative. I will not truly blame you."

"However... I absolutely cannot allow that bunch of monstrous beasts to attack you all. I do not care who they are. I will absolutely not let them get away with it."

"Big sister Fuyan, carefully and properly watch this. Watch how your little brother will take care of them."

After saying those words, Chu Feng flipped his palm. Not only did he break free from Qiushui Fuyan's hand that grabbed onto his wrist, he instead grabbed her wrist.

Then, as Chu Feng's body shifted, Qiushui Fuyan felt that her surroundings became blurry. By the time her sight returned to normal, her expression had changed enormously.

The reason for that was because she and Chu Feng were now outside of the Misty Peak.

In that sort of situation, Qiushui Fuyan subconsciously turned her gaze to Chu Feng beside her.

Even though she was a Martial King, even though she had traveled with Huangfu Haoyue before, she had never experienced speed as fast as she had just now. They had instantly gone from inside the Misty Peak to the outside without alerting the spirit formation around the Misty Peak.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at the moment when Qiushui Fuyan was staring at Chu Feng, an even more astonishing scene appeared. Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Then, a formless wave swept forth. In an instant, it covered an area of ten thousand miles.

Being enveloped by that wave, Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, Taikou and all the other people from the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect all disappeared. When they reappeared, they were standing behind Chu Feng.

In fact, even the person that they thought to be a Martial Emperor, Huangfu Haoyue, had also been transported like everyone else. With a wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, all of them had lost control of their bodies and appeared behind Chu Feng.

"Heavens!" witnessing that scene, Qiushui Fuyan was stupefied. She no longer knew how to describe her state of mind. She was someone that had trained in martial cultivation for many years. Thus, she had attained some success. However, what Chu Feng had done just now was something that she had never seen before, something that was simply unheard of.

"Chu Feng?!"

"Fuyan?!"

"Fuyan, why would you bring Chu Feng here?!!"

The others did not know that Chu Feng had teleported them next to him. Thus, they had puzzled expressions on their faces. They were confused as to what had happened. Especially after they saw Chu Feng, they all revealed extremely worried expressions.

The reason for that was because none of them wanted to involve Chu Feng in this battle. This was especially true after they discovered that the Blood Qilins were even more powerful than they had anticipated.

"Seniors, it's only a bunch of monstrous beasts. How could I trouble seniors with that bunch of evil animals? Just leave them all

to this junior,” Chu Feng said to the crowd behind him with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, you... could it be?!!!” The crowd were all shocked upon hearing those words. They subconsciously thought about how they were able to escape from the battle of life and death earlier and arrived behind Chu Feng, and how that might be related to Chu Feng.

But, what had happened earlier was truly too strange and too miraculous. If it was really done by Chu Feng, wouldn't that mean that Chu Feng would, at the very minimum, be a Martial Emperor?

However, many people also revealed expressions of worry after hearing that Chu Feng planned to take on the Blood Qilins by himself.

However, regardless of what the crowd thought, they all subconsciously turned their gazes to Qiushui Fuyan. They all wished to obtain an answer from Qiushui Fuyan.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, she did not say anything. Instead, an incomparably brilliant smile blossomed on her face. She took a glance at Chu Feng, then turned to the crowd and nodded.

“This...”

At that moment, the crowd were all struck dumb. The reason for that was because the intention behind Qiushui Fuyan's movements was very clear. She wanted to tell the crowd to believe in Chu Feng.

Believe in Chu Feng... didn't that mean that Chu Feng was capable of handling the Blood Qilins by himself?

“Brat, where did you come from? You dare to boast so shamelessly, saying that you will take care of our Blood Qilin Race?” At that moment, the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief shouted coldly at Chu Feng. He had heard what Chu Feng said to Qiu Canfeng and the others.

Over the past several years, they, the Blood Qilin Race, had risen in power rapidly. From a small power that was looked down upon by the Misty Peak and the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they had become a huge monster that could withstand both the Misty Peak and Crippling Night Demon Sect by themselves.

It would be understandable if someone didn't know about their Blood Qilin Race. After all, they had emerged in power too quickly. Thus, they did not have enough time to expand their reputation.

However, all those that had heard of them or seen them would all feel great respect toward them.

Yet now, a brat like that actually dared to say those sorts of shameless words. As the Blood Qilin Race's Clan Chief, he would naturally be furious.

"Blood Qilins? You are clearly a bunch of red carps. Yet you actually dare to associate yourselves with the legendary Qilin? How shameless are you all?" Chu Feng said mockingly.

"Ignorant bastard, did you know that our Clan Chief is a Martial Emperor?!"

"Do you know what a Martial Emperor is?! It is an existence that has never appeared in the Eastern Sea Region before! To see such an expert, why are you still not on your knees?!"

"That's right, get on your knees and beg for forgiveness! If you do that, then perhaps our Clan Chief might be in a good mood, and will consider leaving your corpse intact! Else, a sneeze from him would be capable of shattering your body and soul!"

The arrogant and conceited Blood Qilins were extremely furious after being insulted by Chu Feng. One by one, they began to use their Clan Chief to threaten Chu Feng.

"Martial Emperor? Hahahahahaha!!!"

After hearing how the Blood Qilins bragged about their Clan Chief like so, Chu Feng burst into a loud laughter.

Chu Feng was not laughing because he was feeling in a good mood. Rather, it was because that bunch of monstrous beasts were truly too ridiculous, too funny.

Before Chu Feng, they were nothing more than a bunch of ants. Yet, the ants actually felt themselves to be unparalleled; actually did not place Chu Feng in their eyes at all. As such, how could Chu Feng not laugh?

Chapter 2078 – Crimson Jade Pendant

“Brat, what are you laughing about?” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually laughing with such contempt and mockery, that Clan Chief of the Blood Qilins’ expression grew even uglier.

Ever since he had appeared, even Huangfu Haoyue did not dare to look at him with such contempt.

Yet, at that moment, that brat actually did not place him in his eyes at all. He truly felt as if his heart, liver, spleen and lungs were about to explode from excessive anger.

Thus, his shout of anger was not an ordinary shout. Instead, it contained a dense amount of his oppressive might. Even space itself started to tremble.

“Hahaha...”

However, after sensing that oppressive might, Chu feng’s laughter grew even louder. He felt as if a little kitten was trying to display its might before a tiger.

“You damned brat, did you think that I would not dare to kill you?” Seeing that Chu Feng’s attitude remained the same even after he had revealed his oppressive might, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief was gnashing his teeth in anger. As he spoke, one could even hear the sound of his gritted teeth.

“Martial Emperors are extremely powerful. How about you let me experience the abilities of a Martial Emperor?”

“Come, come, come. I will stand here without moving. You can attack me as you wish. Let’s see if you can injure me,” As Chu feng spoke, he stepped forward.

“Chu Feng, you cannot be careless, he is really a Martial Emperor!!!” Seeing Chu Feng’s action, Huangfu Haoyue and the others were all deeply alarmed. Immediately, they spoke to advise Chu Feng against it.

After all, the strength of the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief was something that they had all personally seen. Even Huangfu Haoyue, a Martial Emperor, found him hard to deal with.

Yet, Chu Feng was actually planning to stand there and allow himself to be attacked? Chu Feng's actions would simply be courting death.

Being shouted at by the crowd, Chu Feng stopped his footsteps. He turned around and said, "Seniors, do not worry about me. If he is able to injure me with his strength, then it would mean that I, Chu Feng, am incompetent." After saying those words, Chu Feng smiled confidently and then continued onward.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Huangfu Haoyue and the others' expressions all grew stiff.

It was not that their tolerance for surprises was low. Rather, what Chu Feng said, 'If he is able to injure me with his strength, then it would mean that I, Chu Feng, am incompetent,' was truly too shocking.

What sort of strength did that Blood Qilin Clan Chief possess? In their eyes, he was an actual Martial Emperor. If even a Martial Emperor could not injure Chu Feng, didn't that mean that Chu Feng was even more powerful than Martial Emperors?

At this moment, when the crowd were all staring at Chu Feng's back with gazes filled with incomparable shock, Chu Feng had arrived at a distance less than a hundred meters from the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief and stopped.

"Brat, exactly what are you planning?"

However, at that moment, the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief was hesitant to attack Chu Feng. He was confused as to what Chu Feng was planning.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng didn't appear to be pretending to be looking down on him. Rather, it appeared like he

was looking down on him from the bottom of his heart. This caused him to feel extremely uneasy. The confidence that he had always had started to sway.

“I’m allowing you to attack me, yet you don’t even dare to do that. You are truly trash,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“Damned brat! If you wish to die, I shall help you accomplish your goal!” The word ‘trash’ caused the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief to explode with killing intent. Then, he shot a punch at Chu Feng. Surging martial power turned into an enormous golden fist that ruthlessly smashed toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, Huangfu Haoyue, Qiu Canfeng and many others did not dare to continue to watch. They closed their eyes. They were deeply afraid that Chu Feng would be smashed to death by that punch.

“Boom~~~”

However, when that golden fist landed onto Chu Feng, it suddenly exploded.

That explosion was extremely ear-piercing. Following that, a strange scene occurred. At the moment when the energy ripples from the explosion were about to spread, they suddenly disappeared.

Most importantly, Chu Feng was still standing in midair. Not only was he not harmed in the slightest, even his clothes were completely undamaged.

“Yoh, is this the attack of a Martial Emperor? Why is it that the attack was unable to even harm a single hair of mine?” Chu Feng said with a mocking smile.

“This!!!” At that moment, everyone was stunned. Even though the attack from the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief was something that no one other than Huangfu Haoyue was able to clearly see, they had all felt a fatal power from that attack.

To them, that power was not only something they could not withstand, it was also devastating. If they were to be struck by it, they would undoubtedly die.

Earlier, that power had clearly landed on Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng was still standing there, completely unharmed. That was truly too unbelievable.

“G-great!”

“As expected from my disciple, as expected from my, Qiu Canfeng’s, disciple!!!”

At that moment, the crowd were all wild with joy. Qiu Canfeng even started to shout in excitement.

As matters stood, they were completely convinced that Chu Feng’s strength surpassed every one of them. Not only was he a Martial Emperor, he was definitely not an ordinary Martial Emperor.

Else, it would be impossible for him to possess strength that completely surpassed the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief.

“Exactly who are you?” At that moment, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief was frowning deeply.

He was the person that shot out that fist strike earlier. Thus, he knew best how powerful that punch of his was. Not to mention others, even he himself would be seriously injured should he receive that punch.

Yet, the young man before him was completely uninjured. That made him realize that this young man was most definitely not someone ordinary. At the very least, his cultivation surpassed his own.

“Who is he? He is this old man’s disciple, our Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Sect Master, Chu Feng!!!” Before Chu Feng could speak, Qiu Canfeng spoke proudly. Especially when he said that Chu Feng was his disciple, his aged face was filled with pride as he

said those words.

“What?! Chu Feng?! You are Chu Feng?!!!” Hearing the name ‘Chu Feng’, the expression on the Blood Qilin Clan Chief’s face changed enormously.

“No, shouldn’t you have entered the Heavenly Road?! Why would you appear in the Eastern Sea Region?!” The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief asked in an extremely puzzled manner.

“Humph, my disciple has returned from the Holy Land of Martialism,” Qiu Canfeng said.

“Holy Land of Martialism, he actually successfully entered the Holy Land of Martialism, and even returned safely. No wonder, no wonder,” At that moment, the Blood Qilin Clan Chief’s expression grew even uglier.

Suddenly, with a ‘putt,’ he actually knelt in midair and began to kowtow to Chu Feng. He begged, “Lord Chu Feng, I have eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. I was wrong to attack you earlier.”

“Please, please spare my life, please give our Blood Qilin Race another chance. From today on, we will serve you, we will do as you command.”

“This...”

No one expected that the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief would actually kneel to Chu Feng, kowtow and beg for forgiveness. Not only were Qiu Canfeng and the others surprised, even the Blood Qilins were shocked.

The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief turned to his clansman and shouted, “What are you all still standing there for?! Quickly, apologize to Lord Chu Feng!”

“Lord Chu Feng, please spare us!!!” After hearing the shout from their clan chief, the rest of the Blood Qilins all knelt in midair and began to kowtow to Chu Feng.

“Earlier, you all were trying to kill the people that I consider to be closest to me. Yet now, you all are begging for forgiveness. How am I supposed to trust you all?” Chu Feng narrowed his eyes and fixed his gaze onto the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief.

“Lord Chu Feng, in order to express my sincerity, I will offer you our Blood Qilin Race’s most valuable treasure,” As the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack. It was a crimson jade pendant.

Upon seeing that pendent, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately started to shine. That pendant contained a special power. To monstrous beasts, it would most definitely be a cultivation treasure that could rapidly increase their cultivation.

However, to humans, that pendant was useless. The reason why Chu Feng was so shocked was not because of the pendant’s special usage. Rather, it was because Chu Feng felt a familiar aura from that pendant.

It was Little Fishy’s aura.

Chapter 2079 – Slaughter With A Single Strike

“Where did you obtain that pendant?” Chu Feng asked solemnly.

“Lord Chu Feng, this jade pendant is our Blood Qilin Race’s clan protection treasure. It is reportedly from the Ancient Era,” The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief said.

“Bullshit. Speak the truth,” Chu Feng shouted furiously. The reason for that was because he knew that crimson jade pendent was most definitely not the Blood Qilin Race’s clan protection treasure.

“Lord Chu Feng, I am truly not lying to you,” The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief said firmly. However, his gaze was hesitant.

“Paa~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a resounding slap landed on the Blood Qilin Clan Chief’s face.

At that moment, the people present all sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

The reason for that was because after the slap landed, the Blood Qilin Clan Chief’s face was twisted. There was an enormous bruise and a large amount of blood was gushing out of his nostrils, his ears, and corner of his mouth. There were even wisps of blood in his eyes.

From that, one could tell how powerful Chu Feng’s slap had been. Most importantly, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief, a Martial Emperor, was actually unable to even dodge Chu Feng’s slap. From that, people once again experienced Chu Feng’s absolute strength.

However, they didn’t know that Chu Feng had simply not used any power behind his slap. If Chu Feng were to put power behind his slap, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief would’ve already died. Even

his blood would have evaporated on the spot. How could he possibly be able to still kneel before him?

“Speak the truth!” Chu Feng shouted.

“Y-yes. It’s something that I picked up in the Everlasting Sea of Blood several years ago,” At that moment, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief no longer dared to lie.

“You all have relied on that jade pendant to increase your cultivation, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Y-yes. We have relied on the jade pendant,” The Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief nodded.

Hearing those words, Huangfu Haoyue and the others finally found out the reason why the Blood Qilin Race had been able to increase their strength so quickly in such a short period of time. Even though they knew that the Blood Qilins must have had a treasure that helped them increase their cultivation, they had not expected it to be a simple pendant.

“It is indeed Little Fishy’s possession,” Chu Feng walked forward and took the pendant.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes abruptly shrunk. He sensed a dense killing intent being emitted from the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief.

As he looked to the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief, he was able to clearly see that the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief was staring at him with a murderous gaze. Furthermore, he revealed a smile of success.

Furthermore, a dagger had appeared in the Blood Qilin Clan Chief’s hand. That dagger was a Royal Armament. At that moment, it was thrust at Chu Feng’s dantian.

“Crap!!!”

“Chu Feng, be careful!” Huangfu Haoyue noticed it and hurriedly shouted to warn Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng smiled coldly. He did not bother to dodge the incoming Royal Armament aimed at his dantian.

“Clank~~~”

Finally, that Royal Armament came in contact with Chu Feng’s body. However, it let out a sound as if it had collided with metal, and was unable to even penetrate Chu Feng’s clothes, as if it had been blocked by a powerful force.

“Damn it!” At that moment, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief who had staked his all on that surprise attack was gnashing his teeth. He began to gather his martial power and continuously pour it into his Royal Armament dagger. He was determined to kill Chu Feng.

“Snap~~~”

However, after pouring all of his might into the dagger, the dagger actually snapped in two. Yet, Chu Feng was still completely undamaged.

“How could this be?!!!” At that moment, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief was completely stunned. He knew that there was a definitely a disparity between his strength and Chu Feng’s strength. However, he did not expect for the disparity to be so enormous. He had used all of his strength to mount a sneak attack at Chu Feng. Yet, he was unable to injure Chu Feng in the slightest.

“Foolish dog shit. You truly cannot be spared.”

At that moment, a cold light flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, heaven and earth darkened. At that moment, everyone was able to clearly see that with a wave of Chu Feng’s sleeve, the Blood Qilins’ Clan Chief’s body started to split apart. He first turned into a pile of blood, and then that pile of blood instantly turned into steam. He had evaporated into thin air.

“Heavens! Am I seeing things?!”

At that moment, Huangfu Haoyue and the others were all filled with astonishment.

The reason for that was because all of them had clearly seen what happened earlier. The Blood Qilins' Clan Chief had used all of his power, but had failed to even injure Chu Feng in the slightest.

Then, Chu Feng, with a wave of his sleeve, completely annihilated the Blood Qilins' Clan Chief, leaving not even a drop of blood.

Most importantly, they all felt an extremely frightening aura the moment Chu Feng unleashed his attack. That aura was something they had never felt before.

“Milord, please spare us, please spare us!!!”

Seeing that their Clan Chief had been slaughtered with a wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, the rest of the Blood Qilins were all terrified. One by one, they began to continuously kowtow and beg Chu Feng for forgiveness. If they were begging Chu Feng for forgiveness earlier because they were ordered to do so by their Clan Chief, then they were doing so from the bottom of their hearts now.

“There is no sin to having power. You all could have set up your own power. Yet, you all insisted on killing others to seize their territory. From that, it can be seen that your natures are vicious and merciless. The fact that you all possess vile hearts and ambitions is only one of your crimes.”

“Next, your clan chief was killed. Yet, not only do you all not have the intention to avenge him, you instead started to kneel and beg for forgiveness. From that, it can be seen that you are neither loyal nor devoted. That is your second crime.”

“With merely these two crimes, I will absolutely not spare your lives,” After Chu Feng said those words, he waved his sleeve again.

With that wave, neither heaven nor earth turned dark. There was not the slightest trace of wind above the sea. It was strangely

calm.

However, the Blood Qilins were all annihilated in an instant. Not even their remains were left behind.

“Ssss~~~”

Seeing that scene, the people present all sucked in a mouthful of cold air. They were all terrified by Chu Feng’s abilities.

Finally, Qiushui Fuyan was unable to contain herself. She stepped forward and asked, “Chu Feng, exactly what is your cultivation level now?”

“Big sister Fuyan, truth be told, I am a rank four Martial Emperor,” Chu Feng spoke honestly.

“You’re a rank four Martial Emperor? Boy, you are truly amazing. Since you’re a rank four Martial Emperor, why did you say that you’re no match for Huangfu Haoyue when we asked who among the two of you was stronger?” Someone asked in a very puzzled manner.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled. He then said, “It is not only senior Huangfu Haoyue that I am not a match for. I am no match for all the seniors here. Regardless of what cultivation I might have, regardless of how strong I become, in my heart, I am still a junior before you all. As such, how could I possibly compare to you all?”

“Oh you,” Finally, the crowd understood Chu Feng’s intentions. At that time, they became even more happy.

Huangfu Haoyue walked toward Chu Feng and asked, “Chu Feng, after entering the Heavenly Road, did you manage to meet your father?”

“No, I have not,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Why? Could it be that you didn’t find the location?” Huangfu Haoyue asked.

“No,” Chu Feng smiled and shook his head.

At that moment, Huangfu Haoyue knew that Chu Feng must have a hidden trouble that he found hard to mention. Thus, he no longer continued to linger on the topic.

However, there was another question in Huangfu Haoyue’s heart. Thus, he asked, “Chu Feng, logically, since I have broken through from the Martial King realm, I should have entered the Martial Emperor realm. Why is it that I keep feeling that something’s amiss?”

Chapter 2080 – Paying Respects To One's Family

“Senior, the realm of cultivation that you’ve entered is not the Martial Emperor realm. Instead, it’s the Half Martial Emperor realm,” Originally, Chu Feng did not wish to mention that. However, since Huangfu Haoyue asked about it, Chu Feng would naturally have to inform him about it. After all, he couldn’t refuse to tell Huangfu Haoyue and then have him be confused for the rest of his life.

“Half Martial Emperor realm?” Hearing those words, the others were all startled. However, Huangfu Haoyue appeared to be relieved. He had already anticipated that to be the case.

“Seniors, after the Martial King realm is Half Martial Emperor realm. Half Martial Emperors are also capable of using Emperor-level martial power. However, the Emperor-level martial power that they are capable of using is not pure.”

“Only after breaking through peak Half Martial Emperor would one become an actual Martial Emperor and be able to use true Emperor-level martial power,” Chu Feng explained in detail.

“So that’s the case. No wonder I kept feeling that something was amiss. Little friend Chu Feng, thank you for informing me about it,” Huangfu Haoyue smiled. The reason for that was because the doubt in his mind was solved by Chu Feng.

After obtaining new knowledge, the crowd also nodded. At that moment, they all felt as if they had achieved speedy enlightenment, and felt that they were still only viewing the sky from the bottom of a well.

Suddenly, Qiushui Fuyan asked with a serious expression, “Chu Feng, in that case, your cultivation has increased by over a dozen levels compared to before?”

“That’s right. Chu Feng is a rank four Martial Emperor, and not a rank four Half Martial Emperor. Heavens! Boy, the speed of your progress is a bit too fast, no?” After hearing what Qiushui Fuyan said, the others also started to react.

Even though the people here were all very close to Chu Feng, they were all looking at Chu Feng as if they were looking at a monster right now.

In the several years Chu Feng had been away, they had all attained progress in their cultivation. However, only a portion of them had managed to attain breakthroughs in their cultivation. The rest of them had only managed to obtain slight progress.

However, Chu Feng had managed to reach such a degree in a few short years. The speed of his growth caused them to be overjoyed. The reason for that was because this result was something that surpassed their expectations enormously.

At that moment, the crowd all revealed expressions of pride. They all felt proud of Chu Feng.

Of course, they still didn’t know about Chu Feng’s current status in the Holy Land of Martialism. If they knew that Chu Feng was a grand character in the Holy Land of Martialism, their expressions of pride would definitely be even stronger.

Afterwards, Chu Feng chatted with the crowd some more. He came to know that the Blood Qilin Race had indeed only risen in power in the recent years. Several years ago, they had only been an obscure and unknown small monstrous beast race.

Thus, Chu Feng was even more certain that the jade pendant should have been Little Fishy’s possession. Merely, Chu Feng did not expect for Little Fishy’s mere pendant to possess such enormous power. It had nearly caused an unremarkable monstrous beast race to become the overlords of the Eastern Sea Region.

“Little Fishy, oh Little Fishy, you should be from the Outer

World, right?”

The person that had made the deepest impression on Chu Feng in the Eastern Sea Region was that little girl who would play around in the water. Her name was Little Fishy.

Little Fishy had revealed her miraculous abilities back then. Later on, Little Fishy had left, saying that she would be going to other places to play. After that, Chu Feng had never seen her again.

Originally, Chu Feng thought Little Fishy to be an existence that possessed a special sort of power. He thought that it was possible that she was a Natural Oddity.

However, as matters stood, Chu Feng felt more and more uncertain the more he thought about Little Fishy. He kept feeling that Little Fishy could not be an existence from the Eastern Sea Region. The reason for that was because her miraculous abilities were something that would be extremely rare even in the Holy Land of Martialism.

After seeing the pendant, Chu Feng was even more certain that Little Fishy likely possessed a remarkable origin. It might be possible... that Little Fishy was from the Outer World. When she left, she had not only left the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Instead, she had left the Eastern Sea Region, left this world.

“If fate has it, I hope that we will be able to meet again,” In the end, Chu Feng placed the jade pendant in his Cosmos Sack.

Although the pendant was extremely powerful, it was only effective for monstrous beasts. Thus, it would have no effect if it were given to Huangfu Haoyue and the others. Furthermore, it was Little Fishy’s possession. Chu Feng felt that Little Fishy would not have left that pendant in the Everlasting Sea of Blood for no reason or cause. It was very possible that she might’ve lost it by accident.

Thus, Chu Feng was determined to keep it so that he could return it to Little Fishy should he meet her again in the future. Even if he

were to never meet her again, he could keep the pendant as a keepsake.

At the same time Chu Feng put the crimson jade pendant away, he placed his hand around his neck. On his neck was a hemp rope necklace. If he were to pull the rope, a little black stone would be pulled up from his chest.

There was nothing extraordinary about the little stone or the hemp rope. They were as ordinary as could be.

However, the necklace was something that Little Fishy had gave to Chu Feng as a present. Furthermore, she had made the necklace personally. Thus, Chu Feng cherished it deeply.

After that, Chu Feng chatted with Huangfu Haoyue and the others for a slight bit longer. However, it was truly a very short chat.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not forget that the Holy Land of Martialism was still in a deep crisis. Thus, he soon left the Eastern Sea Region and proceeded toward the Nine Provinces Continent.

.....

Back then, it had taken Chu Feng a long time to travel from the Nine Provinces Continent to the Eastern Sea Region. However, with Chu Feng's current cultivation, the distance between the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent could not be considered far for him.

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng arrived at a familiar location. He had reached the Nine Provinces Continent's Azure Province. Specifically, he had arrived at a place called Leaning Mountain Town. This place was where the Chu Family had originally lived.

However, the current Leaning Mountain Town was desolate and uninhabited. The only things here were graves.

They were graves for the people of the Chu Family. Back then, Chu Feng had offended a lot of people in the Nine Provinces Continent. His family, the people of the Chu Family, were massacred by Chu Feng's enemies.

Afterwards, although the people that had massacred Chu Feng's family were killed by Chu Feng, Chu Feng ended up offending new enemies. In order to prevent the Chu Family's dead from being implicated, their graves were moved many times.

However, in the end, Chu Feng moved the graves of the Chu Family back to Leaning Mountain Town. As the saying goes, one must return to one's roots upon death. Regardless of how that place had changed, it remained the home of the Chu Family.

"Father, grandfather, uncle, I, Chu Feng, have returned to see you all."

When Chu Feng saw those graves, his eyes started to moisten. When he kneeled before the graves, tears involuntarily flowed from his eyes.

Those were not only tears of longing for his family, they were also tears of remorse. The massacre of the Chu Family had always been a knot in Chu Feng's heart. If it wasn't for the fact that he was wild in his youth and did not consider the consequences of his actions, the Chu Family would not have been massacred.

Thus, at times, Chu Feng deeply detested himself. He hated the younger him. It was because of the fact that he had offended others that he had caused the deaths of those that had raised him.

"Who is it that dared to trespass into the Chu Family?!!!"

Suddenly, a shout was heard. Then, over a hundred people appeared from all directions, surrounding Chu Feng.

Those people were all wearing the outfits of the Azure Dragon School. Evidently, they were from the Azure Dragon School. The people from the Azure Dragon School were guarding the Chu

Family's graves.

Merely, not only were these people holding weapons, they also had imposing expressions on their faces.

The reason for that was because this place had a spirit formation that Chu Feng had personally set up. It was simply impossible for ordinary people to trespass into that place.

Yet, there was a man who had managed to enter without anyone noticing. As such, they subconsciously felt that that man was not someone to be looked down upon.

Chapter 2081 – Succession Ceremony

“Chu Zhen!!!” Turning his head, Chu Feng discovered a familiar face among the group of people from the Azure Dragon School. That person was Chu Zhen.

“Chu Feng, it’s you?!!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Chu Zhen’s body trembled. Then, he revealed an overjoyed expression, and quickly walked toward Chu Feng to carefully inspect him from head to toe.

“Heavens, it’s really you! When did you return?! How have you been all these years?!” Chu Zhen was exceptionally happy and excited upon seeing Chu Feng.

“I’ve just returned. I decided to pay my respects to grandfather and the others first,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he asked, “Why would you be here?”

“This place is, after all, our Chu Family’s cemetery. Although there are people from the Azure Dragon School guarding this place, we are still worried about it. Thus, the remaining brothers and sisters of our Chu Family take turns guarding this place. I happened to be the one guarding here this month,” Chu Zhen said with a light smile.

“Lord Chu Zhen, this person... could he be?” At that moment, the others from the Azure Dragon School all walked over curiously. They used gazes filled with reverence and a slight bit of timidity to look at Chu Feng.

“This person is our Azure Dragon School’s world-shaking and all-powerful Chu Feng. Why are you all still standing there? Quickly, pay your respects,” Chu Zhen said with a smile.

“We pay our respects to Lord Chu Feng,” After verifying Chu Feng’s identity, the others from the Azure Dragon School uniformly half-kneeled before Chu Feng to courteously greet him.

Chu Feng's fame was truly too enormous. His fame was not just limited to the Azure Province, but was now known throughout the entire Nine Provinces Continent and the entire Eastern Sea Region.

The name Chu Feng had long since become a legend in the Eastern Sea Region. Thus, even though a lot of people had never met Chu Feng before, they all felt deep admiration and adoration for Chu Feng. Chu Feng could be said to be the idol of countless people.

"Quickly, get up," Chu Feng lightly waved his hand, and those people were all brought back up. Then, with a wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, many Martial Beads landed in those people's hands.

"Heavens! Lord Chu Feng, what are these?! They actually contain such a dense amount of Natural Energy?!"

Once the Martial Beads landed in their hands, the eyes of those people immediately started to shine. They could be considered to be people with decent levels of martial cultivation in the Azure Dragon School, all in the Profound Realm. Thus, they could be said to be experienced individuals that had seen many cultivation treasures. However, they had never seen pearls like the ones in their hands.

"Those are called Martial Beads. Consider them my greeting gift," Chu Feng said.

"Thank you, Lord Chu Feng. Thank you, Lord Chu Feng!!!"

Hearing those words, those Azure Dragon School's disciples once again began to express their thanks toward Chu Feng by bowing to him. Merely by looking at those Martial Beads, they knew that they were extremely valuable items. Yet, Chu Feng had actually given them a hundred Martial Beads each. As such, how could they not be excited? They truly felt that they would become extremely rich just by having those Martial Beads.

"Little brother Chu Feng, you've truly become more and more

heroic. Those are some extremely precious treasures to be used as greeting gifts,” Chu Zhen said. There was a trace of jealousy in his words. It was as if he was saying that since Chu Feng had given that many precious Martial Beads to outsiders, he should give him some too.

“Chu Zhen, I’ve already prepared your gift,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack and placed it in Chu Zhen’s hand.

Chu Zhen received the Cosmos Sack and opened it. Immediately, his expression changed enormously. He was overjoyed, and felt as if he was dreaming.

Merely counting the Martial Beads, that Cosmos Sack contained hundreds of thousands. In addition to the Martial Beads, there were also other treasures. They were all treasures that he had never seen before.

“Little brother Chu Feng, you are truly more and more amazing. You’re actually gifting things this precious so casually. Truly, the gap between you and us is growing greater and greater,” Chu Zhen carefully put the Cosmos Sack away and looked at Chu Feng with an expression filled with admiration.

Back then, he and Chu Feng had both been disciples of the Azure Dragon School. At that time, he had looked down upon Chu Feng and bullied him.

Yet now, the disparity between the two of them was truly as enormous as the heavens from the earth. Even though it had been many years, Chu Zhen always felt ashamed upon remembering what what he had done back then.

“We’re brothers of the same family, you don’t have to distance yourself,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. Then, he asked, “How is the Azure Dragon School doing?”

“Now that you mention it, there will be a grand happy occasion that will happen in the Azure Dragon School today,” Chu Zhen said

happily.

“Happy occasion? What might that be?” Chu Feng asked.

“The succession of the new headmaster. Guess who the new headmaster will be?” Chu Zhen said.

“Who is it? Tell me,” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, it’s your big brother Chu Guyu,” Chu Zhen said.

“My big brother?!” Chu Feng was also overjoyed upon hearing such news.

Chu Guyu was originally a disciple of the Qing Province’s Lingyun School. Later on, due to many unforeseen events, he ended up joining the Azure Dragon School.

Chu Guyu had possessed a very decent talent to begin with. Furthermore, Chu Feng had also provided Chu Guyu with a lot of cultivation resources, and the Azure Dragon School had also focused on the cultivation of the people from the Chu Family because of Chu Feng. Chu Guyu’s current cultivation was extremely exceptional in the Nine Provinces Continent. Thus, it did not come as a surprise for Chu Feng that he would be the next headmaster.

Merely, Chu Feng had actually managed to return right on the day when his big brother was to succeed as the new headmaster. It was truly fortunate for Chu Feng.

“I’ll go and congratulate my big brother,” Chu Feng said.

“Little brother Chu Feng, while it’s good that you want to congratulate him, I fear that the Succession Ceremony would’ve ended by the time we reach the Azure Dragon School. After all... it is already in the noon hours now,” Chu Zhen said with regret after looking to the sky.

“That might not necessarily be the case,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he grabbed Chu Zhen and soared into the sky. He

began to fly toward the direction of the Azure Dragon School.

The current Azure Dragon School was filled with excitement. Not only had all of the schools and sects from the Azure Province come to visit and congratulate them, even the Jiang Royal Clan's ancestor and the Ten Thousand Monstrous Mountain's Monstrous Monkey King arrived to offer their congratulations.

It could be said... that all of the grand characters in the Nine Provinces Continent had gathered at the Azure Dragon School.

At that moment, the person sitting in the headmaster's seat was no longer the previous headmaster, nor was it the Azure Dragon Founder. Instead, it was a handsome man. That person was none other than Chu Feng's big brother, Chu Guyu.

"Headmaster Chu, this is our Void School's congratulatory gift. Please accept our kind regards."

At that moment, all the schools and sects were offering their congratulatory gifts. Regardless of who it was, the Azure Dragon School would accept all of their congratulatory gifts. Not only that, they would also present gifts to the people that gave them gifts. Furthermore, the gifts which they would give out would oftentimes be much more precious than the gifts they received.

After all, with the resources provided by Chu Feng, the current Azure Dragon School was extremely rich. It had become the fully deserving overlord of the Nine Provinces Continent. The previous overlord of the Nine Provinces Continent, the Jiang Royal Dynasty, also paled into insignificance by comparison.

"Headmaster Chu, this is my congratulatory gift. Please accept my kind regards."

At that moment, a sweet-looking woman walked over to Chu Guyu and gifted him an ugly-looking straw hat.

If anyone else dared to do something like that, they would definitely be dragged away on the spot and then killed. The reason

for that was because it was most definitely a show of disrespect toward the new headmaster.

However, when it was done by that woman, no one said anything. Instead, they all started to laugh.

The reason for that was because that woman was Chu Feng's older cousin, Chu Yue.

Chapter 2082 – School Protection Grand Formation

“You’re no longer a child, why are you still this mischievous?” Chu Guyu cast a side eye at Chu Yue. Then, he smiled lightly and received the straw hat. Not only did he accept the straw hat, he even put it on his head.

“Big brother Guyu, I have gifts too. You must accept them,” In response, more and more of the Chu Family siblings ran forward to present their gifts. Their gifts were not very precious. However, they represented their kind intentions.

At that moment, the smile on Chu Guyu’s face grew even more brilliant. He was even happier than when he had received the gifts from the various schools and sects.

He knew very well how he had obtained his status as headmaster. It was because of his younger brother Chu Feng. Thus, he knew very well how important one’s family was. In truth, there was nothing in his heart that could surpass the importance of these family members.

“Headmaster Chu, I’ve heard that you plan to construct a new group of palaces on Azure Dragon Mountain. I’ve heard that you’ve already chosen the construction site, and are only missing a blueprint for the group of palaces that satisfies you.”

“For that, I have specially invited several famous artisans to work together and design a blueprint for the group of palaces as my congratulatory gift for Headmaster Chu,” An old man presented a blueprint.

“Oh? Let me have a look,” After Chu Guyu received the blueprint, he hurriedly opened it to look it over. The reason for that was because he really did want to construct a group of palaces in the Azure Dragon School. Due to the fact that that group of

palaces was to be constructed for the people of the Chu Family, he was especially meticulous about their designs.

Over the years, he had hired many artisans to design countless blueprints. However, in the end, he still hadn't managed to find a blueprint design that satisfied him.

And now, someone was actually presenting him a blueprint as a congratulatory gift. Naturally, he would be extremely interested in it. Upon opening the blueprint, he discovered that the blueprint was indeed extremely well-designed. Although it too had not managed to meet his expectations, he was capable of accepting it.

"Headmaster Chu, how is it? For that blueprint, I invited many secluded artisans. For the sake of requesting their assistance, I have put forth quite a lot of effort," The old man said proudly. As he spoke, he deliberately looked to the several white-haired old men behind him.

Those old men were all commoners without any cultivation. If they were any other commoner, they would definitely tremble with fear and feel extremely uncomfortable upon entering a place like the Azure Dragon School.

However, those old men were different; they were all very calm and collected. Their appearances were those of people that had experienced great things. In fact, even before all these martial cultivators, they still managed to display pride and arrogance.

The reason why they dared to behave in such a manner was because they possessed true ability. Although it was said that world spiritists were omnipotent, they were even greater experts than world spiritists in the aspect of constructing palace halls. The blueprints which they designed were things that world spiritists were incapable of designing.

"It's so-so. If my younger brother Chu Feng were here, he would definitely be able to design something many times better than that," Chu Yue said with curled lips. It was not that she looked

down on those artisans, as that was not the sort of person that she was. Merely, she deeply missed Chu Feng. She knew that if Chu Feng were here, they would definitely not be stumped by a mere blueprint for so long.

“Please forgive me for my boldness, but although Lord Chu Feng is amazing, he might not necessarily be superior to these several artisans in designing a blueprint. After all, each and every one of them are experts that have studied that field their entire lives,” That old man who presented the blueprint said.

At that moment, those artisans snorted lightly. It was as if they were declaring that Chu Feng would not be able to design a blueprint that surpassed the one which they had designed.

“What audacity!!!” At that moment, the Monstrous Monkey King was unable to contain himself. He slapped his table and smashed it to bits. He pointed at the old man that had presented the blueprint and the several artisans and shouted, “What is the meaning of this?! Are you saying that my brother Chu Feng is inferior to you all?!”

“No, no, we wouldn’t dare, we wouldn’t dare,” Seeing that the Monstrous Monkey King had grown furious, the old man hurriedly knelt on the ground to beg for forgiveness.

However, those artisans had the appearance of being unafraid of death. They did not kneel to the Monstrous Monkey King, and one among them even said brazenly, “I have also heard of little friend Chu Feng’s reputation. He is definitely a king in terms of martial cultivation, and a grand master in world spirit techniques.”

“However, as they say, people specialize in different things. In terms of martial cultivation or world spirit techniques, we would naturally be incomparable to little friend Chu Feng.”

“However, in terms of designing blueprints for palaces, little friend Chu Feng might not necessarily surpass us.”

“Aiyah! You bunch of damned shameless old farts. Watch how I’ll tear you all apart,” The Monstrous Monkey King was immediately enraged upon hearing those words. He was truly angry because what he could not bear the most were others speaking ill of Chu Feng.

However, right at the moment when the Monstrous Monkey King was planning to attack, the Azure Dragon Founder stopped him. “Monstrous Monkey King, these people are guests. Don’t be rude. Don’t forget what day today is.” His oppressive might swept forth and directly suppressed the Monstrous Monkey King’s oppressive might.

“Monstrous Monkey King, do not forget that today is your brother Chu Feng’s blood brother’s succession ceremony. Do not ruin this harmonious atmosphere,”

“That’s right. No matter what, you are a monstrous beast king. How could you attack ordinary mortals? If this matter were to spread, it would only ruin your reputation,” The Jiang Royal Dynasty’s ancestor and others also spoke out against his actions.

“Humph,” At that moment, the Monstrous Monkey King snorted coldly. He had decided to not attempt to attack again to give Chu Guyu face. As for why he was giving Chu Guyu face, it was because of Chu Feng. However, it remained that the Monstrous Monkey King was extremely furious.

There were this many cultivators and even world spiritists present. Yet, they were actually looked down upon by a couple of ordinary mortals. Naturally, he would feel extremely displeased.

In fact, he was not the only one feeling displeased right now. Many others felt the same way. One among them was Chu Feng’s first master, Zhuge Liuyun.

No matter what, he was a world spiritist. When they had first planned to construct palace halls for the people of the Chu Family, he was the one who had been tasked to design the blueprints.

Merely, as the palaces were meant for the people of the Chu Family, he had placed high requirements on himself. When he failed to even pass the standards he had placed on himself, he had decided to give up on it.

Originally, he had thought that they would be able to ask a world spiritist even more powerful than himself to design an amazing blueprint. Never did he expect that it would be several ordinary artisans that appeared. He was deeply unconvinced by them.

Regardless of how well their blueprint was designed, he was unconvinced by them merely because of their status. Especially after he saw how those ordinary commoners were so arrogant and conceited, he felt even greater displeasure.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a dazzling light suddenly flashed in the distant sky. Soon, that light grew closer and closer. It was like an approaching sun. It was so dazzling that the crowd were unable to open their eyes.

“This is bad! Quickly, activate the School’s Grand Protective Formation!”

At that moment, the expressions of the Azure Dragon School’s Founder and the others all changed. Merely by looking at it, they knew that that golden light was not something ordinary. Likely, it was the arrival of an enemy. Furthermore, that enemy was most definitely not someone from the Nine Provinces Continent. It might be possible that the incoming enemy was an expert from the Eastern Sea Region.

After the Azure Dragon Founder shouted the order, the Azure Dragon School’s Grand Protective Formation was activated, enveloping the entire region.

After the School Grand Protective Formation was activated, the suspended hearts of the crowd were relieved. The reason for that

was because the Azure Dragon School's Grand Protective Formation was something that Qiushui Fuyan, Huangfu Haoyue and many other experts had worked together to set up.

Thus, that Grand Protective Formation was many times more powerful than the Azure Dragon Founder and the others.

Chapter 2083 – Kowtow

After the Grand Protective Formation was activated, a layer of powerful spirit formations sealed off the entire region, shielding them within it.

Furthermore, enormous golden dragons began to emerge from the Grand Protective Formation. Those enormous golden dragons were all over a dozen meters long. The largest one was several tens of meters long. They were all extremely domineering, and actually emitted the aura of Martial Kings.

“Heavens! I have heard that the Azure Dragon School’s Grand Protective Formation is extremely powerful. Seeing it for myself today, it is truly extraordinary.”

At that moment, while the people from the Azure Dragon School and the Jiang Royal Dynasty were still calm, the others that had come to congratulate Chu Guyu were all struck dumb by the Grand Protective Formation.

In fact, even those haughty and arrogant artisans revealed expressions of admiration. Although they did not possess cultivations, they had lived in the world of martial cultivators their entire lives. However, even with that, it was still the first time that they were seeing such a Grand Protective Formation.

At that moment, they possessed a whole new level of respect toward the Azure Dragon School. The reason for that was because the Azure Dragon School possessed the qualifications to make them feel respect.

“Such a grand formation. Even Martial Kings would be seeking death by coming here. I shall see exactly who it is that is ignorant enough to trespass upon the Azure Dragon School during its day of celebration,” said many of the people that had come to offer their congratulations.

“Buzz~~~”

However, that golden ray of light was simply too fast. In the blink of an eye, it had managed to arrive before the Azure Dragon School, before the Grand Protective Formation.

At that moment, the Azure Dragon School's Founder started to frown deeply. He shouted 'Oh no!' in his heart. The reason for that was because regardless of what that golden ray of light might be, it had reached the range of their Grand Protective Formation's range of attack. Yet, that Grand Protective Formation actually did not seem to have the slightest intention of attacking the golden ray of light. It was an abnormal sign.

Then, an even more shocking scene happened. Not only did the golden dragons not attack the golden ray of light, they instead allowed the golden ray of light to continue to approach the Grand Protective Formation.

Most importantly, the golden ray of light treated the Grand Protective Formation as if it was nonexistent. Just like that, it passed through the Grand Protective Formation and arrived at the vast plaza.

“Aiya! This is bad!!!”

Seeing that the golden ray of light had penetrated the grand formation, many people present started to panic. Some among them even turned around to escape.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the golden ray of light disappeared. When the dazzling light disappeared, the crowd discovered that a little city was actually floating in the sky.

The little city was not very large. However, it was covered with bejeweled jade palaces. Most importantly, not only were those palaces extremely beautiful, there were also many beautiful plants and rare flowers, as well as high mountains and waterfalls.

Beautifully arranged, the city simply appeared like a city where Immortals resided.

“There are actually such beautiful palaces in this world? Today, this old man has truly broadened his horizons.”

At that moment, many of the martial cultivators were still frightened. However, those artisans that didn't fear death all took out paper and pencils to carefully sketch the floating city before their eyes.

“Big brother, is this congratulatory gift to your satisfaction?”

Right at that moment, a laugh was suddenly heard. At that moment, the crowd discovered that two people had appeared at the summit of the floating city's city gates. One was Chu Zhen. As for the other person, it was Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng!!!”

Everyone was enormously shocked to see Chu Feng. They simply did not dare to believe their eyes.

“What? Chu Feng? That is Chu Feng?!” At that moment, the others also turned their gazes toward Chu Feng. Even those artisans turned their gazes to Chu Feng. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's reputation was truly renowned.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng floated down to the surface with Chu Zhen. He half knelt onto the ground and began to courteously greet his seniors.

“Azure Dragon School's disciple Chu Feng pays his respects to ancestor.”

“Disciple Chu Feng pays his respects to master.”

After paying his respects to his seniors, Chu Feng stood back up and clasped his hand to Chu Guyu, “Disciple Chu Feng pays his respects to Lord Headmaster.”

“You brat, are you planning to make me out as old?” Chu Guyu stood up and ruthlessly hit Chu Feng’s head. Although his appearance seemed to indicate that he was angry, he had a glimmering smile on his face.

As for Chu Feng, he was not angered by Chu Guyu. Instead, he scratched his head and said, “Big brother, is this congratulatory gift to your satisfaction?”

“You made that?” Chu Guyu asked.

“I heard from Chu Zhen that you were to succeed the position of headmaster today. Originally, I was worried about what to gift you. Fortunately, Chu Zhen told me that you were vexed about the construction of a set of palaces. Thus, I decided to create one for you.”

“I like it, I like it a lot. Sure enough, the person that knows me the best is still my younger brother,” After hearing that it was personally constructed by Chu Feng, Chu Guyu’s smile grew even more brilliant.

“Since you like it, then let’s move it to where it belongs,” As Chu Feng spoke, he pointed with his hand. Then, the floating city began to float into the distance. In the end, it landed on a large mountain. That was the place where the set of palaces were meant to be constructed.

“Lord Chu Feng, may I ask how long it took you to design that city?” At that moment, the artisan that had spoken against the Monstrous Monkey King earlier stood forth and asked curiously.

“You’re talking about that city? I don’t know how long my brother Chu Feng took to design it, but I do know that he constructed it instantly,” Chu Zhen said.

“What? Instantly?” Hearing those words, that artisan revealed an expression of shock.

“Impossible! That city is that exquisite and refined. Something

like that would take at least eight to ten years to construct,” The other artisans also walked over.

“Seniors, are you all artisans?” Chu Feng asked with a smile. It was the first time he was meeting these people. However, looking at their coarse hands, he was able to determine their occupations.

“Yes, Milord, we are,” The artisans clasped their fists. Compared to when facing others, they were extremely respectful toward Chu Feng.

The reason they treated Chu Feng so respectfully was because the city that caused them to gasp in amazement was constructed by Chu Feng. Thus, they felt admiration for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts, for they were incapable of constructing such a city.

“Seniors, it seems like you all are fond of that city?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is truly the peak of perfection. Even if the several of us here were to join hands, we would likely still not be able to construct something like that.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, we hope that you can frankly tell us how long exactly you used to construct that city,” The leading artisan asked.

“I already said it was instant. Why are you all asking again?” Chu Zhen said in a slightly angry manner.

However, Chu Feng stopped Chu Zhen and then said to the old men, “Since seniors are fond of my style, I am able to gift each senior one of my works.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he waved his sleeve. Then, boundless golden world spirit power enveloped the sky.

Chu Feng began to form hand seals with one hand, and started to make an outline at the sky. His speed was so fast that simply no one was capable of following his movements.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng retrieved his sleeve. The golden light in the sky dissipated. At that moment, six palaces appeared in the sky.

The six palaces all stood apart from each other. They each possessed three levels, and were not very large. However, they were extremely elaborate. Not only were there courtyards, there were also flowers, plants and trees. Although they were not as impressive as the city before, they were all unique and exquisite.

Chu Feng waved his hand, and the six palaces landed in the plaza. Then, Chu Feng turned to Chu Guyu and said, “These six palaces are my gifts to the six seniors. Big brother, I’ll have to trouble you with ordering men to bring the six palaces to the six seniors’ homes.”

“No problem,” Chu Guyu nodded.

At that moment, the six artisans revealed complicated expressions in their aged eyes.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, the leader of the six artisans kneeled before Chu Feng and began to kowtow to him.

Chapter 2084 – Presenting Enormous Gifts

“Seniors, what are you doing?” Chu Feng hurriedly helped the artisans up.

“Lord Chu Feng, this old man has never felt admiration for another in his entire life as a artisan. However, today, this old man has been fully won over. Lord Chu Feng, please take me as your disciple,” At that moment, that old artisan was so emotional that his cheeks were streaming with tears.

“Lord Chu Feng, please take us as your disciples too,” At that moment, the other five artisans also planned to kneel and kowtow to Chu Feng.

However, this time around, Chu Feng was already prepared. Thus, he prevented them from kneeling to him. That said, he was also able to tell that these six artisans did not care about fame and profit. Instead, they truly adored their work.

Thus, after Chu Feng helped the six artisans up, he made an outline with his palm toward the sky. Soon, a small scale spirit formation appeared. It then turned into six thick books, each landing into the hands of each artisan.

“Seniors, this junior doesn’t have much that I can teach you all. However, since you all are fond of palaces, I have gathered the drawings of the most beautiful palaces that I’ve seen for you all to see. I hope that you all can attain enlightenment from them,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Thank you!!!” At that moment, the six artisans spoke emotionally. The reason for that was because the books not only contained the designs of many palaces they’d never seen before, there was also all sorts information about the details and designs of the palaces. From that, it could be seen how diligent Chu Feng was.

To them, the books that Chu Feng was giving them were simply

treasures. Yet, Chu Feng had gifted these sorts of treasures to them so casually. As such, how could they not express their thanks?

“Earlier, who said that my brother Chu Feng’s ability to create palaces was inferior to professional artisans?” At that moment, Chu Yue said with curled lips. As she spoke, she deliberately took a glance at the old man that presented the blueprint design earlier.

“Lord Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me,” In response, that old man who had presented the design hurriedly knelt on the ground and started begging for forgiveness.

He was extremely scared. He deeply regretted his arrogance and conceit. At that moment, other than feeling deep admiration for Chu Feng’s attainments in building construction, he was also deeply certain that Chu Feng was someone that could drown him to death with a mouthful of spit. Someone like Chu Feng was already no longer capable of being considered a human. He was simply an existence akin to a god. Chu Feng was someone that he could not afford to offend.

“What’s going on?” Since Chu Feng had arrived late, he did not know about what had happened earlier. As such, he looked to Chu Yue.

“No one’s going to kill you. Stop crying. Don’t ruin this happy occasion,” Chu Yue glared at that old man.

“Yes, yes, yes,” After the old man stood up, he wiped his tears and hurriedly ran toward the exit, clearly truly frightened.

“After not seeing you for several years, my kind-hearted and understanding big sister Chu Yue actually also learned to bully others,” Chu Feng looked to Chu Yue with a beaming smile. He had already managed to guess what had happened.

“No, how could I?” Chu Yue smiled sweetly. Then, she grabbed Chu Feng and said, “Little brother Chu Feng, how have you been these past couple years?”

“It’s been good. I merely missed everyone,” As Chu Feng spoke, he looked to his surroundings. At that moment, the people close to him had all walked over and tightly surrounded him.

“Say, little brother, your big brother Chu Guyu is your big brother, but I, big brother Monkey, am not your big brother anymore, is that right?” The Monstrous Monkey King looked to Chu Feng with a joking smile.

“Big brother Monkey, what sorts of words are those? How could I have forgotten about you?” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack and pushed it into the Monstrous Monkey King’s hands.

“Woah! You are truly my good little brother,” After seeing the contents of the Cosmos Sack, the Monstrous Monkey King was so excited that he started to jump up and down. He was truly overjoyed.

“This won’t do. They have all been given gifts. What about us?” At that moment, the others all began to demand gifts from Chu Feng.

“Of course, of course, there’s gifts for everyone,” Chu Feng had already prepared gifts for all those that were close to him. Each and every one of them obtained a gift.

After he gave gifts to all the people close to him, he looked to the unfamiliar elders and disciples of the Azure Dragon School.

He was able to tell that all of these people were extremely afraid of him. However, they all contained gazes of longing in their eyes. It was as if they wanted Chu Feng to take a couple more glances at them and then conveniently give them some gifts too.

“I, Chu Feng, am a disciple of the Azure Dragon School. As such, I would never forget about my Azure Dragon School’s seniors and fellow disciples.”

“Today, I, Chu Feng, have not only returned with gifts prepared

for all the seniors, I have also prepared gifts for all my fellow disciples of the Azure Dragon School.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and an overflowing amount of Martial Beads appeared in the sky. There were several tens of millions of Martial Beads.

Then, as if those Martial Beads possessed awareness, the Martial Beads began to land in the hands of the Azure Dragon School’s elders and disciples. Each and every person obtained a lot of Martial Beads.

“Thank you, Lord Chu Feng!!!” Upon receiving the Martial Beads, all the elders and disciples were overjoyed. They began to kneel courteously to thank Chu Feng.

“You’re thanking me already? That’s a bit early,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, his hands began to move, and a grand formation appeared in mid-air.

Then, Chu Feng began to throw materials into the grand formation nonstop. Everything happened too quickly. Simply no one was capable of seeing Chu Feng’s movements.

After roughly an hour passed, Chu Feng finally finished setting up that grand formation. Merely, no one knew what that golden and dazzling grand formation was for.

However, without a doubt, they all were filled with expectations toward that grand formation. Chu Feng was able to construct those beautiful palaces instantly. For him to spend an hour to construct that grand formation, it would definitely be something extremely shocking.

“What is that? Lord Chu Feng couldn’t possibly be constructing palaces for every one of us, right?” Said a disciple with an expression filled with anticipation.

“Stop dreaming. What sort of status do we possess? Lord Chu Feng has already treated us extremely well to present us gifts. How

could he spend the time to create that sort of refined palace for us? Besides, there are so many people in our Azure Dragon School; how could he possibly be able to construct that many palaces in such a short period of time?" Someone said. However, they were also unable to take their eyes off Chu Feng's grand formation. Their eyes were also filled with anticipation.

"Scatter!!!"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spread open his closed arms. Then, many dazzling rays of silvery light began to shoot out from the golden formation.

There was an enormous amount of silvery lights. They totaled tens of millions. Like silver meteors, they flew through the skies as if they were dancing. It was an extremely dazzling sight.

After the silvery lights floated in the sky for a while, they started to descend into the hands of the Azure Dragon School's elders and disciples.

When the silvery rays of light landed in the hands of the crowd, they were all shocked to discover that they had all received a weapon, a silver sword. Not only were the silver swords beautiful, the words 'Azure Dragon School' were also inscribed on the blade.

"My god! Am I dreaming?!"

At that moment, not to mention the people that were given swords, even the ones that did not obtain swords revealed faces of disbelief.

Tens of millions of swords. They were all exactly the same. Most importantly, none of those swords were ordinary swords. Instead, they were Elite Armaments.

Tens of millions of Elite Armaments. Furthermore, all of them were top quality Elite Armaments. That was something that shocked the crowd endlessly. However, they were even more shocked by how Chu Feng had managed to create all of those

swords in merely an hour.

Chapter 2085 – Seeing The Emperor’s Gate Again

At this moment, when the crowd looked to Chu Feng again, they simply no longer had the gaze of looking at a man. Instead, they all had gazes as if they were looking at a god.

In their hearts, only a god would be capable of accomplishing what Chu Feng had just done.

“Chu Feng, may I ask what level your world spirit techniques are at now?” Zhuge Liuyun asked curiously.

“Master, disciple is now a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Sssss~~~”

Hearing those words, Zhuge Liuyun immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air. The reason for that was because he had simply never heard of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists before.

However, he was certain that it was most definitely an extremely amazing level. His disciple had left him, the master, a [hundred and eight thousand miles away](#).

“The student surpasses the master. Truly, the student surpasses the master,” Zhuge Liuyun said while laughing. In his life, while he had never been the best, he had always been decent. Compared to ordinary people, he was someone extraordinary. However, when compared to real extraordinary people, he was a nobody.

He was someone that had done wrong things before, but had also done correct things before. That said, he felt that the most correct thing that he had ever done in his life was take Chu Feng as his disciple.

“Brother Chu Feng, in that case, what level is your current

cultivation?” The Monstrous Monkey King asked curiously.

Upon mentioning Chu Feng’s cultivation, the people present all turned their curious gazes toward Chu Feng. They all wished to know exactly what level of cultivation Chu Feng currently had.

“Rank four Martial Emperor,” Chu Feng answered.

“Ah?!!!” The crowd were all stunned upon hearing those words.

Martial Emperor. In their eyes, Martial Emperors were simply akin to legends. Yet, Chu Feng had actually stepped into the Martial Emperor realm. In other words, the person standing before them was not only a mere Chu Feng, he was also a legend.

After a moment of astonishment, the Azure Dragon School’s Founder said, “Great! Our genius has finally grown up!” Pride filled his face. It was not only him; all of the people present that knew Chu Feng revealed the same sort of expression as him.

“Martial Emperor? Heavens! Chu Feng is actually already a Martial Emperor!”

“It would seem that we can offend anyone but the people from the Azure Dragon School in the future. Not a single person from the Azure Dragon School can be offended.”

Chu Feng’s words were also heard by the people from the other schools and sects. When they looked to the people from the Azure Dragon School, they all started to tremble with fear.

Before, no matter how powerful the Azure Dragon School was, it was only a powerful power in their eyes. It remained that they were people from the same world.

However, the way they viewed the Azure Dragon School had now changed completely. To them, the Azure Dragon School had ascended to a completely different world. It was now a power completely different from them.

“Headmaster Void,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly

turned his gaze to the Void School's headmaster.

“Lord Chu Feng, what might it be that you need?” The Void School's headmaster hurriedly walked over to Chu Feng's side. Even though he was a school's headmaster, he was extremely afraid of Chu Feng. In fact, Chu Feng was even able to tell that this headmaster's aged body was violently trembling.

“Senior, this junior had taken away things that belonged to the Void School from your Void School in the past. Back then, I had declared that I would make up for them twofold.”

“And now, I think it is time for me to compensate your Void School,” As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, over ten thousand Elite Armaments flew out from the spirit formation that he had set up in midair.

Those Elite Armaments were all spears. Furthermore, the words ‘Void School,’ were inscribed onto them.

“Thank you, Lord Chu Feng. Thank you, Lord Chu Feng,” At that moment, the Void School's headmaster was both excited and extremely moved.

He was able to tell that Chu Feng had thought about their Void Sect the moment he had set up that spirit formation. He was truly overjoyed at this turn of events. He did not expect that Chu Feng would still remember their Void School even after so many years had passed.

“Senior, please accept these too,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng took out a Cosmos Sack and handed it to the Void School's headmaster.

“Lord Chu Feng, I absolutely cannot accept this,” After opening the Cosmos Sack, the Void School's headmaster's expression changed enormously. He hurriedly pushed the Cosmos Sack back to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because not only did that Cosmos Sack

contain legendary Royal Armaments, it also contained countless treasures and many martial skills. The value of the Cosmos Sack was over several hundreds of times the wealth that the Void School had.

That gift was too astonishing. The moment he saw it, he was nearly stunned with terror. Naturally, he would not dare to accept them.

“Senior, please hear me out. Although those Elite Armaments are useful, they remain only a small gift. They are nowhere near enough to make up for the assistance that your Void School provided me back then. Thus, those things in the Cosmos Sack are the things that I truly wish to gift the Void School,” Chu Feng forced the Cosmos Sack back into the Void School’s headmaster’s hands.

“Just accept them. They are Chu Feng’s kind intentions, you don’t have to continue to decline. Just accept them. Don’t forget, the Void School is our Azure Dragon School’s ally. In the future, our two powers will have to endure trials and tribulations and enjoy riches together,” The Azure Dragon School’s Founder said with a smile.

“That’s right, just accept them. My brother Chu Feng is not someone who lacks wealth,” The Monstrous Monkey King heckled from the side.

“Alas,” In this sort of situation, the Void School’s headmaster ended up accepting the Cosmos Sack. He had an uncontainable smile on his face.

The things in that Cosmos Sack given by Chu Feng were so precious that they could simply be considered a treasure deposit. Not to mention him, even if the entire Void School was to save up riches for tens of thousands of years, they would still not be able to save up so many treasures.

Yet now, their Void School was actually being given these

treasures. He actually only refused them because he found it embarrassing to accept them. However, it would be a lie if he said that he didn't want to accept them.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said to the crowd, "Ancestor, big brother Monkey, big brother, big sister Chu Yue, seniors, I have returned with an important task. Thus, I am unable to stay for long. I'm afraid that I will have to leave right away."

"Really? You're leaving right after returning?"

"That's right. Your return was hard to come by, can't you stay for a couple more days?"

"That's right, you don't have to stay for long, just a couple days would do," Seeing that Chu Feng planned to leave, the crowd all revealed expressions of reluctance, and all spoke to urge Chu Feng to stay.

"If I could, I also wished to stay for a couple more days. Merely, my task is extremely urgent, and concerns the lives of several hundreds of millions of people. I truly cannot delay this matter," Chu Feng said.

"This..." After hearing that it concerned several hundreds of millions of lives, the crowd were unable to continue to urge Chu Feng to stay.

Even though they deeply missed Chu Feng, they were able to tell from his words that he possessed a heavy responsibility. In that sort of situation, as Chu Feng's relatives and friends, they should support him, and must absolutely not burden him.

"Chu Feng, since it's of utmost importance, you should take your leave. As for us, we will remain here. You can come and visit us anytime in the future," The Azure Dragon School's Founder said.

"That's right, go ahead," Following him, the others also started to voice their agreement.

"I will definitely return again," At that moment, the person

feeling the most pained would naturally be none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had been away from home for years. It had been many years since he had returned and seen his family and friends. How could he not wish to stay?

In the end, Chu Feng resisted the pain of missing his friends and family and left. As for the place that he proceeded toward, it was naturally the Emperor's Tomb left behind by Qing Xuantian.

The Emperor's Tomb remained the same as before. Merely, the traps and mechanisms that had been so frightening to Chu Feng back then were only a child's tricks to him now.

After Chu Feng entered the Emperor's Tomb, he continued onward and saw all the familiar scenes. What emerged in his mind was not only the anticipation toward the Emperor's tomb. At the same time, there were his memories from back then.

In a blink of an eye, so many years had passed. Chu Feng... was also not the hot-headed youngster from back then.

"I have grown. I wonder if I am qualified to obtain your inheritance now."

At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived before the Emperor's Gate.

A hundred and eight thousand is a distance used to describe an enormous length... kinda like how they use heaven and earth to describe the enormous disparity.

Chapter 2086 – Challenging The Emperor’s Might

The Emperor’s Gate was golden, and yet emitted a golden shine brighter than gold itself. However, it was not made out of simple gold. The reason for that was because it was also emitting a sort of indestructible and sacred sensation.

Upon seeing that gate, one would feel the absolute desire to open it gate and enter. However, that was actually only a hallucinatory sensation. Back then, Chu Feng had been bewildered by it. However, thigns were different now.

“Come on out.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shot a fist out explosively. A stream of martial power surged forth. “Boom,” it smashed into that Emperor’s Gate.

Chu Feng’s fist was extremely powerful. However, when it smashed into the Emperor’s Gate, the Emperor’s Gate showed absolutely no change at all. It had not even shook in the slightest.

Upon seeing that, Chu Feng frowned slightly. With his current strength, even an Imperial Armament would not remain unchanged after being struck by his fist. Yet, that Emperor’s Gate was capable of accomplishing that. This meant that that Emperor’s Gate was stronger than he had imagined it to be.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the Emperor’s Gate emitted an invisible stream of power. It was Emperor’s might.

The invisible Emperor’s might began to take form. Soon, blue skies, white clouds, rivers and the earth appeared in the places covered by the Emperor’s might. In the blink of an eye, beautiful scenery appeared in the underground world.

Not only that, the scenery was still changing. In the end, a golden ray of light shot out from the scenery. That golden ray of light began to rapidly grow larger. In the end, it took on a humanoid form.

His head reached the blue skies, and his feet were on the earth. Even though his entire body was emitting golden light, and his appearance could not be determined, no one would dare to doubt the strength that he possessed.

As for that, it was the Emperor's might that Chu Feng had not dared to confront, the Emperor's might that he had not even dared to look straight at back then.

“Are you going to be my opponent? I'm afraid that the current you will be insufficient.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. He was able to tell that that Emperor's might was no ordinary Emperor's might. Although the strength that Emperor's might possessed was only that of a rank one Martial Emperor, it remained a Martial Emperor.

To the Chu Feng from back then, that Emperor's might was something that he could not defeat.

Back then, this Emperor's might had been like a God of War when it had appeared before Chu Feng. It had been an existence that Chu Feng simply could not contend against. It was as if that Emperor's might could kill Chu Feng merely by blowing air at him.

However, when the Emperor's might appeared this time, Chu Feng was capable of not placing it in his eyes.

The reason for that was because the current Chu Feng was no longer the Chu Feng from back then. He was a rank four Martial Emperor that could defeat rank eight Martial Emperors.

“Roar~~~”

Seemingly understanding what Chu Feng said, that Emperor's might let out a roar. Then, he stepped forward. With each step,

space trembles. It actually took the initiative to attack Chu Feng.

“Senior, my apologies,” Chu Feng did not attack immediately. Instead, he first clasped his fist toward the Emperor’s might.

Even though it was only an Emperor’s might, Chu Feng felt that it possessed significance. If it were to disappear, it might be gone forever. That would in turn mean that [the past would all be in the past, and would never be able to return.](#)

After Chu Feng took the time to clasp his hands respectfully, the attack from that Emperor’s might was about to land on him. A large fist descended from the sky. It was less than ten meters from him.

The powerful impulse of the fist caused Chu Feng’s clothes and long hair to flutter about.

“Haaahh!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng shouted. Then, he clenched his five fingers into a fist and shot it upward.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, two widely different-sized fists collided.

However, upon impact, the enormous fist immediately disintegrated into pieces. Following that, the Emperor’s might also disappeared.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after that Emperor’s might disappeared, ten more streams of Emperor’s might flew out. One by one, they turned into enormous golden humanoids.

Merely, not only had the quantity of Emperor’s might increased, their cultivations had also increased. They were ten rank three Martial Emperors.

“Scatter!!!”

However, Chu Feng merely waved his sleeve, and the ten bodies made from Emperor's might were scattered instantly. He did not even give them the time to attack.

The reason for that was because these ten bodies of Emperor's might were different from the one earlier. That Emperor's might was something that Chu Feng had seen before in his youth, something that served as a memory in Chu Feng's heart.

However, those ten bodies Emperor's might did not bear any memory in Chu Feng's heart. As such, Chu Feng possessed absolutely zero sentiments toward them, and would naturally be ruthless in his attacks.

After that, more and more bodies of Emperor's might began to appear in succession. Their numbers also grew greater and greater. However, they were all instantly erased by Chu Feng.

However, as the Emperor's might forming them grew stronger and stronger, Chu Feng ended up having to use his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, unleashing his true abilities.

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng eliminated another group of bodies made from Emperor's might, a total of three hundred forms appeared. This time around, they were not just standing in front of the Emperor's Gate. Instead, they appeared all around Chu Feng, completely surrounding him.

Most importantly, this time around, all of the forms possessed rank eight Martial Emperor-level cultivations. Furthermore, the sensation they gave off was different from the earlier bodies made of Emperor's might. The Emperor's might this time around was emitting dense killing intent.

“Senior Qing Xuantian, you're deliberately making things difficult for others here,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a flip of his palm, his Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling

Dragon Beheader, appeared in his hand. Then, he said, “Merely, if that’s all there is, it will be insufficient to stop me.”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Feng took the initiative to attack. The Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader he held was like a silver dragon. With every slash, it would emit overwhelming destructive power that caused the Emperor’s Tomb to tremble violently. In fact, even the seemingly indestructible walls of the cave started to crack, and a large amount of stones began to scatter downward.

This region of the Emperor’s Tomb was in utter chaos. It had turned into a frightening battlefield.

“Roar, roar, roar, roar, roar~~~”

However, those three hundred bodies of Emperor’s might were absolutely not to be looked down upon either. They did not attack by themselves, and were instead attacking and defending together in a coordinated manner. In fact, they even set themselves up in a formation to attack Chu Feng in groups.

Under these sorts of circumstances, even Chu Feng, who did not place rank eight Martial Emperors in his eyes, started to feel that the situation was thorny. He had to admit that the three hundred bodies of Emperor’s might were the strongest rank eight Martial Emperors that he had encountered so far.

It was not that the three hundred bodies of Emperor’s might were thorny because of their numbers; rather, it was because all three hundred bodies of Emperor’s might were thorny by themselves.

Thus, one could very well imagine how difficult it was to deal with all three hundred of them together.

“Senior Qing Xuantian, you are truly amazing. The Emperor’s might that you left behind with world spirit techniques is already this powerful. This junior could very well imagine how powerful

you were back then.”

“However, this junior really does need your inheritance now. Thus, please excuse my offense. Even if this Emperor’s might was meticulously created by you, I must still eliminate it.”

Suddenly, ruthlessness flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes. The moment after that ruthlessness appeared, a boundless amount of crimson gaseous substances appeared in a flash, enveloping the entire region.

It was Chu Feng’s Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, the Profound Firmament Annihilation.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted, “Scatter for me!!!”

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Following that loud shout, the might of his Profound Firmament Annihilation burst forth explosively. The three hundred ferocious bodies were all scattered in an instant.

Even though Chu Feng had eliminated them, he did not dare to relax his guard in the slightest.

After all, he had only been able to eliminate those three hundred bodies of Emperor’s might after going all-out, activating his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings and using his Profound Firmament Annihilation, a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

If more bodies of Emperor’s might were to appear now, they would definitely be existences even more powerful than the three hundred just now. Chu Feng... would likely not be able to handle it.

YWL: I have no freaking clue what this means. Rebel: it means what’s lost can’t be regained. Xima: thanks Bee, I earned a 3-hour headache trying to figure that one out!

Chapter 2087 – Meeting Qing Xuantian

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was extremely worried, the Emperor's Gate suddenly trembled. That trembling greatly resembled the time when the three hundred bodies of Emperor's might had appeared. The only difference was that the trembling this time was even stronger than before.

Although everything happened in an instant, Chu Feng's heart sunk. He subconsciously felt that the situation was extremely bad. However, he did not cower, because he did not wish to give up on this opportunity.

As matters stood, he no longer possessed any certainty of victory. However, he was determined to fight.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

However, the very next moment, a scene that came as an enormous joy to Chu Feng occurred. After that trembling, that Emperor's Gate actually opened.

At the moment when the Emperor's Gate was opened, Chu Feng felt a peculiar sensation. The sensation he felt was that he was standing at the edge of a bottomless cliff, and there was an invisible power pushing him forward. He was on the verge of falling from the cliff. However, at the moment of imminent crisis, a path suddenly appeared on the cliff.

Merely, that path was floating in midair. Chu Feng was uncertain whether that path was real or fake.

Would he really be able to walk safely on that path to the other side and obtain treasures, or would that path collapse the very moment he stepped onto it, making him fall down the cliff?

Thus, even though Chu Feng was overjoyed and saw hope the moment the Emperor's Gate opened, it was only for a moment.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether or not he would be able to obtain Qing Xuantian's inheritance, or if he'd be met with another trial after the Emperor's Gate opened.

“Buzz~~~:

At the moment when Chu Feng's head was filled with complicated thoughts, dazzling light suddenly blossomed from within that Emperor's Gate. Soon, that light covered all the surroundings.

When the light gradually faded away, Chu Feng discovered that he was in another world.

This place was no longer the Emperor's Tomb. A clear blue sky and white clouds were above him. Underneath his feet was a boundless meadow.

As a gentle breeze brushed past, the grasses were lifted. Chu Feng could hear birds singing, and smell flowers. It was truly vibrant and filled with life.

“It seems that I have been extremely fortunate.”

At that moment, Chu Feng finally revealed a smile of ease. His suspenseful heart was finally mostly at ease.

He knew that he was currently in a special space, a special illusory world. The reason why it was special was because it was both fake and real.

Most importantly, there was a figure in the distance, standing with his hands behind his back.

That man was wearing plain cotton clothes. The clothes he wore were made of ordinary materials. They were no different from the clothing of ordinary commoners.

However, when worn by that man, those clothes appeared very extraordinary. It was as if even if he stood within a crowd of

hundreds of millions, one could still notice him at the very first glance.

That sort of illustriousness was not because of his clothes or his appearance. Rather, it was the aura that he emitted.

At that moment, that man had his back facing Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng was unable to see his facial features. Only his long, pitch-black hair that draped down from his head to his waist like a waterfall could be seen.

This was an unrestrained and unruly man. He was also a man who possessed outstanding strength. If Chu Feng guessed correctly, that man should be the man whose fame was renowned throughout the entire Eastern Sea Region, and was deemed as the strongest person since the Ancient Era in the Holy Land of Martialism, Qing Xuantian.

“Junior Chu Feng pays his respects to senior Qing Xuantian,” After finally meeting the master of the Emperor’s Tomb, the master of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills, how could Chu Feng dare to neglect his respect? He clasped his fist toward the man’s back and greeted him.

“Regardless of who you are, regardless of what gender you are, since you’ve managed to reach this place, it means that you possess extraordinary talent.”

“I am Qing Xuantian. Although I do not know if the people of this world still remember my name, all that I have learned and gained came from this land. Since I must leave, it is only natural that I return them to this land for the benefit of later generations.”

After Qing Xuantian said those words, he suddenly waved his sleeve. Then, four gates appeared before Chu Feng.

The four gates possessed different names. They were respectively the Gate of Wealth, the Gate of Martial Skills, the Gate of Weaponry and the Gate of Cultivation.

“The first gate, the Gate of Wealth.”

“The Gate of Wealth contains all of the treasures that I’ve accumulated in my lifetime. You will be able to obtain that wealth by entering the Gate of Wealth.”

“The second gate, the Gate of Martial Skills.”

“The Gate of Martial Skills possesses a certain amount of danger. It contains all of the Martial Skills I’ve learned in my lifetime. If you are to enter it, the Martial Skills will forcibly enter your mind, fusing with you. It has a very high requirement for your body’s constitution. If your constitution is weak and your spirit power insufficient, it is very likely that your body will explode and you will die.”

“The third gate, the Gate of Weaponry.”

“The Gate of Weaponry is even more dangerous. Inside it is a single Imperial Armament. That Imperial Armament originated from the Ancient Era, and is a rarely-seen divine artifact. However, that Imperial Armament is extremely vicious, and possesses a killing nature. If you enter the Gate of Weaponry, you will either subdue that Imperial Armament, or be killed by it. You must consider carefully before setting foot into the Gate of Weaponry.”

“The fourth gate, the Gate of Cultivation. It is the most dangerous of all four gates.”

“That gate is something that I personally refined. It is also the gate which I poured the most effort into. From all the treasures I obtained in my lifetime, I gathered all of the cultivation resources and, through the use of world spirit techniques, changed them into substantial cultivation. Entering that gate, one will be able to obtain a certain amount of cultivation.”

“However, what I’ve done is against the rules of martial cultivation. It is a feat that goes against the natural order, and thus, I ended up failing to accomplish my aim.”

“The reason why I failed is because even though the Gate of Cultivation contains a boundless amount of cultivation, it remains that the cultivation within was formed from Natural Energies. The Natural Energies possess berserk natures. Thus, unless one possesses an extremely powerful constitution, one’s body will not be able to withstand the cultivation within the Gate of Cultivation. Furthermore, even those with an extremely powerful constitution might not necessarily be able to assimilate all of the cultivation within the Gate of Cultivation.”

“That gate is a failure. Originally, it was supposed to be destroyed. However, I was reluctant to do so. After all, it was created through meticulous effort by me.”

“However, I must admit that the Gate of Cultivation is most definitely incomplete. Thus, I have only left that gate as a remembrance for myself. I’d suggest that no one enter that gate.”

“I have said all that I should say. You, who has come here by fate, I hope that you weigh your own abilities carefully, and act accordingly.” After saying those words, Qing Xuantian waved his sleeve once more.

At that moment, heaven and earth started to tremble. Violent winds formed. In that sort of environment, Qing Xuantian’s body turned into a strand of smoke that soon dissipated into thin air.

The moment Qing Xuantian disappeared, the world suddenly started to sway left and right, and started to crumble.

Soon, the shattered sky and earth began to turn into smoke. Like Qing Xuantian from earlier, they began to dissipate into thin air.

At that moment, Chu Feng discovered that he was still in the Emperor’s Tomb. The Emperor’s Gate was still before him. It had not actually opened.

However, there were four other gates below the Emperor’s Gate. They were the Gate of Wealth, the Gate of Martial Skills, the Gate

of Weaponry and the Gate of Cultivation.

It was all as Chu Feng had anticipated. The scene from before was both real and illusory. However, the things most important to Chu Feng were real. The reason for that was because they were all right before his eyes.

Suddenly, Chu Feng clasped his fist and bowed. “Thank you, senior Qing Xuantian, for leaving all these behind.”

Chu Feng actually knew that the Qing Xuantian before him earlier had not even been a strand of awareness. It had merely been an image left behind by Qing Xuantian through the use of a spirit formation. As the image was created by a spirit formation, it naturally did not contain Qing Xuantian’s emotions.

In other words, that image of Qing Xuantian had only been a spirit formation, set there to explain the four gates. Perhaps, at the time of Chu Feng’s arrival, the actual Qing Xuantian was no longer in this world.

However, even though the Qing Xuantian before was only an image formed by a spirit formation, Chu Feng still acted extremely respectfully towards him. After all, no matter what, this Emperor’s Tomb was something that Qing Xuantian had left behind. As such, Chu Feng should express his thanks.

Chapter 2088 – Emperor Taboo Martial Skill

“Let me see exactly how many treasures senior Qing Xuantian has left behind.”

After courteously clasping his fist, Chu Feng stepped into the first gate, the Gate of Wealth.

The Gate of Wealth was a special small-scale isolated space. Although it was said to be small, it was not really small. The space was the size of a palace hall capable of containing tens of thousands of people. Treasures densely packed this place from the floor to the ceiling.

“As expected of the Gate of Wealth. The amount of treasures here is so enormous that it is difficult for one to not be shocked.”

Seeing those treasures, even Chu Feng, who felt himself to be very experienced, was unable to contain himself from opening his mouth wide. He was overwhelmed with excitement.

Treasures filled the entire space. It was truly a delight to the eye. They were dazzling with sparkling luster, with all sorts of treasures everywhere

There were materials for concocting medicines, materials for refining weapons and materials for setting up formations.

There were treasures that one could eat, treasures that one could play with, and treasures that one could keep in a collection.

Not mentioning the incredible amount of Incomplete Imperial Armaments there, even the Imperial Armaments that were rarely seen in the Holy Land of Martialism numbered twenty-three. Furthermore, every one of them emitted a dense Ancient Era's aura. As for their quality, none of them were actually inferior to Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader; they were all top quality Imperial Armaments.

When even the Imperial Armaments were like this, the

Incomplete Imperial Armaments were simply too many to count. Furthermore, each and every one of them were top quality items.

In short, this place contained all the treasures that Chu Feng had seen before, as well as a whole bunch of treasures that Chu Feng had never seen before. In fact, there were even several Golden Flash Birds that were rarely seen in the Holy Land of Martialism and deemed to be near extinction.

Seeing those living Golden Flash Birds that were kept within a spirit formation cage, Chu Feng became curious about those little fellows again. It had been a great many years. There was no food in the spirit formation cage at all. Thus, how had those Golden Flash Birds managed to survive for so many years? Could it be that they were the same as Martial Cultivators, and did not need food to survive?

While he was curious, Chu Feng still took all the treasures in this place without the slightest bit of restraint. Even though many of the treasures in this place were no longer useful to him, they were useful to others. As such, he absolutely could not let them go to waste.

After Chu Feng stored away all of the treasures in the Gate of Wealth, his surroundings turned into strands of golden gases that soon dissipated into thin air. As for Chu Feng... he returned to the Emperor's Tomb.

As he looked around, he saw that the Gate of Martial Skills, the Gate of Weaponry and the Gate of Cultivation were still there. However, the Gate of Wealth that Chu Feng had entered earlier had disappeared.

Likely, it was a special trick that Qing Xuantian had left behind. As long as the contents of the gate were taken away, the gates themselves would disappear.

“Senior Qing Xuantian, I bet even the Ancient Era's Elves do not possess as many riches as the riches you left behind.”

Even though the Gate of Wealth had already disappeared, Chu Feng revealed a dense smile as he touched the Cosmos Sack on his waist. His harvest this time around was truly enormous.

“In that case, allow me to experience exactly what sort of Martial Skills senior Qing Xuantian left behind.”

After obtaining the treasures from the Gate of Wealth, Chu Feng started to look forward to the Gate of Martial Skills even more. After all, to martial cultivators, wealth was merely worldly possessions, whereas martial skills that one mastered would become one's ability forever; they were things that others could not snatch away.

Based on what the image Qing Xuantian left with his spirit formation had said, upon entering the Gate of Martial Skills, the martial skills within the gate would be forcibly assimilated with Chu Feng. Even if Chu Feng didn't want to learn them, he would not be able to refuse their entry. Furthermore, it was likely that Chu Feng would directly grasp those Martial Skills.

“Buzz~~~”

As Chu Feng stepped into the Gate of Martial Skills, a burst of vast energy immediately rushed into his head. Even though Chu Feng possessed an extremely strong tolerance, he still felt as if he was about to explode at that very instant.

Chu Feng was someone that had experienced all sorts of pain. Even the pain of his body shattering was something that he had endured before. However, the pain that he felt right now was extremely unbearable even for Chu Feng. At that moment, Chu Feng was screaming.

If this were anyone else, even if it was the Elf King, they might not necessarily be able to endure the pain. The reason for that was because the pain not only placed a heavy demand upon one's cultivation, it also demanded an extremely powerful spirit.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was able to endure it. At the moment when the spirit power that rushed into his head from all sides like violent tides finally stopped, sweat covered Chu Feng's face.

After wiping away the sweat on his face, Chu Feng revealed a slight smile. He knew that the hard times were over, and the good times were just beginning.

The reason for that was because there were many additional martial skills that had appeared in Chu Feng's mind

These martial skills were all Taboo Martial Skills. There were a total of eighteen Earthen Taboo Martial Skills and eight Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

Most importantly, other than the Earthen Taboo Martial Skills and the Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, there was actually also an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

It was the character 'Emperor', and not the character '[Earth](#).'

Most importantly, when the martial skills had been pouring into Chu Feng's head, Chu Feng was able to sense that the most powerful among them was not the eighteen Earthen Taboo Martial Skills, nor the eight Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, but rather [the single Emperor Taboo Martial Skill](#).

The name of that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.

"What's going on? That Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation is extremely powerful. It is the most powerful martial skill I've seen. Its power most definitely surpasses that of Heaven Taboo Martial Skills."

"But, aren't the skills above Heaven Taboo Martial Skills supposed to be Divine Taboo Martial Skills? Why would it be called an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill instead of a Divine Taboo Martial Skill? Or, could it be... that this martial skill is a Divine Taboo Martial Skill, but is instead called an Emperor Taboo Martial

Skill?”

At that moment, Chu Feng was a bit confused. According to Eggy, there should be four kinds of Taboo Martial Skills: Mortal Taboo, Earthen Taboo, Heaven Taboo and Divine Taboo. The Emperor Taboo was something that Chu Feng had never heard of before.

Although Chu Feng felt that this martial skill by the name of Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation was very likely a Divine Taboo Martial Skill, he did not dare to be certain as to whether or not it really was one. The reason for that was because he had heard from Eggy that Divine Taboo Martial Skills were absolute legends. Even she did not know whether or not they still existed in this world. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly obtain a Divine Taboo Martial Skill and completely grasp it so easily?

“Senior Qing Xuantian is truly powerful. Merely in terms of martial skills, I am already incapable of being compared to him.”

Chu Feng felt that he was greatly inferior when compared to Qing Xuantian. Inevitably, he felt even greater admiration for Qing Xuantian.

Right at that moment, the Gate of Martial Skills that Chu Feng was in started to disappear. Chu Feng did not hesitate, and directly entered the third gate, the Gate of Weaponry.

Inside the Gate of Weaponry. The Gate of Weaponry possessed an area much larger than the Gate of Wealth and the Gate of Martial Skills. Right after entering the Gate of Weaponry, Chu Feng was immediately met with an extremely powerful Emperor’s might.

It was coming from an enormous chunk of black metal. To be exact, it looked more like an enormous sword that was missing a hilt. Placed in the Gate of Weaponry’s isolated world, it reached the sky as it stood in the distance.

It appeared as if it were the ruler of that place, and was intimidating everything in the world with its overwhelming

Emperor's might.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a vast amount of killing intent was emitted by that enormous sword.

If it were anyone else, they would definitely be extremely frightened upon sensing that killing intent. However, Chu Feng smiled at it. He said, “It would seem that you are that Ancient Era's Imperial Armament.”

“Boom~~~”

Right after Chu Feng's words left his mouth, the enormous sword suddenly started to move. [From top to bottom](#), it slashed toward Chu Feng.

That enormous sword contained an extremely ferocious Emperor's might. At that moment, it was simply not as simple as an attack from a mere weapon. Rather, it was as if the entire sky was collapsing onto Chu Feng.

However, when faced with that sort of attack, Chu Feng did not fear it in the slightest. He held his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader and sliced it upward. Then, a silver blade ray shot toward the sky.

“Boom~~~”

A loud rumble sounded. Chu Feng was not moved in the slightest. However, the enormous sword began to emit trembling cries nonstop. It had been knocked back by Chu Feng's blade ray.

After being knocked back by Chu Feng's attack, the enormous sword stood motionless. At the same time, the killing intent that it emitted greatly decreased. It was as if it was feeling shock after being knocked back by Chu Feng.

Emperor and Earth sounds the same... so... earthen taboo and emperor taboo sound the same...

You don't say... Xima: shhh, let Bee write nonsense. He has a quota to fill

YWL: So... a vertical overhead strike? GNE:So it would seem. Though technically not overhead, as you'd need a head for that

Chapter 2089 – Fusion

Seeing that the enormous Imperial Armament actually had a reaction, Chu Feng was delighted. Although all Imperial Armaments possessed a certain amount of sentience, it was the first time that Chu Feng had seen an Imperial Armament like that sword, a sword that actually revealed its sentience so clearly by attacking someone of its own initiative.

That sort of situation could be described with a single word: miraculous.

“I’ll give you two options. You will either submit to me obediently and serve me, or I’ll properly take care of you first and then make you submit to me,” Chu Feng said to that enormous Imperial Armament. He felt that this Imperial Armament was capable of understanding his words.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, the enormous sword once again started attacking Chu Feng.

“Interesting,” Chu Feng smiled and said, “Seems like you’ve chosen the latter.”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Feng leapt into the sky. The Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader he held turned into many silver blade rays that whistled through the sky like silver dragons and ferocious beasts that planned to shatter and tear apart everything before their path.

Regardless of how powerful that enormous Imperial Armament sword might be, it remained only a single Imperial Armament. As there was no one controlling it, its power was limited. As such, how could it possibly withstand Chu Feng’s ferocious attacks?

After all, the current Chu Feng was someone that most rank eight Martial Emperors would not be able to match.

At that moment, the enormous Imperial Armament sword was gradually knocked back. The enormous body of the sword started to tremble more and more distinctly as it continued to let out ear-piercing cries.

Toward the end, that enormous Imperial Armament was only trembling nonstop, and stopped trying to attack Chu Feng. Not to mention it's killing intent from earlier, even its boundless Emperor's might from earlier had completely disappeared.

Under those circumstances, Chu Feng stopped his attacks. He narrowed his eyes and stared at the enormous Imperial Armament. He asked, "Are you planning to submit to me now?"

However, that Imperial Armament did not have any reaction to Chu Feng's words. It had chosen to remain silent, as if it had not heard Chu Feng.

"It seems that you want me to put you in order again before you are willing to submit to me," The corners of Chu Feng's mouth lifted into an evil smile. Then, he began to wave the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader that he held in his hand once again.

Chu Feng's attacks this time around were not as simple as merely using his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. The sky and earth darkened as a frightening burst of energy was emitted from the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

That energy formed an illusion throughout the region. It was an illusion of a ferocious beast. It had an appearance resembling that of a tiger or leopard, but was several hundred meters in length and contained an extremely frightening power.

It was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill that Chu Feng had just grasped. It was the first time that Chu Feng was using this Heaven Taboo Martial Skill since it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill that he had just inherited from Qing Xuantian.

"Buzz, buzz~~~"

Seemingly realizing Chu Feng's power, and also seemingly recognizing that martial skill, the enormous Imperial Armament sword trembled violently. Even that region of space was affected by its trembling.

Finally, its trembling started to calm down. However, at that moment, the enormous sword was rapidly shrinking in size. In the end, from the size of a colossus, it turned into a two meter-long sword.

After that sword shrunk in size, the gate that Chu Feng was in also began to dissipate. Even though that Imperial Armament had yet to recognize Chu Feng as its master, it was clear that it no longer possessed any hostility toward Chu Feng anymore.

In other words, it no longer dared to emit any hostility toward Chu Feng. Chu Feng had subdued it with his strength.

After the enormous sword shrunk, Chu Feng was able to see its characteristics more clearly. Indeed, that sword did not possess a hilt. It was a broken sword. However, although it was a broken sword, that did not affect its power.

The dense Ancient Era's aura and the air of arrogance that the sword emitted both made it stand out from the masses. It was not only a slight bit more powerful than Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. Instead, it was much more powerful.

That Imperial Armament was a true top quality weapon among Imperial Armaments. Chu Feng even felt that if that Imperial Armament were to be completed, it would surpass all other Imperial Armaments.

Suddenly, Chu Feng raised his head and turned his gaze to the Emperor's Gate.

The more Chu Feng looked at it, the more marvelous of an expression Chu Feng revealed. The reason for that was because that Emperor's Gate was also not an ordinary Imperial Armament.

“It seems that my guess was correct,” At that moment, a complacent smile emerged on Chu Feng’s face. Even though he was already excited, he became even more excited.

The reason why Chu Feng was so pleased with himself was because he had discovered that that Emperor’s Gate was actually a complete Imperial Armament. However, on top of that Emperor’s Gate, Chu Feng had discovered the traces of an enormous sword.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was also able to find traces of the Emperor’s Gate on the enormous sword. Furthermore, the location where the two traces were found was the location where the sword’s hilt should be.

In addition to that, both the sword and the Emperor’s Gate possessed a spirit formation over them. The spirit formations would not affect the two of them. However, they possessed a special sort of power capable of fusing the two of them.

If Chu Feng guessed correctly, someone had tried to fuse those two extraordinary Imperial Armaments together, making them one extraordinary Imperial Armament. However, that attempt had ended in failure.

Chu Feng felt that it was very likely that it was Qing Xuantian that had attempted to do that.

However, the discovery of those clues was not something that could cause Chu Feng to be this pleased with himself. The reason why Chu Feng was so pleased was because he felt that, with his current world spirit techniques, he might be able to accomplish what Qing Xuantian had been unable to accomplish.

In other words, Chu Feng was capable of fusing the two Imperial Armaments.

What sort of character was Qing Xuantian? He was the person the entire Holy Land of Martialism accepted as the strongest since the Ancient Era.

Chu Feng deeply respected Qing Xuantian. However, Chu Feng also wished to surpass Qing Xuantian. However, for the current Chu Feng, surpassing Qing Xuantian in terms of martial cultivation would be absolutely impossible.

However, if he could surpass Qing Xuantian in terms of world spirit techniques, it would still be something that he could be proud of.

“Senior Qing Xuantian, please excuse this junior’s offense. I am going to fuse the two Imperial Armaments you left behind.”

“However, I think that if you were here, you would also support this junior.”

“Because you are definitely the same as this junior, and would also want to know what sort of weapon these two Imperial Armaments will become after fusing together.”

“Without a doubt, it will definitely be an extraordinary weapon.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was extremely refined. Chu Feng used tens of thousands of materials to set it up. The spirit formation possessed a total of a thousand three hundred and eighty-nine foundation cores.

Even though Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were extremely exceptional right now, it still took Chu Feng a total of nine days and nine nights to set up that spirit formation.

Logically, as Chu Feng was in a rush to return to the Holy Land of Martialism, he should not have wasted this much time on a single weapon.

However, Chu Feng felt that those two Imperial Armaments were both extraordinary items. Although they did not possess the same body, he might be able to create a weapon that surpassed Imperial Armaments should he be able to fuse the two of them together into

one.

If he possessed a weapon like that, Chu Feng's strength would increase enormously. At that time, he would have a greater certainty in being able to defeat the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Chu Feng did not wish to let such a great opportunity slip by him.

After Chu Feng finished setting up the grand spirit formation, Chu Feng placed the two Imperial Armaments into his grand spirit formation. Although that Emperor's Gate was still enormous, it was actually the same as that enormous sword. After Qing Xuantian's spirit formation was gone, it immediately submitted to Chu Feng after revealing his might.

Chapter 2090 – The Reemergence Of The Four Secrets

After that Emperor's Gate was intimidated by Chu Feng, it began to, as Chu Feng had expected, shrink in size. In the end, it became a gate that was only three meters tall.

However, even with that being the case, the gate was still very big. Thus, Chu Feng used a special spirit formation to shrink the Emperor's Gate further.

Evidently, Qing Xuantian had used that sort of spirit formation on the Emperor's Gate before, because it was extremely smooth and easy when Chu Feng shrank the Emperor's Gate again. The Emperor's Gate that was originally enormous like a colossus had shrunk to the size of a sword hilt.

After that was finished, [Chu Feng tossed the Emperor's Gate into the fusion formation.](#)

Merely, before fusing the two Imperial Armaments, Chu Feng did not attempt to make either the enormous sword or the Emperor's Gate recognize him as their master.

Why did he do that? The reason for that was because masterless weapons were also the purest. What Chu Feng wanted was precisely that sort of purity.

After the fusion formation was activated, it continued to operate for thirteen days.

“Boom~~~”

Finally, the grand formation that was sealed off for thirteen days opened.

After the grand formation was opened, a sword over two meters long appeared before Chu Feng, floating in midair.

That sword was pitch-black in color. Even though the veined

patterns from the enormous sword were still present, they were no longer that distinct. It looked like a newly refined Imperial Armament.

That Imperial Armament was not an ordinary Imperial Armament. It was an Imperial Armament created through the fusion of the enormous sword and the Emperor's Gate. Chu Feng had succeeded. He had successfully accomplished what even Qing Xuantian had failed to do, and fused the two Imperial Armaments.

Once that Imperial Armament appeared, even the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader Chu Feng held in his hand started to involuntarily tremble.

It was afraid. The aura emitted by that Imperial Armament caused even Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to tremble in fear. However, Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader was something from the Ancient Era, and a top quality weapon among Imperial Armaments.

Yet, that sword was capable of bringing fear to even the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. From that, one could imagine how powerful that Imperial Armament was. Likely, one would not find a weapon as powerful as that in the Holy Land of Martialism.

That sword was truly a king among Imperial Armaments.

"Truly, never would have I expected you, boy, to be able to accomplish that."

"Not bad, not bad. You have truly broadened the horizons of us four old fellows."

"If Qing Xuantian were to know this, he would definitely be extremely overjoyed too."

"Mn, after all, those two Imperial Armaments are both treasures he obtained from that remnant."

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly heard four voices sounding in his ear. He was startled upon hearing those voices.

Even though it had been a long time since he had heard those voices, it still felt so very familiar to hear them again. Furthermore, those four voices were the voices that Chu Feng wanted to hear the most.

They were the voices of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, the Vermilion Bird Resurrection Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

“Junior Chu Feng respectfully greets seniors.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng half knelt onto the ground as he faced the sky. Even though Chu Feng was kneeling, his face was covered with a smile.

After all, this moment was a moment that he had looked forward to for a very long time!!!

“Hahaha...”

The very next moment, four laughs sounded from Chu Feng’s body. Soon, four bodies of light flew out from Chu Feng’s body.

Soon, the four bodies of light took shape and became four huge monsters. They were the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the true forms of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

Even though it had been many years since then, the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills still appeared to be very domineering when they reappeared before Chu Feng in their true forms.

“Chu Feng, truly never would I have expected that not only did you manage to obtain Qing Xuantian’s inheritance, you also accomplished what even he had failed to do. Do you know how extraordinary those two Imperial Armaments are?” The Vermilion Bird said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile on its face.

“Senior, please explain,” Chu Feng said curiously.

The White Tiger sighed. “Those are things from the past. There’s

nothing interesting about them. Chu Feng... all you have to know is that those two Imperial Armaments are both extremely extraordinary. As for you, you've done something even more extraordinary," It said casually.

"How could that do? Chu Feng is currently the true successor to Qing Xuantian. Naturally, we must let him know about certain things," The Vermilion Bird said.

"What Vermilion Bird says is reasonable," The Black Tortoise nodded.

"It's better that I explain it for you," The Azure Dragon smiled lightly. Then, it said, "Back then, it was no coincidence that Qing Xuantian was able to attain his extraordinary accomplishments. He had discovered a complete Ancient Era's remnant in the Holy Land of Martialism, and gained enormous benefits from it."

"Even though Qing Xuantian possessed overwhelming talent to begin with, an undeniable fact, his rapid growth in such a short period of time was actually greatly related to that Ancient Era's remnant."

"Right now, many of the treasures from that Ancient Era's remnant are already in your possession. That said, the Imperial Armament that you managed to refine could be said to be one of the most precious treasures in that Ancient Era's remnant."

"Firstly, there's the gate that Qing Xuantian placed deep in this Emperor's Tomb amidst many layers of spirit formations to find his successor."

"That gate's name is the Fiend Gate. Reportedly, its master was a monstrous beast from the Ancient Era. That monstrous beast was a ruthless evildoer. He was deemed to be an era's demon lord."

"Furthermore, according to the legends, in the hands of that demon lord, the Fiend Gate would cause hundreds of millions of creatures to meet with violent deaths instantly the moment it was

opened. After their bodies were all badly mutilated, only their bones would remain.”

“Most importantly, ordinary Imperial Armaments were simply incapable of withstanding the Emperor’s might from that Fiend Gate. Even in the Ancient Era, that Fiend Gate was a nightmare to countless people. Practically everyone below Half Martial Ancestor would be deeply afraid upon seeing the Fiend Gate.”

“However, that Fiend Gate was too nefarious an item. It would end up affecting one’s state of mind. As such, even Qing Xuantian never used it. Instead, he used spirit formations to remove its nefarious nature. It was only after the Magma Emperor appeared that he finally managed to succeed in completely eliminating the nefarious nature of the Fiend Gate. However, at that time, he no longer had the heart to subdue it.”

“As for that sword, it’s name was the Nameless Broken Sword. Although it was called Nameless, it was even more powerful than that Fiend Gate. Reportedly, when it was complete and not broken, it was not an Imperial Armament, but rather an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“Incomplete Ancestral Armament,” Chu Feng was shocked upon hearing those words.

Imperial Armaments were already extremely rare treasures in the Holy Land of Martialism. As for Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, they were things that he had never even heard of before, much less seen.

“Indeed, it was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. That Ancient Era’s remnant contained a written record of that Nameless Broken Sword.”

“Although we do not know who the first master of that Nameless Broken Sword was, the second master of that Nameless Broken Sword was the master of that Ancient Era’s remnant. He was also an extraordinary person.”

“According to the records he left behind, the Nameless Broken Sword was already in that broken state when he obtained it. Thus, at the time he had obtained it, it was already a broken Incomplete Imperial Armament that was beyond repair, a piece of scrap even.”

“However, that man forged it into an Imperial Armament. However, an Incomplete Ancestral Armament remains an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Even though it was already badly damaged, even though it had lost its original power and greatly depreciated in strength to that of an Imperial Armament, it remained something that ordinary Imperial Armaments could not compare to. Among Imperial Armaments, it could be said to be the king.”

“Back then, Qing Xuantian had used many Imperial Armaments. However, among them, the strongest would naturally have to be that Nameless Broken Sword.”

“But, even though that Nameless Broken Sword was already not something that ordinary Imperial Armaments could compare with, Qing Xuantian still said that he was unable to unleash the true power of that Nameless Broken Sword.”

“We asked Qing Xuantian why he said that before.”

“To which, Qing Xuantian smiled at us and said, ‘Perhaps because the Nameless Broken Sword was originally an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, it is unwilling to allow its master to obtain all of its power after it degenerated into an Imperial Armament,’” The Azure Dragon explained.

Bee... you just said he did that last chapter...

Chapter 2091 – Gate of Cultivation

“Although it was only a joke, we all felt it to be a very feasible theory,” the Vermilion Bird added.

“Never would I have imagined that Imperial Armament to possess such an origin. It’s no wonder it stands out from the masses like that, and actually took the initiative to attack me,” After hearing about the origin of that Imperial Armament, Chu Feng began to cherish the fused sword before him even more.

“Qing Xuantian only managed to subdue that Imperial Armament when he became a rank five Martial Emperor. You, on the other hand, have managed to subdue it at a cultivation of rank four Martial Emperor. Boy, that clearly demonstrates how extraordinary you are,” The White Tiger praised. He seemed to think very highly of Chu Feng.

After all, he was the first of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills that Chu Feng became acquainted with. In other words, he had met Chu Feng at his weakest. Over the years, Chu Feng’s growth in strength was all clearly seen by him.

“Chu Feng is, after all, someone from the Outer World. It is normal that his talent would surpass Qing Xuantian’s. However, for him to be able to fuse the Nameless Broken Sword with the Fiend Gate into a new Imperial Armament truly has me taken aback. That is something that Qing Xuantian had prepared for for a long time, yet still failed to accomplish,” The Azure Dragon also praised.

Following that, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise also nodded. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng now were all different from the gazes with which they had looked to Chu Feng when they first met him. Not only was there appreciation and admiration, there was also pride in their eyes.

When they had first met Chu Feng, they had looked to him with

the eyes of strangers. But now, looking at Chu Feng again, they were no longer looking at him like a stranger. Instead, there was familiarity in their gazes.

Seeing the reaction of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills and hearing what they said, Chu Feng realized that even though they had been silent all these years, seemingly as if they had lost their awareness, they had actually been conscious the entire time. They had simply been unable to communicate with him due to what Qing Xuantian had done to them. However, they knew extremely well what Chu Feng had experienced.

“Seniors, in that case... am I able to obtain your acknowledgement now?” Chu Feng asked.

“For you to accomplish what you have, you have naturally obtained our acknowledgement. As long as you find our bodies, we will no longer be mere Secret Skills. Instead, we will be able to return to our bodies and serve you.”

“It is not that we are being conceited here, but if you were to help the four of us regain our physical bodies, that Dark Hall’s Hall Master would only be a piece of cake for us,” the White Tiger said confidently.

“In that case, seniors, you all were actually Half Martial Ancestors?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

“No matter what, we are Divine Beasts. Although we were created by Qing Xuantian and not natural-born Divine Beasts, it remains that we are still Divine Beasts. If we do not possess the strength of Half Martial Ancestors, how could we have the audacity to declare ourselves Divine Beasts?” The White Tiger gently caressed his whiskers with his claw and spoke in a very proud manner.

“Great! With the assistance of the four seniors, this junior would no longer have to worry,” Chu Feng was extremely overjoyed after confirming that matter.

The thing he was worried about the most right now was the Dark Hall's Hall Master. If the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise were truly capable of taking care of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, Chu Feng would be able to untie that knot in his heart.

“White Tiger, do not speak too determinedly. The cultivation of that Dark Hall's Hall Master was still very unstable at that time. To be exact, he was not yet an actual Half Martial Ancestor back then.”

“If he manages to stabilize his cultivation and starts to massacre the living beings of the Holy Land of Martialism, his cultivation will definitely increase enormously. If he is a rank two Half Martial Ancestor when we meet him again, even we would not be a match for him,” The Azure Dragon said.

“You're joking! How could rank two Half Martial Ancestor be so easily obtained? Do not forget that Qing Xuantian was also only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor back then.”

“Furthermore, the four of us contributed greatly to Qing Xuantian being able to become a Half Martial Ancestor. How could one become a Half Martial Ancestor that easily?” The White Tiger said.

“That was then, this is now. That Dark Hall's Hall Master is even more thorny than that Magma Emperor from back then,” The Vermilion Bird said.

“What? Even more thorny than that Magma Emperor? Don't forget that Magma Emperor was the absolute genius of the subterranean world.”

“Even Qing Xuantian said that the Magma Emperor's talent was extremely frightening. If he had trained a bit longer before emerging into this world, even if Qing Xuantian and the four of us were to join hands, we would likely still not have been a match for that Magma Emperor.”

“As for that Dark Hall’s Hall master, he was unable to even take care of a mere Elf King. Furthermore, he needed to rely on some sort of demonic technique that took him an enormous amount of time to prepare in order to obtain his current strength.”

“Yet you’re saying that that Dark Hall’s Hall Master is even stronger than the Magma Emperor?” The White Tiger refuted.

“It is true that the Magma Emperor came from the subterranean world. However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master originated from the Outer World. Is there even a need for me to declare who among the two of them is stronger?” The Azure Dragon snorted coldly.

“Humph, Outer World, is the Outer World that amazing? You’ve never been there, so how would you know if the Outer World is filled with geniuses like Chu Feng? It might be that the Outer World is inferior to our Holy Land of Martialism,” The White Tiger refuted even more determinedly.

“If the Outer World is as weak as you said, how could Qing Xuantian be so insistent on going to the Outer World?” The Azure Dragon was also furious.

“Perhaps he was wrong and regretted his decision later, but is unable to return,” When mentioning that matter, the White Tiger also felt dissatisfied.

“There’s another possibility. That is, Qing Xuantian failed to enter the Outer World. That is why he never returned,” The Vermilion Bird suddenly said in a very sentimental manner.

At that moment, the Azure Dragon, the Black Tortoise and even the White Tiger grew silent. It could be seen that even though the White Tiger was complaining about it, he actually also possessed deep sentiments for Qing Xuantian.

“Seniors, I feel that with the strength that senior Qing Xuantian possessed, it is impossible that he died. Thus, seniors, please don’t worry about it,” Chu Feng spoke to console them.

“Chu Feng, we will definitely help you take care of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Furthermore, after taking care of him, we are also willing to continue to serve you. However, there is one thing that we must inform you of beforehand,” the Vermilion Bird said suddenly.

“Senior, please speak away,” Chu Feng said.

“If we were to encounter Qing Xuantian after entering the Outer World, we would like to follow Qing Xuantian. After all... we originally belonged to him,” The Vermilion Bird said.

“That’s true. Chu Feng, although this request is extremely excessive, we are, after all, Qing Xuantian’s Divine Power. It is only with us that his [Four Symbols Divine Power](#) will be complete,” The Black Tortoise said.

“What seniors said is very reasonable and fair. This junior naturally has no objection to it.”

“Actually, the assistance senior Qing Xuantian and four seniors have given me is already sufficient. This junior is extremely grateful. As such, how could I have such an extravagant hope?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Good. Straight and forward, that’s what I like about you. Since that’s the case, let’s leave now,” As the White Tiger spoke, he planned to leave this place.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Gate of Cultivation. “Wait a moment. Before leaving, we cannot forget about the most important thing,”

“Chu Feng, are you certain that you want to attempt that? Although your body’s constitution is special, the Natural Energies contained in that Gate of Cultivation have been completely transformed into cultivation. Thus, its berserk nature is extremely frightening. After all... it was a failure,” The Vermilion Bird said.

“That’s right. Qing Xuantian should not have kept that Gate of

Cultivation,” The White Tiger said.

The Four Symbols are the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise. They are all creatures in the chinese constellation.

Chapter 2092 – Rank Six Martial Emperor

“Seniors, I appreciate your kind intentions. However, I still wish to give it a try,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. He was already determined; no one would be able to change his mind.

At that moment, the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise all understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Thus, they looked to one another.

“Chu Feng, we know that you need power. However, you can gain power by slowly cultivating. You must not throw your life away for the sake of power,” After some deliberation, the Black Tortoise still continued to urge Chu Feng against it.

“You can’t say it like that. Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline is very special. Regardless of how berserk the cultivation was, it remains that it was formed from Natural Energy. I feel that Chu Feng should give it a try.”

“If he truly can’t withstand the Gate of Cultivation, it would not be too late for him to immediately withdraw from it. After all, with the constitution of Chu Feng’s body, even if he cannot withstand it, it would not necessarily mean that he will be killed. He should be able to get out in time,” Compared to the other three, the Azure Dragon approved of Chu Feng’s decision.

After the Azure Dragon said those words, the Vermilion Bird hesitated for a while before adding, “In the end, we are only giving our own suggestions. The person who gets to decide what to do will still be you, Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng, although I am urging you against it, if you have truly decided that you want to attempt it, we will still support you,” The White Tiger said.

“In that case, I will have to trouble seniors. Please wait a while for this junior,” As Chu Feng spoke, he entered the Gate of

Cultivation.

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered the Gate of Cultivation, the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise's expressions all changed. Involuntarily, they revealed expressions of worry.

However, the Gate of Cultivation soon started to dissipate. When the Gate of Cultivation dissipated completely, Chu Feng was standing there completely unharmed. He appeared exactly the same as compared before he had stepped into the Gate of Cultivation. The only difference was that Chu Feng's spirit appeared to be much better than before.

"Rank six Martial Emperor. Chu Feng, it seems you've succeeded."

Upon seeing the current Chu Feng, the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise all revealed expressions of joy.

They knew Chu Feng's cultivation the best. Earlier, he had only been a rank four Martial Emperor. However, he had become a rank six Martial Emperor now. Furthermore, that cultivation was when he was not using the Thunder Wings and Thunder Armor. This meant that Chu Feng's cultivation had increased. Furthermore, it had increased by two entire levels of cultivation. This most definitely meant that Chu Feng had succeeded.

Merely, upon thinking of how Chu Feng had managed to successfully obtain the power of the Gate of Cultivation without suffering any harm from it, the Four Great Divine Beasts were all astonished.

After all, they had accompanied Qing Xuantian to create all these gates, and knew how frightening that Gate of Cultivation was. It was indeed an incomplete gate. Even Qing Xuantian had not dared to set foot into it.

In other words, Chu Feng had accomplished what was impossible for even Qing Xuantian. As such, how could they not be astonished?

“Senior Qing Xuantian, you have truly helped this junior enormously. Rank six Martial Emperor; when added to my Thunder Wings and Thunder Armor, my cultivation would be that of a rank eight Martial Emperor.”

“Adding on my heaven-defying battle power, I am already able to fight against ordinary rank one Half Martial Ancestors now,” At that moment, Chu Feng was unable to conceal the joy on his face. When he became a rank four Martial Emperor, he had realized that it was extremely difficult for him to increase his cultivation. The reason for that was because the amount of Natural Energies he needed was truly too frightening.

However, Chu Feng had actually managed to increase his cultivation by two entire levels in succession. That came as an enormous surprise for Chu Feng. However, most importantly, the Natural Energies contained in Chu Feng’s dantian were not limited to that.

Based on the Natural Energies contained in Chu Feng’s dantian now, he was not far away from becoming a rank seven Martial Emperor. He must admit that the Gate of Cultivation was the greatest harvest he had gained from this journey.

“Great, great, great. Like this, even without us, you will be able to fight against that Dark Hall’s Hall Master,” The White Tiger said very excitedly. The four Divine Beasts were all feeling happy for Chu Feng.

Although they only possessed one true master, Qing Xuantian, in their hearts, they had followed Chu Feng for so long, and seen all that he had experienced, as well as how he invested himself for his friends. After understanding Chu Feng’s character and moral conduct, they unwittingly started to not only acknowledge Chu

Feng, but also to feel deep affection for Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts looked to one another. Then, as if they had come to a mutual understanding, they smiled simultaneously. Then, the four of them turned into four rays of light and entered Chu Feng's body.

"Chu Feng, let's go. Grab your weapon, and let's set off to retrieve our bodies."

The Four Divine Beasts said in unison. Even though they had already regained their freedom, it remained that they were still Secret Skills. In other words, they had become a special sort of Secret Skill that could freely enter and exit Chu Feng's body while also possessing their own awareness.

"Okay," Chu Feng nodded. He made a grabbing motion, and that Imperial Armament created by the fusion of the Fiend Gate and the Nameless Broken Sword flew into Chu Feng's grasp.

"Sure enough, it's a good sword," Holding onto the sword that was over two meters long, Chu Feng revealed an extremely dense smile on his face. Before the two Imperial Armaments were fused, Chu Feng had guessed that the fused Imperial Armament would be something other Imperial Armaments could not compare to. Looking at it now, it was as he had expected. This weapon was simply about to surpass the limits of Imperial Armaments.

"Chu Feng, you should give that sword a name. Right now, it belongs to you. It is a unique and unmatched Imperial Armament," The White Tiger said.

"Indeed, I should give it a new name. However, I feel that it is not the time to do so yet," Chu Feng said.

"Not the time? Why is that?" The Four Great Divine Beasts asked in confusion.

"I keep feeling that this Imperial Armament is lacking something," Chu Feng said.

“Lacking what?” The Four Great Divine Beasts became even more curious. The way they saw it, that weapon was simply perfect. It was no longer capable of being described as a top quality Imperial Armament. Yet, Chu Feng said that it was still lacking something? As such, they were truly curious as to what the sword was lacking.

“If I must say it, then I feel that this sword is missing a soul,” Chu Feng said.

“Missing a soul?”

“That’s right, it’s missing a soul. Before fusing them, both the Nameless Broken Blade and the Fiend Gate possessed their own spirituality.”

“Now that they are fused into one, their respective spirits are still present in this weapon. In other words, the weapon possesses two completely different spiritualities.”

“Most importantly, those two spiritualities are inhibiting one another and fighting one another over the rights to the weapon. This leads to the weapon being somewhat inadequate. I feel that... I should form a soul for it, a soul that could suppress those two spiritualities and rule over this Imperial Armament,” Chu Feng said.

“To put it simply, no matter how powerful this Imperial Armament is, it remains only an empty shell. Its true master has yet to enter it,” Chu Feng said.

Suddenly, the White Tiger spoke emotionally, “Heavens! Chu Feng, if you are truly capable of finding this soul you speak of, that Imperial Armament would no longer be an Imperial Armament anymore. Instead, it will become an Incomplete Ancestral Armament,”

“That’s right. Qing Xuantian has mentioned before that Incomplete Ancestral Armaments are weapons that possess actual

souls.”

“They are weapons that can speak,” The Black Tortoise and the Vermilion Bird added.

“Chu Feng, to tell you the truth, Qing Xuantian also attempted to forge the Nameless Broken Sword and the Fiend Gate into an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“He also attempted to create a soul. However, in the end, he failed. He felt that unless it was a Half Martial Ancestor-level soul, even if he successfully created a soul, it would still not end up becoming an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, and would only remain an Imperial Armament,” said the Azure Dragon.

Chapter 2093 – Searching For Physical Bodies

“So a Half Martial Ancestor soul is required? That is great to know. Merely, a soul of that level is extremely difficult to refine,” Chu Feng felt somewhat disappointed. Originally, he had been planning to quickly obtain materials to refine a soul for the weapon. However, it would seem that he could only drop the subject now.

“Actually, it’s a very simple task. After you enter the Outer World, there will definitely be a lot of Half Martial Ancestor-level experts. At that time, you can just use the souls of other cultivators,” The Azure Dragon said.

“Isn’t something like that too cruel?” The Vermilion Bird asked.

“What’s cruel about it? If you are to find evildoers and refine their souls, there would not be anything cruel about that. To them, this might serve as a kind of redemption,” The White Tiger refuted.

“In that case, wouldn’t it do if we were to use the Dark Hall Hall Master’s soul?” The Azure Dragon asked.

“That’s feasible. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master has done all sorts of evil. He is someone that should be killed.”

“Furthermore, he is a Half Martial Ancestor in the Holy Land of Martialism. As long as you are able to refine that man’s soul, you would be able to assimilate it into the Imperial Armament,” At that moment, both the White Tiger and the Vermilion Bird expressed their approval.

“No, I can’t do that,” However, Chu Feng shook his head at that exceptionally good proposal from the Four Great Divine Beasts.

“Why’s that?” The Four Great Divine Beasts asked in a confused manner.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master must be killed,” A ruthless expression flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes.

At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts all understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Thus, they said no more.

As for Chu Feng, he put that Imperial Armament away and then moved to leave this place.

However, before leaving, Chu Feng sealed this region with his own world spirit techniques.

He was afraid that someone might accidentally enter this place. As he had taken away all of the treasures here, this place was already empty.

If one were to enter this place, one would only be met with danger upon danger. Rather than having the people that enter this place in the future encounter those dangers, he felt that it was better to seal this place off to solve any future troubles.

Through the directions given by the Four Great Divine Beasts, Chu Feng came to find out what had happened back then.

It was as Chu Feng had guessed. Back then, the battle between Qing Xuantian and the Magma Emperor could be said to have been world-shocking. However, with the assistance of the Four Great Divine Beasts, Qing Xuantian had managed to suppress the Magma Emperor completely.

Just when Qing Xuantian was about to obtain absolute dominance in the battle, a spatial crack leading to the Eastern Sea Region had appeared at a place near where the two were fighting.

The Magma Emperor escaped into the spatial crack. As for Qing Xuantian, he followed after the Magma Emperor. Just like that, the two of them had shifted the battlefield from the Holy Land of Martialism to the Eastern Sea Region.

It was also in the Eastern Sea Region that the Four Great Divine Beasts had used their own bodies to seal off the Magma Emperor.

As for what had happened afterwards, Chu Feng already knew about all It.

.....

At Present, Chu Feng had arrived at the Eastern Sea Region, secretly flying above the sea waves.

Although Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast, no one was able to notice his existence. After all, with Chu Feng's current level of cultivation, he was already an existence akin to god in the Eastern Sea Region.

After making inquiries about the matters regarding Qing Xuantian, Chu Feng asked, "Seniors, I have another question in mind. I don't know if seniors might be able to tell me the answer to this question?"

"What is it? Ask away," The Four Great Divine Beasts said in unison. After chatting with Chu Feng, they began to like Chu Feng more and more, and were extremely fond of chatting with him. They would not hold anything back in their chats.

"This junior has obtained the martial skills senior Qing Xuantian left behind in the Gate of Martial Skills. Among them is an extremely powerful martial skill by the name of Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation."

"The Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation's power already surpasses those of Heaven Taboo Martial Skills. I wonder, does that Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation belong among Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, or could it be a legendary Divine Taboo Martial Skill?" Chu Feng asked.

"Haha, it turns out that that's actually what you are wondering about. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, how could Divine Taboo Martial Skills be that easily obtained? You're thinking too much," The White Tiger burst into loud laughter.

"In that case, it's only a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill then? But,

for a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill to be this powerful...” Chu Feng gasped in admiration.

To him, the matter concerning the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation was no longer a question of quality anymore. Instead, it had completely surpassed all other Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

It was just like that Imperial Armament that he had fused. It had already surpassed all other Imperial Armaments, and was no longer on the same level as them.

“No, the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation is neither a Divine Taboo Martial Skill nor a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill,” The Azure Dragon said.

“Then, what is it?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng became even more curious.

“It is an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. That Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation is also one of the most precious treasures that Qing Xuantian obtained from that Ancient Era’s remnant.”

“Back then, there was a complete record of that Taboo Martial Skill. According to the records, it is a Taboo Martial Skill, an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, that surpasses Heaven Taboo Martial Skills,” The Azure Dragon explained.

“In that case, above Heaven Taboo Martial Skills is not actually Divine Taboo Martial Skills, but instead the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

He had firmly believed in what Eggy said the entire time. Yet now, the Azure Dragon and the others had shattered the words Eggy had told him before.

“We, and even Qing Xuantian, are also uncertain about the specifics. However, we have heard about Divine Taboo Martial Skills. The Divine Taboo Martial Skills that we heard about are

legends. We do not even know whether or not they actually exist in this world.”

“Thus, we are certain about one thing: above Heaven Taboo Martial Skills should be the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. As for whether or not Divine Taboo Martial Skills actually exist or not, you will likely only find out about them after entering the Outer World,” The Azure Dragon said.

“This junior understands,” Chu Feng truly understood. The reason for that was because Eggy also mentioned that Divine Taboo Martial Skills were legends.

Thus, though incomparable to Divine Taboo Martial Skills, it was reasonable to say that Emperor Taboo Martial Skills were existences above Heaven Taboo Martial Skills. After all, Chu Feng had completely grasped that Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.

Suddenly, the Azure Dragon said, “Chu Feng, we’ve arrived. It’s right ahead.”

Hearing what the Azure Dragon said, Chu Feng immediately stopped in midair and turned his gaze downward.

Upon first glance, he noticed that the region of water down below him did not appear to be any different from the rest of the water in the sea. Other than the fact that the surrounding ten thousand mile radius was completely uninhabited, there was nothing strange about it.

Thus, Chu Feng activated his Heaven’s Eyes to inspect the sea.

Sure enough, with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng discovered the abnormality. However, he only discovered it after observing the sea carefully. If he had not observed it carefully, even Chu Feng would not have been able to tell.

“Senior Qing Xuantian’s world spirit techniques are truly exceptional.”

Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration. The reason why this place was so hard to discover was because there was a layer of concealment formations around it. Evidently, the only person who could set up that level of concealment formation would be Qing Xuantian.

“Splash~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted, and the water on the surface of the sea soared into the sky. Like a dragon, he entered the water.

Chu Feng’s speed was so fast that he instantly arrived at the seafloor, a place where no light could penetrate.

Even though this place was pitch-black, and not a single life form was present, Chu Feng was able to clearly see everything around him with his Heaven’s Eyes.

Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation that could undo the concealment formation. After some time and effort, Chu Feng soon succeeded.

“This!!!”

When the concealment formation was undone, Chu Feng was astonished.

Chapter 2094 – Enormous Change In Expression

The reason for that was because a grand formation sparkling with light had appeared before Chu Feng's eyes.

That spirit formation was enormous. Like a sun placed on the seabed, it brightly illuminated the deep sea.

Most importantly, there were five giant monsters contained within that grand spirit formation.

Among them, four were several hundred meters tall. They were, respectively, the physical bodies of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise.

However, there was another huge monster contained in the center of the four Divine Beasts. That huge monster was actually several thousands of meters tall, many times larger than even the physical bodies of the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Even if the four Divine Beasts combined, they would only amount to half the size of that giant monster. That monster possessed a humanoid appearance. Its entire body was blazing red in color. It possessed a very fierce appearance like that of a demon. It was truly frightening.

It was different from how monstrous beasts appeared to be frightening. Instead, it caused one to feel fear from the bottoms of their hearts.

“That is the body of the Magma Emperor.”

Right at that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts flew out from Chu Feng's body and stood to either side of Chu Feng. They were staring at the scene below.

“Is that the Magma Emperor? It's actually that enormous,” Chu Feng had actually managed to guess that that huge monster was

the Magma Emperor the moment he saw it. However, he was still astonished by it.

Even though it was only the corpse of the Magma Emperor, Chu Feng was able to imagine how frightening the Magma Emperor was when it had wreaked havoc in the Holy Land of Martialism. It was most definitely a true disaster.

“Don’t be afraid. After this much time has passed, it is most definitely dead now. Right now, it is nothing more than a corpse. It poses absolutely no threat,” The Azure Dragon said.

“Then, if I am to undo the spirit formation, will you all be able to fuse with your physical bodies and regain your cultivations?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” The Four Great Divine Beasts nodded.

“Since that’s the case, let’s begin,” After verifying it, Chu Feng started to undo the spirit formation. He was more impatient than anyone else to have the Four Great Divine Beasts regain their bodies.

After all, they were Divine Beasts, beings above monstrous beasts. They were existences not present in the current Holy Land of Martialism.

The spirit formation here was very exceptional. Even though ten thousand years had passed, it remained very difficult for Chu Feng to unseal it even with his current level of world spirit techniques.

As such, it took Chu Feng three entire days to set up the unsealing formation. After that spirit formation was activated, it took him two entire days to disable the grand sealing formation.

Logically, the spirit formation should have weakened by a lot after ten thousand years had passed. However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still needed such an enormous amount of effort to undo it. From that, it could be seen how exceptionally powerful that sealing spirit formation was.

Suddenly, Chu Feng clasped his hands together and shouted, “Condense blade!!!”

[Dazzling light emitted from his clasped hands](#). When Chu Feng extended his fingers, the dazzling light began to overflow from Chu Feng’s two fingers. The light formed into a two thousand meter-long blade of light.

Chu Feng waved the blade of light and sliced it at the grand sealing formation down below.

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, rumbling sprung up everywhere. Violent wind erupted. The seawater started flaring up.

“Scatter!”

Under that sort of frightening situation, Chu Feng’s sleeve waved lightly. Then, all of the abnormal signs happening in his surroundings disappeared. He had returned this place to its former tranquility.

When the flaring seawater returned to normal, Chu Feng’s line of sight was no longer blocked. At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts were so excited that their souls were trembling. To be separated from their physical bodies for so many years and having to survive as Secret Skills, that sort of depression and misery was something that only they understood.

And now, they were finally able to regain their physical bodies and live in their original forms again. Naturally, they would be filled with endless excitement and joy.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, four rays of light flew past. The Four Great Divine Beasts flew toward their respective bodies.

Due to the fact that the speed of the Four Great Divine Beasts was extremely fast, they raised violent waves in the seawater.

After the Four Great Divine Beasts entered their respective bodies, everything grew silent. When the violent waves in the seawater faded away, there was no sound in that region of water at all. It was frighteningly quiet.

However, Chu Feng was staring at the Four Great Divine Beasts' bodies the entire time. Furthermore, he was emitting an aura, the aura of nervousness, from all over him.

He was using his Heaven's Eyes to look. Thus, he was able to tell that the Four Great Divine Beasts were fusing with their bodies. However, it remained that they had been separated from their bodies for ten thousand years, and that they were no longer ordinary souls but instead survived as souls to Secret Skills. Thus, the fusion process was not that simple.

That was why Chu Feng was worried; he was worried that the Four Great Divine Beasts would fail.

“Seems like it's a success.”

Finally, the nervousness that Chu Feng was emitting faded away. In its place was an unconcealable joy.

“Roar~~~”

The very next moment, an ear-piercing roar was heard and the seawater started to rapidly boil.

It was the White Tiger. The White Tiger was the first to resurrect. After it resurrected, it flew toward Chu Feng. Pushing Chu Feng with its head, it rushed out from the seawater instantly.

“Haha, I've revived, I have finally been revived!”

After the White Tiger rushed out from the waters, it began to gallop in the air and roar nonstop. It was celebrating its rebirth.

“Half Martial Ancestor. That is an actual Half Martial Ancestor.”

As for Chu Feng, the smile on his face grew even wider. Standing on top of the White Tiger, he was able to clearly sense how

powerful a Half Martial Ancestor was.

In fact, he was even able to sense the legendary Ancestor-level martial power appearing in thin air and following the White Tiger's galloping with an inconceivable speed. It was as if it was ready to be used by the White Tiger at any moment.

This sort of sensation was simply wondrous. After all... it was a power above that of Martial Emperors.

Even though Chu Feng's battle power would also reach that level after using his various abilities, it remained that it was only his battle power, and not his actual cultivation. There was still... a difference between them.

“Pulalala~~~”

Right at that moment, another wave of water soared into the sky and pierced through the clouds.

“Roar~~~”

Soon, another roar could be heard. That roar was actually even more ear-piercing than the White Tiger's roar.

When the waves of water faded away, Chu Feng was able to see that an enormous cyan dragon was flying toward him. It was the Azure Dragon.

Immediately following the Azure Dragon, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise also flew out of the water.

Merely, when compared to the White Tiger and the Azure Dragon, their emergence was a lot more low-key; they did not let out intimidating roars.

However, even though they had emerged from the waters in a low-key manner, their excitement and joy were still uncontainable. After all, to be able to successfully fuse with their physical bodies was something extremely significant for them.

Rebirth. To them, it was simply a rebirth, a rebirth after ten

thousand years.

The Four Great Divine Beasts, led by the Azure Dragon, suddenly said to Chu Feng in an extremely grateful manner, “Chu Feng, thank you, thank you for giving us this opportunity to be reborn.”

“Heavens, the four of you are my seniors. Yet, you’re expressing your thanks to me, a junior. Wouldn’t this simply be akin to cursing my lifespan?” Chu Feng complained with a smile on his face.

“Haha. Boy, you don’t have to pretend. You’re feeling extremely pleased that we are expressing our thanks to you, right?” The White Tiger said with a beaming smile.

Although its body was enormous, and it possessed an extremely ferocious appearance, its current appearance was truly quite adorable. It was like a giant white cat.

“Speaking of it, I am feeling extremely pleased. Seniors, how about you thank me some more?” Chu Feng started to joke around.

“Haha, you wish. I have only ever thanked others once in my lifetime. There’s no twice to it,” The White Tiger laughed heartily. Even though the White Tiger was fond of laughter to begin with, Chu Feng had never seen it laughing this heartily. It could be seen that it was truly happy.

In fact, it was not only the White Tiger that was feeling very joyous. The Vermilion Bird and the Azure Dragon were also very happy. Furthermore, even the Black Tortoise, the individual who was always calm and unflustered, had an unconcealable smile on its face.

“Crap!” However, right at that moment when everyone was smiling and laughing happily, Chu Feng started to frown. His expression changed enormously. Then, he turned his alert gaze toward the sea.

If I’m not mistaken, he clasped his hands together, formed light,

held two fingers out from one hand and then the light went out top of his fingers forming an enormous blade of light...

Chapter 2095 – Magma Emperor

Seeing Chu Feng's expression, the Four Great Divine Beasts also frowned. They asked, "Chu Feng, what's wrong?"

"It's alive," Chu Feng said.

"What?" The Four Great Divine Beasts were confused.

"Snap~~~"

"Rumble~~~"

Right at that moment, a lightning strike suddenly flashed through the skies. Soon, the entire sky was covered with black clouds as a violent wind began to blow. In an instant, the area tens of thousands of miles in the sea around them was completely covered by the black clouds and violent winds.

"What is this?" At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts all turned their gazes down below. They were shocked to discover that an extremely frightening aura was being emitted from the sea below them.

"Alive, the Magma Emperor is alive!" Chu Feng shouted.

"Rumble, rumble~~~"

Right after Chu Feng's words left his mouth, four waves of water soared into the sky.

Those waves of water were no ordinary water. Even peak Martial Emperors would not be able to withstand those waves of water. The reason for that was because the water contained Ancestral-level martial power.

The four waves of water were aimed at the Four Great Divine Beasts. In an instant, those waves arrived before them.

"Humph."

However, the Four Great Divine Beasts only snorted coldly at the

sudden incoming attack. Without even lifting an arm, their bodies trembled slightly as they unleashed their own Ancestral-level martial power that directly shook away the four waves of water.

“Splash~~~”

Suddenly, the water below started to surge. Then, a huge monster flew out from the water. It was the Magma Emperor.

“It’s actually really alive. How could this be?”

Upon seeing the Magma Emperor alive and standing at the bottom of the sea down below, the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed alarmed expressions.

Even though ten thousand years had passed, they would never forget how fierce the Magma Emperor was. Although the Magma Emperor had been sealed by the Four Great Divine Beasts, it was mainly only sealed because Qing Xuantian had suppressed it.

And now, Qing Xuantian was not here. Thus, the Four Great Divine Beasts were lacking confidence in being able to take care of the Magma Emperor by themselves.

“Grumble, grumble~~~”

After the Magma Emperor appeared, the heat which its body emitted caused even the surging seawater down below to boil.

Not only that, even the sky turned fiery in color, and space itself started to distort. The frightening heat that was being emitted sealed off the entire area for several tens of thousands of miles around them, and no one could enter that sealed area.

The reason for that was because the heat was simply too fierce. Those below Martial Emperor-level cultivation would simply evaporate upon coming into contact with the heat.

Inferno. This region of several tens of thousands of miles had turned into an inferno.

“That’s the Magma Emperor?”

At that moment, Chu feng's gaze turned serious as it was fixed onto the Magma Emperor.

This existence before him was the Magma Emperor, the demon that had nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago.

Most importantly, this place was the Eastern Sea Region. The people closest to Chu Feng were in this place. Chu Feng could not allow this fellow to cause destruction here.

"Your grandmother's tits, you four little trash are actually still alive?" Suddenly, the Magma Emperor spoke. However, he spoke with profanity right away. Most importantly, that extremely ferocious and fiendish looking Magma Emperor actually had a childish voice. It was like a little child was swearing at others. Chu Feng was truly taken aback by it.

"Is that really the Magma Emperor?" Unable to help himself, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Four Great Divine Beasts.

"Indeed, that is the Magma Emperor. It's the Magma Emperor that all the powers in the Holy Land of Martialism were afraid of back then, the Magma Emperor that was planning to enslave all living things," The White Tiger spoke solemnly.

"Chu Feng, you must not be deceived by its voice. Perhaps it might not be very old, but it has harmed countless living beings. This thing before you is fully deserving of the title of demon," The Azure Dragon warned.

"So that's the case," After hearing those words, Chu Feng's gaze grew more serious as he looked to the Magma Emperor again.

A single Dark Hall's Hall Master was already thorny enough. Yet now, a Magma Emperor had appeared too. The pressure Chu Feng felt had doubled. After all, the Magma Emperor was an existence that even Qing Xuantian had failed to eliminate.

Yet, after carefully inspecting the Magma Emperor, Chu Feng's

cautious gaze started to change. It turned into one of pleasant surprise.

“Heh...” After that, Chu Feng actually started to laugh.

“Brat, what the fuck are you laughing at?!”

Instantly, the Magma Emperor became enraged. It had thought that Chu Feng would piss his pants in terror after surveying it. For that, it had deliberately unleashed its Half Martial Ancestor-level aura to intimidate Chu Feng.

After all, it had been sealed for ten thousand years. during that period of time, it had not managed to enjoy seeing humans in terror. As such, it wanted very much to feel that sensation again.

However, what was with this? After Chu Feng surveyed it, not only did he not reveal fear, he instead started to laugh. This greatly enraged the Magma Emperor.

At the same time, the Four Great Divine Beasts also turned their gazes to Chu Feng. They were also confused by how Chu Feng could laugh when faced with a great enemy like the Magma Emperor.

“Seniors, before this Magma Emperor was resurrected, I truly did not notice it.”

“However, now that it’s resurrected, I found out that its entire body is filled with treasures,” Chu Feng said.

“Brat, what the fuck are you talking about?”

“Do you fucking know who this Emperor is?!”

The Magma Emperor stared at Chu Feng angrily. It had truly never seen a brat that dared to speak with it so impudently.

Who was the Magma Emperor? It was an existence that everyone in the Holy Land of Martialism feared back then.

“Chu Feng, you must not be careless. That is the Magma Emperor,” The Azure Dragon warned.

“Seniors, I am not lying here. That Magma Emperor is truly a treasure. You all have just been resurrected. Thus, you should properly rest yourselves. There is no need for you all to trouble yourselves with taking care of it.”

“Just leave this Magma Emperor to me,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, what kind of nonsense are you talking about? That is the Magma Emperor, the actual Magma Emperor!” The White Tiger was astonished. To them, the Magma Emperor was extremely ferocious. After all, they were present in the bloodbath from back then.

Yet, Chu Feng actually looked down on the Magma Emperor, that enormously dangerous being, this much? It was truly unbelievable, and didn’t seem to be Chu Feng’s nature.

“Seniors, I am not joking around. Leave it to me. I have certainty in being able to take care of this Magma Emperor,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. When he spoke those words, he did not seem to be joking around. The reason for that was because his eyes were filled with confidence.

“Chu Feng, since you are already determined, we will not interfere.”

“However, I must warn you. Although your battle power is capable of fighting on par with Half Martial Ancestors, you remain only a Martial Emperor. Most importantly, that Magma Emperor is no ordinary Half Martial Ancestor.”

“Back then, Qing Xuantian was someone unparalleled against those of the same level of cultivation as him. Yet, we were needed to help him suppress that Magma Emperor,” The Azure Dragon warned solemnly. It wanted Chu Feng to know how powerful the Magma Emperor was.

“Understood,” Chu Feng smiled and nodded. Then, he began to

walk in the air towards the sea below.

How could Chu Feng not know about how ferocious the Magma Emperor was? If he didn't, he would not have panicked when the Magma Emperor was revived.

However now, Chu Feng dared to say those sort of words. Naturally, there was a reason why he was so confident.

Chapter 2096 – Chu Feng Vs. Magma Emperor

After seeing that Chu Feng was really walking toward the Magma Emperor to fight him alone, the Four Great Divine Beasts looked to one another and then began to move slowly toward the Magma Emperor and Chu Feng.

While they would not interfere with Chu Feng's battle, they would still act to save Chu Feng should he be in fatal danger; they would definitely not remain indifferent when Chu Feng was in fatal danger.

At that moment, Chu Feng was less than ten thousand meters away from the Magma Emperor. In fact, they were already very close in range with one another.

Chu Feng was able to clearly see the flames surging from the Magma Emperor's body. Those flames were demon-like as they made threatening gestures. That sort of sensation was something that one could only feel upon personally confronting the flames at close range.

Chu Feng was also able to sense the extremely frightening aura which the Magma Emperor emitted. Especially the heat it emitted; even though Chu Feng was a rank six Martial Emperor and possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, he still found it difficult to endure.

Sure enough, the Magma Emperor was extremely powerful, more powerful than any opponent Chu Feng had ever faced before. However, after Chu Feng stopped his footsteps, he said in a very calm manner, "Are you prepared to die?"

"Wait. Brat, do you not know the situation you are in now? Do you know who this Emperor is? Do you know what this Emperor has done?" The Magma Emperor was unable to accept Chu Feng

completely not placing it in his eyes. Thus, it spoke to question Chu Feng.

“I naturally know who you are. You’re the Magma Emperor that came from the Magma World ten thousand years ago. The Magma Emperor that wanted to enslave all living things,” Chu Feng replied.

“Brat, then this Emperor is even more confused. Since you know who this Emperor is, why would you dare to still continue to boast so shamelessly? Has your head been kicked by a donkey, or was it crushed by a door when you were younger?” The Magma Emperor asked in a confused manner.

“Heh... never would I have imagined that the grand Magma Emperor would actually possess a sense of humor,” After hearing what the Magma Emperor said, Chu Feng was unable to contain his laughter. Then, he said, “Magma Emperor, I know how powerful you are. However, regardless of how awe-inspiring you were back then, your era has already passed.”

“Today... I will end you and avenge the innocent lives you took ten thousand years ago.”

“Motherfucker! The hell is this?! Are all the human brats in this era capable of shooting off their mouths like you? A mere rank six Martial Emperor actually dares to boast of ending this great Emperor? Hahaha, you’re simply trying to kill me from laughter,” The Magma Emperor sneered. His laughter was filled with contempt toward Chu Feng.

“What? Are you saying that Half Martial Ancestors are so amazing that they can despise Martial Emperors?”

“Today, I insist on eliminating you, the so-called Magma Emperor, with my cultivation of a Martial Emperor.”

After Chu Feng said those words, his body shifted. Holding the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, he charged to attack the Magma

Emperor.

“Zzzzz~”

Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings emerged together. Instantly, his cultivation increased from rank six Martial Emperor to rank eight Martial Emperor.

“An increase in two levels of cultivations in succession? Seems like you’ve got some tricks. However, you’re still only a Martial Emperor. How could you possibly contend against this Emperor?”

Although the Magma Emperor was surprised by Chu Feng’s increase in cultivation, it still did not place Chu Feng in its eyes. Its body trembled, and then fireballs shot toward Chu Feng like a rainstorm.

The flames of those fireballs were no ordinary flames. They looked like magma, and contained Ancestral-level martial power.

As they flew toward Chu Feng, they caused the wind to whistle like a myriad of demons shouting war cries before conducting their massacre.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~”

Chu Feng was already prepared. His feet moved nonstop as he slashed with his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader. Boundless martial power turned into a whirlwind, forming a defensive wall that forcibly stopped the storm of fireballs the Magma Emperor had unleashed at him.

“Mn, that brat is actually able to withstand my grand Half Martial Ancestor-level attack with merely a Martial Emperor-level cultivation?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had managed to effortlessly block his attack, the Magma Emperor’s gaze shone with surprise.

Even though the attack he had unleashed earlier had only been made casually, and had not possessed actual destructive power, he

felt that, not to mention a mere rank eight Martial Emperor, even a thousand rank nine Martial Emperors would have been killed by his earlier attack.

“I got it. Your heaven-defying battle power surpasses that of ordinary Martial Emperors by two entire levels,” Suddenly, a serious expression and astonishment emerged in the Magma Emperor’s flickering gaze.

The reason why it was astonished was because Chu Feng possessed the capabilities to make it astonished. After all, it had seen all the strongest experts in the Holy Land of Martialism from ten thousand years ago. However, never had it seen someone with such a frightening battle power like Chu Feng.

In the moment when the Magma Emperor was astonished, Chu Feng had arrived before the Magma Emperor with his Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in hand.

“Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash.”

After Chu Feng approached the Magma Emperor, he immediately unleashed the Earthen Taboo; Firmament Slash and sent forth nine consecutive slashes.

The nine crimson slashes whistled past in succession. They were like the sickles that death gods carried on the way to take the life of a demon. Their might was extremely fierce.

“Humph.”

However, facing Chu Feng’s ferocious attack, the Magma Emperor only snorted coldly. It waved its enormous arm and brought forth a burst of wind. That wind was so strong that it directly dispersed Chu Feng’s Earthen Taboo: Firmament Slash.

Ancestral martial power. Although the Magma Emperor’s movement earlier might seem to be simple, it was a violent burst of wind formed with Ancestral-level martial power. Thus, it was extremely mighty.

“Half Martial Ancestor is truly thorny.”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown slightly. Although he possessed a battle power capable of contending against ordinary Half Martial Ancestors, it remained that he could only use Emperor-level martial power. He was still unable to use Ancestral martial power.

That might be the so-called boundary between cultivations. Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng’s battle power might be, he remained a Martial Emperor. As Chu Feng was a Martial Emperor, Ancestral-level martial power would not acknowledge him.

Thus, even though Chu Feng was capable of contending against rank one Half Martial Ancestors, he suffered from an enormous handicap in the essential qualities of his martial power.

“Haha, brat, so what if you possess an extremely powerful battle power? A Martial Emperor will always remain a Martial Emperor. You wish to defeat me? That is simply a pipe dream,” After easily blocking Chu Feng’s attack, the Magma Emperor was extremely proud of itself and started to openly mock Chu Feng.

Actually, after the Magma Emperor experienced Chu Feng’s battle power, it was a bit worried. After all, it had never seen someone like Chu Feng, someone who possessed such a frightening battle power, before.

However, after it blocked Chu Feng’s attack with its true power, it managed to regain its confidence. It felt that its worries were unnecessary, because Chu Feng was only a clown that was seeking his own humiliation when standing before him.

“Pipe dream? Are you certain of that?”

Chu Feng’s gaze narrowed. The confidence in his eyes did not decrease. Instead, he revealed an unfathomable smile.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, he once again brandished the Furious Coiling Dragon

Beheader that he held in his hand. His body shifted, and he turned into a ray of light that shot directly toward the Magma Emperor.

“You actually dare to still attack this Emperor after experiencing this Emperor’s strength? You are truly courting death here,” Seeing that Chu Feng was charging toward it, the Magma Emperor revealed a complicated gaze. There was not only anger and killing intent in its gaze. In addition to those was a special sort of sensation.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s actions most definitely trampled upon its dignity. As for that, it was something that the Magma Emperor could not tolerate.

Thus... it had already made a firm resolution to eliminate Chu Feng. Merely... it would not allow people that dared to trample upon its dignity to meet a simple death.

Chapter 2097 – Eternal Nightmare

Chu Feng rapidly approached the Magma Emperor. In the blink of an eye, he was already less than three thousand meters away from the Magma Emperor.

Logically, in a normal situation, Chu Feng would be able to kill his opponent using merely his oppressive might when at such a close distance.

After all, people of Chu Feng's level of cultivation were capable of unleashing their martial power with a single thought. They could call upon the wind and summon the rain, turning a range of ten thousand miles to utter destruction in an instant.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng's opponent was not an ordinary. Instead, it was the Magma Emperor, who was practically undefeated ten thousand years ago. It was a nightmare in the hearts of countless people ten thousand years ago. Even to this day, it was still the most frightening existence in the eyes of countless individuals from the Holy Land of Martialism.

Thus, Chu Feng's oppressive might was simply unable to injure the Magma Emperor in the slightest. Even if he were to instantly destroy everything within ten thousand miles, he would still not be able to cause the slightest bit of harm to the Magma Emperor.

Faced with an opponent like that, the only thing Chu Feng could do would be to fight it at close range using martial skills.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

When Chu Feng was less than two thousand meters away from the Magma Emperor, the Magma Emperor was shooting out balls of magma nonstop. Not only were those balls of magma extremely large, they were also very powerful. They were simply not comparable to the fireballs it had shot out earlier.

In that sort of situation, even though Chu Feng was holding the

Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, he was simply unable to approach the Magma Emperor.

In fact, Chu Feng had to use Taboo Martial Skills in order to ward off the Magma Emperor's attacks.

Although Chu Feng was indeed capable of withstanding the Magma Emperor's attacks after utilizing his various techniques, he was withstanding them with great difficulty.

From a single glance, the superior party and inferior party of the battle could be seen.

"This won't do. That Magma Emperor is too powerful. It's impossible for Chu Feng to be its match. We cannot continue to watch without doing anything," The White Tiger was unable to continue watching the battle. It was very worried that Chu Feng would be injured.

Chu Feng had utilized his Imperial Armament from the very beginning. However, the White Tiger knew that the Magma Emperor had an Imperial Armament in its body too. That Imperial Armament was extremely powerful.

The Magma Emperor had yet to use its Imperial Armament. However, he was already able to suppress Chu Feng. If the Magma Emperor were to use its Imperial Armament, one could very well imagine the consequences.

In fact, the way the White Tiger saw it, it was clear what the outcome of the battle would be. No matter how powerful Chu Feng was, he would still be no match for the Magma Emperor.

However, the Azure Dragon spoke to stop the White Tiger. "Wait a bit longer."

"If Chu Feng is really no match for the Magma Emperor, he would request our assistance." It was not that the Azure Dragon wasn't worried about Chu Feng. Rather, it wanted to respect Chu Feng's decision.

In its impression, Chu Feng was not a reckless individual. Since Chu Feng had decided to take on the Magma Emperor alone, it meant Chu Feng must have his own plan. The Azure Dragon also wished to see exactly what Chu Feng had in mind.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Magma Emperor suddenly extended its enormous hand and grabbed Chu Feng.

As the Magma Emperor possessed an enormous body, his hand was like a small mountain crushing down on Chu Feng. Immediately, Chu Feng vomited a mouthful of blood.

“Crap!” Seeing that scene, the Four Great Divine Beasts were all unable to contain themselves. They moved their enormous bodies and arrived before the Magma Emperor. They planned to attack the Magma Emperor to stop it.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted at them, “Seniors, please stay your hands!!!”

“.....” Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts were all startled. They looked to Chu Feng with confused expressions.

As for Chu Feng, even though his mouth was full of blood, he was smiling calmly. He turned around and said, “I can take care of him.”

“Brat, what did you say? If this Emperor is to just exert a slight bit of strength, I will be able to crush you. Yet, you dare to continue to boast like that?”

“Oh, I got it. You’re afraid that I will torment you. Thus, you want me to let you die quickly. That is why you’re deliberately provoking me.”

“Not bad, not bad. Brat, I must admit that you’re quite smart. Unfortunately, this Emperor is even smarter than you. Trying to plot a scheme against this Emperor? You’re destined to be suppressed by my intelligence,” The Magma Emperor mocked.

“Puu...” At that moment, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and spewed out a mouthful of, not blood, but loud laughter.

“I must admit that you’re a very amusing fellow. However, I will still eliminate you, since you’ve done too many evils and are not a good individual,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Your fucking grandmother! Brat, you truly have no shame, do you?” Seeing that Chu Feng dared to continue to insult it, the Magma Emperor was truly enraged. In anger, it said, “If I don’t teach you a lesson, you truly would not know the situation you’re in.”

Seeing that the Magma Emperor was furious, Chu Feng’s gaze grew sharp. With a cold tone, he said, “Magma Emperor, the person who doesn’t know what sort of situation they’re in is you.”

“Remember this moment. From this moment on, I, Chu Feng, will become your eternal nightmare.”

“What did you say?” The Magma Emperor asked furiously. It wasn’t that it was confused by what Chu Feng meant, but rather that it did not believe its ears.

In fact, it was not only the Magma Emperor. The Four Great Divine Beasts were also stupefied by Chu Feng’s words. While they had seen people that were unafraid of death, they had never seen someone court death like this.

“Ahhh!!!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his mouth and then bit down on the Magma Emperor’s indestructible finger covered in rising flames.

“Snap~~~”

Following Chu Feng’s bite, a shattering sound was heard. Chu Feng had actually managed to damage the Magma Emperor’s body with his teeth.

“Noo!!!”

After the Magma Emperor’s finger was bitten, its expression changed enormously. Furthermore, it let out an extremely ear-piercing snarl.

Its voice was so ear-piercing that it brought forth large waves of seawater on the surface of the sea down below and shattered the space itself.

That sudden, unforeseen event shocked the Four great Divine Beasts even more. They were utterly puzzled by what was happening.

It was only when the Magma Emperor raised its other hand and extended it toward Chu Feng that the Four Great Divine Beasts were stunned. A never-before-seen fear appeared in their eyes.

At that moment, the other hand that the Magma Emperor extended toward Chu Feng was extremely slow-moving. It looked as if it were stuck.

In fact, at that moment, the several thousand meter-tall enormous body of the Magma Emperor was trembling nonstop. Furthermore, the trembling was growing more and more obvious.

When the shattered space returned to normal, the fiery red sky returned to normal. The Magma Emperor’s powerful oppressive might was fading away.

“Brat! What did you do to me?!”

“Stop! Stop immediately! Stop for this Emperor right now!!!”

The Magma Emperor continued to snarl. Even though its voice was still so loud and resounding, it had lost its intimidating might from before.

Most importantly, the extremely confident and demon-like Magma Emperor’s bright, sun-like eyes were flickering nonstop. Panic and fear completely filled its eyes.

“Heavens! What is going on here?!”

At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts slowly recovered from their stunned states. They looked to one another as the shock in their eyes further increased.

The reason for that was because they were surprised to discover that not only had the Magma Emperor’s powerful oppressive might faded away, even its body covered with blazing flames was changing.

The fiery flames that had been like demon claws were disappearing. They were returning to its body. Soon, that magma-like fiery body started to grow dim.

Soon after that, the enormous body of the Magma Emperor no longer possessed the frightening magma or flames. Furthermore, there was no trace of life left in it. It stood there like an enormous rock humanoid.

Chapter 2098 – Rank Seven Martial Emperor

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, the Magma Emperor’s body lost its ability to continue to support itself, and crashed into the seawater.

“Splash~~~”

Enormous waves of water soared into the air. However, the Magma Emperor’s body did not actually sink into the seafloor. It was not because the Magma Emperor had done something. Rather, a layer of majestic and powerful golden spirit power was in the water supporting the body of the Magma Emperor.

It was Chu Feng. That was a spirit formation Chu Feng had set up. He had supported the Magma Emperor with his world spirit techniques.

Not only that, Chu Feng had released his mouth that was biting the Magma Emperor. Furthermore, he had escaped from the Magma Emperor’s grasp.

Chu Feng stood in midair, and his hands were changing nonstop. He was rapidly forming complicated hand seals. His speed was so fast that only blurs of his hands could be seen.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped his movement. He pointed to the Magma Emperor below and shouted, “Seal!”

“Rumble~~~”

In an instant, countless golden bodies of light filled with spirit power flew out from Chu Feng’s fingers. They were like chains that grew larger and larger. Each one of them became over a dozen meters thick. Then, they tightly covered the Magma Emperor’s body.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

After being shackled by the world spirit chains, cracks started to appear on the Magma Emperor’s indestructible body. It was like enormous stone starting to shatter.

“Bastard! What did you do to my body?! Exactly what did you do to me?!”

The Magma Emperor continued to snarl at Chu Feng. However, compared to before, its voice no longer possessed any intimidation, and had become many times weaker.

Even its fiendish gaze grew many times dimmer.

“Chu Feng, w-what is going on here?” At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts looked to Chu Feng with confused expressions.

They were truly curious as to how Chu Feng managed to force the Magma Emperor, an extremely ferocious existence in their memories, into such an state.

“Seniors, check out my current cultivation and you’ll know the answer,” Chu Feng said to the Four Great Divine Beasts.

“This... how could this be?!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed extremely wonderful expressions.

At that moment, while utilizing his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank eight Martial Emperor.

Instead, he was a rank nine Martial Emperor!!!

In other words, after Chu Feng canceled his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, the methods that increases his cultivation, his actual cultivation would remain that of a rank seven Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng was clearly only a rank six Martial Emperor earlier. This meant that Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were both astonished and excited. Unable to contain themselves, they asked, “Chu Feng, could it be... you’ve used that Magma Emperor’s body to reach a breakthrough?”

“Precisely. The Magma Emperor contained a very dense concentration of Natural Energies. To me, those Natural Energies were akin to cultivation treasures. As long as I am able to come in contact with the Magma Emperor’s body, I would be able to absorb those Natural Energies.”

“Furthermore, the Magma Emperor’s body is extremely special. Its body is completely different from ours. As long as I absorb and refine those Natural Energies, the Magma Emperor will lose control over its body. In fact, even its soul will be affected by it.”

“That is why I said to seniors that I will be able to handle the Magma Emperor by myself,” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

“So it was true!” After Chu Feng verified their guesses, the Four Great Divine Beasts revealed extremely excited expressions.

Thinking about it, how ferocious was the Magma Emperor? Back then, even when working together with Qing Xuantian, they were only able to seal the Magma Emperor and attempt to kill it by sealing it away for an extended period of time.

For that reason, the four of them had sacrificed their own physical bodies. If it wasn’t because of Qing Xuantian’s techniques, their souls would have been lost too. Without those techniques, they would not have been able to continue standing here.

Yet now, Chu Feng had actually managed to subdue the Magma Emperor by himself. Furthermore, when he subdued the Magma Emperor, Chu Feng’s cultivation was only that of a rank six Martial Emperor. This made it even more unimaginable.

“Could it be that this is what is meant by there being a weakness

to everything?” Overwhelmed with excitement, the Azure Dragon burst into laughter. At that moment, there was a greater sense of admiration in the Azure Dragon’s gaze as it looked to Chu Feng. It truly understood what Chu Feng had schemed.

Chu Feng’s scheme was something that even the Azure Dragon felt astonished by.

“Bullshit! You’re spouting bullshit!!” Suddenly, the Magma Emperor snarled furiously. It evidently could not accept Chu Feng’s statement.

“Magma Emperor, you are indeed very powerful. However, regardless of how powerful you are, you remain only a Son of Magma. To me, Sons of Magma are only cultivation treasures. Thus... you are destined to be restrained by me.”

“However, rest assured, I have said before that I will give you an eternal nightmare. Thus, I will not kill you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the Imperial Armament sword from his Cosmos Sack.

“Chu Feng, could it be that you want to....” Seeing that Imperial Armament sword, the Four Great Divine Beasts revealed even more wonderful expressions in their gazes. They had already realized what Chu Feng planned to do.

“Brat, what are you planning to do to this Emperor?” At that moment, the Magma Emperor had started to panic completely. Even though it was still pretending to be calm, its flickering gaze had betrayed it.

The Magma Emperor had always been extremely confident. However, when facing the current Chu Feng, it was filled with fear.

As matters stood, it was stunned to discover that the brat before it was simply someone that could not be judged with common sense. He was a brat that possessed powers that surpassed one’s imagination.

With merely a single bite, he had completely sucked all of the power in its body dry.

Then, with a mere spirit formation, he had bound its body. Even its soul was restricted.

And now, even though it was deemed to be an absolute genius in the Magma World, the Magma Emperor was nothing more than a sheep waiting to be slaughtered when before Chu Feng. As such, how could it not panic?

“I am going to make you the soul of this sword,” Chu Feng said as he raised that Imperial Armament.

At the moment the Magma Emperor had been revived, Chu Feng had truly felt fear. After all, the Magma Emperor’s ferociousness was akin to a legend.

However, after he carefully inspected the Magma Emperor, Chu Feng became secretly delighted. It was as he had said from the very beginning; the Magma Emperor’s entire body was filled with treasures.

Firstly, the Magma Emperor’s physical body was a cultivation treasure that Chu Feng could absorb and refine.

Chapter 2099 – Incomplete Ancestral Armament

“I am also not frightening you.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he suddenly tossed the Imperial Armament sword he held downward. “Snap,” the sword pierced into the Magma Emperor’s forehead.

Then, Chu Feng clasped his palms together and shouted with a low voice, “Assimilate.”

“Buzz~~~”

In an instant, the spirit formation that bound the Magma Emperor shone much brighter, illuminating the surrounding area like a bright sun.

“Ahhh~~~”

Instantly, the Magma Emperor let out a painful scream of grief.

Miserable. Its current state was truly miserable. Chu Feng’s spirit formation was not a simple weaponry refinement formation. Rather, it was refining the Magma Emperor’s soul.

If Chu Feng wanted to successfully assimilate the Magma Emperor’s soul into the Imperial Armament sword, he would have to refine it, forge and transform it.

Else, if the Magma Emperor’s soul were to be allowed to assimilate into the Imperial Armament sword as a complete entity, it would definitely not obey Chu Feng, and might even use the strength of the weapon to attack Chu Feng. At that time, the gains would not make up for the losses.

However, this sort of refinement, forging and transformation process was extremely cruel. After all, the Magma Emperor’s soul was an actual living soul, and not something that Chu Feng had created.

If it were any other person, Chu Feng would definitely not have the heart to do such a thing. However, as it was the Magma Emperor, Chu Feng was capable of being ruthless.

On their way here, Chu Feng had inquired of the Four Great Divine Beasts about what had happened ten thousand years ago, and came to know about the various crimes that the Magma Emperor had committed.

Although that Magma Emperor possessed an amusing temperament and a childlike voice, it was most definitely vicious and merciless. In fact, it was simply ruthless and heartless.

The lives lost at its hands were too many to count. It would not even spare newborns. As long as it wished to kill them, it would kill anything before it. Wherever it went, it would either force the people to submit to it or leave behind a bloodbath.

Even though ten thousand years had passed, the crimes the Magma Emperor had committed were still unpardonable. Chu Feng did not plan to kill it. Instead, he planned to forge its soul as its punishment.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

Soon, that Imperial Armament sword started to tremble. As it trembled, its boundless powers started to wreak havoc through its surroundings. Once again, that entire region was filled with frightening darkness.

This time around, it was not caused by the might of a martial expert. Rather, it was caused by a weapon.

That sort of situation persisted for ten entire days and nights. After ten days and nights passed, the sword stopped trembling, and the Magma Emperor stopped letting out anguished wails.

However, the aura emitted by the sword was now much more frightening than the aura it had emitted ten days ago. The power that was wreaking havoc through the surroundings was no longer

Emperor-level martial power. Instead, it had become Ancestral-level martial power.

It was not only its aura that had changed. The appearance of the sword itself had also changed.

The entire sword had become blazing red in color. Magma-like veins were flowing through it and the sword was also emitting roasting hot flames. It was truly extremely domineering.

“Snap... snap... snap...”

“Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~”

Suddenly, the Magma Emperor’s body shattered and fell into the sea. Slowly, the shattered pieces began to sink.

Its shattered body pieces were like stones now. There was nothing special about it anymore now that the Magma Emperor had died. At least, its physical body had been completely destroyed.

However, the sword was still floating in midair above the surface of the water. The fiery aura emitted by the sword caused the surface of the water to boil and the once ice-cold seawater had already become boiling hot water.

“Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Chu Feng... you’ve succeeded. You’ve actually succeeded.”

“That is most definitely an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. That aura, it most definitely surpasses that of Imperial Armaments.”

The Four Great Divine Beasts spoke in succession. At that moment, they were bustling with life and filled with endless excitement.

After all, even for them, this was the first time that they were seeing an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Furthermore... that was something that Chu Feng had personally refined.

Chu Feng had once again accomplished what even Qing Xuantian was unable to accomplish.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, “Seniors, step back!”

After Chu Feng’s shout was heard, an invisible burst of power suddenly pushed the Four Great Divine Beasts aside.

While that power was very strong, it was also very gentle. That power managed to push the Four Great Divine Beasts a distance of hundreds of thousands of meters away.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had used his power to push the Four Great Divine Beasts away.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament suddenly waved itself.

With that slash, a beam of flame was shot forth from the Incomplete Ancestral Armament. It was aimed at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

However, Chu Feng had already dodged to the side. Even though the attack from that Incomplete Ancestral Armament was extremely fast, it was unable to land on Chu Feng. Chu Feng had dodged it easily.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

However, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament did not just stop right there. Instead, it slashed toward Chu Feng repeatedly. At that moment, soaring flames filled with a powerful might covered the entire sky. Those beams of flames were also leaving enormous whirlpools in the seawater down below.

“Chu Feng, you think yourself clever, eh? Did you think that after refining this Emperor’s body and putting this Emperor’s soul into this weapon, you would be able to make this Emperor submit

to you? You are truly overestimating yourself.”

“Even now, this Emperor is capable of killing you,” Suddenly, the Magma Emperor’s voice sounded from the Incomplete Imperial Armament.

“Crap! Chu Feng’s refinement failed. The Magma Emperor’s soul is still there. Furthermore, it is controlling that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts’ different colored faces [all turned somewhat pale](#). At that moment, they all started to panic. The reason for that was because that outcome was something that none of them had expected.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng stopped dodging the incoming flames. He stood in midair motionlessly, and allowed an enormous beam of flame to sweep through the air and toward his body.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Quickly, dodge it!!!”

Chu Feng’s action caused the Four Great Divine Beasts’ complexions to turn green and they began to shout at Chu Feng hysterically.

The reason for that was because they were able to clearly sense the might contained in that beam of flame. It was a power that surpassed rank one Half Martial Ancestors. Even they would not be able to withstand it.

However, just when the Four Great Divine Beasts were panicking, Chu Feng extended his right hand and grabbed that beam of flame.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded, and flames began to flutter about in all directions, swallowing the entire surrounding region.

However, at that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts were

dumbstruck.

Through the screen of flames, they were able to see that Chu Feng had managed to block that beam of flame with his hand.

Even though violent flames covered him and were attacking him nonstop, the flames were unable to even burn Chu Feng's clothes.

"I nearly forgot that Chu Feng's actual cultivation is that of a rank seven Martial Emperor now. Using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his cultivation is that of a rank nine Martial Emperor. Even though he is still only able to exercise control over Emperor-level martial power and not Ancestral-level martial power, his battle power is already capable of contending against rank two Martial Ancestors."

At that moment, hope finally emerged on the faces of the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Even though the Incomplete Ancestral Armament controlled by the Magma Emperor's soul was very powerful, Chu Feng was not weak either.

"Roar~~~"

Suddenly, an ear-piercing roar resounded through the region. Then, surging flames emitted from the sword nonstop.

Soon, the surging flames took a humanoid appearance. It was over a thousand meters tall. It had the appearance of the Magma Emperor.

"Brat, you want me to serve you? You are simply dreaming. Today, this Emperor shall use the body of your weapon to dismember you into ten thousand pieces and leave you with a miserable death."

After taking on humanoid form, the Magma Emperor charged toward Chu Feng. Its killing intent was overflowing as it covered the entire region with flames.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s body shifted. With lightning speed, he charged directly toward the Magma Emperor.

The Magma Emperor extended its hand to grab Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng’s speed was truly too fast. Thus, it did not manage to grab Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng managed to approach the Magma Emperor. He raised his fist and shot an explosive punch at the Magma Emperor’s chest.

“Boom~~~”

As the punch landed, blazing flames were knocked flying and the Magma Emperor’s enormous body began to sink into the seawater.

“Since you are unwilling to obediently submit to me, I’ll have to beat you into submission.”

Chu Feng’s eyes were flickering with lightning as he fixed them on the seawater. After he said those words, his body shifted again. With a lightning fast speed, he charged into the deep sea.

How could a white tiger turn pale if it’s already white? Xima: Tigers have stripes that are black. Those black stripes turned white.

Chapter 2100 – The Truth Of What Happened Back Then

“Splash~~~”

After Chu Feng and the Magma Emperor fell into the sea, the sea started rolling with massive waves, and steam rose up from the sea.

The water in the sea was boiling and drying up. The speed with which the seawater was drying up was extremely fast. In merely a short moment, the bottomless sea water in that region had completely disappeared.

The water had been evaporated. It was completely evaporated by the frightening heat that the Magma Emperor was emitting.

At that moment, Chu Feng and the Magma Emperor once again reemerged.

However, regardless of how powerful the Magma Emperor was, it could only lie on the dried up seabed and allow itself to be punched by Chu Feng unceasingly.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

One punch, two punches, ten punches, a hundred punches...

The speed of Chu Feng’s fist was not fast at all. One could see the entire movement of every one of his fist strikes. However, the Magma Emperor was unable to dodge them.

Furthermore, Chu Feng’s fists were extremely powerful. With each punch, the energy ripple from Chu Feng’s punch would cause the distant seawater to be pushed aside. With that, not a single drop of water from the surrounding sea was able to enter that area.

Furthermore, the area in which there was no water grew larger and larger.

Even though they were clearly deep in the sea, it now looked like they were in a vast ravine in the middle of the sea. If ordinary people were to see this scene, they would definitely find it extremely difficult to accept, and feel that they were dreaming.

However, to the Four Great Divine Beasts, this was very normal. At Chu Feng's level of cultivation, he could erase all living things inferior to him in a ten thousand miles perimeter with a single thought.

Furthermore, all of Chu Feng's fist strikes contained boundless power. To be able to push back the vast seawater was merely a small token to his might.

However, that was not the main focus of the Four Great Divine Beasts. They were mainly focused on the Magma Emperor.

As Chu Feng's ordinary and simple punches landed on the magma Emperor's body, the Magma Emperor's body began to dissipate. Its powerful aura also grew weaker and weaker.

At the same time, Chu Feng's fists were interweaved with his world spirit power that continuously assailed the Magma Emperor's body.

The reason for that was because the Magma Emperor's body was no longer an ordinary body. Instead, it was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. If Chu Feng wanted to subdue it, his world spirit power would be of great assistance.

“Bastard! You despicable human! You're actually trying to forcibly control this Emperor! Don't you think you can succeed!!!” Seeing that it was on the verge of collapse, the Magma Emperor let out a roar of irreconciliation.

“Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise, are the four of you planning to serve this brat too?!”

“This brat is vicious and merciless, despicable and shameless. If the four of you serve him, you are utterly foolish.”

“I will give you all a chance to break free from your foolishness. Join me and help me kill him! We will become the rulers of the Holy Land of Martialism together! We shall take care of those despicable bastards!” Surprisingly, the Magma Emperor, sensing that it was about to be subdued, actually began to plead for help from the Four Great Divine Beasts.

“Magma Emperor, has your head gone bad after being sealed away for ten thousand years?”

“You’re actually trying to request our help? How shameless could you be?”

The Four Great Divine Beasts mocked. They were enemies with the Magma Emperor, and had tried to kill each other in the past. Furthermore, for the sake of sealing away the Magma Emperor, they had nearly sacrificed themselves.

How could they possibly be willing to help the Magma Emperor to take care of Chu Feng now? To them, that request from the Magma Emperor was simply a ridiculous joke.

“The ones with their heads gone bad are you all! You four foolish things! You’ve already been abandoned by Qing Xuantian, yet you’re still attaching yourselves to the despicable humans! Are you all beings that will die the moment you leave humans?!” The magma Emperor snarled.

“What did you say?! Say it again?!” Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts’ expressions immediately changed. Unprecedented anger emerged in their eyes.

“Magma Emperor, what sort of nonsense are you spouting?” At that moment, Chu Feng stopped his attacks.

Even though he was declaring that the Magma Emperor was babbling nonsense, he had a feeling that the Magma Emperor

should know about something. Else, there was no reason for it to say something like that.

“Heh, brat, seems like you’re interested, eh? If I tell you the filthy things that Qing Xuantian has done and expose his true identity, you’ll release me, what do you think about that?” Said the Magma Emperor.

“You do not have the power to haggle with me,” Chu Feng raised his fist and said coldly.

“Yoh, you’re playing this trick with this Emperor? Did you think that this Emperor would be scared of you?” The Magma Emperor laughed mockingly. It seemed that it was truly not afraid.

“Haha, forget about it. This Emperor is someone that takes pleasure in being benevolent, and is unwilling to see those four dunces being fooled for their entire lives. I might as well tell you all about the truth of what happened back then.”

“However, brat by the name of Chu Feng, listen carefully. This Emperor is going to say these things voluntarily. It is not because I am afraid of your threats,” The Magma Emperor declared.

Then, it said, “Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise, the four of you listen carefully. Back then, Qing Xuantian used various methods to separate you all from his body and turned you all into independent life-forms, but not for your sakes. Instead, it was for his own sake.”

“The reason for that is because he discovered a body constitution even more powerful than the Four Symbols Divine Body. If he wanted to gain complete control over that constitution, he had to remove you all from his body.”

“Thus, when the four of you were rejoicing in the fact that you possessed your own bodies and were able to live in this world with freedom, Qing Xuantian was even more overjoyed than you all. He was rejoicing at the fact that he had finally managed to cast the

four of you burdens off of him, so that he could obtain an even more powerful Divine Body,” said the Magma Emperor.

“Nonsense! You’re simply spouting bullshit!” The White Tiger snarled.

“Magma Emperor, that lie if yours is too far-fetched, no?” The Azure Dragon said angrily.

“Lie? Haha, are you all still deceiving yourselves? Divine Bodies are granted by the heavens. One’s Divine Body and one’s master know each other extremely well. Only by having confidence in one another will one’s Divine Body be able to increase in strength with oneself.”

“As for you all, since you’ve left Qing Xuantian, exactly what could you accomplish now? Exactly what achievement could Qing Xuantian accomplish after losing you all?”

“Think about it yourselves. To separate you all from his body is something that would only have detriments, and absolutely no benefits to Qing Xuantian. Yet, why did he do that?”

“Was it so that he could give you all lives and freedom? So that you could fight alongside him? That is what you call bullshit. That is what you call lies. He was merely fooling you four idiots.”

“What Qing Xuantian sought was the path of martial cultivation. He wanted to become more powerful. Although the four of you are very powerful, you all are too weak when compared to the Divine Body that he desired,” The Magma Emperor said.

“A bunch of nonsense. We followed Qing Xuantian the entire time. We knew all that he had experienced. There was simply no special constitution or Divine Body that tempted him,” The White Tiger said.

“The four of you have followed him the entire time. However, you are not him. Is there a need for Qing Xuantian to tell you all that he had discovered? Was there a need for him to tell you all and

consult with you all when he discovered a new constitution and gained the thought to discard you four?”

“If he were to truly tell the four of you, would you all have been willing to separate from his body? Would the four of you, the Four Symbols Divine Body, be willing to be replaced by another Divine Power?” The Magma Emperor asked.

“No, I don’t believe you, you’re lying,” The White Tiger snarled even louder as it began to lose control over its state of mind.

The Vermilion Bird, Azure Dragon and Black Tortoise’s expressions were also ugly. They were all affected by the Magma Emperor’s words.

Chapter 2101 – Magma Emperor Sword

“Even if you all refuse to believe me, it remains the truth. Qing Xuantian is a through and through despicable and vile individual. He is a hypocrite that has done all sorts of evil behind people’s backs.”

“Our world and this world is separated by a boundary energy. Under normal circumstances, it would simply have been impossible for me to come to this world. Do you all know how I managed to get here? It was precisely Qing Xuantian that helped me get here.”

“You all must be wondering why Qing Xuantian would help me come to this world, right? Actually, the reason is very simple. It’s because the Divine Body that he wanted was sealed in our world. And I, I was able to help him obtain it.”

“I handed over the sealed Divine Body to Qing Xuantian, and he helped me get into the Holy Land of Martialism so that I could become its ruler. That was the condition of the exchange between Qing Xuantian and I.”

“However, never would I have imagined that Qing Xuantian was such a despicable man. He actually decided to go back on our agreement, and started to attack me after obtaining the special constitution from me. He is truly despicable to the extreme.”

“Yet, you all still deem him to be a hero. Pah! He is nothing more than a hypocrite!!!” The Magma Emperor shouted furiously.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the Four Great Divine Beasts had all grown silent upon hearing what the Magma Emperor said.

Their beast faces were growing more and more ugly. Complicated and distressed expressions filled their gazes. In fact, even their enormous bodies were trembling. They had truly believed what

the Magma Emperor said.

“A bunch of nonsense. Senior Qing Xuantian is not someone that you can slander.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng smashed his fist into the Magma Emperor. Then, continuous fists began to land onto the Magma Emperor's body.

“Damned brat, you're planning to eliminate this Emperor after hearing what you wanted to hear, is that it?”

“Sure enough, you are the same as that Qing Xuantian. You humans are the most despicable creatures.”

“To make you all slaves is an act of charity to you all. You should all be killed. All you humans should be erased from this world.”

“Hey! Four Symbols Divine Body, why are you all still standing there? Quickly, come and help me; help me eliminate this brat. Could it be that you all are still not tired of being taken advantage of by Qing Xuantian, and want this brat to take advantage of you too?” The Magma Emperor snarled repeatedly.

However, the Four Great Divine Beasts refused to answer it. They were completely silent. It was as if they had experienced an enormous shock.

“Fools. You all are truly foolish. Go and die. With how foolish you all are, only death awaits you.”

“You all will not be able to live for much longer. You were originally a Divine Body, and not actual lives. You all are merely a part of Qing Xuantian that he abandoned. How could you possibly be able to live for long?”

“You all think that you've become Divine Beasts? A bunch of bullshit! You all are inferior to monstrous beasts, ferocious beasts and even the lowliest animals.”

“You all will not be able to live for much longer. If you refuse to

work with me, I will not tell you all the method to extend your lifespans. Soon, you all will die,” Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts were ignoring it, the Magma Emperor started to insult them.

“Shut your mouth,” Chu Feng’s fists grew more and more heavy. His punches bombarded the Magma Emperor’s body of flame into disintegration.

Finally, the Magma Emperor’s enormous body was finally completely destroyed. The dispersed flames returned to that Incomplete Ancestral Armament sword.

Chu Feng grabbed at that Incomplete Ancestral Armament sword.

“Boom~~~”

Upon holding the sword, the sky started to change color, and an explosion sounded.

“Rumble~~~”

Following that, a pillar of flame shot toward the sky from the sword Chu Feng held. It pierced through the clouds and straight into the endless skies.

Soon, the clouds were evaporated. Even the vast and boundless sky was burned blazing red.

“This is...” At that moment, the Four Great Divine Beasts that were feeling very depressed were also attracted by that scene. They opened their mouths and said, “Forced submission.”

That’s right. Chu Feng was forcibly making that Incomplete Ancestral Armament submit to him. When a weapon was unwilling to submit, a cultivator could, if he or she possessed sufficient strength, use their power to force the weapon to surrender to them.

It was an invisible battle, a battle that bystanders could not see.

However, Chu Feng was actually using his powers to teach the Magma Emperor within the Incomplete Ancestral Armament. He was forcing it into submission.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, loud explosions sounded from the skies nonstop. Turning toward the sky, the Four Great Divine Beasts discovered that the flames that were shot into the sky were flowing back down with extremely rapid speed.

Finally, the flames gathered in one place and turned into a pillar of flame again. The pillar of flame struck down from the heavenly dome and poured into the Incomplete Ancestral Armament Chu Feng held in his hand.

Afterwards, the sky suddenly became tranquil. Even the Four Great Divine Beasts held their breaths.

The reason for that was because that extremely ferocious Incomplete Ancestral Armament, although still emitting the Magma Emperor’s fiery flames, did not possess any trace of hostility toward Chu Feng.

“Splash~~~”

After a while, loud rumbling sounds began to be heard in that tranquil region. The rumbling noise grew louder and louder.

It was the sound of water!!!

It was the waves. Whilst the seawater in the area had been evaporated, the seawater in the surrounding region had not. At that moment, they were crashing toward that empty region with a might seemingly capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng brandished the Incomplete Ancestral Armament he held in his hand. His body subsequently began to

rotate.

“Rumble~~~”

In the blink of an eye, a blade ray covered in flames was shot into the surroundings like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses.

That blade ray was so powerful that it evaporated the massive incoming waves and beat back the following waves.

“Chu Feng, it’s a success? You’ve actually managed to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament?” The Four Great Divine Beasts landed beside Chu Feng. They were still all looking at the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with gazes filled with disbelief. At that moment, it was as if they had forgotten all the unpleasantness from earlier.

“Mn. However, it remains that this Incomplete Ancestral Armament is controlled by the Magma Emperor. As such, I am only able to forcibly subdue it and make it recognize me as its master, but cannot make it enter absolute submission,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, not only did you manage to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament, you also managed to subdue the Magma Emperor?” Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts revealed even more marvelous gazes.

“No, it cannot be considered submitted. It is unwilling to serve me. It is merely being suppressed by my power,” Chu Feng said.

“How could it not be considered to be the case? It is going to be used by you. Thus, it is yours now,” The White Tiger said excitedly, “Chu Feng, you should name that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“I’ve already thought of a name. It’ll be called the Magma Emperor Sword,” Chu Feng looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts and said, “Seniors, what do you all think about the name?”

“Magma Emperor Sword?!”

The Four Great Divine Beasts were all startled to hear that name. After all, the Magma Emperor possessed a special significance to them.

However, when they saw the Magma Emperor Sword that was emitting fiery flames acting so obediently in Chu Feng’s hands, they smiled at ease and replied in unison, “That is a great name.”

“It’s decided then,” Chu Feng put the Magma Emperor Sword away.

“Chu Feng, I had originally thought that I knew you extremely well. However, never did I expect that I still do not know you well enough. Boy, you have truly astonished us,” The Azure Dragon said. The other three Divine Beasts also nodded their heads.

“Seniors, if you all are to praise me like this, I will grow conceited,” At that moment, Chu Feng was also very happy and smiling brightly.

However, he was secretly using his Heaven’s Eyes to carefully examine the Four Great Divine Beasts’ bodies.

Chu Feng did not consider the words spoken by the Magma Emperor earlier to be complete nonsense. Actually... Chu Feng trusted the Magma Emperor’s words slightly.

Actually, the reason why Chu Feng had allowed the Magma Emperor to finish saying those things was precisely because he wanted to know about those things.

The reason for that was because he was also very curious as to why Qing Xuantian had decided to separate the Four Great Divine Beasts from his body.

After all, Divine Powers were powers that countless people yearned for in their dreams. If one could gain great control over one’s Divine Power, it would become an extremely strong assisting power.

Over the years, Chu Feng had seen many Divine Bodies. However, he felt that Qing Xuantian's Four Symbols Divine Body was the strongest he had ever seen.

The reason for that was because the Divine Bodies of other people were generally only a single sort of power. However, the Four Symbols Divine Body should possess four different powers; being respectively strength, speed, defense and healing. Those four powers could simply be said to be perfect.

There shouldn't be a reason for Qing Xuantian to renounce such a powerful Divine Power.

Unless... what the Magma Emperor said was the truth.

Chapter 2102 – Moon Immortal Vs. Hall Master

If what the Magma Emperor said was the truth, then, as the Four Great Divine Beasts were born so long ago, they should be near the end of their lifespans too.

That was precisely what Chu Feng wanted to determine with his Heaven's Eyes.

However... after Chu Feng examined them with his Heaven's Eyes, he did not discover any abnormalities; he did not discover any issues with the bodies of the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Thus, Chu Feng was bewildered; he didn't know whether what the Magma Emperor had declared was the truth or not. Thus, he was unable to ascertain whether Qing Xuantian had deceived the Four Great Divine Beasts, nor could he be certain that it was Qing Xuantian that had released the Magma Emperor.

The truth was unable to be determined.

“Chu Feng.”

“Although your actual cultivation is that of a rank seven Martial Emperor, the current you is capable of fighting against rank two Half Martial Ancestors.”

“On top of that... with that Magma Emperor Sword, the Dark Hall's Hall Master is definitely not going to be a match for you.”

“Thus, it is time for you to return to the Holy Land of Martialism to settle everything,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said to Chu Feng.

They were very happy, and had forgotten about what the Magma Emperor had declared. They had managed to completely break free from their depressed state of mind.

Although the delight that they revealed originated from their

hearts, Chu Feng felt that they were deliberately hiding their sadness from earlier.

Actually, Chu Feng was capable of understanding it. As they were a Divine Body, they also knew that Qing Xuantian should be inseparable from them. Yet, Qing Xuantian had decided to separate from them.

Furthermore, even though it would be very difficult for the Four Great Divine Beasts to live after losing their physical bodies to seal the Magma Emperor, Qing Xuantian was totally capable of bringing them away with him after turning them into Secret Skills.

After all, he was capable of creating bodies for them before. Thus, he would most definitely be able to recreate bodies for the Four Great Divine Beasts. There was no reason for him to seal them into various locations.

In short, if Qing Xuantian had truly wanted to bring the Four Great Divine Beasts away with him, he would have been totally capable of doing so. However, he had left them behind. This meant that there must have been a reason for him to do so.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were no fools. Thus, they had naturally also managed to guess why Qing Xuantian wanted to abandon them.

Merely... Qing Xuantian was the person that they trusted the most. As such, they did not wish to raise doubts about Qing Xuantian.

The reason for that was because they would still be willing to serve Qing Xuantian should they be able to return to his side. To them, Qing Xuantian was their true master.

Thus, this matter was rather complicated.

Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts did not mention the matter, Chu Feng did not bother to ask about it either. Instead,

with a smile on his face, he said, “In that case, I will return to the Holy Land of Martialism with seniors.”

After the matter was decided, Chu Feng entered the spatial crack together with the Four Great Divine Beasts to return to the Holy Land of Martialism.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was worried for the Four Great Divine Beasts’ enormous bodies. After all, they were simply too big. In the spatial crack, they would have to avoid the dangers to survive. If one’s body was too big, it would not be beneficial toward one’s travel through a spatial crack.

However, after reaching the spatial crack, the Four Great Divine Beasts’ bodies all began to shrink in size. They Shrank to a size similar to Chu Feng’s.

After they were able to easily control their bodies to dodge the dangers, the frightening spatial crack was simply nothing to fear for them. After all, with the strength of the Four Great Divine Beasts, it was extremely easy for them to dodge the lightning and violent winds in the spatial crack.

As for Chu Feng... he was able to pass through the spatial crack when he was a rank four Martial Emperor. And now, he was a rank seven Martial Emperor. Passing through the spatial crack had naturally become even easier for him.

Although the frightening spatial crack was no longer a problem for Chu Feng, there were still many worries in Chu Feng’s heart.

For example, he was worried about where Zi Ling was, and whether or not she was safe.

For example, he was worried about whether the Moon Immortal was capable of defeating the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, and whether or not she would be captured and refined should she not be able to defeat the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

If the Moon Immortal were to die, it would naturally be a pity.

However, if the Moon Immortal were to die, Su Rou and Su Mei would also end up dying. That was something Chu Feng would not be able to accept.

However, what Chu Feng was most worried about was that, while he had gained the strength to confront the Dark Hall's Hall Master, everything would be of no use should he fail to find the Transmogrification Gate.

After all, the Transmogrification Gate was always on the move, and Chu Feng had given the key to the Transmogrification Gate to the Compass Immortal.

Even though Chu Feng had left an imprint on the Transmogrification Gate before leaving, he had discovered when he left that the further away he was from the Transmogrification Gate, the weaker his perception of the imprint would be. When Chu Feng arrived at the spatial crack and met the Compass Immortal, he was simply unable to sense the imprint at all.

Thus, the only way for Chu Feng to find the Transmogrification Gate was to quickly return to the place where the Transmogrification Gate had been before he left, and search for the Transmogrification Gate there.

Merely... he did not know how fast the Transmogrification Gate would move. Thus, he was uncertain whether he would be able to sense the Transmogrification Gate's location from the place where he had left that day.

.....

Somewhere in the Holy Land of Martialism. The earth was shattering, and mountains were subsiding. Many energy ripples were sweeping across the land, causing dust and thick smoke to rise.

Filling the sky were thick and solid lightning bolts, surging violent winds and black clouds that covered an area of tens of

thousands of miles.

That place no longer looked like a world of humans. Instead, it looked more like a purgatory. That place... was a battlefield.

A battlefield between Half Martial Ancestors.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, you’ve taken so many innocent lives. Today, I will absolutely make you pay for your crimes.”

Su Rou and Su Mei stood in the sky and were staring down below with their sharp gazes.

As their clothes fluttered in the wind, their surroundings became very frightening. However, the two beauties were completely unphased by their frightening surroundings. At that moment, they were like celestial fairies within purgatory.

To be exact, they were not Su Rou and Su Mei. Rather, they were the Moon Immortal.

The Moon Immortal’s aura was deep and resounding. She was a true rank one Half Martial Ancestor and Boundless Ancestral-level martial power covered her.

“Moon Immortal, you should first determine the situation before speaking such boasting words. The current you is unable to even save yourself. Yet, you actually still dare to threaten me?”

An ice-cold voice sounded. Suddenly, the black clouds down below started to disperse. As the earth reappeared, six huge monsters appeared together.

It was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Merely, this time around, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into six huge monsters.

To be exact, only one of them was the actual body. It was the one that had spoken earlier. As for the other five, they were merely clones. However, they also emitted the aura of rank one Half Martial Ancestors.

“It is only your battle power that has managed to reach the Half

Martial Ancestor level. You have yet to become an actual Half Martial Ancestor. Even if you've used your demonic technique to disguise your aura to that of a Half Martial Ancestor, you remain only a Martial Emperor, and are still incapable of controlling Ancestral-level martial power. Thus, you can stop trying to deceive yourself."

"To Half Martial Ancestors, Martial Emperors will collapse at the first blow. You want to rely on your numbers to defeat me? You are simply daydreaming," The Moon Immortal mocked.

"Is that so? In that case, let me experience exactly how powerful you, an actual Half Martial Ancestor, are."

Suddenly, coldness flashed through the Dark Hall's Hall master's sinister eyes. Then, his five clones all soared into the sky and began to unleash attacks at the Moon Immortal.

"Humph."

The Moon Immortal was not afraid in the slightest. She snorted coldly, then waved her sleeves. Boundless Ancestral-level martial power surged forth, forming ferocious giant beasts that confronted the five clones of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~"

Fiery blazes filled the sky and the region was covered in destruction once again.

The five clones of the Dark Hall's Hall Master were all enormous in size. Furthermore, they all emitted the aura of rank one Half Martial Ancestors. However, they did not possess Ancestral-level martial power. Instead, they were using Emperor-level martial power.

As for the Moon Immortal, even though she was faced with many enemies by herself, she remained an actual rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Regardless of how powerful Emperor-level martial power might be, it would still be no match for Ancestral-level

martial power. Thus, not only was the Moon Immortal not at a disadvantage, she was even slightly holding the upper hand in the battle.

“Hehe...”

However, even though his clones were clearly at a disadvantage, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master not only did not show any concern, he even laughed strangely. Then, he closed his eyes, as if he were sleeping.

Chapter 2103 – Two Hopes

Darkness and light began to interweave with one another. A vortex of light and darkness was formed. The energy of the vortex began to wreak havoc through the world, destroying everything in its path.

The battle between the Moon Immortal and the Dark Hall's Hall Master was truly infinitely close to being able to cause the destruction of the entire world.

To the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, something like this was simply unprecedented.

Logically, no one should be able to approach the battlefield. However, there were several hundreds of millions of people observing the battle.

THE Elf King, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Xian Miaomiao and the others were all here. Even the Compass Immortal was here.

The reason why they were able to observe the battle at such a close range and not be affected by it was because they were in the Transmogrification Gate.

In fact, it was not a coincidence that the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Moon Immortal were fighting in this place. Although it was very unimaginable, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had discovered the Transmogrification Gate through special means.

Most frighteningly, not only did the Dark Hall's Hall Master find the Transmogrification Gate, he also possessed the means to breach the Transmogrification Gate.

His five clones all contained special power that could break the indestructable and undiscoverable Transmogrification Gate.

Fortunately, the Moon Immortal had made a timely arrival. Else, the Transmogrification Gate would've definitely been breached by

the Dark Hall's Hall Master. At that time, the several hundred million people that were hiding in the Transmogrification Gate would definitely have been killed by the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“Is that the legendary Moon Immortal? That Moon Immortal that has been hidden in the Moonlight Maze the entire time? Never would I have expected the Moon Immortal to be two beautiful young women.”

“Fool! That is Lady Moon Immortal! Don't you spout such blasphemy!”

“Yes, yes, yes.”

“Lady Moon Immortal is so powerful. As expected from a Half Martial Ancestor-level expert. The Dark Hall's Hall Master will not be able to escape from this. We are saved.”

Practically no one among the hundreds of millions of people were able to clearly see the battle between the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Moon Immortal.

Thus, they could only speculate in their excitement, and determine how powerful the two fighters were from the energy ripples wreaking havoc through their surroundings.

At that moment, it was the Moon Immortal with her Ancestral-level martial power that held the upper hand. The Ancestral-level martial power that she controlled was radiating bright light all around. It was like a sword of justice that cut down the darkness in this area, bringing hope and light to the crowd.

However, the Elf King was frowning. Contained within his deep gaze was unease.

His uneasy gaze was not locked onto the battle in the sky, the battle between the Moon Immortal and the Dark Hall's Hall Master's five clones.

Instead, his uneasy gaze was locked onto the Dark Hall's Hall Master that was sitting on the ground with his eyes closed like he

had fallen into a deep sleep.

“So you’ve also noticed it,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal arrived beside the Elf King.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master is extremely confident in himself. I keep feeling that something is amiss. Yet, I am unable to make out much of anything. You’re a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, are you able to determine anything from this?”

“Although I do not wish to admit it, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s world spirit techniques surpass my own. I am unable to determine anything either,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“How could that be?” Hearing those words, the Elf King’s frown grew even more tense. After all, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was the number one world spiritist in the Holy Land of Martialism. If even he could not make anything of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s actions, then the Dark Hall’s Hall Master would truly be too powerful.

“It is precisely because I am unable to see through anything that it’s fishy,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“What do you mean by that?” The Elf King asked.

The Heaven Reaching Immortal did not speak of what he had in mind, and instead asked the Elf King, “Those five clones of his were not formed with spirit power. Instead, they contain some sort of special power, a power that could break my Transmogrification Gate.”

“Although I do not know where he obtained that power, it remains that he obtained that power.”

“However... his actual body is covered with a layer of spirit formations that even I cannot see through.”

“Why would he cover his body with a layer of spirit formations for no reason?”

“There must be a secret that he’s trying to hide,” The Elf King said.

“That’s right. He is deliberately hiding something. Unfortunately, even if we managed to discover it, there is nothing that we can do.”

“Right now, we can only resign ourselves to fate, and place all of our hopes on the Moon Immortal,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal sighed.

They were existences standing at the apex of the Holy Land of Martialism. However, in this battle that concerned the future of the Holy Land of Martialism, they were unable to do anything. Naturally, they would feel very depressed.

“No, we still have another hope,” The Elf King said.

“You’re talking about Chu Feng?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

“Mn,” The Elf King nodded.

“I’ve heard from that Compass Immortal that the spatial crack Chu Feng went through was a vicious type that contained all sorts of danger. The possibility of Chu Feng being able to pass through that spatial crack is extremely small.”

“Even if he really managed to pass through it, he might not necessarily be able to obtain Qing Xuantian’s inheritance. After all, none of us know what the remnant Qing Xuantian left behind is like.”

“Furthermore, even if Chu Feng really managed to obtain Qing Xuantian’s inheritance, he might not necessarily be able to take care of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

“Although we can still place a trace of hope in Chu Feng, it must remain only a trace of hope. Compared to the Moon Immortal, our hope in Chu Feng is truly too uncertain.”

“Unless a miracle is to happen...” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Heh...” The Elf King laughed lightly. He then said, “It seems that you do not know Chu Feng well.”

“Oh?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal looked to the Elf King. There was a trace of curiosity in his eyes.

“The way I see it, that boy Chu Feng is precisely someone who makes miracles,” The Elf King said confidently.

His confidence was not baseless. Although he could not be said to have known Chu Feng for a very long time, it was not a short time either. He had personally seen Chu Feng accomplishing many impossible things.

“Let’s hope that to be the case,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal smiled. As matters stood, they had reached the moment of a life and death crisis. How could he not wish for there to be someone to save them like Qing Xuantian did back then?

If it were possible, he also wished for that person to be Chu Feng. Merely... he truly felt that it was already too late.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the rumbling from the sky grew more and more ear-piercing. Even though everyone was in the Transmogrification Gate, they were still able to sense how frightening the outside was.

Not to mention others, even the strongest people in the Transmogrification Gate, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, would only be courting death should they try to enter that battle.

After fighting for some time, the Moon Immortal unleashed her Imperial Armament. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s five clones had also unleashed their Imperial Armaments; the five of them each

held an Imperial Armament in their hands.

Although the Moon Immortal was fighting one against five, she still remained extremely calm and unphased. With the assistance of her Imperial Armament, she maintained absolute superiority in their battle.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Imperial Armament the Moon Immortal held let out a ray of light. Like a flash of lightning, it shot toward one of the five clones.

“Roar~~~”

Everything happened too quickly. That clone simply did not have time to dodge. It let out a frightening snarl, and then its body shattered into pieces.

The Moon Immortal had killed that clone with a single strike!!!

“Not bad.”

Seemingly sensing that one of his clones had been destroyed, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, who had appeared to be sleeping the entire time, abruptly opened his eyes and looked to the Moon Immortal up above him.

Merely, even though he clearly knew that one of his clones had been destroyed, there was no worry in his gaze. Instead, his gaze emitted a different sort of implication.

Chapter 2104 – Heaven-defying Battle

Power

Sensing the gaze of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, the Moon Immortal said coldly, "No need to worry, I'll come to take care of you right away."

"I know what you're thinking. You want to take care of my four remaining clones, and then come take care of me, isn't that right?"

"Unfortunately, I'm afraid that I cannot give you that chance. After all, I still need them to cut open that Transmogrification Gate," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"It is not up to you to determine whether or not I have a chance. Instead, I am the one who shall seize that chance," The Moon Immortal said. The Imperial Armament she held in her hand grew even sharper, and her attacks grew more and more ferocious.

After verifying that those clones were crucial to breaching the Transmogrification Gate, she became even more determined to eliminate those clones.

"Is that so?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master smiled lightly. Then, his smile suddenly disappeared, and his gaze became ice-cold.

"Boom~~~"

A loud explosion was heard. Immediately, the ground split open. The enormous body of the Dark Hall's Hall master turned into a ray of black light as it soared into the sky. With an unbelievable speed, he charged toward the Moon Immortal.

"Boom~~~"

Everything happened too quickly. Other than an ear-piercing explosion and surging energy ripples, no one in the Transmogrification Gate was able to see what had happened outside.

All they knew was that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had created a ferocious energy ripple after flying into the sky. That energy ripple instantly covered everything in their line of sight.

At that moment, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal revealed even more unease in their eyes.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Suddenly, violent wind started to blow. The wind seemed to want to disperse everything. The violent wind forcibly blew the black energy ripples away.

At that moment, the crowd in the Transmogrification Gate discovered that the outside that was originally pitch black had returned to normal.

Even though the surface was filled with desolation, as if from the aftermath of a disaster, a blue sky and white clouds appeared in the sky once again.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

Four explosions sounded. The ground started to quake as four huge monsters fell to the surface. They were the Dark Hall's Hall Master's four clones.

Although the four clones had fallen to the ground, the crowd's gazes were still focused on the sky. They were searching for the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the Moon Immortal.

After searching the vast white clouds, the Elf King and the others all revealed expressions of shock.

There was no longer any huge monster in the sky. Instead, there were three silhouettes.

One among them was the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Not only had he returned to the appearance of a human, he was also covered with his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. With his body covered in lightning, his aura was no longer that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, it had decreased to that of a rank nine Martial Emperor.

Although his aura had grown weaker, the Dark Hall's Hall Master did not panic. Instead, he had a complacent smile on his face. In his hands were his two Imperial Armaments. He was fiddling with them.

As for the other two silhouettes, they were Su Rou and Su Mei. To be exact, it was the Moon Immortal.

However, a bloody wound had appeared on both of their bodies. Blood was flowing from their wounds.

The Moon Immortal... had actually been injured!!!

“Oh no!”

At that moment, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal were unable to contain themselves, and blurted out ‘oh no.’ What they did not wish to happen the most had finally happened.

“How could this be?” At that moment, many experts noticed that the Moon Immortal had been injured by the Dark Hall's Hall Master. However, they were extremely confused.

After all, the Moon Immortal clearly possessed a much more powerful aura than the Dark Hall's Hall Master. As such, how could he possibly have injured her?

“Your Majesty, what is going on here?” Confused, the crowd turned to the Elf King.

The battle had already surpassed their ability to understand. For many people, they were simply unable to make sense of what they were looking at. As such, they could only ask the Elf King for guidance.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s rank one Half Martial Ancestor’s aura is a disguise. His actual cultivation is not that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. It is merely his battle power that has reached the rank one Half Martial Ancestor level.”

“However, the current aura that he is emitting right now really does belong to him. Like Chu Feng, not only does he possess the means to increase his cultivation, he also possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

“Thus, while his cultivation is only that of a rank nine Martial Emperor now, and might appear to be inferior to the Moon Immortal, his battle power has already reached rank two Half Martial Ancestor level”.

“At this moment, even the Moon Immortal is no match for him,” The Elf King explained.

The Elf King had fought against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master many times. Thus, he knew about his abilities.

Thus, he knew that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was an existence on par with Chu Feng in all aspects. He was truly a genius from the Outer World.

“Heavens!” Hearing the explanation provided by the Elf King, the crowd’s complexions all turned ashen. In fact, some among them were so frightened that they fell onto their butts powerlessly. They were stunned by the news.

“How could this be?” At that moment, the gaze of the Moon Immortal in the sky was also flickering nonstop. She had naturally discovered the heaven-defying battle power that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed. Merely, she was unable to accept it.

“Moon Immortal, what sort of expression is that?”

“Oh, I got it. You’re feeling extremely unreconciled because you, a grand rank one Half Martial Ancestor, was defeated by me, a

mere Martial Emperor, right?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master mocked.

“You refused to fight earlier because you were increasing your cultivation?” The Moon Immortal asked.

The Moon Immortal knew that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not this powerful before. Else, he would not have been hiding from her the entire time.

His current cultivation must have been obtained not long ago. It was very likely that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had not fought alongside clones earlier because he had been increasing his cultivation.

“Did you think that I would be so foolish as to expose myself to you without absolute certainty of victory?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master answered with a question of his own.

“You’re saying that you’d already obtained this cultivation before you came here?” The Moon Immortal asked with a frown.

“I am never someone that does something without certainty. Since I dared to show myself, it means that I have certainty of victory.”

After saying those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master started to attack again. He pointed forward with the Imperial Armament in his hand. Although he was only able to control Emperor-level martial power, his oppressive might caused the Moon Immortal’s expression to change.

The Moon Immortal waved her sleeves and formed a defensive wall before her with her Ancestral-level martial power.

Logically, as Emperor-level martial power and Ancestral-level martial power belonged to two completely different levels, it would absolutely be the Ancestral-level martial power that would come out on top should they collide with one another.

However, at that moment, the ferocious Emperor-level martial

power collided directly with the wall formed with Ancestral-level martial power.

“Boom~~~~”

Rumbles sounded from the collision. For the first time ever, the Emperor-level martial power burst through the Ancestral-level martial power and toward the Moon Immortal.

Something that should have been impossible was happening. And this... was the so-called heaven-defying battle power.

“Damn it!”

Sensing that the situation was bad, the Moon Immortal's body suddenly bloomed with a special light. Following that, the surrounding air started to tremble.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Su Rou and Su Mei who were being controlled by the Moon Immortal both disappeared into thin air.

“Don't you think that you can escape just by entering the void. Before this grand world spiritist, you have nowhere to go.”

After a cold sneer, the Dark Hall's Hall Master opened his arms. Immediately, giant vines began to form all around him.

Those vines were a meter thick, and several tens of thousands of meters long. As the vines spread in all directions with rapid speed, they formed an inescapable net in an instant.

“Mn?” After the vines sealed off the entire region, a surprised expression appeared on the previously confident face of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Then, his lips lifted into a surprised smile, “Seems like I have underestimated you. You actually possess such a strong escape technique.”

“Dark Hall's Hall Master, I know that you will, sooner or later, return to the Outer World. At that time, I will teach you a lesson,” The Moon Immortal's voice sounded. However, that voice

appeared to be from tens of thousands of miles away.

Chapter 2105 – Precisely Chu Feng

“Heh, the Outer World is my domain”.

“When you can’t even win against me here, how could you possibly win against me in the Outer World?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master laughed mockingly.

As he was someone from the Outer World, he felt that he possessed a certain level of power in the Outer World. For the Moon Immortal to threaten him with the Outer World, he felt it to be truly ridiculous.

“The Outer World is enormous, and possesses countless experts.”

“This Immortal will let you know that your bits of reliance in the Outer World are merely a bunch of ants,” The Moon Immortal’s voice sounded again.

“You are truly ignorant,” At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was tightly clenching his fists. He was angry.

He believed that the Moon Immortal would definitely not be able to contend against him in the Outer World. In fact, none of the people currently in the Holy Land of Martialism would be able to contend against him.

However, the Moon Immortal had declared that she would take care of him in the Outer World. That caused him to feel extremely displeased, causing him to feel that he had been looked down upon.

“Moon Immortal, did you think that this Hall Master was abandoned by the Outer World? Did you think that this Hall Master possesses no one to rely on in the Outer World, and that’s why I’ve come here to flaunt my strength?”

“Let me tell you, you are mistaken. This Palace Master is a genius even in the Outer World. I merely arrived in this place by accident.”

“When you finally reach the Outer World, you will come to discover how much power I possess in the Outer World.”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted those words out angrily. From those words, it could be seen that he seemed to deeply detest being looked down upon. He was truly infuriated by the Moon Immortal.

However, there was no reaction from the Moon Immortal. It seemed that the Moon Immortal had already left.

“Humph, nothing more than a coward that only knows how to boast.”

“Immortal? Bullshit!”

“You are nothing more than someone who believes in their own lies.”

“You are someone who only dared to chase after me to kill me when I was weaker than you. Now that I’ve become stronger, you ran away faster than even dogs.”

“With merely that bit of capability, you dare to boast about fighting me in the Outer World? Truly ridiculous!” Seeing that the Moon Immortal had left, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to mock and ridicule her. He was doing so to alleviate the displeasure in his heart.

It was only after he insulted the Moon Immortal and felt better that he turned his gaze to the distance.

There was clearly nothing in the location that he was looking at. However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s gaze narrowed slightly.

“Transmogrification Gate. Truly miraculous. However, unfortunately... you will not be able to escape.”

Right after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said those words, his four clones that were standing on the ground all soared into the sky. In the end, they landed in the distance.

“Boom~~~ Boom~~~ Boom~~~ Boom~~~”

The four of them landed in different locations. Like four mountains, they sat there as if guarding something.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, the four clones let out ear-piercing snarls at the same time. Then, countless enormous and powerful black hands shot out to grab at the space that they had surrounded.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, the empty space started to transform and the Transmogrification Gate appeared.

After the Transmogrification Gate appeared, countless more enormous hands emerged from the four clones. Those hands formed fists and began to bombard the Transmogrification Gate.

The Transmogrification Gate was known to be indestructible. However, those fists seemed to contain some sort of special power, as even the Transmogrification Gate was unable to withstand it. At that moment, the indestructible Transmogrification Gate was shaking violently.

In fact, even the insides of the Transmogrification Gate was violently shaking. It was as if the world within the Transmogrification Gate was about to collapse.

“Nooo, this place is going to be destroyed, we will all be killed!!!”

At that moment, the people inside the Transmogrification Gate all possessed dejected expressions.

Despair. Endless despair. That sort of despair was something they had felt before. The reason for that was because the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been about to breach the Transmogrification Gate earlier.

Fortunately, the Moon Immortal had arrived at the right time. She was the one that had brought the crowd hope and allowed

them to be reborn from despair.

However, even the Moon Immortal had been no match for the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Thus, they knew... that there was no one that could stop the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

In that moment, there was only one thing they could do — wait for death!!!

Upon thinking that they would die, even many of the adults started to cry bitterly.

As for the kids, they did not know much about the current situation. However, when they saw that the adults were crying, they too began to cry.

At that moment, chaos and panic filled the vast Transmogrification Gate.

As matters stood, the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal possessed no heart to concern themselves with the panicking crowd.

The reason for that was because they also knew what sort of situation they were in. Indeed, they were facing a great catastrophe. Even if they could calm everyone, they would still not be able to escape the fate of death that awaited them.

“Chu Feng, I know that you're hiding in the Transmogrification Gate.”

“If my guess is correct, the Transmogrification Gate is most definitely filled with sounds of wailing. Regardless of whether it is you, that Elf King or that Heaven Reaching Immortal, none of you will be able to calm the crowd. The reason for that is because you all are also in despair.”

“Go ahead, continue with your despair. That is what this Hall Master wants. This is the consequence of going against this Hall Master.”

“It is precisely the goal of this Hall Master to make you all fall into despair,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was acting like a spectator as he looked at his four clones breaking that Transmogrification Gate that was said to be indestructible.

“Lord Hall Master, please stop, please stop, I don’t wish to die.”

“Please don’t do this, we have never gone against you. We are willing to submit to you. Please don’t kill us.”

At that moment, many people began to beg the Dark Hall’s Hall Master for forgiveness. Their begging was something that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master could not hear. Furthermore, even if he were to hear them, it would still be useless. However, when faced with death, they still ended up revealing their fatal weakness... cowardice!!!

“You bunch are absolutely disgraceful. All of you, shut up!”

“If I knew that you all were this lacking in dignity, I would have never offered shelter to you all!” Seeing how disgracefully the crowd was behaving, the Heaven Reaching Immortal flew into a rage and cursed out at them.

However, as matters stood, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was no longer imposing anymore. There was only a single person that the crowd feared — the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Chu Feng, when that Transmogrification Gate is destroyed, I will let you know the true disparity between us,” Seeing that the Transmogrification Gate was soon to be breached, dense anticipation filled the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes.

It was naturally the hundreds of millions of lives hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate that he was looking forward to seeing. After all, they were cultivation resources that could help him increase his cultivation.

However, even more than the people, he was looking forward to the timid gaze and expression of despair that Chu Feng would

have.

He was determined to make Chu Feng know that, although they both possessed the same Inherited Bloodline, there was an enormous disparity between them.

However, right at that moment, a voice sounded. “Dark Hall’s Hall Master, I trust that you have been well since we last met.”

When that voice was heard, everyone’s expressions turned sluggish. The reason for that was because they were all able to tell, that that voice sounded so very familiar.

Chu Feng, that was Chu Feng’s voice.

“Chu Feng has returned! It’s Chu Feng, he has returned!”

After verifying that it was Chu Feng, the crowd was immediately overjoyed. However, they were immediately disappointed.

While Chu Feng was very powerful, he would only be powerful when compared to them. When compared to the Elf King and the others, Chu Feng was still weaker than them.

And now, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had fought back even the Moon Immortal. Even if Chu Feng was to return, what could he possibly do? At the very most, he would only die together with them.

“Idiot! Why did you return at a time like this?! Quickly, run away!” Xian Miaomiao and some others started to shout hysterically. None of them wished for Chu Feng to throw his life away in vain.

Merely, as they were in the Transmogrification Gate, Chu Feng simply could not hear them.

“Sigh~~~”

Seeing that even Xian Miaomiao and the others were shouting for Chu Feng to escape, the rest of the people became even more certain that Chu Feng’s return was useless. As such, sighs began to

fill the Transmogrification Gate.

“Chu Feng?!” Compared to the crowd within the Transmogrification Gate, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had an emotional expression.

He had thought that Chu Feng was hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate the entire time. However, Chu Feng’s voice had clearly sounded from outside.

Merely, even he was unable to determine where Chu Feng’s voice had sounded from. That made him realize that something was amiss.

“Chu Feng, where are you? Get the hell out here, this Hall Master is telling you to come out,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master snarled furiously.

“Since you wish to see me so much, I shall grant you your desire.”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng’s voice sounded, dazzling golden light blossomed above the Transmogrification Gate. Then, four rays of light descend from the sky. Like four lightning bolts, they struck the four clones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

When the four lightning strikes landed, four explosions sounded, and the ground was shattered.

“What’s going on?!”

The scene that suddenly happened shocked the panicking crowd. When they looked outside, they were even more stunned.

At that moment, four huge monsters had appeared. Those four huge monsters had landed on the Dark Hall's Hall Master's four clones.

Being attacked by the four huge monsters, the four clones were letting out anguished wailings nonstop. They had lost all fighting ability.

“Heavens, those are?!!!!”

When the Elf King and the others saw the four huge monsters, their expressions changed enormously.

The reason for that was because the four huge monsters that were suppressing the four clones were:

The Azure Dragon.

The White Tiger.

The Vermilion Bird.

The Black Tortoise.

The Four Great Divine Beasts!!!

Most importantly, a man was standing on the Azure Dragon's head.

Like the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that man's body was also covered with Thunder Armor. A pair of enormous Thunder Wings also extended from his back.

His arms were folded before his chest. Standing atop the Azure Dragon's head, he gave off an extraordinary aura.

It was the domineering aura of an absolute ruler.

When the crowd saw the appearance of that man, they were all stunned, and their hearts started to tremble.

That man was none other than Chu Feng!!!

Chapter 2106 – Absolute Suppression

“Chu Feng! Everyone, look, it’s Chu Feng!”

“Chu Feng has returned to save us! Lord Chu Feng has returned to save us!”

After seeing that it was Chu Feng, the people in the Transmogrification Gate burst into an uproar.

Their low spirits were completely swept away. Their faces were no longer covered with despair. Instead, they were now wild with joy.

Even though many people were unable to determine Chu Feng’s cultivation, they were able to sense that the aura that Chu Feng was emitting right now seemed to not be inferior to that of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master at all.

“Those... those four Divine Beasts, aren’t they Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts?”

After seeing the Four Great Divine Beasts, astonishment filled the Heaven Reaching Immortal’s face. Not only had he been alive in Qing Xuantian’s era, he had also personally seen Qing Xuantian before. Thus, he knew very well that the four Divine Beasts before him were undoubtedly Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts.

“What? Those four powerful existences are actually Lord Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts?”

“Why would Lord Qing Xuantian’s guardian beasts appear together with Lord Chu Feng?”

Because the Heaven Reaching Immortal said those words with a very loud voice, practically all of the people in the Transmogrification Gate heard it.

After hearing that piece of news, the crowd were all filled with astonishment.

After all, Qing Xuantian was the most powerful expert since the Ancient Era. He was the strongest of the Five Emperors, the Five Overlords.

There were simply too many legends regarding Qing Xuantian. His various accomplishments were well-known throughout the entire Holy Land of Martialism. To practically everyone, the name ‘Qing Xuantian’ possessed a special significance.

“It is not only those four Divine Beasts, little friend Chu Feng’s current aura is not at all inferior to that of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. It would seem that his true cultivation is the same as the Dark Hall’s Hall Master; he has become a rank seven Martial Emperor.”

“Little friend Chu Feng should have obtained Qing Xuantian’s inheritance,” The Elf King was wild with joy and filled with excitement.

“Lord Chu Feng is actually Lord Qing Xuantian’s successor?!”

“Heavens! It’s no wonder Lord Chu Feng is that powerful. It would seem that we will be saved today! We will be saved today!!!”

The crowd was even more astonished upon hearing what the Elf King said. Originally, they were confused as to why Chu Feng would appear together with Qing Xuantian’s four legendary guardian beasts.

However, the Elf King’s words provided the crowd with a reasonable explanation. It turned out that Chu Feng was actually Qing Xuantian’s successor. Although there were people that had made this guess in their minds before, it was now verified.

“Chu Feng, your cultivation actually increased so much?” At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely surprised. He swept his eyes over the Four Great Divine Beasts. Then, he said, “Those four fellows, they seem to resemble Qing Xuantian’s four guardian beasts.”

“I understand. You obtained Qing Xuantian’s inheritance. That’s why your cultivation has increased,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

Chu Feng did not bother to pay attention to what the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said. Instead, he directly declared, “Dark Hall’s Hall Master, for the sake of your own selfish desires, you have taken countless innocent lives. Are you prepared to receive your death?”

“My, are you implying that you plan to kill me?”

“Hahahaha, what a joke. You are even more ridiculous than that Moon Immortal.”

“Did you really think that just because you possess the same cultivation, the same Inherited Bloodline and the same heaven-defying battle power as me, you’ll be able to contend against me?”

“Chu Feng, I have said it already. Today, I will let you know how enormous the disparity between us is.”

As the Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke, he put away the two Imperial Armament he was holding in his hands.

Disdain. His actions were absolutely an act of disdain toward Chu Feng. It was as if he was declaring to everyone that there was simply no need for him to use Imperial Armaments when fighting against Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Faced with the contempt shown to him by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, Chu Feng only laughed lightly and smiled. He was smiling like he was looking at a clown.

“Continue to smile. You will soon be unable to smile.”

“Rumble~~~”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to attack. Surging martial power with might capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas began to assault Chu Feng from all directions.

Although that attack appeared to be invisible and formless, it was

actually a kind of martial skill, a formless martial skill.

Ordinary people were simply unable to see the attack within that martial skill. They were only capable of hearing the rumbles that sounded from all directions.

“Humph.”

However, how could such an attack possibly baffle Chu Feng? Chu Feng snorted coldly and smiled. His body trembled, and the surrounding martial power was controlled by him. Like an invisible army of ferocious beasts, that martial power surged outward to attack.

“Boom~~~”

The two streams of martial power collided with one another. Immediately, heaven and earth started to shake. It was as if the end of the world had arrived.

However, both Chu Feng and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master remained standing where they were. Their expressions remained the same. They were both completely unflustered.

“Interesting. However, I’ll make you enter a state of absolute inferiority later,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said. Then, his body shifted, and he began to fly toward Chu Feng.

“Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise.”

“Seniors, I’ll be leaving those four clones to you all.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he soared into the sky and collided with the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“No problem.”

The Four Great Divine Beasts used their various body parts, such as the Azure Dragon with its tail or the White Tiger with its claw, to ferociously attack the huge monsters they had pinned down.

The clones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had already lost their fighting capability after being attacked so suddenly. As such, how

could they possibly withstand the ferocious attacks that the Four Great Divine Beasts were assaulting them with?

Soon, they were all destroyed. They were all killed; completely eliminated.

“Amazing! As expected of the legendary guardian beasts!!!”

Seeing the Four Great Divine Beasts effortlessly killing the four clones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, the crowd began to cheer excitedly.

After all, those four clones were existences that had threatened their safety before. Now that the greatest danger to them had been eliminated, they would naturally be extremely happy.

Right at that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal shouted, “Quiet!” Then, with a very serious expression, he said to the crowd, “This battle has only just begun.”

Hearing those words, the crowd uniformly turned their gazes to the sky.

Black clouds densely covered the sky. Lightning flashed and thunder rolled in succession as violent energy ripples swept through the surroundings like diffusing light.

That was... the battlefield between Chu Feng and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The confrontation between the two men grew more and more intense. The energy ripples created by their martial skills seemed to be planning to rip apart the entire vast sky.

The battle was extremely fierce. For many people, they were simply unable to tell which one of the fighters was Chu Feng, and which was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. They could only understand what was happening from the explanations provided by the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal.

After finding out about the situation of the battle, everyone started to frown. The reason for that was because... it was Chu Feng that was being suppressed by the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

The two men had both grasped extremely powerful martial skills. However, Chu Feng would always be suppressed in every confrontation.

“This battle is not hopeful.”

At that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was frowning extremely deeply. Although there was an enormous difference in strength between him and Chu Feng and the Dark Hall's Hall Master, he was able to determine the situation of the battle as an observer. Seeing that Chu Feng was being suppressed ever since the actual battle began, he felt extremely uneasy.

Even though the four clones capable of breaching the Transmogrification Gate had been killed, as long as the Dark Hall's Hall Master won, they, the people in the Transmogrification Gate, would sooner or later be killed by him.

However, at the moment when the Heaven Reaching Immortal had a worried frown on his face, he was surprised to discover that the Elf King standing beside him was smiling. Not only was he not worried, he seemed to be very happy too.

Chapter 2107 – Turning The Situation Around

“Are you not worried for little friend Chu Feng?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked the Elf King.

“Heaven Reaching Immortal, this should be the first time that you have seen little friend Chu Feng fighting someone, right?” The Elf King asked.

“Mn,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal nodded his head.

“Then, you should continue to watch it. You will come to understand soon,” The Elf King said with a smile.

“What do you mean by that?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

“I have fought against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master many times, and seen little friend Chu Feng battle others several times too.”

“Thus, I have quite an understanding of the two of them.”

“Although their strength is on par with one another, I believe that little friend Chu Feng is superior,” The Elf King said.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, although the Heaven Reaching Immortal was very confused, he still turned his gaze toward the battle between Chu Feng and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Roar~~~”

Another ear-piercing roar was heard. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master had unleashed another Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. That Earthen Taboo Martial Skill turned the Dark Hall’s Hall Master into a gigantic eagle several thousands of meters tall.

At that moment, that ferocious giant eagle brandished its sharp talons as it pounced at Chu Feng. It was planning to rip Chu Feng to pieces.

However, Chu Feng revealed no fear of the incoming giant eagle. Instead, a sharpness flashed through his eyes.

“Reckless fool, I’ll rip you to pieces now,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was infuriated by Chu Feng’s gaze. Thus, he unleashed all of his martial power to increase the strength of his attack.

In merely the blink of an eye, the Earthen Taboo Martial Skill unleashed by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master reached a distance less than a hundred meters away from Chu Feng. The powerful might it emitted shattered even the space surrounding Chu Feng.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes grew sharper. Then, he flipped his palm.

“Clank~~~”

A ray of cold light immediately appeared. It was a slash. Like a silvery crescent, that slash appeared out of thin air and rapidly increased in size as it collided with the enormous eagle the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into.

“Crap!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was greatly surprised by the silver slash that had suddenly appeared out of nowhere. The reason for that was because that slash appeared less than ten meters from him, and possessed an extremely fast speed. In that sort of situation, he was unable to dodge the slash.

“Rumble~~~”

A loud rumble was heard. Surging energy ripples immediately covered the entire sky.

However, right after the energy ripples began to spread, a burst of violent wind immediately swept forth and forcibly blew the energy ripples away.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master appeared again. Merely, when his appearance was revealed, the crowd, other than the Elf King, all

revealed expressions of disbelief.

For some unknown reason, the Dark Hall's Hall Master that was fighting Chu Feng at a very close range had distanced himself far away from Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was still standing in his original location. It was only the Dark Hall's Hall Master whose location had changed. In other words, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been forced far back.

To the crowd's surprise, a bloody wound had appeared on the Dark Hall's Hall Master, who had clearly been suppressing Chu Feng the entire time earlier.

No, it was not only the bloody wound, his left arm had also disappeared. It had been sliced off by Chu Feng's slash earlier.

“Despicable bastard, you actually used your Imperial Armament!”

With merely a thought, the Dark Hall's Hall Master reformed his lost left arm. However, his gaze was fixed onto Chu Feng's Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader the entire time. His eyes were filled with fury.

He had realized that Chu Feng's attack earlier was an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. However, how could he possibly be injured by ordinary Earthen Taboo Martial Skills?

Chu Feng was able to break through his Earthen Taboo Martial Skill and successfully injure him precisely because he had used his Imperial Armament, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader.

“Who was it that decided that we could not use Imperial Armaments in this battle?”

“Imperial Armaments are weapons. They are an indispensable assistance to martial cultivators. There is nothing wrong with me using my Imperial Armament.”

“As for why you’re injured, you can only blame it on yourself for being too arrogant and conceited. It was you who felt that you could kill me without using your Imperial Armaments.”

“Don’t forget, you were holding your Imperial Armaments earlier. It was you who put them away,” Chu Feng mocked.

“You!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master grew even more furious.

What Chu Feng said was correct. He had originally been holding his Imperial Armaments. It was because he looked down upon Chu Feng that he decided to put his Imperial Armaments away. However, never had he expected that Chu Feng would insult him with that.

“I understand.”

However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master wasn’t a fool. Although he was furious, he realized that he had been able to obtain superiority over Chu Feng earlier not because he possessed absolute strength. Instead, it seemed that Chu Feng had deliberately egged him on.

Chu Feng had deliberately made him feel that he was stronger than him so that he would be overly confident.

Chu Feng had grasped the opportunity of him being overly confident to mount a surprise attack against him. That was how he came to be injured.

“Chu Feng, I have not wrongly accused you. You are truly despicable!!!” After realizing what had happened, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master became even more furious.

He was someone that never did anything that he possessed no certainty in. Regardless of what sort of opponent he faced, he would always plan strategies beforehand so that he could seize the certainty of victory.

However, today, he had fallen for Chu Feng’s scheme, someone that he had looked down upon the entire time. Naturally, he would

feel extremely furious.

“Despicable? Is someone like you worthy of calling me despicable?” Chu Feng coldly laughed, “I, Chu Feng, am someone who will never scheme against those that are good and honest.”

“However, against despicable bastards like you who have done all sorts of evil, I, Chu Feng, am someone who will use all kinds of schemes. That is what you call “giving someone a taste of their own medicine.”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted, “Shut your mouth!!!” Then, he flipped his hands, and his two Imperial Armaments appeared in his hands.

“Yoh, so you’re finally willing to use your Imperial Armaments? But... they will not help you,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Bullshit!!!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted. Following that, he brandished the Imperial Armaments in his hands. Immediately, martial power began to gather as he unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

The Heaven Taboo Martial Skill turned into many blade rays that shot forth to slice at Chu Feng. Like a massive army sent forth to behead a person, they swept across the void and toward Chu Feng.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was planning to get revenge by giving Chu Feng a taste of his own medicine. Chu Feng had injured him with a slash. As such, he planned to kill Chu Feng with his own slash.

“Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind.”

With the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in hand, Chu Feng hacked down directly in front of him. Immediately, a violent wind was sent forth from the Imperial Armament.

As the violent wind spun, space itself started to twist. Like flowing water, the distorted space began to pour into the violent wind.

Under that situation, the violent wind grew larger and larger. Soon, it covered all of heaven and earth. It truly looked as if the sky had been devoured by the wind.

When the slashes sent forth by the Dark Hall's Hall Master arrived, they too were devoured by that violent wind.

It was as if a myriad of meteors were falling from the sky, only to land in the deep, bottomless sea.

“Go.”

“Roar~~~”

Then, Chu Feng pointed at the Dark Hall's Hall Master, and that violent wind began to move. It turned into an enormous wind dragon that pierced through the sky as it moved to suppress the Dark Hall's Hall Master with overwhelming might.

Chu Feng had suppressed the Dark Hall's Hall Master's Heaven Taboo Martial Skill with his own Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

“What a profound martial skill,” At that moment, the Elf King and the others all exclaimed in admiration repeatedly. They were all stunned by the Heaven Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng had unleashed.

“That is Qing Xuantian's martial skill. I saw him use it before.”

“Actually, that martial skill is not that profound. It is merely that when little friend Chu Feng used it, it is even more powerful,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal explained. Then, he looked to the Elf King and said, “What you said is correct. Little friend Chu Feng's strength is indeed above that of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.”

After hearing those words, the bystanders all discovered that the Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind that Chu Feng had unleashed was still spiraling in the sky.

It was only when the Dark Hall's Hall Master unleashed three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills in succession that he managed to

neutralize Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo: Heaven Devouring Wind.

However, after the Dark Hall's Hall Master neutralized it, he was already panting and in a very sorry state.

Chapter 2108 – Greatly Expanding One's Horizons

“Heaven Taboo: Ten Thousand Lightning Strikes”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng unleashed another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

It was another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill he had obtained from Qing Xuantian's inheritance. That Heaven Taboo Martial Skill possessed extremely ferocious might.

In the blink of an eye, many enormous lightning strikes began to strike down from the skies.

The lightning strikes were all several tens of meters thick, and dazzling blue in color. Each and every lightning strike contained extremely powerful might.

At that moment, over ten thousand such lightning strikes were descending from the sky. Furthermore, they were all targeting the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“Damn it!”

In that sort of situation, the Dark Hall's Hall Master hurriedly turned around to escape. As he began to flee, he unleashed Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to defend against the incoming lightning strikes.

“That Dark Hall's Hall Master is most definitely extremely furious,” The Elf King said with a smile.

“Royal Father, what do you mean by that?” Xian Miaomiao and her older sister ran over and asked with extremely curious expressions.

“To a greater or lesser extent, I understand the character of the Dark Hall's Hall Master. He is different from little friend Chu Feng. Although little friend Chu Feng possesses outstanding

strength, he also possesses a humble character. He is neither conceited nor arrogant.”

“However, that Dark Hall’s Hall Master is different. He is extremely conceited, excessively conceited even. When he fought against me, even though I was suppressing him, he still spoke words that showed that he clearly did not place me in his eyes.”

“It was as if he was certain that he would one day turn the situation around and suppress me instead. Of course, he managed to accomplish precisely that,” When mentioning that matter, the Elf King smiled in shame.

“However, little friend Chu Feng is different. Little friend Chu Feng is stronger than the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. However, in the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s eyes, little friend Chu Feng is the same as me, someone inferior to him.”

“He felt that suppressing little friend Chu Feng before was only natural. He felt that as little friend Chu Feng was inferior to him, him suppressing little friend Chu Feng was only a matter of course.”

“Thus, when he was suddenly injured by little friend Chu Feng’s slash, he became extremely furious.”

“As he feels that little friend Chu Feng is inferior to him, he was determined that little friend Chu Feng was only able to injure him by relying on tricks.”

“However now, little friend Chu Feng is no longer going easy on him, nor is he using any tricks. Instead, he is fighting the Dark Hall’s Hall Master head-on with his own abilities.”

“However, the result is that even though the two of them possess the same cultivation, the same Inherited Bloodline, the same level of techniques and the same battle power, little friend Chu Feng is still absolutely dominating the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.”

“This means that little friend Chu Feng’s strength surpasses that

of the Dark Hall's Hall Master."

"This conclusion is definitely something that the Dark Hall's Hall Master cannot accept. As such, he will naturally be extremely furious," The Elf King explained.

"Humph, Chu Feng was stronger than him to begin with. Even if he refuses to accept it, it remains the truth."

"Back then, he was only able to bully Chu Feng by relying on the fact that he had cultivated longer than Chu Feng and possessed a higher cultivation than Chu Feng."

"Now that Chu Feng's cultivation is the same as his, he is no longer a match for Chu Feng. Serves him right. Someone like him is a true spineless coward," Xian Miaomiao said angrily.

Back then, she had personally seen the scene of the Dark Hall's Hall Master and the World Devastator Immortal humiliating Chu Feng at the Blood Devouring Killing Formation. It was not only Chu Feng who became extremely furious, even she was extremely furious by what had happened.

And now, Chu Feng was not only able to suppress the Dark hall's Hall Master, he was even making the Dark Hall's Hall Master flee in disarray. To Xian Miaomiao, this not only alleviated her anger, more than that, she... felt happy for Chu Feng.

Back then, Chu Feng's honor was trampled upon.

Today, he was finally able to seize it back himself.

"Hey hey hey, stop running away. Earlier, you spoke so boastfully. Yet now, what is this appearance? It seems that you're letting down those boasting words you've spoken, no?" Seeing that the Dark Hall's Hall Master could only run in disarray from his attack, Chu Feng began to insult the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Chu Feng did this not only because he wanted to use this method to insult the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

Most importantly, Chu Feng discovered that although the Dark Hall's Hall Master was very smart and powerful, he possessed a fatal weakness — being too conceited.

Not only was he conceited, he refused to allow anyone to question his talent. It was precisely this weakness that Chu Feng wished to grasp and then deliver a punishing attack at so as to bring disorder upon his mind.

“Ignorant bastard, did you really think that you would be able to defeat this Hall Master with only those tricks of yours?”

“Chu Feng, today, this Hall Master shall let you know the disparity between us.”

“Also, you bunch of trash hiding in the Transmogrification Gate. All of you, look carefully.”

“Right now, this Hall Master shall broaden the horizons of you bunch of trash from the Lower Realm. I'll have you all experience strength that you have never seen before.”

The Dark Hall's Hall Master suddenly stopped running away. He raised the Imperial Armaments in his hand. Then, an extremely mighty power began to emit from his body.

That power swept toward all directions and forcibly dispersed Chu Feng's Heaven Taboo: Ten Thousand Lightning Strikes.

Most importantly, the sky was distorting. Soon, an enormous figure appeared in the sky.

It was a giant beast. This giant beast resembled a bear. However, it possessed neither arms or legs. Yet, it possessed an enormous mouth.

When not mentioning that mouth, this giant beast's body was so huge that no end could be seen. Its body covered the entire blue sky. It was as if the giant beast had replaced the sky.

After that enormous beast appeared, an extremely frightening

aura began to emit from it, enveloping the entire earth.

The void started to tremble nonstop. The earth was trembling nonstop.

It was the sensation of the descent of doomsday.

“Heavens! What is that?!”

At that moment, many of the people in the Transmogrification Gate were so scared that their faces turned green. They were shivering from head to toe. In fact, some people even fainted on the spot.

Originally, as they were hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, they would not be threatened regardless of what might happen outside.

However, when that giant beast appeared, all of them were able to sense how frightening that giant beast was. The aura which that giant beast emitted was something that not even the Transmogrification Gate could resist.

“That seems to be a martial skill. However, it is impossible for Heaven Taboo Martial Skills to possess such a frightening power.”

“Could that be a legendary Divine Taboo Martial Skill?” At that moment, even the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal were frowning deeply. It was as the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had said, none of them had ever seen such a frightening technique.

At that moment, they involuntarily turned their gazes to Chu Feng again.

However, at that moment, their expressions changed once again.

Although they felt how frightening that enormous beast was, as they were hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, the strength of the enormous beast that they felt was most definitely only the tip of the iceberg. Being outside, what Chu Feng was feeling should be the actual terrifying oppression.

However, Chu Feng's expression actually remained unchanged. He revealed absolutely no fear. This sort of reaction surpassed everyone's Expectations.

Could it be that Chu Feng possessed a method to withstand that huge beast?

Although they felt it to be extremely inconceivable, the crowd still involuntarily thought of that possibility.

In truth, Chu Feng was indeed not afraid of that martial skill. Although it was also the first time Chu Feng had seen such a powerful martial skill, he did possess the means to take it on.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that the martial skill the Dark Hall's Hall Master had unleashed was actually... an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Chapter 2109 – Incomplete Ancestral Armament

“Trash, why aren’t you saying anything? Are you scared speechless by my martial skill?”

“I might as well tell you. This is an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.”

“I bet a country bumpkin like you has never heard of Emperor Taboo Martial Skills before, right?”

“That’s no problem. Today, I shall show you great kindness, and teach you some knowledge.”

“Emperor Taboo Martial Skills are martial skills that Martial Emperors cannot use. As its name implies, Emperor Taboo Martial Skill are a taboo for Martial Emperors.”

“Thus, only actual Half Martial Ancestors are capable of learning Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.”

“However, this Hall Master is a genius. Although I am still only a Martial Emperor, I have already mastered this Emperor Taboo Martial Skill that is a taboo for Martial Emperors,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke in an immensely proud manner to Chu Feng. His tone was filled with a sense of superiority.

“You should have only just grasped that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, right?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was startled. His gaze turned complicated. Cautiously, he asked, “What is it that you’re trying to say?”

“I’m trying to say that your Emperor Taboo Martial Skill should be extremely powerful. However, it seems that you have yet to completely grasp it.”

“Look at it. That huge beast the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill

creates should be extremely domineering and mighty. It should give off the sensation of the descent of a ruler upon appearing.”

“But, look at it. It doesn’t even have arms or legs. All it has is a single mouth. It looks like an utter joke. It gives off absolutely no sense of dominance at all.”

“Thus... it is truly a pity for that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill to be defiled by you,” Chu Feng said.

“Bastard! Are you mocking me?” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master asked furiously.

“You’re right, I am,” Chu Feng said with a laugh.

“Snap~~~”

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master immediately clenched his fists angrily. His furious gaze seemed to be capable of shooting out flames. He was truly infuriated by Chu Feng.

However, his anger lasted only a moment. After that moment, he started to laugh strangely. He said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, I’m changing my plans. Today, I will not kill you. Instead, I will make you wish that you were dead. I will make you beg me, kneel before me and beg me to kill you.”

“You’re thinking too much of yourself. You are incapable of doing that,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“You will soon know whether or not I am capable,” After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s words left his mouth, the huge beast in the sky suddenly opened its mouth. Immediately, a violent suction began to suck Chu Feng into its mouth.

“Crap! If Chu Feng is to be sucked into that giant beast’s mouth, it will definitely be disastrous!” Seeing that scene, the Elf King, Xian Miaomiao and the others were all deeply frightened.

“Your struggle is useless. Right now... you are nothing more than a puppet. I will be able to toy with you however I wish,” The Dark

Hall's Hall Master laughed mockingly.

“That guy.”

However, his laughter suddenly froze. The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that Chu Feng was not struggling against that suction power at all. Just like that, he allowed himself to be sucked into that giant beast's mouth.

Although Chu Feng was confident, the people that were concerned about his safety were nearly driven mad. For example, Xian Miaomiao and some other girls were crying already.

“Heeaahh!!!”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly shouted explosively. Then, he raised one hand up and shot an explosive fist toward the giant beast in the sky.

“Snap~~~”

A loud sound was heard. The sound of something shattering actually sounded from the sky covered by that huge beast.

“Snap~~~ Snap~~~ Snap~~~”

Soon, the shattering sounds grew more and more numerous. At that moment, the crowd discovered that countless giant cracks had appeared on that enormous beast's vast body. Those cracks were rapidly extending and interweaving with one another.

“Rumble~~~”

Soon, a loud sound that was never before heard sounded. Then, that beast shattered into pieces. Like countless meteorites, its shattered body began to fall from the sky.

Merely, as its body was formed with martial power, it did not land on the ground. Instead, they turned into streams of martial power that assimilated into the void.

Although the sky was extremely frightening before, it was very beautiful now.

Most importantly, although the giant beast that covered the sky had been destroyed, a special sort of power was still hovering in the sky. Merely, no one had discovered that power.

“Heavens, Chu Feng, he... he actually managed to destroy the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.”

At that moment, even the Elf King and the others were stunned. To them, it seemed as if Chu Feng had only shot a punch toward the beast. How could a single punch possess such power?

Their astonishment was understandable. After all, they did not know that Chu Feng had learned many Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, and even an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill from Qing Xuantian’s inheritance.

Chu Feng’s fist strike earlier was no ordinary fist strike. Instead, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Impossible, this is impossible!!!”

“You, trash that grew up in this land, how could you have possibly grasped an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?”

At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master reacted as if he had received an enormous shock. Although others were unable to tell, he was able to tell that Chu Feng had used an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill earlier.

However, that was something that he was unwilling to admit, something that he could not accept. He had spent great difficulty in order to learn that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. Yet, Chu Feng actually knew an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill too.

Most importantly, Chu Feng’s mastery of his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was actually much more skillful than his own. Chu Feng had managed to easily destroy his own Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, rumbles began to sound from the sky. Turning their heads toward the sky, the crowd was all stunned and felt utter disbelief.

At that moment, many rays of light appeared in the sky. Those lights were interweaving with one another and covering the entire sky.

Most importantly, those lights emitted an aura even more frightening than the aura emitted by that huge beast earlier.

“This is the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.”

“In this Lower Realm that you look down upon, this Martial Skill was learned by someone ten thousand years ago,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“Heavens, so Chu Feng actually also grasped a legendary Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. No wonder, no wonder he was able to easily destroy the Dark Hall Hall Master’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.”

The crowd burst into an uproar. Seeing the light that filled the sky, the crowd reacted as if they had seen hope. They felt that regardless of how powerful the Dark Hall’s Hall Master might be, he would still be defeated today.

Merely, before that, no one had expected that Chu Feng would make such an enormous improvement.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, what other tricks do you have? Feel free to use them. Else... I will be ending you,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...”

“Hehehe....”

“Hahahaha...”

“Wahahahahaha...”

Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master burst into frantic laughter. His laughter was extremely frightening. It simply did not sound

like the voice of a human.

“Chu Feng, I truly never expected that trash like you would be able to force this Hall Master into such a state.”

“However, that’s fine. I shall let you all know exactly how powerful the strength this Hall Master really has.”

After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master said those words, his wrist started to shine brightly. It was only at that moment that the crowd discovered he had a bracelet on his wrist.

That bracelet was emitting dazzling golden light. At that moment, that bracelet flew off of the wrist of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and began to float before him.

As that bracelet shone with brightness, an aura even more powerful than the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill swept forth.

“So that’s it,” Upon seeing that bracelet, Chu Feng’s eyes also shone.

He had already realized that that bracelet was an extraordinary item, and should be an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

Chapter 2110 – See Your Performance

“Roar~~~”

Once the Incomplete Ancestral Armament appeared, layers of golden gaseous flames were emitted from within the bracelet.

As the golden gaseous flames surged forth, the bracelet began to hover forward.

Soon, with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament as the center, the golden gaseous flames turned into a giant monster.

It was a golden giant. It was a thousand meters tall, and wore golden armor. Covered with dazzling golden light, it looked like a golden god of war.

Although its entire body was filled with light, the oppressive sensation that it emitted was much more frightening than that of the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill the Dark Hall’s Hall Master used previously.

“Quickly, set up formation!”

In that sort of situation, even though the crowd were all hidden in the Transmogrification Gate, they still rushed to set up a defensive formation to withstand the oppressive might.

Else, merely that oppressive might would’ve been enough to slaughter them.

It was only with the combined efforts of the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal that they managed to block the oppressive might that had managed to enter the Transmogrification Gate. However, even though the two of them were working together, they were still placed under enormous pressure.

“What formidable power. Exactly what is that?”

At that moment, the Heaven Reaching Immortal was frowning.

As the master of the gate, he knew how powerful the Transmogrification Gate was.

Even though the Transmogrification Gate was incapable of blocking all powers, it was capable of blocking the majority of them. As such, the people from the Transmogrification Gate should be safe from harm.

Yet, at that moment, the oppressive might that managed to invade the Transmogrification Gate was already enough to strangle the people in the Transmogrification Gate. If they had not set up formation immediately, there would likely have been a great amount of casualties.

They truly never expected that the Dark Hall's Hall Master would be so powerful. At that moment, they felt fear from the Dark Hall's Hall Master from the bottom of their hearts.

"Chu Feng, today... I will broaden your horizons and let you gain knowledge. I shall let you know exactly what that is," The Dark Hall's Hall Master pointed to his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and spoke proudly.

"Isn't that just an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?" Chu Feng interrupted him.

"You... you actually know what an Incomplete Ancestral Armament is?" The Dark Hall's Hall Master revealed an expression of shock.

"Not only do I know that it's an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, I also know that you should have just subdued that Incomplete Ancestral Armament," Chu Feng said.

"Your eyesight's pretty good. That's right... The reason why I sat motionless when my clones were fighting against the Moon Immortal was precisely because I was using my world spirit formations, as well as my other methods, to subdue this Incomplete Ancestral Armament."

“Logically, it is simply impossible for Martial Emperors to subdue Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.”

“The reason for that is because subduing an Incomplete Ancestral Armament is much more difficult than learning an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said. He was immensely proud of himself as he said those words.

He had said all those things so that he could tell everyone that his talent was incomparable to ordinary people, that Chu Feng could not be placed on par with him.

“I can tell that you’ve spent meticulous effort in order to subdue that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“Unfortunately, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament is the same as the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill you used earlier. Like before, you are simply unable to completely grasp it,” Chu Feng said.

“Bullshit!” Seeing that Chu Feng had actually dared to disregard the results of his efforts, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master cursed out at him.

“Heh...” However, Chu Feng was not enraged by the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s curse. Instead, he laughed lightly and then said, “If you insist on deceiving yourself, there is nothing I can do about it.”

“You don’t even have an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, yet you dare to criticize me?! Who the hell do you think you are?!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master continued to rain curses upon Chu Feng. It was like the Elf King said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely conceited, and could not tolerate others insulting his talent.

“Haha...” Chu Feng did not answer him, and instead chuckled. However, his chuckle was filled with contempt and mockery. It was as if he simply did not place the Dark Hall’s Hall Master in his eyes at all.

“You are truly someone who will not tear up until you see your own coffin! I’ll let you know how powerful this Hall Master is right away!” As the Dark Hall’s Hall Master spoke, he pointed his hand at Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the golden god of war that stood before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master raised its enormous arm.

As the arm was raised, an enormous sword extended from its palm. Then, it aimed its palm at Chu Feng and hacked down. Immediately, the sword’s blade was filled with light as it sliced through the void and toward Chu Feng.

The speed was so fast that the sword was simply going to cleave Chu Feng in two from head to toe in an instant.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at this moment of imminent peril, Chu Feng remained completely calm. Suddenly, he raised his arm, and a huge fiery red sword appeared above him.

“Clank~~~”

The sound of a metallic collision was heard as golden light scattered all over. When the golden light began to weaken, the crowd members were all tongue-tied by the scene before them.

The enormous sword that should have been unstoppable was actually blocked. It was blocked by that fiery red sword.

“That aura, it’s not at all inferior to that Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng he... he actually also possesses an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

Sensing the mighty aura emitted by the fiery red sword, the crowd members were all pleasantly surprised.

They were no fools. Merely by the might of the fiery red sword,

they were able to tell how powerful it was.

If the Dark Hall's Hall Master's bracelet was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, then Chu Feng's fiery red sword should definitely also be an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

"Chu Feng, how many more methods do you possess that we do not know of?" At that moment, the Elf King's eyes were filled with admiration.

Today, the techniques and methods that the Dark Hall's Hall Master used had all surpassed their imagination. Yet, Chu Feng was able to calmly respond to them in succession.

As matters stood, he finally realized why Chu Feng was so calm and confident. It turned out that he possessed many cards up his sleeve.

"How could this be? You also possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?! No... that's impossible! How could you possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?! How could such a desolate place possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?!"

The Dark Hall's Hall Master was filled with astonishment. His expression was extremely ugly. His cheeks were shivering. He had revealed to everyone that he was unable to accept the fact before him.

In reality, what he was most unable to accept was not the fact that Chu Feng possessed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Rather, it was that Chu Feng was actually also capable of using his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, because this had completely trampled the last bit of superiority that he possessed.

"Dark Hall's Hall Master, I truly never expected that you would force me into such a state. However, since you've already forced me into such a state, it is time to end this battle."

"Have you made your preparations?"

"The preparations to die," Chu Feng looked to the Dark Hall's

Hall Master with a beaming smile on his face.

“Bastard! You dare to use that sort of mocking tone to speak to me?! I’m going to kill you!” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted angrily. That golden god of war turned into a ray of light that flew toward Chu Feng.

This time around, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not holding back in the slightest. He had gone all-out to kill Chu Feng. As matters stood, he had realized that he underestimated Chu Feng.

He could not hold back. Else, he might end up becoming the person that was defeated today!!!

“Roar~~~”

Seemingly sensing the determination of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, that golden god of war let out an ear-piercing roar.

It’s killing intent was overflowing, and filled the entire region. It’s killing intent was so chilly that even the crowd in the Transmogrification Gate started to shiver.

“It’s time to see your performance. Don’t let me down.”

With a smile on his face, Chu Feng gently caressed the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand. Then, seemingly as if the Magma Emperor Sword had realized Chu Feng’s intentions, it turned into a ray of flame as it charged forth toward the golden god of war.

Chapter 2111 – Unbelievable

“Boom~~~”

The fiery sword pierced through the vast sky. Its power was filled with dominance.

Even though many people were unable to see the scene of the fiery sword piercing through the skies, they were able to sense the might it emitted. It was even more fierce than before.

“Paa~~~”

A shocking scene appeared. The golden war of god extended its hand and directly grabbed the Magma Emperor Sword.

“Hahaha, is this your so-called Incomplete Ancestral Armament? The way I see it, it is nothing more than a bluff. This Incomplete Ancestral Armament of yours is a fake, isn’t it?” Seeing that his own Incomplete Imperial Armament had obtained victory with a single strike, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master burst into loud and proud laughter.

“Fake? Lord Chu Feng’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament is a fake?”

After hearing what the Dark Hall’s Hall Master declared, suspicion rose in the hearts of many people in the Transmogrification Gate.

It was not that they did not believe in Chu Feng. Merely, as they were both Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, how could there be such an enormous disparity?

“Boom~~~”

However, the very next moment, that golden god of war’s hand suddenly exploded.

At the same time, a soaring and blazing flame burst forth. In an instant, it completely swallowed a range of ten thousand meters in

the sky.

“Boom~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were all confused, that golden war of god’s enormous body had fallen to the ground.

Furthermore, an enormous leg covered with flame was stepping on its body. It turned out... that it had been trampled to the ground by someone.

Upon closer inspection, the complexions of the crowd all turned pale. Their eyes and mouths were wide open. They were struck dumb.

At that moment, a fiery giant stood on the thousand-meter-tall golden god of war’s body. That flame giant was thousands of meters tall, much larger than the golden god of war.

“Motherfucker! If this Emperor doesn’t show you his might, you’d take me as a diseased cat, eh?”

Most shockingly, that flame giant actually spoke.

As the Magma Emperor spoke those words, he lifted his foot and then stomped it down ruthlessly.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. Even the crowd hiding inside the Transmogrification Gate felt an enormous trembling.

As for the outside of the Transmogrification Gate, it was filled with dispersing golden light, and energy ripples that wreaked havoc all around. That golden god of war had been shattered by the stomp.

“No, this is impossible! This is absolutely impossible!!!”

At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was grabbing his head with his hands. Disbelief filled his face. He was simply on the verge of collapse.

He felt that everything before him was so very unbelievable. It was not because the Magma Emperor Sword was very powerful. Rather, it was because the Magma Emperor Sword was actually capable of speaking.

He knew very well that Incomplete Ancestral Armaments that could speak were actual Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, it was only after an Incomplete Ancestral Armament was completely subdued by its master that it could fight with its own awareness and be able to speak.

And that... was something that he could not accomplish.

Yet... what he had failed to accomplish was accomplished by Chu Feng.

He finally realized that Chu Feng's insults toward him were not because he was overly arrogant and conceited. Instead, it was Chu Feng possessing the qualifications to insult him.

"Everyone, look, that golden giant is gone. It completely disappeared."

"Lord Chu Feng won! Lord Chu Feng has won!!!"

"Amazing! Lord Chu Feng is truly unrivaled!"

Although the Dark Hall Hall Master's Incomplete Ancestral Armament had crumbled apart, the hundreds of millions of people inside the Transmogrification Gate were cheering.

They were all able to tell that the battle was going to end. Chu Feng had defeated the Dark Hall's Hall Master that even the Moon Immortal had failed to defeat.

"No, how could this be?! How could this be?!"

At the moment when the crowd were all cheering, the expressions of the Heaven Reaching Immortal and the Ancient Era's Elves' Grand Elders all changed enormously. Deep fear filled their eyes.

Even the Elf King who would always remain calm and collected had a pale complexion just then. Even his body was trembling slightly.

“Royal Father, what’s wrong?” Sensing that something was amiss, Xian Miaomiao and Princess Lingyue hurriedly supported their father. They had never before seen their father acting in such a manner.

“That is the Magma Emperor, the Magma Emperor that nearly destroyed our Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago,” The Elf King said.

“What? The Magma Emperor? Where? Where?” Hearing those words, the people in the Transmogrification Gate all started to panic. To a greater or lesser degree, fear emerged on the faces of everyone in the crowd.

Even though the Magma Emperor was only a legend, and very few people had actually seen it, to them, the Magma Emperor remained an existence even more frightening than the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Xian Miaomiao looked around and then asked, “Magma Emperor? Royal Father, what are you talking about? Didn’t the Magma Emperor die long ago? Why would the Magma Emperor be here now?”

“That is the Magma Emperor, that over there is the Magma Emperor,” The Elf King pointed to the Magma Emperor with flames rising from its body.

“Impossible, t-t-t-that is actually the Magma Emperor? Isn’t that Chu Feng’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament? Why would it be the Magma Emperor?”

“Exactly what is going on? Could it be that Lord Chu Feng is controlled by the Magma Emperor?”

Hearing what the Elf King said, the crowd all started to panic.

Originally, there were people that thought that the Elf King was joking. However, upon seeing the huge monster with flames blazing from its body, they realized that it greatly resembled the legendary Magma Emperor.

Furthermore, the power that it emitted made it very possible for it to be the legendary Magma Emperor.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “You can return now. Your job here is done.”

“Damned brat, how could this Emperor possibly listen to your orders and be controlled by you?” The Magma Emperor let out an angry snarl. It turned around and planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Ahh~~~”

“Noo~~~”

However, before the Magma Emperor could do anything, it let out a miserable scream. Its body began to rapidly decrease in size. Soon, the several thousand meter-tall enormous body had turned into the Magma Emperor Sword that was covered in blazing flames.

“So disrespectful. It would seem... that I will have to properly teach you a lesson again.”

Chu Feng extended his hand and then made a grabbing gesture. The Magma Emperor Sword immediately flew into his grasp. Then, Chu Feng flicked the Magma Emperor Sword, causing it to let out a strange motion.

“Bastard, stop!” The Magma Emperor let out a scream again. This time around, the scream sounded even more miserable.

“You dare to continue to address me as bastard?” Chu Feng raised his hand and flicked the Magma Emperor Sword again. This time around, the motion was even stronger.

“I got it, this Emperor understands, okay? Quickly, stop,” The

Magma Emperor let out another miserable scream. However, that time around, it admitted defeat.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled complacently.

If the Magma Emperor had not fused with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Chu Feng would really not be able to sort it out.

After all, it was a fellow that did not fear death. To people that were not afraid of death, how could one possibly make it fear anything else?

However, the Magma Emperor had turned into an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was being controlled by Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng possessed many means to take care of it.

Earlier, Chu Feng had only flicked the sword lightly. Yet, that had caused the Magma Emperor incomparable pain.

Most importantly, the Magma Emperor was unable to die even if it wanted to. It could only endure that sort of pain.

Furthermore, that pain was simply unbearable. Regardless of how tough someone might be, they would not be able to endure that pain.

As such, it could only give in to Chu Feng. Even though it was extremely unwilling to do so, it could only obey Chu Feng's order.

Even if it was still unreconciled, there was nothing it could do to Chu Feng as the Incomplete Ancestral Armament had already been subdued by Chu Feng. As for it, it was only the Incomplete Ancestral Armament's soul.

Chu Feng would still be able to use the Incomplete Ancestral Armament without its help. However, it would have to endure that sort of pain inflicted by Chu Feng forever. Thus, when weighing the pros and cons, it naturally decided to submit to Chu Feng.

“Am... am I seeing things?”

At that moment, the people in the Transmogrification Gate that were filled with fear earlier were standing with mouths wide open as they stared at Chu Feng. They appeared to have been petrified.

They had all born witness to the scene of Chu Feng teaching the Magma Emperor a lesson. Merely... they felt it to be too unbelievable.

After all, it was the renowned Magma Emperor that Chu Feng was tormenting earlier.

Chapter 2112 – The Outcome Of The Battle

“So that’s the case, so that’s the case,” At that moment, the Elf King revealed an overjoyed expression. He gasped in admiration. “Although I do not know what sort of method little friend Chu Feng used, it appears that he has truly subdued the Magma Emperor, making it serve him.”

“Elf King, what you said is correct. Little friend Chu Feng is truly a miracle maker,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said to the Elf King. A smile covered his face. At the same time, there was also a trace of astonishment.

It would be one thing if it were some other existence that was subdued by Chu Feng. However, this was the Magma Emperor, the legendary Magma Emperor that nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago.

“So, Lord Chu Feng really, he really subdued the Magma Emperor?”

“Amazing! This is simply godly! Simply too unbelievable!” After hearing what the conversation between the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, the crowd’s expressions became even more brilliant.

Excitement. An indescribable excitement filled the hearts of everyone present.

“Woosh~~~”

After putting the Magma Emperor Sword away, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Immediately, a ray of light entered his hand.

It was a bracelet. That bracelet was precisely the Incomplete Ancestral Armament the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been using earlier.

“Dark Hall’s Hall Master, starting from now, you are to answer

all my questions.”

“If you do not answer honestly, I will make you suffer,” Chu Feng said to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Even though the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not injured, he appeared to have completely lost his will to battle.

A Dark Hall’s Hall Master like that did not pose any threat to Chu Feng.

“Trash like you is not qualified to get words out of my mouth,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said.

“Oh?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he formed a spirit formation on his palm and placed it onto the bracelet.

“You want to sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament? It is not that I am looking down on you. Rather, it is truly impossible for you to do that,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master said mockingly.

“Is that right?” Chu Feng smiled again. Then, he said, “If you had truly managed to completely subdue this Incomplete Imperial Armament, it would naturally be impossible for me to sever your connection with it with the power I currently possess.”

“However, the truth is that you have yet to completely subdue this Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Thus, it would not be hard for me to sever your connection with it.”

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s expression turned stiff. A trace of fear appeared in his eyes.

He felt that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable.

However, upon thinking about it some more, he recalled that Incomplete Ancestral Armaments were different from Imperial Armaments. Thus, it would be very difficult to sever the connection an Incomplete Ancestral Armament had with its master. It would be something impossible to accomplish even for

him.

When it would be impossible for even him, how would Chu Feng be able to accomplish it?

No, he absolutely refused to believe that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques could surpass his own.

Thus, the worry that he had in his heart soon vanished. He started to smile, and said to Chu Feng mockingly, "Since you said it that easily, go ahead and give it a try then."

"I shall see exactly how you, trash, can sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament."

"I'll satisfy you," As Chu Feng spoke, he exerted strength with his palm. Immediately, it started to shine brightly.

"Puu~~~"

The very next moment, the Dark Hall's Hall Master opened his mouth and vomited a mouthful of blood.

After he vomited that mouthful of blood, the Dark Hall's Hall Master's expression became extremely ugly. Blood was also flowing from his eyes, nose and ears.

Most importantly, his body became extremely weak. In fact, many people were even able to see that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was... trembling. He was trembling uncontrollably.

However, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had no time to concern himself with those things. He raised his head and looked to Chu Feng. "You, you actually..."

At that moment, his eyes were not only filled with anger, but also astonishment. However, it was mostly covered with pain.

Earlier, he had deeply looked down on Chu Feng. However, as matters stood, after he had personally fought against Chu Feng, he had no choice but to admit that Chu Feng was a very powerful opponent.

Not only did Chu Feng's talent for martial cultivation surpass his own, even Chu Feng's world spirit techniques surpassed his own.

He felt extremely unreconciled. The more he admitted the truth, the more pained he felt.

Painful, it was truly painful. This sort of pain did not originate from his body. Rather, it came from deep within his heart.

The pain that was the most difficult to endure in this world was pain from one's heart.

Even for the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that pain was something that he couldn't endure.

"No, this is not real, this is not real!"

Thus, the Dark Hall's Hall Master began to firmly clench his fists and attack the void before him. His attacks shattered the void unceasingly.

He was using that sort of method to relieve himself, to vent his anger and alleviate his pain.

As for Chu Feng, he stood there watching him, watching the struggle of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

He would not disturb the Dark Hall's Hall Master. To Chu Feng, he would rather watch him, watch this ruthless fellow, suffer torment to his heart and soul for a longer period of time. To him, that could be said to be a sort of punishment; a punishment for taking so many innocent lives.

That situation persisted for an entire hour. Only then did the Dark Hall's Hall Master slowly raise his head. At that moment, he had managed to calm his state of mind to a relatively stable level.

"Chu Feng, I am willing to answer your questions. However, you must first answer one of my questions," The Dark Hall's Hall Master said.

"Speak away," Chu Feng said.

“Why would someone like you be in a place like this? Even in the Outer World, you should be considered to be a genius, no?”

“Why did you come here? Why?” asked the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. A sense of irreconciliation was present in his tone when he asked that question. If it wasn’t for Chu Feng, his plan would’ve been a success.

In the beginning, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had only felt Chu Feng to be someone abandoned by the Outer World, someone unworthy of mention. The reason for that was because he was someone that would be considered to be a genius even in the Outer World. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly compare to him? However, as matters stood, he had changed his opinion of Chu Feng.

He began to face Chu Feng squarely. Merely, even he knew that it was too late to treat Chu Feng seriously now.

“I am unable to answer that question,” Chu Feng said, “It is your turn to answer me now.”

“What is your surname? How did you get here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Haha... you truly act as if you are high and above. Did you think that you were certain you could defeat me?”

“Chu Feng, you are mistaken. I still have a trump card that I have yet to use.”

“As long as I possess this trump card, you will forever be unable to defeat me in this Holy Land of Martialism,” After saying those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master revealed a strange smile.

“Trying to escape?”

Chu Feng realized that the situation was bad the moment he saw that smile. His body shifted, and he arrived before the Dark Hall’s Hall Master while holding the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader in his hand. Using the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader, he slashed at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Buzz~~~”

However, as Chu Feng’s Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader slashed at the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, a strange light was emitted from the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s body. That light instantly covered him.

That light was extremely powerful. It emitted an overwhelming aura of righteousness. Regardless of how Chu Feng attacked it, he was unable to break through it.

Chu Feng felt a sensation he had never felt before from that light. He knew that... with his strength, it would be impossible for him to break through that light.

Chapter 2113 – Realm of Gods

“Chu Feng, do you realize this now? No matter how talented you are, when before absolute power, you will remain only an ant.”

“I admit that I was defeated in the battle today. I was defeated by you in this one-on-one battle.”

“That’s why I will definitely win next time. Next time, I will truly make you all open your eyes wide in amazement.”

“I will let you all know exactly how powerful of a background this Hall Master possess.”

After saying those words, the light that covered the Dark Hall’s Hall Master suddenly grew even more dazzling. It was so dazzling that even Chu Feng was forced to cover his face and move back.

When that light disappeared, the people were shocked to discover that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had... disappeared.

“It’s that trick again,” Chu Feng started to frown.

That was precisely the method the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had used to escape the Moon Immortal at the Icesnow Plains.

That escape method was extremely powerful. Likely, it was some sort of escaping treasure. Chu Feng was frowning because there was nothing he could do about the escape technique that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Suddenly, rumbles could be heard. Chu Feng raised his head upward, and discovered that it was the Transmogrification Gate opening.

“Chu Feng.”

After the gate was opened, many young and beautiful figures rushed toward Chu Feng.

They were Xian Miaomiao, Sima Ying and the others. Among them, Xian Miaomiao's speed was the fastest. At that moment, she had already arrived before Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you are amazing. You made that Dark Hall's Hall Master piss his pants in terror. I shall see whether he will dare to act so arrogantly again in the future,” Xian Miaomiao was jumping and hopping; she was extremely happy. It was as if she was feeling very elated.

Lil' Red was standing on Xian Miaomiao's shoulder. Complacency filled its insect face. Bouncing vivaciously, it said, “That's right, that's right. Great Sir is so very awesome. As expected of my Great Sir.”

“Long live Lord Chu Feng, long live Lord Chu Feng.”

“Lord Chu Feng, you are simply our savior. You have saved our lives.”

“Lord Chu Feng, even the Magma Emperor has been subdued by you! You are simply akin to a god to us!!!”

“Finally, an overlord has appeared in our era. That overlord is you, Lord Chu Feng!!!”

“Thank you Lord Chu Feng, thank you Lord Chu Feng!!!”

.....

.....

Chu Feng discovered that, being led by the Elf King and the Heaven Reaching Immortal, many people came out of the Transmogrification Gate.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly shouted, “Everyone, please hear me out!!! The Dark Hall's Hall Master is still alive. You all cannot exit the Transmogrification Gate yet. Please return to the Transmogrification Gate immediately. The Holy Land of Martialism is still extremely dangerous right now.”

“Ah?!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd were all startled.

However, they soon managed to react to Chu Feng’s words. The people that came out of the Transmogrification Gate hurriedly pushed at the people behind them. They were even shouting, “Quickly, return, we must return. Didn’t you hear what Lord Chu Feng said? The outside is not safe yet. Quickly, return to the Transmogrification Gate.”

Chu Feng’s warning was very useful. The crowd could be said to be extremely obedient toward Chu Feng. Soon, those people that wanted to come out all obediently returned to the Transmogrification Gate.

However, the Elf King and the others still walked toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you would really succeed. This old man has truly not misjudged you.”

“Say, how did you manage to subdue the Magma Emperor? I am extremely curious,” The Compass Immortal and the others began to praise Chu Feng without holding back. Chu Feng had truly broadened their horizons today.

As for Chu Feng, he was smiling without saying anything. When he saw the Compass Immortal walking out of the Transmogrification Gate, a boulder on his heart finally dropped.

Earlier, he had been extremely worried that the Compass Immortal did not listen to him, and had not gone to find the Transmogrification Gate. And now... he was finally relieved.

“Chu Feng, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master should’ve escaped. What do you plan to do now?” The Elf King asked.

Once the Elf King asked those words, the crowd all grew quiet. Although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been driven away by Chu Feng, it remained that he was still alive. The most important matter now was how to take care of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“Seniors, please rest assured. I left an imprint on the Dark Hall’s Hall Master when I was fighting him. That imprint is very well-hidden. I believe that he will not be able to discover it.”

“I am able to pursue him by following that imprint. He cannot escape,” Chu Feng said.

“Was it when you used the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to injure him?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked in astonishment.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Never would I have expected that you already had a plan in mind, and had already planned ahead at that time,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal gasped in admiration upon finding out that his guess was true.

“That Dark Hall’s Hall Master escaped from the Icesnow Plains using that special technique. As he was able to use it once, he would inevitably be able to use it again.”

“As my strength is was about the same as his own, it would naturally be impossible for me to kill him with a single strike. As such, I had to make preparations ahead of time,” Chu Feng explained.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd did not say much. Instead, deep admiration appeared in their eyes.

Such a trick was something that even they would not necessarily be able to think of. Yet, Chu Feng had thought of it.

Not only did he think of it, he had also managed to accomplish it. That caused them to feel admiration for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Chu Feng, are we able to assist you?” The Elf King asked.

“I keep feeling that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master might be related to me. Thus... I feel that it’s better that I take care of this

personally,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. In that case, are you able to sense where the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is at now?” The Elf King asked.

“I am able to sense his direction. However, as the distance is too great, I am unable to ascertain his position,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, there is no time to waste. Go ahead and chase after him. You don’t have to worry about us,” The Elf King said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, he turned around and left.

He did not bring the Four Great Divine Beasts with him. The reason for that was because, as matters stood, the Four Great Divine Beasts would not be able to help him either.

As for the Four Great Divine Beasts, they understood Chu Feng’s intentions. Thus, they hid inside the Transmogrification Gate with everyone else.

.....

Chu Feng chased after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master continuously for many days without rest.

However, he suddenly stopped at this moment.

The reason for that was because enormous tall walls had appeared before him.

Those walls were glistening with light; they were walls formed with a spirit formation. Those spirit formation walls were extremely firm. They were impossible for even the current Chu Feng to destroy.

However, in the center of that world spirit wall was an enormous gate. Inside the gate... looked like a different world.

Firstly, the flowers, plants and trees inside the gate were all things that Chu Feng had never seen before. Furthermore, most importantly... An extremely dense Ancient Era’s aura was being emitted from that place.

It was as if all the grasses and trees in that place were all from the Ancient Era.

That place was the most famous location in the Holy Land of Martialism. It was also the most dangerous forbidden area.

The Ancient Era's Cemetery, also known as the Realm of Gods.

After Chu Feng stared at the Realm of Gods for a very long time, he carefully took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a ladle, a seemingly very ordinary ladle. However, when Chu Feng held that ladle before, his Inherited Bloodline had throbbed twice. It had caused a special reaction from his Inherited Bloodline.

Merely, after Chu Feng took a glance at the ladle, he put it away. Then, he raised his head and looked to the Realm of Gods.

“Never would I expect to come to this place by chasing after the Dark Hall's Hall Master.”

Chu Feng sighed emotionally. Back then, Chu Feng had wanted to come to the Realm of Gods before he even set foot into the Overlord Domain.

It was for no other reason than the fact that that ladle brought forth a special sensation to him. That sensation was so familiar, yet so indescribable. As for that ladle, it had originated from the Realm of Gods.

Merely, after Chu Feng entered the Overlord Domain, things had begun to happen unceasingly. He ended up going to a lot of places, to do a lot of things, and did not have the time to do what he wanted to do.

Thus, Chu Feng had not been able to go to the Realm of Gods the entire time.

And now, he was finally here. He had arrived at the place where he had wanted to go the entire time. Merely, upon getting there

Chu Feng was slightly hesitant, and slightly afraid of stepping into the Realm of Gods.

It was for no other reason than the words spoken by the Dark Hall's Hall Master before.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the Dark Hall's Hall Master didn't seem to be joking with him. It seemed that he truly possessed helpers in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, as matters stood, Chu Feng possessed no alternatives. He must enter the Realm of Gods. Even if enormous dangers awaited him in the Realm of Gods, he must still enter.

Chapter 2114 – Can Only Wait For Death

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng started to move. He turned into a ray of light and entered the Realm of Gods that no one dared to enter.

Upon entering the Realm of Gods, Chu Feng was able to sense the aura of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Thus, Chu Feng did not proceed randomly. Instead, he followed the aura of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

One thing worthy of being mentioned was that Chu Feng did not feel any danger upon entering the Realm of Gods.

Instead, the Realm of Gods was completely different from how he had imagined it to be. This place was not desolate and barren. Instead, there were lush amounts of plants. Furthermore, they were all plants that Chu Feng had never seen before.

Even the water flowing in this place was extra sweet. The reason why Chu Feng knew was because he had been bold enough to drink the water out of curiosity.

In short, everything in the Realm of Gods was very beautiful. This place was so beautiful that it resembled a land of Immortals, a paradise.

Forbidden area? That term seemed to be completely unrelated to this place.

The forest was very dense. It stretched for several hundred thousand miles. For ordinary people, they would not be able to walk through such a forest.

However, Chu Feng was able to rapidly pass through it. After passing through the forest, he entered a vast desert.

“Thump, thump~~~”

After he entered the desert, Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline

suddenly throbbed twice.

“It’s this feeling.”

Chu Feng stopped and grabbed the sand on the ground. Even though it was the first time that he had touched this sand, he felt a feeling of familiarity from it.

Even though Chu Feng’s Inherited Bloodline was no longer throbbing, the blood in his entire body was rolling intensely over and over.

It was boiling over. This was the sensation of one’s blood racing.

“This place is most definitely related to my Inherited Bloodline.”

“But, exactly what is it? Who would be able to tell me the answer?”

As Chu Feng looked to the desert as far as the eye could see, his gaze started to tense up.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved again. Like a wild dragon galloping through the desert, his speed was not only extremely fast, but he also gave rise to two streams of violent sand smoke that fluttered about in all directions.

Chu Feng continued to chase after the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Soon, he reached the depths of the desert.

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped at how vast the Realm of Gods was. It truly surpassed his imagination.

Most importantly, his Inherited Bloodline would, from time to time, end up throbbing twice.

That sort of sensation seemed as if it were reminding Chu Feng that this place... was his home.

“No longer moving?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng started to frown. He was able to sense that

the Dark Hall's Hall Master was no longer moving. Instead, he'd stopped somewhere.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng did not slow his pace. As matters stood, he had no choice but to continue onward.

After traveling some more, Chu Feng used his Heaven's Eyes to observe the place before him. Immediately, his expression turned sluggish.

Astonishment filled his face. Chu Feng was truly shocked. It had been a very long time since Chu Feng had been so intensely shocked. It was a feeling as if all of the pores in his body were opened.

A large amount of palaces appeared before him. Their numbers were magnificent, and simply boundless. They could not be described with the word 'city.' Instead, they would be better described as a 'country.'

The buildings in that place were all very imposing and domineering, each possessing their own unique charm.

Not to mention that the palaces were impregnable, merely by looking at their physical appearances, one could tell that they were not things that ordinary people were capable of designing. Before Chu Feng had arrived before those vast palaces, even he would not have been able to design palaces like them.

Chu Feng felt that the people capable of designing those sorts of palaces were most definitely extraordinary individuals.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that while the palaces were ancient, they did not emit any Ancient Era's aura.

It meant that those palaces should have been constructed after the Ancient Era.

More importantly, when Chu Feng saw those palaces, his Inherited Bloodline started to throb more intensely.

Although that state did not persist for long, it was the most intense reaction his Inherited Bloodline has had since he'd entered the Realm of Gods.

“It is time to find the answer. Regardless of whether I live or die, I must know what sort of relationship this place possesses with my clan.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng once again started to move onward. Passing through the various palaces, Chu Feng finally arrived before a vast gate, and discovered a familiar figure.

It was the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“You actually managed to find me?”

The Dark Hall's Hall Master revealed a shocked expression upon seeing Chu Feng.

“I will not let you get away this time around,” Chu Feng said.

“Hahaha, Chu Feng, you are truly amusing.”

“You actually dare to still threaten me in this place? Could it be that you don't know whose territory this Realm of Gods belongs to?” The Dark Hall's Hall Master spoke proudly.

“Could it be that this is your territory?” Chu Feng asked.

“That's right. I am the master of the Realm of Gods. This place... is ruled by me.”

“Although I do not know how you managed to find me, but since you're here, it will save me the trouble of going to find you.”

“Seniors, please show yourselves. Help me eliminate this arrogant and conceited man!” The Dark Hall's Hall Master shouted.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's body trembled. He was able to tell that the Dark Hall's Hall Master didn't seem to be joking around, nor did he seem to be trying to scare him. Instead, it seemed like he was truly calling for something.

Merely, were there even people in the Realm of Gods? Or... could it be that this place was occupied by his accomplices? Could that be the reason why he said this place belonged to him?

“Rumble~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was pondering, the gate behind the Dark Hall’s Hall Master suddenly opened.

At the moment when the gate was opened, Chu Feng’s expression immediately turned stiff.

There were several thousand silhouettes inside the gate. They stood behind the gate in orderly rows.

Those people were not wearing clothes. Instead, they wearing armor weaved with special straw over their naked bodies.

Although those suits of armor did not appear to be domineering, they were emitting a special sort of power. They seemed to be a sort of special treasure.

Furthermore, the parts of those people’s bodies that were not covered by their straw armor were tattooed with special veined patterns. Those patterns were strange. It seemed that they could increase their battle power.

In other words, they were spirit formations; a special sort of spirit formation that not even Chu Feng could grasp.

However, most importantly, those several thousand people were all Martial Emperor-level experts. Furthermore, the great majority of them were peak Martial Emperors.

Moreover, over a hundred of them were Half Martial Ancestors, actual Half Martial Ancestors.

Lastly, the three old men that lead them possessed exceptional auras. Even Chu Feng felt absolutely suppressed when before them.

This meant that those three old men were not only Half Martial

Ancestors, they should also be rank three Half Martial Ancestors. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to bring forth such an oppressive sensation upon Chu Feng.

“I have truly entered the tiger’s den.”

At that moment, Chu Feng laughed wryly. Even though he had anticipated something like this to begin with, even he felt a sense of despair after actually seeing the accomplices of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

After all, his opponents were too powerful. Faced with those opponents, Chu Feng would not be able to escape even if he wanted to.

“Hehe...” Seeing the despair on Chu Feng’s face, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s mouth rose into a smile. He felt extremely pleased.

Other than trampling Chu Feng the first time he met him, he had been suppressed by Chu Feng in every other encounter.

Especially the final battle. He was even defeated by Chu Feng. That made him, someone who felt himself to be a genius, someone who was extremely conceited, feel extremely unreconciled.

This time around, he was finally able to win against Chu Feng again. He was finally able to suppress Chu Feng again.

At that moment, he had decided to not give Chu Feng the chance to escape and become stronger. He was determined to kill Chu Feng right here.

Thinking about that, coldness flashed through the eyes of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “Kill him!!!”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After the Dark Hall’s Hall Master gave the order, the thousands of people all flew out from the gate uniformly and surrounded Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng closed his eyes. He was not someone who was fond of waiting for death. However... he knew that when faced with so many rank two Half Martial Ancestors and even three rank three Half Martial Ancestors, the only thing he could do was wait for death.

“We pay our respects to master!!!”

However, those people seemed to not plan to kill Chu Feng. Instead, they seemed to have kneeled and saluted the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

“You all are truly...”

At that moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes. He was furious. He had clearly prepared himself to be killed. Yet, they actually did not kill him. That sort of sensation of being ignored made him feel extremely displeased.

“This???” However, when he saw the scene before his eyes, his eyes shrunk, and his expression changed enormously.

In surprise, he discovered that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had the same expression as him. The mouth of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was opened even wider than his own. It was as if he had received an enormous shock.

The reason for that was because the thousands of people were not kneeling to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Instead, they were kneeling to Chu Feng.

Those thousands of powerful existences were kneeling to Chu Feng.

Chapter 2115 – Deemed To Be God

“Hey! What are you all doing?! Have you all gone mad?! Do you not even know who your master is?!” The Dark Hall’s Hall master shouted emotionally.

However, right at that moment, one of the three old rank three Half Martial Ancestors shouted back at him, “Shut your mouth!”

His oppressive might immediately sprung up everywhere with his words. Like a scarecrow, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was knocked flying before firmly smashing into one of the distant walls.

Blood sprayed out of his mouth as the sound of bones cracking was heard nonstop.

Merely a single attack had caused the Dark Hall’s Hall Master to be seriously injured.

Then, that old man pointed to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and shouted, “Men! Capture that arrogant man!”

After that old man spoke, several tens of people rushed over. Using special ropes, they ruthlessly tied up the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. They were so fierce and brutal that they simply did not treat the Dark Hall’s Hall Master as a human. Rather, they were treating him like an animal.

“What is going on? Exactly what is going on?! Why are you all treating me like this?!”

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master had gone mad. He was truly confused by the scene before him.

He had thought himself to be the master of this place the entire time. Even if the people here refused to comply with his orders, they should still protect him.

Yet, what was this? He, their grand master, was actually tied up

by them. As for Chu Feng... he was actually being worshipped by those people.

“Master, welcome home.”

Suddenly, the three kneeling men spoke in unison.

“Master, welcome home!!!”

After those three old men said those words, the thousands of experts kneeling to Chu Feng repeated their words in unison.

Regardless of their cultivation, their tones were all filled with respect and happiness as they said those words.

It was as if Chu Feng was truly this place’s master, that they were truly waiting for Chu Feng’s return.

“You all... this is?” In fact, even Chu Feng was puzzled.

He had firmly thought that the mysterious experts were the accomplices, the backing, of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Yet, based on the situation now, it seemed to definitely not be the case. Instead, without an exception, they had all gone against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. It was as if they were his, Chu Feng’s, backing instead.

“Master, we know that you are still confused.”

“However, please follow us. We will bring master to see a certain person. At that time, master will naturally understand everything,” The old man in the lead stood up and pointed to the gate. After that, he began to lead the way for Chu Feng.

Seeing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and followed them inside.

Guided by the crowd, Chu Feng entered the depths of the vast country.

Chu Feng suddenly gained a whole new understanding of that place. On his way, Chu Feng was able to see many mighty guards with Imperial Armaments guarding the various junctions. Merely

by their appearance, he was able to tell that they were very well trained.

After passing through the various guarded junctions, Chu Feng seemed to have entered the living area of the country. He was able to see children playing, as well as women and other passersby.

However, regardless of whether it might be the guards, the children or the women, their bodies were all covered with special veined patterns, and they were all wearing special straw clothes. They were extremely different.

Most importantly, when they saw Chu Feng, they all half knelt to the ground and bowed to Chu Feng respectfully. Then, they would respectfully say the same words: "We pay our respects to master."

In fact, Chu Feng was even able to sense that for the people with a young age, or those with similar ages as Chu Feng, they would become so emotional that their bodies started to tremble when they saw Chu Feng.

It was as if they were all longing for the day, longing for Chu Feng's appearance.

Even though he felt it was very inconceivable, Chu Feng faintly felt that those people felt great adoration for him.

It had already surpassed the degree of 'master.' It was as if, in their hearts, Chu Feng was a 'god.' That was the reason why they held Chu Feng in such reverence.

"Could it be that I am truly this place's master?"

Chu Feng started to have that sort of way of thinking. The reason for that was because he was certain that these people here were definitely not his clansmen.

It was a feeling that he had, a feeling that he felt from his first glance at these people. Although these people were extremely respectful toward Chu Feng, Chu Feng was certain that they were not his clansmen.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng became even more determined to know the truth. He wanted to get to know this place.

Finally, Chu Feng arrived before the entrance of a grand palace. When they reached the gates, everyone stopped.

“Master, please go ahead,” The old man leading the crowd pushed open the gate. However, he did not plan to enter. Instead, he indicated for Chu Feng to enter by himself.

Chu Feng first used his spirit power to run over the palace. After discovering that there was no one in the palace, he looked to the people surrounding him. They were all standing around him with heads lowered in a very humble manner. It was as if they did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face.

Their current appearance did not seem to indicate that they were afraid of Chu Feng. Instead, it seemed like more of an act of respect toward Chu Feng.

Thus, at that moment, there was only a single person looking Chu Feng head-on. That person was the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

The Dark Hall’s Hall Master was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with hatred and killing intent. In fact, Chu Feng was even able to hear the sound of his teeth grinding against one another.

It was clear that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master felt enormous hatred for Chu Feng.

“Hey hey hey, what’s going on with you? Didn’t you say that you were going to kill me?” Chu Feng looked to the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and mocked him with a smile on his face.

“Fuck yo...” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master cussed at Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

However, before he could finish cussing out at Chu Feng, a powerful palm landed onto his face.

It was that old rank three Half Martial Ancestor. He had arrived

before the Dark Hall's Hall Master out of nowhere.

“Pa, pa, pa~~~”

After the first slap to the face, that old man unleashed successive slaps on the Dark Hall's Hall Master. His slaps caused the Dark Hall's Hall Master to waver left and right. After that, his cheeks were completely mutilated, and his facial bones were shattered.

“My master is not someone that you can insult,” After ferociously slapping the Dark Hall's Hall Master, that old man spoke fiercely.

The gaze which that old man currently possessed was truly frightening. It was as if he could devour someone alive with only his gaze. Even the Dark Hall's Hall Master was frightened speechless by that gaze.

However, when that old man turned around to look at Chu Feng, a smile filled his face. Very respectfully, he pointed to the palace and said to Chu Feng, “Master, please go ahead.”

Chu Feng stopped hesitating. He nodded at that old man, then proceeded to enter through the gate.

Right after Chu Feng walked through the gate, the gate immediately closed.

After the gates were closed, Chu Feng was unable to see the situation outside even when using his Heaven's Eyes. This meant that the palace possessed an isolating effect.

“Master, go ahead and have a seat. As you've returned, there's no need for you to be so restrained,” Right at that moment, an old man's voice suddenly sounded.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng was immediately startled. It was clear... that there was someone in the palace.

Furthermore... the master of the palace was extremely powerful. He was even more powerful than the three old rank three Half Martial Ancestors outside.

Else, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to still be unable to determine the location of the person who had spoken earlier even after they spoke.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor?” At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart was filled with astonishment.

Rank three Half Martial Ancestors were extremely powerful already. Yet, this place actually had a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. In fact, it might even be possible for the person that spoke to possess a cultivation that surpassed rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

At that moment, an enormous wave emerged in Chu Feng’s heart.

This Realm of Gods truly possessed a numerous amount of experts. They were so unimaginably powerful.

One must know that before the appearance of these people, the Elf King was the strongest expert in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, his cultivation was only that of a peak Martial Emperor.

Yet, in this place, there were many Half Martial Ancestor-level experts. As for peak Martial Emperors, they were even more numerous. The strength of the power here truly astonished Chu Feng.

Most importantly, such a formidable power actually addressed Chu Feng as master, and treated him so respectfully.

The respect that they had shown Chu Feng was simply as if they were viewing him as a god.

Chapter 2116 – The Disclosure Of The Truth

“Master, please sit,” That old man’s voice sounded again. However, he still had yet to reveal himself.

“Senior, why don’t you show yourself?” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

“Master, it has only been several years since we last met, yet you’ve actually forgotten my voice?”

Suddenly, an old man appeared beside Chu Feng.

“Senior, it’s you?” Upon seeing that person, Chu Feng revealed an overjoyed expression.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng recognized that old man. He was none other than the blind old man he had met in the Eastern Sea Region.

“Master, please don’t address me as senior. To be precise, I am your servant,” As the blind old man said those words, he bowed to Chu Feng respectfully.

Although the blind old man was truly blind, he seemed to possess an extremely strong perception. Through his perception, he was able to see the entire world.

“Senior, what exactly is going on here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Please stop addressing me as ‘senior’, for that would be equivalent to cursing this old servant to die sooner. If you do not mind, you can address me as ‘Blind Servant,’” The blind old man said.

“Senior is a great benefactor to this Chu Feng. How could I address you as a servant? If you do not mind, I can address you as ‘Blind Uncle,’” Chu Feng said.

Actually, based on the difference in age between the two of them, Chu Feng should be addressing the blind old man as ‘grandpa.’

However, Chu Feng felt that the word ‘grandpa’ possessed too much seniority, and that the blind old man would refuse to accept being addressed as ‘grandpa.’ Thus, he decided to address him as ‘uncle.’

“Since master insists, then please address this old servant as such,” The blind old man said.

“Blind Uncle, exactly what is going on here? Where is Zi Ling right now?” Chu Feng asked in succession.

He knew that the blind old man had taken Zi Ling away a long time ago. Chu Feng had been worried about Zi Ling’s safety the entire time.

“Master, please have a seat. I’ll slowly tell you everything,” The blind old man said.

Hearing that, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and took a seat. He was able to tell that this blind old man would not tell him anything should he not sit.

It was different from before. Chu Feng seemed to really be their master. All the people in this Realm of Gods, regardless of what their cultivation might be, regardless of how much more powerful they were compared to Chu Feng, none of them dared to disrespect Chu Feng.

“I shall start explaining from this place known as the Realm of Gods to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism. This place is the former site of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan was the most powerful clan in the Holy Land of Martialism after the Ancient Era passed. In their era, no one dared to disobey them. They were the true rulers of this land.”

“The Ancient Era’s Elves that deem themselves to be the rulers now were also extremely respectful toward master’s clan back then. Every year, they would always pay enormous tribute to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“The so-called Five Emperors after the Ancient Era, if they were placed before master’s clan, they would all be nothing more than ants,” The blind old man said.

“My clan?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was surprised. He had actually already had the thought that he possessed a special relationship with the Realm of Gods, that the Realm of Gods had a very high chance of being a remnant of his clan. Merely, he did not dare to ascertain anything.

The reason for all that was because the Old Ape that he met on the Heavenly Road had told him that his clan originated from this world. Merely, the Old Ape did not tell him whether remnants of his clan remained in this world. He only said... that the people of this world had already forgotten about his clan.

“Blind Uncle, in that case, are there any of my clansmen left in this place?”

“Why did they decide to enter the Outer World?”

“Moreover, do you have any news of them now?” Chu Feng asked in succession.

“Master, please don’t be anxious. This old servant will explain everything to you,” The blind old man said, “Currently, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan is in the Outer World. This old servant possess a low status. Thus, I do not have any news regarding them.”

“As for why they decided to enter the Outer World, it was because a great lord appeared in the Chu Heavenly Clan back then. That person possessed extremely powerful strength that surpassed all of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s previous Clan Chiefs. He was confident that he would be able to let the Chu Heavenly Clan obtain an acknowledged place even in the Outer World.”

“At that time, although the Chu Heavenly Clan was the fully deserving overlord of the Holy Land of Martialism, none of its

clansmen were willing to stay in this place for the rest of their lives. Thus, they ended up deciding to proceed for the Outer World together.”

“Back then, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan planned to leave. However, they were unwilling to abandon this place. Thus, that great lord ordered us, their servants, to stay here and guard this place.”

“However, that great lord was still worried. He feared that there would be people in the Holy Land of Martialism that would pretend to be people from the Chu Heavenly Clan and ruin the Chu Heavenly Clan’s reputation.”

“Thus, before leaving, he had eliminated the memory of the Chu Heavenly Clan from all the people in the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, as matters stood, there was no one in the Holy Land of Martialism that knows that the Chu Heavenly Clan was the true ruler after the Ancient Era.”

“All these years, us, the servants, have guarded this place the entire time. We have never set foot outside,” The blind old man explained.

“In that case, the reason why the Realm of Gods possessed its ferocious name, the reason why so many people would die in the Realm of Gods was all caused by you all?” Chu Feng asked.

“Throughout our generations, we have followed that great lord’s order. We are not allowed to let the people of this world know about our existence, or the existence of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“However, we would also not willfully slaughter the innocent. Merely, for the sake of preventing others from knowing about us, we set up many traps in this place. Many of the people who died here were killed after they triggered the traps, and not because they were killed by us.”

“Of course, we will also warn them before they encounter those

traps. Merely, they refused to listen, and insisted on entering. As such, their deaths cannot be blamed on us,” The blind old man explained.

“But, didn’t they say that all the people that set foot into this place will definitely end up dying?” Chu Feng asked.

“That was all falsehoods,” The blind old man said.

“I’ve also heard that this place possessed a special sort of germ. If one were to be infected by it, one would definitely die. Furthermore, all the people that entered this place would be infected by it.”

“Furthermore, it is said that those below the Martial Emperor level will definitely die if they are inflicted by that germ. Is that true?” Chu Feng asked.

“That germ does exist. It is something emitted by a special plant in this place. However, not everyone will be infected by it. Only those that enter the area where that plant is grown will be infected,” The blind old man explained.

“So that’s the case. But, if you all just do not wish for people to know about this place, wouldn’t it be fine to seal this place away? Why go through that much trouble?” Chu Feng asked.

“That great lord said that the gates to this place could not be closed. If we were to close the gates, it would signify that we are afraid. The Chu Heavenly Clan does not fear anyone,” The blind old man said.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng truly understood. His clan was most definitely extremely conceited. They were so conceited that while they did not wish for people to know about this place, they refused to conceal it.

In the end, even though Chu Feng’s clan had left, even though they had wiped away the memories regarding them from everyone...

The Chu Heavenly Clan actually did not wish for the people to truly forget about them.

Thus, even though they had left, they still left behind fear, a fear of the unknown.

Using that fear, they warned the people from the Holy Land of Martialism that regardless of how powerful they might become, there remained a power they could not contend against in this Holy Land of Martialism.

“But, Blind Uncle... why would you be in the Eastern Sea Region back then? At that time... you?” Chu Feng asked.

“This old servant had already known about master’s identity at that time. Furthermore, I have been secretly protecting you ever since the day you were brought out of the Heavenly Road by Huangfu Haoyue. Merely, because Lord Xuanyuan had ordered it, this old servant did not dare to inform you of the truth,” The blind old man said.

“Lord Xuanyuan? Who is this Lord Xuanyuan that you speak of?” Chu Feng asked.

“He is your father,” The blind old man answered.

Chapter 2117 – [Mountain-like](#) Paternal Love

“My father?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s body trembled. A sensation that he had never felt before filled his entire body.

“Logically, us servants are not allowed to leave this place. It was Lord Xuanyuan who found this old servant and ordered this old servant to protect you. It is only because of that that an exception was made and this old servant was allowed to leave this place.”

“While Lord Xuanyuan had ordered this old servant to protect you... he had also ordered that I must not interfere unless I absolutely must.”

“Lord Xuanyuan said that, for certain trials, you must experience them personally. Only by personally experiencing them would you be able to truly mature.”

“Thus, this old servant naturally could not tell you that he has been protecting you the entire time. The reason for that was because Lord Xuanyuan said that if you are to find out that you had someone protecting you the entire time, you would become overly confident. At that time, regardless of what sort of enemy you faced, regardless of what sort of calamity you faced, you would not be scared.”

“In truth, this old servant has never actually gone out to save you. It could be said that... master’s current level of progress is completely unrelated to this old servant. Master, you have gotten this far by relying on yourself.”

“I think that this is also what Lord Xuanyuan wanted,” The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, the sensation that filled Chu Feng’s entire body grew even more intense. In fact, Chu Feng’s eyes had grown somewhat red.

At that moment, he felt a sensation that he had never felt in his

entire life.

It was paternal love. Paternal love from his biological father.

In the past, Chu Feng had thought that he had caused his father to be driven out of the Chu Clan and suffer in the Heavenly Road because he was lacking in talent.

Chu Feng felt that he had let his father down, that he could not expect anything from his father. Even when he entered the Heavenly Road, Chu Feng did not get the chance to see his father.

Chu Feng had not blamed his father. He only blamed himself. He blamed himself for being too weak, so weak that he brought harm upon his parents.

As such, Chu Feng had never thought that his father would do anything for him.

However, today, after hearing what the blind old man said, Chu Feng came to know the truth.

Chu Feng realized that he had not met this blind old man, this grand benefactor of his, by coincidence. Instead, it had been arranged by his father.

It turned out that his father had not abandoned him. On the contrary, he had the blind old man watch over him and protect him from the shadows the entire time.

Even though Chu Feng had suffered quite a bit and received quite a bit of humiliation over the years, and the blind old man had not appeared to help him during those times, it remained that the blind old man had been watching over him.

If Chu Feng had truly faced death, the blind old man would have acted to save him.

Most importantly, it was per his father's orders that the blind old man had protected Chu Feng this entire time.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked with a serious expression, "Blind

Uncle, you said that it was my father that came to find you?" The reason for that was because he had a plan?.

"That is indeed the case," The blind old man nodded.

"When did that happen?" Chu Feng asked.

"It was after you were brought out of the Heavenly Road by Huangfu Haoyue," The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled once again.

Logically, the Heavenly Road was the Chu Clan's Forbidden Area. That place should have been a prison for Chu Feng's father.

Chu Feng believed that his father and the Old Ape were both enduring torment in that forbidden area. Else, it would be impossible for their cultivations to be decreasing.

Furthermore, it seemed that the Chu Clan had people monitoring that forbidden area the entire time. That was the reason why they were unable to leave.

Logically, Chu Feng's father should not have been able to leave the Heavenly Road's forbidden area.

However, it would appear that he had been mistaken. Chu Feng's father had clearly left that forbidden area before. Else, how could he have found the blind old man and had him protect him?

Merely, since that forbidden area was incapable of trapping his father, why would his father not escape with the Old Ape?

Wouldn't their cultivations decrease by staying in the forbidden area? If they were to stay there for too long, they would become cripples!

Or, could it be that the person guarding his father was extremely powerful? So powerful that even his father could not escape?

Or, could it be that Chu Feng's father was willing to accept the punishment, that he had decided not to escape even though he was able to?

All sorts of questions hovered in Chu Feng's mind. Merely, even after thinking about it for a very long time, Chu Feng was unable to think of an answer.

“Due to Lord Xuanyuan's order, this old servant was unable to help you too much. I needed to allow you to mature by yourself.”

“However, I managed to see the affection you possessed toward Miss Zi Ling and the others, as well as the determination that they had in helping you.”

“Thus, I took them as my disciples. Using my abilities, I helped them increase their cultivations. It could be said that I have, on your behalf, helped them accomplish their cherished desires.”

“However, their foundations are truly too weak. No matter how this old servant helped them, they were still unable to actually catch up to you, much less help you.”

“In the end, those two boys Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi ended up having master help them instead,” When mentioning that matter, the blind old man started to smile. It was a self-mocking smile. It was as if he was declaring that his disciples were still no match for Chu Feng.

“But, as for Zi Ling...” When the blind old man said those words, his expression changed. He wanted to say something, but ended up hesitating.

Chu Feng realized that something was wrong and immediately stood up to ask, “Blind Uncle, what happened to Zi Ling?”

“Back then, you were being hunted by the Four Great Imperial Clans. Due to being unable to help you, Zi Ling and the others were feeling extremely pained.”

“Furthermore, as I inadvertently mentioned a taboo technique to Zi Ling before, Zi Ling started to have an idea at that time.”

“Later on, when I went to visit them, Zi Ling started to beg me to use that taboo technique to increase her power.”

“Originally, I refused her. After all, that taboo technique is extremely dangerous. However, Zi Ling insisted on attempting it. She said that if she could not share life’s joys and sorrows with you, master, then she would be your woman in vain. That she would rather be dead than alive.”

“When I heard those words, this old servant truly realized the feelings Miss Zi Ling has toward you.”

“In the end, I was unable to win against her, and ended up using that taboo technique,” The blind old man said.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt pain in his heart. He had thought the entire time that it had been good for Zi Ling and the others to stay with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal.

He had not expected that having them stay with the Weaponry Refinement Immortal would cause them such great pain. That was something that Chu Feng had overlooked.

As matters stood, he put himself in their shoes and was able to feel the pain that Zi Ling and the others felt. The more he thought about it, the more pained he felt. Chu Feng felt that he had truly wronged Zi Ling and the others enormously.

“Blind Uncle, what sort of taboo technique is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is a taboo technique beneficial to Divine Bodies. That taboo technique originated from the Ancient Era. It was originally one of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s secret techniques.”

“However, that secret technique is useless for the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, though there would occasionally be Divine Bodies born among us servants. The Chu Heavenly Clan was very fond of us servants. As such, they taught us that secret technique.”

“After using that secret technique, a Divine Body will be able to gain complete mastery over their Divine Power, fusing into one with it. With that, their talent would increase enormously.”

“However, it is also extremely dangerous. Furthermore, one would have to endure pain so great that it is nearly unbearable.”

“Many people have died to that taboo technique due to being unable to endure the pain. Their bodies would explode, and their souls extinguished.”

“As that forbidden technique is incapable of stopping once it is used, one will either come out alive or die while using it.”

“Thus, even for us, we would not dare to use that forbidden technique,” The blind old man said.

Mountain-like → enormous.

Chapter 2118 – Heavenly Bloodline

“Then, what about Zi Ling? Did she use that taboo technique?” Chu Feng asked hurriedly.

“She did,” The blind old man answered.

“Then, what was the outcome?” Chu Feng asked hurriedly.

“Miss Zi Ling managed to come out alive. Merely...”

“Merely?” Chu Feng became even more anxious. From the reaction of the blind old man, he sensed that something was amiss.

However, Chu Feng did not reveal his anxiety. He was afraid that the blind old man would blame himself.

“Although she managed to survive it, she received an enormous backlash from it. It is a backlash that even I am unable to suppress,” Speaking those words, the blind old man revealed an expression filled with self-blame.

Suddenly, the blind old man’s knees bent. With a ‘putt,’ he kneeled before Chu Feng.

He smashed his head to the ground and said, “Master, it is all my fault. I should not have had the impulse to have Zi Ling use a taboo technique that even we cannot control, and I ended up hurting her because of it.”

“Master, I know that you deeply love Miss Zi Ling. This is all this old servant’s fault. Master, please punish this old servant severely!!!” After saying those words, the blind old man ruthlessly smashed his head into the ground again. The power of that smash was so strong that the palace hall started to rumble.

“Blind Uncle, please stand up.” Chu Feng hurriedly lent an arm to help the blind old man up. However, he was unable to move the blind old man at all.

“Blind Uncle, please get back up. I merely wish to know how Zi

Ling is now, and whether she is still alive. I do not hold any blame towards you,” Chu Feng’s voice became a bit hoarse. He was extremely afraid that Zi Ling would already be dead.

However, Chu Feng could not reveal his worries. The reason for that was because even though he had been very careful when he had asked those questions, the blind old man had still reacted in such a manner. If he were to show his worries, the blind old man would blame himself even more.

“This old servant is uncertain,” The blind old man shook his head.

“Uncertain?” Chu Feng became even more anxious. After all, Zi Ling was truly too important to him.

However, even though his heart was burning with anxiety, he still had to consider the blind old man’s feelings. Thus, he asked gently, “Blind Uncle, exactly what is going on?”

“This old servant was truly powerless to deal with Miss Zi Ling’s situation.”

“Thus, I could only request Lord Xuanyuan for help. After Lord Xuanyuan arrived, he took Miss Zi Ling away.”

“Right now, Miss Zi Ling should be in the Heavenly Road with Lord Xuanyuan.”

“Thus, this old servant truly does not know of Miss Zi Ling’s situation right now,” The blind old man explained.

“Never would I have expected that my father would help Zi Ling,” Chu Feng was very surprised. However, his anxiety had been alleviated greatly.

Even though Chu Feng did not know anything about his father, and although his father was a only fuzzy image in his heart, he also felt his father to be an imposing figure. He felt that if his father was willing to help in anything, that matter would definitely be taken care of.

“Although Lord Xuanyuan is a cold and detached individual, he is most definitely not heartless. Else, he would not have left a communication talisman so that I could contact him when needed,” The blind old man explained.

“Since my father is helping, I believe Zi Ling will be fine. Blind Uncle, please stand up,” Chu Feng tried to help the blind old man up again.

“Please punish this old servant severely for making his own decision without consulting master,” However, the blind old man remained extremely stubborn, and refused to stand back up.

“Blind Uncle, you have helped me enormously. Furthermore, didn’t you only agree to Zi Ling’s demand because you wanted to help her?”

“Actually, even if it was me, I would also have agreed to have Zi Ling using that taboo technique. After all, the path of martial cultivation is a path that goes against the way of nature. If one does not take risks, one will not be able to obtain great accomplishments,” Chu Feng said.

“Master, you truly do not blame this old servant?” The blind old man asked.

“I only possess gratitude toward you,” Chu Feng tried to help the blind old man up again.

However, the blind old man still refused to get up. Instead, he said, “Master, if you are to say it like that, this old servant is even more ashamed.”

“Blind Uncle, is there a need for you to insist on this? Can you not treat me as your master? Can’t you treat me as a junior like you did back then?” Chu Feng asked.

He was actually extremely uncomfortable with the blind old man’s current attitude. He was clearly an extremely powerful existence that surpassed reasonable limits. Yet, he was acting so

respectfully toward him, and would even kneel and kowtow to him. Chu Feng was truly unable to get used to it.

Furthermore, in Chu Feng's heart, the blind old man was a senior that he held great respect for. Moreover, the blind old man was a great benefactor to him.

This way of thinking was already deeply rooted in Chu Feng's heart. Thus, it was truly difficult for him to change it now.

"This old servant was born a servant. I was born to serve the Chu Heavenly Clan."

"Although the Chu Heavenly Clan left long ago, and this old servant has become the head of the servants, I never dare to forget my identity," The blind old man said.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart felt extremely complicated. He had already discovered that the people in this place were extremely loyal and devoted to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Merely, it was truly rare for these sorts of people to be so loyal and devoted to the Chu Heavenly Clan after they had left this place for so long.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the blind old man's loyalty did not seem to be fake. Instead, it originated from the bottom of his heart. This... was truly remarkable.

"Blind Uncle, please stand up. I still have a lot of things that I wish to ask you," Chu Feng urged again.

"Okay," This time around, the blind old man did not refuse.

"Blind Uncle, let's sit and talk," Chu Feng helped the blind old man to a chair.

"See, this is the way it should be," After seating the blind old man, Chu Feng revealed a smile.

"Master, this old servant knows that you are still confused about a lot of things. Please go ahead and ask me whatever it is that you

are confused about. If this old servant knows the answer to your questions, I will definitely answer them,” The blind old man said.

“Blind Uncle, in that case, what’s the deal with that Dark Hall’s Hall Master?” Chu Feng asked.

When Chu Feng mentioned that matter, the blind old man heaved a long sigh. Then, he said, “The Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed an Inherited Bloodline that resembled master’s. Back then, he had accidentally arrived at this place. At that time, this old servant was not present. Thus, my subordinates mistook him for the master of this place, and were extremely hospitable toward him.”

“It was only later that they found out that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Although he is from the Outer World, he belongs to the Ying Heavenly Clan,” The blind old man said.

“Ying Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng’s gaze flashed.

“Precisely. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master is surnamed Ying, and named Chong. His name is Ying Chong.”

“While he is from the Outer World, and possesses a Heavenly Bloodline, he is not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, he is someone from the Ying Heavenly Clan,” The blind old man said.

“No wonder,” Chu Feng suddenly recalled that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master always wore a headdress on his head. On that headdress was the character ‘Ying.’

Furthermore, from what the blind old man said, Chu Feng came to know that their Inherited Bloodline was truly called the Heavenly Bloodline.

Furthermore, his bloodline should be a bloodline above Imperial Bloodlines.

In the Eastern Sea Region, there were many Royal Clans. Those

people all possessed Royal Bloodlines.

In the Holy Land of Martialism, there were the Four Great Imperial Clans. The people from the Four Great Imperial Clans all possessed Imperial Bloodlines.

Likely, there were many Heavenly Clans in the Outer World. The bloodlines that the clansmen of the Heavenly Clans possessed should be Heavenly Bloodlines.

When looking at it that way, it was completely reasonable for Chu Feng's Inherited Bloodline to be able to suppress Imperial Bloodlines. After all, that was a so-called suppression from a higher level.

After ascertaining that the Dark Hall's Hall Master was not someone from his Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng felt a lot more at ease.

After all, the Dark Hall's Hall Master had done all sorts of evil. If he were someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng would feel responsible. However, since he was not, there was no reason for Chu Feng to continue to have that burden in his heart.

Chapter 2119 – Chu Heavenly Clan

“In that case, how was it discovered that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

“The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan all have black hair. However, Ying Chong has brown hair. This caused my subordinates to be wary of him. After making inquiries, they came to know about Ying Chong’s true identity.”

“However, master, please rest assured. Although Yin Chong tried to be clever only to end up with an egg on his face, he does not know the true reason why we are here.”

“He felt the entire time that we were subdued by his Heavenly Bloodline, and recognized him as our master because of that,” The blind old man said.

“However, it remains that he has discovered you all. Thus, why have you all not killed him? Do you all not fear that he will spread news of you all when he leaves?” Chu Feng asked.

“If he were someone from the Holy Land of Martialism, we would not have spared him regardless of who he might be. However, it remains that he is from the Outer World.”

“We do not know a lot about the Outer World. All we know is that there are a lot of experts in the Outer World.”

“While we are not people that are afraid of death, we did not wish to invite troubles for our masters. After all, the Chu Heavenly Clan is also located in the Outer World.”

“That is why we decided to accept our error and adapt to it. We ended up letting Ying Chong leave. However, master, please rest assured, we never helped Ying Chong with anything,” The blind old man said.

“The Dark Hall’s Hall Master has done all sorts of evil. He

absolutely cannot be spared,” Chu Feng said.

“If master wants to kill him, he will absolutely not be allowed to live. Merely, as master is wearied in the journey here, you should first properly rest yourself now that you’ve returned home.”

“Tomorrow, I will cripple that Ying Chong’s cultivation on master’s behalf. Then, master can personally take him away and behead him before the people of the Holy Land of Martialism,” The blind old man said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. After all, killing the Dark Hall’s Hall Master here and publicly executing the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed completely different connotations.

Most importantly, should he kill the Dark Hall’s Hall Master before the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, he would be able to bring ease to their hearts and let them be certain that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had died.

After that, Chu Feng asked the blind old man some more questions.

Among them was the question of whether or not there was a formation that could lead to the Outer World in this place.

The result was as Chu Feng had anticipated. There was indeed a formation that lead to the Outer World in the Realm of Gods. That spirit formation was called... the ‘Stairway to Heaven.’

“Did Qing Xuantian leave the Holy Land of Martialism through the Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that it was definitely impossible for Qing Xuantian to have secluded himself in the mountains because if he had, he would have definitely revealed himself after the recent events had occurred.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had learned from the Four Great Divine Beasts that Qing Xuantian was not very old when he became the overlord of the Holy Land of Martialism. He

had only been a member of the younger generation.

Thus, Chu Feng had deduced that he should not have died. Even if he had been afflicted with some sort of illness, he should still be alive. That was the premonition Chu Feng had.

However, if Qing Xuantian was still alive, he would definitely not be in the Holy Land of Martialism.

If he was no longer in the Holy Land of Martialism, it would mean that he had entered the Outer World.

However, if he had entered the Outer World, then, at that time... the Stairway to Heaven in the Misty Peak should have yet to be discovered.

Thus, the only way there should be a Stairway to Heaven in the Realm of Gods.

“Qing Xuantian was indeed here ten thousand years ago. He had also wanted to use the Stairway to Heaven.”

“His cultivation at that time... was rank one Half Martial Ancestor.”

“With that level of cultivation, he would naturally not be a match for me. Thus, we naturally refused him,” The blind old man said.

“In that case, do you know where he went afterwards?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not know,” The blind old man shook his head.

“In that case, did a woman come here over a dozen years ago to request the usage of the Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Feng asked.

“Master, actually, when you were in the Elf Kingdom that time, this old servant was also there.”

“Thus, this old man heard the entire conversation between you and the Elf King.”

“We know that the Elf King had entered our Realm of Gods over a

dozen years ago. Merely... we do not know anything about Xian Miaomiao's mother," The blind old man said.

"In that case, Xian Miaomiao's mother did not come to the Stairway to Heaven here?" Chu Feng asked.

"If the Stairway to Heaven is activated, it will give off an enormous reaction. It would be impossible for us to miss it," The blind old man said.

"I understand," Chu Feng asked no more questions. He knew that the blind old man would not deceive him.

However, he kept feeling that Qing Xuantian and Xian Miaomiao's mother should have definitely left this place.

'Since they didn't use the Stairway to Heaven here, could it be that they've truly used the Misty Peak's Stairway to Heaven?'

'Or could it be that they've managed to find other ways to leave this place?' Chu Feng pondered.

Afterward, Chu Feng chatted with the blind old man for a long time. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had a whole lot of questions.

It was not only questions about the Chu Heavenly Clan's past; Chu Feng was even very curious as to how the blind old man had taught Zi Ling and the others.

As they chatted, time passed by extremely fast. The bright day turned into night in the blink of an eye.

During that period of time, per Chu Feng's orders, the Dark Hall's Hall Master was tied up and sent to their prison.

The Dark Hall's Hall Master was no fool. As matters stood, he had realized that the people of this place deemed him their master back then because they had mistaken him for someone else.

Their actual master was Chu Feng.

Thus, he was depressed to discover that the person that had

entered the tigers' den today was not Chu Feng. Instead, it was him.

“Why would it be like this? I am truly too unlucky.”

“No, that Chu Feng is surnamed Chu. Could he be from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“No, it's most definitely a coincidence. How could that guy be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

Due to the fact that the people of this place refused to speak with the Dark Hall's Hall Master, the Dark Hall's Hall Master did not know about Chu Feng's actual identity, and could only make wild guesses.

Right at that moment, a female's voice was suddenly heard. “What's wrong? When you mentioned the Chu Heavenly Clan, you revealed a trace of fear in your eyes. Could the Chu Heavenly Clan be very powerful in the Outer World?”

When that voice was heard, the Dark Hall's Hall Master immediately revealed an overjoyed expression.

Then, spiritedly, he looked at his surroundings. After discovering that he was not being monitored, he said happily, “Xue Ji, it's you. You've returned. How was it? What did you manage to discover? Am I able to escape?”

“Buzz~~~”

After the Dark Hall's Hall Master said those words, black gaseous flames suddenly appeared from thin air in his cell. After the black gaseous flames appeared, they hovered before the Dark Hall's Hall Master and turned into an exceptional beauty.

That beauty was Xue Ji.

After seeing Xue Ji, the Dark Hall's Hall Master asked impatiently, “Xue Ji, quickly, say something. Exactly how was it? Are we able to escape?”

“There is a Stairway to Heaven here. We can enter the Outer World through the Stairway to Heaven,” Xue Ji said.

“Great, this is great. The heavens are helping me,” Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was overjoyed. Then, his gaze turned cold. Fiercely, he exclaimed, “After returning to the Outer World, I’ll inform my clansmen of the things that happened here. At that time, these ignorant fools will suffer.”

“However, if they are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, would your clansmen even bother to deal with them after you tell them what you’ve encountered here?” Xue Ji asked.

Hearing those words, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was startled. His gaze became extremely complicated. Cautiously, he asked, “What did you manage to scout out? Chu Feng... he couldn’t possibly really be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, right? Could this place be constructed by the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“This place is a remnant of the Chu Heavenly Clan. As for Chu Feng... he is precisely a descendant of the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Xue Ji said.

“He’s really someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?!”

“No, why would it be like this?!”

“Why would it turn out like this?!”

After hearing what Xue Ji said, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s expression immediately changed. He became extremely emotional. Contained within his eyes... was the emotion of despair.

Chapter 2120 – Time To Go

“Why would it be like this, why would it be like this?”

“That Chu Feng, he’s actually really someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“No wonder. No wonder his talent actually surpasses my own.”

After a moment of being overwhelmed with emotions, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was extremely depressed. He looked like a deflated ball.

As for Xue Ji, she stood there watching the Dark Hall’s Hall Master with a light smile on her face. No one knew what she was thinking.

However, she did not continue to ask the Dark Hall’s Hall Master about the strength of the Chu Heavenly Clan in the Outer World.

As she was an extremely intelligent woman, she had already managed to have an idea of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s strength merely by seeing the reaction from the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

Regardless of how powerful the Chu Heavenly Clan might be, it was most definitely a power that the Ying Heavenly Clan could not afford to offend.

Else, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master would not have reacted in such an alarmed and frightened manner.

Suddenly, Xue Ji said, “Lord Hall Master, it’s time for you to go.”

“Right, let’s go. We must quickly leave this place,” The Dark Hall’s Hall Master nodded repeatedly.

At that moment, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master no longer possessed any of the grandeur he had showed before. All he possessed was the impatience to quickly escape this place.

Revenge? He had already tossed the concept of revenge out of his mind. He no longer dared to even think about revenge.

To the current him, he would be in immense joy if he didn't have to make reprisals.

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, a flash of coldness shone through Xue Ji's eyes. Then, her lily-white hand, like a sharp blade, pierced into the dantian of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“Xue Ji, you!!!”

Sensing the pain from his dantian and the blood spilling out of his abdomen, the Dark Hall's Hall Master stared at Xue Ji blankly. Evidently... he had never expected something like this.

“What? You still don't understand? Didn't I say that it was time for you to go?” Xue Ji's beautiful eyes narrowed into two beautiful crescents. Her smile was so very charming. Yet, when seen by the Dark Hall's Hall Master, her smile appeared to very wicked.

“No!!!” Suddenly, the expression of the Dark Hall's Hall Master changed enormously. He revealed an unbearable pain.

He was sensing that his cultivation, his everything, was being stripped away from him, being sucked into Xue Ji's body.

Not only was Xue Ji planning to destroy his cultivation, she was planning to absorb his cultivation and deprive him of his power.

“You've been using me the entire time?” The Dark Hall's Hall Master lifted his head and stared at Xue Ji fiercely.

“Why else did you think I would teach you such a demonic technique instead of using it myself?” Xue Ji said.

“Damn you! You've actually used me as an offering for your own cultivation! You only helped me so I could accumulate power for you! You were waiting for this moment so that you could consume my cultivation!” Fury filled the eyes of the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

“You've only found out about that now? You are truly slow,” Xue Ji said, “Actually, I had thought very highly of you. Originally, I

had planned to use you for a bit longer, planned to let you live for a bit longer.”

“However, you couldn’t even help me refine all those lives in the Transmogrification Gate.”

“You’ve made me waste all those cultivation resources. As such, I must say that you have greatly disappointed me.”

“How could trash like you possibly accomplish anything great in the Outer World?”

“Thus, you cannot blame me for killing you now.”

“If you want to blame someone, blame yourself for being too useless.”

“I’ll kill you!” Suddenly, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master shouted angrily. He gained strength out of nowhere, clenched his fist and prepared to attack Xue Ji.

“Wuuahh!!!” However, right after he raised his fist, he let out a miserable scream.

At that moment, the body of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master was dismembered, and then pulled into Xue Ji’s palm.

Everything happened too quickly. In merely a short moment, everything was over.

By the time Xue Ji pulled back her palm, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had turned into a pile of bones. His bones were completely dull, as even his source energy was sucked dry by Xue Ji.

Only his clothes, his Cosmos Sack and his headdress with the character Ying on it landed beside the pile of bones.

“Woosh~~~”

Xue Ji swung her sleeve, and the Cosmos Sack was sucked into her sleeve. Then... the clothes of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master began to float.

Xue Ji used the clothes to wipe the lily-white hand she had used to kill the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

While wiping her hand clean, she looked to the pile of bones with a smile on her face and sighed. "It would seem that I'll have to journey to the Outer World by myself."

"However, it should be very interesting," After saying those words, a beautiful and alluring smile emerged on Xue Ji's face.

"Woosh~~~"

Xue Ji's body suddenly shifted. She turned into black gaseous flames that hovered for a while before entering the void and disappearing.

.....

Chu Feng appeared to have fallen asleep.

When he opened his eyes, he discovered that he was on top of a mountain. He was sitting beside a brook.

He extended his hand and looked at the water in the brook. His silhouette slowly appeared in the flowing water.

Chu Feng suddenly discovered that his appearance had turned into that of an eight or nine-year-old child. It was his appearance when he was a child.

Chu Feng then looked around. The scenery was so very familiar to him. Wasn't this the Nine Province Continent's Azure Province? Wasn't this the scenery of the mountain behind the Chu Family?

"Dream? I'm in a dream?"

Chu Feng was an extremely rational person. His rationality allowed him to realize what had happened.

He had chatted with the blind old man for a long time. As it was extremely late by the time they had finished the chat, the blind old man had told him to properly rest himself, and given him a special sort of fruit.

That fruit possessed an effect of soothing one's body and mind. Although martial cultivators would be able to live without eating, drinking or sleeping after reaching a certain level of cultivation, sleeping was capable of helping cultivations rest and soothe their minds.

Thus, Chu Feng ate the fruit and soon fell asleep.

Merely, Chu Feng was too rational a person. His rationality caused him to possess an excessive amount of clear-headedness. Even though he was dreaming, he was still able to immediately determine his situation.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing here? Weren't you told to not come here randomly? Get the hell back."

Suddenly, an excoriating voice sounded. Chu Feng turned around and saw a fair-skinned man rapidly walking toward him.

"Sixth uncle?" Seeing that man, Chu Feng's heart was immediately moved. That man was Chu Feng's sixth uncle, Chu Nanshan.

That sixth uncle had not been very fond of Chu Feng. As for his son, Chu Hongfei, he was someone that had bullied Chu Feng since they were young.

Back then, Chu Feng had been very sick and tired of this sixth uncle. However, seeing him now, Chu Feng felt a powerful sense of closeness.

The reason for that was because this sixth uncle of his had long since passed away. He had died when the Chu Family had been massacred.

"Sixth uncle, I'm sorry. I am the one who caused your death," Chu Feng said with a great amount of self blame.

The massacre of the Chu Family was Chu Feng's eternal pain. He felt that if he had not offended Gong Luyun in his youth, the Chu Family would not have met with their misfortune.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? You are cursing me to die here, no?” Chu Nanshan did not know what Chu Feng was talking about, and thought that Chu Feng was cursing him to die. Angrily, he raised his hand and planned to hit Chu Feng.

As this place was Chu Feng’s dream, even if Chu Feng remained rational, he was only a child that had yet to learn martial cultivation here.

Thus, when his sixth uncle tried to hit him, it would have been impossible for Chu Feng to dodge even if he wanted to. Let alone, Chu Feng did not wish to dodge.

“Huu~~~”

Right at that moment, a strong gale swept forth from before Chu Feng. It was aimed directly at the sixth uncle.

That wind was so powerful that not only did it blow away the fallen leaves in the forest, it also blew the sixth uncle back repeatedly.

“Sixth, Feng’er is still only a child. Is there a need for you to lower yourself to argue with him?”

At that moment, a familiar voice sounded beside Chu Feng. Chu Feng turned to the side, and saw a person standing there. Immediately, his heart tightened.

Standing beside him was a man. That person was his adoptive father, Chu Yuan.

Chapter 2121 – Resurrection Secret Technique

“Father,” Upon seeing Chu Yuan, a huge wave immediately surged in Chu Feng’s heart.

“Feng’er, are you alright?” Chu Yuan smiled as he looked to Chu Feng. His gaze was filled with concern.

“I’m fine,” Chu Feng shook his head repeatedly.

“Chu Yuan, for you to pamper Chu Feng like that, you will spoil him sooner or later,” Chu Nanshan said angrily.

“If I cannot protect even my own son, I am unqualified to be Chu Feng’s father,” Chu Yuan said unyieldingly.

“You...” Chu Nanshan gnashed his teeth in anger. However, as his strength was inferior to Chu Yuan’s, he ended up waving his sleeve and swaggering off angrily.

Although Chu Feng knew very well that this was a dream, his eyes still reddened. Especially after he heard what Chu Yuan said, the tears that were swirling at the corners of his eyes bubbled out like a flood.

Although this was only his dream, Chu Feng clearly remembered that this scene had actually happened before.

Although he was not Chu Yuan’s biological son, Chu Yuan had always pampered him like this.

“Feng’er, what are you crying about? Real men should not cry,” Seeing that Chu Feng was crying, Chu Yuan squatted in front of him and gently caressed Chu Feng’s tiny head.

“Father, I have let you down. I have let grandpa down, let the entire Chu Family down. I have caused the deaths of you all. It is I who killed you all,” Chu Feng’s tears and mucus were mixed together and covered his entire face.

The current Chu Feng was no longer the Chu Feng that had shocked the entire Holy Land of Martialism. He had returned to being the Chu Feng that was not even ten years old.

A child with a heart filled with self-blame.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like this, Chu Yuan felt extremely pained.

He said, “Feng’er, don’t say nonsense like that. The person that should be apologizing should be your father, me.”

“As your father, I was incompetent. That is why I ended up being killed.”

“As your father, I was incompetent. That is why I am unable to watch you grow up.”

“Feng’er, I hope that you will not blame father. After all, father is only an ordinary mortal.”

“You have done enough for the Chu Family. If it wasn’t for your protection, the Chu Family would’ve already been completely eliminated.”

“Thus, although you are not my biological son, you are still my pride. You are the pride of everyone from our Chu Family.”

“The path of martial cultivation is extremely hard. We are unable to provide any assistance to you. As such, you can only rely on yourself.”

“But, Feng’er, remember this. You are a man. Regardless of the time, you must remain strong.”

After saying those words, Chu Yuan’s body started to grow fuzzy. Everything surrounding Chu Feng began to become fuzzy.

“Father, don’t leave. Stay with Feng’er for a bit longer!”

“Father, don’t leave Feng’er by himself!!!”

Chu Feng tightly grabbed onto Chu Yuan’s clothes and started to shout.

He knew that... this dream of his was about to shatter. However, he did not wish for the dream to shatter. He did not wish to wake up yet.

However, even though Chu Feng was grabbing onto Chu Yuan's clothes very tightly, Chu Yuan's clothes still faded from Chu Feng's grasp.

Soon, Chu Yuan disappeared. Then, everything before him disappeared, and Chu Feng's surroundings turned pitch-black.

When light reemerged in Chu Feng's line of sight, he discovered that he was no longer by the brook on the mountain behind the Chu Family mansion. Instead, he was in a cozy sleeping chamber in the Realm of Gods.

In the end, he had still woken from his dream.

Chu Feng wiped the corners of his eyes. There were truly tears there.

Although Chu Feng had not cried as miserably as he had in his dream, he remained influenced by his state of mind in his dream, and had ended up shedding tears.

"Master, what's wrong?" Suddenly, the door to the room was opened. It was the blind old man.

"I'm fine," Chu Feng shook his head.

"Master, you're crying?" Although the blind old man was blind, he was able to see everything before him through special techniques.

Seeing the tear stains at the corners of Chu Feng's eyes, the blind old man became extremely worried.

"I had a dream. I dreamed of my adoptive father," Chu Feng said.

"....." Hearing those words, the blind old man's expression changed. He seemed to have thought of something. He said, "Master, there is a secret technique that might be able to revive

your family.”

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. He revealed disbelief in his eyes. After all, the dead could not be revived. That was common knowledge.

However, the blind old man didn't appear to be deceiving him. Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly asked, “There's a way to revive my family? Is what you speak of real?”

“Master, a person possesses [three spiritual and seven physical souls](#). One's physical body is merely a vessel for one's soul.”

“For example, master, if your physical body is destroyed, you are able to instantly create another physical body. Before those with the same level of strength as you, you possess an undying and indestructible body.”

“However, it is actually not master's physical body that is all powerful. Rather, it is master's soul and cultivation that are powerful. That is why you are undying and indestructible to those that are weak.”

“Thus, to people, their soul... is the most crucial aspect in respect to their life and death.”

“Back then, the people that massacred your family were only a bunch of weak people. They all possessed very weak levels of cultivation. They were not much different from ordinary commoners.”

“People like them cannot be considered actual martial cultivators. They do not possess the power that martial cultivators possess.”

“Thus, although the members of your family were killed, they are not truly dead. It is merely their physical bodies that were destroyed, and their souls scattered. For souls like those... they will remain in existence for a hundred years.”

“This old man knows of a method. As long as it's the deceased's

relative, and that relative possessed a certain level of cultivation and world spirit techniques, they would be able to search for the deceased's soul."

"As long as the scattered souls are found, and bodies are created for them, it is possible for them to be revived."

"Master, you've fulfilled all of the requirements," The blind old man explained.

"Blind Uncle, there is truly such a method?" Astonishment filled Chu Feng's face. The reason for that was because what the blind old man said was very reasonable, and in accordance with the rules of the world. As a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng felt that it was feasible.

"This old servant would not dare to deceive master. This is the technique," Seemingly already prepared, the blind old man took an ancient scroll from his bosom and handed it to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng opened the scroll and read it carefully. The more he read, the more astonished he became. His gaze began to reveal more and more joy.

"This is feasible, this is feasible!" At that moment, Chu Feng was wild with joy. He was excited like a child.

The reason for that was because his adoptive father and the people from the Chu Family were all extremely important to him.

Although they were not related to him by blood, Chu Feng viewed them as his close relatives, his true family.

Their deaths had become an eternal pain in Chu Feng's heart. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had never thought that the dead could be revived.

However, he had now truly obtained a method to revive them. Furthermore, it was not random speculation, but rather a truly feasible method. As such, Chu Feng would naturally be overjoyed.

“Actually, it is also fortunate that the people that killed your family were only Profound Realm cultivators. If they were Heaven Realm cultivators, there would be no way to save your family members.”

“Furthermore, this technique is something that has never been attempted before. As such, this old servant is uncertain as to whether or not it will actually work,” The blind old man said.

“Regardless, this remains a strand of hope,” Chu Feng held tightly to the scroll, and looked to the blind old man, “Blind Uncle, regardless of whether it works or not, you have helped me enormously.”

As the blind old man had been carrying the scroll with him, Chu Feng was able to tell that the blind old man already knew of his heart’s knot.

Thus, even if Chu Feng had not had that dream, the blind old man would have still told him about that method sooner or later.

“Master, you must not say it like that. This old servant is truly honored to be able to help master out,” The blind old man said with a smile. He was extremely gratified to see how happy Chu Feng had become.

“Milord, this is bad, this is bad!” Right at that moment, someone ran in hastily. After arriving, that person knelt on the ground.

“What’s wrong? What happened?” The blind old man asked.

“Someone has opened the Stairway to Heaven,” That person replied.

three spiritual and seven physical souls → Some [Daoism](#) thing...

Chapter 2122 – I've Guessed Wrong

“What?” Hearing those words, the expressions of both Chu Feng and the blind old man changed. Then, the blind old man's body moved, and Chu Feng started to feel that his surrounding had turned fuzzy. When his line of sight returned to normal... not only had the two of them left the sleeping chambers, they were also before a vast plaza.

Above the plaza was a grand formation. Inside the formation was a ray of golden light that shot straight into the sky. It seemed that the light was going to pierce through the sky and the heavenly dome.

Within the golden light was a series of steps that seemed to be made of crystal. It was the Stairway to Heaven; it looked exactly the same as the Stairway to Heaven Chu Feng saw in the Misty Peak.

However, there was also difference between them. Many waves of energy were spreading below the Stairway to Heaven unceasingly. The energies were spreading toward the Stairway to Heaven.

This scene had not been present in the Misty Peak's Immortalization Road.

“Who dares activate the Stairway to Heaven without permission? Do you have a death wish?” The blind old man shouted furiously. His serious gaze swept toward the surrounding guards.

A rank three Half Martial Ancestor level old man stood forward and said, “Milord, we do not know who did this.”

“Do not know? You are tasked with guarding this place, yet you actually dare to tell me that you do not know? What use is there in having you all here then?!” The blind old man grew even more furious.

“Hahaha...” Right at that moment, a burst of laughter sounded from the Stairway to Heaven. Then, a voice said, “Seems like the servants of the Chu Heavenly Clan are only at this level.”

“Xue Ji? It’s you?!!!” Hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s eyes instantly narrowed. He raised his head and looked toward the location where the voice had sounded from.

“It’s actually not one of our men?!” At that moment, the blind old man became even more furious.

The blind old man had thought that it was his clansmen that had not behaved themselves and ended up activating the Stairway to Heaven. However, he now discovered that he had guessed wrong.

“You dare use the Stairway to Heaven without permission? You are truly courting death!” At that moment, many people took out their Imperial Armaments and began to fly toward the Stairway to Heaven.

“All of you, stay your hand!” The blind old man hurriedly shouted, “The Stairway to Heaven has already been activated. If you all are to climb the stairs, you will enter the Outer World. At that time, none of you will be able to return.”

“But...” The crowd all stopped, but were filled with irreconciliation.

Right at that moment, that voice sounded again. “Chu Feng, let us meet again in the Outer World.”

“Buzz~~~”

After that voice sounded, a dazzling ray of light descended from the sky, enveloping the region below.

When that light faded away, Chu Feng discovered that the Stairway to Heaven had returned to normal.

“Damn it!”

The blind old man was gnashing his teeth furiously. He then

raised his hand and shot a palm strike toward the depths of the sky.

“Boom~~~”

The sky started to tremble. Violent energy ripples immediately covered the entire sky. As the energy ripples wreaked havoc in the sky, it was a truly frightening sight to behold.

The might of that attack was simply indescribable. Chu Feng did not know how powerful the strength of that attack was. However, he knew that if he were to approach the energy ripples, he would undoubtedly be killed.

That said, Chu Feng also knew that even an attack like that would not be able to injure Xue Ji. Xue Ji had already left. Likely... she had already entered the Outer World.

“What were you all doing?! Didn’t I order you all to properly guard this place?! How could you all not know when someone activated the Stairway to Heaven?!” The blind old man shouted at the guards.

“Milord, we...” All of the guards knelt onto the floor. However, they were at a loss as to how to respond. The reason for that was because they had not seen anyone approaching the Stairway to Heaven. When they discovered that something was amiss, the Stairway to Heaven had already been activated.

“We were useless. Milord, please punish us,” Feeling helpless, the guards could only ask for punishment.

“Blind Uncle, please don’t blame them. I am able to tell that they all held their posts with sincerity. It is just that Xue Ji’s techniques are too strange. Thus, it is normal that they would fail to discover her,” Chu Feng pleaded for the guards.

The reason for that was because he had also not discovered any traces of anyone on the Stairway to Heaven before Xue Ji spoke. The blind old man had also not discovered anyone.

However, Xue Ji had actually ascended the Stairway to heaven.

Thus, when even+ they failed to discover Xue Ji, how could these guards possibly be able to discover Xue Ji?

“Master, are you certain that that was Xue Ji?” The blind old man asked.

“There’s no mistaking that voice. It was definitely Xue Ji,” Chu Feng said.

“That girl actually possessed strength that even my perception failed to detect? Exactly how did she get in here?” The blind old man started to ponder.

“It might not necessarily be because she possessed strength that surpassed your own. It is very likely that it is because she possesses special tricks. After all, she is from the Asura Spirit World,” Chu Feng said.

The blind old man heaved a long sigh. He was still extremely unreconciled. Self-blame filled his face.

“May I know where the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is imprisoned? Is it possible for me to see him?” Chu Feng asked the crowd.

“He is imprisoned in the underground prison. I’ll lead the way for master right away,” A guard said.

“There’s no need for that,” The blind old man waved his sleeve. Immediately, wind covered both him and Chu Feng.

At the moment Chu Feng was caught up in the wind, he felt his surrounding growing fuzzy again.

When his line of sight returned to normal, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that he was in the underground prison.

After arriving at the underground prison, the blind old man slowed his pace. He began to guide Chu Feng toward the depths of the underground prison one step at a time.

There were a lot of guards in the underground prison. They were

all very powerful, being either Half Martial Ancestors or peak Martial Emperors.

When they saw Chu Feng, they all hurriedly kneeled before him to greet him courteously.

When they were so quick to kneel to Chu Feng, naturally none of them dared to stop Chu Feng and the blind old man. After all, not only was the blind old man the leader of this place, they held Chu Feng as being their master.

“Blind Uncle, may I know exactly what level of cultivation you possess?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

The blind old man was truly too powerful. Originally, Chu Feng had thought that, as he had been able to defeat the Dark Hall’s Hall Master, his cultivation would be among the very best in the Holy Land of Martialism.

It was only after he arrived at this place that he discovered that his cultivation was actually not very powerful at all even in the Holy Land of Martialism. At the very least, a lot of the people here, these people that declared themselves to be the servants of the Chu Heavenly Clan, all possessed more powerful cultivations than him. As for this blind old man, he was simply unfathomable.

“Master, this old servant is a rank five Half Martial Ancestor,” said the blind old man.

“Blind Uncle is truly amazing,” The answer given by the blind old man was more or less what Chu Feng had anticipated.

“I was originally a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. It was only because Lord Xuanyuan’s assistance during the last time he was here that this old servant was able to reach a breakthrough.”

“Else... with this old servant’s comprehension ability, I’m afraid that I would never have been able to obtain my current level of cultivation in my lifetime,” After saying those words, the blind old man smiled happily.

From the blind old man's reaction, Chu Feng was able to tell that he felt not only great reverence toward Chu Feng's father Chu Xuanyuan, he also felt a great amount of gratefulness.

Even though the blind old man was wholeheartedly devoted to being a servant of the Chu Heavenly Clan his entire life, he also possessed his own pursuits toward the path of martial cultivation.

"If my father was willing to help me, how great would that be," Chu Feng said jokingly.

"Lord Xuanyuan most definitely possesses his own intentions for putting master through all these trials."

"However, master possesses outstanding talent that the slow people in the Holy Land of Martialism simply cannot compare to."

"Your battlefield is in the Outer World. Furthermore, with master's talent, you will definitely be a dragon among men even in the Outer World. Very few people would be able to fight against you," The blind old man said.

"I was merely joking. I naturally know that my father is doing all this for my sake," Chu Feng said with a smile.

After finding out about the concern his father had for him from the blind old man, Chu Feng had become increasingly desirous of meeting his father.

Although Chu Feng should be proceeding toward the Outer World now, he first had to return to the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent before leaving.

Firstly, he must use that secret technique to revive his family.

Secondly, he must enter the Heavenly Road and meet his biological father, Chu Xuanyuan.

As the two men chatted, they arrived before the prison cell that held the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"This... what happened here?"

Merely, when the prison cell was opened, other than Chu Feng and the blind old man, the expressions of the rest of the people all changed enormously.

After all, only the clothing of the Dark Hall's Hall Master and a pile of bones were in the prison cell.

"Who did this?" An old man who seemed to be the person in charge of the prison shouted at the crowd furiously. He thought that it was the guards that had killed the Dark Hall's Hall Master.

"This subordinate wouldn't dare," The guards all kneeled to the ground.

"Don't blame them. It was most definitely not done by them," Chu Feng waved his hand. However, his gaze was fixed onto that pile of bones the entire time.

"Never would I have expected this to be the case," Chu Feng's eyes narrowed. A trace of a surprised expression appeared in his gaze.

"Master, could it be that you've thought of this?" The blind old man asked.

"I had originally thought that Xue Ji had followed the Dark Hall's Hall Master here, and that the Dark Hall's Hall Master might've followed her into the Outer World."

"However, it is very clear that I have guessed wrong. Xue Ji entered the Outer World by herself. Furthermore, she killed the Dark Hall's Hall Master before leaving," Chu Feng said.

Chapter 2123 – Chu Feng’s Friend

“Judging from this situation, it seems that Ying Chong has been refined,” The blind old man said.

“That’s right. He’s been completely refined,” Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a gentle breeze brushed past. The seemingly intact bones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master immediately turned to dust.

It was not caused by Chu Feng’s power. Rather, it was because the bones of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master were truly too weak.

Seeing this scene, the expressions of the guards all changed. With the cultivation that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master possessed, even if he were to turn to bones, his bones should be indestructible. It would be impossible for his bones to be this weak. Those bones were simply much weaker than the bones of even ordinary people that had never embarked upon the path of martial cultivation.

The situation at hand verified what Chu Feng and the blind old man suspected – the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been completely refined; he had been killed through being refined.

“Xue Ji, exactly what is it that you’re planning to do?” Chu Feng muttered.

He was more and more incapable of seeing through the thoughts of that Asura World Spirit that had originally belonged to him.

The sensation of being unable to see through Xue Ji was extremely unpleasant for Chu Feng. Most importantly, he was unable to ascertain whether Xue Ji... was a friend or a foe.

He suspected that she might be a friend because she had saved him. Furthermore, she had informed him of the demonic technique of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

He suspected that she might be a foe because she had done a lot of things unknown to him.

Most importantly, the killing intent that she had emitted back when she was still in his world spirit space had not seemed fake.

Suddenly, a guard hastily ran over. “Reporting to Master, reporting to Master.”

“Someone has intruded into our territory and has been captured by us,”

“Did the intruder see you all?” The blind old man asked.

“He did,” The guard replied.

“Then why bother asking? Kill him,” The Blind Old Man replied.

“But... that person declared himself to be Master’s friend. Furthermore, he said he has come to find Master,” The guard replied.

“My friend?” Chu Feng and the blind old man were startled to hear those words. They looked to one another, and both revealed confused expressions.

Especially Chu Feng; he felt astonished. The great majority of his friends were all hidden in the Transmogrification Gate. Why would someone come here to find him?

Furthermore, no one knew that he had come here. Even if someone had decided to find him, it should be impossible for them to directly come to this place.

Puzzled, Chu Feng said, “Bring me to see him.”

Being guided by the guard, they arrived at a palace. This was the same palace in which the blind old man had received Chu Feng earlier.

“You all actually brought an intruder to this place?!” The blind old man was slightly angry. After all, this place was also a forbidden area for their clansmen. Only existences of Chu Feng’s status would be allowed to be received in that place.

“Eh... I was foolish. I thought he was truly Master’s friend,” That

guard hurriedly kneeled to the ground. Apology filled his face.

“There’s no harm to it. I’ll know from a single glance whether or not that person is my friend,” Chu Feng smiled. Then he said, “open the gate.”

“Creak~~~”

Once those words were spoken, the guards standing to either side of the gate pushed open the gate to the palace.

After the gate to the palace was pushed open, Chu Feng finally saw the person that had declared himself to be his friend. It turned out that that person was indeed Chu Feng’s friend.

It was Wang Qiang.

At that moment, Wang Qiang was sitting on a chair in the palace hall. Without any restraint, he was eating the refreshments the blind old man had prepared for Chu Feng earlier.

He was truly unfettered and unrestrained. It was as if he was truly a guest in this place.

Even though the guards standing beside him were all glaring at him like tigers, seemingly planning to kill him at any moment, Wang Qiang still showed absolutely zero fear.

“Aiyayaya, C-Chu Feng, t-t-t-to see y-y-you still alive, I am t-t-truly overjoyed,” Wang Qiang was immensely happy to see Chu Feng. He wiped his mouth and ran over to Chu Feng.

“Wang Qiang, why would you be here?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

Before seeing Wang Qiang, Chu Feng had truly never thought that it would be Wang Qiang that came here. It was not that Chu Feng did not consider Wang Qiang his friend. Rather, he truly never imagined it to be Wang Qiang.

“I-I-I f-followed you h-here. S-seeing that you s-still didn’t c-c-come out a-after a long time p-p-passed, I t-thought something m-

might've happened to you. T-t-thus, I came in to s-s-search for you."

"N-n-never would I have ex-ex-expected that y-you're a-a-actually doing pretty well here," Wang Qiang patted Chu Feng's shoulder and spoke with a loud laugh. His actions were truly thoughtless in appearance.

"Hey, b-brother," Wang Qiang suddenly moved to Chu Feng's ear and whispered sneakily, "y-y-you c-couldn't possibly t-truly be their M-m-master, r-right? It s-seems to m-me that t-they are v-very s-scared of you."

"It's a long story. I'll fill you in on the details later," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he looked to the blind old man and said, "Blind Uncle, this man is my friend. I believe you also know him. He has helped me before. Might it be possible... to make an exception and spare his life?"

"Master, your wish is my command. This old servant will do as you say," The blind old man replied respectfully.

Then, the blind old man made a gesture toward the guards. The guards tacitly understood his intentions, and withdrew from the palace with the blind old man.

When the palace's gate was closed, only Chu Feng and Wang Qiang remained.

"Oh my, my, b-b-boy, y-y-you're actually r-r-really the master of this p-place? H-heavens, t-that blind old man is e-extremely powerful. E-even I c-cannot s-s-see through him."

"N-n-never would I have ex-expected for the Re-Realm of Gods t-to have t-this many ex-ex-experts. No w-wonder all t-th-those that enter this place e-end up dying."

"S-s-say, s-sin-since you have s-so many powerful s-subordinates, w-why didn't you have them a-act sooner? W-why st-struggle with your own l-life on the line to f-fight against th-that D-dark Hall's

Hall Master?” Wang Qiang was extremely excited. At the same time, he was also very puzzled.

It seemed that he had only charged into this place because he was worried about Chu Feng.

“Wait a moment. You said that you followed me here, why were you following me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I d-don’t know. I w-was v-very bored,” Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh.

“You were protecting me from the shadows?” Chu Feng asked.

“Pah, w-why would I p-protect you? I’m n-not r-re-related to you.”

“I m-m-merely wanted t-to k-kill the Dark H-hall’s Hall M-master and h-h-have them d-deem me the o-overlord.”

“N-never d-did I ex-expect that you w-would return t-the m-moment I planned to stop him. B-because of my b-brotherly camaraderie, I d-d-decided to have you sh-show off your m-might first.”

“Ne-never would I have e-expected you to be so f-foolish to a-actually l-let the Dark Hall’s Hall M-master escape. I w-was cur-curious as to where that g-guy es-escaped to. F-furthermore, s-since you said t-that you could t-track him, I d-decided to f-follow you here,” Wang Qiang said.

“The beginning and the end of your words does not go along with one another. Didn’t you just say that you were not related to me? And now, you’re speaking about brotherly camaraderie? Who are you trying to deceive here?”

“You were hiding your strength the entire time, and following me in the dark. Exactly what are your intentions?” Chu Feng asked in a serious manner.

The way Chu Feng saw it, Wang Qiang possessed no interest in

the so-called title of ‘genius.’ Else, with his strength, he could easily obtain it.

Instead, Wang Qiang was someone who would appear and disappear unpredictably. Furthermore, he possessed overwhelming strength that could not be looked down upon. Due to the many confusing things regarding him, Chu Feng was very curious about his identity.

Curiosity, it was pure curiosity. The reason was because regardless of what intentions Wang Qiang might have, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang did not possess an evil nature, that he was a worthy friend. However, the prerequisite for that was... that he must be honest.

“F-forget about it, f-forget a-about it, I-I’ll tell you, alright?”

“I, Wang Q-Qiang, have n-never t-thought f-favorably of anyone i-in my l-life. B-but, for s-s-some unknown reason, I th-think fa-favorably of you.”

“Although you fought a-against me, I k-kept feeling t-that you a-are someone w-worthy to b-befriend, that you a-are an h-honest man.”

“Thus, if y-you w-we-were to truly d-die, I m-might e-end up feeling t-that I was m-missing something. Th-thus, you m-must be p-protected by m-me.”

“I-I-I’m n-not being s-stubborn h-here,” Wang Qiang said with his large mouth slanted to the side. The shameless Wang Qiang was actually a bit embarrassed when saying those words.

Chapter 2124 – Wang Qiang’s Past

“In that case, you’ve been following me the entire time?” Chu Feng asked.

“N-no, not the e-entire time. O-only twice. The f-first time was w-when you w-went to that so called Dao T-temple.”

“The o-other time is t-t-this time. I-I would never f-follow you a-all the time. I’m n-not a stalker,” Wang Qiang said.

Seeing Wang Qiang reacting in such a manner, Chu Feng smiled at ease. Although Wang Qiang was ugly, Chu Feng felt him to be quite adorable when he acted like this.

Although there was still confusion in Chu Feng’s heart, he still smiled and said to Wang Qiang, “Actually, I just found out about the things here not long ago myself. However, I am able to tell you about them. That said, you must promise me that you will not tell anyone else about the things here.”

“M-m-my mouth is a-a-ab-absolutely tight,” Wang Qiang pledged with his hand raised. He was very excited upon knowing that Chu Feng was going to tell him about the situation here.

“Very well, I’ll tell you then. However, before telling you, I have another request,” Chu Feng said.

“W-w-what is it?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Exactly how strong are you? Can you tell me the truth?” Chu Feng asked.

The current Wang Qiang only appeared to be a rank six Martial Emperor to Chu Feng. That level of cultivation was already very powerful.

However, Chu Feng felt that that was not Wang Qiang’s true cultivation. The reason for that was because Wang Qiang had said that he came to protect him. In other words, Wang Qiang’s

strength most definitely surpassed his own. Else, how was he to protect him?

“F-forget about it. I-I-I’ll t-tell you,” Wang Qiang laughed mischievously. Then, he let out a strand of his aura. Sensing that aura, Chu Feng immediately realized that Wang Qiang’s cultivation was already no longer that of a Martial Emperor.

That aura of his was the aura of a Half Martial Ancestor. Wang Qiang was actually a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

However, that was not all. After Wang Qiang waved his sleeve, the surrounding Ancestral-level martial power ended up being controlled by him. At that time, Chu Feng sensed that his heaven-defying battle power was not merely capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Instead, like him, Wang Qiang possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.

That sort of battle power was two levels above ordinary Martial Emperors and Half Martial Ancestors.

Although he had anticipated it, when he actually discovered that Wang Qiang possessed a strength that surpassed his own, Chu Feng still felt extremely shocked.

“Y-you’re a-as-astonished, right? D-don’t be. W-what’s to c-come will make y-you even m-more a-astonished.”

“I am a-able to c-conceal my s-strength from you a-and that b-blind old man b-because I h-have a t-treasure. L-look,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he took out a special burlap sack. That sack appeared to be very badly sewn. It was simply even lousier than clothes that beggars wore.

However, after Wang Qiang put that burlap sack around him, he disappeared. That burlap sack also disappeared.

He had disappeared completely. Chu Feng was unable to even sense a trace of his aura.

“H-how is it? A-amazing, right?” Wang Qiang’s voice sounded. However, Chu Feng was still unable to sense his aura.

“No wonder. No wonder even Blind Uncle was unable to discover you.”

“You, exactly what sort of origin do you have?” Chu Feng frowned.

When disregarding Wang Qiang’s strength, this treasure he had revealed was truly a rare and powerful treasure. How could such a powerful treasure appear in the Holy Land of Martialism?

“Hehe, I-I-I to-told you the fi-first time we met. I am an e-exceptional genius, I am a-amazing.”

“It is o-only you all t-that refused to believe me. How i-is it? Y-you believe me now? I-I’ve stunned you, no?” Wang Qiang said complacently.

“You still didn’t answer my question,” Chu Feng said in a serious manner, “As brothers, you must be candid with me.”

“If you truly consider me your friend, then tell me the truth. Only with that will I able to be candid with you.”

“E-even if you a-ask me, I don’t k-know how to r-respond to you. I p-possess neither a f-father or a m-mother. I a-also do not possess a b-background l-like the one you have.”

“E-either way, ever s-since I was a-able to f-form memories, I d-discovered myself in a ruin. O-other than v-vicious ferocious b-beasts and all kinds of t-traps, there was not a s-single person there.”

“If I wanted to l-leave that place, I h-had to become a Martial Emperor. Thus, I c-could only put my a-all into m-martial cultivation.”

“I-it was o-only after I got o-out did I find out that t-that p-p-place was actually an A-ancient Era’s r-remnant.”

“Even now, no one has discovered that remnant. If you don’t believe me, I can bring you to that remnant.”

“However, I’ve already gathered all the treasures there. Even if you go there, it’ll be for nothing,” Wang Qiang said.

“In that case, you’ve hidden your strength since the first time I met you?” Chu Feng asked.

The reason for that was because if Wang Qiang was telling the truth, then, when Chu Feng had met him at the Sealing Ancient Village, he should have been at least a Martial Emperor. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly have been able to defeat Wang Qiang then?

“Hehe, this great lord enjoys an interesting life. The days of me being in the Ancient Era’s remnant by myself were truly too boring.”

“How was it? My acting ability is pretty good, no?” Wang Qiang patted Chu Feng’s shoulder and said complacently.

“Indeed, it’s pretty good,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. After all, Chu Feng possessed a very strong perception. Very few people were able to keep him in the dark.

However, Wang Qiang, this person with an age similar to his own, was actually able to completely deceive Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile on his face, “Speaking of it, you said earlier that you never thought favorably of anyone other than me, could it be... that you fell for me?”

Hearing those words, Wang Qiang’s expression changed enormously. Then, he immediately released his hand from Chu Feng’s shoulder, and sprayed out a mouthful of saliva before shouting, “Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Your daddy I am heterosexual, okay?! No matter how handsome you might be, this great sir will still not have any interest in you.”

Seeing such a reaction from Wang Qiang, Chu Feng smiled

complacently. This fellow had completely deceived him before. This time around, Chu Feng had finally managed to play him for a fool.

Suddenly, Wang Qiang stopped his emotional state of mind and in a deadpan earnest manner, he said, “C-Chu Feng, l-let me w-warn you. Don’t you th-think of d-doing a-anything to me because of h-how charming I am. E-else...”

“If I, b-by chance, d-decide to f-follow t-through with your desire, you w-wouldn’t be a-able to resist,” As he said those words, Wang Qiang suddenly threw himself at Chu Feng, grabbing Chu Feng’s waist tightly while pushing his face onto Chu Feng’s body. His appearance was truly disgusting.

“Scram!” In response, Chu Feng hurriedly shook Wang Qiang off. Then, he raised his leg and kicked Wang Qiang several meters away.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s entire body was covered with goose bumps. He was extremely disgusted by Wang Qiang. From what had happened earlier, Chu Feng was certain that he was definitely heterosexual, that he possessed absolutely no interest in men.

“L-l-lil newbie, t-trying to play with me?”

“If I c-can’t w-win against you, I’ll d-d-disgust you to death,” Wang Qiang sat on the ground and laughed out loud while slapping the ground.

Although Wang Qiang’s action was absolutely shameless, Chu Feng still had a favorable impression of Wang Qiang. Although this fellow was a weirdo, he was definitely not a malicious person.

Perhaps, it was as Wang Qiang had said, that he had spent too much time alone in the Ancient Era’s remnant. Perhaps that might be why he ended up having such an insane personality.

Thinking about it, if what Wang Qiang said was the truth, then his childhood was truly tragic.

No matter what, Chu Feng have had the people from the Chu Family looking after him. Yet, Wang Qiang... had been living by himself ever since he was able to form memories.

Furthermore, he had been living in an Ancient Era's remnant. Although Chu Feng had not been to the Ancient Era's remnant Wang Qiang lived in, he knew what sort of places the Ancient Era's remnants were.

They were dark, dangerous and frightening. They were places even martial cultivators would fear. As such, there was no need to mention how frightening they would be for a child.

When compared with Wang Qiang, Chu Feng felt himself to be very fortunate.

Chapter 2125 – The Title Of Overlord

After Chu Feng sat down, he pointed to the chair beside him and said, “Come, have a seat. Let me tell you about my story.”

“Coming,” Wang Qiang sat down excitedly. He grabbed a large plate of refreshments with one hand, and with his other hand, began to put them into his mouth nonstop. His eyes were fixed on Chu Feng. He was happily waiting for Chu Feng to tell his story.

Chu Feng then began to inform Wang Qiang about the things that had happened here. He included the matters regarding the Chu Heavenly Clan, the death of the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and Xue Ji’s escape to the Outer World.

The reason why Chu Feng did not conceal anything from Wang Qiang was because he considered Wang Qiang to be his friend. He told Wang Qiang the truth because he trusted Wang Qiang.

Moreover, Wang Qiang had already told his own secret to Chu Feng. As such, it should only be natural that Chu Feng was honest with Wang Qiang.

Furthermore, Wang Qiang possessed outstanding talent, and was most definitely not a frog in a well. As such, Chu Feng wanted to invite Wang Qiang to enter the Outer World together with him. Like that... he would not be alone.

After hearing Chu Feng’s invitation, Wang Qiang asked excitedly, “G-Go t-to the O-O-Outer World t-together? A-Are there a lot of beauties i-in the Outer W-World?”

“I don’t know if there are a lot of beauties in the Outer World. However, the Outer World most definitely possesses an innumerable amount of experts. If you wish to obtain even greater progress on the path of Martial Cultivation, the Outer World is a place that you must go to,” Chu Feng said.

“A-Actually, I-I’ve l-long since grown t-t-tired of this place. S-

Since that t-t-t-trash Dark Hall's H-H-Hall Master is dead, l-let's go then. W-Why the wait? L-Let's go to the Outer W-World right now," Wang Qiang said excitedly. It could be seen that he was filled with anticipation for the unknown Outer World.

"Not yet, there are still some things that must be taken care of here," Chu Feng said.

"W-What are t-those?" Wang Qiang asked.

"The resurrection of my family," Chu Feng said.

"F-Family? Isn't y-your family in t-t-the Outer W-World? F-Fuck, you've c-completely c-c-confused me," A puzzled expression covered Wang Qiang's face.

"My story is very long. If you wish to know more about me, I can slowly tell you about it. However, it must be done while we travel," Chu Feng said with a smile.

Then, Chu Feng found the blind old man and informed him that he planned to leave the Realm of Gods. After all, Chu Feng was impatient to revive his family members.

"Master, it is good for you to leave now."

"The reason for that is because the Eastern Sea Region's Heavenly Road should be opening soon. This is the perfect timing for me to accompany master to see Lord Xuanyuan."

"However, Master, you must not take that vicious spatial crack again. Instead, you should take the safe one," The blind old man said.

"There's another spatial crack that leads to the Eastern Sea Region?" Chu Feng was surprised.

"There is," The blind old man nodded.

Thus, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang left the Realm of Gods.

Although the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed, with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's cultivations, there was practically no one

in the Holy Land of Martialism capable of causing harm to them...

...but, for the sake of speeding up the journey for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, the blind old man decided to leave together with them. After all, he also wished to pay his respects to Chu Feng's father and see how Zi Ling was doing.

However, due to his status, the blind old man would not reveal himself. Like before, he would hide himself.

Chu Feng first arrived at the Transmogrification Gate. He had to announce to the crowd that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed.

Of course, Chu Feng could not tell them the truth as to what had happened. After all, there were too many people here; he could not allow all of them to know about the Realm of Gods, as well as the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The crowd were all overjoyed and emotional to see Chu Feng's return.

As for Chu Feng, he casually told them a story about how he had killed the Dark Hall's Hall Master. Hearing that story, the crowd were even more excited and overjoyed.

After all, the story, the process of how it had happened, was not important. What was important was the fact that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed. That was what the crowd wished for.

After verifying that the Dark Hall's Hall Master had been killed, the Transmogrification Gate was opened. After all, without the threat of the Dark Hall's Hall Master, both humans and monstrous beasts were able to return to their respective powers.

Everyone was going to go home.

Smiling figures filled the entire region. Regardless of whether they were humans or monstrous beasts, everyone's faces were covered with smiles of joy and excitement. Chu Feng was also feeling very happy.

He was happy that he had helped those people survive. He did not feel himself to be extraordinary because he had saved them.

Rather, by saving them and allowing them to return home, allowing the various powers from the various races to be able to continue to exist, this caused Chu Feng to feel that he had helped the people here.

Even though the world of martial cultivation was still cruel and killings would never stop...

Even though the humans and monstrous beasts here had experienced tribulations together and were all smiling right now...

They might, one day, for their own personal interests, slaughter one another. And that... was something that Chu Feng was destined to be unable to prevent.

But, that didn't matter. It was impossible for a single person to save everyone in the world to begin with.

At the very least... Chu Feng had managed to save a portion of the innocent people.

It was already sufficient that he had saved these people.

“Emperor Chu!!!”

“Emperor Chu!!!”

“Emperor Chu!!!”

“Emperor Chu!!!”

.....

.....

.....

After the hundreds of millions of people all walked out of the Transmogrification Gate, they did not immediately leave. Instead, they gathered on the ground in an orderly fashion and looked to Chu Feng, who stood in the sky, with gazes filled with gratefulness

and adoration.

Regardless of whether they were men or women, young or old, humans or monstrous beasts, they were all cheering with raised arms.

“What is this?” Confused, Chu Feng looked to the Elf King beside him.

“Haha, I know. Let me explain it to you,” Before the Elf King could speak, Xian Miaomiao interrupted, “It’s like this. The Dark Hall’s Hall Master has been killed by you, and the Magma Emperor has been subdued by you. Thus, the people here wholeheartedly believe that you are the fully-deserving ruler of this era.”

“Thus, after you left, the people unanimously decided to deem you an Emperor, as this era’s sole overlord.”

“After a series of intense discussions, they decided to address you as Emperor Chu.”

“Furthermore, your status in the hearts of the crowd already surpasses that of Emperor Qing. Everyone feels that you are the strongest Emperor, the strongest overlord, since the Ancient Era.”

“However, that’s not the important point. Most importantly, it is I who suggested the name ‘Emperor Chu.’ How is it? Do you like it?” Xian Miaomiao asked as she patted her chest proudly.

“Emperor Chu?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng involuntarily looked to Wang Qiang beside him. After all, Wang Qiang possessed strength that surpassed his own.

“B-b-by o-overlord, it m-means s-someone that has managed to obtain the w-will of the p-people. Chu Feng, you h-have evidently a-a-a-accomplished it,” Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression. He had thought Wang Qiang to be a simple-minded and thoughtless individual. Never did he expect Wang Qiang to say something like that.

The intention behind Wang Qiang's words were very clear. Although Chu Feng's strength was inferior to his, Chu Feng had gained the will of the people, and truly saved the lives of hundreds of millions of people in the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Wang Qiang, no matter how powerful he was, he had not done anything to help the people of the Holy Land of Martialism. The people that knew of him and his strength were even fewer. Compared to Chu Feng, he was simply insignificant.

Even if he were to stand forth and declare himself to be the strongest in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would likely be met with a rain of curses from the crowd.

Even if he were to fight against Chu Feng on the spot and defeat him, it was likely that no one would acknowledge him still.

After all, it was Chu Feng who had stood forth bravely for them in their time of need. It was also Chu Feng who had fought for the hundreds of millions of people here.

In this world, there were many people who possessed strength. However, not all of them were willing to use their own strength to assist people unrelated to them.

Thus, to the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, only Chu Feng was qualified to be this era's overlord.

In other words, what Wang Qiang meant by those words he said was that he also felt that Chu Feng should take up the title of the overlord.

Chapter 2126 – Journeying Together

“Overlord,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “It’s merely a false reputation.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng looked to the sky. That was a place where their powers were incapable of reaching.

Only by entering the Stairway to Heaven would they be able to enter that place, the Outer World.

The so-called ‘overlord’ in this place, exactly what sort of wave could they possibly cause in the Outer World? That was something that no one knew.

However, Chu Feng had a feeling that the overlords of this place would be nothing more than ants in the eyes of the people in the Outer World.

“Chu Feng, even if it is a false reputation, it is still not something that just anyone could obtain.”

“To the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, it is a belief, a belief that there will be someone who can prevent calamities when they appear.”

“And you, you are someone who is qualified to take up that reputation. You are someone who is capable of shouldering the people’s belief,” The Elf King said.

“Your Majesty, although the Dark Hall’s Hall Master is dead now, the Holy Land of Martialism is a complete mess.”

“For many powers, their homes have already been ruined. Regardless of whether they are monstrous beasts or humans, they will all have to rebuild their homes.”

“And for that... I’m afraid they will likely need the assistance of the Ancient Era’s Elves. Everyone... still needs your assistance.”

“As for me, I will be going far away. Thus... if there really must

be an overlord for the people, I feel that you are more suited for that title,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please don’t joke around. Even if I were willing to accept it, the people of the Holy Land of Martialism would not be willing to bestow me that title.”

“You must not go telling the crowd that I should be the overlord. If you do, I suspect that they will try to drown me to death with their spit,” The Elf King joked.

“Chu Feng, the title of overlord belongs to only you. As such, stop trying to evade it. Even this old man feels that only you are capable of being the overlord,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Seniors, you are all truly overvaluing this Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said in a somewhat ashamed manner.

If the only person who was able to obtain the will of the people could become the overlord, then that person must be someone who had done things with the intention of benefiting the people in the Holy Land of Martialism.

As for Chu Feng, he had only defeated the Dark Hall’s Hall Master. Furthermore, he had possessed a certain amount of selfishness in the battle between him and the Dark Hall’s Hall Master.

However, in terms of fighting against the Dark Hall’s Hall Master and protecting the people of the Holy Land of Martialism, the Ancient Era’s Elves’ contributions could not go unnoticed. Among them, their leader, the Elf King, was the one who had done the most.

Furthermore, although Chu Feng was still present in the Holy Land of Martialism right now, his heart had already entered the Outer World.

Chu Feng no longer cared about whatever reputation he might possess in the Holy Land of Martialism. However, the Ancient

Era's Elves would remain in the Holy Land of Martialism. A great reputation would increase the authority of the Ancient Era's Elves in being able to better govern the Holy Land of Martialism in the future.

“Chu Feng, I know what you are thinking. We Ancient Era's Elves appreciate your kind intentions.”

“The people here are no fools. They are all martial cultivators that possess wisdom. They also possess the ability to differentiate between good and bad.”

“For them to acknowledge you as the overlord means that you are the overlord. Even if you refuse the title, you will still remain the overlord in their hearts,” The Elf King said.

Finally, Chu Feng sighed and reached a compromise. “Forget about it,” he said. After all, what the Elf King said was very reasonable.

Suddenly, the Heaven Reaching Immortal asked, “Little friend Chu Feng, you just said earlier that you'll be going far away; where are you planning to go? Could it be that you're planning to return to the Eastern Sea Region?”

“I'm going to the Outer World,” Chu Feng said.

“Outer World?!” Hearing those words, the crowd present all revealed expressions of shock.

“Chu Feng, you know how to enter the Outer World?” The Elf King hurriedly asked. As he spoke those words, he glanced at his daughter, Xian Miaomiao.

“In the Eastern Sea Region's Misty Peak is a formation by the name of ‘Stairway to Heaven.’ Through that Stairway to Heaven, one can enter the Outer World.”

Chu Feng did not mention the Realm of Gods. Although these people were all people that he trusted, he still did not wish to break the rules of the Realm of Gods.

Chu Feng hoped to be able to leave behind a pure land for the blind old man and the others.

“Little friend Chu Feng, is what you speak of for real?” The Elf King became even more emotional.

“I plan to return to the Eastern Sea Region to take care of some things. After I finish taking care of those things, I plan to directly leave for the Outer World from the Eastern Sea Region.”

“Miaomiao, you should accompany me. I have a feeling that the Outer World will have abundant cultivation resources. With your talent, your future prospects will look better there,” Chu Feng said to Xian Miaomiao.

He had promised the Elf King to take Xian Miaomiao to the Outer World with him. And now, as Chu Feng planned to leave for the Outer World, he would naturally have to take Xian Miaomiao with him.

Furthermore, Xian Miaomiao really did possess a very strong talent. In fact, Chu Feng faintly felt that Xian Miaomiao’s talent surpassed his own. She would definitely be able to gain a foothold in the Outer World.

“Chu Feng, I already know about the things concerning my mother. However, I do not wish to enter the Outer World just yet,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Miaomiao, you belong to the Outer World,” The Elf King urged.

“Royal Father, I will leave for the Outer World. I also wish to find my biological mother. However, I wish to accompany you and big sister for some time longer,” Xian Miaomiao looked to the Elf King and Princess Lingyue. A reluctance to part filled her beautiful eyes.

“Royal Father, since Miaomiao wishes to stay some time longer, you shouldn’t urge her to leave. Just let her stay for a while longer. After all, she’s still so young,” Princess Lingyue was also reluctant to part with her sister Miaomiao. Thus, she urged her father to let

her stay.

“Very well,” The Elf King nodded. As Xian Miaomiao was his own daughter, how could he be willing to see her go? He actually also wished for Xian Miaomiao to accompany them for some time more.

“Miaomiao, even if you proceed for the Outer World by yourself in the future, it would still be best for you to accompany me to the Eastern Sea Region this time around.”

“I’ll bring you to see the formation that leads to the Outer World, so you’ll know how to enter the Outer World when you plan to go there in the future,” Chu Feng said.

“But, isn’t the spatial crack that leads to the Eastern Sea Region a vicious one?” Princess Lingyue asked worriedly.

“I have discovered another spatial crack. This spatial crack is benign in nature and very safe,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s all go there together. As little friend Chu Feng will be leaving, we should all see him off,” The Heaven Reaching Immortal said.

“Great, great, great. Let’s all go together. I have never been to the Eastern Sea Region before. I want to see exactly what sort of place Chu Feng grew up in is like. I also want to see Chu Feng’s friends and relatives in the Eastern Sea Region,” Xian Miaomiao said excitedly.

“Since even the Heaven Reaching Immortal plans to go, we naturally cannot be absent,” The Elf King said those words, then took a glance back at Bali Xuankong, Nangong Longjian, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Compass Immortal, the Snow-haired Immortal and the other people with superb relationships with Chu Feng.

Seeing his glance, everyone nodded excitedly. They could be considered to be people that had seen Chu Feng’s growth with

their own eyes, people that possessed very deep sentiments for Chu Feng. They would naturally want to see him off now that he was planning to leave. No one would be able to stop them.

“Four seniors, are you all planning to come too?” Chu Feng looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Although Chu Feng possessed an overwhelming status in the Holy Land of Martialism, he had not even been born when the Four Great Divine Beasts had been renowned through the Holy Land of Martialism. Thus, by comparison, they were indeed his seniors.

“Chu Feng, you are our master. We will follow wherever our master goes,” The Azure Dragon said. Its voice was very resounding, and without the slightest amount of restraint. Thus, not only did the Elf King hear those words, everyone present heard those words.

“Ssss~~~”

Hearing those words, many of the people present sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were very powerful existences; they were four Half Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, they were beings that were already renowned in the Holy Land of Martialism ten thousand years ago.

Although the current Chu Feng possessed the strength to subdue the four of them, the crowd remained fired up upon hearing from the Azure Dragon that Chu Feng was indeed their master. This only served to confirm that this era’s overlord would be none other than Chu Feng.

After it was decided, the crowd began to fly toward the Eastern Sea Region. Not only did the experts from the older generation follow Chu Feng, even the people from the younger generation like Tantai Xue and Sima Ying followed Chu Feng too.

Naturally, Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi were also among the crowd. After all, to them, the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent was also their homeland.

Chapter 2127 – Father’s Accomplishment

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the Heavenly Road’s exit to the Eastern Sea Region.

The Heavenly Road only went one way.

It seemed to be for the sake of some sort of equilibrium. As such, there was an enormous power separating the Eastern Sea Region from the Holy Land of Martialism. This made it impossible for people from the Holy Land of Martialism to enter the Eastern Sea Region.

Thus, if one wanted to get to the Eastern Sea Region from the Holy Land of Martialism, one had to do so by entering a spatial crack.

Merely, the spatial crack that the Compass Immortal had discovered earlier was very dangerous. While Chu Feng and the other experts were capable of passing through it, it was extremely difficult for all the others to pass through it. As such, Chu Feng would naturally not make them take that risk of entering the vicious spatial crack.

“Chu Feng, raise your hand,” Suddenly, a voice transmission from the blind old man sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

Although the blind old man had not revealed himself, he had been following after Chu Feng and the others the entire time. Merely... no one managed to sense him. After all, he was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. In the Holy Land of Martialism, he was the fully-deserving strongest expert.

“Blind Uncle, you might as well just reveal yourself. Aren’t some of the people here your old friends?” Chu Feng sent a voice transmission to the blind old man.

After all, there were many people in the Holy Land of Martialism that had met the blind old man before. Although it was unknown

as to how they had met, it remained that they had met.

As for the Eastern Sea Region, there were even more people that knew of the blind old man. As such, Chu Feng felt that there was no reason for the blind old man to conceal himself the entire time.

“Master, it was different back then. Since this old servant has recognized master, it means that I cannot show even the smallest trace of disrespect toward master.”

“My previous identities were all fake. However, my current identity is real,” The blind old man said.

Chu Feng understood what the blind old man meant with those words. While he could disguise himself back then, he could not do so now. If he did not disguise himself, that would mean that he would have to let everyone know about the special relationship between him and Chu Feng. As such, the blind old man decided that he might as well not reveal himself.

As the blind old man possessed his own apprehensions, Chu Feng no longer tried to urge him to reveal himself.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve and emitted a layer of spirit power.

Actually, the spirit power that he emitted possessed absolutely no use. He only did what the blind old man told him to do.

“Buzz~~~”

However, after Chu Feng waved his sleeve, an enormous spatial crack appeared out of thin air.

That spatial crack was naturally not summoned by Chu Feng. Instead, at the time when Chu Feng waved his hand, the blind old man had activated that spatial crack.

“This spatial crack!!!”

After seeing the spatial crack, the eyes of everyone present

started to shine with astonishment.

The reason for that was because that spatial crack was simply enormous. Not only was it wide and bright, it was also extraordinarily imposing.

How could this still be considered a spatial crack? It was simply a spatial tunnel. It was a spatial tunnel that could pass through the ancient energy separating the Holy Land of Martialism and the Eastern Sea Region.

Furthermore, when comparing the spatial crack the Compass Immortal had discovered with this spatial crack, it made this spatial crack appear even more imposing.

If the spatial crack the Compass Immortal had discovered was a tiny and difficult path filled with thistles and thorns, then the spatial crack before everyone right now was simply a magnificent road that lead to the heavens.

“Chu Feng, how did you discover this spatial crack?” The Elf King asked curiously.

“I managed to discover this spatial crack by chance after returning to the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Mn?” Merely, after Chu Feng said those words, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts changed slightly.

After all, the four of them had followed Chu Feng the entire time. Even when returning to the Holy Land of Martialism through the Eastern Sea Region, they had used that vicious spatial crack. At that time, they had not discovered such a spectacular spatial crack.

Merely, even though the four of them sensed that something was fishy, they did not question Chu Feng, and pretended as if they didn't know about it.

“This is truly extraordinary.”

“If that vicious spatial crack was only discovered by coincidence,

then this spatial crack has simply appeared like a fine work of art,” The Elf King and the others were all exclaiming in astonishment.

Faced with the exclamation from the crowd, Chu Feng could only pretend to smile calmly. After all, it was also the first time he was seeing this spatial crack.

In actuality, Chu Feng was also extremely astonished by this spatial crack. Thus, he secretly sent a voice transmission to the blind old man and asked, “Blind Uncle, how did you discover this spatial crack?”

“Master, this spatial crack was not discovered by this old servant. Rather, it was created by Lord Xuanyuan,” The blind old man said.

“My father?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was astonished.

“Indeed. Lord Xuanyuan created this spatial crack for the sake of making it easy for me to travel to the Eastern Sea Region,” The blind old man answered.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng became even more astonished. The energy separating the Holy Land of Martialism and the Eastern Sea Region was no small matter.

Yet, his father was actually capable of forcibly splitting that energy apart and opening up a tunnel that connected the Holy Land of Martialism to the Eastern Sea Region. This was truly too inconceivable.

‘Father, exactly how powerful are you?’

At that moment, such a question came into Chu Feng’s mind. At the same time he had that question, Chu Feng felt his blood racing. He was extremely excited.

When he first heard of his father from Huangfu Haoyue, Chu Feng had already felt that his father should be extremely powerful. Else, it would be impossible for him to make Huangfu Haoyue that scared.

However, that had only been Chu Feng's wishful thinking, because he did not actually know what level of cultivation and what sort of strength his father possessed.

Merely, as a son, he felt adoration for his father from the bottom of his heart. As such, he wished that his father would be very powerful.

And now, even though Chu Feng still didn't know what sort of cultivation his father possessed, he became even more certain that his father was definitely very powerful, unimaginably powerful even, after personally seeing the accomplishments left behind by his father.

After all, the tunnel before them was sufficient to prove everything. Such a tunnel, not to mention for the current Chu Feng, even if Chu Feng trained for many years after this, he would not necessarily be able to accomplish such a feat.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, "Everyone, let's go."

As matters stood, he was even more urgent to meet his biological father.

"Well then, everyone, stop looking at it. Let's go," The Elf King added.

The reason why he had added those words was because, even now, the crowd was still looking at that tunnel. This was especially true for the Heaven Reaching Immortal, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, the Compass Immortal and the Snow-haired Immortal, these world spiritists.

They all had a vague feeling that this tunnel didn't seem to have formed naturally. Rather, it seemed to be man-made.

Thus, they wanted to observe the tunnel to find an answer. Unfortunately... they did not possess sufficient strength to be able to see through the profoundness of the tunnel.

Afterward, the crowd all entered the tunnel created by Chu

Feng's father and arrived at the Eastern Sea Region.

After arriving at the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng directly led these experts from the Holy Land of Martialism to the Misty Peak.

After all, Chu Feng must let Xian Miaomiao know where the formation leading to the Outer World was located.

Without a doubt, the people on the Misty Peak, for example Huangfu Haoyue and Qiushui Fuyan, were all extremely astonished to see Chu Feng returning with so many experts from the Holy Land of Martialism.

Earlier, they had only thought that Chu Feng was very powerful. It was at that moment that they realized that Chu Feng's power had already surpassed their imagination.

After all, ignoring the rest of the crowd, they were able to see that the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise, the Four Great Divine Beasts, were all standing behind Chu Feng to either side of him. That was already enough to let Huangfu Haoyue and the others know that Chu Feng's current strength and status was already something that no one in the Eastern Sea Region could compare with.

Even in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng would also definitely be someone with great power.

Merely, they did not know that not only was Chu Feng someone powerful in the Holy Land of Martialism...

... he was even the person that everyone acknowledged the current era's overlord.

Chapter 2128 – Reviving The Chu Family

Although Chu Feng's return came as an enormous surprise to all the people in the Misty Peak, Chu Feng did not plan to stay for long.

He had merely brought Xian Miaomiao and the others to have a look at the Stairway to Heaven, and greeted Qiushui Fuyan and Huangfu Haoyue. He casually told them that Xian Miaomiao and the others might have to use the Stairway to Heaven in the future, and requested that they not try to stop them from doing so.

He also told them about his main purpose in returning to the Eastern Sea Region that time around.

After finding out that Chu Feng had returned to the Eastern Sea Region with the intent to return to the Nine Provinces Continent to revive his relatives, and that he would be leaving immediately after doing so, Huangfu Haoyue and the others decided to accompany Chu Feng to the Nine Provinces Continent.

Although they did not possess any understanding of the Outer World, they were able to realize that Chu Feng would likely be leaving for a very long time.

As such, they all wished to accompany Chu Feng in the limited time that they had.

Thus, the number of people in Chu Feng's group grew even more numerous and powerful.

Majestically, they began to proceed toward the Nine Provinces Continent.

"I truly never would've thought that Chu Feng would've... already become this powerful in merely a few short years."

As Huangfu Haoyue, Qiushui Fuyan and the others looked to Chu Feng, who was at the front of the group of people, their gazes became very complicated.

The reason for that was because, on their way to the Nine Provinces Continent, Xian Miaomiao, Sima Ying, Princess Lingyue and other members of the younger generation from the Holy Land of Martialism had all arrived before Huangfu Haoyue and the others, this group of people from the Eastern Sea Region.

The reason why they went to them was because they wished to know more about Chu Feng's achievements in the Eastern Sea Region from Huangfu Haoyue and the others.

However, at the same time as they were making inquiries about Chu Feng's past achievements, they were also informing Huangfu Haoyue and the others about what Chu Feng had accomplished in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Thus, Huangfu Haoyue and the others already knew of Chu Feng's true strength now, as well as the status he possessed in the Holy Land of Martialism.

They began to recall how Chu Feng had been so weak, how he had truly been someone from the younger generation, and how he had still needed them to protect him before.

And now, Chu Feng had become so powerful. He had reached a level they were simply unable to even touch.

At that moment, exclamations of admiration filled their hearts.

"We're here."

Suddenly, Chu Feng, who was leading the crowd, stopped.

The reason for that was because they had arrived at the Nine Provinces Continent's Azure Province. Furthermore, they were currently in the skies above the Golden-purple City.

Although the Golden-purple City was not the hometown of the Chu Family, it was the place where the people from the Chu Family had been massacred.

If Chu Feng wanted to resurrect them, this would be the best

place to do so.

“Seniors, please wait for me here. I will return immediately.”

Then, Chu Feng personally proceeded toward the Azure Dragon School.

He was going there to call for the people of the Chu Family.

He was not doing this for the sake of telling them this great news immediately. Rather, the resurrection secret technique possessed a very important characteristic. That was that it required one's close kin to call for the souls of the dead.

Back then, a lot of people from the Chu Family had been killed. Among them, many were not close to Chu Feng at all.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that if he wanted to resurrect more people from the Chu Family, he would need more people from the Chu Family that possessed close relationships with those that had been killed.

As such, Chu Guyu, Chu Wei, Chu Cheng, Chu Zhen, Chu Yue and the others, the people from the Chu Family that were still alive, would all be absolutely necessary for this.

Chu Feng arrived at the Azure Dragon School and directly told Chu Guyu and the others from the Chu Family why he had returned.

After hearing about this technique, Chu Guyu and the others were all filled with astonishment; they all felt an enormous amount of disbelief.

After all, resurrection was something that they'd never seen before, something simply unheard of.

Even though they found it unbelievable, and found it hard to accept that there would be such a technique in the world, they still decided to follow Chu Feng.

As such, they all arrived at the Golden-purple City.

It was not only the people from the Chu Family that followed him over, the Azure Dragon Founder, Li Zhangqing, Zhuge Liuyun and others also followed him over.

“Heavens! This...”

When the Azure Dragon Founder, Chu Guyu and the others saw all the experts from the Holy Land of Martialism, they were all stunned.

The difference between their cultivations was simply too great. Even though the experts from the Holy Land of Martialism did not deliberately reveal their auras, and were even deliberately concealing them, they still appeared to emit extraordinary airs before the eyes of Chu Guyu and the others.

This caused Chu Guyu and the others to feel as if they were little grasses standing before enormous mountains when they stood before the Elf King and the others. They felt themselves to be extremely small.

“Little brother Chu Feng, those people... they’re all your friends from the Holy Land of Martialism?” Astonished, Chu Yue asked Chu Feng curiously. She began to feel that her little brother was even more amazing than she had thought.

“We are all Chu Feng’s friends,” The Elf King said with a smile. Seemingly afraid that the people from the Azure Dragon School would be afraid, his tone was extremely gentle and friendly.

Following him, the other people also expressed their close relationship with Chu Feng.

“Ssss~~~”

After telling the crowd of their relationship with Chu Feng, the people from the Azure Dragon School were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Even though they already knew that Chu Feng’s future outlook was very bright, they had not expected Chu Feng to be this

overwhelmingly powerful.

At that moment they were astonished, so astonished that they all turned their gazes to Chu Feng, with pride filling their gazes.

After all, they were all people who had close relationships with Chu Feng.

“B-B-B-Beauty, n-ni-nice to meet you. I-I am C-C-Chu Feng’s g-good friend. M-My name is W-Wang Qiang.”

“M-May I a-ask, a-are you Chu F-Feng’s big s-sister?”

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang’s body shifted. Like a phantom, he arrived before Chu Yue.

Although Wang Qiang’s upper body was completely naked, and he possessed an extremely strange outfit, his strength was extremely powerful. As such, Chu Yue did not dare to disrespect him. She answered truthfully, “Senior, nice to meet you. I am Chu Feng’s older cousin. My name is Chu Yue.”

“M-my, d-don’t address me a-as s-s-senior. I m-might even be y-younger than you. C-Come, let’s s-s-s-sh-shake hands,” Wang Qiang extended his filthy and stinky hand with a beaming smile on his face.

To Chu Yue, Wang Qiang was a senior. When he was asking for a handshake, how could she possibly dare to refuse him?

Merely, she did not notice that Wang Qiang’s saliva was about to drool out of the corner of his mouth the moment she extended her lily-white hand.

“Paa~~~”

Seeing that, Chu Feng immediately raised his hand and slapped Wang Qiang’s extended hand away. Then he shouted, “Scram! You’re even trying to take advantage of my big sister Chu Yue? Have you grown tired of living?”

“N-N-Nonesense! A-Am I t-t-that sort of p-per-person?” Wang

Qiang spoke with righteousness. Then his body shifted, and he arrived before Chu Xue. With a beaming smile on his face, he said, “N-N-Nice to meet you. I-I a-am Chu F-Feng’s friend. M-May I know who y-you m-might be?”

Sigh...

Seeing Wang Qiang acting like this, Chu Feng revealed an expression of helplessness. Thus, he decided to ignore Wang Qiang. He turned to Chu Guyu and the others and said, “Big brother, big sister Chu Yue, let’s start.”

“Little brother, is it truly possible?” Chu Guyu asked.

Chu Guyu did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to resurrect the people of the Chu Family. However, at the same time, he truly wished for that resurrection technique to be true.

“Let’s give it a try,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. His smile was slightly distressed.

The reason for that was because even he was uncertain as to whether or not it was truly possible. That said, he also deeply wished for that secret technique to be useful.

Thus, Chu Feng was very scared that the secret technique would fail; that he would not be able to resurrect the members of the Chu Family.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After thinking about it, Chu Feng immediately started to set up a grand formation. For the sake of preventing a failure, Chu Feng was extremely meticulous in setting up this grand formation. He would make sure to grasp everything and every detail of the formation.

After the formation was completed, Chu Feng and the others from the Chu Family all sat cross-legged above the formation’s core.

After they all entered the formation, everyone closed their eyes. What they had to do was very simple. They merely needed to emit their longing for their relatives and call for their relatives in their hearts nonstop. As for the rest... that would all be left to Chu Feng to take care of.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted, “Rise.”

Once he said that word, the fifty-five thousand five hundred and fifty-five white candles within the formation were simultaneously ignited.

At the same time, a strange sort of power began to pulse from the formation.

“That secret technique!!!”

At that moment, everyone’s hearts, regardless of whether they were from the Holy Land of Martialism or the Eastern Sea Region, started to tighten, And their expressions changed.

When the candles ignited, they all sensed that strange power engulfing their bodies.

That was a power that they had never felt before. It was as if their souls were attracted to that formation.

Chapter 2129 – Don't Harm Her

“It would seem that the secret resurrection technique is feasible.”

The Heaven Reaching Immortal's eyes were shining. When he personally felt the power emitted by the formation, he realized that the secret resurrection technique was most definitely not empty words. Instead, it possessed actual usage.

Merely, after an entire day passed, not a single spirit body was seen or had formed.

Furthermore, the great world spiritists like the Heaven Reaching Immortal were also unable to sense the appearance of any souls.

That sort of result inevitably caused the crowd to feel somewhat regretful. More and more people began to feel that this secret resurrection technique would not work.

After two entire days passed, Chu Guyu who was sitting in the formation, opened his eyes.

It was only at that moment that he discovered that Chu Zhen, Chu Yue and the others had all already opened their eyes.

Not only were their eyes opened, they also had disappointed and distressed expressions on their faces.

“Is it a failure?”

At that moment, without needing anyone to tell him, Chu Guyu realized that the secret resurrection technique seemed to have failed.

Hearing those words from Chu Guyu, many people present nodded their heads, even though they were unwilling to admit that the secret resurrection technique had failed.

After verifying that it had failed, Chu Guyu revealed extreme sorrow in his eyes.

Even though he never placed too great of a hope in the secret

resurrection technique to begin with, they had still placed hope in it.

Thus, even though they knew that it might fail, they would inevitably still feel grief when it actually did fail.

“Little brother,” Suddenly, Chu Guyu’s gaze turned sluggish.

He discovered that while everyone else had opened their eyes, Chu Feng had not. His body was emitting world spirit power that fused into that spirit formation nonstop.

After hearing Chu Guyu’s call, Chu Feng also opened his eyes. He smiled lightly, then said, “Let’s try it again.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng closed his eyes again and continued to operate the secret resurrection technique.

Seeing that, Chu Guyu and the others closed their eyes again too.

Just like that, Chu Guyu and the others persisted for one day, two days, three days...

When there was still no sign of any soul or spirit body on the seventh day, everyone started to give up hope. They felt that the people from the Chu Family would likely not be able to be revived.

However, Chu Feng continued to persist. He continued regardless of who it was that tried to urge him to stop.

“Little brother, I know you want to revive father, grandfather and the others. We too wish for that.”

“But, we must also recognize reality. It is time for you to stop. If you are to continue with this, you will bring harm to your health.”

Chu Guyu stood before Chu Feng and urged him to stop. At that moment... everyone was surrounding Chu Feng.

“I understand. But, let me continue, let me continue for one more day. If it is still useless then, I will give up.” Chu Feng opened his eyes and spoke with a smile on his face.

Although his smile appeared to be very relaxed, his expression was actually slightly ugly.

He had been keeping the formation activated for seven days and nights straight. As such, it was very taxing on Chu Feng mentally. His body was on the verge of collapse.

After all, that formation was different from ordinary spirit formations. Thus, even though Chu Feng's perseverance was very strong, and his spirit power very powerful, he would likely still collapse if this were to continue.

However, even with this being the case, he still forcibly persisted. As such, he would naturally cause the crowd to become very worried and saddened by his actions.

Right at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue said, "Chu Feng, if you want to persist, we will all approve of it. Merely, I'm afraid that there won't be enough time."

"Senior, please rest assured, I can still persist," Chu Feng said.

"No, I'm not talking about your health," Huangfu Haoyue said.

"Then?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's the Heavenly Road. Aren't you planning to enter the Heavenly Road?" Huangfu Haoyue asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's pupils immediately shrank. Then, he asked, "The Heavenly Road is about to open?"

"That's right. If you wish to go there, I'm afraid you must leave immediately," Huangfu Haoyue said.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to the secret resurrection technique before him. His heart felt very complicated. He actually knew that he had failed. Merely... he did not wish to give up this easily.

However, it would appear that he now had no choice but to give up. The reason for that was because he must first go and meet his

father before entering the Outer World.

However, the blind old man had already used the communication talisman Chu Feng's father had given him. As such, there was no way to get in contact with Chu Feng's father.

If Chu Feng wanted to see his father, the only way he could do so was to enter the Heavenly Road, then find the Chu Family's forbidden area in the Heavenly Road.

As for the Heavenly Road, it only opened once a year. If Chu Feng missed this opportunity, he would have to wait for another year.

“Seniors, please go and rest in the Azure Dragon School for the time being. After I return from the Heavenly Road, I would like to make another attempt at this secret resurrection technique,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

“Chu Feng, do you really not need us to accompany you?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked.

Chu Feng shook his head. He looked to the Four Great Divine Beasts and said, “It would do with the four of them accompanying me.”

After that was decided, Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts began to fly toward the Eastern Sea Region again.

On their way there, the blind old man that had concealed himself the entire time also revealed himself. After all, their speed would be much faster should he be the one leading the group.

“Isn't this person?”

Upon seeing the blind old man, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts all changed. They naturally recognized the blind old man. After all, they had experienced everything with Chu Feng.

Merely, the four of them were astonished by the blind old man's aura.

Even though they had followed Qing Xuantian in the past, they

had never met someone as powerful as the blind old man.

As for Chu Feng, he did not conceal this matter from the Four Great Divine Beasts, and instead informed them about the blind old man's identity.

After hearing about Chu Feng's identity, the Four Great Divine Beasts were all extremely astonished. None of them had expected Chu Feng to possess such a noble and grand status.

They had not expected such a strong power in the Holy Land of Martialism to only be Chu Feng's clan servants.

"Master, after you see Lord Xuanyuan later, it would be best that you tell him about the Moon Immortal."

"Actually, this old servant had originally planned to retrieve Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies from the Moon Immortal after acknowledging my relationship with you."

"Merely, ever since the Moon Immortal escaped from her battle against the Dark Hall's Hall Master before the Transmogrification Gate, this old servant has been unable to find any trace of her at all. As such... we can only ask Lord Xuanyuan for his help in the matter." The blind old man said.

The blind old man knew that Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts were going to enter the Outer World. In the future, they would be fighting alongside each other in the Outer World. As such, he did not try to conceal anything, and spoke directly before the Four Great Divine Beasts.

"It would be best if my father is willing to help us," Chu Feng naturally wished to help Su Rou and Su Mei retrieve their physical bodies.

However, after hearing what the blind old man said to Chu Feng, the gazes of the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed various degrees of change. They looked to one another, and then secretly consulted with one another. Then the Azure Dragon spoke. "Chu

Feng, there is a matter that I think it is time for us to inform you about.”

“Senior Azure Dragon, what might that matter be?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s regarding the Moon Immortal,” The Azure Dragon said.

“Moon Immortal?” Chu Feng was startled. However, upon recalling how the four of them had followed Qing Xuantian, he determined that they were likely present when Qing Xuantian came in contact with the Moon Immortal, and should possess a better understanding of the Moon Immortal than him. Thus, he said, “Seniors, please go ahead and tell me whatever it is that you all want to say.”

“Chu Feng, if you are able to capture the Moon Immortal, please don’t harm her,” The Azure Dragon said.

Chapter 2130 – Re-entering The Heavenly Road

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng actually felt that the Moon Immortal’s nature was not evil. Although she had forcibly seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, Chu Feng felt that she should have her own difficulties that she found hard to mention.

Thus, even if the Azure Dragon and the others had not requested it, he still did not plan to harm the Moon Immortal.

However, since the Azure Dragon and the others pleaded for leniency for the Moon Immortal, Chu Feng felt that there should be a special reason.

“We promised Qing Xuantian that we would not tell anyone about his relationship with the Moon Immortal.”

“As such, we can only tell you that Qing Xuantian and the Moon Immortal possessed an extraordinary relationship.”

“Thus, Chu Feng, could you please give us face, give Qing Xuantian face, and not bring harm upon the Moon Immortal?” The Azure Dragon pleaded.

At that moment, Chu Feng came to an understanding. It turned out that the Azure Dragon and the others were pleading for the Moon Immortal because of Qing Xuantian.

Even though Chu Feng already knew that the Moon Immortal possessed a relationship with Qing Xuantian, he had not expected it to be an extraordinary relationship.

“If the Moon Immortal is willing to return Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, I will naturally not harm her. However, if she refuses, my hands will be forced.”

“After all, Su Rou and Su Mei are my beloved women,” Chu Feng

did not speak too inflexibly.

Regardless of whether the Moon Immortal was good or evil, it remained that she had forcibly seized Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies. If she refused to return their bodies, Chu Feng would not be polite with her just because she had saved him before.

After all, those were Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies.

"If the Moon Immortal refuses to hand over Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies, even if you are willing to spare us, the four of us would absolutely not let her get away with it," The Azure Dragon said.

The Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise and White Tiger also nodded at the Azure Dragon's words. They had expressed their viewpoints.

Seeing that, Chu Feng smiled lightly. He felt joy in his heart. Although the Four Great Divine Beasts had pleaded for the Moon Immortal for Qing Xuantian, they had not forgotten him, their new master.

.....

Eastern Sea Region. At a sea called the Heaven Sea. Countless people were already gathered in that place.

The reason all those people had gathered was because that was the place where the Heavenly Road would open every year.

"Rumble~~~"

As rumbles began to be heard, waves began to surge above the sea. Then, an enormous whirlpool began to appear.

As the whirlpool spun, the waves grew even more ferocious. The size of the whirlpool began to expand unceasingly. In the end, countless enormous whirlpools practically covered the entire sea. It was truly a magnificent sight.

"Bang~~~"

"Bang~~~"

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, many thick beams of light began to shoot out of the whirlpools explosively. After being shot out from the whirlpools in the sea, the beams of light gathered together in the sky and formed a golden-bright and dazzling grand formation.

That grand formation was enormous. The top of it reached the clouds, whereas the bottom entered the sea. It looked like a tall, golden wall that separated the world. At the same time, it looked like a bright sun that stood between heaven and earth

In that sort of situation, an entrance soon appeared in the center of the formation.

“It’s here.”

At that moment, deafening shouts sounded from the vast crowd. Everyone was filled with excitement.

The reason for that was because they all knew that it meant that the Heavenly Road had officially opened.

Merely, although the crowd was filled with excitement from the opening of the Heavenly Road, none of them dared to actually set foot into it.

The reason for that was because everyone knew that while the Heavenly Road was capable of bringing them to the legendary Holy Land of Martialism, the Heavenly Road was also extremely and frighteningly dangerous.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, space suddenly started to tremble. Everyone felt that the world seemed to be trembling violently. In fact, those with lower levels of cultivation directly fell from the air and into the sea down below.

“What’s going on?”

At that moment, many people started to panic. Even the old senior-level characters revealed expressions of panic.

Although the sensation they felt lasted for merely an instant, it was like the arrival of doomsday. As such, everyone felt lingering fears in their hearts.

Merely, no one knew that the trembling from before was caused by the sonic boom created through rapid movement.

At the moment when everyone present was alarmed, Chu Feng, the blind old man and the Four Great Divine Beasts had successfully entered the Heavenly Road.

The first thing they were met with after entering the Heavenly Road was pitch darkness. They felt as if the place was a bottomless pit. However, as they continued onward, light soon appeared before them. It was a deep blue glimmer. That glimmer was created by some sort of floating object.

That deep blue object emitting light was the size of a watermelon. Furthermore, more deep blue objects could be found throughout that vast world as far as the eye could see. That place did not resemble an isolated space at all. Instead, it seemed more like a starry sky. It was very beautiful and mysterious.

As they continued onward, horrifying anguished wailing soon began to be heard. Following close behind that were many vengeful spirits seeking their lives.

Everything was exactly the same as the first time Chu Feng stepped onto the Heavenly Road. All of these were things that one must experience after setting foot onto the Heavenly Road.

Merely, back then, Chu Feng had felt uneasy after seeing those things. However, now... he was completely calm.

Even if there were truly dangers on the Heavenly Road, there would rarely be anything capable of causing harm to Chu Feng given how powerful he was at the moment.

Furthermore, the blind old man, a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, was with him.

Most importantly, Chu Feng felt that... his father would know that he had entered the Heavenly Road.

The reason for that was because he would never forget who it was that dispatched that powerful guardian statue to save them when he and Tantai Xue were met with difficult opponents.

It was the Old Ape. However, Chu Feng knew that the Old Ape must've acted per his father's instructions.

'Father should know that I've come to find him, right?'

'Will father be willing to see me this time?'

Recalling the scene from the past, Chu Feng became even more excited and nervous.

He was excited because he wanted to see his biological father. He was nervous because he was afraid that his strength would be insufficient, and that his father would end up refusing to see him again.

With that sort of nervousness filling his heart, Chu Feng finally arrived before that magnificent gate.

That gate appeared exactly the same as before. It was wide open.

However, differently from back then, two guardian statues were standing on either side of the gate now. They appeared very impressive.

At that moment, Chu Feng stopped before the gate and cast his gaze to one of the two guardian statues. With a smile, he said, "It was you that saved me back then."

After saying those words, Chu Feng set foot into the gate.

Everything was the same as it was back then. After entering the gate, they were met with pitch darkness. Even though Chu Feng was a rank seven Martial Emperor and a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak

World Spiritist, his techniques were still unable to accomplish anything in that place.

Like a blind person, he could only continue onward toward the faint light that he could see ahead. Chu Feng and the others moved toward that light.

When they finally managed to arrive before the light, Chu Feng grew even more excited.

It was the light of a fire. There was a bonfire there. However, that was not the important aspect. Most importantly, sitting beside the bonfire was an extremely thin ape wearing shabby looking clothes.

That... was the Old Ape.

Chapter 2131 – Finally Meeting Father

“Senior.”

Chu Feng was extremely excited to see the Old Ape. This was especially true when he discovered that the Old Ape still possessed an unfathomable depth that he couldn't see through even now.

“So you've come, Chu Feng.”

After the Old Ape saw Chu Feng, he stood up. His mouth lifted into a light smile.

Compared to back then, his reaction was completely different. Back then, the Old Ape had had an extremely cold and ferocious attitude when he looked at Chu Feng.

However, his attitude was now filled with amiability. It was as if... he had been awaiting Chu Feng's arrival the entire time.

“This old servant pays his respect to Milord,” Seeing the old ape, the blind old man hurriedly kneeled to greet him.

“Woosh~~~”

However, before the blind old man could actually kneel, the Old Ape waved his sleeve and lifted the blind old man back onto his feet.

“There's no need to be overly courteous. Quickly, go in with Chu Feng,” The Old Ape said. As he said those words, he glanced at the Four Great Divine Beasts. He said, “However, as for the four of them, their statuses are too low. As such, they are not allowed to enter the Chu Clan's Forbidden Area.”

After he finished saying those words, the Old Ape sat back down in a cross-legged position beside the special bonfire.

Normally, the Four Great Divine Beasts would definitely be enraged if someone would dare to speak to them in such a manner. However, when those words were spoken by the Old Ape, the four

of them did not dare to reveal any trace of anger. Instead... they obediently sat down by the bonfire.

After all, the Old Ape was an existence that even the blind old man could not compare to. Likely, no one other than the Old Ape himself knew how powerful he really was.

However, regardless of how powerful the Old Ape might be, it was certain that he would be able to kill them with merely a spit if he wished to.

The Four Great Divine Beasts were not foolish. Thus, how could they possibly dare to act imprudently before such a powerful existence?

At that moment, they became even more convinced of Chu Feng's noble status. At the same time, they began to look forward to their journey to the Outer World even more.

Chu Feng and the blind old man continued onward. Merely, as the two of them continued onward, they soon arrived before Chu Feng's tombstone.

That tomb had been set up for Chu Feng, and had been used to deceive the people of the Chu Clan.

Back then, it had been destroyed by that fellow by the name of Chu Kongtong. However, it would appear that the tomb had since been restored.

When Chu Feng looked at the tombstone again, he was filled with joy.

It was not because of the tombstone. Rather, it was because of the person standing beside the tombstone. Beside the tombstone was a beautiful woman.

Her beauty and air of elegance was like that of a celestial fairy. She was none other than Zi Ling.

Not only was the current Zi Ling completely unharmed, her aura

was much more powerful than before. She had become a rank one Martial Emperor.

Although that level of cultivation was greatly inferior to Chu Feng's current level of cultivation, it was already enormous progress when compared to the Zi Ling from back then.

"Zi Ling," Upon seeing Zi Ling, Chu Feng hurriedly rush to her and placed his hands onto her shoulders. Then, he surveyed her from head to toe, "Let me see if my foolish little girl is fine."

"Rest assured, I'm fine," Zi Ling smiled sweetly. Then, she looked to the blind old man and said, "Master, please rest assured too. I am completely healed."

"That's great, that's great," The blind old man nodded repeatedly. A smile covering his face.

The blind old man was not a heartless person. No matter what, he had instructed Zi Ling and the others before. Thus, he possessed a considerable amount of affection for Zi Ling and the others.

"However, Miss Zi Ling, this old servant has now identified myself to Master. As such, you no longer need to address this old servant as master, because this old servant is unworthy of that address," The blind old man said.

Hearing those words, Zi Ling wanted to say something. However, it seemed that she then recalled something, and decided to say nothing.

Instead, she looked at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, go on ahead. Your father is waiting for you."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart immediately thumped.

"Zi Ling, my father is willing to meet me now?" Chu Feng did not dare to believe his own ears. After all, this was extremely important to him.

"Don't be foolish. Go on in, that's your father that's waiting for

you,” Zi Ling said with a smile.

“Very well,” Chu Feng nodded repeatedly. He was able to understand what Zi Ling meant by her words. His father must have wanted him to go in alone.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heartbeat suddenly started to accelerate. He felt as if his heart was about to jump out of his throat.

Over these years, Chu Feng had experienced all sorts of things, and set foot into all kinds of dangerous places.

However, never had he ever been so nervous.

‘Lord Father, exactly what sort of person is he?’

‘Will he like me?’

All sorts of questions began to hover in Chu Feng’s heart.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the dark scene before Chu Feng started to brighten. A stone table and two stone chairs appeared not far ahead of Chu Feng.

Furthermore, a middle-aged man was sitting on one of the stone chairs.

That man was not very tall, robust or handsome. Especially his outfit; he was wearing very plain and unadorned clothing. It could be said that he appeared extremely ordinary.

However, to Chu Feng, this man appeared very imposing. He was so imposing that simply no one could be compared with him.

It was as if this man was the most powerful man in the world. Regardless of what other people thought, this was what Chu Feng felt.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Lord Father.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng knelt onto the ground and respectfully

kowtowed to the man before him. He knew... that the man before him was most definitely his father.

After all, at that very moment, his bloodline's power was throbbing.

"We are father and son, not strangers. There is no need for you to do that sort of thing," Once Chu Xuanyuan's words left his mouth, Chu Feng actually started to float. Unable to control himself, Chu Feng started to float toward the stone chair beside Chu Xuanyuan.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that Chu Xuanyuan had simply not even moved. However... it was clear that the power that covered him was emitted by Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Feng was brought to the stone chair and seated on it by that power.

"You must be extremely wearied by your journey. You should eat some food to replenish your physical strength," Chu Xuanyuan personally picked up a dimsum and handed it to Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that dimsums and fruits covered the stone table. Although those dimsums and fruits were all very simple, they were all the things that Chu Feng loved to eat the most.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt a sniffle in his nose. He was able to tell that those things were... most definitely meticulously prepared by his father.

"Thank you, Lord Father," As Chu Feng spoke, he received the dimsum his father had handed him.

"Enough with the 'Lord Father'. I am your father, and you are my son. You are my flesh. There is nothing more related than the two of us in this world."

"Thus, it would do if you just addressed me as 'father'. There is no need for too much etiquette between father and son," Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile. His smile was filled with

affection toward one's child.

“Yes, father.” At that moment, Chu Feng stopped acting reversed, and smiled with ease. Then, he bluntly grabbed a dimsum and took a large bite.

It was not that Chu Feng was hungry. Merely, he wished to taste the dimsums that his father had prepared for him. The reason for that was because this was the first time he was eating something his biological father had prepared for him.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the bite of dimsum entered his mouth, Chu Feng sensed a warm aura filling his entire body.

Chu Feng, who had been feeling slightly exhausted, was immediately filled with energy and his face became radiant.

That dimsum was absolutely not an ordinary dimsum. It contained a special sort of power that was much more effective than even the most powerful medicinal pellet Chu Feng possessed.

That sort of dimsum, not to mention the Eastern Sea Region, was something that not even the people in the Holy Land of Martialism could possibly make. At that moment, Chu Feng felt the diligence of his father. The reason for that was because he knew that both the dimsums and the fruits were most definitely personally created by his father.

Chapter 2132 – The Vast Outer World

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan apologized. “Feng’er, for you to be orphaned these years, it was because your father was incompetent. I have made you suffer,”

Chu Feng let go of the dimsum in his hand. With an expression filled with self-blame, he said, “Father, you must not say something like that. Senior Ape has already mentioned to me what happened back then. Even though I do not know the details, what I know that it was I, your son, that implicated you and mother.”

“You are but a child, how could you be at fault? The ones at fault are the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, exactly what happened back then?” Chu Feng asked.

“I know that you have a lot of questions in your heart. Don’t be anxious, father will slowly explain everything to you,” Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Firstly, you need to understand this vast and boundless world of martial cultivation.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart was immediately moved. The vast and boundless world of martial cultivation was something that Chu Feng had wished to know about, but had never been able to know about.

Now, would he really be able to know about it?

“Presently, the known world of martial cultivation is roughly separated into three realms; Upper, Ordinary and Lower.”

“After the Ancient Era, due to the difference in talent that people possessed, the different races and clans started to live in different worlds.”

“The martial cultivators of the Lower Realms possessed the worst talent. Following that were the martial cultivators from the Ordinary Realms. Compared to them, the martial cultivators of the Upper Realms possessed much better talent.”

“The so-called Outer World means being outside of a known world. To the people living in the Lower Realms, the Upper Realms would be considered to be the Outer World, whereas the Ordinary Realms would also be considered to be the Outer World.”

“And now, the world that we are currently in is known as the ‘Ancestral Martial Lower Realm,’” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, the world that we live in, is the lowest tier world?”

“No wonder. No wonder that Dark Hall’s Hall Master acted so arrogantly, and refused to put the people of the Holy Land of Martialism in his eyes,” Chu Feng finally realized why that Dark Hall’s Hall Master had been so conceited.

He also understood the reason why the Dark Hall’s Hall Master addressed the people from the Holy Land of Martialism as ‘trash from the lower realm.’

It turned out that the people from the Holy Land of Martialism and the Four Sea Regions were truly living in a lower realm.

“In theory, that is the case. However, there are always exceptions to everything. It is not absolutely true that people capable of surpassing the experts from the Ordinary Realm or the Upper Realm cannot appear in the Lower Realm. After all, our Chu Heavenly Clan originated from this Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.”

“In fact, there are excellent individuals entering the Ordinary Realms through Stairways to Heaven from the Lower Realms every year.”

“Furthermore, the people from those Lower Realms all know about the matters regarding the Ordinary Realms and the Upper Realms. However, no one in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm knows about them.”

“The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm is one of the very few Lower

Realms that have already separated from the Outer World. Do you know why that is the case?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“It’s because of our Chu Heavenly Clan. Our Chu Heavenly Clan sealed off the only Stairway to Heaven that could lead to the Ordinary Realms,” Chu Feng said.

After all, apart from the Stairway to Heaven in the Eastern Sea Region’s Misty Peak, the only other known Stairway to Heaven in the Holy Land of Martialism was the one in the Realm of Gods. However, due to the existence of the blind old man and the others, practically no one from the Holy Land of Martialism would be able to use that Stairway to Heaven.

Thinking of that, Chu Feng felt that it was very unfair. After all, this meant that it was the Chu Heavenly Clan that had eliminated the privilege the people of this world should possess to enter the Outer World.

“That is merely a part of it. However, that is not the main reason why,” Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly, “If true experts were to rise, they would not be stopped by others.”

“Father, you’re saying that... the cultivators from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm are inferior to those from the other Lower Realms?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” Chu Xuanyuan sighed, “Other than our Chu Heavenly Clan, the talent of the people from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm is truly lacking. Not to mention that these people are unable to enter the Outer World, even if they were able to enter the Outer World and arrive at the higher Ordinary Realms, they would only be enslaved or bullied by others.”

“Think about it. The well-known figures of this place, if they were to enter the Ordinary Realms... they would become the weakest existences. How lamentable would that be?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded.

“However, that is not the important matter. Do you know why this world is known as the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to the legends, in the Ancient Era, this place... was the birthplace of martial cultivators.”

“The legendary Fate Primogenitor was born here,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, the legend that the Blind Uncle told me about regarding the Ancient Era is true?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had not forgotten the story that the blind old man told him the first time he had met him at the Eastern Sea Region’s Everlasting Sea of Blood.

“The Ancient Era is too distant. Who knows what things from that time are real and what are not?”

“However, regardless of whether the legends are real or not, it is still extremely lamentable for a Lower Realm to decline to such a state.”

“Thus, you cannot blame others for looking down on the people from this place. Whether or not one is conceited and arrogant is the other’s business. However, if one is weak, one would not be able to blame others for looking down on them.”

“If they did, they would only be deceiving themselves,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“What father says is correct,” Chu Feng truly felt what his father said to be reasonable.

It would be the fault of the strong if they looked down on the weak. However, if one was weak, one would not be able to stop oneself from being looked down upon. After all, being weak could

not serve as a justification.

“Thus, Feng’er, you must also understand this. Although you might possess outstanding talent in this place, is deemed to be an exceptional genius, and is also truly above all the others, you must absolutely not be conceited.”

“The reason for that is because you are living in the weakest Lower Realm among all the Lower Realms. Yet... you should originally belong to the Upper Realm,” Chu Xuanyuan reminded Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

“Father, you’re saying that the Chu Heavenly Clan is... not located in the Ordinary Realm, but rather the Upper Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“Not only is the Chu Heavenly Clan located in the Upper Realm, it is also the ruler of an Upper Realm,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Never would I have expected my clan to be so powerful,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

Even though Chu Feng detested the Chu Heavenly Clan, as he was still a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he still felt pride upon knowing that his Chu Heavenly Clan possessed such a high status.

While there was hatred, he only hated those that had deliberately made things difficult for him and his father. He could not forget about the foundation conquered by his seniors, nor could he forget about the origin of the blood flowing through his body.

Chu Feng could imagine how difficult it had been for the Chu Heavenly Clan to walk out from a Lower Realm and become the rulers of an Upper Realm. That journey upward had most definitely been filled with difficulties. Likely, they had paid a considerable price to do so.

That status might be something that countless seniors had obtained with their blood. As such, he should respect all of it.

“Feng’er, do not limit your vision to only that. While the Upper

Realm is very powerful, in the vast Outer Realm, there are countless Upper Realms.”

“Furthermore, above the Upper Realm are many Starfields,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Starfields?” Chu Feng’s eyes shone.

“If the Lower Realms, Ordinary Realms and Upper Realms could all be considered to be stairs in the sky, then a Starfield would be a region of the starry sky.”

“Every Starfield would be ruled by a very strong power. The ambition of the Chu Heavenly Clan is to become the ruler of a Starfield,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Sssss...”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Even though he had already guessed something of the sort, it was only at that moment that he truly realized how vast the world of martial cultivation was.

Even though Eggy had always mocked Chu Feng for being a frog at the bottom of a well, saying that he had seen but the tip of the iceberg, he had never expected there to be so many martial cultivators in the vast world.

Not to mention a single person, the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm would likely only be a chestnut in the vast sea when compared to the Outer World. After all, the sky possessed countless stars.

Chapter 2133 – What Happened Back Then

“Next, I’ll tell you about our clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng listened even more earnestly; he was very curious about his clan.

“The Chu Heavenly Clan originated from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. I believe you already knew about this.”

“And now, the Chu Heavenly Clan is a clan that possesses a certain amount of status in the Outer World. I believe you should have realized that too.”

“What I’m going to tell you is about two grand individuals that have appeared in our Chu Heavenly Clan in its history.”

“The first is called Chu Yetianhong.”

“The other is called Chu Hanxian.”

“Chu Yetianhong is an Ancestor-level character to our Chu Heavenly Clan. He is the one that brought our Chu Heavenly Clan out of this Lower Realm to the Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, he is also the one that lead our Chu Heavenly Clan to battle our way into the Upper Realm and seize the status of ruler.”

“However, even though tens of thousands of years have passed since then, the Chu Heavenly Clan still remains an overlord of an Upper Realm. From this, it can be seen how powerful our Ancestor Chu Yetianhong was. His great contribution to our Chu Heavenly Clan is something that no one can compare to.”

“Chu Hanxian is the person with the greatest talent after Chu Yetianhong. His strength has even surpassed that of Chu Yetianhong. He was the hope of the Chu Heavenly Clan to ascend to become a ruler of a Starfield.”

“Unfortunately... Chu Hanxian entered another Starfield. Ever

since then, our Chu Heavenly Clan has never received any news from him.”

“Although what happened to Chu Hanxian was regretful, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan all deeply remembered all that he had contributed to our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“That is especially true for you. You should remember him. The reason for that is because Chu Hanxian is my father, your grandfather,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Grandfather?” Chu Feng had thought his father to be someone amazing. Never had he ever expected that his grandfather was even more amazing than he had imagined.

“Father, is there really no news of my grandfather? Has he died?” Chu Feng asked in a deeply concerned manner. Without mentioning how powerful his grandfather was, merely the fact that it was his grandfather caused Chu Feng to deeply hope that his grandfather was alive.

“I searched for him before. However, I did not manage to find anything. Unfortunately, everything seems to indicate that your grandfather is most likely no longer alive.”

“You do not have to concern yourself with matters regarding your grandfather, nor do you need to meddle in them yourself,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart trembled. Even though his father did not say it explicitly, Chu Feng was able to tell that there was most definitely some sort of secret to his grandfather’s disappearance.

“Chu Feng, what you need to know now is that our bloodline is a single bloodline in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Your grandfather only had a single son, me, and I also only have a single son, you.”

“Us father and son should have been enjoying endless glories and honors in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Not mentioning the

contributions your grandfather made toward our Chu Heavenly Clan, I am also not a nobody.”

“However... we have been reduced to being punished in this place, this forbidden area that devours one’s cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, exactly what happened back then? Please tell me,” Chu Feng asked again. He truly wanted to know the truth about what happened back then.

“Back then, the one who caused the two of us to be driven out from the Chu Clan and sent to this forbidden area was I, your father.”

“As for all of this, it was caused by a rule of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“When a child is born to our Chu Heavenly Clan, they will undergo a test of talent. That test is very important, because it determines one’s future treatment in the Chu Heavenly Clan, which in turn will decide one’s fate.”

“As you are my son and Chu Hanxian’s grandson, not to mention the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, even people not of the Chu Heavenly Clan paid special attention to your talent. That test of one’s talent could be said to be widespread news known to everyone.”

“Furthermore, in order to taunt their might, the Chu Heavenly Clan even invited a vast amount of guests so that they could publicly test your talent before all those people.”

“Unfortunately, the result of the test was not satisfying at all,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, how was the result of my test?” Chu Feng asked curiously. As this concerned him, Chu Feng was naturally very curious.

“If your test results were ordinary, it would be decent. If your

test results were better than ordinary, then it would have been excellent. If your test results were worse than ordinary, it would mean that you were inferior. However... your test result was none of the three,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“None of the three?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

“In other words, it meant that you did not possess our Chu Heavenly Clan’s bloodline, that you did not possess any talent,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I... I am actually such trash?” At that moment, Chu Feng was filled with astonishment.

While Chu Feng was deemed an exceptional genius in the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy Land of Martialism, he was actually trash that did not even possess any talent in his own clan.

Chu Feng found it somewhat difficult to accept such a disparity.

“Father, something’s amiss. If the result of the test was true, then I should not possess any Inherited Bloodline. But...” Chu Feng tried to explain.

“But you actually do. However, the result of the test from that time was precisely like that. It is also true that... you did not possess our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Inherited Bloodline at that time.”

“In other words, you can consider it as being evidence of your test from back then being tampered with by someone. At the very least, I am firmly certain that your test was tampered with.”

“At that time, I demanded that we test you again. Merely...” Chu Xuanyuan suddenly stopped and sighed.

“Father, what happened?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“Back then, although your grandfather was renowned for his ability in the Upper Realm, he had also created many enemies. There were also enemies present that day. Seeing that you did not possess a heaven-defying Inherited Bloodline, some among them

started to publicly insult you.”

“You are my son, thus, how could I possibly tolerate you being insulted by others? Thus... your father ended up killing all those that dared belittle you.”

“Our enemies were enraged by my actions, and demanded an explanation for my actions. Furthermore, it just so happened that there were many people who disliked me in the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“While being attacked by others doesn’t matter, our fellow clansmen from the Chu Heavenly Clan actually also started to attack me. That was the most frightening aspect.”

“Thus, in the end... we father and son were banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Strictly speaking, we father and son cannot be considered to be members of the Chu Heavenly Clan now,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a wry smile.

“We... are people that have been banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng revealed a shocked expression.

Earlier, he had been proud to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Never would he expect that he was already no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly. Then, he pointed at Chu Feng’s forehead and lightly poked at it. Chu Feng felt that his forehead became somewhat warm.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan took out a mirror and handed it to Chu Feng. He said, “Feng’er, remember this symbol. This is the humiliation that the Chu Heavenly Clan, our clan, have inflicted upon us.”

Upon seeing the mirror, Chu Feng’s heart immediately tightened. His expression took a huge change. Then, overflowing amount of indescribable anger surged out from his heart.

On his forehead was a character. That word seemed to be a brand. The character read ‘trash.’

“We father and son are people that have been expelled from our clan,” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, his forehead started to shine. Then, the character ‘trash’ also appeared on his forehead.

“That is the brand that the Chu Heavenly Clan placed on us father and son. That branding is on our souls. It is impossible to be erased.”

“Even if that brand is capable of being erased, the humiliation that the Chu Heavenly Clan inflicted upon us is ineradicable,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Damn it.”

Seeing the character ‘trash’ on Chu Xuanyuan’s forehead, the anger in Chu Feng’s heart surged by many times over. He became much more furious than when he saw the character ‘trash’ on his own forehead.

At the same time, Chu Feng’s heart felt much more complicated.

Back then, his father had unleashed a massacre just because someone insulted him. Although this moved Chu Feng, this also caused Chu Feng to feel greater self-blame.

There was no need to mention how much his father loved him. However, if his talent wasn’t so weak, if his weakness hadn’t been taken advantage of by others, they would not have ended up in their current state.

At that moment, Chu Feng truly realized that what the Old Ape said back then was actually true. His father had indeed been deprived of his honor by him.

Everything was caused by him.

Chapter 2134 – Heavenly Lightning Bloodline

“Actually, we father and son were already expelled. It would’ve been fine should we have left the Chu Heavenly Clan. However... due to our clansmen attacking us, we ended up losing even our liberty, and ended up being put under house arrest.”

“It would be one thing if we were to be imprisoned in some other place. However, of all the places, they decided to imprison us here. This place... is our Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area. In this place... when speaking of it pleasantly, we are imprisoned here. However, they are actually planning to dispose of us father and son,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Damn it! The people from the Chu Clan all deserve to die!” After knowing the truth, Chu Feng gnashed his teeth in anger. His killing intent was overflowing. At that moment, Chu Feng truly had an urge to eliminate everyone from the Chu Clan.

“Very well, it’s right to be furious. If you did not have staunchness and that temperament, you would not be a man, much less my, Chu Xuanyuan’s son, and Chu Hanxian’s grandson.”

“Feng’er, you must remember this humiliation. This humiliation was inflicted upon us by the Chu Clan. If we wish to erase this humiliation, we can only do it ourselves.”

“Back then, if you possessed outstanding talent, then even if I were to openly massacre others, our Chu Clan’s Clan Chief would consider the future, and not treat us father and son like this.”

“You must know that if I hadn’t sent you out back then, then, with the constitution of your body from back then, you would’ve definitely died in this forbidden area,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, what must I do?” Chu Feng asked.

“You must naturally prove yourself. You must prove yourself to

the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, to all the people in the world, and to yourself that you, Chu Feng, possess talent that is not inferior to anyone.”

“However, before that, you must understand your Inherited Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Bloodline?” Hearing the word ‘bloodline,’ Chu Feng felt his blood start to flare up uncontrollably.

His Inherited Bloodline was something that Chu Feng had wanted to understand for a very long time. And now... he was finally going to obtain an understanding of it.

“Our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Inherited Bloodline is known as the Heavenly Bloodline. The Heavenly Bloodline is also known as the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline.”

“The Heavenly Lightning Bloodline is composed of nine enormous lightning beasts. It is a noble bloodline far superior to Imperial Bloodlines.”

“Possessors of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline all possess a common trait. That is, from birth, they are destined to possess overwhelming talent superior to ordinary people.”

“Feng’er, I believe that you have already experienced that first-hand. The current you... as long as you possess sufficient cultivation resources, you will be able to increase your cultivation. Bottlenecks? You practically never experience any bottlenecks. Even if you are to experience any, you will soon break through them. Is what I said correct?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That is indeed the case,” Chu Feng nodded repeatedly.

“The possessors of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline are destined to surpass ordinary people. However, they are not omnipotent either. If you are to continue like this, it would not be hard for you to become a Half Martial Ancestor. However, it is practically impossible for you to become a Martial Ancestor,” Chu Xuanyuan

said.

Chu Feng's eyes grew large. With a serious expression on his face, he asked, "Why?" After all, this matter concerned his future.

"That is the weakness of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. If one is to continue to use that talent nonstop, one's future accomplishments are destined to be limited," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, is there a way to fix that?" Chu Feng asked.

"Feng'er, don't worry. For our Chu Heavenly Clan to possess our current level of accomplishments, we most definitely possess a way to resolve that."

"It is actually very simple. That is, we are to train in a special sort of mysterious technique. That sort of mysterious technique is capable of fusing with the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. After training in that sort of mysterious technique, we will lose the overwhelming talent and meet bottlenecks with each breakthrough in cultivation. Only through using our own comprehension will we be able to make a break through the bottlenecks."

"Furthermore, during the crucial moments of our breakthroughs, the mysterious technique will let out its distinct power and bring forth a calamity."

"Only those that manage to withstand the calamity will be able to truly reach a breakthrough."

"Precisely because of the special aspects of these mysterious techniques, they are collectively known as 'Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques.'"

"Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques?" Chu Feng's heart trembled.

"By self-punishing, it meant punishing oneself for not using one's comprehension to obtain a cultivation that others obtained through painstaking effort," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques; never would I have imagined that our Inherited Bloodline would be this complicated,” Chu Feng only knew that his Inherited Bloodline was very powerful. However, he did not expect for it to possess so many characteristics.

Today, he felt as if he had greatly broadened his horizons, and obtained a whole new understanding of his Inherited Bloodline.

“There are no free lunches in this world. What one pays and what one obtains are directly proportional to one another. To try to obtain harvests without paying anything is simply a pipe dream.”

“Thus, even for the Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques, there are different levels to them. According to the difference in level, one’s future accomplishments will also be destined to be different.”

“From weak to strong, the Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques are respectively the Mortal Punishment, Earthen Punishment and Heaven Punishment.”

“The Mortal Punishment is the most common type of Self-punishing Mysterious Technique. With each breakthrough in cultivation, the mysterious technique will automatically draw out the enormous lightning beasts from one’s Heavenly Lightning Bloodline to bombard one’s body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“It’s actually having the enormous lightning beasts attack oneself?” Chu Feng was extremely astonished. After all, he knew how powerful those enormous lightning beasts were.

He had rejoiced the entire time that those enormous lightning beasts were his bloodline, and not his opponents. However, if he were to train in that Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique, wouldn’t it be equivalent to having the frightening enormous lightning beasts become his opponents?

Merely thinking about it caused Chu Feng's hair to stand on end.

“The Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique is the most ordinary. The majority of those who possess Heavenly Bloodlines in the Outer World all train in the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“Above Mortal Punishment is Earthen Punishment.”

“Compared to those who train in Mortal Punishment Mysterious Techniques, those who train in Earthen Punishment Mysterious Techniques will be met with more difficult bottlenecks and more powerful calamities. At that time, one would no longer just be punished by one's Inherited Bloodline. Instead... the Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique will give rise to Divine Lightnings from the earth to strike your body.”

“No matter how powerful the enormous lightning beasts might be, it remains that they belong to you. Even if they are to punish you, they will not try to kill you. However, the Divine Lightnings from the earth are foreign to you. They will show no quarter when attacking you.”

“Precisely because of that, only those with superb talent and possessing a certain amount of confidence and courage dare to train in the Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“As for the Heaven Punishment that is above the Earthen Punishment, it is even more dreadful. Not only are the bottlenecks so difficult that it is akin to scaling the heavens, the Divine Lightnings from the depths of the Outer World are also not something that the Divine Lightnings from the earth could compare with.”

“Not to mention the cultivators themselves, when Divine Lightning strikes, everything around the cultivator will be destroyed.”

“Thus... very few people dare to cultivate the Heaven

Punishment Mysterious Technique,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. Merely by hearing it, he was able to tell how frightening the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique was.

“Furthermore, due to the fact that the three Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques have different levels, they possess different cultivation levels at which they can be trained.”

“For Mortal Punishment, one would be able to practice it in the Martial King realm.”

“For Earthen Punishment, the Half Martial Emperor realm.”

“For Heaven Punishment, the Martial Emperor realm,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, I am already a rank seven Martial Emperor now. I can no longer train in Mortal Punishment or Earthen Punishment. Could it be... that father did not mention this matter to me for so long because you’ve already made preparations beforehand to have me train in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique?” While Chu Feng appeared to be calm, cold sweat had long since covered his brow.

Even though his father had not been with him the entire time, he was able to tell that his father had been observing him from the shadows the entire time. In other words, his father’s decision to let him be by himself was a kind of nurture.

His father had never given up on him. He had merely been nurturing him, nurturing his ability to survive with an even stricter method.

That said, his father still wished for him to obtain good accomplishments. For his father to mention these things to him now... meant that his father had already thought of the Self-punishing Mysterious Technique that he should practice—the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

He truly never expected for his father to be this ruthless toward him, for his father to actually plan to have him train in the most difficult Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Although Chu Feng also wished to obtain better accomplishments, when he thought about it from a different angle, how could his father not be afraid that he would be struck to death by the Divine Lightning?

However, Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly at Chu Feng's question.

Then, he said, "No, what you will be training is not the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique."

"Instead, it's Divine Punishment!!!"

Chapter 2135 – Divine Punishment

Mysterious Technique

“Divine Punishment?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart immediately shivered.

Merely by listening to the name, Chu Feng was able to tell how frightening it would be.

“By Divine Punishment, it means that it is a Self-punishing Mysterious Technique above Heaven Punishment.”

“If Mortal Punishment draws upon the lightnings from one’s bloodline, Earthen Punishment from the earth and Heaven Punishment from the sky...”

“Then, Divine Punishment will no longer only be drawing upon lightning at all. Instead, a Divine Tribulation will descend upon you.”

“The descent of a Divine Tribulation will cause destruction to both heaven and the earth. It is a sort of power that surpasses one’s ability to endure.”

“However, if you wish to reach a breakthrough, you must withstand that sort of power. You will only be given two choices, success or failure. Furthermore, if you are to fail... not even your soul will remain.”

“If the other Self-punishment Mysterious Techniques unleash punishments that are still within one’s ability to endure.”

“Then, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique will unleash punishments that surpass one’s ability to endure.”

“Thus, those that train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques will all obtain a true transformation with every breakthrough,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, has there been anyone that has successfully practiced such a powerful Self-punishment Mysterious Technique before?” Chu Feng asked in a serious manner.

“The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is not something that just anyone can attempt. As far as I know... only two people have ever trained in it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Who are they?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

“Those two people...”

“One is your grandfather, Chu Hanxian.”

“As for the the other, it is I, your father, Chu Xuanyuan,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ah,” Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words. Originally, he had thought about finding an excuse to refuse. However, upon hearing those words, he was unable to find any excuse to refuse.

Both his grandfather and father had trained in that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Furthermore, they had both succeeded. If he were to choose to cower at this point, he would truly be an utter disappointment.

Not to mention how others would view him, he himself would also feel that he had disgraced the honor and reputation of his grandfather and his father.

Furthermore, after knowing that his father and grandfather had both trained in that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng also started to feel interest toward the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique from the bottom of his heart.

“Feng’er, back then, your grandfather did not force me to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. As such, I will also not force you.”

“The reason I mention this to you right now is so that you are

given the opportunity to choose. Heaven Punishment and Divine Punishment, you decide which one you want to train,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Divine Punishment,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation. He had long since made the decision in his heart.

“Why? Are you not afraid of death?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I am. I don’t think there’s anyone that would not fear death,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, why did you still insist on choosing the Divine Punishment?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Father, I am not arrogant, conceited or acting recklessly. I merely wish to obtain better achievements. I wish to prove myself.”

“The path of martial cultivation is a double-edged sword to begin with. If one wishes to reach a greater distance, one will have to undergo greater danger.”

“Although the path that I plan to take is a dangerous path, I am not the first one to take this path. Before me, my grandfather and my father have already walked that path. Thus, by comparison... the path is already much safer now that it has come to me.”

“At the very least, I know how to walk the path. Thus... there is no reason for me to not choose the Divine Punishment,” Chu Feng said.

“Well said. As expected from my son,” At that moment, a smile filled Chu Xuanyuan’s face.

“Feng’er, your way of thinking is correct. Although the Divine Punishment is very dangerous, one will also be able to obtain a greater harvest from it.”

“The wielders of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines all possess identical characteristics. I believe you’ve also seen that brat from

the Ying Heavenly Clan. He possessed all the power that you possess right now. For example, there is the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings that can increase one's cultivation. Then, there's the heaven-defying battle power."

"However, the power of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines will be transformed in the Martial Ancestor realm. After reaching the Martial Ancestor realm, the nine Heavenly Lightning will fuse into one. This is commonly referred to as the Nine Lightnings Fusion.

"After the Nine Lightnings Fusion, one will be able to form a Lightning Mark. Those that trained in Mortal Punishment Mysterious Techniques will form a Mortal Mark. Earthen Punishment Mysterious Techniques will form an Earthen Mark, and Heaven Punishment Divine Techniques will form a Heaven Mark."

"As for Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques, it will form a Divine Mark."

"The different sorts of Lightning Marks will show others how powerful the possessor of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline is, as well as what sort of Self-punishment Mysterious Technique they trained in."

"However, that is not the important aspect. Most importantly, the more powerful one's Lightning Mark, the stronger the power it will bring to its master. Their future accomplishments will also be greater."

"In other words, one's Lightning Mark symbolizes one's status and strength. When you form a Divine Mark, very few people will dare to disrespect you."

"The reason for that is because not everyone possesses the courage to train in Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques, nor are they something that just anyone can practice, or something that one can learn just because one wishes to learn it," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand.” After hearing of the profoundness of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng had become extremely impatient to know exactly what the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was like.

“Feng’er, have you really made your decision?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I’ve decided. I am going to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that’s the case, I, your father will teach you the cultivation method for the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique,” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he placed his finger onto Chu Feng’s forehead.

“There will be a slight pain. You’ll have to bear with it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, light shone on Chu Xuanyuan’s finger. Then, a boundless power entered Chu Feng’s head from Chu Xuanyuan’s finger.

“Wuu~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng immediately felt a sort of unbearable pain entering his head. It was a sensation where he felt as if his head was about to explode.

However, that was only the beginning. The pain in his head soon spread through his entire body.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that the pain didn’t seem to be as simple as entering his body. Instead, it seemed more like it was trying to fuse with his soul and his bloodline. From today on, it would be destined to live and die together with him by becoming part of him.

Finally, everything stopped. Chu Feng was covered with sweat

and gasping for breath. Even though the pain had passed, Chu Feng still felt lingering fears.

“Father, is that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?” Chu Feng asked Chu Xuanyuan.

He discovered that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was different from all the mysterious techniques that he had trained in before. For other mysterious techniques, one would merely need to follow a designated cultivation path with one’s martial power. With that, one would be able to stabilize one’s cultivation and increase one’s strength.

However, the so-called Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was completely different. It was a method that completely fused with one’s soul.

In other words, Chu Feng had yet to attempt to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. However, if he were to train in it, he felt that his Inherited Bloodline would definitely become completely different.

“That is the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. How are you feeling?” Chu Xuanyuan asked with a smile.

“This feeling is extremely good. I feel that my Inherited Bloodline, my soul and even my physical body were all promoted.”

“I truly wish to experience the true charm of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique right now,” Chu Feng said.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. He was truly impatient to completely grasp the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. He wanted to further increase the strength of his Inherited Bloodline.

“Since you wish to experience the charm of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, go ahead and train in it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, doesn’t this Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique

require one to become a Half Martial Ancestor to train?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

Although the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique had fused with Chu Feng’s soul and bloodline, it had yet to completely fuse with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was able to sense that it was not up to him to decide if the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique fused with him. Instead, it was decided by his cultivation.

With Chu Feng’s current cultivation, it was impossible for him to completely fuse the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique with his bloodline. However, should he reach the Half Martial Ancestor level of cultivation, even if he were then to be against it, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would automatically fuse with his body. At that time, he would not be able to stop it even if he wanted to.

“Indeed, you need to become a Half Martial Ancestor,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, my cultivation is still insufficient,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s simple. I, your father, will help you set foot into the Half Martial Ancestor realm right away,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chapter 2136 – Rank One Half Martial Ancestor

As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he flipped his palm. Then, a jadeite-like gem appeared on his palm.

“Refine this, and you’ll be able to directly become a Half Martial Ancestor,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, this gem...” Chu Feng received the gem. Excitement filled his heart.

Over the years, he had refined countless Natural Oddities and cultivation resources. However, this was his first time seeing something that contained such a dense amount of Natural Energy.

Truth be told, with Chu Feng’s current cultivation, it would most likely be impossible for him to find any cultivation resources appropriate for him in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, the gem that Chu Xuanyuan had just handed him was actually capable of helping Chu Feng reach rank one Half Martial Ancestor directly from rank seven Martial Emperor. To be able to reach three breakthroughs at once was something that Chu Feng had not even dared to imagine before.

“All these years, your father has never helped you with your cultivation. The reason why I did that is because I wanted you to be able to personally experience things for yourself so that you can temper your heart.”

“This time around, you can consider this compensation from your father.,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile.

“Thank you father,” Chu Feng stood up and courteously bowed.

“Didn’t I say that there’s no need to be so overly courteous, as we are father and son? Go ahead and refine it.”

Chu Feng tossed the gem he held in his hand, opened his mouth

and bit onto the gem. Then, he sat down in a cross-legged position and began to refine the gem.

Soon, surging Natural Energies began to flow through Chu Feng's body. They began to pour into Chu Feng's dantian nonstop; they, were all being refined by Chu Feng's Divine Lightnings.

Under such circumstances, Chu Feng's cultivation began to increase nonstop. Rank eight Martial Emperor, rank nine Martial Emperor...

At the moment when a total of eight lightnings were surging out from Chu Feng's body before entering his body again, Chu Feng's cultivation reached rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Everything was as Chu Xuanyuan had said. The Natural Energies contained in that gem were truly capable of allowing Chu Feng to directly reach rank one Half Martial Ancestor from rank seven Martial Emperor.

Without using his Thunder Armor or Thunder Wings, or any other method to increase his cultivation, Chu Feng currently gave off the aura of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He had become an actual Half Martial Ancestor-level expert in one go.

Furthermore, it was not only Chu Feng's cultivation that had increased to rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He had also obtained another level of heaven-defying battle power. In other words, his heaven-defying battle power was now capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his hand. Immediately, the surrounding Ancestral-level martial power surged forth and entered Chu Feng's body, waiting to be used by him.

“How do you feel?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I am finally able to grasp Ancestral-level martial power. As expected from Half Martial Ancestor, they are truly incomparable

to Martial Emperors.”

“Furthermore, my battle power is currently capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation. I am not just only a bit stronger than before. This sort of sensation is truly fabulous,” Chu Feng said excitedly.

“Half Martial Ancestors are naturally more powerful than Martial Emperors. As for your heaven-defying battle power, while it is correct to say that it is capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation, it would be more reasonable to say that it is capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation?” Chu Feng was puzzled.

“Those capable of becoming Martial Emperors all possess heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Not to mention the Upper Realm, even in the Ordinary Realm, Martial Emperors are countless.”

“In the Outer World, the Martial Emperor realm is a dividing line. Only those capable of becoming Martial Emperors are considered to be qualified to be considered martial cultivators. All those that fail to step into Martial Emperor realm are known to be extremely inferior in the Outer World. They are people that are looked upon with disdain by others.”

“As for Martial Emperors, since they all possess at least a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, your heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting six levels of cultivation is only capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation when compared to even the most ordinary Martial Emperors.”

“Furthermore, the opponents that you will face in the future will definitely not be Martial Emperors or those below them. They will all be people with cultivations surpassing Martial Emperor. Thus, from this point on, you must remember this. Even if your

opponent is only ordinary, your dominance would only be a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Never would I have expected that the Martial Emperors that were capable of covering the sky with their hands in the Holy Land of Martialism are only people that have just become qualified as martial cultivators in the Outer Realm.”

After hearing his father’s words, Chu Feng came to realize even more why the Holy Land of Martialism, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, was the weakest among the countless Lower Realms. It turned out that the cultivators there were utterly inferior when compared to cultivators in the vast Outer World.

“Feng’er, you are still young. After you enter the Outer World, you will discover that... even though you possess three additional levels of heaven-defying battle power when compared to ordinary Half Martial Ancestors, you are not the strongest among those of your generation.”

“Not only are there many Heavenly Clans in the Outer World, there are also, in addition to the humans that possess Heavenly Bloodlines, monstrous beasts that possess powerful Inherited Bloodlines.”

“Furthermore, when you reach the Outer World, you will discover that the actual Divine Bodies there are also extremely powerful,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Could it be that Divine Bodies in the Outer World are so powerful that they can contend against our Heavenly Bloodlines?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had encountered many Divine Bodies in the Holy Land of Martialism. Although they were very powerful, Chu Feng only felt them to be powers on par with Imperial Bloodlines. When compared to his Inherited Bloodline, they were much inferior. In fact, they were simply not on the same level.

“That differs from individual to individual. The weak Divine Bodies would be the same as the ones you met here. They are only comparable to Imperial Bloodlines. In fact, some of them are inferior to even Imperial Bloodlines.”

“However, by the same account, there are Divine Bodies that are extremely powerful. Not to mention those that are capable of contending against our Heavenly Bloodline, some Divine Bodies have grasped powers that surpass even ordinary wielders of Heavenly Bloodlines.”

“In the Outer World, there are a relatively large amount of such Divine Bodies,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Suddenly, Chu Feng took a long sigh.

“Feng’er, what’s wrong?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Having lived in this world for so long, although I always knew how small and ignorant I was every time I looked to the vast starry sky, when the truth is verified, when it is determined that I am truly small and ignorant, that sensation is truly unpleasant,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

He was able to realize that while he remained an exceptional genius in this place, he would become an ordinary person upon entering the Outer World.

Even though he had a Heavenly Bloodline, there were many people that could contend against him in the Outer World.

In fact, there were many people much more powerful than him. It would be extremely difficult for him to become the strongest among the younger generation.

What awaited him was destined to be a challenging journey.

“Feng’er, there is also a difference between the strengths of one’s Heavenly Bloodline. As the Self-punishment Mysterious Technique that you trained in is the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, you will obtain a Divine Mark when you become a

Martial Ancestor and obtain the Nine Lightnings Fusion.”

“At that time, even in the Outer World, you will still be a brilliant nova.”

“Merely... even though you are only nine levels of cultivation away from becoming a Martial Ancestor, it is an extremely difficult cultivation journey.”

As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he took out another twenty gems that contained a dense amount of Natural Energy. He tossed those gems to Chu Feng and said, “Refine all of them at once.”

“Yes,” Chu Feng did not hesitate and directly refined all twenty gems completely. However... he did not manage to successfully reach a single breakthrough. His cultivation... remained that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

He was able to sense that the dense amount of Natural Energies were gathered in his dantian. Originally, those Natural Energies would have been enough for him to reach a breakthrough.

Merely, there was an invisible wall separating the Natural Energies from his Inherited Bloodline. If that wall was not broken through, his Inherited Bloodline would not be able to refine the boundless Natural Energies. In turn, Chu Feng would not be able to reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that Natural Energies no longer remained the most crucial aspect to him reaching a breakthrough in cultivation.

From this point forward, his cultivation journey would become completely different.

Chapter 2137 – A Mission

“The Natural Energies contained in your dantian right now are sufficient enough for you to reach rank three Half Martial Ancestor.”

“However, you are unable to even reach rank two Half Martial Ancestor. And that is you... being bottlenecked. You will need to rely on your own comprehension of the way of martial cultivation and think of a way to use your Inherited Bloodline to break through that bottleneck.”

“However, after you reach a breakthrough, you will not be able to directly reach a breakthrough in cultivation like you did before.”

“You will bring forth the arrival of a catastrophe, Divine Lightnings capable of causing massive destruction will descend from the sky to strike at your body.”

“Only by withstanding them will you be able to truly reach a breakthrough. The reason for that is because... you have successfully learned the highest level Self-punishing Mysterious Technique — the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique!!!”

“That said, there is also an extremely important matter that I must remind you of. Although it will be much more difficult for you to reach a breakthrough in cultivation after learning the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, the Natural Energies you need to reach a breakthrough in cultivation will continue to be more and more frightening.”

“I will not continue to provide you with cultivation resources. I have already given you all that I can. You must go and search, scramble for and seize the remaining cultivation resources yourself.”

“That can be considered the special sort of nurturing method of

our family. That is also what your grandfather had me do back then,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand. I will absolutely not disappoint you,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng knew very well that while the cultivation path for the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would be very difficult, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was most definitely a rare treasure. He was only able to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique because of his father.

This could be considered a blessing, a blessing from his father.

However, more than that, it was a sort of expectation, an expectation that his father had toward him.

What Chu Feng must do was not disappoint the expectations his father held toward him. He planned to obtain his father’s acknowledgement with the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. At the same time, he must obtain acknowledgement from everyone else.

However, if he truly wished to be acknowledged, he couldn’t rely on his father alone. Thus, Chu Feng had already made the decision that he would work hard by himself to make each and every following breakthrough.

“Very well. You are worthy of being my, Chu Xuanyuan’s, son,” Seeing that Chu Feng did not cower in the slightest when faced with such a difficult path for cultivation, Chu Xuanyuan smiled with joy and pride.

“I already know that you plan to go to the Outer World. Thus, there are some things that I must tell you first.”

“While the Chu Heavenly Clan are heartless toward us father and son, we father and son cannot be disloyal to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Everything cannot be generalized. While there were indeed

people from the Chu Clan that secretly attacked us father and son, it does not mean that all the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan wish to bring harm upon us.”

“In fact, when the Chu Clan’s Clan Chief decided to imprison us father and son in the Chu Clan’s forbidden area, there were many people in the Chu Clan that pleaded for us.”

“Thus... upon entering the Outer World, should you encounter people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, it would be best that you not treat them with hostility.”

“However... if there are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that wish to cause you harm, you must not be benevolent toward them either,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please rest assured, I understand your intentions. What I am going to do is not to take revenge against the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, I am going to make them realize that their decision back then was mistaken.”

“However, if there are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that wish to cause me harm, I will absolutely not be lenient toward them. Regardless of whether they might be people that might attack me in the future, or people that secretly attacked father before, I will definitely not spare any of them,” Chu Feng said earnestly. As he spoke those words, a faint coldness flashed through his eyes.

“Very good. To be able to distinguish between gratitude and grudges, that is what my, Chu Xuanyuan’s, son should be like.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s reaction, Chu Xuanyuan nodded his head in satisfaction. Then, he said, “After you exit this place, the place that you will arrive in will not be the Upper Realm where our Chu Heavenly Clan is located. Instead, it will be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is a place that all of

the people from the Lower Realms under the administration of our Chu Heavenly Clan must reach.”

“Thus, every year, there will always be countless people from the Lower Realms entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to start tempering themselves anew.”

“The implication behind the name Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm precisely means to refine and temper oneself hundreds and thousands of times over. If one cannot pass through the trials in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, one will not be able to enter the Upper Realm, and will end up staying in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for the rest of their lives. At the very most, they will be able to enter the other Ordinary Realms. However, even if they do, they will remain unable to enter the Upper Realm without sufficient qualifications.”

“Precisely because of that, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm has set up a Hundred Refinements Stage. The Hundred Refinements Stage is the place that practically all the people entering from the Lower Realms must reach.”

“The Hundred Refinements Stage is normally closed, and will only be open once every year. In other words, all the people from the Lower Realm that reach the Hundred Refinements Stage within that year will end up cultivating together in the Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“After the gate of the Hundred Refinements Stage is opened, the people from the Lower Realm will be ranked according to their strength.”

“Every year, the various powers outside of the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm will wait outside of the Hundred Refinements Stage for that ranking.”

“They will choose their disciples according to that ranking list. Without a doubt, the people from the Lower Realm with a higher ranking will be more highly sought after.”

“If you are to directly enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm through the Stairway to Heaven from the Realm of Gods, you will be able to directly reach the Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“However, I do not suggest that you go and strive for a high place on the ranking. After all, you do not belong to the Lower Realm. Instead, you belong to the Upper Realm. Thus, there is no significance in you competing with a bunch of people from the Lower Realm.”

“Thus, I’m going to give you this,” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he hand a world spirit key to Chu Feng.

“Father, this is?” Chu Feng asked.

“This world spirit key is capable of helping you create an opening through the spirit formation around the Hundred Refinements Stage. After entering the Hundred Refinements Stage, you do not have to stay there. Using this key, you can leave that place and experience the outside world,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Got it,” Chu Feng carefully put the key away. However, he suddenly thought of something, and asked, “Then, what about the Eastern Sea Region’s Stairway to Heaven?”

“The Eastern Sea Region also possesses a Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Xuanyuan asked in astonishment. He evidently did not know about that.

“There is indeed one in the Eastern Sea Region,” Chu Feng said.

“The track of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm’s Stairway to Heaven’s teleportation has already been changed. Unless the Stairway to Heaven that you mentioned was set up by an extremely powerful person, unless that Stairway to Heaven was able to conceal itself from everything, it would still lead to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, can you give me another world spirit key? I have a friend here. If she is to enter the Hundred Refinements

Ordinary Realm, and decide to not stay in the Hundred Refinements Stage, I hope...”

“That’s no issue,” Before Chu Feng could finish, Chu Xuanyuan took out another world spirit key and handed it to Chu Feng.

“Thank you father,” Chu Feng received the world spirit key and expressed his thanks emotionally.

As a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to tell how powerful that world spirit key was merely by looking at it. If his father had not handed him a world spirit key, he would likely also be unable to leave the Hundred Refinements Stage.

As for the second world spirit key, he had requested it for Xian Miaomiao.

“Feng’er, although the Ordinary Realm cannot compare to the Upper Realm, it is still definitely not something that the Lower Realm can compare with.”

“Entering the Ordinary Realm from the Lower Realm means entering a new world. Before you obtain a certain amount of strength, it would be best that you not provoke powers that are extremely strong.”

“Among them, you must pay attention to a power called the Infant Soul Sect. It is the most dangerous among all the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. When you encounter them, you must be extra careful. You absolutely cannot afford to be careless toward them,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Infant Soul Sect?” Chu Feng felt a burst of cold upon hearing that name. He felt that that sect was most definitely not a righteous sect. Thus, Chu Feng said, “Father, please rest assured. I will definitely be careful.”

“Mn,” Chu Xuanyuan nodded. Then, he said, “Although you will have to be low-key after entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, father will still hand you a mission.”

“What is the mission? Father, please tell me,” Chu Feng said.

“Eliminate the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ahh?!!!” Chu Feng was immediately stunned by those words.

Chapter 2138 – A Request

“Why do you want me to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect? Could it be that there are grudges between you and the Infant Soul Sect, father?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng was surprised. He did not expect that his father would want him to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect after warning him about how dangerous it was.

However, he felt that his father most definitely possessed a reason to give him such a task. He felt that the most likely reason would be that the Infant Soul Sect was his father’s enemy.

“There are no grudges between the Infant Soul Sect and me. Merely, the Infant Soul Sect is an evil power. Do you know why they are called the Infant Soul Sect?”

“The reason for that is because everyone in the Infant Soul Sect uses the souls of newly born infants as cultivation resources. The longer the Infant Soul Sect continues to exist, the more innocent infants will die by their hands. Thus, the Infant Soul Sect should be eliminated,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“They truly deserve to die,” Chu Feng detested those that bullied the old, weak, sick or disabled the most. Furthermore... the Infant Soul Sect was a power composed of people that harmed innocent infants.

Thinking about it, lives that have just been born to this world, before they could experience the wonders of this world, before they could even get to know this world, ended up being killed by those fiends. Oh how cruel the people from the Infant Soul Sect must be.

“While the Infant Soul Sect should be eliminated, there are a lot of powers that use those sorts of malicious techniques to cultivate. It is extremely difficult to eliminate all of them.”

“Thus, to help the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm eliminate evil is merely one of the reasons why I want you to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. Apart from that, there’s another reason that’s the most important,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please continue,” Chu Feng said earnestly.

“In order to nurture outstanding members of the younger generation, the Chu Heavenly Clan has also used some extreme measures. That is, they will have their younger generation accept and complete missions.”

“As far as I know, there are many missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Thus, even though the Chu Heavenly Clan exists in the Upper Realm, there are also people from the Chu Heavenly Clan in the Ordinary Realms. Furthermore, they are mostly members of the younger generation.”

“Furthermore, there is a rule in the Chu Heavenly Clan. As long as the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation are daring enough to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and carry out missions there, they will no longer be protected by the Chu Heavenly Clan. Even if they should encounter fatal dangers, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan will not interfere.”

“In other words, when in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the life and death of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation will only be their own problem.”

“With all that said, one of the highest level missions, one that is the most difficult, is to eliminate the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Infant Soul Sect.”

“Merely, so far, none of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation have been able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. On the contrary, many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s elites from the younger generation were killed by the Infant Soul Sect.”

“As time passed, the Infant Soul Sect no longer feared the Chu Heavenly Clan. After all... they remained safe even after killing so many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s geniuses,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“It is the Chu Heavenly Clan that has deliberately ignored the Infant Soul Sect? They have done so... all for the sake of nurturing their younger generation?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re right. The Infant Soul Sect could be said to be a power that has done all sorts of evil in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, if the Chu Heavenly Clan wishes to eliminate them, it would be an effortless task for them.”

“The reason they have not eliminated the Infant Soul Sect and instead tasked their younger generation with eliminating the Infant Soul Sect repeatedly, is precisely because they hoped that there would be a younger generation from the Chu Heavenly Clan that could eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.”

“Ever since the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect appeared, there has not been a single member of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation capable of completing that mission,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand your intention,” Chu Feng said. He truly understood.

Eliminating the Infant Soul Sect was a mission that none of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation was capable of accomplishing.

If Chu Feng was able to accomplish it, it would mean that he would’ve given the Chu Heavenly Clan a ruthless slap to the face. After all, he was deemed to be trash that did not possess the Heavenly Bloodline of the Chu Heavenly Clan; he was someone that had been stripped of his status as a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“There is an age requirement for eliminating the Infant Soul

Sect. Members of the Chu Clan older than forty are not allowed to accept that mission. Feng'er, your age is still well within the requirement. After all, you are not even thirty years old."

"However, you do not have to accept that mission from the Chu Heavenly Clan. It would do if you were to just eliminate the Infant Soul Sect directly. After all, you are nominally no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan."

"That said, to the Chu Heavenly Clan, regardless of who it is that did it, it would be a disgrace for the Chu Heavenly Clan as long as it is a member of the younger generation younger than forty years old that eliminates the Infant Soul Sect," Chu Xuanyuan said.

Sure enough, what he had in mind was exactly what Chu Feng was thinking. He planned to humiliate the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Although he did not plan to kill people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Xuanyuan wanted the Chu Heavenly Clan to know that their decision back then was a mistake.

"That said, Feng'er, I have a matter that I must warn you about. While I sent someone to secretly protect you in this place, once you enter the Outer World, I will absolutely not act to help you. You must rely on yourself for everything," Chu Xuanyuan warned Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

"I understand. I will absolutely not do anything reckless. Although the actions of the Infant Soul Sect are truly infuriating to the heart, I will definitely not make them an enemy before I possess sufficient strength to take them on," Chu Feng said.

"Mn, in that case, go on ahead to the Outer World. I have already taken Zi Ling as my disciple. When it is time, I will have her assist you in the Outer World," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Father, you've truly taken Zi Ling as your disciple?" Chu Feng was overjoyed.

Chu Feng did not know how powerful his father was. However,

he was able to guess that his father must be extremely powerful.

If Zi Ling truly became his father's disciple, Zi Ling's strength would definitely advance by leaps and bounds. To both Chu Feng and Zi Ling, that would be something good.

"Why would I lie to you about something like that? Zi Ling's foundations are pretty decent. If she is properly nurtured, she will be able to attain accomplishments even in the Outer World."

"However, Feng'er, there are actually a lot of people who possess decent foundations. However, if they are unable to expand upon them themselves, it would all be useless. The reason for that is because there is no one in this world with the time to assist others to expand their foundations. Zi Ling belonged to the sort that needed another's assistance."

"Thus, I think that you should be able to understand why I am helping her," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"I understand."

Chu Feng naturally understood that Chu Xuanyuan was spending that much effort to help Zi Ling because of him. After all, Zi Ling was his lover.

"It's good that you know. Zi Ling's potential needed me to develop it. However you... you must develop your potential yourself."

"Actually, I am able to wholly nurture you and let you leave after you are capable of contending against others."

"However, I fear that while you might be able to become very powerful in a short period of time under my umbrella, your future prospects will instead be limited. If that is the case, the gains will not make up for the losses."

"After all, one must look at the long-term. Thus, I hope that you are able to understand my intentions," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please rest assured. I will definitely go and comprehend the path of martial cultivation diligently,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, I know that my Feng’er is a person with perseverance. That part of you resembles both me and your grandfather,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Hehe...” Chu Feng laughed proudly. He felt those words to be the greatest praise.

After all, both his grandfather and his father were grand existences with renowned reputations in the Outer World.

“Father, you said that you will no longer help me once I reach the Outer World. I am still not yet in the Outer World now, are you able to still help me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, if you want more cultivation resources, you do not have to bother asking,” Chu Xuanyuan said decisively. His tone was very cold and grim. It seemed that he was determined to not help Chu Feng increase his cultivation.

“Father, please rest assured. I will only rely on myself for my cultivation. I will not ask you for assistance.”

“What I wanted father’s assistance with is something else,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it? Go ahead and tell me,” Chu Xuanyuan said after finding out that it was not related to Chu Feng’s cultivation.

Chapter 2139 – Good Or Bad

“I have three things that I wish father’s assistance in.”

“First, I hope that you can help me find out where the Moon Immortal has gone to. She has seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies. I wish to seize them back from her.”

“Second, I hope you can help me check out the Four Great Divine Bodies to see if there is anything wrong concerning their physical bodies. The reason for that is because the Magma Emperor declared that they would not live for long. Yet, I was unable to discover anything wrong with their bodies,” Chu Feng said.

“The Moon Immortal has already entered the Outer World. If you wish to search for her, you’ll have to do so in the Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Entered the Outer World?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

“She should not have used the Stairway to Heaven. Instead, it should have been some sort of treasure that let her enter the Outer World.”

“Stairways to Heaven are formations that can be used many times. However, the method she used to enter the Outer World should be a sort of treasure that can only be used once,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“In that case, does that mean that the Moon Immortal is currently in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Hundred Refinement Stage?” Chu Feng asked.

“That might be the case, yet might not be the case. It depends on who created her treasure, and where that treasure will take her.”

“That said, that so-called Moon Immortal is someone from the Outer World to begin with. Furthermore, her nature should be good. Else, she would not have assisted you. She did not help you

out of righteousness. Rather, it was because she felt that she owed you.”

“I don’t think someone like her will harm Su Rou and Su Mei. Thus, you do not have to worry about them too much,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng was very surprised. He did not expect the Moon Immortal to be from the Outer World. However, since his father said it like that, there would definitely be no mistake about it. Thus, he continued to ask, “Then, what about the Four Great Divine Beasts? Do they really possess fatal dangers?”

Chu Feng wanted to know about the situation with the Four Great Divine Beasts. This was also why he decided to bring the Four Great Divine Beasts here with him. Chu Feng had wanted to have his father check out the Four Great Divine Beasts from the very beginning.

After Chu Feng said those words, Chu Xuanyuan turned his gaze toward the direction where the Four Great Divine Beasts were. After surveying them for some time, he said, “The Azure Dragon, the White Tiger, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise are the legendary Four Symbols Divine Beasts. If they truly exist, they should possess overwhelming strength. How could they only be mere Half Martial Ancestors?”

“Thus, those four that you know are merely lifeforms created from the separation of a Divine Power.”

“They are not Divine Beasts, nor are they Sacred Beasts. In fact, they cannot even be considered to be beasts.”

“They should have been a Divine Power that accompanied their master. If they cannot accompany their master, they should have disappeared,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, they truly will not be able to continue to live for long?” Chu Feng asked.

“If it is to continue like this, they will indeed not be able to live for long. If you want them to continue living, you’ll have to have them abandon their physical bodies and freedom to return to becoming secret skills that would exist in your body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

At that moment, Chu Feng grew silent. He did not know how he was to mention such a thing to the Azure Dragon and the others.

After all, if Chu Feng were to tell them that, it would mean that the Magma Emperor hadn’t been lying, that Qing Xuantian had truly abandoned them.

“I possess the method to turn them back into secret skills so that they can return to your body. If you wish for them to continue to exist, you must tell them the truth.”

“Furthermore, Feng’er, although they are not the legendary Four Symbols Divine Beasts, they do indeed possess Four Symbols Divine Power. They are extremely powerful among the many Divine Powers.”

“I do not understand why their master would brave dangers to his life to separate them from his body, to personally strip himself of his exceptional gift,” Chu Xuanyuan said in a puzzled manner. Evidently... he still did not know about the matter concerning Qing Xuantian and the Four Great Divine Beasts.

“Father, I heard this is what happened...”

Chu Feng told Chu Xuanyuan everything regarding Qing Xuantian, the Four Great Divine Beasts and what the Magma Emperor said.

He wished for his father to help him analyze the situation and figure out exactly why Qing Xuantian decided to abandon the Four Great Divine Beasts.

After all, with all the things that Qing Xuantian had done, he did not resemble an evil person no matter how Chu Feng saw it.

“The way I see it, that Magma Emperor’s words cannot be fully trusted. However, they possess a certain degree of credibility.”

“After all, what martial cultivators seek is power. To make decisions for stronger power is something that martial cultivators oftentimes face.”

“For example, Feng’er, if there is a bloodline even more powerful than your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline, a bloodline that could allow you to grow stronger faster, would you abandon your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline?” Chu Xuanyuan asked Chu Feng.

“I...” Chu Feng didn’t know how to answer that question. He had never thought of something like that. As such, he was at a loss as to what he would end up doing.

“I think that you would decide to abandon your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. There is nothing disgraceful about that. For example, there’s your friend, Jiang Wushang. To speak of it pleasantly, his Inherited Bloodline gained a promotion from Royal Bloodline to Imperial Bloodline.”

“However, the truth is that he abandoned the power that his parents bestowed upon him. The reason for that is because he wished to pursue an even stronger power.”

“If one were to judge it from a certain viewpoint, he might appear to be in the wrong. However, no one blamed him for it. Instead, all of his clansmen viewed him as their pride. Why is that? The reason for that is because he had obtained the power that everyone yearned for.”

“The way I see it, that is the same reason why Qing Xuantian abandoned the Four Symbols Divine Power; in order to pursue an even stronger Divine Power,” Chu Xuanyuan explained.

“Father, in that case, you mean to say that senior Qing Xuantian was not a bad person?” Chu Feng asked.

“One’s moral character cannot be determined from one’s

surface.”

“For example, if there are two men.”

“One man is very honest and kindhearted. He has done many good deeds and secretly helped a lot of people. Merely, due to the fact that he did not seek fame and riches, he did everything secretly, not letting anyone know about it.”

“Furthermore, he deeply loved his wife. However, his wife betrayed him, and even wanted to kill him to swallow up his wealth and property with another man.”

“After that man discovered what his wife planned to do, he was filled with grief. Thus, he got into an argument with his wife, and tried his hardest to keep her. However, he accidentally ended up killing her.”

“After others found out about this, he naturally would have to explain himself. However, due to the fact that he did not possess any proof, no one trusted him.”

“Instead, people all started to declare that he had a bad moral character, that he killed his good wife and was even making excuses for his actions to slander his wife. They felt him to be a degenerate among men, someone lower than pigs and dogs. Furthermore, many of the people that were cursing him were people that he had helped.”

“As for the other man, he appeared to be very good toward his wife, and very good toward others; he appeared to be very kind and charitable, doing all the good things.”

“Many people praised him as a great philanthropist, praised him as having a great moral character, and even told their children to learn from him.”

“However, he was actually someone who would frequently beat up his parents and his wife. He was someone that would frequently entrap his friends in the shadows, someone who would frame

another for their money, someone who killed innocents for their wealth. Merely, no one knew about all these things that he did.”

“Say, which of the two men do you think is good?” Chu Xuanyuan asked Chu Feng.

Chapter 2140 – Ranked Third

“It’s naturally the former,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation.

“You are naturally able to determine who is good since you know the truth. However, if you do not know the truth, and can only judge from how things appear on the surface, how would you know whether that Qing Xuantian is good or bad?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, thank you for your advice. I understand now,” Chu Feng truly understood. Chu Xuanyuan’s intentions were very clear. He was telling Chu Feng not to jump to conclusions regarding whether someone was good or bad before knowing about the truth of what had happened.

One such example would be Qing Xuantian. He must not deem him a good man just because all of the legends said that he was a good man.

Likewise, he should not deem Qing Xuantian to be a bad man just because of what the Magma Emperor said, and because Qing Xuantian had abandoned the Four Symbols Divine Power.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng was more willing to believe that Qing Xuantian was a good man.

After all, it was true that he had obtained a lot of benefits from Qing Xuantian.

Merely, even though Qing Xuantian had helped him, Chu Feng only felt gratitude toward Qing Xuantian, and not blind adoration.

After all, what Chu Feng had obtained were also things that he had obtained with a great amount of effort. Qing Xuantian had not unconditionally provided assistance to him of his own accord.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said, “Although I do not know what sort of character Qing Xuantian is, there are certain aspects that

can be determined.”

“What are they?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Qing Xuantian is very amazing. I believe that he most definitely entered the Outer World successfully. Merely, he did not use the Stairway to Heaven, but instead used a method similar to that which the Moon Immortal used.”

“The reason why I feel that he is very amazing is not because he successfully entered the Outer World. Rather, it is because he was able to obtain that sort of height by himself in this sort of place with a talent that is not extremely high.”

“After all, at that time, he only possessed an ordinary heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng expressed his approval. In terms of talent, the Qing Xuantian from back then was truly inferior to him. Else, he would have been capable of defeating the Magma Emperor as a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng’s true cultivation right now was also only that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, after using his various abilities, Chu Feng was able to contend against even ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors, much less ordinary rank one Half Martial Ancestors.

His strength was much stronger than Qing Xuantian’s.

“However, it is precisely because of that that I am certain that Qing Xuantian had not completely comprehended the Four Symbols Divine Power’s true power. At the same time, he also did not know how powerful the Four Symbols Divine Power was,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, you mean?...” Chu Feng seemed to have thought of something.

“What I mean is that Qing Xuantian most likely regretted his

decision in the future. Regardless of what sort of Divine Power he might have obtained, it would not be more powerful than his Four Symbols Divine Power,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a smile.

“Father, in that case, the Four Symbols Divine Power is a very powerful sort of Divine Power?” Chu Feng asked.

“I once came across a Divine Powers ranking chart.”

“The top ten Divine Powers on the ranking chart have never once appeared in our Starfield.”

“However, the Four Symbols Divine Power was ranked third on that ranking list,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ranked third? The Four Symbols Divine Power is actually that powerful?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

He had truly never expected the Four Symbols Divine Power to be that powerful.

After all, the vast Outer World contained a countless number of martial cultivators. Thus, there would naturally be a countless amount of Divine Powers too.

The Four Symbols Divine Power was ranked third. In other words... the Four Symbols Divine Power was the third strongest existence among all the various Divine Powers.

“That ranking was not mistaken. However, according to the various rumors of what happened back then, Qing Xuantian’s talent could be said to be overwhelmingly brilliant. However, if he were to be placed in the entire Outer World, he could only be said to be extremely mediocre, and even weak.”

“The only explanation for that would be that he had yet to completely grasp the power of the Four Symbols Divine Power. That was what caused him to mistakenly think that the Four Symbols Divine Power was very weak and inferior to the other Divine Powers.”

“Looking at it that way, that Qing Xuantian is quite lamentable. He spent so much effort to obtain a stronger power. Yet, he did not know that what he tried so hard to abandon, tried so hard to replace, was actually the truly strong power,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“If that truly is the case, then it is truly a bit...” Chu Feng suddenly felt that Qing Xuantian was lamentable too.

If the Four Symbols Divine Power was truly ranked third among the Divine Powers, then regardless of how powerful the Divine Power he had obtained back then might be, it would still be inferior to the Four Symbols Divine Power.

“Feng’er, if we are to look at it from this angle, then our banishment to this place could also be said to have brought us fortune.”

“After all, you are currently the master of the Four Symbols Divine Power. If such a Divine Power were placed in the Outer World, countless experts would disregard everything to madly scramble for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Indeed,” Thinking about it that way, Chu Feng was able to realize how precious the Four Symbols Divine Power was even more.

“However, father, if the Four Symbols Divine Power is to continue to exist, they can only return to being Secret Skills. But, it seems that they will not be able to truly reveal their power as Secret Skills,” Chu Feng said.

“Secret Skills are naturally unable to truly unleash the strength of a Divine Power. However, if they are to return to being a Divine Power, they would be able to unleash their true power,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, are you telling me to help them find Qing Xuantian and have them return to Qing Xuantian’s body?” Chu Feng asked.

“Foolish child. How could you give away a third ranked Divine

Power to someone else? You must know that it is something that you can only encounter, and not seek after.”

“Thus, rather than having them return to Qing Xuantian, why don’t you become their true master and have them truly work for you?” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, you!!!” Chu Feng had thought of a possibility, However, that possibility came as an astonishment for Chu Feng.

“That’s right. I want you to grasp that Divine Power and become a Divine Body,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, father, I already possess the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. How could I... become a Divine Body on top of that? Could it be... that you want me to abandon my Heavenly Lightning Bloodline?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, I want you to grasp the Divine Power while being a possessor of the Heavenly Lightning Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“To grasp two powers at the same time, this... is it truly possible?” Chu Feng revealed even greater astonishment. However, he also revealed great anticipation.

Chu Feng had envied Divine Bodies before too.

Even though Chu Feng now realized how powerful his Inherited Bloodline was, and no longer felt envy for Divine Powers, Chu Feng still felt a great yearning toward the third ranked Divine Power.

Most importantly, if Chu Feng truly obtained the Four Symbols Divine Power and truly grasped the Four Symbols Divine Power, he would be able to let Qing Xuantian know that he was mistaken to renounce his Four Symbols Divine Power.

Like that... he would also be able to obtain revenge for the Four Great Divine Beasts.

Merely, was something like this truly possible to accomplish?

Chapter 2141 – Four Symbols Divine Power

“In theory, it is possible. Merely, it is very difficult to accomplish.”

“However, Feng’er, just think about it. Since Divine Powers are capable of separating themselves from their original masters’ bodies, by the same logic, they should... be able to be transferred to other people’s bodies.”

“In fact, there are already many people capable of allowing a person to grasp multiple Divine Powers and increase their strength in that manner.”

“However, it appears that the body constitution of the Divine Bodies seems to be innately different from us who do not possess Divine Powers.”

“Thus, Divine Powers were capable of being transferred to other Divine Bodies. However, it is very difficult for them to be transferred to ordinary people.”

“However, I know of a person who is capable of accomplishing that. After you arrive in the Outer World, you can go and search for that person. If he is willing to help you, you will have the chance to become the true owner of the Four Symbols Divine Power.”

“You will be able to become a super expert that possesses both a Divine Power and a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Who is that person?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ox-nosed Old Daoist,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Ox-nosed Old Daoist?” Chu Feng remembered that name.

“That’s right, that is his name. Merely, that fellow is very difficult to get along with. If you wish to have him help you, you’ll

have to put forth a great amount of effort.”

“However, those are all things for the future. What you must do right now is persuade the Four Symbols Divine Power to obediently return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, should I go and do that now?” Chu Feng said.

“Go ahead,” Chu Xuanyuan waved his hand. Then, Chu Feng felt his surroundings turn fuzzy. When his sight returned to normal, he had arrived at the location where the Four Great Divine Beasts were.

The Old Ape seemed to have realized something with Chu Feng’s arrival. He stood up and went deep into the forbidden area.

At that moment, only Chu Feng and the Four Great Divine Beasts remained.

“Chu Feng, how was it? Did you meet your father?” The Four Great Divine Beasts asked with great concern upon seeing Chu Feng.

“I did. Seniors, I have something that I wish to speak with you all about,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” The Four Great Divine Beasts asked together. Their gazes turned serious. They all realized that something was amiss for Chu Feng to say that he had something to tell them the moment he returned.

“If the four of you are to continue on like this, you might not be able to live for long,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the Four Great Divine Beasts immediately grew silent. They seemed to all have thought of a lot of things after hearing only those words.

Naturally, what the Magma Emperor said was among the things running through their minds.

At that moment, Chu Feng saw extreme grief in the eyes of the

Four Great Divine Beasts.

However, even with that being the case, the Four Great Divine Beasts looked to one another, then raised their heads. With smiles on their faces, they said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, if that is the case, we’re afraid we will not be able to accompany you into the Outer World.”

“That said, even if the four of us are to accompany you, we would not be able to provide any assistance to you. We might even have to be looked after by you. This is actually a good thing. At least, we would no longer be your burden.”

“Chu Feng, the four of us truly hope that you can make great accomplishments in the Outer World, that you can show your clan that their decision to cast you here was an enormous mistake.”

They were pretending to be happy, they were most definitely pretending to be happy. However, their blessings were from the bottoms of their hearts. They truly wished that Chu Feng would be able to accomplish great things.

“Seniors, if you all are willing, you all will be able to accompany me into my Outer World campaign.”

“There is a method that can allow you all to continue to live. Merely... I’m afraid that you all will have to return to being Secret Skills again,” Chu Feng said truthfully.

“Chu Feng, is what you said the truth? There is truly a way to allow us to continue to be Secret Skills?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the Four Great Divine Beasts changed enormously. A trace of excitement appeared on their faces.

It could be seen that the four of them also wished to continue to live and not die like that.

Merely, they knew very well that they were no longer the same as they were before, that it was very difficult for them to return to becoming Secret Skills. Compared to before, it was many times

more difficult now. In fact, it could even be said to be impossible to accomplish.

“My father is capable of helping seniors return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, if it’s possible, we’ll have to trouble your father,” The Four Great Divine Beasts nodded.

“I’ll go and inform my father right away,” Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave to find his father.

Suddenly, the White Tiger said, “Chu Feng, wait a moment,”

“Senior White Tiger, what’s wrong?” Chu Feng turned around and asked.

“After entering the Outer World, do not bother to find Qing Xuantian. Before, I did not believe it. However now, I am certain that he has truly discarded us for the sake of power,” The White Tiger forced a bitter smile as it said those words.

Chu Feng noticed that the Azure Dragon, Vermillion Bird and Black Tortoise also had the same sort of expression.

“I think that senior Qing Xuantian must have had his own difficulties,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, we know Qing Xuantian’s character better than you. For some things, we have also thought about them before. Merely, we were unwilling to accept them, and did not wish to speak of them.”

“However, we now have no more illusions about them. From today on, we will wholeheartedly follow you. Although we will no longer be able to communicate with you like this, it is still a fortunate thing for us to be able to fight together with you,” The Azure Dragon said.

“That’s right. Being an abandoned Divine Power, it is our luck that we can continue to live. Moreover, we are lucky enough to

accompany a master like you,” The Vermilion Bird added.

“Seniors, I’ve heard from my father that there is someone in the Outer World that is capable of transferring Divine Powers to ordinary people.”

“In other words, after we reach the Outer World, there is a chance in having seniors return to being a Divine Power. If you all are willing, I hope to become your new master,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, is what you said the truth?” The Four Great Divine Beasts revealed expressions of excitement.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng said.

“Great, this is truly what we hoped for,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said in unison. They revealed ecstatic expressions.

Seeing that the Four Great Divine Beasts were so excited to be able to serve him, Chu Feng felt joy from the bottom of his heart.

“Great. In that case, I’ll go and call my father to have him help seniors return to being Secret Skills,” Chu Feng prepared to go and call for his father “Four sirs, thank you all for looking after Chu Feng these years,” Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan’s voice sounded. At that moment, the gazes of the Four Great Divine Beasts all changed. The reason for that was because Chu Xuanyuan was standing right beside Chu Feng.

Upon seeing Chu Xuanyuan, the Four Great Divine Beasts all revealed serious expressions. They were all able to tell that Chu Xuanyuan was so powerful that his strength was simply incapable of being estimated.

“Those words are reversed. In terms of looking after, it is Chu Feng who is looking after us,” Facing Chu Xuanyuan, the Four Great Divine Beasts acted very modestly.

“You all can rest assured, it is most definitely the correct choice to choose Feng’er as your master,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We also think that to be the case,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said in unison.

“If you four are ready, we can begin now. The reason for that is because even I am uncertain how long you all can remain in your current forms,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We’ll have to trouble you,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Xuanyuan began to move his arms, and many streams of boundless power began to appear. In an instant, they covered the entire region.

At that moment, the dazzling light caused Chu Feng some difficulty to keep his eyes open. Merely, the light persisted only for a moment before disappearing.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes again, he discovered that the Four Great Divine Beasts’ bodies were still present. However, they had died.

The reason for that was because their souls were no longer in their bodies. Instead, they were floating in the sky. They had once again returned to being Secret Skills.

“Thank you,” The Four Great Divine Beasts said to Chu Xuanyuan.

“If thanks must be said, it should be me who should thank you all. After all, after entering the Outer World, I will have to trouble you four with looking after Feng’er,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a light smile.

“Please rest assured. We will definitely give our all to protect Chu Feng,” After the Four Great Divine Beasts said those words to Chu Xuanyuan, they all started to fly toward and enter Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense that the four Secret Skills that he had lost had once again returned to his body; Chu

Feng had once again grasped the power of the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

Merely, Chu Feng was unable to calm his heart. He knew that his father was very powerful. However, he had never expected for his father to be this powerful. In merely an instant, he had turned the four Great Divine Beasts back into Secret Skills.

“Father, thank you for helping me with this,” Chu Feng suddenly said to Chu Xuanyuan. He was not saying those words out of courtesy. Rather, he felt gratefulness from the bottom of his heart, “You’re thanking me already? In that case, are you going to thank me for this too?” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he flipped his palm, and a strange substance that appeared to be made of light floated out of his hand, “This is?” Seeing that substance, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. Even though he did not know exactly what that substance was, Chu Feng was able to tell that it was a very powerful spirit formation.

“This is a spirit formation capable of resurrecting the people of the Chu Family,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chapter 2142 – Chu Feng’s Mother

“Resurrect my family?” Chu Feng looked to the spirit formation in his father’s hand with a stunned expression. His heart was tense, and his mind was filled with explosive excitement.

“As long as you bring this formation to the Golden Purple City and unleash it there, you will be able to gather the souls of your adoptive father and the others. If you are to then create bodies for them, you will be able to resurrect them.”

“For you, that should not be a difficult task,” Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng with a smile and said, “Feng’er, you should be capable of accomplishing that, right?”

“Yes. As long as their souls are gathered, I will be able to revive them.”

“Merely father, I... I truly don’t know how to thank you for this.”

Chu Feng was truly excited upon receiving that formation from his father. He had not expected that his father would prepare such a gift for him.

An enormous gift. To Chu Feng, this was most definitely an enormous gift. To Chu Feng, his greatest desire was to revive his family.

He never thought that his father would have already prepared the resurrection technique for him.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had a feeling. Even though he had failed when he attempted to resurrect the Chu Family before, he felt that the spirit formation his father had prepared for him would definitely succeed.

“Between father and son, there is no need to express thanks. If there are any thanks to be given, it should be me who should thank the people of the Azure Province’s Chu Family. Regardless of how they were, it remains that they were the ones that looked after you

and nurtured you as a child,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Seeing his father like this, Chu Feng felt wholly that his father was a great man.

The people from the Chu Family had not treated him well. Yet, Chu Feng’s father felt grateful toward the people from the Chu Family.

This meant his father was someone who could distinguish between gratitude and grudges, someone who possessed a heart that harbored gratefulness toward others.

It was just like how the Chu Heavenly Clan had clearly abandoned both his father and him. Yet, Chu Feng’s father still told him to not carry out revenge against everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

He stated that it was not the Chu Heavenly Clan that were in the wrong. Rather, it was only the people that had persecuted the two of them.

“Feng’er, you said that you have three things that you wished my assistance with, what is the third thing?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Father, the third thing is about the world spirit in my body,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re talking about that Asura World Spirit by the name of Eggy, right? What about her?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Eggy was sealed by my mother. Even now, her cultivation remains sealed, and she is unable to recover it. In the Holy Land of Martialism, I coincidentally ran across an energy. I used that energy to help recover a portion of Eggy’s cultivation.”

“However, even now, Eggy remains asleep. I feel that her condition is a bit fishy. I hope that father can inspect her for me,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, let me have a look.” As Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he

placed his finger on Chu Feng's forehead.

Suddenly, Chu Feng's heart moved, and he revealed a shocked expression. His father was actually prying into his world spirit space.

Originally, Chu Feng was planning to release Eggy from his world spirit space and then have his father look at her. However, it would appear that it was unnecessary.

"Mn, a small problem," Chu Xuanyuan retrieved his finger and said with a light smile.

"Father, you're saying that Eggy will be fine?" Chu Feng asked.

"Feng'er, there is no issue with your world spirit technique. Merely, the spirit formation that sealed your world spirit is too complicated."

"That Asura World Spirit's original cultivation should be that of a rank seven Martial Emperor, the same level of cultivation as you possessed before."

"However, when the world spirit technique is completely undone, and she regains consciousness, her cultivation should at least be that of a Half Martial Ancestor. Do you know why that is the case?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"Why?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked. The reason for that was because he was truly confused.

"Isn't the speed at which she increases her cultivation after devouring source energies extremely slow?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"It is," Chu Feng nodded.

"That's the crucial aspect. It is not that she was so extraordinary that she needed more source energy than other world spirits."

"Instead, everything was caused by that world spirit technique. That world spirit technique has been devouring the source energies and putting them aside for her.

“In other words, once that world spirit formation that has sealed her power disappears, that little world spirit will be able to break out of her cocoon, attain rebirth and become much more powerful than before.

“While it is true that that spirit formation has harmed her by sealing her cultivation and made her, a Martial Emperor, become extremely weak, that spirit formation is actually also helping her.”

“The reason for that is because if she were to increase her cultivation by herself, it would not necessarily be faster than having the world spirit formation help her accumulate power.”

“Merely, Feng’er, your World Spirit Techniques are still insufficiently powerful. It is because you tried to forcibly undo her seal without sufficient power that you caused her to enter a deep sleep.”

“However, there is no major concern. Merely, she will be sleeping for a relatively long time. Your mother did not try to deliberately make things difficult for you. As long as you are determined to remove the spirit formation that sealed her, the spirit formation would eventually be removed. Merely... as you do not possess sufficient strength, it will take a long while for you to undo that spirit formation,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In that case, the spirit formation will be completely undone after Eggy wakes up? Furthermore, she would have become a Half Martial Ancestor?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s great,” Chu Feng firmly believed what Chu Xuanyuan said. Thus, he was certain that nothing would happen to Eggy. As such, a major boulder weighing down on his heart was lifted.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Father, where is my mother?”

However, right after Chu Feng asked that question, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression changed, and his gaze grew complicated.

In fact, at that instant. Chu Feng felt as if he had fallen into a glacial-filled ravine. Coldness began to assail his body as it covered his surroundings.

However, that coldness only persisted for a moment, and did not cause any change to the objects nearby.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart tightened. The reason for that was because that coldness and his father's complicated gaze disappeared at the same time. This meant that it was very possible that it was his father that had unleashed that coldness.

This made Chu Feng realize that the matter concerning his mother... seemed to be somewhat complicated. That was the reason why his father would have such a response when he asked where his mother was.

"Feng'er, I've mentioned to you before that this place is a Lower Realm, that the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is an Ordinary Realm, and our Chu Heavenly Clan exists in the Upper Realm. Furthermore, I've also mentioned that every world is a star, and that the stars of a region form a Starfield."

"As for your mother, she is in another Starfield. She is not someone from our Starfield."

"As for your mother's name, I cannot tell you that right now. Likewise, I also cannot tell you where she is now."

"However, I'll promise you this. When you obtain the Chu Heavenly Clan's acknowledgement, when you are able to allow me to leave this place, I will tell you everything about your mother," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Very well, father. I understand what I must do," Chu Feng nodded.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart felt very heavy.

Even though his father did not state it clearly, he was able to faintly tell that there seemed to be a need of a certain amount of

power in order to take care of his mother's matters.

It was likely no longer something on the Chu Heavenly Clan's level. Likely, it was so important that even his father could not do anything about it.

Chapter 2143 – Nine Heavenly Lightnings

Stage

“Feng’er, it is about time now. You should be leaving now,” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said to Chu Feng.

“Father,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart immediately sunk. Seeing his biological father before him, Chu Feng was truly reluctant to part.

Even though he had been here for some time, Chu Feng still felt that the time had passed too quickly.

Furthermore, once they parted, no one knew how many years it would be until they saw each other again.

“Feng’er, this place is the Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area. There are people from the Chu Heavenly Clan monitoring this place. As I proclaimed that you’ve died, you cannot stay here for too long.”

“Furthermore, after returning to the Outer World, you must not tell anyone that you are my son. At least... you cannot mention it before I inform you that you can,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, please rest assured. The Chu Heavenly Clan has already abandoned me. From that very moment, I was already no longer a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, I will not be so shameless as to proclaim myself to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“However, I will not change my name, the name of Chu Feng. After all, that is the name that you and mother gave me. While I might not care about it elsewhere, I am insistent on using this name to campaign in the Outer World.”

“However, I will comply with father’s instructions, and not declare who I really am,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” Chu Xuanyuan nodded.

“Merely, father, what must I do in order to let you leave this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“Feng’er, this place is simply unable to trap me to begin with. I have only come here for the sake of training.”

“Only by being here will I be able to comprehend certain things. Only by comprehending them will I be able to discover what I want to find.”

“Before attaining comprehension, I will not be leaving this place,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. However, he soon revealed a smile on his face, and said, “I understand.”

Chu Feng truly understood. In other words, as not even the Chu Heavenly Clan could trap his father, no one would be able to harm his father. As such, the worry that Chu Feng had toward his father also vanished.

“Old Ape, are the preparations ready?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan spoke toward the depths of the forbidden area.

“It’s ready,” The Old Ape slowly walked out from the depths of the forbidden area.

“Feng’er, this person here is called Old Ape. You should address him as Uncle Ape. Your Uncle Ape is someone who has campaigned all over the world with your father. Although he is much older than me, he is my closest brother,” Chu Xuanyuan introduced Old Ape.

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Uncle Ape,” Chu Feng hurriedly greeted the Old Ape respectfully. After hearing what his father said, Chu Feng felt a greater respect for the Old Ape.

“Your father has prepared a gift for you. I, as your uncle, will naturally also have to prepare you a gift.”

“Merely, this gift might not necessarily be something that you’ll

like,” The Old Ape said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Follow me,” As the Old Ape spoke, he began to walk toward the depths of the forbidden area.

After they journeyed for a short moment, Chu Feng saw the blind old man and Zi Ling again. However, at this moment, the thing that caught his attention the most was an unusual flight of steps.

The reason why this flight of steps was unusual was because it was very large, and each step seemed to be made of glass. There were a total of nine such steps.

Chu Feng felt an usual power from this flight of steps. It seemed to be a kind of testing instrument.

“Feng’er, these stairs are known as the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps. These are the steps that all the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation will have to ascend upon reaching twenty years of age.”

“The Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps mainly tests the willpower of a wielder of a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline. The reason for that is because willpower is the most crucial aspect of a Heavenly Lightning Bloodline’s cultivation.”

“After all, what is required on the path of martial cultivation is perseverance. That is especially true for us, the possessors of Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines. As long as we train in the Self-punishing Mysterious Technique, we will be punished by lightning with each breakthrough in our cultivation. While one’s body constitution is one aspect to resisting the lightning punishment, one’s willpower is the most important matter.”

“As for this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps, it will resonate with your Heavenly Lightning Bloodline, bringing you great pain with each step that you ascend.”

“That pain will affect your movements. Retreating will be very

easy. However, it will be very difficult to continue to ascend.”

“In other words, the more steps you manage to ascend, the greater your willpower is, and the higher your future accomplishments might be.”

“Although you have long since passed the age when the test is to be conducted, it would still be fine to undergo the test now,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, what sort of result do people generally obtain from this test?” Chu Feng asked.

“Their results are all different. The majority of people will be able to ascend to the third step. Of course, there are those that are weaker, and cannot even ascend onto the second step. For the people of our Chu Heavenly Clan, they were all able to ascend to the second step. The great majority of them were able to ascend to the third step.”

“As for the fourth step, only about twenty percent of the people in our Chu Heavenly Clan were capable of that.”

“As for the fifth step, it is even lesser, numbering less than even ten percent.”

“It is much much fewer for the sixth step. Those that are able to reach the sixth step would all be emphasized by the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“As for those capable of reaching the seventh step, they were known to be exceptional geniuses even in the Chu Heavenly Clan. They would be able to enjoy an endless amount of glory and obtain the best treatment from the Chu Heavenly Clan. After all, even the Clan Chief of our Chu Heavenly Clan only managed to reach the seventh step,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Father, what about you then?”

“This... hehe...” Chu Xuanyuan seemed to not know how to respond and merely chuckled.

“Both your father and your grandfather managed to reach the ninth step. They are the only two people in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan’s history who have managed to reach the ninth step.”

“As for the eighth step, only a single person managed to reach that in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan’s history. That was the ancestor of the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Yetianhong.”

“Merely, as the eighth step remains the eighth step, it would naturally be inferior to the ninth step,” The Old Ape said.

“In that case, my father and my grandfather are even more powerful than the Chu Heavenly Clan’s ancestor?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng looked to his father. Pride filled his face.

“It’s merely a test. It wouldn’t be able to prove much. Regardless, the person that has contributed the most to the Chu Heavenly Clan remains our ancestor, Chu Yetianhong,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, in that case, can I attempt it now?” Chu Feng asked. He was filled with impatience to attempt that test.

“You can start whenever you’re ready. If you feel that you are unable to continue, then just come back. Although it is only a trial, it still possesses fatal danger should you force yourself to continue.”

“Practically every year, there are people who overestimate themselves, and they die on the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps,” Chu Xuanyuan warned.

“Father, please rest assured. I am not someone who overestimates my abilities,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile. Then, he stepped onto the first step of the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

“Step~~~”

“Roar~~~”

Right after Chu Feng stepped onto the first step, that glass-like step immediately let out a roar. Following that, lightning appeared from the step and entered Chu Feng's body through his feet. The lightning connected with Chu Feng's Heavenly Lightning Bloodline.

At that moment, a pain that Chu Feng had never felt before filled his entire body. Chu Feng felt as if his entire body was going numb.

He felt as if his entire body was being struck and tormented by lightning from inside to outside.

However, this sort of pain was something that Chu Feng could tolerate. He bit down upon his teeth and took two consecutive steps upward. In a blink of an eye, he arrived at the third step.

When he reached the third step, it was no longer a single bolt of lightning entering his body. Instead, there were three lightning bolts entering his body.

The pain and torment from the three lightning bolts was much stronger compared to that of a single lightning bolt.

However, they were still unable to stop Chu Feng; Chu Feng continued to proceed upward.

Chapter 2144 – Disappointing Result

“Step~~~”

“Step~~~”

Chu Feng took two more successive steps. After those two steps, he arrived on the fifth step.

At that moment, Chu Feng was already sweating profusely, and his complexion had turned pale. The pressure was even harder to withstand than he had anticipated. The pain was even more painful than he had anticipated.

However, Chu Feng did not stop. His foot moved upward. Once again, he took two successive steps and arrived on the seventh step.

The seventh step was something that extremely few people in the Chu Heavenly Clan managed to reach. All those that reached the seventh step would be deemed dragons among men, and be respected by everyone. Even those with status in the Chu Heavenly Clan did not dare to neglect the members of the younger generation that managed to reach the seventh step.

After all, even the current Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had only reached the seventh step.

However, that was not Chu Feng's goal. Chu Feng raised his foot with great difficulty and stepped onto the eighth step.

“Step~~~”

Success. Chu Feng successfully stepped onto the eighth step. He had surpassed the Chu Heavenly Clan's current Clan Chief and countless others.

After all, only three people had ever stepped foot onto the eighth step in the history of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

They were his grandfather, Chu Hanxian.

His father, Chu Xuanyuan.

And the Chu Heavenly Clan's ancestor, Chu Yetianhong.

However, Chu Feng had a goal from the very beginning. That goal of his was not the eighth step. Instead, it was the ninth step.

Chu Feng wanted to reach the same height as his grandfather and his father. Else, he would feel that he had disgraced his grandfather and father's reputations, and brought dishonor upon the inheritance from his father.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng clenched his teeth and began to move his right foot that was still on the seventh step. The right foot of his did not stop on the eighth step. Instead, it began to proceed toward the ninth step directly.

“Step~~~”

Finally, Chu Feng's foot landed. However, it did not land on the ninth step. Instead, it landed on the eighth step.

At that moment, Chu Feng's legs were trembling violently. It was as if he was on the verge of losing balance, as if he would collapse at any moment.

However, Chu Feng's physical appearance was still relatively better off than what he was feeling. The pain brought forth by the eight lightning bolts were simply not something that ordinary people could withstand.

At that moment, Chu Feng's lips had turned purple. He felt powerless from head to toe. He did not even have the strength to move a single step. Furthermore, as the ninth step contained enormous pressure, it would be extremely difficult for Chu Feng to step onto it.

“Feng'er, do not force yourself,” Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan's voice sounded. He was able to determine that Chu Feng had reached his limit.

As for Zi Ling, the Old Ape and the blind old man, none of them dared to say anything because they were afraid that they would affect Chu Feng. As such, they could only gaze at Chu Feng with worried expressions.

After hearing his father's voice, even though Chu Feng was clearly unable to take another step forward, he suddenly felt as if all the blood his body was boiling and surging. He suddenly felt that there was a strong surge of power in him.

Thus, with his left foot on the eighth step, Chu Feng began to lift his right foot and stride toward the ninth step.

“Step~~~”

It landed. Chu Feng's right foot landed onto the ninth step. He had successfully ascended to the ninth step.

“Ahh~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng's right foot landed onto the ninth step, he let out a loud shout. It was a painful scream.

“Boom~~~”

Following that, a loud sound was emitted from the ninth step. Like an arrow that was shot out from a bow, Chu Feng was knocked flying.

However, even though Chu Feng started to fly, he was not shot off. Instead, he started to float over the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

After that, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps let out nine lightning bolts that charged to attack Chu Feng.

“Crap!”

Seeing that, Chu Xuanyuan's expression changed. His body immediately shifted, and he flew toward the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps.

“Roar~~~”

At the moment Chu Xuanyuan approached, the nine lightning bolts that had shot out from the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps turned into nine enormous lightning beasts that moved to ferociously attack Chu Xuanyuan.

Although those nine enormous lightning beasts were not as astonishing as those from the Heavenly Bloodline's abnormal sign, their might was still unstoppable. Their power already surpassed that of Half Martial Ancestors.

“Scatter!”

Chu Xuanyuan waved his sleeve. Immediately, space itself started to tremble as golden ripples appeared. The nine enormous lightning beasts turned into countless rays of lightning that scattered in all directions before exploding.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan extended his hand and grabbed. Chu Feng was grabbed by him. His body shifted, and he brought Chu Feng back to the ground.

“Rumble~~~”

After Chu Feng and Chu Xuanyuan landed on the ground, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps also shattered. The frightening aura from before disappeared completely.

At that moment, what remained of the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was a pile of shattered glass. There was nothing special about it anymore.

“Chu Feng,” At that moment, Zi Ling, the Old Ape and the blind old man all rushed toward Chu Feng with worried expressions on their faces.

Snapping sounds were being emitted from Chu Feng's body nonstop. Those were sounds of bones shattering.

In fact, it was not only his bones that shattered. Chu Feng's muscles, veins and organs were all shattered as well.

However, after being treated by Chu Xuanyuan, Chu Feng's body was soon restored to what it was before. His ugly expression also returned to being rosy. In fact, he appeared even more energetic than before.

"Feng'er, you're too reckless," said Chu Xuanyuan after seeing that Chu Feng was fine.

However, Chu Feng suddenly knelt onto the ground with an expression of self-blame. "Father, I am useless. I have shamed you."

Even though Chu Feng had also managed to reach the ninth step, he had been unable to stand firmly on the ninth step. Thus, Chu Feng knew very well that his final record was only that of the eighth step.

"Shamed me? In the entire Chu Heavenly Clan, how many people were able to reach the eighth step?"

"Not to mention the current Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation, even counting past results, only a few people were able to accomplish that."

"However, my Feng'er has accomplished that."

"Feng'er, you have not shamed me. Instead, you have brought honor to me," Chu Xuanyuan helped Chu Feng back up with a smile on his face.

"But..." Chu Feng still had an expression of self-blame on his face.

The way he saw it, his failure in attaining the same height as his father and grandfather meant that he had tarnished the bloodline that he had inherited from them, and brought dishonor upon their reputations.

Chu Feng felt that their powerful bloodlines had entered a decline when they reached him.

“Feng’er, I’ve said it before. That is only a test, and cannot represent one’s final strength.”

“Throughout history, there were many people with great results from the test that ended up with mediocre accomplishments.”

“However, there were also many that only managed to reach the third step, but ended up attaining very high accomplishments.”

“A test remains only a test. On the path of martial cultivation, while one’s talent is very important, one’s investments and efforts are equally important.”

“Do not forget this. Regardless of whether it is your grandfather or I, neither one of us are able to replace Chu Yetianhong in the hearts of the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Chu Yetianhong is the person with the greatest accomplishments, and the person who contributed the most to our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, our ancestor is our Chu Heavenly Clan’s greatest pride,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Chapter 2145 – Surpassing The Old

“Mn.”

Chu Feng nodded. He naturally understood his father's intentions. His father was trying to tell him that the result from his test would not necessarily represent how much he would accomplish in the future. However, the self-blame Chu Feng felt in his heart did not decrease.

“Chu Feng, it is late now. You should leave soon. That said, there is one thing that I must remind you of,” Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng's Cosmos Sack and said, “That Evil God Sword of yours is special. You will likely not be able to control it. However, you should not discard it either. In short, just make sure to be careful when using it.”

“Father, is that Evil God Sword really an Imperial Armament?” Chu Feng asked.

“Imperial Armament? The strength of that weapon cannot be weighed with the ranking of weapons. That said, that sword is very nefarious. If you are able to use it properly, it will become your assistance. However, if you fail to use it properly, it will become a weapon that will end up killing you.”

“That said, it remains a rare treasure. Since you managed to encounter it, it is your fortune. If you were to discard it, it would be a great pity,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, I understand now. I will not discard the Evil God Sword. Instead, I'll be careful with it,” Chu Feng said.

“As for whether it would be fortune or misfortune, it will depend on your ability to control it. If you are truly unable to control it, do not force yourself. There is no harm in discarding it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng nodded again.

“Mn, Feng’er, go ahead. Go and temper yourself in the Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Father, Uncle Ape, Zi Ling, I’ll be going now,” Chu Feng looked to the three people there with him. Regardless of whether it was Chu Xuanyuan, the Old Ape or Zi Ling, they all had expressions of reluctance to part in their eyes.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the three of them were unwilling to part with him too. This was especially true for Zi Ling. Even though she had a sweet smile on her face, the rims of her eyes were already red.

In Chu Feng’s memory, Zi Ling was not a girl fond of crying.

“I’m going now,” Chu Feng turned around, and then left with the blind old man.

Chu Feng had truly decided to leave. Even though there were many questions left in his heart, Chu Feng did not plan to ask his father about them.

His father had told him about a lot of things today. From those, Chu Feng was able to tell that his father wanted him to rely on himself. As such, he would comply with his father’s desire.

Chu Feng’s martial cultivation path would be very difficult in the days to come. However, Chu Feng was determined to rely on himself. He would no longer rely on his father.

“Feng’er,” Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan’s voice sounded.

Chu Feng turned around, and saw that Chu Xuanyuan was looking at him still. With a light smile on his face, Chu Xuanyuan said, “Although I am unable to tell you things concerning your mother right now, you must know that your mother loved you deeply.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s nose started to sting. Tears were about to bubble out of his eyes.

He naturally knew that his mother loved him deeply. Else, why would she go through great pains to leave behind world spirits for him?

Merely, when his father personally said those words, Chu Feng felt extremely moved. His longing for his mother started to slightly go out of control.

“Father, I know. I will work hard in my cultivation so that we can bring mother back,” Chu Feng said those words with a smile. He did not cry. He had made the decision at that moment that he would never cry regardless of what sort of hardships he might end up encountering in the future.

He must be strong, even stronger than before. The reason for that was because he knew that the road to the future would become even more challenging.

However, he must continue to move forward, for he had no other choice. For the sake of his family, he must work hard.

Chu Feng and the blind old man left the forbidden area. However, they did not immediately return. The reason for that was because they must continue onward through the Heavenly Path. Only after entering the Holy Land of Martialism would they be able to use that tunnel to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

At that moment, it had been some time since Chu Feng and the blind old man had left. However, Chu Xuanyuan, Zi Ling and the Old Ape were still standing there. Their gazes were fixed onto the direction in which Chu Feng had left.

After Chu Feng left, Zi Ling was unable to contain her tears. Her tears completely drenched her beautiful cheeks.

As for Chu Xuanyuan, he naturally did not cry. In fact, not even the rims of his eyes grew red. However, there was a great amount of reluctance to part in his eyes.

“You’re worried, no? If you’re worried, you can call him back

right now.”

“You should know that the Outer World cannot be compared to this place. The perilousness of that place is many times greater than this place,” The Old Ape said to Chu Xuanyuan.

“I am naturally worried. After all, he is my son. However, it is precisely because I love him that I cannot keep him by my side. Else, I will only be holding him back,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s true too. After all, you have relied on yourself all the way ‘til here too. Your father also did not help you either,” The Old Ape said.

“Indeed. If he is to have someone to rely on, it is inevitable that his efforts will waver. Even if he possesses even better talent, he would not be able to display it.”

“Only through having no one to rely on, having no way to retreat, would one’s potential be aroused. I am doing all this for his sake,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Rest assured. Feng’er’s potential is already very good. After all, the eighth step is not something that just anyone could reach.”

“Furthermore, his personality has been tempered very well over the years. With his talent and personality, he would be fine even after entering the Outer World,” The Old Ape said.

“Who said that was the eighth step?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan spoke with a smile on his face. There seemed to be a hidden implication behind his smile.

“What’s going on?” At that moment, the Old Ape’s pupils shrunk. He sensed that something was amiss.

Zi Ling revealed a confused expression. She was perplexed by the conversation between the Old Ape and Chu Xuanyuan.

“This Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was personally created by me. Didn’t you notice that there are differences

compared to the Chu Heavenly Clan's Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps when I had you prepare it?" Chu Xuanyuan asked with a light smile.

"How could I possibly see through your tricks? Quickly, tell me, exactly what did you do?" The Old Ape hurriedly asked.

"I did not wish for Chu Feng to become overly conceited. Thus, I decided to deliberately strike at his confidence. This will make him more cautious in the Outer World."

"Thus, the pressure from that Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was much stronger compared to ordinary Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps. The eighth step was actually the ninth step," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"In that case, Chu Feng had already stepped onto the ninth step?" The Old Ape asked.

"Of course. Not only did he step onto it, he also stood there very firmly," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Then, what about that ninth step? If this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps' eighth step is already equivalent to an ordinary Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps' ninth step, then what about that ninth step? What was with that?" The Old Ape asked.

"The ninth step would naturally be the tenth step," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Ah? In that case, the Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps that Chu Feng ascended today was the Ten Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps in that remnant that not even you could ascend?" The Old Ape revealed a face filled with astonishment.

"Indeed. Although Chu Feng failed to truly ascend it, it remains that he managed to touch it with his foot. The me back then was unable to even touch it," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Haha, if that is the case, then it would mean that Chu Feng's talent is not inferior to yours and your father's. Instead, his talent

surpasses both of you,” The Old Ape was very excited. After all, this was no small matter.

“Strictly speaking, that is the case. Although it is only willpower, that sort of willpower is not something that ordinary people could compare with.”

“Feng’er has truly surpassed us,” Chu Xuanyuan revealed an expression of pride.

Chapter 2146 – Resurrection Again

“Hahaha, great, this is truly great. I had originally thought that Chu Feng being able to ascend to the eighth step was already pretty decent.”

“But it turns out this Nine Levels Heavenly Lightning Steps was actually strengthened. Chu Feng’s performance actually surpassed even yours.”

“Haha, surpassing the old, this is most definitely surpassing the old. Great, this is truly great,” The Old Ape was extremely excited, and smiling widely from being incapable of concealing his happiness. In fact, he was even slapping his thigh.

At that moment, Zi Ling had managed to understand what had happened from the dialogue. At that moment, she was also smiling sweetly. She was truly feeling happy for Chu Feng.

“Zi Ling, Feng’er will meet great hardships after entering the Outer World. However, you will not necessarily be able to live more comfortably than him here.”

“Likely, you will not be able to rest for all of the following days. The intensity of the training that I’ve prepared for you will surpass everything that you’ve ever experienced.”

“However, this is the only path that you can take to become stronger. I will remold your Divine Power. It will be a pain that you’ve never experienced before.”

“If you wish to attain a rebirth, you must first transform yourself. If you wish to transform yourself, this is the only method.”

“Are you prepared?” Chu Xuanyuan said as he looked to Zi Ling.

“Mn,” Zi Ling nodded her head resolutely. Unwavering determination flashed through her beautiful eyes.

.....

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Eastern Sea Region's Nine Provinces Continent.

He once again arrived at the Golden-purple City. He discovered that all the people present that day did not proceed to the Azure Dragon School to rest. Instead, they all remained in the Golden-purple City to wait for Chu Feng's return.

The reason for that was because after they saw Chu Feng's return, the expressions of the crowd all turned serious.

After seeing Chu Feng returning by himself, Xian Miaomiao stepped forward and asked, "Chu Feng, where are the Four Great Divine Beasts?"

Thus, as Chu Feng explained what happened, he revealed the Four Great Supreme Secret Skills.

"This... they were turned into secret skills?" Xian Miaomiao asked in astonishment. The others also revealed expressions of shock.

"To be exact, they've returned to being secret skills. They were only resurrected for the sake of helping me. However, they were unable to keep that sort of state for an extended period of time. Returning to being secret skills is currently for the best," Chu Feng explained.

"So that's the case," Hearing Chu Feng's explanation, the crowd revealed relieved expressions.

"Chu Feng, this is strange, your aura!!!" Right at that moment, Xian Miaomiao looked at Chu Feng with an astonished expression. Her beautiful eyes were opened extremely wide .

"Chu Feng, you... you're actually a rank one Half Martial Ancestor now?" At the very next moment, all of the crowd were astonished. They discovered that Chu Feng's aura was no longer that of a rank seven Martial Emperor. Instead, he had become an

actual rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

“W-W-What the hell is w-w-with this? You w-w-were away f-for only a s-short period of time, y-yet you gained three l-levels of c-cultivation. A-Are y-you trying to k-k-kill me here?” Wang Qiang also had an expression filled with astonishment.

Originally, as Wang Qiang was already a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, he was much more powerful than Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had now managed to catch up to him.

“It is because of my father’s help,” Chu Feng did not conceal this matter from the crowd. After all, they all knew that he had entered the Heavenly Road to meet his father.

“Ssss~~~” At this moment, everyone sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Those that knew Chu Feng all knew how difficult it was for him to reach a single breakthrough in his cultivation. It was already extremely unimaginable that Chu Feng was able to become a rank seven Martial Emperor.

However, Chu Feng’s father had managed to let him become a rank one Half Martial Ancestor that easily. From that, the crowd were able to conclude how powerful of a person Chu Feng’s father was.

“Chu Feng, what kind of fun did you enjoy in the Heavenly Road? Quickly, tell me about it. I have never been through the Heavenly Road before,” Xian Miaomiao asked with a curious expression. Of course, she was mainly asking that because she wanted to know about Chu Feng’s father. This girl was truly filled with curiosity.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to conceal anything. He answered all the questions from the crowd. After all, the people here were all people he trusted. Although they were not related to him by blood, they were, to Chu Feng, no different from relatives.

Suddenly, Bai Ruochen asked, “Chu Feng, in that case... are you

planning to leave for the Outer World now?”

Once Bai Ruochen’s question was heard, the entire crowd grew quiet. Regardless of whether they were men or women, young or old, they all revealed expressions of reluctance to part.

Chu Feng was not someone that could be kept in this pond. Entering the Outer World was something he would do sooner or later. Furthermore, he had already done all that he should do here. As such, it was indeed time for him to leave for the Outer World.

“Yes, I’ll be leaving. However, before leaving, I must first revive my family members,” As Chu Feng spoke, he landed in Golden-purple City.

Seeing that, the crowd all revealed serious expressions. Worry could be seen in their eyes. At that moment, everyone turned their gazes toward Chu Guyu, Chu Yue and the others from the Chu Family.

“Little brother, don’t bother attempting it again,” Chu Guyu arrived beside Chu Feng.

“Little brother Chu Feng, the dead cannot be revived. You shouldn’t cling to the dead like this. It will end up holding you back.”

“Chu Feng, you still have a lot of things that you must do. Furthermore, everyone’s deaths cannot be blamed on you. Thus, you don’t have to continue to blame yourself.”

Chu Yue, Chu Zhen and the others also arrived beside Chu Feng and began to persuade Chu Feng against it in succession.

It turned out that everyone was worried that Chu Feng would harm himself and even die by insisting on using the resurrection secret technique repeatedly.

After all, everyone had noticed how determined Chu Feng was when he used the secret resurrection technique last time around.

If it wasn't for the fact that the Heavenly Road was about to open before, it was likely that no one would be able to persuade Chu Feng to stop. Thus, they truly did not wish for Chu Feng to continue to attempt using the secret resurrection technique to revive the Chu Family.

They were all afraid that Chu Feng would fail again should he try once more, that he would refuse to give up and ruin his grand future prospects here.

"I know what you all are thinking," Seeing the worried expressions of the crowd, Chu Feng started to smile.

"However, you all can rest assured, because it is definitely going to succeed this time around. The reason for that is because this resurrection technique is something that my father gave me," As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his palm and revealed the spirit formation that was presented to him by his father.

"That is?" Seeing that spirit formation, everyone's gazes started to shine.

However, Chu Feng did not give the crowd the time to ponder it. Instead, he directly activated the spirit formation. The reason for that was because he was extremely determined to resurrect the Chu Family as quickly as possible.

"Buzz~~~"

Once the spirit formation was activated, a dazzling light immediately covered the entire region. Following that light, layer upon layer of ripples visible to the naked eye began to be emitted from the spirit formation.

The ripples were very strong. Everyone was able to sense that the spirit formation Chu Feng was using right now was many times more powerful than the secret resurrection technique Chu Feng had used before.

However, the extremely powerful energy ripples did not affect

any object or harm any of the people present.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Not long after the ripples began to spread, transparent bodies of light soon began to fly toward it.

The bodies of light grew more and more numerous. Furthermore, they started to fuse with one another. Soon, they formed many complete bodies of light.

To be exact, those were spirit bodies.

Chapter 2147 – Overwhelming Emotions

“Heavens, t-t-that’s my father!”

Suddenly, someone among the Chu Family’s younger generation shouted and began to jump in excitement. Silent tears began to roll down that person’s eyes.

Following that moment, more and more bodies of light began to appear. Each and every one of them were people from the Chu Family that died back then.

In fact, even Chu Feng’s adopted father, Chu Yuan, his big uncle, Chu Renyi, and the former Family Head, Chu Yuanba, appeared.

One by one, familiar silhouettes began to appear.

“It actually worked. It actually worked!”

Seeing their family members that had died all appearing, all of the Chu Family’s younger generation started to shiver and were all overwhelmed with emotions.

Not to mention them, even the bystanders revealed expressions of astonishment. They had seen many things. However, they had truly never seen anything like resurrecting the dead.

At that moment, the person that was the most emotional was none other than Chu Feng. However, he had to suppress his excitement.

Although the souls of these people had been gathered, they were in a state of unconsciousness.

At that moment, Chu Feng was continuing to activate the formation his father gave him while forming physical bodies for everyone. Only by having the souls enter the bodies would he be able to resurrect them.

In fact, with Chu Feng’s current strength, forming bodies for others was something extremely simple for him. In merely a

moment, he would be able to form several hundred bodies.

However, due to the fact that they were all people from the Chu Family, Chu Feng was extremely attentive when forming bodies for them, which made it so that it took him a long time to form a single body.

“Chu Feng, if you do not mind, may I help you?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal stepped forward and said to Chu Feng.

“I’ll trouble you, senior,” Chu Feng said with a nod. The Heaven Reaching Immortal was, after all, the number one world spiritist in the Holy Land of martialism. Thus, Chu Feng was confident in his abilities.

“We’ll help too,” Following that, the Weaponry Refinement Immortal, Snow-haired Immortal, Compass Immortal and World Spiritist Immortal, these Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, also stepped forward to assist Chu Feng.

Perhaps it was due to the fact that they knew what Chu Feng wanted, but it took them much longer to form physical bodies than Chu Feng. Of course... in exchange for their slow speed, they were able to form even more exquisite bodies.

In the end, all of the bodies were completed, and all of the souls were instilled into the bodies.

Merely, after the souls and bodies were fused, the bodies were still not breathing. They had yet to be truly resurrected.

The reason for that was because regardless of what sort of technique Chu Feng might use, he would not be able to restore their pulse.

“Chu Feng, what are we to do now?” The Heaven Reaching Immortal asked Chu Feng. Although the Heavening Reaching Immortal, according to his name, should possess heaven reaching abilities, he was powerless when faced with such a situation.

At that moment, Chu Feng frowned and said, “I also don’t

know.”

He truly didn't know. After all, Chu Feng's father only told him to form bodies and place the souls into the bodies to resurrect the people of the Chu Family.

He had done all that now. Furthermore, each and every body was formed so perfectly. Yet, none of these people showed any signs of reviving.

For the sake of letting them revive sooner, Chu Feng attempted several methods. However, they were all useless.

As of now, Chu Feng had exhausted all of his abilities. However, these people remained dead. This caused Chu Feng to feel that he was powerless.

“But, the souls have already been gathered. Could it be that even this will not suffice?” At that moment, the people from the Chu Family started to panic. Some of the females were so worried that they started to tear up.

Earlier, they had not believed that the resurrection technique would work. However, after actually seeing their family members' souls, and how their souls had entered their newly formed physical bodies, they all felt that their family members would be able to be revived.

Yet, after reaching this point, their family members had yet to be revived. This caused them to be filled with anxiety.

“Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, the spirit formation that Chu Xuanyuan had given Chu Feng suddenly exploded. It turned into silvery light that soared into the sky, covering it.

Then, the silvery light began to sprinkle down from the air before gently falling onto the bodies of the people from the Chu Family.

“Wuu...”

After the silvery light entered their bodies, the previously-motionless Chu Family members started to breath. In fact, they even started to emit sounds.

Finally, all of the people from the Chu Family opened their tightly closed eyes, and woke up.

“They’re alive, they’re alive!!!”

Seeing that, everyone present started to shout emotionally.

Resurrection, something that surpassed one’s imagination, was actually possible.

“Father!!!”

“Mother!!!”

“Grandfather!!!”

“Little brother!!!”

“Little sister!!!”

At that moment, all of the Chu Family’s younger generation that were alive were unable to contain themselves. While wailing with tears, they threw themselves at their newly revived relatives and tightly embraced them.

Tears were falling down like rain. At that moment, their longing for their family members was all unleashed.

“Father.”

As for Chu Feng, he immediately arrived before his adoptive father Chu Yuan’s side. Chu Guyu had also followed him.

“Guyu, Feng’er.”

“What is going on? I... didn’t I die?”

“Or, could it be that I was muddleheaded, and ended up dreaming all of that?” Chu Yuan was confused by the situation before him.

“Father, you indeed died. However, you were resurrected. It was Chu Feng, my little brother Chu Feng, that resurrected you all,” Chu Guyu said.

“Resurrected? Everyone from our Chu Family was resurrected?” After hearing what Chu Guyu said, Chu Yuan began to survey his surroundings. It was only then that he discovered that the people that had been massacred back then, including those that he saw being killed before his very eyes, were all standing there.

Merely, like him, those people all had perplexed and confused expressions on their faces.

“Who are those people? They...”

Suddenly, Chu Yuan revealed a frightened gaze. He had discovered the people from the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy Land of Martialism.

Even though those people had all concealed their cultivations, Chu Yuan was able to determine that they were extremely powerful merely by looking at them. After all, after one’s cultivation reached a certain level, one would emit an aura that surpassed that of ordinary people.

“Father, please don’t be afraid. Those people are all Chu Feng’s friends. They were brought here by Chu Feng,” Chu Guyu explained.

“Feng’er, they are truly your friends?” Chu Yuan had an astonished expression on his face. He did not dare to believe his ears.

Even though his son Chu Feng was indeed very powerful in his memories, it should be impossible for him to be that powerful, no?

How could he possibly become acquaintances with so many powerful people? In Chu Yuan’s eyes, those people were simply akin to gods. They were most definitely not existences that belonged to the Nine Provinces Continent.

“No, it’s greater than friends. Chu Feng is a benefactor to all of us. We all owe our lives to him,” Xian Miaomiao said with a smile.

While Xian Miaomiao spoke those words jokingly, they were the truth. Thus, many people nodded their heads upon hearing her words.

In fact, the King Monstrous Dragon Race’s Clan Chief even added, “My dear friend, you have truly adopted an amazing son. Your son is currently the most powerful existence in this world.”

“Most powerful?”

“Heavens! Exactly how powerful did my Feng’er become?” Chu Yuan looked to Chu Feng. Excitement filled his gaze.

He had come to believe all this, come to believe that it was Chu Feng that had brought them all back to life. Merely, how powerful must one be in order to resurrect the dead?

Although Chu Yuan was incapable of determining Chu Feng’s strength, he knew that the current Chu Feng was so powerful that he had most definitely surpassed his imagination.

“Chu Feng, he...”

The conversation between Chu Yuan and Xian Miaomiao was also heard by the others from the Chu Family. When they realized that it was truly Chu Feng that had resurrected them, the gazes from the people of the Chu Family all became extremely complicated.

Back when Chu Feng was young, no one in the Chu Family other than Chu Yuan and Chu Guyu thought highly of Chu Feng. Even the Family Head, Chu Yuanba, had been like that.

Back then, a great majority of them beat and cursed Chu Feng. Regardless of whether they were adults or children, they all bullied Chu Feng.

Even though Chu Feng proved his talent with his strength later

on and started to gradually obtain the acknowledgement and respect of the Chu Family, none of them expected that Chu Feng would become so powerful.

None of them expected that he would actually become the most powerful expert in the world!

At that moment, they were filled with overwhelming emotions.

Chapter 2148 – Departure Banquet

“Father, regardless of what sort of cultivation I might have, I will always remain your son,” Chu Feng said to Chu Yuan.

“That’s right. You are my son. You will forever be my son,” Chu Yuan nodded his head repeatedly. He was truly feeling proud of Chu Feng.

“Big brother, father and the others have just woken up. They should properly rest themselves. You should bring them back to the Azure Dragon School first,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, we’ll be returning to the Azure Dragon School right away,” Chu Guyu said.

“Father, I forgot to mention this to you. Big brother is currently the Azure Dragon School’s headmaster,” Chu Feng said to Chu Yuan.

“Really? Guyu joined the Azure Dragon School? Furthermore, he became the headmaster?” Chu Yuan asked in astonishment.

“Yes, that’s right,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Great, this is great. My two sons truly make me proud,” Chu Yuan said happily.

While Chu Yuan knew that he had died, he had felt very muddleheaded in death, and did not manage to possess much of any awareness.

Over the years, he felt as if he had dreamed a long and hazy dream. However, there was no substance to that dream.

Thus, he did not know about the things that had happened over the years. As such, he would naturally be extremely happy to be met with this much good news right after being revived.

Afterward, Chu Feng, as well as everyone from the Chu Family and the many guests from the Eastern Sea Region and the Holy

Land of Martialism, all proceeded toward the Azure Dragon School to rest there.

In order to celebrate the revival of the people from the Chu Family, as well as to welcome the many guests, the Azure Dragon School naturally held a grand banquet.

Furthermore, Chu Feng sent invitations to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Jiang Royal Dynasty and many other powers.

To Chu Feng, this might be his final banquet before entering the Outer World. Thus, he wished to see the people that had helped him before.

Finally, all of the guests from the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent arrived. As such, the banquet officially began.

In the banquet, regardless of whether they were elders or disciples, grand characters or new disciples, everyone was filled with excitement and happiness.

Not to mention that the Azure Dragon School had managed to invite over this many legendary grand characters from the Holy Land of Martialism.

The pride of their Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng, was actually so heaven-defying that he could even resurrect his family members that were killed. He was simply omnipotent.

Most importantly, the important guests that came for Chu Feng were all extremely extravagant. They bestowed everyone from the Azure Dragon School grand gifts.

Regardless of whether they were elders or disciples, they all obtained many gifts. Naturally, this made them extremely overjoyed.

After all, treasures casually given by those grand characters were all capable of being things that they could not obtain in their entire lifetimes.

During the banquet, Chu Feng gave a general description of what had happened over the years to Chu Yuan.

Actually, Chu Feng was not the one who personally told Chu Yuan what had happened. Xian Miaomiao and the others were truly talkative.

When the people in the Nine Provinces Continent came to find out what Chu Feng had experienced and accomplished, they felt even greater admiration for Chu Feng.

The younger generation that once grew up alongside Chu Feng all realized that the distance between them and Chu Feng was truly growing further and further apart.

If they were to be said to have just learned how to run on the ground, then Chu Feng was already soaring in the ninth heaven.

Suddenly, Chu Yuan asked in a very shocked manner, “Feng’er, you’re going to the Outer World?” Reluctance to part filled his gaze.

He had already come to know that Chu Feng had become the overlord of this world. In this world, there was already no one capable of fighting against Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng carried a heavy responsibility, he was prepared to make for the vast and starry sky, the so-called Outer World.

“Yes father, I am going to the Outer World. However, I will one day return. I will return to see you and everyone else,” Chu Feng said.

“Feng’er, I know that I am unable to stop you. Thus, I will only tell you one thing. After entering the Outer World, you must be careful. There is nothing more important than your life,” Chu Yuan said with great reluctance.

“It’s enough, Feng’er is someone with great prospects. As his father, you should support him.”

“Come, Feng’er, grandfather will offer you a toast of wine. I hope that you will be able to accomplish what you have done here in the Outer World too,” Chu Yuanba raised his wine cup to toast Chu Feng.

Back then, Chu Yuanba had not thought highly of Chu Feng. It was only after Chu Feng gradually emerged in power and gained honor for the Chu Family that he started to think highly of Chu Feng.

And now, after knowing about Chu Feng’s various achievements, Chu Feng had already become the pride of the Chu Family in his heart.

He was very glad that he had decided to allow Chu Yuan to adopt Chu Feng in the end.

“If someone must offer a toast, it should be me offering grandfather a toast,” Even though Chu Yuanba had not treated Chu Feng well, Chu Feng did not blame Chu Yuanba, nor did he blame the others from the Chu Family. The only thing he felt toward them was deficiency. Thus, after Chu Feng finished drinking that cup of wine, he said to Chu Yuanba, “Grandfather, I was the one in the wrong back then. It was all because of me that caused you all to die.”

“Alas, Feng’er, what are you saying? Let the past be the past. Aren’t we all properly living now?” Chu Yuanba said indifferently with a smile on his face.

“That’s right. Chu Feng, no one blames you for what happened back then. After all, it was not your fault to begin with. It’s those vile people that were the ones at fault,” The others from the Chu Family also voiced their opinions.

In response, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Suddenly, he grabbed a large jug of wine, and swept his gaze over the crowd.

His family: Chu Yue, Chu Yuan, Chu Guyu and the others...

His masters: Zhuge Liuyun and Qiu Canfeng.

His seniors from the Nine Provinces Continent: the Azure Dragon Founder, Li Changqing, Monstrous Monkey Brother and the others...

Those from the Eastern Sea Region: Huangfu Haoyue, Qiushui Fuyan, Lady Piaomiao and the others...

From the Holy Land of Martialism: Baili Xuankong, Dugu Xingfeng and the others...

As well as the seniors from the various powers: the Azure Dragon School, the Jiang Royal Dynasty, Misty Peak, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Cyanwood Mountain, the King Monstrous Dragon Race, the World Spiritist Alliance, the Elf Kingdom and the others...

When Chu Feng saw those familiar faces, the scenes of what had happened back then seemed to flash before his eyes once again. Chu Feng's mouth lifted into a smile.

He said, "Seniors, all of you are people that have helped me, all of you are benefactors to me. In fact, many among you are people that have saved me before."

"I, Chu Feng, am only able to be here this day because of you all. Even thousands of words would not be able to express my gratitude toward you all."

"Seniors, I, Chu Feng, shall offer you all a toast here," After saying those words, Chu Feng gulped down the entire jug of wine.

In response, all of the seniors that had helped Chu Feng also grabbed a jug of wine each and gulped down the wine. They did not regret helping Chu Feng. The reason for that was because helping Chu Feng had been worth it in the end.

After gulping down that jug of wine, Chu Feng grabbed another jug of wine. He looked to Wang Qiang, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Xian Miaomiao, Bai Ruochen, Sima Ying, Tantai Xue and

the many fellow members of the younger generation, “This toast is for my good brothers and friends. It is for the trials and tribulations that we all have endured together through the years.”

“Toast!” Xian Miaomiao and the others all stood up and toasted with Chu Feng.

On this night, the crowd drank all the way till dawn.

In fact, this banquet continued for ten days and ten nights straight.

Chu Feng knew that this was the final time that he had to accompany these friends and relatives. Thus, he cherished this moment even more.

However, there was no such thing as a never-ending banquet in this world. As such, even though the crowd was reluctant to part, even though there were people shedding tears, the banquet still ended up ending.

After the banquet ended, Chu Feng proceeded toward the Eastern Sea Region’s Misty Peak.

Chu Feng was prepared to leave. There were many people that followed him to see him off.

Practically all the people capable of following him went with him. They were all planning to see Chu Feng off personally.

However, not everyone was able to enter the Immortalization Road. After all, the path to the Stairway to Heaven on the Immortalization Road was very dangerous.

In the end, only a small portion of the people were able to see Chu Feng off in the Immortalization Road.

“Miaomiao, keep this. After entering the Outer World, if you do not wish to stay in the Hundred Refinements Stage, you can use this to escape from the binding of the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Chu Feng handed the world spirit key to Xian Miaomiao.

“Mn,” Xian Miaomiao accepted the key with a beaming smile.

“After reaching the Outer World, use this to contact me,” Chu Feng also handed her a Golden Flash Bird.

“Okay,” Xian Miaomiao nodded again. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “You must be well. Make sure to not die. Don’t make it so that there is no one in the Outer World for this princess after she arrives.”

“Definitely,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile.

“H-Hey, e-enough of the d-d-dillydally. A-A-Are we g-going or not?” Suddenly, a voice was heard. It was Wang Qiang.

Merely, the current Wang Qiang was already above the clouds and standing on the Stairway to Heaven. The Stairway to Heaven had been activated, and Wang Qiang had ascended onto it.

“Seniors, Chu Feng shall take his leave now,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the crowd.

“Safe journey,” The crowd also clasped their fists.

Chu Feng smiled again. Then, his body shifted, and he flew toward the Stairway to Heaven. With rapid steps, he began to ascend it. Soon, he caught up to Wang Qiang.

“D-D-Do you s-see that? If w-we g-go any f-f-further, this S-Stairway to Heaven w-will send us to the O-Outer World.”

“A-At that t-time, we will be completely l-leaving this place. A-Are you p-p-p-prepared?” Wang Qiang pointed toward the top of the Stairway to Heaven. The energy ripples in that place were somewhat different.

Chu Feng took a glance downward. He was filled with reluctance to part. However, in the end, he turned around and said, “Let’s go.”

“Woosh~~~”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the two men both soared ahead.

“Buzz~~~”

When the two men stepped onto that region, waves of power began to pound against them from below the Stairway to Heaven.

“Woosh~~~”

When the light coming from below covered Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, the two of them were quickly brought to the depths of the sky. Soon, their figures disappeared.

When the Stairway to Heaven calmed back down, all the people present knew that Chu Feng... had already entered Outer World.

Chapter 2149 – Newcomer

Everything in around him was rapidly changing. However, Chu Feng was not moving at all. It was as if his hands and legs were restricted; as if he was in a river current, and could only blindly follow it.

However, Chu Feng was able to see the changes happening to his surroundings. At the beginning, his surrounding had been covered with golden light. However, the golden light soon turned into darkness. Even though it had turned to darkness, there were many faint lights passing through him nonstop. In fact, he was even able to sense that there were a lot of such lights; so many that they were simply innumerable.

Merely, the speed at which Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were traveling was simply too fast. As such, Chu Feng was simply unable to see anything clearly.

However, Chu Feng had a guess in his heart. He felt those lights to be stars. Chu Feng had already left the Eastern Sea Region. To be exact, he had left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and entered the vast starry sky.

That is, he had entered the Outer World.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the place before Chu Feng was no longer an endless tunnel. Instead, a ray of light appeared.

That ray of light appeared like the bright sun. Blazing heat was soon felt.

Soon, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were basked in the light and heat. It was as if they had entered the sun itself. That sort of feeling was very unpleasant.

However, that feeling persisted for only a split second before disappearing. At the same time, the dazzling light also disappeared.

Soon, Chu Feng discovered that the binding feeling on his hands and legs had also disappeared.

Furthermore, when he looked to his surroundings, he was joyous to discover that he was currently on a sea floor.

“We’ve a-a-arrived at the O-O-Outer World?” Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng. Unconcealable excitement filled his face.

“Wouldn’t we know once we go out?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his body shifted as he and Wang Qiang rapidly soared upward.

“Splash~~~”

Waves of water splashed across the sea as Chu Feng and Wang Qiang soared into the sky like two dragons.

However, there was no one in their surroundings. Above them was a vast blue sky and white clouds. Below them was a sea as far as the eye could see. The waves of the sea surged high into the sky and rumbled as they crashed back into the sea.

“T-the h-hell?! I-I-Isn’t this the E-Eastern Sea R-Region?!” Wang Qiang’s mouth was wide open. He had a disappointed expression.

“No, this place should be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Feng said.

“H-How do you k-know that?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Sense the Natural Energies in this place. They’re so plentiful and dense. Not to mention the Eastern Sea Region, even the Holy Land of Martialism is greatly inferior to this place,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang closed his eyes and began to carefully sense the Natural Energies in his surroundings. Then, he opened his eyes and revealed an excited expression. He said, “It’s t-true! In t-that case, this place is r-really not the Eastern Sea Region but the H-H-Hundred R-Refinements O-Ordinary Realm?”

“T-Then, where are we at now? Is this t-the H-Hundred Refinements S-Stage or w-whatever that y-you spoke of? B-But, why are o-only the two of us h-here?” Wang Qiang asked curiously.

“There’s only two possibilities for that...”

“One, this place is enormous. Thus, even though we are in the Hundred Refinements Stage, we are unable to find anyone in our surroundings.”

“Two, the Stairway to Heaven that we used avoided the guidance power. Thus, while we are in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, we have simply bypassed the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Chu Feng explained.

“T-That’s true. F-Forget about it. D-Doesn’t matter w-where this is, let’s g-go check t-things out,” Wang Qiang surveyed his surroundings. Then, his body shifted. He pointed to a direction and said, “Come, l-let’s go t-this way. It’s c-closer to the coast.”

After he finished saying those words, Wang Qiang began to proceed toward the direction he chose.

‘Quite skillful.’

In response, Chu Feng praised in his heart. Although they were both world spiritists, being able to differentiate one’s surroundings and determine which direction was closer to the coast when placed in the middle of a vast sea like this was not something that everyone could accomplish.

While Chu Feng was able to accomplish it, he did not expect that Wang Qiang would also be capable of it.

After seeing that Wang Qiang possessed this sort of ability, Chu Feng grew a bit more confident. After all, it would be beneficial for the two of them to possess more abilities when entering this unknown Outer World together.

The two men flew toward the direction Wang Qiang had indicated. Sure enough, as they approached the coast, a city came

into view.

The city was not very large. However, there were plenty of people moving about in it. It was a very lively city.

After seeing the people in the city, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were both extremely excited. It was as if they had discovered a new world.

Although they were all humans, it remained that the people of this place were from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The first thing Chu Feng did was to survey the cultivation of these people. He wanted to have a general understanding of what sort of cultivations the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed.

Upon surveying the crowd, Chu Feng discovered that the people in this city, regardless of their gender or age, were practically all martial cultivators. As for their cultivations, they numbered from high to low.

However, a thing worthy of being mentioned was that even the weakest adults were Martial Kings. Furthermore, there were a lot of Half Martial Emperor-level experts.

Of course... there were also Martial Emperor-level experts. Merely, they numbered very few.

Furthermore, whenever a Martial Emperor appeared, the rest of the people looked to them with gazes of reverence. This meant that Martial Emperors were people with a certain amount of status in this place.

It should also be pointed out that the majority of the people in Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's line of sight that were capable of becoming Martial Emperors were older than a hundred years old.

As rank one Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were much superior to the people here.

Merely, as the two men did not deliberately reveal their auras, no one took notice of them.

After all, the two of them were only two young men in their early twenties. They were still very young even for the younger generation.

To the people that had lived for hundreds or thousands of years, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang could not even be considered youngsters. In fact, they were no different from two babies.

“W-What’s this? H-Here I t-thought this p-place would be a-a-amazing. Turns out i-it’s only this much.”

“With o-only these g-guys here, I can c-crush a w-whole bunch w-with a s-single f-f-fart. S-Sigh, t-this is n-no c-c-c-challenge at all,” Wang Qiang said with a disappointed expression.

“We’ve just arrived here. What we are seeing here is merely the tip of the iceberg. As such, we naturally cannot determine much from this.”

“Furthermore, Martial Emperors were grand existences in the Holy Land of Martialism. They are not people that were easily encountered.”

“Yet, this place is merely a city. However, this mere city possesses Martial Emperors. Doesn’t this mean that this place has a lot of Martial Emperors?”

“The way I see it, the people here might only be ordinary martial cultivators. For ordinary martial cultivators to be able to become Martial Emperors, that in itself is extremely extraordinary,” Chu Feng said.

“I-If y-you say it like that, it d-does seem to b-be the case,” Wang Qiang felt what Chu Feng said to be very reasonable.

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing tolling of bells could be heard. They were sounding from the direction of the sea.

“This is bad! It’s the people from Luyang’s Pavilion. Everyone, quickly, run away.”

After hearing that bell, two distinct reactions emerged from the people in the city. One was panic, and the other was joy.

Chu Feng discovered that some people were already kneeling on the ground. They were kneeling and kowtowing in the direction where the tolling was coming from. They were all people with joyous expressions on their faces.

“Quickly, we gotta go, we gotta go.”

At the same time, the people that had panicked expressions on their faces hurriedly escaped to take shelter.

Table of Contents

[Martial God Asura](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 1559 – Golden Beach](#)

[Chapter 1560 – Demon Level Genius](#)

[Chapter 1561 – Bad Example](#)

[Chapter 1562 – Frightening Hurricane](#)

[Chapter 1563 – Lending A Helping Hand](#)

[Chapter 1564 – Nangong Baihe](#)

[Chapter 1565 – Young Hero, Help Me](#)

[Chapter 1566 – Change In Attitude](#)

[Chapter 1567 – Qunguang Brothers](#)

[Chapter 1568 – People One Should Not Talk About](#)

[Chapter 1569 – Reinforcements](#)

[Chapter 1570 – No Way Back](#)

[Chapter 1571 – Rescue At The Risk Of One's Life](#)

[Chapter 1572 – One Shot Lightning](#)

[Chapter 1573 – Must Be Kept Confidential](#)

[Chapter 1574 – King Monstrous Dragon Beast](#)

[Chapter 1575 – Dreadful Heart For Self Interest](#)

[Chapter 1576 – Eggy's Awakening](#)

[Chapter 1577 – Choosing The Dangerous Passage](#)

[Chapter 1578 – The Reveal](#)

[Chapter 1579 – Search For Fortune Among Risks](#)

[Chapter 1580 – Ancient Era's Scroll](#)

[Chapter 1581 – Unendurable Craving](#)

[Chapter 1582 – Merely One Strike](#)

[Chapter 1583 – Must Take Revenge](#)

[Chapter 1584 – A Series Of Mockeries](#)

[Chapter 1585 – The Strongest of the Younger Generation](#)

[Chapter 1586 – Announcing The Result](#)

[Chapter 1587 – Don't Behave Atrociously](#)

[Chapter 1588 – Meeting The Immortal](#)

[Chapter 1589 – From Hell To Heaven](#)

[Chapter 1590 – Remarkable Abilities](#)

[Chapter 1591 – Attempting To Communicate](#)

[Chapter 1592 – Training Begin](#)

[Chapter 1593 – Heavenly Law Auction](#)

[Chapter 1594 – Frantic Refinement](#)

[Chapter 1595 – Testing Talent](#)

[Chapter 1596 – Cursing Without Obscenity](#)

[Chapter 1597 – Betting With One's Reputation](#)

[Chapter 1598 – Revealing One's Talent](#)

[Chapter 1599 – Weaponry Refinement Completed](#)

[Chapter 1600 – Incomplete Imperial Armament](#)

[Chapter 1601 – This Separation](#)

[Chapter 1602 – Arrival Of Malice](#)

[Chapter 1603 – Not A Pushover](#)

[Chapter 1604 – Humiliation Once Again](#)

[Chapter 1605 – Truly Shameless](#)

[Chapter 1606 – Absolute Suppression](#)

[Chapter 1607 – Forming A Blood Feud](#)

[Chapter 1608 – Reaching The Auction](#)

[Chapter 1609 – Buying World Spirit Stones](#)

[Chapter 1610 – Extremely Expensive Exchange](#)

[Chapter 1611 – This Favor](#)

[Chapter 1612 – Evildoer Tie](#)

[Chapter 1613 – Auction Begins](#)

[Chapter 1614 – Intense Competition](#)

[Chapter 1615 – Bidding Requires Strength](#)

[Chapter 1616 – Scamming Evildoer Tie](#)

[Chapter 1617 – An Imprint](#)

[Chapter 1618 – The Day Of Revenge](#)

[Chapter 1619 – Killing Intent All Over One's Face](#)

[Chapter 1620 – Mysterious Expert](#)

[Chapter 1621 – Staying As Guests](#)

[Chapter 1622 – Coldsnow Dagger](#)

[Chapter 1623 – Chu Feng Attending A Banquet](#)

[Chapter 1624 – It Really Was A Hongmen Banquet](#)

[Chapter 1625 – Must Apologize](#)

[Chapter 1626 – Chu Feng Serving Tea](#)

[Chapter 1627 – Face Covered With Tea](#)

[Chapter 1628 – Golden Coiling Dragon Pellet](#)

[Chapter 1629 – Chu Feng Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 1630 – Soaring Golden Dragon](#)

[Chapter 1631 – The Appearance Of The Divine Lightnings](#)

[Chapter 1632 – Ruthlessness](#)

[Chapter 1633 – Battle Power That Surmounts Four Levels Of Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 1634 – Setting Up Spirit Formations](#)

[Chapter 1635 – Water Immortal Profound Technique](#)

[Chapter 1636 – Flatter](#)

[Chapter 1637 – Secret Skill Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 1638 – Paying The Price](#)

[Chapter 1639 – Birth Of Asura](#)

[Chapter 1640 – Doomsday Arrival](#)

[Chapter 1641 – Bunch Of Mobs](#)

[Chapter 1642 – Surpassing One's Imagination](#)

[Chapter 1643 – Nangong Longjian](#)

[Chapter 1644 – Both Sides Suffer](#)

[Chapter 1645 – Sealing The News](#)

[Chapter 1646 – Scouting For Information](#)

[Chapter 1647 – Tailing In Secret](#)

[Chapter 1648 – The Might Of The Water Immortal](#)

[Chapter 1649 – Cyan Rainbow Sword](#)

[Chapter 1650 – Revealing One's Strength](#)

[Chapter 1651 – Four Great Secret Skills](#)

[Chapter 1652 – Seizing Items](#)

[Chapter 1653 – Witch Descended From Heaven](#)

[Chapter 1654 – Swindler Monk](#)

[Chapter 1655 – Too Shameless](#)

[Chapter 1656 – Forced Onto A Path To Death](#)

[Chapter 1657 – Chu Feng Captured](#)

[Chapter 1658 – The Appearance Of The Witch](#)

[Chapter 1659 – Seeking Survival By Breaking Through The Formation](#)

[Chapter 1660 – Extremely Poisonous Sea Of Clouds](#)

[Chapter 1661 – Experiment Failure](#)

[Chapter 1662 – Poison Demon's Valley](#)

[Chapter 1663 – The Pitiful Villagers](#)

[Chapter 1664 – Poison Demon's Descendants](#)

[Chapter 1665 – Chu Feng’s Challenge](#)

[Chapter 1666 – The Fierce Du Wanwu](#)

[Chapter 1667 – Victor And Loser](#)

[Chapter 1668 – Immune To Poisons](#)

[Chapter 1669 – A Fair Battle](#)

[Chapter 1670 – Severing The Connection](#)

[Chapter 1671 – Challenge Again](#)

[Chapter 1672 – Wiping Away Former Shame](#)

[Chapter 1673 – The Outcome Of The Battle](#)

[Chapter 1674 – Lady Xiangyu](#)

[Chapter 1675 – A Request](#)

[Chapter 1676 – Fire Immortal Profound Technique](#)

[Chapter 1677 – The Fire Immortal’s Request](#)

[Chapter 1678 – Finding The Poisonous Substance](#)

[Chapter 1679 – Suspicious Individual](#)

[Chapter 1680 – Gu Poison](#)

[Chapter 1681 – Placed Together](#)

[Chapter 1682 – Chu Feng Is Already Dead](#)

[Chapter 1683 – This Is The Truth](#)

[Chapter 1684 – Mooncloud City](#)

[Chapter 1685 – Proceeding Towards The Five Poisons Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1686 – Thorny Problem](#)

[Chapter 1687 – Astonishingly Powerful](#)

[Chapter 1688 – The Dreadful Intention For Self Interest](#)

[Chapter 1689 – Revealing Godly Might](#)

[Chapter 1690 – Invisible Dew](#)

[Chapter 1691 – Benefactor’s Descendant](#)

[Chapter 1692 – Mysterious Old Man](#)

[Chapter 1693 – Extremely Dangerous Location](#)

[Chapter 1694 – Taboo Gu](#)

[Chapter 1695 – Imminent Peril](#)

[Chapter 1696 – A Familiar Voice](#)

[Chapter 1697 – Beitang Zimo?](#)

[Chapter 1698 – Go For Broke](#)

[Chapter 1699 – Misjudged](#)

[Chapter 1700 – Lord Headmaster](#)

[Chapter 1701 – It's Time To End This](#)

[Chapter 1702 – Baili Xuankong](#)

[Chapter 1703 – Avenge You](#)

[Chapter 1704 – Meticulous Planning](#)

[Chapter 1705 – An Enormous Gift](#)

[Chapter 1706 – Rank Three Half Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1707 – Parting Ways](#)

[Chapter 1708 – Ximen Feixue](#)

[Chapter 1709 – Fellow Disciples Being Insulted](#)

[Chapter 1710 – Standing Up For Others With Power](#)

[Chapter 1711 – Enormous Change](#)

[Chapter 1712 – Exactly Who Is It?](#)

[Chapter 1713 – Bound To Become Famous](#)

[Chapter 1714 – Chu Feng Appearing On The Stage](#)

[Chapter 1715 – A Powerful Character](#)

[Chapter 1716 – Find A Pushover First](#)

[Chapter 1717 – Displaying One's Ability For The First Time](#)

[Chapter 1718 – One Against Two](#)

[Chapter 1719 – Everything Points To Disaster](#)

[Chapter 1720 – Worthy Of Admiration](#)

[Chapter 1721 – Could Only Accept Being Defeated](#)

[Chapter 1722 – Insist On Fighting](#)

[Chapter 1723 – The Might Of A Single Fist](#)

[Chapter 1724 – Heavenly Immortal Sword](#)

[Chapter 1725 – From The Outer World](#)

[Chapter 1726 – The Legend Of The Evil God](#)

[Chapter 1727 – Conquer This Sword](#)

[Chapter 1728 – Cannot Be Looked Down Upon](#)

[Chapter 1729 – Crimson Demon Sword](#)

[Chapter 1730 – Needing Only A Single Sword Strike](#)

[Chapter 1731 – Public Humiliation](#)

[Chapter 1732 – Revealing The Truth](#)

[Chapter 1733 – The Truth Revealed](#)

[Chapter 1734 – Enormous Crisis](#)

[Chapter 1735 – An Exorbitant Demand](#)

[Chapter 1736 – Weapon Biting Its Master](#)

[Chapter 1737 – Say It Again](#)

[Chapter 1738 – Leaving The Scene Domineeringly](#)

[Chapter 1739 – Further And Further Away](#)

[Chapter 1740 – Two Major Events](#)

[Chapter 1741 – A Mountain Of Corpses, A Sea Of Blood](#)

[Chapter 1742 – Returning To The Cyanwood Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1743 – Charging Through The Killing Formation Again](#)

[Chapter 1744 – Golden Palace](#)

[Chapter 1745 – Army Of Martial Emperors](#)

[Chapter 1746 – Legendary Divine Beast](#)

[Chapter 1747 – Advance By Leaps And Bounds](#)

[Chapter 1748 – Effective Weapon For Killing](#)

[Chapter 1749 – Sacred Land For Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 1750 – Mysterious Letter](#)

[Chapter 1751 – Fight For The Strongest](#)

[Chapter 1752 – Must Go](#)

[Chapter 1753 – The Gathering Of The Four Clans](#)

[Chapter 1754 – Violent Development](#)

[Chapter 1755 – You Are Chu Feng?](#)

[Chapter 1756 – You Should Change Your Name](#)

[Chapter 1757 – Changing Attitude Extremely Fast](#)

[Chapter 1758 – Private Chat In A Private Room](#)

[Chapter 1759 – Acting To Uphold Justice](#)

[Chapter 1760 – Evildoers' Disciples](#)

[Chapter 1761 – Should Know Your Standing](#)

[Chapter 1762 – Arriving On Stage In Succession](#)

[Chapter 1763 – Confrontation Between The Strong](#)

[Chapter 1764 – The Flame Emperor's Successor](#)

[Chapter 1765 – Your Natural Counter](#)

[Chapter 1766 – Carefully See For Yourself Who I Am](#)

[Chapter 1767 – Killing Zhan Qiankun](#)

[Chapter 1768 – Loyal To One's Friends](#)

[Chapter 1769 – Grand Benefactor](#)

[Chapter 1770 – Scouting For Intelligence](#)

[Chapter 1771 – Bring You All In](#)

[Chapter 1772 – Entering](#)

[Chapter 1773 – Target Of Public Criticism](#)

[Chapter 1774 – Believe In Chu Feng](#)

[Chapter 1775 – Golden Leaf World Spirit Flower](#)

[Chapter 1776 – Baffled](#)

[Chapter 1777 – He Really Came](#)

[Chapter 1778 – Disparity](#)

[Chapter 1779 – Publicly Snatching Away Another's Possessions](#)

[Chapter 1780 – Exactly Who Is It?](#)

[Chapter 1781 – Losing All Face](#)

[Chapter 1782 – Friend Appearing On Stage](#)

[Chapter 1783 – Senior Brother's Origin](#)

[Chapter 1784 – Immortal Fire Tri-layer Transformation](#)

[Chapter 1785 – For One's Brother, Resolve](#)

[Chapter 1786 – Don't Make Things Difficult For Me](#)

[Chapter 1787 – Killing Intention](#)

[Chapter 1788 – Successful Capture](#)

[Chapter 1789 – Rank One Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1790 – Dumbstruck](#)

[Chapter 1791 – Two Divine Powers](#)

[Chapter 1792 – Heaven Taboo Martial Skill](#)

[Chapter 1793 – Are You Looking For Me?](#)

[Chapter 1794 – Absolute Humiliation](#)

[Chapter 1795 – Sweat Like A Pig](#)

[Chapter 1796 – Borrowing Another's Blade To Kill](#)

[Chapter 1797 – A Bamboo Slip](#)

[Chapter 1798 – Divine Lightnings Revealing Their Might](#)

[Chapter 1799 – Subduing the Bamboo Slip](#)

[Chapter 1800 – Profound Firmament Annihilation](#)

[Chapter 1801 – Competition Begin](#)

[Chapter 1802 – Brought About Great Military Might](#)

[Chapter 1803 – Inescapable Net](#)

[Chapter 1804 – A Chess Move Behind](#)

[Chapter 1805 – The Overbearing Snow-hair](#)

[Chapter 1806 – Confrontation Of Imperial Armaments](#)

[Chapter 1807 – Fighting Over A Disciple](#)

[Chapter 1808 – Not Afraid Of Martial Emperors](#)

[Chapter 1809 – Watching With Folded Arms](#)

[Chapter 1810 – Shooting Martial Emperors With Arrows](#)

[Chapter 1811 – Unprecedented](#)

[Chapter 1812 – Reappearance Of The Avaricious Immortal](#)

[Chapter 1813 – Plan Failure](#)

[Chapter 1814 – The Reactions From The Various Powers](#)

[Chapter 1815 – Request From One's Benefactor](#)

[Chapter 1816 – Fighting Over The Position Of Clan Chief](#)

[Chapter 1817 – A Fine Line](#)

[Chapter 1818 – Scum King Monstrous Dragon Beast](#)

[Chapter 1819 – Chu Feng Vs. Xueran](#)

[Chapter 1820 – Invited One's Own Humiliation](#)

[Chapter 1821 – Internal Strife](#)

[Chapter 1822 – Conspiracy](#)

[Chapter 1823 – Beating Someone At Their Own Game](#)

[Chapter 1824 – Digging One's Own Grave](#)

[Chapter 1825 – Miraculous Inheritance Pond](#)

[Chapter 1826 – Reappearance Of The Dragon King](#)

[Chapter 1827 – Obtained The Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 1828 – Extremely Heaven-defying](#)

[Chapter 1829 – Heaven Taboo Martial Skill](#)

[Chapter 1830 – Slaughter With A Point Of One's Finger](#)

[Chapter 1831 – Frightening Brat](#)

[Chapter 1832 – The King Monstrous Dragon Race's Benefactor](#)

[Chapter 1833 – You Shouldn't Deceive Me](#)

[Chapter 1834 – Concerning The World's Hidden Valley](#)

[Chapter 1835 – Increasing The Bounty](#)

[Chapter 1836 – Lovers' Worry](#)

[Chapter 1837 – Seeing Jiang Wushang Again](#)

[Chapter 1838 – Brother Being Plotted Against By Others](#)

[Chapter 1839 – Song Yuheng And His Father](#)

[Chapter 1840 – The Heaven-defying Chu Feng](#)

[Chapter 1841 – The Truth Of What Happened Back Then](#)

[Chapter 1842 – Passing On By Force](#)

[Chapter 1843 – The True Remains](#)

[Chapter 1844 – The Vicious Song Family](#)

[Chapter 1845 – Who Is Fighting?](#)

[Chapter 1846 – An Enormously Pleasant Surprise](#)

[Chapter 1847 – Imminent Danger](#)

[Chapter 1848 – The Descent Of A God](#)

[Chapter 1849 – Absolute Despise](#)

[Chapter 1850 – The Mysterious Dark Hall](#)

[Chapter 1851 – Making Inquiries About The Blind Old Man](#)

[Chapter 1852 – Luring A Snake Out Of Its Hole](#)

[Chapter 1853 – Within The Grasp Of One's Palm](#)

[Chapter 1854 – Wrecking The Inheritance Process](#)

[Chapter 1855 – Revealing The Trump Card](#)

[Chapter 1856 – The Furious Duan Jidao](#)

[Chapter 1857 – Passing On The Power To Jiang Wushang](#)

[Chapter 1858 – The Situation Turning Bad](#)

[Chapter 1859 – Surging Hot Blood](#)

[Chapter 1860 – Monstrous Dragon Space Shattering Formation](#)

[Chapter 1861 – Rank Nine Half Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1862 – A Grand Formation](#)

[Chapter 1863 – Arriving Atop Dragons](#)

[Chapter 1864 – Super Expert](#)

[Chapter 1865 – Unrivaed Divine Might](#)

[Chapter 1866 – Because They're Brothers](#)

[Chapter 1867 – Fighting Against The Four Clan Chiefs Alone](#)

[Chapter 1868 – Killing Ximen](#)

[Chapter 1869 – The First Person Since Ancient Times](#)

[Chapter 1870 – Dragon Sword Breaking Through The Void](#)

[Chapter 1871 – Absolute Expert](#)

[Chapter 1872 – An Unexpected Conclusion](#)

[Chapter 1873 – The Curtain Drops](#)

[Chapter 1874 – You Are The Traitor](#)

[Chapter 1875 – Fool](#)

[Chapter 1876 – Guest Elders](#)

[Chapter 1877 – Purple Flames Blackmountain](#)

[Chapter 1878 – Meeting An Old Friend Again](#)

[Chapter 1879 – To Live Or Die Together](#)

[Chapter 1880 – Incurable Disease](#)

[Chapter 1881 – Elf Kingdom](#)

[Chapter 1882 – Refused Entry](#)

[Chapter 1883 – Princess Lingyue](#)

[Chapter 1884 – Xian Miaomiao](#)

[Chapter 1885 – Innumerable Obstacles](#)

[Chapter 1886 – When Underneath Eaves](#)

[Chapter 1887 – The Arrival Of The Princess](#)

[Chapter 1888 – Dumbstruck](#)

[Chapter 1889 – Beautifully Done](#)

[Chapter 1890 – You're Not Afraid Of Me?](#)

[Chapter 1891 – It's You](#)

[Chapter 1892 – Blood Devouring Armor](#)

[Chapter 1893 – Mischievous Girl](#)

[Chapter 1894 – Shocking Sentence](#)

[Chapter 1895 – Extraordinary Significance](#)

[Chapter 1896 – Stepping Stone](#)

[Chapter 1897 – Capture All](#)

[Chapter 1898 – Golden Lightning Piercing Through The Skies](#)

[Chapter 1899 – A Miracle](#)

[Chapter 1900 – Rank One Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1901 – Truly A Brilliant Plan](#)

[Chapter 1902 – Came Prepared](#)

[Chapter 1903 – The Avaricious Immortal's Provocation](#)

[Chapter 1904 – The Situation Turning Bad](#)

[Chapter 1905 – Shifting Heaven And Earth](#)

[Chapter 1906 – Kneel And Beg For Forgiveness](#)

[Chapter 1907 – Angered To The State Of Vomiting Blood](#)

[Chapter 1908 – From The Other World](#)

[Chapter 1909 – The Means To Become Conceited](#)

[Chapter 1910 – Weeping Bitter Tears](#)

[Chapter 1911 – Forbidden Inverse Scale Triggered](#)

[Chapter 1912 – Blood Devouring Killing Formation](#)

[Chapter 1913 – The Weakening Of The Spirit Formation](#)

[Chapter 1914 – A Legend](#)

[Chapter 1915 – Strange Creature](#)

[Chapter 1916 – Bravely Fighting Against A Lowly Insect](#)

[Chapter 1917 – The Witch Miaomiao](#)

[Chapter 1918 – People From The Dark Hall](#)

[Chapter 1919 – Interrogation](#)

[Chapter 1920 – Falling Into A Trap](#)

[Chapter 1921 – Eight Banners](#)

[Chapter 1922 – Lil Red's Past](#)

[Chapter 1923 – YinYang Immortal](#)

[Chapter 1924 – Confrontation Of World Spirit Techniques](#)

[Chapter 1925 – Going Back On One's Word](#)

[Chapter 1926 – To Attack First](#)

[Chapter 1927 – The Birth Of The Evil God](#)

[Chapter 1928 – The Might Of A Demon Armament](#)

[Chapter 1929 – Protecting One's Master With One's Life](#)

[Chapter 1930 – Moment Of Crisis](#)

[Chapter 1931 – Interrogating YinYang](#)

[Chapter 1932 – Nefarious Sword](#)

[Chapter 1933 – News From Far Away](#)

[Chapter 1934 – Break Through The Seal](#)

[Chapter 1935 – Confronting Enemies Together](#)

[Chapter 1936 – The Dangerous Woman](#)

[Chapter 1937 – The Dark Hall's Hall Master](#)

[Chapter 1938 – Same Bloodline?](#)

[Chapter 1939 – Torment](#)

[Chapter 1940 – In So Much Pain That One Wished To Die](#)

[Chapter 1941 – Undoing The Seal?](#)

[Chapter 1942 – Setting up the Formation](#)

[Chapter 1943 – Things Have Changed](#)

[Chapter 1944 – Enjoying Both Fortune And Misfortune Together](#)

[Chapter 1945 – Let Me Try](#)

[Chapter 1946 – Chu Feng's Return](#)

[Chapter 1947 – Meeting Long Lin Again](#)

[Chapter 1948 – Heavenly Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 1949 – Fusion](#)

[Chapter 1950 – Challenging The Qilin](#)

[Chapter 1951 – The Path To Heaven](#)

[Chapter 1952 – Spatial Crack](#)

[Chapter 1953 – Must Return](#)

[Chapter 1954 – Heaven Taboo: Void Splitting Blade](#)

[Chapter 1955 – Moonlight Maze](#)

[Chapter 1956 – Disparity In Strength](#)

[Chapter 1957 – Must Kill!](#)

[Chapter 1958 – Demonic Genius Immortal](#)

[Chapter 1959 – Moon Immortal, Moon Demon](#)

[Chapter 1960 – The Unavoidable Battle](#)

[Chapter 1961 – Emperor Chi's Successor](#)

[Chapter 1962 – Entering The Maze](#)

[Chapter 1963 – Apologize By Eating Feces](#)

[Chapter 1964 – Breaking Apart The Formation With A Single Move](#)

[Chapter 1965 – Situation Turning Bad](#)

[Chapter 1966 – Unmasking](#)

[Chapter 1967 – Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader](#)

[Chapter 1968 – Rank Two Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1969 – Immortality Peach Tree](#)

[Chapter 1970 – A Great Show](#)

[Chapter 1971 – Using Others To Kill](#)

[Chapter 1972 – Toyed To Death](#)

[Chapter 1973 – I Am Going To Kill You](#)

[Chapter 1974 – Absolute Suppression](#)

[Chapter 1975 – You’re Truly Ridiculous](#)

[Chapter 1976 – Must Kill](#)

[Chapter 1977 – The Descent Of The Crisis](#)

[Chapter 1978 – Plan Failure](#)

[Chapter 1979 – Meaning Of Brother](#)

[Chapter 1980 – Breaking Through The Killing Formation](#)

[Chapter 1981 – Well Deserved Death](#)

[Chapter 1982 – Sending Charcoal In Snowy Weather](#)

[Chapter 1983 – Complete Annihilation?](#)

[Chapter 1984 – The Reversal Of The Battle](#)

[Chapter 1985 – Emergence Of The Moon Demon](#)

[Chapter 1986 – Dying Together](#)

[Chapter 1987 – Virtuous Thought, Evil Thought](#)

[Chapter 1988 – Stellar Key](#)

[Chapter 1989 – Sealing The Moon Demon](#)

[Chapter 1990 – Wang Qiang Displaying His Might](#)

[Chapter 1991 – Killing Your Son](#)

[Chapter 1992 – The End Of The Battle](#)

[Chapter 1993 – Telling The Truth](#)

[Chapter 1994 – Physical Bodies Seized](#)

[Chapter 1995 – The Public’s Will](#)

[Chapter 1996 – Killing With One Strike](#)

[Chapter 1997 – Chu Feng Entering Closed Door Training](#)

[Chapter 1998 – Completing The Spirit Formation](#)

[Chapter 1999 – Settlement](#)

[Chapter 2000 – Duanmu Feiyu](#)

[Chapter 2001 – Two Armies Joining Hands](#)

[Chapter 2002 – Battle Begin](#)

[Chapter 2003 – Chu Feng’s Massacre Show](#)

[Chapter 2004 – Angrily Fighting Three Evildoers](#)

[Chapter 2005 – Emperor Qing’s Successor](#)

[Chapter 2006 – The Arrival Of Reinforcements](#)

[Chapter 2007 – Compensation](#)

[Chapter 2008 – Deliberately Making Things Difficult](#)

[Chapter 2009 – Vomiting Blood From Anger](#)

[Chapter 2010 – Releasing Tigers, Pulling Out Teeth](#)

[Chapter 2011 – Only You](#)

[Chapter 2012 – A Grand Gift](#)

[Chapter 2013 – The Unfavorable Battle Situation](#)

[Chapter 2014 – Snow Blade Mad Demon’s Past](#)

[Chapter 2015 – Merging With The Three Immortal Profound Techniques](#)

[Chapter 2016 – Assimilation Failure](#)

[Chapter 2017 – Undying And Indestructible](#)

[Chapter 2018 – A Whole New Level Of Respect](#)

[Chapter 2019 – Plan Success](#)

[Chapter 2020 – Eternal Pride](#)

[Chapter 2021 – Wonderstone Dao Ground](#)

[Chapter 2022 – Act Separately](#)

[Chapter 2023 – Acquiring the Scroll](#)

[Chapter 2024 – Two Identities](#)

[Chapter 2025 – Lamentable](#)

[Chapter 2026 – Confidence](#)

[Chapter 2027 – Five Elements Treasures](#)

[Chapter 2028 – Unfavorable Battle Situation](#)

[Chapter 2029 – Dangerous Woman](#)

[Chapter 2030 – Powerful Reinforcement](#)

[Chapter 2031 – Must Be Taught A Lesson](#)

[Chapter 2032 – Endless Admiration](#)

[Chapter 2033 – Begin The Counterattack](#)

[Chapter 2034 – Breaching The Camps](#)

[Chapter 2035 – Being Struck](#)

[Chapter 2036 – Spreading False News](#)

[Chapter 2037 – Moving Toward The Tiger's Mountain](#)

[Chapter 2038 – Bearing Dangers To Save People](#)

[Chapter 2039 – Truly Foolish](#)

[Chapter 2040 – Reversal](#)

[Chapter 2041 – Ten Thousand Miles Snow Domain](#)

[Chapter 2042 – Icesnow Phoenix](#)

[Chapter 2043 – Asking About One's Friend](#)

[Chapter 2044 – The Course Of Events](#)

[Chapter 2045 – Removing Poison](#)

[Chapter 2046 – Overflowing Killing Intent](#)

[Chapter 2047 – From Enemy To Friend](#)

[Chapter 2048 – Exceptional Treasure](#)

[Chapter 2049 – Rank Four Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 2050 – Have Committed All Sorts Of Evil](#)

[Chapter 2051 – Not Needing Help](#)

[Chapter 2052 – Settlement](#)

[Chapter 2053 – Torturing World Devastator](#)

[Chapter 2054 – Such An End](#)

[Chapter 2055 – It's You](#)

[Chapter 2056 – Arrival Of The Moon Immortal](#)

[Chapter 2057 – Heart Sunk](#)

[Chapter 2058 – Transmogrification Gate](#)

[Chapter 2059 – Total Evacuation](#)

[Chapter 2060 – Refused](#)

[Chapter 2061 – Paving The Road](#)

[Chapter 2062 – Temperament Worsened](#)

[Chapter 2063 – Make An Exception](#)

[Chapter 2064 – Why Thank?](#)

[Chapter 2065 – I Wish To Go Out](#)

[Chapter 2066 – Significant](#)

[Chapter 2067 – Spatial Crack](#)

[Chapter 2068 – Desire To Return Home](#)

[Chapter 2069 – Chu Feng's Returnn](#)

[Chapter 2070 – Endlessly Excited](#)

[Chapter 2071 – Insufficient Knowledge](#)

[Chapter 2072 – Ya Fei's Mishap](#)

[Chapter 2073 – Immortalization Road](#)

[Chapter 2074 – Keep Chu Feng In The Dark](#)

[Chapter 2075 – Stairway To Heaven](#)

[Chapter 2076 – Chu Feng's Fury](#)

[Chapter 2077 – Truly Ridiculous](#)

[Chapter 2078 – Crimson Jade Pendant](#)

[Chapter 2079 – Slaughter With A Single Strike](#)

[Chapter 2080 – Paying Respects To One's Family](#)

[Chapter 2081 – Succession Ceremony](#)

[Chapter 2082 – School Protection Grand Formation](#)

[Chapter 2083 – Kowtow](#)

[Chapter 2084 – Presenting Enormous Gifts](#)

[Chapter 2085 – Seeing The Emperor’s Gate Again](#)

[Chapter 2086 – Challenging The Emperor’s Might](#)

[Chapter 2087 – Meeting Qing Xuantian](#)

[Chapter 2088 – Emperor Taboo Martial Skill](#)

[Chapter 2089 – Fusion](#)

[Chapter 2090 – The Reemergence Of The Four Secrets](#)

[Chapter 2091 – Gate of Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 2092 – Rank Six Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 2093 – Searching For Physical Bodies](#)

[Chapter 2094 – Enormous Change In Expression](#)

[Chapter 2095 – Magma Emperor](#)

[Chapter 2096 – Chu Feng Vs. Magma Emperor](#)

[Chapter 2097 – Eternal Nightmare](#)

[Chapter 2098 – Rank Seven Martial Emperor](#)

[Chapter 2099 – Incomplete Ancestral Armament](#)

[Chapter 2100 – The Truth Of What Happened Back Then](#)

[Chapter 2101 – Magma Emperor Sword](#)

[Chapter 2102 – Moon Immortal Vs. Hall Master](#)

[Chapter 2103 – Two Hopes](#)

[Chapter 2104 – Heaven-defying Battle Power](#)

[Chapter 2105 – Precisely Chu Feng](#)

[Chapter 2106 – Absolute Suppression](#)

[Chapter 2107 – Turning The Situation Around](#)

[Chapter 2108 – Greatly Expanding One’s Horizons](#)

[Chapter 2109 – Incomplete Ancestral Armament](#)

[Chapter 2110 – See Your Performance](#)

[Chapter 2111 – Unbelievable](#)

[Chapter 2112 – The Outcome Of The Battle](#)

[Chapter 2113 – Realm of Gods](#)

[Chapter 2114 – Can Only Wait For Death](#)

[Chapter 2115 – Deemed To Be God](#)

[Chapter 2116 – The Disclosure Of The Truth](#)

[Chapter 2117 – Mountain-like Paternal Love](#)

[Chapter 2118 – Heavenly Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 2119 – Chu Heavenly Clan](#)

[Chapter 2120 – Time To Go](#)

[Chapter 2121 – Resurrection Secret Technique](#)

[Chapter 2122 – I’ve Guessed Wrong](#)

[Chapter 2123 – Chu Feng’s Friend](#)

[Chapter 2124 – Wang Qiang’s Past](#)

[Chapter 2125 – The Title Of Overlord](#)

[Chapter 2126 – Journeying Together](#)

[Chapter 2127 – Father’s Accomplishment](#)

[Chapter 2128 – Reviving The Chu Family](#)

[Chapter 2129 – Don’t Harm Her](#)

[Chapter 2130 – Re-entering The Heavenly Road](#)

[Chapter 2131 – Finally Meeting Father](#)

[Chapter 2132 – The Vast Outer World](#)

[Chapter 2133 – What Happened Back Then](#)

[Chapter 2134 – Heavenly Lightning Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 2135 – Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique](#)

[Chapter 2136 – Rank One Half Martial Ancestor](#)

[Chapter 2137 – A Mission](#)

[Chapter 2138 – A Request](#)

[Chapter 2139 – Good Or Bad](#)

[Chapter 2140 – Ranked Third](#)

[Chapter 2141 – Four Symbols Divine Power](#)

[Chapter 2142 – Chu Feng's Mother](#)

[Chapter 2143 – Nine Heavenly Lightnings Stage](#)

[Chapter 2144 – Disappointing Result](#)

[Chapter 2145 – Surpassing The Old](#)

[Chapter 2146 – Resurrection Again](#)

[Chapter 2147 – Overwhelming Emotions](#)

[Chapter 2148 – Departure Banquet](#)

[Chapter 2149 – Newcomer](#)